PVRCHAS



PILGRIMES.

IN FIVE BOOKES.

The fixth, Contayning English Voyages, to the East, West, and South parts of America: Many Sea and Land Fights, Inuations and Victories against the Spaniards in those parts, and the Spanish Ilands, and Coast Townes on this lide; Plantations in Guiana, and many strange adventures of English-men amongst the American.

The feuenth, Voyages to and about the Southerne America, with many Marine Observations and Discourses of those Seas and Lands, by Englishmen and others.

The eighth, Voyages to and Land-Trauels in Florida; Virgina, and other parts of the Notherne AMERICA. French
Plantings, Spanifb Supplantings; English-Virginian voyages, and to the llands Azor s.

The ninth, English Plantations, Discouries, Acts, and Occurrents, in Fireinia and Summer Ilands, fince the Terre 1606, ull 1624.

The tenth, English Discourries and Plantations in New England, New-found-land; with the Patent and Voyages to New Section: Relations also of the Fleet electric by Sucre ELIZABET a against the Spaniard.

The Fourth Part,

Unus Deus, Una Veritas.



LONDON

Printed by William Stansby for Henrie Fetherstone, and are to be sold at his shop in Pauls Church-yard at the signe of the Rose.

1625.

BAHDAIV

PILGRIMES.



TO THE MOST

REVEREND FATHER

GEORGE,

Lord Archb. of Canterburie His Grace,

Primate of all ENGLAND and Metropolitan,
One of HIS MARKETTES most Howo-

His very good Lord.



Aning brought into your Grace the Sheafe Leuinsse of my first Frunts to bee waued before the Lord, I am bold now also to offer (not after 7: but abone 77. weekes) these wave loaves for my harvest, that both may bee hallowed by the same Priestly hand in which respect your Graces Name

which first honored my Pilgriniage, hath the last place in these Pilgrinie-Volumes, that my All might be blessed by your gracious embracing (the Alpha and Omega of my Dedications) and might bee by your Fatherly benediction commended to vulgar wse. The sutablenesse of the former worke to your Graces Place and recreations, caused the former presumption: but now the Author, by frequent Dedications knowne and graciously acknowledged Yours (bow unprositable a seruant society) is guiltie not of single boldnesse; beautifying the Frontispice with His Highnesse Name unto your Graces entertainment (especially

in this time so many wayes Festina II) that your Graces Name and entertainment might so much more Entitle and Endeare. the same to His Highnesse. The authorising of Books in instess order belongeth to your Grace, as doth the Author also : whole mistie conceits of ignorance, or smokie vapours of ambition ofuffering the exhaling rayes of Princely heat and Highnesse, hope in the Middle Region of your Gracious and vertuous mode. ration to be so mildly attempered, that they shall neither fall short in vanishing dewes, nor be reiested after a short blaze as falling Starres, nor transcend into combustious Comets, nor fall downe in furious Stormes, but gently descend as fresh and fruitfull Showers on the thirslie Candid Readers. Pardon farre-fetched similitudes to a Historie of farre-fetched varities, and the Elements of the world borrowed to patronife our world of literate. Elements, not being (as the commendable labours of Others) a Booke of Voyages and Tranels in the world but the World bistorised in a world of Voyages and Trauels. Wherein our Ship bath beene longer in her Circum-Nanigation then any of the World-Compassers bere related; often in danger to be onerset, whiles the Authors impotent and impatient Genius filled all her sailes to the Top and Top-gallant beyond the proportion of her balast: whereby some leakes of unwitting errors, bappening in so new a course thorow so various Seas, implore your Graces indulgence to the Ship and Pilot, Sir Francis Drake a Minia sters sonne, after a happy invironing of the Globe, feasted Oueene Elisabeth aboord bis Argo, and then laid ber up at Deptford, denoting her Carkasse to Time, Her (or rather bis) exploits to Fame and Eternitie. An English Minister, beginneth and endeth his more then Greling N auigation with the glorious Name of His Maiestie, in poore, but bis best entertainment, and returning thus manned and freighted, humbly fueth to bee laid up in the Liberties and Libraries of Saint lames, Yorke-house, Westminster, and Lambith. Here also the Pilot further petitionetb, that his Body being more leakie then bis Ship, your Grace (to whom principally the promise was

made) will accept this Part of payment in satisfaction of the

>bole

DEDICATORIE.

whole debt of his Europæan Peregrination and Christian Vision tations. But a long Epistle were injurie to your Graces more necessarie imployments for the Church and State: My selfe am the Epistle, this Worke the Seale, this Epiftle but the Superscription, these Pilgrimes all humble Sutors for your Gracious fauour to the worst

Your Graces

Chap.

SAMVEL PYRCHAS,



and the of the or a very post of and all the sections

19. Sut the william light of you have the

And the second of the second o

o her was a first of the

Lineart Practal



"ENGLISH VOYAGES. TO THE EAST, WEST, AND SOVTH PARTS OF AMERICA: MANY SEA AND LAND FIGHTS, INVASIONS

AND VICTORIES AGAINST THE SPANIARDS IN those parts, and the Spanish Hands, and coast Townes on this fide; plantations in G VI A N A , and many ftrange adventures of Englishmen amongst the AMBRICANS.

THE SIXTH BOOKE.

Снава І.

A briefe Relation of the feuerall Voyages Ondertaken and performed by the Right Honorable, GEORGE, Earle of Cumberland, in bis owne person, or at his owne charge, and by his direction: collected out of the Relations and Iournals of credible nerfons Actors therein



He first Voyage of this Right Honorable Earle was intended to First voyage the South Sea : and begun from Granefend, Iune 16, 1 , 85, 1586. with three Ships and a Pinnace; the Red Dragon Admirall, of The Spanifs 1260. Tunnes, with 1300 men, commanded by Captaine Robert 1300 men, commanded by Captaine Robert 1300 men, commanded by Captaine Robert 1300 men 13 Widrington : the Barke Clifford Vice-admirall, of 130. Tunnes, English thips in with 70. men, commanded by Captaine Christopher Lifter (he his Ports of with 70. men, commanded by captaint to the part ages (in an eros of had beene taken prifoner in Barbarie at the battell of Aleaffar, Spains and Porin which King Sebaffian was flaine) the Roe Rere-admirall, tagal 1983.

whence warres commanded by Captaine Hawes: the Dorothee, a fmall Pinnace were not enly of Sir Walter Raleighs (This voyage being published at large in expedied at (Masser Hakluyts promed voyages, i will here but briest runne homebuteue-ouer) Septemb. 7. they sell with the Coatt of Barbarie, haling ty where ho-

in with the Road of Santa Cruce : after that they anchored in Rio del Oro, and fearched up the and happily River, finding it fourteene or fitteene leagues vpward as broad as at the mouth, some two leagues prevented. ouer. The last of September they resolved for Sierra Leona, from whence they departed the fe- See Hat zoma; uenth of November. The fourth of Impuarie they fell with the American shours in 30, degrees Sieria Leana, and 40. minutes South latitude, the weather temperate. Ian. 10. they tooke (a little short of Abraham Cack. the River of Plate) a small Portugall ship, and in her Abrabam Cock of Leigh neere London, was one of his married in that Country, who was brought home by the Admirall. They learned that in that companie. See River were five Townes each of feventie housholds or more. Buenes Aeres, fiftie leagues up the of this youage. Ruier, the refloration fittic aboue each other; Tracemen the yppermoft 230, leagues from the Tima. 1.7.4.3.

60 Entrance: In which was force of Corne, Cartell, Fruits, but neither Silver nor Gold. In this Driek. Barke were fine and fortie Negroes. The next day they tooke another, in which were fine and wards expedithirtie Negro women, foure or fine Friars, one an Irifoman. Their Bookes, Beades, and Pictures, tion, Sec Hak. cost about 1000. Duckets. The Bishop of Tuccaman had fent for them to take possession of a Mo. 43. I had it also naiterie. They learned of Mafter John Drake who went in confort with Captaine Fenton . cast written.

Bbbbb 3

away neere the River of Plate, his companie taken or flaine by the Salvages: of which lohn Drake and Richard Fairmeather escaped with two or three others in a Canoa to the Spaniards and fined

in those parts. Here allo they rooke Miles Philips left in the Countrey by Sir lobe Hawkes. After countil taken they fell Aprill 3. with the Land of Brafil in 16. degrees and a Terse, and watered in the Road of Canada. They proceeded and anchored before the Towns of Bays, and found in the Herbour eight Ships and one Caruell. The riext day they inreed the Portugal.

Bold courage, to abandon to get a the best of those thips, and to wood them forth in despite of infinite store of great and small that from the shoare and thips: one Hulke having in her foure and twentie pieces of Ordnance. The least of these prizes was 130. Tunnes. After this they haled the Huke and commanded the Matter to follow them, which he did, together with a Caruell with fiftle Butts of wine. They fetched reliefe from the shoare also in despite of innumerable Indians and all the enemies forces. May 24 they tooke a flip of 120. Tunner laden with Meale and Sugar, But the voyage to the South Sea was defeated by some mens defire to returne; in which Captaine Hulks difafter. Delamour tooke a fmall Pinnace. The Flemmift Hulke taken into the Fleet in fleed of the George cast off, furnished with hermen, suddenly tooke fire and perished, Ship, Men, and Goods. Septemb. 29. the refidue reached the Coast of England after an unprofitable and unfortunate

N the yeare 1587, when the Towne of Starfe was befeeged by the Duke of Parma, Sir Roger Williams being Governour there, the Earle put himselfe in perion to make proofe of his valour The Earle in Sluce, 83. fer. in that feruice, but at his arrivall found the Towne fursendred vnto the Duke, the faid Sir Roger being not able to hold out longer. Anno 1588, among it many of the Nobility which distributed

themielues into divers of her Maiesties Shippes vpon the approach of the Spanish Armada, the Earle put himselfe aboord the Bonaduenture commanded by Captaine George Raymond; when they wanne that honour that no Sea can drowner no age can weare out. The Queene fo accep-Second vovted this Noble Earles resolution, that she gave him leave the same yeare to goe as Generall, and for his greater honour and ability was pleased to lend him the Golden Lion, one of the Shippes Royall, to be the Admirall; which he victualled and furnished at his owne charge and adventure, having Commission to pursue his intended voyage towards the Spanish coasts, under the broad Scale of England, bearing date the fourth of Ollober, 1,88. Attended with many braue 30 Gentlemen he let forth about the end of Offoler, and in the Narrow Seas met with a Shippe of Dunkerke called the Hare, laden with Merchandile for Spaine, which after some fight he tooke and fent home. But contrary windes first fulpended, and after that a storme (which forced them to cut the maine Maste ouerboord) deprined him of further hopes and ability to profecute his true

defignes. HIs spirit remaining neuertheleffe higher then the windes, and more resolutely by stormes compact & vnited in it selfe, he procured anew of her Maiestie the Villery, one of the Royal Nauie, accompanied with the Meg and Margares, two small Ships and one Carnell; which were fet forth at his charges, and manned with 400. Mariners and Souldiers : the Admirall comman- 40 ded by his Lordthip, and vider him Captaine Christopher Lifter : the Mee by Captaine Williams Mounson Viceadmirall: the Margaret by Captaine Edward Careles alias Write Rereadmirall: the

Carnell by Captaine Pigeon. The eighteenth of June they fet forth from Plimmouth and within three dayes met with three French Ships, Leaguers of New Hanen, and Saint Maloes laden with New-found land fish : two of them with the Margaret not able to endure the Sea, were fent for England. The thirteenth of July his Lordship met with eleven Dutch Ships which at first made shew to abide a fight, and after a few shot yeelded and sent their Masters abourd shewing their Palports from Hamborough, Lubecke, Bream, Pomerland and Callice : who confelled that they had goods abound to the value of toure thouland & fine hundred pounds of a lew of Lisbone; which being delinered and diffributed, his Lordfhip fet faile for the Afores. The first of August he had fight 50 of Saint Michael, and to difguife himfelfe put forth a Spanish Flagge. Espying foure Shippes in the Roade, he refolued that night to cut their Cables and to bring them away : which he accordingly performed before he was deforied. The Spaniards in three of them leaping into the Sea, with much noise and outcry gaue the alarme to the Town, which made many vaine shots at his

Boate in the darke. The fourth was the Falcon of London, under the name of a Scottift Ship, hauing a Scottish Pilot. The three Spaniards were laden from Smill with Wine and Sallet Oyle. The Pinnace tooke a small Shippe wherein was thirty tunnes of Madera wines, same Wollen Cloath, Silke and Taffata. The Carracks were departed from Tercera eight dayes before He manned his Boates and obtained refreshing at Flores professing himselie a friend to their King Don Antonio. From thence rowing a shipboord, the Boate was pursued two miles together by a monstrous 60 Fish, whose Finnes many times appeared about the gils aboue water source or fine yards a sunder, and his lawes gaping a yard and a halfe wide, not without great langer of ouerturning the Punnace, and denouring some of the company: but at the last they all escaped. Here his Lordshippe met and accepted into confort Captaine Danies with his Shippe and

Third voyage

lew of Lisbene.

A monficous

GHAP.L. Prizes taken Cap. Lylters valour, rafhueffe, death. Cruell thirft.

Pinnace, a Shippe of Sir Walter Raleighs', commanded by Captaine Marketbury, and the

Having intelligence that the Carracks were at Tercera, he came up to the road of Frall the feuen and twentieth of August, and descrying certaine Shipper at anchor close abourd the shoare, See Lingbon he fent his Boates which boorded a Ship of 250, tunne armed with foureteene caft Peeces; and 6.96. continued fight till a supply of Boates came from the Fleete to freend them, and then recourred the prize. The Spaniard (except lebude Palma) leapt all over-boord to fwimme to the shoare, A prize of which was so neere that the Ship was moored to the Castle, from whence the great Ordnance Post Rices. plaied all the time of the fight: onely it was not a play to the Mafter of the Caruell, whose calfe To of his legge was shot away. This Shippe came laden from Port Rece with Sugar, Ginger, and or insures was in boates retched also out of the Roade some other small Ships laden from Guinnee Guinnee Shipa. with Elephants reeth, Graines, Coca nuts, and Goate Skinnes: moft of which prizes he sent for taken, England. The next day, eight Englismen prisoners ftole from Torcers in a small Boate, hauing no other yard for their maine faile then two Pipe staues. These told his Lordship, that the Car-

rackes were departed a weeke before, which moved him to seturne for F348 with purpole to take that Towne. He arrived, September the tenth, landing his men, the Platforme shot at them in their marchi, Fall taken. but they comming up found it and the Towns ahandoned, and tooke thereof polleflon. This Towns containeth 500, housholds well and strongly built of Lime and Stone, well stored with

20 fresh water, delicate Fruites and Grapes of diners forts, He fet a guard to preferne the Churches and Religious Houses, and staid there fouredayes till the ransome was brought him, which was The soiles 2000 Duckets, most of Church Plate. He shipped from the Platforme eight and fiftue Peeces of Iron Ordnanee. The Gouernour of Graciofa lent his Lordship fixtie Butts of Wine, batexon fed his want of fresh water. A Ship of Wejmunt came thirther with a Spanis prize worth fixteene thouland pounds, and brought newes of the West Indie Fleete shortly to some; which afa ter three or four dayes playing to and fro in rough weather (Het paffe a Shippe of Saint Malo, Ship of Saint which he took laden with New found-land Fish) he espied going into the hauen at Angra in Tor. Mail. sers to the number of fifteene fale, being too fare to Leeward to come neere them; and they being firong and forcified with the Cattle and Port, he was forced to give ouer. And although he 30 left a Pinnace for adnice, intending to waite for them at Sea 1 yet the returned with newes that

they had taken off their failes, and downe their topmatts with resolution of longer flay. Wherefore he failed to Saint Michaels; and being there repelled from watering, went to Saint Maries where they found two Brafil Ships laden with Sugar, which the Handers fought to brine a ground : but Gaptaine Lyster hastining the attempt in the face of the enemie and danger of con- Captaine Ly tinual shoare-shot, borded the vttermost, cut afunder her Cables and Hawsers and towed her ser valorous away, whiles Captaine Dasies entred the other then a ground and abandoned, and was forced to attempt. forfake her. Two men were slaine and fixteene hurt. But a greater losse followed whiles the His sudacious Earle in person fought to get the other ship, Captaine Lister rashly disvaluing the enemies force, enterprise and the Barre also detayning them on ground in the midft of danger from the enemie, to the lose and rathendance.

40 hart of eightie men. His Lordihip receiued three shot vpon his Target, and a fourth on the fide. ring the reft. not deepe, his head also broken with stones that the bloud coursed his face , both it and his legs likewise burned with fire-balls.

The Meg being leakie was fent with the prize into England, and his Lordinip held his course for Spaine. By the way he tooke a Portugal thip laden from Brafil, and after that another which american thirs was one of the fifteene which had before entred Angra, being 2 ship of 400. Tunnes, laden from taken. Mexico and Saint lous de Vibus with feuen hundred hides, fixe chifts of Cochenele, certaine chilts of Sugar and some Siluer. The Captaine was an Italian, and had in her five and twentie thousand Duckets aduenture. Thus full of ioy they resolued homewards, but Sea-fortimes are variable, hauing two inconstant Parents, Aire and Water. His Lordship fent Gap-So taine Lefter in the Mexican prize for Persmouth, which at Helcliffe in Cornwall was wracked.

the Captaine and all his companie drowned except fine or fixe. Scarfitte of drinke caufed by Captaine 250 contrarie windes, cauled his Lordfhip to feeke to recouer some part of Ireland for reliefe; bue for drowned. wayting for entrance was put off againe, their Beere and Water being all fpent. Three spoonfuls of vineger were allowed to each manata meale with fome small reliefe squeezed out of the lees Miserable diof their wine veffels : which continued fourteene dayes without other supply then the drops of stresse for Haile and Raine , carefully faued with Sheets and Napkins. Some dranke vp the foyled running want of drink water at the Scupper-holes; others faued by deutfe the runnings downe the Maits and tarred Ropes; and many licked the moift Boards, Railes, and Maits with their tongues like Dogs. Yee was that Raine to intermingled with the forie of the foaming Seas in that extreme ftorme, that

it could not be healthfull : yea, some in their extremitie of thirst dranke themselues to death with their Cannes of falt-water in their hands. Notwithstanding this extreme scarsitie, his Saledeadly noble charitie caused equall distribution of the small store they had aswell to all his priloners as to draughe. his owne people. By this time the lamentable cryes of the ticke and hurt men for drinke was The Earles his owne people. By this time the lamentable types of the free people course of the flip; for want whereof many petilhed (ten or twelue enery night) course.

more then otherwise had miscatried in the whole Voyage. The storme continuing added to

their milery, tearing the ship in such fort, as his Lordships Cabbin, the dining roome, and halfe

Decke became all one, and he was forced to feeke a new lodging in the hold. His minde was yet

undaunted and prefent, his bodily prefence and preventions readie. The last of November hee

frake with an English thip, which promited him the next morning two or three tunnes of Wine,

but foone after unfortunately came on ground. The next day hee had fome supply of Beere, but not fufficient to enable him to undertake for England. Hee therefore (the winde feruing) put Ventre Hauen anto Ventre Hanen, in the Westermost part of Ireland, where having well refreshed, the twentieth of December he fet fayle for England. His Lordship in this Voyage tooke thirteene Prizes, but that which was worth more then all the reft was loft, yet, the profit redoubled his adventures. To At his arrivall in London, hee met with the vnfortunate newes of the death of his eldeft Sonne The Councile Francis Lord Clifford, which died the twelfth of December, 1 189, yet was comforted with the birth of the Ladie, Anne Clifferd (borne the last of Ianuary following (his Daughter, and by the death of Robert Lord Clifford, who dyed the fourceenth of May 1 (91.) his heire, now the yertuous wife of the Right Honourable Richard Earle of Der Cet.

His Honourable Sparke was further kindled and enflamed by former difafters, and obtav-

ning of her Majettiea new ship called the Gerland, a ship of tixe hundred tunnes, added the

The inurch Voyage 1501.

Chance of

Samfon Vice-admirall, a thip of his Lordthips, of two hundred and fixtie sunnes, the Golden Ship of Saint Noble Reare-admirall, and to them the Allagerta, and a small Pinnaffe cailed the Discourre. 20 With these he fet forth 1591, at his owne charge to the Coast of Spaine, where hee tooke good purchase, a ship laden at Saint Thomas with Sugars, which he was forced to cast off by an irrecouerable leake : another also which after long contrary winds in her course for England, was driuen to put into a Spanife Harbour for want of victuals. But in two other hee was more vnfortnnate. For Caprayne Munfon being lent to dispatch the goods, and the Golden Noble to accompany them (which the nights calmenesse prohibited) the ships bearing thus severed, were by the warre: Takers Gallies of Penecha fet vpon, his Lordship being within hearing of the shot, but hy reason of the calme not able to releeue them: to that the two ships were recoursed, Captayne Bayly slaine, Captayne Munfon and the rest carried Priloners to Penecha, and thence to Listone. His Lordship wrote to the Archdake Albert, then Vice-roy, for their good viage, otherwise threatning requi- 30 tall to theirs of whom he prefumed hee should take store. For feare whereof the common fort were returned a few dayes after new clothed, Captayne Manfon with fixe others only detayned. His Lordship having intelligence of a great Armada prepared in the Grome, to bee fent against the Lord Thomas Howard then Admirall of her Majesties fleet at the Aferes, attending to furnize the West Indian fleet, sent the Mooneshine with aduise ; otherwise the Lord Howard had runne the fortune of Sir Richard Greennile, who loft his ship and life, or rather exchanged the one for honor, and for the other made the Spaniards the greatest loiers in fo deere a purchase.

Aduife.

Fifth Voyage

Tis Lordship considering the inconvenience of her Maiesties command, not to lay any Sps. 40 to feeke out amongst the Merchants, then to make further vie of the ships Royall. And so hee hired the Tiere a thip of fix hundred tunnes, furnished by the Owners for three hundred pounds a moneth wages, in which he went in person, thereto adding his owneship the Samfon, and the Golden Noble, with two small ships. These in the yeere, 1 ,92, were set forth, but so crossed with winds, as three moneths violu-

Thus weakned by diladuenture, he was forced to returne for England.

board, and returned into England with her.

Ill beginnings.

alls were spent in Harbours, before they could get to the Westward of Phymmonds: whereby alto one of his Lordships principall designes was frustrate, which was the taking of the Carrikes outward bound, as also the meanes to performe his intended Voyage to the West Indies, Wherevoon, not like to fatisfie that expectation which might arise from a personall expedition of his \$0 Lordsbip, he transferred the chiefe command to Captayne Norten, and returned to London, leause instructions with the Admirall to goe for the Afores. Captayne Norton neere Cape Finifierre, met two of the King of Spaines Gallions, returning from Brest in Brittanie; in fight with whom the Golden Noble received a shot in her fore-mast, which made them doubt of her further Sufficiencie : but having fished it aswell as they could, Captayne Care her Commander espied an Asgosie bound for Lifbone, and gaue chase to her within shot of the Fort of Cascajs within five fachome water of a shoald called Catchess, and there in sight of the men on shoare laid her a-

Norten fubiti-

Flores courte.

The Admirall with the rest of the fleet arrived at the Afores, and having watered and refrethed at Flores (which that Iland permitted to all men of warre, as not able to withfland them) 60 Santa Cruce 2: put to Sea and spreading themselves, the Santa Cruce was descried, which made all the hafte she could for Augra in Torcora. They hafted after, and being within halfe a league of her, they espied Six John Burroughs in the Ro-bucke, a thip of Six Walter Raleighs of two hundred tunnes (which Sir, & Barrough had ridden vulcene on the Easterne fide of the Iland) standing to cross the Carricker way so that

now the was forced, the wind being Westerly to luffe vp, & recouer the Road of Lagorna on the South end of Flores. The law and cuttom of the Sea, making al ships of war then together (though Sea custome not formerly conforted) equall sharers according to their tunnage of the prizes gained, Captayne of sharinge Norton out of chall respect (and not needing help) contained with Sir John Burroughs, and they agreed to board ber the next morning. But a fforme in the night forced them al from their anchors, which the next day being formwhat allaied they recovered the road & found the Carrike warped as neer the shore as they could having indeuoted also to put ashore such goods as time would permit)and fired, with all her fayles and flags up and Ordnance laden, which went off on every fide when the freecame to them; a fight more pleating to the Portugals then the English, whom those 10 accounted now the Owners of that confuared fubitance. The surge also (fifue of the late fforme) fearly permitted their Bostes to land, to feeke to get wrackes, and what the Portseals had carried alhoare : enery man (for feare of wracking the Boates on the Rockes)being up to the neck, and some ouer head and eares before they could obtayne the flioare, where also they were forced on hands and knees to climbe up a fleep hill; on the cop whereof flood many Handers tumbling downe great flones on them. But all difficulties were made case by resolution and hope, which brought them to the Towne (now fortaken by her Inhabrants) and made them Mafters of the Towne taken

wracked goods, which feemed to five thicker for refuge from the fire and water. Whiles they were thus employed about this buint Carrike, Sir Robers Croffe Captayne of the Forelieht of her Maiesties, Master Tomson Captayne of the Dainie (a ship of Sir John Hawkins) 20 Captayne Newport in the Golden Dragon came into this confort. They were much grieved with this spectacle, but comforted that there had but one of the five Carrickes passed . this had fallen into this terrible Purgatory, and three were stall expected. They spread themselves, & continued expecting from the nine and twentieth of Inne, till the third of August, at which time Master Tomfon first had light of the great Carricke, called Madre de Dios, and comming vp, gape her a Madre de Dios broad-fide of Ordnance, & falling a sterne came (having laden his Ordnance) again and againe to a great Caride deliuer his peaks to hinder her way, till the reft of the fleet could come, the Carricke answering with the like. Sir Iohn Burroughes and the Golden Dragon came in about three a clocke, and Sir The fisht. Iobn received a shot of a Canon Perier under water in the Bread-roome, which made him beare up to stop his leake. Sir Robert Croffe was the next, who to give her his broad fide, came so neere.

30 that becalming his layles he vn willingly fell aboard the Carricke, which having lashed her fast by the Strowdes, fayled away with her by her fide. The Earle of Cumberlands thips, worft of fayle, were the lait which came vp, about cleuen aclocke at night, not minding then to boord Oueeaes fins her : But hearing the Forefight, calling to Captayne Norton, And you be men, faue the Queenes flop: danger. he gaue order to the Samfon, to lay her abourd on the one fide, and promiting to doe the like in the Tiere on the other, which about twelve a clock was performed. The Tiere running stemling aboord, broke her beake-head to the huddings; he Samfon laid the Forefight aboord, and entred thorow her into the Carricke, whereby the Fore false without entring any one man, tooke op- Carrike enportunitie to free her felfe.

And now both thips companies beeing entred into the Fore-cheynes, the Fore-caftle was fo 40 high, that without any refiftance the getting up had beene difficult. But heere was firong refihigh, that without any remande the getting the flance, fome irrecourably falling by the board, at a continued an houre and an halfe, fo braue a bootie making the men fight like Dragons till the Fore-caftle being gained, the Portugals flowed themselves in holds. The English now hunced after nothing but pillage, and were readie to goe to the eares about it, each man lighting a Candle, the negligence of which fired a Cabbin, in which were fixe hundred Cartrages of Powder. The rumour hereof made them all readie to for fake the Carrike, when Captayne Norton with some others with buckets of water, Danger by aduentured the quenching of that fire : Feare of leaks by the fight and neerneffe of the shoare fire. were great parts of his care. All these dangers freed, contention about fo rich a pillage was welnigh kindling in the Commanders, beeing to dinertly commanded and employed : but Sir John 50 Burroughes pretending the Queenes name, Captayne Norson yeelded that hee should take care of the Carricke, which he accordingly repayred, lands about eight hundred Negros on Corno, de- Contentions

taynes the ordinary Saylers, commits the Gentlemen to a ship of the Earle of Camberlands to bourthe boos goe whether they would, who escaped not a second rifling by other Englishmen of warre, which the tooke from them (thus neeligently difmiffed) nine hundred Diamonds befides other odde ends. The Earle of Cumberland had notice by a Pinnaffe fent from Captayne Norton twentie dayes this Carribes before the Carricke came into England, and had Commission from the Queene for her fafe har- purchase is acbouring. Hardly the escaped the Rockes of Silly (the Tigre also participating in that danger) and tributed princame to Dartmouth, being to huge and vnweldie athip, as thee was never removed out of that cipally to Sir Harbour, but there laid vp her bones. His Lordships share would have amounted according to 60 his employment of ships and men, to two or three Millions, but because his Commission large decasto seeher enough otherwife, had not prouided for the case of his returne, and substituting another in his dimensions as place, some adjudged it to depend on the Queenes mercie and bountie. Neyther yet by rea_ goods &c. 1 fon of some mens imbezelling had her Majettie the account of the fitth part of her value; and lowed that Relation which I found, and leave free judgement to the Reader. My copie also argueth my Lords cafe which I haussmitted.

Partuagl. fire

the Earle was faine to accept of fixe and thirtie thousand pounds for him and his, as out

Sixt voyage.

1145

Two French theps very rich

THe next yeere 1 592, his Lorship procured two ships Royall, the Golden Lion Admirall commanded by himielie, the Bonaguenture Vice-admirall, and therewith employed the Backe Chalden, the Pilgrime, the Anthonie, and the Disconerie: which three last when hee came to the Coast of Spaine hee fent for the West Indies. Hee tooke from the protection of fourteene great Hulkes, two French thips of Saint Malowes (which then held for the league, and vere therefore reputed in flate of Spaniards) of great value, one of which he carried with him, and fent the other into England. The Spaniards having intelligence, set forthan Armada against him, which 10 waited for him at the llands, and the Earle hearing of their beeing at Florer, and within five leagues of them, lighted on a ship which they had sent to descry, which before shee could recouer her fleet, he tooke. He learning by these that the Spanish fleet trebled the force of his, having kent company with them one day, quitted them and kept tenne or twelve leagues distant from them three weekes. In which space he tell sicke beyond hope of life, without returne or refrething from the thoare. Captayne Monfon with much hazard, procured him some refreshing from Corne; and leaving the reit of the ships (which tooke one Prize after) hee returned for England,

His ficknesse

Scout taken.

this proouing the most gainfull Voyage which he made before or after. The feuench

THE Antonie of one hundred and twentie tunnes, commanded by Captayne Lames Langton, 20 Pilot Antonio Martino a Spaniard, which had long lived in those Indian; and wel acquainted with those Ports : the Pilgrame of one hundred trannes, commanded by Captayne Francis Sling fbie, Diego Petrus a Spanifo Pilot, and the Disconerie : these three after farewell folemnely taken and given by thot on all hands, thaped their Course for the Antilles, and fell with the lland of Saint Lucia, there and at Matinnio, refreshing themselves three dayes, they concluded to attempt Pearl-fishings. the taking of the Raucherias, which are the Pearle-fishings of Margarita, contaying fixe or feuen seuerail small Villages, which for that purpose they inhabit but not about one of them at once, when their fishing failes there, removing to another and so by course, having emptie houses standing alway readie for that purpose. The Pearles for more safetie are monethly carried to the Towne of Margarita three leagues from the waters fide. They kept out of fight all day for 30 feare of discouerie, and at night landed and visited two emptie Raucherias : but taking a Spaniard which then came thither in a Boate with two Indians, they made him their guide to the inhabited Raucheria, five leagues off, commanding the Boates to row along the sheare, and not to double the point till euening. The two Captaynes with eight and twentie men, marched by

Rancheria affau red and

beginning of the night, and agreed to affault the place in three places at once, notwithstanding their small numbers, lest they should gather head any where. The Spaniards at first thought it had beene some falle alarme of the Gouernour, and bid away with this issting, but finding it earnest, haffily fled to the woods. Thus did they take the Towne, with some two thousand pounds value in Pearle besides what other pillage the Souldiers gate. Their weapons they brake for seare of 40 In the morning they went aboord the fishing Boats, and tooke their Oysters gotten the night before : and gate aboord their ships (much in suspense for them, not knowing of this sudden en-

land in the heat, which with want of water much annoyed them. They came thither in the

terprize) the fifth day after they had gone from them. The shippes now comming before the Towne demanded ransome for their houses and Canoas, to redeeme which from destruction they gaue two thousand Duckets in Pearle. But Caruels of aduice having every-where given intelligence of them, at Cumana they found them on their guard and returned, not without loffe. Thence they coasted Terra Ferma, till they came to the Ilands of Araba and Corresao, where Aruba and Cor- they landed and refreshed themselues : Thence to Rio de Hache, which they thought to have taken, but found the enemy ready for them, with other intelligence that they had carried their 50 goods into the Mountaynes.

Strange wate-

Ellanchas or Stantia

Brefe how kept there.

They therefore fet faile for Hispaniola, came to Cape Tuberone, and thence to the Bay of Saint Nucholas, and thence to Fort Plas, and others on the North fide : thence to Mona, and fo Sauona, where they watered againe, in this manner. The Hand is low destitute of any Spring, and to the Sea a small fine Sand. Not twenty paces from the wash of the Sea digging a hole and feeting therein a Hoghead (the head knocked out) water is plentifully taken, feeming to be no other then the Sea water, loing the faltnesse in that passage. Thence they went to the River of Socke, about c. I. Eastward of Saint Domingo, and went in the night 4.1. vp and suddenly surprifed an Eftanca, that is, a Farme place, where flaues keepe the great mens cattle, make their Caffami bread, dreffe their Ginger and Fruites, and doe other offices of Husbandry. Being thereof 60 possessed, they came to parlie for ransome of their Houses, and for their Negros, for which they gaue them the fielh of thirtie Beeues with Caffani and Fruites. Beefe will not keepe in those parts about four and twenty houres, valefie first falted, and then dried in the Sunne, being first cut into two sides like Bacon, without any bone left in it, nor any peece of flesh thicker then

CHAP.I. Cap. Lancaster Fights, Prifes. Eighth Voyage. Five wounds wounded. 1147

a mans hand. It must first be searched with a Knife, then rubbed over with Sale, and having fo remained twelve houres must be dried in the Sunne: and foure hot dayes drying will faue it

Other Estances being likewise taken yeelded like contributions. From thence they went vp- Ri. Martacane on another River called Marracana, where there was an Ingenio of Sugars which they tooke for their provisions and caused the owner to ransome it from burning. Thence they went to the mouth of the harbour of Saint Domingo, and ril there at the East fide of the fame, at Point Torrofile to intercept any Shipping comming forth. The Sergeant Mayor came hither to treat for ransome of some prisoners, and with him an Englishman of Captaine Lancasters company of Captain Raymunds fleete, whole Ship was newly calt away comming out of the East Indies into Cap. Raymund. 10 those parts, a little to the West of Saint Damingo at Acea. The Spaniards let forth two Caruels to intercept the Boates, which they did, but the Ships recovered the taken and takers together. They brought foure braffe Falcons of Captaine Lancafters Ship, ten others of Iron they left for the heavinesse being somewhat farre from the water. They tooke also a fine Friggot hidden vn-

der the trees, which they brought for England. Thence they went for lamaica, and there found two Barkes laden with Hides and Canna- Ianaica fifula, one of which they manned and fent for England, taken by a French man of warre by the way. Thence they went to Cuba, to Cape Cortenter, and Cape Saint Antonio, to expect thipping comming for the Hauana, but in vaine. Thus after eight moneths frent in 20 the Country, the Anonie and the Frigor went to the Bay of Honduras; the Pilgrime at

Hanana ipent some few dayes, and then fet faile for England, where they arrived in Plimmonth, May 14. 1594.

The Antonic and the Frigot within four leagues of Porto canallo descried seven Shippes in the Porto Causllo. Road, the least of ninescore tun. They anchored within Caliuar shot of the Spanish Shippes and moored their Snips a head and sterne, and bent their broad sides voto them, and there fought all The fight. that day with those seven Shipper and all night, now and then a shot : Captaine Langion sent the Boate and Shallon to the thore, from whence they brought a Frigot of twenty tunne. The next morning they fired the Frigot, and with their Boates purposed to bring her croffe the Ada mirals halfe. But when they faw them comming, they all ranne into the Boates and got ashore.

30 The Admirall let slippe the other fixe, vinhanged their Rudders, and carried them ashore that Ships freede none should faile away with the Shippes if they were taken. They laded the Admirall with the best out of all the Shippes, and sent ashore to know if they would ransome the rest, which they delaying, they fired one of them laden with Hides and Logwood, and then another laden with Sulaparill. But the King of Spaine had forbidden them any ranfoming, and they came not. All their Ordnanue was heaved overboord faving two or three Braffe peeces, in hope fome Enolifts. men might be the better for them afterward. One of them was a Shippe of fine hundred tunnes. They brought away the Admirall of 250 and came into Plimmonth the fifteenth of May, the next day after the Pilgrims arrivall.

A Nno 1594. The Earle of Comberland on his owne charge with the helpe of fome advert- The eight of turers fee for the Tereora Ilands the Royall Exchange, Admirall of 250. tunnes, com- ages 1594. manded by Captaine George Cane: the May Floure Viceadmirall, of like burden, commanded by Captaine William Antonie: the Samfon Rereadmirall, commanded by Captaine Niebolas Downton, a Caruell and a small Pinnace. They set forth from Plimmonth, April 6. hi the way they tooke a small Barke laden with Galicia wines, &c. Iune the second, they had fight of Saint Michael: After ten dayes they descried the great Carricke of 2000 tuns, called the Cinque LLagar or Fine Wounds. The May Floure first got up to her and received an unwelcome falutation. In the might The great Care the Samfor came in and continued the fight, and at last the Admirall. They agreed that the riss called Admirall (hould lay the Carrake aboord in the Prow, the Viceadmirall in the Wafte, and the Fine wounds. 50 Rereadmirall in the Quarter. But it fell out that the Admirall laying her aboord at the looffe, recoiled a fterne, the Viceadmirall being to neere that the was faine to runne with her bolt iprit betweene the two quarters, which forced the Rereadmirall to lay her abourd Borded.

After many bickerings, fire-workes flew about interchangeably. At last the Vice-admiral Carrassfied. with a Cultering-shot at hand fired the Carrick in her Sterne, and the Reare-admirall her Forecastle by a shot that gaue fire to the Mat on the Beake-head, from thence burning to the Mat on the Bolt-spris , and so ran up to the Top-saile-yard: they plying and maintayning their fires so well with their small shor, that many of those which came to quench them were slaine. These fires encreased to fore that the Vice-admiralls fore-faile and fore-top-faile were both burnt, the English Ships

Reare-admirall being in like predicament, whiles the Admirall with much danger and difficultie in danger quenched the ares throwne into her from the Oarrick. To fane themselves in this heat and furie, the Admirall and Vice-admirall fell off, leaving the Reare-admirall foule of the Carricks forit-Gile-yard in great danger to have beene confumed with her, had they not helped her off with their Boats.

In this distresse the companie brought the Commander Don Francisco de Melo to put forth a flagge of truce : but the Carricks Carpenter more desperate, comforted him with hope of quenching the fire, whereupon he cryed, Coragio, I will never reeld, notwithflanding the protestations, contestations, and obtestations of the lamenting out-crying companie. One range maged on him, charging him with this foule vncharitablenelle, threatning vengeance on him and his for this obstinacy in suffering so many soules to perish , rather then to accept the English affiftance. Some of their chiefest, rich in chaines and jewels, cast off all, and naked as they were borne cast themselves into the Sea to adventure vpon English mercy; amongst all which, was taken vp by the Reare-admirals Boat, two men of note and three of inferiour qualitie. These three were clothed and fet on land : the other two were Don Name Velio Periera (who had fomtimes bin Gopernour of Mozambique and Sofala, and returning for Spaine in a Carrick of great value, lok neere Bona Speranza, was now here a paffenger) and Bras Carero, Captaine of another Carrick call away neere Mozambique, here also a pattenger. These two were brought into England and ransomed. Three impediments happened to the Affailants, the Reare-admirall hurt with a shot and made in person unseruiceable being a valiant man; the Vice-admirall slaine; and the Admirall himselfe Captaine Came shot at the first thorow both the legs, whereof thortly after his returns hee dyed. The Caruell and Pinnace were accidentally ablent : one and twentie were saine in the fight. In the Carrick were many of qualitie; and before infection had fallen amongst them necre the Cape, their number o' "hite and blacke men exceeded 1100. all which perished 20 but those before named. The burden of this Carrick and her lading in wealth did farre exceede the Madre de Dios, returning after a long voyage fraighted with pearles, jewels, drugs, filkes (her meanest lading pepper) besides the best of the Nazares (lately cast away) her commodities, the Captaine whereot had beene Bras Carero aforefaid.

Another Care

The impedi-

king the Car-

They fet faile after this difafter for Flores and after some refreshing, on the nine and twentieth of Iune descryed another Carrick of 1500. Tunnes, which they supposed to bee the Saint Philip one of the King of Spaines men of warre. After some more cautelous fight occasioned by that conceit, they fent their Boat to fummon her to yeeld to the Queene of Englands thips vnder the command of the Earle of Cumberland, or elfe to vidergoe the fortunes of the Fine wounds, the forrowfull witnesses whereof they presented those two former Captaines: 20 whom the Generall Don Lewys de Costynio aniwered; As your Generall bath beene as the burning of the Fine 30 wounds, fo I have beene at the burning and taking of the Revenge of the Queene of Englands. Therefore let bim dee what be dare doe for bis Queene, and I will doe what I am able for my King : commanding the Boat instantly to be gone. The fight was renewed, but intermitted by the calme, and remitted by the remiffer companie, their Captaines being flaine and wounded. Whereupon they gaue ouer and arrived in England in August and the beginning of September, having done much harme to the enemie, and little good to themselves.

The ninth voyage, 1595.

The Dragen a fortunate Eaft Indian Ax. 1595 .

The Earle not liking his ill partage in the Madrede Dies, nor this vnhappier losse of two Carricks for want of sufficient strength to take them, builded a ship of his owne of 900. Tunnes at Detford, which the Queene at her lanching named The Source of Malies, the best thip 40 that ever before had beene built by any fubiect. Shee made his Lordin p three voyages, and after was fold to the East Indian Companie, whence shee made many beturnes (before in the name of the Dragon related) and proved fortunate against the Portugal in the East. His Lordship had thought to have gone in her in person, and prepared the Alueda his Vice-admirall, commanded by Captaine Monfon, the Antonio commanded by Dianiel Introt and the old Frigot. But when he had gone as farre as Plimmonth on his intended voyage, Her Majeffie by Sir Francis Drahe and prifed valucki- Sit Jaba Harkins, fent for him to resurne, which commandement his Lordfair obeyed. but the y by the Dutch: (hips proceeded to feeke their adventure, giving command of the Admirall to Captaine Langton; fee Hores rela- which Captaine Monfor milliking went forth seterally to feeke his owne fortant in the Alordo The Scourge, the Antonie, and the Frigot, went together to the Alares, where first they tooken 59 Saint Thome Caruell of 100. Tunnes laden with Sugars. After Which neere the Hand of Flores in a togge they elpyed a great Ship lying by the Lee, which they conceined to be a Carrick , But found it to be the Saint Thomas, Vice-admirall of the King of Spames fleet, lying for the waftage of the East and West Indian fleetes : with whom they fell in so hoe a fight that shee was glad to beare up to recouer her felfe amongst the rest of her Conforts; which after the cleering of the fogge they discerned not farre from them. Theree they went to the Coast of Spaine, where they tooke three Dutch thips of the East-Countries laden with Wheat, Copper, and other munitions and provisions for the King of Spains. Having spent their victuals they returned.

Tenth yoyage.

A. 1.196. his Lordihip fet forth againe the Scourge of Malue, in which he went in person accompanied with the Dread-manger of the Queenes, and some other small thips; and about thirtie or forsie leagues from England was incountred with a ftorme, wherein the Scomge Spent her mayne mast, and was made unferuiceable for that voyage: so that hee was forced to returne for England in the Dread naught.

CHAP. L. Earle of Cumb. 11. and 12. Voyages. Sea fight. English Captulnes. 4140

THe same yeere perceiving that the Earle of Essex and the Lord Admirall were to see to the Coast of Spaine with a great fleet of the Queenes, together with a fquadron ot Flemmil Eleventh voy: men of warre; his Lordfhip thought good to a wait forse gleanings in to great a Vintage, and fet age. forth the Ascension of 300. Tunnes and foure and thirtie pieces of Ordninge, manned with 120. men, commanded by Captaine Francis Slingsby, chiefly to expect such thips as should come from Lisbone. The Afemfor thus farmified , met with fuel a fret of winde that with all hafte they handed in their failes, and being within the Hooke of Godoine Sands drove with two anchors a Godoine fandit head, till they were within two Cables length of the Sands. They then let fall dreit flort anchor, which by Gods grace flayed them till the next day noone (hourely expecting they wrack)

To and at lait cut their Cables. Having refurnished themselves at Plimont they fet forwards and comming to the Rocke, lay off and on. After fome fruitrated attempts by the Boat on a Caruell (in which the Captaine was fore wounded) the King of Spaines Admiral Sirage fet forth fine thips against them, and himselfe and another thip laid the Aftenfion aboard; the one on the Bow. the other on the Quarter, and now the mouthes of one great Ordnance (heing neere in place to Sea Babb whifper) roared out their thunders and pierced thorow and thorow on all hands. Which ended, the Spaniards leaped into the fore-chaines and mayne-chaines, thinking to have entred the thin. but were brauely repelled. The English feeing many Spaniards together under the Admirals halfe decke, discharged amongst them a Fowler laden with case shot to their no small harme : to that the Samurds had enough and were concent to fall off. Of ours two and twentie were flaine and

In hurt, which toffe lighted almuch on them which hid themselves as those which tood to the fight. To prevent the like afterwards, they put lafe in hold the Chirurgeon, Carpenter, and Cooper for the publike dependance on them', and made fast the harches that others should not feeke refuge. But the Spanish Admirall making a brauado, and feeing them readie to receive them. tacked about and went in for Liftone without any further leave taking. The Afcention continued on the Coast till they had but fourteene dayes victuals left, and then returned with hurrs to themtelnes, and loile also to his Lordship.

N. 1597. the vindanted Earle having furnished and victualled his owne ship the Matica. The welstin A Scourge, undertooke a voyage in person. Under him in it commanded Captaine lohn Wats voyage. 20 outward, and Captaine Lames Langton homewards. The Merchant Royall was Vice admiralt, Names of the outward, and Captaine Langton nomewards. 2 in artercomm norms was vincesummant, this and their commanded by Sit John Barkley; Captaine Robert Flicke commanded in the Afornson, Reare-Captaines com commanded by Sir ven Darrey, Commanded the Samfon, after whose death at Porto Res, ploved in the Christopher Catherit was her Captaine; Marter Lebe Ley, and homewards Thomas Greek Capt. wellth roj-taines of the Alcodo; Francis Singuly Captaine of the Confini; Captaine Lamus Langua Langua in the Professions, and homewards Captaine Industriats; Captaine Henris Palmer, in the Continuon, arid homewards after his death his lonne William Palmer ; Herentes Folyambe Captaine of the Galtion-Confiance ; Captaine Flemming in the Affellion ; Captaine Christopher Collburff in the Guidna, homeward Gerard Middleton; Captaine Henrie lolliffe in the Soom; Captaine Robert Carelot, and after his death Andrew Andrewes in the Antonie ; Captaine Edward Goodwin in the Pegafus; 20 Captaine Henrie Bromley in the Royall Defence; Captaine John Dixon in the Margaret and Jobn ; Mafter John Lea Captaine of the Barbley Bay ; William Harper Captaine of the old Frigot.

To make up the fcore we may reckon two Birges vied for landing of men, as occasion required. For the land Souldiers, Sir Ishn Barkley was Coronell Generall: Captaine William Mefey Lieutenant Colonell : Captaine Hercules Folyambe Sergeant Major : Captaine Arthur Powell Lieutenant Colonell of the Earles Regiment : Captaines , Lewis Orrell , Thomas Roberts , Heirie Gill , Thomas Coche, Hugh Starkie, Ralph Rockesty, Roger Tormbin; Captaine Andrew Andrews: Leader of the Earles Companie : Captaine lames Tothill Leader of Sir Iohn Barkleys Companie : Captaines, Iames Enans and George Orrell Corporals of the field : Captaine lohn Man Prouoft Marshall : Captaine Arthur Milles Master of the Artillerie and Prouant Master.

The noble Earle thus attended and furnished (chiefly at his owne charges) fet faile with this Fleet from Portimonth the fixt of March. But you shall have a better Relator.

His Lordship having had the spoile of all things at his pleasure, prepared for the sending aboard the Ordnance, Munitions, Bels, Ginger, Sugar, &c. of braffe Ordnance hee tooke aboue fixtie peeces : fetting faile for England Iuly 16. In which returne his Lordship lost a Barge, by his commandement funke in the Hauen to the prejudice of the Enemie. Another Barge caft away in a fforme at the Bermudas. The Pegafus wracked upon Goodwin Sands, and the old Frigot upon Whent, with the loffe of about feuen hundred men, whereof fix hundred dyed of the bloudie flix and Calenture at Porto Rice: fixtie flaine in fight, and fortie drowned in the wracks of the old Frigot and Pegafus.

Ccece

CHAP,

CHAP. II.

The Voyage to Saint Iohn de Porto Rico, by the Right Honorable, GEORGE,
Earle of Cumberland, written by himfelfe.

1446.



Orthiest of your Sexe, my chiese Commandresse, to give content to your wish in bare plannelle. I have fet downe the courses and fortunes of my late performed journey. The fixth day of March, with my whole Fleet I fet faile out of the Sound of Plumonth, the winde being prosperous though much. Wee kept altogewhen the faire passage put mee in hope that God had pre-

His purpole fruftrated.

pared this an vilooked for fortune, if it were well handled, in getting vpon the Coaft of Spaine fure intelligence whether the Carricks were gone, and how neere they were readie if not gone. The doing of which undiscourred, though I knew was hard, yet not impossible for him that could well worke: And confidering the mightie importance, I tooke the course to doe it my felfe, taking with me the Guiana and the Stone; which two I meant should onely be seene vpon the Coalt, and left the rest of the fleet , appointing them where to lye till I came vnto them, But God whose will is beyond mans resolutions, forced mee to alter this; for my Masts not made to fufficiently as I expected, both now began to shew their weaknesse, especially my mayne Mail, which I continually looked would have gone over board. My Mariners were at their wits end; and I protest I would have given five thousand pounds for a new one; the greatest part of 29 my strength both by Sea and Land having beene lost, if that ship had returned in this extremitie. Hearing all that would, I heard many opinions to little purpose, and at length resolved

Defect in the

Peneshia.

(though many thought it dangerous) left the winde should with a storme come up at West The Burlings.

Northwest, to goe to the Burlings and there ride, till my Masts were fished, my selfe knowing the Roade, shough not any elie in my ship : the windes they spake of, I feared not; my onely doubt was that I should be discouered, being within three leagues of Penechia; Caruels comming

off every day to fish; but this extremitie forced device how to hide what I was. For goe thither I must, hopelesse otherwise to repaire those desperate ruines. My ship was black which well furthered my device, and though thee were great, yet flewed not fo afarre off. Wherefore I came in about eight of the clocke at night vpon Thurfday, when I was fure all the Fisher-men were gone 30 to fell their fifth at Lubone, and from the mayne they could not make moe : this was the fixteenth of March. Before the morning I had downe my top-masts, my mayne yard vnrigged, and all things readie for my Carpenters to worke. The small ships with mee I made stand off to Sea all day, that not having any in my companie I should be the leffe suspected. And thus with a strange Flagge and Ancient vpon my poope, I rid without giving chale to any, as though I had beene fome Merchant, euery day diuers ships comming by me that were both good prize, and had beene worth the taking, Vpon Sunday night the Fisher-men returne to the Burlings; wherefore to goe away undiscouered of them, and also soone to meet with my fleet, which I had appointed to tarry for mee in that heigth betwixt twentie and thirtie leagues off, and that they should keepe with them what ships somer they met, that were outward bowne : I ceased not working day 40 nor night, and by Saturday at night was readie to fet faile, when within night I heard the Ordnance goe off betwixt me and the shoare, and well knew it was a small ship of Hampton and my little Pinnace the Skout, that were in fight with a thip which they chafed to windward of mee before night, and fearing their match too hard, as in truth it proued. I, for losing time let slip mine anchor, and soone came to helpe the poore little ones much ouer-matched. At my first comming up shee shot at me; yet forbare I, and went so neere that I spake to them, and demanding of whence they were ? answere was made, of Lisbone. Then affuring my selfe shee was a Bifeiser good Bifeise, and would fight well, I came close to her, and gaue her my broad fide, which shee fo answered as that I had three men killed, fiue or fixe shot, and my ship in fixe or seven places, some of them very dangerous. So I laid her aboard and tooke her, thee prouing a thip of Hamburgh, 50 laden with Corne, Copper, Powder, and prohibited commodities. I made the more halfe to end this fight, for that I would be out of the fight of the Land before day, which as I defired I

Ship of Ham-

burg taken.

Intelligence from Lisbone. Fine Carraks and twentic fine thips.

was, and there met with a French man laden with Sale going into Liftone: which small Barke was very fit to ferue my purpofe. For putting fome of my men into her , I fent her into Cales Road, commanding them to fall with it by day in the morning, and keeping themselves close to shew none but the French, and make a waft to call some Portugall to them for Pilotage up the River. This device succeeded well: for betimes in the morning they were fall by a Caruell that was going to fish, which (not suspecting them) came close to them, so as the men I put in shot at them with Muskers fo fait, as not any of them durft sture to handle their failes till their Boat went aboard, and so brought them off to me. These men came that night from Listone, and affu- 63 red me that the next faire winde there would come forth flue Caracks, with more treasure then euer went in one yeers for the Indees, and five and twentie ships for Brasil. This welcome newes was accompanied with the meeting againe of my whole fleet, which at that very inftant I defcryed. So none being loyned, I wished for nothing but an happy houre to see those long-looked-

after Monfters, whose wealth exceedes their greatnesse, yet bee they the greatest ships in the world. My fleet being thus joyned, I called all the Captaines and Mafters aboard, and gaue directions where and in what order we should lye, and how we would fight, not doubting to meete them being vndiscouered, and well knowing the way they would come. Being drawne from our rests with our joy in our hope, wee so long continued galing for that which came not, as I began to feare some valuckie accident, and leaving my fleet alone, with a Carnell I went in with the shoare, and with her and my Boat got another Caruell, by whom I vnderstood that the very New intellifame day that I tooke the first Caruell at the Rock, there came into Liftone a fhip that brought gence. Spaniards out of England, and was in Plimonth when I came by , which affored them that I was

comne forth, and they verily beleeved was looking for them, fo as they fent Caruels of advice to fearch enery where for me, one of which when I returned to my fleet, I vnderstood had comne by them to windward and discoursed them all. So I feared it was vaine to tarry there any longer; for either they would fhift their course or not come at all. So knowing that their seeing of Another atme could not hurt, I went to fee if they were comme follow downe the River, as that it were pof- tempt. fible to lay them aboard in the night where they rode. Now againe I left my fleet at Sea, and (the winde fomething fauouring me) got in betwixt the Cat-ships, from whence I saw them riding in the Bay of Wiers. Here had I too much of my defire, feeing what I defired to fee, but hopeleffe of the good I expected by feeing them ; for they were where no good could bee done youn them, riding within the Castle of Saint Iulian, which hath in it aboue an huridred preces No hope that 20 of great Ordnance; fo as though I could have got in (which I verily beleeve I could) it had not way.

beene possible to have returned, the winde being ever very frant to come forth withall, and hanging for the most part so farre Northerly, as that for feare of the Cat-ships, I must of force have comne close by their platformes. With this empleasing fight I returned to my fleet, and that night being the fift of Aprill, wee went altogither for the South Cape. The eight day I went from thence towards the Canaries, and the thirteenth day I came to Lancerota, where by divers both He comes no Englishmen and Spaniards I had beene informed that there dwelt a Marquelle, that was worth the Carariet. 100000. pounds, if he could be taken fuddenly : which I doubted not , having abourd mee three Rich Maror foure which had beene prisoners there, who affired me they could bring me into the Road by queffer night; and being on land could guide me to the Castle where he dwelt, how darke soener it were.

30 But they fayled in all : for when I came to the land, they knew not where the Road was . fo as I Poore perforwas forced to anchor finding ground, but where it was they knew not. And in truth, it was to mance of riets neere a ledge of Rocks, as if we had gone any further, the thips had beene in danger. In the more promiers, ning, though then I had no other hope left me to catch the Marqueff; faue onely that perhaps he would hold his Castle; yet I thought it meete to fee all my Souldiers on shoare, for that till this He lands his time I neuer had given them any trayning, and well knew many of them to bee very raw and Souldiers. unnractified to feruice at land. Wherefore my felfe then fearing an ague, tooke physick, was let bloud, and fent Sir lobn Barkley with them, knowing for certaine that place could make no reli- Sir lobn Barkley flance against such a force. So being landed they marched to the Towne, which the guides said, 49was but three miles from the landing place. But it proued more then three leagues, the most wic-

40 ked marching for loofe fromes and fand that ever I faw. That night I heard not from them nor the next day till night, when I had word brought that they had taken the Towne and Castle Towne and without refistance. Onely as they marched the people of the Countrie (I meane the Mountay- Caffie taken. ners) would watch if any straggled, and would most desperately affault them with their Lances. being so swift of foot, as when once they runne, not any could come neere them. In the Castle was not any thing but some few peeces of Ordnance dismounted. In the Towne (whose houses were most beggarly) some little wine onely, which little was too much; for it distempered so Poorepurchase many, that if there had beene a strong enemie to have attempted, they should have found drun- and yet too ken resistance; the meaner fort being most ouer-thrownealreadie, and the Commanders, some di- rich. ftempered with wine, fome with pride of them felues, or fcome of others, fo as there were very

50 few of them but that fell to most disorderly ourrage one with another. And Sir lobn Barkler with much griefe told me, if I tooke not tome feuere course to remedie those things, he affured bimfelfe it would be the ruine of our voyage. Whereupon the next day I went on shoare to see my men trayned, and calling all the Commanders before me, rebuked them for those faults, and gaue Ar- The Earles ticles both for their courses at Land and Sea , reading to them my Commissions, that they might honorable care know I had full power to execute those punishments I fet downe for euery offence; and affuring and wife prothem I would not be flow in doing it if they offended. The next day being the one and twentieth of Aprill, I fet faile, and betwixt the Grand Canarie and Tenerife met with the Royall Defence, a ship which should have comne with mee out of England, but being not readie followed

me; and thwart the Rocke, after I was comne from thence met with a Caruell, which by ten 60 English men that were prisoners in Listone, was stollen forth in the night. They assured me (word Caruell stolke being brought thither that I was gone off the Coast) they resolved to fend forth the Carracks, forthby Enand that within a few dayes they would come forth. Which I making knowne to all my Com- sufficiences manders, they agreed with me that it was fit to fpend some few dayes and looke for their comming; fo did we : but not feeing them, the yeere was to farre fpent that I affured my felfe they

the Cape of

His forech.

were either gone by, or would not goe this yeere, their time for doubling the Cape of Bue-Danger of late "A Speranza being now past; for they never went out so late but once, and then were all tor-

going forth for ced to returne. Though many would imagine the missing of this faire fortune should much have troubled me; Laffure you it did not : the reason I will let you know hereafter. Now againe, calling all the Captaines and Masters aboard me, I first asked them whether they thought it was fit to tarry any longer voon that hope, telling them mine opinion how little reason there was in it, and that longer stay might much hurt our other purposes, to which all agreeing, we resolved to proceede. Then I asked whether they thought the time was not too farre spent to get Farnanbuco? to which many answered; No. And though I well knew what it was, I would not reply till I 10 had called two Portugall Pilots, which I brought with me out of England, old men that had at the least beene twentie times apiece there out of Portugall: And asking their opinions, they

told vs that they had gone it at that time of the yeere, but divers times put backe, and at their best passage beene fixe or seuen weekes in getting one degree. To which there were that anfwered, though fometimes it happened to , yet it might fall out otherwise; and if not , though we should be long in getting thither, yet there was affurance to win that place with ease, and gerting it to have wealth enough. Till this I kept fecret, what now every occasion gave mee fit time to vtter. Hauing dispatched from mee a ship that was in Trade at the Canaries and bound for England, and being to farre thot to the Southwards, as I was fure not to meet with any going to the Northwards; to as not any newes where I was could come into Spaine, till it came out of 20 the Indies: which winning of time would give me to good leifure to fortifie my felfe in the place The Farles rate and whither I meant to goe, as hardly I would bee supplanted till either wee honorably quitted the disc eet inplace, or had tupply; you may fee, too griedie desire is a dangerous enemie, for where I should tendments. have but lightly touched this as yet, I was almost entring into the bowels of my intention, the

time ripe I faw to speake more treely then I had done. I told them I had admifedly considered, of all thefe things now pleaded, and could, as I thought, before their specet have some name and could, as I thought, before their specet have some them for special reason for the Seamy of some other course then Brail, as would have stoped all these pleadings. But I thought it better first to beare enery one speake his minde, and then to viter my conceit. Which though trong on the core first some some of the state of any amongst them could give realon against it. I would not a affire the most state the state of th ones) neces armos de mante de mante de la compania del la compania de la compania del la compania de la compania del la compania d the Coast of Spaine and the Hand, that the King bad fent thither to defend the place against me fix bunone common systems and also it was theely that be bad ginen order, that they saw not then a guest own at the same dread Southers; and also it was theely that be bad ginen order, that they saw not then the would fire into the Mountaines, and set their Sugar would be relificated to the same saw that their Sugar and Brasill wood on fire; then were we fure to have nothing : and lastly, if wee beat long under the Line, undoubtedly the most of our men would fall sicke, and then Sould we be forced to returne without doing any thing , for to no other place could we goe, once bearing up upon that occasion.

With this I pawied, to heare if there would be any thing faid by them : but not any speaking, I told them I well perceived by their silence the doubts my wordes had driven into their mindes : but not AO to conceale any longer from them, that which buberto I had for all their goods done, the truth was I nener bad intention after I found I could not get one of England before Christmas, to goe for Brafil, but onely for the west Indies, where there were many possibilities to make a voyage by : as first, the sacking of Margarita, which they knew was rich; then Porto Rico, after that Saint Domingo, then in Iuly the outward bound fleet would be in the Acoa, where we could not mife them : and if thefe gaue vi not content, in the end of luly or August, wee should meete the fleet at Cape Saint Antonio. Many of these reasons I vetered, more to carry my men with good liking thither, then for any thought I had of divers of them. And my fpeech had defired successe, for they all went with greedie defire, and hopefull expectation, I appointing them to make what halte they could to Dominica, where we would flay one for another, thinking it better to goe flraggling thither then to goe togither, 50 They proceed, there being possibilitie to meete some purchase by the way, which we were in most likelihood of when we ipred furtheft. Therefore we ipred thus till we met at Dominica, wee straggled all fauing the Alcedon, the Centurian, and two Flemmings, laden with Corne, which I tooke vpon

the coast of Spaine, and still carried alongst with me, as chiefe meanes to effect my most defired They arise at purpose. These with all the rest came lafely to Dominica, where wee carried our sicke people athoare the three and twentieth of May, and tarried till the first of Iune. This Iland is onely inhabited by Indians that mightly hate the Spaniard, but love the English

very much. They brought vs great store of Potatoes, Pines, Plantins, Tabacco, Mammyes, Indies-pepper, and other of their Countrie commodities to trade. They most defired to have Swords, Hatchets, or Kniues, and very much Clothes. But if they could get none of these, they would sell their commodities for glasse beades, and such trifling things. From hence I went to the Virgines Ilands which are not inhabited, and there purposed agains to muster my men, the Iland of Dominics being fo wooddie as that there I could not doe it; and in the evening the third day I came there to an anchor. The next morning early I had them on shoare, and after mustering them for many respects, found it meet to speake to them, which as neere as I can remember, was thus : Kinde Countrimen and fellow Souldiers , I am fure there is none here but have marked, My Lords and the wifest wonder at my light recarding the many groffe faults committed amongst you fince my speech. comming to Sea : (uffering enery man to doe what he would, orging no man further then he lifted: Maz ny courles drew me to this patience, onely one I will now veter, the rest being fitter to conceale to my felfe. then to make fo many acquainted with. The great hope of meeting the Caracks made me bove for a short iourney; which hapning, I thought it better to returne with enery mans good word, then by inst punishing of any to have their ill word at my returne, But that hope as you now fee is altoguber paffed, and now we are fettled to another course, which though it may be will not prope altogither to rich, and must of

10 force keepe us longer abroad; yet I affure you upon my honour and conscience, I doe constantly believe there will fpring out of it more glorie to God, more fernice to our Prince and Countrie, and more honour to our felues, then could have done by the Caracks if we had taken them all. For the better performance we must fall to another course; I in governing, you in obeying; I in directing you what to doe, you in following my direction. To which end I have already delinered you certaine Atticles, wherein you may fee how the breach of them shall be punished. And though these twentie dayes at the least you have had them amongst you, yet heare I there are some which wish they could but light upon so much as they would conceale from me. Base conditions be hatefull things in men professing Armes, there is none baser then thefi; and no theft fo base as for a man to steale from his owne companion. And he that concealeth any Basenesse of thing gotten in this courney, stealeth from enery man mit, all going to have their part of whatfoether is thefe.

20 gotten. This I thought not unfit particularly to touch, because the steech bath ginen great offence to the whole Armie, and no doubt may encourage some men of lend and base humours amongst vs to doe the like: but let the warning I now gine you drive those thonghts out of their thoughts that hold them: and be also a warning that they breaffully observe the rest of the Articles. For I asser you, my over-nations and forced flug gift bumour is fraken off, and I will neither over-fee, nor suffer to paffe unpunifhed ill de lerners.

This delivered, I prefently thipped my men which were by muster and gaue order to fer faile. Now having fet all things in order, and wanting nothing but fure knowledge, where might bee our lafest and most commodious landing, there were many of my Masters and Sea Captaines that would willingly have gone through the Virgines, as Sir Francis Drake did, when Sir Francis

30 hee was there. But I finding the way through the passages more certaine and safe tooke that praise. course; more desiring to be the first that tooke Porto Rice, then the second that passed through the Virgines. And the fift day in the morning, I fent for Captaine Lanckton, and Knotsford, wno was Maiter of the Gallion , very expert in those Countries , and was Pilot with lebn Hawkins when hee dyed, and putting either of them into a small Pinnace, fent them before that they might make the landing place before night, and my felfe with the fleet did linger, and fo when it was darke, putting out all our failes, came to them undifcourred, which was about one of the clocke that night. But they did mee no good, for the place they went to discouer was further They arrive as from them then they expected, so as it was darke before they came to it, and for feare of carry- the lland. ing me to leeward flaved, and told me they had done nothing. Wherefore I flood close vpon a

40 winde off and on, vntill the morning, when being close by the shoare there was to my seeming Euill surmited a imouth landing place, which by all them in my fleet that were there with Sir Francis Drake, I was told was impossible to get, the winde ouer-blowing all day out of the Sea. Wherefore I tooke my Boat and Sir lobn Barkley with me, rowed thither, and found it not onely imooth, but His fearch. by the view of our eyes a most goodly fandie Bay, to march all alongst by the Sea side till wee came to the Towne. Being well pleafed with this fight I returned aboard, and gaue order to all the Commanders presently to land there. But by divers of them many objections were made against landing there. First, that the march seemed to be great : Then, that none kne w the way: Objections. and lastly, if the Towne stood in an Iland, as they often had heard it did, we should be forced to returne to our ships, not having meanes to get vnto them. Gentlemen, Said I, a willing minde makes The Earles

to long step; with great ease: I have beene sicke and am not now strong; you shall goe no surther nor faster answere. then I will doe before you : for guides wee need no better then our eyes; the Towne standing by the Sea fide, and we landing from the Sea fee no other but faire fandie Bayes all the way thither : fo at much neerer we might land if we were fure there were any where to leeward such a head-land as this that maketh smooth landing within it. But that being uncertaine I meane to take this, which I doe affuredly believe God bath directed vs unto ; for I am fure, it is better then any ever told me of. And for your last argument, that if it be an Iland we shall not get into it, that reason is nothing; for you see our Boats may row by vs, and when we shall come to any water they may fet us oner, if it be deepe : in shallow places we Shall paffe our selves. So all you have or can fay being now throughly answered, let me have no more speaking, but get your men all into your Boates, and follow in order as I have directed you. I will goe before

60 in my Bost , and when you fee my Colours diflayed , make all the hafte you can to land. This doe with good heart and courage, affuring your felues you have the mayden bead of Porto Rico, and fo possesses the keyes of all the In 11-3. And though there bee not fo many millions in at at there was when a greater force then we went without it : vet affure your felfe the Towne is rich. The last yeere there were eighteene This laden with Ginger and Sugar from it. I affure you there are mynes of gold in it. And though thefe

His purpoles and probabi-

Ccccc 3

CHAP. 3. S.I. Port Ricco Doyage. A Souldiers zeale. Canaries. Cancerota taken. II 5

be motines to draw you to fight, yet bane I not sold you of one. You being Souldiers and correnne the mindes of Souldiers, will, I doubt not, carry you beyond all profit. It is thought by men of indemont too frone for this Arength to carry, because it hath alreadie refified a much fronger force : so as we should have inst canse to be proud of taking it, and (beleene me) affored we are to take it, now we see where to land quietly, the Indian Souldiers lining too pleasantly to venter their lines: for if they line two or three yeares, they get with the labour of their flanes (without taking any paines themselves) what some there loofe; fo as they will make great shower, and it may be indure one brune; but if they doe any more teare This faid, the Captaines that were there went for their men, telling all the rest my resoluti-

on. And as foone as they faw me rowe towards the shoare all followed as I had directed. Thus 10 landed we the fixt day in a most fine place, where not any wet his furniture nor faw any enemie. By which meanes all our troopes were put in good order, and we made much stronger; then a small resistance before we were martialled would have made vs. This place was leasues from the Towne, towards which we marched in the extreame heate of the day, the way being fandy, and would no doubt haue tired many, but that going all alongst by the Sea, we at pleafure marched in it when we lifted; and besides had the place wee went to, still in our fight. which standing vpon the top of an hill shewed much nearer then it was. When wee had gone fome three leagues, we law lix or feuen Horfemen; which (the forlorne hop.) comming within fixteene or twenty score of, presently turned their Horses and galloped away. Not long after there came a Negro willingly offering his feruice, which I was most glad of; aftering my felfe he would have guided me to the Towne: but he not speaking Spanish nor vuderstanding it, we 20 were led by him to the entrance of the Sea that maketh the Iland, where I imagined with Boates to get ouer. But of that we were hindred by a bulwarke flanding on the Iland fide clofe voon the mouth of the entrance, and having in it five peeces of Braffe. The entrance is not above fixtie yards ouer, and a little within it is stopped quite ouer with piles driven in; so as it was not peffible to get in there so long as the enemy possessed it. Then were we at our wits end, but I affured my selfe there was some other good way ouer where those Horsemen rid which we saw before; and with much a doe made this dumbe guide understand that I would have him carry me to the place where they went ouer, When I perceived he vnderstood me, I followed him through the most wickedest wood that euer I was in in all my life, & at length he brought me to the reare 30 part of all my troope. And for that it grew late, and I was loath to loofe any time, I made them march, being Sir Iohn Barkleys Regiment; and gaue order mine owne hould come in the reare,

A Bridge

Negres mifica-

not having place nor time then to thift them. We had not gone farre, but we croffed the footing of the Horiemen we saw before, and following them were about Sunset brought to a narrow Bridge, whereon three might goe a front about two score ouer, and to our seeming about the midit of it a ftrong Grate of wood close shut; and at the further side of the water a Block-house with Ordnance, by which there flood five Spaniards. When I and Sir lobn Barkley had viewed this place, we understood by another Negro, that comming thither, at a low water we might paffe ouer wading besides the Cause. And he telling vs that it was not low water till two of the pane out waning we returned to a little plaine (that we passed by before) to rest our men 40 and give them fome refreihing, for the better inabling them to fight in the morning.

comes to doing breaks off feaking and tam Marte quan Mercurio) exchangeth words for fwords, and Mercurial arts into Martiall alt sof which we have most ber Relator as of the rest of this Voyage : ame exercise attendance to bis bonourable Master. But I cannot give how that which yet this gives him, a name". It is a copious discourse, which we have somewhat abridged; both in that former partof the I have fince . Historie, which you already have from Him which best know it and in the rest, in some superstanties or diheard that his oreflions [seeming fueb at least to me, who baning for much works, make my felfe more to make the Reader name was Doname was Do 5 pour dang nemert beleffe that not a drop of necessary blond be loft or strange insetted, bow often sener 50 to Luffeld, sey: /promotes of the vaine to omredundant Aubor bleed. It was another cause which made me lease out a politicall discourse and State-morall mysterie of this History, written by the same Noble Commander, whose worth here we bonour. The times are altered, and how some Planets have their peculiar course fixed Star: must mone with their Orbe, and follow the first Moneable. The men of Bethshemeth bought dearely their prying into the Arke: and I know not bow I may be tolerated to otter now in publike, the fa State-mysteries which be then in primate counselled for his Countries good. I could also be willing, as I know the world would be greedee of fuch morfels: but Actops Dogge furthing at the fundow of a morh trops the worth woman eggress.

[All in the water, loft that which be had in his meanth, and his Crowe gaping to fing to plated the Force diffelliant he water, loft that which he had he had manth, and his Crowe gaping to fing to plated the Force diffelliant had been successful to the works with the same water wealth and purchase. Every where in this waite works we have fault be) it is not an itching finger, buse in things above vs., but store of businesse in so multisforme a taske perhaps hath occasioned onerfight to eyes, otherwise dimme enough. Once; what sewer the Kino and State di fclaime, I difclaime alfo as not mine, because I and mine are theirs, and no farth r defire to be

Hus farre the same bonourable handbath beene our Actor and Authour: but bere when bee beene wary, and yet scarce wary enough of this danger in our wariest warinesse; wherem yet (if any such 60 or fee mine owne then in the publice of which, and for which (under God) I am have, can, write, do, freake. acknowledge all things. I will pry in the East and West Indies rather then state at at home. CHAP.

A large Relation of the Port Ricco Doiage , written, as is reported, by that learned man and reverend Dinine Doctor LAYFIELD, bis Lordships Chaplaine and Attendant in that expedition ; Dery much abbreui ated.

The Shippes emploied in the Voyage and accidents on the Coasts of Spaine. in the Canaries, and the Nauigation thence se Dominica.

Is Lordship being authorised by Letters Patents given at Westminster the foure- Are, 1596. Aug. teenth of Innury, to leuie Forces feruceable by Sea and Land, came downe to

Pertefineath the eight of February, wherein nothing memorable happened till

Munday, being the thirteenth of March. Pébule we were at CMerning Frager, bis

Londing bappened to fee a Gallant of the company (purpeled) I name him net) reading of Worthy ac of

Orland Orlindo; to whom himselfe in perform wener preferrly after Service. all the

Tompany being by, and having told him that we mught lobe; that God would forme us accordingly, if me teenth of Ianuary, to leuie Forces serusceable by Sea and Land, came downe to

ferued not hims better; bad him be fure that if againe be tooke him in the like manner, be would cast bis Booke oner-boo d, and turne bim elfe out of the Ship. The next day by observation it was found. that towards the evening we had runne within five or fixe and twenty leagues of the North Cape: whereupon his Lordship gaue direction to the Vice-admirall, that he should carry his Flagge in the Maine-top, and with a peece of Ordnance should hale in the rest of the Fleete to his Lee, and that they all with him as their Admirall for the time, should this night winde South and by West; and there they shoul I ride off and on scattering themselves to the North and South. in the height of the Burlings, till his Lordshippe should come to them. In the meane feafon himfelfe attended onely with the Guiana, and the Scourges from, run to fall in with the North Cape. meaning by the taking of some Caruell or some Fisherman to have some certaine intelligence in what forwardnesse the frue Carracks were which at this very time his Lordship knew were outwards bound. The defect of his maine Matte caufed him to ftand in for the Burlings.

The Burlings is an Iland something longer then broad, and by the violent beating of the Sea. The Burlings it felfe almost made two Ilands, and within few yeares it will be so; exceeding rockie it is and or Berlings. barren aboue measure. We found no living thing in it, but Lysards and some few Conies. Vpon thursday, being the thirteenth of Aprill, we had fight of the Ilands. The first that was The Court's

within kenning, was Alegranga, the most Northerly of the Canaries: we left it on the star-board llands. fide, as also three little hils rather then the Islands having all one name of the Grange. In the afternoone we had Lancerota, one of the fix great Canaries, in cleere kenning. The next morning twixt fine and fix, we were come to an anchor in the Roade, which beareth East South-east of the Iland. His Lordship had taken colde with watching the last night, whereupon he found himselfe so ill the next morning (being good Friday) that he kept his Cabbin, and was glad to take some strong Physicke : He sent therefore for Sir John Barkley his Lieutenant generall , and gaue him order to land with certaine Companies, to the number of betweene five and fix hundred men. They were in their March by ten that morning, and marched the next way (as they 50 thought) to the chiefe Towne of the Iland, but their foremost defire was if they might, to have furprised the Marqueffe, who commandeth both that and the next lland called Fortementura, 29

miles at the leaft. By fine in the afternoone they entered the Towne, which befides the expe- They take the cution they found clearely quitted of the enemy, and nothing in a manner left, fating good frore chiefe Towns of very excellent Wine and Cheefe, After the Towne was affured, Sir John fent a troope to a of Lawreta, 4 frong Hold some halfe a mile of from the Towne, called the Cattle; a place which the Merquesse had fortified with good store of Munition and Ordnance. When our Troopes were come up the Hill, they found twixt 80, and 200. Ilanders and Spaniards within and about the house, ken. but without fight they quitted the place, fo that our men entered it without loffe or danger, They found in it a dozen or more cast Peeces of Braffe, the least Bales, the most whole Culturing

his owne possession. The Towne is from the place they landed at, as they coniccture, fome ten

and Demiculaering, and an innumerable company of Stones laid in places of greatest advantage. The Houle it selfe built of squared stone, flanked very strongly and cunningly, both for defence and offence : the entrance thereunto not as in our Forts of equall height with the foundation and ground, but raised about a Pikes length in height, so that without the vie of a Ladder, there

Lancerota Hand described : the men beasts, esc. Trayning. LIB, VI.

The Towne

could be no entrance there. I have heard fundry of our wifeft Commanders fay, that if they had drawne in their Ladder and onely flut the doore, twenty men victualled might have kept it asaint fine hundred. The Towne confifteth of lomewhat more then a hundred houses, whose building is rude, being commonly but of one Storie; their Roofes flat and fomething floring to cast of raine, covered onely with Canes or Straw laid vpon a few rafters, and very dirt cast vpon ail, which being hardned by the Sunne, becommeth of showre-proofe.

Inhabitants.

The Inhabitants are of very able and active bodies, their flature commonly tall of fwiftneffe (in that Mountainous Countrie) not farre behinde their Horses and Cammels : their Armes are Pikes and Stones; when a Prece is prefented to them, fo foone as they perceive the cocke or march to fall, they call them felues flat to the ground, and the report is no fooner heard, but 10 they are voon their teete, their itones out of their hands, and withall they charge with their Pikes, and this in feattered incounters or fingle fight (for either they know not or neglect or-The Hand of derly bartalion) of the rigideth then receive th hurt. The Hand it is not round, but first ched fomewhat in length to the North-east and South-west, parted by a ridge of Hils from end to end, as Italie is by the Mountaines-Apennine. These hils are barren, otherwise then that in prestie ftore they feede flocks of Sheepe and Goates. Their Vallies promife no fruitfulnesse, being very fandy and dry, something like Rye-fields in Fngland, and yet they yeelde patting good Barley, and Wheate. Their beatts be Sheepe and Goates, few Neate, many Alles, fewer Camels, but fewell Gennets, and these of no great stature. The Hand is thought to exceede the

Beafts.

Wight both in breadth and length : of the Temper a man may judge (besides that it lyeth in 20 28. degrees, and some minutes) by the complexion of the Inhabitants, which is blackish, and by their Haruest-time, which was past before the middest of Aprill, and looke for a second athe middeft of bout Michaelmas, their landing there was vpon good Friday. The next day, the fifteenth of Aprill. Sir John Barkeler, being out of hope to finde the Marquelle, not knowing where to freke him, whom feare had taught to hide him telfe clotely, marched backe to the Nauie, without The Church, farther arme to the Towne or Caltle, then borrowing some necessaries. There is in the Towne a Church of old, and a Frierie not yet finished. Their Church hath no windowes, nor admit eth light otherwise then by the doores; it hath no Chancell, but is one vindeuided roome, flone feates along the fides, and in the one end an Altar with the appurtenants : for the people feemeth full of ignorant Superfittion, many Buls and Pardons being found in divers houses. The 30 Friery is a prettie square, with more commodities of fresh water and Gardens, then any other place of the Towne, even the Marquelle his house.

They came that night to the waters fide, yet thought it better to lodge abroade then aboord, though there were Boates to receive them. The next day being Eafter day, his Lording having fomething recoursed his ftrength, after dinner went ashore to the Companies, having seene them trained knowing that the enemy watched for advantage of featterers, faw all his men thiot first. and then himielfe tooke Boate. The next day, being Munday, all the Captaines dined aboord the Admirall, and after dinner his Lordship caused his Commission (which was exceeding large in many points) to be openly reade; and Articles of government were given for Sea-matters to the Captaine of every Ship, and for feruice by Land to the Captaine of every company; befides 40 which Articles to the Sea Captaines, was deliuered a fealed letter, which they should open, if upon any accident they loft the Fleete, and thereby learne direction where to feeke his Lordthip. But withall it was exprelly articled, that in no other case they should adventure to open it; and that if they came into any danger of being taken by the enemy, they should not faile to cast the Letter ouer-boord sealed, as it was delivered; for in no fort would his Lordship have his purpole disclosed, no not by examination nor torture.

While his Lordinip was coatting neere Teneriffe, the breather rather then windes were fodiuers, that it was doubled on every fide almost and came so close aboord the shore, that we did eafily fee into Santa Cruz, and fome other coafting Townes, and might differne the men your the hils, the rather by conic cture, by reason of the eminencie and height thereof; among which 50 there is one about the rest incomprable, generally held to be much higher then the Price of the Agores, being then covered with Snow, when the bottome was as hot as at Midlimmer it is in England. The Iland though to the Sea a very high land, yet is full of many very fruitfull Plaines, and Vineyards, yeelding to the King yearely (by credible mens report) 28000. Buts of Cana-Riches thereof ry-Sacke. Certaine it is, that in common reputation it is held richer not onely then the reft, but Captain Leight euen then the grand Canaria it felfe (though it feeme not fo goodly a champion Countrie (for we had that also in very neere kenning.) And that the King effeemeth it more no man can doubt

Pike of Tene.

feeing he keepeth a farre greater Garrison there, then in the Canaria. Captaine Charles Leigh which hitherto had commanded of the Alcedo, on the fourth of May laft, the Fleete and in his owne Barke, called the Blacke Lee, runne himfelfe alone for the River 60 of Orenogue. His Lordship after divers confulrations determined that the Fleete should goe for Dominico. (His speeches, Captaine Slingsbies employment, and other particulars, are here for bre-

An old Poringall Pilot told his Lordhip that he had beene in eight and twentie voyages into

CHAP.2. \$.2. Gusts and Inwholsome raines, Black colour of the Sea, Dominica. 1157

Brafil, but at this time of the yeere onely in one; wherein, hee faith, the windes were fo contrarie, and they had so many other difficulties, that they were forced to put in againe and loose that yeeres voyage; fo that the windes being in thefe parts at fet times of the yeere, themselves alio constantly fet, we might well thinke wee should bee encountred with the fame difficulties, All this while we held on our course for the West Indies, running West and by South . and West South-weft, but bearing still to the Westward, both because we are likelier to keepe the fresher cale that way (though some were of contrarie opinion) and because the later wee entred within the Tropick, we should bee the likelier to meet with the Brasil fleet, whose course homewards must of necessitie be much to the North. By Wednesday the tenth of May (for till then wee 10 met not with any memorable accident, feeing to tell of the flocks of flying fishes, might infly feeme triviall) we were come fo directly under the Sunne, that none could fee evidently the fha- Sunne in their dow of a file fee perpendicularly, but if there were any it inclined rather to the due South. For Zenith, by observation by the Astrolabe (the vie of the staffe now fayling) we were found to have passed our Tropick three degrees and a halfe, and the Sunnes declination that day was precifely ewentie degrees. This was more cleerly perceived at night by taking the height of the Crofier (a flarre which of all other diffinctly to be perceived neere the Antartick Pole, ferueth for those Souther. The Crosser,

ly parts, as the leffer Beare doth to the Northerly countries.) It is a long step from the Canaries to the Welt Indies, which first of all wee had in our kenning

yoon Sunday being the one and twentieth of May. But to lay, if it be but a handfull of peeble 20 ftones, in this gap. Vpon Saturday being the thirteenth of May, we had the first guilt, and it had Guils. many followers, for few dayes passed without raine. When this raine began, immediately wee all felt a very noy some sauour, it was very sulphurous, and lasted solong as the raine did. Whe- Vnwholsome ther this proceeded of the nature of the water that fell from so neere the Sunne, or from the ship raine. being very drie (as on land after a great drought there will rife a hot fauour) it is not cleerly knowne, nor yet determined, but that others may the better, this observation is expresfed. This fauour was not felt vpon the decks, or any where elfe besides the Cabbin, or at least not any where so much. The reason whereof may happily bee, that the aire being suddenly beaten in, and that by narrow passages, came the more violently, and by consequent the more fensibly into the Cabbin, then into other parts of the ship, and therefore what-30 foener qualitie it bore with it, it was there the strongliest felt. In the following of as great guits

as that which came first, there was no such sauour felt, the fleet going still farther and farther from the Sunne. And which may be most to the purpose, not any of them that felt it, found any diftemper after it, onely the fente was much displeated therewithall; his Lordship had at this time aken much phylick, but still rather to preuent ficknesse, then for to recouer health (for God be thanked, his body was very able to obey his minde) finding no difference in the world in the working of physick there and in England. Nauigators may helpe themselves by his Lordthips observation : That vpon Friday being the ninteenth of May, the colour of the Sea began Colour of the femibly to alter, that whereas before it was of a cleere azure, it then began to incline to a deepe Seablack, blacke. We were that day a hundreth and fixtie leagues (or thereabouts) from the West Indies 40 and held our selves so certainly in the height of Dominica, that wee runne a due Westerly course.

It is not valikely but this colour will be found in the fame place at another time. And in such a courfe, wherein (befides the great difference of Cardes) a man must bee forced to trust to a dead reckoning: this may bee some helpe to a heedfull man. Vpon Sunday in the evening his Lordthip directed the Matter to runne that night with an easie faile, because he tooke himselfe neerer land then most of the Mariners would confere to, being himselfe the first that both speed and cryed land ; they were but few that did affent at the first : fome defired it fo much, that they durft not let themselves be over credulous; others happily would have had themselves the first discryers, but his Lordship still made it land. Wee set faile for the land, and within two hours it was Matining made to bee Matimine. Leaving it therefore on the larboard fide, wee food for Dominica and Dominica. 50 within an houre or thereabouts had it in kenning.

ð. I I.

Description of Dominica and the Virgines. Their landing on Port Ricco, march, fights, and taking the Towne.

Y two in the afternoone wee were come so neere aboard the shoare, that wee were met with many Canoes, manned with men wholly naked, fauing that they had chaines Naked Indian and bracelets and tome bookins in their eares, or some strap in their nostrils or lips; the cause of their comming was to exchange their Tabacco, Pinos, Plantins, Potatoes, and

Pepper with any trifle if it were gawdie. They were at the first suspicious that wee were Spamiards or Frenchmen, but being affored that wee were English they came willingly aboard. They are men of good proportion, ftrong, and straight limmed, but tew of them tall, their wits able

to direct them to things bodily profitable. Their Canoes are of one Tree commonly in breadth. but containing one man, yet in some are seene two yonkers sit shoulder to shoulder. They are of divers length : some for three or foure men that fit in reasonable distance, and in some of them eight or nine persons a rowe. Besides their Merchandite for exchange, every one hath commonly his Bowe and Arrowes; they speake some Spanish words: they have Wickers platted some thing like a broad shield to defend the raine, they that want these, vie a very broad leafe to that Redpainting. purpose, they provide shelter against the raine because it washesh of their red painting. laid so

on that if you touch it, you shall finde it on your fingers. That night, having with much adoe found land, within a quarter of a mile of the shore, we ankored for that night onely, for though there were a good watering place, and a very fweete 10 riveret fast by vs, yet his Lordship ment to way ankor the next morning, and to beare in to another watering place, where withall we certainly looked for a hot Bathe. Their Oares where with

they rowe are not laid in bankes as Ship-boates haue, but are made like a long Battledcore, fauing that their palmes are much longer then broade, growing into a sharpe point, with a rising in the middest of them a good way; very like they are to blades of bigge Westerne Daggers, that are now made with graving. The shankes of these Oares are of equall bignesse, and at the top croffet, like a lame mans crutch. These they vie alwayes with both their hands, but indifferently as they finde cause to steere this way or that way. The next morning wee bore in to the North-west and of the Hand, where we found a goodly Bay able to receive a greater Name the nath beene together in the memorie of this age. There his Lordship found the hote Bathe 20 fast by the side of a very fine River. The Bathe is as hot as either the Crosse-bathe or Kings. bathe at the Citie of Bathe in England, and within three or foure yards runneth into the River. which within a ftones cast disburdeneth it selfe into the Sea. Here our sicke men specially found good refreshing. In this place his Lordship staied some fix dayes in watering the whole Fleete, which in that time was all come fauing the Frigat, one of the blacke Pinnaces, and one of the Flemmings (which we hoped to be before vs, for they have directions.) It was held convenient here to take a Muster of our companies, and something better to acquaint enery one with his owne colours; but the weather was so extreamely toule, that in three or foure dayes spent to this purpose, there could be nothing done. Vpon Wednesday therefore, being the last of May, it was resolved to flay no longer there, but to come gaine to ankor at the Virgines, and there be-

A hot Bathe.

flow one day in training our men. For that was our way to Saint Iohn de Puertorico, whether his Lordship now declared it was his purpose to goe first of all. By this time (for his Lordship would not have any thing done in that foule weather) the other blacke Pinnace was taken down for a long Boate to ferue for the more convenient landing of our men.

That evening and the next morning all our men were brought aboord, and on thursday night Description of our failes were out for the Virgines. To describe this Iland, it lieth North-west and South-east. the foile is very fat, even in the most neglected places, matching the Garden-plats in England for a rich blacke molde : fo Mountainous (certaine in the places where we came neere the Seacoasts) that the Vallies may better be called Pits then Plaines, and withall so vingasfiably wooddie, that it is maruailous how those naked soules can be able to pull themselves through them, 40 without renting their naturall cloathes. Some speake of more easie passages in the Inland of the Iland, which make it probable that they leave those skirts and edges of their Countrie thus of purpose for a wall of defence. These Hills are apparelled with very goodly greene Trees of many forts. The tallnesse of these vnrequested Trees make the hils seeme more hilly then of themselues happily they are: for they grow to like good children of some happy civill body, without enuie or oppression, as that they looke like a proud meddow about Oxford, when after some irruption, Tems is againe cooched low within his owne banks, leaving the earths Mantle more ruggie and flakie, then otherwise it would have bin; yea so much seeme these natural children delighted with equalitie and withall with multiplication, that having growne to a definite flature, without deire of ouertopping others, they willingly let downe their boughes, which being come to 50 the earth againe take roote, as it were to continue the fuccession of their decaying progenitors: and yet they doe continually maintaine themselves in a greene-good liking, through the liberalitie partly of the Sunnes neighbourhood, which prouideth them in that necrenelle to the Sea. of exceeding showres; partly of many fine Rivers, which to requite the shadow and cooleneste they receive from the Trees, give them backe againe, a continual refreshing of very sweete and A Town found taffie water. For the Inhabitants of this Countrie. A Captaine or two watering neere the place in Dominica. where his Lordship first anchored, found a leature to rowe vp a River with some guard of Pikes and Musketers, till they came to a Towne of these poore Saluages; and a poore Towne it was of fome twenty cottages rather then Houses, and yet there was there a King, whom they found in a wide hanging garment of rich crimion Taffetie, a Spanife Rapier in his hand, and the modell of 60

WildeMaicht. 2 Lyon in finning Braffe, hanging upon his breaft. There they faw their women as naked as wee had feene their men, and alike attired even to the boring of their lippes and eares, yet in that nakednesse, they perceived some sparkes of modelie, not willingly comming in the sight of ffrange and apparelled men; and when they did come, butie to couer, what should have bin betCHAP.3. S.2. Aditherie. Maid and Wife. Common diet-roome, The Virgines. 1150

ter couered. The Queene they faw not, nor any of the Noble wives, but of the vulgar many : and the Maidens it should seeme they would not have so squemish, for the King commanded his Daughters presence, with whom our Gentlemen did dance after meate was taken away. This withdrawing of their wines feemeth to come of the common isloufie of these people; for (it is Adultery Dureported) that though they admit one man to have many wives, yet for any man to medile nished with with another mans wife, is punished with death, euen among them. And no merualle if the fe- death, peritie of law be fet inflead of many other wanting hinderances. It feemeth that themfelues are wearie of their nakednesse, for besides the Kings apparrell, they are exceeding desirous to exchange any of their Commodities for an old Walte-coate, or but a Cap, yea or but a paire

It is pretie that they fay is the difference twixt the habit of a Wife and a Maide. The Maide Difference of weareth no garter (and indeede the needeth none) but the Wife is the first night she is married maide & wife, (which is not done without asking at the least the consent of her parents) to straightly eartered. that in time the flesh will hang ouer the lift. The haire of men and women are of like length. and fath on. But of all other things it is most memorable, that whereas their Houses are private to all other vies, yet they have one common place, where all their men at least take their diet, nature teaching them that Law which in Licurgus his mouth was thought firange and perhaps needeleffe. The King fitteth in the fame great roome with the rest, but withdrawing himselfe Kings state. into fome more louely part, accompanied onely with three or foure of the best esteeme; their

neates are their fine fruites, yet have they Hennes and Pigges, but it should feeme rather for delight, then victualle their drinke is commonly water, but they make drinke of their Callain. better of their Pines (and it should feeme that might be made an excellent liquor) but the best and referred for the Kings cup onely of Potatoes : their Bread is Cassain. The last report of them thall bee what I have feene in experience, namely their great delire to viderfland the English tongue; for some of them will point to most parts of his body, and having told Desireto learn the name of it in the language of Dominica, he would not reft till he were told the name of it English. in English, which having once told he would repeate till he could either name it right, or at least till he thought it was right, and so commonly it should be, fauing that to all words en-

ding in a confonant they alwayes fet the fecond vowell, as for chinne, they fay chin-ne, fo ma-20 king most of the monatillables, diffillables. But it is time to leave them who are already many leagues of.

On thursday night his Lordship set saile for the Virgines , and on saturday morning had They come to them in fight : and in the afternoone we were come to an ankor. On Whitlunday in the morning betimes (for there was a fit place fought out the evening before) our land forces went on My Lords land shore, and there his Lordshippe tooke a perfect muster of them. The Companies indeede were companies a-(though after much ficknesse) goodly, in number one might well say not so fewe as a thousand, find When the Companies had bin trained into all forts, and faces of fights, at length his Lordhippe commanded the Drummes to beate a call, and the troopes being drawne in the nearest closenesse. The speech that conveniently they might be, that he might be heard of all, his Lording Randing vader a you have be-40 great cliffe of a rocke, his prospect to the Seaward, stept vpon one of the greater stones (which relation and added to his naturall stature, gaue him a pretty height about the other company) to commanding there ore here

audience, made a speech to them.

After which, the Fleete then within one dayes failing from Puerte rices, his Lordship pre- Seebefore the fently appointed Officers for the field. They all made vp a dozen Companies: whereof it any names of the wanted the full number of So, they were plentifully supplied, by a large ouerplus of gallane Captaines and Gentlemen that followed his Lordhips colours, borne by Captaine Bremley; and Sir Ibbn alfo Commanders, hereomitted had more then 80. so that the whole Armie appointed to Land, was neere vpon a thousand, specially feeing the Officers of feuerall Companies were not reckoned in thefe numbers. The Offices thus bestowed, his Lordship forthwith commanded every man to be shipped in Boates, and 50 to goe aboord, where after dinner it was debated, whether it were better to paffe through the

Unroines, a way not clearely vnknowne (for divers of our company both Souldiors and Marriners had gone it before with Sir Francis Drake, in his last voyage) or elfe to hold the old course Sir Fr. Drake, through the Paffages. It was acknowledged that the Virgines was the neerer way, but withall none can denie, but that it was the more dangerous; for the way is very narrow (about the breadth of Thames about London) and we durif not promife our felues the continuance of a leading winde. The way through the passages was found to be farther about, but withall it was without danger, and therefore having no great hafte choose the fafer way by the passages; for (faid his Lordship) I choose rather, to be the first that shall take Puerto rue, then the second that shall passe the Virgines. The Virgines are little Hands not inhabited; some thinke for want of The Virgines

60 water, some thinke that is no cause, and that there is store of water. They are very parren and described, craggie, somewhat like the Barlings, but being much more fandie, as it is much more hot. Among these many scattered Hands there is one called the Bird-Hand, by reason of the incredible Bird-Hand. ftore of Fowle. So stored is it with plentie of Fowle, that never was English Doue-coat more willing to yeelde her increase then that hillocke, for you may take with your hands onely, as

much as you will to the filling of Bushels and Quarters. That evening we cut sailes; and ranne force of Birds. through the Pafages in the night time.

Voon Monday afternoone, we made our felues to be not farre from Puerto rice ; and our defire was to heare in with it in the morning before day, that by that meanes we might leaft of all he discovered. For this cause therefore the Scont and the Anthony were fent before to make our landing place, and that done to returne, which was about midnight. His Lordships greatest care was and had bin tome dayes to fet his men fafely and well on land, for he doubted not to make them a way, if once they were landed without impeachment, Himfelfe therefore having commanded that Sir John Barkley should come aboord with him, tooke a Boate and wone himfelfe no otherwise accompanied then with Sir lobn and the Cocksons gyng to discover a landing 10 place. Without long stay he returned againe, so wet, that he was forced to change his apparell. but withall gaue present commandement that every Captaine and Ship should put their men into Boates, and that they should follow his bloudy colours, which he would have presently

They land vp. on the He of Saiat lob? de Puerto rico the fiat of luna.

By eight of the clocke that tuefday, being the fixt of June, his Lordfhips regiment, and most part of Sir John Barkleys were landed, which amounted neere to the number of a thousand men. We began to march as toone as we could be brought into any order, & the forlorne hope drawne one which was led by Captaine Andrewes the Commander of his Lordships private Company. which that day was brought up in the the Battell by Captaine Powell, Lieutenant Colonell of his Lordships regiment. The way we marched was along the Sea side, commonly on firme, some 20 time on loole fand, but yet it was a faire march, for three leagues at the leaft, till we met with a blacke-Moore, who we hoped should have bin our Guide (and so he was willing to be) but he neither spake good English, nor good Spanish, and besides was affrighted, so that a great while he did millead vs; for through most vnpassable rocks and clifts he brought vs ! for betwixt the clifts where we flood, and the Hand wherein the Towne flood, there we faw an arme of the Sea, in breadth not Calieuer shot, but on the other side was a fort with fine peece of great Ordnance, and some, though not many, Musketeers; for both the evening before they had disconered our Nauie, and this morning our landing, as we were fure by divers Horlemen, whom we faw come forth to view our ftrength. Here there was offer made by fome, fo to plant a number of Musketeers in these rockes, as that they might beate them in the fort from their Ord- 20 nance : this was thought possible, and afterwards was done but now deferred, because though we had no annoyance of the fort, yet we knew not how to get ouer, for the depth of the paffage meerly voknown, and our Boats yet had not found any landing place neere the fort. And while here we were at a flat bay, even at our wits end, what course we might take to come to the Towne, there was fent a Peece or two of great Ordnance (but without any hurt) from another fort, which standeth vpon the narrowest part of the samearme of the Sea, and was the onely pallage that was vied from the maine Hand where we were, to the Hand where the Towne is News milgui- Here the Nigro was fo nething comforted, and brought to the little wit he had; at length, with much a oe, being made to viderstand, we tooke our selves to be out of the way, because wee

could not paffe that way ; partly with threatning and partly with promiles if he brought vs in- 10 to a better way to the Town; he began againe to leade, and we to follow with as nimble mindes as weary bodies, for we had marched from morning till now that it was even in the edge of the euening; but we would not be weary.

Bad March.

At length through many vntroden pathes, or rather no pathes, but fisch wodden holes, as would have raught the most proud body to stoope very humbly; he brought vs into a beaten fandy way. But for all this we were not neere the Bridge which must be passed, and diverseven of our leaders began after lo long and troublesome a march to faint, so that order was given to that the Vanteard, when it pleased God to helpe by one meane or other to as many Horses, as kent ve from staying our march. There might be seene a poore tyred lade, without Saddle or Briele, onely with a match in his mouth very welcome to them that commanded the beff Hor- 70 fes of England. But at length we overcame the length of the way, and even to the Bridge were come, but it was so late, that that night we were out of hope to passe it, being (as we had great reason to thinke) fortified against vs. Onely the Companies were commanded to keepe their guard, till his Lordfhip in person with Sir lobn Barkley went as quietly as they could to take view of the place; which they found to be narrow and a long Cawfe-way leading to a Bridge reaching from the one Iland to the other. The Bridge they perceived to be pulled up, and on the other banke was there a strong Barricado, a little beyond which was a Fort with Ordnance. But how much or what we could not learne, nor by how many men it was held, yet perceived they it absolutely not to be passed but at a low water. Our Mariners and Sea-men could say little to the ebbing and flowing in this Countrie, and therefore the onely way to know the fit 60 time of affault, was to let a continuall watch to give prefent information of the ebbe. The meane time the Armie was led backe to repose themselves a while.

Bridge and

In a great Lawne we all fat or lay downe, and with fresh water, which the first Negro, and another, that was afterwards taken in this wood, led our men to, they refreshed themselves;

fome had some Bread, his Lordship was no niggard of that he had. His lodging that night was his Target; I lay at his head, and to my remembrance, neuer flept better. In the morning (two houres at least before day) the allarum was given very quietly, and was readily taken, for we needed not but to shake our eares. The Companies were streight ranged, and every man had forgotten how weary he had bin the last night, to forward they were to be in seruice: Euen betwixt his Lord hip and Sir Ioha Barkele, there grew a little question; whether of them should have the point that day. Sir Johns answer was, that his Lordship might command them all, and therefore it was at his pleafure to have or leave the point; but fince it had pleafed him to Sir Iohn Barle. duile the Armie into two Regiments, and his Lordshippes Leaders had all the last day had the less honourable Point, he tooke it to be neerer the order of the Warres if the other Regiment this day were re- ambition. spected. This reason together with request to his honour to remember himselfe to be the Gene-

rall, and therefore his place should not be so full of danger, so farre moved his Lordship that Sir Johns Regiment had the Point; neuertheleffe his Lordshippe would be at the service in person. Thus the manner of the enterprize being vpon the prefent resolved on his Lordship put himselfe into his Armour, so did all the Commanders, and who else had Armours, for they looked that the feruice should be hot, as indeede it proued,

By and by the enemies Centinell had discourred the approach of our Companies, and they The fight betooke the Alarum. It may be well faid it was well fought by the English, and if it had bin day tweathe English, and if it had bin day the English and if it had been when he did it is not be all the transfer one might have from when he did it is not be all the English, and if it had bin day that every one might have feene what he did, it is to be thought fo many would not have de- ardi. an ferued to much commendation. The affault continued about two hourses, during which time the Spaniards were not idle. For though the affalants left no way in the world vnattempted, yet no way could they finde to enter the Gate. The Cawfey, which was the ordinarie way of paffage, was purposely made fo rugged: that our men to keepe them on their feete, made choife to wade. The Earles acin the water besides it. Here his Lordship was (by the stumbling of him that bore his Target) cidentalldanouerthrowne, even to the danger of drowning; for his Armour fo overburdened him, that the ger-Sergiant Major that by chance was next had much adoe at the first and second time to get him from under the water : when he was up, he had received fo much Salt water, that it drove him to fo great extremity of prefent fickneile, that he was forced to lye downe in the very place voon the Cawfey; till being somewhat recoursed, he was able to be led to a place of some more 20 fafetie and ease; in which place the Bullets made him threatning musicke on every side. His Lordshippe being brought to this little fafe place (whence yet he would not be removed till the fight was done) Sir John Barkeley led on his Regiment, from whom there were not leffe then 3000. English Bullets fent among the Spaniards, who had not so many hands as we, yet were not much behinde vs, in sending these heavy leaden messengers of death. For besides fix peece of great Ordnance, which were bent and played inft vpon the Cawfey, and fome pretty store of Musketeers; at a port fail by the gate lay there a fowler, or a cast peece, that did more skathe, then all the reft, for that at once shot many murthering shot, whereupon the peece is also called a murtherer; for all this our Soldiers came to the very gate, and with Bils, fome two or three that they had, wanting other fitter influments, began to hewe it. At their ports and loope 40 holes they were at the pulls of the Pike, and having broken their owne, with their naked hands at the sates. tooke their enemies Pikes, and perforce brake them.

haue swamme, he had bin drowned. They that were come to the gate called to their owne

Companies, that some Pikes should be drawne to them : this word was given farther then

was intended, for by and by all the Pikes were called for. Then his Lordships colours began

lous that it had bin as fafe being at the entry of a breach by affault: but the end was, it could

would be advantagious for vs, yet certainely it would have bin the death of many a man;

their Ordnance being bent to fcoure the Cawfey, and the ruggednesse which they had made to

But for all this no entrance could be got. Sir Iohn Barkeley attempting to discouer if any Sir L Barken paffage might be found of either fide of the gate, twice waded to farre, that if he could not courage,

to march, and to the Cawley came, where hee was very exceeding ficke lying vpon the His Lordhips ground in a place, no lesse dangerous then if he had bin voon the Cawfey; a place so perille

50 not then bee taken; the tyde came in fo fait, that what was at our knees before, was now The tide hine come up to our middles: and besides the day began to breake, which though some thought dereit them.

hinder our approach, had made vs fortike it; which if the day had once discoursed to them, they might early haue bent their Artillery to our much greater lose. But God would not haue more bloud fined, nor ours as yet to haue our wils. The Companies therefore were brought off to the place where we lodged all night, before where the Chirurgians were presently to looke to the hart, which were not many, and the flaine much fewer, all under fiftie of both forts. No Commander flaine or hurt but two Lieutenants. Lieutenant Cholmley, that had fer-60 ued excellently well, and Lieutenant Belings. The loffe that the enemy had was much like, fauing that of the affaults there were some tew more slaine: from this place our Companies marched to the Sea-side, whether his Lordship had appointed victuals to meete them.

His Lordinip having given the Southhours some time to refresh themselves, in the means time His Lordinio went himfelfe abound to ticke that in truth he was to be feared, with purpose to repose himselfe goesh about.

Ddddd

this remine andfecond Stratagem, for that night, but his thoughts were fo busied and restlesse, that within few houres he came ashore againe, and presently put in execution a purpose, which his Lordshippe had this meine time digested : it was to land men at the other Fort. For effecting whereof he gaue direction that one of the Ships should beare in close to the shore, though it were (as indeede it proued) with apparent danger of casting her away: But the service was to be done whatsoever it cost: Withall there were in the rocks on the other fide over against the Fort (I meane that which we first came

Ship loft. The red Fort. called Mata. distolo.

S: aniards be 2-The English take the Forts

Towne.

the English.

to fee, but could not come at) some fifty Musketeers placed, to beate the enemy from their Ordnance : meane while there were shipped in Boates Captaine Coach , and Captaine Orrell with two hundred Pikes and shot to land on the other side the Fort, twixt it and the Town, that they having made good the place, might either make a stand till the rest of the forces were landed (if to it were thought needefull) or elfe might march and charge the other Fort on that fide, when our Good successe men should affault it on this side. This plot took: very good effect; for within an houre that the attempt was given, partly the Ship, and partly the Musketeers had so beaten the Fort, that the Boates had good leifure to land; whereupon within fhort space the enemy quitted the place without losse to be tooken of to our Companies : for of all ours there were not about three hurt, and one flain, onely the Ship was driven upon the rockes, and finally cast away. Their dire-Ction was that the Souldiers should make the place good (for there was no doubt of their sufficient firength) the Boats were commanded to come backe againe to his Lerdship, who appointed to tarry at a Conduit which is in the maine Hand but from whence men might be landed betwixt the point or the Bridge, and the red fort, called Mata-diabolo. Our men were fafely landed iome pretty distance beyond the red Fort; where the Spaniards

were ready to receive them, and a while they skirmished gallantly, but finding themselves overweake, th y made an honorable retreat till they were fallen into the wood, in the edge whereof they made their first stand. Ours marched directly to the Fort, which they found quitted, and there lodged all that night. By that time that the Boates were come backe to his Lordship, the Moone was growne so light, and the water fallen to so dead an ebbe, that there was no hope of paffge till the next floud. There was not to much as a candle or a match to be feene in the Fort, whereupon his Lordship told Sir Iohn Barkeley that he tooke that Fort also to be quitted, the rather because some were seene passing from the Fort to the Frigat. Hereupon himselfe accompanied with Sir Iohn Barkeley, went to the Cawley to fee if they could perceive any more 20 certaintie, and Captaine Rukesby was sent and brought certaine intelligence, that the enemy By this time it was growne very late, and our men needed some refreshing: the Companies was gone.

therefore were drawne up to the place where we had lodged the last night, where having eaten something they were within a while brought downe to the point, where meeting with Captaine Coach and Captaine Orrell, all began to march directly towards the Towne. And now They enter the our men made but little doubt of all having once let fafe tooting in the leffer fland. It was night lest land and when we began to march, and by breake of day we were at the Towne. This day was thursday, march to the Iun. 8. The passage is wooddie on either fide, and so narrow that not passing three at the most can march in ranke; and from the Towne this Fort is a mile and a halfe : yet all this way being fo 40 fit for Ambiskadoes. or for the Irifo manner of charging by fudden comming on and off, there was not a Dogge that barked at vs, fo that in great quietnesse wee came to the Towne, people able to and found it quitted of all able to make refiftance; fo. befides women and men, whom eibeare irms, ther age or wounds had disabled for the warres, all the rest had quitted the Towne, and beand course by taken themselves as to their last hope, to one of their Forts to the Sea-wards, called Mora.

d. III.

The Fort Mora beseeged and taken. The Towne described: the Mines. Purpose to hold the place; altered by the death and fickeneffe of many.

The Fort fummoned.

The Gouernors brauado.

Feer that the place was affured with fufficient guards, and euery Company quartered: first of all the Spanards that were left were deliuered to the Prouost, and then his Lord hippient a Drum to summon the Fort to be deliuered to him for the Queene of England, who had sent him thither to take it. The Gouernour made answere shat the King of Spaine had fent him this her to keepe it, and that so long as he lived it should not be delivered. After this summons his Lordship tooke exceeding care for the taking in of this hold with the least losse of men that possibly might be; for he considered that he was to leaue a strong Garri- 60 fon there, and that he must himselfe goe home well guarded. His purpose therefore was to take it without fight, onely with a straight siedge to force them to yeelding: his Lordships speciall purpose and defire was by hunger to drive them to a yeelding (as in the end hee did) but

CHAP.3. S.3. Earle of Cumberlands inflice, Parlie, Propositions, Articles. 1162

withall he prouided a batterie, if their victualls should last longer then he wished and hoped. At one time therefore he tooke order to cut off all possible meanes of reliefe of victualls, by tenting Boates, which continually lay twixt the Fort and their Mayne; and withall hee prouided two plateformes, and feuerall Gabions, that from two places at once their wall might bee beaten. To this purpose there was brought from the Scourge two whole Culuerings, and two Demiculuerings, and about the Towne were found foure other peeces that would ferue for batterie, among the which one was that which had flain Sir Nicholas Clifford there not long before. By Sa- Sir Nicholas turday the seventeenth of June the Ordnance was readie to batter. But his Lordship would not clifford. have them begin on the Sabbath day; fo that it was deferred till Monday.

All this while the noise of warre was not so great among vs, but that the still voice of Iu- His Lordships flice was well heard. It is no newes that in such companies there will bee outrages committed, inflice. and to was it there; for his Lordship publikely difarmed a very good Souldier, for ouer-violent Souldier difarspoyling a Gentlewoman of her jewels. But because this was not terrible enough to the reft, med for vnand he was defirous to arme I uitice with the authoritie of all the Commanders, forthwith hee manner wy caufed a martiall Court to bee called. Whereupon the Article of defacing Churches or Houses of fage to a wo-Religion, and of offering force to Women, there were two condemned to die. Hee that had man done violence to a Spaniards wife, was a Souldier, and had given very good proofe of his va. Churches and lour, fo farre, that his Lordship had taken special notice of him, but being connicted of this Women secucrime, there was no place left for mercy, but hanged hee was in the market place; the Spa- Rauisher exe-20 mierds as many as would come, being suffered to be present at the execution. The other fellow cuted. was a Sayler and an Officer in the Vice-admirall, for defacing some things in the Church, with- Sacrifedge

out order from the Generall, hee was brought thrice to the Gibbet, and at length his Lorefflip terrified. was intreated to grant him mercy. These few but indeed notable examples of justice have since held vs in much better termes of ruly obedience.

Vpon Monday the batterie began to speake very loud: both the Gabions beat vpon a Caualero which they had made upon the Point next to the Towne. The Ordnance which they had planted thereon, by dinner time was judged to bee difmounted, and though that were the thing specially respected in the batterie, yet because the Wall and the Caualero that Hood voon it began to nod, they beat that place till towards the evening. All this while fearce was 20 there a Spaniard to be feene upon any part of their wall, whereas before the Ordnance began to play, there could not within the fight and reach of the Fort, foure or five of the Souldiers come together, but there would a shot of great Ordnance be sent to scatter them. In the euening the Canoneers found that they had spent all the Culuering shot, and therefore shut up that day with the leffer peeces. Against the morning there was more prouided; but in the meane feafon it was perceived, that the Caualero was alreadie fufficiently beaten, and that with the next raine (which in that Countrie and time of the yeere, is neither seldome nor little) it Raines would fall, being (as all the Countrie is) of a fandie earth, it did but crumble into dust. The Canoneers therefore were appointed in the morning to beate the other Point neerer the Sea. For that so flanked the Gate, and the breach alreadie made, that without great danger there 40 could not any approch be made, and his Lordship was growne exceeding niggardly of the ex-

pence of any one mans life. This wrought so with them in the Fort, that about one a clocke, they sent forth a Drum to Parley demandemand parley. His motion was, that two of their Captaines might be suffered to speake with ded. two of the English. It was granted; and they met in a place of the greatest indifferency that could be found, fo that neither partie should discouer others strength. The demands were deli- Conditions uered in Paper, written in Spanish : the fumme whereof was ; for themselves they delired that demanded with Colours flying, match in their cocks, and bullets in their mouth be fet beyond the Point at the Bridge, to goe whither they would. Further, they demanded all the prifoners to bee delivered without ransome, and that no mans Negroes and Slaves should be detayned from them. 50 His Lordship veterly refused any such composition, but told them because hee tooke no pleasure in Bedding Christian bloud, hee would deliuer them some Articles, which if they liked hee would without more adoc receive them to mercy. Which Articles were thefe, delivered under

A resolution, which you may trust to.

his Lordships owne hand to the Gouernour.

Am content to give your selfe and all your people their lives, your selfe, with your Captaines and Acticks offe-Officers to passe with your Armes: all the rest of your Sculdiers with their Rapiers and Dag. tod. gers onely.

60 You hall all stay here with me, till I give you passage from the Iland, which shall bee within thir-

Any one of you, which I shall choose, shall goe with me into England, but shall not stay longer there then one maneth, but being well fitted for the purpose, shall bee safely sent home into Spaine without ransome.

DJJdJ a

It was doubted whether there were any in the Fort that spake English, and therefore some were wishing the Articles were translated into Spanish. But his Lordship peremptorily refused to feeke their language, but would have them to finde out his; but because it was now growne late, he gave them respite to thinke what they would answere till eight a clocke the next day. and promife was given on either fide, that neither should practife to put things out of the state. they now were in. The next morning rather before then after the time appointed , there returned to his Lordship, besides the two former Captaines, both hee that now was, and hee that had been last Gouernour, and withall they brought with them one of good place in his Lordships service whom they had taken prisoner, while he was viewing a peece of Ordnance that lay neere the Fort. Their also required(as Captaine Lanson and the Sergeant Major before) 10 Spaniards yeeld private audience who without much difficultie yeelded vpon the forelaid conditions and farther defired they might have two Colours left them, & in lieu hereof they made promife that nothing should be tooyled in the Fort. That day the Gouernour and his Companie dined with his Lord-

thip, and after dinner the Gouernour went and brought out his Companies out of the Fort The Fort Mera (which of all forts were neere foure hundred) and delivered the keyes to his Lordship, who the rott more immediately brought in his owne Colours, and Sir Iohn Barklers, and placed them youn the 400. Souldiers, two Points of the Fort. The Spaniards without being pillaged (for befide all promifes his deliucred vp to Lordhip fuffered them to carry their fluffe away) conveyed fafely into a strong Castle in the Towns called Fortileza. This Fort was taken in youn Wednesday being the one and twentieth of June, and your Thursday our fleet was commanded to come into the Harbour, for all this 20 while it had rid without. This Fort is to the Sea-ward very ftrong, and fitted with goodly Ordnance, and bestowed for the most advantage to annoy an enemie that possibly could bee denifed. It is held absolutely impossible that any shippe should passe that Point without finking instantly, if the Fort doe not graunt her passage: And the riding without the Harbour is very dangerous as wee found by the loffe of many Anchors and Cables, to the excreme danger of many of the Ships, and the finall casting away of one of them. The Fort to the landward is not altogether to firong as towards the Sea, but yet being victualled able to abide a The Towne confisteth of many large streets, the houses are built after the Spanish manner,

doores in flead of windowes for receit of aire, which for the most part of the day wanteth ne-

uer. For about eight in the morning there rifeth ordinarily a fresh breese (as they call it) and

bloweth till foure or five in the afternoone, fo that their houses all that while are very coole, of

all the artificiall day the space from three in the morning till fixe, is the most temperate, so

that then a man may well indure fome light clothes upon him; from fixe till the breefe rife is

allo is held dangerous to be abroad, by reason of the Serences (they call them) which are ray-

nie dewes. And indeed in the nights the Souldiers which were forced to lie abroad in the fields.

when they awaked found as much of their bodies as lay vpwards to bee very wet. The Towne

tifications, and in fight much fayrer. In all this space there is very little loft ground; for they

have beene still building, infomuch as that within these three yeeres, it is augmented one

fourth part. The Cathedrall Church is not to goodly as any of the Cathedrall Churches in Eng-

land, and yet it is faire and handsome; two rowes of proportionable pillars, make two allies

belides the middle walke, and this all along up to the high Altar. It is darker then commonly Countrie Churches in England. For the windowes are few and little, and those indeed with-

out glaffe (whereof there is none to be found in all the Towne) but covered with Canuas, fo

that the most of the light is received by the doores, the greatest whereof is just in the West end

to the Seaward, so that out of it a man walking in the Church may behold the ships riding in a very faire Harbour. The other two doores (belides that which is private from the Bishops 50

house) are on either side, a little about their Quire. For that of all other things is the most

fingular and differing from the fathion in England, that their Quire is in the very lowest and

Westermost part of their Church, wherein is the Bishops scate raysed three good steps aboue

the reft, and pompoufly built. On either fide of him feeme to fit fixe Prebends, and vpwards

are places for linging men and Quirifters. Their Church wanteth no necessarie implement. On

the North side a faire paire of Organs; at either side-doore a poore mans boxe : aboue the Or-

gans on the fame fide, there is a decent Pulpit very conveniently placed; on the other fide of

the fide-doores, there were two Lauers for holy water, to sprinkle the Incommers, and in

the South-west corner fast by the great doore is there a place seemly inclosed with Ioyners

in circuit is not fo bigge as Oxford, but very much bigger then all Portesmonth within the for- 40

very foultering, from fine in the afternoone hottest of all the rest till midnight, which time

The description of the citie of two flories height onely, but very ftrongly, and the roomes are goodly and large, with great 30 of Saint John de Puerto Rico.

Fresh aire.

Heat how or

Great dewes, Greatneffe.

Carbedrall Church de-

fcribed. No classe The doores.

the Church.

Iland; befides his Image there were many other in particular shrines, which the Souldiers could not bee held from defacing vnorderly. There are in the Citie three or foure little Chappels to Saint Anne, Saint Barbara, and others. Befides the Fort, which held out those few dayes, and is of some twice twelve score re-

worke, where is a faire Font placed. This Church is facred to Saint Iohn Baptist, as is all the 63

moved from the Towne: there is in the West and by South side of the Towne a strong Castle, The Castle, built of squared stone, commonly called the Kings house, named before Fortileza, wherein was found good ftore of Munition. Betwixt this Cattle, and the Fort Mora, there is another peece of fortification of squared Stone and battlemented, it also coasteth along the Sea, and may beate the harbour. So that all things confidered, it was the mightie hand of God, which with the loffe of two men onely at one that flaine with a peece of Ordnance, delivered a place of fuch flrength, to fo small a troope of men, the rather it it be considered, that we came not thither vnlooked for ; for they had particular warning a moneth at least before , and to the waterfide where Boates vie to land out of the harbour, they had cast vp a strong ditch to impeach landing there, but God brought vs a better way. There is also a faire Frierie Handing on the North fide Monasterie

of the Towne, but little diftant from it: it is built of Bricke in a good large square, with a Church and Hall, and all necessary roomes for a Pryor and Couent of Fryers, it seemeth not to be perfected yet, for they are beginning of a Cloyster not yet couered. The Couent was fled all, fauing one old Fryer, who in the little broken Latine that he had told me, that they were Dominicani ordinis pradicatorum mandicantium. The scituation of this place is exceeding desighted full: it flandeth vpon the eatie hanging of a hill, inclosed on three parts well neere by the Sea. The foile fandie and very light, like to our Rye-fields in England : the temper as in that height hot, and yet rather effectually and in operation, then to the lende. There books have their glewed backs, there melted and loolened; Flowers or Fruites candied in England, there lose their crust,

20 and English Comfits grow liquid. But after some little acquaintance, it is likely it would proue a very healthfull place; for though they speake of some mortality (as what place in the world is alwaies free from that scourge of God!) that hath bin there of late, yet hane I bin told by them that have lived there, in seventeene moneths there have not about two bin buried, and those of extreame age. And at his Lordships comming hither people of 80. and 90. yeares old were of

good abilitie of body.

The rest of this little lland (at the least halfe of a league in length) is for the most Woods com - Woods of replaining of the want of dreffing and industrie, yet are they all youthfully greene, and none with knowne trees, out some fruite or other, but so strange as would pose the professors of that skill in England: and in these woods Horses and Oxen grow fat, if they be suffered to rest. Therein be also some large

30 inclosures carefully dressed, not wnlike to our manner of dressing Hop-yards, and every hillocke laden with the fruites of the Countrie. Lemmons or rather Lymes, and the goodlieft Orenges that ever I faw are ordinarily to be found where no man fet them. In and about the Towne there is flore of Coker-nut-trees, which, befide the excellencie of the Fruite, give a very delightfull gracing to the Towne. There is not in this little Hand any knowne River or Spring', but hard beyond the point in the other lland there is an excellent Conduit of very good fresh water, handsomely ouerbuilt with squared Stone; and in the Towne every house hath a large Well, and some two, so as they cannot wand water in such plentie of raine, which is there both often and abundant. And if men will not lose themselves with overmuch ease and pleasure, there will be no necessarie thing wanting. But the eminent and knowne profits of this place are Ginger,

40 Sugar and Hides, befides the fecrets of the Gold Mines, how foeuer of late yeares neglected. Some realons have beene given, why the King left working though be knew there were exceeding flore of Gold. The first is, the very store of Gold; for say they the sweetenesse he found, made him vnwilling to haue any copartners, and therefore knowing this place to bee the neerest to the Indies to Why those those Countrimen, whom he most feared that they would in time become sharers with him, mynes are he would not lay such a baite to entice them to set footing there, where being once entered, neglected. they would not onely guild their fingers, and pay their Souldiers for the present with his Treafure, but would make this their baiting place in the longer journey to the other Ilands, and continent of the Indies, which are the very coffers whence he feedeth his warres. And if it be obiected, that the working in these Mines was ceased before the King had cause to feare the Eng-

50 life or French invasions thereinto, there being then no warres twixt him and them; let them rest satisfied, that with the answer made by a Spaniard to his Lordship, obiecting the same, that the marres were then a brewing. Secondly, they tay that the King left working in this, because he would have all not onely this, but the other Mines alio; for he faw that all men, as they doe love wealth, so doe they also seeke after ease, And if with lesse labour they may get the same profit, none will undergoe needlesse trauell. From which generall, the descent is very easie and direct to this particular. That if in a shorter voyage and lesse time his subjects were sure to make themfelues Masters of as much gold, as if they went farther and should come no heavier home; hee thould finde but few that would fetch gold from Peru, or the other more inland parts of the Indies, when as they might have it with halfe the travell, and in halfe the time. Befides, the Spa-

60 mards great lands and pouertie of men will not fuffer all workes goe forwards at once. There are among the Spaniards whom God hath delivered to his Lordships hands, the same Lansois of whom was spoken before. In what reckoning hee is held by the Spaniards, may bee perceiued, by their imploying him, in time of fo great necessitie. Once it is confessed, that hee almost onely was her that held the rest from present yeelding, and who after yeelding (which

yet they fay was without his confent) taketh the loffe of the Spaniards most of all to heart. He seemeth truly to be wife about the common pitch of Souldiers which is his profession, yet hath he beene heard fay and protest by the faith of a Souldier, that there is not fo rich and good a myne in all the Kings Dominions to the Westward, as that of Puerto Rico. Others whose fathers were imployed in the workes, report what their dying fathers told them. But that which maketh most of all to the purpose, is the present preparation which the King is even now a making, for the reuiuing of these workes afiesh in Puerto Rico, by setting two hundreth Negroes to worke, and for that purpose had fent great store of Mattocks and Spades thither. there found in his store-house, and for what other vie they should have needed, is not well Much time was spent in taking order how the Spaniards might be dispatched to Carthagena:

(for thither it was refolued they should bee sent) being a place so farre to the leeward of Puerto Rico . as that they neither could in hafte themselves make any head, nor fend newes to Spaine, to procure the leating of any forces thence : and in prouiding victuals for this place, and repayring Suile descryed. This that were first to come for England. Vpon Thursday being Saint Peters day, there was a faile discryed at Sea in the morning, and by noone shee was come into the Harbour, which with much aftonishment shee found turned English. The Spaniards had some few daves before reported that they looked for a ship to bring from the Hanana much of the Souldiers pay that was behinde. This held vs for the time in great suspence of hope and doubt, whether this might bee shee or no; the rather because this seemed to bee of the same bignesse that they had 30 spoken of , but when thee was fallen into the trap , it was found indeed to bee a very Moule. where we looked for a Mountaine. For her lading was a number of poore naked Negroes from Angola to bee fold there. Yet was shee a pretie Boat, and of her lading likely to bee made of good vie. Within few dayes after there was another faile almost taken after the same manner. yet perceiuing a greater fleete riding there, then shee could hope to finde Spanish shee got her tack aboard, and went away lasking, to that though the Affection was fent away in chace after her, yet shee escaped.

A thip of Ne-

Vpon Friday being the seuenth of July, all things being made readie for their passage, the Spaniards were imbarked in a Caruell, and in another thip, which during the time the thips rode without the Harbour, for feare of them whom shee could not passe, or enuie that they 30 should receive good by her, ranne her selfe desperately ashoare, but shee and most things in her were faued, and here flued the fending away of a better ship. With these two, wherein the baler Shamards were put, there were two other shipsient to wast them, wherein also wene the Gouernour and some few others, who deserved some respect. And for themselves it was permitted them to come directly home for England. The next day being the eighth of July , there came to his Lord(hip two Negroes from the mayne Iland with a flagge of truce, and a letter from one Seralia, an ancient Commander in that Iland, and who ypon a wound received in the first fight at the bridge had with-drawne himselfe into the Countrie. The effect of his defire was, that being in great diffresse through seare of the English, that daily marched up and downe the Countrie, he defred his Lordship to grant him and his protection to travell without 40 danger. Whereunto his Lordship made this answere to be written, and fent him. That he must absolutely denie his request, but yet if himselfe, or any of his Nation, or any dwelling with him or them would within eight dayes come unto him to Puerto Rico, be should by the vertne of that his Letter bee protected from being taken or spoyled, by any of his Souldiers : and this hee willed him to fignifie to them neere about him, that they might give notice of the same throughout the whole Iland. And further, his Lordhio promifed that to as many as would come, that they should both come fafely, and if they fo would should bee imbarked, and fent away as the Conernour with the rest of the Spaniards were alreadie.

His Lordships honorable resolution and intendment was, not to come so farre from home, to take onely or spoile some place in this other world, and then run home againe: but hee had de- 50 termined (by the leave of God) to keepe Puerto Rico, if it pleased God to give it into his hands. That was the place he meant to carry, whatforuer it might coff him, being the very key of the West Indies, which locketh and shutteth all the gold and isluer in the Continent of America and Brafilia. He knew that Saint Domingo might with much leffe loffe bee taken, and would bring much greater profit for the prefent; in regard whereof, and of the delire hee had his Aduenturers should become gayners, his thoughts sometime tooke that way, but finally they stayed at Puerto Purpose of flay Rico, and there settled themselves. As this was his resolution before hee had it, to was it alto after he had it, and then not onely his, but every man of worth or fpirit faw fuch reason in his Lord. fnips defignments, that fome thought themselves not so graciously dealt withall, that they were paffed ouer, when others were named to stay. But God had otherwise disposed. For within a winde that his Lordship had beene in Puerto Rico, many of our men fell ficke, and at the very first not very many dyed. The Spanish as well as the English were both ficke and dyed of the ticknesse, as befides Seralia was feene in divers others. O hers suspected their bodily labours to have procured it, and both feeme to have concurred.

the place.

fickneffe and

In July and August is their Winter, so called for their great raines at those times, which to bodies alreadie rarified by the heat of the Sunne then ouer them, and yet rather where vehement led of shunexercise hath more opened the pores whereby inward heat is exhaled, must needed be very dangerous. It was an extreme looleneffe of the body, which within few dayes would grow into a in luly and flux of bloud, fometimes in the beginning accompanyed with a hot Ague, but alwayes in the August. end attended by an extreme debillitie and waste of spirits: so that some two dayes before death. The diferse, the armes and legs of the ficke would be wonderfull cold. And that was held for a certaine figne of neere departure. This ficknesse viually within few dayes (for it was very extreme to the number of fixtic eightie, and an hundred ftooles in an artificiall day) brought a languithing 10 weaknessequer all the body, so that one mans sicknesse (if hee were of any note) commonly kept two from doing duties. And this was it, which rather then the number alreadie dead, made his Lordship first thinke of quitting the place. For though towards the beginning of July, there were not much about two hundred dead, yet was there twice as many ficke, and there was no great hope to recouer the most of them. The ships were left weakly manned, for when we landed we landed about a thouland men, of which the greater part was dead or made voferuiceable for the prefent. There were aboue foure hundred reported dead when his Lordship left the 400 English Towne, and furely as many to ficke, that most of them could not bring themselves aboard, before dead of ficke his Lordhip left the place. After that it was once opening guernatures around before the his Lordhip purposed, after that it was once opening guern out what his Lordhip purposed, after the mass order taken to make readie the flups, in which time their things happened. Vpon Fig. 20 day the feuenth of July, there was a faile diferyed, which being come in was found to bee one of our owne, though made ours by purchase. Heretofore it was noted, that at our comming from the Canaries, wee wanted the Frigat and one of the black Pinnaces, which being fent vpon a piece of feruice with Captaine Slingsby in the Confent, had left him, and were gone after a chace, but how farre or whither none knew till this faile came in , which told vs that they had taken that chace, whose lading was Muttons onely and Hennes, passing from one Iland to another, but withall they had to irrecoverably lost the ficet, that after they had there stayed five or fixe dayes, beating vp and downe to finde vs againe, but without effect. Captaine Harper that commanded the Frigat, was forced to breake open his Letter, to know his direction whither his Lordihip had appointed him to come to him. According whereunto they first stood for Margarita, where 30 not finding his Lordship, nor hearing any newes of the fleet; they put off agains for Puerto Ruo. according to the direction they had received. But by reason of the violence of the Current there not to well knowne to them, they were driven to the leeward of Puerto Rico, and so had beene at Domingo before they came to vs. There they heard newes of his Lordfhips being at Puerto Rico, and that he had taken the Towne, but the Fort held out itill. Making therefore all the halfe they could bearing up as high as the Paffager, they got thither at last. The men in this ship were they which had beene in the black Pinnace, but because shee began to bee leakie, and not to brooke Black Pinnace these Seas, they had funke her, and put themselves into the prize, which being of better faile sanke. then the Frigat, had out-gone her some dayes sayling, for they told vs shee would also bee there

within few dayes, and so shee was on Tuesday next after, having lost one man of their compa-40 nie, all the rest were very strong, and in good liking. Vpon Wednesday the nineteenth of July, there came into this Harbour a Caruell: Shee was found to bee of Margarita, laded onely with pattengers that were bound for Spaine. There were also found some rags and medicine peatle, to Athousand the value of a thousand Dockets; the men were not many, and it should feeme they had not Ducats worth further furnished themselves, then might provide them necessaries at their arrivall in Spaine, and of peatles to present their friends. Vpon interrogatories therefore he found it very certaine by the agree- tound. ing confession of them all, that they were so farre from hearing of any fleet of the English in these Westerne parts, that in much securitie the Kings Chist was yet remayning in Margarua, with The Kings rich no more then the ordinarie guard. For befides the old Garnion of about thirtie Souldiers, there Chift of peris was not any new supply. Onely they had received direction from the King, that seeing the in Margarita.

Sc Chift was very rich, they should not aduenture to fend to great treature without assured strength; and therefore his pleasure was fignified to be, that it should attend his fending of some Gallions or Frigats for the lafe waiting of the same. The Chift had not beene stirred some yeeres , and therefore rich it must needes be, in a place which so plentifully yeelded pearle. Triall was made by his Lordship with three ships; but Margarita lying South-east or South-east by South from Puerto Ricco, and the windes at that time of the yeere constantly blowing East South-east or South-east by East, they were forced backe frustrate of their hopes.

3. IIII.

IIII.

Purpose of returne. Treatie with the Spaniards. His Lordships departure. Description of the Iland, the Beasts, Fruits, Plants, dec.

Is Lordhip after he faw it was not Gods pleasure, that this place should vet bee kent by the English, had made some offers afarre off to the Teniente. and other chiefe men that were in the mayne lland, for ransomming their lland and Citie. To this purpose he vied one Antonio Robles, a Licenciate in physick, that had beene taken in the thip of Angola, whereof I noted fomething before. This Robles is a man, whom fomelearning 10 and much experience added to his naturall wit, had made very subtile and craftie. Hee once returned, but soone after gaue the slip, as also did two others. By reason of this accident, the old Gouernour and the rest of the Spanuards, were restrayned of much libertie they had, and were kept in closer durance : which wrought with them in such fort , that at his Lordships returne into the Harbour, the Gouernour Pedro Suarez made offer to his Lordship, that if it would please him to fend one Vincent Lopez (that was in restraint with him) againe to negociate with the Teniente touching the ransome of the Citie and Stansies, he would become suretie for his returne. His Lordship refused to write any more to men so vnworthy of his curtesie, which they had much abused; Marry if you, said my Lord, doesee likelihood that any thing would bee effected, and would your felfe and as from your felfe write to them to perswade them for their 20 Lores lent with owne good, I would vpon your word and furetiship, be content that the faid Lopez should passe, Thus vpon Tuesday the first of August, was Lopez dispatched with one Letter to the Bishop. and another to the Teniente, both from Pedro Suarez. Vpon Thursday the third day , Lopez returned. And brought his Lordship 2 Letter in shew from the Licenciate in physick, Antonio Robles, but indeed it was an answere from the Teniente, Pedre Garcia, and the rest, into whose hands the government fell, vpon the fending away of the present Governour Antonio Musichere. In this Letter, besides many idle excuses for his owne treacherous breach of promise (the convenient doing whereof was in likelihood the caufe, that he specially was deputed to write for the reft) there was offer made, that if it would please his Excellencie, to set downe and fend them a definite fumme, which he would accept, they would looke into their prefent abilitie, and accor- 30 dingly would fend his Lordship assurance, that within seuen dayes it should be sent to him, to be received at the Point, where hee held continuall guard. Concluding, that in these sendings they fought nothing but delaies, his Lordship determined not to fend them any more, but with all speed so make himselfe and the fleet readie for a happy, and by many much delired returne, fince it was

cleere, that it was not Gods pleasure, that yet this Iland should bee inhabited by the English. All the Hides therefore, and Ginger and Sugar, which either was alreadie readie or in time could be gotten, was forthwith shipped, and so was all the munition in the Towne, all the Ordnance in any place of that lland, which amounted in all and of all forts very neere the full number of fourscore cast peeces, some of them the goodliest that ever I saw. But when they saw his Lordthis resolute to fend no more to them for negotiating touching the ransome of their Citie: they 40 nance brought now begin to fend againe and againe to him. His Lordship neuer meant to deface their Citie, or to make it vnfit to be inhabited. But withall he tooke the likeliest wayes, to conceale this from the knowledge of the enemie, whom hee could not fo well rule with any other bit, our owner strength being now growne so weake. His Lordship therefore entertayned their offers , and to farre granted their defires, that some in the name of them all, might with his Lordships Paile come to the Citie to goe through with his Excellencie. There came two, Immanuel Corders and Don Pedro de Pantoia, who without the Bishops consent, they said, offered fue hundred kintals of Ginger; at whole returne (which should bee within three or foure dayes) they did thinke that thrice fo much would be giuen. The fleet was not yet altogether readie, and Sir lobs Barkler not yet fo well recouered of his the common dileafe, as that it was deemed fit hee should pre- 50 fently commit himselfe to the Sea, being to bee so long without a bayting place; and hee by his Lordships directions left him, might dispatch the matter. These two therefore were licensed to returne to Luisa to their friends vpon Saturday being the twelfth of August, with promife to be againe with vs on the Tuesday following. But before their appointed day his Lordship set faile : yet it is not volikely his returne was formething haltened, by an accident that fell out. The old man Pedro Suarez had a countenance that promited an honest minde, and in regard of his age and weaknesse, he was not so narrowly looked to, as for sometime hee had beene. This old sicke man found a meanes to escape the Sunday-night after they were gone to Luifa, certainly not without practice with his Countrimen; and it is thought with the privitie of his Keeper. Now this mans departure onely therefore misliked, because it was traiterous and without leave, did 60 more and more confirme his Lordship in his opinion that the Spaniards dealing with vs was traiterous, and for some other end, then was pretended. And therefore seeing his owne stay should not be needfull (for he knew Sir John very fufficient to dispatch any thing that was to bee done) be prefently commanded that his owne ship should weigh, and with her, of great ships onely

CHAP. 3.S.4. The Earles departure. Iland described. Cherenos large lands.

the Samson: of the leiler, the Royall Defence, the Frigat, the Scout, the Elizabeth, the Guiana. and two little ones that were found in the Harbour, one a Frenchman, and the other a Spanish Frigat, which were rigged during our aboad there. So that his Lordship left with Sir John the Ships left with strength of the Nauie, the Ascention, the Gallion, the Alcedo, the Confent, the Pegasius, the Sur 1.8 artles. Centerion, two frong flie-boats, and the Anthonie. The true reason of his Lordships delire to be gone from Puerto Rico quickly, was indeed a longing he had to be quickly at the llands. For hee had so plotted the voyage, that still hee would have a string left in store for his Bow. And now hee had intelligence that the fleet of Mexico, which hee knew was to goe this yeere, was even Caufe of the now you their dispatch. For your very good aduertisements he was given to vinderstand, that Earles quick to the fleet meant to dilimbogge the first light Moone in their September, which falleth out to bee departures

the feuen and twentieth of our August, and his desire was to be at the Ilands before them, which he might well hope for being in the height of the Bermude by that time they flould put forth of the Bay. Besides this he had reason to looke for the meeting of a Carack, if by the middest of September hee were at the Hands. For though they, which are homewards bound having made their voyage in the East Indies, ordinarily have timelier passage, and areat home by August, yet if any of them, which this yeere were to goe from Lifton, should be put backe againe, September is the moneth, wherein they were to bee expected at the Agores. And for their more certaine meeting againe with his Lordship, that so all the fleet might come home together, his Lordship left them this direction, which was given to every thip vader his hand. Ton Shall fleere in with 20 the Southward part of Flores: if you finde me not in that courfe, then feeke me betweet ten and four-

teene le gues of Fayal, West South-west. If there you finde mee not , then come through betweet Fayal reme in gues of paya, reft someo-mers, of source you have meened, received coroning versives rayal and the Pike; and feek me in the Road at Gricola; of you find me in none of thele places, you may be afford I am gone from the lands for England. And for the Towne, Sir labo had order given to leaue it vndefaced, fauing that the Fort Mora should bee razed to the landward. Thus wee left Puerto Rico, and steered as directly to the Hands as the winder would fuffer vs, which are there continually Easterly, yet served vs so favourably, that blowing much at East South-east, wee tooke our felues to hold a North North-east course, allowing our ships to drive one point to the leeward; which courie it we could hold, we hoped to weather the infamous Iland of Bermuda. notorious with vnmercifull and incredible formes of fearfull thunder and lightning. It was the The Earle de-20 fixt day after our departure from Paerto Rico, being Saturday the nineteenth of August, when I parted from

fixt day after our departure from Press Are, being Saturday the Infection of Language, which lyeth in Press Rice the writ out this note, then were wee a great way from the height of the Bermada, which lyeth in 14 of Augusti. thirtie three degrees.

Now we are in the way from Puerto Rico to the Ilands of Agores, which must needes be found a long passage, and the way being not much beaten with resort of the Passengers, puts me in hope that this may be a leifurefull place, to pay a piece of a promise that I made before, to say something more of the nature and qualitie and largenesse of the mayne Iland of Puerto Rico. The meanes which I did most wish and hope for, to enable mee the better for the payment of this debt, I could neuer with conveniency come by. For I alwayes waited if his Lordship would paffe ouer into the Mayne. For without him I had no great defire, and indeed I should have beene 40 quickly miffed, feeing it pleafed his Honor to vie mee in the dispatch of all things, which were The Authors to be done by warrant or direction under his hand. So that what foeuer I shall fay here, I must employment

be content to report vpon the report of others; and I will not tell you any thing, which (mee with the Earle, thought) my felie did not first fee reason to beleeve. The plat and figure of the Hand is a square, Of the a ture, altera parte longins, the length exceeding the breadth neere the proportion of feuen to foure; for qualitie, and it is told me, to be fixe and thirtie leagues long, and twentie leagues broad, bearing it felfe out largeneffe of from end to end neere in the fame diffance. It lyeth Eaft and West: at the West end the two themayne Icorners doe fo jut out, that they make a goodly Bay betwirt them, but yet not fo profitable, John de Purtie because a goodly River, which would gladly disburden it selfe into the Bay, is choaked with Rice. fande, which the Seacasteth vp into the mouth of the River, which being naugable a good way yp into the Land, is within a stones cast of losing his old name, and being called the Sea, made shallow and wrift for the receit of Vessels of burthen. There are indeed in the same Bay other

leffer Ruerets, whereat Paffengers vie totake in freih water, as Sir Francis Drake did, after hee was beaten from the Citie of Puerto Rico , and put forth thence to Nombre de Dios. Vpon this part of the Hand, which is commonly called La Aquada, in English, The matering place, the greatest Commander, and of largest possessions, is, or of late hath beene, one Cherene; whose proper land, is thought to containe in compatile and circuit neere the quantitie of ten leagues. The other end, the Easterly end is knowne by the name of La cabeça de San Inan, in English Saint Johns bead. The Citie of Puerto Rico is his right tide or arme : and the South fide about the Countrie of Cheama (whither the Bishop at our comming had carried himselfe) will be answer-

60 able to the left fide or left arme, as being leffe fit for action, and his feet is the watering place. The most famous Rivers of this Iland are Ton and Baiamond, the rather because they runne into the Harbour of the Citie of Puerts Rico; whereof Toa is by much the greater, and falleth more with River Toa the West of the Towne : This River riseth out of a Mountaine, called Guiamo, being on the South fide of the mayne Iland, fome fifteene or fixteene leagues from Paerto Rico to the Eastward;

River Baig-

Gold found

ordinarily in the Rivers of

Saint Iohn de

Puerto Rico.

Basamond rifeth betwixt the parting of Tos and Luifa, and runneth a Northerly, but more E2- 10 flerly course withall, till it mingleth it felfe with falt water on the South-west side of Paerto Rico. The Iland is watered with very many other Rivers, and Riverets and Springs without number, or names, but those that give or take names of the Villages and Townes which stand vpon them, for the most part runne Northerly. For besides Guiamo , which rifeth in the Countrie of Coama, and runnethinto the Southerly Sea, and the River whereon Saint German (which also is called Salamanca and Guadianilla) is situate towards the West end of the Iland neere to Cape Roxo: all the other of name runne to the leeward of the Iland, and fall into the Northerly Sea. As first and next to Puerto Rico to the Westward, the River and Towne of Saluco: next to it Guiamo, then the Recibo, twixt which and the Laguada is another, whose name I could not learne. The Laguada, whereof I spake before , and which gineth name to the Westerly end of 20 the Iland, where Sir Francis Drake (as I faid) watered, is next vnto the choaked Bay before mentioned; in which Bay at the North-west Point is the Gawaraba, which the Seas violence hath made fomething unprofitable for nauigation, fo that the passage to Saint Domingo, and the other leeward parts of the West Indies, are most ordinarily from the Laguada, if they of the Westerly part of the Iland have any butine le that way. For as Saint Germans or Salamanca, though I have heard it to be a Harbour and a Sea-faring Towne, yet I am told so much to the contrarie, as makes me doubt of the former report, though I dare not absolutely affent to this later, though a Spaniard of good understanding told it me. Now, in every one of these Rivers which I have named is there gold found ordinarily before it be fought. And (I know it to bee true) when the Spaniards perceived by his Lordinips manner of leaving the Citie of Puerto Rico, that hee went not away 30 without purpose to returne, one of them told his Honor in plaine termes, that he could not thrust his spade into any of these named Rivers, and many other besides these, but hee should finde gold. This certainly is true, and I have feene the experience, that fome of the gravell of one of thefe Rivers being brought to his Lordihip because it looked rich, when triall was made, onely by washing away the fand and grauell, there was cornes of very good gold found in it, and that for the quantitie and proportion in great measure. Where, because we are againe fallen into this argument, I will report vnto you a certaine truth , whereby the richneffe of the mynes in Pnerto Rico may be efteemed. One Ioancho de Luyando, a Mint-mafter in this Iland, dwelling in the Guadianilla neere to Saint Germans, or at the least having workes there, tooke a bullion or masse of gold fo pure, as it needed no further triall, that being jent to the King it was found worth three 40 thoutand and fine hundreth Duckets, and diners times he found such plates, that onely splitting them, he made himselfe trenchers of gold to eate his meat on. This man may bee judged to have beene of no great either wit or care; for it is certainly reported, that oftentimes meeting his owne flaues comming out of the Countrie to his house in Paerto Rico with flore of gold, hee did not know them to be his owne, till themselves told him so; and yet this man dyed so very rich, that he left every of his three sonnes a hundreth thousand Duckets; insomuch that the youngest of them being in Spaine upon the dispatch of some businesse, which his father had left unfettled, was there thought of flate fo good, that a Marqueffe thought his daughter well beflowed voon him in marriage; But fee how nothing will last where God with his preferuing bleffing doth noe keepe things together. For at this day, scarce is there any remainder left of all his riches, and 50 this now most poore though great Lady, not being able to proportion her selfe to the lownesse of her fortune, and besides vexed with her husbands ill conditions, hath by authoritie left him, and having entered religious profession, is at this present in a Nunnerie in Saint Domingo.

Vanirie of

The foile,

I have beene very inquilitiue of the best observers, and most able to judge among ours, that haue voon occasion trauailed into the inparts of the Iland. They doe agreeingly tell me, first that their wayes are very myrie, or rather dirtie, as proceeding of mold rather then gravell or fand; now, the prouerbein England is, that that Countrie is best for the Byder, that is most cumber some to the Rider. Secondly, the graffe and herbage they meet withall everywhere is very proud and high, though somewhat course, which argueth a lustinesse, and strength of fatnesse in the soile, and which wanteth onely flore of mouthes to ouer-come that luxuriant pride, and to bring it to 60 the fineneffe which we most commend in England, which is made most probable, by that, which in the third place they report of their experience, that the foile is a black mold, underlaid within tome two foot, with a laire of reddifficlay, which is one of the most intallible marks by which our English Grafters know effeir battle and feeding grounds. The whole Iland is delightfully and

CHAF3. S.4. Wild beards, Gingers, Sugars, bides. One man hath 12000. beenes. 1171

pleaforably diverified with Hills and Vallies. Among the Hills there is one eminent above the relt, called the Lequilla, commended with the greatest plentie and riches of mynes. And yet M. Lequilla. none of the Rivers that I can heare of, have their heads from thence, which perhaps may bee the reason, why it about the reit is lesse wasted. For they say that in the other Hills also there are veines found, of whose pourtie no man needeth to complaine. This Hill which they call Loquilla, is placed Easterly aboue Lussa. The Vallies are much wooddy, but in very many places miterlaced with goodly large Playnes and spacious Lawnes. The woods are not onely underlings Woods and (as in the leffer lland for the most part they are) but timber trees of goodly talneffe and flature, fit Timber, for the building of ships, and of every part of them. For not to speake of a ship which wee our 10 felues found here a building towards the burthen of a hundreth, the great Eougenia; a ship of a thouland, having loft her Malts at Sea, had them all made here of the timber of this Iland, her mayne Mait being of two trees onely, and being there and all other wayes fitted for Spaine, was euen you the point of putting forth of this Harbour, when Sir Francis Drake and Sir Iobn Hamkers came hither with an honorable intent to take her and the foure Millions, which shee brought hither from the Hanana. For this ship was the Admirall of the fleet, which that yeere went from Turra firma; and being taken with a storme at Sca, and having lost her Masts, with much ador recoured this Harbour, and here was agains fitted. But the Queenes Natic (vpon aduertifeadoc recoured this Harbour, and here was again nited. Due the Queenes is the (vpon aduleting finder with ment of this accident) came to just in the nick, that they were forced to finke her in the Harbour, foure millions and that with to great hafte, that the paffengers had not time to fetch their clothes, but lading and a halfe of 20 and victuals and all was loft. Some of the ribs of this great Beaft we found here, but the marrow treasures and sweetnesse of her was gone; for shee brought in her foure millions and a halfe of treasure, for the wafting whereof those Frigats, which Sir Francis burned in this Harbour, were purposely feut. For while Sir Francis was watering at Guadalupe, some of his fleet discouered the passage of thele Frigats by Dominica; which good newes (as truly they were very good) affored Sir Franeis (as he openly told the fleet) that the treasure was not yet gone from Saint lohn de Puerto Rico, for as much as he affured himfelfe that thefe thips were going to fetch it home. The Playnes and The playnes. Lawnes of the mayne lland re graced with much varietie of many kindes of fruit : for besides the great Countries of ground where their Heards roame with fuch vncontrolled licence, as that Herds almost they grow almost wilde, the champaine which they have chosen to place their Stancies and In-wilde, 30 genior vpon, are richly laden with Ginger and Sugar-cane. Their Ingenior are commonly vpon Ginger and some River, or neere some moore-marrish and waterish places, for in places of that qualitie doe Sugar. their Sugar-canes profper beit. And besides, there is much vie of water for their Mills, and other works, though most commonly their Mills goe with the strength of men and horses, as I underfland, like our Horse-mills in England, which if I had seene my felfe I should have beene better able, and confequently more willing, to have reported to you the manner and cunning of the fame. They that have beene eye-witnesses, doe with great wonder and commendation speake

of them. Their Stanfias are more inwardly placed in the Countrie, and yet a convenient necre- Stanfias for nelle to some Ruer is desired, for more convenient carriage of their Ginger to Puerto Rice, whence Ginger. they vent their commodities into other Countries; which I take to bee some part of the cause 49 why more follow Ginger then Sugar workes, because their Stanfias doe not need such choile of place, and therefore the poorer may more eafily come by them, which yet also more eafily they let vpon, because much needeth not to set vpon the commoditie of Ginger. I have heretofore said Ginger and in generall, that Sugar and Ginger are the greatest knowne commodities of this Iland. A third commoditie of the Hand besides Ginger and Sugar, I did before note to bee Hides. Whereof without contradiction there is very great flore. I have beene told by the Spaniard, that Hides.

that same (berens, whose Countrie is neere to the Laguads of the quite contrarie side to Cape Roxo, is generally reported to feede to the number of twelve thousand head of Cattle. Where- One min ha-Koro, is generally reported to recue to the number of Cattell in this lland is, feeing in the uning 12000. Westerly end thereof, which is held farre worse for feeding then the Easterly, neere Saint lobus which visually which visually 50 head, there is so incredible abundance. Once, it is generally spoken and beleeved, that by rea- are greater fon of this ouer-flowing of Beeues, it is lawfull for any man to kill what he needeth for his vie, then the East

if onely hee bee so honest as to bring the skins to the proper owners. Now, these Hides must rise sign. to a huge fumme of riches, confidering that their Cattell are farre larger, then any Countrie that I know in England doth yeeld. For their Kine that I haue feene here, are for goodlineffe both of heads and bodies comparable with our English Oxen. And I wot not how that kinde of beaft Beeurs ptofhath specially a liking to these Southerly parts of the world, about their Horses, none of which per there bec. I have feene by much to tall and goodly as ordinarily they are in England. They are well made, fees. and well metalled, and good ftore there are of them, but me thinks, there are many things wan- Theirhorfes ting in them, which are ordinarie in our English light horses. They are all Trotters, nor doe I

60 remember that I have feene aboue one Ambler, and that a very little fidling Nagge. But it may be, if there were better Breeders, they would have better and more goodly increase, yet these are good enough for Hackneys, to which vie onely almost they are imployed. For Sheepe and Goates I cannot fay that there are any great flocks, and of the two, fewer Sheepe then Goates. For I have feene and tafted of many Goates, but to my remembrance, I did not fee one Sheepe,

Goates. Why the pe are tearie. Wo lu.fh Do.s.

vet (fay they) that the Hand is not without reasonable flocks; and I have beene told so, by them who haue received information from their owne eyes. Neither can this scant of sheepe be laid voon the nature of the fole, as being visit or vinwilling to feed that fober harmleffe creature. but it proceedeth rather of a wooluish kinde of wilde Dogs which are bred in the woods, and

crabs entre if they be not Tortoi. s.

there goe in great companies together. This commeth to passe, by reason that these Does finde in the woods sufficient sustenance, and preferre that wilde libertie before domesticall, and to The wild dogs the miclues much more profitable feruice. These Dogs live of Crabs; I meane not fruits of trees: Jue of Crabs, but an Annual, a huing and fenfible creature, in feeding whereupon, euen men finde a delight, not Description of onely a contentednesse. These woods are full of these Crabs, in quantitie bigger then cuer I saw any Sea-Crabs in England, and in such multitudes that they have Berries, like Conies in English 10 Warrens. They are in shape not different from Sea-Crabs, for ought I could perceive. For I fpeake not this out of report, but of my owne sensible experience. I have seene multitudes of them both here, and at Dominica. The whiteft whereof (for some are vgly blacke) some of our men did catch and cate with good liking, and without any harme, that ever I heard complaint of, At our first comming to Puerto Rico, the Dogs of the Citie, euery night kept a fearfull howling, and in the day time, you should see them goe in flocks into the woods along the Sea fide. This wee tooke at first a kinde bemoaning of their Masters absence, and leaving of them : but when within awhile they were acquainted with vs, who at first were strangers to them, and so

Their experi-

began to leave the howling by night, yet full continued their daily refort to the woods, and that in companies. We understood by asking, that their refort thither was to hunt, and eate Crabs, 20 whereof in the woods they should finde store. I his then is the sustenance which the wilde Dogs of Tuesto Reco finde in their woods; which either fayling them fometimes, or out of a wooluith disposition they get by liuing apart from men, they fall vpon the sheepe, whereof they have made great waite; but which eafily might be repayred, if the Spanierds would bee content, to sweat a little, or to be a little wearie in killing of these Dogs. Their Goates line more securely, Goares more because they love cliffes of Rocks, or the tops of Hils, and therefore they are out of the ordinarie

fate then Sheepe. Swine.

haunt of these murderous Dogs, by reason that their ordinarie soode the Crabs are most vivally in bottoms, and along the Sea fide. Belides Sheep and Goats there is reasonable good store of Swine, which in these Westerly and Southerly Ilands yeeld most sweet Porke. I doe not remember that I have seene here either Hare or Conie, but here is store of excellent Poultrie, as Cocks and 30 Hens and Capons, some Turkies and Ginny-hens, Pilgeons in meruailous abundance; not in Fowles. Doue-houses as with vs, but which breed and build in Trees, they are both of great number and

Pidgeons in Trees.

goodness. For besides other places, there are two or three little Hands hard by Puerto Rice, neere to the mouth of Toa, where a Boat may goe in an evening or morning, and fuddenly take nine, ten, or a dozen dozen; the chiefest of these three is called (as I haue heard) the Governous; Hand. I have not marked any store of Fowle vpon this little lland, nor have I heard of more by any that have beene in the mayne Iland. Parrots and Parrachetoes are here, as Crowes and Dawes in England; I have ordinarily feene them flie in flocks, and except it bee forme extraordinarie talkatine, they are not here much regarded, as it should feeme.

Parrots as Crowes.

Now, fruits of the lland are abundant in number and measure, very excellent; Potatoes are 40 Pruits. ordinarie. Their Pines are in shape like a Pine-apple, and of this likenesse, I thinke, these had Pines. their names, but neither in feeling or tafte are they any thing like; for that wherewith this Pine is inclosed is not wood, but foft, that you may fquease it in your hand, and so apt to bee mellow, that it will not keepe long, whereas a wooddie Pine-apple is of an exceeding durance and lasting. The taste of this fruit is very delicious, so as it quickly breedeth a fulnesse. For I cannot liken it in the palate to any (me thinks) better then to very ripe Strawberries and Creame, the rather if a man haue alreadie eaten almost his belly full: for then they much resemble a Pine; I haue seene some a quazter of a yard long at least, and in proportionable thicknesse, to bee like a Pine-apple; it groweth vpon an learb like an Artichoke. Their Mammeis are of the colour of a

very darke rullitting apple, or a leather-coat, of the bigneffe of a great Coltard, the rinde of it as 50 thicke or thicker then the barke of a Sallow, which being easily pulled off discouereth a yellow, but well tailting meat, something like a Carrot roote, but much better. Within this meat, there are two or three great rugged ill-shaped stones, which (as I remember) have kirnels in them. Their Ginauas are a leffer fruit, as bigge as a Peach, and without not much volike, but within not folid as the Mammeis, or as an Apple is, but full of fuch little feedes as a Goofe-berry hath, not to greenish, but inclining to a languine colour, the taste of this is (me thought) like to a very tipe great white Plum : this fruit is (which a man would not thinke) a remedie against the flux, and lo are their Papaies, a fruit like an Apple of a waterish welsh taste. They have Plums blacke pute good a and white, their flones much bigger, and their meat much leffe then in England, and thefe also

That and Pa-

Guiauas.

ftay the flux. And so doe their wilde Grapes, which are a fruit growing in Clusters, and therein 60 onely (me thinkes) like Grapes, they are round, and as great as a good Musket-ballet, and yet Wittie grapes. have they very little meat upon them, for their ilone (if that which is not hard may bee called a stone) is exceeding great for the proportion of the fruit, infomuch that the meat fremeth to bee but the rinde of this stone. A stone I call it though you may put it together with your ingo, but

it hath a bitterith kirnell in it, and that which is without it is meat , and that of a delightfull faporous tafte. Their Plantines are a fruie which grow on a fhrub bet wixt an hearb and a tree, but Plantines, it is commonly called, a tree of the height of a man, the ftem of it as bigge as a mans thich . the fruit it felfe, of the bigneffe and shape of a Goates home, it groweth vellowish and mellowise. ing ripe either vpon the tree, or with keeping, and then eaten raw or roafted, it is a good meat. comming neere to the rellish of an Apple-John , or a Duson that hath beene kept tillaris overripe, fauing that me thought I ftill found fome tafte of a roote in it, the meat of it is lapped vo in a thin skin, which being scored the long way with a knife, easily delivereth what is within it. Their Coker-erees please the eye , as well as their Nuts doe the tafte. The body of them is but Cotos To flender, no where to bigge as a mans middle, and vowards growing proportionably leffe; till they are tilen fome thirtie or fortie foot high without forig or bough, then breake out their boughs all

at once, every one whereof is just like a goodly Oftridge feather; their leaves are focumningly for rosether, every one whereof alone is formething like a Sedge or the leafe of a wilded lilly Vro. der this bush which is the head of the tree, doe the Coker-nuts grow force force on a gree round about the Bele, some yard downward from where the branches breake out. These trees are a very great grace to the Citie of Paerto Rice, and very many there were found in it : and he that hath feene this may somewhat conceine of the forme of a Palmeto tree, for in shape they are not vnlike. This Palmeto tree, while it is young (and yet of good yeeres) is much of it felfe meat, and Palmetos. tafted (me thought) like a Wall-nut, but iomewhat bitterish; when it is old they fay it beareth 20 fruit, the Date, one of the best fruits in my judgement; I faw not any fruit your agreef the Pat-

metoes that I faw, and therefore this shall be said onely upon the report of others. Befides thefe fruits the Itand veeldeth Figs, Pomegranates, Muske-millions, Pome-citrons very faire (as my Othe fruits. felfe law) but it is incredible almost that is reported of them by men of good credit; that elsein Pome-citrons grow to folinge greatnesse, as that a very little number three or foure of thess will Huge Citrons lade a horse. Limons I did not see any, yet they say there are some but of Limes the number is numberleffe : and as for Oranges, truly I thinke they are the best rafted , and most goodly in the Oranges, world. For both their fweet and fowre Oranges are full of most delicate and taste pleasing jayce, and besides they are the goodliest both in colour and greatnosse, that ever I faw. They haue Pepper also growing voon trees, the Pepper it selfe is a little seeds of colour twick white Pepper.

20 and yellow, and inclosed in a bagge which sometime is round like a Ball, sometime it runnech ous in a picked length like a fruit, which we gather in our Gardens in England, and cate as a fallet with Mutton. This pepper is much hotter and ftronger then the blacke pepper vied with vs in our Countrie. These fruits and many more grow vpon trees, and common to them all it is. and I thinke to all the fruits of the Iland, that the fame tree at once beareth buds, greene fruit, Treesdiucti and ripe fruits, and often withall feedeth.

Now if any man thinke that wee haue found meates in good flore, but wet want bread and greene & ripes drinke, it may at one word bee answered, that the industrious and paintful can want to form either. For first of all their Cassaule specially new, and carefully defied is good bread and Cassaul Cassauly bread. keepe to well that thips that goe hence to Spaine are victualled with it to the good like to

40 fengers. This Caffauie is the roote of a fmall tree, like, me thought, wert ouer-growne Hyflope Caffmie de stalke, or a young Sallow, but that the leaves are not so broad, but by much timble woon the scribes. branches of Caffaure : this roote is very full of liquor, which must be carefully preffed forth, before the dryer part bee fit to make bread. For the roote eaten with the juyce, or the juyce by it The inyer not fore the dryer parence neco make overall to the belly, whereof death doth aften follow. Wisrifore the post-on-felfe, bringerh a painfull fivelling in the belly, whereof death doth aften follow. Wisrifore the post-on-felfe, bringerh a painfull fivelling in the belly. Spaniards generally hold it for a kinde of poyfon. Yet our men (I am told) meeting with the rootes vnpressed, and militaking them for Potatoes (whereby you may coniccture chest shape) haue eaten them without after feeling any mortall diftemper. And to a body whose naturall heat is able to ouercome their cruditie and rawnelle, there is happily no prefent danger; for they tell me that of this juyce fodden, there is made a prettie kinde of drinke somewhat like finall Ale. The bread which they make of this soote is very passing white, not kneaded into lowes,

but rolled out in Cakes of a reasonable thicknesse, yet may they be better called thin; and of fuch breadth that they lap them in foldes one voon another. Besides their Cassauie , they have Mais, Mine, which maketh a much finer bread, and vied of the better fort. There are two forts of Maiz, the leffer they fay not wnlike to Rice, in proportion and bigneffe and tafte; this I never faw either growing or raw, but I have teene it in the difh, and at first did take it for Rice, fauling that mee thought it was something over-swollen; they that eate it faid, it tusted like Rice. The bigger fort of Maiz I haue leene growing, and it is either the same or exceeding like to the grame which we call Ginny wheat; it groweth vo with a knotted stalke like a Reed, with large scattered leanes; it rieth to a fadome and a halfe at least in height, and at the very top shooteth out the

60 graine. Beildes Maiz and Caffaule, there is good flore of Rice growing in the lland, and where Rice, Rice will grow, who will make a question of Corne. But to put it without contradiction, that Corne will come vp wich good increase, experience hath determined the queftion. For that fame Mulato Chereno (whom I mentioned before) did make experience and did fow Corne, which he reaped with good increase. But because it was painefull to follow husbandrie and til-

:H72

lage, and (forfooth) Cassaule and Maiz would serve, the Spaniards would none, may this Molato halfe borne a flaue, would not bee at the paines to continue tillage. For drinks, the Spaniard doth here, as in Spaine hee doth, vie water for most of his drinke, which in to hot a climate, would well agree with the English after some acquaintance; yet the Spaniard hath two other forts of drinke, the one called Guacapo, made of Molaffes (that is, the courfelt of their Sugar) and some Spices; the other kinde, and vied by the better fort of them, is called Ale; which is a kinde of Bragget made with many hot spices. And if both thele fayled, yet have they good fore of wines, indeed brought in from other Countries; not that this lland will not nourish Vines : for I have feene some grow here in Paerto Rico very flourishingly. But I have heard the King will not fuffer them to plant and dreffe Vineyards, as a matter of policie.

Senficiue

I might here, and so would I make an end of speaking of the fruits of this Iland (for me thinks what bath beene faid, sheweth it to be felfe sufficient to line well and happily) but their Terna will not have me forget it. This hearbe is a little contemptible weed to looke upon, with a long woodden stalke creeping upon the ground, and seldome lifting it felfe aboue a handfull high from eround. But it hath a propertie, which confoundeth my understanding, and perhaps will seeme frange in the way of Philosophers, who have denyed every part of sense to any plant; yet this certainly feemeth to have feeling. For if you lay your finger or a flicke vpon the leaves of it; not onely that very piece which you touched , but that that is neere to it , will contract it felfe, and run together, as if it were prefently dead and withered, nor onely the leaves but the very forigs being touched, will so distainfully withdraw themselves, as if they would slip them- 20 felues rather then be touched, in which state both leafe and sprig will continue a good while, beforest returns to the former greene and flourishing forme. And they fair, that fo long as the parsie which touched it flandeth by it, it will not open, but after his departure it will, this last I did not my felfe obserue ; and if it be fo, it must be more then fense, whence such a sullennesse can proceed; but for the former , I have my felfe beene often an eye-witnesse to my great wonder, for it groweth in very many places in the little Iland. His Lordflip made some of it bee put in nots with earth, and yet it lineth, and how farre it will so continue is vncertaine. There hath beene Cinamon and fomething elfe given me as fruits of the Ilands, but I doe thinke they are but parities at the most, and therefore they shall not come in my bill. But now to returne to the flow steps we made towards the Hands of the Acores.

· Accidents by Sea in their was to the Azores and there.

IN Saint Bartholomewes eue wee had store of lightning and thunder, which besides the soldernation, put vs more out of doubt of our neerer approach to the Berminda. The next day about noone wee began to steere East North-east and better. Vpon Friday the five and twentieth, wee were melted with a greater and more (mothering calme 40 then any time before ; and yet (which made it strangest) wee had out of the North-west higher Seas, shen before that tame I had suer feene, in the greatest windes that we had had. The hugerefle of this Sea was perceised not onely by the view of our fight, but rather by the extraordinarie heeling of our fhip, certainly as much or more impatient of a high Sea in a calme, as of any other weather. This calme was so extremely hor, that wee were in hope it would bee like other extreames, of no long continuance; but behold it lasted obstinately thirteene dayes, saving that metimes there would be some thew of a gale, but it would to inftantly and frowardly leave vs. as if it hadbeene come puely to let ve fee wee needed not to despaire. There had beene often french of a Current, that wee were to have, and some shought that they had found it, the most durt not be apprehensue. But voon Wednesday the charterhait begen to be cleere : for though co the winde, was not worthy to be called fo, nor fearce by the name of a breath, and belides fo narrow, that we flood vpon abowling, yet we were found in that last passed artificiall day, to have run about fiftie leagues at the leatt. For whereas vpon Tueiday wee were by observation found An apparent so bee almost precifely in thirtie two : vpon Wednelday at noone, wee had the Sunne in thirtie

degree and fortie eight minutes, which if we had run due North or South had rifen to about foure

or fine and thirtie leagues. But feeing our course was three parts of the rime at East North-east,

former oblemations with greater difficulties. This was perceived by many drags, which how locuer

Hot calme

thirteene

Currentin 324 three, and two terces, and eight minutes. So that in foure and twentie houses we had rayled one

and East and by North, the thip could not bee allowed leffe way, then fiftie leagues at the least; and this being without winde, argueth a violent Current, and the rather because for the time we had a hard Sea. This was made yet more certaine by observation of the Pole-star vpon Thursday 63 at night. This opinion for a Current, was vpon Saturday Sept. 2. made undoubted, for the lubitance of the thing, I meane that there was a Current, but the circumstance feemed to varie fomthing. For the Current was then judged to fet rather to the East & by South, though this would fill the

CHAP.3. S.5. Ignorance beneficiall, Terrible forme. Description of Flores. 1175

the thin fcaped, yet they still runne or were carried to the East Southerly. And then many other things purpofely cast into the Sea to make further triall, all went the same way and that a good pace though directly ahead the ship. And yet farther if there were any breath at all, it was at South-east, so that they went against the winde that was.

And now I come to that the remembrance whereof rather then present apprehension yet maketh me grake, like the man that dyed upon the fearfull knowledge of how great danger he had paffed at Rocheffer bridge. It was a fearfull storme, which I truly not knowing how dangerfull it was, feared not much while we were in it, but fince hearing old Sea-men and of long experience finea to of it, I perceive it is good to be ignorant fometime. Vpon Thursday the seventh of Sep- Ignorance beto tember, the gile began to be very fresh and to keepe the failes stiffe from the Masts, and so contin nesicial, nued all that day. Vpon Friday it began to speake yet lowder, and to whistle a good in the

throwdes, infomuch that our Mafter made the Drablers bee taken off, and before night it had A terrible blowne the fore-top-faile in pieces by the board; this was taken for the beginning of a fforme, florme, and the storme it selfe was looked for: which came indeed about the shutting in of the day, with fuch furie and rage, as none could fay it ftole vpon vs vnawares. For I am out of doubt that I had neuer heard any winde to high. One of our Bonnets had beene taken in in the evening, and the other was rent off with the furie of the florme. And thus (for our mayne-top faile was taken in and the top-mast taken downe) bearing onely a bare corse of each, if the ship had not been exceeding firongly fided, finee could not have indured fo rough weather. For oftentimes the Sea 20 would ihip in waves into her of three or foure Tunne of water, which (the ship being leakie within board) falling often, was as much as both the pumps were able to cast out againe, though they went continually all night, and till noone the next day were neuer throughly fackt, so that they went constituing as many and the most of the data way were near throughly lacket, or that if any leake had former vpon vs under water, it could not have been choich, but fine muth have foundered, feeing the pumpes were hardly able to rid the water that was caft in aboue harches. The Miffen-faile had beene in the evening well furled (for the winde came vpon the starboard quarter) and yet the storme had caught it, and with such violence and furie rent it, that with much adoe the Miffer, yard was halled downe, and so the quarter decke and poope faued from danger of renting vp. All this was in the night, which made it much more hidious, specially in the fore-end of the night before the Moone got vp. The winde continued in this excelle of vio-30 lence till mid light, and then abated hee formething, but then began the effect of his blowing to thew it felfe, for then the Sea began to worke, and swell farre higher then before. His Lordships flaip is a very goodly one, and yet would shee bee as it were in a pit, and round about vast moun- High-swolne taines of water, fo that a man might leaue out the rest of the verse, and say onely undig, pontsu. Sea. For I protest, besides that which was over our heads, our prospect any other way was quickly Vadia pontue determined, with waves, in my confcience, higher then our mayne-top. And that (which is thrangett) round about vs : for the Sea came vpou every point of the Compaffe, fo that the poore thip, nor they that directed and cunned her, could not tell how to cunne her to bee fafe from the breaking of these vast waves vpon her. This continued all night : and though the winde fell by little and little, yet the Sea was to light, that all Saturday it was not quieted, fo that though out

40 of a fforme, vet were wee still in a fformy Sea, infomuch that our mayne-top mast was broken. By Sinday we were come to have reasonable weather, and rather too little then too much wind. And youn Monday being the eleventh of September, wee were not much from a new calme. which wee could not with much more patience have endured then a good storme; for then wee began to looke out for land, and now to come so neere, what so long wee had longed for. After the florme, the Admirall found himselfe all alone, and so were we the most part of the next day, but towards evening, came the new Frigat to vs. And a sterne her there was a ship seene, which within a day or two afterward, the Samfon came and told vs, was her felfe. With day the fif- Flores deferieds teenth of September, we had the South-well fide of it in fight, and bore in therewith till noone. His Lordship had no meaning to make any forcible attempt against it, nor to stay longer, then 50 to take in fome fresh victuals; for which purpole , hee fent the Boat off with an old Portugall, and an African of Mozambique, who bearing a flagge of truce, should give the Handers to vn-

derstand what his Lordships pleature was, that if they would let him have things for his money. he would not vie them worfe then in former times, they had had experience of him. Withall he gaue the Boat commandement, that thee should bring him answere to the East North-east side of the Iland, where he meant to come to anchor, and tarry for the newes they could learne either English or Spanish. This stay in hoysing the Boat out, gave the Samson time to get a head vs, and within awinds thee was at anchor. When behold, at the opening of the Point, first there came one faile, then two, and then three failes, and within a little the tourth was feene; it was not at first knowne what these might be, yet because the Samson being much never, made no haste 60 to weigh, we thought thee made them to be friends. And within awhile we perceived them to

have pen length their fore-top-mail heads; this put vs out of doubt, that they were of our owne fleet. For his Lordship at his departure from Puerto Rico, had given them direction that every flup flould to beare a pendent, for a marke to be knowne of their friends, and which would make fira gers neuer awhit the witer. Thele foure were the Merchant, the Afcention , the Confens,

and the Pee ifus, which by and by came to an anchor with vs. Now were wee growne a prettie from fleet againe, either part receiving new strength of other, each having formerly lost their

owne. For the storme had cattered Sir lobns companie as well as ours, though it should freme not to have beene altogether so great with them, as vs. Of Sir lohns we had not vet, the Gallion.

the Alcedo, the Centurion, the Anthonie, the Kefar, and the Doue, which were the Flemmings.

The first newes that the Boat broughe vs, made these though friends yet more welcome if that

might be. For the Boat having told his Lordihip that they could not be suffered to land, vet had

promite that his Lordship should have any thing that the lland would affoord. Mary (faid they)

we are ill prouided, by realon of the Kings men of warre, nine and twentie of them have within

ny hopefull passage, they were of Merchants made men of Warre, and with the rest or rather the

reft with them, were fent to these Ilands to wast the Caracks which were looked for at home

this veere. But the Caracks (faid they of Flores) were gone by, before their comming hither, for

the fafetie whereof, they had commandement to flay if need were, till the end of this moneth. Whither this Armada was gone they faid they knew not, nor whither it would returne, but

the very last day a great Gallion was within kenning. These newes, as they gave great cause of

circumipection and care, not to meet with them, whom we could not doubt to be too ftrong for

knowing that the Caracks were paffed, if yet they staid, it made the intelligence of the Mexico

fleet more probable. And therefore if this were the cause of their stay, our hope to make some

purchace or it, made vs more willing, to have their neighbourhood. Mary, it might bee, they

were tent to looke for our comming home, which they might thinke would be ftrag ling and

weake, and yet on the other fide the vacercaintie of our comming either at this time or certainly

this way, made this something valikely. His Lordship therefore commanded Captaine Simgley

(a fine Gentleman) to goe ashoare and to learne more certaintie what was become of the Kings

fleet, and why they came. This relation was from the men of Santa Cruz : but the intelligence which Captaine Slingly brought the fame night late, was from Villa de la punta Delgada, ano-

his Excellencie should have any thing wherewithall they could doe him feruice, and if it would

please him to come ashoare, they would take it as a great fauour. For the Kings men of Warre,

they faid, that they indged them certainly to bee gone home, for they were gone hence vpon a

fortnight before. The cause of their comming was to wast the Caracks, which all foure were

gone by, before the Kings fleet came hither, with purpose indeed to stay till the end of this mo-

neth for them. But fince the Caracks were come home, there had beene fent a Caruell of Admie

to recall them. As for the Mexico fleet, there was not at the Ilands any newes of their com-

ming this yeere. This report made by Captaine Sling by ouer-night, was confirmed early the

next morning by the Gouernour himselfe of the place (a poore Gouernour scarce so good as an

fame offer to his Lordship, and withall brought both Hennes and Muttons with him, which hee

knew hee should not give for nothing, though hee would seeme vinwilling to receive any thing.

He having beene sometime with my Lord, and told all the newes hee remembred, was licensed,

having first asked and obtayned a Passe for himselse, and a Protection for the Handers, to keepe

them from spoile by ours. His Lordship granted his suit, and (which hee farther desired) that

they might bee conceived in the same forme as those were which the Earle of Effex had given

him, within two dayes of the fame day twelue moneth; and which himselfe had carefully kept

English Constable.) But this Captaine Iuan de Fraga de Mendoça, came himselfe and made the 40

ther Towns of the Ilands. The fumme of his report (for I was by when he made it was, that 20

vs. and therefore made vs wish they were finally gone from the Ilands; so on the other fide, if 20

thefe few daves beene here, and taken almost all our prousions, for they were great ships, and full of gallants, fine of them being the fine Caracks, that should this yeere have gone for the East Indies, but being by the Condes lying on the Coaft kept in till it was too late for them to have a-

CHAP. IIIL

The first Voyages made to divers parts of America by Englishmen. Sir SEBAS-TIAN CABOT, Sir THO. PERT : alle of Sir IOHN HAWKINS. and Sir FRANCIS DRARE, and many others : collected briefly out of Mafter CAMDEN, Mafter HAKLVYT. and other Writers.

Ir Sebattian Cabota wee have alreadie mentioned in the former Booke, as a great Discourer of that, which most justly should have been called Calmate. great deale better might haue beene ftiled Cabotiana then America, neither Vefontine nor Columbus having discovered halfe to much of the Continent of the new World North and South as he (yea, the Continent was discoursed by him, when Columbus had yet but viewed the Hands) this Herrera for the South part hath

and other American Ilands, in the yeere 1517. Mafter Hakluyt hath published the Voyages of eighth. fore, which caufed much concourse of people, given to understand of I know not what enemies of God, and expecting to see some Monsterns of whom the work of the peo-Monstrous lies. ple feeing fuch personable men, but fentenced by the Archbishop to be fent back to Spame, where

Tomfor did his three yeeres enioyned penance at Simil. Boatio found the meanes to escape and Images (his Master had made an Image of our Ladie of aboue 7000, pezos price, each pezo being Master Bades foure shillings and eight pence of our money) the Reader may lee in Maiter Haelunt.

John Chilton 1 +68. thither and from thence to Nueva Bifcara, and to the Port of Nanidad on the Chiltons feuen. Iobn Chilton 1 563. thither and from thence to eveneme different and to the Fort of eventual off the teene years South Sea : to Sanfonate in Guatimala, to Tecoantepee, to Soconufeo, to Nicaragua, to Nombre de trauels in New Dios : to Potoffs. Cufco, Paita ; to Vera Paz, Chiapa, three hundred leagues from Mexico. From Spaine, and Chiapa he travelled thorow Hills till he came to Ecatopec, that is, The Hill of winde, in the end of Peru, 40 that Province, supposed the highest Hill that ever was discovered, from the top whereof are seene Econteres a hill both the North and South Seas; deemed nine leagues high. They which trauell vp it, lye at the leagues high. foot ouer-night, and about midnight begin their journey, that they may travell to the top before I fupper it the Sunne rife the next day, because the winde bloweth with fuch force afterwards, that it is should be nine impeffible for any man to goe up. From the foot of this Hill to Tecoantepec the first Towne of miles. Mem Spaine are fifteen leagues. From Mexico he trauelled againe to Panneo, and there fell fick, Good out of New spame are necesser regues.

Which ticknesse in his returne benefited him; for he tell amongst Caniball Indian which afraid to Henris Hamber. eate him for feare he had the pox, let him goe. Hee went to R. de las Palmas, and to the Mynes Sir Islm Haw. of Sacatecas, the richeft in all the Indies. After his returne to Mexico he travelled to other parts, kins his chird fpending feuenteene yeeres in his American peregrinations. Henrie Hawkes lived five yeeres in voyage to Gai-

nea, and thence

N. 1567. Mafter lobn Hawkins Generall in the lefus, departed from Plimonth with fine of Sir Francis.

Sir Francis

ther ships, the Minion, of which Mafter lobn Hampton was Captaine; the Williams. and Drage. John, Thomas Bolton Captaine; the ludub, of which Mafter Francis Drake was Captaine; the Saint John de John, Thomas Botton Captaine; the 1944, or which prairie grants Ding was captaine, ...

**Nagel also and the Swallow. Hauing on the Coast of Guines taken some fine hundred Negrous. The common the co they fayled with them to the llands of the West Indies, to fell them to the Spaniards. By tempest they were driven to the Port of Saint lobn de Vilna, where the Spanish ships with 200 000 to doe any inpounds in creasure were at his mercy , but hee difmissed them; which they repayed him with bumaniti to treacherous dealing, the Spaniards perfisionly fetting on the English contrarie to the Couenants Sauages pu-60 betwire them concluded. For after that, when as the whole fleet with their new Vice-roy comwied (h. frans ming thither had perched, if Master Hameins had not permitted them to enter the Hauen, out of weeking a which he could eafily have kept them : they practifed secretly and against agreement to certaine dealing to pu-Articles, affaulted the English perfidiously and treacherously, ving both fraud and icorne, min heartin which fight two thips of the Spaniards were funke, and one burnt; Some of ours were ungenefic to

mentioned in his Relation of the River of Place before, naming him an Englishman and for the North is by vs in the fourth Booke deliuered. A fecond time Sir Thomas Pert and the faid Cabe- SirT. Pert fet 14. were fet forth with a fleet to America, by King Henru the eighth in the eight yeere of his forth be King reigne, the same perhaps which Herrera hath also mentioned, of an English thip at Hispaniola, Henrie the many English into those parts : as namely of Matter Robert Tomfon Merchant , and I ohn Field, Mafter Tom which together with Ralph Sarre and Leonard Chilton in a thip of lobn Sweeting dwelling at Ca- fon &c. die, all Englishmen An. 1555. fayled to Hispaniola, and thence to Mexico in New Spaine, where See Hal. som 3. they found Thomas Blake a Scottifhman, who had dwelt there twentie yeeres. At Mexico, Robert Pag. 448. Tomion and Augustine Boatie an Italian, were impriloned many moneths by the Inquisition, and Spanish Inquithen brought out in a Saint Benite (or fooles coat) to doe penance, a thing neuer feene there be- fition.

dved after in London. Tomfon after his libertie married with a rich Spanifb heire. The historie at dyed atter in Longon. 1 compose atter in the cause of his imprisonment about speaking freely of A Pezo 40.8ds

Where allo is deliucted the voyage of Roger Bodenham Englishman 1 564, to Mexico: alfo of Mafter Chilton. 50 those parts, and his observations are recorded by Master Haklayt.

Earle of Effex his Iland WOV 3254 3597-The reft (as needleffe) is

omitted

When this fellow was gone, the flagge of Counfell was hanged out, &c. The returns of this fleet upon confultation after the newes afore aid , I forbeare to mention in regard of the length of this 50 discourfe. They let forth from Flores Septemb. 16. 1598. On Michaelmas day they founded, and the ground on the fallow did still more affure vs of being in the fleene : and the Scollop shells confirmed their opinion which held vs rather on the Coast of France, by the Master and others judged otherwise: whose judgement if his Lordship out of his judgement and authoritie had not contradicted and caused them to take a more Northerly courie; all had perished in all likelihood on the Whent and Rocks. For the next morning we faw the land of Normandie.

CHAP.

flaine, others taken and dispiteously tortured, all distressed; all their ships also sunke and burnt. faung the Minim and Indah, which were by a storme ensuing betrayed to famine at Sea, which forced the Generall to let 114. men on shoure to the cruell mercies of the Sauages and Spaniards. Yea, one Boat not being able to get to shoare, two were drowned, the rest getting a mile thorow Mile Philips. the Sea thither as they could, as Miles Philips one of that forlorne companie hath recorded. Some were dead in feeming two houres space with abundant drinking of fresh water, others (wolne exceedingly with falt water and fruits they found; a shower also leaving them not one drie thread, as if Heauen had pursued the Seaschallenge, without; and partly hunger, and partly the water and fruits of the Earth, within their bowels, had conspired against this poore crue. The Chiebemici Indian Sauages added their inhumanitie, killing eight of their companie in 10

the first oniet, but they yeelding (having neither weapons nor hearts to refit) the Sauages perceiuing them not to be their Spanish enemies pointed them to Tampice, faying, Tampice Christia-Port of wares, no, which they vinder flood not : but divided them felues into two companies, one going Weff-David agram ward, of which Philips was one, the other Northward, and with them David Ingram, which recovered his Countrie. After the flingings of flies, deaths by Indians, and manifold mileries, this Westerne companie got to Panuco where the Governor stripped them of the little which they Spanish gouer- had, and of their libertie, calling them English Dogs and Lutheran beretikes, and when they denours crucius, manded helpe of their Surgeons for fuch as the Indians, by the way had wounded, hee laid, they Should baue nome other Surgeon but the Hangman : and after foure dayes fent for them out of the

Prison, and with many new Halters (wherewith they expe eted hanging) bound and sent them 20 to Mexico ninetie leagues diffant West and by South , with a great guard of Indians. At Mefittlan they received kind viage. One of their keepers vied them kindly, the other would firike them to the ground, and bid them, March, march English Dogges, Lutherans, enemies of God. Thus marching they came within two leagues of Mexico, where was our Ladies Church. Nacitra Sensora and therein her Image of Silver guilt as large as a tall woman, and before it as many Silver Lampes as are dayes in the yeere, which on high dayes are all lighted. Neither Horseman nor Footman will paffe by this Church without entring and praying, After their comming to Mexico many dved, the reit had kind viage in the Hofpitall, Thence they were carried to Telenco, to be vied as flaues, but by one Robert Sweeting (fonne of an Englishman by a Spanish woman) were holpen much from the Indians, or else had all perished. After this they were put to Spaniards as servants, and had meanes to get somewhat for them-

Douillift inquilition.

63.Englishmen

fenrenced at

once. Anno

felues, till they became a prey to the Inquilition, which feiled their goods and persons, shutting them afunder in dungeons a yeere and halfe. By frequent examinations they would have pumped Somewhat out of them in matters of faith, and not being able, they yeelding to their Affertions in that kind, crauing mercie as men which came into that Countrey by diffreste of foule weather: they neuerthelesse racked them to extort confession that way, which made some to say that which cost their liues. After folemne Proclamation that all might come to this fight, they were brought in fooles Coats, with ropes about their neckes and candles in their hands to the Scaffold, George Rinely, Peter Momfrie, and Cornelius an Irifiman were burnt, others condemned Three Marrys to 200, or 300, blowes on Horseback with long whips, and to serve in the Gallies, fixe, eight, or 40 ten yeeres; others to ferue in Monasteries, in the S. Bento, fooles-coates, divers yeeres, of which Philips was one. The whipping was cruelly executed on Good Friday, two Crvers going before proclaiming, behold thefe Englift Lutherans, Dogs, enemies of God: the Inquitrors themselves and their Familiars, crying, Strike, lay on those English Hereticks, Lutherans, Gods enemies. All bloudie and (wolne they returned to prison to bee ient into Spaine to performe the relt of their Martyr. dome. Philips and the rest having served their times (in which hee learned the Mexican tongue) they had their fooles-coats hung up in the chiefe Church. The rest married there Philips escaped a fecond imprisonment and after many travels in the Countrey and dangers in Spaine, returned

23. yeeres mie Sceleton of a huge Giane. Voderstand it of the Phi-Lippine thips. Ginger how it

166 Hortop his Iob Hortop another of this company hath related like adventures. He faith, that he and some 50 others were lent Priloners into Spaine, by the Vice-roy with Don laan de Velasco de Varre, Admirall and Generall of the Spamib fleet, who carried with him in his ship to bee presented to the King of Spaine, the Anatomie of a Giant, fent from China * to Mexico; to the Vice-rov Don Marsin Henriques. The skull of his head was neere as big as halfe a bushell; his neck-bones. shoulder-plates, arme-bones, and all other lineaments huge and monstrous; the shanke of his skull from the ankle to the knee, was as long as from any mans ankle up to his wafte, and of bieneffe accordingly, At this time were also fent to the King two chills ful of earth with Ginger growing in them: The Ginger runneth in the ground like to Liccoras; the blades grow out of it in length & proportion like to the blades of wild Garlick, which they cut every fifteen daies, and water them twice a day. They put the blades in their potrage, and vie them in other meates, of pleasing taste 60 and good for appetite.

Sea Monfter

When they came in the height of Bermuda, they discourred a Monster in the Sea, who shewed himselfe three times vnto them from the middle vpwards: in which parts he was proportioned like a man, of the complexion of a Mailisto, or tawny Indian. The Generall commanded one of

his Clerkes to put it in writing to certifie the King thereof. Prefently after for the space of fixteene dayes, the weather proued very foule. Offering to make an escape they were descried and feuerely stocked, and imprisoned a yeere in the Contractation houle in Simil, and breaking prifon were taken, and by the Inquificion were fentenced: Robert Barret and Iohn Gilbert to bee Second fenburnt, leb Horres, and lobn Bone to the Gallies for tenne yeeres, and after that to perpetual pri- tence of Inquiton. Others were adjudged to the Gallies some eight, some fine yeeres. Horton served twelve stion. verres in hunger, thirft, cold and ftripes, and after foure yeeres imprisonment in his Fooles coat, was redeemed to the feruice of Hernando de Soria, from whom after three yeeres feruice more, he ftole away and landed at Portfmonth in December 1590, after three and twentie veetes mi-10 ferable bondage.

As for David Ingrams perambulation to the North parts, Master Haklust in his first Edicion David Ingram, published the fame, but it feemeth tome incredibilities of his reports caused him to leave him out in the next Imprefion, the reward of lying being not to be believed in truths. And for Sir Ishn Sir I. Hambini Hawkins himfelfe, he had made one Voyage with three thips and three hundred Negros gotten on the Coalt of Guinea to Hispaniola, 1562. and other Ports; and returned with a rich gaine. This encouraged him to a fecond Voyage with the Iefus, Salomon, There, and Swallow, 1:64. And having vifited divers Ports be returned by Florida, Anno 1567. their vinfortunate Voyage before mentioned was fet forth in which his vnjuffice to Sauge's Was chaffifed by vnjuffice of Christians, in manner as you have heard. Himfelfe with his remayning company were first endangered 20 with an extreame storme, after that with famine his men dying continually, so that the rest

being not able to manage the ship, and the winds croffing, feeking to releeve themfelves at Ponte Vedra, with fresh meate, they grew dileated and many of them died, and thereby were also in danger of a fecond Spanish betraying, which they hardly escaping arrived in England, January the twentieth 1 e68.

The Spanish indignities and treacheries were deeply lodged in the wronged minds both of Sir John Hambins, and of Captayne Drake: men borne for the honour of the English name and Na- M. Wil Hambins tion in Marine affaires. Ser lobn Hawkins was fonne to Mafter William Hawkins of Plimmouth, a man much effeemed by King Henry the Eighth, as a principall Sea-captaine. Hee had long before armeda thip of his owne of two hundred and fifty tunnes, called the Paul of Plimmonth. 30 wherewith he made two Voyages to Brafill, one in the yeere 1 520, and the other 1 522, in the

first of which he brought a Braffian King (as they tearmed him) to prefent him in his wilde accontrements to King Henry, It idemed, that Sea affaires and arts remayned an Inheritance, from the Father to the Sonne; and from him also to the Nephew, as shall after be feene : neither did the West of England yeeld such an Indian Neptanian paire as were thefe two Ocean Peeres, Ham- Sir Richard kins and Drake.

A briefe Hiftorie of Sir FRANCIS DRAKES Voyages.

F Sir Francis Drake Master Camdon reports that he hath heard him say of himselfe, that he Sir Francis 40 Owasborne in the County of Denon, of meane condition; his Godfather was Francis Ruffell Drabubuth. afterwards Earle of Bedford, who gave him his name Francis. Whileshe was young, his father being called in question for Religion, by reason of the fixe Articles fet forth by King Henry a. Camdeni Elizagainit the Proteitants) was driven to fhift, and withdrew himfelfe into Kent. After King Hen- betha pag. 301. ries death, he obtayned a place in the Nauit Royall to reade Service, and foone after was ordayned Deacon, and made Vicar of the Church of Vpner on the River of Medway : where by reafon of his pouertie he put this his fonne to ferue a Neighbour Mariner which traded with a small Barke into France and Zeland, who brought him up in the Mariners art, and tooke fuch liking of him, that at his death he bequeathed (being a Bichelour) who him his Barke. This Barke, His fire fourvpon the report of Sir Iohn Hawkens his preparations for that dilattrous Voyage 1567, hee fold dess.

go and loyned to him in focietie aforefaid , and at Saint lobe de Vana loft all, and hardly brought himselfe backe. Hereupon seeking by his Mariners practice to repaire his losses, and thereby, and as a man of warre, having gotten flore of money together, he made a fecond Voyage to recower in the Spanifo Indies what there he had loft (quad licere Theologus classian facile persuaferat) Experanonica and with a thip of warre called the Dragon, and another thip and a Pinnaffe, none knowing it but & piratica. his owne conforts, Anno 1572. fayled to Nombre de Dies, which Towne he fuddenly furprifed Drakes fecond and loft. For having landed one hundred and hittie men, and leauing feuentie of them in a Fort, Indian voyage, with the reft he went to the Market place, and there discharged his Calicuers and sounded a was written by Trumpet, answered in like manner from the Fort. The Townelmen hereby terrified, fled into Loter Vez who the Mountaynes. But fourteene or iffteene woold backe with their Hard iebufesto fee what the was tiken by 60 matter was, and discourring the Engishmen, shot and by hap killed the Trumpeter. Herenpon the Earle of they in the Fort not feeing their Trumpet answered, after they had heard the Calieuers, suppoied all those which had entred were flaine, and fled to their Pinnafles. The Captayne comming with his difand feeing his men all gone, was furprized with a new feare, and leaving their furniture they course about

fwamme and waded to their Pinnaffes and departed the Port. In the Sound of Dariene hechad nim,

Camden uti

to Nombre de Diss; and guided by them, intercepted two companies of Mules, and carried away the Gold only; for they were not able to carrie the Silver thorow the Mountaynes. Two dayes af er he came to the house of Crosses, and burnt about 200000. Duckets in Merchandize. and so departed. When he trauelled ouer those Mountaynes hee beheld thence the South Sea : and thereby inflamed with defire of glory and wealth, was fo rapt with defire of fayling therein, that he fell there on his knees, and begged of God, and befought the fauour of God to affift Dietes vow for him in that exploit, and made a folemne vow to that purpose, one day to sayle on that Sea.

the South Sea, which every day and night lay next his heart, pricking him forwards to the performance. Whiles hee was muling and hatching thefe haughtie Defignes, John Oxenham, who in the for- 10

Loba Oxenbam.

mer Nauigations, had ferued under Captayne Drake, both Souldier, Mariner, and Cooke , became a Captayne alio, and with a ship of one hundred and fortie tunnes, and seuentie men came to the faid Sound of Dariene, Anno 1 474. and had conference with those Negroes. But hearing His audacious that the Mules were now conducted with Souldiers, hee refolued on a new Enterprize, which neuer any had attempted, and landed in that place where Captayne Drake had had conference

with the Negros : and having brought his ship aground, and conered her with boughes, and hid his Ordnance in the ground, he tooke two small Peeces of Ordnance and Calieuers, with store of victuals, and went twelve leagues with fixe Negros into the mayne Land, to a River which runneth into the South Sea. There he cut wood and made a Pinnasse fortie fine foot by the keele, and therewith went into the South Sea, to the Iland of Pearles, fine and twentie leagues diffant 20 from Panama, to watch for shippes comming from Perm thither : he tooke a Barke with 60000. Pezos of Gold, comming from Queso: and flaying fixe dayes longer, tooke another which came from Lime with 100000. Pezos of Silver in barres, and delaying somewhat long sent away his Prizes, and went with his Pinnasse up the River. This delay gave opportunitie of intelligence,

Discord caufeth deftructi-Delay breeds danger.

His prizer,

and lohn de Ortega was fent to pursue him : at a partition of the River into three, when he was taking up the greatest, feathers of Hennes which the English had plucked, diverted him up the leffer ftreame, whereby hee lighted on the treasure first, Oxenbam beeing gone toget Negros to helpe him catrie his treasure, his owne men quarrelling for larger pay. Some of the English were taken, which bewrayed the ship, and the rest were betrayed by the Negros, whiles they were making Canoas for the North Sea, there to take some Barke. They contessed that they had no 30 license from the Queene, and were allexecuted, but two Boyes. Thus perished Oxenbam. a man, if his Cale had beene iust, worthy of lasting memory for an attempt so difficult, Quems finon tenuit, magnis tamen excidit aufit. The King of Spaine fent Souldiers to take those fugitive Negros, which had affifted the Englifb, and two Gallies to guard the Coast. This and Captayne Barkers frustrated attempts giue greater lustre to Drakes glory.

Andrew Barker of Bristoll, much wronged by the Inquisition, Anne 1576. sought to right himselfe in these parts, and came with two ships to Nombre de Dies , and the River of Chagre, eighteene leagues distant to the North-west , landed ten men to seeke intelligence of Negros, which they could not find, and most of the men also died of the Calentara. Betwixt that and Veragna he tooke a Prize, and another in the Gulfe of Hondaras. Mutuall quarrels betwirt Coxe 40 Coxes quarrels. and the Captayne betrayed them to the Spaniards, which affayling them, flue the Captayne and eight men at the lle Francisco. After this Coxe went with his Pinnaffe, and tooke the Towne of Truxillo, but eight men were (by realon of men of warre chaing the ship, thus forced to shift for themselves)left there to their fortunes. Fourteene others and the Frigat with the treasure were calt away. Divers of the reft after their returne were long imprisoned.

Deales happie

These indeed are pettie things to Captayne Drakes expedition in December 1577. wherein Circumnaui- he encompassed first of any Generall, and except Canaillo more fortunately then all of them together, this whole Terreftriall Globe. Hefet forth with fine thips, and one hundred fixtie three Mariners. The whole Voyage you have before at large. The Carkaffe of the shippe; or some bones at leaft of that glorious Carkaffe, yet remayne at Depiford, confecrated to Fame and Pofte- 50 ritie; in which Queene Elizabeth being feafted, Knighted this noble Mariner: at which time a bridge of boords made for her Maichte to passe, fell with one hundred men thereon, of which none were hurt, as if Good Fortune had both fayled abroad, and feasted at home in that ship. The goods taken were sequestred by her Maiestie, for answere to the Spaniard if need should bee. Some principall Courtiers are faid to have refused the offer of some of this, as Piratically gotten. Bernardine Mendeza made demand for the King of Spaine, (whose Embaffadour hee was) and received answere from the Queene, that the Spaniards had vniustly prohibited commerce to the Englifb, that Drake should legally answere it any thing were prooued against him, the goods being to that purpose sequestred, how soeuer the Spaniard had put her Majestie to greater charges againft the Rebels, which the Spaniard had railed in England and Ireland : Neither 60 did the know why her subjects and others were prohibited the Indies, which she knew no reason to thinke proper to the Spaniards, by vertue of the Popes Bull (which could nothing oblige Princes which owed him no obedience) nor by reason that the Spaniards had arrived here and there, had directed Cottages, and given names to Capes and Rivers. Neither might their things

CHAP.2. S.4. Caufes why 2. El. protected the low Countries. Saint lago taken. 1181

hinder other Princes from commerce, or to transport Colonies to places not inhabited by the Spaniards (the Law of Nations not infringed hereby, feeing prescription without possession is nothing worth) the vie of the Sea and Aire being exposed to all. Nor might any people or perfon challenge right ouer the Ocean, whereof neither nature; nor course of publike vie permitred possession. Yet a great part of the money was repaied after to Peter Sebura the Spanis A. gent, which he repaid not to the owners, but made vie thereof against the Queene in the affaires of the Spanish Netherlands, as was afterwards found. Thus farre briefly collected out of Master Camden and Lopez Vaz a Portugall. Men noated to have compalled the world with Drake, which have come to my hands are Thomas Drake, brother to Sir Francis; Thomas Hood. Thomas Blacco-10 ler. John Gripe, George a Musician, Crane, Fletcher, Cary, T. Moone, John Drake, John Thomas. Ro-

bert Winterly, Oliner the Gunner. &c.

A little before this the Prince of Orange had beene murdered, and Parry had undertaken the Came on her Maiestie, having the Cardinall Comensis instigation, and the Popes absolution to that purpose. The Spaniards had given great diffaste in English and Irish rebellions, and had lately arre-Bedthe English Ships and goods in Spaine, with other unkindenesses in Belgian businesses. The Belgia ans had offered the confederate Prouinces to ber Maiesties Protection and dominion. This se refused, but their Protection the accepted, basing discovered the Spaniards hatred to her Religion and Nation, which how ease were it to put in extreamest execution, if the Low-Countries were subdued to his full power (their ancient primiledges being all swallowed up) and so England should be exposed to Spanish

20 machinations with such opportunities of neighbouring Forts , Forces, Harbours , and Shippings. She therefore to remone present warre and future perils from her owne Countrie, with masculine magnanimitie aduentured, not for vainglory but necessitie, to undertake a businesse which made the world to wonder; being little leffe then denouncing warre to fo mighty a Monarke. She agreed with the States to minister to their aide 5000, foote, and 1000 horse at her owne charge, to be by them after repayed, the first yeares charges in the first yeare of peace, the rest in the soure following, Flushing and the Ramekins and Brill to remaine bers in caution oc. Her Maieffie fet forth a Booke alfo for ber justification by the ancient leagues with the Belgian Provinces for mutuall defence, the Spanish cruckie on the poore Belgians, and their nefarious denises against her: neither had she any intent in administring these aides, but that the Low-Countries mucht entry their ancient liberty, the and ber subjects their securitie, 30 and both Nations peaceable commerce. And to the end that warre might not first be brought home to

ber owne doores, the let forth a Fleete to finde the Spaniard worke abroad.

Hereupon Anno 1585. Sir Francis Drake with a Fleete of fine and twenty faile, and 2300. Souldiers and Sailers was fet forth from Plimmonth Sep. 12. Christopher Carlile his Lieutenent Sir Fr. Drake! Generall, Anthonie Powell Sergeant Maior, Captaine Matthew Morgan and Iohn Samson Corpo- toDominge, Oc. rall of the field : Land Captaines Anthonie Plat Edward Winter, John Goring, Robert Pen, George Barton, John Merchant, William Cewill, Walter Bigs, John Haman, Richard Stanton, Captaine Marzin Frobisher Viceadmirall in the Primrofe, Captaine Francis Knolles Rereadmirall in the Gallion Leicester, Captaine Thomas Venner in the Eliz. Bonaduenture under the Generall Captaine Ed. Names of the ward Winter in the Aide; Christopher Carlile in the Tigre, Henry White Captain of the Sea Dragon, Captaines and

40 Thomas Drake Captaine of the Thomas, Thomas Seely Captaine of the Minion. Captaine Bayly of the Barke Talbot, Robert Croffe of the Barke Bond, George Fortefeue of the Barke Boner, Edward Careleffe of the Hope, I ames Erizo of the White Lyon, Thomas Moone of the Fancis, Iohn Rivers of the Vantage, John Vaughan of the Drake, John Varney of the George, John Martin of the Beniamin, Richard Gilman of the Scont, Richard Hawkins of the Ducke, Captaine Bitfield of the Swallow. Englis Ships They tooke a Shippe of Saint Sebastians laden with fifth, entred the Iles of Bayon, and fent to the arrested the Citie to know whether there were warres betwixt England and Spaine, and why the English cause of the Merchants and their goods in Spaine were embarged or arrested. The Gouernour professed his ig . breaking out norance inboth, and that this later was the Kings pleasure. After some spoiles done about Vi- of Hostility. go, they fell with Hierro, but the Iland being poore, departed without harme. Thence they

50 went to the lies of Cape Verde, and at Saint Lago entred betwixt the Towne called Playa or S. Lagoraken, Praya and Saint Iago, landed 1000 men, and (the men being fled) entred the Towns and flor off all their Ordnance, being 50. peeces, answered from the Ships to honour the Queenes day, the 17. of Nouember. No Treature was found but Wine, Oyle, Meale, &c. They possessed it foureteenedayes. November the foure and twentieth, they marched to Saint Domingo, twelve miles within land, and found the people fled.

After foureteen dayes they departed having burned the Towne of Playa, none of the inhabitants having offered to intercede, which feemed to happen from their guiltineffe towards old Mafter William Master William Hawkins, whose men perfidiously they had murthered foure or fine yeares before, Hawkins. against their promise, putting off to the West Indies, they could not put off the effects of the Dominica.

60 aire of that Iland, which by a Calentura killed two or three hundred of their men. The first Iland which they fell with was Dominica, the next Saint Christophers, and having there fpent S. Christophers, their Christmas, they refolued for Hift aniola: and having received intelligence by a Frigot which they tooke in the way, they landed nine or ten miles to the Westward of Saint Domin_ goon New yeares day. About noone they approached the Towns under the conduct of Matter

See Candeni

1182 Domingo asaulted Ambitiou Armes Cartagena taken Mortalitie, LIB.VI

Saint Dominge affrulted and taken.

Carlile, and 150 horsemen presenting themselves from the Citie being retired, they divided their forces to affault both the Westerne gates at once. The Ordnance being discharged on them, they ran in to preuent a second charge and entred with them pell mell into the Gates, the enemy altering their fight into flight, which they made by the North gate. Both troopes met in the Market-place and there barricadoed themselues. The Castle was abandoned the next night. They held the Towne a whole moneth. They burned many houles before they could bring the Spamiards to a price for the rantome of the relt, for which at last they paid after much spoile 2000. Duckets. The pray was not much. In the Towne-house were the Kings armes, and in the lower part of the foutchion was painted a globe of the Sea and Land, a horse standing thereon with his hinder legges, the forepart without the globe, with this motto ascribed to his mouth, Non 10 From Saint Domingo they fet faile for Carthagena on the Continent, landing fome Comoa-

Ambirious Armes.

Cartigma al-

Mortelity by a Calentura. Tie Caule.

* 50 Canden. others,Sam: auche leiteare of the Generallin all places is remakeable, whose vigilance and boully presence, and labour in givan 137the this is fitted in next place to adde his Cadra exploit Anno 1587, and the taking of the rich Capeaing (16 Practing of the rich Capeaing (16)). which the Vir all business was much, that had he beene in the meaneit he had merited the highest place. To 30 taught them.

. This voyage

is printed in

Mafter Hale

but finding

tins written

nies with Captaine Carlile fine miles of, which were led on by night, the Generall with this Fleete presenting themselves before the chained Port: and having gotten the Citie, held the fame fix weekes. They tooke Alonfo Brano the Governour. After many houses burned 11000. Dickets were paid for ransome of the rest from burning. The Calentura continued, killing some (being a pestilent spotted Feuer) and spoyling others of their strength and memory for a long time. The Serena or Euening ayre is faid to cause it to them which are then abroad, if not of that Countrey : fo that by holding their watch, the English were thus infected. This forced Other Townes them to give over their intended voyage to Nombre de Dios, and Pavama, failing therefore along ft 20 the coast of Florida, they tooke and fired two garrison Townes of the Spaniards, Saint Anthonse and Saint Helena, and the Fort of Saint John. Then passing along the Virginian there they tooke home the English Colonie there remaining with Malter Lane their Gouernour, fent by Sir Wal-Fifty of To- ter Raleigh. There are faill y Mafter Camden to have beene the first bringers in of the vie of Tobacco, fince fo frequently abused by our Nation. They arrived at Portsmouth the 28. of Ju-(45 may be thou my) of the ly 15 86. They got Ordnance of Braffe about 200, peeces, and about 40, of Iron. The prey was thou most of valued at 60000. It. English. There dyed (most of the Calentura) 700. persons. The industry

HE: Maieflie being informed of that invincible Armadas preparing in Spaine (which did come and was our come the yeare after) fent a fleete of 30.lide under the command of Sir Francis Drake: the Bonaduenture, the Lyon, the Dread-naught, and the Rainbon were cut of her Nauv Royall chosen to this service. The 16.0f Aprill two Shippes of Midleborough which came from Cadiz (with whom we met in 40. degrees) gaue him to vnderstand that there was great providen in Cadez and thereabout provided to come to Lisbone, whereupon the Generall with Activities, a strength of the special position of the forces and proutions, the 19. of Aprill, thought good all positible speeds bending himselfer thither to cut of the forces and proutions, the 19. of Aprill, toinierit I: one houre before the Sunne fetting, entred the harbour of Calle, and the Spaulh Fleete there was writtenby checked vs, at the entring thereat with the Towne Galleyes, but in fhort time retired under 40 one The Pinner the Fortreffe.

There were in the Roades 60. Ships, and divers other small shipping under the force see. There fled 20. French Shippes toport Riall, and fome Spaniards, which could not be hindred of the Fleete by reason of the sholdnesse. There were lunke by vs at our comming in with shot, one Orgafer of 1000 tun, furnished with thirty peeces of Brasse, and richly laden. There were two Gallies more came presently from port Riall, and two other from Saint Mary port, but all in vaine the expenses of powder and thot, the greatest gaine to themselves.

There were to the number of 38. Shippes taken before night, and the English victours of the Roade: the Galleyes retyring under the Fortresses. Twenty Hulcks Hollanders conficated to 50 the King, and their goods fold to the Kings vie : foureteene of them were fired the other fix were at port Kiall laden with Winesand Bread, and to be prefently full laden for Liftburne one Carricke of foureteene hundreth tun appertaining to the Marqueffe of Saint Cruce: fine great Bifkainers fired, toure of them lading and taking in of victuals for the Kings provision for Lilbburne, the Saint was a Ship of 1000, tuns, bound for Lehburne having in her great store of Pikes, much Iron, Nailes, Spikes, Iron hoopes, and fuch like, fired. One Shataya laden with Wines of 250. tuns for the Kings proution, which we brought to Sea with vs, and discharged at Sea a part of their Wines, for the prouisen of the Fleete, and there fired her. Three Flye-boates of foure hundreth tunnes laden with Bisket whereof the one being of two hundred tuns and vpwards, we halfe valaded and then fired her, the other two are yet with vs in company. Sometenne 60 Barkes more laden with Wines, Raisons, Figges, Oyle, Wheate, with such like, fired. By supposition the eight and thirdie Shippes and Barkes fired, sunke, and brought away with vs, amounted in judgement to thirteene thouland tuns of shipping. There rid in light of vs at port Riall, by estimation, aboue fortie faile, besides those that fled from Calle roade.

Caricke of

C H A P. A. Cales. S. Philip the first Carike which was taken. Drakes last Doyage. 1182

They oue vs little case during our aboade there, which they shot from the Galleves. 25 2160 from the Fortrefles and from the thore, where continually they planted new Ordnance at plan ces contenient to offend; notwithitanding their Ships we continually fired as the floud came. thereby to bee cleared of them, which terrible fire was pleasant vnto vs to behold. and micrigated the continual burthen of trauaile, which lay vpon vs day and night in difcharging, firing, and valading, such promitions, with observations for good and gardable defence of the enemie. It pleated the Generall, after his great care and pames day and night, to finish this happy Action in her Maiesties service, in one day and two nights, and hee came forth againe the Friday in the morning, with very little lofe, thankes be to God.

Of twelle Galleyes, and those that came from port Riall, and Saint Mary port, tenne of them came forth after vs, as it were to make some pastime with their great Ordnance. At length, the winde standing, wee cast about againe and strooke in for the shoare, and came to ananker within a league of Cales, where their Galleyes suffered vs to ride quietly. There were also three Flye Boates more at Mallegai laden with Bysket, bound for Calez, and fo for Liftborne. We understood of their great prouisions and forces prouided within the straights. We doubt not, but as God hath begunne this worke in great happinesse. to the daunting of the enemie : fo God will bleffe this Armie in cutting daily their forces (horter, to the great annoyance of the enemy, and to the honour of our Prince and

Wee haue had the experience of Galley fights (wherein I can affure you) that there onely Gally-fight. foure of her Maiefties Ships wil make none accompt of swenty Galleyes; fo as they were alone,

and not driven to guard others.

There were Galleyes had place fitter for their adnantage in fight woon shot they receiued, they had present succour to ground under the towne, which they fundry times did wave, riding in a narrow gutter, the place yeelling no better, in that wee were dritien to maintaine the fame vitill wee had discharged, and fired the Shippet, which could not conveniently be done but upon the floud; that thereby they may drive cleare

We rest now victualed with Bread and Drinke, for fix moneths in our Ships, and Bread be-20 fides in two five Boates to maintaine a good Armie three moneths. We restall in good love with our Generall and enitie in all the whole Fleete.

After this, they came before the haven of Lysbon, where the Marqueffe of Santia Fruz was with his Gallies, whom the Generall inuited to some exchange of Bullets, but he refused. Thence they failed to the Azores, and met with a Poringall Cartacke, called Saint Philip, which had in her voyage outward carried the three laponian Princes into the ludies. This Carracke he tooke. the first of that kinde taken by the English, ominous in the name : and so it proved not onely by the loffe of to great wealth to King Philip , both in leading the daunce to others after taken, and in opening the eyes of the English to write the Indian fountaines, whence such wealth islueds wherein alfothe Hollanders quickly imitated them.

To omit other braue exploits neerer home, as that most glorious of 88. and the rest : our pur- Sir French pose is to give you the remote Voyages of this worthy Sea-man; and now lastly that last and fa- Drates last tall expedition Anne 1 595, with fixe of the Queenes Ships and one and twenty other Ships and voyage. Barkes, containing 2500, men and boyes, intended for some speciall service in the West Indies. Sir Francis Drake and Sir Iobn Hawkins were joyned in Commission. They fet faile from Plimmonth the eight and twentieth of August, November the twelfth, neere the Eastermost end of Saint luan de Puerto Rico, Sir lobn Hawkins died. The hauen of Saint lobn they found strongly lobn Hawkins. fortified against them, but yet they fired their five Shippes each of 200, tunnes, having in every of 3.10 Port Rice. them twenty Peeces of Braffe, and richly laden. Much harme was done on both fides. The five and twentieth they passed by Mona. In the beginning of December, they tooke Rio de la Ha- R dela Hacha 50 cha. They tooke also the Rancheria or fisher towns for Pearles. The Spaniards offered to ransome timen; and their Towne at 24000. Ducates which they brought in Pearle fo deately rated that the General

fent them backe, and both were burnt. The feuenteenth they tooke Tapia, and after that Saint Tapia. Martha, and the Spanib Lieutenant Generall. The leuen and twentieth Nombre de Dies was taken, a Towne subject to raine, and very unhealthfull: the roade faire, having on each side as you Nembre de Dies. come a ledge of rocks. The nine and twentieth, Sir Thomas Barkernile with 750. Land-foldiors 5.Th. Barkernile. went for Panama, a fore march thorow the woods, the way out out of the woods and rocks, very mirie, the Spaniards playing on them out of the woods. After ten leagues march, they came to a fort on the top of a hill two fuch more were betwin that and Panama, that also frongly fortie Marchfor Pafied, the enemy having knowledge before of this defigne. Hereby was he forced to returne. Ia- nama.

60 nuary the eight and twentieth. Sir Francis Drake died of a fluxe. He made his brother Thomas S. Fr. Drakes Drakes fonne his heire. Sit Thomas Baskernill succeeded. The fix and twentieth of February the death. Spaniards fleete of twenty lailes, and the Englyb met; a fight followed, & continued two houres, and then they parted. A great Ship of the Spaniards that night was burned. In Aprill following they arrived at Plummonth.

In

In this Voyage I have followed the printed Relation: but because another hath comme to my hands, written (as it feemes) by one offended therein, I have to thy other eare permitted him to ineake, that freedome of judgement may remayne to every Reader.

Quarrell be-

The Grand

The Semen and twentieth of Anenit, having our diffratch from her Maiestie, wee brought all own fleet into the Sound of Plimmouth, and the eight and twentieth day wee fet fayle for our pretended twint the Ge Voyage. In our course dongst the Coasts of Spaine, was divers meetings with our Generals where valfed many trakind peeches, and fuch as Sir Iohn Hawkins never put off till death. In this tract was put on a resolution with Sor Francis Drake, and Sir Thomas Baskeruile to take the Grand Canaria, where-Reasonfor and upon a counsell was beld, and therein propounded by Sir Francis, bow great abenefit, much bonour, and in aga of the Ca- good refreshing was offered us, and therefore would fland on most vorces. Sir Iohn Hawkins to whom nary exploit. bee Bake this veterly refused, with thefereasons following. First, there could bee no need confidering our small time out. Secondly, not possible to carrie it without haz arding all, and Thirdly, not good to lose time, which would never be recovered. To this last reason Sir Thomas Baskeruile answered. First. for time , bee-would require but foure dayes in this manner, In foure houres be would take it , and in the rest would bee burne it downe, except they would compound, thus the fourth day would be be bipped readic for our Voyage.

In this contronersie Sir Francis would goe for the Canaria with such as would follow him, and Sir Iohn Hawkins with the rest for the Indies, yet after this bard debating, at the earnest request of some friends, Sir lohn Hawkins upon the confessing of need, was content to assist them , yet in bis indgement 20 labour lost with much haward of all. Thus altogether flanding alongit, the fixe and twentieth of September we came to anchor afore the Fort that guards the landing place at Grand Canatia, where were put into our Boates and Pinnaffes, all our land men under the conduct of Sir Thomas Baskeruile Co. lonell Generall, who drew head neere the middest of the Beatche. Betwixt the Fort and the Towne, as most safety for our landing. To this place even then did the Spaniards draw two or three very small Peeces of Ordnance, with which, and with some companies of Souldiers made some shew of resistance, whereupon notwithst anding most of our smaller shipping, who accompanied our Boats with their Artillers, See Thomas made bu retraite without putting foot on land, and then to know, as it was reported, if our Generals would put their Voyage thereon or no. With this better consideration were all our men shipped a. came, and stood alongst to the Westermost and thereof. Here went many ashoare some for water, some for 30 pleasure, amongst whom, the eight and twentieth day was Captagne Grimitone with two more in his company flaine, and by Peafants as was thought? with this enill beginning, this night wee weighed and flood alongit for the Indies.

The eight and twentieth of Ollober, wee came faire by the Southermost end of Dominica : and the

thirtieth day we came all to fafe anchoring at Guardalupa, onely the Delight and the Francis, two of

our finallest Primalles, who being to becomerds out of light, was there chased by fine Spanish fries, in which

kins not able to beare his griefes out longer, fickned. Here we built fenen Pinnaffes. The fourth of No-

nember were they lanched, and we flood of for Porto tico, the eight day in the way we anchored among

we came to anchor afore the Harbour at Porto rico, where died Sir Nicholas Clifford, by a floot from

a platforme, fitting at supper in the Defiance, with this stot was likewife Master Brewt Browne burt,

who lived but few durer after, and this day alfo died Sir John Hawkins, whose death of many was much

the Ilands Virgins, where all our Souldiers were appointed to their land Captaines. The swelfth day 40

Dominica.

Sir I. Hawiss chafe the Prancis was taken, the other escaped with this newes. The last of this moneth Sir John Haw-

At Parts rice.

He dyeth.

In this Harbour rid those fine Frigats of the Kings, which came for the treasure. This place beeing well viewedby our Generall, and Colonell Generall, a counfell was beld and therein nereed , That first and most necessariest these Frigats should bee burned, and for that service was numed out the next night thirtie of our Boates and Pinnasses with fire workes, and with warlike weapons, these Frigats were fo well defended aboord, and with the Ordnance aftore, that our men returned with confaming onely one of them, out of which were faned some of the Spaniards, who reported certainly, that there the Treasure of 50 two Millions was , and fo were our men taken in the Francis.

Notwithstanding all these quickning newes after some few dayes, we weighed and stood alongst to the Westermost and of this land, where we contented us with some refreshing of water. Oranges and Plan-

tames, here were built foure Pinnaffes more. At this place fout hee abourd me with his Warrant fortie Souldiers out of the Defrance. The foure and twentieth day we weighed and flood along if for one Hand. called Knaw-law, with which wee fell the nine and twentieth day, but flayed not; thus flanding alonest. The first of December we arrived at Cape dela Vela, the fecond in the morning was put into our Boats Ain dela Haston. and Pinnalles, all our Souldiers for Rio dela Hatcha. This was taken, the people being all fied, yet here with fearch in the Woods, and intelligence of some Negros, was found great store of Pearle, Plate, Iewels, Rials of Plate, Bolts of Silke, rich apparell, with much other luggage. The fixt of this moneth, 62 brought in Ser Francis from one other Towne called Rancharia, great quantitie of Pearle and lug gage. The ninth day came in some Spaniards, with intent to ransome their houses, Negros, and some Spiniards Prisoners, and concluded for 24000. Pezos, every Pezo worth fine Stillings fixe pence. The thirteenth day, came in the same all in Pearle, and the fourteenth day came in their Lientenant for the

delinery. But in the valuing, their quantity and quality would not be taken, wherefore departed they with foure houres respue for further answere from their Gouernour Don Francisco Manso, bu answere was himleife would come to conference, which hee did the fixteenth day. After dinner our Generall and Colonell Generall, with the Spaniards had fecret conference about this Ransoms, whereupon concluding, they absolutely broke of, and therefore in all baste was fire put me some of the houses, and the Gonernour had two boures time to cleere him of our Army.

Thus baning barnt Rio dela Hatcha, Rancharia, and Tapia. The eighteenth day wee weighed and Rood along for Sancta Marca, to which we came thetwentieth day, here we onely tooke fome fine Pri- Santa Merte. Coners, whereof one was the Licatenant there. The one and twentieth, it was put to fire, and we (et fayle

for Nombre de Dios, towhish we came the fenen and twentieth day, where in like manner the recolle had 10 acquited the Towne, yet here was found by intelligence of some Negros, as I heard, two and twentie Sowes of Silver, Gold in Bullion, Some levels, great store of Plate, and Riall of Plate, with much other luggage. The nine and twentieth day. Sir Thomas Baskeruile. Colonell Generall with all his a- Sir T. E. skruils blest Captaines and Souldiers tooke their sourney for Panama, now the marke of our Voyage; who neere i we ney for

the mid-may being empeached by some Spaniards and Nogros, made their retreite to the Ships at Nom- Pasama. hre de Dios, at this encounter were few of our men flaine, some burt, some of the which there left to the mercie of the Spaniards.

The fifth day of lanuary, all our men being skipped, the towne and Galliots put to fire, we set sayle then by the advice of a Spaniard, for the River Nicorago, in which way we fell with one Hand called Elcudo, a Estudo. place which affordath nothing good, jet here wee staned from the tenth day untill the three and twentieth. when we fet faile and plied to the Eastward, which by Gods speciall famour, the eight and twentieth day

we came in with Porta laibella. This morning died our Generall Sir Francis Drake. This is the place Sir F. Drakes where the people of Nombre de Dios meaneth to dwell at. Here found we a beginning of a ftrong plat- death. torme with three Braffe Peeces vinmounted. In my opinion , this was our best remove .. for if God had not prevented our Generals purpose for the River Nicotago, it would have hazarded all her Maiefies Ships, farre with the reft. Here tooke we in ballast, water, mended our fayles, and calked our flips.

The eight of February, Sir Thomas Baskeruile taking upon him Generall, we all let faile for Santa Marca homewards, but not able to recover higher then Carthagena, as wee gheffe in the Bonauenture, with the fplitting of all our failet, put ouer for lamaica. In this course lost we the Forc-Gabt, the Sufan Parnell, the Helpe, and the Gregory. The fine and twentieth day came we faire by Canaria granda. which hore over us in the morning East North-east, and this day was all our flesh and fish spent: The second of March, making this our miserse like to be known to Sir Thomas Baskeruile, who hath given mee his promile to relieue mee at my need, his answere was carelesty for vs, and with all faid, bee would goe in with the Hand Pinos to water, which I otterly missiked, the winde then being good to stand alongst, very ill to lofe, and more for that no Englishman in our fleete either knew or ener heard of any watering or other good there.

In this reasoning betwint vs, we descried twentie sayle of ships a bead vs, who were the Kings men of Warre, wayting our home comming, it was my fortune in the Bonauenture to take to taske the 40 Vice-admirall, one of the twelve Apostles of the Kings, for fo I thought by a great golden Saint, which manned her Poope. The manner of our fight and my deserving, I leave even to the report of mine enemies, ret thus much understand, their Admirall with the rest, all the next day being in the winde, was content we should passe in peace. Thus being quietly, and we all disimbogued some two bundred leagues, I made a second demand of Sir Thomas, his promise for victuals, which he viterly refused, wherefore as well in regard of our Generals lacke as mine owne danger, with a foot in our fight, wherein it was indifferent with mee to line or die; I told him I must make more haste home then I presumed hee would, yet wee stayed with him two dayes longer, when in a storme I left him, and this was the fourteenth day of March.

Now for these two English Sea-worthies, as wee have begunne their American Adventures. so and ended them together, to I have thought good to infert this following centure of a Gentleman in a Letter of his, touching them both, as an Epitaph dedicated to their memory.

Ir , I have according to your request, and my owne plainnesse sent you here the comparison betweene Dihose two Commanders Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Haw .. ins. They were both much ginen to trauell in their youth and age, attempting many honourable Voyages alike; as that of Sir John Hawkins to Guiny, to the les of America, to Saint Iohn de Vlua. So likewife Sir Francis Drake after many Descourses of the West Indies, and other parts, was the first Englishman that did ever compasses she World, wherein, at also in his deepe indocument in Seacauses, he did farre exceed not Sir Ionn Hawkins alone, but all others whomfoeuer. In their owne natures and disposition they did us much dif-

6) fer : as in the managing matters of the Warres , Sir Francis beeing of a lively first , resolute, quicke, and sufficiently valiant: The other slow, seasow, and hardly brought to resolution. In Councell Sir John Hawkins did often differ from the sudgement of others, feeming thereby to know more in doubtfull things, then he would viter. Sir Francis was a willing hearer of enery mans opinion, but commonly a follower of his owne: he never astempted any action, wherein he was an absolute Commander, but hee

F fffff

performed the same with great reputation, and dideasily dispatch great matters; Contrariwise Sir John Hawkins did only give the bare attempt of things, for the most part without any Fortune or good fueceffe therein. Ser Join Hawkins dianaturally bate the Land fouldier, and though hee were very popular , yet be affected more the common fort, then his equals; Sir Francis contrarily did much loue the Land-fouldier, and greatly advanced good parts, where some be found them. Hee was also affable to all men and of easie accesse. They were both of many vertues , and agreeing in some. As patience in enduring labours and bardnesse, Obsernation and Memory of things past, and great discretion in sudden dangers, in which, neither of them was much distempered, and in some other vertues they differed. Ser John Hawkins bad in him mercie and aptneffe to forgine, and true of word; Ser Francis hard in reconciliation, and confiancie in friendship; be was withell senere and contreom, magnanimous, and libe. rall. They were both faultie in ambitton, but more the one then the other; For in Srr Francis was an in fa- 10 tiable defire of honor indeed beyond reason. He was infinite in promises, and more temperate in admersis, then in better Fortune. He had also other imperfections, as apine fe to anger, and bitterne fe in disferacine, and too much pleased with open flattery: Sir John Hawkins had in bim malice with dissimulation, rudenesse in behaviour, and passing sparing, indeed miserable. They were both happy alike in being Great Commanders, but not of equal successe, and grew great and famous by one meanes, rising through their owne Vertues, and the Fortune of the Sea. Their was no comparison to bee made betweene their wel-deserning and good parts, for therein Sir Francis Drake did farre exceede. This is

R. M.

A briefe recitall or nomination of Souldiers, other Englishmens Voyages related at large in the printed Works of Master HAKLVYT.

all I bane observed in the Voyages, wherein I have served with them.

Captaine Mi-

OTher Voyages might here be inserted, made by Englishmen into the Bay of Mexico, as that by Captayne W. Michelfon, and William Mace of Rateleffe, in the Dogge 1589.

Treachery of

Sir G. Careys

Earle of Suffolice.

Layles English hefore Hauana, Sir R , Dudley.

Captaine 4mas Prefton. Captaine Sum-Sir Antonie Sherler. Captaine 247-

M. Reniger. M. Pudfey. M. Hare, Sir I. Lancafter. Fenton and

which there tooke three shippes. They held fight with a Spanish man of Warre, who by fraud 30 fought perfidiously to obtayne that which they could not by vnspotted Fortitude. They put out a flagge of Truce, and after kinde entertaynment aboord the English, inuited them to their shippe, where they affaulted them, stabbing Roger Kong field the Pilot to the Heart, flaying others , and forcing the rest to trust God and the Sea rather then the Deuill and the Spaniards; thus fwimming to their ship. The valiant fight of the Content, a small ship of Sir George Careys, (Lord Hundsdon, Lord

Chamberlaine) 1591. Iune 13. with three great Spanife fhips, each of fix or feuen hundred, and one fmall (hippe and two Gallies, farre more beeing flaine of the enemies then the English had Captaine New- to fight : Heave to Mafter Habluyes report : as also Captayne Christopher Newport his Voyage with three ships and a Pinnasse the same yeere, which tooke and spoyled Taguana and Ocoa in 40 Hilbanisla, and Truxillo, besides other Prizes, and in the way homeward, were at the taking of the Madre de Dios.

The next yeere Captayne Lane Gen. of Master Wats his fleete , Captayne Roberts in the Exchange of Bristoll, and Captayne Beniamin Wood with foure shippes fet forth by the Lord Thomas Howard, Captayne Kenell of Lime-bonfe, and Captayne King of Rateliffe Road, with thirteene fayles before Hanana, wayting for purchafe.

Anno 1594. the Honourable Sir Robert Dudley let forth with two ships and two Pinnasses, and made his Voyage to Trinidada, and the Coast of Paria, returning by the Iles of Granata, Santa Cruez, Santa Inan de Puerto Rico, Mona, Zacheo, and Bermuda. In which Voyage he and his company tooke or funke nine Spanifo ships; of which one was a man of Warre of fixe hun- 50 dred tuns. The particulars are related by himfelfe in Mafter Hablust.

In him alto the Reader may find the victorious Voyage of Captayne Amias Pressen, and Captayne George Summers (both fince Knights) Anno 1 595, in which the lles of Puerto Santo, and of Coche neere Margarita, the Fort and Towne of Core, the Citie of Saint lago de Leon, were facked and burnt; the Towne of Cumana ranformed, and lamaica entred.

Sir Antonie Sherley. Anno 1596. fet forth from Hampton , with nine ships and a Galley, to Saint lago Dominica, Margariia, Iamaica, Bay of Honduras, and homewards by Newfoundland. M. W. Hampins. This and Captayne Parkers Voyage 1596, to the same parts and Ports, with his taking of Campeche the chiefe Towne of lacatan, and bringing thence a Frigat, laden with the Kings Tribute: Also the Voyages of Sir Walser Raleigh to Guiana, and other intelligences of that Nation: likewise 60 Master William Hawkins his Voyages to Brafill, and those of Reniger and Bores, Pudler, Stephen Hare, Sir lames Lancasters taking of Fernambuc: Fenton and Ward, and John Drakes Vovage after his departure from Fenton vp the River of Plate, and living fifteene moneths with the Sauages, Anno 1582.

CHAP.5. Chidleys Voyage to the Straits. Peter Carders strange fortunes.

All theie I referre to the painfull labours of Maiter Haklust, who hath well deferued of the English Nation, and of their Neptunian Heroes; that I mention not the many Voyages of others in those times of difference betwixt England and Spaine, which here and there you shall finde mention of in these Relations. Alto, Anno 1589, three thips were set torth by Matter Chillie and others for the Magellan Straites, one of which arrived there and tooke there a Spaniard, one of the foure hundred which had beene fent thither to inhabit, which had long lived there alone, the rest being famished. They spent fixe weekes there with contrary winds, and fixe only of their company returned, they also being racked on the Coast of Normandie, as W. Magoths one

These I doe but summarily mention, as an Index rather to Master Haklayt, labours, then with 10 any intent togius the discourse thereof. But the strange fortunes of Peter Carder (not hitherto published) compell me to take speciall notice thereof, which himselfe hath thus related.

CHAP. V.

The Relation of PETER CARDER of Saint Verian in Cornwall, mithin fenen miles of Falmouth, which went with Sir FRANCIS in his Voyage about the World, begun 1 5 7 7, who with seuen others in an open Pinnasse or Shallop of fine tuns, with eight Oares, was separated from his Generall by foule weather in the South Sea, in October , An. 1578, who returning by the Straites of Magellan toward Brafill, were all cast away, faue this one only afore named, who came into England nine yeeres afser miraculously, having escaped many strange dangers, aswell among divers Sauages as Christians.



Fter Sir Francis Drake had passed the Straites of Magellan, the fixt of September 1578, and was driven downe to the Southwards in the South Sea, vinto the latitude of fiftie fine degrees, and a terfe, with fuch accidents as are mentioned in his Voyage, and returning backetoward the Straite againe. The eight of October we lost light of the Elizabeth, one of our Conforts, wherein Mafter Iohn Winter was. who returned by the Straites againe, as wee vnderstood afterward at With this Can-

our comming home into England; according to his Voyage extant in print. Shortly after his fe- Winter Ihaue paration from our company, our Generall commanded eight men to furnish our small Pinnasse or had coference Shallop with eight men, whole names were these, my selfe, Peter Carder aforesaid, Richard Bur- in Sept. 1618. nilh of London, John Cottle and another, both servants to Master John Hawkins, Artjur a Duich told me share Trumpetor, Richard loyner, servant to Vincent Scoble of Plummonth, Pasche Gidie of Salt Ashe, and solemne post 40 William Pitcher of London.

This company was commanded to waite upon the ship for all necessary vies, but having not tually taken of passed one dayes victuals in vs, nor any Card nor Compasse, saving only the benefit of eight oares, the passed one dayes victuals in vs, nor any Card nor Compasse, saving only the benefit of eight oares, the vice of her in the night time by foule weather fuddenly arising we lost the fight of our ship, and though our Maiesty and thip fought vs and we them, for a fortnight together, yet could we never meet together againe. her fuccessors Howbeit within two deres after we lost them, we recoursed the shoare, and relegied our selues which he dewith Muscels, Oysters Trabs, and some forts of Roots in the Woods, and within a fortnight af. fired also ter the loss of our confo. s, wee returned backe into the Straites of Magellan, and in two places came on land on the mayne of America, to relieue our felues in certaine Bayes, where wee World, found Oysters, Muscels and Crabs as before, and filled our Barricos with fresh water, and in one Thenames of 50 of these places we found Sauages, but they fled from vs.

thele places we round Gauages, out tiny meation.

Afterward we came to Penguin Iland in the Straites, and there wee falted and dryed many They lose their of the Penguins for our fultenance. Thence we shaped our course for Port Saint Iulian, where Sir the Francis Drake not many moneths before had beheaded Captayne Doutie. In this Port we stayed Their returne a day or two, and tooke fish like Breames and Mackerils, with hookes and lines. Then coffing to the Straits? the land for some formight, some hundred leagues beyond the River of Plate, wee found a small and thorow Iland three leagues from the mayne full of Seales, whereof wee killed good ftore to our fuffe. North Sea. nance, the young ones we found best and eate them roast. Then passing ouer the River of Plate Penguin Hand. to the North fide, we put into a small River, and went vp into the Woods fixe of vs : other two Port Saint 14remayning on the thore to looke to the Boat.

60 While we were thus feeking food in the Woods the people of the Countrey, cilled Tapiner, River of Flate, fome lixtic of feetile armed with Bowes and Atrowes (not fiercely at vs., and wounded vs. all feetiles). very grieuoully, and foure of vs were taken by them, and neuer recourred: the rest of vs they taken by sauge purfued to our Pinnaffe, and wounded vs all : but in the end we put them to flight. Thence we ges, the rest went to an Iland some three leagues of in the Sea, not about a league in compasse. Where were wounded.

Fiftf 2

cortid

1188

Twodye. Their Pinnaife dir remayne.

cured our felues as well as we might, yet to, that two of vs died of our late wounds, and that which was worte for want of helpe. Through foule weather our Pinnalle was dasht against the Rockie shoare and broken, and now there remay ned aliue of vs eight, no more but my felfe Pea

Proper & Car. ter Carder and William Pucher. Here we remay ned the foace of two moneths, in all which time for our victuals, wee had a froir (omewhat like vnto Oranges, growing vpon a high Tree, the leafe whereof was fomewhat like the Afpen leafe, and small: white Crabs creeping upon the land, and little Eeles which we found vinder the lands, but in all this lland we could not find any fresh water in the World, in-No fresh water formuch that we were driven to drinke our owne vrine, which we faued in some sheards of certaine larres, which we had out of our Pinnasse, and set our vrine all night to coole therein, to drinke it the next morning, which thus being drunke often, and often avoyded, became in a while exceeding red, in all this time wee had no raine, nor any good meanes to faue it, if it had fallen, whereupon, feeing our felues in fo great extremitie, wee denifed how we might get vnto the Mayne, and by good fortune, found a planke of fome ten foot in length, which of likelihood had criven from the River of Plate, whereunto with withes, wee bound fome other wood. and furnishing our felues with the foretaid fruit, Eeles and Crabs. wee committed our felues to

They drinke

Red vrine.

Palace to the God; hoping with the fetting in of the tyde, and with the helpe of two poles, which we vied in fread of Oares to attay ne vnto the Mayne, which was some three leagues off, but wee made it three dayes and two nights before we could come to the Mayne. At our comming first on land, we found a little River of very sweet and pleasant water, where 20 William Pitcher my onely comfort and companion (although I difwaded him to the contrary) o-

freth water.

Piteler breakes uer granke himfelte, being pinched before with extreame thirft, and to my vnfpeakeable griefe withdraking and difcomfort, within halfe an houre after dyed in my prefence, whom I buried afwell as I The next day following, as I travelled along the shoare towards Brasill, having mine Arming Sword and Target with me, I met with some thirtie of the Sauages of the Countrey, called Tro-

Tușșan baffe Sanages.

pan Balle, which being armed with Bowes and Arrowes, and having two or three great Rattles with itones in them, and a kind of Tabrets that they yied in itead of Drummes, they went dancing before me about a Musket shot off, and then they stayed and hanged vp a piece of a white Net of Cotton-wooll, vpon a flicks end of foure foote high, and went from it about a 20 Musket that off : then I comming vnto it, tooke it in my hand, viewed it, and hung it vp againe, He south with then many of them, beckning and weating with their hands, cryed vnto mee, Irorie, Irorie. which (as afterward I vnderstood, by living long among them) was as much as Come buber, Then I came to them, and they friendly led me a long fome halfe a mile, all the way dancing, as well men as women, whereof there were some eight in the company, vntill we came to another Riner fide, where they hanged up their Beds, tying them fast to a couple of Trees, being a kinde of white Cotton Netting, which hanged two foot from the ground, and kindled fire of two flicks. which they made on both fides of their Beds, for warmth, and for driving away of wilde bealts.

and having fed me with fuch as they had ; we tooke our rest for that night.

The next day earely in the morning they tooke downe and truffed vp their beds, crying ti- 40 allo, tiallo, which is to fay, away, away, and marched that day towards Brafill fome twentie miles, and came to their Towne where their chiefe Gouernour was. This Towne was built foure foure, with foure houses onely, every house containing about two Bowe shot in length. Sauge towne and the houses made with small trees like an Arbour, being thatched over downe to the ground with Palme tree leaves: they have no windowes, but fome thirtie or fortie doores on every side of this iquadron, by which each Familie palleth in and out; their chiefe Lord, whose name was Caron, being a man of some forty yearesold, had nine wives; but the rest have onely one wife, except fuch as are counted more valiant, then the rest which are permitted two wives, one to looke to their children at home, and the other to goe to the warres with them. This Towne contained

Caiou their Lord. Hofpitall en-

deferibed.

very neere 4000 persons of all forts. The next day the Gouernour sent divers of his people a- 50 broad to bring in all forts of victuall which the Countrie yeelded, and offered them vnto me to fee which of them I liked best, among which there was great store of fish, as well Sea-fish as freshwater-fishes, many forts of Fowles, many forts of Rootes, and divers Land-beatts, as Armadillos, which afterward I found to be very good meate. Of all these at the first, I onely tooke one Fowle, and a couple of fifthes, and bestowed the rest among their children, which procured me no fmall good will among them. Here I stated among them (being well entertained) for certaine moneths, visitl I had learned

their language most part of their language, in which meane space I noted their manners, which were as solloweth. They went out to the warres armed at my first comming, onely with Bowes and Ar-Their wattes. rowes, tome three or foure hundred at a time, and when they had the victory of their enemies, they tied one of their Captines to one of their company with Cotten cords fait arme to arme, and bringing them home, within two or three daies after they would tie them to a pooft, and with a madie club of red wood one of the ftrongest of the company (after they have drunke a Man-eating. certaine ftrong drinke with dancing round about him) at one blow flits his head a funder : this

CHAP. S. Peter Carders life with the Sauages and yeelding to the Portugals. 1180

drinke is made by their women of a certaine roote called I. P. which first they feeth, and after- Their drinke ward chew in their mouthes, and then fpit it out againe into a long trough and mingle it with and drunken. water, and there let it worke two or three daies, and gate , e yeeft voon it, like to our Ale; which neffe, done, they take the liquor and put it into broad mouth larres of earth, and of this both their men and women doe drinke at their feafts, till they be as drunke as Apes.

I could observe no Religion among it them, but onely that they reverence and worshippe the Moone especially the new Moone; whereat they doe reloyce in leaping, dancing, and clapping Religions their hands. The Merchantable commodities of this Countrie, are Brafill-wood, Tobacco, red

Pepper and Cotten Wooll. They have also great store of Apes, Monkies. Armadillos, Hogges 10 without tailes as bigge as ours; their Birds are Parrats, Parraketos, blacke Fowles as bigge as He teacheth Doues, and Offriches as high as a man. After I had lived about halfe a yeare among firthem, and them to make learned their language, the King requested me to goe to the warres with him against his ene- Clubs. mies the Tanwees. which I granted, but before we fet out, I shewed them a way for making of certaine Targets of the buke of a Tree some three quarters of a ward long for defence against Arrowes, whereof we made fome hundred; and withall I wished them to make some two hundred of Clubs. Which being done we marched forward forward on rumber, which by mine adnice were all marked with a red kinde of Balsome from the knee downeward vpon one legge, to be known from our enemies (by the way it is to be noted that there are three forts of Ballamum in that Countrie, to wit, White, Red and Blacke very odoriferous and excellent good for a Three kinder 20 greene wound, and the White I efterme to be beit.) In three dayes march we came to another

Towne built foure square, as before I have declared, but much lefer; we fet voor the Towne about foure of the clocke in the morning, the enemy standing youn defence of their Agrowes. were much deceived by reason of our Targets, which being reconded by our Clubbes, wee immediately knocked downe to the number of two hundred, the reft, except fome twenty prifeners escaped into the woods. Here the King staied one day, and caused many of thir carkales to Man eating, be broyled upon the coales and eaten. The chiefest riches which we found here was their drinke which they yied to make themselves drunke withall; their Cotten Beddes and their Tobacco. Spoiles As for Gold and Silver they neither teeke, nor make any accompt thereof. This is to be noted, that how many men their Sauages doe kill, to many holes they will have in their vitage, be-

30 ginning first in their nether lippe, then in their checkes, thirdly in both their eye-browes, Notes of genand laftly in their eares. Those twenty prisoners which we brought home, were afterward kil-trie.

led rofted and eaten.

While I remay ned here amongst these people, certayn Portugals accompanied with certayn Negres and Brafilians, came within some ten leagues of our town, to see whether they could surprise any of our Sauages, and to harken what was become of me, for that they had heard by this time that some or Sir Francis Drakes company were east ashoase amongst the Sauage people, but there comming was not fo fecret, but that two of the Portugals and certayne Negros were taken, and Portugals 44after their confession , of the intent of their comming thicher, they were brained with clubs, ten broyled and eaten. These things thus passing, I became sutor to the King to give mee leave to de-

40 part his Countrey, and to goe to lome River of Brafill not planted by the Portugals , to fee if I could tpy out any English or French thip to palle me into my Countrey, which hee in the end fauourably granted; and fent foure of his people with me to furnish me with victuals, which they His departure, did very plentifully of Birds, Fish, and Roots, for the space of nine or ten weeks, all which time they did accompany me, and I defiring to goe toward the Line, they brought me into the towne of Babia, Detodos los Santas.

But about foure or fine miles before we came to the towne, I yeelded my felfe to a Portugal, He yeeldeth called Michael Ionas, declaring vnto him that I was an Englishman, and enquired whether there himselie to a were any Englishmen dwelling in the towne, hee told me that there was one Antonio de Pana Pontugall. in the towne which could speake good English, and was a louer of our Nation, and brought mee

directly vnto his house. This Antonio de Pana, pittying my case, and adulting mee not to bee knowne, that I vnderstood the Portugall Tongue, brought mee to the Gouernour, whose name was Diego Vat, this Gouernour told me by Antonio de Pana , which became my interpreter, that leeing I was found in the Inland of their Countrey Westward, being a strange; contrary to their Lawes, he could doe no leffe then commit me to Prison, and fend me into Portugall to be committed to the Gallies for tearme of life, to this I answered by the aduice of my good friend Autonio de Pana, that I came not willingly into those Dominions, but beeing by calualtic once come there, I was not taken Prifoner, but fought them out and came and yeekled my felfe into their hands, laying downe my weapons at one of his Nations feet.

Neuertheleffe he fent me to Prilon, whereby the meanes of Antonio de Pana, and other of His impufer-60 his friends, I was sufficiently relieued, and within one fortnight after brought againe publikely ment to the barre in the Towne-house to mine answere. There I answered the second time by Antonio de Pana, my Interpreter, that I thought it sufficient, that when I might have kept our, yet of mine owne free will I had made a long journey, with great hazard of my life through the Countries of Sauages, being Man-eaters, which fauoured me to feeke the Porengall Christians out, and Fffff 2

Deliuerance.

peaceably to put my felfe into their hands. Hereupon the Gouernor and his affiftants confulted and concluded together, that I should be committed to the house of Antonio de Parne, & there re-

His coast vove ages to libeos. Puerto Seguro. Spirito Santte. S.Vincent. Danide Leake

for bringing of Sugars to places where Ships should lade, vsed me, knowing I had bin brought vp to the Sea, in thele his businesses. Our first Voyage was to Ilbeos, where we left some wares, and flaied there some moneth : then we went to Puerto Seguro, and there tooke in some Sugars for Linnen Cloath, Bayes, Wine and Oyle. Then returning home, shortly after we were fet

Fernambuc.

Hulke with eight Englijh.

Marchant Royall.

maine vittill they might write into Poring all to know the Kings pleasure concerning me. Within one years they received answer from Lisbon concerning me, that I should be forth comming. and that hereafter the King would fend further order for my transporting into Portugall. But aboue two yeares passed before this order came : In which meane space, first I spent part of my His employtime in going into the fields as overfeer of my friends Negros and Savages in their planting and dreffing of their Sugar Canes, and in planting of Gingers, which grow there exceeding well, but is a forbidden trade to be transported out for hindering of other places, and in cutting downe of Brasil-wood, and in bringing it downe by Rivers vpon ratts vnto the Port where the Ships doe 10 lade it and in feeing them gather their Cotten wooll, and picking the feedes out of it, and packing the fame, and in gathering of the long Pepper both white and red. After I had fpent, some yeare and an halfe in this butinesse, my friend Antonio de Parne haning a small Barke of his owne, which he employed in carrying of wares from Port to Port, and

forth againe in the same Barke to Spirito Sancto, and Samt Vincent, and the River Ienero, where discharging our wares to certaine Factors, and receining Sugars and Cotten Wooll aboord, we re- 30 Damae Leage an English Sur- turned lafely home. In my first Voyage one Master Danid Leake an English Surgeon, lost there out of an English Shippe in the Countrie, being much fought for because of his skill, had passage with ve from Babia to Spirite Sancto. Vpon my returne of my fecond voyage, my good friend HoneftPortugal Antonio de Paque aduertifed me, that a Shippe was shortly to arrive there to carry me into Portweall prisoner telling me that he should not be able any longer to helpe me, and therefore wished me to looke to my felfe ; but kindely offered me his helpe to conuay me away : whereupon I tooke his Boate and foure of his Negros, pretending to goe on filhing to the Sea; and fo of purpole going much to Leeward of the place, I put in to Fernambuc : where the Negroes being examined whence we came, and for what cause, being vtterly ignorant of mine intent, answered that they were drawn thither by force of weather, and for their Masters fake were well intreated, and re- 20

turned home with the next winde, my felfe remaining fecretly behinde them.

Within certains moneths there came thither a Hulke with eight English men and foureteens Portugals, who after some three moneths had laden the same with English and Portugal goods to come for England. The English goods belonged to M. Cordal, M. Beecher, and M. Sadler, worthipfull Merchants of the Citie of London; which had bin left in the Countrie before by the Merchant Royall. Thus passing homeward in our course as far as the Iles of the Acores, within fight of CaptainGente the He of Pike, being fine Portugal Ships in confort, we met with Cap, Reymond, and Cap, George Drake of Exeter, with two English Ships of warre, who because the peace betweene England and Spaine was broken the yeare before, commanded vs to yeelde our felues to them as their lawfull prifes, which we did al fine accordingly without any relitance. But by contrary weather we 40 were driven into Baltimore in Ireland, and within a while after we arrived in the narrow Seas in His arrivall in the hauen of Chichifter, in the end of November 1586, nine yeares and foureteene dayes after my departure out of England with Sir Francis Drake in his Voyage about the World.

My strange aduentures, and long living among cruell Savages being known to the right hono-The Q. rewar. rable the Lord Charles Howard, Lord high Admirall of England, he certified the Queenes Maiefty thereof with speede, and brought me to her presence at White-ball, where it pleased her to talke with me a long houres space of my trauailes and wonderfull escape, and among other things of the manner of M. Domties execution; and afterward beftowed 22. angels on me, willing my Lord to have confideration of me; with many gracious words I was diffmiffed; humbly thanking the Almighty for my miraculous preferuation, and lafe returne into my native Countrie.

To the Reader.

Sec Tom, I.L.2.

I have heard

Here maift thou read that difinall and fatall voyage of Master Thomas Candish, in which be con-summated his earthly peregrination. In the former voyage of his (which among from Circumnauigations of the Globe, we have presented thee)thou findest a perpetuall Sunshine, no man ener having in necre so little time compassed that huge circumference, or taken bu choise of so much more wealth then be could bring bome, or renisted his natine foile with greater pompe and triumph. The clearest day bath a night, 60 nor doth Summer last alway; the Sea bath bis ebbing as well as flowing : the Aire hath calmes and failes at histe. Stormes : the Moone budeth sometimes the Suns lustre from vs by her interposition; sometimes is her selfe turne in the ti- meerely darkened by the Earths fradow. And if the Elements Seafons, and Heanens two Eyes be Subuer, were filke- sect to fuch vicifitudes; what is this little molehill of earth, this modell of clay, this moneable circumference of constant inconstancie, immutable musability; this vanishing centre of dinersified vanitie, which percente of the vinite percent also be should not resemble this samplar of the uniterse, as becommend a sixthe man to be like that larger Prototype. This we see all, and feele daily in our selnes: this in Master Candilly beregin Sir Francis Drakes before, the Seas two darlings, there and thence both lining and dying ; if disposation of the body may be called a death, where the soule arrineth in beanen, the name fits the earth, the deedes are presidents to postertie, and England their Countrie bath the glery alone that the bath brought forth two illustrious Captaines and Generals, which have forunately embraced the round waste of their vafte mother, without waste of life, reputation, and substance; yea victorious ouer elements and unemies, illustrious in wealth and bonour, they have comne bome like the Sunne in a Sum-

10 mers day, seeming greatest neerest bis enening bome, the whole skie entertaining and welcoming him in festivall scarlets and displayed colours of triumph. No Nation else hath yeelded one, which in all these respects may be matchable. Magalianes bath left himselfe odious to his Portugals for offered service to the Spaniard, and the Phaeton thinking with Phebus bis Chariot to compaffe the World, perifhed midway. Midmay was Schoutens Ship and men attached, and he and his had a servile returne. Cano came or rather fled bome like Magaliane's gbost, burdly and with a few escaping. Noott scally escaped taking, drowning, firing, treebery, and bossisties. Spilbergen got blowes in the South Sea where Drake and Candish were made rich, and returned an Indian Merchant. Three Dutch worthies: but all lighted their candles at these two English Torobes. Thus may we magnific Drakes swimming, and can die the memorie of our Candish. But where it is faid ye are Gods, it is added, ye shall dye like men.

20 The Sea is a waning wanering foundation, the winder theatre both for Comedies and Tragedies. Tou have (cene Drake acting both: and in both you here finde Candish. Christ is yesterday, to day, the fame for ever; God is without fladow, (without paffibilitie or possibilitie) of change, a light in whom is no darkeneile : but sublunarie things are like the Moone their neerest Planet, which never viewes the earth two dayes together with one face. God hath made our way to him fo full of chances and changes, that our unstedie, suppers way on this earth, and calme-forme-voyage in the fe Seu, way make us more to meditate and thirst after that haven of instabilitie, and beauen of eternity. Some passionate freeches of Master Candilh against some primate persons not employed in this action, I have suppressed . Some others I baue let passe; not that I charge Captaine Davis or others, but that it may appeare what Sup. Tom. 1.44 the Generall thought of them. Master Hakluyt hath published Master lanes report of this Voyage,

20 which makes more fauourable on Captaine Davis bie side. If hee did deale treacheronsty, treacherie found him out, as in his last Voyage before is declared. If any thinke the Captaine here to conceiue amille. I hall be willing to have the most charitable conceit, and therefore remit the Reader to Master Hakluvts Relation afore faid, for his apologie : the fum whereof, and of that Voyage is this.

Mafter lane there relateth, that Aug. 26. 1591. Captaine Candift fet forth from Plummonth with three tail Shippes, the blacke Pinnace, and a Barke. Nouemb. 29, they fell with the coaft Cap Dark his of Brafile. They tooke the Towne of Santes, and burnt Saint Vincent. After a cruell florme they voyage into arrived at Port Defire, and after fell with the Magellan straites. Occasionally (faith Iane) they the South Sea, loft Captaine Candish, and went backe to Port Desire to seeke him: and whiles Captaine Danie Mane, Hab. further intended to feeke out the Generall, a dangerous conspiracie was plotted to murther Toil. 40 him by Parker and Smith. There is also a testimoniall subscribed by fortie men. Thence they returned to the Straits, and had fight of the people, which were very flrong, nimble, and naked.

Sep. 12, they came in light of the South Sea, and being forced backe, the next day put forth againe, and being eight or ten leagues free from land, were repelled into the Straits. Octob.2. they put into the South Sea againe, and were free of all land, and there in a fforme loft the blacke Pinnace. The Shippes company were in despaire of life, but by Gods grace recoursed the Straits, and a third time came to Port Defire; and there loft nine of their men (of which Parker and Smith were two) being on Land for Wood and Water : they knew not what became of them, but gueffed that the Saluages had denoured them. For the elementh of November, while Sugge Caple most of the men were at the Ile of Pengwins, onely the Captaine and Master with fixe others balswith dogs 50 left in the Shippe, there came a great multitude of Sauages to the Shippe (there on ground on the faces or 12315. 04Ze) throwing dust in the ayre, leaping and running like bruite Beasts, having vizors on their

faces like Dogges faces, or elle their faces are Dogges faces indeede. We feared they would fet Dreames omie our Shippes on fire, for they would fuddenly make fire, whereat wee maruelled, fetting the uous. bulhes on fire, but scared with Peeces they fled. Here they found much Scurule-graffe which re- Men loft or couered them; and dried 20000. Pengwins, making fome falt by laying the falt water on rockes taken as Kuiin holes. The fixt of February, many reported to each other their dreames of killing, and the like, "to faith. and that day they loft 13. men at Placentia. Their dried Pengwins, when they came neerer the Loathforms who here no corrupt and there had in them a most learn to corrupt and there had in them a most learn to corrupt. Sun began to corrupt, and there bred in them a most loathsome and vgly worme which denoured their vietuals, cloathes, timbers, and all but Iron, not sparing their flesh when they were alleepe,

60 fo that they could fearcely fleepe. Their multitude was fuch that they could not destroy them. Another disease tooke them with swelling in their anckles, two daies after which, shortnesse of breath, then falling into their cods and yards, so tormenting them that divers fell mad and died : on fine onely did the labour of the Ship relye; and June 11.1593 without victuals, failes, or men God guided them to Beare-hauen in Ireland.

Tragedics.

But let vs beare Master Candish bimselfe more then alling his owne part. Discite justitiam moniti. Let not proferitie por fon the foule, with the fling of the old Serpent, welling in pride, ingratitude, The morall of or contempt of God, or Man : let not any magnific bimfelfe in what focuer exploits , or truff in vocertaine this and other riches, or promife to himselfe the perpetual smiles of the world; and then it hall seeme no new thing, nor cauje of despaire, if shee bites in stead of kissing. Shee is a Witch which transformeth men into Swine with her Cyrcan cups, if the mindelearne not by Religion to fasten it selfe to God, to account him her trealure, and make her felfethe treasure, as a Pilgrime pressing toward the price of our high calling that treasure, ana mare ver secues or secues and the secues of the secues of the secues a biefed purchase; inheritance of the Saints in light; for which Robes, to bee stripped of these Rags is a biefed purchase; meanwhile knowing that nothing doth, shall, can happen but by his pronidence, which is a Father most wife louing, bountsfull, and mercifull, which alreadie bath given vi bis Sonne, doth now gime bis Spiris, and 10 will gine us himselfe. No Rocks can wrack that Soule, no stormes oppresse, no Seas can finke, no fortunes can either puffe up with successe, or sinke and make to for inhe in it selfe by any pressure to despaire. which hath thus made God her portion: year the worst of admersities by a boly Antiperitiasis doe contrast and more unite the foules forces to greater ails of fortitude in doing and suffering his Will, to whose ours ought alway to be subordinated. It is the woice of a Pagan, but the vertue of a Christian, Omnia mea mecum porto, and with lob to fay. The Lord hath given, the Lord nath taken, bleffed bee the Name of the Lord. I have ginen Maiter Kniuets Relation after this of Mafter Candifh, as before Peter Carder after Sir Francis Drake ; that at both ferued under them in their Difcoueries , fo ther may in this our Descouerie of those Discoueries, as Pages to those Worthies; the one a Mariner wattin on a Mariner; the other a Gentleman following a Gentleman; both rumatchable by any Englith for the 20 rare adventures, difadventures, and manifold fuecessions of miseries in those wilde Countries, and with thole wilder Countrimen of Brailia; especially Maiter Knivet, who between the Brailian and Portugall, as betwirt two Mill flones, was almost ground to poulder: whom Colds, Sicknes, Famine, Wandrongs. Calumnies, Defertions, Solstarines, Deferts, Woods, Mountaines, Fennes, Rivers, Seas, Flights, Fights: Cultummers, tegerious, some mers, experience are consumers, experience, experience, experience, experience, and franches the first thanks to pull and names of wildsaffe (these Magellan Straits succeeded by drawwing, faithing, freeling, between the two first of the first thanks of the first thanks of the first thanks of the first working; whom God yet delivered, that out of his manifold paines, thou maist gather this posie of pleasures, and learne to bee thankefull for thy

CHAP. VI.

natine speets at home, even delights in the multitude of peace.

Master Thomas Candish bis discourse of his fatall and disastrous voyage towards the South Sea, with his many disaduentures in the Magellan Straits and other places; written with his owne hand to Sir TRISTRAM GORGES bu Executor.

Oft louing friend, there is nothing in this world that makes a truer triall of friend- 40 thip, then at death to shew mindfulnesse of loue and friendship, which now you shall make a perfect experience of : desiring you to hold my loue as deare dying poore, as if I had beene most infinitely rich. The successe of this most vnfortulate action, the bitter torments thereof lye fo heavie voon mee , as with much paine am I able to write these few lines, much leffe to make discouerie vnto you

of all the adverse haps, that have befallen me in this voyage, the least whereof is my death : but because you shall not be ignorant of them, I have appointed some of the most sensiblest men that I left behinde me, to make discourse vnto you of all these accidents. I have made a simple will. wherein I have made you fole, and onely disposer of all such little, as is left.

Captaine Da.

Mutinous companie.

The Roe-bucke left me in the most descolate case that ever man was left in , what is become of 50 her I cannot imagine : if thee bee returned into England, it is a most admirable matter; but if thee bee at home, or any other of my goods what focuer returne into England, I have made you onely Possessor of them. And now to come to that villaine that hath beene the death of me, and the decay of this whole action, I meane Danis, whose onely treacherie in running from me, hath beene an veter ruine of all : if any good returne by him, as euer you loue mee, make fuch friends as he of all others, may reape least gaine. I affure my telfe you will bee carefull in all friendship, of my last requests. My debts which be owing be not much, &c. But I (most vnfortunate villaine) was matched with the most abiect minded and mutinous companie, that ever was carried out of England by any man living. For I protest vnto you, that in going to the Streits of Magellan, after I was passed to the Southward of the River of Plate, and had bidden the furie of 60 ftormes, which indeed I thinke to bee such as worfer might not bee indured : I never made my course to the Straits-ward, but I was in continuall danger by my companie, which never ceafed to practife and mutinie against me. And having gotten the appointed place called Port Defire, I met with all my companie, which had beene there twentie dayes before me : and had not

my most true friends beene there (whom to name my heart bleedes) I meane my cousin Locke. I had been conftrayned either to have fuffered violence, or some other most disordered misse-hap. I came into this Harbour with my Boat, my thips riding without at Sea: where I found the Roebucke, the Defire, and the Pinnace, all which complayned vnto mee, that the Tyde ranne io violently, as they were not able to ride, but were driven aground, and wished me in any wife not to come in with my thip, for that if thee should come on ground, shee would be veterly cast away: which I knew to be most true.

And finding it to been o place for so great a ship without her otter ruine : I forthwith commanded them, to make themselves readie to depart: they being fresh, and infinitely well relee-10 ned with Seales and Birds, which in that place did abound, and my companie being growne weake and feeble, with continual watching, pumping, and bayling. For I must fay truly vnto you, there were neuer men that endured more extremities of the Seas, then my poore companie had done. Such was the furie of the Welt South-welt, and South-welt windes, as wee were Tempefts. driven from the hoare foure hundred leagues, and constrayned to beate from fiftie degrees to the Southward into fortie to the Northward againe, before wee could recouer neere the shoare. In which time, we had a new thift of tailes cleane blowne away, and our thip in danger to finke in the Sea three times : which with extremitie of mens labour wee recovered. In this weakneffe, wee departed for the Straits, being from that Harbour eight leagues, and in eighteene dayes, The Straits. wee got the Straits : in which time, the men in my ship were growne extreamly weake. The 20 other thips companie were in good cale, by reason of their late reliefe.

And now we had beene almost foure moneths betweene the coast of Brasile, and the Straights. being in diffrance not about fixe hundred leagues, which is commonly run in twentie or thirtie dayes; but such was the aduersenesse of our fortunes, that in comming thither wee spent the Summer, and found in the Straits, the beginning of a most extreame Winter, not durable for Extreme wine Christians. In despight of all stormes and tempests, so long as wee had ground to anchor in , and ter. Twices to helpe vs, we beate into the Straits fome fiftie leagues, having (for the most part) the They enter windes contrarie. At length being forced by the extremitie of stormes, and the narrownesse of fifie leagues. the Straits (being not able to turne wind ward no longer) we got into an Harbour, where wee rid from the eighteenth day of Aprill, till the tenth of May : in all which time, wee neuer had 30 other then most furious contraris windes. And after that the moneth of May was come in, no-

thing but fuch flights of Snow, and extremities of Froits, as in all the time of my life . I never faw any to be compared with them.

This extremitie caused the weake men (in my ship onely) to decay; for in seuen or eight dayes, in this extremitie there dyed fortie men, and lickened feuentie, to that there were not fif- Death of men. tie men that were able to stand upon the hatches. I finding this milerable calamitie to fall upon me, and found that befides the decay of my men, and expense of my victuall, the snow and trost decayed our failes, and tackle, and the contagiousnesse of the place to bee such , for extremitie of Milerable froft and fnow, as there was no long flaying, without the viter ruine of vs all. What by these diffresses. extremities, and the daily decay of my men, I was conftrayned forthwith to determine fome 49 course, and not (for all this extremitie of weather) to tarrie there any longer.

Vpon this, I affembled my companie together, and shewed them that my intention was to Consultation.

goe for China, and that there were two wayes thither, the one through the Straits, the other by the way of Caput bone fpei; which course shewed them , as was well knowne to mee , as the way I had undertaken. And although that fortune had denyed us this paffage, yet I doubted not. but soone to recouer to this Cape, where I shewed them, I made no doubt, but we should releeve our felues, and performe to their contents our intended voyage. These perswasions with many others, which I vied, feemed to content them for the prefent : but they were no fooner gone from me, but forth with all manner of discontents were varipped amongst themselves, so that to goe that way, they plainly and refolutely determined never to give their willing confents. Some of to the belt and honestell fort hearing this their refolution, withed them rather to put vp a supplication to me, then thus privately among themselves to mutinie and murmur, which course might caule an vecer ruine to fall upon them all : affirming, that they knew me to be fo reasonable, as I would not refuse to heare their petition. Vpon this, they framed an humble supplication vnto me (as they termed it) the effect whereof was : That first they protested, to fpend their lines most willingly for my fake, and that their lone was fuch to me, as their chiefest care was for mee, and they oriened very much to fee mee put on a resolution, which (as they supposed) would be the end of my life, which was their greatest griefe. And next their owne lines would immediately follow, both by reason of the length of the course, all which they must performe without reliefe. And further, we had not left foure moneibs viltuall, which might very well be frent in running a course not halfe so long. But if it would please me to 60 returns agains for the Coast of Bratile (where they knew, my force being together, was able to take any place) there we might both provide victuall to returne againe, and furnish our felnes of all other fuch wants, as these extremities had brought upon us, and at a seasonable time returne againe, and so per-

Now, I knowing their resolution, and finding, that in somethings their reasons were not

vaine, began more feriously to looke into all my wants. First, I found my greatest decay to bee

CHAP. 6. Many of Captaine Candilhes company flaine; His great spirit. 1195

in ropes, and failes, wherein (by meanes of such mightie extremities) I was viterly vnfurnished, for I loft a new shift of failes comming thither; and further the Defire had bidden the like extremitie, which I furriffred : fo as I had left no ftore at all : for no ships carry three new shifts of failes, all which, had beene little enough for me : and laft of all, our victuals to be most shore. I was to fall into confideration what to doe, I knew well that the windes were fuch, and fo con-Winder and tinually against ve, as by no meaner it was possible to palle through : for the violent snowes fnows violent. Were fuch, as in two dayes together we should not be able to see fine houres, the place not a league ouer in breadth, our ships not to be handled in such extremitie of winde : no, nor Canuas to hold the furie of the winde, our men so weake, as of one hundred and fiftie men, I had not in my ship 10 fiftie in health. And this thip comming with all her companie, was like three times to have been vpon the shoare, by reason of her vnyarie workings. These causes made mee veterly despuire of any passage at this season : so I resolved the companie I would put out of the Harbour, and beat to get through, fo long as the furious and westerly windes would suffer vs : but if they came vpon vs, to as we could not hold it vp, wee would then beare vp againe, and fo (according to their requeft) goe for the Coaft of Brafile, which they fo much fremed to defire, and I fo much

Port S. Inlian. Port D: fre.

But in truth I was forced to take that way, for that there was no place, where this ship could come into, to tarry out a winter. For Port Saint Iulian is a barred Harbour, ouer which two of my thips would not goe; and Port Defire hath neither wood, nor water : and befides that, the 20 Tyde runneth fo extremely, as it is not possible for anchors to hold, the ground being fo bad, But the last cause of all to be considered, was the sicknesse of my men, having no clothes to defend them from the extreme cold. These causes, and their ardent desires of being out of the cold, mooued me to goe backe againe, for that most wicked Coast of Brafile, where I incountred all manner of misfortunes, which as I have vnripped these former, so I will briefly declare the latter.

His returne from the Strait.

We were beaten out of the Strait with a most monstrous storme at West South-west, from which place we continued together, till we came in the latitule of fortie feuen, in which place Dauis in the Defire, and my Pinnaffe lost me in the night, after which time I neuer heard of them, but (as I fince vnderstood) Danis his intention was euer to run away. This is Gods will, that I should put him in trust, that should be the end of my life, and the decay of the whole action. For 30 had not these two small ships parted from vs, we would not have miscarried on the coast of Brafile: for the onely decay of vs was, that we could not get into their barred Harbours. What became of these small ships, I am not able to judge, but fure, it is most like, they went backe againe for Port Defire, a place of reliefe, for two fo small ships. For they might lye on ground there without danger, and being fo few men, they might releeue themselues with Seales, and Birds, and so take a good time of the yeere, and passe the Streits. The men in these small thins were all luftie, and in health : wherefore the likelier to hold out. The short of all is this : Danis his onely intent was veterly to ouerthrow me, which he hath well performed.

Gricuous

These thips being parted from vs, wee little suspecting any treacherie, the Roe-bucke and my felfe, held our courle for Brafile, and kept together, till wee came in the latitude of thirtie fixe, 40 where we incountred the most grieuous storme, that ever any Christians indured youn the Seas to liue, in which storme we lost companie. Wee with most extreme labour, and great danger, got the Coast of Brafile, where we were fifteene dayes, and neuer heard of the Roe-bucke. Wee Saint Vincent, came to an anchor in the Bay of Saint Vincent, and being at an anchor there, the Gentlemen defired mee to give them leave to goe shoare, to some of the Portugals Farme-houses, to get some fresh victuals, which I granted : willing them to make present returne, knowing very well, the whole Countrie was not able to prejudice them, if they willingly would not indanger themfelues. They went to a Sugar mill hard by mee where I rode (for that was my speciall charge, that they should neuer goe a mile from the ship) where they got some victuall, and came aboard againe very well.

The next day in the morning betimes, an Indian came vnto me with Captaine Barker; which Indian ran away from his Mafter, at my last being there : this Sauage knew all the Countrie. He came vnto me, and faid, that beyond a Point, not a Culuering fhot off, there was a very rich farme-house, and defired ten or twelue men to goe thither. Captaine Barker being one whom I most trusted in the conduction of men, and (who ever was the most carefull in such matters of feruice) I appointed to goe, and to take some twentie or thirtie men with him ; and willed him (as he had any respect or regard of my commandement) not to stay, but to come presently away, finding any thing or nothing. He forthwith tooke five and twentiemen of the most principall men in the thip, and then your coulin Stafford would by no meanes bee left behinde. They departed by foure of the clocke in the morning, to as I did not fee their companie. But what should 60 I write more then this vnto you? they were all luch, as neither respected me, nor any thing that I commanded. Away they went, and by one of the clocke, they fent my Boat againe with Ginny wheat, and fixe Hennes, and a small Hogge. I seeing no returne againe of the companie (for they had fent away the Boat onely with men to row her aboard) was very much grieued, and

presently returned the Boat againe with message: That I much maruailed they would tarry at a place to long, with fo few men; and further, that it was not a Hogge, and fixe Hennes could rehene vs ; and feeing there was no other reliefe to bee had , I charged them straightly to come aboard presently. Thus having dispatched away my Boat for them, I still expected their present comming aboard : all that night, I heard nothing of them, the next morning I that Ordnance, vet I faw no Boat come. Then I waighed anchor, and made aboard into the Bay, yet for all this. I heard nothing of them : then I doubted with my felfe very greatly , knowing there were no meanes left to make any manifester signes to them to hasten away. All that day I heard nothing of them, in the evening I fet failes againe, and ran into the shoare : all that night I heard no

The next morning, I faw an Indian come downe to the Sea-fide, and weaved vnto the ship : we being desirous to heare some newes, caused a rafe to be made, for Boat wee had none, and sent it ashoare, and fet the Indian aboard. When we saw him, we found him to bee our owne Indian, Capraine Barwhich had efcaped away, being foare hurt in three places: who told vs, that all the rest of our torand foure men were flaine with three hundred Indians, and eightie Portugals, which (in the evening) fer and twentie ypon them fuddenly. Then I demanded, why they came not aboard? the Indian answered mee. that some were vowilling to come, and the rest, did nothing but eate Hennes and Hogs, which they had there in abundance, and that they minded nothing to come aboard. I leave you to judge, in what griefe I was, to fee five and twentie of my principall men thus bafely and wilfully cast 20 away : but I leave you to inquire of others, the practifes of these men, lett in writing vnto you

it (hould be thought I did it of malice, which (I proteft) is farre from me, they being now dead,

and my felie looking imminently to follow them.

Thus I was left destitute of my principall men, and a Boat, and had I not (by great hap the day before) taken an old Boat from the Portugals, I had beene vtterly vndone. This Boat I lent to an Hand fifteene leagues off, to fee if they could heare any newes of the reft of my thips : thee returned within eight dayes, all which time I remayned without a Boat. Thus I was fixe dayes before I heard newes of any of my conforts. The feuenteenth day came in the Roe-bucke, having The Roe-bucke ipent all her Masts, but their Mison, their Sailes blowne cleane away, and in the most miserable commethin. case that ever ship was in : all which misse-haps falling upon me, and then missing my small ships

30 wherein (vpon that Coast) consisted all my strength, having no Pinnaces nor great Boats left to Brassian Coast land my men in, for they were all cast away going to the Strait. I (notwithstanding the want full of sheales of Boats and Pinnaces) determined rather then not to bee revenged of fo base Dogs, to venture and barres. the ships to goe downe the River afore their Towne, and to have beaten it to the ground, which Mat (Leadifforthwith I put in execution. And having gotten downe halfe the way, wee found the River so high spirit. narrow by reason of a should, as all the companie affirmed plainly, it was both desperate and most dangerous. For the River is all Ofe, and it a ship come aground, it is vnpossible ever to get off, for there rileth not aboue a foot water, and no anchors will hold to hale off any my thips, in fo narrow a place, as we were almost aground in wending.

Seeing this apparant danger, I forthwith bare vp out of the River, where we escaped no small 40 danger to get well out, for we had not little more water then we drew : and if shee had come aground, it had beene vnpoffible euer to have gotten her off. By these meanes of not passing the Ruer, we were constrayned to let our revenge passe: for our Boats were so bad and small, as wee durit put no men in them. Notwithstanding wee landed, and did them much spoile vpon their Farme-houses, and got some quantitie of fresh victuals. This place being not for vs, considering our flips were notable to paffe to their Towne; and further our great wants did conftraine vs to feeke some course of reliefe, which being not to bee had there, both for that wee had spoyled it a little before, and also for that we could not conveniently come to doe them any prejudice, without most losse to our selves : I determined to part from thence, and to goe to a small Iland some Historentions twentie leagues off, and there to have fitted all my necessaries, and to have cast off the Roe-bucke, for that by no meanes her wants could by mee bee furnished, and so at a seasonable time, to have

gone for the Straits of Magellan againe.

Which intention (I must confesse) I kept most secret, for feare of some mutinie, but shewed His presence. the whole Companie, that I would goe for Saint Helena, where wee should meet with the Carracks : which course I well knew did not much please them; for they defired nothing more then returning home into England, and if I had but named the Straits, they would forthwith have fallen into a most extreme mutinie : for such were the miseries and torments they had indured . as all the best fort had taken an oath upon a Bible, to die rather then euer to yeeld their confents to goe backe that way againe. I knowing this, feemed to speake nothing of that coarse, but comforting their despairing mindes as well as I might, seeing their greatest griefe was for the wants

60 of the small ships, without which, they all affirmed (and that truly) wee were able to doe nothing. For the Ports where their Townes ftand, were all barred Harbours, and that it was not Necessitie e: thing. For the Ports where their Townes fland, were all barred Harnours, and the law was to the possible so get any of these ships our them, whereby we could release our situes of sich wants, frailfingson possible to get any of these ships out that all the possible so get any of these ships out the solitons of the so as we were in. These things being alleaged, I seemed to passe ouer as slightly as might be, but yet the second comforted them, that we would prefently feeke some place of reliefe with all speede.

Persuad Pilore vndertaking for Spirite . Santio.

There was a Portugall aboord me, who tooks vpon him to be a Pilot, who came vnto me. and told me voon his life, that he would take voon him to carry both my Shippes over the barre at Spiritus Sanitus, a place indeede of great reliefe, and the onely place in Brafile for victuall, and all other wants, that we were in I knowing very well, that if I could bring my Shippes within that of the Towne, I should land my men, and further, it could not be in them to make refistance. The whole company defired this course, affirming that there was no way left to relieue all our wants but this: and that there they were in hope to finde some Shippes, to repaire the Roe-bucke againe. I finding their willingnesse, and charging the Portugall vpon his life, to tell me truely, whither the Ships might palle ouer the barre without danger; he willed me to take his life, if euer the Shippes came in leffe water then fine fathome, with fuch conftant affirmations Ice as he defired not to live, if he should not performe this, I considering the greatnesse our wants. and knowing right well, the place to be the onely wished Towne on all the coast to relieue vs. forthwith gaue my content, and thither we went, leaving all other intentions. We anchored before the barre, and lent my Boate to found the barre, and found the deepest water to be but His innorance, hitteene and ieuenteene foote (the Portugall him felfe going with them, all ouer the bar) the most water to be but three fathome. They cumming aboord, brought me word of the truth . I called for the Fortugall, and demanded of him why he had so lied vnto me? who affirmed that he neuer founded the parre before, and that he had brought in Ships of 100, tuns, and that he made accompatithere had not bin leffe water then five fathome. This mil-hap was no small amazement to me, and all the company, considering our distresse for 20

water and other necessaries, and that the roade was foill, as we were scantable to ride there. so as we could neither take inwater, nor doe any other butineffe. In this meane time while wee were fearning of these matters, the Ros-bucker Boate rowing further into the Baye, saw where three Shippes were at an anker, not farre from the Towne, and came aboord, and brought mee word thereof : at which newes the Companie feemed much to reioyce, and all affirmed that they would goe with our Boates, and bring them out of the harbour. I shewed them how much the taking of them imported vs, and told them, that although the day was spent, yet I thought the night not to be altogether inconvenient, if they would put on mindes to performe it. Refolutely my reasons were these: first they were not so sufficiently provided to defend 30 notfollowed. themselves at that instant, as they would be in the morning; and further I told them, that if they were not able to defend them, they would take the principall and best things out of them, being so neere the shoare, and that if they had wherewith to defend themselves, it would be leffe offensiue to vs in the night, then in the day, and we in greatest securitie, and more offensiue to the enemy, especially this exploit being to be done on the water, not landing.

fome of them prepared themselves. Comming among ft them, I found them, all, or for the most part veterly vnwilling to goe that night; vpon which occasion (I confesse) I was much moued. and gave them fome bitter words, and shewed them our case was not to make detractions, but to take that opportunitie which was offered vs, and not to feare a night more then a day, and told them plainely, that in refusing of this, I could flay there no longer, for ouer the barre we 40 could not goe, and the roade fo dangerous, as never Shippes rid in a worte. And further, we law all the Countrey to be fired round about, and that to land we could not without otter fpoile to Their ynfeafor-Their volcalo-nable cagernes Shippes, fo as I intended to depart. The next morning, there was almost an vproare amonest them, the most of them swearing that if I would not give them leave, they would take the Boats and bring away those Shippes of themselves. I comming among them, beganne to reprehend them for their raffinesse, and told them that now all opportunity was past, and that they must be contented, for goe they should not. They much importuned me, and some of the chiefest of them defired me with teares in their eyes, that they might goe, affirming, that there was no danger to be feared at all; for if they were not able to take them, they would returne againe, 50 and that to depart without attempting to doe this, was a thing that most greatly grie-

I knowing right well, that if they landed not they could receive no prejudice : for if their Ships had beene able to withflood them, it was in their power to goe from them, being flarke calme. And further I knew that no Shippes vie Brafile that be able to defend themseives from a Cock-boate: much leffe that they should be of force to offend those Boates, wherein there were fo many Musketteeres as could fit one by another. I feeing their great importunitie, was contented to give them leave to goe : and this was my charge to Captaine Morgaine (to whom at that prefent I left my directions) that first, vpon paine of his life, he should not land at all what Hieinstructiopportunitie soeuer was offered; and that if he saw any danger in comming to these Shippes, 60 ons to Captain he should attempt no further, but returne aboord againe; but contrariwise, if he saw that the place was fuch, as we might land without too much difaduantage, and if we might land on plain ground, free from woods or baftes, hard before the Towne, that then he would prefently repaire voto me againe, and I, and so many as these bad Boates would carrie, would presently land upon them.

These perswasions seemed a little to move them, for they all defired to stay till morning; yet

Thus my Boates departed from me, having some eightie men, as well furnished with weanone, as it is possible to fort such a number withall. Now you shall vinderstand, that in the night the Portagals had hailed the Shippes hard afore the Towne : the River where the Towne frood was not about a Bird-bolt-shot ouer, and halfe a mile from the Towne where the Shippes rode: The place dethe night wee came in, they had new cast up two small trenches, on each side the River one, serious, where they had planted some two small bases a peece upon an hill. Right over them were thicke woods and great rockes, fo that if any were puffelled of them, they might but tumble fromes downe and beate away 1000 men. The trench on the Wester-side of the River shot at our Boats. once or twice; voon that they began to thinke with themselves what to doe, Captaine Morgan affirming the place to be verie narrow, and that they could not well paffe it without danger. to confidering the many men in their Boats, and also the charge which I had given . was such, if they faw any danger, they should prefently repaire abourd, and certifie me, and not to passe any further till they had vinder flood my further determination: This Mafter Morgan made knowne Mad Mutiners amonest them, whereupon some of the harebraine Sailers began to sweare, that they never thought other, but that he was a coward, and now he will shew it, that durit not land voon a bable ditch, as they tearmed it. Vpon this, the gentleman was very much moned, and answe-(wered them, that they (hould finde him to be none fuch as they accounted him, and that, come what could happen him, he would land.

Vpon this, in they put the Boats betweene the two fconfes (that on the Easter-fide they had They land not feene) and the Boats being hard vpon it, were flot at, and in the biggeft Boat they hurt two, 20 and killed one with that shot. Vpon this, they determined, that the smallest Boate with their company should land on the Wester-side, and the other to land on the Easter-side. The small Boate landed fire, and that place having but few in it, they being not able to defend themselves, ranne away, fo that our men entred peaceably without hurt of any. The other Boate drawing much water, was aground before they came neere the shoare, so as they that landed, were fame to wade aboue knee high in water. Now the place, or Sconfe, was in height some ten foote, made of ftone (Captaine Morgan more resolutely then discreetely) scaled the wall, and ten more with him, which Went out of the Boate together. Then the Indians and Portugals shewed themselves, Carraine More and with great stones from ouer the trench, killed Morgan and fine more, and the rest of them be- gar flaine. ing fore hurt, retired to the Boate, which by this time was fo filled with Indian arrowes, as of At. men being in the Boate, there escaped not eight of them valurt, some having three arrowes flick- Many others

ing in them, tome two, and there was none which escaped without wound. The furie of those are flaine or hurte rowes comming to thicke, and fo many of them being spoiled, they put the Boat from the shoare. leaving the reft on land, a spoile for the Indians. By this time, there came two Boates full of lustie Portugals, and some Spaniards, whick now-

ing the sconse on the Wester-side to be weakely manned, came with their Boates to the forts fide : one of them ran ashoare which was fullest of men, then our men let flye their Muskets at them, and spoiled and killed all that were in that Boate. The others, seeing their fellowes speede foill, rowed backe againe, with all their force, and got the Town againe. In this meane time the 40 great Boat being gotten of, they called to them in the Sconfe, and willed them to forfake the Fort, and to come and helpe them ; for they told them that all their men were spoiled & slaine. Vpon this they strait came out of the Sconse againe, and retired to their Boat; who rushing in all together into the Boat, she came on ground, so that off they could not get her, but some must goe out of her againe: tenne of the luftieft men went out, and by that time the Indians were come Ten brane downe into the Fort againe, and shot at our men. They which were a land (perceiving the armenloss, rowes flyeamong them) ranne againe to the Forts fide, and shot in at the lower hold with their Muskers. By this, the Boat was got of, and one that was the Master of the Roe-bucke(a most cow-Cowards ardly villaine that euer was borne of a woman) caused them in the Boat to rowe away, and so basenessa left those braue men a spoile for the Portugals, yet they waded up to the necks in the water to 50 them, but those mercilesse villaines in the Boate, would have no pitty on them. Their excuse was. that the Boat was fo full of water, that had they come in, the would have funke with all them

in her; thus vilely were those poore men lost. By this time, they which were landed on the other fide (the great Boate not being able to rowe neere the shoare to relieue them) were killed with stones by the Indians, being thus wilfully and vaddicreetely spoiled, which you may well perceive, if you looke into their landing, especially in such a place, as they could not escape killing with Hones. They returned abourd againe, having loft five and twenty men, whereof tenne of them were left ashoare, in such fort 15.men flaine, as I have shewed you. When the Boates came to the Shippesside, there were not eight men others wonnin the biggelt Boate, which were not most grieuously wounded. I demanded of them the ded. 60 caule of their mishappes, and how they durit land, considering my strait commandement to the contrarie; they answered mee, that there was no fault in Captaine Morgan, but the greatest occasion of all this spoile to them, happened vpon a controuersie betweene the Captaine and those Souldiers that landed with him, and were killed at the Fort, for their ill speeches and viging of Captaine Morgan, was the cause that hee landed contrary to my com-

1108 Candilhes mifery by the loffe of the Roe-bucke. Manifold wants. LIB.VI

mandement, and voon such a place, as they all confessed fortie men were sufficient to spoile

I leave it to your felfe to judge, what a fight it was to mee, to fee fo many of my best men. thus wilfully spoiled, having not left in my Shippe fittie found men: fo as wee were no more then able to wave our Ankers, which (the next morning) wee did, and finding it calme wee were conftrained to come to an Anker againe; for my onely intention was, to get out of that had roade, and to put of into the Sea, and there to determine what to doe. for that place was not for vs to tarrie in, for the roade was fo bad, as wee were not able to helpe our felues with a Boates loading of fresh water, whereof wee stood in no small want. In this dayes stay in the Roade, I comforted these distressed poore men, what I to might, and found most of their delires, to returne againe into England. I let them understand. how wee would gor backe agains to the Hand of Saint Sebaftian, and there wee would water. and doe our other necessary buinnelles, and there make a resolute determination of the rest of our proceedings. This course seemed to like them all very well, but the companie in the Ree-bucke, initiantly defired nothing more, then to returne home, all affirming, that it was pittie fuch a Shippe thould be cast of. But in truth, it was not of any care of the Shippe, but onely of a most cowardly minde of the Master, and the chiefest of the company to re-

Now you shill understand that the Captaine was verie ficke, and fince the time that the Ship loft her Mais, the became the most labouriome Ship that ever did fwimme on the Sea, fo as he 20 was not able to indure in her, and at that present he lay aboord my Shippe, so as there was none of any truft, or accompt left in her. But fuch was the case of that Shippe (being without failes, mafts or any manner of tackle) as in the fense & indgement of any man living, there did not live that desperate minded man in the world, which (in that case she was then in) would have ventured to have failed in her halfe fo farre as England: and if the doe returne, it is (in my opinion) the most admirable returns that ever Ship made, being so farre of, and in her case. These vullaines having left in my Ship, all their hurt men, and having aboord of them both my Surgeans. I. hauing not one in mine owne Shippe, which knew how to lay a plaster to a wound, much lesse to cure any by falues : and further, having in their Shippe three times the proportion of my victuall (wherein confifted the onely reliefe and comfort of all my company) these most 30 hard harted villaines, determined that night amongst themselves, to loose mee at their Damable de- next convenient time they could espie, and in this case to goe for England, leaving vs in the greatest distresse that euer one Christian left another in : for wee had all her hurt men in vs. and we had taken out of her the best part of her men not long before : fo as in running from vs. they not onely carried away our Surgeans, and all their prouision, but also our victuall, wherein confiited all our reliefe and comfort : having in them at their departure but fix and fortie men, carrying away with them the proportion for fix moneths victuall of one hundred and twenty men at large.

Ileaue you to confider of this part of theirs, and the miferable cafe I was left in, with so many burt men, fo little victuall, and my Boate being fo bad, as fixe or feuen men continually bailing 40 water, were feant able to keepe her from finking; and mend her we could not by any meanes, before we recovered some shoare: for had not these villaines in the Roe-backe (that night wee rode in this Baye) fuffered their Boate to run ashoare with Irih men (which went to betray vs) Inadraken her Boate, and funke this great naughtie Boate. Such was the greatnesse of our mishaps, as we were not left with the comfort and hope of a Boate to relieue our selves withall; we The Ree butte not having left in the Ship scarse three tuns of water for 140, men, the most part whereof being forfaketh him, hurt and ficke. We putting out of the road the next day, they, the fame night in this case left vs. and (as I suppose) they could not accompt otherwise, then that wee should never agains be

iudge in what plight my companie was, being now destitute of Surgeans, victuals, and all other reliefe : which in truth was fo great a discomfort vnto them, as they held themselves dead men, as well whole as hurt. The scantnesse of water made vs that we could not seeke after them, but He commeth - were inforced to feeke to this Iland, with all possible speede, having to beate backe againe thither to S. Sebaffiant. two hundred leagues: which place, God suffered vs to get with our last caske water, the poore men being most extreamly pinched for want thereof. Where (after we had a little refreshed our felues) we prefently mended our Boat in fuch fort, as with great labour and danger, we brought fortie tunnes of water aboord. And in the meane time fearching our store of ropes, tackle, and failes, we found our felues vtterly vnfurnished both of ropesand failes: which accident pleased the company not a little, for by their wants, they affuredly accounted to goe home. Then making 60 a furuay of the victuall, we found to be remaining in the Shippe (according to the rate we then lived at) foureteene weekes victuals large.

The next morning looking for the Roe-bucke, we could no where be seene. I leave to you to co

Their mani-

Huing rigged our Shippes in fuch fort, as our small store would furnish vs, which was most meanely, for we had but foure failes (our sprite-faile, and foretoppe-faile being wanting)

CHAP.6. Candishes speech neglected by his mutinous company, Irishman. 1150

which two the Ship (most principally loueth) and those which we had (except her maine faile) were more then halte worne. In this poore case being furnished, and our water taken in, my comnany knowing my determination (which was to haile my Boate a ground, and build her a new) they forthwith openly began to mus nare, and mutinie : affirming plainely, that I neede not Mutinous mend the Boate, for they would goe home, and then, there should be no vie of her. I, hearing mumuring, their foreches, thought it was now time to looke among it them, calling them together, and told them, that although we had many milhaps fallen upon us, yet (I hoped) that their mindes would not in fuch fort be onercome with any of these misfortunes, that they would goe about to undertake any hale, or difordered course; but that they would cheerefully goe forward, to attempt either to make themselves fa- His persuali-

moma, in refolutely diving, or in living, to performe that, which would be to their perpetual reputation . Ois. And the more we attempted, being in so weake a sase, the more (if we performed) would be to our bonours. But contrariwise, if we died in attempting, we did but that which we same for which was either to performe or die.

And then I shewed them my determination, to goe agains for the Straits of Magellanue . which words were no looner vetered, but forthwith they all with one confent affirmed plantly. they would never goe that way againe; and that they would rather flay ashoare in that defare Hand, then in such case to goe for the Straits. Hought by peaceable meanes to perswade them. the wing them that in going that way, we should relieve our victuals, by falling of Seales, and Birds : which (they did well know) we might doe in greater quantitie, then our Ship could carry. And further, 20 if we got through the Strait (which we might now easily performe, considering we had the chiefest part of Summer before us) we could not but make a most rich Voyage, and also meete againe with the two small Ships which were gone from vs : and that it was but fix hundred leagues thither; and to goe into England they had two thousand. And further that they should be most infamous to the world, that being within fix hundred leagues of the place, which we fo much defired, to returne home againe fo farre, being most infamous and beg gerly. Thele periwasions tooke no place with them, but most boldly, they all affirmed, that they had fworne, they would never goe againe to the Straits; neither by no meanes

And one of the chiefest of their faction, most proudly and stubbornely vetered these words to my face, in prefence of all the reft: which I feeing, and finding mine owne faction to be fo weake 20 (for there were not any that fauoured my part, but my poore coulen Locke, and the Mafter of the nifted. Ship) I tooke this bold companion by the bosome, and with mine owne hands put a rope about

his necke, meaning resolutely to thrangle him, for weapon about me I had none. His companions feeing one of their chiefe champions in this cafe, & perceiuing me to goe roundly to worke with him, they all came to the Matter, and defired him to speake; affirming they would be ready to take any course that I should thinke good of. I, hearing this, stayed my felfe, and let the fellow goe : after which time, I found them fomething conformable, at least in speeches, though among themselves they still murmured at my intentions. Thus having fomthing pacified them, and perfwaded them, that by no meanes I would take no other course, then to go for the Straits, I tooke ashoare with me thirtie Soldiers, and my Carpenters, carrying sourceene dayes victuall with me 40 for them. Thus going alhoure, I hailed vp my Boate, to new build her in luch fort, as the might bee able to abide the Seas , leaving aboord all my failers, and the reit, to rigge the Ship, and mend failes, and to doe other bufineffe.

And now to let you know, in what case I lay ashoare among these base men, you shall vinderfland, that of these thirtie there were varie few of them, which had not rather have gone to the Portnoals, then to have remained with me; for there were some, which at my being ashoare, were making rafts to goe ouer to the maine, which was not a mile ouer, where the Portugals had continuall watch of vs, looking but for a fit opportunity to let vpon vs : being in this case, alwaies expecting the comming of the Portugals, against whom I could have made no retistance, and further the trecherie of some of my companie, which defired nothing more, then to steale over, so to 50 betray me, I proteft, I lived hourly, as he that still expecteth death. In this case I mede all the speed I could to make an end of my Boate, that we might be able to rowe her aboord, which in twelve daies we mainely finished, which being done, I came aboord, and found all my butinesse in good forwardnesse : to I determined with all possible speede to dispatch, and be gone for the Straits of

But ere euer we could get in all our water, and timber-wood, and other necessaries, an Irish man An Irish rascail (a noble villaine) having made a raft, got over to the maine, and told the Portugals which and trainer to were there (watching nothing but an opportunitie) that if they would goe over in the night, his fellowed. they should finde most of our men ashoare, without weapon, and that they might doe with them what they would: voon this, the next night, they came ouer, and having taken some 60 of our men, they brought them where the reft lay, which they most cruelly killed, being ficke men , not able to stirre to helpe themselues. Those which were ashoare, more then the ficke men, had stolne out of the Shippe, for it was all my care to keepe them aboord, knowing well, that the Portugals fought to spoile vs, the place being so fit for them, all overgrowne with woods and bulhes, as their Indians might goe and spoile vs with their acrowes at their pleasures,

The Portugals went prefently agains over to the maine, but left their Indians to keepe in the bushes. About the watering place, our men going ashoare, were shot at, and hurt, and could Can Candilles by no meanes come to hurt them againe, by reason of the wood, and bushes. Wherefore finding my men hurt, and that by no meanes I could doe any thing there, without more loffe of men (whereof I had no neede) for I had not about ninetie men left, or little ouer, notwithflanding my wants of wood and water, and my Boate (not being fufficiently mended) was in no poffibilitie 10 to doe me pleafure, in this case was I forced to depart; fortune neuer ceasing to lay her greatest aduerfities vpon me.

But now I am growne so weake and faint, as I am scarce able to hold the penne in my hand: wherefore I must leave you to inquire of the rest of our most vnhappy proceedings, but know this, that (for the Straits) I could by no meanes, get my company to give their confents to goe. For after this misfortune, and the want of our failes (which was a chiefe matter they alleadged) and to tell you truth, all the men left in the Shippe, were no more then able to weigh our ankers. But in truth I defired nothing more, then to attempt that course, rather defiring to dye in going forward, then basely in returning backe againe; but God would not suffer me to dye so happy a man, although I fought all the wayes I could, still to attempt to performe fomewhat. For, after 20 that by no meanes I faw they could be brought to goe for the Straits, having fo many reasonable realons to alleadge against me, as they had : first, having but three failes, and the place subject to fuch furious flormes, and the loffe of one of thefe was death; and further, our Boate was not fufficiently repaired, to abide the Seas : and laft of all, the fewnesse, and feeblenesse of our company (wherein we had not left thirty failers) their causes being alleadged against me, I could not well antiwere : but refolued them plainely, that to England I would neuer give my confent to goe. and that (if they would not take fuch courses as I intended) I was then determined, that Shippe and all should linke in the Seas together, Vpon this, they began to be more tracable, and then I the wed them, that I would beate for Saint Hellena, and there, either to make our felues happy, by mending, or ending. This course(in truth)pleased none of them, and yet seeing my determination, and supposing it would be more danger to refish me, then in seeming to be willing, they were at quiet, vntill I had beaten from 29, degrees, to the Southward of the Equator to 20. At which time finding that I was too far Northerly, to have good winde I called them to tacke about the Shippe to the Southward againe. They all plainely made answere, they would not, and that they had rather due there, then be started in seeking an Iland, which (they thought) that way

we should never get.

His purpole

for S. Helena,

What meanes I yied to stand against to the Southward. I leave you to inquire of themselves: but from the latitude of 20. I beate backe againe into 28. with fuch contrary windes, as (I suppose) neuer man was troubled with the like, folong a time together. Being in this latitude, I found the winde fanourable, and then I flood agains to the Northward, willing the Mafter & his com- 40 pany to faile East North-east, and they in the night (I being a sleepe) steered North-east, and meere Northerly. Notwithstanding all this most vile viage, we got within two leagues of the Iland, and had the winde fauoured vs fo, as that we might have stemmed from 18, degrees to 16. Sailors disobe East North-east, we had found the Iland: but it was not Gods will so great a bleffing should befall me. Being now in the latitude of the Hand, almost eighteene leagues to the Westward of it, the winde being continually at East South-east, the most contrary winde that could blow : I prefently made a furuary of my victuall, and found, that according to that proportion (which we then lived at) there was not left in the Ship eight weekes victuall; which being fo farre from reliefe, was (as I suppose) as small a portion, as euer men were at in the Seas.

Scarfity of

Being to vocertaine of reliefe, I demanded of them, whether they would venture (like good 50 minded men) to beate to the Southward againe, to get this Iland, where we should not onely relieue our felues, but also to be in full affurance, either to finke, or take a Carracke: and that by this meanes, we would have a fufficient revenge of the Portugals, for all their villanies done vnto ve: or that they would pinch, and bate halfe the allowance they had before, and so to see for England. They all answered me, they would pinch to death, rather then goe to the Southward againe. I knowing their dispositions, and having lived among them in such continuall torment, and disquietnesse; and now to tell you of my greatest griefe, which was the sicknesse of my deare kinfman lobn Locke, who by this time was growne in great weakeneffe, by reason whereof, hee desired rather quietnesse, and contenteduesse in our course, then fuch continuall disquietnesse, which neuer ceased mee. And now by this, what with 62 griefe for him, and the continual trouble I indured among fuch hel-hounds, my Spirits were cleane ipent; wishing my felfe vpon any desart place in the world, there to dye, rather then thus baiely to returne home againe : which courfe, I had put in execution, had I found an Iland. which the Cardes make to be in 8.degrees to the Southward of the line. I fweare to you, I fought

CHAP.7. S. I. Mafter Th, Candishes last Will. M. Knivets Doyage with bim. 1201

it with all diligence, meaning (if I had found it) to have there ended my unfortunatelife. But God fuffered not fuch happinesse to light vpon me, for I could by no meanes finde it. fo as I was forced to goe towards England: and having gotten eight degrees by North the Line . I loft my most dearest cousin.

And now consider, whether a heart made of flesh, be able to indure so many missortunes . all death.

falling your me without intermission. I thanke my God, that in ending of me, he hath pleased

to rid me of all further trouble and mif-haps. And now to returne to our private matters. I have made my Will, wherein I have given speciall charge, that all goods (what foeuer belong wnto me) Cap. candified he delivered into your hands. For Gods fake, refuse not to doe this last request for mee. I owe Will. 10 little, that I know of, and therefore it will be the leffe trouble : but if there be any debt, that (of truth) is owing by mee, for Gods fake, fee it paid. I have left a space in the Will for another name, and (if you thinke it good) I pray take in my Coulin Henrie Sackeford, hee will eafe you much in many bufineffes. There is a Bill of Aduenture to my Coufin Richard Locke (if it happen the other thip returne home with any thing, as it is not impossible) I pray remember him, for he hath nothing to flew for it. And likewife Mafter Heton the Customer of Hampton. which is co. pounds, and one Elies of Rescliffe by London , which is co. pounds more , the reit have all Bills of adventure, but the ruine in the victuall, onely two excepted, which I have written vnto vou. I have given Sir George Cary the Delire, if ever thee returne, for I alwayes promifed him her, if thee returned, and a little part of her getting, if any fuch thing happen . I 20 pray you fee it performed.

To vie complements of love (now at my last breath) were frivolous, but know : that I left none in England, whom I loued halfe so well as your selfe: which you, in such fore deserved at my hands, as I can by no meanes require. I have left all (that little remayning) vnto you, not to be accomptable for any thing. That which you will (if you finde any ouerplus of remayned, vour felfe specially being satisfied to your owne desire) give vnto my sister Anne Candish. I have written to no man living but your felfe, leaving all friends and kinfmen, onely reputing you as Miftris Anni dearest. Commend me to both your brethren, being glad, that your brother Edward escaped so cardife. vnfortunate a voyage. I pray give this Copie of my vnhappy proceedings in this Action, to

none, but onely to Sir George Cary, and tell him, that if I had thought, the letter of a dead man 30 would have beene acceptable, I would have written vnto him. I have taken order with the Mafler of my ship, to see his peeces of Ordnance deliuered vnto him, for hee knoweth them. And if the Roe-bucke bee not returned, then, I have appointed him to deliver him two braffe peeces, out of this ship, which I pray see performed. I have now no more to say but take this last farewell. That you have lost the louingest friend, that was lost by any. Commend mee to your wife, no more, but as you love God, doe not refuie to vndertake this last request of mine. I pray forget not Mafter Carey of Cockmoton, gratifie him with fome thing : for hee vied mee kindly at my departure. Beare with this icribling : for I proteft, I am feant able to hold a pen in my hand.

CHAP. VII.

The admirable adventures and strange fortunes of Master ANTONIE
KNIVET, Which went with Master THOMAS CAM-DISH in bis fecond Doyage to the South Sea. 1591.

What befell in their voyage to the Straits, and after, till he was taken by the Portugals.



E departed from Planmouth with fine faile of thips, determining to goe for the South Sea (the names of our Ships were these) the Gallion Leicester, which was our Admirall; the Roe-bucke, Vice-admirall; the Defire, the Damue, and the Blacke Pinnaffe. Sixe or feuen dayes after that wee were departed from the

Coaft of England, we met with ninetcene faile of Flemmings in the night, Not regarding what they were, our Vice-admirall tooke one of them, and all the reft escaped. In Planniff prize the morning the Master of our Flemmil prize was brought before the Generall, and of him wee saustied with had newes of a fleet of ships, that was departed out of Liftone for Brafile, the which newes we Englishmics.

Vider the Equinoctiall line, we lay fewer and twentie dayes driving too and fro without puffe

Lapanders.

of winde: In which time most of our men fell ficke of the Scurule by reason of the extreme heat of the Sunne, and the vapours of the night; not withflanding our great danger of ficknesse did not appaule the hardnelle of our hearts, being in as great extremitie as ever mentwere, it happened that two men of lapon which the Generall had taken in his first voyage (bearing engle to a poore Poringall that went with vs from Planmouth; accused him to the Generall) having before confinited his death in this fort : The Generall being at dinner , thefe two laponers came to his Cabom, telling their tale fo loud that every one might heare the report (which was thus) that Periasall hane the Portugall of the thip was a Traytor, and that he had often given them counfell to run away with him at Brafil : moreover (quoth he) if it fo had pleafed God wee had taken the Towne of 20 Santos, as our Generall had pretended, from thence that hee would guide them to the South Sea, where they should be well rewarded for their intelligence; upon the which accusations, the poore Portugall was hanged. And as for his going from Santos by land through America. to the South Sea. had beene a thing impossible, for the Countrie is all Wildernesse, and full

After we had beene fo long becalmed under the Line, we had a faire North-west winde, and

in twentie daves faile we had figure of Land on the coast of Brasile, but no man knew certainly what part it should be. At length comming neere the shoare, we espied two small ships, the one

of them we tooke, the other cleaped; that wee tooke was laden with Blackamores, and some

Plate. By the Pilot of this flip we knew we were at Cape Frio, that is, Cold Cape. This Cape lyeth twelve leagues from the Rouer of Ienero, and thirtie leagues from Santos, which was the Towns we meant totake. In this ship we tooke a Friar that hid himselfe in a Chift of meale:

the night following by the directions of our new taken Pilot, wee came to a place called Ilha

Grande, twelve leagues from Santos , at this place we tooke five or fixe houles with Poringals and

merchandife: they came from Fernambaque, and were determined to naue gone to the Riner of 20

of Sauzers.

Sauges of the Countrie. Here weehad good flore of Potatoes, and Plantons, divers kindes of good rootes, with tome Hogs and Hennes, which was very good and comfortable for the refreshing of our men. Here we had fuch ditorder amongst our selves, that if the Portugals had beene of any courage, they might have killed many of vs. for our men would fight for their victuals as if profiges of ill they had beene n . Christians but Ie wes, and they that got the beft, would get them into some 40 and from foill hole, or into the Wilderneffe under some Tree, and there they would remaine as long as they had meat. For mine owne part (there was fuch sharking HI could in that place get neither meat nor mony, and pure hunger compelled me to goe into the Woods, to fee it wee could kill any thing with our Oceces, or if we could finde forme Poratoes, 'And is were went, were encountred with ituen or eighcof our companie, that were tagether, by the cores about a Hogge they had killed, and the first was, who should have the best share, we company in at that time, when every one yield their fists, stole away a quarter, and went a good way into the Wildernesse, where we were merry for that night; the next day wheelame backet againe with good ftore of Potato rootes; and going into the house where the Generals musicians were, wee found them dressing of eight yong Whelpes for their dinner; wee gining them of our rootes they were contented that wee co

and all his Moores alhoare, we departed from thence, and having a faire winde about fixe of the Saint Schaffian, clocke we came to the Hand of San Schaffian, where wer anchored, being fine leagues from San-

tos. As foone as the fhips were in the Highman, every Mafter and Captaine came aboard of the Generall, to know how hee pretended to take the Towne of Santor, and they all resoluted that our long Boat and our Shallon onely with one hundred men was enough for the taking of it. For the Portugall Pilot told was that it was of no ftrength, On Christmas-eue about sen a clocke in the night, when the Basts were to goe alhoate there were do many that would hate gone, that Varuly demeat wee began to fight and cast one another over-board into she Sea; but as soone as our Generall 69 heard the noise, he commanded every man to come aboard the ship againe, I fearing the General, and being defirous to goe alboare with the first (for I had scene before that they which came last got nothing) crept vider the feate of our Shallop, where I was for the space of two houres, and the Boat being full of men, I could not get out, but there had beene imothered, if it had not

In the afternoone we fet fire on a new thip, and burned all the houses, leaving the Merchant

CHAP. 7. S.I. Santos taken, Kniuets purchase in the Isluite Colledge, I. King. 1202

heene for William Waldren that was our Boatsman, and iteered the Boat, who hearing me crie vnder him, tore vp the boords, and faued my life. About three a clocke in the morning, wee met with a Canoa (which is a Boat that they make of a whole Tree) in which wee tooke foure Porsweds and two Women; the one of them was going to be married that morning. After we had taken this Boat we went close to the shoare; and having tarried for our Boat an houre, we heard the Portugals ring a Bell, prefently lasper lorge the Portugall Pilot told vs, that now was the rime to land, for he knew by that Bell that they were in the middle of their Maffe, and at that instant the Friar was holding up the Bread of Sacrament before the people to worship it.

He had no fooner spoke, but we were all on shoare, and so marching to the Church, we tooke Santor taken to every mans fword without refiftance, and there we remay ned till it was feuen of the clocke, for the comming of our long Boat, and the rest of our companie (for we were but twentie three in all) and we durit not take fack of the Towne with fo few. By that meanes some of the Portugals that were in their houles escaped with their persons and mony. Here was good flore of victuall and great store of Success, Sugars, and Caffaute meale, of the which wee made very good bread. In the Church there were three hundred men belide women and children. Alloone as wee had taken the fack of the Towne, and placed all our men in order, word was fent to our Generall of all that had beene done. After the Generall had fent answere againe to the Towne, all the Portus gals were fet at libertie, and we fortified our felues in the Towne, keeping onely feuen or eight of the chiefest and principall prisoners, Master Cooke Captaine of the Vice-admirall, went Capan taine of all the companie that went alhoare; he fauoured me very much, and commanded meeto take a Friars Cell to lodge in, in the Colledge of lefts, where hee himfelfe lodged with many Captaines and young Gentlemen. It was my chance going up and downe from Cell to Cell, that I looked vincer a bed flanding in a darke hole, where I found a little chift fast nayled, and the How Anthonie feames thereof were white with wheat flower. I drew it forth, and finding it of great waight, Kniver found a

broke it in pieces, wherein I found 1700. Ruls of eight, each whereof contayneth foure shillings chill of fluer.

English. This hole I tooke for my lodging, and no man knew of my good purchase; cloth, shirts, blankers, and beds, and such stuffe no man regarded.

The next day following, being S. Stenens day, the Portugals gaue vs a falle alarum : the Generall came also with all the ships into the Road, and presently landed with two hundred men. 20 and commanded all the outward part of the Towne to bee burned. Then hee gaue order for the building of a Pinnaffe to row with twentie Oares, and commanded all the fhips that were in the Harbour to be fet on fire. At this Towne we tooke an English man, called John King, which had Loon Ring Esbeene there fifteene yeeres. Our Generall lay in the Colledge of left all the time that we were glift man. at Santos. This Colledge had many back-wayes to the Sea-fide, and it happened one night, that lequites Coltwo Sauages being abused by the Portugals ran away, and knowing the passages of the Colledge. ledge. came in the night to the Generals bed-fide , and brought with them Turkies and Hennes : The The General Generall being awaked by them cryed out for helpe, One of them that could speake Portugall, by two fanages fell downe on his knees, and faid, that hee came to cratte his favour, and not to offend him. The first scarred, morning following the Generall had discourse with these two Sauages, and by them he knew of structed. 40 what strength the Portugals campe was, and how that at his going out of the Towne they were determined to give battale : likewise they told him of three great bags of mony, and a jarre, that was hid vnder the roote of a Fig tree, and guided vs where we had three hundred head of Cattel. which ferued vs all the time we were there.

The Daintie being a small thip made a good voyage to Santos, for thee came in before any of our fleet, by the which meanes they laded her with Sugar, and good commodities of the Portugals thips that were in the Harbour; this thip went voluntarily with vs, and having made a good voyage, the Captaine told the Generall that he would returne for England, the Generall answe- The Daintie red, that he was determined to fend him into the Riner of Plate, and then with all his heart hee would have reshould recurre. We continued two moneths at Santos, which was the cuerthrow of our voyage, turned from 50 In the time that we were there many Canibals came vnto vs, defiring the General that he would land. destroy the Portugals, and keepe the Countrie to himselfe, protesting to bee all on his side : the Generall thanked them for their kindneffe, and told them that at that time he had a farther pretence. We found flore of gold in this Towne, that the Indians had brought from a place, called

by the Indians, Mutinga, and now the Portugals have mynes there. Many of our companie coun- Quinga felled the Generall to winter at this Towne, but he would not by any meaner. From our first feeting forth from England, till we came to Santos, I had great loue to Christo-

pher the lapon , because I found his experience to bee good in many things. This Irdian and I grew into fuch friendthip one with another, that wee had nothing betwixt vs vnknowne topanders retogether. I a long time having found him true, I told him of the money I had found under bdie. 60 the Friers bed; with that hee told mee of some money that hee had got, and wee swore to part halfe from thenceforth whatfoeder God should permit vs to obtaine : fome foure dayes after that, when we were ready to depart, he told me that that time of the yeare was past, wherefore it was belt to hide our money in the ground, and remaine in the Countrey. I believing his perlwasions, agreed to doe what he thought best; thus we determined both, that the same

1204 Port Famine in Straits: ominous names. Kniuets toes lost with cold. LIBVI

day we were to goe a shipboord, that then he should take all the money in a Canoa, and hide is by a River fide; in the morning I delivered all the money into his hands, and he fwore that in leffe then two houres he would returne, but I staied aboue fine houres, and might have tarried all my life, forhe was gone aboord the Ship, afterward by good meanes I got mine owneagaine. and so our former friendship was parted. Our men marched by Land from Santos, to another Towne called San Vincent, and in the way our men burned five Engenies, or Sugar-mils, the diforder of our men was fuch at their imbarking, that if the Portugals had beene of any courage, they might easily have our our throates, the two Indians which came at night to the Generals chamber went with vs to the Straits.

We departed from Santos, with a faire winde for the Straites of Magellan, fourteene dayes we

had faire weather, the fifteenth day all the Masters and Captaines of the fleete comming aboord. the Admirall wonne a great funime of money. Two dayes after wee were becalmed, and the Pilotes taking their height, found it to be in the altitude with the River of Plate. And we being farre from the shoare did beare roome for Land, determining to fend the Daintie, the Blacke Pininto the aforefaid River of Plate, but it was not the will of God that we should execute our pretence. For the same day wee thought to have descried Land, the winde At the river of Plate we had a beganne to blow South-well, and the Seas were very darke, fwelling in waves so high, that we great forme. could not perceive any of our accompanied ships, although we were very neere one to another. In this storme the Seas brake ouer the Poope of our shippe, and washed our men astonisht with feare into the against our Poope, and brake downe all 20 the crow a smal Skippers, the Roe-bucke in this storme ranne her our Gallerie : all things were cast into the Sea that stood aboue Hatches, heere miserable Forour eyes, with tune began to frowne on vsall, especially on mee, for all that I had, both in clothes and money. with the Seas that brake over her fides. Here twelue men & were cast into the Sea, all our ship aboy. The Roe- our Generall thewed himfelfe to bee of a noble courage, for hee did nothing but runne vp and downe encouraging his men which were all amazed, thinking that to bee their last houre, this ftorme continued three dayes, in which time wee lost most of our sayles blowne away from

> It was the will of God, that after we had been three dayes in the storme, the wind ceased but the Seas continued fo great, that wee were not able to beare any fayle. We lying thus toft with Seas, without fight of any of our fleet, the company murmured, and wished themselves againe at 20 Santes, and indeed we al thought that the rest of our company were driven back with the storme to the Coast, thinking it best for vs to returne againe. The Generall hearing what speeches passed in the shippe, came forth vpon the halfe decke, and commanded all the company to come before him, and after he had heard them speake, he answered that he had given directions to all the Masters and Captaines of the fleete, that what weather soener should part them, that they should vie their indeuour to take Port Defire, and that they should tarry a fortnight, so if none of the company came, they should leave some marke on the shoare, and goe on their Voyage, with that euery man was satisfied, the Generall promising twentie pounds to whomsoeuer could first spie a fayle, we made our course to Port Defre, and in ten dayes we fafely arrived at our defired Port, where we found all our fleet but the Daintie , which was no little comfort to vs all, because the 40 time of our yeere was almost past, we stayed here but two dayes taking a few Penguins, from an Hand right before Port Defire.

When we came to the mouth of the Straits wee found the winde contrary, and were forced to lye heating before the Harbour of Port Famme, three dayes ere wee could double that Cape, for many times we did cast anchor without the Cape in twentie fathomes water, but on a sudden, the current would carrie away the fnips with Cables and Anchors affoat in the night, in this current the Roe-bucke driven with the current, fell crosse over the haze, there wee had no other remedy, but were forced to cut our cables, and folose our Anchors. In the end with much adoe we doubled the Cape, and got into Port Famine, where wee lay a feuennight for want of winde and weather to goe forward. It the time that wee were at Port Famine, every day our so men went on shoare, to get Muscles and Fruits of the Countrey to eate, and the barke of a tree that was like Sinamon. One day the Boate being ashoare, there came to vs aboue a thousand Canibals naked, with feathers in their hands, but they would not come fo neere vs, as we could touch them. If we offered them any thing, they would reach to vs with a long Pole, and whatfocuer we gaue them, they would returne vs feathers for it, wee made our fignes to them for vi-Etuals, and they would fhew vs by fignes, that they had none, but what they could kill with their Darts. I have told you how my chift, and all my clothes were cast over-boord, now comming to this cold Climates, and wanting clothes my hope of life was little, for here men were well at morning, and by night frozen to death. It was my fortune to goe alhoare to get some Milerable cold food, for the allowance of our thip was little, and comming abourd againe with my feete wette, 60 and wanting shift of clothes, the next morning I was nummed, that I could not three my legs.

Anthonie Kni- and pulling off my flockings, my toes came with them, and all my feete were as blacke as foote.

met loft his toes and I had no feeling of them. Then was I not able to ftirre.

CHAP. J. S.I. Harris bloweth of his no fe: Straits purfue them out of the Straits. 1205

Thus I continued for the space of a fortnight, till wee came into a faire Bay, where there were many faire Hands, and on the rockes of some of these Hands, wee found Scouts made of the barkes of trees, and afterwards wee found many Indians, but none of them would come to vs. On the South-west side of the Mayne we found a River, which wee thought had gone to the Strait and South Sea: Our long Boate was fent vp this River, and found it to be very firaite and deepe. On deepe Riflers the fides thereof they found great Muscles, and in them good flore of Pearles, and we named it Muscles with the River of Pearles; the Bay had the name of the Malter of our Pinnasse, because he first found Pearles, it and did discouer it, called it Tobias Bay. From this place were went further into the Straites having the winde against vs, and with the cold there died every day out of our ship eight or nine to men, Here one Harris a Gold-imith loft his Nofe : for going to blow it with his fingers , cast it Haris his hard into the fire. This lobu Chambers, Cefar Ricafen, and many that are now in England can tefti- hap. fie. The Generall having experience, that the wind would tarry at the least two moneths, his men died io fait, that hee thought best to returne for the Coast of Brafil, and there to separate our fleete to the Hauens, of Santos that Ive on the Coast, River of lennary, Spirite Santo, determining by this meanes, to furnish himselfe with Ropes, Sayles, and Victuals of such prices as hee How weretute

did not doubt but to take, and likewife determining to take Santos againe. The Generall came backe with this pretence for Brafill, came to Port Famine, where wee an- gellan. chored two dayes, and there tooke a note of all his men, that were living, and finding some of Generall canthem very ficke, commanded them to be fet on shoare, I was so ill in the Straites that no man dif commeth 20 thought I would have lived, and twice I was brought vpon the Hatches to bee cast into the Sea; against to Port but it was the will of God, that when they had faid Prayers, as they accustomed when any man bee setteth died, and that they laid hands on me to cast me ouer-boord, If pake, defiring them not to cast me eight men on ouer-boord, till I was dead. At this Port Famine comming backe, the Generall would have fet thours and me on shoare, but Captaine Cockeentreated for me ; so I remayned in the ship. I had very sorie would have clothes, the toes of my feet full of Lice, that (God is my record) they lay in clusters within my thouse with flesh, and of many more besides my selfe; I had no Cabbin, but lay vpon a chist. Now we come them, had it out of the Straits with all our fleet, but the Dainty that loft vs in the River of Place, in the ftorme not beene for that we had, and the Crom that was funke. After that we came out of the Straits, wee came be- Captain Cocte tract we man, and the four two man was man the first two fore Port Define againe, and there our Boats went to Penguins Hand for Penguins; at this place the How I got feefore againe, and there our Boats went to Penguins Hand for Penguins; at this place the How I got feefore against the forest two forest penguins and the port of the post of t some words over my feet, and I had feeling in my legges and feete which I had lost before, for terwe came the space of a fortnight, many times before this man came, I had hot Irons laid to my feet, but out of the I had no feeling were they neuer fo hot.

and commanded them that till midnight they should keepe there course with him, and that when he should show them two lights, then they should cast about and beare in with the shoare, but Danis which was Captaine of the Defire, and Tobie Mafter of the Pinnaffe did deceine vs. and went for the Straits, as I was enformed afterwards by some of there men that were taken at How the Defre Brafill, after that I was taken. Three or foure dayes after this wee had a great storme, in the and the Blacke Brafil, after that I was taken. Three or foure dayes after this wee had a great frome, in the Pinneffe gooth 40 which the Ree-backe loft her mayne Mast, and we loft her. Now were wee all alone in a great away from vi. thip, and we knew not what wee were best to doe, but in the end wee determined to come for Santes, hoping there to find the rest of our company. In this storme I sate on a chist, and was not Of a great able to ftirre, for ftill as the ship seeled on one tide, the chift went from starboord to larboord, and storme we bad it was the will of God, that it fell betweene a piece of Ordnance, and the Carpenters Cabbin coming backen on the one fide, and on the other fide betweene another Peece, and the Chirurgions Cabbin. Thus all the night I lay very cold, and it was the will of God that the chift neuer turned ouer, for if it had, I could not have escaped death, the next day the storme ceased, and most of our young Saylers, which we call men of top a yard, being wearied with their nights worke that was paft, were vnder Hatches afleepe, and would not come up to doe some businesse that was to bee done. With that the Generall came downe, with the end of a Rope as bigge as mine arme, and one of the Saylers hid himselfe behind me; the Generall spying him, strooke at him, and hit me on the

That day that we departed from Port Defire, the Generall fent for all the Masters of the ships

the night at Santos, fell ouer-boord by a mischance and was drowned. Wee with much adoe in the end got to the Harbour of Santos, where wee found none of our They come to company, we anchored right before a Sugar-mill, that stood hard by the Sea side, the Generall afked if there were any that would goe ashoare, then Captaine Stafford, Captaine Southwell, and Captaine Barker offered themselves to goe on shoare, and twentie more with them, the Boate 60 that they went in was made of Sugar chiffs and barrell boords, they landed and tooke the Sugarmill, at the which they tooke a great Barke, and fent it laden with victuals, aboord our shippe, which was more welcome vnto vsthen if it had beene gold. Here wee continued all that day, and the next day they fent the great Boate againe laden with Sugars and Guinee Wheate, then the Generall fent them word that they should come away, but they fent him word againe, that

fterains of Ma-

fide of the head, and halfe an houre after, finding me in the tame cafe that the Generall had left How the Gemee in, they tooke me, and would have cast mee out of one of the parts of the ship, but it was nerall stooke the will of God that I spake and was faued. Here one of the Indians that came to the Generall in gainst his wills

Thus

S. Vincent.

men, and wee

loft ourswith three men. And at the Strai:s we took the Defires long Boat for the Admirall.

Port Defire.

Magellan Port Famine.

Current.

Barkelike Si-Naked Sana-

in the Straits.

The Fortugals kill our men. See Cap candifb before.

they had more prountion on shoare, and before all was abourd they would not come. The third day, that our men were on shoare, the Poringall let on them. They had the little Boate ashoare, but the wind being from shoare, the great Boat wene not from the ship fide that day, the next day that our men were flaine, our long Boate went alhoure, and brought vs newes how the little Boat was broke and how all our men were gone. One of the Indians that I have told you of landed here with our men, and having experience of the Countrey, when our men were in the hotteft of their fight ranne away, having one Arrow shot thorow his necke, and another in his mouthand out at his poale, this Indian swamme aboutd vinto vs vpon a logge, and told vs that all our men were flame.

S. Sebafian.

The Rosebuche come covs at Santes.

The Generall thought good to goe from hence to the lland of San Sebastian, and there if he did not meete with tome of the fhips, that then he would returne for England, the fame day that we were to depart from Santos, the Roe-bucke past by the mouth of the River of Bertia; where we were, and that a Peece, and we answered with another, then the Roe-bucke came into vs with her Masts broken. After the Ros-bucke came to vs, we went neerer the Towne, determining to have beaten downe the Towne with our Ordnance, but wanting water, the Galleon Lecester toucht ground, and we had much adoe to get her cleere againe. Then wee landed eightie of our men, at a small River neere the Towne, where we had great store of Mandiora Roots, Potators, Plantons, and Pine Apples. The Portugals feeing our mengoing into the River, fent fix Canoas to meete them, we leeing them, made a shot at them with the chaine of our Pumpe, with that they returned, and our Boats came fafely aboord with good flore of the aforenamed Roots. In 20 our ship there was a Portugall whom we tooke in the ship taken at Cape Frio, this Portugall went with vs to the Straits of Magellanus, and feeing of our overthrow, told vs of a Towne called Spirito Sanito, this Portugall laid that we might goe before the Towne with our flips, and that without danger, we might take many Sugar-mils, and good flore of cartle.

Spirito Santo.

Portugall han-

The words of this Portugall made vs breake off our pretence that wee had for San Sebestian. and we went to Spirito Sancto. in eight dayes we got before the mouth of the Harbour; at length we came to an Anchor in the Roade, and prefently we fent our Boats to found the Channell, and we found not halfe the depth that the Portugall land we should finde, the Generall thinking that the Portugall would have betrayed vs. without any triall caused him to bee hanged, he which was done in a trife. Here all the Gentlemen that were living, defred that they might go ashoare 20 to take the Towns. The General was very unwilling, & told them of divers inconveniences, but all would not suffice them, they were so importunate, that the Generall choice out one hundred and twentie men, of the beit that werein both the fhips , and lent Captaine Morgan a lingular good Land-fouldier, and Lieutenant Royden, for choife Commanders in this action. They landed before a small Fort with one of the Boats, and drave the Portugals out of it, the other Boate went higher, when they had a very hot skirmish, and their lives were quickly shortned, for they landed on a Rocke, that it cod before the Fort, as they leaped out of the Boate, they flid all armed into the Sea, and so most of them were drowned. To be short wee lost eightie men, at this 80. men flaine: place, and of the fortie that returned, there came not one without an Arrow or two in his body, and some had fine or fixe.

When we saw we could doe no good at this place, wee determined to come agains for the I-

land of San Sebastian, and there we meant to burne one of our ships, and from thence we deter-

mined to goe for the Straits againe, the company that was in the Roe-bucke, hearing of it, in the

night runne away from vs, and we were left alone againe, well we came to San Sebastian Iland,

lett for dead.

Venemous

all this while I lay under Hatches lame, ficke, and almost started : I was not able to stirre, I was so weake. After we came to this lland, the first thing that was done, the ticke men were fet on shoare to shift for themselves, twentie of vs were set on shoare, all were able to go yo and downe although very weakly, but (I alas!) my toes were raw, my body was blacke, I could not speake Authory Kninet nor flirre. In this cate I was layed by the shoare side, and thus I remayned from fine of the clock in the morning, till it was betweene eleuen and twelve of the clocke, that the Sunne came to 50 his highest, and the extreme heate of the Sunne pierced through my bodie, whereby I came to my felfe, as a man awaked from fleepe; and I faw them that were fet on flore with me. Ive dead and a dying round about me : thele men had eaten a kind of Peale, that did grow by the Sea fide which did poyton them. When I faw all thefe men dead, I prayfed God that had rid them out of their milerable effate, and curfed my hard fortune, that Death it felfe did refule to end my tormented and most miserable life. I looked towardes the sheare, and saw nothing but these Peale, and if I did eate them, I was fore of death, if I did not eate them, I faw no remedie but to flarue.

Seeing in this manner, I looked towards the ship, to see if the Boate came ashoare, but (alas) all my hopes were with speed to end my life, but that it was the will of God, I saw things there 63 by the Sea fide, and it was a great ebbe; then I went creeping on my hands and my feete like a childe, and when I had gotten to the Sea fide, I faw many Crabs lye in the holes of the mudde, Ipulled off one of my flockins, and filled it with Crabs, and as well as I could, I carried them to a hollow figge tree, where I found a great fire made, to calling them on the coles, I did eat them.

CHAP.7. S.2. Knivets terrour and food, captivity, danger of death.

and fo I lay downe to fleepe till the next day; and then I watched for the ebbe to get fome more meate. Thus I lived eight or nine dayes without fight of any man, the stinke of some of the dead men that the Sea came not to, was so noysome that I was faine to remoone from that place, and as I went along the sh pare to seeke some place to abide in I passed by a faire River that went into the S:a; where I thought it good to make my abode because of the fresh water, I had not beene there fearce the space of halfe a quarter of an houre, but I faw a great thing come out terms dw ha of the water, with great scales on the backe, with great vgly clawes and a long tayl; this beatt could be aft came towards me, and I had not the power to thun it, but as it came towards me I went and met the come out it, when I came neere it, I frood still amazed to fee to monstrous a thing before me. Hereupon of the water, to this beaft flood still and opened his mouth, and thrust out a long tongue like a Harping-Iron. I

commended my felfe to God, and thought there to have bin torne in pieces; but this beaft turned againe, and went into the River, and I followed to the Rivers side.

The next day I went farther into the lland, fearing to tarrie in this place, and I found'a great Whale lying on the shoare like a ship with the keele vp wards , all coursed with a kinde of short mole with the long lying there. At this place I made a little house, and fed on the Whale for the fpace of a fortnight. In this time the Generall fet forty men more ashoare, at the place where I Whale; was fet first on land, likewife the Generall trimmed his Boate at this place, and had a Not continually a fi hing, of which John Chambers his Cooke had charge, who is this day living in London.

After that there men came ashoare, Heft the place where I was with the Whale, and came to our 20 men and lived with them, beeing at this time reasonable well, and able to goe very well, for the vie of going into the Sea did heale my toes. After these men had beene on shoate seuen or eight dayes, we had taken wood and water for the ship, the Poringals of the River of Innuary, landed on the North point of the Iland hard by the Whale, they took two of our men and one elcaped, who came to vs in the night, and told vs that the Portugals and the Sanages were landed. That day wee had taken a great Tortois ashaore, and wee did bid the Sayler to bee of good cheere, for if it were true, it was the better for vs, for wee were fure, that the Generall would not take vs againe into the ship, with that we all commended our selves to God, and dranke to our friends in faire water, and to we determined to march along the shoare with a white shirt instead of a flagge of truce, but the Sea was so high that we could not, then we determined to watch quarterly, till 30 fuch timeas we could efpie them, I had the first watch, and watched till I was wearie . so called one of my fellowes, to watch, and he answered angerly, Tut, tes a lye: with that I lay downe ty They are taken the fire as well as the reit. Before i was afleepe, the Portugals were at our doore, then I frarted and flane.

vp. and one of them tooke me by the legge, prefently wee were all led to the shoare tide, there all that were taken with me, were knocked on the heads with fire-brands, the Indian that had He (scapeth, hold of me, ftrooke twice or thrice at me with a short Bill, but I striuing, cryed out in Portugall, That if they would faue mee I would tell them newes, with that a Portugall paffed by , an I caught hold of him, fo well as I could I told him a Tale which faued my life at that time, this Portugall game me againe to a Sanage, & I cryed to him that I would go wherfoeuer he went then he bid me not fear for that Sauge was his flaue, and that he would carrie me to the Caprayn, fo I 40 was content perforce to goe I knew not whether, this Camball carried me along the affine, and when wee came where any Rockes reached into the Sea; hee would take mee on his backe, and (wimme with mee round about the Rockes, till wee were free from the Rockes, thus we went almost all night, til at length we came by a great Cliffe that stood by the shore. Then the Sanage whiftled, and another Sanage answered him from the Cliffe, wherupon five or fix Portugals came forth, and amongst them came the Captaine with a piece of bread and Marmallet in his hand,

defired him that hee would give mee some meate, and then I would tell him all the newes that I could, with that all the Portugals brake out in a laughter, and gaue me bread and fifh to eate, after I had eaten that which they had given me, I told them the truth of all that they asked me, heere 50 they killed eight andtwentie of our men, and faued only my felfe, and Henrie Barrawell, who was faued by my meanes.

and as foone as he faw me, he asked me what newes, I answered that I was very hungry, and

ANTHONY KNIVET his comming to the R of Ianero, and wage amongst the Portugals, and Indians : his divers travels therew divers Regions of these parts.

🌊 He next day our ship weighed Anchor, and whether shee went I knew not, wee were carried by the Portugals to the River of Innero, I went with a Mellizo, which is halfe a Portugall, and halfe a Sawage that faued my life in the night w en I was taken. When we came to the Citie of San Sebaffian in the River of Janero, the Portugals in the Canoas, made fuch a noyfe, with Pipes and Drummes, that all the people of the Citie came to fhoare

1200

to fee vs. with that the Canoas going round, as if they were in fight, two Portugals tooks mee. and cast me towards the shoare, laying, here is our prize; the tyde being strong carried mee to the mayne, where I had beene drowned had it not beene for a woman, who feeing the tyde carry me away, fent two or three flaues, and they faued mee. When I came ashoare, all the Portugals were at the Church of our Lady, and I would have gone into the Church, but the Portugals would not let me, faying, that I was not a Christian. Then I was brought before the Gonernour. and he game me to the man that had famed mee, and I was very well contented, for hee yied mee very kindly as I came with him from the Hand of San Sebastian. For the space of three moneths that I was with this man, I kept a house, and went to the Sea-fide with his Hogs, and there I euery day brought him home a basket of great Crabs that lie in the holes of the mud, as deepe as IQ voucan thruit in your arme. This w sa good life, my Master called me sonne, and I dined and supped with him : alto I had a hanging Net to he in , and lay in the same roome which hee It happened one day being by the Sea-fide washing of little Dogs, there came a Canoa full of

Portugals, and they tooke me to the Towne with them, but as foone as I landed I remembred my Henrie Barmer, Matters house and ran to it. As I went I met with Henrie Barmer, the next day the Governous fent for mee and examined me what I was , I told him that I was a poore ship boy, with that Henrie Barway reproued me, asking what I meant to fay to to the Gouernour; I replied , that I was no other but what I had told him, then the Gouernour commanded mee to bee carried to the Sugar mill, where I was three moneths, till all the clothes that I had were torne in peeces, with 20 working in a Barke going day and night vp and downe for Sugar canes and wood for the Mill: the miserable life that I was in made me careleffe what I did. I had neither meat nor clothes but blowes as many as Gally flaues. Then I determined to run away into the Wilderneile, for I was alhamed to be feene naked of the Portugals. I made me a Cottage in a great Caue in the Wilderneffe, where I was feuen moneths. In the day I fished for to live, and in the night I came to some Indians houses, and for fish they gave me Caffauie meale, and many kindes of Rootes, that served me for bread. In the end the Gouernour caused me to be sought out, and gaue mee a sute of blue

clothes, and commanded me to worke in a Garden, where I carried earth, and digged the ground to plant Cabidges and Turneps.

After that I was commanded agains to take charge of the Sugar boat, where I was worse yied 30 then ever I was before, for the Factor was a man that hated English men, and would vie me more like a Dogge then a Man. When I had continued foure moneths in the Barke, it happened that one of the Gouernours fonnes, called Martin de Saa, came from Spirito Santo. This man pittying my poore and miterable life, defired his father that he would give mee vinto him, which his father granted, and I was very well vied of my new Malter, two yeeres after I had ferued him. It happened that hee and his Mother in law fell out, whereupon the Gouernour his father fent him to a Towne, called Wyanaffes, which were in peace with the Portugals, and for Kniues and Hatchets, they fell their Wives and Children. This journey I went with him, and we came to a Towne called lawarapipo (that is to fay) Is this the Dogge? He feeing me forward to doe him feruice, fent me from this Towne with eight of his flaues laden with Hatchets and Knines, to ano- 40 ther kinde of Canibals, called Porces, which had beene likewife friends with the Portugals, but it was long before any Peringal had beene there, I came to the Towne of Peries, where I was Gluted in this fort.

He fleeth.

His new Ma.

Wyanaffes.

Lawarapipo.

Paries.

As foone as I came into a great house, which I thought was their Kings, which they call Mo-Stronge enter. ronichana; prefently, they had hanged up a faire Not betweene two postes, in the which I was commanded to fit downe, and as foone as I was fet, there came at the least twentie women, and fome laving their heads on my shoulders, and others on my knees, they began to crie out making fuch a pitious noise, that I was amazed : yet I determined to sit still till they had done. As soone as the women were gone, an old man came in, all painted with red and blacke, and hee had three great holes in his face, one in the vnder lip, and one on either fide of his mouth, and in every hole so stood a faire greene stone. This Caribal came through the house where I was, with a woodden fword in his hand, and as hee came hee spake very loud, and looked as though hee had beene mad. figiking his hand on his breaft, and on his thighs; still crying out, he walked up and downe. Atter this Sauage had ended his speech, he stroke me on the head, and bad mee welcome; and commanded fuch things as were in his house to be fet before me to cate. After I had beene there two or three houres, newes went through all the Towne of my being there, and from this Towne to others that were bard by,

His danger by Whileft I continued in this Towne a Sauage called Waynembuth , who bare a great grudge to the Portwoals, came where I was, with two women, and when hee came into the house where I was, he laid his hands on their necks, and so came dancing before mee, thus after hee had danced some quarter of an house, he spake to me, faying, Doest thou fee thefe women, by my valour I got their loves, and now their defire I am sworne to fulfill, which is to kill thee, as I have done many more. I antiwered him that I came not as an enemie against him, or any of his, but as a friend that brought him many things that I was affured hee wanted, and that if nothing would fatisfie him but my

life. I affured him, that hee and all his Countrie would pay for it. To this hee made no answere. her went to feparate my things that lay by mee to his Concubines , withall I flarted out of my bed, and tooke my fword in my hand, and thrust the Camball from my things, that I had almost our turned him, and he durft not touch them nor me any more, but stood rayling, and threatning to kill mee, and with the noise that hee made, the old man came into the house, and seeing mee fland with my fword in my hand, asked mee what was the matter, and I told him all that had palled betwixt mee and the forefaid Caniball. After hee had heard mee, hee turned to the Caniball that had offered me abuse, and asked him what reason he had to doe him so great a discredit, and to meddle with any friend of his in his Towne, and angerly commanded him to avoid his Town, To if not he would make him repent that ever he came thither; with that, for feare of afterclaps, he went away with his Concubines : the next morning newes came to the Towne, that Wanambuth was comming with three hundred Cambals, and that perforce he would have me to his Towne, and that there I should be killed according to the order of the Countrie; and how hee left order with his wives to prepare wine through all the Townes in readinesse.

When the old man heard of this, hee presently commanded all his people to take their wear pons, and defired them to goe with him into the field to meet them that were commine to wrong him; whereat they all gaue a great hoope, faying, that they would all die rather then Hofeitall fide they would bee diffraced. The old man embraced mee many times, and defired mee that I would line in Satarry in his house. I thanked him for his love, and told him that in any wife I would not tarry unges. 20 behinde him; fo I went with him to meet the Caniball in the field; we being a great many more then they, they ient three or foure vnto vs as messengers, that they came to be merry and to buy and fell fuch things as they had, then the old man gaue leave for them all to come into his Town. except the Caniball that had mit-vied him the day before; that night I gaue all my merchandife to the old man, and defired him for it, that hee would cause mee to bee conducted out of his Countrie: the next day following the old man gaue me feuentie flaues, and caused three hundred Bow men to goe with me till I was past the Riber of Paraeyna; from whence they returned to River Paraeyna their Towne, and in forrie dayes journy with eale I came againe to Ilba Grande, where I found my Master, Martin de Saa, who was v. ry glad of my returne, and for recompence of my paines. he promited me one of them to bee my flaue, but when hee came to the River of lanero, hee fold them, and gaue me nothing.

After wee had beene at home two moneths, hee would have fent mee againe into the fausee countrie for more flaues, but I knew that thereby I should get nothing and refused to goe. Wherevoon hee returned me againe to his father, thinking I would rather choose to goe then serue his He returneth father in the Sugar boat. But I was contented to goe against to his father, hoping to be better ve to his o'd Man fed then I was before; then his father commanded me to goe a fishing in a small boat for to make fler. oile for the Sugar mill. One night being vpon a Rocke fishing for Dog-fish, which the Poringals Endangeredby call Tubarones; I tooke my line, laid it vinder me and fell alleepe : about mid-night with the be- a Sharke, ginning of the floud a Dog-fish tooke my booke, and the line being vinder mee . I awaked, tooke the line in my hand, and running about the Rocke (I know not how) the line tangled about my legge, and the fish drew me into the Sea; and assoone as I fell into the water the Sharke swam at me as if he would have devoured me, but affoone as I faw him come neere mee, I caught hold on the hooke that was in his mouth, and firsking downwarke with my hand the Sharke I warn away againe. I now remembred a knife, that I had about my necke tyed with a firing, as the Cambals vie, and there with cut the cord, or elfe there had I ended all my miteries; all my body was torne with the Crags of the Rocke, so that for the space of a fortnight I was not able

to flirre. After I was healed the Governour commanded mee againe to goe a fishing : wee had newes in the R uer of lanero that Mafter Hankins was at Cape Frie, which made me the more defirous to Milter Ham. be on the Coast in hope to get to him. It happened that one day being a fishing by an Iland that time at Cape 50 lay two leagues from the shoare, Master Hameins passed by the Sea as tarre as well hee could bee Frie. deferyed, but it was a very faire day : affoone as I faw the ships I fet the Indians that were with me on shoare on the Iland, commanding them to seeke prouision for vs. for that night I did affure my felfe that Mafter Hawkins would refresh his men at the Hand of San Sebastian, and feeing the Another dous winde faire, and all the Indians ashoare, I hoysted faile, and tooke my course towards the Iland of blediffer of San Sebastian, but fortune was so crosse to me, that being in sight of the ships, a contrarie winde blue with such a storme, that perforce I was driven vpon an Hand so full of Rocks, that my Boat was broken all in peeces, and my felte all cut and bruifed with the Rocks. Getting to the floare upon this Iland I remay ned three dayes without meat, or meanes to get away from the Iland, the Indians that landed upon the Iland where we were a fifthing, got to the Towne and told the 60 Gouernour how I had beguiled them. Presently vpon that newes the Gouernour fent two Canoas to deferie the ships, these Canoas came on shoare at the Hand where I was, and there they found me almost starued, and all my face hurt beaten voon the Rocks.

From this place they went to the Iland of San Sebalian, and Mafter Hawkins was gone; then they returned agains to the River of Intero, and I washrought bound with my hands behind me,

lefuites faue

Imprifoned

all the Towne rayled at me, calling me Run-away, then I was brought before the Gouernour, and His imprison- he looking very angerly upon me tent me to prison, where I was vied like a Dogge for the space of a fortnight : for I lay on the ground, and had no meat given me, but Cassaui meale and water. Condemnati- After I had endured this miferie, I was condemned to be hanged for a Run-away and a Lutheran. and as I was going by the Colledge of lefus, all the Friars of the Colledge came forth with a great Crucifix, and falling on their knees before the Gouernour they craued pardon for me, and I was carried agains to prilon, where I remayned three dayes longer, then I was brought forth on a Market day, with my hands and feet bound, and there in publike beaten with cordes, that I had not a whole spot of skin on all my body. After they had punished mee, as you have heard. I was commanded to be put againe in prilon, where I was for the space of a fortnight, with no meate 10 but Caffaui meale and water, my lodging was the earth, my body was all bruifed and full of

wormes with lying on the ground. After this the Governour commanded great hoopes of Iron to bee clinched to my leave of

thirtie pound weight, the which I carried nine moneths, continually working in the Sugar mill like a bond-flaue. The Factor vied me more like a Dogge then a Man, for his hatred was to much to me, and to all ftrangers, that I neuer came by him but I was fure of blowes. Now was my life fo intolerable, that I grew del perate and carelesse what I did to end my life. Many times I would tell the Governour now like a Tyrant the Factor vied me, but for all that he faw my body black. and bruited with blowes, he had no compation on me. I had no meanes nor hope of any release of Diffoluerefo- my miterable life, but to kill the Factor. Now occasion came fitly to execute my pretence, and 20 it happened thus: I comming in the night with a Barke laden with Sugar canes, after the Barke was valuden, the night being cold, I lay vpon the boards before the Fornaces, and had not refted halfe an houre. when the Factor came into the Sugar house, fo finding measleepe (as you have heard) hee strooke mee with a withe on the naked ribs, with such force, that I thought hee had broken all the bones of my body. I started up, and seeing him before mee readie to fecond his malice with another blowe, I embraced him in mine armes, and with a great knife that I had . I hurt him in the fide , the backe, and the arme ; hee cryed out I had

I thinking no leffe ran away into the chiefeft of the wood, and the favourable night being

darke, no man knew which way to follow mee. When day came I went wandring vp and 30

He fleeth

downe, praying to God to fend some Leopard, or Lion, to deuoure mee, rather then to bee taken againe by the Portugals, for I knew if the Gouernour once got mee againe, I should endure the most extreame torture that ever was invented for man. Wandring in the Wildernesse. I did heare a great notic of people, then I was amazed, knowing not what to doe to faue my life, fometimes I run like a mad man, then would I fit downe and liften if I could heare any noife, and which way focuer I went I heard still the noife of people neerer me. Thus feeing Danger of ta- my felte at the last cast, I espeed a great Tree, in which grew a thing of thick long leaves, calking in a Cara- led by the Indians, Carakala; as bigge as the neft of an Eagle, I got me into that, having not beene there a quarter of an houre, many Indians came to feeke mee, and fhot many times with their arrowes at the thing where I was, when they faw that I did not firre, they went their 40 waves, and I remayned all that day in the Tree, the night following, and the next day and night, I came downe very weake, for in two dayes I had eaten nothing, then the night being darke, I came to the Sea fide, fo going along by the shoare fide, I espyed a Canoa drawne to shoare, and hard by it on the ground lay three Sauages affeepe, by them lay bowes, arrowes, and rootes, with hookes to fifth with, of those things I tooke what I thought best, and went along the Sea fide till I came to a Point of the l'and, where I found a Savage affeepe vpon the fands, when I Solamen milera had viewed him well I knew him to be one of my Masters staues, who killed one of his fellowes, wherefore hee durft not goe home, I tooke his bow and arrowes lying by him and awaked him.

when he faw me he began to lament, and defired that I would not carry him home to my Ma-

he knew any place whither wee might goe to jaue both our lives, and with that told him what

fter, I answered him that my cause was ten times worse then his, and defired him to tell mee if 50

had betallen me. This Sauge was a great man in his Countrie, his name was Quarafips inca, that is , the yellow His wandrings, ger of passing the arme of the Sea, at least two miles in breadth, we both landed very feeble, with meaneth that fpotted beaft, wirch others pents, but God delivered vs from them. In this journey we eate wilde Honie and Palmetos, and caila Tigre.

Sunne. Neuer man found truer friendship of any then I did of him. This Caniball and I after mamy difcouries determined to I wim from the Hand to the mayne. When we had efcaned the dans the long being of our naked carkalles in the water. Now wee are at the foot of the Mountaine called Paranapiacano, a delart, where many have beene devoured with Leopards. Lions, Crocodiles, and Surococous, and divers other Serpents. Notwithstanding all these fearfull inconveniences, we chole rather to fall into the pawes of a Lion, and the clawes of the Seipent, then in- 62 to the bloudie hands of the Portugall. Seven and thirtie dayes we two travelled through this defart, every day we were in danger of our lives, for we met many Leopards, Lions, and huge Sera kinde of Snakes, called by the Cambals, Boaryna. After we had poffed this defart, we came into

a champaine Countrie, where we had great flore of Pine nuts. Wandring up and downe in this Countrie, one morning we espyed smoke in a wood not farre from vs. Then wee travelled that waves, and comming neere, I knew where we were, and prefently I told Quariffacuta. that the Towne was called Pranita, and that this was the place where Immaripipo had vied mee fo well, Pianita when Wanambuth would have killed me. Now come we to the Towne, where we are very kind-

ly received, especially of mine old friend lawarpipo.

After we had rested a little while among these Canibals, I desired them that they would invine to his old host. themselves together; for in publike I would rehearse somwhat vnto them of my comming into their Countrie. Now when they were all together, I began to rehearfe vnto them how cruelly Senare of Sa-

10 the Portugals did vie their Nation, in making them bond-flaues, marking them like Dogs, whip- uages. ping and tormenting them, as if they were not of flesh and bloud. I rehearsed vnto them the course of mine owne life, and defired them to remember how my Countrimen had vied them in former times, encouraging them to bee valiant, and to pull vp their spirits, and perswading to defend themselves against such Tyrants, who vider the colour of friendship vied them most villainoully. Then I told them that I had killed a Portugall, and that I was determined to end my life with them, if they would promife to defend mee and themselves from the Portugals. With that many of them embraced me, all together giving a great hoope, faying, as long as their lives lafted, and their Bowes brake not, that they would defend themselves and me. Here I continued nine moneths, till it happened that Martin de Saa came againe to buy more flaues. He came to a 20 Towne hard by the Hand of San Sebastian, called Jaquerequere, where ving the Canibals kindly, Jaquerequete,

and giving them Knives and Hatchets and Beades, hee won their hearts to much vinto him that they gave him their Sonnes and Daughters to bee his slaves; and moreover told him, that I and Quarififacupa was at a Towne hard by. Then Martin de Saa fent foure Portugals and twentie Sauages for me to the Towne. When the Sauages of laquerequere came to Pianua, they gave such Sauage faith, report in all the Towns of the liberalitie of Martin de Saa , that without any deliberation they Antonie Knines bound my hands, and brought me backe againe to my Mafters fonne.

When the Canibals brought mee before Martin de Sas, all those that protested before most and brought to friendship vnto mee, are now become my greatest and most mortall enemies, and with hoo- his Master.

ping and hollowing deride mee , striking mee on the head, and declaring to the Portugals, 30 how I vied great periwasions to have them become their enemies. Martin de Saa made no anfwere to all their exclamations, but commanded certaine Portugals and Indians to fee that I runne not away. Being brought the next morning before him, hee told mee that hee did pittie my hard fortune to come to fo bad an end as I was like to come to, making mee beleeue that the Factor was dead, and therefore hee thought that the Law world condemne mee. When hee had fooken. I defired him to bee fauourable vnto mee, and that hee would confider what feruice I had done him and his father, and to thinke how vnreasonably the Factor had vied mee a long time. Then hee promised mee , that wherein hee might hee would stand my friend : then I entreated him to giue mee leaue in that desart to end my life among it the Canibals, where hee might well bee affured I could never hurt him nor any of his Nation : hee would not condescend 40 thereunto, but promised hee would faue my life, if I would but goe to a place in that Countrie.

called Paracyua Wereob, and there to trafficke with the Canibals for Women, Boyes, and Girles. Paracyua We Although the danger of going into the Countrie of wild Man-eaters where I never had beene, rest, was no lesse then the value of my life, yet considering with my selfe that my offence deserved death among the Portugals, I chose once againe rather to stand to the Heathen mercy of lauage Man-eaters, then at the bloudie crueltie of Christian Portugals. And feeing my felfe in fuch extremitie, I shewed my selfe very willing and diligent to doe the Captaine service; but God His next adknowes, my hope was neuer to have feene him againe. Now goe I alongst in the Wildernesse, uenture thowith twelue Sauages, I know not whither, but as they guide mee ouer huge Mountaines, and row the demany great Rivers, passing many dangers of our lives by land of Lions, Leopards, divers great farts. 50 Snakes : in the Rivers , Crocodiles , Iararaquas , and Capucaras , with many other Servents

that vie the water. After wee had travelled five and twentie dayes in the Wildernesse, wee came to a faire River as broad as the Thames, and the Canibals that went with mee faid that the A faire River, Towne flood by that River fide, where wee were to trafficke, but certaintie they knew not where about. Then wee made vs a Boat of the barke of a Cedar Tree, going downe the streame in it. Wee had not beene there long a going with the swiftnesse of the Current, before wee espyed a Boate of the same fashion that ours was, with two Canibals in it, who as soone as Two Saunger, they had efpyed vs would have runne away, but wee beeing better manned then they overtooke them before they got to the shoare. With mee there went one of their owne Nation by name Morosoei, who had beene taken by the Wayanasses, and they fold him to the Por-

60 tugals. This Morosoey spake the language of the Taymayas, which I understood very well. The two Cambals that wee tooke in the Boate, were amazed to see men apparelled, info- Apparell much that they knew not their owne Countriman that was with mee, when they faw him strange, apparelled like a Portugal; if they were amazed at vs , I was no leffe at them, for in Their fleringe all my trauell I neuer faw the like fashion of Canibals. For when I saw them first I thought habite.

Hhhhh 2

1212 Feathered nation. Emulations of Sauages, High hill, Venemous Snakes, LIB. VI.

Stranger na-

they had beene borne with feathers on their heads and bodies, like fowles of the aire, they had ano need their bodies with gumme of the oiletusees of Balsome, and couered themselves to artificulty with feathers of divers colours, in fuch order, that you could not have feene a toot of their skins but their legs : after wee had beholden them well and they vs , I commanded Morefrein. their Countriesan to disclose himselfe to his Countrimen, and to tell them the cause of our comming, defiring them to goe to their Towne, and tell of our being there, left our fulden commine fhould raile an vprore among them, the which they were very willing to doe; fo guine either of them a knife, and a few beades, they departed very joyfully.

His re:urge.

Two hours after that they were departed from vs, there came at the leaft flue hundred of them friging and rejoycing, shewing themselves very glad of our comming to traffick with them, 10 entreating vs to goe to their Towne, the which we did, where wee were received with dancing and finging of great and small, and in every house I was received with great ceremonies. and long speeches of the chiefest that were in the Towne. The next day I began to traffick with them for flaues, and I bought ninetie, all which I brought to Martin de Saa, who remayned at Ilha Grande till I returned againe. Affoone as I came vnto him, I deliuered all vnto him, detiring him to fland my friend, and to give mee leave to tarrie among the Canibals, till fuch time as hee had fooken with his fatuer in my behalfe. Laughing, hee answered that I neede to feare to goe home, for the man was recoursed, and gone to the Ruer of Plate, and that his father was very forry, thinking I had beene eaten by some Serpent, Leopard, or Lion. When I came before the Governour, he bleffed himfelre to see mee, merualling where I had beene so long, and sent 20 me againe to his Sugar mill, where I continued a twelve-moneth, and I had the charge to child all the Swar, in which time I got two hundred crownes. I determined to goe to Angola in Ethiopiz; and the Gouernour gave me his word that I shoul :, and that what favour he could show me. I thould bee fire to have, but when the ship was readie to depart, the Governour fent mee out of Towne on a sleeuelesse errand, and I remayned ashoare, and lost all that I had scraped together

for my voyage.

A monet for two after this, it happened that the Wayanaffes were let on by a kind of Canibals. called Tarmayas, the Wayanaffes hauetrafick and friendship with the Portugals, and the most mor-Ambijous ma, tall enemies that the Portugal's haue in all America, are the Taymayas. The Wayanaffes hauing loft lice in faunges, a great many men in a battell, not being able to make any head againe of themstelles; craued 30 exe duion a fuccour agains of the Portugali. My Masterbeing Gouetnour of the Towne, fent his sonne Exp outon 3- Martin de San with feuen hundred Portugals, and two thousand Indians. The Wayanaffes certified voto vs that the moti that wee should bee, before wee come to the Taymayas, would

PH47.45.

Danger of

drowning.

fome thirtie miles from the River of lannarie, for a Port called Paratee. The first day that we departed, we had a great ftorme, where we thought we should all have beene drowned, but it was the will of God to faue our lines, with the generall loffe of all we had, the Canoas turned volide downe with the forme, wee holding faft on the bottom of them, were driven on fhoure with great hazard of our lives. From the place where we drove on shoare to the River of Wareteena it 40 was three miles, which we went by land, and fent the Canous to the River of I amuarie for victuals. We tarried two dayes at Wareteena till the aforesaid Canoas returned, the third day wee went to a place of Great Iland, called Ippon, where there dwelt two or three Portugals. Here we had great store of Posatos & Plantons to eat. At this place we remay ned fine dayes for fine hundred Canibals, that were to come from an Hand called I awarpipo. When these Indians were come we deported in our Canoas for our defired Port called Parates. As we went in the night wee cut a great Bay of the Sea, where a Whale did ouerturne one of our Canoas, notwithitanding wee

Tous the fourteenth day of October 1597, we departed on our way with fixe Canoas by Sea.

Ilha Grande.

Whale ouertooke the men that were in the Sea, and went on for the Harbour aforesaid. The next day the rurneth a Ca-Captaine commanded all the Canoas to be pulled out of the water, and to couer them well with boughes, determining immediately to depart by land. That night that we came to Paratee, there came a Caniball to vs, called Alecio, from a Towne

A caniball captai ie with eightic followers.

called lequerequere, this Town lyeth by the Sra. fide right ouer against the Iland of San Sebastian. This Inates brought eightie Bow-men with him, offering himselfe with all his companie to goe with our Captaine. The next day we departed on our voyage, through the Mountaines, at night the Captaine feeing Alecio the Camball lying on the ground, tooke away the Net that I had to fleepe in, and gaue it to the Caniball, I being faine to lie vpon the earth. I complayned to some of the Portugals of the wrong that the Captaine did vie vnto mee: they answered, that his father fent me in that voyage onely to be made away; I replyed, Gods will be done. After wee had gone on our journey three dayes, we came to the bottom of a great Mountaine, called by the Indians, Paranapeacano, that is in our language, The fight of the Sea; this Mountaine is to high, that 60 wee were three dayes going vp, and three dayes also going downe. Two dayes after wee were descended we came into a faire champaine Countrie like meadow ground with long graffe . and great store of Pine trees, where we lodged that night in a bottom, in which we killed aboue fixe hundred Snakes; it was the will of God that one Indian, called Ieronimo, was bit by them, and

CH AP.7. S.2. M. Paracoua. R. Paraena, Sauages entertainmens, trauell, fbirits, 1212

not any more. This Indian prefently (welled, and his blond forung out of his eyes and his nailes. and fo he died.

After that we came to travell agains through the Mountaynes fome forty dayes, then wee came to a great River called Paracusa; which River wee passed with things made of Canes tyed R. Paracusan together with withes, which the Portugals call langathas. We were fouredayes before we pal- how palled, led ouer this River it was to great, and ranne to fwilt. After that, wee travelled againg tome 20. daves till we came to a great Mountayne called Panace mano spacone, we were foure dayes godayes the we cannot be great shounder the great shownes of raine that we had, besides were were Mountaine of very weake, and all our victuals were done. But hoping to find our enemies very foome, we did four edwes to our best to hold our comming up this hill, from fixe of the clocke in the morning, till it was two journey.

of the clocke in the afternoone on a rainie day, the Captaine commanded every man to make his

abode for that night; whereupon I fet downe my burthen , and went into the Mountaynes to out some boughes of a Tree called Sammambaya, to court vs from the raine, the weather was so cold, and I having travelled all day without meate was to feeble, that going to cut a bough, my Hisdanger of

tword fell out of my hand, and I face vader a Tree, where thad made mine end, if it had not bin death, for my deere friend Henry Barrawell; who feeing that I tarried long came to feeke me, and found me in such case, that I was not able neither to speake nor fland. After he had brought me to the Campe, he layed me by the fire, I recouered and was very well. After we had passed this Mountayne of Parcena; wee transled in a kind of low wash ground;

20 there were great store of Canibals called Pories. Vpon a sudden there would come one 100 of them out of the Wood, and affoone as they had gotten any thing from vs. would be gone, wee knew not whether : and prefently there would come as many more. There we kept very good order, and had alway very good watch, for feare they should worke vs any Treason; for all our men were very weake; within foure dayes iourney from the aforefaid Mountagne, we came to the River of Paraena, where we had great store of fish, but nothing else to eate withall. At this R. Paraena. River, one day I going a fishing, being a very rainie day, three Indians that went with mee returned againe, and left me alone. As I would have come backe, I loft my way that I had gone with the Indian; through the Wilderneffe, then I returned againe to the River fide, knowing thereby I could not mille my way, still going by the Riverfiels homewards where the Captaine was, He loseth hir

30 being somewhat late, suddenly I came to a place where there were at least a 100. men and wo- way! men of those Pories. I thought I foculd have died no other death, but these Canibals did mee no harme, but only tooke away my Knife and my fish-hooke, and gaue me of their meat they were eating, which was rofted Monkeyes. After I had eaten as much as I would, they made mee a thing of dry Canes that they had to swimme vpon the water, which in a meane space carried me where the Campe lay by the River fide. Theie Canibals told vs of a Towne within two dayes iourney, where we might get Peafe and Gunie Wheate, and some Roots of Caffam.

In one day we passed Paryena; and the next day wee came to travell towards the Towne that the Pories had told vs of. We were seuen dayes betweene the River and the Towne, and when we came there, we found almost nothing but women, and asking for their Husbands, they told no vs that they had gone to warre against the Taymoyes, and that they had killed them all at this Towne. We found a little Ginnie Wheate, but it was not ripe, of the which we fed a weeke being there, these Cambals are called Tapuyas. Wee went forward to other Townes of a kinde of Tapuyas. Canibals, called Waanawafons, that were hard by the Tapayas. Comming to one of their Townes, Waanawafons,

there came twentie old men with woodden Swords in their hands, whooping and rejoycing,

which is (as I have faid) their manner of bidding welcome. After they had done, they asked what was our determination; wee told them that wee came to warre against the Tamopes, then there came an old man vnto vs all painted with red and blue, with Bow and Arrowes in his hand, and a paire of slippers on his feete, and with one of his Daughters that had beene captine to a Portugall of Santum fence, which had runne away from her Mafter, with other Captines, and fo came againe to her father. This old man, by name Carywafon, came before our Captaine, and at this Porfonous Towne, all our men both Indians and Portagals fell ficke by eating of a kinde of iweete pleasant fruit, fruit that was poyfon, and had it not beene for a Gentleman called Enefrio de (ay my Mafters Kinsman, who had a piece of Vnicornes horne, we had all died. At this Towne we had nothing to eate but a few Potatoes. As we came through this Towne, all the Canibals Wagnaffees ranne away from vs, with all our clothes. Now the old man with tenne luftie young men went with vs, and guided vs betweene two Mountayns continually vp a River from morning till night, for

the space of forty dayes, we were neuer out of the water from morning till night that we should River. make our abode, and entred in the morning againe. Our men were very weake, and almost starued with hunger. The Indians died , amazed (as Of Spirits that 60 fome of them faid) with a Spirit which they call Coropio, which did kill them, many would postedied the complaine that they were politifed with Spirits called Ausfaly. Those that were tormented killed them.

with this Spirit, would command themselves to be bound hand & foot with their Bow strings, Master Kniuth he heard one Indian vpon occasion of such policition, conferring with the Spirit and threatning, if the Spirits vied them is ill they would turne to the Christians ; and thereupon the Spi. it left the perion fo possessed.

Hhbbb :

Three dayes afcending a Mountaine.

Snak-s very venemous.

Strange difcale.

After we had done trauelling up the aforesaid River, wee came into a faire Champion Countrey, all full of Pine Trees, but the Apples were not ripe, and we could find nothing to eate, but here and there a little wilde Honey; wee trauelled at leaft a moneth; the Portugals beganne to dispaire, and threw away their Peeces, being not able to carrie their clothes. In all this misery, Hard ferui:ude the Captayne made me carry two Muskets (as I hope to be faued) and I was faine to waite voon

him every day to helpe to make his lodging, and my friend Henry Baraway, was foill, that I was many times faine to carry him on my backe, and continually to leade him by the hand. In this march were were forced to eate all our Targets, which were made of raw Hides of Buffe; M.ferable falikewise we did ea e a Cowesskinne, which the Frier carried with him (as he went with vs) to couer his things which I ee faid Maffe withall from the raine, happie was hee who could get a Toad or Snake to cate. After wee had passed those Champion Countreyes, where wee lost 180. 20 of our men, we came againe into the Mountaynes, and travelled a great Hill called Etapuca: that

Mountaine of is to lay, the Mountaine of long flones, for there we found blacke stones of a yard long, as round as if they were made of wood. When we came to the top of this Mountayne, wee were not able to goe downe, but as you shall heare. In those Mountaynes there are great store of withes that hang from the fides and the laquetyna Trees, wee tooke of those withes, and making them Steep descent. fait to a great Tree , wee were faine to flide by them at the least one hundred fathomes. In those Mountaynes, we had great store of Palmitos and wilde Honey, and many kinde of

The Canibals that guided vs told vs, within foure dayes wee should bee with our enemies the Ground Hony. Tamajes, but wee were aboue twentie dayes, wee came into a dry blacke Champion Countrey, 30

not having in it almost any graffe, there we found good store of Honey that the Bees made in the ground, likewife we found a kind of great Beaft as bigge as a Beare, and like a Beare in the bodie, but it hath a nose of a yard long, and a faire great tayle all blacke and gray, this beast putteth his tongue through Ant-hils, and when the Antes are all vpon his tongue, hee swalloweth them vp. After we had pailed this place, we came to 2 Mountayne called Etambe, that is to fay, the Mountagne of greene flones; we were in as great milery as euer we were. Then the Portugals affembled together, and told the Captayne that they thought that the Canibals did leade them wp and downe of purpose to destroy them. The Captayne called the old Caniball, and told him how long we had followed him, and how he told va before, that in twenty dayes we might cafily goe from his Towne to the Towne of our enemies the Tameges. The old man aniwered, that 40 within two dayes he would bring vs to the Towne of our enemies, if not he would lofe his head, and that all his company should be our slaves.

Within two dayes according as the old man faid, wee came before the Towne by a River fide,

from Petoffs,

which River is called I awary, it taketh the head from the Mountayne Potofin in Pern, the Towne was on the farther fide from vs , and on the fide that we were on, they had good flore of Mandioqua and Peafen. Wee came before the Towne in the Evening, and lay all night in ambush. thinking to take some of them the next morning comming for their meate. That night our men eate to much Mandoco, that when we thought we should have had some skirmish, they lay all vomiting that they were not able to stand, and thirteene of them died. The next morning, when we faw no bodie ftir, we maruelled, thinking that they were in ambuth for vs, the Porta- 50 gals durft not goe over the River, for feare thereof. Then the Captayne commanded me to paffe ouer the River, the which I did vpon a woodden Target, when I came into the Towne, there was nothing but a few great pots that the Cambals had left full of greene VI heate, great flore of town fortaken. Pumpions, and two great Estridges, I tooke most of the provision that I found, and layed it altogether for the Captayne, then I called for the company that they might not feare, for there was

Vomits and

no body. At this place wee remayned two moneths, here the Captayne reaped the grounds, that the Indiana had planted with Mandioque, commanding every man to make meale for his prouition homewardes, for hee faid that from thencehee would returne. Wee had nothing to cate at this place but Potatoes and Cafani Meale that wee made our selues, and of that

By this Towne there was a bogge, and when it rained, there would bee great store of Frogges, of them wee would take in the night with Torches of Waxe to light vs, It fell out one night that I should have beene Sentinell at midnight, and about eleuen of the clocke it rained, then I fayd to my friend Henry Barrawell, I would to God that one night you would goe and take

CHAP. 7. S. 2. Fire-Snake killed: worse Snakes furning: Kniucts miseries by them. 1215

some Frogges, for you know presently I shall bee called to watch, with that hee went and presently returned against without any thing, and told vs, that a great Snake was by the Snake which bogges, and that it leaped up and downe after him. Then the Indians faid, that it was a kinde leaper at the of Snakethat flyeth at the hre, I asked Hemy Barraway where I might finde the Snake, hee fire rold me at fuch a place, then I tooke the handle of an Axe beeing of a heavie blacke wood, and a little Waxe Candle in a guard, because the Snake should not spie mee; and made it very readie. When I came to the place that my friend had told mee, I lighted my Torch, and was so neere the Snake, that it I would, I could not flunne her, this Snake had a great Frozze in her mouth, and affoone as free law the fire, thee put the Frogge out of her mouth, and raying vp her skinnelike the scales of a great fish with her mouth open, shee offered to flye at mee . as to foone as her mouth was open, I krooke at her, and hit her on the head and the teeth, that I crushed her braines. Assoone as I had strooke her, I threw my Torch one way, and ranne halte a doozen fleps another way, the Snake made a great noyfe in the water, but I looked fill towards my Torch, to prooue if it were true that they would five in the fire, but when I faw no fuch thing, I went and tooke my Torch againe, and very warily went to the place, where I had ftrooke the Snake, where I faw all her head bloudie, and her eyes broken , and fo I killed her. When I had done, I tooke a withe and bound it to her forequarters, and dragged her home to the

house where I lay, when I came home I asked if I had beene called to watch, the Portugali The Snake kile and Henry Barramay faid that no man had asked for me, then I tooke a Knife, and beganne to led. 20 cur a piece of the Snake for the Captayne, and would have parted the reft among the reft. As I was parting, the Enfigne of our company came to the doore, I went and opened the doore, and afloone as hee came to mee, hee strooke mee with a cudgell. I not knowing why hee should vie mee fo , came and closed with him, fo both of vs went to the ground, with that the Portorals that were in the houle came and parted vs , and asked him wherefore hee ftrooke mee. then the enfigne answered that the Captaine had rifen and found no body in the watch, to that they all answered, that no man had called mee, then hee commanded mee to goe before the Captaine : hee without hearing me speake , commanded two Indians to binde mee to a poste. and commanded them to take the cords of their beds and whip me, I defired that the Captaine would heare the truth, and if hee found any fault in mee, I would according to Marshall Law

30 bee hanged. Before the Indians had vntyed their beds, there came in an ancient old man . by name lohn de Solo, Captaine of our Rere-guard, and with him forme twentie Potangals, that lay in the fame house where I lay. When they faw mee bound they told the Captaine that I was not in fault, for no man had called mee. Then the Captaine commanded mee to bee vntyed, and bade mee goe to my Watch, I went home and fetched my Sword, and prefently came agains where I should have watched, and when I same there, I found him that had gone his way before, and faid to the Captaine before my face, that hee had called mee . and that I made him no answere, when I saw him there, I asked him if hee was not ashamed to appuich that which was a Lye? with that hee beganne to abuse mee in vile words. calling mee English Dogge and Heretique, when I faw my felfe difgraced by a paintry Me-40 fize, I tooke my Sword with both my hands, and strooke him on the head with the Hilts, that

I made a great wound.

Then the Captaine commanded mee to bee fet in the Stockes, and bound my hands, where I He is fet in the lay all that night, and the next day in the afternoone, there came two Portugals and read cer- Stockes. taine Articles against mee, which the Captaine had caused to bee made, saying, that I had killed many ficke Indians when I had found them alone, and that I had deferued death by making a mutime in the Court of Guard by firiking, that was fufficient to make an vorore. After they had read all this, they bid mee prepare my felfe for death, and fo went their waves. Within halfe an houre after the Frier came to mee, and asked mee whether I would confesse or no, I told him that I had stolne nothing from no man, and as for my sinnes God knew the secrets of all hearts. so wherefore I had nothing to confesse to him. With that after many Oracions that hee made to mee, hee went his way. All the Portugals went to the Captaine entreating him to pardon me, but hee would not heare them, defiring God that he might neuer come into Christian Countres if hee did not hang mee. Ilay all day and night in the Stocks, till it was foure of the clocke the next morning. Then the Frier came to me againe, and told mee that my houre was very neere. and defired mee to prepare my felte to dye like a Christian, I told him I hoped the Lord would haue mercie voon me.

Betwixt fix and feuen of the clock, there came the enfigne, and a Scriuener, and two or three He is brought Portugals with them, and an Indian with a cord in his hand, and by the command of the Por- to execution. tugals put it about my necke, then I was carried to the place of execution : all the Portugals 60 being about me, I faid, Gentlemen, the Captaine putteth me not to death for the offence that lately I haue done, but a grudge he holdeth against me fallely rumered by his Cosen, who is now present, because I would not faue him; and for that, and no other matter I am condemned at this present. As I was speaking, the Indian that should have beene my executioner, came from the top of the house, where I should have bin executed, and thrusting me on the side of the

1216 Kninet efcapes banging admentures eating Christall hill, Gold Stones L 1 B. V !

Honeft Partu-

head faid. What doeft thou prate, knowest thou not that the Captaines Father fent thee hither that thou miobie It never returne? with that the Portugals checkt the Indian, and John de fold flanding with Graned del Galbo, and postmo Abanos, yea, a great many Portugals faid, what authoritie hath the Captaine to have this man, we come not in the Kings ferurce, but for our owne profits, and he is but the Gouernours baftard Sonne; fo they commanded the execution to be flaied, then lobs de Solo went to the Captaine, and told him, Sir, we know not where we are, and marry of one men are dead, wherefore it is not convenient at this time, that we should weaken our felues for we know not if any of vs thall returne againe or not, wherefore weedefire you to pardon this Englishman, for he is as good a Souldier as any of vs, and the man that is hurt is not in danger. The Captaine Iwore a great oath, that I should dye; then lobn de Sofo; and the rest of the Per- to tweels, bid him shew what authoritie he had to put me to death, and if he shew not authoritie from the Kine. I should not due at that time, for they were to answere for me as well as he. The Captaine came out very angerly, and made great protestations against lobs de Sofe; that hee was an voholder of mutinies. lobn de Sofo faid, that he would answere to all that he alleadeed. and fo I was released from death.

After we had beene at this place, two moneths making our prouision, we went forward to another Towne, we found great flore of Gmnie Wheate newly planted; here we remained three moneths, till the Wheate was ripe, from thence all the Company returned home but my felfe, and twelve vone men; we asked leave of the Captaine to goe to feeke our adventure, the Captaine saue vs leave to doe what we would; for mine owne part, I asked leave onely for feare to goe homewards, left the Captaine should worke me some mischiefe; likewise wee didall thinke we fliould hardly get home, for we knew not where we were, and the way that we did come, we durft not returne againe, for feare of the Portes, and Lepos Tominenos, and other Canibals, left they feein g vs weake, should betraie vs.

. . . d. III.

His strange transiles with twelve Portugals, whom the Sanages did cate. His life with the Canibals : and after that with the Portugals, from whom hee fleeth to Angola, is brought backe, and after manifold chances, is Shipped to Lisbone.

And the twelue aforefaid, tooke our leaue of the Captaine, determining to goe to the South Sea, rather then returne againe without any thing. The names of the Portugals were thefe. Francisco Tanares, Lewes de Pino, Gonsalo Fernandes, Tomas Delmare, Lewis Loello, Matheas del Galo, John de Silnesa, Petro de Casta, Antonio fernandes Gorgedias, Mannell Catdera, and my selfe Anthony Kninet. After we had departed from our Captaine. we

made a great Canoa of a barke of a tree, and went downe the River called I anary for the space of An

a weeke, that we came where we found a little Village of fixe houses, and it seemed it had beene

along time fithence any inhabitants were there; when we came to this Village we left our Ca-

our way South-well, and went vp a great Mountaine of Wildernesse. After that, we came to a

fore vs. ten daies before we could come to it, for when we came into the plaine Countrie. and

were out of the Mountaines, and the Sunne began to come to his height, wee were not able to

trauaile against it, by the reason of the glistering, that dazeled our eyes. At the last, by little and

thefe Rivers we found little peeces of Gold, as bigge as an Hafell nut, and great store in dust like fand. After which, we came into a faire Countrie, and we faw a great gliftering Mountaine be-

noa, and determined to goe by land. In this Towne we found great store of earthen Pots, and Fishing with in some of them peeces of Gold tied at lines that the Indians hih withall, likewise we found Stones as greene as graffe, and great store of white glistering Stones like Christall, but many of them were blew and greene, red and white wonderfull faire to behold : when we faw the peeces of Gold and those Stones, we made accompt that we were very neere Potafin, then we tooke

Golden Rivers place of dry Browne earth, full of hils, rocks, and many small Rivers at the head; by many of

Glift:ring Mountaine.

the Ant-beares, little we came to the foote of this Mountaine, where we found great flore of Tamandres.

We went along by this Mountaine at the least twenty daies, before we could finde any way to paffe ouer it ; at last we came to a River that paffed vnder it , here we determined to make fome thift to get through, fome of our company faid that they thought it best to goe still along by the foote of the Mountaine, rather then to venture to goe through; for they faid, if this watergoe not through, we are all calt away, for it is impossible to returne againe against this cur- 62 rent. Then I answered, friends, we may as well aduenture our lives now as we have done heretofore in many places, if not, we must make accompt to live here like wilde Beasts . where we shall have life as long as pleafeth God, without credit, name, or Religion : wherefore I thinke that our best way is to goe through if we can, for no doubt but God that hath hitherto deliue-

CH A P.7. S.3. Terrible Caue-passage. Worse throat-passage. Kniucts Sauage-life, 1217

red vs from dangers infinite, at this time will not for lake vs, and questionlesse if it be our fortunes to raffe on the other fide, we shall finde either Spaniards or Indians, for I am sure, that each of you to pane heard, that on a faire day it is to be differred from the top of Potafin to this Mountaine. After I had thus spoken, the Portugal's determined to venture to goe through; we made a great thing of great Canes, three wards and a halfe broad, and fix yards long, that we might lye downe and fleepe ypon it : we killed good flore of Tamandroes, and rofted them very dry for our prouifion for we knew not how long we should be in the vaute.

After we had made all ready, taking good store of wood with vs, commending our selves to God, we put our felues into the vaut, which made fuch a noise with the running of the water,

that we thought it had beene fome inchantment. We went in on munday morning, and we came out on a morning (whether we were two dayes or one in the vault I know nor.) As soone as we perceited light we were very glad, but when we came out, we law on every fide houses, then we tooke countell what was the best for vs to doe, to hide our felues, and fee if we could paffe the Townes in the night, or to goe and submit ourselves to the Indians : we all agreed, that the best was to goe to them; then I laid, well friends, fithence we have agreed, let vs fully determine here what we shall doe and say, for questionlesse, they will examine vs what we are, and from whence we came; then the Portugals faid, we wilk tell them that we are Portugals, then Janswered, I will tell them that I am a French man. We went towards their houses, who as foone as they had perceived vs came out hooping and hollowing with their Bowes and Arrows: and when they came vnto vs they bound our hands, and tied cords about our middles, and foled

vs to their houses: pickettly there came two or three old men, and asked what we were then the Portugals answered, that they were Portugals, and I, that I was a French man.

Within two hours after they had examined vs, they tooke one of the Portugals, and tied a The Indiana new roape about his middle, and carried him into a yard, with three Indians holding a cord on kils the Portunew roape about his middle, and carried nim into a yad, with three transfer forming a condition gal, and after the one fide, and three on the other fide, and the Portugall in the middleft, there came an old man, cate them. an bid him looke on all things, that he liked, and told him that he fould bid them farewell, for hee Should fee them no more: then there came a luftie youg man, with his armes and face died red, and faid vnto him, doest thou fee me, I am he that hath killed many of thy Nation, and will kill thee. After he had fpake all this, he came behinde the Portugall, and throoke him on the nape of the necke. Divelish 30 that he felled him to the ground, and after hee was downe gaue him another that hee killed Butchers him; then they tooke the tooth of a Conie and opened all the upper skinne, so they tooke him

by the head and the feete, and held him in the flame of the fire: after that, rubbing him with their hands, all the upper skin came of, and the flesh remained white, then they cut off his head. and gaue it to him : they tooke the guts, and gaue them to the women, after which they iointed him joint by joint, first hands, then elbowes, and so all the body. After which, they fent to eucry house a peece, then they fell a dancing, and all the women made great store of Wine: the next day they boiled every joint in a great pot of water, because their wives and children might eace of the broth; for the space of three dayes they did nothing but dance and drinke day and night : after that they killed another in the fame manner as you have heard, and so served all but

40 my felfe. When I faw all the Portugals dead, I looked for the fame, but after the Indians had done with Hatted of the the Feafts, they came unto me and faid, Feare not, for your ancestors, have beene our friends, and we Tanosesso the theirs, but the Portugals are our enemies, and make us flanes, wherefore we have done with them as you Pertugals. have Gene. After I had heard what they faid, I told them I had no reason to seare, for I knew they were my friends, and not mine enemies, and that I had bin a long time prifoner to the

When I had bin two moneths with these Indians called the Tamoyes, they went to warre against Tomomines, and comming to fight, we had almost lost the field, for the Tamomines were a great many more, to that we were faine to take the Mountaine : when I faw the rufticall manner

50 of their fight, that without any order they would fet vpon their enemies like Buls, I taught them how to fet themselves in Battaile, and to lye in ambush, and how to retire and draw their ene- He reacheth mies in oa fiare: by this meanes, we had alwayes the upper hand of our enemies, and I was them to fight held in great accompt amongst them, for they would never goe to the field, except I went with them: in a short time we gave so many battailes to the Tomominos, that we made them leave their Countrey, and flye further from vs: fo wee lived in peace. The Tamores offered mee many wines, but I refused, saying it was not our custome to take wines out of our Countrey. After wee had conquered the Tomommos, wee lived in peace for the space of foure moneths, and then there came another kinde of Caribals, called Topinaques. Their made their Topinaques. Towne very neere vs , at a Mountaine called by the Indians Taminua (that is) the Mountaine 60 of Gold.

When we heard of them, we prepared to make warre against them, wee went fine thousand Mountaine of firong, in fine dayes journey we came before the Towne; but we being espied, they left their Gode. Towns and fled, we followed them tenne daies, taking many old men and women, which as we tooke them we killed: we followed them till we came to a great River fide, where we durit

not paffe for feare left the enemy should ouercome vs at the landing, so we returned home agains. from the River called Morgege, where we remayned ftill in peace, for the space of eight moneths till we removed our felues.

His rich appa-

At this place I went all naked with out any thing, onely a few leaves I tied before mee for shame. One day going all alone a fishing for pleasures sake, I sat downe remembring my selfe in what flate I was, and thinking what I had beene, I began to curse the time that eyer I heard the name of the Sea, and grieued to thinke how fond I was to forfake my natural! Countrey where I wanted nothing : then was I out of all hope either to fee Countrey or Christian againe: fitting hy the River in these passionate thoughts, there came on old Indian one of the chiefest of them. and beganne to talke with me faying. It was a good time with them when they dwelt at Cape to Frio, for then they had trade with the Frenchmen, and wanted nothing, but now they had nev-Henerswides ther Kniues nor Hatchets, nor nothing elle, but lived in great necessitie, with that I answered them to feeke I did heartily with, that he and his company would goe and dwell by the Sea-coaft, without danger of Portugals, whereupon hee and I went home together, and the Indian reported in the Towns what I had faid vinto him: the next morning there came (at the leaft) twenty of the chiefelt of them into the house where I lay, and asked me if I knew my Place certaine, where they might finde any French Ships: I rold them that I was fure betwixt the River of Plate, and a Riuer called by the Portugals Dos Patos, we should finde French men, and if we did not, that here the Portugals could not hurt vs. Moreover, it were better to dwell by the Sea fide, where we should have plenty of al things, then where we did, where we had nothing to live you but roots. 20 These old men went and told the people, which all desired to see the coast, so they resolued, and making prouition, we departed from our abode, being thirry thousand of vs.

New differences

Amatons, not

one breaft d

Nation, but

warlike wo-

After we had passed many a Hill, all Wildernesse and Rivers, where wee found many precious stones, we came to a faire fandie Countrie, through which we trauelled some twentie dayes, and we went Northward for feare of comming into the Countrie where there are great store of Spamiards, and this Countrie is it felte very populous, and are friends with the Spaniards. Therefore we changed our course and travelled all Northward, till we came into the Countrie of the Amafons, which the Indians call Mandiocusyanas, then we tooke our course Southward againe. I would have perfiwaded the Tamores to have warred against the Amajons, but they durit not, for they faid, we know that their Countrie is very populous, and we shall be all killed. After wee came 20 to the head of the River, called Patos, there we found Canoas of barkes of trees that came downe the River force eight dayes, then wee found the River very broad, and many treescut by the Riuers fide, whereby we suspected that we were neere the Sea fide, or some Town of the Waanaffes, for the Wannaffes neuer inhabit far from the coast. When the Indians faw these tokens of abidance; they asked me what I thought was best to doe: I answerd, I thought it best to hide our selves, and to fend some nine or ten yong men to see if they could spie any Towne, so we to circle them in their houses in the night : to that they all agreed, and ten of them were fent, they returned again at night without fight of any Towne. but they faid there went a great path by the River fide. and brought peeces of Cords that they found in the way with them. Hence we judged that we thould finde fome Towne by the River fide, and determined to goe downe the River in the night with our Canoas, to fee if we could finde the Towne.

*About foure of the clocke we came to a faire Bay, and faw the Sea; and doubling a point of the theare we espied a Towne, then as fast as we could we landed our men, and the day began to be cleare, and one of the Town comming out to the Sea fide, efficied vs. whereuponall the Town role up in armes, and we had a great skirmish. We were many more in number, and had farre better order, so we put them to flight killing a great many of them : wee tooke three hundred prisoners men and women, which the Tamojes killed and did eate afterwards. These Indians are called Carisos. After we had put them to flight they went to Saint Vincents by land, and craued fuccour of the Portugals. At this Towne of the Carios we found great store of provision, Cassaui. Ginnie Wheate, Potatoes, Plantons, Pumpions, and all other fuch like that the Countrie yeeldeth, 50 and in great plenty : there like wife we found great flore of Ryals of eight, for there had beenea Caruell cait away in that place not long before, and the Spaniards were gone before by land to Bonas Ayres in the River of Plate: with these Indians the Portugals had peace, but now they are in warre with them againe.

Some of the Carios went to the River of Plate to crave succour, others, as I said before, came They are affair to the Town of Saint Vincents: from Saint Vincents, newes was fent to the River of lawers, from led by the Por- thence the Portugals made a Nauie of Canoas and Caruels, of the which the Governours some Marten de Safa (which was come home from the River of Janary , where I departed from him) was come againe as Captaine of all the Portugals, and comming upon vs in the night, they leized our Towne: about three of the clocks, an Indian that came with the Portugals beganne to speake very load to the men of the Towne, that they should not stime, for if they stirred they of should be all put to the sword. When the Tamojes heard the Indian speake, they began to rusell with their Bowes and Arrowes, making a great noise, with that the Portugals shot of a Peece, then they all lay downe in their beds, like men without lines or foules; when the day was

CHAP.7. \$ 2. Thousands staine and taken. Tale of S. Thomas. Resolute sauge. 1210

cleare, and my Mafters Sonne faw me ative, he bleft himfelfe, and asked me what was become of my companions, I told him that the ludians had killed them, and eaten them. After that about Hereturneth ten of the clocke, all the Indians were brought out of their houses, and being examined, someone his M. fir. them (aid that I bid them kill them, & if many of them had not been, I had died for it, but it was The person it Gods will to difcouer the truth by their own mouthes; then the Portugals killed all the old men kill 10000 and and women, and all those that had beene particuler actors of the Portugals deaths, which were in continue 200000. all 10000, and 20000, were parted among it them for their flaues.

I came agains to my old Mafter and was fent with the Tamores to a Sugar Mill that my Mafter had newly made. There I went fall to the woods with the flages to draw out great peeces of To Timber for the space of three moneths : then was newes brought from Case could, that the Camibals, called Vartacalles, were come to make their abidance a little Southward of the Cape, in certaine places, where before the Tamoyes had inhabited. The Saluador Coria de Sala fent his Sonne Gonfalo Corea de Safa, with whom I went against my will. We travelled eight dayes by the Sealide, where we had alwayes great ftore of Fish. After that we came to a place. called

the Scalus, vince the Stone bonfe, as fitting as cuer I faw, for it vvas a great huge rocke, Tale of Sint and it hath an entrance like a great doore, within it, as any Hall in England; the Indians (ay that Thomas, issued there Saint Thomas did Preach to their forefathers there: hard by standeth a Stone as bigge as ring like Sint foure great Canons, and it standeth upon the ground upon foure stones little bigger then a mans Fractiles Le. finger, like stickes; the Indians say that was a miracle which the Saint shewed them, and that good. 20 that Stone had beene Wood: likewife by the Sea fide there are great Rockes, vpon them I faw great flore of prints of the footing of bare feete; all which prints were of one bigneffe. They

fay that the Saint called the Fishes of the Sea, and they heard him. From thence we went through the Wilderneffe, foure daves till we came to a great Mountaine, called Aboufanga retam; by the Sea fide of that Mountaine, we found a small Towne of Tamores, that had elegated in the time of the first conquest, that Saluador Corea de Sala made againit that kinde of people, and neuer were heard of till now that wee found them by chance. Old Captaine; The Captaine of them was (as they she wed by signes) one hundred and twenty yeares old, and ver was very lustie: he had in his lippe a great hole, and on either fide of his cheekes a great hole.

and in either of them a faire greene Stone. After we had taken this small Towne, wherein there 30 were fine hundred foules, we asked if they knew where the Waytacaffes were, they told vs all that they knew very well, to in three dayes they guided vs into a low leggie Countrie, where the Wastacasses when we came to their habitation, this Abonsanga came among the thickest of the Poringals, and said these words; He that neuer saw Abonsanga let him looke on me now. and they that dare follow me shall see my valour: and so with his Boweand his Arrowes, he ran amongst the thickest of the enemy, where he was shot with one and twenty Arrowes. In that enterprise we all faw him kill three of the Wastacaffes. When we came to the fight, all the Wastacalles ranne away & we tooke but one of them: for all the Abonfanga was fo hurt, he lived toure houres: the Pertugals asked him why he had beene so desperate ! he told them that he had lived all his life a free man, and that he had beene a great warrier, and would rather dye then be their High spirit of a 40 Captine. Then he asked Baptisme, and defired them that they would tell him somewhat of God, Sauage.

for he faid what focuer they told him he would beleeue; the Portugall Frier told him that God was the fauer of foules and the giver of life, and that if he truely repented and would be Baptifed he should be faued; he answered, that all that was told him he truely beleeved, and debred that with speede he might be Baptised, and so died, calling to God for mercy till his last houre: from this place we returned home.

After we came home again, his fon Gonfalo Corea de Safa, reported fo well of me, that his father commanded me to waite on him whither focuer he went: newes came at that time from Portugall of a Nauie of Shippes out of England, that were come to Brafil; whereupon the Gouernour commanded a Fort to be made of his owne cost vpon a rocke that standeth on the mouth of the ha-

50 uen, so neere the River side, that three moneths after it was done, the Sea carried it away, with What became all the Ordnance in it. I have told you before that three moneths after I was taken, the Defire of the 13 min came from the Straits to a great Hand, where fixteene of her men were flaine, and one taken, by (fo many M. name Andrew Towers : this man was a Philitian, and did many cures, the Portugals tooke him lane reckofor a Sorcerer, for he would prognosticate many things; he had but one eye, and the Portugal, neth) loft our faid that in his eye which was out, he had a familier : this man tooke vpon him to make a deuile his Ship. to take the peeces of Ordnance out of the Sea, which was this; he caused to be made a suite of Leather all greafed and pitched, that no water could enter into it, then he caused a great head to be made all pitched, with a great noie, & at the note were three bladders, and at the mouth two; he intifed me to vadertake to goe down into the Sea in that, faying it was very easie to be done. Andrew Tower

60 I told him, that if I might be well recompensed, I would venture my life to doe it; then he made deuise, it knowne to the Gouernor, that if I were well paid, I would venture my life, then the Gouernour called me and faid. I will give you ten thousand Crownes, and a Pasport to goe for your Countrie, or whether you will, if you put a Ring into the eare of one of the Peeces. I told him, I would doe my best by Gods helpe.

Afcer

uenture.

Mallantano 3

in Africa. See

His elcape to

Ana.Battella

Angola.

After the deuise of Leather was made, most of the Portugals went to the place, where the pieces were loft with great folemnitie, praying to God to lend me good lucke. Putting on the fute of Lether. I was cast into the Sea in eighteene fathome deepe, with a mightie great stone twed about me. The head was to bigge, all pitched and tarred, that the weight of the fione (for it was great only) carried me downe, and it was a great paine vnto me, for the weight of the stone carried me downeward, and the water by reason of the head bare mee vpward, that I thought the cord I was tied withall, would have cut me in pieces. When I felt my felfe fo tormented. I tooke a Knife that was tyed in my hand, and cut the cord, and assoone as I came aboue water. I tore the bladders from my face, and cut my fute before, for I was almost stifled, and for the space of a moneth, I knew not what I did.

Continually I delired my Mafter, to give meleave to get my living, intending to come into my Countrey, but the Gouernour, would not let me goe from him. When I faw no meanes to ger leane of my Mafter, I determined to runne away to Angola; for to ferue the King as a Souldier in Mallangano, till fuch time that I might paffe my felre to the King of Angea, which warreth against the Portagals, and so have come through Prester Johns Countrey into Turkie. On the fenen and twentieth day of June 1597 I embarked my felfe voknowne to my Mafter in a small thip of one Emanuell Andrea, for to come for Angola. In this Voyage wee were driven fo neere the Cape of Good Hope, that we thought all of vs should have been east away, the Seas are there fo great; and by reason of the current they brake in such fort, that no shippe is able to endure. There we brake both our mayne mast and our Meien. I: pleased God to send vs the wind East- 20 ward, which brought vs to our defired Harbour Angola. Wee had beene fine monethes in our Voyage, and by that meanes other shippes that departed two monethes after vs were there before vs, when I heard that there were thips of the River of Ienero, I durit not goe alhoare for feare of being knowne of some of the Portugals, the next day after that wee came into the Harhour: there came a great Boate aboord vs, to aske if wee would fell any Caffani meale, wee told them we would, and asked them whether they went with their Boate, they answered, that they tarried for the tyde to goe up to the River of Guar fa Tomafongano, then I thought it a fit time for my purpose, and so embarked my felfe in the Barke, the Portugals maruelled to fee mee goe

willingly to Masangono; for there men dye like Chickens, and no man will goe thither if he can choose. Nine daves we were going up the River of Guanfa, in which time two Portugall Souldiers

dyed, the Countrey is so hot that it pierceth their hearts, three dayes after I had beene in Ma-Gangano, Don Francisco de Mendosa Fortado, the Gouernour of the Citie of Congo, having receined a Letter from Saluador Coria de Safa, who was his great friend, fent a Purlumant for me, who brought me by Land through the King of Congos Countrey, and in fixe dayes we came to a Towne called Saint Francis, (where the Gouernour was) hard by the Kingdome of Manicongo, when I came before the Gouernour hee vied mee very kindly in wordes, and asked mee, what I meant to cast my selfe away wilfully in Masangano, then I told

him , how long I had ferued Saluador Corsa de Safa; and in how many dangers I had beene for him and his Sonne, without ever having any recompence of any of them, and there- 40 fore I thought it better to venture my life in the Kings feruice, then to line his Bond-flaue. The Governour commanded me to be carried to Angola, and charged a paire of bolts to bee put vpon my legges, because I should not runne away. About a fortnight after I was sent backe againe in a Carnell of Francis Lewes, and in two moneths we arrived in the River of lenero, and I was carried with my bol.s on my legges before the Gouernour; when he faw me, hee beganne to laugh

aurus inte. Quamquid ri- and to least with mee, faying, that I was welcome out of England. So after many leasts hee pake, hee bade pull off my bolts from my legges, and gaue mee cloth, and vied mee vedunios bombies rie well. After I had beene with the Governour againe some two monethes, then came a small man of Captain Cocke. Warre to great Hand, the Captaines name was Abram Cocke, he lay in waite for the ships of the 50

Riper of Plate, and had taken them if it had not beene for five of his men, that ranne away with his Boate, that discouered his beeing there, for within a seuennight after hee was gone, three Carnels came into the lame Road where he was. Thele five men were taken by a Frier that came from San Uncents, and were brought to the River of lenero, I being at this time in some account with the Gouernour, fauoured them aswell as I could, especially one of them, by name Richard Bett, becaufe that they all faid, that hee was a Gentleman, after that wee had beene in the Towne together about some three moneths, one of them called Thomas Cooper , being married, had his house by the Sea side, where he vsed his Trade, we were then nine Englishmen, and three Dutchmen, and wee determined when the shipping came from the River of Plate, that wee Heixis perfidi. Would take one of them comming into the Harbour, this Heixi alwayes went with me to a Por- 60 oulnesse to his tugals house where I was very well beloued. One night hee comes into the house, and steales a-Countrimen, way a boxe; that had fixtie Rialls of eight in it, and two or three pieces of Holland, I defired him to reftore the fame, but this Hexr being a swaggering companion vied me most vilely in words, and went and told the Gouernour, what wee all had determined, and faid that wee were Here-

He is raken &

ient backe to

Nil habet infa-

Braill.

tickes, and that he himfelfe was a Catholicke, that day at night I should have stolne the Key of the Kings Store-house to haue taken Muskers and Powder, and haue carried it to Thomas Conters house, but it was Gods will that he had accused vs before I had done it, or elfe we had beene all hanged for it. We being all before the Gouernour, and denying that we had ever meant any fuch matter Heixt faid, Sir, fend to Thomas Coopers house, and your hall find 20, Muskets and nowder. that Anthony hath itolne out of the Kings Store-house for that purpose, if your Worship find it not to, fay that I am a lier, and a falle dealer. Then the Governour fent vs all to Prifon, & himselfe and Heist, went to T. Coppers house, where they found no such matter. He went to the Kings Store-house and faw that nothing was stirred; whereinon hee was somewhat apery with to Heire, because he had taken him with an vneruth, and faid, that he never faw men of to perverse

and yile condition as we were to feeke the defituation of each other. Vpon occasion of this Hext Heists milera his ill demeanure not long after, the Gouernour tent him to Annola, and from thence Don Franchile dea h. cifco fent him to Mafangano, where he dyed in a milerable effate. Prefently after that Andrew Towres, was accused for eating flesh on the Friday, and for that was put in pricen, and paid too. Rials of eight, and was fet at libertie, within a moneth after he had bin out of prison, he ran away to Fernambucke, the Gouernour being informed of ittent two small Carnels after him to bring him back against in one of the small Carnels went his some Ganfalo Corosde Safa, and the High Priet's Nephew, and a great many more young Gentlemen. After they were out on the Mayne, and almost abourd of the ship that Andrew Towers was in on a sudden, there came a great storme.

20 that the small Caruell that the Gouernours, forme was in, could not endure the Sea, but was fain to run on thore on the Coast, where three of their company were cast away, one of them begins the High Priefts Nephew, and I thinke that they had bin all drowned, if it had not bin for Martinde Safa, that was at that place with 1 00, flaves making Brafill ready for a fluin of his Fathers. the other Carnell followed him to Fernambagua, and brought him backe againe to the River of Ienero, where hee was put in prison and should have bin hanged, but that all the Towne begged

him, he was fent to Mafongona where he dyed.

Anno Dom. 1598. there came two Deuch things being Captaine of them, Iafper Fernandes 2 Two Duich Dutchman, and leave of the Governour after he had the wed his Licence out of Portugally fet all thips, his goods on the re, and had bought and fold for the space of three monethes in the Towne, and 20 made great store of money. At the time of his going away, the Kings Officers faid that his Li-

cence was not good, and would have stopped his ships, then the Governour faid, why looked you not to that before, feeing I gave them leave to come in your words, faving, that his dispatch was good, answere it how you can, for feeling he came un with leave and upon my word

he shall goe out without any hearing, and so he departed for Angela.

After that, the Gouernor General of all the Coast of Brafil, Don Francisco de Sala, came to the River of Ieners, with two Hulkes, and being enformed that Iafper Fernandes was at Angola, hee fent a Caraell thither, that his ships should be kept for the King, her hearing of it went about his ships, and went away in spight of the Portugals; the same yeere thete came Francifes de mondunfa de vefconfales for Gouernour to my Maiters place, that day the Hulke which the new Go-AO uernour was in, came to the mouth of the Hauen, the Governour Saluador Corea de Safa; was at

a Sugar-mil that he had newly finished. The aforesaid, when the came to the mouth of the Hauen beganne to shoot off her Ordnance, the Gouernour not knowing what it should bee, presently caused a great Canoa to bee made readie, for immediately, hee would goe to the Towne to see what was the matter, within halfe an houre after we had two out at Sea, to come to the Towne. what was the matter, writing marte an industry and the Canoa, there my Matter had bin cast away, if God first, He sugth his and I had not laid hands on him, for all his slaues swamme away to the shore, and Henry Barra- Master, way with them, only I, and Domingos Gomes a Molato flaue that my Matter carried with him in the Sea, and betweene vs, we got him to the Canoa, where he held fast, till wee drew neere the

shore, where the Sea brake like Mountaynes, there we had like to have bin all cast away for the Sea would calt vs against the Hils of fand , and carrie vs backe againe to the Sea; after I had got my felfe alhore, I looked towards the Sea, and law my Mafter come in a great wane, and as the wave brake, I and my deere friend Domingos Gomes tooke hold of him and dragged him out of the Sea; but we both thought that hee would have dyed, for hee could not speake, then wee tooke him betweene vs by the legges vpon our shoulders, and made him vomit a great deale of water, and forecoursed him, when I faw him well, I told him that the Sea knew no Gotternours better then other men, the next day the Governour went home by land, and found the other Gouernour in the Towne, for whole comming I did not a little reloyce, for then I thought the time was come that I long had defired, hoping thortly to come into my Countrey.

In the same yeere there came foure Hollanders, and anchored before the Citie in the mouth of to the Hauen, ti en all the Townerose vp in Armes, my Master was at his Sugar-mill, and I remayned in the Towne to wayte on my Miftris. When fine faw the Portugals runne up and downe with their Armes, the commanded me to take a Masket, and hade mee goe to one of the Forts, the which I did according to her command: the new Governour came to the Fort where I was, and viewed the men that were in the Fort, and commanded one of his men to give vs

Liiii

Powder and shot. After I had spoken with the new Gouernour (who liked mee very well, because he said I was ready with my Peece, and praysed the English Nation to be very good Souldiers One John de Selnera told him, that he were best take heed of me that I ranne not away to the Hollanders, for I had done greater matters then that, and that he knew I made no account to fwim abourd of them in the night vpon any piece of wood, and rehearfed many things that I had adventured in the time that my Mafter was Governour. The new Governour came and tooke me by the hand, and carried mee to Prison, where I lay 27. dayes, till the Hulkes were deparred from the mouth of the Hauen, and went to Great Iland, then I was fet at libertie. After that the Governour Generall had beene at San Vincents some two moneths, there came a great Hulke of Amilerdam, called the Golden World, and a Captaine that was called Lawrence Buter, the Hulke had beene at Saint Thomas Iland, and an Iland called the Prince, and from thence to the Straits of Magellan, where many of her men dyed, and by contrary wind they were compelled to returne to the Coast of Brafill, this Hulke comming to San Vincent, fent her Boate to tell the Governour that they were Merchants, and that if they would give them leave, they would traffigue with them, the Gouernour Generall made them a Certificate under his hand and Seale, that they should have no wrong but pay the Kings Custome and goe their wayes when they would. and whether they would: with that the Captaine of the Hulke put into the Harbour: & commanded his goods to be fet on shore. Every day he was visited by the Governour Generall abourd his thip, and promifed him great courtefie. After that the Captayne had landed all his goods, and mott of all the Hollanders were ashore, a great many Portugals went abourd the Hulke with Git- 20 ternes finging and playing. When the Flemmings faw them come in that fort they mistrusted nothing, the Portugals danced in the ship and dranke with the Flemmings, and vpon a sudden when the Flemmings thought least of them, they drew their Swords and killed two of them, and poffest them selves of the Hulke for the King.

Flemmine taken treche. roufly.

of Parturals.

Bacia, but they could do no good. After the Gouernour Generall had been fome foure moneths at San Vincents, my Mafter had fome bufineffe thither, and I went with him, when we came to San Vincents the Gouernour Generall was departed fiftie leagues within the land, at a place where he was enformed of fome Mynes of Gold, but when he came thither, he found that they were not worth the working, then he determined to fend farther into the Land to a place called Etapufick, 30 I being there, and knowing the place was commanded by the Gouernour Generall to goe this Mynes of gold, ther, when we came to the aforetaid place, we found very fingular good Mynes, and wee brought of the foyle to the Gouernour Generall, and many small peeces of Gold that we found in many places where the water washed away the Earth, the Gouernour Generall tooke it, paying ve for it more then it was worth, and fent it to the King with a Sey, for to confider whether it should be wrought or not, the Governor Generall fent likewise 40000, pounds worth of Plate, that he had wrought out of the Myne of Saint Paul, which is twelve leagues from San Vincents, In the time that I went to Ecopolicke, my Master was gone home, then I served as a Souldier for the space of three moneths, that shipping went to the River of Leners; then the Governour General required my paines very honourably, and sent me backe against o my Master. After that 40 my Malter fent to a place called the Organs, which Hill is to bee feene from the River of Ienere, where we found a little Myne of Gold, and many good stones. There came a Hulke out of Spaine that brought a Bishop, and a Spanish Gouernor to goe from thence in small shipping to the River of Plate, and from thence to Somma. A little after that, this Hulke arrived at the River of lenero.

In the beginning of the veere of the Lord 1 599, there came nine Hulkes before the Citie of

Divers frages, where fell a difeafe in the Countrey like the meazels, but as bad as the plague, for in three mo-Author, which here followed, was generally in all parts of the Countrey. At this time going up and downe from the Sugaras in other pla. mill to the ship, in the night with a Barke lading of Brafill for the Hulke, with the Ayre one of ees of the Hi- my legges swelled, that I could not firre : it is common and very dangerous in those Countries florie, for bre- when a man is hot, to come in the Ayre, especially in the night, for being a hot Countrey, it hath 50 omitted. Legge fwolne with the aire.

The Oreas.

The fourteenth of August 1601. Saluador Corea de Safa; Gouernour of the River of lanuary. embarked himselfe in the aforesaid Hulke with his Wife Donenes de Soso, determining to make his Vovage to Fernambuquo, we sayled East to Scaward. The fitteenth day wee kept still Eastward to the Sea. The fixteenth day we kept North-east, and about tenne of the clocke we had fight of the Cape

a piercing ayre, and fuddenly striketh in any part of the bodie. I was very ill for the space of a

neths their dyed in the River of Ienero, aboue three thouland Indians and Portugals: this difease

The feuenceenth, eighteenth and nineteenth, having the wind North-west, we kept stil Eastward for feare of the fands and cliffes called Aborollas , they lye betweene the Cape and Spirito Same. The twentieth day having the winde South, wee fayled our course North-east. This 60 course we kept till the five and twentieth of the moneth, then the winde turned Northward, we made East to Seas this course we were faine to keepe till the last day of the moneth, the first of February, the winde being at South-west wee sayied North-east along the Coast, till the seuenth day of the moneth. The eight day the Mafter and the Pilot tooke the height of the Sun.

and were ten degrees and an halfe Southward of the Line. As the Mafter and the Pilot were ralking together concerning the Voyage, there came a Sea-foule, and fitting upon the backe flav. cast out two or three little fishes, with that a Spaniard casted lasper Conquero, who had some experience of the Coast, said to the Master take heed, for I am afraid you are neerer the shoate, then you take your selfe to bee , for you know not how the current driveth you Westward voon the Coast, the Flemmings bade him meddle with his owne businesse, and that they knew what to do without his countell, the Pilot made himfelfe forty leagues from the shore, & directed his course North. The ninth day at midnight wee descried Land, the Pilot presently cast his Lead, and found but eight fathomes water, then he commanded the Saylers to cast about, the which they Danger at Sea

10 did the wind being at North-east, and wee being neere the shore, could not beare up to Sea: for wee faw Clifts both on the starboord and larboord fide of vs, and before wee could get out our Anchor, we were driven so neere the Clifts on the lee side of vs, that wee had no other remedie. but to runne upon the Rockes, where we had beene all cast away, but that it was the pleasure of God to deliver vs, for wee lay with the Prow of our ship vpon one of the Rockes for the space of halfe an houre, and we were faine to cut off both our Masts, and to cast many chists over-boord. thinking it had beene impossible to saue any thing, but it was the will of God when wee least thought of it, that a great Sea brake ouer the Rocke, and put vs into eight fathomes water, betweene the Rockes and the Cliffes, so by the prouidence of God, wee were delivered out of the

aforefaid danger.

The next day we saw Cambali along the shore, then the Gouernour commanded mee to be see on shore to talke with the wilde people, and to know of them upon what Coast wee were, or if we might goe to Fernambuque by land, the Captaine commanded a Mamaluke, called Antonio Mamaluke. or Fernandes to goe with me athore, but when we came to land, this Mamalake durit not goe on Mefizon shore, for feare of the wilde Cambals, so I went alone, and saluted them according to the fashion of the Country, then I enquired of them, how they called the place where they were they told of the Country, then a carquier in the River of Toades, likewife they faid that we were River of toades. very neere the River of Saint Francis, and Northward, we had the River called Saint Michelland that they were flaues to the Portugals of Fernambucke, having driven cattle to Barn: and now they returned home againe. One of these bond-slaves went abourd the shippe with mee, and tal-30 ked with the Gouernour, the next day, the Gouernours Wife entreated her husband, that hee would leave the Hulke, and goe by land, the which he did at his wifes request, so commanding all his Treasure to be fet on shore, we left our ship, the Gouernour commanded the Master to take Fernambnano if it were possible, if not that he should goe to Baya, and from thence into Portugall, with any thips that thould depart from thence, this Hulke had nine tunnes of Silver in her, Nine tunnel the which incharged to Diego de Guadro, by the Gouernour Generall Don Francisco de Sasa; and filere at Fernambuquo, the charge of it was given to my Master Saluador Corea de Sasa, from the place where we were driven on shore to Fernambacke, is fortie leagues. In this journey from the River of Toades, or from the Clifts called Baylhas Deamrobrio did I and Domingos Gomes alway carrie a Boxe of pure Gold of my Mafters, some twelve leagues, from the aforesaid River of Toades to a 40 place called by the Indians V panafon; are three leagues, this V panafon; is a very fingular good place Places on the to take fresh water, from Vpaua fon to another River called Cafuays, is one league from the Ca-Coast.

fmall fisher Boare at this place, and determined to goe to Fernambuque in it. The same day that wee made sayle in the smal Barke from the River of Saint Michell, there arose a great storme from that North-east, and we were faine to take the River of Saint Michels Aftorme. againe with great hazard of our lives, for the winde being very great, wee were driven voon a Rocke that lyeth South-west from the mouth of the River very neere the shore , all those that could swimme leaped into the Sea; and so the Barke was lighter, and swamme off the Cliffe,

fuayes, to the River of Saint Michellare foure leagues, at this River dwelleth a very rich Mama-

lucke, John de Reche, at this River we rested three dayes. The Governour Generall fraughted a

50 then the Gouernour and his Wife faid that they would goe by Land, fo the day after we departed from the Ruer of Saint Michels to another great River called Vie, this River is three leagues from Saint Michel, heere my small ship may enter and take fresh water, and kill great store of fresh fish, from thence we went to another River called Jaquareaficke, from this place the Gouernour fent me and Antonio Fernandes before to a small Village to prouide some prouision against his comming, there was in our company a Portugalicalled Rafiel Penera, that perforge would go with vs, we told him that we had many great Rivers to paffe, and that it were better for him to tarrie with the Gouernour and his Wife, he not regarding our words went with vs. so we departed all three of vs, the next day after wee had departed from the Gouernour, wee came to a very faire River called Saint Antonio, that which we passed vpon a langure made of Canes, from 60 thence wee went to a place called by the Indians Amrecuua Prisema, this is the Harbour of

Frenchmen, from thence wee came to a great faire River called Camarijuna, wee went on to the River of Stones. We departed from thence up the River on a Mangada, made of three dry pofts pinde together, the next morning we landed in a faire Champaine Countrey, where we faw great flore of Cattle, and a Sugar-mill grinding of Canes, to which wee went, the Owner of the Mill

was a high Dutchman, to whom we deligered the Governours Letter, the which as foone as hee had read, prefently he commanded two Beenes to be killed, and fent away with tenne buffels of Calling meale, and many Hens and Turkeyes, and wee two were very honourably yied for the frace of a weeke that we were there, from thence wee departed to a place called Porto do Culus. three leagues from the Arefeene, this is an excellent Hauen for all weathers, and all the veere long, there is at the least two thousand chiffs of Sugar. At this place Mannell Masquerennes mer vs with two hundred Horse, and then after two dayes rest we came to Fernamhuana

Twentie dayes after we had beene in the Towne lelifiano Cuello, fent word to Manuell Malquerennas, how that he was believched in Rio Grande, by the Putewaras, and that if he were not prefently ayded by him, he should be forced to lote the Kings Towne, with the loffe of all their 10 lines . Malauerennas prefently determined to goe himfelfe , and left the Towne of Fernamhu. que in charge to my Matter Saluador Corea de Saa; and thus we departed from Fernambuque with toure hundred Portugalls, and three thousand Indians, and in seuen dayes journey we came to Rie Grande, having many a brave skirmish, with divers Canibals in the way. As foone as wee were come before the Towne our Captaine made a long speech to all the Portugals and Indians, incouraging them against those Infidels whole Armie was at the least fortie thousand strong, and defired them all to confesse to their Ghostly Fathers and to take the Communion, for the next morning he was retolued to give the onfet on his enemies, the which was very bravely performed, for the Caribals the nay before in a skirmish that they had, did take two hundred prisoners, and having killed many of them to eate, not expecting our comming in the chiefelt of their fealt, and their 20 drinking we let vpon them, the people of the Towns on the other lide, hearing the rumour, if-fued for h, thus taking them on the ludden, wee made fuch flaughter among them, that they were forced to remooue their fiege, with the loffe of three thousand prisoners, and five thousand that were flaine. The King of these Canibali was called Pirainwath that is to lay, the finne of a fib, when this Heathen Prince faw himfelfe ouerthrowne with fo small a number as wee were, in comparison of his multitudes, he fent certayne of his men to Manuell Masquarennas to treate of peace, upon these conditions, that if he would release all those prisoners, and admit him and all his Nation to live as free men, that then hee and all his would fubmit themselves as subjects avints thin and be baptized, which offer indeed was accepted of by Majaremmar, and this one of the great Proumers of the Orth part of Brolling the Control of the Great Brown of the Gre Forts hard by the Towne, on the River fide, and fent to Fernambuquo for forty cast Peeces of Iron, placing twentie in either Fort, many Souldiers, got at this conquest very rich stones . both Diamonds, Rubies, and great store of blue Saphires, in some small Villages that stood by the Sea Ambergreece, fide. We found great store of Ambergreece, which the Indians call Parapoun Arepoty, here fortune was some what fauourable vnto me, for I got about fine hundred Crownes in this journey.

This Thomas

Turner Lwas

acqu med

with and re-

where I found my Matter Saluador Corea, de Saa, readie to ship himtelfe for Portugall, in the fame fhip that broughe him from the River Inners, which by this time was come from Barera, after wee were let ashore at the place, called Ous Bufihos de don Rodrigo, where we had all like to have 40 beene call away, at my returne from Rio grande to Fernambuano, I met with two Englishmen, the one of them a Gentleman called Thomas Turner, the other Muserane, Pilot of a Fiv-poate of Matter Newtons a Merchant of London, Matter Turner by my adurce, went to the River of lanero, and from thence to Angola, where he made great profit of his Merchandize, for which hee thanked me after we met in England. Now to my storie. The thirteenth of August 1596. Salceiued of him nador Corea de Saa, Lord Gouernour of the River of Innero, Captaine Generall of Spirito Santo, Porta Scoura, Santos, and San Vincent, departed from Fernambuquo, with fifteene Hulkes of after M.Kn.uet Hamborough, leven Fly-boates of Omdan and Hamborough, and at the least twentie Caruels, all of them being laden with Sugars. The old Mary of Hamborough wherein the Gouernour came was Admirall, a ship of seuen hundred tunnes, the Owner whereof was called Hans Burgo, the 50 new Mary Vice-admirall a ship of fine hundred tunnes, the Owner called Adrian Cornelias, Rere-admirall a thip of fine hundred tunnes, the Owner called Conrado, likewife another great thip came with vs, called the George of one Hans Duke, the Danid and others, with this fleete we departed from Fernambuque, the fifteenth of August 1599. and in two monethes fayle wee arrived at Listone, where I continued with the Gouernour in his house for the space of nine moneths, after which time I fell very ficke, and by this time having fpent all that I brought with me from Brafill, my mifery great, and had beene a great deale greater, had it not beene for a vertuous English woman, which I met withall in a Nunnery, and in that time that I was riueth at Life there, thee made her approbation. By God first, and by her meanes I was faued from dying a most

After this co: quest was ended, Manuell Masquarennas returned againe to Fernambuquo.

His tickneffe.

After my comming to Lift one, I fell very ficke in my Mafters house, where I lay in a backe roome having only a piece of an old mat for my bed, thus I lay for the space of sicke weekes, in the greatest mifery that could be, for first I was sicke of a burning Feuer, none came at mee but a poore flaue ofn.y Mafters, for before this time my deare friend Domingos Gomes was dead, this

flane in love to me, fometimes would bring me meate and water, fometimes I was two daies without either meate or drinke : in the end of this fixe weekes, Thomas Mulgraue and Mafter Thomas Turned came to me with some Dutchmen, and they amongst them gaue me twelve shillines : I had received fo many bountifull gifts before of my vertuous friend Miltris Foller, that I would have chosen rather to have died, then she should have knowne my want; but Thomas Mulorane of Rateliffe, knowing how much the favoured me, did periwade me to write vnto her. the which (although vnwillingly) I did; presently vpon the receit of my letter, I received from her fiftie Crownes, and every day was visited from her, yet for all this my ficknesse grew to be such, that those that saw me thought that I could not escape, except I had the helpe of some 10 Doctor, then by her meanes, reporting that I was her kinfman, I was carried to the Kings Hospitall, where in two moneths I recourred, being one and twentie times let bloud, and short-Iv after that I was past all danger, I was very kindely discharged out of the Hospitall, with ten shillings in my purie.

After I came forth of the Hospitall, I thought with my selfe, that the best way was to leave my Masters house, and determine how to get my liuing by some other meanes : with this determination I went to the Kings Custome house, where I met with many men of all Countries. there I met with some Scotchmen, seeking of one that could speake the language; I hearing them, offered my feruice, & after that, I had as many customers as I could turne my hands vnto, and got by them for interpreting veriegood maintenance: many Dutch Merchants would have had me 20 gone backe againe in their affaires for Brafil, and the Indies , but I itill had a delire first to come to England, thinking that there I should finde some meanes to set forth my selfe in some good fashion, but alas I finde that want hath no preferment : now for my comming into England, my determination was to have tarried somewhat longer then I did, but that my fortunes were and are euerlike to be croft, for living as I have told you in verie good fashion, maintaining my selfe verie well by foraine Merchants, that could not speake the Spanish tongue : one day amongst the reft in the Kings Custome house I met with one who told me that my Master Salmador Corea de Sas, did command me to come to him againe, if not, that he would make me be brought whither I would or no : in briefe, I made little account of his meffage, and held on my courfe with them by whom I lived, but now my old friend, imprisonment, and miserie comes againe, and 30 I am as farre from my long defired home as euer I was, for Saluador Corea de saa, seeing I would not come at him, incenst the Viceroy Christopher de Mouco against me, telling him what harme I might doe if I got into my Countrie, I prefently vpon this was taken in the streete as if I had beene some notorious villaine, carried to prison, cast in a dungeon, where I lay (God be my witneffe) three dates without meate, or fight of light; in the end I espied a little glimpse of the light, and clambering up the wall, in delpaire and halfe madde, I broke downe a peece of a boord that flood before an Iron grate, there I cried out in fuch fort that a great many came to the window, where many pittied me, but none could helpe me, &c.

d. IIII.

The diners Nations of Sanages in Brasil, and the adiopning Regions: their dinersties of Conditions, States, Rites, Creatures, and other things remarkeable, which the Anthor observed in his many yeares manifold percerinations.

The Petinares are not of fo wilde and barbarous conditions as many other Provinces are The Petinares 50 in Brasil; for if you come as a Merchant vnto them, they will trafficke with you, if as described.

Warrier, they will fight very valiantly. They are men of good stature, their bodies are all carued with very fine workes, and in their lips they make a hole with a Roe-bucks horne, and when they come to mans estate, they cut the hole of their lippes with a Cane, and then the hole being bigge they weare a greene Stone therein, and he that hath not this falhion is counted a petant. Thele Caribals have no religion, they may take as many wives as they will, or as they No fee forme can get : the women can take no more husbands but one, except her husband give her leave in of Religion. publike before them all, then the may take whom the will. When thefe Indians goe to the wars, Warres, their wives carry all their provision in Baskets on their backes : thefe Canibals goe all naked, and Region, inhabit on the Northerne parts of Brafil from Baya to Rio Grande: they have no certainty of Diet. 60 meate but rootes, and if they kill any wilde Beatt or Foule in the Mountaines, when he comes home, looke to which of his wives he giveth that which he bringerh, with her he will lye that night; then she presently goeth to the water, and washeth her selfe, and lying downe in a net, commandeth all the reft of her husbands wives to ferue her; which they doe very obediently Ricco of childe. for that day. When the time commeth that any woman is to be deliuered of Childe birth, the birth

Crab-lice.

with any kinde of Nation, but doe ease all kinde of people, Frenchmen, Portugals, and Blackamorres. Many times whileft I was at the River of lanuarie, some ships were cast away at this Cape, and all the Portugals and Blackamoores were eaten. I have feene them take great dog-fiftee by the taile, and dragge-them alhoare. In this place I have feene very great water Alicanos (which we call in English Crocodiles) feuen yards long. This Crocodile hath great scales, and long clawes very vely to be frene. The Portugals, when they know where any of thefe great ones are, doe fifth for them with a chaine, and a great Iron hooke, and for bait they tie a Cock or a Hen to the booke, they take this paines to take him because his Cods are very great, and better then any muske. At this place, the Mountaines are fo full of Crab-lice, that weeknew not what to doe. they would thick in our skins that we could not get them off, but were faine to take drie flraw 10 and finge our felues, as you would finge Hogs, and to rid our felues of them. Here also wee had great flore of wilde Hogs, and a kinde of wilde Fowle as bigge as Turkies, called Mutas.

Abanfanga, is the name of a valiant Caniball, that is adioyning hard by the Wataquazes, thefe

Canibals are a kinde of the Tamoyes. Some twentie yeeres agone there was a Gouernour among them, called Mendefaa, in the River of lanuarie, who made warre against the Tamores, and in the end over runall their Countrie or Province; onely this Abanfanga remayned hidden in Dungeons and great Holes with some fortie or fiftie of his Countrimen. It was our chance going to warre with the Waraquazes to come through this Towne, and there we had newes by Abaufangas people, that he was at warre against the Wataquares; whereupon we made Spies to see if we could take him, before that we would fet upon the Wataquazes. One evening, we heard a great 20 noise of Cambale, then the Captaine lending out some Spies, my selfe being one, wee faw that it was Abanfanga, and his companie, that had raken fine Wataquazes, and with great firre were killing of them to eate. Affoone as we had efpyed all that we could, wer returned agains to the Capsaine, and told him what we had feene, and that night circled Abaufanea, and tooke him prijoner, with fixtie young men of his companie; wee asked of him our best course, to warre against the Waraquazes, he told vs, that he was rather to take our aduice, then we to aske his, that he vied no policie but to fight in open field, and if we would, we should see how he made warre ag .i. if his enemies : the next day, we being hard by the Inhabitants of the Wataquazes; Abau. lanes came forth, and joyned all his companie together with leave of our Captaine, and affoone as they were all readie with their bowes and arrowes, hee ran into the thickest of his enemies. 30 with all his companie, where eighteene of his companie were prefently killed, and most of them fore hurt, he himfelte being fhot in one and twentie parts. In our fight he killed three Wataquazes before hee fell; the Portugals kept still by the woods side, and with their peeces killed one hundred and thirtie Wataquazes, the wilde people were fo amazed when they heard our peeces goe off, that they thought the Deuill had beene among it them, and every one began to flie as fait as he could, the Portugals following them, found Abaufanga in the field hurt, as you have heard. This Aban langa affoone as he perceived the Portugals to it and amazed at him, defired them to tell him somewhat of God, for he said, that Frenchmen had told him that there was a God, and that he which beleeved in him should be faued. The Portugals telling him of their faith, hee faid that hee beleeved in that God, and defired to bee baptifed, and had his name given him John. For the 40 space of two houres that this Indian lived, hee did nothing but call upon God, and so ended his

life, being one hundred and twentie yeeres of age, as he shewed vs by signes.

The Wayanaffes. The Wayanaffes, inhabite eighteene leagues Southward of the River of lannarie, at a place cal-

led by the Portugals, Ilba Grande, that is to say, The great Iland. These Canibals are of low sta-

ture, great bellies, and broad feet, very Cowards, of a reasonable good complexion. They doe

not carue their bodies , neitheir doe they glorie fo much to eate mans flesh , as the Tamojes, the

Tommenos, and other Canibals doe. The Women are bigge in the body, and very vgly, but they

have very good faces. The Women of this Countrie doe paint their bodies and faces with a thing

called in their language Urucu; it groweth in a round Col like a beane, and that maketh a red

groweth long by the fides, and on the crowne all shauen like Franciscan Friars. These Canibals

lve in Nots made of barkes of trees, and likewife when they travell through the Wildernelle, fuch

promison as they have, they carrie in little Nets at their backs; they are neuer without Tabacco.

they efteeme it more then any thing that they have in their Countrie, and with it do heale their

wounds, when they are hurt. When the Poringals doe stand in need of slaues, they doe come to

Ilha Grande, and there they shall be fure to meet with some of the Wayanaffes a fishing then they

thew them Kniues, Beades, and Glasses, telling them what they would have for merchandise,

and presently they will goe to a place called in their language lawarapipo, which is their chiefest

Towne, and from thence bring all such as they meane to sell to the Sca fide, and as good cheape

inke like Oker; which maketh them feeme most vgly. The haire both of men and women 50

Painting.

Tabacco,

as you can you may buy or them. The Topinaques inhabite at Saint Vincents, they are men of good stature, and of reasonable good complexion; their women are all painted with divers colours, and on their heads, they weare a thin barke of a tree like a Ribband : the Canibals eate mans flesh as other Canibals doe. they adore no Idoll, neither haue they any kinde of Religion, onely when they kill any man,

CHAP.7. S.A. Bearded Sauages, civill, women faire, Weeping-welcome, Wild dogs. 1220

they all paint their bodies with a kinde of fruit, called lanipano, and all their heads are fet with feathers, and great flones in their vinder-lips, with Rattles in their hands, and thus they will dance for three dayes together. I was amafed to fee how they would drinke a filthy drinke without breaking of their bellies, and asked them how they were able to fland to long and drinke to much of that filthy drinke; they answered me, that Tabacco did make them as frelly as if they had done nothing. Among these Caribals there is great store of gold in many Hills hard by the Sea fide, and now the Portugali have fome of those places. I would wee had the rest, Here I end to discourse any farther of the Canibals that dwell by the Sea fide, till I have told you of fuch Nations as I met withall when I went through the Countrie, and how I came against to the Sea : I to have told you in the first booke of my travell, how that five or fixe yeeres after I had beene taken by the Portugals, I went to warre against the Canibals with the Portugals. Now by the grace of God, as neere as I can I have told you of all the Nations, that I faw, and converit with in nine moneths, that I trauelled through the Wildern-ffe with the Portneals, and a veere and eleven moneths that I passed with the Canibals themselves.

He Canibals called Pories, inhabite at the least one hundred miles within the land, they are Caribals called noit like voto the Wayanaffes, men of low statute, they live onely on Pine nuts, and imail Poiks. Cocos that are as bigge as Apples, but they have shills like Wall-nuts, somewhat harder, the In- Small Cocose

dians call them Extress. They are of good complexion, and effective very much of clothes if they 20 can get them; the women are all painted with divers colours, as red, blue, and yellow; they are in peace with the Portugals, and warre with no Nation neither will they eate mans field if they have any other meate; they lie in little Nets made of barkes of trees, they have no houses but two or three boughs tyed together, couered with Palme leaves if it happen to raine. In this part of the Countrie I faw great flore of Leopards, and Lions; the Indians call the Leopard, lawarile, and the Lions, lawarofon; and many great Cats of mountaine, which the Indians call Mar-

carabite, here you may have of the Indians for a Knife or a Combe, five or fixe Gallons of Bal-

After you have passed the famous River of Paraeyna, you shall come into a Countrie of Cari- The Mologabals, called Molopaques; they are much like anto Dutchmen in bigneffe, very faire of complexi- ques, bearded 20 on, they have all beards like other men; fo hath not any other kinde of Canthali, except it bee civiller then here and there one. Most of them doe couer their prime parts, they are very civill in their beha-others. uiour : their Townes are very strong, all circled with walls made, of earth and great logs, they have houses severall every man with his familie. They have one among it them whom they call Houses several Moronishaua, which is their King, but we taw no difference betweene him and the rest, but only the name, and he had (as I remember) thirteene wives, and no other had so many. Amongst thefe Canibals we found good itore of gold, the which they doe not effeeme, neither doe they vie Goldit for any thing , but to tie on their filling lines, when they goe a filling in the River of Para, where they take great itore of good fish. Para is beyond Paraeyna eightie leagues : thefe Indians River Parae doe not worke in the mynes for gold, as the Spaniards doe, but onely take such perces as they Mynes. 40 finde when the raine hath washe away the earth : for where the mynes of gold are there are no trees, but are drie Mountaines of black earth, which the Indians call Tainquara; and the Moun-

taine wherethe Molopaques doe finde this great store of gold, is called Erepararange: if these Ca. nibals had the knowledge of God, I might boldly fay, that there are not any in the world like them. The women are goodly of person, faire of complexion, as our English women are, they Faire womens are very modelt and civill in their behaviour, you shall never see them laugh, they are people very capable to conceine any thing, they have their haire fo long, that they tie it about their middles with the barke of a tree, wherewithall they couer their nakednesse, they esteeme very much of it. Their haire is of colours like our English women, fome yellow, fome white, fome browne : the women that have not long haire, to cover their nakednesse, doe weare a kinde of Furre, which they call Samyathwason. These Canibals doe eate mans flesh, I was not past nine

or ten dayes among them, therefore I cannot resolue you further of their customes. In that time I was with them I taw no manner of Religion among them, they doe keepe very good order, obeferuing times to eate their meate, at noone, and at night, and that doth not any other Nation a- Modleif mongit them, they are very cleanly in whattoeuer they doe.

Then wee came to a faire champaine Countrie, where wee found a kinde of Cambals, called The Motay a Motayas. Affoone as these Canibals heard of our being in their Countrie, they all left their houfes, and came to meet vs dancing and finging, telling vs that they were very glad of our comming into their Countrie; they brought Ginny Wheat, Pepper, and divers kinde of rootes to prefence vs, and craued our frienoship, defiring vs, that we would aide them against the Tamoyes. We de-

60 firing nothing more, told them that to that purpose we were come. Assoone as were came to the Wesping we houses of these Can.bali, all the women would lit about vs, and laying their hands on our bodies, come. they would weepe mon bitterly. After that, every one of them would bring such victuals as they had; fome brought boyled Frogs, others brought Serpents, and Snakes, which wee found very good; other tome brought Munkers, and a kind of wilde Dogge that they kill in the Moun- Wilde Dog

Mountaine; all this is good meat among it them, and we found them very good, and were very

glad when we could get them to eate.

Then we came to a kinde of Camball, called Lopos, the Portugals call them Bilreros, these Canibals are alwayes in the Mountaines of Pine trees, and have not any other thing to live on : I neuer faw any houles that they dwell in, but boughs tyed together with rines of trees, thefe Canibals would come to vs, and tell vs of many things, and would goe with vs two or three dayes. and then would run away from vs, and many times when they did meet with any of our Indians, or out Portugals, they would take away such things as they had about them, and fend them away without any hurt to their persons. As wee went through this Countrie we found many mynes Goldin plen- of gold, and amongst these Indians our Captaine got good store of it, and many good stones. In 20 all America, there is not a richer pare then this, but it is so farre within the Land, and that Countrie is so populous that as yet neither Poringall nor Spaniard can inhabite there. They are men of small stature, and very browne of complexion, their bodies are all painted as the other Caribals before named. The women are as browne of complexion as the men, and very rude

we'm, fimple fauszes.

After we had passed this Province, we came into the Province of the Wayanamasous, where we found them in small Townes built by a Rivers side, and found these the simplest Nation of all other : for these Canibals would stand and gaze upon vs like herds of Deere, and never say any thing vnto vs. Here we found great flore of Ginny wheat, and pompions that weedid eate. In 30 many Bogs hard by their Towne we killed good ffore of Crocodiles, and did eate of them, for in this journey we were almost started. These Cambals are of a good stature, bigge, and tall of bo-. die, and very cleane made of their lims, very sufficient to behold; but they are a kinde of late people, that care not for any thing, but will lie all day lafing in their houses, and neuer goe abroad but for their victuals. The women are of good stature, they are of a dunne pale complexion, and they doe prouide Pompions and Rootes for their husbands. Here we were all, or most of vs very ficke with eating of a kinde of fruit, which the Indians call Madiopuera, this fruit is as bigge as a Horse plum, as yellow as gold, the kirnell of it is as sweet as any Almond, of this frust did most of our companie eare, and of them dyed sixteene, and many others sicke for a fort-

and shamelesse, for in their behaulour they differ not from wilde beafts, but in all things live

Venemous

Affoone as our companie had recovered we went on our way to feeke out the Tamoyes, having for our guides fixe of the Motayes, who carried vs at the least two moneths up and downe the Wildernelle, euery day making vs beleeve, that we should come vnto our enemies Countrie. They brought vs at last to the fight of two Townes along by a River fide. The Porsugals after they had feene how great the Townes of the Canibals were, durst not aduenture to passe ouer the River, for feare lest the Indians had espied vs, and were layne in ambush. There was not any of all the companie, Portugall nor Indian, that durft to goe over the River; the Captaine and the chiefest of the Portugals agreed together and made me goe to the Towne, whether I would or no. When I faw that there was no remedie, I tooke my leaue of them all ; for I thought verily that I went Many firaits. to the flaughter house, or at least to have lived a Comball with them during my life. With these 50 two extremities in my thought, commending my foule and bodie to Almightie God: I fwam over the River upon a little Target made of Corke, and affoone as I had landed I went flraight to the Towne, where I found nothing but two tame Estridges: he people had espyed vs, and were run away. When the Portugals had newes from me that there was no body, then they were fo ges. Riuer *Iewary*. valiant as Lions, firiting who should get first into the Towne, this was the River of lawarie. the Towne is called Mennare. Here it was that I should have beene hanged, for striking of Ansomo Martines in the Court of guard, after I had killed the great Serpent, called Serocuen. In this Towne we found great flore of Ginny wheat, and Pompions dried in the smoke, In this Towne likewife we had great flore of drie Tabacco, and Potato rootes : wee found great flore of gold in peeces, and also store of Cristall, and many other good stones; some found Diamonds, and a kind 50 of blue stones that the Portugals did esteeme of very much, and called them Pedras de Saneua,

Gold, Criftall and Icmmes. The Serpent Serocues defl:ange forme

Tame Effrid-

The Serpent that I killed was thirteene span long, it had four and twentie teeth, as sharpe as any naile, about the necke it had greater shels then the other parts of her body; the shels were

CHAP.7. S.4. Two moneths travell in a golden Countrie. Pigmeys of Tocoman. 1221

blacke and ruffet like a coller, and on her body they were ruffet and darke greene; under her belly all ineckled with black and white. It had foure sharpe feet, no longer then a mans finger, it had a conque like a harping Iron, her taile was like a straight Bull horne, all black and white listed. From one of thefe did the Lord defend me, and permitted me to kill one of them with the helue of an axe in the night. The Indians dare not goe to kill one of them except they goe fine or fixe of them with howes and arrowes. All kinde of wilde heafts, Lions, or Leopards, all kinde of Snakes, but only this, doe feare the fire, and if they come where the Indians leave any fire travelline through the Wildernesse, if any of these Serpents doe finde it, they never leave beating themfelues in it, till they either kill themselues or put out the fire. These Serpents when they feeke 10 then prey will fland about a small tree or a bough, and when any wilde beaft paffeth, hee falleth ypon him, thrufting his taile into the fundament of whatforuer it feizeth on.

After we had remay ned at this place a fortnight, or three weekes, the Portnoals did refolice to come back agains without any purchase, there the Captaine gaue up his authoritie, and joyned hintelfe with his friends to feeke the neerest way home, then did I and twelve young men of the Portugals determine to goe to the South Sea by land, for we knew by the Notes of the Motares. that we were not farre from Perm, and Cu/co, and we knowing how poore our effaces were, and the great famine we had passed comming to the Towne of Mennere, made vs afraid to goe back againe, that way which we had come, and for mine owne part, I encouraged the twelve young Partural; all that I could to goe forward, for I had furely beene knocked on the head if I had gone 20 back in my Captaines companie. With much adoe, wee thereon refolued to feeke our fortunes in the Wildernesse. After we were departed from our companie, wee came to many Mountaines. where we found good store of gold, and many precious stones; when wee came into this Countrie, wee thought wee had beene in the Prouince of Pers, wee had fuch plentie of mynes. and there was not one of vs but had ftore of itones, that those which we tooke as to day, wee would throw away to morrow to take other better then them which we had before. Thus wee travelled some two moneths in the golden Countrie, till at the last wee came to that great and most Two moneths Grange Mountaine of Criftall. This Mountaine is of a huge height, that it feemeth to be within trauellin a the cloudes, and so steepe that it is impossible to goe ouer the top. Here it was that wee passed golden Counthrough the Vault, and in truth it was one of the greatest dangers, and the most desperate that trie. 30 euer I was in.

Affoone as we had paffed this danger, it was the pleafure of God to deliver vs into the hands Vauk-firaits. of our mortall enemies the Tamojes, where my twelve companions were killed and eaten. onely my felfe remayned among these Cambals a yeere and eleven moneths, in the which time I went many times to warre against other Proninces that were loyning vpon the Countrie of Tamoyes, and (I thanke God) prospered so well that I was very much esteemed of them, and had a great command over them when they went to the field. Thele Tamojes be as proper men as any bee in Tamojes proper all Europe; they vie to make holes in their vpper-lips like the Petewares; most of them are of a men. very faire complexion. The men have their heads alwayes fet with feathers of divers colours

which sheweth very pretily, they goe starke naked. The women are as proper as any Nation 40 can be, tall, comly, well legd, cleane made of body, very small in the waste, very faire of complexion, fine handed, and very comly faces. They vie a kinde of carning ouer their breafts, which becommeth them very well. Here the Canibals esteeme not any more of gold, or precious stones, Store of gold. then wee doe of any stones in the streets : if the Spaniards had knowne of this Countrie, they needed not to have gone to Peru, there is not like vnto this for all kinde of rich metals, and many kinde of precious stones. In this place I lued eighteene moneths, and went naked as the Canta bals did. After I had lived with these Canibals the time that you have heard, I was in great fauour and credit with them , infomuch that they would not doe any thing before they had made me acquainted withall : I have told them many times of the comming and going of our English ships to the Straits of Magellan, and how well we did vie all kinde of Nations, and what kinde 50 of all things necessarie wee had for their vie. These wordes made the Cambals desire to come to the Sea coast, and asked of mee how it were possible for them to come to dwell by the Sea with-

out being flaues to the Portugals: I told them that I knew many places where English men and French men did vie to come, but that neither Portugall, nor Spaniard was never there. After I had His journe told them what I thought best, we all agreed to come through the Prouince of Tocoman, and so with the Sato the Sea, betweene the River of Plate and Saint Vincents. This Countrie of Tocomus is all fan-ges, die, and in it inhabite the Pigments I have feene many of them amongst the Spaniards at the Rivernan. uer of Plate. They are not altogether to little as weet peake of them here in England: their inha-ling in Cauca bitation in Tocoman is in Caues of the ground. In this Countrie the Inhabitants in many places have fuch Wheat as we finde in England, and Caffaui meale.

This Tocoman is judged by the Spaniard to be the end of Brafill, and the entring into Pers ; for in Tocoma there are all kinde of Brafila Rootes, and all kinde of Corne, atwell as Pern; this Countrie yeeldeth nothing to the Spaniards, but wilde Horfes, and the Indians of Tocoman are mortall enemies to all the Inhabitants of Pern; therefore the Spaniards doe keepe this Countrie because they keepe the Provinces of Pers in feare, or elie they would rise vp against the Spa-

niards. After we had passed this Countrie, we came to a River that runneth from Tecomon to River running Chile, where we tarried foure daies making Canoas to passe the River, for there were so manie Crocodiles, that we durft not paffeit for feare of them : after we had paffed this River, we came Mountaines of to the Mountaine Detodas Metalas, that is, of all Metals. At thisplace divers Spaniards and Portugals have beene, and certain lawleffe men were let on thoare on this coast by one Pedro de Charamento, which came to this place, and let vp a great Croffe, and on it writ, that the Countrie was the King of Spaines; the which I put out, and writ that it was the Queene of Englands. This hill is of divers kinde of Mettals, Copper and Iron, some Gold, and great store of Quicke-sither. It is verie high, and all bare wit, out any Trees. Here likewife was a little Church made, where we found two Images, one of our Lady, and another of Christ crucified. When the Tamores 10 faw those fignes, they thought that I had betraied them, and (indeede) I was amazed, thinking that we had beene in some part of the River of Plate, and because the Indians should not be difcouraged. I shewed my selfe to be very glad, and told them that I knew those were signes that my Countrie men vied to make when they came into Grange Countries : with these perswalions I made the Tamores to come on their journey to the Sea; where otherwise if I had told them it had bin fer vp by the Spaniards the feare that thepoore Cambals stood in of them had bin encested to have made them all returne againe from whence they came. At the last we came to the Sea. as I have told you, to the Towne of the Carisons: this Towne standeth in a fine pleasant place hard by the coast in a faire Bay, where one hundred Ships may anker without any danger. And in this place you shall alwaies have great store of fish. In this Countrie, for a Knife or a till hooke, 20 you may buy a dozen of skinnes of very good Furre; and if you will, thefe Indians will goe flor any trifle) and feich two or three baskets of Mettals, and fome have had fuch good lucke, that for two or three Glalles, and a Combe or two, with some Kniues, they have got the value of foure or fire thousand Crownes in Gold and Stones. The Towne food vpon a hill, but we puld it Jown. But when we were taken by the Portugals, and that the Carijohs were reftored against to their Countrie, they did scituate againe with in the same place where they were when we draue them out of their Countrie. Here the Portugals did binde mee, and would have hanged mee for the twelue Portugals that the Canibals had killed and eaten:

The Carriebs.

The Carriebs are men of good stature, and very valiant: they make holes in their under linne as the other Canibals doe. These Canibals likewise eate mans flesh, and speake the same language to that the Tamojes doe; the women are very comely, the most of them are of a faire complexion; they weare their haire loofe about their eares, and all their bodies are died with blacke, and their faces withered, and yellow, their breits are all carued with divers colours, which befeemeth verie well. Here is the end of my travell through America , with the Cambals, from whence I returned againe to my Mafter Saluador Corea de Safa; where I was worfe then ever I was before.

The Giants of Port Desire, and inhabitants of Port Famine: also Angola, Congo, and Massangana, and Angica, Countries of Assica.

T Port Defre, which is the next haven to the straits of Magelan, inhabited Giantsof fif- 40 A teene or fixteene spans of height. I affirme, that at Port Defire I saw the footing of them, by the thoare fide, that was about foure foote of one of our mens in length; and I faw two of them that were buried newly, the one of them was foureteene spannes long. After I was taken with the Spaniards, the Defire, one of our Shippes that had beene all alone at Port Defire, loft nine men and a boy, and two or three of them that had beene taken on the coast of Brasil, laid that these Giants did throw flones of fuch bigneffe at them out of firings, that they wete faine to weigh anker, and to lye further from the fhoare. I faw another of thele in Brafil, that was taken by Alonfo Dias a Spaniard, that with foule weather was driven out of Saint Indians; this was but a young man, yet aboue thirteene spannes long. This Port Defire is a faire pleasant Countrie, it 50 hath many fine Rivers, and the Spaniards doe affirme, that from this place it is easie to goe to the Indians Chele, which is a very rich Countrie. In Port Defire, in many fmall Rivers there is great flore of Pearle, and Currall. Here you may have great flore of Penguins and Seales at an Hand that lieth a mile Southward of the mouth of the hauen, These Giants whereof I have spo-Giants habit. ken, goe all naked, they weare their haire long to the shoulders. He whom I faw at Brafil, was a man of faire complexion, and very well proportioned according to his long flature; and this is all that I can report of them, for I know not their behanious, but as the Portugals and Spaniards indee they are no better then the Man-eaters of Brafil.

Port l'amine in the Straits of Magelan. Wide moushed men.

A youth 13.

1pans high.

chile.

At Port Damine the Generall would have left mee, Here inhabit a kinde of strange Canibals, thort of body, not aboue fue or fix spans high, and very strong and thicke made; their moutles 62 are verie bigge, and reach almost to their eares; they eate their meate in a manner raw, for they doe nothing but forch it a little in the fire, and logate it, and with the bloud that runneth from their mouthes, they smeare all their faces, and their breasts, and lay yong feathers on their bodies to the bloud that clingeth to their skinnes like Glue. When we were at the straits in this

CHAP.7.\$4, Extreame cold. Angolas King and Kingdome described.

place, there came about four or five thousand voto vs of them, but they never brought voto vs any thing but Feathers and Pearle as much as we would (for there is great flore in this Port Famine) all the while that we were at it. These Canibals would neuer let vs come to neere them. as to touch any of them, for feare we should take them; when they would give vs any thing they would tie it at the end of a long staffe, and so likewise we did to them. Here our Generall lete fenen ficke men alhore: the Snow lyeth all the yeare on the Mountaines, and it is fo cold in June. and Iuly that our men did freeze, and many of them lost their toes, as I my selfe for one, for in Extreme cold one night that I lay moilt of my feete, I loft three of my toes on one of my feete, and foure of the and maked toppes of the other foote; fome had their feete trozen, fome their noles, as Harris a Gold-fmith, people. to Henry Barramell, that was taken with me, loft his haire from his head, and was all bald for a Herry the veare or two in Brafil: yet for all this cold, all the Inhabitants goe naked, except here and there Goldmith. He one weare feale skinnes, or the skins of some wilde E'asts, of the which there are many, as Leo-Barrapell. pards, Lions, and a kinde of Beafts bigger then Horfes, they have great eares aboue a spanne long, Beafts bigger and their tailes are like the tailes of a Cowe; thele are very good, the Indians of Brafil call them then Horses at Tapetywason : of thele Beatts I faw in Ethiopia, in the Kingdome of Manicongo, the Portugals call the Magellan

them Gombe : farther within the Straits at Tolisbay, we tound many barkes of trees , that the fraits, called Indians of the Stratts doe fish in, these Indians would not come neere vs, but still as they spied Tape program, in Ethispia when our Boates they would runne away, but we plainely faw that they were men of good stature, ther he mea. and of white skinnes; they goe all naked both men and women. And thus I end my trauell neth Zebra or 20 of America.

Angola is a Kingdome of it selfe in Ethiopia, where first the Portugals did begin to inhabit : Tom. 1. p. 1002 the Countrie of Angela commeth along the coast, as Portugall doth upon Spaine, so doth Angela Of Angela to runne vpon the Kingdome of Longa and Manicongo. In Angola the Portugals have a Citie, called curof grafitas the Holy Gooff, where they have great store of Merchandile, and the Moore doe come thither is before deliwith all kinde of fuch things as the Countrie yeeldeth, fome bring Elephants teeth, fome bring livered, Negro flaues to fell, that they take from other Kingdomes which iowne hard by them : thus doe they wie once a weeke, as we keepe Markets, so doe all the Blackamoores bring Hens and Hoes; which they call Gula, and Hennes they call Sange, and a kinde of Beatt that they take in the Wildernesse like a Dogge, which they call Ambroa: then they have that Beast which before I have an told you of, called Gumbe, which is bigger then a Horfe. The Black amoores doe keepe good Lawes, The Kings

and feare their King verie much : the King is alwaies attended with the Nobles of his Realme, pompe, and whenfoeuer he goeth abroad, he hath al waies at the leaft two hundred archers in his guard. and ten or twelue more going before him linging and playing with Pipes made of great Canes, and foure or fine yong Moores comming after him as his Pages, after them follow all his Noblemen. When there falleth out anie contropertie among them, they craue battell of the King, and then they fight it out before him. They come before the King and fall flat on their breafts, then Rices of the they rife up and kneele on their knees stretching out their armes, crying Mahobeque benge, benge; people, then the King striketh them on the shoulders with a Horse-taile, then they goe to the Campe, and with their Bowes they fight it out, till they kill one another. After the battell is done, if

40 any liveth, he that liveth falleth downe before the King in the fame manner as he did when he went to the field, and after a long oration made, he taket h the Horfe-taile from the Kings shoulder, and waueth it about the Kings head, and then laieth it on his shoulder againe, and goeth away with great honour, being accompanied with all the Nobles of the Court : the Moores of Angola doe know that there is a God, and doe call God Care pongos, but they worthip the Sunne and the Moone.

The Countrie is Champain plaine, and drie blacke earth, and yeeldeth verie little Corne, the most of any thing that it yeeldeth is Plantons, which the Portugals call Baynonas, and the Moores call them Mahonge, and their Wheate they call Tumba, and the Bread Anou; and if you will buy any Bread of them, you muit lay Tala Cona anen tumbola gimbo, that is, gine me some bread, here

50 is money. Their money is called Gull ginbo, a shell of a fish that they finde by the sheare side, and from Brafil the Portugals doe carrie great flore of them to Angola. These Moores doe efterme verie much of red, blew, and yellow cloathes, they will give a flave for a span of cloath in breadth I meane, and the length of it of the breadth of the peece, those peeces of cloth they weare about their middles, and under it they hang the skin of a great Weafell before them, and another behinde them, and this is all the garments that they weare. A Weazell in their language is called Wezels Shin Pucen. You can doe a Blackamoore no greater difgrace, then to take away his Skinne from be- affected. forehim, for he will dye with griefe if he cannot be reuenged; the Portugals doe marke them as we doe Sheepe with a hot Iron, which the Moores call Crimbo, the poore flaues fland all in a row one by another, and fing Mundele que sumbela be Carey ha belelelle, and thus the poore rogues are beguiled, for the Portugals make them believe that they that have not the marke is not guiled flaves.

accounted a man of any account in Brafil or in Portugall, and thus they bring the poore Morres to be in a most damnable bondage under the colour of love. The Countrey of An. gola yeeldeth no stone, and very little wood: the Moores doe make their houses all couered with earth; these houses are no bigger then a reasonable Chamber, and within are many partitions.

The Countrie,

like the Cabbins of a thip, in such fort that a man cannot stand vpright in them. There beds are made of great Bulruthes fowed together with the rindes of a Tree. They doe make cloth like Sparke of Veluet (but it is thinner) of the barke of a Tree, and that cloth they doe call Mol-Taking of Ele- lelleo. The Elephants doe feed in the Euening and in the Morning in low marishes as there hee many. The Moores doe watch which way they come, and affoone as the Elephants are at meat. they digge great holes in the ground, and cover them with flicks, and then they cover the pits with earth, and when they have made all readie they goe to the Elephants, and shoote at them with their Arrowes, and affoone as the Elephants feele themfelues hurt, they remeat whatforuer they fee before them, following after the Blackamores that chale them, then they fall into the deepe pits where after they are once in, they cannot get out. The Moores of Angola are as in blacke as let; they are men of good flature, they never take but one Wife, whom they call Mocasha. These Moores doe cut long streakes in their faces, that reach from the top of their cares to their chinnes. The women doe weare shels of fishes on their armes, and on the small of their legges. The Law amongst them, is, that if any More doe lie with an others wife, hee shall lose Circumcifion, his cares for his offence. Thefe Moores doe circumcize their children, and give them their names, as wee doe when we baptize. Angola may very eafily be taken: for the Portugals have no Forts to defend it of any fireneth.

The King of Congo is the greatest King in all Athiopia; and doth keepe in the field continual-

Of Conco.

ly axtie thousand Souldiers, that doe warre against the King of Vangala, and the King of Angola; this King is a Christian, and is brother in Law of Armes with the King of Spaine, his feruants of 20 his house are most of them all Portugals, and hee doth fauour them very much. The King is of a verie liberall condition, and verie fauourable to all Trauellers, and doth delight verie much to heare of forreigne Countries. He was in a manner amazed to heare how it was possible her Maiestie had lined a Maiden Queene so long, and alwaies reigned in peace with her subject . When I was brought before the King, and told him of my Countrie; what plentie of things we had, if the Portugals had not liked of it, they would interrupt my speech, and the King would shew himfelfe verie angrie, and tell them that euerie man was best able to speake of his Countrie, and that I had no reason but to tell him that which was true. The King of Congo, when hee gorth to the Campe to fee his Armie, rideth vpon an Elephant in great pompe and maieflie, on either fide of the Elephant he hath fix flaues two of them were Kings, that he himfelfe had taken in the field; all the reit were of noble birth; some of them were brothers to the King of Ancies, and fome of them were of the chiefest bloud of the great King of Bengala. These noble slaues at eurrie command of the King of Congo; doe fall flat on the ground on their brefts, When the King doth ride as you have heard, they carrie a Canopie as it were a cloth of State over his head. His two Secretaries, the one a Nobleman of Spaine, the other a More, doe ride next after him, Before him goeth at the least fine hundred Archers, which are his Guard, then there followeth a More, which doth nothing but talke aloud in praise of the King, telling what a great Warriour he hath beene, and praising his wisdome for all things that hee hath accomplished verie honourably to his great fame of such as knew him. When this King of Congo commeth to his Host, all the Souldiers as he pasieth, fall flat on their faces to the ground. He neuer commeth into his Hoft after any battell, but hee dubbeth at the least twentie Knights Portugals, and as many Moores, giuing them verie great liuing according to their callings, and the feruice that they have done. The brother of this King was in Spaine, at my comming from thence for Ambassadour from his Here the Portugall Captaine would haue taken mee perforce, to haue beene a common Soul-

See Tom. 1.1.7. ders of Anguca. Here they made me serue like a Drudge, for both day and night I carried some 6.3. And Battell ftone and lime to make a Fort. It lieth right vnder the Line, and standeth in a bottome in the

middle of foure hils, and about are many fogges, but not one River. It is the vnfirmest Countrie vnder the Sunne. Here the Portugals die like Chickens; you shall see men in the morning verie luftic, and within two houres dead. Others, that if they but weat their legges, prefently they swell bigger then their middle; others brake in the sides with a draught of water. O.if you dil Sickly difpose know the intollerable heate of the Countrie, you would thinke your selfe better a thousand times dead, then to line there a weeke. There you shall fee poore Souldiers lie in troupes, gaping 62 like Camelians for a puffe of winde. Here lived I three moneths, not as the Portugals did, taking of Physicke, and eueric weeke letting of bloud and keeping close in their houses when they had any raine, obseruing houres, and times to goe abroad morning and Euening, and neuer to

dier, but the King commanded that they should let mee goe whether I would, and my determination at that time was to have gone for the Countrie of Prester lobn, for I had a great defire

to fee the River of Nilo and lerufalem (for I accounted my felfe as a loft man, not caring into

what Countrie or Kingdome Icame) but it was not the will of God, that I should at that time obtains my defire. For trauelling through the Kingdome of Congo, to have gone to the King-

dome of Angila, It was my fortune to meete a companie of Portugall Souldiers that went to a

Conquest, that the King of Spain had newly taken, called Masangana; which place is on the hor-

to eate but at fuch and fuch times. I was glad when I had got any thing at morning, noone or night. I thanke God I did worke all day, from morning till night, had it beene raine or neger to great heate. I had alwaies my health as well as I have in England. This Countrie is verietich, Gold. the King had great ftore of Gold fent him from this place: the time that I was there, the King of Angica had a great Citie at Masangana; which Citie Paulas Dias, gouernour of Angola, tooke Paul Dias and fortuated there, and finding hard by it great flore of Gold, fortified it with foure Forts, and walled a great circuit of ground round about it, and within that wall, now the Poringals doe build a Citie, and from this Citie everie day they doe warre against the King of Angica, and have

burnt a great part of his Kingdome.

burner a great part of this range out.

10 The Angiest are men of goodly stature, they file their teeth before on their vipper lawe and Angiests with on their under lawe, making a distance betweene them like the teeth of a Dogge; they doe and eate mans flesh, they are the stubbornest Nation that lives under the Sunne, and the resolutest in the field that euer man faw; for they will rather kill themfelues then yeelde to the Portugals: Of Mahamaton they inhabit right under the line, and of all kinde of Moores the feare the blackeft; they doe line Religion if the in the Law of the Turkes, and honour Mahomet, they keepe manie Concubines as the Turkes Author were doe, they wash themselues euerie morning vpwards, falling flat on their faces towards the East, not decined They weare their haire all made in plaits on their heads, as well men as women: they have good by occasion of They weare their haire all made in plaits on their neads, as went men as women; they made good their circumftore of Wheate, and a kinde of graine like Fetches, of the which they make Bread; they hade their circumstifion which great store of Hennes like Partridges, and Turkies, and all their feathers curle on their backes: in directions

20 their houses are like the other houses of the Kingdomes aforenamed. And thus I end, shewing common ro you as briefe as I can, all the Nations and Kingdomes that with great danger of my life I travel - chriftians and led through in twelue yeares of my best age getting no more then my tranell for my paine. From this Ethnicks, with Kingdome Angica, was I brought in Irons againe to my Master Saluador Corea de (a fa, to the Mahumetans. Citie of Saint Sebastian in Brasil, as you have heard. Now you have seene the discourse of my trauels, and the fashions of all the Countries and Nations where I have beene, I will by the helpe of God, make you a short discourse in the language of the Petimeres, which language all the Inhabitants of Brafil doe understand, especially all the coast from Fernambucquo to the River of Plate, the which I hope will be profitable to all travellers, and of them I trust my pames thall be well accepted of.

30 First, you must tell them of what Nation you are, and that you come not as the Portugals doe. for their wives and children to make them bondflaves.

We are Englishmen, as you all know that in [times past had peace with you.

Now knowing the neede and want that thers had, for the love that both your ance-Want, we are come to renew our anciet amity. | pacem.

Ore uqureiuua que se neering peramoya werisco Catadoro wareny orenishe berefor.

Coen pecotene Comanere pipope pewfena bareyou have of all fuch things as before your Fa- | fey opacatubaje berna oweryco coen pecotene fou fe. Core mandoare peramoya way souba, ore ranoya ftours and ours did beare one to another , and | mayfonna refei eteguena refei pecotene pararaua. for the loue and pittie that we have of your ore in ibewith ore ramoya pereri focatumorn ou

The description of divers Rivers, Ports, Harbours, Ilands of Brasil: for instruction of Nauigators.

(Sto Grande, is called by vs. the great River, lately was conquered by a Portugall, called Rio Grande, Manuell Masquerenbas. It is aboue two leagues broad in the mouth, and on the South-east fide standeth a great Fort made by the sorellaid Manuell Masquarenbas: that Countrie is plaine and fandy in many places, especially neere the Sea, and yeeldeth Sugar Canes in abundance. On the coast are many great Biyes, where the Indians doe oftentimes finde great ftore of Ambergreese : within this place, there is also store of Wood, Pepper, Ginger, and Waxe. Ambergreese, Here inhabit a kinde of Cambals, called Petymares : these Cambals have had trafficke a long time with France, and amongst them there are many that can speake French, which are Bastards, begotten of Frenchmen.

On the coast of Brasil there are three Rivers of Paraeyua: one is this that lieth next to Rio Paraeyash :? Gande, the other is a great River that runneth through the Countrie almost as farre as Lymo, Rivers, and commeth out betweene Cape Frio and Spirito Santio : the third is a faire River that lieth be-60 tweene the River of Plate and Saint Vincents. This Pareyna whereof we speake, is a faire great Bay, where shipping being neuer so great may enter, within this Bay vpon a hill, you shall fee a faire Citie, and on the Sea fide standeth two small Forts. You may anker neere the shoare, as the entrie of this Bay, you shall be three hils of red earth on either side of the harbour, which the Portugals call Bareras Mermethies.

Kkkkk 2

this River imall Caruels that fish, and carry Sugar from thence to Fernambuquo: likewife here is great store of Brasil, Pepper, Ginger, and Cotten, Cocos, Indian Nuts, here likewise inhabit Pe-

Etamariqua in the Indian language is a bed, it is a point of the land like a Cape: the point The differentier of the Sea, and vponit the Portugals have built a Towne, you may anker to e-Bed with very neere the shoare, both on the South-west and on the North-east side of the Towne, in seven I Man Elima and eight fadome water. All the Countrie till you come to Cape Augustin, is low land, and to faile from thence to Fernambuquo is no danger, but the clifts which lye along the coaft, as farre as the River Saint Francis, which are alwayes feene, the Seas when there are any Spring tides. doe overflow the land behinde : moreover if any winde blow from the Ealt, it beateth the Sea into hils of the Clifts, that it maketha great noise. Wherefore the Indians call it the Land of the Bell. Here are reasonable store of Sugars, and great store of Coco Nuts.

On the North fide of Fernambuque, you shall fee white Downes, and when you are past all the Downes on the South, you are by Capignramiring, which is a place where alwaies you shall fes Filter-men in small Boates or langades; and from thence to Fernambuquo, are fine or fix miles, 20 and to it you be under 8. degrees, you shall fee a flat land even and bare, called Capituya; then you must take heede you runne not Southward, for then you runne vpon a point of the land, called by the Portugals Punto de Olynda, which is four leagues from the Cape, and stretcheth into the Sea as farre as Cape Augustin. As soone as you have doubled this point, you must take heede you put not in with the Towne of Olynda, which you shall see; for if you doe, you will runne voon the Sands, called by the Portugals Baybos de S. Antonio, which lye at least foure or fine miles into the Sea, being neere the shoare, you shall fee the Shippes that lye at anker ouer the Clifts, called by the Portugals Arecias: this place is a league from Fernambaquo, being the harbour where all the Shipping that goes from Fernambaquo doe arrives from this place to the Cape you shall see the Clifts as if it were a wall made by Bricklayers, no higher in one place then in another, but all 30 euen. The Towne of Fernambuquo is scituated vpon a hill, and very strongly entrenched round about, on the Sea side every twelve score, standetha small Fort or defence for Soldiers, with foure cast Peeces, and so they scowre all the shoare from the Arecias, where the Shippes lye to the point of Olynda, which is the farthest part of the Towne Northwards, from the Areciae where the Ships Ive commeth a River through the land, a Harquebusse shot from the Sea coast. and runneth right behinde the Towne from the South to the Weft and Eaft, which maketh the Towne almost an Iland, all but a little part of the North side.

The Cape of Saint Augustin is a Point of land that runneth into the Sea two or three miles: from the Sea you shall see three hils, called by the Petiwares, Aquare Wason Remitum, they will feeme vnto you like the backe of a Camell, and now you may early know it, for you may fee 40 a Church that the Portugals have built; and halfe a league towards the South, you shall see the Iland of Saint Alexxo.

The lland of Saint Alexo is long and narrow : it lieth within a league of the shore, and IL of S. Algxo. ftretcheth North-east and South-west, you may anker betweene the shoare and it all weathers, for the Iland hath very faire Baies, where you may lye in ten or twelue fadome water. Vpon this Hand you may take wood or fresh water.

Parta Deceler.

Porto Docalno lyeth Southward of the Iland of Saint Alexo, it is a flat land, you neede not feare the comming in by the rockes, for hard by them you shall have foureteene fathome weater. Here you shall have great store of Cattell, and Sugars. This Countries plaine low land, and all planted with Sugar Canes: you shall know this harbor very easily from the Southerne point of 50 the Iland Saint Alexo, for when it ebbeth, you shall see a faire Bay, and all the shore bare almost to the Cape, being blacke ground.

River of flones Eight leagues Southward from the Porto de calno, is the River of flones. Southward of it vou shall fee three great red Hills, which stand over the River of Camarysuna, which is a league from this River, you shall see from Sea a great Bay run within the Land, and before the mouth of it many great Rocks, to come to this Bay you must come close to the shoare on the South-west side, and after you bee in the Bay keepe full West, and it will bring you to a River that runneth into the Land at the least twentie leagues. In the mouth of this River dwell fixe or feven Portugals, that keepe Cattell for John Pays, but they are of no strength. Here you may take water at pleathe kerpe Catter in 100 foods, that fland in the mouth of the Riuer, you may take water at plea-fure, and alwayes in those houles, that fland in the mouth of the Riuer, you fall have good flore of Caffaur meale. If you be of any ftrength, that you dare goe ten or twelue miles vp the Riuer of you shill take good store of Sugars, for there standeth three or foure Sugar mills onely, an other on the Ruer fide; likewise here is good store of Brasill, and Pepper, Cotton, and many other merchandite.

CHAP.7. S.S. Rivers, of Stones, S. Antonio, Crocediles, S. Michael. Alaqua. 1220

Camarriung (at I have faid) lyeth a league Southward from the River of flones , to know it Camarriuna wou shall see three Hills of red ground, called by the Portugal's, Barees Vernellies, this place is not inhabited: the mouth of this place is narrow, and hath not aboue fine foot water, but you may anchor in the Bay hard by the River , and fend your Boat fafely for frelh water without danger. or to filh with your Net, for there is great ftore of fresh fish of all kindes.

The River of Saint Antonio lyeth leven leagues from Camarinna, it is a faire great River , ly- The River of eth fome fiftie leagues within the Land, hath foure fathom water at the comming in . but is fo Saint Antonie. narrow that no ship can come in. It is a very good place for you if you stand in neede (having falt) to make your promision, for there you shall have great store of all kinde of fish, especially of Sale

10 a kinde of fift, called by the Indiant, Varans, which is as bigge as an Oxe. After you are within Fift Varans, this River, you shall have high land on both fides, and you must be carefull and keep good watch. for vo this River dwellerli's kinde of people, called Caraya, there people if they fee you vnprouided will fight with you, but if they fee you able to defend your felues, then will they bring fuch things as they have to traffick.

The Harbour of French-men, called by the Indians, America pialane, lyeth two leavnes South A place called ward from the River of Saint Autonio. It is a small Bay, that may be knowne by a high Hill that the Harbour of flandethouer it, which is all full of Brafill trees. To enter into this Harbour, you must marke Frenchmen. the Cliffes . and when you are to the North of them all but one , you may fafely come within a ftones caft to the shoare. When you have landed if you want fresh water, you must feeke on the

20 South fide of the Hill, and you shall finde a streame that runneth out of the Hill into a great Cifterne of stone, which is made out of a Rocke, you cannot mife of this place if you feeke for it.

for all the way you shall see small Rocks, and mens names written in them.

This River in our language is called the River of Crocodiles, for in it there are many, which the Rivercalled Indians call faquares; it is narrow, and in the mouth of it flandeth a white Rocke. To enter it laquareafiche. you must take heed you keepe on the North side of this Rocke, and you shall finde nine and ten toot water ; after you be within it you shall come to a great Bay, and on the North-east side you shall finde a small River, where you may take fresh water, but let every man take heed how hee leaneth into the water, for the Crocodiles lie by the banke-fide hidden, and if any thing fall into the water presently they kill it. Here is nothing to bee had valeffe you will fish for the Croco-30 diles, and take the Bladders or Cods of muske from them ; here you need not feare any Inhabitants, except you be efpyed by fome paffengers that goe to Fernambnane.

Alagua is a very faire River, that lyeth foure leagues Northward from the River of Saint Alagua Michael and three leagues Southward from the afore [aid River of Crocodiles. On either fide of it vou shall fee a great Hill, called by the Portugals, Os Campes. You shall finde but seuen or eight foot water at the comming, and very cleere from any Rocks, but after you bee within, you shall finde many bankes of fand, where you shall kill good store of fish, and alwayes you shall bee fure to have Caruells fishing in this place, at the comming in on both fides you may take

Before the River of Saint Mishael you shall fee the Cliffes like Arecines of Fernambuque; you River of Sains must enter at the end of the Cliffe, hard by the shoare on the South-west: and you must marke a Michael. small Cliffe that lyeth betweene the mouth of the River and the shoare, this Cliffe you leave betweene you and the shoare, and betwixt this Cliffe and the great Rocks you may enter it : three fathom water. But take heed when you enter, that you faile not towards the North-east, although you fee the Bay great, for you shall run voon many great banket of fand, therefore you must keepe West still within a stones cast of the shoare, so shall you be fure to keepe in the Channell. Thus you must faile till you discouer a house, that you shall see doubling a Point sull South from you, then your best is to anchor, for if you goe farther, you are in danger except you know the Channell very well. In this place dwels a Portugall, called John de Rocho: and vp a River that you shall see runne into the Land dwell many Portugals, where they have a Church with

50 Friars to say Masse. Here you shall have good store of Cattell if you need, and Brasill wood, Caffaui meale; and in this River you shall have good store of Oisters, and in them you shall find manv great Pearles : likewise here is good store of Balsom oile, and trees of All Nesteo, which is a very precious and rich wood, fingular good for bruifes, or old hurts : also here is good store of Tabacco. This place is eight leagues from the River of Toades, where we were driven on the Rocks. because we knew not where wee were, for it is a singular good Harbour to enter, if a man know the comming in betweene the Rocks, called, Os Bayos de Don Rodrigo.

Because the Indians indeed doe kill many Toades, therefore they call it Cornoen, that is to The Harbour. fay, the Riner, or water of Toades, I tell you the name in the Indian language. Because in all placeled The Rices you shall haue of them, and so you may know when they tell you where you are. When you wer of loades. are in ten degrees and an halfe Southwards of the Equinoctiall Line, you shall see fine hils and the shree that standeth on the North side of this place whereof wee speake are round and high,

the other two that fland on the South, not farre in diffance one from another, are long and lower then theother, if you come neere the shoare, you shall see a great many of small Rockes, and a great Bay which is the place I speake of, right before this Bay you shall see two great Rockes, to

Kkkkk 2

Cama.

Same of

Priore.

Waratina lieth three leagues from the River of lannery, you may know it by two Hands that

goe, into this Harbour, you must palle betweene these Rockes which are called Bayos de don Rodring when you are entred you may anchor hard by the Rockes, and found the Channell , which will lyc North-eatt from you. Here you may have fresh water vo the River, but it will be hard for you to find, therefore your best is to goe a quarter of a mile by the Sea side, and you shall see a fare River, where you may take water at pleasure, and kill good fore of fish. At this place comming from the Rulet of levere, in the night we were driven upon the Rockes for want of 2 Pilot that knew the Coaff.

I doe not fet downe the places betweene this and the Cape Frie, because I know them not but By report of other Traugliers, and therefore I leave it to them, for I will write no more but what I have feene, and am able to proue when time shall ferge, and thus I end shewing you all that I to have feene on the Coalt Northward of Cape Frie, which is in our Language Cape Cold,

Cape Frio is a point of the Land thaprunneth into the Sea at leafit welue mile, it lyeth under 22. degrees. At this Cape you may have fight of a great Mountaine, that you may fee ouer it 22 egytees, at one App you may use 1911 on the East-fide of this Cape in A furbour called About formers, here you may anchor on the East-fide of this Cape in A furbour called About formers. Here you may have great flore of Braffel 1900, and in this Ray you final find of the times good flore of Aribbe; greece; and on the Nayti fide of this Bay you final. fee a great River called vparafon, where you may kill good flore of many kinde of fifthes. and in the mouth of this River you shall have great store of Corall, if you will dragge for it.

Saguarema is a River, where the Frenchmen did traffique with the Canibals called Tamores : it Howeth foure leagues Southward from the Cape, This River is narrow at the comming in, you 20 finall find twelve foote water, till you be three or foure leagues up the River. You shall find tresh water on either fide of the River, and great store of Braffell-wood, all along the Riverfide. On the South fide of this River you shall fee a great hill which the Indians call Boypena, that is. The rotten Whale, for you shall see the top of it like a dead Whale. If you want refreshing, you may have good thore of Potato Roots there, Plantons, Lemons, Orenges, and many other good Roots as bigge as great Turnips, which the Indians call Caranajon.

Etioca is a league Southward of the River of Saquarema, It is (as I have faid in the description on of my travell) a great and huge Rocke, hollow within, where the Indians fay that the feruant of God did preach who them, which they call Topania ppra, before the mouth of this Rocke to-wardes the Sea standard another stat Rocke, that reacheth somewhat into the Sea; upon it 30 you shall see the prints of barefeet, here if you fish with Lines, you may quickly lad your shippe. A little behind this stone bodse, you shall see a fine River of water, where you shall finde many pretie greene stones that Indians doe vie to weare in their lips. You may anchor within a Musket shot of the shore, but it is verie dangerous if the wind be in the East.

Pirateninga is five leagues to the Southward of Elioca, right before it flandeth a small Hand.it is inhabited by the Partie, It, It is a Bay that ninneth betweene two Mountaines mile and Mountaines mile and Mountaines more within the Land. There I have feene a Mermaid and many other strange fishes. You may by the Author. lie with your shipping at the Hand, and fend your Boates ashore, where you shall find great store of Cattle; and you may take good hore of all kind of fishes it you will, either with Hook or Net. Here you may have Oranges, Lemmons, and Caffaui Meale, and all other fuch things that the 46 Countrey yeeldeth, but you must be alwaies fure to keepe good watch, for feare of the Portneals of the River of Innuary, which are hard by you.

The River of lanuary lieth three leagues from Pirateninga, it is a great Arme of the Sea, that Internation of the Land at the least fourteene miles; on the mouth of this place, fland foure Ilands, and now the belt marke that it hath to be knowne, is a Fort that standeth on the North fide of the comming in of the Harbour, vpon a Rock. On the South fide flandeth a Hill that reacheth into the Sea, which the Portugali call Camo, that is, The top of a flip, for it feemeth like the maine top-faile of a ship from Sea. Hard by the Sea side on the foote of this Hill on the North fide of the Hill as you faile into the Harbour; standeth a Rocke of great height made like a Sugarloafe, and is called by the Portugals the Sugar-loafe. In the midft of the going in, in the mouth 50 of this River lieth a Rocke plainly to bee feene, to goe in you must keepe betweene the Rocke and the Fort, that flandeth on the North fide of you. When you are entred the mouth of the River and are past the Fort, you shall see an Iland lie right before you, and even with a Church called Santa Lucia, this lland is called the lland of Brigalion. You must be sure to passe on the North fide of this lland, and affoone as you have paffed it, you shall see all the Citie both on the Hill, and on the Sea fide. Then you must take heed that you goe not right to the Towne, for you shall run voon certaine shelues of sand, that lie right before the Towne all along to a small Handcalled the Iland of Saint Bent, this Iland lieth a quarter of a mile from the Iland of Bragation, and Eastward of this Hand of Saint Bent, standeth a great Rocke, you may faile betweene the Rocke and the lland, and affoone as you have entred, betweene them you may anchor hard by the lland, and 60 then you shall see a Church standing upon a Hill which is called Saint Bent, then you need not feare to goe right before the Towne, within a Caleeuer shot of the shore from the Towne, you shal fee on the North-east shore a towne of Canibali, called Saint Lorenzo, which is in peace with the Portugals, and within the Bay you shall finde many Ruers and Sugar-mils, where there is great profit to be made.

lie right before the mouth of the aforelaid River. At the mouth of the River like wife standeth a The River cells high Hill, and on either fide both on the South-well and North-east is low Land, in this place to the you cannot enter with any thip, but you may anchor betweene the Hands, and lend your Boate athere. If you goe vp, you shall find good store of Potatoe Roots, Plantons, great store of Oranges and Lemmons, and many other kind of faints, which are very good to releeve ficke men. If you will hih with your Net, heere you hail kill all kinde of good hihes, but alwayes bee fure to krepe good watch, for the Portugals are very neere you.

From the River of Waratime for the space of fourestagues is all sandy low Land; you shall see Commine to to a high Hill which the Indians call Marambayapham, that is in our Language, the end of Warre; lands called right ouer against this point you shall see a great Hand at the comming in of this Harbour , you by the the need not feare, for hard by the fhore, you shall haun twentiefathome water. When you are in the Hand to mouth of this Harbour right before, you hall fee a white Rocke, which will liefull West from you : you must leaue the Iland Southward from you, then shall you descrie another great Iland galled Epegra; at a point of this Iland that lieth full West, towards the firme Land, you shall see . two small Hands, and when you are right against those two Hands you shall see a faire Bay, where: you may anchor at pleature to come into this Bay, you must enter between those two Hands that Lizue Ipoken of. I doe describe this Harbour vnto you aboue many good Harbours that you hav find, because you may depart from hence with any wind, for the mouth of Marambara heth South-eath from you, when you are in this Harbour, then you have another going out that lieth North-east from you, from this Port where you half anchor called Epeara. If you want victuals:

fer your ships, you may take your Boat or your Pinnasse, and goe out betweene the two Ilands that you entred, and when you are betweene those Hands you shall see a flat broad Hand, which will live flit South-west from you; this Iland the Indians called Sapennera; that is, the morning. and this is the Hand that I was driven vpon, when I runne away to Mafter Hanking, as I have told you in the discourte of my troubles , you must come with your Boat to this Hand, and 'your must be sure to passe betweene the West shore and the Hand; and assoone as you have passed the point of this lland, you shall fee three Hils of red Earth one hard by another. You must leane one of them West from you, then may you land your men at pleature, when you have landed, you 30 mult goe through a little Coppe, for the specie of a Harquebuse shor, then shall you come into a faire Lawne, where you shall find great store of Cattle, and a house or two that standeth vyon a Hill where you shall have alwayes good store of Coffee meale, if you will have Rootes and Plantons vpon the Iland where you anchor there are good flore, but there is an Iland called the Long Iland, where you shall have of all these things in abundance. To know this Hand, tow with vour Boate to the lland of Eperya that lieth full South from your fhip, and then you fhall fee a goalit

long Hand hard by the firme Land, which is this whereof wee speake, and because you shall bee fure not to miffe it, be attentiue. When you come neere the thore, beholding a Rocke that lieth a quarter of a mile from the shore, voon which Rocke standeth a Crosse, this is the place where a Portugali called Manuel Antones dwelleth, but now there is no bodie, but a kinde of Cambals 40 that come and goe, therefore be fure alwaies in those parts to keepe good watch and be carefull; if you can speake their language you may have many things. From this Hand Southwards you shall see two small slands halfe a league from you, these Blands are called Amount of the lands. against them lieth a faire River, where you shall have alwaies great store of fish, and by the River, fide you shall see the Mandioca plainly, and many other Roots very good to refresh your companie. Southward from this place some two leagues you shall see a faire Bay called Paratery there dwelleth a kind of Cambals called Vannaffes, of them you may buy skins of divers wilde beafts, and iometimes they have good flore of Amber, which they call Pira ponia ergain.

may anchor betweene it and the shore. After you have entred at the North point of this Iland, Schoffien. 50 you shall see a great white Rocke, right ouer against this Rocke, you shall see a point of the firme Land runne into the Sea, and right before this point lie three Rockes, where commonly you shall tee Indians shooting fishes with their Bowes and Arrowes, if you goe with your Boate to that point, you shall see a great Bay called by the Indians lequerequere. There likewife standeth a great Towne of Cambali, such as those that dwell at Great Iland, halfea league from Saint Sebastians standeth a small Hand right into the Sea, called by the Indians Vraritan, and by the Portugals Alquatraffes, hecre you shall finde great store of Seafoules and Seales, Alegators that live on the Land called by the Indians Fifewafon. Right ouer against the South point of the Iland of Saint Sebastian standeth a great white Rocke called by the Portugals Pas demilio, that is, the life of Ginnie Wheate; then shall you fee an Iland hard by

the shoare called by the Indians Borfonconga, that is, the Whales head, this Iland standeth in the mouth of Pertioqua, which is, the River that goeth to Saint Vincents, as you goe to this place after you have possed the lland, you thail see North-east from you certaine houses where there dwell a kind of Canibals called Caijoses, there you may have good store of Cattle, Orenges, Lemmons, and many kinds of Rhots and Fruits.

Saint Sebaftian lieth fome three leagues from Great Hand, It is a long and a faire Hand, you Thellandof

Hand of Bri-

tis of Saint

The descripti-

Right against this Towns of Cambals called Carthos, standeth the Towns of Saint Vincents called by the Indians Warapinmama; as you goe fatther up the River you shall fee a small Hand 2013 & Santis, Southward, where you shall see a Sugar-mill of the Captaines of Santos called Ieronimo Leton. where our Gentlemen were flaine, Farther vp the River, you shall see a Castle stand at the foore of the Hill; then you come to the Towne of Santos, which flandeth hard by the water fide. Right behind the Towne of Same, ftandeth a Hill wher Brafenbas had a house, from the top of this Hill did John Davies make a Place of the Countrey. Now the Portugals have found Mynes of filuer in this place.

The descripti-

The third Partena is a good Harbour for thips, and here are great store of Camibals and Caribbe on of the third which very lately are inleagued with the Portugals, you may buy of them great flore of Pep- 10 per and Ginger, very rich Fusres, and Cotton-wooll, and Waxe, this is the place that I came vnto after I had beene taken by the Tamojes within the Land. Here the Tamojes were taken by rangelius pato, and by the the Portugals, and I was given agains to be my Masters state, when 10000. of the Tamojes were Indian Profes. flaine, and 20000. of them parted among the Portugals for flaues. The mouth of the River of Plate is wide, and within it there are many Downes of fand . you

must bee sure to keepe very neere the North shoare, till you shall see a high Mountavne white at the top; then must you faile Southward at least foure leagues, and shall you see another small Hill on the Northside, you must faile right with it; then shall you come into a faire Bav. where you must be sure to keepe still along the shoare, and after you have passed the Westerne point of this Bay, you shall haue the River Mareer; then you need not feare any shallowes till you 26 come before the Towne of Bones Ayres. There the River runneth full Southward, and along the River fide from Bonos Ayres is a small Village built by the Spaniards of Lime and stone that they brought from Brafil, for all the Countrey is fandie : the Indians doe make their houses all couered with earth. Here are great store of wilde Horses and Cattle, sheepe and Goats, but for filuer and gold, there is none but that which commeth from Cordina and Potafin. Here likewife the Indians have great store of Wheate, twentie leagues within Land lyeth a Province called Tocoman, now it is a Bilhopricke, this Countrey is the division of Brafil, and all the Provinces of Nona Hilpania. Here the Indians have Wheate and Caffani, Apples, Peares, Nuts, and all other fruites of Spaine, likewise they have all the fruites of Brafil. But after you travell Southward of Note. Beafts of Brafil, this Countrey, you shall not find any thing that groweth in Brafil, nor any wild beafts, as Leo- 20 pards, or Capinaras, Lawasenings, Cat of Monataines, Aqueques, Privinas, Monataines, Lobyus, Survectous, Lawaseau, Boyena, Boyleninga, Boybenha. Brasili is full of all these wilde and dangerous beafts, and divers others; But the Provinces of Pers are cleere of them, except it bee fome Trauellby chance. From Tecomes to Saint Isgo is cightic leagues, and you shall trauell it as you doe Compassion by Seawith a Compasso, for the Country is all fand, and as thewing bloweth, so shall you have the Mountaynes of fand, to day on one fide of you, to morrow on the other, in this passage you shall passe through many Rivers, which to your thinking are not about a foote deepe, but if you have not good guides and great experience, your waggons and hories will quickly be cast away in them, and at an instant be couered with quicke fand. After you have passed this Countrey, you shall come to Saint lago, then till you come to Potofin, you shall travell 40 shrough great Mountaines and Valleyes, and all the way as you goe, you shall have great Townes of Indians, who are all in peace with the Spaniards, you shall have five hundred of these Indians by the way as you travell readie with Nets to carrie you, tyed one a Cane from Towne to Towne, for a fish-hooke or a few beads of glasse, or any such trifle; and there is no travelling in the World fo case as this, for you may lye, or sit, and play on a Gitterme all the way if you will, for so the Spaniards doe; you shall passely many Mynes of Gold and transque with the Indians for Gold, and divers kinds of precious Stones, but not in that plentie as you shall at Potalin, by real on that there the Mynes are open and wrought on, and those betweene Santiago and Potoffin are not. At Potoffin there is no want of any thing, although the Countrey of it felie bee very barren, but by reason of the great traffique that they have from Lyma, and all the Townes co of the South Sea; they have alwayes provision enough, for from those Townes, they bring Oyle and Wine in great larres of earth vpon great sheepe, which are called sheepe of flue quarters for their tailes have almost as much as a quarter. To tell the particulars of the Mynes, would beea new Storie, only this : they find the Oare like blacke Lead, then they grinde it in Ingines, then they wash it through fine Sieues in paued Cifternes that are made for the purpose; the Moores are all naked as long as they worke, because he shall not hide any precious stone. The Spaniards here are all very rich, and in truth as gallant fellowes as can be. The Francisco Friers carrie a great fway in this Countrey, by reason that they were the first that preached in this part of India.

CHAP. VIII.

Relations of Master THOMAS TVRNER who lived the best part of two yeeres in Brasill, &c. which I received of him in conference touching his Tranels.



N Saint Michael one of the Acores, they ascend up in a forenoones journey unto Saint Michaelt. a hill into a Chappell, wherein they need a fire in Summer for the cold : there being a little off three Springs, the one whereof catteth vp waters in a continual boyling with a terrible noise, and of great heate, the second of heate intolerable, which in short time scaldeth any living thing to death, the ground also hote to fland on : but the water calme. The third is warme, and a fit Bathe. In thefe Ilands in Caues bee found men buried before the Conquett, whole, &c. Brafilian Indians are Ca-

mbals, and not for revenge only, but for food also devoure mans flesh. The Portugals make not flues of them, nor can enioyne them worke, by reason of a commission to the contrarie obtai- lesuits Sauges ned by the lefuites: neither doe they winne of them ought but by faire meanes. They are most

excellent Archers, goe starke naked, the womens haire long and blacke, barsh as a Horse-taile, He Giante did fee vp the River of Plate, one twelve foot high, and report was of higher in that Country, Their Weapons are two mailie bowles at the two ends of a litring cast, &c. He saw also men there with the hinder parts of their heads, not round but flat, (and a little before this Relation, about Anno 1610, he faid that at London he had feene carried to the Court a thigh bone of a man a yard Flat heads, and halfe in length.)

Their beafts in Brafill are great Apes with beards and Mustachioes. Kine like vnto ours of both fexes, but living in the waters and reforting to land to feed. Having no Viders, nor horners long legs, harmelesse, lesse somewhat then ours, their flesh like beefe, but eaten in the name of fish. Strange Kine.

Tieres like Grey-hounds spotted like Ounces exceeding swift, the force of whose pawat a blow killeth his prey. Their beaft by some called Hay, which yet he faith, eateth leaves of trees and not Aire only : the louely prettie Segonia. The Serpent Cobrus: whereof he faw one al noft See before in 20 as bigge as himselfe, twentie foot long, killed by their Indian boy, of colour like an Adder. Of Oniedo. as bigg as himicile, twentie root long, suited by enter matter boy, or colour like an Adder. Of "oreas whom they report (and a Father gaue him inflance of the proof;) that watching his prey, that Stringe Series whatfoeuer commeth by, it winder about and getteth the taile into the fundament drawing. It his nomthe suts after it: and so preyeth on the same, denouring all, till that it be not able for sulvesse to ber may perflire, but rotteth as it lyeth, the flesh quite away, the head and bones remaining, in which haps feeme inthe life continuing recourreth at lait his former Hate. One was thus found in the rottennesse, credible and and being bound for proofe by the Portugals, with a withe tita Tree, at their returne was telethereport, fo found repaired. The beaft that baggeth vp her young ones, &c. (as in others Relations, heere which in fome therefore omitted.) one veere after

The Indian is a fish in the Sea, and a Foxe in the Woods, and without them a Christian is nei-form of the fisher turing 40 ther for pleasure or profit fit for life or liuing.

Out of Angola is faid to be eyeerely shipped eight and twentie thousand I flues and there but the genewas a Rebellion of flaues against their Masters, tenne thousand making a head and barraca- rai report is of doing themselves, but by the Portugals and Indians chased, and one or two thousand reduced. divers thou-One thousand belonged to one man, who is said to have tenne thousand slaves, Eighteene sands shipped One moutant of the Pairs, exiled out of Portugal, and heere profpering to this the Portugal

There are Apples called Ananas, pleasant in colour and exceedingly in taste, and holesome, gained the but eating Iron as Aqua fortis. Brafil is full of Mines, if the King would fuffer the digging them.

Negroes foolish and fpightfull wars vpon each others

thence yearly

CHAP. IX.

The taking of Saint Vincent and Puerto Bello, by Captaine VVI L-LIAM PARKER of Plimmouth, the fenenth of February 1601.



N the beginning of November 1601. I departed from Plymmouth with two ships, one Pionasse and two shallops in quarters toward the West Indies. My chiefe thip wheiein I went my felfe as Admirall was named the Prudence, of an hundred tuns, wherein I had an hundred and thirtie tall men, the fecond was the Pearle, a small ship of fixtie tunnes, wherein went as my Vice-admirall Master Robert Rawlin, accompanied with fixtie luftie fellowes, my Pinnasse of twentie tuns was manned with eighteenemen. In this Confort were Maller Edward Giles , and Philip Ward

Parts.

with disters

Gentlemen Captaines by Land, with Captaine Amone Fugars, Captaine Loriman, Captaine Apiler, and divers other Gentlemen of much towardlinetie and valour as they made good proofe in the fuccifie of this Voyage. In our palling by the Cape of Saint Vincent in Spaine, commonly called the South Cape, I was encountred with fuch a terrible Ternado or guit of winde that my Pinnaffes loft Pinnaffe with fifteene of our men, to our great griefe was vtterly cast away, wee being not able with the vetermost of our endrauours to saue about three of the rest. From thence I shaped my in a Ternado. course to the lles of Cape Verde, and immediately upon my arrivall there, I fet upon one of them Hes of Cape called Saint Vincent, with an hundred men, and tooke the Hand and the Towne thereof, which was a prettie place, the spoile whereof I gaue to my Souldiers, which after they had pillaged it, The He and

Towne or S. fet the jame on fre. Vizze z tigin. Hence we haled ouer to the Coast of Tierra firma, and arrived first at the lie of Margarita, and The Saichera comming to the Rancheria or fishing of Pearles in the small Hand of Cubagua, we found the Goin Cubayua, uernour of Cumana, there with a company of Souldiers : neuertheleffe we made bold to land, and in our landing we received a great fight wherein divers of our men on both fides were wounded; r. Francista:

k n and ranfo- but in the end I tooke the place with disers of the floutest of our Enemies Prisoners, and thirteene Periaguaes and Canoes, which are Barkes and Boats of the Countrey : for ranfome of all which I received five hundred pounds in Pearle. This done I proceeded on my journey, byling directly for Cape dela Vela, and there meeting with a Portugal shippe of two hundred and lifeie tuns laden with three hundred and feuentie Negros, brought from Congo or Angola, and going gres tuken. to Cantagena with little reliffance I rooke the fame. And fayling along with my prize Weff- 30 ward, not able to double the Hes, called Las Cabecas; I was driven farre downe to the Southward Lat Cabizat. into the Gulfe of Acle, in Spanish called Eusenada de Acle, where we landed all our Portugals and Negros, keeping only the Captaine which afterward paid the fine hundred pounds for his owne and their ran omes. Within a while after we flood Westward with our shippes, and went into the Hes called the Cabecas, where I embarked an hundred and fiftie of my men in two small Pin-They take fixe maffes and two fine shallops, and went for the Iles de Bastimentos, and landing there vpon the said or freen people Hands which are peopled and very fruitfull, I tooke fixe or feuen Negroes for guides, and to prefently with our Pinnaffes and Boates entred the mouthof the River of Porto bello, the feuenth of Ball mentes, Februarie about two of the clocke after midnight, the Moone thining very brightly. R. of Paerto

At our first entrance into the Hauen, which is about twelve fcore over, and very deepe at the 20 mouth and farte voward, we were halled by the throng and stately Castle of Saint Philip, having The great Ca. thirtie fine great pieces of Brazen Ordnance and fittie Souldiers in the fame, to know whence 81 of S. Phi- we were : wee having aboord vistuck as could focake Spinish excellent well, answered that we line, with 25. were of Cartagena: then they commanded with anchor, which we did accordingly. About one houre afterwards with my two shallops which lav close by my Pinnasses, and some thirtie of my bratle, and so. principallmen, I went up the Ruer having fomoof the fmaller Fort, called the Fort of Saint Tago, which is directly ouer against the great Caffle of Saint Philip, rimning still on the shoare, and crying out on me to flay; but neglecting their out-cryes, I landed at the first Towne called Triana, where the alarme was prefently given : which nevertheleffe I fet on fire, and marched o-The Towne uera little Brooke into the great rich Towne of Porto bello ; and comming directly vp to the 10 Kings Treature-house, which is very faire and large, we found a squadron of souldiers (whereof there are two hundred and fiftie alwayes belonging to the Towns and another company of the Inhabitants) with two braffe Pieces of field Ordnance well mounted on their carriages, which

At which alarme Captaine Antonie Fugars, and Captaine George Lawriman of Ratcliffe , came up with my two Pinnailes with an hundred and twentie men to my refeue, which was very hardly laid voto. At this house at our first comming into the Towne, my Lieutenant Samuel Banet was flot on the fide of his head, and through his eare, and Captaine Giles comming to fe-Pidro Melender cond him, was likewise shot over the brest and through his arme. In this meane space Pedro Me. lender the Gouernour of the Towne, had gathered fixtie Souldiers together, and was comming to toward a certaine bridge to encounter me, I having not then aboue eight or nine men with mee to withfland them; but God did profper our proceedings mightily. For the first two shot that went from vs, that Melendes through his Target, and went through both his armes: and the other fnot hut the Corporall of the field. Whereupon they all retired to the house, which they made and untill it was almost day. Against whom I sent Captaine Ward with some Souldiers, who entred the house, killing divers of them, and wounded Melendes in eight places more:

himfelfe being fhot through both his thighes in entring, and some of his men hurt : but in the Governour :a- end he tooke Melendes Prifoner, and became Master of the house. My felfe with others went to the Kings house, wherein were many of the Souldiers, who

we prefently poffeffed, and fiercely fet upon the Souldiers.

would not come to any composition, but stoutly defended the same against Captaine Giles and 60 our Lieutenant Samuel Barnet : who in the end flue divers of them and hurt many others, taking the Kings Scrings o prifoner. This fight endured for the space of sourcer five houres. The fight being ended, and we being Matters of the Kings Treasure-house and all the Towne, and haming the Governour Melendes, and the Scrimeno with many others of the chiefelt my Prifoners,

except the Alcalde which fled out of the Towns with a chaine of Gold about his necke, Such Treasure as was found in the Kings house to the value of some nine or ten thousand Dickets. I referred to my felfe, which was nothing to that which wee did expect (that being the receite an one time of the yeere of all the Treasure that commeth from Pers and Chile, amounting at half to fine or fixe Millions of Duckets) and had I come but feuen dayes fooner . I had taken heere an hundred and twentie thousand Duckets which were newly laden in two Frigats for Cartagena. The rest of the spoile of the Towne, which came to no small value in Money, Plate, and Merchandize, I gaue wholy to my Souldiers : which being done, I disposed my Corpses du quard in diners places, for keeping the Towne all that day : and at the end of the streete leading toward TO Panama on the South Sea, being full of all Artificers, we made a barricado where Captaine Giles flood with another Corps du guard being divers times affaulted by the enemy! whom still hee valiantly repulsed and put to the worse.

Pedro Melendes the chiefe Gouernour of the Towne being my Prisoner, in regard that he had Braue for it & valiantly carried himselfe in making refiltance vatill he had tenne or cleuen wounds upon him, I liberall minde did not only at length difmiffe without any peny for his ransome, but also caused my Chirurgion of Captaino very carefully to dreffe and trimme his wounds : vfing him and his, farre otherwife, then Pedro Parter. Melendes his great Vncle vied John Ribault, Landoniere, and the French Nation in Florida, whom they most cruelly murdered and massacred as many as they could lay any hands you.

Thus being Mafter for one whole day of the stately and new builded Towne of Porto bello Porto bello de-

20 which had two goodly Churches in it fully finished, and fixe or seuen faire threets, whereof two were full of all necessarie Artificers, and of Merchants, with three small Forts on the Townes Heat timesh fides, besides the great Fort of Saint Philip on the other, when I might have speedily have con-from ting fumed it all with fire, I willingly abstained from the same : knowing that though I could have the T wine of done the King of Spaine exceeding great hurt, and have vindone a number of the Inhabitants, vet Periobello on the good that I should have done my felfe, and mine thereby should have beene very small in fire, comparition of their damage. Only certaine out houses wherein their Negros dwelt , I caused to be burned to amaze and put them in feare: I also tooke two Frigats of theirs which roade far Two Frigats vp within the River, the one of them having in her three pieces of Ordnance, the which I like- taken and wife tooke and brought away from thence with mee, with the which Ordnance we beate you brought away; 20 the enemy marching vnto vs from the Wester Fort.

The day being fpent, at the beginning of the night I embarked my men , enriched with the Their deparchiefe spoile of the Towne, and fet saile to depart with my owne two Pinnasses and two shallops ture. and the forefail two Spanish Frigats which I had wonne: but in going out I was shot in at the elbow, and out at the wrift with a Musket shot which came from the Wester shoare, whereof there were many shot ouer vs: besides eight and twentie great shot from the chiefe and Easter Fort, which did endanger vs often. But God fo wrought for vs, that we fafely got forth agains contrarie to all our enemies expectation, who made full account to finke vs in going forth. Being fafely come forth wee rode with our Pinnaffes, and shallops behind a small lland which lay betwixt vs and the Wester most Fort of Saint Iago, vntill my Vice-admirall Captaine Rawlins 40 brought two ships thither, which rode somewhat to the Eastward of the Castile of Saint Phi- Sir Fr. Drated lip, under the Rocke where Sir Francis Drake his Coffin was throwne over-boord, all the while buriall.

that we were busied in gaining, lacking, and possessing the Towne. Our whole sleet beeing assembled together in the place aforefaid , I fet the Kings Sermane , and the rest of my prisoners on fhore, suffering them to depart without paying any kind of ransome. And the next day being the ninth of February, I fet faile and stood off to Sea, leaving the goodly Hauen and beautiful Towne of Porto bello, which standeth in ten degrees of Northerly latitude : and directed my course backe againe toward Cartagena, and about twelucleaguesto

the Eastward thereof, I came into a good Bay called Sambe, where I watered and staied some twelue or thirteene daies, and riding there tooke certaine Frigats which were bound for Cartage-50 na. Whereupon the Gouernour Don Pedro de Coronna, armed out two Gallies and a Brigandine, Sambe, with some two or three Frigats, with a purpose to affault vs; but beeing better aduited they would neuer come neere vs. When he heard that I had taken Porto bello, one of the chiefest places of the West Indies, with so small forces, he pulled his beard, and sware that he would give his Mules la le of filuer, but to haue a fight of mee and my companie. From this Bay of Sambo wee Virtus in hoffs stood over for the Hand of Jamaica, and so doubled the Cape of Saint Antonio, beeing the most landanda, Westerly part of Cuba, and disimboked through the Gulfe of Bahama, the last of March 1602and came with good weather to the Iles of the Acores, where victualling my Vice-admirall and two Pinnasses out of mine owne ship for two moneths, and leaving them at Sea to take some farther purchase, with mine owne ship I tooke my course for "limmouth, and arrived there in safette

60 the fixt of May 1602.

Porte belle.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Certaine Notes of a Voyage made by mee DAVID MIDDLETON into the West Indies with Captaine MICHAEL GFARF. An. Dom. 1601.

Beinara.

Arnoa.

Braches.

Cape Caldera.

Seuen men



He fine and twentieth day of May, weelet faile from the Loward, and the tenth day of June we fell with the Grand Canarie : the Towne standeth on the Northeast point of the lland, and the Road is one league to the Northward of it. 10 That night we flood of South South-west. And the five and twentieth day of Iune we were in the latitude of twentie two degrees thirtie minutes.

The fixe and twentieth day of June wee came in companie of feuen faile of Punts delarge. Hollanders, that were bound for the West Indies, to Punta delaraga to lode Salt, and the seven

and twentieth day we loft fight of them. The second day of Julie we fell with Saint Pincent. When you came from Saint Vincent to the S. Vincents. Teftogos, you must make the way South-west by West, or else you shall not fetch it, for the Current lets North and by West from them.

Being to leeward from Caracus, two leagues we flood ouer North North-weff, the wind being at East North cast, we fell twelve leagues to the Eastward of Boinara, being the twelfth of Inlie. If you fland our from Bomara to Organia, minded to goe to the South ward of the Hand. you must stand South and by West, or elfe you cannot get about, because there is a Current that

iers North-weit, and may let you voon the Hand. The three and twentieth day of Julie wee anchored to the Westward of Qurasao, and there the Land lies North and South.

The nine and twentieth of Julie we landed upon Araba, for to get fresh water, and there we had feuen men flaine by the Indians of the Hand : and we rid with our flip in flue fathomes water, halfe a mile from the shoare. One point of the Land bare North, the other South-east and by South, and there is an high Hill in the mid-le of the Hand, and that bare Eaft and by South. Betwixt Coque and the Maine the courle is East and West.

The shoale of Puntal lieth two leagues off: the best of the Channell betwixt that Point, and Coase is in eight, nine and ten fathomes. From Bracheo to the Parretaes is fine leagues course Weft and by South.

From the Parretaes to Cape Caldera is twentie fine leagues course North-west and by West. and betwirt the Parretaes and the Maine, you shall have foure, five, fix and seven fathoms water.

The Road of Morecapana lieth betwixt the Maine and Boracheo, within the Ilands. The eight day of August we set faile from Araba, and we stood over South for the Maine, the wind being at East and by South, wee fell with Mecola, being nine leagues from Aruba. Saint

Ann is an high Hill voon the Maine neere vnto Mecola. The feuen and twentieth day of August we came to anchor at Portete, that is to the Eastward 40 of Cape La nela, foure leagues. The Cape bare West a little to the Southwards, at the going to Portete. And on your Larboard fide going into Portete, there is a round Hill : being in the offing it sheweth verie blacke. The going into this Harbour is verie narrow, but within it is a verie broad Sound, and two thousand taile of thips may ride there in verie good ground, and you may ride from five fathomes to twentie, but wee ridde in three, a little within the point, on our Lar-

boord fide going in. The eighteenth of lanuary wee parted from our Man of Warre at Cape Saint Anthony, and Cape S. da fet faile for England, in a Prize, a thip of fome one hundred and fortie tunnes, laden with Campeche Wood and Hides, the Master of the Prize, was William Goobreath: and from Cape Saint Anthony we flood off North-west and by North.

The nine and twentieth day at noone, we had fight of the Westermost Land of the Organes, being East South-east from vs, and then we stood North-east, and the twentieth day we were in latitude 23. degrees 15. minutes, the winde being at East North-east, we stood off North . and from the twentieth day to the one and twentieth day wee made our way West and by North, and this day we were in latitude 22, degrees 20, minutes, then we flood to the Enthward.

The two and twentieth day, we were North-well and by North, from the Crowne in Cuba, fourteene leagues, then we flood to the North-ward; thefe fourteene leagues we surned up and downe with the winde Easterly. The three and twentieth day, wee were in la itude of 24. degrees no minutes, the wind being at East North-east, and we lay North with the stemme, and this night we came in twelve fathomes, being then in latitude of 24. degrees 25. minutes, the 60 winde being at East and by South we stood to the Southward. The fine and twent eth day, wee fell with Cobey twelue leagues to the Eastward of the Hanana, and this day about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, we had the Pam of the Matanças South-east, and by South from vs fome fixe leagues, the winde being at East, and we stood North North-east three Watches, and

brought the Pan vpon the Matanzas South of vs : the winde being at East North-raft, we stood to the Northward, for fo we made the thips way. The feuen and twentieth day at foure of the clocke in the afternoone, wee fell with the South-east part of the Martyrs: then wee flood off Mariyrs. South-east and by South three watches with a low faile, and so cast about, and stood North-east and by North three watches, and then oblerued, and found the ship to bee in the latitude of 24. degrees and ce, minuts being then South-west and by South of the Cape of Florida about three Cape of Florida leagues: the winde being at South-east and by East, we stood off South and by West three wat- da. ches, and then cast about, and stood North-east two watches, and then observed, and found the thip to be in 25, degrees 36, minutes being the nine and twentieth day of Ianuarie, 1502, and to then two watches North and by East, and foure North North-east; and the thirtieth day at noone wee had the Cape Canaueral West and by North from vs fixe and twentie leagues : by Supposition being now in latitude 28. degrees 14. minutes, the winde being at South, wee flood North-east and by East into the Sea. The eighteenth day of March at noone (being Thursday) weefell with Silley, and wee were South from it three leagues or ten miles, the Silley. winde being at West South- west, wee stood for the Lizzard, and the twentieth day of this moneth we came to winde being at anchor in Dartmonth , this was my first voyage which I have to the West Indies.

CHAP. XI.

The description of the 1le of Trinidad, the rich Countrie of Guiana, and the mightie River of Orenoco, written by FRANCIS SPARREY left there by Sir WALTER RALEIGH, 1595. and in the end taken by the Spaniards and fent prisoner into Spaine, and after long captivitie got into England by great fute. 1 6 0 2.

The description of the lie of Trinidad.

Orta la Spaniale lyeth North-east. The Spaniards name themselues Conquerabians. Anaparima is the name of the River, which goeth to Corona the Spanish Towne. The North part is very mountainous. The Indians of Trinidad have foure names. 1. Those of Parice are called laiss. 2. Those of Punts, Carao Aruacas. 2. Those of Curiadan are called Saluages. 4. Those betweene Punta Carae, and Punta de la Galera, Nepoios. But those which are servants to the Spaniards, name them-

selves Carinapagetes. The chiefest of the Indians, I meane the Kings and Lords of the Hands in times pait, named themselves Acaremanas, but now Captaines,

The description of Guiana, and of the oreat River Orenoco.

Wiana beareth directly East from Peru, and lyeth almost under the Equinociall Line. The The River of Tentrance to the River Orenoco through the River Capari at the mouth at a full Sea hath nine Capari foot water, and at the ebbe but fine foot, The water floweth but a small time, but increafeth much; and the ebbe goeth but flowly; for it continueth fixe houres. In the bottome of the Gulfe of Guanipa there is the River of Amana, which leadeth into Orenece alfo. In this The Gulfe of River, which wee named the River of the Red Croffe, wee tooke an eld Timitiman for our Pilot Gutnipa to Orenoce.

The River of Orenoco or Barequan hath nine mouthes, which lygon the North-fide of the Amana. mayne land : but I could heare but of feuen mouthes upon the South-fide. So that betweene Ilands and broken Lands it hath some fixteene mouthes in all. The Hands are somewhat bigge, so as I can hardly ghesse how many leagues it is from the North-side to the South-side, At the entrance of this River are two great Lords Tiusinans, which hold warre one with the other con- Tindinans tinually : The one Nation are called the Tiuitinans of Pallamos , and the other of Hororotomaca. He that entreth the River of Amana from Curiapan, cannot possibly returns the same way hee came, by reason of the Easterly windes and the great Currents, but must of force goe in a River within the Land, which is called Macuro.

To goe from the He of Trinidad to the great River Orenoco the River of Amana beareth Macurial 60 South : But parting from that River by a branch which beareth to the West we entred Orenoce. Togatimate a Toparimaca is the chiefe Gouernour vinder Topiawars, of the entrance of the Eastermost part of Armacan, the River Orenoco. The Towne of this Governour is called Armacan. Thele are friends to the carapana lyeth Carapanans, Timitimans, and all Nations, the Caribes excepted. Carapana byeth in the Province in the Proof Emeria : and the Eastermost part of Dorade is called Emeria. A [4. 712.

nince of Ene.

Cabej.

Organes.

Cuba,

Affrona Hand. twini lland. arrarostans. Furnica River. Ocamit . Hand. Morequite. Arromaia. Patanaima Iland Out a a

The Playnes o' Samis. Cumana. droami Pande Ato Iland. Maneribane. 4 emaia.

Th River Caroli. Cafripagotos. Mar. rauita. e a assa Hand-Pouremi. Great Fall, Carrei Store of gold among the E. parenians. Calibratores.

E ... 0 05. Arawa otos. Store of gold beyond the Mountaines of CHTAI. Store of gold. Riger Arui. River Cafsipa. River Atoica. River Carra. River Calmero. Amapaia. ri. Limo Paso. Catari, Voari, Capuri. The Prouince of Amapaia.

Bad water. Guicar GMX47. Pasemens The land of The Iland A. River Vbra. Eregoodawe, Oremona. Tapiamary.

River Sabna.

Papemena a great River.

Athul, a moft fant Lland

Assana is the first Hand in Orenoco: it is but small. The second Hand is called Iwana, There is another entrance into Orenoce, which I discovered not : but the Indians name it Arrarograma Europa is a River which commeth into Orenece; but the head of it I know not. In the middeft of Orenoco there is a pretie bigge Iland, which is somewhat mountainous; and the name of it is Ocawita. One Putima commandeth vnder Topiawari, in the Confines of Morrequito, which lyeth in the Prouince of Arromaia. The lland of Parapaina is farrevp within the River of Orenoco, and ftandeth right against the high Mountaine, called Occope. Ouer this Mountaine lye the Playnes of Samie. Through these Playnes you may goe to Cumana, or to the Caracae: which are at least one bundred and twentie leagues inft North. In these Playnes are four: Nations, which are held tor great men. The Samias, the Affamais, the Wester, and the Arroras, 10 Thele Nations are fomething blacke.

On the left fide of this Ruer Orenoco are two small Hands, a small distance the one from the other. The one is called Arouni, the other Aio. In the morning before the Sunne bee high the winde is still Easterly in this place. Manoripano lyeth in the middle of Orenoco. Aromaio is the name of Morrequite. Orenece reacheth to the Mountaines of Wacarimoc , which is to the East in the Prounce of Emeria, or Carapana. The Vallies are called Amariocapana, and the people by that name alfo. Vpon this River Orenoco there is a pleasant River for many kindes of victuals, which is calle : Carols, and the people Caffipagotos.

This Countrie of Morrequite lyeth in some five or fixe degrees to the North of the E. quinoctiall Line. At the Point of the River Caroli is the fmall lland called Catama. The 20 Inhabitants of this Iland Caiama are enemies to the Epuremi. Here is a very great fall of Land water. Canuri lyeth in the Prouince of Morrequite. The Gouernour is called

The Epuremians are richest in gold onely. These people called Epuremi have many enemies, but three especially which are very strong : which are these; the Cassing Days gotos, and Aramagotos. Hee that will passe the Mountaines of Curas shall finde store of gold: which is faire to the Weff.

The River Armi runneth continually North, and so to the River Cassing, and from thence into Orenoco: neere vnto the River Arm are two Rivers , the one is called Atoica , the other Caera: and also one branch which is called Carra. To the Westward of Caras is a fourth Ri- 30 uer, which is called Cafnero: it falleth into Ormoco on the fide of Amapaia.

The first River that falleth issto Orenoso from the North, is called Care. Beyond it on the fame fide is the River Lime : to the West of it is the River Page : and beyond that are the Riuers Caturi, and Voari; and another called Capuri, which is dangerous to enter. To the Westward of Capars in the Province of Amapaia, is most vile, vnwholfome, and bad water The Rivers Ca- to drinke; it is of a bad tawnie colour; it hath killed many a man, both Indiana and others. They fay this water commeth from Anches,

On the North part of Pern is a way to enter into Orenoce, as I have heard by the Indians. The first place whereby they are to paste, is called Gnicar: the second Goanar; and so to the River of Papemena; which is the River that runneth toward the Hand of the Amazones. Neere 40 vnto the Hand of the Amazones is the famous Hand of Athul.

The Ruer Ubra, bearing to the West of Carthagena, beareth to the Southward of the Iland of the Amazones. This River Vbra, if you ftand to the South-well, leadeth to a part of Aromay), which is called Eregoodane. This Countrie of Eregoodane is very Mountainous, and nothing fruitfull : it is inhabited by the Coman Ibes. They have Ginny wheat but no flore, and very little Cassaui : Venison, Hogs, and Conies they have in great abundance. The King or chiefe Gouernour of this Prouince or part of Aromayo, which is called Eregoodawe, is one which beareth great sway in those parts, whose name is Oromona. But all are chiefly commanded by Tapuaray King of Morrequito.

In mine undertaking the discouerie of the North part of Oreneco, I was aduertised by cer- 50 taine Indian Pilots, that I should finde a perfect and readie way to goe to Pern. In which my trauell, I fell, by reason of a great storme, into a River, which is called by the Indians Salma. This River is not great; in three dayes I passed through this River, and entred into the River of Papemena. This River of Papemena is more in my judgement then five or fixe Leagues

North North-west of this River is the Iland of the Amazones. But leaving that course, I came to the most sweete, pleasant, and temperate Iland which is called Athal. If I had had companie to my liking, I could have found in mine heart to have stayed there and spent my life. Athal is not rich in mettals ; but fome stones I found in the fresh-water Rivers : for there are great store of fresh-water Rivers; and no want neither of Fish, Tortoyles (which the Indians 60 name Catfepames) Foules, nor other good things. It hath Wood great ftore, Fruites all the yeere in abundance, many good places to make a Towne if you will, Cotton, and Ballamum, Brafill, Lignum vitz, Cypreffes, and many other sweete trees. The earth of this Iland doth promife to the eye to be good, it is very fad, and much like to Oare, which I found in divers pla-

CHAP.II. Curaa and Camalaha commodities. Orenoco, Europa, Habuc. 1240

ces. I cannot report of the goodnesse of the stones, because my knowledge in them is nothing. Athal is not inhabited by any. The lland is small, and for searce of the Caribes, there is no body.

I returned from this good Iland Athal toward the River of Orenoco, because I found my la- He returned bour was loft: For to finde the way to Peru that way was impossible. And to make my jour- from Aibul. nev the shorter. I returned by the River Papemena, but left the River of Salma cleane, and Papemena. came my directeft way to Orenoco: which mine Indian Pilots held to bee through the River of Lime : and fo I came into the River of Orenoco. Then I went from Orenoco, and held my course Lime. altowether Westerly : because I found the West most rich; although it was most dangerous to Ortnoce.

10 trauaile thither, I meane farre into the Countrie, by reafon of the Epuremi, which live continually in armes, and hold warresagainst many Nations, but against three Nations especiallv. Thefe are, as I wrote before, the Caffipagotos, the Eparigetos, and the Aramagotos. My defire was to goe to Curaa; and from Orenoco I first entred into the River of Cofnero, and to contro River. coasted to Amapaia, where is the bad tawnie water, which before I mentioned : from thence Amapaia, I went to the River Paoo; and within fixe weekes after I departed out of the River of Orenoco Paoo River. I came to the rich Countrie of Curaa.

The Countrie of Curaa is in the Province of Guiana, or Manoa, where are the mynes of tric of Curaa white stone; in which mynes is much naturall and fine gold, which the Indians call Callieury, and from Gre-The gold in this place, I lay in Manoa, or Guiana, runneth betweene the stones like veines; neco. 20 of which gold I had some store : but now the Spaniard is the better for it. In Carea is also gold Manas in small graines, which lye in the sands in the little Rivers or Brookes. I alwayes tooke those Gold in abungraines for the finest gold. In these Rivers where gold lyeth, are many Aligator or Crocodiles, dince. I heard by the Nation of the Timitinans, that a place called Tulahe, had many good things in it: found in Ribut I found it nothing fo. Some bad fresh-water pearles I found there : which were nothing ues.

were no Pearles, but Topasses. Camalaba is a place where they fell Women at certaine times, in the manner of a Faire. And there you shall buy colours, such as the Saluages paint themselnes with. In this Faire, go which is called Camalaha, which is to the South of Orenoco, I bought eight young Wo- Tulebe. 30 men, the eldeft whereof I thinke neuer saw eighteene yeeres, for one red-hafted knife Badpearles. which in England cost mee one halfe-peny. I gaue these Women away to certaine Saluages Topastes.

which were my friends, at the request of Waritag the Kings Daughter of Murraquito. Ter or Turos is an Iland, which is to the South South-west of Orenoco. To which place I and yet no fair went, because they said there was never any that inhabited in this Bland, but that it was in women. the manner of a bayting place for the Caribes, when they had stollen people, which they Eight women meant to eate. One Captaine Caramaton was my guide to this place : whither we went some for a halfe-pewhat firong, with intent, if wee could finde any Caribes on this Iland, to kill them; but Ter or Taree, wee found none. Many houses wee found there couered with straw, which wee set on fire, an Iland. And there I found close by the water fide, going about the Iland, which was but small, many

40 stones of divers colours. To the West of this River and Iland, which is called Tar or Taros, is a River, which is called Habue: There are about this River in most places eight, ten, seventeene, and thirtie Habue a River, fathomes water. This River of Habne commeth from the Sea. The entrance of this River at the mouth is barred; but at a full Sea you shall have fourteene and fifteene foot water; but in the Channell in which the Canoas enter, which is but narrow; there is more then fixe fathoms : but I doubt that ships cannot enter there. This River Habue is the best and furest har- Habue scarce bour that I could finde for our ships, and freest from the danger of the enemie; and is not full eight dayes eight dayes iourney from Orenoce.

The River Europa lyeth to the East of Orenoco as you come from Trinidad : you may, as I Europa River, certainly know, going fome twentie leagues in the River of great Amana, discouer the great and high Mountaine which is called Occopa: being there you shall plainly see the Playnes or Occopa Mount Downes of Samia; through which Playnes you may fafely march ouer the Land within ten or taine. twelve leagues of Camana, or to the Caracas.

From Orenoce alfo it is very easie to goe to the Towne of Santo Domingo, which beareth Santo Domingo. North North-west directly : but you must passe of force the River Amapaia, leaving the Hand Amapaia River. called Amazones South and beare your course as neere as you can North-west, or North North Amazones Iwest. By this course you shall passe and escape the force and danger of the Towne, and land some land. fixe dayes journey from Santo Domingo.

The River Wissemil is to the North of Orenece. To goe into this River, which is little worth, Wissemil River. 60 you may goe in the Land till you come to another small River, which is called Maccab: dire- Maccab River. ching your course South, you shall within two dayes, if your Canoa bee good, enter the Ri- Canabasca, uer of Wannuls. The Land taketh the name of the River. The Governours name is Woripur Wor - Guiard on rok Halaba. Carrabonca is in the firme Land of the great Hand, called Murrequito : it is the Mana, common trade to goe to the rich Guiana or Manoa.

round, Orient, nor very great. I brought of them with me to the Spaniards; and they faid they Crocodiles in

Drano is a faire River, but it is dangerous to goe farre in it, by reason it lyeth due South-eastfrom Orenoco; and the Southermost part of the Moores of Anebas is very low, so that the tance

Archas Moores. Vahealthiull dewes. Emeria.

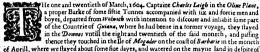
waters iffue in great abundance into this River of Drano. The danger for entring this River is nothing, but the doubt is onely of the bad water, and most terrible dewes which fall from the Moores, which are vnhealthfull, and kill the Indians daily; for that continually when they trauell they lie in the open aire.

The Eastermost part of Dorado is called Emeria. There is a small River, which lyeth farre East in Emeria, and beareth North North-west. Through this River called Capurifol is a fure, a perfect, and most fafe way to goe to Peru : but the journey will aske eight or ten weekes to finish it. Through their Rivers of force wee must palle with Canoas or Ship-boars, or such like : 19

for there is alway very little water. Caparifol River. The River of Caparifol lyeth in eight degrees and two terces to the North of the Equinoctiall Line. But the North flarre keepeth his degree and altitude 11, degrees and two terces. In this River is still a fine small brise of winde, which lightly bloweth at West : but at noone you shall hardly finde any winde.

CHAP. XII.

Captaine CHARLES LEIGH bis voyage to Guiana and plantation there ..



He one and twentieth of March, 1604. Captaine Charles Leigh in the Oline Plant a proper Barke of some fiftie Tunnes accompanied with (ix and fortie men and boyes, departed from Welwich with intention to discouer and inhabit some part of the Countrie of Guiana, where he had beene in a tormer voyage, they flaved in the Downes vntill the eight and twentieth of the faid moneth, and paffing thence they touched in the Ile of Mogador on the coast of Barbarie in the moneth

the rebell Moores, which would have had money for our watering. Thence with prosperous 20 winde coafting the Iles of Cape Verde, we passed over to the West Indies, and voon the tenth of May comming in change of water, which shewed thicke and white, by the next day we were in fresh water, and the next day following about fine in the morning wee faw two Ilands in the River of Ams. mouth of the River of Amezones, making account that we were fortie leagues vp the River, and came to an anchor in three fathoms under them, which wee found low land covered with high Trees. Then the Captaine with some eight of the best men of the ship went toward the shoare, and finding many Indians comming toward them they returned aboard, and found the ship almost aground, but founding the Bay brought their ship into the Channell which they found ve-

ry narrow. Within awhile after foure Indians in a small Canoa shewed themselues vnto vs, to whom we 40 fent our Boat with some of our commodities, as Hatchets, Kniues, Glasses, Beades, they had nothing but Maiz and small blue-headed Parrots, for which we gaue them some of our triffles. Not long after another Canoa comming out, our Boat clapt betweene them and the shoare to take fome of them, to learne the flate of the River by them, but they freed themselves all saue one youth, which was brought aboard, which next day after escaped leaping into the Sea twelue leagues as we judged from land, Thus we tooke our leaue of the River of Amazones, and having vicertaine shouldings all the way in our way, about ten a clocke in the night wee strooke upon a fand before we could let fall our anchor, where wee beat off a piece of our false keele, before wee could get off. Being gotten off, wee came to an anchor in foure fathom and a halfe water. and rode there vntill the next morning, where wee descryed the land fixe leagues from vs with co

the entrance of a River:

The Falls.

River Wispego. The two and twentieth of May, wee arrived in the River of Wispego, in the latitude of three degrees and a halfe to the North of the Line, where wee found the people readie to give vs the beil entertainment they could, bringing vs Hony, Pines, Plantons, Potatoes, Caifaui (whereof they make their bread and wine) Fish of many forts, Hennes, Conies, Hogs, and such like. This day he tooke an oath of all his people to be true to him as long as he abode in the Countrie. Then after divers conferences with the chiefe Indians, and namely with two of their Countrie, which had beene before in England, and could speake some English, he found them very willing to have him and his people abide in their Countrie : who pretending want of many necessaries, whereof indeed he stood in need, and especially of victuals, hee went up the River in his Boat with some 62 fourteene men to take perfect view of a fit place to inhabit in , and to found the depth of the River as they went. At his returne he caused his ship to be brought up hard unto the falls of the River: but after they had stayed there one day, finding fundrie inconveniences, they came backe againe to their first road; with a determination to plant and feate themselves upon the first

CHAP.II. The layor courtefie to the English. Fishing with wood.

Mount or high ground, at the entrance of the North fide of the River. But the Iayosand Saparos feeing him and his company come downe the River againe, entreated him earneftly to flav among them, offering him their ownedwelling Houses and Gardens alreadic planted to their hands, whereof he accepted: to wit, of two Houses and of as many Gardens as they thought convenient to ferue his turne, with condition that he should ayde and defend them against their enemies the Caribes and others. Hereupon they made a great Feast, desiring our Captaine to bee at it, and they demand of their generalitie of the flaving of our men in the Countrey or no. Whereunto they gaue their free confent, and defired him withall to fend into England, for men They defired to teach them to pray. This done, the next day he brought all his furniture on shoare, and be- learne religion to flowed it in the aforefaid houses. And for the better affurance of the performance of the Saluages

promife, he demanded pledges of them to be fent into England : whereunto they willingly condescended : which where in number fine, whereof two were of good account. Hee retayned thirtie fine Englishmen and Boyes with him, fending the rest home in June, with the fine Salmages which were plentifully furnished with their Councry victuals, with Letters to the right Worthipfull Sir Olane Leigh his brother, of his fucceffe and defire to supply his wants, which he most kindly twice supplied to his great charge, within short time after.

The Caribes in eight warlike Canowes came to jurprize them as farre as the Mount Comaribo: Caribes. whereof the Indians being advertised by our fishers, defired Captaine Leigh to aide them ; which he did with fome foure and twentie of his men in eight Canowes. But the battell being begun 20 after they had heard the found of our Trumpet and Musket, they fled to Sea-ward, our Canowes

chafing them; but the enemy being iwifter elcaped with casting of one of their Canowes which are able to carry twentie men and victuals for ten dayes, which Canowe they brought home. Within a fennight after our Captaines returne, bee made a Voyage in an Indian Canowe ha- A Canowe ta-

uing Indians to rowe him, accompanied only with Thomas Richardon, his Refiner of Metals, and Roba Burt his Chirurgion 90, miles by water vp the River of Aracana, to a Nation called the R. Aracana. Mauranuas, where he traded for Tabacco and Cotton yarne, and Cotton-wooll. There he left his Chirurgian being ficke, and with his Refiner and three Indians (whereof one William was his Interpretour) went vp to a Nation called Marraias the space of thirtie miles, where they paffed thorough a goodly Plaine foure milesbroad of much Honie ground, wherein they faw Deere. 30 At length meeting with the people, they were kindly entertayned and fed with fuch as they

had; as dried Tygres flesh, dried Hogges flesh, and small fish. Then after some discourse, they enquired for Gold shewing a Ring. An old man fpake vnto him and pointed vp into the Countrey, and the Captaine asking the Interpreter what he faid, he told him that he faid there was no fuch that way. The Captaine perceiuing the falshood of his Interpretor would goe no further, and so returned home, where he found vs for the most part sicke, and the Indians not so kind vnto vs as they had promifed: which he much maruelled and grieued at.

Within three dayes after his returne, his shipwright Richard Haward died before hee could make an end of his shallop. And in September our Captaine himselfe began to droope, partly of griefe to fee the weake estate of his people, and the ill performance of the Indians promises: yet 40 neuerthelesse he ceased not to take order for the Indians bringing in of victuals and such Mer-

chandize as could be gotten, as Waxe, fine white long Feathers, Flaxe, Tabacco, Parrots, Mon- The Commo keyes, greene and blacke, Cotton-yarne and Cotton-wooll, iweet Gummes, red Pepper, Vra- dities of the po, and Apriceo woods, Spleene stones, matiate stones, Roots and Berries, which we thought to Countrey, be medicinable, Anato a Betrie or Cod, fuch as the Indians paint themselves red withall mingled with Oyle, Vrapo which is the heavie wood whereof they make their Swords and Bowes, Apriepo, a wood that the Frenchmen and Hollanders fetch away, a wood which they call Ayard. which they kill fift withall.

The fishers beate this wood with another piece of wood, till it shiner into flakes, which smelleth exceeding strong like Garlicke, wherewith in fundry places of the creekes going in accor-Strange

50 ding to the depth of the water, they beate it vp and downe often in the Ruser, which the fifth fifthings are intoxicated, and to diffempered with all, that they flote and tumble vpon the vpper part of the water, and then with Bats and Poles they knocke them on the heads. Their bread they make of Caffauia, a white Roble commonly a span long, and almost so thicke, which the women grate in an earthen panne against certaine grates of stone, and grate three or foure buffhels in a day : The inyce thereof they crush out most carefully beeing ranke poyson raw, in a hole of withe, which they hang vp vpon an hooke, and afterward with a weightie logge which they hang at the other end they ig aceze out the warer into an earthen pan or piece of a Gourd The inice and then leethe the fame inice with their red Pepper whereby it becommeth holesome, and if

they will haue it sweete, they will seethe it but ordinary, if they will haue it sowre, they will 60 feethe it extraordinarily, and wie it in manner of fawce, and when they be ficke they eat the fame and bread only. The women also make drinke of this Cassaua bread, which in their Language they call Arepapa, by baking of it blacke, dry, and thinne, then chewing it in their mouthes, they put it into earthen pots narrow in the bottome and broad aboue, contayning some a Firkin, fome a Kilderkin, fome a Barrell, fet in a fmall hole in the ground, with fire about them. LIIII 3

Ni per little.

Terrible cure.

atterwar d was drowned.

Being well fod, they put it out into great larges of Earth with narrow neckes, and there it will wo ke a day and a night, and keepe it foure or fine dayes till it be ftale, and then gatherine topether an hundred and more, they give themselves to piping, dancing and drinking. They make drinke also of Callana vnchewed, which is small and ordinary in their houses. They yie also to make drinke of Potatos which they paire and sampe in a Morter being fod, then putting water to it, drinke it. Before and after the fickneffe of our Captaine, many of our men fell ficke, fome of Agues, fome

of Fluxes, some of giddinesse in their heads, whereby they would often fall downe; which grew chiefly of the excelline heate of the Sunne in the day, and of the extreame dampe of the earth. which would so moysten our Hamackas, or Cotton beds, wherein wee lay a yard from the Iq ground, that we were faine to imitate the Indians in making fires on both fides under them. And for all that we could doe, some nine of our company were dead before our ships arrivall. Besides we were mightily vexed with a kinde of Worme, which at first was like to a Flea, and would creepe into the feet especially, and under the nayles, and would exceedingly torment vs. the Wilmes, great time it was in, and more in the pulling out with a Pinne or needle, if they were few. But one of our men having his feete over-growne with them, for want of hofe and shooes, was faine to fubmit himselfe to the Indians cure, who tying one of his legges first with his feete vpward, now red hot melted Waxe which is blacke vpon it, and letting it lye vpon it till it was throughly cold, they forcibly pulled it off; and therewithall the Wormes came out flicking in the fame.

feuen or eight hundred in number. This man was named Iohn Nettleton a Dier of London, which 20

In themiodelt of all these extremities our Captaines Interpretor which hee had threatned for his falle demeanour in his Voyage to the Marraies before mentioned, gaue counfell to his Mafter named Anaccauri, an ancient Captaine among them, to make a motion among the Indians at their next meeting to fay, it is the best way for vs now to make an end of them while they are sicke either by flaruing or otherwife. For when the ship commeth, hee will kill vs for keeping him without victuals now. This motion being made at their meeting, which was in Carifana his house, and among his and Martins kinred, (which then remayned pledges for our mens safetie in England) their wives hearing the Interpretors Mafter Anaccaurs broaching this matter ranne furiously upon him and tare his clothes such as hee wore from him, and mightily beate him, the 30 other of their kindred, keeping those Indians off from the women, which would have taken

Some of our owne men lying at the next house where this was done, inquired of an Indian which ewed this Anaccauria grudge, what the cause was of the said tumult : who imparted the whole truth vnto them. Our men comming fuddenly to the Captaine, acquainted him with the whole matter : who fuddenly bethought himselte and sent for all his men that were neere him; and for Eperiago and Pluainma an Indian that had beene in England: which were two of the chiefest, and caused him to send for his trayterous Interpretor, which came bringing Hens. drinke and bread: Affoone as he came, shewing what hee had heard, requiring them to declare what wrong he had done them. Who answered, none. Then said he, this fellow, meaning the 40 Interpretor hath fought my life; and therewith commanded his men to bind him hand and foot, which done, he difmified them, defiring them to returne the next morning. In the meane time he caused his Prisoner to fend for a Canowe to fetch three of his men. which were vp in the Riuer, who immediately did fo. Now having all his men together, hee caused them to have all their Furniture readie: appointing one William Blake to feethe fame diligently fulfilled, the watch carefully to be kept in the night, and two to ward at the doores all day with their Furniture, to take the Indians weapons out of their hands at their comming in at the doore.

This being ordayned, the Indians came the next day, to whome the Captaine faid. In regard that I have been so carefull to punish the wrongs done vnto you, I would have you readie to renenge the wrongs done vnto mee, who feemed very vn willing to doe any farther luftice, effee- 50 ming his binding a sufficient punishment. At the which the Captaine beeing very much vexed. commanded the two foresaid Indian Captaines to depart, charging them to fend him in, fish and other victuals for his company. In the meane time he and the chiefe of his men confulting what course to take with the Malefactor, they thought it best that hee should lye so bound untill the next day being the third of his bondage, and to fend for the chiefe of the Indians, and youn confession of his fault, and crawing pardon thereof, to be dismissed before them.

> Captaine Charles Leighs Letter to Sir Olane Leigh his Brother.

Ost louing Brother, I did write unto you from Muggador, where I flaged until the ninementh of M April, and on the four teenth of May I had first fight of Guiana, in the mouth of the River A-

mazones, The two and twentieth, I arrived (prayfed be God) in safetie in the Riner Caroleich, hereto. fore called Wyapoco, and the same day, I tooke possession of the Country in fight of the Indianis. The Indians which doe inhabit this River are about one thousand fine hundred men, women, and children, and they are of three Nations, viz. Yaioas, Arwarkas, and Sapayoas, which beeing chafed from other Rivers, by the Catibes have combined themselves together in this place for their better defence, and are now at deadly warres with the Caribes. After that I had stored my selfe with Bread and Roots sufficient untill the Earth with Gods prouidence might yeald me Supply, I did then fend for the chiefe Captaine of the Yavoas aboord, whom with gifts and good viage, I easily entreated to stay aboord my thip writh such time as by his meanes I was provided with all kind of Plants, which their Gardens doe affoord , ret all this while he knew not my purpose. The day before I purposed to make my intent knowne, their came another chiefe Captaine of the Yayoas abourd to dine with me, who together with the former after Dinner defired to freake with me, whereupon I fent for an Indian who had beene in England, to bee Interpreter and tooke hem into my Cabbin. The two Captaines told a long Storie of the wrongs the Catibes had

done them, how toey had driven them from their ancient dwellings in other Rivers, killed many of their friends, carried their women and children away Captines, and burt many of their men, and thereupon they called one of their men to shew me how he was lately burs in three places with their Arrowes, to conclude, they told me, how they purposed the next Moone to goe against the Caribes, with twentie Canoas, and carnetely entreated me if I stayed so long to goe with them to their Warres. Vpon this good occasion. I told them that I purposed to stay in the Country, seuen or eight moneths, to seeke out and make triall of

Mynes. And in the meane time that I purposed to build Houses assource at the head of the River, and there to plant Gardens, that my men might have victuals of their owne labours, which done, I would build a shallop, and fend twentie men in her with them to fight against the Caribes, withall this ther seemed wonderfull well content, and thereupon they promifed Indians to belpe mee to build and to plant, and the chiefe Captaine promised himselfe to goe up with me. The next day being the third of May, I see layle from the mouth of Caroleigh, and cast Anchor in a Bay under Mount Oliphe, where I purpoled to plant, and make my habitation : but my men discomforted with the sight of the Woode; which they were to fell, grew generally discontented, and omitted no practices to overthrow the Voyage, being suborned under hand, by my unfaithfull Sermant, the Master, his lewdconforts he brought with him, being the only publike maintagners of the mutenie. How I have beene troubled with him and his conforts, (who 20 intending foote and purchase in the West Indies) have from the beginning sought the overthrow of this

Voyage, this Bearer can certifie you at large. And undoubtedly hee made full account with his headfrong companions at such a time to have commanded the ship at his pleasure. To conclude, amongst o-ther their practices, they so consumed the victuals which should have may neared very still the earth had reelded supply as that in fixedayes, our Potatoes which should have lasted us two monethes, were wholly hent hereupon being farre diffant from the Indians, who inhabit at the month of the Riner, fortie pen deresponent jure sujamo, foundation and the comment of the com

ac them and their exemies they would be readie and willing to furnish os with victuals, upon any extremitie, to which condition they generally consented, that place being first motioned by some of them. The Stippe being resumed, they had then brought musimie to such a head, as that to my face, they stood in desiance of the Voyage, and told me plainly they would not flay doe what I would or could, I orged them with their promise to plant on Mount Huntly, one of them who seemed most forward of all men to yeeld to that motion: answered that he promised in policie, to draw me from Monnt Oliphe. But in the end it plea-sed God, what by faire meanes and what by sonle, I brought them all to consent to stay one whole serve, thorow all extremities, if it were possible to make a full triall both of people and Country, and to plant upon Mount Huntley, according to their promife. This agreed upon, I went ashoare to the Indians. to provide victuals, and other necessaries for our Plantation , who being exceeding glad of my returne ; of-

50 fered me to choose the best of their houses and gardens, to dwell amongst them. For they were very unwilling that I should goe to any other place, to conclude, judging their offers by many likelihoods, to be without deceit. I resolved to abide with them upon this condition : that they should send four eprincipallindians for England as pledges, for our Safetie with them whereunto they willingly condescended, and if I would, I might have twentie. For they make daily fuite to me to goe for England. Beeing in conference with an affembly of two or three hundred, purposely met to craue my abode amongst them, and demanding of them vowes and protestations, according to the custome of all people, for the more securitie of our peace and amity: sheir answere was that they knew not how to make vowes and protestations, and therefore generally they defired (fundry of their Captaines speaking it together, with a low and humble voice) that I would bring them men to teach them to pray. Which motion of theirs, proceeding from themselves and in

that humble manner, strooke me I assure you into an admiration of ioy, to thinke that it hath pleased Almightie God after so many dangers heretosore, and troubles in the Voyage, to preserve me to be a meanes to this simple hearted people of the knowledge of Christ. Vadoubtedly, it was the wonderfull worke of Gods Spirit in them, whereat all Christian hearts ought to reionce. And I am persuaded, the like instance hath never beene before by any people in the World: I befeech Almightie God to give a bleffed end to this hopefull beginning.

1254

The foureteenth of June, concluding with the Indians upon fundry conditions, I purchased of them the same day for a few Hatchets, Houses and Gardens planted with Caffana, and Potatoes sufficient for all my company : the scituation of our Houses is in the pleasantest and most fruitfull place of all their habitations. And because it is a small Village of fix or senen houses; and the first place of our setled aboade I have named it Principium : the Hill on which it standeth being part of the Monutaine on the West fide of the entrance of the River, I have named Mount Howard, to honour the remembrance of my Lord Admirall, of whom heretofore I have received many favours : on the East side of the entrance of Caro Leighh, lieth the Riner Olivoleighe beretofore called Arrikowarye: and on the West side of Mount Howard runneth the River lotrameleighe, by the Indians called Wanarie. The commodities which this Countrie doth zeelde, and through industrie will abound in, are thefe; Sugar Canes, Cot- 10 ten and fine Flaxe; also it would yeelde great store of long Pepper, if there might be vent for it in England : here is fundry forts of Gummes, of Woods, and of Dies, which I hope will prone good commodities, of all which I have fent you samples by Master Huntlie, especially one fort of Gumme, which I am perswaded will prone very rich. Also I have sent unto you a peece of a Stone taken out of a Manuate or Sea Come. I am ginen to under ft and that a little thereof beaten into powder, and drunke in Wine or Ale, will in few houres cure any man that is troubled with the Stone, they fayit dissolueth it instantly. I doubt not but to get a dosen of them before this time twelve moneths : my refiner hath made triall of sundrie Minerals, but cannot yet finde any Mettals. At my arrivall bere I found a Dutch Shippe, and fithence here bath arrived another, they buye up all the Flaxe they can get, and pay fo deere that I can get none; they have not gotten fo little I thinke as ten tunnes of Flaxe within thefe two moneths.

I doubt not but I shall be able to returne a Shippe laden with Flaxe and other commodities the next yeare; the Flaxe yeeldeth a wonderfull encrease, and will grow any where, but especially in low meerish grounds: the Indians report that the Roots yieldeth increase cuery moneth, and enerie yielde may be some four e ounces, by this accompt an acre of ground planted with these rootes, and distant three soute a sunder. will reelde 17280.li. enerie zeare, which amounteth at fixe pence the pound to 432.li. I doubt this will not prome an swerable to sheir reports, but I verily believe it will yeelde halfe the encrease they sheake of. the Dutch men baue reported that it is worth in Holland but fix pence the pound, but they confesse that Holland will vent 300.tunne thereof. Some of the Dutch men hauereported that it is worth in Holland sixeteene pence the pound, which I rather beleeve, for my Wevers tell me that they will warrant it to dresse exceeding well, and then it must needes be excellent fine grounds for any stuffe; for Cotten bere is 30 little, not worth the speaking of, yet the Countrie will yeelde abundance, and in sixe weekes the seede will pecide Cotten, and it beareth continually and plentifully. I pray you fir fend me more Weavers, for I know not bom to get any thing sounne for them, for the women here are put to that extreame labour, that they baue no time to spinne, for they onely fetch water out wood to burne, and bring it bome upon their backer, they outher all their rootes and bring them out of their Gardens, they make all their Bread which is verie labour some, they dresse all the victuals, make all the drinke, attend upon the men while they are at meate, and besides, they dresse up their honses in their kinds, and nursetheir owne children: so as they are alwayes toiled with labour, and have little or no time to spinne. For Sugar Canes the world doth not reelde better soyle for their encrease, and whereas in Bathatie it is fifteene or sixteene moneths before ther come to perfection, here they grow up in ten moneths. And in Barbarie they are planted onely in 40 two Vallies, where they are watered enery weeke, but here they grow upon the Mountaines, and neuer watered but with raine onely. A few yeares I doubt not will afford plentie of Sugars, if wee Shall have meanes to make them. My loofe commodities, as Hatchets, Beades, Knines, Looking glasses, &c. are almost all gone; a great part in buying of victuals, but the most part to stoppe the mouthes of my Mutinors and monstrous Sailours; to whom also I have promised two third parts of my Iron.

Now for the profecuting of this voyage, in fuch for: as that we be not presented brahe Spaniard nor any other Nation; I would entreate you with as much speede as possibly you can to send me a supply of one bundred men at least, to abide bere, all labouring men and Gardners, for such are the fittest here for a time, with a few Carpenters; and with them three or foure good peeces of Ordnance with shot and powder: also fiftie Caliners for the men that stay here: if you can send these men in two Shippes, I doubt not but to 50 lade one of them backe in three moneths after arrivall and the other which I wish may be the Olive plant. I would keepe here and fit her for a Frigot to keepe and command the River. I have written to my brother Iohn Leighe to deliner unto you such monies as he hath received of Gifford, who I hope hath ere this time paid his debts. I hope you shall get store of voluntarie men to ease the charge of the Vorace, and looke what you shall dishurfe in my behalfe for the accomplishment of the Voyage, I will, God willing, see you boneftly paid with advantage ; or elfe if it please you to put it in adven: ure, it shall be accomplished in any fort to your owne desire. As I doubt not of your lone and forwardnesse, especially in so good an action so alfo I make no question, but this Countrie will in few years yeelde you futs faction beyond your expectation, If my wife have not alreadie attained her fuite of the Kings Maiestie, I hope the will the fooner freede upon this newes, which if the doe, my defire is, that all that he imployed upon these proceedings; and to that 60 effect I have written to ber. I have written a Letter to the Kings Maiestie; another to the Lords of the Counfell, and one to my Lord A imirall.

The bearer hereof, Captaine Huntlie is the worthiest yong Gentleman that ener went to Sea, upon any cangerous enterprize, be was never definated, neither with extreame dangers at Sea, nor with all the Mu-

tinies aboord, which had beene able to have discouraged an old expersenced Souldier; besides, I found kim tinies avoora, wow out of true, faithfull, and loyall friend, and therefore I pray accompt him for a right honest man. unwater a uniperson, Lieftenant generall of these Countries during life, and therefore I pray let him returne chiefe commander in the first supply. I would pray you also to procure to come with him some bonest and differente men whom I might relie upon as trustie friends, and use as companions both for adule and Gocietie, for I am now very uncomfortably matched, having no worldly strength to trust upon but mr selfe onely. I have fent vnto you four Indians, principall men in their Countrie, which were delinered unto me as pledges of our safeties here, and they are to returne again the first, but I thinke some of them will be more as pleages of our safeties over ama which was left here by Captaine Lea, is dead, I pray you pro-willing to stay longer. The English man which was left here by Captaine Lea, is dead, I pray you prono cure Sir Walter Ra wleighes Indian or my Lord Admirals for I want an Interpreter exceedingle bere is but one, and he understandeth but little to any purpose. I pray forget not to send Preachers, sober and discreete men, and such as are well persuaded of the Church government in England, Co. From Principium, or Mount Howard this second of Inly 1604.

CHAP. XIII.

A true Relation of the traiterous massacre of the most part of threescore and seven English men, fet on land out of a Ship of Sir Oliph Leagh, bound for Guiana, in Santa Lucia an Iland of the West Indie, the three and twentieth of August, written by IOHN NICOL

Ir Oliph Leagh, a worthipfull Knight of Kens, fending a fupply of good numbers of men un a Snip called the Oliph bloffone to his brother Mafter Charles Leigh. which was planted in the Ruser of Waspoge, within three degrees and an halte Morthward of the Equinocial line in the West Indies, which departed from the the forestends of Amil. Wolmich the foureteenth of Aprill 1604, vader the conduct of Captaine Cataline, and Capraine Nicholas Saint lobn Albeing defirous to fee the world, con-

30 forted my felfe with that co apany. But by contrary windes and voknowne currents of the Sea, and the vnskilfulneile of our Matter Richard Chambers, wee were put to leeward of our port, without any hope of recourring the fame in any due time : And being not victualled, as it Saint Barbudot. feemed for about fours or fine moneths, after confulsation had, we were faine to touch first at the Santa Lucia, Ifle of Barbudos, and then at Santa Luzia in the West Indies. Where fearing to perill at Sea for Garren. Ni. hunger before we should be able being so many abourd to reach England; Captaine Nicolas Saint eb. Saint lobi John, with the rest of the passengers, which purposed to have staied with Master Charles Staint Leagh at Wiopogo in Guiana, resolved to stay and take their fortune in the aforesaid fruitfull men.

Thus fixtie feuen of vs ar our owne feeking were left on shore in the aforesaid Hand of Santa Luzis the three and twentieth of August 1605, with our Swords, Muskets, and Powder, and one Falcon, and one barill of Biscuit onely for all our food. The next day our Ship departed from vs with fome discontentment, because we had seased upon her Boate to serue our turnes. After our Shippe was departed from vs. we lived very peaceably, daily trading with the Indians for victure als; which were Caffaui, Potatos, Plantans, Pinas, Popayes, Pompions, Calabaffus, Tobacco. Pappies, Mammeyes, all very pleasant to eate. Also they brought vnto vs Hens and Guls. and fome Pelicanes, Woodcocks, and Snipes: we our felues did kill with our Peeces many of them likewife. And every night we fent out fixe vpon the fands to feeke for Tortoyfes, whereof we neuer miffed night without one or two, and many times three, which was the greatest sufte. Torteiles, 50 nance we found; for they are very large and great. I have often taken out of one of them to the number of feuen hundred egges. Also the Indians had great store of Roan linnen cloathes, Serges. and other Stuffes, and Spanish wollen cloath : and iarres of Oyle which they tooke and faued as Sea with their Periagnas . For three Spanish Shippes had beene there cast away a little before our arrivall, if we had had a Pinnesse there we could have laden her with many good commodities, which they had hid in their houses in the woods. All which we could have bought for Hatchets, Kniues, Beades, Thimbles, Fishhookes, and other such trifles.

Thus for the space of five or fixe weekes wee went not much abroad; till our Captaine seeing certaine foure square Plates, which the Indians were on the small of their armes, asked Browne, 2 Gold finer, his opinion, what he thought of them ! who told him, that three parts thereof was Shew of Cold-60 Gold. And asking the Indians where they got them, they pointed vnto an high Mountaine on the North-welt part of the Hand. This caused Captaine Nicholas Saint lobu, and lobn Rogers, who was our interpreter for the Spanish tongue, with as many of our chiefe men as could well goe in the Boate vpon a Monday to goe thither, promiting his Brother Alexander Sainet John, Matter Garret, and Mafter Teneb, whom he left to gouerne the rest at home, to returne the next Saturday.

flaine. Indian :reacheric.

The Indians for three dayes after did not come vnto vs with victuals, for they perceived when The Capraine the Boate went, and as we thinke, they were then at the flaighter of our men at the Mountayne. Voon Thursday morning we killed two Tortoyies on the fands; where wee found a great company of the Indians gathered together, for what purpole we knew not : And left wee should suspect them of any bad intent towards vs, they willingly offered themselves to bring home our Tortovies, which they tooke into their Periaguas, and brought them to our

All that forenoone weekept good watch : for there were very many that came both by Sea and Land to the number of two or three hundred; and divers of them were very merrie with vs. drinking of Tabacco and Aquanite, vntill ten of the clocke, and then they departed all faue one which was a Captaine of the He of Saint Vincene, called Augramers, and an old man which was his Father; who promited vs. if wee would goe to their boules, that wee flould have any thing that they had. For the day before I had beene at their houses with other two of my fellowes to have bought victuals: yet they would not part with any, no not for any commoditie that wee had and vet they had more flore of victuals then euer I faw them have before. But wee perceived afterwad, that it was provided for them, that came to take their parts against vs. whom they kept fecret in the Woods. So we three eturned, and trauelled farre into the lland. Eatre gardens, and vaffed through fixe or feuen Gardens very full of Caffabe, Potatoes, and many other rootes Great Frees and truits, and by the way faw many tall trees of fo huge bigneffe, that wee three could not at o: hard wood, twice fathome one of them about; and they were fo hard, that wee could not cut them with our 20 Kniues, and the Barke of them was white like Ash. Then we returned to our Sconce againe.

der, Matter William Tench, my felfe, and divers others, to the number of eighteene, went with Augramers and his father, having neither Bowe nor Arrow, onely his father had a Brafill fword. They went thus meanly armed left wee should suspect them. Augramert also promised Master Alexander Saint lobs, that he should fee his wife, and we should have Hamaccos, which are In-

Vpon Thuriday after dinner, Mafter Alexander Saint lobus, Mafter Francis Kettlebr the el-

dian beds of net-worke made of cotton yarne to lye in. So we trauelled along the Sands very fecurely, young Saint John going a little space before playing and jesting with the Indian Captain. till they came within fight of their houses, where in the woods they had placed an ambush of three hundred Caribes : when fuddenly Augramers tooke hold of his Rapier with the one hand 20 and of his Poniard with the other, and the old man his father with his Brafill fword ffrooke him downe to the ground. Then out of the woods came the Arrowes fo thicke about our eares, that weehad not the time to put our matches in our cocks. And many of our companie had their match to light, which gave a great encouragement vnto the enemie; infomuch that we discharged not fixe peeces against them which caused divers of our companie to file into the Sea vo to their necks, and fome along the lands as amuzed, feeing fuch a huge companie against fo small a number: vntill young Saint Iohn reconering againe, encouraged vs to make a ftand at a point of Land which went corner wife into the Sea.

But all was in vaine : for before wee could make our peeces readie, there came another companie on the back of vs, and filled our bodies full with arrowes : and then wee betooke vs to our 40 iwords and fo runne through them : but still they excreased out of the woods, shooting their arrowes in great abundance, not daring to come neere vs vntill they faw vs fall : and then with their great Brafill fwords they strooke out our mens braines. I my selfe being all this time running with young Saint lobs, and Mafter Kettleby, who behaued themselves most gallantly, hauing at the least one hundred arrowes apiece before they fell, came at the last into the entrance of a narrow path, where five of my fellowes were gotten before I came, and thinking to have paffed through, there was another ambush who killed them all. I onely with three arrowes in me, by running into the wood and swimming ouer a standing Lake escaped home, giving them warning before they came to affault them : and vpon my comming they all came in fight vpon the Sands, whom we foone fent away by shooting off our great Peece, so they came not in three so

Voon Monday there came to the number of thirteene or fourteene hundreth both by Sea and Land, and there belet vs round, wee having nothing but our Chifts to defend vs from their arrowes : thus for the space of seuen or eight dayes we fought with them, and of nineteene men which were left of all our companie, twelue were fore wounded with their arrowes. And the first day at twelve a clocke they shot fire in their arrowes and burned our houses, thinking then to have entred in voon vs. but with our Falcon wee droue them backe with most horrible cryes. After that our houles were burned, and all our Chifts which before were our Fore, wee fortified our felues with the remnants of the stakes and thatch which we had faued from burning, fetting them in the ground flopewife, couering it with fand and earth, which faued vs euer after from

The next day after they all departed in their Periaguas. And the Lord feeing what need wee had of food, contrarie to our expectation, mooned the hearts of our very enemies to bring vs food, For when all the rest were out of fight, one returned very well prouided of victuall, and

three or four comming out of their Piragua with as much as they were able to carry of Cassaui. Poratoes, and Plantans, cryed vnto vs to exchange with them, first holding vp their bowes and arrowes, and after laying them on the ground againe in figne of peace. Which wee perceising, fent out three likewise to bargaine without weapons, with Kniues and Beades, and other trifles; which traffick being done, they departed and we returned, giving praise to God, for this miraculous feeding of vs. For we had no meanes of our felues to get any food : for they had bereft vs of our Net, with which we had wont to catch as much fish of many forts as would furfice vs for a wholeday. Thus they continued daily for the space of seuen dayes; and then our victuals began to faile againe, which caused vs to hold out a slagge of truce : which they perceiving , came IO in peaceable manner vnto vs.

Then one Francis Brace, which could speake French, made them understand that our defire was to give them all that we had, if they would let vs have a Piragua to carry vs away. Which one Captaine Antonie willingly confented vnto (contrarie to the will of his brother Angramers, Captaine of Saint Vincent) and the next day brought it, drawing it on shoare within the compaffe of our Fort; for which we gaue them Hatchets, Kniues, and Beades, vntill they were contented : and to please them the more, we gaue them every one a Shouell or a Spade, where with they were fully contented, and so departed, Then with all speede we went all to worke, some voon the Saile, which we made of very good Roan-cloth, and some to make the Mast; and euery one did labour all he could to be readie against night. For Captaine Antonio, which was Cap-20 taine of Santa Lucia, told vs, that his brother Augramert would come the next day from Saint

Vincent with twelue Periaguas all laden with arrowes; whose words we alwayes found true. Thus on a thursday, the fixe and twentieth of September, at one of the clocke after midnight, having among it vs all but one Barrico of fresh water to drinke, and one small Firkin of Rice, we embarked our felues being nineteene in the whole number, not one haning skill in the Mariners art, and without Carde or Compaffe to direct vs : wee fayled by the Sunne in the daytime, and by the Starres in the night, going alwayes betwix: South-west and by West. The vi-voyage. Etuals that wee had were not sufficient to serue that companie for three dayes. For wee had no aboue twentie Biscuits, three Cassaui cakes, a dosen Plantans, and some thirtie Potatoes, and fome foure or fine gallons of water, and a little barrell halfe full of Rice. And as it pleafed the 20 Lord he had faued it vntill this our great necessitie, for the preservation of our lives : for all our other victuall was gone in two dayes, and our water in three dayes. And then Mafter Garres gaue to every two of vs a pottage dish of his Rice twice a day, which wee washed in salt water and so eate it raw. Thus we continued at Sea seeking for Land, for the space of tendayes, where wee endured one great tempest, although to our great perill, looking alwayes when weeshould Assorme

be drenched. The raine which then fell, was voto vs in the middeft of our danger a great com-

fort : for we faued it with great toy, and dranke it, thanking God for that good refreshing ; who

likewise did send the very Fowles of the aire to feed vs. For being wearie of their flight they would rest them upon the side of our Boat, so that we tooke them and dryed them in the Sunne with a little gun-powder, and eate them. Our Boats brimme was fo neere the water, that eue-40 ry wave came over it, readie to linke vs, but that foure of vs continually did lade the water forth by couries. Now, on the tenth day one Thomas Morgan dyed, not being able to live of that Thomas Mersmall allowance, and at noone we threw him ouer board. Within an houre after it pleased God gan dyeth. to glad vs (who were likewife readie to follow our fellow) with a toyfull fight of Land, vnto Land the neerest part whereof we made as fast as we could.

But the winde being calme we were benighted before we could come to it. And fo wanting the light of the day, we were voon the shoare before wee were aware, and there split our Boat Boar folis. to the middeft, and all our men were turned out faue my felfe, which held the helme, thinking the next wave would fet her off againe, not knowing her to be split. But the breach was so great that it turned me vnder, putting me in great danger to be grinded to pieces with her weight ly. ing voon meagainst the great Rocks; yet at the last wee all recoursed our selues, some sitting

50 vpon the Rocks, others on the rootes of great Trees, thinking there to faue our felues vntill the morning. William Picks, and my felfe, went and haled the Boat on shoare, which was split to the very middeft, and to farre with our Swords we cut off, and put in an head in the middeft, and fastened it with our Daggers, Kniues, and Bodkins; stopping all the leakes with our shirts, and fent fine of our companie ouer to the mayne land; which were Miles Pet, William Picks; Francis Brace, William Kettleby, and William Butcher. They haled their Boat foure or fine dayes along the shoare, crotting divers Rivers with their Boat , being sometimes pursued by Aligates or Crocodiles, and Sharkes.

God pittying their poore estate, guided them to a place, where they found a great earthen 60 larre full of wheat flower fet in a little Caue, which they boyled in the larre with fresh water, and fatisfied their hungrie appetites, with thanks vnto God for the same. And within two dayes after they met with three Spaniards, with halfe a dofen Indians and Negroes, travelling Three Spanish from Caracas to Core, driving Horles and Mules laden with merchandile : who feeing their ards. weaknesse for want of victuals, valoded their Horses to feede on the grasse, while they retreshed

Miferable fa-Vic of Tabacco.

Fiue died in

our hungrie men with plentie of their good cheere, and shewed themselves very courteous suffering them to ride, and went themselves on foot two or three dayes, till they came to a Towne of civil Indians, called Tocora, where they stayed to refresh them, for they were very weake. And there they let the Spaniards know in what miferable cafe they left vs in a defolate lland. where we endured the greatest milerie, that euer men did with life. For wee continued fifteene dayes having no kinde of meat but Wilks, falt Water, and Tabacco; which did nothing at all nourish vs. yet neuerthelesse it tooke away the defire of hunger, and saued vs from eating one another. In those fifteene dayes five of our companie pined to death, because they could not take Tabacco : John Parkins, Edward Greene, Thomas Stubbes, Andrew Swell, and an old man called John. By noting two or three of our men to die, we knew by those tokens when we drew neere 10 our death : which were thefe, first they would swell very bigge, and shortly afterfall to the very bones, and wanting strength to hold up their heads, they would fall downe, and droope into their bosomes, and in twelve houres after yeeld up the Ghost,

At the fifteene dayes end, Francis Brace having more frength then the reft, guided the three

Food almost nenutie. Tocors.

Spaniards with fixe Indians to the Hand where we were, and they brought victuals with them : which when we had eaten had almost killed vs, by reason of the weaknesse of our stomacks, being to farre from that we could not digett it, although we fed thereof very fraingly. The next day they carried vs to the mayne land, where wee had horfes brought vs to carry vs; and the goods wee had they tooke all to the King of Spaines vie, and so conveyed vs to Tocoya; where wee which were weake remayned fifteene dayes, and those which were frong went with the 20 three Spansards to Coro, which is some fiftie leagues from Tocoya and at the fifteene dayes end. Kind Spiniards one of the Spaniards, whole name was Sennor Coralanal, came for vs with horses, who shewed himselfe as carefull of vs. as if we had beene his owne Countrimen and friends, and brought vs to Core to our fellowes : where we were brought before the Gouernour; and by a Flemming which could speake a little Englah, which had beene a prisoner there fixteene yeeres, we were examined of the cause of our comming thither; who excused vs very well. For hee knew, that if we had confessed whether we were determined to goe, they would have either put ys to death, or condemned vs to the Gallies. But he told them, that we never purposed to come thither, but were by misfortune and tempelt of winde and weather driven on that Coaft, and told them of all the dangers which we had endured, which draue them into fuch great admiration, that fome faid, so verily wee were Deuils and not Men : others, that we deferued to bee canonized, but that wee

Good Flore

Co: 0.

were Lutherans.

All the chiefe Sennors of the Towne beeing there, every man was defirous to take one of vs. After we were decided among them, they did not vie vs like prifoners, but were as carefull of vs Sessilly gentle- as of their owne children, not fuffering vs to want any thing necessarie for the procuring of our healths. My lot fell out to bee entertained by one whole name was Senior Francisco Lopez : and being extreamely ficke of a Calenture, or hot Feuer, one Captaine Perofe which had married his daughter having good skill in Phificke, came daily to my Chamber, and there let me bloud, dieted me, and purged me, giving his owne Wife in charge, not to let me want any thing that was there to be had. Thus by the will of God, and their tender care over vs, wee recovered our 40 healths and firengths agains, only two dyed there, which were Thomas Fletcher, and Fulle loves a shoomaker. In Coro eleven of vs remay ned alive (being all that were left of fixtie fegen, which Two more die, were put on thore in the lland of Santa Lazza) for the space of five moneths, enery day soins to one another when wee pleased: and wee rid often into the Countrey, where the Indians tooke great delight in our company. For against our comming, they would prouide all kind of delicious fruits; which were in most abundance in that Country, and would kill Deere and will Hogs for Commodities vs: and would bring vs Apes, Monkeyes, Parrots, and any thing that they thought wee of the Coun- delighted in. The Countrey about Core doth yeeld abundance of Sugar, Honey, Ginger, and Pitch. Alfo

Drinke made

whereof they have great plentie, for they reape it three times in one yeere. This Maiz they do mingle with the juyce of the Sugar-cane, which maketh an excellent kinde of bread, and it will keepe like Bisket. Also they make their drinke of this Maiz and of Potatoes; which is very fweet and firong: for the Indians will be quickly drunke with it. While we were there, a Spamiard rode to a Farme of his in the Countrey with his brother, where he had many Indians dwelling to make Tabacco. One of his chiefe Indians, which vied to be familiar with him, tooke vp his head therewith : which his brother perceiuing ranne for his Rapier : but the Indian women had stolne it away before; and so they killed him also with their Bowes and Arrowes, and three a great company vnto him, promifing them, that if they would aide him against the Spaniards in Core, he would give them the Spaniards wives and daughters in marriage. But before they put this conspieacie in practife, Captaine Perofo by a Policie tooke him feasting among his fellowe and women, and tooke thirtie with him, and brought them all to Coro; where they were to ful-

they have very good Wheate growing there : but the bread is for the most part made of Maiz, 50

The treason of a new Hatchet, which his Master had brought him, asking him what it cost, and suddenly cloue or foure Negroes, which feemed to relift them, and thereupon flied to the Mountaines, gathering 62 fer death with great torments, to terrifie the reft. And of some they cut off the thumber, and out the finewes of their two fore-fingers, whereby they wanted the benefit of hooting.

Our enterrainment there was fuch, that we could not defire to part from them to come into our owne Countrey without offending them. For a Frigat being readic at Coro to goe for Carthagena, foure of vs made intreatie for passage, which were Philip Glaftecke, Richart Garret. William Picks, and my felfe, (lales Nicols) for all the reft were in the Countrey upon plature, fome in one place, and some in another. And when the ship was readie to depart, they perseated the Governour not to let vs goe. For they told him that there were many thips of Holland pon the Coast ; and that if we went all in the Frigate, we would betray it voto them , causing he Fathers of their Churches to tell vs, That if we would flay, wee should be as themselves, art. they would willingly befrow both their daughters and their goods vpon vs. Yet notwithflandin all their allurements, our delire was for our owne Countrey; and fo three of vs procured menes for to goe, and William Picks was flayed, by meanes his Mafter told the Governour. that four were to many to venter in the Frigat. Thus we departed from Core about the twentieth of A. prill, leaving all those with whom wee dwelt very fortowfull for our departure : who gave vs great flore of prouision for our Voyage. They were very loth to let vs go to Carthagena, for feare we should be put into the Gallies : And the Gouernour of Core himselfe, wrote vnto the chiefe men of Caribacena in our commendation, as to Don Pedro de Barres, who was his Sonne in Law: but it tooke small effect. By the way wee touched at Santa Marta, and watered there.

Within three dayes after we arrived at Carthagena, we were committed to Prilon by the Teniente, for the Gouernour was dead not three dayes before we came in. Yet we brought our Letter from Coro, from one Sennor Gafper Sanchio Contador, or in our behalfe to one Sennor Antonio Cambero, who prooued a speciall good friend vnto vs. For we had not been an houre in Prifon, but hee came to vs and comforted vs, and bade vs not to feare, for wee should not want any thing. So he went to the Toniente, and proffered three of his Negroes to fet we at he bertie, and if we made an escape, he should have those Negroes for his owne vie. (The worst of those Negroes was worth three hundred Duckets.) But hee would not, neither would he allow vs any victuals. But this Cambero fent vs euery day at moone one very good meales meate. Allo there were three Englishmen, who ferued as Mariners in one of the King of Spainer Gallions

30 which carrie his Treasure : which after that they were at Sea were by forcible tempest driven back againe to Carebagena, in a great danger to be funk: for she had twelve foot water in her. Some escaped to Hamana, and fine of the richest thips were funke on the shoulds betwixt Caribasena and Hanana. These three Englishmen did allow vs twelve pence a day so long as wee remay ned in Prison. Euery Saturday, the Temente with his Alcaldier doe fit in judgement within the Prison where the Teniente commanded that we should be fent to the Gallies. Then one Alcaldie, who was alwayes found to bee a fauourer of Englishmen , whole name was Sennor Francisco Lopez de Moralis, called for our Examination : which when hee had perufed, hee told him, that hee could not with Iustice commit vs. Who answered againe, Then let them remayne in Prison vntill the Gallions come from Spaine, for the treasure.

40 Within two moneths after a Deputie Gouernour was chosen : vnto whom we framed a Petition; which was deliuered by Ichn Frendgam; whose answere was to him, that if wee could procure any Spaniards to bayle vs for our forth comming, we frould be at libertie. Which Sennor Francisco Lopez and Antonie Cambero no sooner heard, but they entred into bond of a thousand Duckets for our forth comming, And at our delivery, the Teniente told vs, that although by order of Law, they could justly have put vs to death; yet feeing God had so miraculously faued vs. and that we had endured fo many miseries to saue our lines, and that we came to them for fuccour and reliefe, they were content to fet vs at libertie. So Francisco Lopez brought a discharge from the Gouernour to the Iaylour for our delivery out of Prison, and brought vs all three to his owne house : where was prouided for every one of vs a severall bed : For the Countrey is so hot. 50 that we cannot lie but one in a bed. Our entertainment was very great, and all our feruices in plate, with great varietie of meates, and of all the most delicious Indian fruits : and yet he thought we neuer fared well enough, without hee fent vs one extraordinary dish or other from his owne Table. Also many Gallauts reforted to his house to play at Cards, who would be every liberall vnto vs at their winning, and would give vs fixe or feuen pieces of Eight at a time,

There we continued vntill the Gallions were readie to goe for Spane with the treasure: then * The cause hee procured vs passage enery one in a seneral ship. * And the day before wee embarked which why Francisco was about the first of August, there came two more of our company from Coro, which were Lopez did vie Miles Pet, and Richard Ferne, who were both placed with Philip Glastocke, in the shippe called visio kindly Saint Basthelomen, Richard Garret went in the thip called La Madre de Dios, and my fife in the washecause Santa Cruz. Sawe were a moneth in fauling to Hause and hard another moneth as Sir Fr. Drage 60 Santa Cruz. So we were a moneth in fayling to Hanana, where wee stayed another moneth to when he tooke trimme the ships. The Gouernour there was Don Pedro de Vaides, Priloner in England 1588. Cartagena did So we lived all on shoare with eighteene pence a day for our diet, and about the end of Septem- faue all his fa-

with another thip called the Saint Vincent for want of prouition of bread,

ber departed, leauing that shippe, wherein Thilip Glassocke, Miles Pet, and Richard Ferne were, there goods with another thin called the Sunt Vincent for want of provision of heard

We fact the channell of Florida, in eight dayes against the winde, and came along by the He of Bermuda, and were nine weekes in fayling betweene Hanana and the Coaft of Spaine. The tempelts and flomes which we had, were wonderfull great. Infomuch that all the fleete were diffeerfed, and got about two ships did hold company together. Which put them in great feare left they (hould have met with the Hollanders; who might with three good thips have taken all their treame with small adoe for every little Carmell did put them in seare, thinking her to

Voon He second day of Februarie 1606. Master Barmicke landed safely, thanked bee God, at Downes & Kent, and gaue me money to bring me to London.

CHAP. XIIII.

The Relation of Master IOHN WILSON of Wanfeed in Effex. one of the last ten that returned into England from Wiapoco in Guiana 1606.

the Indians, that our Nation came to inhabit among them, only to oppresse them as the Spaniards

Apraine Charles Leigh and his Brother Sir Olane Leigh, did furnish to Sea the good Aprents Comes Length and in Drouter or Other Length in turnin to Sea the good in this called the Phenix with Commodities for the Country of Osiume, and no. 20 ceffares for the Voyage, with fiftie perfons to inhabit Wingses, of fundry Trades who directing their courfe towards Wingses, on the Coalf of Gaisses, which the Spanish call the River of Cannos, artured on the twentieth of May following, where he found a ship of Amsterdam, trading with the Indians. They perswaded

doe in other parts of the Indies, which the Indians themselves confessed vnto Captaine Leigh notwithstanding they offered our Nation no vnkindnesse, but wied them in all the kind manner they could. For they prouided whatfoeuer our Company wanted which they could get them. In fomuch the Gentleman was like to have done right wel, if it had not happened that his Company Caufes of their had not mutined, which did partly arife because of the climate, which is much hotter then ours. 30 And for that they were ynprouided of victuals or other necessaries, therefore constrained to line in fuch manner as the Indians themselves doe; for that they did see at their landing only Mountaynes and Hils coursed with Woods. And for that the most part of them had been housholders in England, not accustomed vnto such a strange Countrey or Nation, nor such a diet: for which causes they were so much discontented, that they cried to their Captaine, home, home, Thus the Captaine and his whole company was discontented, and also the Master of his ship called Martin Prinx , who shipped himselfe shortly after their arrivall into the Amferdamer, which they found there, whereupon the Captaine placed his Mate Richard Portof Weymouth, to bee Master of the Phenix, furnishing him with such victuals as the Country affoorded, as Caffaui for their bread, and Potatoe Roots, with fish, water, and such prouision as they had of their owne aboord, 40 appointing Edward Huntly to be their Captaine, to got for England, who departed from Wiapsco about the first of July 1605, by whom Captaine Leigh advertized his Brother Sir Olane Leigh.

After whose arrivall Sir Olane Leigh, hee withall speed furnished the aforesaid ship, called the

of the Phenix.

Phenix to Sea. with Commodities for the Countrey and other necessaries, with thirtie men of fundry Trades, appointing the aforenamed Richard Pets to be Master, and Edward Huntly to bee Captaine, they departed from Woollage, one the towards Wiapoco, who arrived at their Port one the fifteenth of January following, who expected with the rest of their company aboord, to have found the Generall and his company on Land, to have beene in farre better case then they were, for that they found them for the most pare extreame lickes, and fome of them dead: and presently after their arrivall three or foure men of them died, and the Generall him- 50 felfe was very weake and much changed, which partly proceeded by reason of their great want Captain Leight of victuals, for that the Pidians could not at all times provide them that they wanted. And chiefly for that the company were perswaded that the ship would never have returned vnto them againe, which plainly appeared amongst them, for that at the arrivall of our ship, some of them which had not in three monethes time beene a stones cast from their houses, came abourd of vs. a mile and more from their houses in weake estate, which caused very much discontent among st our fresh water Souldiers aboord, and they were the more discontented, because they could not aduertize them of any commodities the Country yeelded which would affoord them prefent benefit, infomuch that they wished themselnes in England again. During which parley, our Generall

Deiched

Mount Howard came not aboord of vs, for that he was at his house called Mount Howard, a mile and more vp into the Land, which flood on a hil very pleafantly fituated, but according to the Country manner, by reason that their enemies should not wel find their houses nor suddenly assault them, have there fore very rough passages vnto them, inuironed all with Mountaines, Woods, and Hils. Wherefore the Generall fent one Sidney Harrington vinto Captaine Huntly, M. Tederington Preacher and

to the Mafter of the ship to land their company in Possession Bay, a place which the Indians gave vnro our Generall, and therefore by him to named.

At whose landing according vnto the Generall his Commission, they were all sworne vnto certaine Articles, as that they should acknowledge Captaine Charles Leigh to bee their chiefe Generall of Guiana, under King James our King of Great Britaine, and that they flould not be hurtfull vnto the faid Generall his proceedings, but to ayde and affift him to their vitermost powers. Which being effected, our Generall came vnto vs, and after kinde falutations, hauing taken order for our Lodgings, for that time hee departed from vs. The Indians in like manner after their Countrey falhons kindly entertained vs , and after further conterence had To with our Generall, hee related at large vinto vs what had happened vinto him and his company in their absence; that by reason of his company their discontent and sicknesse, they had not tranelled up into the mayne Land; and therfore of his owne knowledge hee could not certifie

them of any other commoditie the Countrey did yeeld, then fuch as hee knew of before their departure, but the Indians had informed them , that there was up in the Mayne very rich com- Gold & filter. modifies, as also Gold, and filter, and especially in the River of Caliane, where the Caribes in- R. Calane, habit, who are enemies vinto our Indians of Wiapoco, and to called by them. Vpon which information our Generall thought it would have beene best to have peaceably traded with the Carthes: But our company milliked thereof, infomuch that the General altered his determi-

nation, and agreed to joyne with their friend Indians against the Caribes their enemies. 20 Whereof having advertized the chiefest of them, they most kindly embraced their offer prefently made eight of their, Canoas in areadinesse, furnishing them with Bread and Drinke. and Victuals, which for the most part are Crabbes and Fish, with some hundred of themfelues all naked in their Canoas , whome our Generall accompanied with some eight and thirtie of our company, leaving the rest to keepe our Shippe and Houses, shipping the most part of them in a Pinnasse that was built by one named Keele whereof hee made of a Canoa, which prooued a very fitting Pinnasse for those parts Expedition aand Rivers. This Pinnaffe after our Generals death the Indians did breike a pieces because gainst the Cathey thought wee would have stolne away from them in her vnto the Spaniards. And the ribes, reft of our company were placed in their Canoas, all of vs furnished with our Caleeuers:

and in wee departed on our Journey and Voyage on the fixe and twentieth of February, on which day at night wee came to a place which wee named Mount Huntly, where wee lod-Mount Huntle ged in the Woods that night, our Generall commanding vs to keepe a good watch: which wee need not to have done, for the Indians themselves were very watchfull, and wonderfull carefull of our Caleeuers, and for to keepe our Powder drie, after we had beene acquainted with them, and very diligent for to pleafe vs.

The next day at night we came to a place called the Con, and there wee lodged, and the next Con. day following we came into the River of Wia; and there we found two or three of the Caribes R. Wie. Canoas, but all their men were runne vp into the Woodes, and from thence our Generall went up farther into the River, where wee burned certains of their houses, not finding any 40 people in them. From whence our Generall purposed to have gone farther into the River of Calsane. But the Indians did aduertize him, that there was an English ship there, whom the Generall knew to bee one lobn fon of Plimmouth , that had beene four teene dayes before at Wiapoco, and came thither in the way of Trade. But our Generall would not faffer him fo to doe, for that he would not hinder himfelfe and his company, which our Generall at that time called to minde, and therefore thought it not good to proceed in the River, because hee doubted that there would have rifen contention betwixt his company and Iohnfons, and for that hee also misdoubted wee should have wanted Bread and Drinke if hee should have proceeded in his iourney, and therefore returned to Wispoco, where we arrived all, except one Canoa. About the fourteenth day of March.

Our Generall fent with foure of our Nation named Blake, Owen Goldwell, William Crandall. 50 and Henry Powell, with commodities up into the Countrey, fome thirtie leagues to a place called Urake to the Inhabitants there named Armakes, to trade with them. And after our journey by Prate. reason of such Raine and soule weather as wee had in the same, most of our company tell sicke. Armalese and for that they had no comfortable drinkes, nor any comforts that ficke persons doe want, divers of them died of the Fluxe; which the Indians (as also the Difease called the Calenture) Mortalitie, know right well for to cure, yet concealed it from our Generall. But vnto vs after his death they did reueale, which ficknesse among st the company caused no small griefe vinto our Generall, and chiefly to fee such wants amongst them; wherefore hee resolved with himselfe to goe for England, which hee acquainted the company with, promiting them to returne as spee-60 dily as hee could with provision.

Prefently after he had shipped his prouision, and such Commodities as hee had gathered together in the Countrey, and was in a readineffe to depart for England, he fickned of the Fluxe, and The Captains died aboord his ship, and was by Captaine Huntly secretly buried on the Land, the twentieth sicknesse and of March, whose death was so secretiv kept by the Captaine, and the Master of the ship, that death,

Mmmmm 2

1262 Dutchmans kindnesse. The English aide Indians against Indians. LIB.VI.

most of the company knew not thereof. The reason was , because there was provision too little for them which were shipped, and others of the company, if they had knowne thereof, would M. Tederington. have preffed to have come with them. Wherefore Captaine Huntly with Mafter Tederington our Preacher and others fet faile from Wispoco towards England, on the second of Aprill 1605, promiling a flip to returne vnto vs within feuen monechs, God not hindering their intents, which had happened, for Sir Oline Leigh to his great charge had prouided a great Fly-boat of the burthen of one hundred and seventy tunnes furnished for to have come for Wiapoco, as I have heard 35 persons lost since my being here in London, before Captaine Huntly his arrivall in England, but it pleased God

that the neuer came to Wiapoco, to that we had no comfort of her, being in number, left at Cap-

that the neuer came correspond, to the Country thirtie fine persons, of whom one named Richard IO Sacksie was by Captaine Leigh in his life time, apppointed to bee chiefe amongit vs, who shipped himselfe into a ship of Middleborough, who came into the River about the first of May Kindneffe of a 1605, and fourteene more of our company with him, and more that Zelander would have carried it Sackije would have fuffered him, tuch was his kindnesse towards our Nation. Hee gave vnto vs such wine and other comforts as he had, vnto our great reliefes. His comming vnto vs to Wiapoco, was to have fold vinto our Generall Negroes, whose kindnesse we did require in helping him to fuch commodities as wee had, and did get the Indians to provide Callaniand Guinea Wheate for bread, with Potato Roots for his Negroes to eat, who departed on the one and twentieth of May (after he had bin fome three weekes in the River of Wiapoco) for Point de Ray, where he shipped of our company into his Countrimens ships, some in one ship and some into others for 30 Holland, of which thips we heard that iome of them were taken by the Spaniards, and they were call over-boord with the Hollanders.

French thip.

Ten more de-

The fame day the Hollander departed, which was the one and twentieth of May, came vnto vs a French flup of Saint Mallors, who dealt very kindly with vs, wherefore weeded fuffer him to trade with the Indians, who did remayne therefore two moneths, voto whom many firance Indians did bring their commodities, and at his departure hee thipped ten of our men; hee tooke Powder, and other commodities of vs which we had, for their patiage into France leaving tenne of vs behind him, of which two died before the ship was out of ken of vs , Nicholas Wilkins and Andrew Vnderbill, But within some fourteene dayes after, two of those foure which our Generallhad fent to trade vnto Vrake, came vnto vs not expecting euer to haue feene them; the o- 30 ther two were drowned by the way. These two named Owen Goldwell, and William Candall, which came to vs. reported they had beene fome fortie miles vointo the Land . in a very plaine

pleasant Countrey, and brought commodities hereafter written of.

Two returns out of the Countrey to them. Th. y plant Flaxe, &c.

About the middle of July, our number of ten were all in good health, spending our time in planting of Caron called Flaxe, whereof we planted about twentie English Acres of Land, and iome Tabacco, observing the manners and conditions of the people, the nature of the Land and what commodities it verldeth, and what commodities of ours are in most request with them. About the third of October . the Indians did request vs for to accompany them in their warres against the Caribes, whereunto wee willingly did agree. They prouided seven Canoas furnishing them with men, and bread and drinke, and their victuals (for the most part Crabs, and fish of diuers forts, which they take every day fresh and fresh as they travell in the Rivers.) We went into the River of Calsane, which is some thirtie leagues from Wapoce, where wee rowed vp and downe, but we could not find any of the Caribes in the River, we perswaded them to land which they did, and marched up fome two miles vnto the Caribes houses, as wee marched to their houfes, the Caribes came to the water fide where our Canoas did Iye, but finding my felte there with my Caliuer, they had no great defire to come very neere vnto vs; and so after wee had burned fome of their houses, and killed divers of them, our company returned to our Canoas, having lost one of the Indian Captaines named Macato, others of the Indians were shot with three or our company, whom they healed as they did themselves, with a leafe, very speedily. They are armed in their warres with naked skins, and their Artillery are Bowes and Arrowes, 50

Indian Armes, their Weapons woodden Swords and Bucklers. They choose their Captaines at their drunken Mad choice of Feafts, he is placed in the middeft of the whole company, holding his hands on his head. After a patient Cape they have made an Oration vnto him to be valiant, and not to be treacherous vnto them, with

R. Callanelear Courage. After we had shipped our selues into our Canous, weerowed up and downe the river of Caliane, some eight or ten dayes, which wee noted for to be a very faire River and nauigable. It runneth divers waves from the mayne Land; and great ftore of fuch commodities hereafter ipecified, which the Countrey yeeldeth is to be hadin the faid River. We returned vnto our houses at Wiapoco, about the first of November. In this Journey we were kindly vsed of our conforts our Indians, and highly respected of them for our service which we did.

After a few dayes reit at Wiapoco, the Indians aduertifed vs of three Ships which were in the R. of Amazons. River of Amafons, and that one of them would come vato vs to the River of Wiapoco fome two moneths after, which proued to be true, but by what meanes they knew it I could not imagine,

fuch like speeches; they whip him with a Whip which maketh the bloud spring out of his bodie

at every stroke, and he never once mooueth thereat. By these meanes they try his patience and

CHAPIA. Wyapocos inhabitants, cuftomes, commodities. Child-birth. Funerals. 1262

except it were by their diuels meanes, which they call their Pejar, with whom the men haue Peyar dimining often conference, and it will answere them, but the women neuer that I could perceive; when the men will conferre with their Pepar, they suffer not a childe to be in the house, and when any of them are ficke, they know by him whether they shall line or dye; if he faith they shall dye, my of them are the ficke person no physicke; but if he say that he shall line, then they will gine him any thing they have for his comfort. After our company was advertised of a Shippes comnim any thing the with the Indians in their Canoas, fome into the River of Wiapoco, and Riverof Ard fome into the River of Aroson, to make away such commodities as we had left which were not many referring fome of them to give to our Indians for our victuals, although their kindenesse 10 towards vs was fuch, that if we had not had any commodities, they would not have fuffered vs

to have wanted. In which our journey we noted the River of Aracon to be a very pleafant Riper, and yeeldeth fuch commodities as other Rivers doe; also the River of Wiapoco is a very faire River, and nauigable, which entreth the maine more then fortie miles. And at the end thereof there is a very great fall of water which commeth ouer great hils and mountaines; fome of our Fall. company were on the tops of them, for some moneths in the yeare the Mountaines are drie. and we were informed that on the other fide of those great hils, there is a River which is inhabited with many Indians, and hath the like commodities that Wiegese hath, and that there is Gold in that place, which the Indians calleth Carocores but we never went to fee the fame River. by reason we had very small store of commodities.

20 At our returns to Wyapeco we gaue to the Indians for their paines, and prouiding of vs victuals in our journey an Axe, for which they would have travelled with vs two or three moneths time if occasion had required. And for an Axe they found ys victuals two moneths time at our houfes, as Bread, and Drinke, and Crabbes, and Fish, and all such kinde of fieth as they killed for themselves, for the same price : but if we defired any Hennes or Cockes of them, then we were to have given them some small trifles, as Beades ; so likewise if they brought vs in our travell to any of their friend Indians houses, we must doe the like as at out departure, to give them some trifles, as Kniues and Beades. So that we lived very good cheape.

There are of the Indians three forts which inhabit at Wyapoco with whom wee were, whole houses be scituated as neere the Rivers mouth as they well may be, they are named the Tayes, The Tayes, 30 the Armalkes, and the Suppayes. The Tayes are a people very proud, and vie much fourting and mocking of others, much given vnto danting, and are full of merriment, very ingenious, and ve- The Armster ry kinde of nature. The Armackes are a people of better carriage, and did vie our company with better respect then the Tayer. These two kindes of Indians come out of the West, wherefore they doe know all those Goaits, and they hate the Spaniards as deadly as they doe the Caribet. Supporter, The Suppayer area people more craftie in their dealings, for they will not part with any thing but will have commodities for commodities. They are not many of them, and wee could not Nakedneffe learne from whence they are come. The men and women goe all naked, without any couerture Men and woat all : they are very well himmed and proportioned of body. They never company together all men how they the day time, but as the women doe bring them their victuals, they doe eate vivally every day; live, they have doores at each end of their houses, the men remaine at the one end of the house, & the women at the other. The women are very neate in making of their Bread, which they call Aripo, and their drinke Palibe: they make their Bread and Drinke of a roote which they call Callani.

which maketh good Bread, and very fireng drink, very pleasant to drinke after one is vied to it. Their houses are built after the manner of our barnes in England, but much longer, for we have Their houses. measured some of them which were one hundred and fiftie paces long, and some twenty maces broad, one hundred persons keepe together in one of those houses; they are most artificially builded and thetched, fothat no raine commeth into them : although in Aprill, May, and June, and most of July very extreame raine doth fall there. Also they make Pots of earth, which shew Faire earther as if they were guilded, and some of them will hold thirtie or fortie gallons of liquor, they are Pots. 50 very faire to behold, and very sweete to keepe any thing in. They make Baskets of ditters forts Baskets most artificially, and their beds which they call Hamaker; they are some of them made of Cot-Hamaker. ten wooll, and fome of barkes of trees, they vie to lye in them hanging. They have a great delight to paint themselues both men and women, and especially when they goe to any Peast.

The women against their day of travell in childe bearth, make for that time a roome apart in Childebirth the house, whereunto they goe all alone, and are deliuered without any helpe at all; and preferely after the childe is borne, the calleth for her husband, and delivereth him the childe, who pre-Tently walheth it in a pot of water, and painteth it with fundry colours, which feemed very ftrange vnto me, that I did not heaze the women, once fo much as to groane, or to make any 60 moane at all in all her time of her travelle if any one of them dieth they doe vie to make great moane for them some ten or twelue daies together after his death or longer, according as the par- Funerals. tie was beloved in his life time.

And touching such kinde of Beasts as are in the woods as well about Wispeco as ith other pla- Beasts of those ces of the Countrie. There are great store of Deere, Hares and Conies, Hogges and many Mon-parts, kies great and fmall, blacke and greene, which forts are called Marmofites, and great red ones as

Mmmmm 3

bigge as Baboones (those the Indians doe kill and eate) and there are Leopards, and Porcupiness and Lyons; for in one place we did fee a Lyon which the Indians had killed; they brought all their boyes they had, and did lay them on the Lyons backe, and with a whip did give every of them three lashes, wherefore they did so we could not learne, but imagined it was because they should remember the place where the Lyon was killed: also there are great store of Otters, and a beait which is called an Aligator, he hath a cod that smelleth like the Muske cod.

Fowles.

Of Foules, I have feene Cockes, Hennes, Duckes, and Geefe; Partridges, Wood-doues, Herneshaws, Shouellers, and a foule of a crimion colour, called Passeray Fiemingo, & great store of white foules, which the Indiani call Wakerouses, & great store of Parrate, and Parrakeits, which she there in sholes like Starlings here in England : also there is a Parrat there as bigge as a great Hen, blew 10 and red, very beautifull to behold, and multitudes of foules of other forts, and Hawkes of divers forts in the woods and Rivers.

And of fifth there are great abundance of all forts both of fresh water fish, and Sea fish, and ing as before. Crabbes great store; and the Indian; take their fish with a kinde of wood which they beate against tome stone or other tree, vntill one end thereof be all bruised, and putting that into the River, presently the fishbecome drunke, and run themselves on the shoare, and swim aboue water, as our Haddockes doe in England.

Fruites.

There are store of good Roores and Plants with Fruites, as the Pina and Plantine, Potatoes, Nappoyes, and a fruite called of the Indians Poppojes, it is bigger then an Apple and very pleafant to eate, and fundry forts of Plums, and other forts of fruites whereof they make drinke very pleafant to be drunke.

Dring woods modities of the Countrie.

There are these commodities at Wispeces, and in other places of the Countrie where I have trauelled, Woods of blacke, red and yellow colours, Tobacco, Guina pepper, Cotten wooll, Carow (of vs called Flaxe) Anoto, Berries which dye a very faire Stammell colour, Spienard, whereof a precious Oyle may be made, Gummes of divers forts, Bee-waxe, Feathers of the best forts, fuch as Ladies doe weare in their hats, and other Feathers abundance. There grow naturally in many places Sugar Canes, and great abundance of Carow of it felfe, called of vs Flaxe, and of the Soaniard Pero. Also they make Oyle which they paint themselves with of a kinde of Nut bigger then a Chestnut, whereof are great abundance growing; and the Manery stone is to be had ger then a Liberthus, which on a guessian mo other place of the Indier that I have heard of. These things 10 I noted, but if fo we had expected certainely for to have had a Ship of our owne Nation to have come vnto vs, I my felfe, and the rest of vs should hate beene encouraged to have observed more then I have done. Neither had we any figte of commodities to trade up in the Maine, as the two Hollanders hath which are there, and were left there at our comming from thence by John Sims, Mailer of a Ship called the Hope of Amfterdam, of the burthen of one hundred tuns Franchted by the Merchants of Amsterdam, and by their Charter partie was bound to lye in the River of Wiapoco, and of Calane fix moneths time, which he did, for he lay with vs at Wyapoco from the twentieth of December vnto the twentieth of May following, trading with the Indians, and fought most after the Manite stone and Garon, which we call Flaxe. They furnished there two Factors very well with Commodities, which they left at 19) apoco. They dealt very kindely with 40 Their returne. vs, for he shipped all our whole company, which were nine of vs.

Taking our leaves of the Indians (who were as vnwilling to part from our companies, as we were willing to goe into our owne Countrie, faying vnto vs, that if any of vs euer came to them againe to trade with them; No other Nation should trade there but we. And after they knew Sir Walter Row. of our departure; whilest we remained amongst them, they brought their children vnto vs for to name after our great mens names of England, which we did. They had often speech of Sir Walter Ramleigh, and one came farre out of the Maine from Orenegne to enquire of vs of him, faying he promised to have returned to them before that time, After we had provided our necessaries, and fuch commodities as we had, and had given the Indians great charge of the Hollanders Factors, we shipped our felnes and departed from Wispecoon the last of May 1606. And from 50 thence we went into the River of Caliano, where our Master low Sims traded some thirtie dayes with the Caribes, and other of the Indians. This Sams was Masters mate of the Holland Shippe which Captaine Lee found in the River of Wiapaco at his first arrivall there : also he was Master of the Ship which the Indians advertised vs was in the River of Amazons, and according to their faying. God be thanked he came to vs to our Comforts.

Fold-MailO Trixidada:

After his departure out of the River of Calians, he failed vnto Trinidads, where the Spaniards entertained him and his companie very kindely, for they gave them Tobacco for all fuch com-Fountaine of modities as they had, and fuffered them to lade Pitch which goeth out of the ground there, for that our Mafter durft not goe to Point de Ree to lade Saule there as he determined, because hee heard that the Spaniard did lye there with their men of warre, and had taken certaine Holland 62 Shippes, and had flung duer boord all the men that were in them : our Master tooke his course from Trinidado to Amiterdam, where he arrived on the of and were in number of vs eight besides my selfe, named Owen Gandwell, Robert Gardner, William Crandall, Robert Becke. Richard Pren, William Frier, Gilbert Browne, and Richard Bonoche. Since my being here I vnderstand that one of our company which we left at Vishinge, named William Crandall is gone in a Shippe of Holland for Wyapece, which voyage they would have hired my selfe and others to have gone with them, by reason we have the Indians languages: such is the diligence of that Nation. with whom I wish well for the great kindenesse they shewed my selfe and others of our Nation.

CHAP. XV.

Part of a Treatise written by Master WILLIAM TVENER, Sonne to Dector Ty BN ER of London a Phisitian, touching the former Voyage.



He foureteenth of August, about two in the afternoone, we had fight of the Bar- The large bades, which bore of vs South South-west. The Land hath two points bearing journall of East and West one from another; and from the middle of it, it rists like Tose. their origin of Fig. 2. East and West one from another; and from the middle of it, it rists like Tose. their roige of origin and it tenne leagues broad, and is bathwest were house and inhabitants, haung this place, its East and West one from another; and from the middle of it, it rifeth like Tene- their voiage to brits, and is tenne leagues proad, and is parometer with note any initiations, and par for breuity of great force of Hogges, Piggeons, and Parnets. We hove for the Weltermoff part for breuity of this Iland, and io wee litered away West North-west; and North-west and their courts.

20 by West amongst for Saint Lucia.

and the River, River of Rafcols.

The fifteenth day, being thursday, we had fight of Saint Lucia, bearing West North-west of ve. This Hand of Saint Lucia is a very fertile He, bearing many forts of fruites, as Plantons, Potatoes, Pinos, Guanos, Pompins, Caffado, and many other fruites. It hath also great store "The vertices of Cotten wooll, and Tobacco, but their Tobacco is not very good. It hath also many wilde the Guanes a Beafts in it, as Tygars, Guanes, Alagartos, and other Beafts, which time would not permit vs thing worthy to fee. It hath also great itors of Pigeons, Parrats, Pellicans, Cars, and Dogges. The people goe the noting, tor to fee. It hath allo greatitore of rigeons, rarrats, remeans, care, and rogges, and people goe their nature is, naked, having very long haire, and are very honest, kinde hearted people. In this Iland wee set their nature is, one examine. our paffengers alhoare, and furnished them with all things necessary that our distressed Shippe one, it sets one could afford them. But they like treacherous idle disposed people, not regarding our kindeneste, a couring, and 30 nor pittying our necessitie, betraied our Boate from vs one morning as wee went ashoare, my eatea greene felfe and three or foure other Gentlemen being in her; and then they detained three Saylers one, it will flay which were drawing in the Boate keeping them for their owne vie, and afterward fent vs a- Problem. boord in a Carea, which we were faine to buy of them for Kniues. The Mafter and the Captaine feeing this their treachesous dealing, and being out of all hope to get their Boate againe, about thursday in the evening, being the three and twentieth of August, gave them a Peece of Ordnance with intent to beate downe their houses. We had no fooner let flye at them, but prefently they shot at ws againe, the bullet whereof came betweene our maine Mast and our Poope, but it hart no body. So that night we waied, and went to a Baye some two leagues to leeward of this roade where we first ankored. In this Bay there are halfe a dofen of Indian houses very pleago fantly scituated upon the top of a hill, with a fresh water River at the foote of the same hill; and in this Baye we had very good trafficke of linnen cleath, and many pleafant fruites, for our Hatchets and Knines. After we had roade here some fixe houres, we might plainly discerne our Boate underfaile, whereupon we presently fitted our small shot, hoping that their intent was

to come aboord, and betray our Shippe, but they tacked in, and rowed along it the shoare, till they came to the very Bay where we roade, and there they stopped, and we were in good hope to recouer our Boate againe, but they tarried there trading for their commodities in the face of our Ordnance : whereupon we feeing their daring boldnesse to be fo great that they prefu- En quedifier med to trafficke in our owne Boate before our notes, and to goe about as it were to flop vs from dia cines Pertrafficke ; we let flye at them fixe peeces of Ordnance, and a vallie of small shot; but what harme duxis miferes. we did amongst them, we know not, for they rowed away, and got out of fight of vs. We tear- Rosews Bar. med the Baye where we put these men a shoure Rogues Baye, & the Cape we called Cape Knaue, Cape Kn

way South South-east, and South-east and by South among for Saint Vincents. And vpon Satur-

we came within a Ships length very nigh the shoare, which put vs all in great feare, for if God

had not feneve a gale from the shoare, we had runne a ground, and we had had all our throates

cut by the Indians of that Iland. So that night we tried it off at Sea with our fore-top-faile, and

fore-faile, intending next day, being Sunday, to fland it in againe for the shoare (because we had

This very fame day being the foure and twentieth of August, we waied anchor, and steered a-

day, the five and twentieth day, in the afternoone we arrived at the Hand of Saint Vincents, where Saint Vincents

60 good hope of good trafficke there.) But the current had driven vs fo farre off at Sea by the next morning, and the winderlew to vehemently from the thoare, that we could by no meanes fetch the land; whereupon being foure leaves from the shoare of Saint Vincents, we steered away South South-west, and South-west and by South aftiongst for the Testigues. And the next morning be- Testigo. ing monday, we had light of the Granades; bearing of vs South east, but we could not fetch the Granade;

Current. Marearita. Tefliges. The nine and twentieth being Wednesday morning, we had fight of fine small Rocks, which bore of vs West and by North some fine leagues off : wee had also light of the lland of Blanco, whereby wee found that the Current had let vs, and doth fet to the North-east, and therefore your best course to goe from the Granades to the Testiges, is to steere away South-west,

The first of September being Friday morning wee had fight of Margarita, and at night wee cast anchor at the Westermoit Point of this Iland, called Point Macanao. The second day the next morning wee went ashoare with our Canoa, to see if wee could meete with any Spaniards, with whom wee might bargaine for fome Beeues. But wee could neither fee Spaniards. Beeues, nor fresh-water, onely we found the dung of Beeues. In this Iland of Margarita also there are great store of Pelicans. This morning wee weighed; and as soone as wee had 10 doubled the Point of Macanas, we had fight of the Rangeria, which is as it were a little towne. contayning in it some fortie or fiftie houses. Here wee did not land because wee faw no people. but flood it away South South-east and South and by East amongst for the Burdones. About mid-night wee came close aboard the sheare by an Hand, dalled Febacro, and then wee founded. and had ground at fortie fathome.

The third day being Monday mornine, wee were becalmed, forme three leagues off from the mayne. About twelve at noone the same day, wee had fight of Peins de Ray. The winde and breefes blew fo firongly of the shoare, that we could not come to anchor that night to the Burdones. These Burdones are no Towne, nor hath any houses, but belongeth to the Towne of

The fougth day being Wednesday, at foure in the afternoone, wee came to an anchor at the Burdones ; fo that wee were three dayes in getting to the shoare, being in fight of it all the while. About twelue at mid-night the same day, wee put out our layne-Net into the Sea for to catch some fish. And about foure in the morning wee found a great Sword-fish shut into the Net, which was fourteene foot long, and he had a f word some three foot long. The sword is square, and blunt at the end, having great prickles vpon each fide, of the bigneffe of a wikle Bores tuske. We fent our Canoa alhoare here, to parley with them bruing a flagge of truce. The Gouernour of Comena perceiving our Canoa comming afterer, fent a Molatato parley with our men, who faluted them very kindly, inquiring of vs, what newes in England, and whether the Conftable of Spaine were gone home into Spaine or no; we told him he was gone into Spaine, before 30 we fet out of England : we asked of him what newes in Comme of any English men, and when any had beene here; hee told them about a monath agos, and that one of them had like to have beene taken by a French Pirat, if a Flowming had not tooke his part. This night there came foure Spaniards aboard our ship from a Carpell which weater an anchor halfe a league from vs. These Spaniards burged with vs some Tabacco, and told va, that Captaine Lee had a Towne built for himfelfe, and that the Pinnasse had beene here a moneth agoe.

The feuenth of September in the afternoone, there came the adide of Mafter Edbeds to an anchor in the road where we rode, and then we welcommed them wish a flot, and they gave ve three for one : after these our falutations, the Captains of the dide; called Source, came aboard vs, and told vs, that Sir Oliph Lee his Pinnaffe was come home , before they fet out of England, 40 and that Captaine Lee dyed in the Pinneffe comming into England others of his companie faid, that they heard he was betrayed, and killed in his Hamaca in Wisners. He also sold vs, that he had left some thirtie men behind him which were in great miferie and extremitie, both for lacke

of health and scarcitie of victuals.

The nineteenth of September, Capcaine Squire weighed, and left ve going for Comonagota. The Spaniards dare not trucke with ve for any thing, but when that they steale aboard in the night; for if that they should be espyed they should be hanged : Cloth of Tiffue and Gold, cloth of Siluer, Veluet, Sattins, Silkes, fine woollen cloth and linnen, as Cambrick, Lawne, Holland; new Trunkes, Piftols, Fowling peeces, and Muskets are very good commodities to truck with the Spaniards, and all other places in the Indies. I noted one thing amongst many things , con- co cerning the nature of that climate of Comuna. It is monftrous hat all the day long till it be noone, and then there blowes a coole breefe; and at noone you shall alwayes have thundering and lightning without any raine for the most part. The towne of Comore stands two miles from the Sea-lide, and cannot be leene by reason of the trees which concrete fight of it, but you may see the Gouernours house, for it stands upon the top of a Hill, looking over the trees, which

Seven faile of The eight and twentieth of September being Saturday, wee efpyed feuen faile of Fhramings bound for Ponitra. The thirtieth day being Monday, we weighed for Lazatra; and were fleered away North and North and by West for Pontra from Camana; and about fixe of the clocke in the morning we arrived there fafely.

The fourteenth of October, Captaine Cathin and two other Genelemen, went out of our thip vpon fome discontentments, miliking of the Master of our ships vsagatowards them , and had their passage in two Hollanders, that were riding at Ponitra. The five and twentieth, about eight a clocke at night wee weighed at Pondra, having two Flemmife thips our conforts with vs. On

the thirtieth we had fight of the Westermost end of Porto Rico, called Cape Roxo, and of a little Hand fome foure leagues off, called Echro. Here we ftayed till Friday and Saturday, hoping for to have gotten the shoare for fresh water, and Oranges; but we had no winde at all to serve our turnes. About Saturday at noone, there came vnto vs a Flemmib boat with a dozen men in it i these men told vs, that vpon Sunday the seuen and twentieth day of this moneth, there came nineteene faile of Spaniards, and that they had taken all the ships which we left behinde vs. in number ten, fauing two ships of Captaine Mogeronnes, which scaped by their swift tayling, and that they themselves being ashoare with their Boat made an escape from Pontra, and so came to vs at Porto Rico, which is one hundred and threefcore leagues, where wee retrefhed our felues 10 with fresh water and Oranges.

The ninth of November being Saturday, wee difembogued from Porto Rico. The two and twentieth of December we faw Flores, one of the Hands of the Afores.

CHAP. XVI.

A Relation of a voyage to Guiana performed by ROBERT HARCOVET of Stanton Harcourt in the Countie of Oxford Elquire. To Prince CHARLES.



N the yeere of our Lord 1608, and the 23. of March, when I had furnished my 23. March. felfe with one ship of fourfcore tunnes, called the Rofe; a Pinnasse of tixe and thirtie tunnes, called the Patience; and a Shallop of nine tunnes, called the Lul. 6, which I built at Darmount; and had sinshed my other buinness there, and prepared all things in readinesic to begin my voyage, the winde reasonably serfelfe with one ship of fourscore tunnes, called the Rofe; a Pinnasse of fixe and 1608. uing, I then imbarked my companie, as followeth.

In the Rofe, I was accompanied with Captaine Edward Fisher, Captaine Edward Harney, The Rofe. Mafter Edward Gifford, and my Cou'in Thomas Harcourt : and besides them, I had of Gentlemen and others one and thirtie Land-men, two Indians, and three and twentie Mariners and Saylers. In the Patience, my brother Captaine Michael Harcourt, had with him of Gentlemen and o- The Patience, thers twentie Land-men, and eleven Mariners and Saylers. In the Lilly, Jafter Lilly the Ma- Th. Lilly. fter, had one Land-man, and two Saylers : to that my just number (too great for to few ih ps of no greater burden) was in all fouricore and seuenteene, whereof threescore were Land-men. Be- Land-men ing thus imbarked, wee let faile from the Rainge at Dartmouth the faid three and twentieth of They et faile March; but the winde altering vpon a fudden, put vs backe againe that evening; and about the as. of two of the clocke the next morning (it comming better for vs) we weighed anchor, and put to March. Sea: the evening following we lost fight of the Lizzard, and fleered away for the Canaries.

The feuenth day of Aprill we fell with Alegranza and Lancerote, two flands of the Canaries : They arrive at we flood in with Alegranza and came to anchor on the South-well fide thereof: that evening Alegranza. 40 and the next day I landed my companie to exercise their limmes on shoare : in this Iland wee found no Inhabitants, nor fresh water, neither fruitfull Tree, Plant, Herbe, Graffe, nor any thing growing that was good, onely an abundance of vnwholfome Sea-fowle, which after one meale were vulauourie and distastefull, and a few wilde Capritos, or wilde Goats, which the craggy Rocks defended from our hands, and hungrie mouthes,

The eighth of Aprill we departed from Alegranza, and directed our course for Tenerife, ano. Tenerife. ther of the llands. The eleventh day I fent the Pinnaffe, and the Shallop to water at the Calmes, and there to attend my comming; but with my ship I held my course for Orotano, a Towne on the other fide of the Hand, in hope to get some wine amongst the Merchants there; but not being able (by reason of a contrarie winde) to double Punta de Nega, wee altered off course from 50 Wine to Water. And the twelfth day wee passed by Santa Cruz, and watered that evening at

This watering place is very convenient for all fuch as paffe by those Hands, and is thus to bee An exeellent found: there is a woodden Croffe neere vnto it, the high Pike of Tenerife beareth due North watering from it. There is also a ledge of Rocks to the Eastward of the landing place, which is a short Place. Sandie Bay. When you are landed, you shall finde the place about fortie or fiftie yards from

Then we flood on our course for the River of Wispoco in Guisna, having a prosperous winde, faire weather, and a smooth Sea. The ninth day of May, wee fell into the Current of the great and famous River of Amazones, which putteth out into the Sea such a violent and mightie Fresh water 60 streame of fresh water, that being thirtie leagues from land, we drunke thereof, and found it as in the Sea 30, fresh and good as in a Spring or Poole.

This Ruer for the great and wonderfull breadth (con:ayning at the mouth neere fixtie land. This Ruser for the great and wonderfull breadth (contayning at the mouth neere lixtue loloph Actila. leagues) is rightly termed by losephus Acosta the Empresse and Queene of all Flouds, and by Hieron Grasse. Histonymus Grana Tarraconensis: it is faid to bee the greatest not onely of all India, but also of Tarraconensis

The denenth of May they made land in The Patience in danger of

wrack.

the whole world; and for the greatnesse, is called of many the Sweet Sea. It rifeth and floweth from the Mountaines of Peru, and draweth out her streames in many windings and turnings vnder the Equinoctiall, for the space of one rhousand and fine hundred leagues and more : although from her Fountaines and Springs vnto the S:a it is but fixe hundred. When we entred into the aforelaid Current, we founded, and had fortie foure fathome water, fandie founding. The tenth day the colour of the water changed, and became muddie, whitish, and thicke; then we founded againe at noone, and had thirtie fathome; and seuenteene at soure in the afternoone. The eleuenth day at eight of the clocke in the morning wee made land, the vitermost Point thereof bearing West from vs. and came to anchor in five fathom water.

At night the Patience putting in to neere the shoare, came to anchor in two fathome and a Ia halfe water vpon the floud which fell from her vpon the ebbe, and left her drie vpon the Ozze and the next floud comming in , did fo shake and beate her against the ground , that before shee could get off, her rudder was beaten away, and her ribs fo rent and crafed, that if Almightie God had not preserved her, shee had beene wrackt: but (God be thanked) with much ador shee came off into deeper water, and mended her Rudder, as well as the time and place would afford means. Then we followed on our course, coasting along to the North North-west, the Landso trending, It is very shoale all along this Coast, the ground fost oaze, but no danger to be feared, keeping our thip in fine fathem water.

When we came to the latitude of two degrees and a halfe, wee anchored in a goodly Bay, by · liands called certaine Hands, called Carripapoory, I did at that time forbeare to make particular discouene of 20 this Coast, intending (if God ipare me life) to make a perfect discouerie of the famous River of Amazones, and of her feuerall branches, and Countries bordering upon it, and of all this tract of land from the Amazones, vnto the River of Wiapoco, which contayneth many goodly Prouinces, and Signiories, which are in this discourse, but briefly mentioned : For at this time I purposed onely to prosecute my first project, which hastened me vnto another place.

The Bay of Warece. Indian boats.

A meffencer

fent to the

The Indians

couer their

privities.

Indiane.

From hence I stood along the Coast, and the leventeenth of May, I came to anchor in the Bay of Wienoco : where the Indians came off vnto vs in two or three Cances, as well to learne of what Nation we were, as also to trade with vs; who understanding that we were English men bold-Iv came aboard vs, one of them could fpeake our language well, and was knowne to fome of my companie to be an Indian, that iometime had beene in England, and ferued Sir John Gilbert many 30 yeeres: they brought with them such dainties as their Countrie yeeldeth; as Hens, Fish, Pinas, Platanaes, Potatoes, bread of Cassaui, and such like cates, which were heartily welcome to my hungrie companie : In recompence whereof, I gaue them Kniues, Beades, Jewes trumps, and fuch toyes, which well contented them. But when I had awhile entertayned them, and made known vnto them the rerurne of the Indian, Martin, their Countriman, whom I brought with mee out of England, they feemed exceeding joyfull, supposing that he had beene dead, being about foure yeeres since he departed from them.

The Indian before mentioned to have ferued Sir Iohn Gilbert (whose name was Iohn) whilest he lived (for he is now dead, and dyed a Christian) was a great helpe vnto vs. because hee seake our language much better then either of those that I brought with mee, and was ever firme and 40 faithfull to vs, vntill his death. By him I vnderstood that their Towne was situate vpon the East file of the Hill in the mouth of Wiapoco, and was called Caripo: that the Indian, Martin, was Lord thereof, and that in his absence his brother was chiefe. Moreover, hee certified mee that the principall Indian of that River was called Carafana (who by good fortune) was then at A village cal. Caripo, and to having spent some time in other conference and friendly entertainment, they tooke their leave, and departed for that time. I fent one of my companie with them to give notice to Carafana, and the rest of the Indians of Caripo, that I had brought home their Country. man Martin, whom they all thought to bee dead, and another of their Nation also, who had kindred and friends amongst them; to defire him to come aboard my ship, and to bring with him the principall Indians of Caripo, that I might declare vnto them the cause of my comming into 50 their Countrie, and conferre with them of other matters intended for their good. The next day I came into the River of Wiapoco, and anchored over against the Sandy Bay.

The day following the Indians came aboard as I had defired, and brought vs good flore of their Countrie prouition : Carafana, and one or two more of them were attyred in old clothes. came aboa:d. which they had gotten of certaine English men, who (by the direction of Sir Walter Raleigh) had traded there the yeere before; the reit were all naked, both men and women; and this I ob-The chief men ferued amongst them, that although the better fort of men (especially the Taios) doe couer their of the Nation primities, by wearing ouer them a little peece of cotton cloth, pretily wouen after their manner; yet did I neuer fee any of their women couered in any part, either aboue or beneath the wafte, albeit they daily converied among ft vs, but were all (as the plaine proverb is) even flarke 60 The women

> At their comming aboard my flip, first Carafana as the principall amongst them, and after him the rest, saluted and welcommed vs after their rude manner. I vsed them with all curtesie, and entertayned them as well as the straight roome would give me leave, giving them good store

of Aquanta, which they loue exceedingly: I presented to their view their two Countrimen. Mertin the Lord of their Towne, and Anthonie Canabre, who was a Christian, and had lived in England fourteene yeers, both which Lhad brought home wnto them : when they beheld them. and after falutations, and some conference, knew to bee the same persons, whom they supposed had beene long fince dead, they expressed much joy and contentment : and winderstanding (from their owne mouthes) how well I had vied them, they feemed to be better pleafed with our comming : and when their rude falutations to their new-come Countrimen were ended , I tooke them apart, and thus declared the cause of my comming.

em apart, and the state of their remembrance the exploits performed by Sir Walter Raleigh in their Their confe-To Countrie, in the reigne of our late Soueraigne Queene Elezabeth, when (to free them from fertil- rance with the tude) he most worthily ranquished the Spaniards at Trandado: burned their Towne, tooke their Indians. tude) he most worthily ranquined the Spaniaras at Francaios. Our red their 10 whe, tooke their Sir W. Religibi bound by the necke with collers of Iron; and with great labour and perill discouered the River parts. See of Orenogue, and the Countries adiopning, as farre as the Prounce of Aromana, the Countrie of Hab. 18.3. Topiamary, and the River of Caroli beyond it: And that their Countrimen called the Orenoanenoni (who are the borderers of Orenoque) did then most willingly sibmi: and render themselves The Orenoque under the fubication of the late Queene; all which they well remembred, and faid, that Sir pairendred

Walter Raleigh promised to have returned againe when them long fince.

Valer Ratego promited to nate returned against vivo month, buy meet on of other imployments iests to Queen Then I excused his not returning according to his promise, by reason of other imployments Elizabeth. 20 of great importance imposed woon him by the late Queene : shewing them moreour, that when he could not (for that cause) returns himselfe, hee tent Captaine Keymis to visit them, and to Cap. Keymis bring him true intelligence of their eftate (supposing that hee had left no Spaniards behinde him his voyageto at Trividade of power tomoleft them) to the end that reliefe and aide might bee prepared for Guiana. them, according to their necessities, and oppression of their enemies. Then I told them of the death of the late Queene, whereby that bufineffe of theirs was againe hindered.

Moreover, I declared vinto them, that our gracious Soueraigne Lord King lames, who now reigneth ouer vs (being the onely right and lawfull Heire, and Successor, to the Crowne and Dignitie of the Realme of England, after the death of the late Queene) was throughout the whole Land proclaymed King of England; and to comming to reigne oner vs, hath been ever 30 fince busied in ordering the State and affaires of the Kingdome, which being (by his great wise-

dome) fetled in tranquillitie and peace, like a good, gracious, and worthy King, doth now permit his Subjects to trauell abroad into forraine Countries, and Nations, to aide and affift all fuch as are vinuitly molested by their enemies. Whereupon, I and the rest of these worthy Gentlemen my affociates and friends, having intelligence by some that beene followers of Captaine Charles Lee (who was a man well knowne amongst them , and heretofore had taken Possession of possession of their Countrie to his Majesties vie, and was planted divers yeeres in Wiapoco, where the Countrie hee lyeth buried) of the great variance and discord depending betweene them the allied Nati- tiken at #14. ons, the Taior, Armaceas, Sappaios, and Paragontos; and their enemies the Charibes (all inhabi- 1000, by Capons, the rame, Arrentem, organization of Amazones, and Designable) have made a long and dangerous voy- Mainties vic. 40 age into those parts, to appeale their diffencions, and defend them against the Charibes, or other enemies that shall molest or oppresse them : and now being there arrived, doe intend to make

fearch in those Countries for convenient places, where such of our Nation, as shall hereafter come to defend them, may be fitly feated to dwell amongst them; that if any of those Nations shall attempt at any time to diffurbe the quiet living of their Neighbours, they may have flore of Enolifo friends at hand and amongst them, that will not spare their paines to appeale their difcords, nor their lines to defend them from harme. When I had thus declared vnto them the cause of my comming, they made this answere : that

with our comming they were well pleafed; but our number of men they thought too great . that they wanted meanes to prouide vs bread fufficient for them all, having but a small Towne. 50 few Gardens, and flender prouision for their owne companies, because fince Captaine Lee his death, and his mens departure from them, they never made provision for any strangers.

I replyed, that albeit their Towne was fmall, and their Gardens few (for the grounds wherein they plant their Caffaui, whereof they make their bread, they call their Gardens) yet their Countrie was full of Inhabitants, and had ftore of Gardens to supply our wants of bread , and was plentifully stored with other provisions sufficient for a greater number, which I defired might bee weekely brought vnto vs, as neede required, for that I meant not to take it without recompence, but would give them for it fuch commodities as should well please them, which they wanted : as Axes, Hatchets, Kniues, Beades, Looking-glaffes, Iewes trumps, and fuch like things wherein they most delight.

Then they defired to confult among it themselves, which I permitted, and expected their an- The tradium go fwere about two houres, which time they fpent in debating the matter after their manner, and to countell. drinking Aquanta, and in the end defired my presence, and made me this answere.

That they were contented and well pleased we should live among them; that they would Their answere,

furnish vs with houses to lodge in , and prouide all necessaries for vs in the best manner they

generally goe

could. But whereas I faid our King would permit his people to line and abide among ft them, and defend them against their enemies: they answered, it was a thing they greatly defired, and had expected long, and now they made much doubt thereof, and faid they were but words, having *By Si: Walter heretofore beene * promifed the like, but nothing performed. To refolue that doubt, and make good my speeches, I told them what I had spoken should certained be performed, and to that Captaine Lee, and I would leaue my brother in their Country, and some of my company with him, to dwell amongst them, vntilla greater supply might be sent from England for their better desence, Then they leemed to give credit to my words: And so after much talke, and many complements to please the naked people, I gaue to Cara fana a Sword, and to the rest fome other things, which pleased them well : and then after their manner taking their leaue, they departed. The next 10 day the Indian Martin went ashoare, and seemed joyfull that he had againe recourred his owne

The Indian Martyn goeth ashoare. The English

The day following I tooke land, with my companies in armes and colours displayed, and went vo vnto the Towne, where I found all the women and children standing at their doores to behold vs. The principall Indians came out vnto me, and inuited me into the Captaines house, which vntill the returne of Martyn belonged vnto his brother, as chiefe Lord in its absence : 1 went vp with them and was friendly featled with many kindes of their Countrie cates s when feated by the I had well eaten and refreshed my selfe, Martys tooke me by the hand and said, that he had not any thing wherewith to requite my kindenesse towards him, in such manner as he defired ; nei-The gratefull ther had he fuch delicate fare, and good lodging for vs, as in England heretofore we had beeney. 20 ther had he nich userizate nare, non good rooging for va. as in anyome intercorore we had beenew, feed-ync; but humbly interacted me to accept of his house in good part for my felfe, and the Gentlemen of my company; and the rest should be lodged in other /mdam house advoying: that luch provision as the Country yeeldeth, should be provided for vs. His speech was approued by the rest of the Indians present, who tooke me by the hand one after another, and after their manner bad me welcome. I gaue them many thankes, and fome rewards for their kinde entertainment; and then disposed my company in convenient lodgings: but yet I kept a continual guard, as in time of warre.

The ftrength of the place,

When I had thus fetled my company at this village, I went out to view the scituation of the The anguly ferled accomps place, and the aduantages for defence thereof. It is a great rockie Mountaine, not accessable by reason of fast woods, and steepe rockes, but onely in certaine places, which are narrow foote- 30 paths, very steepe and easie to be desended : whereby we were lodged as in a Fort, and most connemiently in respect the harbour was so neese, for our Ships did ride at anchor underneath vs. ouer against the foote of the hill.

continuall

Being thus arrived vpon the Coast, I found the time of the years so vnfeasonable for our purpose, that (by reason of continual raines) we were constrained to lye still and doe nothing for the space of three weekes, or a moneth: in which idle time I conferred with the Indians, sometime with one, fometime with another; and by helpe of my Indian Anibony Canabre, and the Indian lobn aboue mentioned (whom I vied for my interpreters) I gathered from them as well as I could, the State of their Countrie; the manner of their government and living; how they flood with their neighbours in tearmes of peace, and warre; and of what power and strength 40 they were, I inquired also of the seasons of the yeare in those parts : of their division, and account of times, and numbers; of the prouisions of their Countrie for victuals, and other necessaries; and made a diligent inquiry of all the commodities their Country yeeldeth, and what things were of most estimation among st them : all which I have briefely declared vitto your Highnesse in this following discourse.

The bounds and limits of Сиівче.

His goodly Countrie, and spacious Empire, is on the North part bounded with the Sea, and the great River of Oronogue, wherein Sir Walter Releigh performed his worthy and memorable discouery on the East and South parts, with the famous River of Amazones: and on the West part with the Mountaines of Pers.

Аттаросо а branch of Aтачонея. Arravas.

Maicary.

The westermost branch of the River of Amazones that fallerh into the Sea, is called Arrapoco: vpon which Riuerare feated many goodly Signiories well deferuing a particular discourry, which shall (by Gods permission) be performed hereafter. To the North of Arrapoco is the Riuer of Arrawary, which is a goodly River, discovering a gallant Countrie. From Arrawary vnto the River of Cassipurogh extendeth the Province of Arricary; containing the Signiories of Arrawary, Maicary, and Coofbebery; of which Anakyury is principall, who by Nation is a Taio, and fled from the borders of Orenoque for feare of the Spaniards, to whom he is a mortall enemy. He Analy-v-ry hath feated himselfe in the Prouince of Arricary, and now dwelleth at Morooga in the Signiory of Maicari. To the North North-west of which, there falleth into the Sea a River called Congwini, whereupon the Signiory of Coofbebery bordereth; whereof an Indian named Laonard Raga- 61 pois Chiefe, under the subjection of Anabi-v-ry. This Indian is christened, and hath beene heretofore in England with Sir Walter Raleigh, to whom he beareth great affection: he can a little Longed Rapage vnderstand and speake our language, and loueth our Nation with all his heart. During my 2. boad at Wispoco, having intelligence of him, and of his Country, and that certaine stones were

CHAPIG. Cooshebery a healthfull and delightfull Province. Wiapocoory. 1271

found therein, supposed to be Diamonds: I fent my Cozen, Captaine Fifter to discouer the same and fetch fome of those stones, to be resolved of the truth.

At his comming thither, Leonard entertained him with all kindenesse, not after the ordinary rude manner of the Indians, but in more civill fashion, and with much respect and love, he furnifhed him with guides to conduct him through the Country to the place where the Stones were nished him with guides to conduct min through the County to the place white measures with found, being fifty miles Southward prints the Land: beyond which place there is an high Mountaine appearing in fight, called Compl. and on the top thereof (as the Indians report) a great A Mountaine Mountaine appearing in ig.

A Mountaine
Lake or Poole, full of excellent fish of divers kindes. The Countrey was as pleasant and decalled (2006). lightfull, as euer any man beheld ; but the Stones not Diamonds : yet they were Topales, which 10 being well cut, and set in Gold by a cunning workman, doe make as faire a shew, and gue as Toppes in Congood a luftre as any Diamond whatfoeuer: which yeelde good hopes of better to be found here- flebery. after: For where the Topas is found on the Mountaines of Tenaferen, in the East Indies, the great reft fore of Diamonds are also found.

When my kiniman returned, Daptaine Leonard came with him to Wiapeco (being about an hundred miles from his owne Country) onely to visite me and my company; for the great love he did beare to Sir Walter Raleigh, and our Nation. I much maruelled to fee him, for afferedly he is the braueit Indian of all those parts. After he had beene with me a day or two, he earneilly requested me to send some of my company into his Countrey, which he greatly commended for the wholesome ayre, and plenty of victuals, alleading that the place where then wee lived (by 20 his owne experience) was very vnhealthfull, that our men would there be fubiect to fickeneffe and die : and for an instance he named Captaine Lee, and his company, who formerly were planted there, and almost all dyed by ficknesse in the same place : But he assured me that his own Country Coolbebers was of a good ayre, pleasant, and healthfull; that there they might have roome sufficient to build English houses in (for those were the words hee vied) that thither they should be welcome and should want nothing. Much he perswaded to draw me to his desire. which by his importunity I granted, and accordingly performed it; finding his Country answer- The quality of rable to his report; being for the most part champian ground, naturally intermixe of plaine the Propince fields, fruitefull meadowes, and goodly woods, in fuch admirable order, as if they had beene of confector, planted artificially by handy labour. The fields appearing about the meadowes in pleasant and 30 delightfull manner, presenting here and there vnto the eye, from flately Mounts, most beautifull and lively prospects: the meadowes bordering on every side betweene the fields and woods, the

Mounts, Valleyes, Meadowes, Fields, and Woods, afford as excellent and healthfull habitations as can be wished or defired, but is not greatly peopled. From the River of Cafforrock N. Westward to the River of Arracon, and vp further into the Land towards the West, and South-west, as farre as the River of Army (which falleth into Wiapoce about the ouerfalles) extend the Prouinces of Arracory, and Morownia, which also to the Arracory and landward (by the relation of my Brother, Captaine Mubael Harcourt, and Captaine Harney, Morrownia 40 who have travelled and discourred those parts) are pleasant and delightfull plaine Countries, like

woods growing in the lowest valleys betwixt the meadowes, and commonly are swatered with

fweete and pleasant fresh freames running through them : which frange and rare mixture of

vnto Coofebory. The Arracory Countrie is well pleopled, and their chiefe Captaine is called Ipero. Betwixt the Mapocoories and Arracoories there is no hearty loue and friendship, yet in outward shew they hold good quarter. In Morrownia, there is also store of people, which are friendly Indians. In that Prouince there is a very high Hill called Callipany, fallioned like a Su-An exceeding gerloafe, or a Pyramie, which oueruieweth and discouereth all the Territories adiopning about high Hill cal-

Beyond the Country of Morrowni to the Southward bordering the River of Army, is the Prouince of Norrak: the people thereof are Charibes, and enemies both to the Morrowinnes, the in- Norrak. habitants of Morrownia, and to the Wiapopories; who are also under the subjection of Analy-v-50 ry, the principall and greatest Lord, or Cassique of all the Taior in those Proninces, bordering vp. date was

on the Sea betwixt the Amazones, South-eastward, and Deffequebe North-westward. From the River of Amazones to the Bay of Wiapoco, there fall into the Sea thefe Rivers fol- Rivers falling lowing: Arrapoco (a branch of Amazones) Arrawary, Micary, Conawini, and Caffipuroph: In into the Sea,

the Bay of Wispocco to the East of the faid River, there falleth into the Sea the River of Arracon; betweene A. and into Arracon falleth the River of VVatts. To the North of VVapoco there is a small creeke magnet and and into Arrecon Latert the Arrest of the Sea a dayes iourney Westward vp into the land; some take "Manaya creek." this creeke to be a River, but they doe erre in that opinion, it having neither Spring nor Fountame from whence it falleth, To the North and North-west of the said creeke, there is a ridge of high Mountaines running towards the River of Apurwaca, the foile whereof is excellent and 60 fertile for Tobacco, and beareth the best of all those parts; so are the Sugar-canes there growing fertile for Tobacco, and bearern one period all thore paris; no are the page. the best and fairest that are found you the Coast and all the track of Land betwire the River the best and fairest that are found you the Coast and all the track of Land betwire the River The Province the best and farrett that are sound you also counted any an are the trace of Wispeco, and Aparmaca, is accounted the Prounce of Wispeco, and Aparmaca, is accounted the Prounce of Wispeco, and Aparmaca, is accounted the Prounce of Wispecon, of VViapoco, and VVianary. Beneath the overfals in VViapoco (which are forty miles distant from the Sea) there is much people, both of Taios, and Armacon: of the Taios in this River Cara-

Nanna

Arravicary taine of the Caiane. Foure or fine men placed at

of their go. uernment.

Murderand ouer their The Irdians haur mayay

Diuerslanguacoaft.

The Indians make wir for their women.

The Charibes warte veon Leon rd.

pons of the Leanard defizeth aide of the English.

Cana is chiefe. Of the Armaccas, Arriquona is principall. In Wianary there are few Indians. and Culureno is their chiefetaine.

To the North- west of the Bay of Wiapoco, there fall into the Sea the River of Apurwaca, Cowo. Wio and Caiane, Apurwaca is a goodly River, and well inhabited : Como is voide of inhabitants : to the North- Wie is a faire River and leadeth many dayes journey into the high land, and discourreth a fertile west of Wigger and hopefull Countrey. At Carane there is an excellent harbour for shipping of any burden. which heretofore by Captaine Lawrence Keymis was called Port Howard : On the Starbood fide. as you enter this harbour, there is an Hand of low land, called Muccombre, fcituate betwixt the River of Catane and Meccoria, containing in circuit about fixteene leaves. In this Iland there Muccumbroan are two hils, the one called Muccumbro, whereof the Hand taketh the name; the other called Io Cillicedemo: from these hils the greatest part of the lland may be ouerniewed, which containeth many goodly Pastures and Meadowes intermixt with some Woods, and is full of Deere, both red

On the Larboard fide, as you enter Caiane there is another Hand of high Land, called Mattoory, in quantitie much like vnto the first : this liand for the commodious scituation, is of great eff at for the defence of the harbour, affording naturally two such notable concenient places for the planting of Ordnance for that purpole, as no industry of art could deuise better, or more auaileable.

The Inhabitants of this Prouince of Caiane, are Charibes, their principall commander is called Arranicary, who dwelleth at Cillicedemo before mentioned ; we have found him truthy and faith- 20 full to our Nation but; to our friend Leonard of Coofbebery, he is a mortall enemy. At this mans house Heft foure or five of my company, thereby to hold amity and friendship with the Charibes, to learne their language, and to keepe peace betweene them and the Taios, Armaceas, and other Narions their allies. To the South-westward of these Prouinces about mentioned towards the high land, there be many others which hereafter shall be more exactly described by a second

These Provinces & Signiories to the landward are not plentifully inhabited, the greatest numbers of people are feated neare vnto the Rivers, & travell from place to place in Canoes There is no fetled government amongst them, onely they acknowledge a superiority, which they will obay as farre as they please. In every Promince or Signiory there is a chiefe Castique, or Cap- 30 taine, commanding all: So likewise in enery Towne and Village, they commonly chastise murder and adultery by death, which onely are the offences punished amongst them, and certaine . Adultery pungfilled yearsh persons are appointed by them to execute those punishments. The Indians take wives, ouet The Indian by whom they are excreame realous, and expect great continencie in them; for if they take them nature leafous in adultery, they prefently caufe their braines to be beaten out. The better fort of persons haue every one of them two or three wives, or more, the rest but one ; accounting him that hath most wines, the greatest man. Their wines (efpecially the elder fort) are as fernants vnto them, for they make their bread and drinke, dreffe their meate, ferue them at meales, and doe all the other bunneffe about the house.

These Provinces are peopled with divers Nations of severall languages, namely, Taios, Ar- 40 maccas, Sappaios, Paragotos, and Charibes. The Charibes are the ancient inhabitants, and the other Nations are such as have beene chaied away from Trinidado, and the borders of Orenoaue. And foralmuch as they have vnited themselves in those parts, the Charibes have held them in woon the Sea continuall warres, but the Taiss and the other Nations their Allyes, are growne to firong, that they have conftrained the Charibes of the Sea-coast to contract a peace with them, yet beare no hearty loue the one Nation to the other : but with the Charibes inhabiting the in-land parts vpon the Mountaines, they have as yet no peace at all; for they doe often times come downe voon them in great numbers, spoile and burne their houses, kill their men, and carry away their women, which is the greatest cause of warre and hatred amongst them; whereof our men haue seene experience in Coofhebers, where happened an accident worth the observing, which I will here 50 declare vnto your Highnesse. The Indian Leonard Ragapo, before mentioned, is a Taio, who finding the Countrey of Coopbebery flenderly inhabited, hath ferzed vpon it for his owne Signiorie; and at his earnest request, I sent soure Gentlemen of my company to remaine there with him. The naturall inhabitants that dwell upon the uttermost bounds thereof, towards the South, and West, are Charibes, and enemies to him, and to his Nation : for while our men vnknowne to the Charibes) flaied at Coofhebery, they affembled themselves together to the number of two hundred or more, and came dome into his Signiorie, burned and fpoiled houses, roafled one woman, tooke many prisoners, and intended to affault him also: which to preuent he armed about fiftie of his Indians, with their vivall weapons; which are Bowes and Arrowes, long The viual wea- Staues sharpened at the point, and with fire hardened: wodden Swords and Targets very artih- 60 cially made of wood, and painted with Beaits, and Birds: He requeited also our men to aide and affift him with their Muskets, which I commanded them to doe, vpon all fuch occasions offered: And so being all in readinesse, Leonard (as their captain) led them on to intercept his enemies; and as I have heard by Master Henry Baldwin (who then was prient, and (to observe the manner

CHAP.16. The fight of the English terrifie the Charibes. Guiana's feasons &c. 1272

of their warres, gaue him leave to command all)he bravely performed that exploit, in good order after their manner, and with great judgement and resolution. For in the Front, he first placed our foure Englishmen, by two in a ranke; next to them, two Indians armed with woodden Swords The manner and Targets; then two Archers; and after them two men with sharpned states, instead of of ordering Pikes; and in like mariner ordered, and ranked all his Company. Being thus prepared, hee then mining marched against the Charibs, who (neere at hand) were comming in the same order towards the warres. him; but when they approached, and (vnexpected) perceived our English men among it the Taiss, they were much amazed, and made a fudden fland: which Leonard perceiving, guelfed rightly at the cause, and initantly did make good vie of that advantage. Hee commanded

10 his owne company to keepe their Station, himselfe with a Sword in his hand (which I had The Charibes given him) and a Target of his owne fashion, went boldly towards them to parley with fight of the their Captaines. And having called them out, hee reproved them for comming (as enemies) English into his Signiory, for burning and spoiling his houses, and his people: hee demanded satisfactionfor the hurt done, and relititution of the prisoners taken, and warned them forthwith to the one of the one coadepart out of his Signiory, and defift from warre: which if they refused to fulfill, he was there ribes. ready with his friends the Englishmen to fight with them, and revenge his wrongs: and faid further, that if in the conflict any of the English men were flaine, or hurt; hee would then fetch all the rest from Wiapoco, and returne to burne their houses, and cut them all in peeces. Thus hee boldly spake, with such a courage, shewing also our men vinto them (who had their The Charitee

20 match in cocke ready to discharge) that hee strooke such a reare into them all, by reason of our agree to peace mens presence, that they presently agreed to peace, performed what conditions he required, for feare of the and then departed home with all their company. Here may your Highnesse note the facti- English. ons among the Indian Nations : the discipline and order they hold in warre : the feare the Charibes conceived at the light of our English men, and the policy of the Indian Leonard to take advantage by their feare, and make our men his Guard, and chiefe protection against them. These things in time will much auaile vs, being well observed, and rightly applied according to occation. But to our former discourse.

The power and strength of these Countries (being so thinly peopled) is not very great to withftand the might of forraine enemies. The vivall weapons of the Indians, are before defici-30 bed fauing that their Arrowes are oft times poisoned. But fince our trade and commerce with them, they have gotten a few good Swords, Maskets, Calivers, and some small quantity of shot and powder; and haue learned to handle their Peeces very orderly, and some of them are good shot.

The seasons of the yeare upon this coast, and in this climate are divers, for in the East parts of Guiana towards the Amazones, the dry weather, which we call their Summer beginneth in Au- The season of guft; and the violent raines and tempertuous winde, which we count their winter, doe begin in the yeare in February: But in the Westerne parts, towards Orenoque, the dry season beginneth in October, Guiana.
The summer and the raines and windes in Aprill. There is little difference of heate and cold in this diuerfity of seasons being so neere the Equinoctiall, where the day and night are alwayes equall: Angust.

40 for in those parts wee finde, that when the Sunne declineth further from them towards the The winter be-Tropicke of Capricorne, the ayre is then cleareft, and the feafon of the yeare most dry; as gimeth in Fein the Easterne parts of Guiana in August, September, October, Nouember and December: bruary. and when the Sunne returneth towards the Tropicke of Cancer, then doe the raines begin, increase, and decrease, from Frbruary to July: but sometimes they begin to fall, and the Rivers to rife, swell, and ouerflow sooner or later by a moneth; and the yeare is sometimes more or lesse windie and wet, according to the disposition of the beauens, and of the Planets: and as the Sun approacheth, or declineth little, or much, even so the earth wanteth or aboundeth with water

They have no division or account of times or numbers; they onely reckon by the Moones, as Their account 50 one, two, three, foure, or flue Moones: or by dayes in like manner. Their numbers they reckon of times and thus, one, two, three, and so to ten: then they say ten and one, ten and two, ten and three, &c. And to numbers. thew their meaning more certainly, they will hold vp one, two, three, or more of their fingers, expressing the numbers, still making signes as they speake, the better to declare their meaning: when they will reckon twenty, they will hold downe both their hands to their feete, shewing all their fingers and toes, and as the number is greater, so will they double the figne. When they appoint or promise any thing to be done by a time limited, they will deliuer a little bundle of flicks equall to the number of dayes, or Moones, that they appoint, and will themselves keepe another bundle of the like number : and to observe their appointed time, they will every day, or Moone take away a sticke, and when they have taken away all, then they know that the time of 60 their appointment is come, and will accordingly performe their promife.

As touching Religion, they have none among it them, that I could perceive, more then a cer- Religion. taine observance of the Sunne and Moone, supposing them to be alive, but wing no religious farriscenor worship towards them, nor offer sacrifice to any thing; vnlesse they vse a superstition in religious wortheir drinking feasts, by sacrificing larres of drinke: for at the death of any of their Cassignes, this to any Nanna 2

Their Petaios

of the dead.

At the death

Captaines, or great friends whom they esteeme, they will make a solemne feast (their chiefest The manner of their drink - prouision being of their best and strongest drinke, which they call Parranow) which feast shall or their drings the continue three or foure dayes, or as long as their liquor lafteth, fpending their time in dancing. desthorther finging, and drinking excessively; in which vice they exceede all other Nations whatsoeners accounting him that will be drunke first, the brauest fellow: during this folemnitie of their drinking, fome women being neerest of their kin vnto the party dead, doth stand by and cry extreamely : thus their manner is vntill their drinke be spent, and then the feast is ended. Whether they vie any superstition in this custome I know not time will reueale, and also reforme it. It is most certaine that their Pecaios (as they call them) Priests, or Southfayers, at some speciall or Pricits have times have conference with the Divell (the common deceiver of mankinde) whom they call 10 with the divel. Wattipa, and are by him deluded; yet not withit anding their often conference with him, they Their opinion feare and hate him much, and fay that he is nought : and not without great reason, for hee will oftentimes (to their great terror) beate them blacke and blew. They beleeve that the good Indians when they dye, goe vp, and will point towards the heavens, which they call Caupo; and that the bad Indians goe downe, pointing to the earth, which they call Soy. When any Caffigue, shey kill an In-Captaine, or chiefe man dieth among ft them, if he have a flave or prisoner taken from their enemies, they will kill him; and if he have none such, then will they kill one of his other feruants. that he may have one to attend him in the other world.

dian to ferue him in the other world.

The qualitie of the Land in those Countries, isof divers kindes; by the Sea side the Land The quality of is low, where the heate would be most vehement, if it were not qualified and tempered by a 20 fresh Easterly winde or Brieze, most forcibly blowing in the heate of the day: in many places this low land is very vnheal-hfull, and little inhabited, by reason of the ouer-flowing of the waters : but for the most part it hath goodly nauigable Rivers, a fertile foyle, much people, and is a healthfull habitation. Vpon the Mountaines there is a high land, where the avre is coldest, in some places it is fruitfull, in others not : but generall is full of Minerals, and mines of mettals, and yeeldeth as many as any part either of the East, or West Indies, both of the best, and of the batest whereof, we shall (by Gods permission) give good testimony, to the benefit of our Countrey, and honour of our Nation in time convenient : and in most places voon the Mountaines there is found and healthfull dwelling. There is also a middle fort of land, which is of a meane height, and is most temperate, healthfull, fertile, and most inhabited of all an other: it aboundeth in Meadowes, Pastures, and pleasant streames of fresh water, in goodly woods, and most delightfull Plaines, for profit, pleasure, sport, and recreation : and also is not void of Minerals.

The roote of Caffaui miketh

The provisions of this Countrey for victuals, are many : First, of the roote of a tree, called for victuals. Cassani, they make their Bread, in manner following; they grate the roote vpon a stone, and presse out the juice thereof, which being rawe is poyson, but boiled with Guinea Pepper, whereof they have abundance, it maketh an excellent and wholefome fawce, then they drie the grated roote, and bake it vpon a stone, as we bake our Oaten cakes in England. This Bread is very excellent, much like, but farre better then our great Oaten cakes, a finger thicke, which are yied in the Moorelands, and the Peake in Stafford fore and Darby fore.

Maix or Guinea

There is a kinde of great Wheat, called Maix, of some it is called Guinea Wheat, which graine is a fingular prouision in those Countries, and yeeldeth admirable increase, even a thousand or fifteene hundred for one, and many times much more. It maketh excellent meale, or flower for Bread; and very good Malt for Beere or Ale, and ferueth well for fundry other necessary vies for the reliefe of man. Of the aforesaid Cassami bread , and this Wheate the Indians make drinke, which they call Passiane : it will not keepe long, but must be spent within foure or fine daves: they make another kinde of drinke of Caffani, called Parranow, very good and kindsofdrinke strong, much like vnto our best March beere in England, and that kinde of drinke will keepe ten An excellent dayes; many forts they have which I have tafted, some strong, some small, some thicke, some thin, drinke made but all good, being well made, as commonly they were amongst the Taios, and Armaceas, which 50 are the clenlieft people of all those Nations.

Store of hony.

There is great store of hony in the Country, and although it be wilde being taken out of trees and buries in the earth) yet is it as good as any in the world; of which may be made an excellent drinke much vied in Wales, called Meath. The hony and the waxe, are also good commodities for merchandife.

The foyle ex-

There is no Vines in that Country, but the Soyle being rich and fertile, and the climate hot, if they were planted there, they would profper exceedingly, and yeelde good Sackes, and Ganary wines, which in those parts we finde to be very wholesome. Many other necessary prouisions sufficient for the sustenance of man, doe there abound in plen-

Sundry kindes ot Beafts in

ty: Namely, Deere of all forts, wilde Swine in great numbers, whereof there are two kindes, the 60 one small, by the Indians called Pockiero, which hath the namile in the backe; the other is called Paingo, and is as faire and large as any we have in England. There bestore of Hares, and Conies. but of a kinde far differing from ours: There be Tigers, Leopards, Ounces, Armadils, Mampuries, uile in the back which are in taite like Beefe, & wil take falt: Baremoer or Ant-Beares, which tafte like Mutton, &

other small beaits of the same taste, coloured, like a Fawne, Elkes, Monkies, and Marmosites of divers forts, both great and small : of these beasts there bee innumerable, and by experience we have found them all good meate. Many other kindes of beafts there are of fundry and ffrance thanes, which hereafter thall be figured in their true proportion according to the life with their names annexed.

Or Fowles there bee divers kindes; namely, Wild-ducks, Widgins, Teales, Wild-geefe, He- Great viries rons of divers colours, Cranes, Storkes, Pheafants, Parridges, Doues, Stock-doues, Black-birds, of Fowles. Curlewes, Godwits, Woodcokes, Snites, Parrots of fundry forts, many other kindes of great and imali Birds of rare colours; besides great ravenous Fowles; and Hawkes of every kinde.

Of fift the varietie is great, first of Sea fift, there is Sea-breame, Mullet, Soale, Scate, Thorne- Divers kinder backe, the Sword-fish, Sturgeon, Seale, a fish like vnto a Salmon, but as the Salmon is red, this is of fish, yellow; Shrimps, Lobsters, and Oysters, which hang vpon the branches of Trees: There is a rare fish called Cafforma, which hath in each eye two lights, and as it swimmeth it beareth the Oysters hing lower fights within the water, and the other aboue: the ribs and back of this fifth refemble those vpon trees, parts of a man, having the ribs round and the back flat, with a dent therein, as a man hath; it is A file having formewhat bigger then a Smelt, but farre exceeding it for daintie meate; and many other forts four eyes, there be moft excellent. Ot fresh-water fish many kindes vnknowne in these parts, but all ex- and the ries, ceeding good and daintie: And I dare be bold to fay, that this Countrie may compare with any and backe like other of the world, for the great varietie of excellent fish both of the Sea, and fresh Waters. aman. 20 There is also a Sea-fish which vsually commeth into the fresh waters, especially in the winter

and wet feafon, it is of great elteeme amongst vs, and we account it halfe flesh, for the blond of it is warme; it commeth up into the shallow waters in the drowned lands, and feedeth upon graffe and werdes : the Indians name it Coiumero, and the Spaniards, Manati, but wee call it the gratie and weeders : the manner manner to commerce, and forme to victuall thips, as in our knowledge The Sea com hath beene proned by our Countrimen : Of this fish may bee made an excellent oile for many 1ke beete, purpoles; the fat of it is good to frie either fish or flesh; the hide (as I have heard) will make good buffe : and being dried in the Sunne, and kept from wet, will ferue for Targets and Armour against the Indian arrowes : In the wet season the store of them are infinite ; some of these hides were heretofore brought into England, by Sir Walter Rawleigh,

The seuerall kindes of fruits are many, the Pina, Platana, Potato, Medler, Plums of diviers Sundrie kindes forts, the Nuts of strange kindes. The excellency of the Pina I cannot expresse, for I dare bold- of fruits. ly affirme that the world affoordeth not a more delicate fruit : In tafte it is like Straw berries. Pina. Claret-wine and Sugar. The Platana is also a very good fruit, and tasteth like an old Pippin. Platana The Potato is well knowne. The Medler exceedeth in greatnesse. The Plums I cannot com- Potato. mend, for to eate much of them doth cause fluxes, which in those Countries are dangerous. The Plummex Nuts are good being moderately eaten.

Auing thus (most excellent Prince) declared the severall forts of provisions for victuals and Nuts. necessarie foodes, it remay neth that I now make mention of the varietie of commodities, 40 found in the Countrie for the trade of merchandife, which in few yeeres, by our paines and induftrie, may be brought to perfection, and to fetled in those parts, that not onely the vindertakers may receive reward for their indeuours, but our Countrie also may grow rich, by trading for the fruits of our labours.

The first and principall commoditie of estimation, are the Sugar-canes, whereof in those parts The varieties there is great plentie; the foile is as fertill for them as in any other part of the world: They doe of commodithere grow to great bigneffe in a fhort time; by orderly and fit planting of them, and by erecting ties.

Sugar Canes, convenient workes for the boyling and making of Sugars (which at the first will require some charge and expence) may be yearly returned great benefit and wealth : the long experience of the Porsugals and Spaniards, in Brafil, and the Iland of the Canaries; and of the Moores in Bar-50 barie, may give vs certaine affurance, and full fatisfaction thereof.

The Cotton wooll is a generall commoditie, beneficiall to our Merchants, and profitable to Cotton wooll, our Countrie, by making of Fustians, and serving for Bumbaste, and other vies : for making of Hamaceau, which are the Indian beds, most necessarie in those parts, and also of a fine cotton cloth for clothing of the people. There is a naturall Hempe or Flax of great vie, almost as fine Naturall hemp as filke as it may be vied; we have now found out the best vie of it; and for making of hnnen or flaxe. cloth it is most excellent.

There bee many rare and singular commodities for Dyers, of which sort there is a red berrie, Divers comcalled Annoto, which being rightly prepared by the Indians, dyeth a perfect and fire Orange. modifies for tawnie in filke; it hath beene fold in Holland for twelue shillings starling the pound, and is yet Dyers. 60 of a good price. There is another berrie that dyeth blue. There is also a gumme of a tree, whereof I have icene experience, that in cloth dyeth a fure and perfect yellow in graine. There bee A gum which leanes of certaine Trees, which being rightly prepared, doe die a deepe red. There is also a dyeth a yellon wood which dyeth a purple, and is of a good price; and another that dyeth yellow. There is in graine, yet another wood which dyeth a purple when the liquor is hot, and a crimfon when the liquor

Nanan 2

diligent labour and observation in time will be discovered and found.

The tweet Gummes of mestimable value and strange operation in physicke and chirurgerie. Sweet sums, are innumerable; there is yellow Amber, Gumma Lemnia, Colliman of Carriman, Barratta. and many more which I omit. The Colliman hath beene proued by Master Waller Carr of Wiltham in Buckinghambire (a Gentleman of great judgement and practice in physicke) to be of speciall The vertues of regard for many purpoles : this gumme is black and brittle, much like in flew to common pitch; Colliman or Care if you put a little of it you burning coales, it filleth all the roome with a most sweet and pleafant favour. He further reporteth of it, that certainly if you hold your head ouer the fume therea of three or foure times a day, it cureth the giddineffe of the head, and is also a most excellent to comfort and remedie tor a cold, moift, and rheumatike braine; it is also good against the resolution (or as the common fort call it) the dead palie, whereof the giddinesse of the head is often a meffenger, and the fore-teller of that most permicious griefe, It is also of great vie for the paine that many women haue in the lower part of their backs: which is very common to fuch as haue had chil tren : for remedie whereof, it is to be melted in a pewter vessell with a gentle fire, then with a knife it must be spread lightly upon a piece of leather, and laid warme to the place griened, vntill it come off of it felte. This plaifter is also very good for aches, and doth greatly comfort and ftrengthen the finewes. Thus much hath Mafter Cary written and reported of it, and hath proued by his owne experience. This gumme is also approued to bee an excellent remedie

is cold. Many other notable things there are (no doubt) not yet knowne vnto vs. which by our

The Colliman helpeth the Barrette a rore

Ballamum.

Drugges and phyficke.

An app e which prono-

drunke.

.02 55 1.01 .tast:

Tobacco.

against the gowt; and of singular vertue in the cure of wounds. The Barratta is a most sourraigne Balsamum farre excelling all others yet knowne : which by the same Gentlemans experience is of admirable operation in the cure of greene wounds: and being burned upon coales, is of a fweet and odoriterous favour.

There bee many other (weet gummes of great vie for perfumes; whereo, one doth make fweet Marge- a very rare perfume , much like vnto the ient of fweete Margerum , very pleafant and dele Aable.

For phylick there be also many excellent Drugs; namely, Spiknard, Cassia Fistula, Sone; and the earth yeeldeth Bole-Armoniack, and Terra-Lemnia, all which are knowne vnto vs. There be other Drugs and Simples also of strange and rare vertue, in these parts vnknowne; of which fore there is a little greene Apple, by the Indians called in their language, The fleeping Apple; 20 which in operation is fo violent, that one little bit thereof doth cause a men to sleepe to death : keth fleepe to the least drop of the juyce of it, will purge in vehement and excessive manner, as dangerously was proved by my coulin Viton Fifter, who first found it : for biting a little of it for a take , and finding it to burne his mouth infome extremitie, did fodainly fpit it out agains, but some small quantitie of the juyce (against his will) went downe into his stomack, which for two or three dayes (pace did prouoke in him an extraordinarie fleepinefle, and purged him with fixtie feates. This Apple, for the purging vertue in fo fmall a quantitie, is like to bee of good price, and great estimation in the practice of physick; for the learned Physicians doe well know how to correct the fleeping qualitie thereof wherein the danger refleth. There is a berrie in those parts very ex-A berry curing cellent against the bloudie-fluxe, by the Indians it is called Kellette. The juyce of the leafe called 40 Upper, cureth the wounds of the poyloned arrowes. The juyce of the leafe called lears, is good fluxe.

against the head-ache. Many other Drugs and Simples are there found of fingular properties. A leafe curing to both in physick and chirurgerie, which if they should bee seuerally described according to their the wounds of the second second in the second the poyfoned value and worthinesse, would containe a large Volume.

Moreover, the Tree wherewith they take their fish, is not a little to be esteemed, but chiefly A leafe cuting the great goodnesse of God therein is highly to bee prayfed and admired, who amongst so many admirable things by him created, and planted in those parts, hath vouchfafed to bestow upon those barbarous people so great a benefit, and naturall helpe, for the present getting of their food and fustenance. These trees are commonly growing neere vnto the places of their habitation for their present vie : for when, at any time, they goe to fish, they take three or source little to flicks of this tree, and bruife them upon a stone, and then go into certain smal creeks by the Srashoare, which at a high water are viually full of very good fish of diners kindes, which come in with the tyde; and there they wade up and downe the water, and betweene their hands rub those small brusted sticks therein, which are of such vertue, that they will cause she fish to turne up their bellies, and lye ftill aboue the water for a certaine time : In which fpace they prefently take as many as they please, and lade them into their Canoes, and so with httle labour returne home fufficiently prouided.

There is also a red speckled wood in that Countrie, called Pira timinere, which is worth thirtie orfortie pounds a Tun : It is excellent for Ioyners worke ; as chaires, Honles, bed-fteds, preffes, cupboords, and for wainfcot. There are divers kindes of stone of great vie, and good price, 60 as laiper, Porphyrie, and the Spleene-fione.

There is yet another profitable commoditie to be reaped in Guiana, and that is by Tabacco, which albeit some dillike, yet the general tie of men in this Kingdome doth with great affection entertaine it. It is not only in request in this our Countrey of England, but also in Ireland, the

Neatherlands, in all the Easterly Countreyes, and Germany; and most of all amongst the Turkes. and in Barbary, The price it holdeth is great, the benefit our Merchants gaine thereby is infinite. and the Kings rent for the custome thereof is not a little. The Tabacco that was brought into this Kingdome in the yeare of our Lord 1610. was at the least worth 60. thousand pounds: And fince 60000, worth that time the store that yeerely hath come in, was little lesse. It is planted, gathered, seasoned, of Tanacco in and made up fit for the Merchant in fhor: time, and with easie labour. But when we first arri- a yeere. ned in those parts, wee altogether wanted the true skill and knowledge how to order it, which now of late we happily have learned of the Spaniards themselves, whereby I dare presume to fav. and hope to proue, within few moneths, (as others also of found judgement, and great exto perience doe hold opinion) that onely this commoditie Tabacco; (so much sought after and defired) will bring as great a benefite and profit to the vindertakers, as ever the Spaniards gained by the best and richest Silver Myne in all their Indies, considering the charge of both.

The things which the Indians defire from vs by way of trade in exchange for the about named The comodicommodities, (whereby wee hold focietie and commerce with them) are Axes, Hatchets, Bill- tics most effices hookes, Kniues, all kinde of Edge-tooles, Nailes, great Fish-hookes, Harping-irons, Iewes dans. Trumps, Looking-glasses, blue, and white Beads, Christali Beades, Hats, Pinnes, Needles, Salt, Shirts, Bands, linnen and woollen Clothes, Swords, Muskets, Caleeuers, Powder, and Shot: but of these last mentioned, we are very sparing, and part not with many, valetie vpon great oc-

casion, by way of gift to speciall persons. 20 When the raines ceased, which was in July, I beganne to travell abroad in search of those golden Mountaines, promised vnto vs before the beginning of our Voyage, (by one that undertooke Leaden minds, to guide vs to them) which filled my company to full of vaine expectation, and golden hopes, but golden that their infatiable and couetous mindes (being wholy fet thereon) could not bee fatisfied with Mynes, any thing but only Gold. Our guide that vainly made those great promises , beeing come vnto the wished place to make performance, was then possessed with a shamelesse spirit of ignorance. for hee knew little, and could performe nothing. What other intelligences of Mynes ale readie found) I had from other men in England, and from the Malter of my thip, who had beene heretofore in those parts, I found them by experience falle, and nothing true concerning Mynes. that was in England reported voto me.

30 Our greedie desire of Gold being thus made frustrate, divers vnconstant persons of my vn- Diforders by ruly company began to murmure, to bee discontented, to kindle discords and diffentions, and to mutiny. flirvo mutinie euen almost to the confusion and ruine of vs all: and were youn the point to shake off all obedience to their commanders; to abandon patience, peace, and vnitie, and wilfully to breake out into all mischiese and wretched disorder, onely because they were deceived of their golden hopes and expectations : but with good words, and comfortable perswafions . I pacified them for the time, and made them acquainted with my better hopes conceived of the commodities aboue mentioned. I perswaded them in generall from idlenesse, to travell abroad, to search and feeke out amongst the Indians, what other nouelties they could (though Gold were wan- Good to bee ting) whereby we might hereafter benefit our felues; and still I employed them some one way, what to pre-40 and some another, to occupie their minds by doing something, the better to preuent differtion, uent the devil which commonly is bred of idlenesse, the flourlyfull Mother of all filthy vices.

As I daily conversed among it the Indians, it chanced one day, that one of them presented me with a halfe Moone of Metall, which held somewhat more then a third part Gold, the rest Copper : another also gaue me a little Image of the same Metall; and of another I bought a plate The bish of the same (which he called a spread Eagle) for an Axe. All which things they affured mee Gountrey of were made in the high Countrey of Gusana, which they faid did abound with Images of Gold, Guisna abounby them called Carrecoory. Thefe things I shewed to my company to fettle their troubled minds, deth with imawhich gave much contentment to the greater part of them, and fatisfied vs all that there was ges of Gold. Gold in Guiana. Shortly after that my Indian Anthony Canabre, brought me a piece of a Rocke, The Rocks of 50 of white Sparre, whereof the high Countrey is full : And if the white Sparres of this kinde, the nureft

which are the pureft white of all others, (for every fort of Myne bath a Sparre, and for the most white Sparre part white) be in a maine Rocke, they are certainly Mynes of Gold, or Siluer, or of both I made are Mynes of triall of a piece of Sparre, which the same Indian discourred vinto mee, and I found that it held gold or filuere both Gold, and Silver, which (although it was in small quantitie) gave me fatisfction that there be richer Mynes in the Countrey to be found ; but the best lie deeper in the earth, and wee had not time nor power to make fearch for them. I travelled up the River of Wispoco, to veiw the over-fals, but the waters being high and ftrong,

I could not passe them. In August when they are sallen , with some labour they may bee passed. Manyouer-fals This River hath very many over-falls, lying one a good distance beyond another, even to the in Wapare. 60 head thereof. Aboue some of the first falls there dwelleth an Indian, called Comarian, who is an old man of a free disposition; by him I learned that a certaine distance about the first falls, the Riuer Army falleth into Wiapoco; moreouer that certaine dayes journey beyond him towards the high Land, upon the borders of Wiapoco, there is a Nation of Charibes having great eares of an extraordinarie bignesse, hard tobes beleeued, whom hee called Marashemaccas : amongst thele

People having people (as Comarian reporterh) there is an Idoll of flone, which they worthip as their God; they have placed it in a house made of purpose for the greater honour of it, which they keepe very great cares; have placed it in a house made of purpose for the greater honour of it, which they keepe very cares are made his knees, and refting his elbowes upon them, holding up his hands with the palmes forwards, large by art, as diecking v pwards, and gaping with his mouth wide open. The meaning of this proportion hee could dot declare, although he hath beene many times among it them, and hath often feene it. What other Nations were beyond these he did not know, having never travelled to farre. but he faith, they be Charibes, and also enemies vnto them. It feemeth there bee many Nations of those great eared people : for in the River of Marrawini, I heard also the like, who dwell farre up towards the high Land, as hereafter you shall heare, and I suppose, by the trending of the Ri- ta uers of Wiapoco, and Marrawini, are all one people.

Vpon the fourteenth day of August I went vnto a Mountaine, called Gomeribo, beeing the vttermost point of Land to the North-ward in the Bay of Wiapoco; I found the soile of it most excellent for Tabacco, Maix, Cotton-trees, Annoto-trees, Vines, and for any other thing that should bee planted there. When I had taken good view of the place, and found it commodious for many purpoles; then in the presence of Captaine Fisher, divers Gentlemen, and others of my company, and of the Indians also, I tooke possession of the Land, by Turfe and Twigge, in the behalfe of our Souereigne Lord King lames : I tooke the faid polletion of a part, in name of the whole Continent of Guiana, lying betwirt the Rivers of Amazones, and Orenoque, not beeing actually possessed, and inhabited by any other Christian Prince or State; wherewith the Indians 20

feemed to be well content and pleafed.

In like manner my Brother Captaine Michael Harecours, and Captaine Harney, (whom I left as his affociate, and he esteemed as an inward friend) in a notable journey, which (to their great honour) they performed, to discouer the River of Arrawars, and the Countrey bordering upon it, The like post (neere adjoying to the River of Amazones) did take the like possession of the Land there to his The dangers and great difficulties which they in that attempt incountred, were memorable.

festion taken Maiefties vie. at Arrawart.

Postession ta-

ken for the

and fuch, as hardly any of our Nationin fuch small Canoes (being onely some-what longer, but not fo broad as our Thames Wherries, and flat-bottomed) euer ouercame the like. First the number of their owne attendants besides themselues, was onely one man, and a Boy: Their troope 33 of Indians fixtie persons. Their journey by Sea vnto the River of Arrawary was neere one hundred leagues : wherein (by the way) they met with many dreadfull plunges, by reason of a high going Sea, which breaketh upon the flats and shoalds; especially, at the next great Cape to the North of Arraway, which, in refpect of the danger they paffed there, they named Point Perillow. Then their Discouery vp the River, was fiftie leagues more : where they found a Nation of Indians, which never had feene white men, or Christians before, and could not be drawne to any familiar commerce, or conversation, no not so much as with our Indians, because they were strangers to them, and of another Nation. The Discouery of this River is of great importance, and ipeciall note, affoording an entrance more behouefull for the fearthing and Discouery of the Inland parts of Guiana, then any other River yet knowne vpon the Coast; for trending Westward 40 vp into the Land, it discouereth all the Countreyes and Nations to the Southward of Arricary, Coofbebery, Morrownia, and Norrack, which I have mentioned before.

tie in the Countrey.

Many weekes they spent in this Aduenture, still taking up their Lodgings in the Woods at night. Provision of meate they wanted not, for fish were euer plenty, and at hand : and the Woods yeelded either Deere, Tigres, or Fowle : their greatest want was of bread and drinke, which onely defect did hinder (at that time) the accomplishment of that Discouery. For when the Indians perceived their bread tobe neere spent, and their drinke to be corrupted, they could not be perswaded to proceed, having no meanes to supply their wants amongst the Arrawaries, the Indians of that River who would not freely trade with them upon this first acquaintance, but alwayes flood vpon their guard, on the other fide of the River, where they inhabited : yet 50 defiring to obtaine fome of our English commodities, and make triall of our Indians frienuship, affoorded some small Trade for their present reliefe during their abode in that River: So that of force they were constrained to breake off their Discouerie, and hasten homeward.

But here their dangers ended not, for as they returned, arriving at certaine Ilands called Carripoory, and passing betweene them and the mayne Land, much against the wils of all the Indians, who knowing the danger of the place, and more respecting their safetie, then their owne (being themselves all expert Swimmers) would have diffwaded them from that hazard: but they being ignorant of the perill, would needs paffe on , and at the last met with such a Boore (as the Seamen terme it) and violent encounter of two tydes comming in, which like two furious inraged Rammes, or Bulles rushed together, and oft retired backe, to returne againe, with greater violence, vntill the one by force had ouer-borne the other: that if next under God) the diligent care and paines of the Indians had not preferred them, they had been there destroyed, and swallowed vp by that mercilelle Boore or breach of waters; which (God be thanked) they escaped, and returned home in lafetie.

CH AP. 16, Indians at Gomeribo the King of Englands tenants.

When I had (as before) taken polledion at Gomeribo, in presence of the faid parties, I deliue-Gomeribo delired the polletion of that Mountaine to my Indian Anthony Canabre, To have, hold, poffife, and ucred to an enjoy the fame, to him, and to his Heires for euer, of our Souereigne Lord King James, his Heires Indian as the and Successors, as his subject; Teelding and paying yeerely the tenth part of all Tabacco, Cotton- Kings tenapt. wooll, Annoto, and other commodities what loeuer, which should hereafter be either planted or growing within the faid Mountaine, if it were demanded. The Indian most gladly received the polletion upon these conditions, and for himselfe, and his posteritie, did promise to bee true Subjects vito the Kings Majestie: his Heires, and Succeffours: And to pay the duties imposed

ypon them; and to that bufinelle being finished, I returned agains to Wiapoco. Now (most worthy Prince) there came vnto my knowledge, an inconvenience happened by the carelelle negligence of the Mafter of my thip, who had the charge of prouiding and laying in The only the prouitions and victuals for the Voyage, which was the cause that I gained no present profit cause of losse

by it, but left off all my Discoueries in the first beginning. I had a purpose at that time to per- by the royage. forme a businesse, which might have proved profitable, and honourable vinto vs, if I had beene able to have stayed the time, but it was not my chance to bee so fortunate : for the Master, his Mates, and the Steward of my Ship, came vnto me, and told mee plainly, that if I made any longer abode in that Countrey, I would never in those ships returne into England or if I did aduenture it, my felfe, and all my Company would starue at Sea for want of Beere, Syder, and Water, for all my Caske was spoyled, because it was not Iron-bound; the woodden hoopes flew 20 off, by reason of the heate of the Climate; and our Beere, and Syder, (whereof wee had good ftore) did leake about the ship, that we could hardly saue sufficient to releeue vs , if wee made a longer flay vpou the Coast; which was the Masters fault, having had a speciall charge to be carefull of that onely point. By this default, I was constrained to make a vertue of necessitie, and prepare my selfe for England, and leave my former purposes to be accomplished hereafter, which shall be done (God aiding me) in time convenient.

Then disposing of my company, I appointed my Brother Captaine Michael Harecourt to Cap, Michael remayne in the Countrey, as chiefe Commander in my absence, and to continue the possession on Haraurs leit the Kings behalfe; I gaue him directions to travell abroad, as (occasion ferued) to discouer the Commander Countrey, to fpend sometime at Coofbebery, and sometime also in other places; but to make his of the compa-30 chiefest residence at Wiapoco, (the onely Rendenouz for shippes that trade upon that Coast) and there to plant good ftore of Maix, for our releife of bread and drinke, which is the chiefest thing to be respected in those parts; for other victuals wee need not take much care being alwayes eafily prouided. He performed his charge with great reputation, discouered many goodly Prouin- Possession ces, and spacious Countreyes; and worthily continued the possition full three yeares compleate. continued 3. Left with him for his affiltance, Captaine Harney, who hath nobly vowed his time and fortune yeeres. to be employed in the profecution of this honourable action. For his Lieutenant I appointed Twentiemen Master Edward Gifford, a valiant and wor by Gentleman; and Heft also with him of Gentle- lett with Capmen and others, about twentie more, with all such necessaries as I could spare, and thought con- taine Harcoars uenient for them : and so commending them to God, the eighteenth day of August I departed at "iapeco. no from Wiapoco, and the day following arrived at Caime.

50 a good Harbour, which may in time to come (for fome special purpose) be of great vie.

The next day, and the night following I proceeded Westward with full faile, and passing the

Barre, which lieth two or three leagues off at Sea , having but two fathome water : within the

Barre, the Channell is three, foure, fine, and fixe fathome deepe. Fine leagues within the river

At my comming to Caiene my Pinnaffe received a leake, which would have proved dangerous, if we had beene farre at Sea; whereby enforced to attend the stopping thereof, and new trime The Pinnasse ming of the Pinnaffe; and vinwilling to be idle in the meane space doing nothing, I left my ships teceived a there to repaire their defeate, and in my ship bases deared a leake at Caiang there to repaire theire defects, and in my ship-boate departed thence, the twentie three of August: taking with me Captaine Fifter, who hath ever beene (since we first crept into the work.)

my chiefe companion, both in Armes and travels; I tooke allo with mee his Brother Unton Fin fber, Mafter Cradle the Maiters mate of my ship, and about fixe more. I followed the Coast to R. Marconie. the Westward steering during West, and passing by the Ruer of Meccooria, I lodged that night R. Course. in the mouth of the River Course : which hath a narrow deepe entrance, and within affoordeth

Rivers of Manmanury, Smammara, Oorassovini, Coonannonia, Vracco, and Amanna; I arrived the Rivers to the twentie fine day at the River of Marrawin, which openeth a faire River, but is shoale upon the

we passed by certaine Hands called Curewapory, not inhabited, for at the rising of the waters they Hands called arealwayes ouer-flowne, of which fore the Rouer hath very many : we lodged that night a lit- Curomerty.

the beyond these first Ilands at a Village called Moyemon, on the left hand, the Captaine thereof is called Maperitate, of the Nation of the Paragotes, a man very louing and faithull to our Nation 60 on, whereof we have had good proofe. The next day wee proceeded up the River three leagues, and stayed at a Towne called Coemmay on the right hand, at the house of Minapa, the chiefe Charib of that Signiorie) to poulde two Canoes to profecute our journey for the Discouerie of

1278 Long-eard Indians, possession taken for his Maiestie at Wiapoco, &c. L 1 B.V J.

on of their

People having people (as Comarian reporteth) there is an Idoll of ftone, which they worthin as their God: the have placed it in a house made of purpose for the greater honour of it, which they keepe very great eares; have placed it in a house made of purpose for the greater honour of it, which they keepe very parhaps these cleane and handsome. This Idoll is fashioned like a man sitting vpon his heeles, holding open eares are made his knees, and refting his elbowes upon them, holding up his hands with the palmes forwards. targe by arr, 25 direct East 17. locking vpwards, and gaping with his mouth wide open. The meaning of this proportion hee could dot declare, although he hath beene many times amongst them, and hath often seene it. What other Nations were beyond these he did not know, having never travelled so farre. but he taith, they be Charibes, and also enemies vnto them. It feemeth there bee many Nations of those great eared people : for in the River of Marrawini, I heard also the like, who dwell faree up towards the high Land, as hereafter you shall heare, and I suppose, by the trending of the Ri-

uers of Wiapoco, and Marrawini, are all one people.

Voon the fourteenth day of August I went vnto a Mountaine, called Gomeribo, beeing the vttermost point of Land to the North-ward in the Bay of Wiapoco; I found the soile of it most excellent for Tabacco, Maix, Cotton-trees, Annoto-trees, Vines, and for any other thing that should bee planted there. When I had taken good view of the place, and found it commodious for many purpoles; then in the presence of Captaine Fisher, divers Gentlemen, and others of my company, and of the Indians also, I tooke possession of the Land, by Turfe and Twigge, in the King at Gemebehalfe of our Souereigne Lord King lames : I tooke the faid possession of a part, in name of the whole Continent of Guiana, lying betwirt the Rivers of Amazones, and Orenoque, not beeing actually possessed, and inhabited by any other Christian Prince or State; wherewith the Indians 20

feemed to be well content and pleafed.

In like manner my Brother Captaine Michael Harecourt, and Captaine Harney, (whom I left as his affociate, and he efteemed as an inward friend) in a notable journey, which (to their great honour) they performed, to discouer the River of Arrawary, and the Countrey bordering upon it, The like pof- (neere adioyning to the River of Amazones) did take the like possession of the Land there, to his

festion taken Maiesties vie. at Arrawart.

ken for the

The dangers and great difficulties which they in that attempt incountred, were memorable, and fuch, as hardly any of our Nationin fuch small Canoes (being onely some-what longer, but not to broad as our Thomes Wherries, and flat-bottomed) ever overcame the like. First the number of their owne attendants besides themselues, was onely one man, and a Boy: Their troope 23 of Indians fixtie persons. Their journey by Sea vnto the River of Arrawary was neere one hundred leagues : wherein (by the way) they met with many dreadfull plunges, by reason of a high going Sea, which breaketh ypon the flats and shoalds; especially, at the next great Cape to the North of Arraway, which, in respect of the danger they pasted there, they named Point Perillow. Then their Discouery vo the River, was fiftie leagues more : where they found a Nation of Indians, which neuer had feene white men, or Christians before, and could not be drawne to any familiar commerce, or conversation, no not so much as with our Indians, because they were strangers to them, and of another Nation. The Discouery of this River is of great importance, and speciall note, affoording an entrance more behouefull for the searching and Discouery of the Inland parts of Guiana, then any other River yet knowne vpon the Coast; for trending Westward 40 up into the Land, it discouereth all the Countreyes and Nations to the Southward of Arricary, Coofhebery, Morrownia, and Norrack, which I have mentioned before.

Many weekes they spent in this Aduenture, still taking up their Lodgings in the Woods at night. Prouision of meate they wanted not, for fish were euer plenty, and at hand : and the Woods yeelded either Deere, Tigres, or Fowle: their greatest want was of bread and drinke, which onely defect did hinder (at that time) the accomplishment of that Discouery. For when the Indians perceived their bread tobe neere spent, and their drinke to be corrupted, they could not be perswaded to proceed, having no meanes to supply their wants amongst the Arrawaries, the Indians of that River who would not freely trade with them upon this first acquaintance, but alwayes flood upon their guard, on the other fide of the River, where they inhabited : yet 50 defiring to obtaine some of our English commodities, and make triall of our Indians friendship, affoorded some small Trade for their present reliefe during their abode in that River: So that of force they were constrained to breake off their Discouerie, and hasten homeward.

But here their dangers ended not, for as they returned, arriving at certaine llands called Carripoory, and passing betweene them and the mayne Land, much against the wils of all the Indians, who knowing the danger of the place, and more respecting their safetie, then their owne (being themsellesall expert Swimmers) would have distinated them from that hazard: but they being ignorant of the perill, would needs paffe on , and at the last met with such a Boore (as the Seamen terme it) and violent encounter of two tydes comming in, which like two furious inraged Rammes, or Bulles rushed together, and oft retired backe, to returne againe, with greater violence, vntill the one by force had ouer-borne the other: that if next under God) the diligent care and paines of the Indians had not preserved them, they had been there destroyed, and swallowed vp by that mercilelle Boore or breach of waters; which (God be thanked) they escaped, and returned home in lafetie.

CHAP. 16, Indians at Gomeribo the King of Englands tenants.

When I had (as before) taken possession at Gomeribo, in presence of the said parties, I delivered the possession of that Mountaine to my Indian Anthony Canabre, To have, hold, possesses, and vered to an enior the lame, to him, and to his Heires for euer, of our Souereigne Lord King lames, his Heires Indian as the and Successors, as his fubicat; Teelding and paying yeerely the tenth part of all Tabacco, Cotton-Kings tenapt. wooll. Annoto, and other commodities what locuer, which (hould hereafter be either planted or growing within the faid Mountaine, if it were demanded. The Indian most gladly received the polleffion vpon these conditions, and for himselfe, and his posteritie, did promise to bee true Subjects vinto the Kings Maiestie: his Heires, and Succeffours: And to pay the duties imposed

upon them; and to that bufineffe being finished, I returned agains to Wiapoco.

Now (most worthy Prince) there came vnto my knowledge, an inconvenience happened by the careleffe negligence of the Mafter of my ship, who had the charge of prouiding and laying in The only the promitions and victuals for the Voyage, which was the cause that I gained no present profit cause of losse by it, but left off all my Discoueries in the first beginning. I had a purpose at that time to per- by the royage. forme a bulinesse, which might have proved profitable, and honourable vito vs, if I had beene able to have flayed the time, but it was not my chance to bee to fortunate; for the Maffer, his Mates, and the Steward of my Ship, came vnto me, and told mee plainly, that if I made any longer abode in that Countrey, I would never in those ships returne into England : or if I did aduenture it, my felfe, and all my Company would starue at Sea for want of Beere , Syder, and Water, for all my Caske was ipoyled, because it was not Iron-bound; the woodden hoopes flew 20 off, by reason of the heate of the Climate; and our Beere, and Syder, (whereof wee had good ftore) did leake about the ship, that we could hardly faue sufficient to releeue vs , if wee made a longer flay vpou the Coast; which was the Masters fault, having had a special charge to be carefull of that onely point. By this default, I was constrained to make a vertue of necessitie, and prepare my selfe for England, and leave my former purposes to be accomplished hereafter, which

shall be done (God aiding me) in time convenient. Then disposing of my company, I appointed my Brother Captaine Michael Harecourt to Cap. Michael remayne in the Countrey, as chiefe Commander in my absence, and to continue the possession on Hartemer leit the Kings behalfe; I gaue him directions to travell abroad, as (occasion ferued) to discover the Commander Countrey, to fpend fometime at Coshbebery, and fometime allo in other places; but to make his of the compa-go chiefest residence at Wiapoco, (the onely Rendenouz for shippes that trade vpon that Coast) and there to plant good store of Maix, for our releife of bread and drinke, which is the chiefest thing to be respected in those parts; for other victuals wee need not take much care being alwayes eafily prouided. He performed his charge with great reputation, discouered many goodly Prouin- Possession ces, and spacious Countreyes; and worthily continued the possifion full three yeeres compleate. Continued 3. Lleft with him for his affiltance, Captaine Harney, who hath nobly vowed his time and fortune yeeres. to be employed in the profecution of this honourable action. For his Lieutenant I appointed Twentie men Mafter Edward Gifford, a valiant and wor by Gentleman; and Heft also with him of Gentle- lett with Cap-

uenient for them : and fo commending them to God, the eighteenth day of August I departed at "iapace.

40 from Wiapoco, and the day following arrived at Caiane. At my comming to Caisme my Pinnasse received a leake, which would have proved dangerous, if we had beene farre at Sea; whereby enforced to attend the stopping thereof, and new trim. The Pinnosse ming of the Pinnaffe; and vinwilling to be idle in the meane space doing nothing, I left my ships leake at Chiange there to repaire theire defects, and in my thip-boate departed thence, the twentie three of Auguft : taking with me Captaine Fifber, who hath euer beene (fince we first creptinto the world) my chiefe companion, both in Armes and trauels; I tooke also with mee his Brother Unton Fia fber, Master Cradle the Masters mate of my ship, and about fixe more. I followed the Coast to R. Masters the Westward steering during West, and passing by the Ruer of Meccooria, I lodged that night R. Courres. in the mouth of the River Commo : which hath a narrow deepe entrance, and within affoordeth 50 a good Harbour, which may in time to come (for some speciall purpose) be of great vie.

The next day, and the night following I proceeded Weltward with full faile, and paffing the Rivers of Manmanury, Smammara, Ooraffowini, Coonannonia, Vracco, and Amanna; I arrived the Rivers to the twentie fine day at the Riner of Marranem, which openeth a faire Riner, but is shoale vpon the Barre, which lieth two or three leagues off at Sea, having but two fathome water: within the Barre, the Channell is three, foure, fiue, and fixe fathome deepe. Fine leagues within the river we passed by certaine Ilands called Curewapory, not inhabited, for at the rising of the waters they Ilands called arealwayes ouer-flowne, of which fore the Ruer hath very many : we lodged that night a lit- Curangery, tle beyond these first Ilands at a Village called Moyemon, on the left hand, the Captaine thereof is called Maperitate, of the Nation of the Paragotos, a man very louing and faithuil to our Nation 60 on, whereof we have had good proofe. The next day wee proceeded up the River three leagues,

and stayed at a Towne called Cornynay on the right hand, at the house of Minapa, the chiefe Charib of that Signiorie) to pounde two Canoes to profecute our journey for the Discouerie of

men and others, about twentie more, with all such necessaries as I could spare, and thought con-

manner barred up with Rockes, ouer which the water falleth with great violence, yet not with-The River full flanding weaduentured to proceed, and the further wee went, the more dangerous wee found the over fals, and more in number; but when wee had paffed the first Mountaine, towards the

high Country of Guiana, called Sapparon, and discovered farre off before vs other high Moun-They went fixe taines called Matawere Moupanana, and had proceeded fixe dayes journey up the River (which daies journey was more then fortie leagues) we met with juch shoale rockie streame, and great ouer-fals, that

The twentie eight day we went forward passing many Villages any Townes, which I for-

vp the River. there to our griefe our journey ended.

Being thus for that time debarred from our intended Difcouerie, we prepared our felues with patience to returne towards our ships, and the third day of September we turned downe the Riuer, fhooting the over-fals with more celeritie then when we came vp, difpatching three dayes journey in one, and the firth day returned fafe to Mojemon; but before I departed thence, Captaine Fifter told me of certaine Plants which hee had then found, much like vnto Rofe-trees. growing about halfe a yard in height, whereof (for the strangenesse of them) I cannot forbeare to adde a word or two.

Their Plants or little trees had affuredly the fence of feeling, as plainly appeared by touching

Treeswhich had the leafe of feeling: both in the

Vianie 2 Towns of 20.

like Buffe.

them : for if you did but touch a leafe of the tree with your finger, that leafe would prefently fhrinke, and close up it felfe, and hang downe as if it were dead; and if you did cut off a leafe with a paire of Cizzers, then all the other leaves growing vpon the fame tree would inflantly 20 Fast Indies & Shrinke and close vp themselves, and hang downe as if they were dead and withered, and within in Gainne. See halfe a quarter of an houre, would by degrees open themselues againe, and flourish as before; and 18. Gom. 18.1 dig. as often as you did either touch or cut off any of them, they would doe the like; which dideuidently they a reftriction of the Spirits, inuncibly arguing a Senfe. Howfoener this may feeme strange and incredible to your Highnesse, and to them that have not seene it, yet foraimuch as Scaliger Evercit. Scaliner, and Bartas make mention of the like, I dare be bold to affirme it vpon my credit, having 181. felt. 18. feene and shewed it to fortie others: I gathered two of the Plants, and did set them in potsin Bartas Edos, their owne earth, and carried them aboord my ship, where I kept them fairely growing almost a fortnight, vntill they were deftroyed by certaine Monkeyes that brake loofe, and pulled them in pieces : which might have beene prevented, but that I was conftrained to fet them in theo- 20 pen aire, the better to preferue them. The feuenth day, I went to Winnia, a great Towne of Paragetes, and Taios, foure leagues to

the Welf of Marrawini, whereof Maperitaka aboue mentioned, and Arapawaka, are chiefe Captaines. At this Towne I left my Coufin Viton Filter, and Humfrey (routon an Apothecary, M. Vntun Fifter to beare him company, and one feruant to attend him called Christopher Fifter, having first taken and two others order with Maperitaka for their diet, and other necessaries both for travell, and other wile: who less as Wiawia, euer since (according to his promise) hath performed the part of an honest man, and faith-I gaue directions to my Coulin Fifter to profecute the Discouerie of Marrawini, and the in-

land parts bordering upon it, when the time of the yeere, and the waters better ferued; and if it 40 were possible to goe vp into the high Countrey of Guiana, and to finde out the Citie of Manoa, mentioned by Sir Walter Raleigh in his Discouerie. He followed my directions to the vttermost of his abilitie, being of a good wit, and very industrious, and enabled to vidergoe those imployments, by obtaining the love, and gaining the Languages of the people, without which helpes, there is little or no good to be done in those parts.

When the waters of Marrawini were rifen, and the River paffable, (much differing from the uelled tieuen Riuer of Wiapoco, which is not to be trauelled, but in the lowest waters.) Hee began his journey to the River of for the Discouerie thereof, in company of the Apothecarie, his servant Falter, the Indian Mape Morta,viz.100. ritaka, and eighteene others, and proceeded eleuen dayes journey up the River, to a Towne of Ragues. Charibes, called Tanparamane, distant from the Sea aboue an hundred leagues; but was foure to the Pronince dayes fourney short of Moreshago, which is also a Towne of Charibes, situate vpon the River side of Marghegoro, in the Province of Moreshegoro: the chiefe Captaine thereof is called Areminta: who is a proud rough skinnes and bold Indian, much feared of all those that dwell within his Territories, having a rough skin like vnto Buile Leather, of which kind there be many in those parts; and I suppose proceedeth of some infirmitie of the bodie.

He understood by relation of the Indians of Taupuramune, and also of Areminta, that fix dayes iourney beyond Moresbego, there are divers mightie Nations of Indians, having holes through Diurs mighty their Eares, Cheekes, Noffrils, and neather Lips, which were called Craweanna, Paumeeanna, Nations of In- Quikeanna, Pecwattere, Aramceso, Acawreanno, Acooreo, Tareepecanna, Corecorickado, Pecauncadissifar up in do, Coccamo, Informa, and Warensifo: and were of firength and stature farre exceeding other In-69
Marawin, towards the light, dians, having Bowes, and Arrowes foure times as bigge: what the Indians also report of the greatnesse of their eares, I forbeare to mention, vntill by experience wee shall discouer the truth thereof. Moreover, hee learned that there fall into Marrawini divers great Rivers, called

CHAP. 16 Danger of drowning, Punta de Galea, An excellent Bath at Meues. 1281

Arrenne, Topannamin, Errewin, Comomma, Poorakette, Arroua, Arretowenne, Waoune, Anape, Binco Calling Aunime, and Carapio: whereof fome he hath feene himfelfe, That it was twentie dayes journey, into Marranini from Tanpuramune, to the head of Marrawini, which is inhabited by Armaccas, Sappaios, Para- I wenne daies cotes, and some Taios: and that a dayes journey from thence to the Land-ward the Countrey is journey from phine, and Champian ground, with long graffe. Hee paffed in this journey aboue eightie ouer. Tanjuran mee pline, and Champian ground, with long grane. Here paned in this fourney about eighthe out? to the head of fals of water, and many of them very dangerous; of tome of them I had experience the yeere to the head of before. He proceeded no further at that prefent, being unprouided for fo long a journey, support The Countries fing that it had beene neerer (then he found it) to the head of the River by a formights travell : above the and fo returned backe in fixe dayes space, intending better preparation for a second journey : but head of Mar. is and to returned backe in fixe dayes space, interioung better preparation at a recommodately down to his purpole was presented by an votimely death: for shortly after hee was drowned by mission. tune ; whereby we fee, that man determineth, but God dilpofeth.

THE tenth day of September being Sunday, I left the maine of Guiana, and in my thip-boat Thetenth of Hood off into the Sea to feeke my thips, which were forced to ride foure leagues from thore, September by reason of the shoales; but as we passed ouer them, we were in danger to bee cast away by the they let Guiaby teach of a Sea, which verily had funke our Boat, if with great celeritie wee had not lightned free, by heuling ouer-boord many baskets of bread, of Cassan, Maix, Pinas, Platanas, Potatoes, and danger to be a fuch like prouision, wherewith our Boat was loden; by which means it pleased God to deliuer vs cast away. from pretent deftraction, and to bring vs fafe vnto our fhips.

When I came aboord, we weighed anchor, and steered away from the Iland of Trinidado, and woon the eighteenth day in the morning, we arrived at Punta de Galea, where wee found three They finde a English hips at anchor, which was no small comfort vnto vs, considering our great defects and English thips at wants. One of thele shippes was called the Diana, belonging to Master Lat a Dutch Merchant Punta de Galea. dwelling in London. The other two, the Penelope, and the Indenour, belonging to Maiter Hall, a Merchant also of London. We stayed at this place fixe daies to mend our bad Caske, and to take fresh water : during which time I was kindly intreated, and feasted by the Merchants, and had supply of all such things as I stood in neede of; which courtese I requited in the best manner I could for the prefent.

Vpon Sunday the twentie foure of September we weighed anchor, fo likewise did the Diana 30 (the other two shippes beeing gone two or three daies before vs,) but the winde shifting to the North-east, inforced vs backe againe al most to the same place from whence wee departed. The ewenrie fine we weighed againe, and plied along the shoare towards Cape Brea, about three leagues. This Cape is fo called of the Pitch which is there gotten in the earth, whereof there is Pitch gotten fuch abundance, that all places on this fide of the World may bee flored therewith. It is a most which melterly excellent Pitch for trimming of thippes that paffe into their Regions and hot Countries, for it not with the melterh not with the Sunne, as other Pitch doth,

The twentie fixe day we flood along againe, the winde being still contrarie and variable, intermixt with many calmes, and so continued vntill the second of October, when we arrived at They arrive at Port de Hispania. Within two daies after our arrivall there, Don Sanches de Mendosa, the Te- Port de Hispania 40 niente for that yeere, with certaine other Spaniards came abourd vs : wee gave them the best en- Don Sanches de tertainment that our meanes, the time, and place would affoord, and had much friendly confe- Mendofa comrence together. They told me, that they lately had a conflict with the Charibes, wherein they their flip. had loft feuen or eight of their men, and had many others hurt and wounded, whereof some came tomy Chirargion to have their wounds dreffed during our abode there. And they plainly The Signified: confessed that they are very much molested by the Chariber; and knew not how by any meanes much mole-

We stajed at Porte de Hispania untill the seuenth day, in hope to get some good Tobacco a-

monght the Spaniards, who daily fed vs with delaies and faire words, but in truth they had none good at that present for vs, which we perceiving, departed thence vpon the seventh day, about They depart one of the clocke in the morning, leaving the other ships to attend their trade, and stood away from Trinidade 50 for the paffages, called Les ferot beccas de Drago, and difembogued about eight of the clocke the fame morning. Then wee fleered away for an Iland called Menes, and leaving the Ilands of Granado, Saint Vincent, Guadalupa, and Monferate, in our starboard side, wee arrived They arrives there the twelfth day, where we ftopped to take in ballaft, and more water, for our ships were much

In this lland there is an hot Bath, which as well for the reports that I have heard, as also for An excellent that I have feene and found by experience, I doe hold for one of the belt and most four reigne in hot Bath at the World. I have heard that divers of our Nation have there beene cured of the Leprone, and Muss,

that one of the same persons now, or lately dwelt at Woolwich neere the River of Thames, by 60 whom the truth may be knowne, if any man defire to bee further fatisfied therein. As for my owne experience, although it was not much , yet the effects that I found it worke both in my felfe, and others of my company in two daies space, doe cause mee to conceine the best of it. For An extr. surat my comming thither, I was grieuously vexed with an extreame cough, which I much feared cough cured would turne me to great harme, but by bathing in the Bath, and drinking of the water, I was by the Bath.

1282 Departure from Meues by Fayal, Arrivall at Crook-hauen in Ireland. LIB. VI

burned with Gunpowder. and by the Bath cured in Swellings in the legges cu-

red in a day. They depart from Mexes.

Faral.

They are driuen bya ftorme into Ireland.

> The number of those that died.

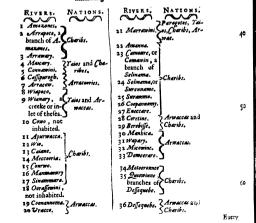
speedily cured ; and ever tince that time, I have found the flate of my body (I give God thankes for it) farre exceeding what it was before, in strength and health. Moreouer, one of my compa-A mans hand ny, named John Huntbatch (feruant to my brother) as he was making a fire, burned his hand with Gunpowder, and was in doubt thereby to loofe the vie of one or two of his fingers, which were shrunke vp with the fire, but he went presently to the Bath, and washed and bathed his hand a good space therein, which soopled his fingers in such manner, that with great ease he could flie and stretch them out, and the fire was so washed out of his hand that within the space of twenty foure houres, by twice or thrice washing and bathing it, the forenesse thereof was cured onely the eye-fore for the time remained. Furthermore, two or three other of my company having fwellings in theu legs, were by the Bath cured in a day.

Hence we departed the fixteenth day of October, in the afternoone, and leaving the llands of Saint Christopher, Saint Martin, and Anguilla on the Starboord fide, we diffembogued through the broken Hands on the North fide of Anguilla vpon S. Lukes day, where I thinke neuer Eng. libman diffembogued before vs: for we found all our Sea-charts false concerning that place, those broken llands being placed therein, to the Southward of Anguilla, betweene it and Saint Marrins, and we found them scituate to the Northward thereof.

On the eleventh day of November wee had fight of Faral, one of the Ilands of the Terceras which we left on our starboord fide, and fleeted away for England, the winde continuing faire untill the twenty foureday, But then it changed, fire to the East by North, and then to the East South-east, and became so violent and furious, that for three dayes space we were not able 20 to beare our faile, but did drine before the winde at the least three leagues, a watch out of our courfe; and the first land we made was Cape Cleere, in the South-west part of Ireland, where against our wils we arrived at Crooke Hanen the twenty nine of November.

During the time of my Voyage, we loft but one Land-man, who died in Guiana; and one Sailer, and an Indian Boy, who died at Sea in our returne : and during the space of these three yeares last past fince the voyage, of all the men which I left in the Countrey, being in number about thirty, there died but fix, whereof one was drowned, another was an old man of threefcore years of age, and another tooke his death by his owne diforder; the rest died of sicknesse, as pleased God the giver of life : for fuch small lose, his holy name be blessed now and ever.

The names of the Rivers falling into the Sea from Amazones. to Desiequebe, and of the severall Nations inhabiting those Rivers.



CHAP.17. Fish good flesh, Marwin with the adjacent Regions and Inhabitants, 1282

Fuery house hath Cocks, Hennes, and Chickens, as in England and the variety of fish is wonderfull, without compare; but the chiefelt comfort of our Country-men is this, that the Beaft called Mannery, and the fish called the Sea-Cow (being severally as bigge as a Heiser of two years A heast and a old, and of which kinde there are very many) are in eating to like vnto our English Beefe, that fift like Beefe old, and to what the can diffinguish them, and may as well as Beefe be salted, and kept for our pro-usion. There is also a Beast in colour like a Fawne, but fuller of white spots, in stature somewhat Muton. leffe then a small Sheepe, and in taste like Mutton, but is rather better meate; the Baremo is also of the same taste. I have the Copie of Master Harcourt his Patent, and he published also certaine Articles for the Aduenturers, &c. which for breuity are omitted.

CHAP. XVII.

A Relation of the habitations and other Observations of the River of Marwin , * and the adjoyning Regions.

Townes in the River of Marwin.

" I found this fairely written amongst M. Hak. papers, hur know nor who was the

Nprimis, Marracommus a little Village fo called where the Armacca dwell. whole chiefe Captaine is Ceretan, and is at the foot of the River of Marnin in a creake on the left hand going vp the River. Secondly, Ruffia a little Village fo called where likewise Arnaccas dwell being likewise at the foote of the River on the right hand going vp the River. Thirdly, Mojjemon, a large Towne

where are some twentie houses all builded very lately, inhabited by Paramagotos and Taios, whose chiefe Captaine is Maperitacea (being the Captaine with whom the Generall left vs. and with whom we continue) being on the left hand of the River. Fourthly, Kiamarie, a Towne inhabited by Careebees, almost right against Morremon, whose Chiefetaine is-30 Fiftly, Tonorima, a little Village aboue Kiamary inhabited by Careebees, being on the same fide of the River, who be governed by the Captaine of Quuenow, Sixtly, Quuenou, a Towne fome quarter of a mile diftant from Tonorima, inhabited by Careebees, whose Chiefetaine is Vcapea, havinga lame hand. Seventhly, Aronaita, a Towne fituate on the fame fide of the River (whose inhabitants be Careebees but a good prettie way beyond, whose Chiefetaine is Seepanes Eightly, Comurraty, a Towne fituate beyond Aronatta, on the other fide of the River, whose Inhabitants be Careebees, and Chiefetaine is Parapane. Ninthly, Pasim, a Towne tituate beyond Commeratie on the same side of the River whose Inhabitants bee Careeb, and Chiefetaine is Tanatweya. Tenthly, Paramaree, a Towne fituate beyond Pasim on the other side of the River, inhabited by Careabees, whose Chiefetaine is Iuara. There is beyond Paramaree a lone house, beeing situate 40 some dayes journey from Paramaree on the same side of the River being inhabited by Careebees. Eleuenthly, about some eleuen daies iourney beyond the lone house there is a towne called Tanparamunns, whose Inhabitants be Careebees. Twelfthly, a daies journey from thence is another Towns called Moree/heege, whose Inhabitants be Careebees. About some twentie dajes journey beyond Moreesbeego is a Towne called Aretonenne, whose Inhabitants bee Careebees having verie long eares hanging to their shoulders, and they are reported to beea very gentle and louing uing people. Some twentie daies farther is the head of the River Marwin, where dwell Para- pernaps mad by art, with wagatos, Arwaccas, and Suppay, and after a daies iourney in the Land, they report the way to hanging be very faire, and Champian ground with long graffe.

weights thereon as is yied in the Eaft IB-

Townes from the foot of Marwin on the Northfide along the Sea.

TIrst, Equimibone, a Towne inhabited by Armaccas and Paramagotos. Secondly, Carcoofcom Tooro, inhabited by Armaccas, whose Chiefetaine is Woaccomo. Thirdly, Ampea inhabited by Armaccas. Fourthly, about fix mile within Land is Careebee, inhabited by Armaccas, whose Chiefetaine is Aramea, Fiftly, Wia Wiam, about two miles from the Sea, a Towne inhabited by Taios, Parramagotos and Armaccas, whole Chiefetaine is Araponaca. Sixtly, Soorry Soorry, some two mile directly farther toward the Sea side, inhabited by Parawagotos , whose Chiefetaine is Resurrima. Seventhly, Amiebas, a little distant from Soory Soory, inhabited by Paramagotes. Eightly, Viegnano, some fixe mile beyond Sorry Soory, inhabited by Taos and Paramago. 60 tos. Ninthly, Vrarinno adicyning to Vicquano, inhabited by Armaceas and Paramagotos, Tenthly, Surarer a daies iourney beyond Wia Wiam vp into the Land inhabited by Armaccas. Eleventhly, Simarra, some fixe miles distant from Wia Wiam, inhabited by Arwaccas, Twelfthly, Capri, a Towne adjoyning to Simarra, inhabited by Armaccas. Thirteenthly, Consocre, a Towneadioyning to Caure, inhabited by Parawagotos, and Arwaccas.

Waters ouer-

To most of these places there can be no passage but by Canoas in the Winter being marsh-medowy grounds, ouerflowne with swelling Tides. But in the Summer it is faire, and then they hide their Canoas in the Woods by the Sea-fide.

As for the River of Marwin, there are no other Rivers which fall into it : but there be many llands, and fome very great. The passage to the head thereof from the men with long eares is very dangerous, by reason of the paffage through hollow and concaue Rockes, wherein harbour Bat-mife of an voreatonable bigneffe, which with their clawes and wings doe wound the Paffengers shrewdly ; yea, and oftentimes depriue them of life. During which paffage (which is dangerous paf- forme quarter of a mile, and very darke; for the Rockes are close aboue, and in fashion like an Indian house) they are inforced to make great fires in their Canoas, and put ouer their heads some of their Crab-baskets ro defend them from the force of their clawes and wings, and fo they fafe-

ly paffe. Stones granfparent, Sec

There is a Chareebee (with whom I am very well acquainted) whole name is Carourse) who affured me of certaine transparent itones, both of a greene and red colour, which hee described by a greene eare-ring which I thewed him, affirming they were somewhat bigger, and that they lay in a little gutter at the head of the River, which ran in a Valley betweene two Hills.

I was further informed by a Taio, an ancient man (who came downe from the head of the Riuer Selinama in a little Canoa, with foure other, and a boy; three of which were Armaccas, and one Taio, who was borne in Orenog, , and as I judge, about the age of fourescore yeeres , or little leff.) who reported to mee, that hee was one of them which with Morequite and Putiney, was 20 at the killing of nine Spaniards , and a Spanilo Pedas ; and how Morequito was put to death. and a greatmany of his Indians hanged : himfelfe was taken prifoner, and pinched with Pinfers for his punishment, and his eares nailed to wood, which I coniecture was a Pillourie. Besides. they rubbed his body ouer with falt mixt with Vrine, after they had pinched him, and fetcht bloud, and after tyed him up in chaines. The reason why they put him not to death . was because hee had beene a great Traueller and knew the Countries well, and so they kept him for

It so chanced, that the Spaniards, upon his informing them of the Cassinggotos Countrie, and how rich they were, and how he would be their guide, went with fome companie to conquer it: the Captaine of the Spaniards was called Alexander, as he faith. But the Caffipagotes knowing 20 his crueltie, thought it better to fight it out, then trust to his clemency, and so overthrew him and his companie, driving them to their Canoas, in which fight he escaped: But yet afterward it was his milhap to be againe in the hands of his adversarie by the meanes of Caripana King of Spanish denises Emeria, and put in chaines, and handled cruelly. His body was besmeared, as he laid, with a vellow stone; for so he called it, which I take to be Brimstone, and so set on fire on his body, and at Gaziulco on after that he was well, and his skinne imooth and faire, they anointed him with honie from too the South Sea to toe, and fo scattered dust upon him, in which which were millions of Pismires, tying him in chaines to a great tree, where Muskitos flockt about him like moates in the Sunne, and did pitiin iron chains fully stine him, then which death had beene better, as hee faid. Within some small space hee with another Taio, and three Arwaccas were choien to goe a fishing some two dayes journey 40 whipped till from the Towne. Likewise there went as overseers over them foure Spaniards, three of which. alhis fich was while they were a fifthing went into the Wood a fowling, and the fourth which was left for the raw, and to to operfeer by chance fell allege, which they efpying, agreed to releafe themf-lues and to flip from the shoare with their Canoa, and went vp Selinama seuen dayes journey within land from the head thereof to a Towne of the Armaccas, called Cooroopon, where he now dwelleth, whole death by Mul- name is Weepackea; and the chiefe Armacca which came with him is called Edaddeama, and the Captaine of Cooroopon is called Naushickeban. This Taio told mee of a Mountaine at the head Golden hopes of Diffikeebee which is called Oraddoo, where is a great Rocke of white Spar, which hath streams of Gold in it about the breadth of a Goose-quill ; and this he affirmeth very earnestly. Also he speaketh of a Plaine which is some seuen or eight dayes journey from the Mountaine where is 50 great flore of Gold in graines fo big as the top of a mans finger, and after the flouds be fallen they findethem, which Plaine is called Mumpara.

Further, he spake of a Valley not farre distant from thence, which is called Wancoobanona, which bath the like : and he faid, they gather them the space of two moneths together; which two moneths are presently after the great raines which wash away the sand and gravell from the graffe which groweth in turfets, and then they may perceive the Gold lie gluttering on the ground. And of these they are very charie. And the Captaines and Priests or Peeass doe charge the Indians very strictly, yea with punishment of the whip, that they be secret, and not reueale it to the Spaniard. But it feemeth they are willing the English should have it, or else bee would neuer have related fo much of the state of his Countrie.

He spake very much of Sir Walter Raleigh: he likewise knew Francis Sparrow, and the boy 60 which Sir Walter left behind him at Topiamary his house. He further faid, that Topiamary wondred that he heard not from Sir Walter, according to his promile: and how Topicarary did verily thinke, that the Spaniard had met with him, and so had slaine him. Further, her faith how To-

piawary is dead, and how one Roponoyegrippo succeeded in his roome. Likewise he sayth Caripana the King of Emeria, who was very subject to the Spaniard, and did once betray him to the Topianary dead Spaniard, 18 now dead; at which he seemed not a little to revoyce; and how one Dothronias 18 in his place, and is a good King , holding Armes against the Spaniar I with the Caffipagotos, and and giving him many overthrowes, to that now hee hath cleare left Diffikeebee and not a Spaniard there. He likewile faid, how Topiamary had drawne in the Indians of Wariwackeri, Amariocupana, Aromaya, Wickery, and all the people that belonged to Wanuritone, Captaine of Canuria, and Wacariopea Captaine of Sayma against Sir Walter Raleigh his comming to have warred as and the Teanderpuremei: And as yet Wanuritone and Wacariopea doe expect his comming. against tile tearnerpe some.

10 He addeth further, how he knew the two Nations of Timitinas, called Chamena and Warawitty, Timitinas house to the control of the control o

He addeth further, now he was to build their houses on the top of trees. And now he faith the Spatos, who are forced in the flouds to build their houses on the top of trees. And now he faith the Spatos, miard hath for the most part destroyed them, keeping divers of them to make and mend his Canoas. Further hee knew Toparimacca, and fayth hee is yet living, and Captaine of Aramaca a Napor, who likewise doth expect Sir Walter his comming, and had drawne a companie of Indians for the aide and affiftance of Sir Walter. Likewife, how Patimay is yet living, and how the Spaniards have layd great waite for him, but could never finger him to bee revenged for his part of killing the nine Spaniards. Further he addeth, how the Spaniards were killed at a Mountaine called Riconers in Patimars Countrie, and how Patimary expected long for Sir Walter Raleigh. Likewise he saith, how the Epeuremes have now two very faire Townes, one called Aruburgua-20 ry, and the other Corburrimore: and faith, they are not good people, yet they dare not warre with them. He further affirmeth of the men whole shoulders are higher then their heads , which Men with

he called Wyweypanamy, and offereth to goe with me thither if I come vp in their high Countrie. (houlders For lines the death of Toniamary they are friends, and bend their forces against the Species. II. higher then For fince the death of Topiamary they are friends, and bend their forces against the Spaniards. He the for ther foake of a white, cleare, high and huge Rocke vnder a Mountaines fide, which is called Cryft il Rock. Mattuick, that on a Sun-shine day if a man looked on it, it would dazle his eyes exceedingly. Hee shewed mee before his departure from me,a piece of metall fashioned like an Eagle, and as I ghelle, it was about the weight of eight or nine ounces troy weight, it feemed to be Gold or at leastwise two parts Gold and one Copper, I offered him an Axe, which he refused; to which I Images of added foure Kniues, but could not get it of him : but I imagine the Dateb at Selinama have gold, 20 bought it of him, for their only comming was for Axes, as he laid, hearing that the Dutch were

at Selinama. I demanded where hee had that Eagle, his answere was, hee had it of his Vncle. who dweltamong the Weearaspoyns in the Countrie called Sherumerrimary neere the Caffipagotos Countrie where is great ftore of thele Images. Further he faid, that at the head of Selinama and Marwin there were great itore of the halve Moones, which hee called by the name of Vinnaton. He likewise spake of a very faire and large Citie in Guiana, which hee called Monooan, Manooan great which I take to be that which Sir Walter calleth Manoa, which standeth by a falt Lake which Citie in Guida he called Parroowan Parrocare Monoan, in the Province of Afaccona the chiefe Captaine or Acarimannora, as he called him, was called Pepodallapa. He further faid, that after that a man is vp at the head of the River and some ten dayes sourney within the Land, every childe can tell of 40 the riches of Monogan. Further he addeth, how that once in enery third yeere all the Cassianes or Lords and Captaines some seuen dayes journey from Manooan doe come to a great drinking, which continueth for the space of ten dayes together, in which time they goe sometimes a fishing, fowling, and hunting, their fishing is in the salt Lake, where is abundance of Canoas, and those very great. They have many fish-pooles of standing water, wherein they have aboundance of Fish. They have store of wilde Porkes and Deere, and other beasts, which are very good meate. Their Houses be made with many lotts and partitions in them. but not boorded, but with Houses with

barres of wood, onely the lower floore on the ground is spread with clay very smooth, and with losts, fires hardned, as they doe their pots, then presently they build their houles, as is before fooken of. Alto he affirmerh, that within the Citie at the entring in of their houses they hang Carocore on the posts which I take to be Images of gold.

Directions to the Towne of Cooropan from Marrawin.

Rom the head of Marrawin to Ithuerwa, a Chareeb Towne: from thence to Caperocca, a Chareeb Towne: from thence to a Mountaine called Pagen: from thence to Una, a Mountaine : from thence to Tonwalprenay, a Charech Towne : from thence to Tetassecomogneto, a Chareeb Towne: from thence to Tunfloorite, a Chareeb Towne: from thence to Sognoon, a Parawag Towne: from thence to Crooroorere, a Suppay Towne: from thence to Macatana a Sup-60 pay Towne: from thence to Pipicorwarra, a Mountaine: from thence to Shadden, an Armacca

Towne: from thence to Lonnoo, an Armacca Towne: from thence to Horurra a Mountaine: from thence to Habittebin, a Plaine : from thence to Warooca, an Armac. Towne : from thence to Hardos an Armacca; and from thence to Coorepon, where he dwelleth, which he faith is but ten dayes iourney from the head of Marrawin.

000002

Directions

Darke and

A. Kninet.

Greve Rese

Staniards

of torrues. Sir Fr Drakes found a Negro Sunne, to be

Sir W.Ral.

Directions from the head of Selinama to Cooropan, which is but feuen dayes journey.

Rom the head of Selinama to Kiarno a Cherrech Towne: from thence to Penimaro a Charech
Towne: from thence to Scooadeddepon an Armae Towne: from thence to Siekene a Mountame: from thence to Shuhurway an Armac Towne: from thence to Hadarinner a Suppar Towne: from thence to Weestoopona, Armac: from thence to Ruttrahar, Armac: from thence to Caboyetitte, Armac : from thence to Heeanamerre, Suppay: from thence to Wabeckeyaway, Arwas: from thence to Hanamob , Arwae : from thence to Muttuggabee, a Mountaine; and fo to 10 Corropon, which is but feuen dayes journey from the head of Selmama.

He like wife faith it is but a moneths journey by land, from the head of Marranin to the head of Diffikeebee, and from the head of Diffikeebee to the head of Oreneg, a moneths travell.

Rivers from Brabific to the Amazones.

| | RIVERS. | NATIONS. | 1. | Ecaurwa. | Charceb. | |
|----------------------|-------------------|----------------|-------------|-------------------|----------------|----|
| | Brabiffe. | Charcebees. | 1 | Camrooroo. | Chareeb. | |
| | Winniepa. | Chareebes. | : | Muccurrie. | Chareeb. | 20 |
| | Aren. | Napoys. | | Kiam. | Charech. | |
| | Mannapoo. | Napoys. | | Wia. | Charesb. | |
| | Muccauren. | not inhabited. | | Kowo. | not inhabited. | |
| | Morecoofe. | Napoys. | i · | Apoorwasca. | Charceb. | |
| | Arawon. | not inhabited. | <u>.</u> | Wanna∫e. | Taios. | 30 |
| | Orenoso. | Taios Arwac. | | Wiapoco. | Taios. | |
| | Emataccoo. | Chareebes. | | Areocona. | Areecola. | |
| | Eparramoo. | Chareebes. | 1 | Casippooroo. | Areecoole. | |
| | Aratooree. | Charcebes. | li | Connawin. | Taio. | |
| | Amockeores. | Chareeb. | i. | Missaree. | Areccool. | |
| | Parcema. | Charceb. | 1 | Demcerare. | Arwac. | |
| | Wine. | Chareeb. | l | Miconine. | Arwac. | |
| | Moroka. | | Ī | Wapary. | ATTAC. | |
| | Paurooma. | Armaccai. | l | Manbica. | Arwac. | |
| | Wacapwhon, | Armaccas. | l | Keribiffe. | Arwac. | |
| | Diffikeebee. | Arwac. | 1 | Coretine. | Chareeb, Arm | 1 |
| nches of leechee. | Quiowinne. | Chareeb. | | Encecare. | Chareeb. | |
| | Matooronee. | Chareeb. | l | Coopanomi. | Chareeb. | |
| | Marrawin. | Para. Ta. Cha. | | Sooramme. | Chareeb. | |
| | 2.2 | & Arwa. | ŀ | Surennamo, alias, | | 40 |
| | Amanna. | Chareeb. | Branches of | Selinama. | Charech. | |
| | Vraco. | Arwac. | | Camouree, alias, | | |
| | Coonannoma. | Armac. | Selinama. | ? Commawin. | | |
| | Oeraffrainni. | not inhabited. | | Arewaree. | Charceb. | |
| | Sinomarra. | Chareeb. | E | Arapoco. | • | |
| | Mannomanury. | Chareeb. | 1. | Amazone. | | |
| | ZYZMANOSTIMINI J. | | 1.1 | | | |

Topaniminni, a Branch of Marwin, at the head thereof going toward Oronog,, in which dwell a wilde People called Frokere, which are fwife in running. The Chareebees with long cares are called Norraco. Ekimnicke, a kinde of worme, which poi-

And thus much of Guianian affaires. Some other Voyages thither baue beene at large publified by by Sir W. R. and Master Keymis, recorded by Master Hakl. A later also with great noise, preparation and expellation bath happened, written alreadie in bloud, therefore, and for the latenelle needlelle and unworthie, that I fay not too difmall and fatall for our Relations.

CHAP. 60

CHAP. XVIII.

A Description and Discouery of the River of Amazons, by WILLIAM DAVIES Barber Surgeon of London.



He River of the Amazons lieth in the highest part of the West Indies, beyond the Diffunc from He Riuer of the Amazona lieth in the nignetic part of the vertical explicit of the population from Equipolital Linguistics fall with this River forties leagues from Land you find laude 8. England 100. 6. 82.7. Eathomes water, & you shall eet the Sea change to a ruddie colour, the was leaguest ter shall grow fresh, by these fignes you may run boldly in your course, and come this is restricted that grow fresh, by these fignes you may run boldly in your course, and come this is restricted to the state of the s

make Discourre of the Trees before the Land, by reason the Land is very low, and not higher in faid Daviet of one place then another three foote, being at a Spring tide almost all ouerstowne, God knowes his milerable how many hundred leagues. It flowes much water therewith a verie forcible tide. In this Ri- captiuitie; ner I continued tenne weekes, feeing the fashion of the people and Countrie there: This Countrie is altogether full of Woods, with all forts of wilde Beatls : as Lions Beares , Woolues, Leonards. Baboones, strange Boores, Apes, Monkeies, Martins, Sanguines, Marmofets, with diners other strange beatts: also these Woods are full of Wild-fowle of all fores, and Parrate 20 more plentifull then Pidgeons in England, and as good meate, for I haue often eaten of them. Also this Countrey is very full of Rivers, having a King over everie River. In this place is continual Tempetts, as Lightning, Thunder, and Raine, and so excreame, that it continues most commonly sixteene or eighteene houres in foure and twentie. There are many standing

waters in this Countrie, which bee full of Aligators, Guianes, with many other feuerall water Servents, and great store of fresh fish, of strange fashions. This Countrie is full of Mushitas, which is a fmail Flie, which much offends a Stranger comming newly into the Countrie. The manner, fashion, and nature of the people is this: They are altogether naked, both men and

women , having not fo much as one threed about them to couer any part of their nakednesse. the man taketh a round Cane as bigge as a pennie Candle, and two inches in length, through 30 the which hee puls the fore-skinne of his yard, tying the skinne with a piece of the rinde of a Tree about the bignesse of a small pack-threed, then making of it fast about his middle, hee continueth thus till hee have occasion to vie him: In each Eare hee weareth a Reede or Cane. which hee bores through it, about the bignesse of a Swannes Quill, and in length halfe an inch. and the like through the muld of the lower hype: alloat the bridge of the Note he hangs in a Reede a finall gl.fe. Beade or Button, which hangsing decity store his Mouth, files too and tro fills abee ipeaks. wherein her takes great pride arm, pleafore. Her wares his Haire long, being rounded below for in enacher parts his Bare, and outlion, or rither as I maged pluck bild on the cowne like as "rie." But their women's fon fallion at all to fer forth them felles, but flaren niked girl by work born, with hirt Morgo C tolen flaren side of the freaths. 40 hang verie low, by resion they are neuer laced or braced up: they to evie to anoint their Bo-

dies, both Men and Women, with a kind of redde Earth, shecause the Mushitas, or Fites shall These people are veriesing enious, craftic, and treatherous, verie light of foot, and good Bowemen, whose like I have neuerleene, for they ope ordinarily kill their owne food, as Boards, Fowle, and Fish, the manage of their Bow and Arrows is this. The Bow is about two yards in length, the Arrow Leuin foote. His Bow is made of Brasill-wood verse curious, his thring of the rinde of a Tree, lying lotes of the Bow, without any bent, his Arrow made of Reede, and the head of it is a fish bone progalles Boat in this manner: standing behinde a Tree, hee takes his marke at the Beast, and woulding him Merfollowes him like a Bloud-hound till he

50 fall, oftentimes feconding his shoot: then for any Fowle be he neuer so little, he neuer misses him: as for the first, hee walkes by the water side, and when hee hath spied a fish in the water, hee prefently firikes him with his Arrow, and fuddenly throwing downe his Bow . hee leaves into the water, fwimming to his Arrow which hee drawes aland with the fish fastened to it, then having each kild his owne food, as well field, and fowle, as fifth, they meete together, to the number of fiftie or fixtie in a company, then make a fire after this fashion : They take two stickes of Wood, rubbing one hard against another, till such time as they bee fired, then making of 2 great fire, every man is his owne Cooke to broile that which he hath gotten, and thus they feed without Bread or Salt, or any kind of drinke but Water and Tobacco, neither dee they know what it meanes : In these Countries we could find neither Gold nor Silver Oare, but great store 60 of Hennes. For I have bought a couple for a lewes Harpe, when they would retuse tenne shil-

lings in money. This Countrie is full of delicious fruite, as Pines, Plantines, Guaues, and Potato Rootes, of which Fruits and Roots I would have bought a mans burthen for a glasse Button or Bead. The manner of their Lodging is this : they have a kinde of Net made of the rinde of a Tree which they call Hamac, being three fathome in length, and two in breadth, and gathered

20

20

at both ends at length, then fastning either end to a Tree, to the full length about a ward and halfe from the ground, when hee hath defire to fleepe, hee creepes vnto it. The King of eueria River is knowne by this manner. He weares voon his head a Crowne of Parrats feathers, of fea uerall colours, having either about his middle, or about his Necke, a Chaine of Lions teeth or clawes, or of fome other strange beaft, having a woodden Sword in his hand, and hereby is he knowne to be the King: Oftentimes one King warres against another in their Canowes, which are Boars cut our of a whole Tree, fometimes taking one another, the Conquerours eates the Captines. By this time ten weekes were spent, and being homewards bound, but not the

same way that we came, for we failed vito the River before the winde, because it blowes there continually one way, which forces all shippes that come thither to returne by a con-

trarie way.

The end of the fixth Booke.



VOY-

VOYAGES TO AND ABOVT THE SOVTHERNE

\$\frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{1}{2} \cdot \frac{1}{2}

AMERICA, WITH MANY MARINE

OBSERVATIONS AND DISCOVE. SES OF THOSE SEAS AND LANDS, BY ENGLISHMEN

AND OTHERS.

THE SEAVENTH BOOKE.

D Eader, I here present thee the exactest Treatise of Brasil which I have seem written by any man, Reader, I have prefent thee the exactiff Treatife of Brail wonce a mane scene written of many many.

Respectally in the Historic of the multiplied and distributed Nations and customers of man; as also in 16 success the natural Historic of Bealts, Serponts, Fonles, Fifter, Trees, Plants, with dances other remarkeable for of the continuous states and Historic of Bealts, Serponts, Fonles, Fifter, Trees, Plants, with dances other remarkeable for the continuous states. toe manage tripers of the Regions. It was written (it seemeth) by a Portugall Frier (or Iesuite) which had listed receive, and me rarities of those regions. It was written in section / o, n. the will she written Booke was taken by one Fran - name which the thritis yeares in those parts, from whom (much against the will she written Booke was taken by one Fran - name which who is the state of t ces Cooke of Dartmouth in a Vojage entward bound, for Brasil, An. 1601. who fold the fame to Ma - w Emire ere de ces Cookeef Darcmoutes or a Copage one manusonmanger Diams, cause of Portugall into English . Congress bearing the Hacket for twenty (billings 3 by whose procurement it was translated ont of Portugall into English . Congress whom simulated the control of the co which translation I have compared with the written Originall, and in many places supplied defetts, to have been amended errours, illustrated with notes, and thus singled and parnished to the publike vars. Great loss Authorofets, 30 had the Author of his worke, and it not a little of his name ", which I should as willings; have in served the ne and the Cantrol of the works, some a new marter of the creater are had to deferred as worthy much benow for but industrie, by which the great and admirable worker of the Creater are had to deferred as worthy much benow for as worthy much benom for bus industrie, by which the great and admirable workes of the Creator are bus the same to made knowne; the wishle and various selfmentes of his insulfible power, and manifold wisedome. Sic se discretions were not notify, in this and abter written realizates the Spaniards and the Portugals house taken paints, so the and (which was denied to Spaine and Portugal). England we have entred into their ladours, and but memon of the reaped as English branch of Spanish and Portugal Reade. Another Treatist was taken by the said the same of the reaped as English branch of sparish, and Portugal Reade. Another Treatist was taken by the said the same with the same band, part of which to have added for which his a breather with the same band, part of which to have added for which his a breather which his a b better knowledge both of the civill-uncivill dealings of the Portugals with the Indians; and of the unchristian christianitie in their owne practice and conversion of the Indians, and that by lesnitical testi- accordanced monie. I may well adde this lesuite to the English Voyages, as being an English prize and captine.

CHAP. I.

A Treatise of Brasil, written by a Portugall which bad long lined there..

ð. T.

Of the beginning and original of the Indians of Brasil, and of their Customes, Religions, and Ceremonies.



I feemeth that this people hath no knowledge of the beginning and creation of the world, but of the deluge it seemeth they Their opinion haue tome notice : but as they haue no writings nor characters of a floud. fuch notice is obscure and confused; for they say that the waters drowned all men, and that one onely escaped spon a lanipata with a filter of his that was with childe, and that from thefet wo they have their beginning, and from thence began their multiplying and increase.

This people hath not any knowledge of their Creator, nor have or the of any thing of heaven, nor if there be any paine nor glory after Crestor, and

this lite, therefore they have no oderation nor ceremonies, nor of the Soule, dinne worthip, but they know that they have foules, and that they dye not; and they fay that Paradife, Di

the foules are connerted into dinels, and that after their death they goe to certaine fields where are many figge trees along by a faire River, and all together doe nothing but daunce. This is the cause why they are greatly afraid of the Diuell, whom they call Curupira, Taguain, Pigtangua, Machchera. Anhanga: and their ferre of him is to great, that onely with the imagination of him they dye as many ti nesalready it hath happened: they worthip it not, nor any other creature, neither have they Idols of any fort, onely fome old men doe fay that in fome waies they have cer-Divelefeare, taine Ports where they offer him tome things, for the feare they have of them, and because they wou'd not die Sometimes the Diuels appeare vnto them, though very feldome, and among them

Thy yele some witchcrafts, and there are some Witches, not because they believe in them, or 10 doe worthing them, but onely they give themselves to the Chapar in their licknesses, seeming to

them that they received their health, but not because they doe think they have any divinity, and they do it rather to receive health, then for any other respect. There arise sometimes among them fome Witches, whom they call Caraba, and most commonly it is some Indian of a bad life; this doth some witcherafts and strange things to nature, as to show that he raiseth some to life, that makes himfelfe dead, and with thefe and other I ke things he carrieth all the Countrie after him. decrining and faying to them that they shall not cultimate, nor plant their Pulse and their prouifion, neither digge nor labour, &c. for with his comming the time is come that the Mattockes themselues shall digge of their owne accord, and the Beasts goe to the fields and bring the prowithon, and with thele fallhoods he leades them fo deluded and inchanted, that not looking to 20 their lives, and to get their foode, they die for hunger, and thele companies are diminished by litand little till the Caraiba remaineth alone, or is murthered by them.

No proper

Caraibas ing-

They have no proper name to expresse God, but they say the Tapan is the thunder and lightname of God. ning and that this is he that gave them the Mattocks and the foode, and because they have no other name more naturall and proper, they call God Tupan,

Ofthe Mail-They give no their mother in law.

There are mariages among them, but there is a great doubt whether they be true, as well because they have many wives, as for the easir fortaking them for whattoever quarrell, anger, or any other dil race hapning among them; but either true or not, among them they were made in downes to their daughters this fort. No yong mandid vie to marrie before he had taken an emenie, and he continued a the industries or to the fore. Virgin till he tooke and flew him, holding first his featts for the space of two or three yeares, the but they serve woman in like fort did not marrie nor know man, till she had her tearmes, after the which they made her great feasts; at the time of the deliuerie of the woman they made great drinkings. And the teast being ended, the marriage remained perfect giuing a net cleane washt; and after they were laid, the father tooke a wedge of stone and did cut vpon a post or stake, then they say bee did cut the tailes from the grandchildren, and therefore they were borne without them, and after they were married they began to drinke, for vntill then their fathers did not fuffer them. teaching them that they should drinke heedefully, and should be considerate and wife in their speaking, that the wine might doe them no hurt, and that they should not speake bad things,

and then with a vessell the old ancient men did give him the first wipe, and hold his head with their hands that he might not vomit, for if he doth vomit they hold to themselves that he would 40

Drinkings.

Tailes.

Of the manner This people eateth at all times by night and by day, and euerie houre and moment, and when they have any meate they keepe it no long time, for they have no providence for the future, but their eating and drinking. prefently they eate all that they have, and deuide it among their friends, in fort that of one fifth hat they have they divide it to all, and they hold for a great honour and gallantrie to be libe-Liberality, and rall, and thereby they get great fame and honour : and they hold for the greatest iniurie that they can doe them, to hold them for niggards, or call them fo: and when they have nothing to eate, they are very patient in hunger and thirft. They have no field or fifth daies, they eate

niggardile.

all manner of field, even of vicleane creatures, as Snakes, Toades, Rats, and fuch like wormes; they este also all manner of Fruites, saving some that are poisonous. This sustenance is ordinarily of that which the Countrie yeeldeth without husbandrie, as wilde fowle, flesh and fruites. but they have a certaine kinde of foode of a good substance, and healthfull, and many other pulfes, whereof hereafter shall mention be made. Ordinarily they drinke not while they cate, but after meate they drinke water or wine which they make of many kindes of fruites, and rootes, as hereafter shall be said, of the which they drinke without measure or order, even sill

Drinking. Feeds.

Their diet.

They have some particular daies wherein they make great feasts, and all ends in thrinking, and they last two or three daies, in the which they eate not but onely drinke, and there be men that emptie a whole great veffell of wine. That thefe drinkings may be more festivall, some goe about finging from house to house, calling and inuiting all they finde for to drinke and be merne. 60 These dancings last with mulicke all the time of the drinking, in the which they sleepe not, but passe it all in drinking, and when they are drunke they play many disorders, and they breake one anothers head, and take other mens wives, &c. They give no thankes before nor after meate to God, nor wash their hands before meate, and after meate they wipe them at their haire, on

their body, or a poste. They have no towels nor tables, they eate sitting, or lying in their nets, or cowring on the ground : they eate their meate throwing it with their band into the mouth; and I omit many other particularities that they have in their eating and drinking, because these are

All this people have for their beds certaine nets made of Cotten wooll, and they fleepe in Othe mana them ranging in the ayre. These they make some wrought, others of sundry colours and as they have in they remaine in the ayre, and have no other covering or cloathes alwaies in fummer and winter, they fleeping.

have fire yo ler them; they rife not very early, and goe to bed by times, and in the mornings there is one chiefe man in their houses, "that lying in his net doth preach ynto them for the "One House no space of an houre, how they are to goe to labour as their forefathers did, and he appointed them contained the time, telling them what they are to doe; and after he is vp continueth his preaching running hes.

through the Towne. They tooke this cultome from a bird which is like a Hawke, which fingeth in the morning, and they call it the King and Lord of the other Birds; and they fay that even as that Bird doth fing in the mornings to be heard of the reft, to the principall should make those preachings and speeches to be heard of theirs. All of them goe naked as well men as women, and have no kinde of apparnil, and are nothing. Nakedneffe.

ash med: rather it seemeth that they are in the state of innocencie touching this behalfe by the great honestic and modestic they doe keepe among themselves; and when any man speaketh Modesty.

with a wo man, he turneth his backe to her. But to make themselves gallant they vie divers in- Painting, 20 uentions, painting their bodies with the juice of a certaine fruite wherewith they remaine black, making in their bodies many white stroakes, after the fashion of round hose, and other kinde of Galanty. garmins. They enplume themselues also, making Diadems and Bracelets, and other very fine indentions, they esteem every much all manner of fine Feathers: they let no haire grow in the parts of their body, but they pull them out, onely the head excepted, which they cut in many talhions, for some weare them long with a halfe Moone shauen before, and they say they tooke Nearnesse. this yfe from Saint Thomas, and it feemeth that they had some notice of him, though confused-

ly: others make certaine kinde of crownes and circles that they feeme Friers: the women all doe weare long haire, and ordinarily blacke, and the haire of the one and of the other is smooth; when they are angrie they let their haire grow long; and the women when they mourne, doe Mourning, 20 cut their haire, and also when their husbands goe a farre iourney, in this they show their loue

and loyaltie to them : the vanitie they have in their poling is fo much, that by the head the Nations are knowne. Now alreadie fome doe weare apparell as well men as women, but they effeeme it fo little Apparell.

that they weare it rather for fashion then for honesties sake, and because they are commanded to weareit; as it is well feene by fome, that fometimes come abroad with certaine garments no further then the nauell, without any other thing, and others onely with a cap on their heads. and leave the other garments at home : the women make great accompt of Laces and

These Indians doe vie certaine Cottages, or houses of timber, covered with Palmetree leaves. Of their House and and are in length tome of two hundred and three hundred ipans, and they have two or three doores, verie little and low. They shew their valour in feeking timber, and verie great posts, and of great continuance, and there be houses that have fiftie, fixtie or feuentie roomes of twentie or flue and twentie quirters long, and as manie quarters long, and as many in breadth. In this house dwelleth one principall man or more, whom all the rest doe obey, and ordinarily they are kinft men. In every roome of these dwelleth a houshold with their children and family without any repartition betweene the one and the other, and to enter in one of these houses is to enter into a laberinth, for every roome hath his fire, and their nets hanging, and their tituffe, fo that

comming in, all that they have is in fight, and fome house hath two hundred persons and more The women when they are brought to bed (they are deliuered on the ground) doe not Childebirth take up the childe, but the Father taketh it up, or some other person whom they take for their 50 Goffip, and in friendship they are as the Goffips among the Christians. The Father doth out the Nauell string with his teeth, or with two stones knocking the one with the other, and then they fet themselves to fasting vntill the Navell string falleth off, which is ordinarily to the eight day, and till it doth fall they leave not their failing, when it falleth, if it beea man childe he maketh it a Bow with Arrowes, and tieth it at the end of the Net, and at the other end manie handfuls of hearbes which are the enemies which his sonne shall kill, and eate. These ceremonies being en led, they make drinkings where with they all are merrie. The women when they are delinered, doe prefently goe and wash themselves in the Rivers , and they give the childe sucke ordinarily a yeer and an halfe, not giving it any other thing to eate. They love their children Love and electrical desired and the children to be a second ele

60 extraordinarily, and beare them in certaine pieces of Nets which they call Tupina, and carrie canon or chair them to their plowings and to all kind of labours on their backes, through cold and heate, and dren. they carrie them like the Gip ies stradling about their hips; they give them no manner of correction, that their children may not cric. They have manie Southfayings, for they put Cottonclothes; vpon their head, birds teathers, and flickes; they lay them one the palmes of their

Daune:s. Rudeneffe.

fuirespaines with Indians children.

Friers and Ie. hands, and rocke them by them that they may grow. They effecte more to doe good to their children then to themselves, and now they esteeme and love the Fathers verie much because they bring them vp, they teach them to reade, write, and cipher, and finging, and to play on an Inftrument, a thing which they doe much esteeme.

Of the cuftom they have in harboring, or entertayning heir guefts.

When any guest doth come to the house, the honour and entertainment they make him is to bewaile him; Now the guest being come into the house they fet him in the Net, & after he is set without speaking any word to him the wife and the daughters, and the other friends do sit them downe round about him with their haire loofe, touching with the hand the partie; they all he ginne to weepe with a high voice and great abundance of teares, and there they tell in a verified profeall things that haue happened fince they faw one another to that houre, and manie other which they inuent, and the troubles that the guest hath fuffered in his journie; and all things elfe that may proubke pitie and teares. The guest all this time speaketh not one word, but after they have bewailed him a good while thy wipe the teares, and remaine fo quiet, fo modeft, fo pleafant and merrie that it feemeth they neuer wept, and then they falute one another, and give their Ereins, or welcome, and they bring him meate, &c. And after these Ceremonies ended, the guest telleth wherefore he commeth. The men likewise bewaile one another, but it is in some weightie matters, as deaths, misfortunes in wars, &c. They hold it for a great courtefie to entertaine all men and to give them all things necessarie for their sustenance, and some gifts, as Bowes. Arrowes. Birds, Feathers, and other things according to their pouertie without any kind of reward.

rhey haue of drinking of

Thele Gentiles doe accustome to drinke the smoake of Petigma, by another name the boly berbe, 20 this they drie and make of a Palme-tree leafe a Coffin like the joint of a Cane, and filled with this herbe, they fire it at the small end putting the biggest in their mouth, and so they sucke or drinke that smoake, and they hold it for a great daintie and fauour, and lying in their Nets they found part of the daies and of the nights: to some it doth much hurt, and maketh them dizzie and drunke, to others it doth much good, and maketh them voide a great deale of fiegme at the mouth. The women also doe drinke it, but they are such as are old and sickly, for it is verie medicinable vnto them, especially for the cough, the head-ache, and the Difease of the stomacke, and hence come a great manie of the Portugals to drinke it, and have taken it for a vice or for idlenesse, imitating the Indians to spend daies and nights about it.

Of the manments and husbandric.

This Nation hath no monie where with to fatisfie the feruices that are done to them, but they 20 live with bartering one thing for another, and principally in change of wine they doe all that they will, and so when they have any businesie, they make wines, and aduiting the Neighhours, and affembling all the Towne, they defire them to helpe them in their Husbandrie, which they doe with a good will; and labouring till tenne of the clocke they returne home againe to drinke their wines; and if that day their tillage be not ended, they make other wines, and so goe another day till ten of the clocke to make an end of their butinesse. And in this fort doe the wife White men or Portugals vie, that know the vie and fashions of the Indians, and how much they do for wine; they make wines for them, and call them to their Husbandries, and to their Sugarcanes, and with this they pay them. They vie also ordinarily to change some things for white beades, which are made of Wilkes : and in change of some Notegaies they give even their wives; 40 and this is the ransome wherewith they vse ordinarily, that is, the White men, for to buy of them the flaues, as well men as women that they have for to eate.

Oftheir lewels Thefe Indians vie ordinarily, chiefly in their Featts, Collars which they make of Wilkes, and Brooches. Diademes of Feathers, and certaine Brooches, (that is, stones which they put in their lower lip) some greene, white, some blue, and verie fine, and are like Emeralds, or Christall, they are round, and some of them so long that they reach to their breasts, and it is ordinarily among the great and principall men, to have them of a span, or more in lenght. They vie alto white Bracelets of the same Wilkes, and they put in their eares certain white stones of a span long and more; and these and other like are the ornaments wherewith they adorne themselves in their Feasts, whether they be of flaughters of the enemies : or of wines; and these are the Riches that they so esteeme aboue all that they possesse.

Of the viage and how they

These Indians doe vie to intreate their Wives well, they never strike them, neither quartell of their wives, with them, except in the time of their drinkings, for then ordinarily they revenge themselves of them, giving for an excuse afterward, it was the wine they had drunke, and then they are friends as before, and the hatreds betweene them last not long. They goe alwaies together, and when they goe abroad, the woman commeth behind and the man before, that if any ambush bee laid, the wife may not fall into it, and may have time to flie while the Husband fighterh with his aduerfarie, &c. But at their returning home from their fields, or from any other place the wife commeth before, and the Husband behinde, that if any milchance shall happen, the wife may flie home, and the Husband fight with the enemies, or any other thing. But in a lafe Countrie and within the Townes the wife alwaies goeth before, and the Husband behind, for they are verie jealous, and will have alwaies their wife in fight.

Icaloufic. Of their danses and their fongs.

Though they be melancholike they have their Games, especially the children verie divers and pleasant, in the which they counterfeit manie kinds of Birds, and with so great feast and

order as may be. And the children are joyfull and guen to play, and they play with fuch quierneffe and friendthip, that among them is no bad name heard, or any fcurrilitie, or calling any nickname one to anothers Father or Mother; and feldome doe they difagree when they play, nor diforder themselves for any thing, and veriefeldome doe they firike or fight one with another. The Fathers doe teach them from their cradles to dance and fing, and their dancings are not fundrie changes, but a continual flamping with the feet flanding full, or going round about, or firring their bodie or their head, and they doe it all by fuch compaffe, and pleafantnelle as can be

firming their bours of them made, and they defired, at the found of a Timbrell made after the falhion of those which the children vie in Inframents. Saune with manie final stones within or certaine feeds whereof they make also verie good beads: 10 and fo they fing dancing altogether, for they doe not one thing without the other, in fuch compaffe and order that sometime an 100, men dancing and finging together in a row one behind the other doe end all at one stroke, as if they were altogether in one place. The singers as well men as women are much esteemed among them, in so much that if they take an enemie a good singer. and an Inuencer of Veries, they therefore spare his life, and doe not eate him nor his children. The women doe dance together with the men, and make many gambolls and geffures with their armes and bodies, especially when they dance alone. They keepe among themselves ces. differencies of voices in their Confort : and ordinarily the women doe fing the Treble, Counter, and Tenours.

They are verie wicked, especially in weeping for the dead, for when any one dieth, the Kin- Of their bu-20 dred doe cast themselves voon him in the Nee, and so suddenly that sometimes they choake him rials, before he dieth, feeming to them he is dead. And those that cannot cast themselves with the Coarse in the Net doe cast themselves on the ground with such falls and knockes that it seemeth Lamenations a Miracle they doe not end their lines with the dead, and of these falls, and mournings they re- to be lamenmaine fo feeble that sometime they die. When they mourne they speak manie pittiful and dolo- ted. rous words, & if he die at euening all night long they weep with a high voice, that it is a wonder they are not wearie. For these mournings they cal the Neighbours, & kinsmen, and is he be one of the principall, all the Towne doth meete to mourne, and in this they have also their points of

honour, and they curse with plagues those which weepe nos, faying, that they shall not bee mourned for. After he is dead they wash him and paint him vene brauely, as they paint their e-30 nemies : and after this they couer him with Cotton Yarne that nothing is feene of him, and put a couering ouer his face, and fitting they put him in a great tinnage or vessell that they have vnder the Earth for that purpose, and doe couer it in such manner that no Earth may come to him. and the veffel they couer with earth, making him a house where euerie day they carrie him meat. For they say that when he is wearie with dancing he commeth thether to eate, and so they goe for a certaine time to be waile him enerie day all his Kindred, with him they burie all his Iewels or Brooches, that none may fee them and grieue thereat. But if the dead had any Peece, as a Sword, &c. that had beene giuen him , it returneth to him that gaueit, and hee taketh it againe whereforuer he findeth it; therefore they fay that when one dieth he lofeth all the right of that which was given him. After the Coarfe is buried, the Kinfmen are in continuall weeping night 40 and day, the one beginning as the other endeth, they eate not but by night, they hang their Nets neere to the roofes, and the women after twentie daies doe cut their haire, and this lamenting laffeth a whole Moone, the which being ended they make great Wines or Drinkings to put away their mourning. The men doe cut their haire, and the women doe paint themselves with blacke, and these Ceremonies and others being ended, they beginne to communicate the one with the other, aswell the men as the women. After their companions are dead, some never doe marrie againe nor enter into the Feaft of Wines, neither paint themselues with blacke; but is verie feldome among them, because they are much given to women, and cannot live with-

Before they had any knowledge of the Portugals they wied tooles and infirmments of ftone, Of the Infirm 50 bone, wood, Canes, and teeth of Beafts, &cc. and with the ethey hewed downe great Woods, vie. with wedges of stones, helping themselues with fire; and they digged also the ground with certaine sharpe stakes, and they made their Brooches, Beades of Wilkes, Bowes, and Arrowes, as well as now having Instruments of Iron, but they spent a long time in making of what source thing; wherefore they esteeme the Iron verie much, for the facilitie or ease which they finde in making their things with it. And this is the reason wherefore they are glad of Commerce with the Portugals or white men.

The weapons of this people ordinarily are Bowes and Arrowes, and they boast themselves of Of the weapons them, and they make them of verie good wood, and verie faire interlaid with Palme-tree of fun. Ponthey doe drie colours, they die their strings greene, or red, and they make their Arrowes verie faite, see-vic.

60 king for them the fairest feathers they can find. They make these Arrowes of sundrie Canes, and fasten in their points the teeth of beasts, or certaine verse hard Rushes, or sharpe stickes with many finagges, and many times they empoison them with herbes. These Arrowes to ones fight feeme a thing of mockerie, but are verie cruell Weapons, and pierce quilted breaft-plates or cutates; and striking in a slicke they cleaue it as under, and sometimes happen to goe through a man Cruel arrowes

and flicke on the ground. They doe exercise themselves in these Weapons verie young, and are Cunning Ar- great Archers, and focertaine that no Bird can elcape them be it never fo little, or any vermine of the Woods; and there is no more but if they will shoot an Arrow through the zie of a bird on a man : or hit any other thing be it neuer fo fmall, they doe it with great facilitie and with their owne fafetie; and for this they are greatly feared. They are flout also and fierce, and dreadfult to

Their Arts.

They are as vermine of the Woods, for they goe hunting into the Countrie naked and bare. foot, without any feare. They have a maruellous fight, for at a league off they fee any thing and Quick fighted, in the same manner they heare. They gueffe verie right ruling themselues by the Sunne, they go to all parts they lift, 200. or 300. leagues through thicke Woods, and mile not one iot; they tra- 10 uell much, and alwaies runnig a gallop, especially with some charges, no Horse is able to hold out with them. They are great hithers and iwimmers, they feare no Sea nor waves, continues day and a night fwimming, and the fame they doe rowing, and fometimes without meate. They vie also for Weapons Swords of wood, and interlay the ends of them with Palme-tree of lime drie colours and fet Plumes on them of divers colours, chiefly in their feafts and flaughters. And these Swords are verie cruell, for they make no wound, but bruise and breake a mans head with out having any remedie of cure.

Swords.

ð. II.

Of their manner of killing and eating of humane flesh : and of their creating Gentlemen.

Fall the honours and pleasures of this life, none is so great for this people as to kill and get a name on the heads of their Adverfaries , neither are there an mong them any Feasts, comparable to those which they make at the deathof those which they kill with great Ceremonies , which they doe in this manner. Those which beeing taken in the Warre are appointed to die, came presently from thence with a token, which is a small coard about his necke; and if hee bee a man that may runnne away, he hath one hand tied to his necke under his chinne. And before they come to the Townes that are by the way, they paint their eie-lids, eie-browes, and their beards, polling them after fashion, and enpluming them with Yellow feathers fo well placed that yee can fee no haire: which makes them to gallant as the Spaniards in their rich Apparell, and fo they goe fliaring their victorie whereby soeuer they passe. When they come to their owne Countrie, the women came out to receive them, showting altogether and striking themselves on the mouth which is a common entertainment among them; without any other vexation, or imprisonment. except that they weare about the necke a round collar like a coard of a good bigneffe, as hard as a sticke. In this collar they beginne to weaue a great manie fathomes of small coard as long asa womans haire, fastened aboue with a certaine knot, and loose underneath, and so it goeth from 40 eare to eare behind the backe, horrible to looke on. And if it be on the Frontier where hee may runne away, they put him in flead of shackels below the knees a string of threed twisted verie hard, which is too weake for any Knife; but that they have Keepers that goe not one moment from him, whether he goe about the houses, to the Woods, or by the Fields; for he hath libertie for all this, and commonly the keeper is one that is given him for wife, and also for to dreffe his Gentleeruell meate, with the which if his Masters doe give him no meate as the custome is, he taketh a Bow and Arrowes and shootethat the first Henne he seeth, or at a Ducke be it whosesoeuer, and none doth contradict him, and so he waxeth fat, neither breaking therefore his sleepe, his laughter, or his pleasure as the rest, and some are as contented though they are to ber eaten, that in no wife they will confent to be ranfomed for to ferue; for they fay that it is a wretched thing to die, and 50 lie stinking, and eaten with Wormes. These women are commonly faithfull in their charge, for they receive honour thereby, and therefore manie times they are young, and daughters of the chiefe, especially if their brothers are to be the slaiers. For those which have not this interest manie times, affect them in fuch manner, that not onely they give them leave to runne away, but they also doe goe with them , neither haue the women any other punishment if they bee taken againe, then a few strokes, and sometimes they are eaten of those same to whom they gave life.

The time when he shall die being determined, the women beginne to make vessels, that is, Bowles, Trajes, and Pots for the Wines, fo great that euerie one will hold a pipe. This being readie, as well the principall as the rest doe send their Messengers to inuite others from fundrie places against such a Moone about tenne or twelue leagues compasse or more, for the which none 62 doth excuse himselfe. The guests doe come in Mogotes or troupes with their wives and children, and all of them doe enter the Towne with Dancers; and all the time the people are a gathering together, there is Wine for the guelts, for without it all the other entertainments are nothing worth. The people being affembled, the Feafts beginne fome daies before according to

the number, and certaine ceremonies preceding, and enerie one lasteth aday. First, they have for this certaine coards of Cotton-wooll of a reasonable bignesse, not twisted but wouen of a verie faire worke, it is a thing among them of great efteeme, and none hath them but some principall men, and according to their finenesse and workmanship, and their taking pleasure, it is to be belegied that they are not made in a yeere Thele are alwaies verie fafely kept, and are carried to the place with great feeft & great noise in certain traies where a Malter of these things doth tie two knots within from that which one of the points do run in fuch maner that in the midft there remaineth a nooie. These knots are so fine that few are found that can make them, for some of them have ten casts about, five croiling over the other five, as if one should cross the fingers of the right to hand oper the left, & after they die them with thewater of a white clay like lime. & let them drie.

On the second day they bring a great number of burdens of wilde Canes or Reeds as long as Lances or more, and at night they let them on fire in a round heape, the points vpward leaning one to another, and so they make a great and faire high bone-fire, round about the which are men and women dancing with sheaves of arrowes at their backe, but they goe very swiftly; for hee that is to die, which feeth them better then hee is feene because of the fire , catcheth hold of all that he can, and catcheth them, and they beeing many hee miffeth few times. At the third daw they make a dance of men and women, all of them with pipes of Canes, and all of them at once doe stampe on the ground, now with one foot then with the other, all together without missing a ftroke : and observing the same measure they play on their pipes, and there is no other singing

20 nor speaking; they being many and the Canes some bigger and some smaller, besides the resour. Black Saints. ding in the Woods, they make a Hel-feeming harmonie, but they abile it as if it were the fweeteft Musicke in the World. And these are their feasts, belides others which they intermingle with many graces and foothfavings.

On the fourth day, they carrie the captived enemie as foone as the day breakes to wash him at a River, and they while the time that when they doe returne it may be broad day light, comming is o the Towne, the Prisoner goeth presently with a watchfull eye, for hee knoweth not out of what house or doore a valiant man is to come out to him, that is to catch hold of him behind. For as all their happinesse doth confist in dying valiantly, and the ceremonie that followeth, is now the neerest vinto death, as he which is to lay hold of him, doth shew his forces in ouer-comming an him him elie alone without any other helpe, fo he will shew courage and force in resisting him: First encourse and sometimes he doth it in such fort, that the first standing aside as wearied in wrestling, ano. test, ther succeedeth him which holds himselfe for a valianter man, the which sometimes remaine

well bedufted, & more they would remaine if at this time the captine had not his cord or shakels. This wrettling being ended, he on foot blowing and puffing with rage and wearineffe, with the other that hold him faft, therecommeth forth a troope of Nymphes which doe bring a great new painted bowle, and in it the cords rolled vp, and very white, and this prefent being fet at The womens the feet of the captine, a cunning old woman in these matters, and Mistris of the troope begin- parts. neth to tune a Song, whom the other doe helpe, the Dittie is according to the ceremonie. And while they fing, the men take the cords and the nooze being put about his necke, they give it anan other knot neere to the other great ones, that it may not lofe againe; and having made of every end a coyle, they put them on the arme of the woman which alwaies goeth after him with this

weight, and if the weight be great because the cords are great and long, they give her another to carrie one of the coyles, and it he before was terrible with the coller, he is more now with those two knots to bigge behind about his necke, and therefore one of the verses of the Song faith, wee are those that make the necke of the bird to stretch, although after other ceremonies, they say to him in another foote, If thou hadst beene a Parrot annoying vs, then wouldest have sted. At this time the veffels of wine are fet in a rowe, in the middeft of a great house, and the house (hauing no partitions though it bee of twentie or thirtie fathome in length) it is full of people;

and when they begin to drinke it is a Labyrinth, or a Hell to fee and heare them. For those which dance and fing doe continue with great feruentnesse all the daies and nights that the wines doe Their fongs So laft. For this being the proper feast of the slaughters, in the drinking of the wines are many &c. particularities, which last long, and they make water at enery stop; and so they continue day and night; they fing, dance, drinke, and speake telling in whoopes through all the house of warres, and acts that they did; and as every one will be heard in his Historie, every one doth speake striving to bee lowdest, beside other noises, without any intermission, no not a quarter of an houre. That morning in which they begin to drinke, they paint the captine by a particular way that they have for that defigne, in this fort, his face being cleane, and all the feathers he hath broughe forth, they anoint him with the Milke of a certaine tree that cleaveth very faft, and they caft Adoming of voon it the powder of certaine egge-shels of a certaine wild bird, and voon this they paint him the Captine 60 with black very faire pictures, and all his bodie to the fole of his foote, and flicke him all with feathers which they have alreadie out for that purpose and died redde, and that maketh him to feeme halre as bigge againe, and touching his face it maketh it feeme as much greater, and the

eies so much the smaller, that he remaineth an horrible visige. And in the same manner that they

haue painted his face, they adorn the Sword which is of wood, in manner of a Ferula or Palmer,

The fatall

1296

but that the head is not fo round, but almost three square, and the sides doe almost end in an edge. and the fraft of it which may bee of feuen or eight ipans is not altogether round. It hath at the head about foure fingers broad, and commeth still narrowing vinto the end where it hath certaine pendants.or little bels of divers coloured feathers, it is a gallant thing and of great effeeme among them, they call it Inga penambin, that is, eares of the Sword. The last day of the wines they make in the midit of the place cabins of Palme-boughs, as many as they are that shall die, and in that they lodge, without entring any more, any house, and all the day and the night hee is well ferued with feafts more then with meate, for they gine him no other foode but a fruite that both the favour of Nuts, that the next day be may not have much blood.

The fifth day in the morning at feuen of the clocke, little more or lefe his woman doth there 10 leave him, and goeth home very fad, and speaking for her farewell some pittifull wordes at the least fainedly. Then they take away his shackels, and passe the cords from his neck to the waste. and flanding at the doore of him that must kill him, the flaughterer commeth forth in a dance as white as a Doue painted with white earth, in a garment which they call a cloke of feathers tied about the breaft, voward like the wings of an Angell, to dancing he goeth round about the place, and commeth making very strange countenances with his eies and bodie, and with his hands he counterfeiteth the Kite that defireth fielh, and with this Deuillifhnelle hee commeth to the wretch, which flands with the coard firetched, on both fides having one that holdeth him; and the poore wretch if he find wherewith to throw at him, hee doth it with a good will, and many times they give him wherewith, for many valiant men doe come out to him, fo nimble in win- 20 ding their bodie that he cannot hit them. This being ended there commeth an honorable Judge, or ttickler of the new Knight that shall bee, and taking the Sword passeth it many times betweene his legges, putting it now on the one fide, now on the other, even in the fame manner that the Pipers dogs doe paffe betweene their legges, and after taking it by the midft with both hands he pointeth as with a thrust to the eies of the man which is to die; and this being done he turneth the head of it voward in the fame manner that he is to vie it, and putteth it in the hands Hallowing the of the flaughterer, as apt and fit already with those bleffings for to doe his office; they place themfelues somewhat to the left side, in such fort that he may hit him with the edge of his Sword in

the nape of the necke, for he striketh at another place. And their brutishmesse is so much, that because they feare no other eails but that which is pre- to fent, they are as resolute as if it yeare nothing, as well for to speake, as for to try their courses.

for after they take their leave of life, faying, In a good bonre, let me die feeing many are dead, and that belides this his breibren and kinfmen remaine bere to renouge them. And with this the one makes him readie to discharge, and the other to avoid his bodie, which is all the honour of his death. And they are so nimble in this that many times it is high daies before they are able to kill them, for when he fees the weapon in the aire, fometimes hee drawes his head afide, fometime heedeclines his bodie; and in this they are so doughtie, that if those that hold the points of the coards doe gird him hard (as they doe when the flaughterer is flow or weake) hee puls to hard that hee brings them to him, and makes them to flacken in defpight, having one eie on them another on the Sword, without any standing still and as the killer may not deceme them with an offer and 40 not firike vnder paine of receiving a fillip, they doe forelee their firoke in such fort that come it neuer fo low in a trife they stoope, and lie so flat that it is a wonder to see; and no lesse is the taking of the Sword, holding the arme in fuch fort that doing him no hurt, they pul it downe iointly with themselves, and they put it under the arme pulling by the killer; wherein if they did not helpe the other would dispatch him; for they have in this action so many sooth-sayings that for to kill a child of fine yeere old, they goe to prepared as for to kill fome Giant. And with these helpes and incouragements fo many times hee striketh till hee hitteth and that is enough, for alfoone as he is downe he giveth him to many blowes till he batters his head (though one man was feene that had it fo hard that they could never breake it, for as they goe bare-head, they have them fo hard that ours in comparison of theirs are like a Pompion, and when they will injurie 10 any White man, they call him foft-bead.)

If this which they kill falleth on his backe, and not on his belly they hold it for an euill lucke and prognostication that the killer shall die, and although he falleth vpon his belly, they have many ceremonies, which if they be not kept they hold that the killer cannot live, and many of them are to painfull that if any one did fuffer their troubles for Gods fake, they would beeaccounted meritorious, as hereafter shall be faid, The poore wretch beeing dead they carrie him to abone-fire that they have readie for the fame, and bringing the bodic neere the fire touching him with the hand, flay off a skinne tomewhat thicker then the rinde of an Onion, till he remaineth cleaner and whiter then a scalded Pig. Then it is delivered to the Butcher which maketh a hole beneath the stomacke according to their vse, whereby the children first do put in their hands, and 60 pull by the guts vntill the Butcher cutteth where hee lifteth, and that which remaineth in the hand of cuerie one is his part, and the rest is divided among the Commons:except some principal pieces which for great honour are given to the guests that are the most principall, which they doe carrie well refferi, to that it may not corrupt, and with them afterward in their countries they make new leads and drinkings of wine.

The killer having ended his office, taking of the cloke of feather, and I raving the Sword hee Cerrmonies goeth home, where at the doore the same judge or flickler that was before with a shooting bow of making a in his hand, that is, one of the points on the lower threshold, the other at the vpper, and pulling man, by the string as though he would shoote, the killer passeth betweene him so curningly that hee toucheth in nothing. Affoone as he is paffed the other lofeth the firing making flew that it grieues him to have miffed him whom he shotat, as though this hath vertue to make him swife afterward in the warre, and the enemies to miffe him. When he is within he beginnes to runne through all the houses, and the Sisters and Cousins in the same manner before him, saying my Brother is called N. repeating it through all the Townes, and if the Gentleman hath any 10 good thing he that goeth takes it from him till they leave him nothing. This being ended they cast on the ground certaine legges of a certaine Tree, called Pilan. Vpon the which hee stands all that day with so much filence as if he had some astonishment in him, and carrying to present thither the head of the dead, they pull out one of his eies, and with the strings and finewes of it they anoint his pulies, and cutting of his mouth whole, they put it on his armeas a Bracelet, and then he layeth him downe in his Net as a ficke man, and certainly hee is ficke for

Within a few daies they give him the habit, not in the breaft of the Coat which he hati not, but on his owne skin race him all ouer the bodie with the tooth of a Cutta, that is like a Comes tooth, the which as well for their little skill, as because they have a hard skinne it feemes, that 20 they teare a piece of Parchment, and if he be valiant, they doe not race him with right firekes Markes and but a Crosse in fort that there remaine certaine very fine workes, and some doesny and groane habit of new with the paine. This being ended they have small Cole finely grownd, and the juice of Broamerape Gentrie. wherewith they rub the cuts ouertnwart, that the put him to great paine and iwelling, which is yet a greater torment, while his wounds doe close, which continue some daies, he lyeth still in his Net without speaking any word, not asking any thing, and that he may not break his illence, he hath neere him water, flowre, and acertaine fruit like Almonds which they call Amendains. for he tafteth neither fish nor fiesh those daies.

feare, that if he doe not accomplish the Rites perfectly, the foule of the dead will kill him.

After he is whole, many daies or moneths being passed, they make a great drinking of wines that hee may put off his mountning, and cut his haire which vntill then he did not, then hee an-30 oints himfelfe with blacke, and from thence forward hee remaines enabled to kill without any painfull ceremonie being done to him, and he also sheweth himselfe honoured and contented and with a certaine disdaine, as one that hath honour alreadie, and gets it not a new. And so he doth no more but give the other a couple of blowes, although the head remaine whole, and he ftirring he goeth home, and presently they come and cut off his head. And the Mothers with their children about their necke, come to congratulate him, and hanfell him for the warre, flaining his armes with that bloud. These bee the exploits, honours and vallour whence this pe. ple take their names, whereof they boast very much, and they remaine thence forward Abaetes, Murubixaba, Moçacara, which are the names and titles of Gentlemen. And thefe are the vnhappie Titlet of Feaths whereon these wretches doe ground their felicitie and glorie, before they have any know. Honour, 40 ledge of their Creator.

Q. III.
Of the discritic of Nations and a Inguages, and of the Soyle and Climate.

N all this Prouince are many and fundrie Nations of divers Languages, but one is the See before in principall which comprehendeth some ten Nations of Indians. These line on the Sea in M. Edines. Coast, and in a great part of the Land, all of one Speech, though they differ in some words. This is that which the Portugals doe understand, it is easie, eloquent, pleafant,

50 and copious; the difficultie of it is in having many comparisons, but of the Portugals almost all those that came from the Kingdome; and are seated here, and doe communicate with the Indiant do know it in a short time, and the children of the Persugals borne here doe speake it better then the Portugall, as well men as women, chiefly in the Captainship of Saint Vincent, and with these ten Nations of Indians have the Fathers communication, because they know their Language, and they more tame and well inclined. These were, and are the ancient friends of the Portugals, with whose helpe and armes they conquered this Countrie, fighting against their owne kindred, and

waste neipe and armes they conquered this contains, against a grant that is feemed an adjust other Nations very barbarous, and those of this generation were so many that is feemed an posture of the state of the st duers other Nations very carbotous, and those or this generation were or many they are almost impossible thing to extinguish them, but the Portugals have made such hatte that they are almost states. dead, and they vie fuch meanes that they disinhabit the Coast, and flie the Land inward, some 60 three hundred, some foure hundred.

The first of this Language are called Pinguaras Lords of Parapha, thirtie leagues from Per- Pinguaras. nambuce, and have the beit Brafill woode, and are great friends to the Frenchmen, and did contract with them vitill now, marrying their Daughters with them, but now in the yeere 1584. Parapha was taken by lames Flares his Maietties Generall , driving out

154::X10:00ple catenou: by the Ports.

Turinaba.

Caaete.

Tucinaquin.

of the Armada fought not. Neere voto these hard a great multitude of people which they call Viatan, of these there are are none alreadie, for they being friends with the Pitaguaras, and Kindred, the Portugals made them enemies among themselves, giving them to be eaten, that by this meanes they might warre against them and hold them for slaues; and finally, having a great dearth, the Portugals in stead of releguing them, tooke them Captines, and did fend thip-loades to bee fold in other places. There was soyned with this a Magician Portugall Priest, that with his deceits conneighed them 10 all to Pernambuco, and so ended this Nation. The Portugals remained without Neighbours to defend them from the Pitiguaras, which vitill now that they were ouercome, perfecuted the Portugals fetting on a fudden upon their Corne, Goods, and Sugar-mils, burning, and killing many of the Portugals, because they are verie warlike, but now by the goodnesse of God they are freed from this incumbrance.

the Frenchmen; and he left a Fortrelle with 100. Souldiers, befides the Portugals which also have their Captaine and Governour one Fructuofo Barbofa, that with the principal men of Per-

nambuco carried an Armie by Land wherewith he overcame the enemies, for from the Sea thole

Others there he that they call Tuningha, these inhabit from the River Royall till ve come neere the Illeos, these were also among themselves contrarie, those of the Bay with them of Camania. and Intrare. Along the River of Saint Francis dwelt another Nation called Casete; and amone thefe were also contrarieties with them of Pernambuco.

From Illers, or the little Hands, and Port Secure, vnto the Holy Ghost inhabited another Nati- 20 on called Tupinaquin; these proceeded from those of Pernambuco, and scattered themselves in a Comperie of the Maine, multiplying exceedingly, but now they are but few. These were alwaies great enemies of the things of God, hardened in their errours, verie regenerall, and would revenge themselves as soone as they see their enemies, and lovers of many women; of thete alreadie are many Christians, and they are firme in the faith.

There is another Nation a kinne to thefe, which runneth off the Maine from Saint Vincent to Pernambuco, called Tupiouse, thefe were without number, they doe diminif, for the Portugals doe goe to leeke them to lerue themselues with them, and those which escape doe flee verie farre off that they may not be flaues. There is another Nation Neighbour to this called Apigapigtanga, and Muriapigeanga. There is also another Nation contrarie to the Tupinaquins which are called to Guaracayo, or Itati.

Timioina. Tamuya. Arera e.

Another Nation dwelleth in the Holy Ghost, called Timimmo, they were contrarie to the Tupingguins, but they are now verie few. Another Nation which is called Tamung inhabitors of the River of January, these the Persurals destroyed when they inhabited the River, and of them there be verie few, and some that are in the Maine are called Ararape, another Nation inhabiteth beyond Saint Vincent, about eightie leagues, enemies of the Tupinaquins of Saint Vincent, of these there are infinite multitudes, and doe runne along the Sea Coast and in the Maine, vnto the Paraguai which the Castilians doe inhabite, all these Nations abouesaid, though different, and many of them enemies one to another, they have the Language, and their conversion is in hand, and they have a great respect to the Fathers of the company of lefes, and in the Maine they figh 40 for them, and call them Abare, and Father, defiring they would come to their Countries and convert them; and fuch is their reputation that fome Portugals of badde consciences doe faine themselves Fathers, apparelling themselves in Gownes, shauing their crownes, and telling them fame Portwals they are Abares, and that they came to feeke them for the Churches of the Fathers which are theirs aswell as ours. Thus they seduce them, and assoone as they come to the Sea, they divide them among themselves, sell, and marke them, making first a great slaughter of them in the Countrie, robberies and affaults, taking away their Daughters and their Wines, &c. And if it were not for these and other like hinderances, all those of this Language had beene converted to our hely Faith.

There be other contrarie Nations enemies to these of divers Languages, which in a generall 50 name are called Tapuya, and they are contrarie also among themselves. In the Maine first neigh-Scuentie fix Nations of Tabouring to the Tupinaquins inhabit the Guamures, and they occupie tome eightie leagues of Coast and toward the Mayne all that they lift. They are Lords of the wild Woods, very great bodied. Mafter Knivet and by the continuance and custome of going through the Woods, they have their skinnes very hard, and for this effect, they beate their children being young, with certaine Thiftles to accufrome them to goe in the wilde Woods.

They have no Husbandrie, they live by rapine, and by the point of the Arrow; they eate the * Mandiaca raw and it doth them no hurt, they runne verie swiftly, and to the White men they * A roote lo come not but on a sudden. They vie verie great Bowes; they carrie certaine stones made a purpole verie bigge that wherefoeuer they hit, they may presently breake the heads in pieces. And 60 when they come to fight, they hide themselues vnder shrubs, and from thence they play their part, & they are greatly feared, & there is no power in the world that is able to ouercome them. Cowards and They are great cowards in the fields and dare not come forth, neither paffe they any waters, vie any shipping, nor are given to fishing, all their living is from the woods. They are cruel as Lions,

See of thefe which lived with them.

when they take any enemies they cut off his flesh with a Reed whereof they make their Arrowes, and flea them that they leave them no more but the bones and the guts; if they take any child & are followed, that they may not take it away alive, they firike off his head against a post. They disbowell the women with child to eate their children roafted. These annoy the Port Secure verie much, the little Hands, and Camama, and these Countries goes to decay because of them: their speech cannot be vinderstood,

Befides thele towards the Maine and the fields of Caatinga, doe line many Nations of Tapu- Theather and 748, which are called Tucanness, these line in the Maine of the great River, opposite to Port Secure, other Nations they have another Language. Others doe live in the Maine before yee come to Aquitippe, and are many. 30 calle Nacy. Others which they call Oquigianus, others which are called Pabi; these weare course Cotton-clothes, wouen like a Net, with this they couer themselves as with a lacke, they have no fleeues, they have a different speech. In the Ariare others which also live in the field going toward Aquitique. Others which are called Larabio, it is a great people, of a different Speech. Others which are called Mandein : also of another speech, others called Macutu, others Napara, these have husbandrie. Others called Cuvare, these live in the middest of the field of the Maine, others which live in the same field, that are called Nubinn, others doe live toward the Maine of the Bay which is called Guayana, they have a speech by themselves, other there about called Taicuin, these dwell in houses, they have another speech, others in thesame Coun-

trie called Carin, of a different tongue. These three Nations, and their Neighbours are friends 20 of the Portugals, others which they call Pigru, they dwell in houses, others which are called Obacoatiara, these live in Ilands in the River of Saint Francis, they have Houses like vnto Caues Cauc-houses under the Earth. These when the enemies come against them flie to the water, and by diving escape; they continue long under water, they have great Arrowes like halfe Darts, without Bowes, and with them they fight; they are verie valuant, they eate humane flesh, they have a different tongue.

Others there are that live farre within the Maine are called Anhelim, they have another Lan-Anhelim, &c. guage; others that live in Houses called Aracnaiati, they have another Speech; others called Cainari, they live in Caues. Others called Guaianaguacu, they dwell in Caues and have another Sneech: others farre within the Maine called Camneniara; these have paps that reach under their Great Paps. 30 wafte, and neere to their knees, and when they runne they binde them about their wafte: they

are neuerthelesse great Warriours, eate mens fiesh, and haue another Speech : Others which they call lobiora Apuayara, Lords of Sharpe Stanes, for they fight with tofted staues and sharpe, they are valiant, and eate humane fleih, they have another Speech. Others called Annachie, they dwell in Houses, they have another Speech, but they understand themselves with these aboutsaid their Neighbours. Others they call Guaiacain, and Guaiatuu, these have another Speech and dwell in Houles. Others called Cumpehe, these cate no humane fiesh, when they kill the enemie, they Cumphe Sauscut off the head and carrie it for a shew, they have no Houses, and are like Gipsies, O. hers calege not cambals led Guayo, dwell in Houses, they fight with venomed Arrowes, they eat humane flesh, they have another Speech. Others called Cicu, haue the same Speech and customes of them abouefaid. O-40 thers called Pahain, eate humane flesh, and have another Speech. Others called Iaicnin, have the

fame Speech that thefe aboue. Others called Tupijo, dwell in Houses, have Husbandrie, and another Speech. Others called Maracaguacu, are Neighbours to these aboue, and have the same Speech. Others called Iacuruin, vie Husbandrie, dwell in Houses, and haue another Speech. Others called Tapecnia, are Neighbours of these aboue, and have the same speech. Others called Anacuiu, haue the same Speech and customes that those aboue, and all of them doe fight with venomed Arrowes. Others called Piracnin, have the same Speech that those above, and venomed Arrowes.

Others called Taraguaig, have another Speech, they fight with venomed Arrowes. Others called Pahacuin, can ipeake the Language of them aboutlaid. Others called Tipi, are of the field, and fight with venomed Arrowes. Others called Guacaraiara, have another Speech, and 50 haue Husbandries, and dwell in Houses. Others Neighbours to these aboue called Camaragea. Others called Curupia, were enemies of the Tupmaquis. Others called Aquirino, haue another Speech. Others called Piraguarg Aquig, live vnder the Rockes, are enemies to these above. Others celled Pinacuin Others called Parapoto, these can speake the Speech of them of the Coast. Others called Caraemba, haue another Speech. Others called Caraema, haue another Speech. Others called Mainuma, these joine themselves with the Guaimures enemies to them of the Coaft, they understand themselves with the Guammres, but they have another Speech. Others called Aturari, enter alfo in communication with the Guaimures, others called Cuigtaio, doe also communicate and enter with the Guaimures. Others called Cuigpe, their were the Inhabitors

60 of Port Secure. Others called Guigrainbe, are friends with them about. Others called Augura. ri, thefe dwell not farre from the Sea, betweene Port Secure, and the Holy Ghost. Others called Amixocori, are friends with the former. Others called Carasa, doe live in the Maine toward Saint Pincent, and went flying from the North thither, they have another Speech. Others called Apetupa, liue in the Maine toward Aquitipi. Others called Caraguatiyara, haue another

Speech, Others called Aquiguira, these doe converte with the former. Another Nationliveth in the Maine, enemies to the Muriapigianga, and of the Tarape, it is a Dwarfish people, low of

bodie, but bigge legged and backed, the Portugals call their Pigness, and the Indians call them Tapigeniri, because they are little. Others called Quiricianig, these doe live in the Maine of the

Bay verie farre. Others called Guirie, thele are great Horlemen, and friends of the former. Others called Gugiere, doe live in the Maine of Port Secure, verie farre off. Others called . .

naguig, these were Inhabitors of the Countries of the Tupinaguins, and because the Tupinaguins

remained Lords of the Mountaines, they are called Tupinagums.

CH A P. I. S.A. Deere, Elkes, Boares, Asuti, Pacas, Ounces, Carioue, erc. d. IIII.

Of the Beasts, Land-serpents, Fowles.

He Deere in the Brasilian tongue is called Cracn: there are some very great, like sairo
Horses, they are well headed, and some haue ten or twelue snags; these are rare, and they are found in the River of Saint Francis, and in the Captainship of Saint Vincent. There are called. Cuacuapara, they are effected of the Carnos, who of the flankes and

to finowes make the points of their Arrowes, and certaine throwing Balls which they vie for to ftrike downe beafts and men. There bee other smaller, they have hornes also . but they are onely of one point : belides there there are three or foure kindes, fome that feede onely in the Woods, others onely in the plaine fields in heards. They make great account of the skinnes. and of the flesh.

The Tapurete are the Elkes, of whose skinne the leather Targets are made, they are like Kine, much more like a Mule, the tayle is of a finger length, they have no hornes, they have a front of a quarter long, which he shrinketh vp and p steeth forth. They swimme and dine very much, but when they dive they take ground prefently under water, and going on it they come out in another place, there are great ftore of them in this Conntrie.

There are great flore of wilde Boares, and it is the ordinary food of the Indians of this Coun- The wilde trie, they have the nauell on their backe, and out of it there cometh a fent like the fent of little and more. Foxes, and by that fent the Dogs doe hunt them, and they are eafily taken.

There are others called Tayacutirica, that is to say, a Boare that Inappeth or grindeth his teeth. these are bigger then the common, and more rare, and with their tulhes they goare all the beasts they meete.

Others are talled Tayacupita, that is, a Boare that flandeth fill and tarieth; these doe affault the Does, and the men : and if they catch them they eate them ; they are are so fierce , that men are forced to take the trees to escape them, and some doe stay at the foot of the trees some dayes till the man doe come downe; and because they know this tricke of theirs, they goe preand fently to the trees with their Bowes and Arrowes, and from thence they kill them. There bee also other kinde of Boares, all good meate.

The Acutis are like the Conies of Spaine, chiefely in their teeth : the colour is dunne, and Acuti, draweth toward yellow: they are domesticall creatures, so that they goe about the house, and goe out and come in againe to it, they take with their fore-feet all that they eate, and fo they carrie it to the mouth, and they eate very fast, and hide that which they leave against they be an hungred. Of these there are many kindes, and all are eaten,

The Pacar are like Pigs, there are great abundance of them; the fielh is pleasant, but it is Pacar heavie. They never bring forth but one at once. There bee others very white; these bee rare, they are found in the River of Saint Francis.

There are many Ounces, some blacke, some grey, some speckled, it a very cruell beast, and Ingostete, fierce, they affault men exceedinly, that even on the trees they cannot escape them, especially M. Kniuet calls if they be bigge. When they are flesht there is none that dare abide them, especially by night: them Tigres. they kill many beasts at once, they spoile a whole Hen-house, or a heard of Swine, and to open a man, or whatfoeuer beaft, it sufficeth to hit him with one of his clawes. But the Indians are fo Bold vain-glohardie, that some of them dare close with one of them, and holdeth it fast, and kills it in a field, rious Indiaus, as they doe their enemies, getting a name, and vling all the ceremonics they doe to their enemies. They vie the heads for Trumpets, and the Portugall women vie the skinnes for Rugs or Couerlets, especially of the painted ones, and in the Captainship of Saint Vincent.

The Carigne are like the Foxes of Spaine, but they are smaller, as bigge as a Cat, they smell Carigne. worse then the Foxes of Spaine themselves, and they are grey as they. They have a bag from the To fore to the hinder feet, with fixe or feuen dugs, and there they carrie their young ones hidden till they can get their owne food, and hath ordinarily fixe or feuen in a litter. This vermine defroyeth the Hens, for it goeth not by day but by night, and climes the trees and the houles, and no Bird or Hen can escape them.

The Tamandua is of notable admiration, it is of the bigneffe of a great Dog, more round then Ant Beare, or long, and the tayle is twice or thrice as long as the bodie, and fo full of haire, that from the Tamandua, a heate, raine, cold and winde, hee harboureth himfelte all under it, that yee can fee nothing of frange-shaped him. The head is small, and hath a thinne snout, no greater mouth then an oyle Cruze, round beast. and not open, the tongue is of three quarters long, and with it he licketh up the Ants, whereof 60 he onely teeds; hee is diligent in feeking of the Ant-heapes, and with the clawes hee breaketh them, and casting out his tongue the Ants sticke on it, and so he drawes them in, having no more mouth then to hold his tongue full of them; it is of a great fierceneffe, and doth affault many people and beafts. Th O inces doe feare them, and the Dogs exceedingly, and whatfoener they catch, they teare with their clawes; they are not eaten, neither are they good for

Guaitaca.

1200

Beaft in humane shape,

Of the Cli-

Others called Guaitaca, doe live in the Sea Coast betweene the Holy Gooft, and the River of Januarie, they live in the fields, and will not live in the Woods, they goe to eate to their Hul- 10 bandries, and come to the houses to bed, they have no other treasures. They live as the cattell that feedeth in the fields, and come not to the Houses but to sleepe, they are so swift in running that by footmanship they catch the game. Others called Ighigrannpan, are enemies to the Tupinaguing, they communicate with the Guaimures, when they fight with their enemies, they make great noiles friking with certaine flickes vpon others. Others called Quirigma, thefe were Lords of the Countries of the Bay, and therefore it is called the Bay Curringre. The Tuningham did expell them out of their Countries, and remained Lords of them, and the Tapnyas went toward the South. Others called Maribuco, in habit in the Maine right against the great River. O. there called Catagna, doe live right against lequeriquare, betweene the Holy Ghoff and Port Secare. Others called Tapuxerig, are enemies of the Tapuxas, and eate vp their Corne fields. O- 20 there that dwell about the Maine that goeth toward Saint Vincent, are called Amocaxo, and were enemies of the Tupinaquins. Others called Nonea, have verie great faces. Others called Apur, dwell neere the field of the Maine, they are great fingers, and have another Speech. Others called Panaguiri, differing from the former. Others also differing called Bigrorgya, Others called Pirin, there are a great number of thefe.

All these seventie fixe Nations of Taparas, which have the most of them a fundry Language. are a wilde fauage and vntamed people; they are all for the most part enemies of the people that dwell in the Sea Coast neighbouring to the Portugals: onely a certaine kind of Tapuyas, that line in the River of Saint Francis, and others that dwell nearer are friends of the Portugals, and entertaine them verie well when they paffe through their Countries. Of thefe many are Christians, 30 that were brought by the Fathers from the Maine, and learning the Speech of them of the Sea Coast which the Fathers can speake, they baptized them, and many of them doe line in the Townes of the Fathers married, and serue them for Interpreters, for the remedie of so great a number of people as is loft; and onely with these Tapuras, may some fruit bee gotten, with the rest of the Tapuyas no conversion can be wrought because of their mutabilitie, and the having manie and fundrie very hard Languages. Onely there remaineth one remedie, if the Lord God doe not discouer another, and it is; getting some of their children, and making them to learne the Speech of the rest, and seruing for Interpreters may some fruit be gotten, though with great dif-

ficultie, for the Reasons aboutfaid, and manie other.

The Climate of Brafill generally is temperate, of good, delicate, and healthfull aire, where 40 mue & Gount the men live lon even to 90.100. and more yeeres, and the Countrie is full of old men. Generaltric of Brafil, & ly it is neither cold nor hot, though from the River of lanuarse, vnto Saint Vincent, there be colds of fome nota and heates, but not very great. The Heauens are very pure and cleere, especially by night; the

bic things found there, as Moone is very prejudiciall vnto health, and corrupteth the things very much. The mornings are well one the verie healthfull : it hath verie little twilights, as well in the morning as in the euenings, for as foone as it is day prefently the Sun rifeth, and as foone as it is fet, it is night, Their Winter beginneth in March, and endeth in August, the Summer beginneth in September, and endeth in

Februarie, the nights and daies are all the yeere almost equall.

The Countrie is somewhat melancholicke, overflowne with many waters, as wel of maine Riners, as from the Skie; in it is great flore of raine chiefly in Winter, it is ful of great Woods that are 53 greene all the yeere. It is a Hilly Countrie, especially toward the Sea Coast, and from Pernambuco vnto the Captaineship of the Holy Ghoft, is verie scarce of stone; but from thence to Saint Vincent are verie rough and high Mountaines, of great Quarries of Rockie stone, the food and waters are generally healthfull, light, and of easie digestion. There are few Commodities for apparell, because the Countrie yeeldeth nothing but Cotton-wooll, and of the rest the Countries plentifull : especially of Cattell and Sugars.

ð. IIII.

any thing but to defroy the Ant-heapes, and they are so many that they will never bee deftroved altogether.

Tatu or Arma-The Fadas are the Rhinoces

The Tate is of the bigneffe of a Pigge, and of a whitish colour, it hath a very long snout, and the body full of thing, like plates, wherewith he remayneth armed, and it hath certaine pieces hanging downe as the Badas have. These plates are so hard, that no Arrow can pierce them.excopt it hits him in the flankes; they digge fo fast, that it hath chanced feuen and twentie men with Mattockes not to becable to digge fo much as one of these with their snout. But if they cast water in their holes they are presently taken : it is a creature worth the seeing, and they call it an armed Horfe, the fielh is like Hennes fielh, or Pigge, very pleafant, of the skinne they make Purfes , and they are very faire, and lasting , they are made tame, and are bred in the house. Of to thefe there be many kindes, and there are great abundance of them.

Canduscu, or Porcupine: diuers kinds:

The Candnace is the Porcupine of Africa, and hath briffles white and blacke, fo great, that they are af a spanne and a halte, and more, and they cast them like as those of Africa. There be other of their, called Candumiri, because they are imaller; and they have briftles as the other, There be other imaller, of the bigneffe of a Cat, with yellow briftles and blacke at the points. All these brittles have this qualitie, that entring into the flesh, bee it never to little, of it selfe it pierceth through the fleth. And for this cause these briftles doe serue the Indians for an infirument to bore the eares, for putting neuer fo little in them in one night it pierceth them through. There be other smaller like Vrchins or Hedge-hogs, they have also brittles, but they cast them not, all these beatts are of a good fiesh and taite.

Hiraras or Ciuer Cats.

The Hirara is like the Ciuet Cat, though some say it is not; they are of many colours, viz. grey, blacke, and white, they eatenothing but hunnie, and in this they are to terrible, that bee the hole of the Bee-hine neuer fo little they make it fo bigge that they may goe in , and when they finde the Hunnie they neuer eate it, till they have called the rest of the young ones, and and then the old one going in, he doth nothing but bring out the Hunnie, and give it to the yong ones, a thing of great admiration, and an example of great charitie for men, and that this is fo the men of the Countrie doe affirme. The Aquique are very great Apes, as bigge as a good Dog, blacke, and very ougly, as well the

Aquiqui, Apes or Mankies. Asc-king. His Oration.

male as the temale; they have a great beard onely in the lower chap: of thele come fometimes a male one to yellow that it draweth toward red, which they tay is their King. This hath a 30 white face, and the beard from eare to eare, as cut with the Sciffers, and it hath one thing much to be noted, namely, that he goeth into a tree, and maketh fo great a noise that it is heard very farre off, in the which he continueth a great while without ceasing, and for this, this kind hath a particular instrument; and the instrument is a certaine hollow thing, as it were made of Parchment, very strong, and so smooth, that it serueth to burnish withall, as big as a Duckes Egge, and beginneth from the beginning of the gullet, rill very neere the palate of the mouth between both the cheekes, and it is fo light that affoone as it is tought it mouet has the key of a Virginals. And when this Ape is thus crying he fometh much, and one of the little ones that is to remaine in his place doth cleanfe many times the fome from his beard.

His Page. Many kindes

There are others of many kindes, and in great abundance, they are blacke, grey, and yellow; 40 of Monkies. the Country-men fay that some of these, when they shoot at them with an Arrow, catch it in their hand, and turne againe, and throwe it at the man; and when they are burt they feeke a certaine leafe and chaw it, and thrust it into the wound for to heale them, and because they are

Their Phylike, alwaies on the trees, and are very fwift, when the leape is great, and the little ones cannot paffe. one of them lieth acrosse like a bridge, and the rest passe ouer him, the tayle scrueth him for a hand; and if any be ftrucken, with his tayle he holdeth fast the bough whereon he is, and so dieth hanging, and falleth not. Monkie-tricks. They have many other qualities that are seene every day, as to take a sticke and beate some

body that doth them harme; another found a basket of Egges, hung it by the cord about his necke, and going to the top of an house, from thence made many mowes at his mafter that to went to feeke him, and breaking them, did eate them all before him, throwing the shells at The beaft (nati is grey, and like the Badgers of Portugal, it hath the fnout and clawes very

Cuati.

long, it climeth the trees like the Monkie : no Snake, on Egge, no Bird doth escape it, nor any thing that it can get. They are made tame in the houses, but no man can abide them, for they deuoure all : they will play with little Cats, and whelpes, they are malicious, pleafant, and are apt for many things. There bee other two or three greater kindes, as great Dogges, and have tushes like the wilde

Other kinds.

Boares of Portugall; these denoure beatts and men , and when they finde their prey, they compaffe it about, some in one place, some in another, till they denoure it. WildeCats. Of wilde Cats are many kindes, some blacke, some white, some of a Safran colour, and are very faire for any furre. These Cats are very terrible, and swife; they live by prey and by birds,

and they affault also the men; some of them are as big as Dogs. The lagoarnen are the Dogs of Brafill, they are of a grey colour mingled with white , very

fwift, and when they yelpe they are like Dogs; they have the tayle very hairy, feed on fruits. and vnon prey, and bite terribly.

The Tapati are like the Conies of Portugall, and here they doe barke like Dogs, especially by Tapati. night, and very often; the Indians hold this barking for an euill figne; they breed three or foure at once: they are very rare, for they have many adversaries, as birds of rapine, and other beafts

The laguacini are big as the Foxes of Portugall, and have the same colour of a Foxe, they feed laguacini. onely youn the Sea-crabs, and among the Sugar-canes, and deltroy many of them; they are very fleepie, for they kill them fleeping, they doe no hurt.

The Biarataca is of the bigneffe of a Cat, like a Ferret; it hath a white ftroake and a grey Biarataca, along the backe, like a croffe, very well made; it feeds upon birds and their egges, and upon other things, especially vpon Ambar, and loueth it so well, that all the night he goeth by the Seafide to feeke it, and where there is any, hee is the first. It is greatly feared, not because it hach any teeth, or any other defensive thing, but it hash a certaine ventofitie so throng, and so enill of Stinking beaft. fent, that it doth penetrate the wood, the stones, and all that it encountreth withall, and it is fuch, that some Indians have died with the stench. And the Dog that commeth neere it escapeth not: and this smell lasteth fifteene, twentie, or more dayes; and it is such, that if it lighreth neere some Towne, it is presently dis-inhabited. And that they may not bee perceived.

they scrape a hole in the ground, and there within they voide that ventofitie, and couer it with an earth; and when they are found, that they may not bee taken, their defense is to cast out The Prignica (which they call) of Brafil, is worth the feeing; it is like a shag-haire Dog, or Prignica or La-

a Land-spaniell, they are very ougly, and the face is like a womans cuill dreft, his fore and hin- zineste. der feet are long, hee hath great clawes and cruell, they goe with the breaft on the earth, and their young fast to their bellie. Though yee strike it never so fast, it goeth so leasurely, that it hath need of a long time to get vp into a tree , and fo they are eatily taken; their food is certaine fig-tree leaves, and therefore they cannot bee brought to Portugall, for as soone as they Simple food. want them they die prefently.

In these parts are a great multitude of Rats, and of them are some ten or twelve kindes, some Twelve kinds] 20 blacke, others yellow, others dunne, all are eaten, and are very fauourie, especially some great of Rate ones that are like Conics, and formetimes they are fo many, that lighting upon a fowne field. they veterly destroy it.

Of Land-Snakes and Serpents;

"He Giboya is a Snake of the greatest that are in this Countrie, and there are some found of Of the Snakes I twentie foot in length, they are very faire, but more wonderfull they are in swallowing a that are on the whole Deere; they have no poifon , neither are their teeth great according to the bodie. To land, and have take their prey whereon they feed, they vie this fleight. It layeth it felfe along by the high-Gibys. 40 wayes, and when the prey passeth it leapeth vpon it, and windes it selfe in such order, and crusheth it so, that it breaketh all his bones, and afterward licketh it, and his licking hath such vertue, that it bruifeth or suppleth it all, and then it swallowes it vp whole,

There are others, talled Guiraupiaguara, that is, Eaters of birds Egges, it is very blacke, long, Eggeenter. and hath a yellow breaft: they goe on the tops of trees as it were iwimming in the water, and no man can runne fo faft on the ground as they on the trees; thefe deftroy the birds, and their

There are others very bigge and long, called Caninana, they are all greene, and of a notable caninana. beautie. These also doe eate egges and birds, and kill little chickens.

There is another, called Boystapus, that is, a Snake that hath a long fnout, it is very slender, Long snow 50 and long, and feeds onely vpon Frogs. The Indians observe footh-saying with this, that when the woman hath no children, they take this Snake and strike her with it on the hips, and say she shall presently have children.

There is another, called Gaisiepia, they are found only in the Rarm, it is of a notable bigness, Gaisiotie. he smelleth so much, like a Foxe, wheresoeuer he goeth, that there is none can abide it.

There is another, called Boyuna, that is, a blacke Snake, it is very long and flender, it fmelleth Equina, alio very much like a Foxe.

There is another, called Bom, because that when it goeth, it crieth bom, bom, it is also very great, and doth no hurt.

There is another, called Boienpecanga, that is, a Snake that bath prickles in his backe, they are 60 very great, and groffe, the prickles are very venomous, and all men doe avoide and keepe themfelues from them.

Israraca is a name that comprehendeth foure kindes of very venomous Snakes. The first is Snakes that greatest, called lararacuca, that is, great lararaca, and they are of ten spannes long, they have have poston, great tulhes budden in the mouth along their gummes, and when they bite they itretch them larges,

like a finger of the hand : they have their poison in their gummes , their teeth crooked , and a itroake voon them whereby the poison runneth. Others say, they have it within the tooth. which is hollow within, it hath fo vehement a poifon, that in foure and twentie houres, and leffe, it killeth a man: the poifon is very yellow, like Saffran water, they bring foorth many young ones at once, one hath beene taken with thirteene in her bellie.

There are others, called lararcoaypitinga, that is, that bath the point of the tayle more white them grey: these are as venomous as Vipers of Spaine, and have the same colour and fashion.

There are others, called lararaepeba, most venomous; it hath a red chaine along the backe, and the breails, and the reit of the bodie is all grev.

There are other smaller lararacas, that the greatest is about halfe a yard long, they are of an earthic colour , they have certaine veines in their head like the Vipers , and they make fuch a

noife as they doe. The CHYMCHON is a Snake very hideous and fearefull, and fome are of fifteene spannes lone: when the Indians doe kill them they burie prefently the head, because it hath great store of pois fon : for to catch the prey and the people, it lieth close to a tree, and when it feeth the prev. it

Bercininga.

Ibiracua.

cafts it felie voon it, and to killeth it. The Boycininga is a Snake, called of the Bell, it is of a great poison, but it maketh such a noise with a Bell it hath in his taile, that it catcheth very few; though it be fo fwift, that they call

it, the flying Snake , his length is twelve or thirteene spannes long. There is another , called Bocining peba: this also hath a Bell, but smaller, it is blacke, and very venomous.

The poison of the Ibiracua Snake is so vehement, that if it biteth any person, presently it makes him to voide bloud through all the passages of his bodie, to wit, the eies, nostrils, mouth, eares, and all open places elfe of his bodie; it runneth a great while, and if he be not holpen, he empties his bloud and dieth.

The Snake Ibiboboca is very faire, it hath the head red, white and blacke, and so all the bodie Zbibobeca. is sported of these three colours; this is the most venomous of all, it goeth slowly, and liueth in Store and fore. the crannies of the earth, and by another name it is called, the Snake of the colours.

The great vehemencie that these venomous Snakes aboue faid haue, the great paines they caule, and the many persons that every day doe die of their stinging cannot be exprest : and they are so many in number, that not onely the fields and the woods , but even the houses are full of 20 them, and they are found in the beds, and within the bootes, when they put them on. The Brethren going to their rest doe finde them there wound about the benches feet, and if they be not holpen when they fling, cutting the wound, letting him bloud, drinking Vnicornes horne, or Carima, or the water of the Snakes-wood, or some other effectuall remedie, in source and twen-Carima, a drug tie houres and leffe he dieth, with great crying and paines, and they are fo excessive, that when any person is bitten presently he demandeth confession, and maketh account to die, and so dif-

poseth of his goods. There are other Snakes, chiefely these largraces, that have a great smell of Muske, and where-Musk-fnake. focuer they bee, they are descried by the good and fragrant smell they have.

There are many Scorpions, that every day are found in their beds, among the bookes, and a- 40 Scerpions. bout the chambers, ordinarily they kill not, but in foure and twentie houres they cause intole-

It feemeth that this climate doth flowe in poison, as well for the many Snakes there are, as for Poifonous Rethe multitude of Scorpions, Spiders, and other vncleane creatures, and the Lizards are so many that they couer the walls of the house, and the holes are full of them.

Of the Fowles that are in the Land, and are thereon fustained.

EVen as this climate doth flowe in poison, so it seemeth to create beautifulnesse in the birds, and as all the Countrie is full of Groues and Woods, so it is full of most beautifull birds of

The Parots in this Countrie are infinite, more then Dawes, or Starlings, or Thrushes, or Sparrowes of Spaine, and so they make a cackling as the birds about faid; they destroy them by thoufands, they flie in flockes alwaies, and they are formany, that there bellands where there is nothing but Parots; they are eaten, and are very good meate; they are ordinarily very faire, and of many and fundrie colours and kindes, and they almost all speake if they be taught.

Varietie of Pa. The Arara Parots are those that by another name are called Macaos; it is a great bird , and are very rare, and by the sea-coast they are not found, it is a faire bird in colours; their breasts are red as scarlet; from the middle of the bodie to the taile some are yellow, others greene, others blue, and through all the bodie they have feattering, some greene, some yellow and blue feathers, and ordinarily every feather hath three or foure colours, and the taile is very long. Thele 60 lay but two egges, they breed in the trunkes of trees, and in the rockes of itone. The Indians efteeme them very much, and of their feathers they make their fine things , and their hangings for their fwords, it is a very pleasant bird, they become very tame, and domesticall, and speake very well if they be taught.

CHAP.I. S.4. Diners kinde. of Parots. Guaimimbique a rare bird.

The Anapara Parot is most faire; in it all colours are found with great perfection, to wit, Anapara, red, greene, yellow, blacke, blue, grey, the colour of the Bulfach, and of all these colours it hath the bodie bespeckled and spotted. These also doe speake, and they have another advantage, that is, they breed in the house, and hatch their young ones, wherefore they are of great effective.

The Araruna or Machao is very faire, it is all blacke, and this blacke forinkled with greene. Araruna which give this a great beautie, and when the Sunne thineth on him he is to thining that it is very pleafant to behold; it hath the feet yellow, and the beake and the eies red; they are of great efteeme for their beautie, for they are very rare, and breed not but very farre within the Land, and of their feathers the Indians make their Diademes and Pictures.

The Parots Aintructure are most beautifull, they are all greene, they have a cap and a collar of Aintructure. vellow, very faire, and ouer the beake a few feathers of a very cleare blue, which doe beautifie him very much, it hath pinions of the wings red, and the taile feathers red and yellow, for ink-

The Tains are a kinde of Parot very small, of the bignesse of a Sparrow, they are greene. This, for inkled with other divers colours, they are much efteemed, as well for their beautie, as because they practile much, and well, and are very tame. They are so small, that they skip every where on a man, on his hands, his breast, his shoulders and his head; and with his bill hee will cleanse ones ceeth, and will take the meate out of the mouth of him that brings them up, and make many gambols; they are alwaies speaking or linging after their owne fashion.

20 The Parots Guirainba, or Tellow birde, neither speake nor play, but are sullen and sad; they are Guirainbe, much efteemed, because they are brought from two hundred and three hundred leagues, and are not found but in great mens houses, and they hold them in such esteeme, that they give the ranformeand value of two persons for one of them, and they esteeme them as much as the lapanas doe the Treuets and the Pore, or any other great man esteemeth any thing of great price, as a Faulcon, Gerfaulcon, &c.

The Taps is of the bigneffe of a Pie-annet, the bodie of a fine blacke, and the taile of a very Yaps. fine yellow, it hath three tufts on the head that are like little hornes, when hee raifeth them: the eies are blue, the neb very yellow. It is a very faire bird, and hatha very ftrong fmell when it is angrie. They are very carefull in feeking their food, there escapeth not a Spider, Beetle, or

30 Cricket, &c. they are very cleanly in a house, and goe about like Pie-annets, they leave nothing unfought. It is dangerous holding them in the hand, for they runne presently to the eies, and Dangerous to

Of the small birds called Gnaimintique, there are fundrie kindes, as Gnaracie A, that is, Fruit The Gnaimint of the Summe; by another name, Guaracia oba, that is, Concerng of the Summe; or Guaracia aba, bique: otices that is, The haire of the Sunne; in the Antillas they call it the rifen or anaken bird, and they fay call it the Toit fleepeth fixe moneths, and liueth other fixe moneths. It is the fineft bird that can bee imagi- mineret. ned; it hath a cap on his head, to which no proper colour can be given, for on what foeuer file yee looke on it, it sheweth red, greene, blacke, and more colours, all very fine, and shining; and the breaft is so faire, that on whatsoeuer side yee take it, it shewth all the colours, especially a 40 yellow more finer then gold. The bodie is grey; it hath a very long bill, and the tongue twice the length of the bill; they are very I wift in flight, and in their flight they make a noise like

the Bee, and they rather feeme Bees in their fwittneffe then birds, for they alwaies feed flying without ficting on a tree, euen as the Bees doe flie sucking the Hunnie from the flowers. They haue two beginnings of their generation, some are hatched of egges like other birds, others of Generation, little bubbles, and it is a thing to bee noted, a little bubble to beginne to convert it felfe into this little bird, for at one inftant it is a bubble and a bird, and so it conuerts it selfe into this most faire bird, a wonderfull thing, and vnknowne to the Philosophers, seeing one living creature Note for Philosophers without corruption is converted into another.

The bird Gurranbe eng eta is of the bigneffe of a Gold-finch; it hath the backe and wings Guranbe seg 50 blue, and the breaft and bellie of a most fine yellow. It hath a yellow Diademe on his head that eta. beautifies him very much. It is a very excellent bird for the Cage, it speaketh many waies refembling many birds, making many changes, and changing his speech a thousand waies. They continue long in their fong, and are of elterme, and of thefe for the Cage there bee many, and faire, and of divers and fundrie colours.

The Tangara is of the bigneffe of a Sparrow, all blacke, the head is of a verie fine Orange-Tangara tawnie, it tingeth not, but it hath a wonderfull thing, for it hath fits like the Falling sicknesse, and for this cause the Indians doe not eate them, for the auoiding of that disease, they have a kinde of very pleasant dancing, and it is, that one of them makes himselfe as dead, and the other compassehim about skipping with a long of a strange crying that is heard verie faire, and when they Dance;

60 end this feath, crying, and dancing, he that was as dead rifeth, and maketh a great noise and crying, and then all goe away, and end their feath. They are fo earnest when they doe it, that although they be seene and shot at, they flie not away. Of these there bee many kindes, and all

The bird Quereina, is of the most esteemed of the Land, not for the fong, but for the beautie Quereina,

Parots.

of the feathers; they are a cleare azure in part, and a darke, all the breast is most fine red. the wines almost blacke; they are to efteemed, that the Indians doe fleathem, and give two or three persons for the skinnes of them , and with the feathers they make their Pictures , Diademes.

Tucana.

The Tucana is of the bignesse of a Pie, it is all blacke except the breast, which is all yellow. with a round red circle; the bill is a large spanne long, verie great, yellow, and within is red. fo smooth and shining, that it seemeth to bee varnished; they are made tame, and breede in the houses, are good to cate, and the feathers are esteemed because they are faire.

The Guirapanea is white, and not being very big it crieth fo loude that it founds like a Bell

Guirananea. Масисациа.

and it is heard halfe a league, and their linging is like the ringing of Bells. The Macneagna is greater then any Henne of Portugall, it relembleth the Feafant, and fo the Portugals doe call it; it hath theee skinnes one ouer another, and much fleih, and, and verie fanorie, they lay twice a yeere, and at euerie time thirteene or fifteene egges, they goe alwaies on the ground, but when they fee any people they flie to the trees, and at night when they goe to rouft as Hennes doe. When they fit on the trees, they put not their feet on the boughs, but the fhankes of their legs, and most on the fore part. There bee mamy kindes of these, and they are

Among them there is one of the smallest, that hath many properties; when it singeth it foresheweth raine, it crieth so loude, that it is incredible of so small a bird, and the reason is, because the gullet is verie great. It beginneth at the mouth and commeth out at the breast betweene the skinne and the flesh, and reacheth to the fundament, and returneth againe and entreth into the crop, and then it proceedeth as other birds, and doubleth like a Trumper with his turnings. They runne after any bodie pecking him and playing like a little whelpe, if they fet it voon Hennes egges, it fi teth ouer them, and bringeth vp the young chickens, and if it fee a Hen with chickens, it fo perfecutes her, till it takes them from her and broodes them, and brings them vp. The Hen Muts is very domesticall, it hath a combe like the Cockes, spotted with white and

blacke, the egges are great and very white, like a Goofe egge, fo hard that knocking the one with Hard egges. the other, they ring like Iron, and of them they make their Maraca, that is, their Bells : any Dogs poilon. Dog that eateth the bones of it dieth, and wnto men it doeth no hurt at all.

VIII.

In this Countrie there are many kindes of Partridges, which though they are not like in all 30 things to thole of Spaine, yet are they very like in colour, tafte, and in the aboundance.

Turtles innumerable.

In this Countrie are many kindes of Turtle-doues, Stares, and Black-birds, and Pigeons of many forts, and all these birds are like to them of Portugal; and the Pigeons and Turtle-doues are in fuch abundance, that in certaine fields farre within the Land they are fo many, that when they rife they hinder the light of the Sanne, and make a noise like a thunder; they lay so many egges, and fo white, that a very farre off yee may fee the fields white with egges, as if it were fnowe; and feruing the Indians for meate as they doe, they cannot be diminished; rather from thence at certaine times it feemeth they runne ouer all the parts of this Prouince. In this Countrie are many Offriches, called Andugeacu, but they keep only within the Land.

Offriches. Hottle medi-

The Anima is a fowle of rapine, great, and crieth that it is heard halfe a league and more, it 40 is all blacke, hath faire eies, the beake bigger then a Cocks, vpon this beake it hath a little horne of a spanne in length, the men of the Countrie say that this Horne is very medicinable for those that are taken in their speech, as hath beene proued, hanging it about the necke of a girle that did not speake, which spake presently.

There be many other fowles of rapine, to wit, Eagles, Faulcons, Gof-hawkes, Merlines, and Tarfels, and many other, but they are all ordinarily to wilde, that they will flie at any thing, neither will they come to hand, or stoope to lure.

of the Brasilian Trees for fruit, medicine, and other vies; and their Herbes of rare operations.

Atain, akinde Trees Acaim, are very great and faire, they cast the leafe at their times, and the flower groweth in the friges, which makes certaine points like fingers, and in the faid points there groweth a red flower of a good imell, and after it groweth a Chefnut, and from the Chesnut commeth an Apple as big as a great Apple, or a Pippin, it is a very faire fruit, and some are yellow, others red, and it is all inyce. They are good for hot weather, they cools verie much, and laying the inyce vpon a white cloth it never goeth off till the cloth bee wome. 60 The Chefnut is as good or better then those of Paringall, they are eaten rosted, and raw laid in water as blanche Almonds, and of them they make Marchpanes, and sweet meates as of Almonds. The timber of this tree is little worth, enen for the fire, it yeeldeth of it selfe a certain gumme good to paint and write, and there is great store. With the barke they dye their yarne,

Many vies

and the veffels that ferues them for Pots. This being stamped and boyled with some Copper, till the third part of the water be confumed, is a foueraigne remedy for old fores, and they heale quickly. There bee so many of these trees as of Chesnuts in Portugall, they growe about these Woods, and they gather many quarters of these Chesnuts, and the fruit in their season satisfie

all men. Of thele Acaim doe the Indians make Wine.

There is great abundance of the trees Mangaba, especially in the Bay, for in other places they Mangaba. are rare, in making they are like the barke of Anafega, and in the leafe with those of Frezo, they are very pleasant trees, and haue alwaies greene leaues. They yeeld fruit twice a yeere, the first in a knob, for then they doe not flower, but the very knob is the fruit; this season ended. 10 which lafteth two or three moneths, it giveth another bearing, first the flower, which is altogether like the lefamine, and of as good a smell, but more quicke; the fruit is as big as an Apricock. Or Musk-rose, vellow and spotted with some spots of blacke; within it hath some kernels, but all is eaten, or fucked as the Seruices of Portugall. They are of a very good tafte, and healthfull, and so light that eate they never io many, it feemes they eate no fruit at all. They ripen not on the tree, bur fall to the ground, and from thence they gather them already ripe, or gathering them greene they lay them to ripen. The Indians make Wine of them. The tree and the fruit it felfe being greene. is full of white Milke, and cleaueth to the hands, and is bitter.

The fruit Muruenge groweth on certaine trees, very high and like the wilde Peare-trees of Murueuge. Portugell. It hath a very long stalke, they are gathered greene, and are layd to ripen, and being 20 ripe they are very pleasant and of an easie digestion. When they are to gather them, they cut Ill gathering downe the tree, because they are very high, and if this destruction were not, there would bee more abundance, but therefore they are rare, the trunke hath great abundance of white Milke. and it congealeth, it may ferue for Sealing-waxe if they will vie it.

Of the Araca trees are great abundance, of many forts; the fruit is certaine small Peares. Araca yellow, red, or greene; they are pleasant, voloathsome, toothsome, because they have little taite of fowre, they yeeld fruit almost all the yeere.

This Ombu is a great tree not very high, but well spread; the fruit is like white Plums, yel- Ombulow and round, and therefore the Portugals doe call it a Plum. It causeth the teeth to fall, and the Fruit eauling Indians that doe eate it doe lole them. The rootes of this tree are eaten, and are very pleafant, and teeth to fall. 30 more toothsome then the Abalancia, for they are sweeter, and the sweetnesse thereof is like Sugar, they are cold and healthfull, and they are given to the ficke of a Feauer, and it ferneth for

water to them that goe inward to the Land, for they have no other. The lacapucaya is of the greatest and fairest of this Countrie; it beareth a fruit like a Pot, as lacapucaya,

big as a great Bowle, as thicke as two fingers, with a couer vpon it, and within it is full of certaine Chefnuts like vnto the Myrabolanes; and it feemes they are the fame of India, when they are already in feason, that couer doth open and the fruit falleth. If any doe eate much of it green, he casteth all the haire he hath on his body; rosted it is a good fruit. They wie the huskes for Haire-fal fruit Cup, and they are lasting; the timber of this tree is very hard , it doth not rotte , they esteeme Graes. it for the Axel-trees of the Sugar-mills.

Aratien, is a tree of the bigneffe of an Orange tree and greater, the leafe is like a Citron tree or Aratica, a Lymond tree, it is a faire and p'eafant tree, it beareth a fruit as bigge as Pine apples; and they haue a good smell, and a reasonable taste, it is a fruit that loatheth not.

Of these Trees are many kindes, and one of them called Araticu panania. If they eate much of the fruit it proueth a cold poilion, and doth much hurt. Of the rootes of these trees they make booyes for the Nets, and they are to light as any Corkes.

There be two forts of Peques, one of them beares a fruit as big as a good Orange, and so they Peques. have the rinde thicke like an Orange; within this rinde there is nothing but Hunnie so cleare and sweet as any Sugar, in quantitie of an egge, and mingled with it, it hath the pippens or

The other Pequea is timber, of the heaviest of this Countrie, in Portugall it is called Setim, it hath very fine wanes, it lasterh long and doth not rotte.

On the tree Iabaticaba groweth a fruit of the bignetle of a Lymond of Sytill, the rinde and Iabaticaba tafte is like a fowrish Grape, from the roote of the tree through all the body vnto the vtmost

bough or iprig, is a rare fruit, it is onely found within the Land in the Captainship of S. Vincent. The Indians doe make of this fruit a kinde of Wine, and they boyle it like the wine of Grapes. In this Brafill are many Coco-nuts, excellent like those of India; these are ordinarily set, and Cocos. growe not in the Woods, but in Gardens, and in their Farmes. And there are more then twen- ao, kinds of

tie kindes of Palme trees, and almost all doe beare fruit, but not so good as the Cocos : with some Palmes. of thefe Palme trees they couer their houses. 60 Belides these Fruit-trees there are many other that yeeld fundry fruits, whereof they make profit, and many Nations of the Indians sustaine themselves, together with the Hunnie, whereof

there is great abundance, and with their hunting, for they have no other fultenance.

In the maine of the Captainship of Saint Vincent vinto Paraguay, are many and great Woods The Pinetree. of Pine trees, euen like vinto them of Portugall, which beare Apples and kernels; the Apples are

29999

not to long but rounder and greater, the kernels are greater and are not to hot, but of a good temperature and wholfome.

Of the Trees medianes. Cabueriba. Por: Engaddi, for wounds.

Cabueriba is very great and effected for the Balme that it hath; to get this Balme they prick the barke of the tree, and lay a little Corton wooll to the cuts, and from certaine to certaine daves they goe to gather the Oyle that it hath diffilled. The Porengals call it Balme, because is is very l ke to the true Balme of the Vineyards of Engeds, it ferueth for greene wounds, and taketh away all the fcarre : it imelleth very well, and of it, and of the barke of the tree they make Beades, and other smelling things. The Woods where they growe doe smell well, and the beafts doe goe and rubbe on this tree, it formeth to bee to heale them of fome difeases. The Timber is of the best of this Countrie, because it is very strong and heavy, and some are of such so bigneffe, that of them they make the Beames, Axel-trees, and Skrues or Vices for their Sugar-Mills, these are very rare, and are found chiefly in the Captainship of the Holy Ghos.

For wounds.

Cupayba is a Fig-tree, commonly very high, firaite and big, it hath much oile within; for to get it they cut the tree in the middelt, where it hath the vent, and thereit hath this oile in lo great abundance, that some of them doe yeeld a quarterne of oile and more, it is very cleare, of the colour of oile, it is much fet by for wounds, and taketh away all the skarre. It fernesh also for lights, and burne well, the beafts knowing the vertue thereof doe come and rubbe them. felues thereat. There are great store, the wood is good for nothing,

Ambarba. For wounds,

The Ambayba Fig-trees are not very great, and are not found in the true Woods but in Conpices, where some sowing hath beene; the barke of this tree scraping it on the inside, and cru- 18 thing those scrapings in the wound, laying them on it, and binding it with the barke it selfe, healeth in a short time. There is great abundance of them, and are much esteemed for their great vertue, the leaves are rough, and ferue to imooth any wood, the timber ferueth for nothing.

Ambargtinga.

The Fig-tree which they call of Hell, Ambaigtinga is found in Taperas: it yeelds a certaine Oyle that ferueth for lights, it hath great vertue, as Monardes writeth, and the leaves are much etteemed for them that doe vomit, and cannot retayne that which they eate, anointing the flomacke with the Oyle, it taketh away the Oppilations, and the Collicke. To get this Oyle, they lay it in the Sunne some dayes, and ftampe it, and seethe it, and presently that Oyle commeth on the top, which is gathered for the effect about-faid. Of the trees Ishacamuci there are many in Saint Vincent: they beare a certaine fruit as good 30

Iebacamuci. For the bloudy Fiuxe.

as Quinces, fa hioned like a Panne or a Por, they have within certaine small feeds, they are the onely remedie for the bloudy Fluxe. The Igeigea yeeldeth the Masticke , smelleth very much for a good while: they notch the

Igrigea. Fo cold difcales.

tree in fome places, and in an instant it stilleth a white liquor that doth congeale; it serueth for Plaisters in cold diseases, and to perfume, it serueth also in stead of incense. There is another tree of this kinde , called Igrangena, that is, Mafticke as bard as flone , and foit feemeth rather Gumme-anime then Masticke, and it is fo hard and thining that it feemeth

Gunme A.

Glaffe; it ferueth to glafe the earthen veffell, and for this it is much efteemed among the India ans, and it ferueth also for cold difeases. There is a River betweene Port Secure and the Illers, that commeth from more then three 49 hundred leagues within the Mayne, it bringeth great store of Rozen , which is the Gummeanime it felte, which the Indians doe call Iguaigeica, and the Portugals, White inconfe; it hath the

Curunicaiba. For wounds. and for the Poxc.

same effects that the Incenie.

Currepicaiba is like to the Peach-trees of Portugal in the leafe: the leaves doe diffill a kinde of I quor like the Fig-trees of Spaine, which is the onely remedie for wounds both greene and old, and for the Poxe, and it taketh away all the scarre from the wounds, if they pricke the barke of it, it yeeldeth great store of Bird-lime, wherewith they catch the small birds,

Catroha.

There is great abundance of the trees Cauroba, the leaves of these chewed and layd to the For the Poxe, Pock-fore drye and heale it in fuch manner, that it neuer commeth againe, and it feemeth that the wood hath the same effect that the China wood, and that of the Antilles haue for the same 50 difeafe. Of the flower they make a Conferue for those that are ficke of the Poxe. The wood Caarobmocorandiba is like that of China, it is taken in the same manner that the o-

Cattobraccorandib.:
For loofeneffe ther, and it healeth the loofeneffe, the Poxe, and other diseases of cold, it is grey, and bath the and the Poxe. pith very hard as the wood of China. Lahuvandika For the fickneffe of the Liver.

It is long fince laburandiba was found, and it is, as fome Indians doe fay, called of the Indians Betele. The Rivers and their borders are full of these trees, the leaves are the onely remedie for the ficknesses of the Liner, and many in this Brafill haue already beene cured of most grienous For the Tooth. diseases of the Liver, with the eating of them. There is another tree called also Betele, it is smaller and of a round leafe, the roots of it are an

ake. Coffia fifiule. Of the Oyles the Indians doe victo anoins them clues

excellent remedy for the tooth-ake, putting it in the hollow place of them, it bitech like Ginger. 62 They fay also, that in this Brafillis the tree of the Caffia fiftala, it is vnknowne to the Indians, the Spaniards doe vie it, and fay it is as good as that of India.

The Anda trees are faire and great, and the wood ferueth for all things, of the fruit they make an Oyle, wherewith the Indians doe anoint themselves, and the women their haire; and it ferweth also for wounds, and drieth whem up presently, and they make many gallant things about the legs and body, painting themselues with this Oyle.

The Moxerequieba tree is found within the Maine, in the fields, it is small, beareth a fruit as Moxerequieba. big as an Otange, and within it hath certaine kernels, and of it altogether they make an Ovle to anoint themselves, the barke serueth to kill fish, and every beath that drinketh the water where it is caft, dieth.

The Aintenders is small, beareth a red fruit, and of it they make a red oile to anoint sintuatubits. themfelues.

The Alabatipita is fine or fixe spannes in length, the fruit is like Almonds and blacke, and so Mabutitite. to is the Oyle, which they effeeme very much, and anount themselves with it in their infirmities.

The lampaba tree is very faire, of a pleasant greene; every moneth it changeth the leafe. lampaba. and is like a Wal-nut leafe; the trees are great, and the timber pleafant to worke; the fruit is like great Oranges, and is like Quinces, or ruflet Peares; the tafte is like Quinces: it is a good medicine for the Laske of all fores. Of this fruit is made a blacke Inke; when it is made it is white, and anointing themselves therewith it flayneth not prefently, but within a few houres the partie remayneth as blacke as any leat. It is affech electrod of the Indians, with this they make on

their bodies round Hofe and Doublets all cut, and they give certaine strokes in the face, eares. note, chinne, armes, legs, and the lame doe the women, and they become very gallant. This is their apparell, as well on the weeke as on the Feath day, adding tome feathers to it, wherewith 30 thee adorne themselves, and other lewels made of bone : this colour lasteth on the body nine dayes still blacke, and after remayneth nothing; it maketh the skinne very hard, and to make the painting the fruit is to be gathered greene, for being ripe it will not doe it.

The tree lequitimenaçu beareth a fruit like the Spanift Strawberie, and within it hath a beane lequitimenacu. as hard as a sticke, which is the seed; they are of the best Beades that can be, for they are very equall, and very blacke, and they have a gloffe like lear, the huske that covereth these Beades, is Brades and more bitter then Aloes, it ferreth for Sope, and it washeth better then the best Sope in Portugal, Sope. A certaine tree groweth in the fields and the Mayne of the Bay, in dry places where no wa- Of the tree

ter is, very great and broad; it hath certaine holes in the branches, as long as an arme, that are that hath wafull of water, that in Winter nor Summer neuer runneth over, neither is it knowne whence ter, so this water commeth, and drinke many or drinke few of it, it is alwaies at the fame stay, and so it lerueth not onely for a Fountaine, but also for a great maine River : and it happeneth five hun- Note, Com-

dred persons to come to the foot of it, and there is harbour for them all, they drinke and wash parethis with all that they will, and they never want water; it is very favoury and cleare, and a great remedie independent of the state for them that travell into the Mayne, when they can finde no other water.

In this Countrie of Brafil are Groues, wherein are found trees of great bigneffe and length, Of the Trees whereof they make very great Canoas, of feuen or eight spannes broad in hollownesse, and of that serue for fiftie spannes and more in length, which beare a load like a great Barke, and doe carrie twentie timbet. or thirtie Rowers of a fide; they make likewife great Beames for the Sugar-mills. There are many forts of wood incorruptible that putting it in the ground it never rotteth, and others let

40 in water are every day greener and stronger. There is a holy wood of certaine white wanes. whereof are made very faire Bed-steads and rich. The Brafill wood whereof the red lake is made, and other woods of divers colours, whereof divers Inkes of great effreme are made, and all turned and carued workes. There be finelling woods, as the Iararanda, and other kindes of great price and esteeme, there are found white Sandalos or Dates, in great quantitie. The wood of Aquilla, and in great abundance, that thips are made of it. Cedars; wood of Angolin, and the Cedars and Nutmeg tree, though these woods are not so fine, and of so great smell as those of India, yet they Nutmegs. want but a little, and are of great price and esteeme.

Of the Herbes that reeld fruit, and are eaten.

50 THe ordinary food of this Country, that serueth for Bread, is called Mandioca, and they are Mandioca certaine rootes like Carrots, though they are greater and longer: thele shoot out certaine ftemmes or branches, and growe to the height of fifteene spannes. Their branches are very tender, and have a white pith within, and at every franne it hath certaine joynts, and of this bigneffe they are broken and fet in the ground as much as is sufficient for to hold them yo and within fixe or nine moneths have to big rootes that they terue for food. This Mandioca contayneth many kindes in it felfe, and all are eaten, and they are preferred under the earth three, foure, or vnto eight yeeres, and needs no feafoning, for they doe no more but take them out and make fresh meate every day, and the longer they are vinder the earth the bigger they growe, and yeeld 60 the more.

It hath tome things worth the noting, that is, man except, all creatures defire to eate it raw, The inyce is and it fatteneth them, and nourisheth them exceedingly, but if when it is crushed, they doe poilon, drinke that water alone by it felfe, they have no more life then while it commeth to the ftomacke. Of these rootes crushed and grated they make a Meale that is eaten, it is also layd in

29999 2

steepe till it corrupt, and then cleanfed and crushed, they make also a Flowre, and certains Cakes like children very white and delicate. This roote after it is steeped in water, made in balls with the hands, they fet it vpon hurdles at the smoake, where it drieth in such manner that it is kept without corrupting, as long as they lift, and after fcraped and stamped in certaine great traves, and fitted, there remayneth a Flowre whiter then of Wheate, of the which being mingled in a certaine quantitie with the raw, they make a certaine Bifquet, which they call Of the warre, and it ferueth the Indians and the Portugals by Sea, and when they goe to warre, as Bisket. Another Bisket bread is made of very water of the greene Mandioca, if they let it congeale, and dry it at the Sunne, or at the fire; this is about all most white, and for pleasing and delicate, that it is not made for every one. Of this Mandioca dryed at the smoake they 10 make many forts of broaths, which they call Mingass, to healthfull and delicate that they give them to them that are ficke of a Feauer, in flead of Caudles and Restoratives, and of the fame they make Cakes. Simnels, Frutters, little Pyes, Cheef-cakes of Sugar, &c. And mingled with the flowre of Millet, or of Rice, they make leavened bread, that it seemeth of Wheat. This fame Mandioca dryed at the smoake, is a great remedie against poison, chiefely of Snakes. Of this Mandaoca there is one which they call Appins, which contayneth under it felfer many Other kindes. kindes. This killeth not raw, and boyled or roited is of a good tafte, and of it they make Flowre or Cakes . &c. The Indians makes Wines of it, and it is fo fresh and medicinable for

the Liver, that to it is attributed not to have among them any difeased of the Liver. A certaine kinde of Taparas doe eate the poisonous Mandioca raw, and it doth them no hurt, because they 20 are brought vo with it.

The boughs of this herbe or tree, is the feed it felfe, for the stalkes of it are planted, the leaves in time of need boyled doe ferue for food.

The herbe Nana is very common, it is like the herbe Aloes, and and hath fuch leaves, but not fo thicke, and all round about full of very sharpe prickles; in the middest of this herbe groweth a fruit like a Pine-apple, all full of flowers of divers colours, and very faire, and at the foot grow foure or fine forigs, which are planted; the fruit is very smelling, pleasant and one of the best of the world . very full of inyce, and pleasant, it hath the taste of a Mellon , though better and more smelling, it is good for them that are troubled with the Stone, and it is very prejudiciall for Feauers. The Indians doe make Wine of this fruit, very strong, and of a good taste, the huske to wasteth much the Iron, at the dressing of it, and the juyce taketh away the spottes from the clothes. There is fo great abundance of this fruit, that they fat their Hogs with it, and regard it not for the great abundance, they are also kept preserved, and raw they helpe the Sea-sicke at Sea, and with Wine in the morning they are medicinable.

Pacoba is the Fig-tree which they call Adams, it is neither tree nor herbe, for on the one fide it becommeth very bigge, and groweth to twenty quarters long, the stalke is very foft and full of pores; the leaves that it hath are most faire, and some a fathome long and more, all of them raced like the Veluet of Braganca, so smooth that they write on them, and so greene, coole, and fresh, that one licke of a Feauer lying downe vpon them, the Feauer is mitigated with their coolenetie. They are very fresh for to dresse the houses, and the Churches. This herbe beareth in 40 every foote many impes, and every one of them beareth a cluster of a certaine fruit like Figs, which hath fometimes about two hundred, and when they are ripe, the foote is cut whereon the cluster hangeth, and the rest doe growe and so they goe multiplying ad infinitum, the fruit is laid to ripen, and becommeth very yellow, of a good tafte, and healthfull, especially for the ficke of a Feauer, and for him that spitteth bloud, and rosted they are very pleasant and healthfull. It is an ordinary fruit whereof the Gardens are full, and there is of them all the yeere.

Murucuja,

The herbes Murucuia are very faire, especially in their flowers: they runne vpon a wall, and up the trees like Iuie, the leaves beaten with a little Verdigreale is an onely remedie for old vicers, and the Poxe, it beareth a round fruit like Oranges, other like Egges, some yellow, some blacke, and of other divers colours and kindes. Within they have a certaine substance of ker- 50 nels and inyce with a certaine filme that couereth them, and altogether is eaten, it is of a good taffe, and it is somewhat tart, and it is a fruit of some account.

In this Country are many other kindes of fruits, as Deaw-berries, blacke and red. Potatoes, Brasian plants, and other rootes which they call Mangara, another called Cara, that is like to Turneps, and the stones of the earth. Of the Potatoes they make bread, and divers sweet meats, their Indians have many other Pulfes, vz. Beanes, more healthfull and better then those of Portnoall, and in great abundance, many kindes of Pumpions, and some so big, that they vie them for vessels to carie water, and they hold two peckes or more, French Beanes of many kindes, they are toothsome, and like to them of Portugall, Millet of many forts, and of it they make Bread, Wine, and it is eaten tofted, and with it they fatten their Horfes, Swine, and Hennes, and there are cer- 60 taine Taiaobas, that are like Cabiges, and they cause to purge. And an herbe called Iambig, the onely remedie for them that are ficke of the Liuer, and the Stone, there are also many forts of Pepper, that give a good taile in the eating.

letigencu is the Mechagen of the Antilles, they are certaine rootes, long like Radice, but of

a good bigneffe, they serue for a purge, this roote is taken beaten in wine or water for the Ague: it is taken preserued in Sugar like Marmalate, it is boiled with a Henne, causeth great thirst, but A purge. is profitable and of great operation.

Lepecaya, or Pigaya is profitable for the bloudie Fluxe ; the stalke is a quarter long , and the Forthebloudy roots of another, or more, it hath onely foure or fine leanes, it smelleth much wherefore it is. Fluxe. but the smell is strong and terrible, this roote beaten, and put in water all night at the deaw, and in the morning if this water with the fame roote beaten and firained be drunke . onely the

water, it caufeth prefently to purge in fuch fort, that the laske ceafeth altogether.

To is but a little while fince the herbe Carapia was found, it is an only remedie for what focuer A remedie for 10 points, especially of Snakes, and so it is called the Snakes berbe, and it is as good a remedie as the Poylon-Unicorne and Bada, Bezar stone, or Coco of Maldina; nothing profiteth but the roote, which is flender, and in the middeft maketh a knot like a button, this beaten, and put in water and drunke. it killeth the poison of Snakes; It is also a great remedie for the wounds with the Arrowes that are poisoned, when any is hurt he remaineth fearelesse and secure, drinking the water of this roote, it is also a great remedie for the Feauer, continuing it and drinking of it fome mornings. this herbe smelleth like the Fig-tree leaves of Spaine,

The herbe Trequi or Tarerogue is a principall remedie for the bloudie Fluxe, the roots are all Trequi or Tare The herbe 1 graque or 1 arragas is a principal tendent to the flowers are red, and draw some- rasqui iagged, the branches very slender, the leaves are like Basill; the flowers are red, and draw some- For the bloudy what to a ruddie colour, and they growe in the very points. Of this there is great abundance, Fluxe. 20 when it is eathered it is yellow, and being dried it turneth white, it is taken in the fame manner that the former. The Indians perfume themselves with this herbe when they are ficke, that they may not die, and for a certaine licknesse that is common in the Countrie, and it is called the ficknesse of the worme *, it is a great remedie; it serueth to kill the worme in the Oxen and * Perhaps the Swine, and for Empostumes. This herbe is as withered all night, and as affeepe, and as foone as wome in the the Sunne rifeth, it openeth againe, and flutteth againe when it is fet.

The herbe Embeguacu ferneth much for the Fluxe of bloud, especially in women; the roots mentioned by are very long, and some of thirtie or fortie fathome, it hath a strong banke, whereof very strong Emberganu Cordes are made, and Cables for thips, and they are long lafting, for in the water it wanter it wanter if For the Fine greene. This being taken, to wir, the barke of it, and perfuming the partie in the place of the of blood.

30 Fluxe, it cealeth prefently.

Cas obetings is a small herbe, hath few leaves, which it putteth forth even from the ground, Cas obstings. white vnderneath, and greene aboue, beares a flower as big as a hafell Nut; the roots and the For wounds, leaues stamped are an excellent remedie for whatsoeuer wounds, they vie the leafe also vnstamped, which being laid to the wound cleaueth fast, and healeth it.

Cobaura terueth for old fores that have already no other remedie, it is laid beaten and burnt Cobaura. in the wound, and eateth presently all the Canker, and bringeth a new skinne, it is also laid to. For wounds? onely the leafe beaten to skinne the place.

The Holy berbe ferueth for divers difeases, as wounds, and coughs, the rheume, &c. and prin- The Holy berbe The Holy berbe ferueth for divers differen, as wounds, and coughs, the rheume, occ. and prine or Tobacco, civally it ferueth for the ficke of the head, the florancke, and for the shortnesse of breath, or the For sindy 40 Chine-cough. In this Countrie they make certaine Coffines of Palme-tree leaves, and being full difeases. of this herbe dried and fetting it on fire at the one end, they put the other in the mouth and drinke the smoake, it is one of the delicates and dainties of this Countrie; and all the Countrymen, and even the Portugals are even loft for it, and it is their great vice, to bee all day and all night laid in their Nets, to drinke this smoake, and are drunke with it as if it were with wine.

Guaraquimina is the Mirtle tree of Portugall, and besides other good properties that it hath, Forthe worms like the Broome-rape, the feed of it is the onely remedie for the Body-wormes, and ordinarily

they that eate it doe voide them prefently.

Camaracasimbae is like to the Sylvas of Portugall, it is boyled in water, and the laid water is camaracasimbae the onely remedy for feables, the poxe, and new wounds, and when the wounds are cored with For feabs, and 50 the leaves of the Fig-tree spoken of in the title of the Trees, they wash it with the water of the Poxe. this herbe, whose flower is most faire, it feemeth a yellow and red Ielly-flower, and smelleth of Muske, and of these they make Pot-boughs and Nose-gayes for the Altars.

Aipo is the very Smaledge of Portugal, and hath the vertues, it is found onely about the Sea- Aipo, coast, especially in the River of Ianuarse, and for this cause it is sharper, and not so sweet in the tafte as that of Portugall, it may be because of the Seas.

There is great store of Meade-mallow in this Country, it hath the same effects, it hath cer- Meade-Mall taine flowers as big as a Telter, of a very faire red, that they feeme Rofes of Portugall. Caraguata 15 a certaine kinde of thittle, they beare a certaine fruit of a finger long and yellow, Caraguata

raw they make the lips to blifter, boiled or rofted they doe no harme, but any woman with child 60 that eateth them doth prefently abort her childe ordinarily. There bee other Caragnatas, that It coulether beare certaine leaves like Fligs very long, of two or three fathoms, and beare a certaine Harti- abort chocke like the Nana, but they tatte not well; thefe leaves laid in fleepe doe yeeld a very fine Flaxe, vnto the threed to lowe withall, and for filling lines.

Timbo are certaine wonderfull herbes, that growe from the earth like a string vuto the high- Baite for fishes

40

Other herbes there be also that serve for medicines, as are Sow-thistles, Purcelane, Beets, Endiue, Auenca, Bafill , and of all there is great abundance , though these have not the perfedion of those of Spaine; there want no wilde Mulberies white and blacke, like those of Porsmeall, and great store of good Parsley, about the strands, whereof a good conferue is made; they 10 want no Pot-flowers.

Of fmelling herbes in this Countrie there are many, Mintes, or wilde Sage, especially in Pia ratinga, they imell not fo well as those of Portugal, they have also cortaine French Mallowes. with certaine faire and pleasant flowers which ierue for Nosegaies. Many Lillies there are, not fo fine nor fo red as those of the Kingdome, and some white ones are also found.

Sleeping herb. ra Had

1212

There groweth here in the Spring, an herbe that ileepeth, and is like the Mayer of Portneall. and as that doth wither and fleepe after Sun-fet, and when it rifeth it openeth againe, and fleweth her beautie; the smell is somewhat strange. There is also another tree that sleepeth in the fame manner, and beareth certaine fine flowers, but they have no great fmell.

The Quicke berbe is of a good height, and hath boughes, and certaine lagged leaves, of a plea- 20 M.Harcourt his fant greene, it is called Quicke berbe, becaule it is so quicke and sensible, that as soone as it is touched with the hand or with any other thing, prefently it hangeth the head, and withereth as if they had done it great injurie, and within a little while it commeth to his perfection, and as many times it is touched it withereth, and commeth againe to himfelfe as before.

Many other herbes there be like Origanum, and many other fundrie flowers, but it feemeth that this Clymate, either for the many waters, or because of the Sunne, infuseth no smell in the herbes, rather it feemes to take it away.

Of the Canes,

In this Countrie are many forts of Canes, and Taenara is as big as a mans thigh; others which haue ioynts a fathome long, others whereof they make their Arrowes, and are esteemed. Others fo long that they have three or foure Lances in length, these growe among the Woods, and as to there are many, so there are many and long beds of Canes of many leagues, and as they growe among the trees, they goe to feeke the Sunne, and therefore are fo long,

Of the Fifnes that swimme in the salt water: also Shel-sifnes, Trees and Fowles of the Sea: of Rivers and the Creatwes which live therein; and the Beasts and Plants brought thither out of Portugall.

He Oxe-fish in these parts is a Royall fish, effected about all other fishes, very healthfull in eating, and of a good tafte, either falted or fresh: And it rather feemeth Beefe then Fish, and some doubts there were, because it was eaten on fish dayes; the fiesh is all grained like Beefe, and so it is cut in slices, and they dresse it at the smoake like Bacon, or hanged Beefe. In the tafte, if it be eaten or fodden with Cabidge, or other herbes, it tafteth like Beefe, and dreft in fowce it tafteth like Mutton; and rofted, both in smell, tafte, and fatneffe it is like Porke, and hath fat also.

The Fish in his making seemeth a land creature, and chiesly an Oxe, the head is altogether of 50 an Oxe, with skinne and haire, eares, eyes, cheekes and tongue; the eyes are exceeding small for the bodie it hath, he shutteth and openeth them when hee listeth, which other fishes doe not; ouer the ventsit hath two skinnes wherewith he closeth them, and by them he breatheth, and it cannot beelong under water without breathing, it hath no more nor other finnes but the taile: which is all round and close; the bodie is of a great bignesse, all full of yellow haires, it hath two armes of a cubice long, with two hands like round peeles, and on them he hath fine fingers all close one to another, and every finger hath his nayle like a mans nayle. Vinder these armes the female have two paps, wherewith free bringeth vp her young; fre beareth but one at once: the inward part and the inwards of this fifth are like an Oxes, with liner, and lights, &c. In the head ouer the eyes meere the braines it hath two stones of a good bignesse, white and heavie, 62 they are of great efteeme, and are the onely remedie for the Scone: for beaten to powder and dranke in wine or water it cauferh to void the flone, as it happened that giving it to a person to drinke, leaving other many experiences, within one house hee voided a stone as bigge as an Almond, and remained found, being before at the point of death. The bones of this fifth are all maffie and white like In rie. They make of it great store of * Butter, they take two leaues as from a * Or Greace hogge; and the most of the Butter it hath in the taile, which being of a yard or more in length, or Oile; fo ais ie melcethall into Butter, it hath a good taite, and for to dreffe or frie filh , and for light. It is ter. Manteta in verie good allo for Medicines, as the Hogges Greafe, it is white and smelleth well, it hath no the Paringall imellor it h. Tuis filh is taken with Harping-Irons; it is found in the falt Rivers, neere the fresh word. water : is frede; h on an herbe that groweth by the borders, and within the Rivers, and where this here groweth, and neere the Springs of fresh water, whereof hee onely drinketh. They are verie great, fome weigh tenne, others fiftecene hundred , and fuch a filh hath berne taken, that an hundred men could not get it out of the water, but they broke it vo there where it

CHAP.I. S. 6. Strange and various fiftes. Beijupira. Battle with Whales.

to was killed. The fith Beimpre is like the Sturgeon of Peringall, and foie is held and eftermed of heere as Beyopira. a royall fift : it is very healthfull, far, and of a good tafte, they bee infinite, and some of their rowes area foan in compalle about: their fiftes are taken in the bread fea, with a hooke and line.

it is fix or feven spannes long; the bodie is round, blacke on the backe and the belly white. The Oxe-cie is like the Tannyes of Spaine, as well in higheste as in making inward as outward. The Oxe cie. it is verie fat, it hath sometime betweene leafe and laafe courses of tat as thicke as a Portugall I Telker; they are cut in backes and bellies like the Timmes, and of them is made great flore and d Or foure verie good . Butter, it hath leaves like a Hogge, is a fish efteemed and of a good taffe, it defer- faillings a well the name of One fish, as well in his beautie, as his bignesse, the eies are properly like eor Greace

an Oxe, and therefore it hath this name. The fifth Camurani is also a royall fifth, and effectmed in these pares, the graine of it all in flakes, Camurani. enterlarded with fat and greafe, and of a good tafte, it bath many bones through all the bodie, and is dang rous in eating, It hath a finne on the backe, which is carries alwaies raifed vp wards. it is of two or three quarters long, the fifth is long of twelve and thirteene quarters in length and of a good bignesse, and two men have much adoe to life up one of them, they are taken with

Harping Irons, there are many of them, and much ! Oile is made of them. This wilde fish, which the indians call Piraembu, (that is, a fiftithat fuoristh, the reason is, be- The wild fish caule whereforeur it is, is heard by his fnorting) is of a good bigneffe, about eight or nine spanies, it is of a good tafte, and efteemed; it hath in the mouth two ftones as broad as a hand, exceeding to ftrange, with them they breake the Wilkes whereof they feed, the Indian citeeme the ftones

and weare them about their neckes as a lewell. There are many other fiftes of fundric kinds, that are not in Spaine, and commonly of a good tafte and healthfull. Of the fiftes of Portugall in these parts are also many, to wit, a fish called Tainhas, and a great multitude, and it hath beene tried that the Tamba beeing fresh, and laid so the flinging of a Snake isanother Vnicorne. There want no Sea-breames, a fish called Chiebarros, it is like a Mackerill, Pargos, or great Sea-breames, Sargos, other Sea-breames, Garates, Darader) the Needle-fish, Cod-tishes, but these are rare, Palshards like them of Spaire, are found at formetimes in the River of Januarie, and the most parts of the South, Scates, and Rayes; their Rayes some haue in their mouth two bones, and breake with them the Wilkes.

All thele fishes are so healthfull that in these parts they are eaten after Milke, after fiesh, and all a whole Lent without Oile or Vineger, and it causeth no scabs nor other diseases as in Esrope, but rather it is given to the ficke, though they have a Feuer, or be very weake.

Because this Coast is full of many Bayes, Nookes, and Creekes, there came grost store of The Whale, Whales to these Concares chiefly from May to September, when they spawne and bring vp their young, and also because they come to the great store of fish that at this time there is in this Creekes. They are sometime so many that ye may see fortie or fiftie together, men doe lay that they doe caft the Amber that they find in the Sea, and whereof they also feed, and therefore is some of it found in this Coast; others doe say that the Sea it felfe doth cast it on the shoares with Ambergise, great tempelts, and commonly it is found after a great storme, and all the beasts doe cate of this 50 Amber, and great diligence is needfull after the tempests that they may not find it eaten. It is very dangerous to faile in small Barkes along this Coast, for besides other dangers, the Whales o-

nerwhelme many, if they heare any ringing, they are so scared as Horses when they heare the found of a Drumme, and are as fierce as Lions, many runne vpon the shoare, and great store of Ode is made of them. They have the head open, and there they breathe, and cast at once great ftore of water, and fcatter it fo in the Aire as if it were a great showre. There is great flore of the Sword-fishes, they are great and fierce, for they have a flowt like The Sword fish

a Sword, all full of teeth round about, verie sharpe, and as bigge as Dogges teeth or bigger; they are a mans hand or more, and the length is according to the greatnesse of the fish. Some of these snowes or Swords are of eight or ten spannes long; with these they make a cruell battell with 60 the Whales, for raifing it voward, and striking formany strokes on her, and sotast that it is a Battle with

wonderfull thing : the Sharkes refort to the bloud, and fucke it in fuch fort till the dieth, and fo Whates. many are found dead and cut in pieces. With this showt also they eatch the fiftes whereof they feed. The Indians vie these snowts when they are young for to beate their children, and to feare them when they are disobedient vnto them.

f Or Butter;

1314 A Tortoile.

In this Coast are many Tortoifes; there are many taken, whereof there are coffers, boxes for the hoalts, cups, &c. These Tortoises doe lay their egges in the fands, and they lay 200, or 200. egges at a time, they are as bigge as Hens egges, verie white and round as balles; they hide these egges in the fand, and when the young are hatcht, prefently they goe to the water, where they are nourified, the egges also are eaten. They have this propertie, that though you boile or roaft them the white is ever foft, the inwards are like a Hogges; and they have vents where through they breathe. They have another particularitie, that when yee turne them on their belly, they turne presently toward the Sea, neither can they live otherwise. Some of them are so bigge that of their shels they make whole Targets, and one was taken youn this Coast so bigge, that twentie men could not lift, nor poife it from the ground.

Tuborous, or

Voon this Coast are many forts of Sharkes, and in it are found fixe or fewen kinds of them : it is a very fierce and cruell fish, and kils many persons, especially those that swimme. The Rivers are full of them; they are so cruell that it happened one to runne after an Indian that went in a Boate, and put him in such a straight, that the young man leaping ashoare, the Sharke leaps after him thinking to have caught him, and fell on drie land where they killed him. In the broad Sea where also are many, they kill them with Snares, and Harping Irons, and they are so eager, greedie, and loue fleih, and they are fo denouring, that they find in their bellies, skinnes, preces of cloth. Shirts and breeches that fall from the Sailers, they goe ordinarily accompanied with certaine verie faire fishes of divers colours called Pelgrames. They make great store of Oile of them. and the Indians vie the teeth in their Arrowes, because they are verie sharpe, cruell, and vene. 20 mous, and verie feldome, or with great difficultie are they healed that are burt with them.

Pelgrimes.

The flying fifth. The flying fifthes are ordinarily of a spannelong or little more, it hath the eies veriefaire, of a certaine verie gallant picture, that beautifies it much, and doe feeme precious ftones, the head is also very faire, it hath wings like Reere-mice, but of a filter hue; they are much perfecured of the other filhes , and for to efcape they flie in flockes, like Stares, or Sparrowes, but they flie not verie high, they are also good to eat, and when they flie they glad the Sailers, and many times they fall in the ship, and come in at the Cabbin windowes.

Botos and Toninas, are two kinds of Porpoiles. Of these fishes there are great abundance, as

Soles and Salmonets. A little red fift very daintie in Spaine. Of the vene-

mous fiftes.

Toad fiish

deadly.

They find also in this Coast Salmonets, but they are rare, and not so esteemed, nor of so good an a tafte as those of Europe. The Soles of these parts are verse rare, they have this propertie, that when they are to be boiled or fried they beate them, and the more ftroakes they give them. the ftiffer they are, and the better to eate, and if they beate them not, they are loft and no-

As in this Countrie of Brafillare many Snakes, and venemous Wormes, whereof wee will speake hereafter, there are likewise many fishes verie venemous.

The Toad fish, in their Language, Amayaca, is a small fish, a spanne long, painted, it hath faire eies, taking it out of the water it (norteth verie much, and cutteth the hookes, and out of the water it (welleth much, all the poiton lies in the skinne, and flaying they eate it : but eating it with the skinne it killeth. It chanced a young man to eate one with the skinne, who died 46 almost suddenly; the Father faid, I will eate the fish that killed my Sonne, and eating of it died also presently, it is a great poison for Rats, for those that eare of it doe die presently.

There is another kind of Toad fish of the same fashion that the other, but it hath many cruell prickles, as a Hedge-hogge; it fnorteth, and fwelleth out of the water; the skinne also killeth, especially the prickles, because they are verie venemous, fleating it, it is eaten, and it is good for the bloudie Fluxe. There is another Toad fifth, called in their tongue, Itaga, it is three fquare, and the bodie such, that all of it is like a Dagger; it is faire, it hath the eies bluish, it is eaten fleade; the poi fon confifteth in the skinne, livers, guts, and bones, whatfoever creature doth eate it, dieth.

Paraque, or

Puraque is like the Scate, it hath fuch vertue that if any touch it, he remaineth shaking as one so that hath the Palfie, and touching it with a sticke, or other thing it benummeth presently him that toucheth it, and while he holdeth the sticke ouer him, the arme that holdeth the sticke is benummed, and afleepe; it is taken with flue-nets, and with casting Nets it makethall the bodie tremble, and benummes it with the paine, but beeing dead it is eaten, and it hath no poilon.

The Caramuru are like the Sea Snakes of Portugall, of ten or fifteene spans long, very fat, and roafted tafte like Piege; these have strange teeth, and many men are maymed by their bytings, and the hand or foot where they were bitten, doe rot away. It hath ouer all the bodie many prickels. The Countrimen fay that they engender with the Snakes; for they finde them many times knit with them, and many in the fands tarrying for the Sea Snakes.

Amoreaty is like the Toad fish, it is full of prickels, and thruits himselfe under the fand along the shore, and prickes the foot or hand underneath that toucheth it, and it hath no other remedie but only by fire.

Amaya curub is round and of the bigneffe of the & Bugalles of Spaine, and are very venemous, it hath the bodie full of Wartes, and therefore it is called Curub, that is to fay, a Wart in their Language,

Ierepamonga, is a Snake that liveth in the Sea; her manner of living is to lie very fill, and whatforuer living thing that toucheth it; vemaineth fo fast sticking to it that in no wife it can firre, and to he feedeen and fustaines himfelfe. Sometimes it commeth out of the Sea, and beSea Spake. commeth very fmall, and as foone as it is toucht it flicketh faft , and if they goe with the other hand to lofe themfelues, they remaine also fast by it, and then it becommeth as bigge as a great Cable, and to carrieth the perion to the Sea, and eateth it, and because it cleaveth to fast, it is called Terepomong, that is to fay, a thing that cleaneth fast.

CHAP.I.S.6. Mermen, Cuttles, Crabs of fundry kinds, Oyfters.

Finally, there are many kinds of very venomous files in the Sea, that have fo vehement a noifon, that ordinarily none escapeth that eateth or toucheth them.

politon, and on the first of the Sea, are called in their language Tpapiapra; the men of the country are domine, or foafraid of them, that many of the add only with the thought of them, & none that feeth them Monfiers of fcapeth. Some that died already, being demanded the cause faid, that they had seene this Monster: the Sea, they properly are like men, of a good stature, but their eies are very hollow. The Female are like women they have long haire, and are beautiful; these Monsters are found in the bars of the fresh Riversin Lagourine, fewen or eight leagues from the Bay have many bin found, & in the yeere \$2. an Indian going to fish, was chased by one, and fleeing in a Canoa told it to his Mafter. The Mafter for to animate the Indian, would needs go fee the Monfter, & being careleffe with one hand out of the Canoa, it catcht hold of him, and carried him away, and hee was never feene againe, and in the same weere died an Indian of Franciscia Lorenço Cuerro. In Pore Secure are some seene, which 30 have killed some Indians alreadie, the manner of their killing is to embrace themselves with the

person to strongly, killing, and grasping it hard to it selfe that they crush it in pieces remaining whole, and when they perceive it dead, they give fome fighings in shew of forrow, and letting them soe they runne away, and if they carrie any they eate onely the eies, the nofe, the points of the fingers and toes, and prinie members, and fo ordinarily they are found on the fands with thele things miffing.

The Seas of these parts are very plentiful of Cuntes, this kind of fish hath a hood alwaies full Of the Shelof very blacke Inke : this is their defence from the greater fishes, for when they come to catch them they cast that Inke before their eies, and the water becommeth very blacke, and then hee goes his waies. They take them with shooting at them, but they baite them first, they are also 30 taken with lights by night. For to exte them they beate them, and the more, the fofter they are, and of better tafte.

Apula is a shel-fish like the joint of a Cane : it is rare, it is eaten, and drinking it fasting in Apula. Powder, a fouereigne remedie for the Milt or Spleene.

In these parts are infinite of the Sea-formes, and are great, as broad as a hat; they have many Sea-formes, foulds wherewith they catch the fifth, and resemble the Barberie Purses, they are not eaten; if they fting any one, they cause great paines, and cause to weepe, and so faid an Indian that was flung with one of them, that he had received many wounds with Arrowes, but never wept till then; they are neuer feene but in neape tides (or flow waters, therefore the Portugals call them Agnas mortas, or Dead waters.)

The Vea is a kind of Crab found in the mire, and they are infinite, and the foode of all this Sea Crabs. Countrie, chiefly for the flaues of Guinea, and the Indians of the Countrie, they have a good Ve. tafte, vpon them is good drinking cold water. They have a particularitie to bee noted, that when they cast their shell they goe into their holes, and there they are two or three moneths, and casting the shell, mouthes and feet, they come so out, and they grow againe as before.

Guainumu is a kind of Crabs fo great, that a mans legge will goe into their mouth. They Guainumu, are good to eate; when it doth thunder they come out of their holes, and make fo great a noile the one with the other, that men haue gone out with their weapons, thinking they had beene enemies; if they doe eate a certaine herbe, who some reateth them then dieth, these are of the Land, but keepe in holes neere the Sea fide.

The Aratu Crabs keepe in the trunkes of the trees, that grow in the Oowes of the Sea, when Aratu thay find a Cockle that gapeth, they feeke presently some little stone, and very cunningly put it into the Cockle; the Cockle shutteth presently, and not beeing able because of the little stone it hath within, they with their mouthes doe take out the fish and cate it.

There are ten or twelue kinds of Crabs in this Countrie, and as I haue faid, they are so many in Ten or twelue number, and so healthfull, that all are eaten, especially of the Indians, &c.

The Oysters are many, and some are very great, and the meate is as broad as the palme of the Oysters. hand: in thele are some Pearles found very rich, in other smaller arealso very fine Pearles found. The Indians in old time came to the Sea for Oysters, and got so many that they made great Hils of the shels, and carried the fishes they carried away for to cate all the yeere; vpon these Hilsby

the continuance of time grew great Groues of Trees and very thicke and high, and the Portugals discouered some, and euery day goe discouering others anew, and of these shels they make lime; Note for lime. and of one only heape was part of the Colledge of the Bay made, the Palaces of the Gouernour, and many other buildings, and yet it is not ended, the lime is very white, good for to garnish and

Muscles.

There want no Muicles in this Countriesthey ferue the Indians and the Portugals for Spoones and Kniues, they have a faire filter colour ; in them is found fome feed Pearle; there is a fmall kind of them, whereon the Sea-guls doe feed, and because they cannot breake them, they have fuch a naturall inflined that taking them vp into the Aire, they let them fall fo many times till they breake it, and then they eate them.

Pereminkles.

The Pereminkles are very tastefull, and good in this Countrie, and fome feed Pearle is found in them, and to of the Pereminkles, and of the Muicles there is great flore, of many and fine drie kinds.

The greatest Wilkes which are called Gnatapiggoson, that is, a great Wilke, are much effected of the Indians, for of them they make their Trum pets, Furnitures, Beades, Brooches, Earerines, and Gloues for the children, and they are of fuch effeeme among them, that for one they will give any one person that they have captive; and the Partugals gave in olde time a Crowne for one : they are as white as luorie, and many of them are of two quarters broad , and one in length.

The Piragnaig are also eaten, and of the shelles they make their Beades : and for fo many fathome they give a perion. Or these the Sea casteth up sometimes great heapes, a wonderfull thing. Of Wilker and Skellops there is great quantitie in this Countrie, very faire, and to bee efleemed, of fundrie kinds.

They find great flore of white stone Corrall vnder water, it groweth like small Trees all in leaves, and Canes as the red Corrall of India; and if this also were to, there would be great riches in this Countrie, for the great abundance there is of it, it is very white, it is gotten with difficultie, they make lime of it also.

Prawnes.

There are great multitudes of Praunes, because this Coast is almost all enuironed with shelpes, and Rockes: there are also many Sea-ruffes, and other Monsters tound in the Concauties of the Rockes, great Crameffes or Crabbes like those of Europe, it seemes there bee none in

Of the Trees that 2: ow in Mangues.

The Mangue Trees are like the Swallowes, or Willowes of Europe, there is so great quantitie of them in the armes or creeks that the Sea maketh within the Land, that many leagues of the Land 20 is of these Trees, that are watered with the tides. We trauelled I say leagues, and whole daies in the Rivers where these Trees are, and they are alwaies greene, faire and pleasant, and of many kinds. The wood is good to burne, and for to build houles, it is very heatie and hard as Iron; of the barke they make Inke, and it serueth to tanne Leather, and they are of many kindes. A certaine kind of them doe call certaine twigs from the top of their length some times as long as a Launce, till they come to the water, and then they cast many branches and rootes, and these branches remaine fast in the earth, and while they are greene these twigs are tender, and because they are hollow within, they make good Flutes of them. In these Creekes are a certaine kinde of Gnats called Marequis, as small as Hennes Lice, they bite in such fort, that they leave such a Wheale, smart and itching that a man cannot helpe himselfe, for even through the clothes they 40 pricke, and it is a good penance, and mortification to fuffer them on a Morning, or an Euening; there is no other remedie to defend themselues from them, but to anoint themselues with dirt, or to make a great fire and fmoke.

Gnats.

In these Creekes are many Crabs, Oysters, and Water Rats, and there is one kind of these Rats, a monstrous thing, for all the day they sleepe, and wake all night.

In these Creekes the Parrets breeds, which are to many in number, and make such a noise, that it feemeth the noise of Sparrowes, or Dawes,

On the Sands they finde great store of Parsley, as good and better, then that of Portugal whereof also they make Confernes.

Birds that doe feed, and are found in the falt water.

Guiratineas

He Bird Guiratinga is white, of the bigneffe of the Cranes of Portugall; they are extreame white, and have verie long feete, the bill verie cruell and sharpe, and veriefaire, of a verie fine yellow, the legges are also verie long, betweene Red and Yellow. On the neckeit hath the fineit Plume Feathers that can bee found, and they are like the Eitridges Feathers

liste.

Carpura by another name Forked-tayles, are many; they are called Forked-tayles . because their taile is divided in the middle; the Indians make great account of the Feathers for the feathering of their Arrowes, and fay that they last long, at sometimes they are verie fat, the fat is good for 60 the loofeneffe. These Birds doe vie to bring newes a land of the ships, and they are so certaine in this that very feldome they faile, for when they are feene, ordinarily within twentie or thirtie daies the thips doccome.

GANCA

CHAP.I.S.6. Birds and fresh water Rivers. Cucurijuba a wonderfull Snake. 1217

Guaca is properly the Sea-men of Portugall, their Ordinarie food are Cockles, and because they Guaca. are hard, and they cannot breake them, they take them in their bill, and letting them fall many times they breake them and eate them; of these Sea-meaner there are an infinite number of kinds. that the Trees and the ftrands are full of them.

Guirateonseon is called in Portugall Sould-pane, it is called Guirateonseon, that is, a Birdsbat bath Guitateonseon deadly accidents, and that dieth and liveth againe, as though it had the Falling ficknelle, and there fits are fo great that many times the Indians doe find them along the firands, and take them in their hands, and thinking they are dead doe fling them away, and they affoone as they fall doe rife and flie away, they are white and faire, and there are other kinds of these that have the same

The Calcamar are as bigge as Tuttle-doues, or Pigeons; the men of the Countrie fay, that they cal amar, or lay their Egges in the Sea, and there they hatch, and breed their young t they flie not, but with Sea-flamper. their wings and feet they swimme very swiftly, they forethew great calmes and showers , and in calme weather they are so many along the shipper that the Marinets cannot tell what to doe. they are even the very ipite it felfe, and melancholy.

eg are com the very spite it teste, and measurement.

The Appear are as bigge as a Pye-amer, more white then red, they have a faire colour of white the appearance of the spite of the spit besported with red, the bill is long and like a Spoone. For to catch the fish, it hath this sight; it ftriketh with the foor in the water, and ftretching out his neck, tarrieth for the fifth and carcheth it, and therefore the Indians fay it hath humane knowledge.

The Commers is small and gray, it hath faire eies with a verie faire red circle, it hath a strange commes. note, for he that heareth it thin keth it is of a verie great bird, it beeing verie fmall; for it fingeth with the mouth, and jointly behind it maketh a noile fo founding, loud and ftrong, though not finelling verie well, that it is a wonder, it maketh this sweet Mulicke two houres before day. and at Euening till the Euening twilight be done, and ordinarily when it fingerth, foresheweth

The Guara is as bigge as a Pye-annet, it hath a long bill with a crooked point, and his feet of a Guara. quarter or span long, when it is hatched, it is blacke, and after becommeth gray, when it alreadie doth file, it becommeth whiter then any Doue, afterward it turneth to a bright red, yetat length it becommeth redder then Scarlet it selfe, in this colour he continueth till his death, they 30 are many in quantitie, but they have no other kind. They breed well in Houses, their food is fish, flesh, and other things; their food must be alwaies in water, the Indians esteeme greatly the Feathers of these, and of them they make their Diademes, Fringes wherewith they couer the Swords they kill withall, and they make Bracelets to weare on their armes, and faften them to their haire like Rose buds, and these are their lewels, and Chaines of Gold wherewith they adorne themselues in their Feasts, and they so much esteeme, yea, they beeing so much given to eat humane fiesh, they give many times the enemies they have for to cat in change for their Feathers. These birds goe in flights, and if the Sunne doth shine on them vpon the Sands, or in the Aire, it is a faire thing to behold. Many other birds there are that do fred on the Sea, as Hearnshewes, Cormovants, and a certaine kinde of Eagles (which are our Asperalles) which would bee AO tedious to recite

edious to recite.

The maine Rivers wherewith this Province is watered are innumerable, and some verie great. Of the fresh The maine equery wherewith this grounders water and foundaines, whereof the Of the fresh and haue verie faire barres, not wanting in the Rusers, Brookes and Foundaines, whereof the Of the fresh and haue verie faire barres, not wanting in the Rusers, and the same an Countrie is verie plentifull, and the waters ordinarily are verie faire, cleere and healthfull, and things that in plentifull of infinite fishes of fundrie kinds, of the which fome are of an exteeding greatness, and them are. of great value, and verie healthfull, and are given voto the ficke for Medicines. These fishes doe the Indians catch with Nets, but ordinarily with Hooke and Line. Among these there is a royall fish of a good taste and sawour, that is verie like the Sturgeow of Spaine, this is called samthey are of fourteene and fifteene quarters long, and fometimes bigger, and verie fat, and they make Butter (or Greafe) of them. And at sometimes the fish is so much, they fat their Hogges with it, 10 In the small Creekes are manie Shrimpes, and some of a quarter and more in length, and of a verie

Fresh water Snakes (and Creatures of the water.)

"He Snake Cucurinus is the greatest, or of the greatest that are in Brafil , notable as well for Cururinka greatneffe as beautic, some are taken of flue and twentie or thirtietoote long, and a yard in great shake compasse. It hath a Chaine along the backe, of notable Pictures and veriefaire, that beginneth many wayer at the head and endeth in the Taile; it hath Teeth like a Dogge, and laying hold on a man, Cow, woodestull. Stagge, or Hogge, winding it with certaine turnes of her Taile, it swalloweth the faid thing 60 whole. And atter the hath it to in her belly, the lets her felferor, and the Rauens and Crowes do eate her all, so that there remaineth nothing but the bones, and afterward it breedeth new flesh againe, and reneweth as before it was. The reason whereof is (say the men of the Countrie) be-

cause while it putrifieth it hath the head in the mire, and having life in the noddle they linea-

gaine; and because this is known alreadie, when they finde them putrified, they seeke out the

head and kill it. The manner of their feeding is to waite for their prey, either beafts or people laidealong by the waies, and when it paffeth, it winds it felfe about it, and killeth and eateth it. After they are full they fleepe in fuch fort, that fometimes they cut two or three pieces of their Taile, they not waking, as hath happened that after they had cut two pieces of the Taile of one of these, the next day they found her dead with two wild Bores in her belly; and it was about twelue yards and an halfe long.

Manima.

The Snake Manima keepeth alwaies in the water, it is yet greater then the other abouefaids it is much painted; and from his Pictures did the Gentlies of Brafill take the painting of themfelues. That Indian holds himfelfe for bleffed, that it doth flew it felfe vnto, faying, they shall line long, feeing the Manima did thew it felfe voto him.

Many other kinds of Snakes there be in the Rivers of fresh water, which I leave for breuitie fake, and because there is nothing in particular that can be faid of them.

lecere(or Gro-

The lacare Lizards are of a notable greatnesse, and some are as bigge as Dogges, their snowt is like a Dogge, and to have they their Teeth verie long, they have over all the bodie certaine plates like an armed Horse, and when they arme themselves, there is no Arrow can pierce them. they are painted of divers colours, they doe no hurt to the people, but rather they take them eafily with Snares, some have beene taken of fifteene quarters (or spans) long, and the Indians esteeme them much, and hold them for estate as the Rimbabas, that is, Dogges, or any other thing of eflate. They keepe in the water, and on the land, they lay Egges as bigge as Geefe, and so hard that firiking one against another, they tingle like Iron. Where these doe haunt they are pre- 20

Hard Egges.

fently perceived, by the great cries they give; the fielh of thefe fmelleth very much, especially his Cods of Muske, and they are of esteeme, their dung hath some vertue, especially it is good for The laguarnen is a beaft greater then any Oxe, it hath Teeth of a great quarter long, they laguerucu. A keepe in and out of the water, and doe kill men; they are rare; fome of them are found in the

River of Saint Francis, and in Paraguacu.

great Dogge. This feemeth fome kind of the Hippopeta-Atacare. laguapozeba.

The Atacape are Woolues smaller, but much more hurtfull, for they come out of the water to watch for men, and being verie swift they kill some persons and eate them. The lagrapopeba are the true Atters of Portugall. There is another small beaft of the big-

it is called Zariquemein, their haue rich Skinnes for Furres; and of their 30 water beafts, there are many other kinds; some doe no hurt, others are verie fierce. The Baepapina are a certaine kind of Mermen as bigge as children, for they differ nothing from

Bacapina.

them, of these there are many and doe no harme. There be many of the water Hogges Capigoara, and are of the bignesse of land-hogges, but

Water-hogge. they differ in fashions; in the roofe of the mouth it hath a very great stone that doth serue him for great Teeth. This the Indians hold for a lewell for their children, fonnes and daughters. It hath no taile, they continue long under water, but they lodge on the Land, and in it they bring up their young; their foode is graffe, and fruites that they find along the Rivers.

In the fresh Rivers of waters are many kinde of Igta Scallops, great and imall. Some are so bigge as good Siues, and ferue to fift their meale with them; other are fmaller, and ferue for 40 Spoones, all of them are long, and of a filuer colour, in them are some Pearles.

In the Rivers are found many of the Cagados, (2 See bird fo called) and they are so many in number, that the Tapeyas doe feed fat in a certaine time of the yeere with the Egges, and doe feeke for them as for some other daintie food.

Guararici. Men dye with

There want no Frogges in the Rivers, Fountaines, Puddles, and Lakes, and they are of many kinds especially these Guararici. The feare that the Indians have thereof is a wonderfull thing, that of the onely hearing it they die, and tell them neuer fo much they have no other remedie, but let themselves die, so great is the imagination and apprehension that they take of the hearing it fing, and whatfoeuer Indian that heareth it dieth, for they fay it doth caft from it felfea brightnesse like a lightning.

All these maine Rivers have so great and so thicke Woods on the one side and the other, that they faile many leagues by them and fee no ground, on either fide, in them are many things to be told, which I omit for breuities fake.

of the Beasts, Trees and Herbes, that came from Portugall, and doe grow and breed in Brasill.

His Brafill is alreadic another Portugall, and not speaking of China, which is much more I temperate and healthfull, without great heates or colds, where the men doe live long, with few ficknelles, as the Collicke, of the Lucr, the Head, the Breaft, Scabs, nor any other Difeates of Portugall. Neither speaking of the Sea, which hath great store of fish, and wholsome, nor of the things of the Land, which God hath given to this Nation, nor of many other commodities which the men have to paffe their lives withall; though the commoditie of houses is not great,

for the most of them are of mud walls, and thatched, though now they beginne to make buil. dings of lime and flone, and tile, neither are the commodities for apparell many, because the Countrie yeeldeth no other cloth but Cotton-wooll. In this place the people are in great need, especially from the River of Januarie, vnto Saint Umcent, for want of thins to bring Merchandize and Clothes, but in the most Captaineships they are provided of all kinde of clothings and Silkes, and the men goe well apparelled, and weare many Silkes and Veluets. But it is alreadie Portugall as I faid for the many Commodities that from thence doe come vnto it.

In this Province is a good breed of the Horses, and there be alreadie great abundance of them Horses, and very good lennets of a great price, that are worth 200, and 200. Duckets and more, and to there is alreadie running at the Geefe, at the Ring, at Canes, and other Sports and Skirmifhes. and from hence they beginne to prouide Angola of Horles whereof they fland in great want.

Though this Countrie hath weake pastures, and in Port Socure is an Herbe that killeth the Kine, beaits if they doe eate it, notwithstanding there is a great number of them alreadie, and all Brafill is full of great Heards, and some have soo, some a 1000, heads, especially in the fields of Pi-Patininga, because it hath good pastures, and are like to them of Portugal, and it is a pleasant thing to fee the young breed that is there.

The Swine doe like very well heere, and they beginne to have great multitudes, and heere it Swines is the best fielh of all, yea, better then Hennes fielh, and it is given to the ficke, and hath a very

Vnto the River of lanuarie are many sheepe found alreadie, and Weathers, and they fatten so Sheepe much that they burit with fatnesse : it is not here so good fielh as in Portugall.

The Goates are yet but few, but yet they like well in this Countrie, and doe multiply verie Goates much, and in a short time there will be a great multitude.

The Hennes are infinite, and greater then in the Realme of Portugall, and because the Coun- Hennes trie is temperate they breed well, and the Indians doe esteeme them, and breed them within the Maine, three hundred and foure hundred leagues, the flesh here is not so good as in the

The Hennes of Peru, like well in this Countrie, and there is great abundance of them, and Turkies; there is no Banquet where they are not a dish.

The Geefe doe like well in this Countrie, and are in great abundance, there is also here and. Geefe and ther kind of the Countrie it felfe, and are farre greater and fairer.

The Dogges haue multiplied much in this Countrie, and are of many kindes; they are effee- Dogges, med heere at well of the Portugals which brought them, as of the Indians that efteeme them aboue all the things they have : because they helpe them in their hunting, and are domesticall creatures, and fo the women doe carrie them on their backe from one place to another, and nourish them as Children, and give them sucke at the breast.

Trees with prickles, as Orenges, Pomecitrons, Limons * of both kinds, of fundrie forts do Trees; grow well in this Countrie, which almost all the yeere have fruit , and there are so great Oren- For one kind ges and Pomecitron Groues, that even among the Woods they grow, and the abundance is fo are called Li-40 great of those things that they are not fet by. They have a great enemie, the Ants, notwithstanding there is great abundance, without euer being watered, and as there wanteth no Sugar, they make infinite Conferues, to wit, of Citrons, Limons, the flowres, &c.

The Fig-trees grow verie well heere, and there bee many kindes, as long Figges, blacke Fig-trees. Figges, Figge-Dates, and many other kinds, to the River of Ianuarie, that are hotter ground, they yeeld two crops in the yeere.

In the River of lanuarie and Saint Vincent, in the fields of Piratininga, doe grow many Quinces, Quinces, and yeeld foure crops a yeere, one after another, and there are men that with verie few Quince Trees doe gather, ten, and twelve thousand Quinces, and here they make great store of Marmelets and verie shortly will those of the Iland of Madera be spared.

There are many forts of Grapes, as Feriads, Bones, Baftard, Greene, and Gallizian Grapes, and Vines, 50 many other. To the River of Landarie they have all the yeere Grapes, it they will have them, for if they cut them euerie moneth, they beare euerie moneth Grapes fuccefficely. In the River of lanuarie especially in Piratinings, are Vineyards, and are so loaden that they bow to the ground, they yeeld but one crop. They beginne alreadie to make Wine, though with trouble to preferue it, for in wood the Worme doth prefently eatethorow, and earthen veffels they have none, but seeke remedies of their owne, and doe continue it, and in a short space they will

In the River of I annarie and Piratminga, are many Roses; one, Damaske Roses, whereof they Roses, diffill great store of Role-water, and Conterue of Roles for to purge, and not to purge, for of 60 the other they have not, they feethe the Damaske Roles in water, and straining them they make Conserue of Roses very good wherewith they doe not purge.

Muske Melons want not in many Captaine ships, and are good and fine, many Gourds where- Plants and of they make Conlerues, many Beets whereof they make it also, Cabbages, Cowcumbers, Herbes Raddishes, Turnops, Mustard, Mintes, Coriander, Dill, Fennell, Peate, Leekes, Onions,

Garlicke, Borrage, and other Pulses which were brought from Portugall, and grow well in this Countrie.

Wheate.

ha e. the Alque que bufh:ls. Smelling he brs. 1 An herbe fo colled.

Vermine

Infecta.

In the River of Ianuarie, and fields of Piratininga, groweth Wheate, they vie it not because they have no Horfe-mils, nor Water-mils, and they have also great trouble in the gathering of That is foure it, for because of the many waters, and ranknesse of the ground it commeth altogether, and ie bu nel, and an multiplieth to much, that one Corne beareth fixtie and eightie Eares, and some beeing ripe, others grow anew, and it multiplieth almost in infinitum. Of leffe then a 1 quarter of Barley that a man fowed, in the field of Piratininga, hee gathered fixtie and odde Alqueires, and if the disperque continents, men would give themselves to this commoditie, the Country would be verie rich and plentifull.

There are many forts of Bafill, and Gilliflowres Yellow, and Red, and doe grow well in Pi. 10

ratininga, and other finelling herbes, as the 1 Onion fefe, ore.

Aboue all this, Brafil hath one commoditie for men to live, that in it doe live diforderly, that there are but iew Lice or Fleas, but among the Indians, and Guinne Moores there are some Lices but there want no Hornets, Dorres, Waspes, Flies, and Gnats of so many kinds, and so cruell and venemous, that flinging any person, the place swelleth for three or foure dayes, especials ly in the fresh men, which have their bloud fresh and tender, with the good Bread, Wine and delicate fare of Portugall.

CHAP. II.

Articles touching the dutie of the Kings Maiestie our Lord, and to the common good of all the estate of Brafill. Written (as is thought) by the Anthour of the former Treatile.



T greatly behooveth for the vniverfall good, and prefervation of the estate of Brafill, that the King our Lord doe take all the Captaineships for his, satisfying the Lordfhips. For as the Tenths are all his Maiefties, and the Lordfhips have no more then the tenth, which is verie little, at the least in the Captaineships of the Holy Ghost, Saint Vincent, Port Secure, and the Ilets, the faid Captaine- 10 thips are neuer prouded, neither haue Powder, Bullet, or Caleeuer, &c. for to de-

fend themselves from the enemies, and whatsoever French or English shippe that goeth thither, doth put them in such danger, that either they must give them entrance, and traffick with them. or leave them the Towne and goe to the Woods, as now it was seene in the Captaineships of the Holy Gooft, and Saint Vincent, and being the Kings they be otherwise provided, making Fortresfes in the barres for their defence, at the least in those of the Holy Ghost, and the River of Januarie, as it was done in that of Saint Vincent, in the which thips may come in at any houre, and in this manner will have a delight to dwell, and labour in them the which now doe live in trouble and complaints, feeing themfelues fo disfauoured, and in any danger of warre they rather thinke how to flee away, and escape with their Wives and Children, then how to defend the Countrey, whose fatetie, preservation, and augmenting importeth so much, as is notorious to the good of all Peru.

The fecond Article.

Weakneffe of

in Erafill, how

the Parturals

whence.

It idemeth necessarie that in Brafill there be a Court Royall, where many causes may be determined, as there is in Peru, New Spaine, and in all his Maiesties Protinces. The first reason that for this is offered, is, that the people whereof at the first this Countrey

was inhabited, commonly were banished for tacts committed in Portagell. And as at the beginning there was no Iustice Royall in it, at the least in the Captainelhips, and Lands of the Lords, as all of them were, but onely Captaines and Judges, placed by the Lords of them, there was little regard of Iuftice, as well in them which ruled, the which had authoritie for to kill, hang, &c. and as they had no Science, nor peraduenture Conscience, ruled rather by humane respects, 50 Brafill peopled friendthips, hatreds, and proper gaines, then by direct reason, as in the subjects, the which as there was no luftice but of Goffips, (as the speech is) did line at large as they listed, having no bodie to contradiet them, and though the Kings afterward did take & referue the Justice to themfelues fending Gouernours, and generall Judges, and though there come many men of more qualitie to continue the inhabiting of the Countrey, notwithstanding a great part of that first libertie and licence remained still, with the which many euils were and are committed without punishment. For many of them have alreadie so much power with their riches (gained God knoweth how) that I know not whether those that now doe rule dare meddle with them , bee it that they feare their power and might, or because fere ownes diligunt munera: and the Iustices that

went, and will not be intereffed but beare the Rod vpright, let them prepare themselves to fuf- 60 fer troubles in this Countrey. The fecond reason is, that many Sutes may here be determined definitively, in the which are delayings of many yeeres, without any obtayning of Iustice by Appeales and Grienances to Paringell. Now if the Gouernour (as many times it hapneth) will put himselfe in the office of

the generall Iudge, and with his power binds his hands, all goes topfieturule, without any civill peace in the Countrey, but rather a continual confusion, and perturbation, and the matter commeth to this point, that the Gouernour apprehendeth the Iuige himfelfe (as alreadie it hath hapned) and fendeth him to Portugall, and in the meane while the Justice of the Countres remayneth in the hands of him that cannot administer it, and in stead of reason entreth affection. or passion, and then nothing is done but what the Gouernor lifteth. The same behoueth, and peradjunture more, to that which appertaineth to his Majesties goods, wherein are difficult matters. and have need of a man of knowledge and conscience, for to decide them.

The third reason is, that there may learned men of conscience bee there for to determine the 10 Justice of warre, for want of that have many been made in Brafil, against all Justice, which was a great cause of the destruction of the men of the Countrie, and so all the Coast is almost whabited, And although the Kings past commended this greatly, and commanded that no warre should be held lawfull, but that which should be made by order of the Gouernour generall, hee taking first counsell with the Bishop, and Fathers of the company, and experienced persons of the Countrey, and of good consciences, and the Iustice of the warre being determined by them. notwithstanding many times it is not done with such examination as the cause requireth; and Ichites comto either the Fathers of the company are not called thereunto, or if they be called, it is for a com- plaint for not plement of Iuftice : and they have more regard to the hope of the profit that is offered them, of heing called getting of flaues in the faid warre, then vnto the Iustice of it, and to the common good, and to counsels of 20 danger they put themselues in, for sometimes they fare cuill in the broyle, with the death of warre. many Christians, both Porsugals and Indians. With these warres especially all the Coast of Per-

nambuco, which beginneth from the River of Saint Francis thitherward, which are fiftie leagues, and the greatest part of the Maine is disinhabited, having before a most copious number of Indians : and fo now that Captaineship wanteth Indian friends, to helpe them to defend, and it is, enery day wasted, slaine, and exten of the Indians Pitignares of Paraiba, which before were their friends, whom they did also great injustice to.

The third Article is about the Kings Customers Accounts, &c.

His Majestie hath a great obligation to the Indians of Brasil, to aide them with all corporal! The fourth and fairitual remedie. For almost all those of this Coast are almost consumed with sicknesses. Arricle. 30 warres and tyrannies of the Portugals, and those which escaped, went into the Maine to their Wastofthe Inkindred, and neither haue thefe their lives there. For when the ranfomes of flaves did end, which dians by Portawere held for lawfull, they intented Armies for to goe to the Maine to bring them to the Sea Saisfor to ferue them elues of them perpetually.

These companies are made in this manner, three or foure or more persons doe joyne, and euerie one of them doe put in fo much stocke, and aske license of the Governour to goe into the Maine to bring free Indians, the Gouernour grants it, with his order, to wit, that they bring them without any force or deceit, but with their owne good will, declaring to them, that they come to ferue the Portugals, and to helpe them in their labours. Sugar-mills and other works. Hauing this License, the Venturers doe loyne people to fend into the Maine, to wit, Interpre-40 ters, and other persons, that sometime came to fiftie or fixtie with their pieces and other weapons, and with many Indian Archers both free and bond, that doth carrie their burdens of the ransome and the victuals, and with helpe if by deceit they cannot bring the people they goe to feeke, they may bring it by force.

With this License in this manner they depart, and neuer keepe the order set downe, as it is Portugals willy manifest and all doe openly confesse without contradiction, for presently when they are depar-wronging the ted they fay, that if that should be declared vnto them there, that certaine it is, that no Indian Nations. will come, and therefore they must vie deceits and force, for they have no other meanes to moue them from their Countries, and with this purpose they goe, without any regard of the order, neither of them that goe to the Maine, nor of the Iuftices when they come from thence, and fo they

So vie these Licentes, without any examining of them. Now when they come to the Townes of the Indians, that are within the Maine, 100, and 200, leagues, they beginne presently their deceits, faying that they come for them by commandement of the Gouernour, that they may come to enjoy the good things of the Sea, and that they shall bee together in their Villages by themfelues, and at their will (without making any manner of repartition) and that from thence they shall helpe the Portugals in their warres, and other things. Other whiles they tell them that the Gouernour, and the Fathers of the company doe fend for them for to bee in the Churches of their kinsmen, which doe learne the things of God, naming some ancient principal Indians, whom they much esteeme, and hold as Fathers, and that they wil be with them, and for this there hath beene some of these Interpreters, that ordained among themselues one, whom they fained to be a 60 Pather of the company, with a shauen crowne, and a long habit to deceive them more easily.

When these deceits, & other such do not prevaile, they vie violence, labouring to kil some, that doe hinder this comming, for the which it hath hapned to put poison in the veffels of their wine, with many other inventions, wher with they feare them. As once, that comming alreadie by the way, because one of the principall Indians did show to come with an euill will, and did impart is

Manifold in-

with the reft, it is faid that they tooke for a remedie two or three to remaine behind with him alone, and being affeepe they choaked him with a Towell, and gaue out, that hee died find denly, because he would not come. Other whiles they kill some of other Nations, that are by the way, all to the end, that those which they bring doe not goe backe, and in this manner they bring fuch a number of them, without prouision of necessarie food, that by the way with hunger and euill vsage, a great part of them doe die, and those that doe come are in such a case, and so Whe now are weake, that it is needfull before they come into the houles, the Fathers of the company to soe the Canibals ? about the Woodes christening the children at their Mothers breasts that they may not die vnbantized, and others they find halfe dead, and full of flies, that the Mothers haue left, as not able to bring them.

Vnchriftian wickedneile.

Being come to the Sea those that scape alive, having promised them that they will put them in Townes, at their owne will, presently the venturers doe divide them among themselves, and many times they separate fathers from children, wives from husbands, brethren from brethren. &c. and enery one carrieth his part to their places, some one hundred, another two hundred, ano ther thirtie, &c. euery one according to the stocke he putteth in. Besides this, they give their share to the men that went to bring them (for this is the money they pay them withall) to one foure, to another ten &c. and as many of these have no lands for to maintaine them, they sell them prefently to others, and so they have marked and fold a great number to these and other Captaineships, and as the poore men doe see themselues deceiued, and toiled withouer-much Labour, with pure griefe they die, and fomerunne away and goe even to their enemies, willing 20 rather to be eaten of them, then to abide such vsage among the Portugals, and in this fort of 20. or 40000. Soules, that have beene brought, I know not whether 3000. bee alive, and with this a great part of the Maine is destroyed. For the same licences doe the Captaines give in their Captaineships, and the same is vied. These vexations and tyrannies, are the cause that the Indians lose the patience, which alwaies

they have had exceeding, and doe kill some Portugals. Now in the Maine of the Bay the Tapayse a people which alwayes had great friendship with the Portugals, and gaue them passage through their Countries, and aide to bring the Indians about aid, did rife with the deceits and lies of certaine Portugals, that went thither with title of bringing Saltpeeter, and killed some eighteene or twentie of them. Some of the Maine of the Captainelhip of the Holy Ghoft, did kill 30 certaine Indians that certaine Meffixes did carrie with them, going thither to play their accu-flomed prankes, for within their owne houses they would have killed them, and the Mungrels escaped by flight, and with this that people is alreadie an enemie of the Portugals. The Maine of the River of lanuarie with fuch other lyes did revole, being before our great friends, and killed some Portugals, having a little before a Father of the company gone thither at the request of the Inhabitors of the Citie, and had beene fixe moneths with them, confirming them in the friendship of the Portugals, and preaching the faith vnto them and brought from divers and remote places some 600. soules which now are Christians baptized almost all in their Towne with a Church made within the River of Ianuarie, which are great helpe for the defence of that Citie, and they helpe euery one to doe their worke : and many other remayning moued for to follow 40 their Kinsmen, with this revolting all ceasied, and so there as also in other places, the gates ynto Conversion are altogether shut vp. To the Maine of the Bay, twice the Fathers of the company haue gone at their owne cost, (with helpe of the Indians christened, which doe teach,) to bring some people for to furnish the Churches, which beginnes to diminish, and to preach the Law of God va-

to them. And there they found of this Soule-leffe people , that were in the Townes of the

Indians, as in their owne houses, and the Fathers bringing some number of Indians, which

came from verie farre to become Christians. These Portugals laboured by all meanes possible to

diffwade them. Sometimes preaching to the Indians, that the Fathers brought them deceived,

ny Wives, and whip their children, &c. the which is an vie and custome among these pratters for

to discredit the Fathers. Not being able to prevaile by this meanes, they tooke another way and

did contract with some other Indians, of the principallest of those that remained there, that

they should fell them those which the Fathers carried, giving them great ransomes for them, and

with this they pretended to take them away perforce, before their eies, fo that it was needfull

the Fathers to bid the Indians to defend themselves, and with this remedie they left them. O-

there came to the high-waies and did steale them that the Fathers brought, as one Mestizo

which tooke some twentie and odde, and transported them by another way, taking wife and

and that heere they would take away their Customes, as the drinking of their Wines, their ma- 50

Conucrling.

Reuerfing.

Diuerfing.

Inucring.

Aduerling.

Auerfing.

children, brethren, and all the Family from a principall Indian, and left him alone because he was fore hurt in one foot, and was not able to goe. With these iarrings of these men of this trade, the Inaians know not whom to trust, nor whom to believe; and by the fame that they heare already of the viage that is done here to theirs, that come to the Sea. For this cause a great principall Indian of the Mountaine of Rari, that is from hence about two hundred leagues, where now is the greatest force of people, that escaped

from the tyrannies, fent hither a Sonne of his to fee how it went, and being true that which the Fathers had faid, that he should make heere some prouision for food sowing some grounds, and to returne thither with some Father for him and for all his Family; for to come and receive the law of God. The Sonne came, and finding the truth, and feeing the viage that is done to theirs in the Sugar-workes, and other labours of the Portugals, he presently husbanded some grounds in one of the Towner of the Christians, that are in protection, and doctrine of the Fathers, with a determination to goe and bring his Father as he commanded him. Many other of this Fort did leave Pettertings their Fathers, being mooued in that Mountaine, but with feare of thefe affaults abone faid they dare not come. Likewise they have here no grounds fitting for their maintenance, for it is all oc-

to cupied by the Portugals. Besides this the Nation of the Tapayas, which have divers Languages. doe not agree well in the Sea Coast, for ordinarily they live here of the Mountaine, and in their

owne Countrey they might have the Euangelicall Law preached vnto them. All the abouefaid well confidered, it feemed necessary that his Maiestie should forbid these adnenturings, fending a commandement, that none might goe thither without expresse warrant of his Maiestie, vinder great penalties, the which with effect might be executed, and that neither the Gouernours might give any licence for them, feeing how they which carrie the faid Licenses never kept, nor will keep the order given them, as aforesaid. For all men know and sav. that if it be kept, neuer will any Indian come from the Maine, as vntill now none came but deceived, and this being to publicke, and daily, and not the fault of one or two particular men. but a common vie of all the Countrey, that it paffeth before the eies of the Justices neuer vntill this houre did the Governours forbid them, rather past by it not punishing any of them that so

brought them, nor redreffing the poore Indians. These adventurings taken away, the Fathers would adventure themselves to goe among them, to preach the faith of Jelus Christ, and make a Christianitie, and in time, Partugals or Spaniards, might goe thither, but fuch as were men of a good conscience with order from his Majestie, that might inhabit, and helpe in the conversion. and in this manner, by the grace of God all that people would bee subject to the voke of the faith, and obedience of the King our Lord. The Indians that are brought from the Maine, and are in the power of the Portugals, and all The fift Asil-

that are by the Coast of Brafil, as wel free as flaues, have no kind of doctrine by obligation, that is cle-30 imposed vpon them; for neither Bishops, nor Curates have any care of it, bearing themselves vpon the Fathers of the company, and in thirty foure yeeres fince that the company was fent to thefe parts by the King Don lobn the third, no Curate in all Brafill did ever fay Maffe in reforce of the Indians, or flaues borne in the Countrey; only they baptize the children with their offerings, and those that are already growne they need no more preparation, then to bring them to be baptized. without giving them any other knowledge of the faith, & fo it hapneth by their ignorance, that not only they receive not the grace of Baptisme, but also sometimes not the character. It is pittle Subjecting. to fee the little regard that is had in this, being the principall dutie of the King our Lord.

The Fathers of the company fince they entred in to Brafil, tooke this matter effectually, and in all places where they have houses, there is alwaies a particular Masse said for the slaves all 40 Sundayes and Feast dayes, cateching them every day, and sometime Morning and Evening: They labour to learne the Countrey Language, and instruct them in the marters of faith, and law of God, they baptize, marrie, and doe shrieue, and administer other Sacraments vinweariedly. But because they cannot accomplish all, and many doe perish in want for the Curates take no care of them as if they were not their sheepe) it is necessary that his Majestie doe prouide in this some more effectuall remedies.

The first remedie offered was, that his Majestie should command to make a Catechisme in that Catechisme in Brafilian Language, which is vniuerfall from the River Marangon, vnto the River of Plate, and the Brafilian should be imprinted at his Majesties cost, and to enjoyne every Curate to have it, and to teach by Tongue, it. For though the most of them have not the language, they may not withstanding learne to read 50 it very well, and to teach by the Booke, as at the beginning, and even now some Fathers of the company doe, that the Indians hearing him reade will vaderstand, &c.

It is very necessary that his Majestie doe command to examine the Iustice that these Portugals Thesixt Are haue to serue themselues of these tree Indians they bring from the Maine in the manner about ucle, faid, for although they hold them with a title of free, they have no libertie but in name, for in truth they are more then Captines, according to the viage they have. For first, as touching the Slaueric of the foules, they care not for their doctrine , nor that they bee baptized , married, or line, like Indiani. Christians, they have no other respect but of their service, as of any other brute beait, and so lec them live in adulterie, without hearing Maffe, or shrieving, and many die without Baptisme.

As touching their bodies, their labours are immoderate and perpetuall by night and by day, con-60 trarie to the nature of the Indians, which are sustained with very little labour in their Countries. If they fall ficke they have then leffe care of them then of their flaues, for of thele because they coft them their money, they have more regard, as the Mafters themselves doe confesse.

Those that have them in their power, are served of them, as of slaves, all their lives, not letting them goe to another Master or place, though it be to the Churches of their kinimen, that are

Rrrrr 2

Christians, where they may be better instructed in matters of the faith, and of their faluation and if they doe goe to at y place, though it be to the faid Churches, they labour by themselues. and by the Justices, to bring them againe, as indeede they doe bring, and put them in Irons, as though they were flaues. Whence arifeth a great foundail to the Indians Christian, their kinfmen, some of the which, as yet are tender Plants in the faith, for fake the Churches and flee with their familie about the woods, grieued with the injuries that are done to theirs, ofpecially in matter of libertie, which they fo much esteeme, and for feare they will doe the like with them. and fo wandering are loft and neuer feene againe; and truth it is, that if it were not for the continuall care and vigilancie that the Fathers of the companie haue ouer them, and the loue the Indians doe beare them, because they are their masters; and seeing that for their defence they are 19 hated of the Portugals, and murmured 20, they had not continued, no not these three small towns of Christians of the Baye, wherein may be about 2500, foules, which onely escaped of eleuen Courches, that there were, wherein were gathered more then 40000, nor other Townes likewife of Christians, that are about the Captaineshippes. Neither had Gouernors nor Captaines fufficed for to have fuffained them (as the experience hath showen) for they would not have fife fered such vexation, though they had died for it, as others didalready at the beginning, running away and dying, wherewith the coast was difinhabited.

Wicked man-Acaling.

Not onely doe the Portugals ferue themselves of the free Indians above said, which they bring from the maine; but they fell them also to others, and they say with title of free, but the price is such, that a lawfoll slave is fold no deerer, and so the goods, that without them was worth. I 20 put the case 2000. Duckets, with them they give it for 4000 and these that doe buy it doe take already maitership of them, as of slaves, that cost them their money, and so from hand to hand their captiuitie increaseth, and though they say that they are served of them, as of hired men, the pay for their feruice is nothing; for it they give a cotten garment to one or two of the principalleit of them, which they weare in their feruice, they doe not neither is it poffible to give it to 100. or 200. that they keepe, as they them! lues confesse; with the like viages many of the faid Indians either cate earth till they kill themfelies, or let themfelies dye verie cafily with meere griefe and fadneffe. And because jointly with this the punishments they give them are like the flaues, and thefe buyings and fillings are not vfed particularly betweene one or two is my name blaf homed a persons secretly, but it is an vie and custome in all the Countrie, without any inflice looking in 10 to it. Finally, they are not onely ferued of them all their life, but they give them also in mariages to Sonnes and Daughters as a dowrie; and at their deaths they remaine in their wils with the name of free, but bound to ferue their children perpetually, whom they leave them vnto as bareditario iure, and to the heires goe to law about them, and have judgements, as if they were lawfull flaues.

The feruenth

Through you

is my name

mongft the

As touching the inflice that is vied with the Indians, the King our Lord is to understand, that although his Maiestreas all the Kings his predecessors doe recommend alwaies this matter of the Indians to the Gouernours about all as their principall duetie, with very effectuall words, notwithitanding the inflice that vitill now hath beene in Erafil toward them was none or verie little, as it is plainely feene by the affaults, robberies, captiuities, and other vexations that al- 40 The mercies of waies were done to them, and even now are done. Against the Indians was alwaies a rigorous instice, they have already beene hanged, hewen in peeces, quartered, their hands cut, nipped with hot pincers, and fee in the mouth of peeces, and fhot away the Indians for killing or helping to kill some Portugall (which peraduenture had well deserved it at their hands) but having perions, not a few in Brafil, as alwaies there were, and yet there are, notoriously infamous for robbing, stealing, branding selling, and killing many Indians, neuer vntill this time was there any show of punishment, and it is to be feared, seeing it wanteth on earth, that it will come from heaven on all the inhabitants of Brafil,

The eight Article is touching the Indians exceeding services without reward.

The ninth Article is to preuent their totall destruction, which cannot but follow the practife 50 of Portugals in making flaues of them by fowing quarrels, and interesting themselues on one side.

The tenth Ar-

by burning &c. All the coast of Brasil doth want and is destitute of Priests that may be Curates for the soules. for in the Bay, except three or foure that doe ferue in the high Church, and one that ferueth for Curate in one Parish, that did learne in the colledge of the Companie: there are no Priests that know how to doe their office, and their customes and lives are much blemished, for many of them came suspended from Portugall for grieuous crimes, and also for incorrigible: and here as they want Priests they are presently enabled and made cures of soules, and although in the three Colledges of the companie that are in this Countrie, Sc. in the Bay, Pernambuco, and the River of Januarie, are ordinarie lectures of matters of confcience, there is no Priest that will heare it, and 69 as they are most ignorant, they doubt nothing, and so they absolue and dispence more then Popes with great loffe of the foules; and fuch there was, that differned with a parishioner of his to communicate after he had drunk, whereby may be coniectured what the rest will doe. And with this they doe other follies, and misbehauiors in the celebrating of the maffe before the people, that

they feeme altogether fooles. And their life is pittifull, for finally their care is to fill themthey receme arrog, meate, and drinke; and to follow the lufts of the flesh, with a great scandall of the fecular.

Those are very rare, and may bee told with the finger through all the coast, which doe line life worthie the Priestly function, and those which the Bilhop banish from hence for their faults or suspensions to the River of Januarie, presently they are there received by the Ruler, as now he did particularly to one that being a Friar come from Portugall expelled from the Order for incorrigible, and afterward heewas enabled here by the Bishop, hee was put in the visitation, because he was not shriven in three yeeres, celebrating almost every day, and this being another to time condemned by the Bishop in his Court, and brought to the estate that he came in from Portweath, expelled his Order, and banished from his Bishopricke, and his life infamous and Icandalous to all the Secular, the Ruler enabled him prefently in the River of Tamarie, (not without great (candall of the good) not onely for fellow-helper of the Curate of that Cities but also for a Preacher. And the Prelatesian they doe all this because they have no other, whom to give the Parishes vnto, which are many.

CHAP. III.

Extracts out of the Historie of IOHN LERIVS * 4 Frenchman. who lived in Brafill with Monf. VILLAGAGNON, Ann. 1 957. and 58.

of the Beafts, and other living creatures, and Plants, of Beafill.

Efore I proceed any further, prefently in the beginning of this Chapter, I thought fed. The Story good briefly to admonth the Reader, that no living creatures of the kinds of is long, which toure-footed beafts are found in all the Brafilian world, altogether like vnto wholly trans. ours in shape: and that the Tonompinambaulty vie not, but very seldome, to lated but flore bring them up tame at home. But, that I may generally deferibe the wilde hath bred a beatts, which the Barbarians call Soo, I determined to beginne with them which most of it. I

are applied to the vieof man. It feemeth, that that is to bee fet in the first place, which also is howevered most common: they call Tapirousson, of a reddish, and long shaggie haire, greatly resembling a as also all The-Kow in bignesse and shape : yet, seeing it wanteth hornes, and hath a shorter necke, with longer wets Voyage Kow in bigneffe and thape: yet, seeing it wantet mornes, and man a more than 40 and hanging eares, and more withered and flender legs, with an whole hoofe, very like who the thinker, and that of Stading and hanging extes, and more within and a man hoofe of an Affe, a man may rightly fay, it participateth the nature of the Kow, and Affe. Not in those parts, withstanding it differeth very much from either, both because it hath a very short taile (here though all fing. the Reader is by the way to be admonished, that very many heasts are Bred in America, which lished and reas have no taile at all) and hath much sharper teeth : nor may any danger bee therefore procured die for the wnto men by this beaft, feeing it vieth to repose safety rather in flight, then in strength. The Presie. vatio men by this bear, as also many others, shooting them through with Arrowes, or vie to Beathanghred catch them in an hollow trench, or with other manner of Traps and Gins ingeniously and cunin America al-

But that wilde beaft is greatly efteemed by the Barbarians, by reason of the skinne, which as like vote curs. 50 foone as they have taken away, cutting the backe of the hide in a round circle, they drie it in the The wild beak Sunne, and fathion it like vinto a Target of the bigneffe of the bottome of an indifferent wife. It Sunne, and fashion it like vnto a Target of the bignesse of the bottome of an indifferent vessell, which referme wherewith they repell the Arrowes, of the enemies, received in the warres. And the skinne bleshaKow, dried in the Sunne becommeth fo hard, that I eafily believe that it cannot bee pierced through and an Affe with the stroke of any weapon, although it bee cast with great violence. I carefully defired to Most American bring two such Targets into France, but the famine so oppressed vs returning, that all the prouifion of victuall being spent, not excepting Monkeyes and Parots, and other living creatures. Targets of the or the same kinde, which we brought with vs out of that Countrie, those two Targets, being hide of the laid voon the coales, were also eaten to expell hunger; vnto the which the rest of the skinnes wilde beaft

that were in the ship (as I shall declare in their proper place) were added. Moreover, the flesh of the Tapirouson, commeth almost neere vinto the taste of Beefe : this mine. the Barbarians broyle after their manner, and in their Country language call it, Boucanare. But The taffe of because I have now yied that word, and that hereafter it shall bee often repeated, lest the the flost the Reader should any longer remaine doubtfull , occasion being offered, I will declare what this Taprouff u.

flants went a Vil. his request to M. Calu n, to Brafill, he there pretending E. u ngelicall reformarian from which he

The

with falt, as the manner is here, they vie the onely remedie of broyling, for the preferging of of preferring them. Therefore, although they had taken thirty wilde beatls in one day, (fuch as we will demeats among feribe in this Chapter, they would lay them all cut in pieces, vpon those Grates, as soone as it in might be done, left they should be tainted and corrupted ; and there, being often turned, they are sometimes broyled and scorched aboue soure and twenty houres together, vntill the inside of the flesh be as well rofted as the outside, and by this meanes they are all preserved from corruption. Nor is there any other manner of dreffing or preferuing fish, which when they have got-Meale of fishes ten, they dry them in great plenty, to make Meale, especially, those which in their Country language they call Praparati, which are the very true and natural Mullets, of the which I shall

hereafter speake in another place. And these Grates among the Barbarians are rightly to bee accounted the Shambles, and Store-house: and therefore you shall scarce come to their Villages, but you may fee them laden with the flesh of wilde beads, and fishes : and it vitally happeneth Mansflesh laid also very often , as wee shall hereafter speake, if you come vnto the Barbarians , that you shall 20 you Boucas. behold these Grates filled with mans fiesh, which, I thinke, they bring as spoyles taken from the conquered enemies, to be flaine, and eaten.

Bur, that I may profecute the intended description of wilde beasts, the second degree of bignesse seems to be guen vnto a certaine kinde of Deere, which they name Stonesses, but herein they d ffer from ours, both that they are much lower, and haue leffer hornes, and also in kint of Deere, this, that they have a long shagged hair, as our Country Goates. But the American Boare, which they call Taiaffon, is very like in shape vnto those which are bred with vs, in bulke of body, eares, head, and teet, very hurtfull alfo, through his long and sharpe teeth; yet seeing hee is more leane and flender, and terribly gnasheth and grindeth his teeth together, hee is notorious Swine, with an alfo through that deformitie. He hath an hole in the backe, by nature, as the Sea-Swine haue in Swine, with an hole in their the head, whereby he draweth in breath, and letteth it out. These three are their greatest beasts.

There is also among the Americans, a certaine red wilde beaft, which they name Agonti, of the height of a weaned Pig of thirty dayes old, with a clouen foot, a very short tayle, and with the note and eares almost of an Hare, most delightfull to the taste. There are also others of two Tapita, a kinde or three kindes, which they call Tapita, not much volike our Hares, but somewhar of a red-

of Hare.

They catch great Raes also in the Woods, of the bignesse and haire of Squirrels, which come Reddish Mife. neere vnto the delicate taite of Conies. Pag, or Pague, (for after what manner they pronounce it, you can scarce, or not at all ynder-

Pag, a beatt marked with fland) is a wilde beaft of the indifferent height of an Hound, with a deformed head, the flesh 40 comming neere vnto the taste of Veale, with a very faire skinne, distinguished with white, rusfer, and blacke spots, so that it would be of great price with vs, if they were to be gotten.

Sarigo, a ftin- There is another alio found, which they call Sarigo, which the Barbarians eate not, by reason of the noy some stinke thereof : but flaying some of them, and taking away the fat of the kidneves, whence that stinke proceeded, wee eate them without loathing : for, they are both tender, and also excellent flesh.

Tatou, armed

There is also that which they call Taton: this is not very well able to runne, yet (as Hedgewith scales. hogs with vs) creeping through the bryars and bushes, thee is armed with very hard scales 10 that shee cannot be pierced with a sword, if also you wrap the skinne together being taken off (wherewith the Barbarians make very many Chifts, which they call Caramenos) you would lay they were warlike Gauntlets. It is of a white flesh, and of an excellent talte. Moreouer, vnto these beasts, which are most common with the Americans, Crocodiles, called

Moreoutry, who there exists without a more comment of the conting kept in the property of the bignetic of a many thigh, and proportionable length: but they are fo time.

Limit: A continue of the bignetic of a many thigh, and proportionable length: but they are fo time.

Limit: A continue of the bignetic of a many thigh, and proportionable length: but they are for the bignetic of dren play with them without any danger. Those Crocodiles which I happened to see, had a very wide mouth, long legs, with a tayle neither round nor sharpe, but very small atthe end: and whether, as some haue written, they moue the vpper chap, I freely confesse, that I haue not Towns, Lizards observed. Moreover, the Americans take Lizards, they call them Towns, not greene, but russes. and of a spotted skinne, like our Countrie small Lizards. And although they bee source or sine foote long, and proportionable in bigneffe, and therefore of a terrible forme, yet notwithftan-

ding like Frogs, they abide in the Rivers, and Marishes, hurtfull vnto none. Furthermore, the skunne being plucked off, if they be bowelled, and fodden, they are very delicate meate, fo that I Lizards in A. haue not taited any thing more sweet in America. For, they are of as white a fielh as Capons are purica, edible. with vs, delicate, tender and fweet, that nothing excelleth them : yet in the beginning I abCHAP.3. S. I. Serpents eaten. The Lizard prodigious but harmlesse. Ian-ouarc. 1327

horred the taffe thereof, but afterward when I had tafted them better, as touching meates, the Lizards were chiefly commended of mee.

izards were content commenced on the content of the bowelling. But feeing both Physicians teach, and it is also commonly knowne, and apparent, in discisapowering, and corrupt bloud, and what focuer eliebelongeth to the Toade, is deadly, any one, that the fielh, and corrupt bloud, and what focuer eliebelongeth to the Toade, is deadly, any one, that the near, and contain a gradily coniecture, that by reason of the temperatenelle of that attnough those other caule, whereof I am ignorant, it happeneth, that Toades, there, are

not venomous, and dangerous at all, as they are with vs. or venomous, and a site of the bigneffe of a mans arme, fine foote long almost. Moreover, The American They cate set pents and, that the Barbarians (as I mentioned concerning Crocediles) brought home vieto ease very great Set-I have observed, char the party-coloured, with blacke and red, and caft them downe among pents.

a certaine annual of the coure, that they handled them with their hands. These monthsir wives and children, so secure, that they handled them with their hands. These monthsir frous Land Eeles, they cut into pieces, and dreffe : but they are vnfauoury, and of ve-

Divers kindes of Serpents also are bred with them, and specially in the Rivers, where they appeare greene like por herbes; long and slender, whose flinging is very hurtfull. There are alappeare green in Woods (belides those which we mentioned before) very dangerous, as it shall manifeftly appeare by the difcourse which I will here set downe. When therefore I sometimes The Authors manucity appear of trauelled to fee the Countrie, with two Frenchmen in my companie, and that, as the manner report of a

travelled to see the Countrie, which to guide vs in the way, and therefore wandred in the Woods, procigious 20 was, wee had not the Barbarians to guide vs in the way, and therefore wandred in the Woods, Lizard. was, wee man me to woods, and paffed through a deepe Valley, hearing the noise of a certaine beast comming towards vs. and paned through a deep timerous and harmeleffe wilde beaft, notwithstanding, proceeding on supposing it to bee some timerous and harmeleffe wilde beaft, notwithstanding, proceeding on our intended Journey, wee were secure and quiet in minde: but presently, thirtie paces distant our intended todains; almost from vs, on the right hand, wee faw a Lizard on an hill; bigger than the body of a man. amoit from vs, on the fig. Hee, being spread all ouer with white and rough scales like Oyiterfiells, holding up one of his fore-feet, with his head aloft; and finning eyes shegan to behold vs. Wherefore being aftonished (for none of vs ; as it then fell out ; carried a Hand-gunne , but had wherefore being arrown fides, and Bowes and Arrowes, which weapons could not greatly hurt onely our sworus at our fluch hard scales: Neuerthelesse, fearing hest if wee shifted for our that Monster armed with such hard scales: Neuerthelesse, fearing hest if wee shifted for our that Montter and wifter then wee, he would dispatch vaaltogether) when the one feare-

fully beheld the other, we stood still in the same place. But after that prodigious and fearefull Lizard had beheld vs a quarter of an houre, with an open mouth, and because it was exceeding hot weather (for it was a cleere day, almost at noone) fetching a deepe groane, that wee might eafily heare it, vpon a fodaine, he went vnto the top of a Mountaine, with fo great noise of the erashing and breaking of twigs and boughs, as a Deere running through a Wood, would scarce haue made. Wee therefore, who then were much affrighted, not being very carefull to purfue him, gaue thankes vnto God who had deliuered vs, and proceeded againe on our intended Journey. And embracing their opinion who affirme, that the Lizard is delighted with the fight of a man, it feemed to me, that the beholding of vs pleased that Monster as much as we were tozmen-40 ted through his presence. There is also a wilde beast bred with them, that liveth your themrey.

which they call Lan-onare. This beaft hath legs almost as long as an hunting Dog, and mattheth fan barre, which they can immers. Announce many for a more than the many for the many thin almost in (wiftenesse) bit about the chime hath long slaged hairs, which a spotted skinne, wilde heef, and faire, like visto a Lynx, and allo very like in the rest. The Barbarness not without instead, direction to greatly feare that wilde heaft. For feeing shee is accustomed to the prey, as also, the Lion, if men. thee catch any of them, the teareth him in pieces, and denometh him. But as they are derirous of revenge, and fuffer not any of those things vareuenged which are troublesome voto them: if they take any, in hollow trenches which they make for that cause, or with any other kinde of Traps or Gins, they put her to a lingring death, shooting her through with many Arrowes. that thee might the longer languish: and that it may the better appeare, how early that wilde beaft dealeth with the Barbarians, when sometimes five or fixe Frenchmen of the companie pas-50 fed by this way, the Americans admied vs, to beware of the Ian-onare, because that very selfe-

same weeke, thee had cruelly denoured three men in a certaine Village of theirs. I thought good to adde to this Edition , that the Americans , before the Voyage of Villagagno had neuer seene Dogs: and therefore, whien they beheld a Dog of the kinde of Hounds. Dogs first fees which with certaine whelpes we brought thither, and that he fauned on vs , they were aftoni- by the Amerifhed, and fled away from him, because (as I mentioned before) hee came neere vnto the shape of cans. the lan-onare. For that cause alto, Gomard in his General Indian Historie, celtifieth, that in the Canas. yeere 1509. When Christopheris Columbus first arrived at the Hand Beringua, called also by the

name of Saint John, the Indians of this Countrie, who made warre with the Spaniards, greatly 60 feared a red Dog, and that he flood them in as good flead almost as two Harquebusters: because he did not onely fiercely affaile the Barbarians, but also differning his companions from the Enemies, although being prouoked, he was not offentiue vinto them, but also taking notice of the Caribas (the worst, and most detestable nation of all those Countries) pursued them, fleeing into the middeft of the Armie of the Enemies, and being to much promoked stooke no reft, vatill

The industrie of the Monkeves in delinering their young from The mancer of taking Monkeyes.

Sazonia a beautifull little

beaft.

Hay, a deformed beaft.

Coaty, with a monftrons great fagut.

Oura, birds.

Arginan ropia

he had torne the Enemie in pieces on whom he leized: fighting to fortunately for the Spaniar de that being accompanied with him, they fought so cheerfully against the Indians, as if they had had three horsemen in their companie. Yet this Dog, while hee swam after I know not what Cariba, being that with a poisoned Arrow died , and made his Master very forrowfull , and the Indians to viull and glad. So, Vallonas alfo, the most valuant Captaine of the Spaniards, when he fielt discouered the South Sea, letting flip the Dogs which hee had, against the Indians, who withflood him, from entring on the Land, the Barbarians were ftricken with fo great a feare. that they were compelled to prouide for themselves by flight : and the Dogs of Vallouas, preuailed as much as the best Souldiers of them all. Moreouer, many Monkeyes are found on the Brasilian coast, little and blacke, which they call Cay, which I cease to describe, because they are very well knowne vnto vs. I will onely declare this one thing, that feeing they continually line in the tops of trees, bearing fruits in cods like vnto our Beanes, wherewith they are nourished. and meete together there in companies, especially when the smoaking showres fall, it is a pleafant thing to heare them crying, and making a noise. But seeing at one birth they onely bring forth one young one, the Monkey, as soone as he commeth into the world is indued with that naturall industrie, that he firmely hangeth about the necke of the Syre, or the Damme : there. fore if Hunters come fuddenly voon them, the Syre or Dammes leaping through the boughs, he also taketh his flight together with them. For which cause, the Barbarians cannot easily catch Monkeyes of any age whatfoeuer : yet they cast them downe from trees wounded with Ara rowes, and afterward having healed them, and made them tame a little while at home, they ex- 20 change and barter them for Merchandises. But at the first , they are so fierce, that they wound the fingers of them that handle them , with their teeth, fo that being bitten , they are very often compelled through paine, to kill them with firokes.

the bigneffe of a Squirrell, and of a red haire; but as touching the shape, in the shout, breast. necke, and almost all the other parts, being very like vnto a Lion, and also hardie, it giveth place in beautie to none of the little beafts, which furely I faw there. And if it were as eafily brought ouer the Sea as the reft, it would be of farre greater price and estimation. But seeing it is of so weake a little bodie, that it cannot indure the working of the ship; for it is of that haw hinesse of spirit, that if it be offended neuer so little, it would die through discontentment : yet some 20 are here to be found. But , that I may freely confesse the matter as it is , although I have beene curious, I was not fo diligent in obferuing all the liging creatures of America, as I defired, nevertheleffe, that I may once make an end, I will yet describe two kindes, which are monitrous in fhape, as those that art most,

There is also another kinde of Monkey among the Americans, which they call Sagonin, of

The one which the Barbarians call Hay, is of the bignesse of a Dog, with an hanging bellie. like a farrowing Sow with piege, of an alh-colour haire very much washed, with a very long tayle, hairy feet after the manner of a Beare, and long clawes: but as, while it liveth in the Woods, it is very fierce; yet being taken, it is very easily tamed. But the naked Tonompiname bankin doe not willingly play with him, because he hath both long, and also sharpe clawes. They fay, it liueth onely on aire.

The other, whereof I am also to speake, called by the Barbarians, Coaty, is of the height of 40 an Hare, with short and spotted haire, little and sharpe cares, both of a little head, and also with an eminent front from the eyes, more then a footelong, round like a walking-staffe, suddenly decreasing at the end, so that it is altogether of an equall thicknesse, with so narrow a mouth, that it can scarce receive the little finger. None may be found more monstrous: afterward, when this wilde beaft is taken, gathering her foure feet together, shee bendeth her selfe to the one side or the other, or falleth flat downe : nor can thee euer bee raifed, nor compelled to eate , vnleffe Ants be given her, on which shee also feedeth in the Woods.

This Chapter alfo, wherein I will intreate of Birds, I thought good to beginne with those which are fit for the maintainance of mans life, and by a generall name, are called Oura, by the 50 Tonoupinambaulty: they have great plentie of those Hennes, vnto the which wee gave the name Arginan-ouffou, from India, and they call them Arginan-ouffon: from that time also since the Portugals lived a-Indian Hennes, mong the Barbarians, our Countrymen vied to nourish Hennes, called by them, Arginau-miri. Arginau miri, And although (as I have elfe-where mentioned) they efteeme the white ones very much, that plucking off the feathers, and dying them red, they might clothe and decke themselves; yet for the most part they abstain from both kinds, as touching the eating of them. Moreover, seeing they perswade themselves, that the Egs, which they call Arginau-ropia, are, as it were, poison, they were not only aftonished, if we supped Egs before them, but also reprouing vs, added moreouer, that it was not to be fulfered; for, while we prevented the hatching of ckickens, we eate an Henne in an egge. Therefore, they are almost as carefull of their Hennes, as of the Birds, which live in the Woods, they fuffer them to lay where foeuer they are disposed. But the Hens in like manner, bring home their chickens out of the briars and bushes, so that the Americane Women may be without trouble.

Together with the Hennes, the Barbarians also nourish Indian Duckes at home, they call

CHAP.3. S.I. Brasilian Birds delicate for food, for feathers. Prating Parrat. 1229

them Upee. But because the Tonompinambaulty are so superfittious, that they thinke, if they Ppee Indian floud care fo flow a creature, they should get the same flownesse, so that if the Enemies should Duckes. affaile them, they could not seeke their safetie by flight: no man may easily perswade them to analte them, they could fit them, and for that cause they abstaine from all those creatures which goe flowly, and also from fishes, as Raies or Thornebacke, and others which cannot swimme which live in the woods, they take them as great as Capons, Istom, a kinde and those of three forts, which the Barbarians call lacoutin, lacoupen, and lacou-onaff.m. They of Phealant. haue all blacke and ash-colour Feathers, and come neere vnto the Pheasants in taite, and I may truely affirme, that no sweeter or more delicate meate can euer be eaten, then those

10 laceas are. aceas are. Besides, there are two kindes of most exquisite and choice Birds, which are named Monton, Monton a rare of the bignesse of Peacocks, with the same Feathers which the former had, and they are very iel-

Macacona, and Taambon-onaffon, are two kindes of Partridges, of the bigneffe of our Country A kinde of Geele, not much vnlike the talte of Mutton. These three following have one and the same taste great Paralmost, Inambour-miri of the height of Partridges: Pegaffon Stockedoues, and Paicace the Tur- tridges.

But that I may briefly finish the discourse of Birds, which are found in great plentie, both in the Wools, Rivers, and also in the shoares, I will come vnto those which are not so fit for foode. 20 Among the rell, there are two kindes of the same bignesse, which come neere to the greatnesse of a Rauen or Crow : which as the rest of the American Birds, have crooked bils and talons. as alio Parrats, in which number they might be reckoned. As touching the Feathers, as it is eafily in ged, I harce thought that Birds of fuch excellent beautie were to be found in the whole world. in the beholding wherof, abundant matter offereth it felfe, not as prophase men, to commend nature, but the creator: and that it may manifeltly appeare, the first which the Barbarians call A- Mat, a Bird rure, out the creator. and the traine and wings, of a foote and a halfe long, partly purple like vn- with excellent rat, bath the feathers in the traine and wings, of a foote and a halfe long, partly purple like vn- Feathers. to red, and partly of a blew colour, greatly thining; to the which also, the other parts of the body are correspondent. When this Bird moueth in the Sunne, where she very much abideth. no man can euer be farisfied with her fight.

The other called Ganide, with the inferiour Feathers, and thole that are round about the necke thining of the colour of gold, and those that couer the backe, wings, and traine of an excellent with blew teablew colour, feeing they feeme to be under-laid with embrodered gold, and ouer-laid with a thers. Veluet Mantle aboue it caufeth great admiration to the beholders.

But although thefe Birds be not domesticall, yet they oftner build their nests in the tops of the trees which are in the middle of the Villages, then in the woods, whereby it commeth to Feathers, of palle, that the Barb trians plucke their Feathers three or foure times in the yeare, of the which the which, palle, that the Barbersans plucke their Feathers three of tour climes in the years, of the which caps, garments Feathers they make Cappes, Garments, and Bracelets, decke the handles of their clubbes, and &care made. adorne their bodies. I brought many such Feathers with me into France.

Three or toure forts of Parrats are taken there : the greatest and fairest whereof the Barbari- Alourous great 40 ans call Asourous. These have the head intermingled with red, yellow, and violet colours, the andvery faire ends of the wings scarlet or crimson, the taile, which is very long, yellow, and the rest of the Parrats, body greene; very few fuch are brought vnto vs.

A Woman in a certaine Village, some foure miles distant from our Iland, had brought vp one of this kinde, which as if the had beene indued with reason, conceiued those things which the was commanded. As often as we went that way, we presently heard the Miltrelle of that Bird fay, will you give me a Combe, or a Looking-glaffe, and I will prefently command my Par- A wonderfull rat to ling and daunce before you . If happily we granted her requelt, the Parrat prefently hea- ftorie of a Pare ring certaine words of her Mittreffe, did not onely dance on the pearch where she far, but also practed, and whiftled; and laftly, the wonderfully counterfeited the Barbarians going to the wars. To be short, if her Mistresse thought good to bid her sing, she sung, if to daunce, she danced: contrarily, if not rewarding her, with a little sharper speech she had commanded her their Auge, that is be ful, then the prefently held her peace, nor could we make her with any words to move either her tongue, or feere neuer fo little: wherefore I leave it to the Readers to be confidered whether if the Romans had had juch a Parrat they would not highly have efteemed her, who, as Play recordeth, sometimes solemnized the death of a Crow with innumerable rites of funeral, by which, at the place of Common Pleas, they were every morning by name saluted, and punished him with death, who killed the tame. The Barbarian woman called this Parrat Cherimbane, that is to fay, her best beloued. And furely the was so deere voto her, that demanding at what price we might buy her, the answered in scoffing manner Mocaouas ou, that is to say, a great braffe 60 piece, and therefore we could not wrett her from her at any price. I found that they made their

Netts in the holes of hollow Trees. Among the reft of the American Birds, the first place shall be given to a certaine Bird named Toucan, a Bird Toucan, whereof we made mention of before. It is of the bignesse of a Pigeon, of a blacke colour of a Pigeon, like a Crow, except the breft, which is of a yellow colour, compaffed from the lower part with

Panu a Bird

with a red

let colour.

breaft.

a ring of red feathers, which being taken away, the Barbarians vie it for ornament of the cheeks and other parts of the body. And it is highly efteemed with them, because they vie it when they intend to daunce. From thence it hath taken the name Toucan-tabourace that is, a Feather to daunce with. Yet not with flanding, they have such store of them, that they refuse not to change them for our Merchandizes. The bill of this Bird exceedeth the rest of the body in length. from bill of a wherewith a Cranes beake is not to be compared, and therefore it is to be accompted the most monitrous bill of the whole world.

There is another of the bigneffe and colour of a Black-bird, except the breft, which is as red as Oxe bloud; this, the Barbarsans take away after the same manner that they did the former. and call the Bird Panon.

There is also another of the bignesse of an Owzell, with all the Feathers of a scarlet colour, this they call Quampian.

But one very little Bird is not to be omitted, of no lefte admiration then smalnesse, which the Bird of a fcar-Barbarians call Conambuch, with white and thining Feathers : it exceedeth not a drone Bee, or Beetle in bignesse, yet maketh wonderfull melodie in singing. Sitting voon that great Milium which the Barbarians call Anati, or other high plants, the fingeth to loud, that valeffe the be feene you would scarse beleeue that so loud, and sweete melodie could proceede from that small body. She is not inferior to our Nightingale.

The variety of

But because I cannot particularly describe all the American Birds, which differ not a little from ours, not onely in kinde, but also in variety of colour, as rose colour, red, violet, white, ashcolour, purple, &c. I will at length describe one, which the Barbarians to observe and esteeme, that they will not onely not hurt her, but fuffer them not to escape vnreuenged who doe her any wrong. She is of the bignesse of a Pigeon, and ashcolour, the Touonpinambaulty heart her more often in the night then in the day, with a mournefull voyce, and believe that the is fent from their friends and kindred, vnto them, and also declareth good lucke, and especially, that she incourageth and admonisheth them to behaue themselves valiantly in the warres against their enemies. Besides, they verily thinke that if they rightly observe these divinations. it shall come to passe, that they should vanquish their Enemies, even in this life, and after death, their soules should five beyond the Mountaines, to their ancestors, perpetually to daunce there,

I chanced once to lodge in a Village, named Vpee by the French men, there, in the night I heard those Birds, not finging, but making a lamentable noise. I saw the Barbarians most attentive, and being agnorant of the whole matter, reproued their folly. But, when I finiled a little you The dotage of a French man standing by me, a certaine old man seuerely enough restrained me with these The dotage of words: bold your peace, least you hinder vs, who attentially barken to the bappy tidings of our auncewho oblicine flours. For, as often as wee beare these Birds, so often also are we ebected, and our strength recei-

the finging of a meth increase.

The Americane Bees differing from ours, are like vnto the leffer blacke flyes wherewith we American Bees. are troubled in the time of Summer, and make their hony combes in the hole of a rotten tree. The Barbarians are skilfull to gather hony and waxe. Being gathered, intermingled, they call it Tra-jetic, for Tra fignifieth hony, and Tetic waxe. The hony being feuered, they eate it after 40 our manner, but keepe the waxe which relembleth the blacknesse of Pitch made into lumps of the bignesse of a mans arme. Yet, not that they make Torches or Candles therewith, for, there is no other vse of a Candle with them, then of a certaine wood which sendeth forth a most cleere and bright flame. But they chiefly vie that Wax to stop those huge canes, wherein they put their Feathers, least they should be eaten, and gnawed with the Butter-flyes, which also we will describe in this place.

Arauers, But-

Yra, Hony.

Yene, blacke

They are called Arauers by the Barbarians, of the bigneffe of Grashoppers, they also come in great multitudes to the fire as Creekets doe, and if they finde anie thing they eate it, but especiallie they fo gnaw leather doublets and shooes, that they whollie consume the superficies and ypper graine thereof. But, if we negligently fet vp Hennes, or other meates of that kinde, in the morning the bare bones were found without flesh.

The Barbarians being stung with Scorpions applie bruised Scorpions to the wound, if they can get them. Moreouer, as we have elsewhere laid, that they are most desirous of reuenge, nay, I might almost say, that they are made against all hurtfull things, so that if vnawares they stum-The Barberins ble at a stone, they bite them after the manner of mad Dogges, and diligently seeke out all huing creatures hurtfull vnto them, and vetterly roote them out as much as they can.

The Countrie of America hath alfoland Crabbes, the Tououpinambaulty call them Ouffa; they goe in multitudes like Locusts, vnto the Sea shoare, and fennie places, and if any one goe thither he may see them flying hither and thither; they conuey themselves into the bodies and rootes of trees, out of the which they cannot fafely be drawne, for they pinch the fingers and hands of 62 such as takethem, with their clawes. They are farre leaner then the Sea Crabs, but because they fmell of the Juniper rootes, they are nothing pleafing to the taffe.

His discourse of America fishes I bane omitted, except this which you shall now beare. I will not omit a storie which I heard reported by a Barbarian. When, faith he, on a certaine day, I was carried in a Boate with certaine others, in a verie calme Sea, a certaine huge fish tooke hold with the hand on the brim of the Boate, and in my judgement, it would either have ouer turned it. or gotten vp into it. I feeing that, cut off the hand with a fickle which I had in a readinesse, so concerning a shat it fell into the Boate, and it had fine fingers verie like vnto ours; besides, for paine which fifth with hands that fift telt, putting the head aboue water, which was like vnto the head of a man, it squeaked and countea little, and made a certaine noife.

First, because the Brasil tree is the most famous of all that soile (from whence also that Countrie hath taken the name) especially for the colour which our Dyers make therewith, I will defcribe it in this place. This Tree therefore is called by the Barbarians, Arabontan, and equalleth Of thetreas, to our Oake in height and plentie of Boughes. Some of these are found, the thicknesse whereof bearbs, roots,

containeth full as much as three men can fathome.

After what manner that Timber vieth to be brought into the Shippes, I thought good in this which crow in place to describe. But first you are to vnderstand, that except the Merchants were holpen by the American the Inhabitants, they could scarce lade a Ship with that Timber within a yeare, both for the Soyle, the Innabitance, and therefore the difficultie in cutting, and also chiefely, because that Countrie wan
**Tebusian, the Brassian tree, and also chiefely because that Countrie wan
**The Brassian tree, and Brassian tree, teth all labouring Beafts, and therefore it is to be carried upon the shoulders of men. The Barbarians being hired for Garments, Shirts, Cappes, Kniues, and other Merchandizes, doe not onely thereof. cut cleave, and make round that Timber, but also laying it voon their bare shoulders, carrie it into the Shippes, and sometime in most cumbersome places, lying three or foure miles distant 30 from the wood to the shoare. But I expressely say, that the Barbarians, since the French men and wanteth all Partueals came vnto them, cut their Brail trees, for before that time (as farre as I vnderflood beafts of bur. from the elder fort) they had no other way of felling them, faue that they ouerthrew them by den. putting fire vnto them. Moreouer, because I know some thinke that the timber which is brought The Barbarians wato vs. hath the thicknesse of the trees, I purposely added, that the Barbarians made it round, that they might the more easily carrie the same.

Furthermore, it hath bin observed by me, for so long time as I lived in America, and vsed a The ancient cleare fire through the benefit of this wood, that this kinde of wood was nothing moift, which manner of felvitally happeneth to most of the other kindes of wood : nay, that it was dry as it were by nature, and beeing kindled, yeeldeth very little smoake. One of our men defired to wash our barient. 30 fhirts, and vinawares, put the after of the Brafil wood into the lye, whereby they were fo furely The Brafil died with a red colour, that although they were washed, they never changed the same, and be- wood, almost

ing fo died with that colour, we were to put them on.

Because out Tomonpinambanity doe not meanely wonder, when they see French men. and other strangers comming farre off from remote Countries, take so much paines to carrie backe their dye shires of a Shinnes laden with their Arabouran, that is to fay, the Brafil or red wood : Therefore a certaine red colour. elderly man of the Barbarians, sometimes questioned me in this manner, concerning that matter: What meanethis, that you Mair and Peros (that is French men and Portugals) come fo farre to fetch The confe-Wood? doth your Countrie yeelde you no wood for the fire? Then taid I, it yeeldeth fuell furely, and that taine Borbetis in great plentie, but not of that kinde of trees, (such as yours are; especially Brafil, which our men carrie an with the 40 from bence, not to burne, as you suppose, but for to dye. Here he presently excepting: But bane you, Author, said he, neede of so great plentie of that wood? Tea surely, said I, for seeing even one Merebant with vs opfifficts more Scarlet Clouber, more Knives and Siffers, and more Looking-glaffes (alledging knowne and familiar examples unto him) then all those which were ever brought hither unto you: he onely will buy all the Brafil, to the end that many Shipper might returne laden from bence. Ab (faith the Barbarian) you tellime strange and wonderfull things. Then presently remembring what he had heard, he proceeded to demand further questions of me. But, faith he, that great rich man, of whom you make report, doth be not die? He dieth, faid I, as also other men doe. There, then (as thele Barbarians loue to comment, and doe not abfurdly finish their intended speech without interruption even unto the end) he began to demand of me : Who therefore, (aith he, is here of those goods which this man leaneth when be dieth ? His children, faid I, if be bane any : if be bane none, bis brethren, listers, 50 or his next kindred.

When I had faid this, furely (faith that my difference old fellow) hereby I easily perceine, that you Mair (that is French men) are notable fooles. For, what neede you fo greatly to tire and turmoile your selues in failing over the Sea, in passing whereof (as being here arrived you report to vs) you sustance formany miseries? Is st., for footh, that you might get riches for your children, or lung hinsfalke? Sentence deli-Is not the Earth, which bath nowished vs, sufficient also to maintainethem? we surely bane both chil- ueted by aberdren, and also kinsfolke, and them, as you fee, we love dearely; but feeing we confidently bope, that it shall barian. come to passe, that after our death, the same Earth which nourished us, shall also reliene and cherish them, therein we repofe our felue; and reft content.

60 But that I may present the description of the American Trees, foure or fine kindes of Palme trees are found there : among which, that is accounted most common, which they call Geran, Foure or fire and another also named Tri: notwithflanding, as I saw none of their fruites, so, as I thinke, I kindes of the eate none. Tri bringeth forth a round fruite like Damsens in the shape of a large cluster of so SILL

nance refera bling the fhape of a man Chap.13.

and moft ex-Arebentan, the

and carry is into the Ships. mong the Bat-

great

be eaten.

There is also another tree, called by the Barbarians Airi, which although it be very like the Agri, a thorny Palme in leaves, with the stocke armed on every side with thornes and pricks, resembling the points of needles. The Fruite is of an indifferent bign fle, in the middeft whereof there is a kernell of the whitenesse of Snow, which yet is not to be eaten; and this I suppose to be a kinde of Ebeny: for befides that it is of a blacke colour, and of luch hardnesse, that the Barbarians partly 10 wie it for the making of their clubs and arrowes (which I will more at large describe when I shall treate of their wars) it is also imoothed, and made very bright, and lastly, is so heavie, that being cast into the water, it presently finketh to the bottome.

They have divers coloured woods, and divers of differing fcent: one smelling like a rose; another called Aou-ai, of the most stunking smell of Garlicke, which no man is able to indure, while most flinking it is hewed or burnt : it hath leaves not much valike the leaves of our Apple trees : but the fruite thereof (which commeth neere in shape to the rough shell of a Chesnut) and especially the kernell, is fo venemous, that to him that eateth it, it relembleth the effect of the most strong and deadle poilon. Notwithilanding our Barbarians highly effecme that fruite, because they make their Ractles of it. Here alio it is to be confidered, that Brafilia (as we shall hereafter speake) bea- 20 Very many 4- ring excellent apples of very many kindes, abounderhallo with trees, which furely yeelde vemerican trees ry goodly fruites, yet vnprofitable to be eaten. Especially on the shoare there are many imall thrubbes, the apples whereof being very like vnto our Country Medlers, are dangerously eaten. Therefore, when the Barbarians fee the French men, and other ftrangers comming to gather those apples, often vsing the word Tpochi, in their Country language, they admonish them to abstaine from them.

barians make their Ma aca.

beare poilo-

nous truits.

The tree called by the Barbarians Chorne, is of an indifferent height, with leaves of the shape The tree chor- and greenenesse of a Bay lease, with Apples of the bignesse of a children head, comming neere vnto the shape of the Estridges egges, which furely are no meate. Or these the Tonoupinambankin, by reason of the hardnesse of the shell, piersing some of them through whole, in leng thand breauth wherewith they make their Maraca or Rattles; they also nollow and divide them into halves. for cups and other imall veffels. Sabaucase is also numbred among the Brasilian trees, having an apple bigger then both a mans

Sahauraiewhole fruite is pro-This is a kinde of Ceca.

filts and imitating the forme of a cup : in the bottome whereof certaine small kernels are found, perly vied for like vnto Almonds, and almost they resemble the very taste of Almonds. Moreover, there is a tree in those Countries, of the height of our Service tree, whose apple the Barbarians name Acaiou, of the bignesse and shape of an Hens egge, which when it is ripe, inclining to the colour of Gold, like vnto a Quince, is not onely profitably eaten, but also yeeldeth

to be caten. tender fhrub.

Majou, a fruite fomewhat a tart juice, not unpleasing to the taile, which most comfortably cooleth those that are inflamed with heate. Paco-aire, is a shrub, of ten or twelue foote high, with a stocke. sometimes of the thicknesse

Paco, a long

of a mans thigh, which notwithstanding is so tender, that it may be cut downe at one stroake with a Sword : the Barbarians call the apple Paco, of the length of a mans hand, not volike a Cucumber in shape, and of the same colour also, when it commeth to ripenesse. But these apples grow, for the most part, twentie or fine and twenty thicke together, on enery bough, which the Americans gathering, carry them into their cottages, of fo great a waight as they are able to beare with one hand. And as touching the goodnesse of this apple, when it is ripe, the knop being plucked of after the manner of a trefh gathered Figge, it feemeth clottie and full of clu-Paco, a Figge fters: whereby it commeth to paffe, that to them that eate it, it refembleth the Figge, whereupon, we called it a Figge: but in taile it excelleth the most delicate Massitiens Figges; and 50 therefore not vn worthily it may be reckoned among the best fruites of all that coast. The forme The leaves of of the leaves of Paco-aire, is not valike the leaves of water-Sorrell, but they are of io great a big-Pato-aire, are nefle, that commonly the length is extended to fix feete, and the breadth about two: whereby bignesse. The it commeth to passe, that I cannot be perswaded by any meanes to believe that in Europe, Asia, Author faith it and Africa, there are leaves of to great length and breadth. For, although I heard a certaine Apois like the Musa the cary affirming, that he had feene a leate of Petastitis of the breadth of an Elle and a quarter, Peraficularee that is (for this Plant is round) whose circumference contained in compasse three Elles found leafe. and three quarters : yet this largeneffe came nothing neere to the greatneffe of our Paco-aire. It is true furely that the thickneffe of those leaves answere not the length, nay, they are very slender, vet daily lifted up, to that the middle ribbe onely beareth the violence of the most vehe- 62 ment winde, wherewith that Country is very often troubled; but the reit is fo lagged and cut a funder, that to him that beholdeth them a farre off, thele thrubs are supposed to be necked with Ediniges teathers.

CHAP. 2. S.2. Brafilian Corron-trees. The American irreconciliable mars.

As touching the Bombain Cotton firubs, which grow up to arrandifferent heighth, they are found in great number, in Brafill: they yeeld flowres, like the little yellow bels or buddes of Cucumbers: but when the Apple is formed, it commeth not only verificeer voto the Mail of Beech. but also being ripe, divideth it selfe into foure parts, which yeeld Bombalin Cotton in flockes of the bigneffe of a ball, which the Barbarian call Americion. In the midit of thole flockes cerraine blacke graines are found, close joined and verie much pressed together, after the forme of a Cotton. mans Kienie, the greatnefle of which compacture exceedeth not a Beane. Moreover, the Barbarian women are not viskilfull in gathering and spinning that Bombain Cotton, for of it they make their beds.

Reeds often grow in the Woods, of the bigneffe of amans legge : but as I'frid before of Pacissire, they are to tender, that while they are yet flanding, any one of them may bee cut downer with one ftreake of a Sword, yet being drie, they are of such hardnesse that when they are cleft, Reeds, where and fashioned after the manner of the Surgeons Lances, the Barbarians to head their Arrowes with the Barbatherewith, that they ouerthrow wilde beafts flat to the ground at one shoot.

Mafficke also groweth in this our America among the briers and builtes , which together, almost, with infinite other odoriferous herbes and flowres perfameth the earth with a most sweet and pleasant scent. The Trees are never spoiled of their leaves, being not troubled at all with Trees comb the cold, they flourish all the whole Yeere, as the Woods vie to doe with vs in the moneth nually flouri-

The plant which bringeth forth the fruit Ananas, is like in forme vnto the Flowre-deluce, rica. with crooked bending leaves, divided round about, comming neere vnto Aloe, of the fame forme with the greater Thittle, but the Apple which is of the bignesse of an indifferent Melon, and of leanes thereof. the thape of a Pine Apple, bending to no part, groweth after the manner of our Artichoke.

Thole Ananas when they are come to full ripenesse, are of a golden colour imitating blue, and Ananas the yeeldeth the smell of the fruit of the Idean Bramble, so that by the smell they were easily found most excellent of vs, wandring in the Woods and other places where they grow: they are of fo fweet and plea- fruit of all dfant a tafte, that none of our preferued fruits excell them. Therefore I thinke it to bee the best fruit of all America. I fometimes wrung one of them, out of the which I drew a Cruze of juice, which vnto me, seemed nothing inferiour vnto the Wine which they call Malmesev.

Laftly, as I have faid, that among the Americans, no foure-footed beafts, birds, fiftes, nor any living creatures, in all things refemble ours of Europe: fo I now affirme, as much as I could finde cent three) by experience wandring through the Woods and Fields, that there are no Trees, or Herbes, and differ from laftly no fruits, which are not valike to ours, except these Plants, Pursiane, Basil Royall, and ours; Fearne, which grow in certaine places.

The Bombafiri

riant head

fhing in Ame-The Plant A.

All the trees

ð. I I.

Of the Warre, Battailes, Fortitude, and Weapons of the Barbarians: and of their Religion.

Lthough our Tononpinambaulty Tonoinenquin make immortall warre against divers bordering Nations, after the manner of all the reft of the Barbarians. Notwithstanding, chap. 14. they contend not by warre to inlarge their bounds (for they polleffe more Lands then For what can't

they need) or thinke of the getting of Riches, by the spoiles, ransomes, and armes of the Americans the conquered. For as they all confesse, they are prouoked through no other affection then that they might most feuerely avenge the death of their Parents and Friends long fince taken, and denoured by the enemie. Moreover, when war is first proclaimed betweene certaine of thele 50 people, all of them agreeing in this, that the enemie vnto whom injurie is done, will perpetually thinke on the reuenging of the same, and therefore that it is to be attributed to cowardite, if being brought into their power, they fuffer him to escape vnpunished : their enmities are so inue- The Babeien

terate, and of such continuance, that they can never be reconciled each to other. But the manner whereby our Tououpmambaulty affemble, being readie to goe to the warres, their enemies, is this, as much as I could observe. Although they have no Kings or Princes among them, but are al most equall in dignitie, yet this is given them by nature (which also was most exactly in former times oblerued by the Lacedemonians) that they admire and reverence the elder fort whom Senatus. they call Peoreru Picheb, for their experience of things: therefore in euerie Village no contempti. The Americans

60 or fitting in their Cotton hanging beds, exhort the rest with these, or the like words. What (lay they speaking by turne, without interruption of speech) were our Ancestors who The Oration not only fought against so many enemies, but also vanquished, slue and denoured them, an Exame of the elder ple unto us, that wee should perpetually lye lurking heere at home? Shall wee suffer our Nation, Americans,

ble feruice and obedience is performed vinto them. These occasions being offered, either walking yeeld obedi-

which in former times was so great a terrour to all the rest, that they could not in any fort indure their fight, to be fo much reproached to eur great diffrace, that our enemies flould affaile us by Warre enemin our owne boules? Shall we through our cowardize cause, that the Margaites, and Peros ergains (that is , thefe wicked Nations) affault us first? Then that Orator clapping his thoulders and buttocks with his hands, addeth thele words with exclamation : Erima, Erima, Tonoupinambaults , Conomion : fou Tan, Tan, &c, that is to lay, My Countrimen, and most valiant young men, wee are not to doe : but rather let vs prepare vs for the fight, and bequeathe our felues to death and flaughter, or anenge our people.

With these Orations therefore of the ellers, which sometimes are prolonged for fix hourses. the hearers who most attentively hearken, fo that they forget not so much as one syllable, being 10 increased both in strength and courage, Ipraking each to other in everie Village, affemble as speedily as they may, at the prefixed place in great multitudes. But before wee bring our Tononpinambanlin to the Battaile, wee are to declare with what Weapons they are

Tacare a kinde

And first furely, they have Tacapes, that is, Clubs, or Swords made some of redde, and some of blacke wood : they are commonly of the length of fine or fixe feete, round at the ends, or of an ouall shape, of the breadth of a foote, and of the thicknesse of a Thumbe in the middeft, but the edges are verie finely sharpened, for they are made of verie heavie wood. fuch as Boxe is, and are little inferiour to the edge of a verie sharpe Axe: so that I casily belieue , that one Touonpinambaultian armed with fuch a Clubbe , and inraged with 20 furie, would beeable to put two of our Countrie Fencers to much trouble, and drue them to their fhifts.

Orabat, a Bow. Moreover, they have Bowes, which they call Orapats, made of the same kinde of wood to wit, redde and blacke: and they exceed ours fo much in length and thickneffe, that none of our men is able either to bend or vinbend them : infomuch as they are of necessitie to vie all their firength for the bending of the Bowes of Children of tenne yeeres old. They vie the The herbe To- herbe called Tocon, for ftrings, which although it bee verie flender, yet is it of fo great a cou, fruing in Arength, that it may indure the force of an Horse. Their Arrowes are of the length of an fleed of Bow Ell, made with three joynts; the middle part confliting of a Cane or Reede, and the other two fings.

The length of of blacke wood: and those pieces are so aptly bound together with certaine banks of Trees, 20 their Arrows. that they could not bee more firmely glued. They apply two little feathers visto them, of the length of a foote, which they binde together with a Cotton Thread, because Glue is not in vie with them : they aptly ioyne very sharpe bones to the ends, sometimes a piece of a drie Reed, of the length of a mans hand, cut fmooth after the manner of a Surgeons Launce; and fomt mesthe verie end of the taile of the fish Raye, which as I have elsewhere faid, is verie venemous. But. fince the Frenchmen and the Portugals came into those Countreyes, the Barbarians, after their manner have accustomed to strengthen their Arrowes with Iron heads, or at the least, with verie sharpe Nailes.

We have alreadie spoken what their dexteritie is, in handling their Clubs: but as touching

the Bowes, I hope that all they who have feene the Barbarians, will confirme that with their 40

naked armes, they shoot so speedily, and so certainly, that (bee it spoken by the Englishmens

leave, who are yet accounted the most skilfull Archers) putting their Arrowes in the hand

wherewith they hold their Bow, twelue may fooner bee fhot by them, then fixe by the

moft skil ull

Targets of

Lattly, they have Targets of the Hide of Tapirouffon, which I mentioned before, broad, plaine, and round, like to the bottome of a Germane Diumme, with these they couer not themselves in fight, after the manner that our Souldiers vie, but fighting, receive the Arrowes of the Enemies with them. So these are all the Weapons of the Americans: for they couer not their bodies with other Armour: but contrarily (excepting their Caps of Feathers, Bracelets, and other fhort attire, wherewith as aforefaid, they decke their bodie, if they work but a so fhirt, being about to goe vnto the battaile, they would prefently put it off, fearing least they might be intangled and incumbred therewith.

Iron Swords.

If they received Iron Swordes from vs, as I gave one to a certaine Monsacat of mine, they presently cast away the sheathes: they did the like also receiving Knives, delighting in the brightnesse of them, and thought them more serviceable for the cutting of the boughes of

Eight or tenne thousand people being gathered together after the manner which hath beene fpoken, with no small number of women, not to fight, but to carrie their bagge and baggage, and prouision of victuall, assembling vnto the Campe, they of the elder fort, who have The elder Bar. flaine and denoured the greatest number of enemiess, have the chiefe command and conducting 62 berians, Capof the forces: who being their Leaders, they prepare themselues for the journie. And alchough they goe without order, yet when they march trooping, the most valiant men keeping the Front of the Armie, it is a wonder how well all that whole multitude convey themfelues without Tribunes, and Quarter-maiters, fo that at the found of the Trumpet they verie foeedily affemble in battell array. eedily anemore in the with hornes, which they call Inubia, of the length of an elle and

an halfe, and of the thicknesse of our Country Speare, of the breds haff an hand at the lower without conan name, and like a Trumpet, saife the Souldiers, both going out of their Countrie, and when the tution campe remoustly. Some alto carrie Whitties made of the bone; of their enemies, daine and Inubia, buge denoured in former time, wherewith they continually pipe by the ways that they might fittre Whilles of whites, of their companions, and increase their define to kill the enemies in like manner. whites, of But if, which often happeneth, they please to undertake a Voyage against the Enemie, by

to Boat, they paffe along the fluores, and commit not them selves votor be maine Sea. They order themselves in their Boats, which they call Teat, energy one whereof conflitterh of the barke of Teat, a Boat of one tree, taken oft, and appointed to this vie; yet are they of fuch largenille, that every one of the bake of a them may receive fifthe mea. Standing cherefore after their manner, they drive the Boat forward with an Oare, plaine on both fides, which they hold, in the middle, Moreover, there Boats feing they are plaine, are roused with very little trouble; yet is there no vie of them, in the maine Sea, or it a tempestarise. But, our Barbariant gaing a warfare, in a great calme, you may fee a Fleet confitting of fixrie fuch Boats. And thele palle the Seas with lo fwife a motion, that they are pretently gone out of tight. So, there are the Armies of the Toppinenquin, both by Sea,

and Land.

Being furnished after this manner, they sometimes goe fittie miles into the Enemies borders. And first they vie this stratagem. All the most valiant, leave the rest with the women and car- The first stratagem. riages, one or two dayes fourney behind them: they approach with great filence, and poffesse gem of the the Woods, lying in waite to entrappe the Enemie, for whom they fo diligently watch, that of. tentimes they lie hid there, for foure and twentie hourgs. And if they fet voon the Enemie vnawares, as many men, women and children as they meete with, are not onely brought away, but also flaine by the Enemies returning into their Countrey, and put vpon Boucan in pieces, and at length denoured. And they turprize them to much the more eafily, because the Villages (for they have no Cities) are not compatied with walls, and the Cottages (which yet are fourtfcore or an hundred paces long) have no Doores, but in their stead, they set the boughs of 30 Palmes, or the stalke of the berbe Panda at their Gatesi. Yet they have now learned to fortifie and intrench certaine Villages round about, which bogger upon the Enemies, with postes of Palmes, of fixe foot long, belides they strengthen the entrances with woodden stakes tharpe at the end : if therefore the Enemies will affaile those Villages by night, which is common with them, then, the Inhabitants of the Village iffue faftly forth voon them; whereby it commeth

But, if they delire to fight in open warre, bringing forth their forces on both fides, it is fearce credible, how cruelland horrible the battell is: whereof my felre was a beholder, and therefore can justly make report thereof. I, with another Frenchman, somewhat more curiously, to 40 our great danger, determined to accompanie our Barbarians going to the warres: for if we had beene taken, or hurt by the Margaiates, wee had certainely beene denoured. These being foure thousand men in number, fought with the Enemie neere voto the shoare, with such fierceneffe.

to paffe, that whether they fight, or thee, they never escape, but fome are overthrowne through

the paine of their wounded feete, who are prefently solled and eaten by the Inhabitants.

that they would have overcome even the most furious and outragious.

The Tonoupinambaniti, as foone as they faw the Enemie, brake out into fo great and loude howling and exclamation, as they who here hunt Wolues, make no out-ones comparable with The howling those: for the clamour so pierced the aire, that thunder then could scarse have beene heard, and exclama-But, comming neerer, they doubled their cries, and blew their Hornes, and laftly, winfilled with Batkerias their Pipes, the one threatned the other, and in a brauery shewed the bones of their dead Enemies: and also the teeth, whereof some wore them hanging about their neckes, strung vpon a the bestell threed about two elles long: and laftly, they terrified the beholders with their geffure. But, The firwing 50 when they came to joyne battell, matters fell out farre worle : for, a multitude of Arrowes was of the bones

shot on both sides, like swarming Flyes in number. Such as were wounded, who were not sew, foutly plucked the Arrowes out of their bodies, which they bit like madde Dogs, and yet abflayned not therefore from the battell. For this Nation is fo fierce and cruell, that io long as they The Barbarians have any little strength, they fight continually, and never betake themselves to flight : we withdrawing our felues a little from the conflict, were contented with that spectacle. In the meane space, I protest, who have divers times here seene mightie Armies both of horse and foot ordered in battell array, that I was never fo much delighted in feeing the Legions of footmen in their glittering Armour, as in beholding these Townpinambaulti, while they were fighting. For be-

60 fides that they were pleafantly feene whiftling, leaping, and very speedily and nimbly gathering themselves round in a ring : a very thicke cloude of Arrowes was moreover added; the feathere whereof being rofe-colour, blue, red, greene, and of other such like colours, gaue a radiant the Barbairs. Infire in the Sunne; their garments also, Caps , Bracelets , and other ornaments of feathers, decked with which made a wonderfull glittering showe in the eyes of the beholders.

The Barbarians

This battell being ended in the space of three houres, and many slaine and wounded on both fides, our Tonoupinambaulty carried away the victorie, and brought about thirtie captines more or leffe, both men and women, to their people. And wee, who performed no other feruice, but encouraged the Barbarians with our drawne fwords, and small thot, somtimes discharging them. as we beheld them fighting (in that it was most acceptable vnto them if strangers went with them to the warres) procured fo great an opinion of vs, that from that time the elder fort embraced vs with a speciall good-will and loue.

The captines are bound.

The Captines therefore being placed in the middeft of the Armie, and fome of the stronger bound with ropes, we went vnto the Bay of Ganabara, from which we were diftant about foure and twenty miles. A few dayes after, certaine Barbarians, who had captines with them, came vnto our Caftle, whom by Interpreters, we intreated that they would fell certaine flaues to Villagagno. So, a great part of the captines was delinered from the lawes of the Barbarians: vet bought by the hardly, and against the will of the Barbarians; which not long after was plainly declared vnto mee. I bought a certaine woman with her little childe fearce two yeeres old, the price wascertaine merchandise, the value whereof amounted to three French pounds. But hee that fold them, complained thus vnto mee: What will be hereafter I know not, but fince Parcolas (for To they named Villagagno) arrived here, wee have fcarce eaten the halte part of our captives. I greatly defined to keepe that little childe vnto my felfe, but Usliagague, reftoring my merchan-difes, challenged both the mother and the fonne. I sometimes said, vnto the mother, that when I naffed over Sea, I would transport the little childe hither. But shee (the desire of taking repenge is to inherent in the mindes of that Nation) answered that shee had rather that he should be denoured by the Tononpinambanki, then to be carried into fo remote Countries : for shee ho-Author: De-cause we have ped, that growing older, he might by some meanes escape, and convey himselfe vnto his Counglutted you al. trymen, and reuenge the death of his kindred.

Their feafting with mans handled by the ready, &c.

Chap. 16. Of their Reli-Cicero I. de Le-The Tougusinambaultÿ ate ignorant of the true God. and acknowledge no false gods, nor the barians thinke of the Scrip-

Bill and won-P(41.29.

A Lthough that faying of Cicero, be held for a most certaine Axiome by the common account of all men, that there is no Nation fo sauage, nor so steeze, that doth not know that they are to bane a God, although they be ignorant what manner of God they ought to have: yet, how this may appeare to be true in our Tononpinambanlin, I doe not fufficiently knowe. For, they are ignorant of the true God, and neither acknowledge nor worship any false Gods, either celestiall or ter- 20 restriall: and therefore have no publike place where they may affemble for the cause of Religion. They are ignorant also of the creation of the World, distinguish not dayes by names. nor preferre one before another: they observe not weekes, moneths and yeeres, but measure times by the Moones. They are not onely altogether ignorant of Scripture, whether it be facred or profane, but also veterly without Characters, wherewith they might bee able to write the creation of the meaning of the minde. When I first came into those Countries, I writ certaine words and fentences, to acquaint my felte with their Speech, and read them presently before them. They thinking it to be a juggling tricke, spake one to another in these words : Is it not a wonder, that this man, who yesterday, knew not so much as one word of our Language, (by the meanes and helpe of this Paper which teacheth him to ipeake our words) should now so skilfully pronounce 40 them, that they may be understood of vs :

As often as we talked with them, and happened to make mention of God, we faid, that we beleeued in one God, Creator of Heauen and Earth, who as he hath made the World, and what-The Barbariam focuer things are therein, fo he gouerneth all things at his pleasure. When they heard this, loohearing of the king one vpon another, and breaking out into this word Teb, which is a familiar token of adtrue God, con- miration with them, they flood full, fixed, and aftonished : Moreouer, because, as wee shall fpeake in his proper place, they are vehemently terrified with the noise of Thunder (which they call Toupan) if bearing with their rudenesse, wee tooke occasion thereby to instruct them, and faid, that that was the God whereof we spake vnto them, who that he might declare his power, shooke Heauen and Earth after that manner : they answered, that that God by whom they were 50 so terrified, was a naughty one. I doe not beleeve that there is any Nation in the whole World, which may be more effranged from all Religion. Yet, that I may also declare how little apparance of light I perceived, among those thicke mysts of darknesse wherewith they are blinded: Laffirme, that they doe not onely beleeue the immortalitie of the foules : but are also certainly perswaded, that after death their soules who have embraced vertue (but they define vertue after their manner, to wit, to auenge them of their Enemies, and to eate very many) flying beyond the highest Mountaines, are gathered to the soules of their Fathers and Grand-fathers, and there, in most pleasant Gardens, leade a toyfull life in perpetuall delights, and densing: (this is that long peregrination of Secrates, and the Poets Elysian fields) but contrarily the foules of the fearefull cowards, who lued ingloriously, without any care of defending their Countrie, are violently carried away by Azgnan (for so they call the Deuill) and line in perpetuall torment

These most miserable Barbarians are wofully even in this life tormented by the Deuill (whom by another name they call Kangerre) : For, I have sometimes seene them, even while they were CHAP.3.S.2. Americans the Deuils captives, their Priests, assemblies. &s.

ealking with vs, immediatly crying out like frantike men, Hei, hei, helpe vs, for Agenan beatalking with vs, immediativ crying out the training with vs, immediativ crying out the training with vs, immediativ crying out the training with vs. Nay, they affirmed, that the wicked spirit was seene of them sometimes in the stape of the spirit vexels. of a cruell Beaft, sometimes of a Bird, and sometimes also in some monstrous forme. And the Sauages, because they greatly wondred that wee were not vexed by the Deuill: therefore, wee telling them that we were deliuered from those torments by that God, whereof wee often spake who them, who was tatre aboue Aygnas, and hindered him from procuring vs any trouble. It vnto them, who was talt danger enforcing them, they promifed to beleeue in God, but being de-Mafter Kniuer liuered, they were vinmindfull of the promife. But, that it may evidently appeare, that the tor- which lined ments wherwith they are vexed, are no pastimes, I my selfe have sometimes seen them so stricken long with the ments wiletwithting are very sure and graking feare, remembring that milerie, that iweating through anguish, told meathat and clapping their thighes with their hands, they complained vnto vs with these words. Man he knew one Atourallap, Accqueity Aignam Atoupane: that is, My foole, my companion, I feare the Deuill of their Ca-

shoue all other euils. But contratiwife, if any of vs spake vnto him in these words, Naseque- raibes or Diviier Agenan, I feare not the Deuill: then, bewailing their condition, they faid; Ah, how happie ners converte were we, if thereby we might be fecured from him: whereupon we answered, that theretore with this Spithey were to beleeve in him who is mightier then Aygnan. But although, as hath beene faid, in ting one of his the prefent danger they promifed that they would doe it, yet they prefently returned to their fellowes; and owne disposition of nature.

wife repeating this Interiection,

Therefore, although our Americans confesse not God with the mouth, seeing among them- he is dealt Therefore, although our * I meritans' content not down with the mount, acting among them with them, that they are continued that there is some distinct power; therby I gather, that they shall neither show would all he excufable, nor justly take occasion to pretend Ignorance. But belides those things which have goe to the beene fpoken by mee , concerning the immortalitie of the Soule, which they believe ; of the white men. &c. Thunder, whereof they are horribly affraid; and Deuils, by whom they are tormented: (which whereupon three things are first of all to be noted) I will moreouer adde a fourth principall matter. That the man recothey have Prophets or certaine Priests among them, which they call Caraibes, who going from many other Village to Village, periwade those miserable men, that they (because they have familiaritie had died. And with Spirits) grue not onely fortitude and courage to whom focuer they please, whereby they this shewes might ouercome their enemies in warre, but allo that through their helpe, all fruits, and those that which might ouercome their elicinies in wart, but and that the American folle produceth, Moreouer, (as farre as Tally faith of great Roots growe, which we have faid that the American folle produceth, Moreouer, (as farre as the principality 20 I vnderflood by the Neuftrian Interpreters, who had lived many yeeres in those Countries) the tie of religion, Townspinambaultians have this cultome, that every third or fourth yeere they affemble together. how order At which affemblie, as shall immediatly be declared, I was present vnawares : concerning which these wantso-I am to report that which followeth. I, with a certaine Frenchman named lacobus Ruffus, and lemne formes also a certaine Neuftrian Interpreter, trauelling farre from home, turned in to a certaine Village of it. Deos feits also a certaine Village of it. Deos feits to lodge; the next day after, wee prepared our felues early in the morning for our Iourney, at which will not which time we faw the Borderers come flocking thither from all places. So, the Inhabitants of Deum vereri that Village loyned themselves with them that came, and presently wee saw sixe hundred ga- tanquam carenthered together in a cerraine voide plat of ground. We demand the cause of that meeting, and tem, timebunt faw that multitude divided into three parts. All the men went into a certaine Cottage, the "those of They are for 40 women into another, and the children also went into the third. I, who had feene certaine Ca-much liker the raibes intermingled with the men, suspecting that some vnaccustomed and strange thing should Deuill which be done by them, earneftly entreated my companions, that they would fland ftill there with worthips nor me to observe the whole matter : which sobravned of them. The Carabes, before they depar- God yer beleeted from the women and children, with great care forbid the women to goe out of their Cot-bleth, lam. 2. tages, but diligently to attend to the finging, and also charged vs to keepe our selues close in Caraibes false that Cottage where the women were: Being earnestly busied about our break-fast, and igno- Prophets. rant of those things which they purposed to doe, we heard a certaine lowe and foft muttering Arclation of noise breaking out of the house into the which the men had seuered themselnes (for that Cottage a great soleme was almost thirtie paces distant from ours) the women which were about two hundred in number, standing, and giving care, gather themselves as it were on an heape. But the men lifting vp their voices by little and little, fo that their diffind words were heard of vsexhorting, and like-

we heard the women presently, with a trembling voice finging the same Interiection againe,

be, be, be, &c. And they lifted up their voices with fo great vehemency of minde, and that for 60 the space of one whole quarter of an houre, that they drew vs who were the beholders into admiration. And furely, they did not onely horribly howle, but also leaped forth with great vio. The howling, lence, and shaked their paps, and formed at the mouth, nay some of them (not valike vnto those scriburs of the that are troubled with the Falling-licknesse) fell downe dead. So that I thinke , that the Deuill Amois as weentred into their bodies, and they fuddenly became possessed with the Deuill. Moreover, having men,

Lib.3.cap.3.

Lib.2.03p.3. & 40.34501.

plainly perceived those things which Bodinus writeth, in the Booke which he called Damone. mania, concerning the extalie of Witches, which hee affirmeth to bee common to all Witches, who have made an expresse covenant with the Devill, and who are often violently carried away in foirit, the bodie remayning voide of all fense, although also they are sometimes carried away both in bodie and minde. Adde (faith he) that they never meete together in any place, but they danie, among which, as farre as he could gather by the confession of certaine Witches, they all crie cut together, Har, bar, (which very well agreeth with He, be, of our Americans) the Devill crieth, Danfe huber, danfe bither : and others answere , Sabbath , Sabbath, that is, A festivall day, or day of reit; lifting up their hands, and the crops of herbes or trees which they have in

Deut.12.6.7.

The Americane women are led with the fame fpirit, where. tric Witches

I once faw Teeinian dance, with fuch exit the Deuill

The farme of the American Gottages.

round circle.

The Carainet confectating Maraca.

Petum by the thought to diffing fent, &cc. I thinke it the

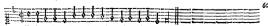
their hands, that they may shew a most assured token of ioy, and signific that they serve the Dewill with all their heart : and fo, that they imitate the adoration due vnto God. For, in the Law of God, it was prescribed to the Ifraelites, that they should lift up their hands voto the Lord, and shew themselves cheerefull before him. These things, I say, being certainly knowne, I gather, that Satan is Lord of them both : and that they are led by the same spirit, so that the diffance of places hindereth not, but that the Father of lyes may worke here and there you them who through the just judgement of God are delivered vinto him. Likewise, when I heard with our counthe children crying altogether (although I had now line, halfe a yeere with the Barbarrans, and was almost acquainted with their manners) yet, not to diffemble, I was then somewhat afraid. especially, seeing I knew not what should be the end of that matter. At length those cries were I once law Tomozome a Vir- ended, the men being for ewhat filent, the children and women also altogether holding their 20 peace, prefently the men began to fing to fweetly, and with fo great harmonie, that I was wonderfully defirous to fee them. But when I would have gone out of the Cottage, I was both kept ta icall vilages backe by the women, and also admonished by the Interpreter, that he (who had already lived sehehaviour, as uen yeeres among the Barbarians) durit neuer come to those folemne meetings; and lastly, that if I went vnto them I should not doe wifely. Whereby he caused me to stay a while, for feare of danger; yet, because hee alledged no probable reason thereof, the women and Interpreter fomewhat relifting, I went forth: relying upon the friendship of certaine ancient men . Inhabitants of that Village. Going therefore vnto that place where I heard that Muficall harmonie, I made an hole through the roofe of the Cottage , that I might the better perceive what was done within. For, they are somewhat long, and round, after the manner of our Countrie garden 30 Arbours, and couered with graffe from the top to the bottome. Then, making a figne with my finger. I called my companions, and at length wee entred into that Cottage. As foone as wee faw that the Barbarians were not moved through our presence (which thing the Interpreter ful pected, would have been done) and that they kept their order very well, and proceeded with their Veries : we went apart into a certaine corner, and beheld them without feare. Thefe are The gesture of their gestures in dansing. They were ordered in a round circle, standing close each to other; yet fo, they tooke not one another by the hand flooping, with their bodie formwhat bending downward, shaking onely one of their legs, to wit, the right, with their right hand laid voon their buttockes, and the left hanging downe, and after this fashion they both dansed and sung. All that whole multitude made three fuch round Circles, in the middle whereof were three or foure 40 Caraibes, attired with Caps, Garments, and Bracelets of feathers. Each of them in either hand

Moreouer, those Caraibes dansing, sometimes, went forward, and sometimes backward, and did not continually fland ftill in the lame place, as the reft. Further, I observed that with a very long Cane, wherein they put the herbe Patum * fet on fire, they often turned themfelues hither and thither, and blew out the fume of that herbe vpon them that flood round about them, with these words: Receive the spirit of fortitude, whereby you may all ouercome your enemies. bicco because And this was often done by these Caraibes. The celebrating of these Rites and Ceremonies was 10 it hath a please prolonged for the space of two houres: those men continually dansing and finging. And their tunable finging was fo sweet, that to the viskilfull it is fearce credible, how excellently well that harmonic agreed, especially, seeing the Barbarians are veterly ignorant of the Art of Mufike. And furely, although in the beginning I was stricken with a certain feare, as I lately mentioblowing voon ned, yet contrarily I was then fo much ouer-loyed, that I was not only rauthed out or my felic: the Barbarians, but also now, as often as I remember the tunable agreement of many voices, both my minde rejoyceth, also mine eares feeme continually to ring therewith : but especially the burden of the fone yeelded a pleafing found vnto the eares, which at the end of every Verie, they jung after

carried Maraca, that is, that rattle of a fruit exceeding the bigneffe of an Effridges egge, where-

of we have made mention before, for that vie, as they faid, that the Spirit might speake out of

them : and that they might rightly confecrate them, they continually shooke them.



Hen beura, beura, beura, beura, beura, beura, beura, oueck.

Being

CHAP.2. S.2. The Barbarians Songs, feasting, groffe Superstition.

Being about to make an end of that tunable finging, flaking the ground with the right foote more venemently then before, they all fpit alio, and all with one voice, and that hoarie, find this Song often repeated.

Then because I did not yet plainly understand their Language, and conceived not many things to which had beene poken by them, I intreated the Interpreter that hee would declare them vnto me. He fignifieth, that their men, first lamented their dead Ancestors, who were most valiant. but in the end were hereby comforted, in that they hoped that after death they should at length go vnto them beyond the Mountaines, and dance with them, and celebrate merrie meetings: and that afterward they most grieuously threatned the Onetalnes, (which are a people not farre remoded from them, with whom they have perpetuall enmitte, whom also they could never ouercome) and foretold, that it should shortly come to passe, that they should be taken and deuoured, as the Caraibes luckely gheffed. Moreouer, I know not what they intermingled with their Sone; concerning a floud, that the waters in times past to overflowed, that they covered the whole earth; and that through that inundationall men perified except only their Ancefors. The confined 20 who climbed up into exceeding high Trees. Which last thing commeth very neere vnto the fa- opinion of the cred Historie, and I neuer once heard it from them before.

The same day they were sumptuously received by the Barbarians, for they liberally entertained the floud. both with most exquisi e meates, and plentiful drinke Canoin. I also with my companions, who were present at those Feasts of Bacchin vnexpected, were most honourably entertained by Feast followour Monflacat, that is the Mafters of the houle, who give food to their guefts. But beside those ing. things which have bin spoken by me, those dates being past (wherein these solemne meetings are celebrated every third or fourth yeere among the Tononpinambankin) fometimes also before they came thither, those Caraibes goe about from Village to Village, and command three or foure of those Rattles which they call Maraca, to bee decked with the best feathers in every Family : The decking 30 which being fo decked, they flicke the longer part of the staffe, wherewith they are thrust of Maraca. through in the ground, and then command meate and drinke to be fet before them. Whereby it

commeth to paile, that those miserable people, through the perswasion of those Impostors, beleeue that those hollow fruits decked after that manner deuoure the meats. Wherefore energy Monfacar carefully fetteth before them, not only meale with fielh and fish ; but also Caonin, More. A grosse Sua ouer, they ferue those Maraca being fo flucke in the ground, for fifteene whole cases together perfittion. with very great diligence. Laftly, those miserable people after that to great bewitching of those Maraca, (which they continually carrie in their hands) conceive an opinion, attributing holineffe vnto them, that while they are thaken by them, a certaine Spirit speaketh with them from the middelt thereof. And they were to bewitched with those delutions, that if we travelling that A mott 40 way, feeing fome more delicate meates, which they had let before their Maraca, tooke them to eate (which we oftentimes did) the Barbarians supposing that some great misfortune would thereby happen vnto vs, were offended. Moreouer, if taking occasion thereby to discouer their

errours, we fignified that they were deceived by the Carabes, not only because they taught them that Maraca did eate and drinke, but especially in this, that they most falsly vaunted that through their meanes, the fruits, and great Roots which they eate, increased and grew; which only was to be attributed vnto God, from whom wee were to believe that wee had received the fame : thefe things, I lay, were of fo great moment with them, as if any here should speake against the Pope, or at Paris, denie that the Image of Genouef would procure raine. For which gainst the rope, or a range and and and lefte hate vs, then iomerimes the falle Prophets of Baal rate, \$100. 50 did Elia detecting their delufions. And therefore they fhunned our fight.

But although our Tououpinambauliy, as hath beene declared by mee in the beginning of this Truth pursell Chapter, neither honour their Carabes, nor Maraca, with any external rite, no not with knee- falshood to ling vnto them, nor worthip any thing created, much leffe adore it, or call vpon it for helpe, I flight, will adde an example of those Relikes of Religion which I observed among them. When by chance I was sometimes with other Frenchmen in a certaine Towne (which they call Ocarentim) and that we supped abroad in the open Aire, the Barbarians Inhabitants of that Village flocking together to fee vs, not to feast with vs (for this is their vivill custome, that they never fit together at meate, with those whom they reuerence most) the elder men especially with many tokens of friendship stood ound about vs as our guard or attendants : and holding in their hands cient Barbarie

60 the bone of the beake of a certaine fifth, of three or foure foot long, in the forme of a Sawe, they and entertaine droue away the children from vs , with these words : Get you hence Knaues : for you are vn_ the Frenchmen. worthy to come vato thelemen. So they beheld vs attentially, and holding their peace, not speaking the least word the meane while : vntill the Banket being ended, a certaine elderly man obseruing vs to beginne meate with Prayers, and also to end Supper with Prayer, comming vn-

of declaring the true God vnto the Bar-

to vs. spoke thus. What meaneth this custom, which you now yied, when taking of your caps, you all kept filence, faue one, that (poke to whom appertained that (peech which he made) to any of you that are present, or to some that are absent? There fitly taking that occasion offered, that I The oceasion might speake visto them concerning the true worship of God, seeing besides the largenesse of that village, & the great refort of people (lallo perceived the Barbarias more attentine then they were wont) I intreated our Interpreter that he would declare my speech vinto them in their Language, that they might conceine the fame. Then beginning with the question of the old man, I answered that our Prayers were directed vnto God : and that although he could not fee him, he had not only plainly heard vs, but alfo did apparantly know what focuer we had hid in our hearts. From thence comming to the Creation of the World, I first of all laboured to teach them, that among Id the creatures God made man the most noble and excellent, that hee should so much the more endenour to extoll the glorie of his Creator. And that we furely in that we worshipped him were deliuered by his hand from infinite dangers of a very long Nanigation, in so vast a Sea, and depending voon his helpe, were freed from all feare of Aignan , both in this life and in the life to come. Wherefore, if they would reject the delusions of their Caraibes, and that barbarous cuftome of denouring mans fiesh, they should vindoubtedly obtaine the same gifts of God, which they faw we had. Moreover, we added many things concerning the corruption and fall of Man-The Barbarians kind, that we might prepare their minds vnto Chrift, applying Reasons and Examples to their capacitie, as much as might be. Now when they had harkened vnto vs about the space of two houres with great attention and admiration : one of them reverent for his authoritie and yeeres, 20

hearing speech of the true God were

discourfed after this manner: Surely, you have bere told us wonderfull and excellent things; and fuch Arelation of a de we have never heard before, and certainly your freech hath brought into my memorie, what wee have Earlowins most often heard our Grandfathers report: To wit, that even from ancient time, and so many Moones since, as worthy to bec we cannot now remember, a certaine Mair (that is a Frenchman, or ftranger of any other Nation) came into these Countries, attired after your manner, and bauing a beard. And that hee, to the end hee might draw them to the obedience of your God, made such a speech unto them, as you delivered unto us this day. But, as it was reported unto us by tradition from our Fathers, they will not give credit to his words. Therefore, presently another succeeded, who gave them a Sword, in token of a curse. Hereupon, followed warres amongst us, and from that time, wee have not ceaffed to exercife crneltie one towards another, through mutuall saughters. But now, after we have accustomed our selues to these outrages by 30 continuall vie, if we hould now suddenly leave our ancient custome, wee should become a laughing stocke, and derision, to the neighbouring Nations. Heere wee testified with great vehemencie and earnest speech, that it was so farre off, that

they ought to be mooued with the scoffes of the borderers, that contrarily, if they seriously worshipped that Creator both of Heauenand Earth, they should carrie away the victorie from all those, who for that cause, should willingly be troublesome vnto them. Lastly, the Lord game that efficacie to our words, that not only many Barbarians afterwards promifed to frame their lives according to that Law which they had learned of vs, and that they would never eate the flesh of their slaine enemies any more; but also according to this conference, kneeling on the The Barbarians ground, gaue thankes with vs, vnto God. That Prayer which was made vnto God, by one of 40 promife to em- our men, with a loude voice, in the middest of their affembly, was presently expounded vnto bracethewor- them by our Interpreter: and so they brought vs to sleepe in those hanging beds of Bombasin thip of God, & Cotton. But fleepe had not yet taken vs, when, behold, wee heare thefe Barbarians finging and are present at crying out together, that they were to take vengeance on their Enemies, and that more should be eaten then before. Behold the inconftancie of this milerable people, and the lamentable example of humane nature. Yet furely, I perswade my selfe, if Villagagno had never revolted from the true Religion, and that wee had stayed longer in those Countries, it would have happened,

Another time I being with three Sauges, and finging the ros. Plalme, at the request of one of them I declared the fenfe and antiquitie thereof, fo many thouland Moones. Whereat he cried 50 their owners. Teb, how happie are you Mair, who know so many secrets, which are hid from vs poore misenorance and rable men. Afterward, one of them to gratifie mee, presented mee with a certaine little beaft, which he carried, called Agonts, speaking vnto mee in these words. Heere, take you this . because you have sung sweetly. I have willingly added this digression, to the intent I might declare that the Barbarous Americans, although outragious against their enemies, are not verso rude that they cannot differne those things which they heare, with judgement. Nav. I dare affirme, that they are more apt in framing speeches, then our Countrie Pealants are, and very many of them also, who effeeme highly of themselves.

that at length, some should have beene wonne vnto Christ.

ò. III.

of their Marriages, Education of Children, Politie, Hospitalitie, Diseases, Physicians, Funerals and La-

BAN Marriages, these degrees of Consanguinitie only, are observed inone of them taketh his Mother, Sifter, or Daughter to wife: no regard is had of the reft: the Vicle mar- of Confanrieth the Neece, and so consequently. Neuercheleffe, as shall bee hereatter spoken in guintie. the American Dialogue, no man may marrie the Daughter or Silter of his Atouraf-

Tap. And he is called Atouraffap, whose familiaritie with any one is so great, that both their goods are common. There is no place for Rites or Ceremonies. Hee who defireth a Widdow, or Virgin, being certainly periwaded of the good will of her whom hee loueth, goeth to her Parents, or if the have none, to her next Kindred, and asketh them whether they will marrie their Daughter vnto him? If they confent, he prefently bringeth her home, without giving her any affurance of Dowrie and so keepeth her for his lawfull Wife. And if he suffer the repulie, he giueth ouer his Sute without any perturbation of mind. But it is to bee noted, that Polygamy is Polygamie. viual with them, and therefore it is lawfull for a man to marrie as many Wiues, as he shall think 20 good. Nay, the more Wives that any one hash the more valiant and generous her is effected. Among the rest I saw one, who had eight at home, and hee often spoke very much of them in commendation of himfelfe. But this is chiefly to be wondred at, that in fo great a multitude of Wives although one be beloved of the Husband above the rest, the other meaner take it gricuous-

ly, or become jealous, or openly murmur. Therefore they live most quietly and with great 2greement, weating their Cotton beds, looking to the affaires of the house, making Gardens and

They io hate adulterous women, that it lyeth in the Husban Is power either to kill the adul- mentreffe, or at the least, to put her away with great ignominie and reproach. This forely is true, The Sauges that they are not very carefull of preferring the chaftitie of vinmarried women: nay, they eafily terre-30 prostitute them to any man. So that (as I haue alreadie said) I haue seene very many in diuers Single women Villages deflowred by the Neuftrian Interpreters, who yet were not reprochfully diffgraced for loofe,

I have observed that the younger fort both men and women are not very much given to lust: How the Ameand I would our Countrey people could moderate themselves aswell in this behalfe. But that I rican women. may attribute no more voto them then is meete, I remember, that often in their brawling they great with wied to object this reproach Tyure, that is, Buggerers, one vnto another, whereby we may conjeting them (eluss, Aure, that that hainous and abhominable wickedneffe raigneth among them. The women great Child-birth. with childe, abstaine only from the greater burthens, and performe the other accustomed ducies. And furely the women much exceed the men in labour, for the men (laue that fometimes in the 40 Morning, neuer at noone, they place certaine Trees to make Gardens) ipend the time in war- The American

fare, hunting, fishing, making of woodden Clubs , Bowes, Arrowes, and other things of that men perkinde. As touching the trauell of women; I and another Frenchman lodging in a certaine Vil- forme the oflage, about midnight heard a great out-cry of a woman, and supposing the had been surprized by fice of Midthe cruell beaft Ian-onare, we arofe, and ran vnto her, and found the woman in trauell, to whom wines. the Husband performed the office of a Midwife: he receiving the Infant in his armes, cut the nauell ftring afunder with his teeth, but preffed downethe N Je (for they efteeme the beautie of children to confift in the flatnesse of the Nose) the new borne Infant is presently washed , and painted by the Father with colours blacke and red : then, not being wrapped in swadling-clouds at all, it is put into a Cotton hanging bedde. But if it bee a Male childe, the Fa her will give The little In-50 him a little woodden Sword, asmall Bow and little Arrowes, presently after his burth, fants Gugawes

and lay them in the bedde with the childe, and kiffing the little Babe will speake vnto what the mahim in these words. My Sonne, when thou are come to mans estate, be valuant to take revenge of thine mer is of suing enemies. As touching the giuing of names, I remember that hee of who a I now spoke, was American named by the Father Orangeen, which word fignifieth a Bow and Bow firings: for the word is names. compounded of Orapat, which is a Bow, and Con which tignifieth a firinge. The fame manner alfo is observed in others.

Their nourishment, beside the Mothers Milke, is chewed Meale, and enery most tender kinde. The food of of meate. The woman lately deducted lieth downe two daies only, or three daies at the most. In:ants. Afterward putting the little childe in a Cotton Scarffe, flee either goeth to the Garden, or to 60 difpatch her other bufin fle.

This opinion hath preuailed with vs, that little children would have crooked legges, volesse they were carefully wrapped and bound in fixadling clouts: But, I. ffirme, that the Barbarians nothing regard thefe things (who p it the new borne Infants naked, and viil wadled in their Cottonbeds) whose children not withit landing, goe most straight and vpright of all the men in the

mrives wo.

The American Infants are ve-

febres.

World. The Mothers who both want linnen, and also vie not the helpe of leaves for these serunces (whereof not withflanding they have great plentie) to diligently wipe the hinder parts of ry clean with the Infants with small chips of wood, that they are continually free from all filth. The elder fore out the vie of also observe the same manner, whom also (digreffing a little into this filthy matter) I thought good linnen clothes to mention, that they vie to make water in their houses, and yet no euill nor stinking iapour arifeth from thence; although they thine bright almost continually with often fires, and are strewed with land : but as often as they doe their easement, they vie to goe apart farre from the Houses.

Moreover, proceeding to speake of the Marriage of the Tononpinambaultians, as far as shame In what things and modeltie will permit, I affirme (contrarie to that which some have forged) that the men obthe Barbarian feruing naturall shamefastnesse, doe no where openly company with their Wives. bufie them-This is especially worth the noting, that for the space of an whole yeere, while we lived in Naturall

those Countries, we neuer faw any woman having the flowres. I thinke that they divert that thimefastnesse Fluxe by some meanes vinknowne to vs. For I saw Maidens of twelve yeeres olde, whose is observed in fides were cut by their Mothers, from the arme-hole downe to the knee, with a very sharpe the American tuske of a certaine beaft. And the young Girles gnashing with their Teeth through extre-The surgation mitie of paine, bleed very much : I conjecture that they preuented their monthly Fluxe by of the Amerithis remedie.

can women. The Barbarians liue peaceably

The punish-

ment of mur-

Leui! 34.19.10

Marriages.

As touching the Policie of the Barbarians, it is scarce credible how well they agree among therafelues, being guided only by the light of Nature. Nor may this be spoken, but to their great fhame who are instructed in divine and humane Lawes, which yet is to bee vinderstood of them 20 who are of the same kindred, or of the Confederates : for how they behave themselves towards their enemies, it hath beene alreadie by vs declared. Yet if any contention arife betweenecertaine perions among them (which very feldome happeneth, for in the whole space of a veere, while I lued among them, it was my chance twice only to fee them brawling) the beholders care not to pacifie the strife : but suffer them to doe their pleasure, although they bee readie to put out one anothers eies. But if the one wound the other, and that hee can bee taken, heeis therers among wounded in the same part of the bodie by the Kinsmen of him that is wounded. Nay, if perthe Barbarians. aduenture death follow the wound, the Murtherer is flaine by the Kinsmen of the dead. Lastly, they recompence eie for eie, tooth for tooth, and life for life. But these things as I faid, very feldome happen among them.

The things of the ground, with them are Cottages, and fields farre larger then might be requi-After what minner the

red for maintenance of the Inhabitants. As touching the Cottages, you are first to understand. that every Village containeth fixe hundred men : wherefore very many are of necessitie to dwell in one and the same Cottage. Notwithstanding everie Family possessing their place without any American fomidistance betweene (for there is nothing that may hinder, but that from one end vnto the other those houses lie open, which for the most part are extended fixtie paces in length) everie Master of a Family hath his wife and children placed apart. Moreouer, you are to objetue (which furely is to be wondred at) that the Americans inhabit not one place aboue fine or fixe moneths. But carrying away the matter and herbe Pindo, whereof their houses consist, they often transport their Villages, which yet alwaies reteine the fame names. Wee our selves faw some Villages re- 40 mooued a mile from the accustomed place. No man buildeth a Cottage, which he is not compelled to finish, nay, to build and plucke downe, aboue twentie times before his death, if hee have attained to the full age of a man. Now if it be demanded of them, why they change their habitation fo often. The answere is easily made. That the changing of the Aire is verie profitable for the health; besides, that if they should alter the custome of their ancestors, they should prefently perish. As touching the fields, euerie Mouffacer hath certains particular plats of ground, which he chooseth at his pleasure wheresoener he thinketh good for the making of Gardens. But that excessive care of dividing the grounds, fetting limits, and bounding the fields, they leave to our Countrie couetous persons, and to the Lawyers.

The transpor-

villages and

peculiarly pof-

Concerning their houshold ftuffe, I haue often spoken in the former Chapters. Yet that wee 13 may not omit any of those things which appertaine to the houshold government of the Barbarians, I will heere recite the cunning of the American women in spinning of Cotton, whereof there is manifold vie, as well for Ropes, as for the weating of their hanging beds.

How the Ame-

Being drawne out of the flockes, in stead of all picking and carding, they plucke it out somerican women what in length with the fingers, and then lay it vpon the ground in a heape (for they know not spin the cotten how to vie Distaffes) in stead of a Spindle they take a little wand of the thicknesse of a finger, and a foot in length, which they thrust through a little wooden round ball, and fasten the Bombasia Cotton to the top of the small wand, then turning that Instrument about upon their thigh (as our Countriewomen doe their Spindles) they let it flip out of their hands. That little round ball is turned about, through the houses and streets, like a Wherue. And after that manner they 60 spinne Threed, not only course and great for the weating of their Cotton Beds, but also that which is most fine. Of this fort I brought some into France , wherewith I caused a faire stomacher to be made of the white Web, which was of io fine and small a Threed, that some tooke it for the best and choicest Silke.

CHAP.2. S. 3. American honshold-staffe. Their manner of entertayning quests. 1242

They call their Cotton beds Inis. The women, to whom this workmanship appertaineth, have their work-houses for their Loomes somewhat valike to those of our Countrie: for they are Init, Cotton neither made flat and plaine, nor confift of fo many fubtile inventions; but being framed to the height of their flature, they worke after their manner, and also beginne their weauing from the hottome. They make certaine of those beds in the forme of Nets, and others thicker, like the finest Cloth. They are fine or fixe foot long, and an ellebroad : vnto either end Cotton loopes are added, vnto the which they fasten cords: and hang them vp in their houses vpon beames, made of the Berberich fic for this vie. But, living in the Campe, or in the woods for hunting, or on the shoares for fishing, in the prep they hang them youn trees. These beds (that wee omit nothing) when they have gathered filth sed and fored

30 either through humane sweat, or by the smoake, by reason of the continual fire, are washed cleane after this manner. The women gather a certaine fruit in the woods, not much volike in thene vnto a plaine Gourd, but farre larger, so that every Apple may scarce bee borne with one hand : thefe fruits they cut into small pieces, and having call them into some very great earthen vessell. they mouften them with water. Then, they vehemently ftirre them about with a flicke, and Fome, which caule a fome to arife from them, through the helpe whereof (in flead of Sope) they make their among the As Beds so cleane, that in whitenesse they may be comparable with the Snowe, or Fullers Clothes. merican su The vie of tuch Beds is farre more commodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then that the Souldiers, after the accommodious in watches, then the souldiers in watches, the souldiers is the souldiers and the souldiers in watches, the souldiers is the souldiers and the souldiers in watches are the souldiers and the souldiers in watches are the souldiers and the souldiers are the souldiers and the souldiers are the souldiers and the souldiers are the sould customed manner, hould tumble in Beds of graffe : for they both foule their garments, and get Lice, and that which is more, if they be to arise vnto the fight, the bodie is bruised in some fort 20 with the Armes, which Souldiers continually weare: which in the fiege of the Citie Sancerra.

we proved in good earnest: For the Enemie lay a whole weere at our Porrs.

That we may gather the rest of the Americane hou hold-stuffe into a short fumme, the women (who have the charge of domesticall matters) prepare huge Cannes, and make very great
Earthen vessels, wherein to put their Cao-win. They also make Pots of duers fashions, little and The American indifferent Basons, Platters, and other things of that fort, veffels which on the outside furely, make huge, are nothing fmooth, but are so polished within, and beautified with I know not what kinde of meane, and tincture, which prefently waxeth hard, so that those women may easily match the industrie of little earther all our Countrie people. Besides, I know not what kinde of ash-colour painting they steepe in vessels, water, and afterwards make divers formes of things in their vessels, within, and specially in 20 thoie wherein they lay up their Meale, and other kindes of meates , to bee preserved. The vie therefore of them is most acceptable, nay those vessels farre excell them of wood, which very

many vie here with vs. Yet thefe Women-painters haue this fault, that when they have pourtraved with the Pencill whitfoeuer they please, if they be intreated to paint the fame againe, they are not possibly able to doe it : because they have no example proposed, beside the industrie of their owne fantalie. Hence it commeth to paffe, that two of thefe kinde of pictures may fcarce be found alike.

Moreouer, (as I have elsewhere faid) the Barbarians have Gourds, and other kindes of fruits. which they divide, and make hollow, and they vie them in flead of Cups, (which they call Co- Post and other wi) and other vessels of divers vies. They have also Panniers, large and meane; and likewise vessels, of 40 Baskets, very finely made of bul-rushes, or yellowish graffe, not much differing from Wheaten fruits, panters

itraw. Their they call Panacon, and in them they put Meale and other things which they and baskers,

Although the Tououpinambaultiani receive firangers very curteoufly, yet the Frenchmen, and The Babaient other Strangers, who are ignorant of their Language, were not a little aftonished in the begin-cutteously en-ning, by reason of their viaccustomed behauiour. When I first conterfed among them (which ternain guests, happened about twenty dayes after our arrivall at the Caftle of Colligne) a certaine Interpreter brought me to certaine Villages, in the Continent : that which I firit faw, in their native Language is called Therraci, but in French, Pepin, by the name of a certaine Pilot, who fometime laded a ship at that place ; foure miles only diffant from our Caftle. In the very entrance the Bar. A pleafant difbarians came thicke about me, and fpake vnto me in these words, Marape derere, Marape dererel things which

that is, By what name are you called? which words, furely, to mee were very barbarous, but one befeliche Aus of them taking off my Hat, put it vpon his head; another girdeth my Girdle and Sword vnto thous when he of them taking on my riat, put is you us meet, and they dull me with their cries, and being closhis naked fide: another putteth on my Coat: and they dull me with their cries, and being closhis the state of the sta thed with my spoiles, runne hither and thither. I then thought that I had loft all, and did not well knowe how fafe I might be among them. But, as I found by experience, that feare arole from my ignorance of their customes, for they vie to doe the like to all strangers, especially vnto them whom they never faw before. Now, when for their recreation, they had walked about a little while in that habite, they precifely restore every thing againe. Then I was advertised by the Interpreter, that they greatly defired to vinderstand my name : but in declaring that, I

60 was to forbeare vivall names with vs, which the Barbarians could neither pronounce (for in flead of falm, they faid Nian) nor yet well remember: but was to propound somewhat which The Authors might be knowne vnto them. The matter succeeded so happily, that, as the Interpreter signis name in the fied vnto mee, who was very skilfull in the Brafition Language, my name Lerine fignified an American lan Oyfier : I therefore answered, that I was called Lorig-onflow. They liked it very well, and of. guage.

ten wing Teh, their Interjection of admiration, they ipake thus vnto me. An excellent name furely, nor have we ever found any Mair, who had luch a name. They have so good and fure a memorie, that if they have once heard any mans name, they never forget it.

The fame day, accompanied with the Interpreter, I went further, and turned into the Village Euramiri, to called in their native Language, but in French, Gofet, after the name of a certaine Interpreter, who dwelt there some little while: wee came thither about Sunne set, and found them danling, and drinking their Cao-sin, by reason of a Captine, whom they had slaine that day. I perceived the pieces of his field laid vpon Boncan. I thinke, you need not enquire with how great and horrible feare I was then thricken : yet that was but a small matter, if it be compared with the feare wherewith I was afterward aftonished. Wee entred into a Cottage, and 10 face your the hanging beds, after the accustomed failion: the women lament after that manner which we will declare, and the Master of the Familie entertaineth vs with friendly words. The Interpreter who was acquainted with thefe matters, and who was very much delighted with their drinkings, leaveth me vnialuted, and ignorant of all things, and went away to them that were danfing, and drinking. But being wearie, after I had refreshed my felfe with Meale, and certaine other meates that were let before vs, I lay downe in the bed. Notwithstanding through the noise of their danfing, drinking, and devouring of the Captine, I was presently awaked, and (which was the chiefelt matter) by one comming vnto mee, who carried the rofted foot of the Capring in his hand, and demanding of mee, as I afterwards understood, for then, I conceived not his words) whether I would eate thereof; I was fo aftonished through feare , that I was al- 30 together freed from drowlinefic and fleepe. And I verily beleeued, by that gefture, which I tooke in the worst part, that the Barbarian had shewed me, that my flesh should shortly after be denoured after the lame manner. Moreover, as feare begetteth ful picion, it came prefently into my minde, that the Interpreter had betrayed , and delivered mee into the Barbarians hands. Wherefore, if I had had any way open to flee, I had quickly taken my flight. But they flood round about mee, whole minde I did not fufficiently knowe, for they attempted no sull assinft mee. Now being confirmed in feare, I valuckily gheffed, that I should presently have beene flaine, wherefore I paffed the whole night in powring forth prayers voto God. At the first dawning of the day, the Interpreter (who had passed all the night in pleasure with the Barke vient) returned voto mee, and law mee pale, and taken with a Feuer, whereupon he demanded to whether I were ill at cale, & whether I had not quietly rested. Then I began sharply to reprove him, who had left me alone among thoie Barbarians, whole speach I vnderstood not at all. Her openeth the whole matter to them who flood by me all the night, to congratulate my comming: they fignifie, that they perceived the matter in some fort, and yet were forrie, that I had naffed that night in fo great feare of them. And at length they breake out into diffolute laughter, which was the folace and comfort of that my feare. From thence I and that Interpreter . went wato certaine other Villages.

There are the Rites which the Barbarians observe in entertayning Guests. First of all, as some as the Guelt entreth into the house of that Monfacat, which hee hath chofen to bee his Holl, (which is to be done in every Village, nor are you to turne into another, vnletle you will incurre 40 his difpleafure) he must presently fit downe upon a Cotton hanging Bed, and remaine quietly The American there a while without speaking any word. By and by, the women come vnto him, compalle the Bed about, and fitting on the ground, put their hands on their eyes, and bewayling the happie comming of the Gueft after this manner, they rehearle innumerable things in his commendation. As for example: Hane you taken fo much paines to come unto us : you are good, you are valiant. But if the Guest be a Frenchman, they adde, you have brought very many excellent merchandises unto us, which we want here. To conclude, those women, as hath beene faid, entertaine Guests wee-Thegefure of ping, with fuch like flattering speeches. But the Guest who sitteth on a Cotton bed, if he defire to procure fauour with his Holt, fettling his countenance, valeffe hee meane to weepe in good earnest (as I saw some of our men of so weake a courage, that teares were forced from them, 10 through the howling lamentation of these women) he must of necessitie counterfeit weeping. answering somewhat at the least, and fetching deepe tighes. This most pleasant salutation being ended by the women, Monfacat, that is, the Mafter of the Familie, being builly employed in making of an Arrow, casts not so much as his eyes for a certaine time voon the Guest, as if he marked nothing. At length comming vnto the Gueft, hee speaketh vnto him in thele words: Ere loube? that is, Are you come? then, bow doe you? what feeke you? &c. After , hee demandeth, whether you be bungrie? if you grant that you are, prefently he commandeth meates of diuers kindes to be tet before you in earthen vessels, to wit, Meale, which with them supplieth the place of bread, Venilon, Fowle, Fifh, and other things of that kinde: but because there is no vie with them, for Tables, and Benches, all those things are set on the ground. As touching 60 Drink, if you defire Cas-win, & that it be in the houle, it shall prefently be given you. Lastly after the women have floutly tolemnized the comming of the Guetts with weeping, they come vato them bringing Fruits, and other trifling Prefents, and to, fecretly, demand Combes, Lookingglasses, and little Beades of glasse, which they winde about their armes.

wayle the comming of Gueffs.

mong the A.

How Menfacet his Guelle

Moreover, if you will lodge all night in that Village, the Mouffacat commandeth a very near and cleane bed to be hanged vp for you, round about which he will cause smal fires to be kindled. and often quickned in the night with Bellows, which they call Tatapecona, not much volike the little round Fannes, wherewith the nicer and more delicate fort of women with vs. defend the forching of fire from their faces. Not because that Countrie is subject voto cold, but by reason of the moisture of the night, and especially, because it is their viual manner. Now seeing we have chanced to mention Fire, which they call Tata, and Smoake Tatatin, I thinke it needfull that I declare the excellent manner of kindling the fame. They have two kindes of wood. whereof the one is very foft, but the other very hard, which they vie after this manner to to kindle fire. They sharpen a twig of a foot long of that hard wood at the one end like a Spindle. and sticke the point thereof in any piece of that fort wood, then laying it on the ground, or vp. on a flocke, they turne that twig fwittly about with the palmes of their hands, as if they would pierce an hole through the piece of wood which lieth under. Through that to fwift and violent motion, fmoake is not onely raifed, but also fire; putting Cotton vnto it, or certaine drie leaves (in flead of our Countrie tinder) fire is very aptly ingendred : whereof I my felfe have made triall.

After that the Guests have refreshed themselues with meate, and lodged after the manner Howstraneers which we have declared, if they be liberall, they vie to give vnto the men Kniues, Scizzers, and require their Pinters fit for the plucking out of the haires of their beards: to the women, Combes, and Loo- Hoft. an king-glaffes : and to the children, Fish-hookes. But, if the Guest want victuals, when he bath agreed of the price, he may carrie them away. Moreover, because they want all kinde of beaffe of burden, they are all of necessitie to trauell on foot. If Strangers bee wearie, and give a Knife to any of the Barbarians, he presently offereth his helpe to carrie him that is wearie. I my selfe The Barbarians when I lived in those Countries, was divers times carried by those Porters, and that furely two carrie Stranmiles iourney together. And if wee admonished them to rest a little, they laughed at vs with gers vpor these word; What? Thinke you that wee are so effeminate, or of so weake a courage, that wee should faint, and lie downe under our burden? I would rather carrie you all the day without any intermission. But we breaking out into laughter, wondered at those two legged Hackneyes, and encouraging Two legged them, faid : let vs therefore proceed on the way.

They exercise naturall charitie abundantly among themselves, for they daily give one vnto The Bertorium another, both Fish, Meale, and Fruits, and also other things: nay, they would be very sorrie, if practif charithey faw their neighbours want those things which they have. They also vie the like liberalitie the even by the towards Strangers : whereof, it shall be sufficient, to bring one example. In the tenth Chapter direction of of this Booke, I made mention of a certaine danger, which my felfe, and two other Frenchmen escaped, to wit, that we were in great perill of death, by reason of an huge Lizard which met vs in the way: at that time, wee wandred two dayes through the middle of the Woods out of the way, and indured no meane hunger, and at length came vnto a certaine Village called Pane. where wee had lodged before. There wee were most liberally entertained by the Barbarians, For, having heard the troubles which wee had fuffered, and specially the great danger wherein 40 we were, that we were likely to have beene denoured by wilde beafts, but chiefly, that wee were in danger to bee flaine by the Margainter, our common enemies , neere voto whole borders wee approached vnawares: and, feeing also the hurts and feratches of thornes, wherewith our skin was miferably rent, they tooke our harmes fo grieuously, that I may here truly affirme, that the faigned flatteries wherewith our Countrie people vie to comfort the distressed, are fare from the fincere humanitie of that Nation, which we call Barbarous. For, they washed our feet with Anotable excleare water (which put me in minde of the ancient cultome) every one of vs fitting apart upon ample of the an hanging Bed. Then the Mafters of the Families, who had alreadie prouided meates to curtefic of the be prepared for vs, and caused new Meale to be ground, which (as I elsewhere said) is nothing Barbariant. inferiour vnto the crumme of white bread, in goodnesse, presently, after wee had beene a little refreshed, commanded all the best meates, to wit, Venison, Fowle, Fish, and the most exquisite and choicest Fruits, where with they continually abound, to bee fet before vs. Moreouer, the night approching, the Monfacat our Host, remoueth all the children from vs, that wee might the more quietly rest. The next day after, early in the morning, he commeth vnto vs. and demandeth, goe to Atourassap, (that is, dearly beloued Confederates) bane you quietly rested this night? wee answered, very quietly. Then faith he ; my fonnes, rest year felues yet a while, for, yea flerday, I peroximed that you were very mearie. To be briefe, I am not able to expresse with words, how friendly, and curteoully wee were entertained. But wee neuer trauelled farre from home

60 Kniues Sizzers, Pinfers, to the men : Combes, Looking-glaffes, Bracelets, and glaffen Beades, to the women : and Fish-hookes to the children, I one day turned out of the way to lodge in a certaine Village, and was requested by my Barbarians c-Mouffacat, to flew him what I had in my Sachell, who commanded a great earthen reffell to freme kniues, bee brought, wherein to put my merchandifes: I tooke them all out, and fet them in order: and chardifes

without a Sachell full of Merchandises, which might serue vs in stead of money among those

Barbarians. Departing therefore thence, we gave our Hosts, what wee thought good: to wit,

whereat he greatly wondring, calleth the rest of the Barbarians unto him, and faith. See I pray you, my good friends, what manner of man I have entertained with me : doth it not manifelt. ly appeare that he is very rich, feeing he carrieth fo great wealth about him? yet those would scarce have beene fold at Paris, for two filter Cardicues. Then, because (as we have faid) they loue liberall men, that I might procure authoritie and fauour among them, I gaue my Monffacat the best of my Kniues before them all, which he esteemed no lesse, then any one with vs would regard a golden chaine, of very great price, bestowed vpon him. If peraduenture it happen, that any of them fall ficke, when the inward and familiar friend

of the ficke person hath declared the grieued part, one sucketh it with his mouth, sometimes al-Pages, the Bar- so that service is performed by certaine impostors, which they call Pages, that is, Physicians, or to barkens Physi- Surgeans. (But they are a kinde of People differing from the Carabes, whereof I have spoken before.) And they also say, that they draw out the paine, and prolong the life. They are sometimes ficke of Feuers, and other common difeafes : but, not fo often, as wee vie to bee. Moreouer, they are troubled with a certaine incurable difease, which they call Pians. This, for the most part proceedeth of luft; yet, I have seene the little children infected therewith not vnlike the manner of our Countrie Meafels. This contagion breaketh out into puffler, broader then a thumbe, which overf pread the whole bodie, and also the face it felfe. They never give meate to the ficke, vnleffe he defire it, although he be readie to perifh through hunger. Moreover, ale though it be the most grieuous ditease, they that are healthie, neuer cease dansing, singing, and drinking after the accustomed manner, to dull and wearie the miserable sicke person with the noise: nor doth he complaine, because he knoweth, that he shall not preuaile at all. But, if hee die, that finging (especially if he be a Master of any familie) is suddenly turned into teares, and so great lamentation is made, that if by chance we turned into a certaine Village, at the time of that mourning, we were of necessitie to goe to some other place, or passe the night without fleepe. First of all, not without admiration, the women are heard, which so crie out and exclaime, that you would say they were the howling of Wolues or Dogs, and no humane voices. But they powre forth thele complaints with a trembling voice. That most valiant man is dead, who sometimes gave vs so many Captines to be denoured. Then the rest say, O notable Hunter, O most excellent Fisher, O valiant Killer of the Portugals, and Margaiates. To be briefe, those women prouoking one another to mourning, and embracing armes together, defift not from thefe to lamentations, and praifes, before the dead bodie be brought forth.

> men, whom, as I have heard, they follow with these complaints. Lami amon, la mi amon, care rident, wil desplendon, cama lenge, bet dansadon: La me balen, lo m'esburbat: mati depes: fort tard cone at. that is. My friend, my triend, with a merrie countenance, thining eyes, fwift legs, notable danfer, firong and valiant, thou diddeft arite early, and goe late to bed. The Valcone women alfo, who adde thefe things to the former, Tere, vere, o le bet renegadon, o le bet jougadon qu'bere: that is, Alas, alas, how itout and deepe a Swearer was hee, how notable a Gamester? Moreover, to those complaints whereof we spoke, the Barbarian women often adde this burden of the Song, He is dead, be is dead, whom we now lament. Then the men answere: Alas, be so u dead, and wee hall see him no more, until wee danse with him behind the Mountaines, as our Cagaibes teach. Those howling lamentations are prolonged for fixe hours; for they vie not to Reepe their Dead any longer vnburied. Then digging a Trench, not long as we vie, but circular, like a great Drie-far, they burie the dead bodie bolt vpright. The dead Masters of Families, they burie in the middeft of their houles, wrapped in their Cotton bed, with feathers, and other things, wherein they delighted in their life time, laide in the Grave, Since their commerce with the French they have forborne to put precious things in the Graves: but they retained a Grange and very deuillish Superstition. The first night after the Funerall, the Barbarians, who are thus perswaded, that Aygnan, valesse he found other meates prepared, would digge up the dead bodie, and deuoure it, fet no small store of vessels, with Meale, Fish, Flesh, and other meats so carefully prepared, and also great pots full of their drinke Cassain, about the Graue. Which Sacrifice they performe so long, vntill they thinke that the dead bodie bee wholly consumed. From the which errour they were the more hardly removed, because certaine Newstrian Interpreters, by example of the Sacrifices of Bell, divers times before our comming, privily fiole a-

Lastly, these Barbarian women imitate the Bearneansian custome in bewayling their dead

Americans. A very deuil-

The Graues.

and rites of

buriall of the

Dan.I4.

though we shewed them, that those meates fet downe in the evening, remained in the morning, yet with great labour and difficultie we diffwaded very few from that errour. As often as the Barbarians transport their Villages vnto another place, after the manner which wee have declared, they put certaine coverings of the herbe Pinde youn the Graves of the Dead. Whereby it commeth to passe, that Trauellers may take notice of a certaine forme of a place of buriall. At which places, if at any time wandring in the Woods, they remember

way those meates. Through which fact they so confirmed the Barbarrans in errour, that al-

the dead men, they make so great lamentation, that they may be heard farre off. Worse then their howlings here, worse then their former man-eatings, is the tragicall famine which attended Lerius and his fellowes in their returne, besides dangers of Shippiracke, resolution of some to CHAPAS, I. Hulderickes passages from Antwerpe to the River of Plate.

bill their fellower for freed, Thether by Sea in 500. fathome depth feating like a Marish, the borbes yel-lowish, with Berress the those of limiter, the leanes the Rue, with threads the grownd lais fisting on the Sea, but not safet) bendled; in some places redde this the concombes summing, the concinne of which consided the hand preferring to speel) as also his Braidian Dichemerie, Ge, for breussie I have bonic-ted Villagagnons Apostalie from the Religion was the cause of their departure; whose malice parsued them homewords to pronounce them to bee burned for Herefie upon his accufation at home : as they were faint to line from him in Bratill. Wee will leave this Religions Frenchman , and acquaint you with a Germane.

CHAP. IIII.

The tranels of HVLDERIER SCHNIRDEL in twentie necres face from 1524. to 1554, abbreniated.

His Voyage up the River of Plate, foundation of Townes, their expedition up the River of Parana and Parabol; the people of thefe parts.



Nas 1534. I went from Antwerps to Cadiz, and there found fourteene thins furnithed for the River of Plate. There were 2500. Spaniards , 150. high and low Dutch, vnto which I joyned my felfe. They fet forth in September the fame verreand (having had some trouble at Palma, one of the Cavaries, about stealing of a Citizens Daughter by George Mendeza, a Kinfman of the Commander Den Pedro de Mondoza arrived at the river lonero. They call these Indians, Tompin Here we abode Towns

fourteene daies, and Petro Mendozaour Generall then gave commandement to loba Oforius his

fworne Brother, to take charge of vs in his steed, because hee being weake, and consumed in his members, was much troubled almost with continuall ficknesse and diseases. But when a little after the gouernment received, Iohn Oforus had beene fallly accused, and by forgerie, to Mendoza his (worne brother, as though he had gone about feditionity to firre the company against himthe faid Mendoza commanded other foure Captaines (to wit) John Enoldas, John Saleifen, George Luchfam, and Lazarus Saluafeho, that having stabbed him with a Dagger, they should expose Mendre him as a Traitor in the middle of the Plaine, to the view of all beholders. And straightly com-cruelise, manded it publikely to be given in charge, that no man vpon paine of death disquiet or trouble 40 himfelfe in the behalfe of Oferius, for if he did, he should be no more respected, who so ever, or of what condition focuer he were. But hee was altogether injuried. For hee was an honest man, and a flout and couragious Warriour, and courteous, liberall, and verie beneficiall to his fellow Souldiere.

6. Departing hence with our ships and going to the River of Plate, we came into a pleasant R. Parone F. River, which they call Parana Vraffa. It is farre from the mouth of the River where the Sea raffa, leaves it, and is fortie two leagues broad. And from the River lange to this River are two huns dred and fifteene leagues. Heere wee came to a Hauen called Saint Gabriel, and all our fourteene thins anchored in the River Parana. But because we were to abide in the greater shippes on the water, a Musket shot from the Land, our Generall Petro Mendoza gaue commandement to fee 50 the people and Souldiers aland in the leffer Skiffesor Boats, which they call Potten, then prepared for that purpose. So by the grace and bleffing of God, in the yeere of Christ 1535, wee happily arrived at the River of Plate, and there we found a row of houses, or an Indian Village, R. of Plate, wherein there were about 2000.men, whom they call Zecharnas, who eate no other thing, faue Lecharus, fish and fielh. And goe all naked, but that the women couer their secrets, with a thinne piece of Cotton-cloth, which reacheth from the Nauell to the knees. They therefore at our comming, leauing the Towne, fled away with their wives and children. Then our Generall Mendoza commanded the people to be shipped againe, and conveied over to the other fide of the River Para-

na, where the bredth of the River extendeth it felfe no more then eight leagues. 7. In this place wee built a Citie, which for the wholfomeneffe of the Aire wee called Bones Buenos Acte. 60 Fres. We brought with vs slio out of Spains feuentie two Horfes and Mares, in our fourteene build thips, We found also another Village in this Countrie, which the Indians inhabit, whom they call Carendes, of whom there were about 3000. men, together with their wives and children. These allo as the Zechnruss are covered from the Navell only voto the knees, who brought established vs fish and fiesh to eate. These Carendies have no Proper and settled dwellings, but wander in the

Ttttt 2

· Giolies.

Gount in hither and thither, almost as our Cingari, and Zigenners, When they take their iours ney in the Summer, they oftentimes trauell thirtie leagues and more by Land, and finde not a drop of water to drinke. If they light upon a Stagge or other wilde beaft, when they have killed it, they drinke the bloud thereof : fometimes they find a Roote , which they call Cardes, and chewing that, they quench thirft. But that they drinke bloud, this birly is the cause . for that they want other drinke, and peraduenture without this, they should die for thirst, Thele Corndies for tourteene daies imparted liberally of their pouertie, and daily brought fifth and flesh when our Campe, one day only excepted, wherein they came not to vs at all. Therefore our Generall Don Petro Mendoza fent our Corrigidor lan. Baban and two Souldiers vnto them (for thefe Carendierabode foure leagues diffant from our Campe)but they fointreated them when they came to vato them, that they tent them home all three foundly cut and mangled with stripes. But when our Generall Petro Mendoza vnderitood thefe things by report of the Judge ; who for this caufe raifed a tumult in our Campe, he fent his owne naturall Brother Don Dieco Mendezaa. gainst them with three hundred Souldiers, and thirtie readle light Horsemen, among the which I also was one, straightly charging him to kill, and take all the faid Indian Carendies, and possesse their Towne. But when we came vnto them, there were now fome 4000, men gathered together: for they had fent for all their familiars, and friends to helpe them.

The fight or skirmith with the Indian Carendacs.

8. When we fer voon them, they fo relifted vs, that they put vs to trouble enough that day; for they flue our Captaine Don Diego Mendoza, and fixe Gentlemen with him, and of the horse and foote about some twentie. But on their part there fell about 1000, men. Therefore they fought couragiously and floutly against vs, which wee felt by experience. The weapons 20 of these Carendies are Bowes, and a kinde of Dart like the staffe of a Speare of a middle length, whose point the yarme with a flint called a Marchafate, with an edge in forme of the three edged T underbolt. They have also bowles of stone hanging at a long coard, somewhat like our plummets of Lead. Thele bowles they so castabout the teet of Horses, or Stagges, that they are constrained to fall. After this manner they flue our Captaine, and the Gentlemen with these bowles, which I my felfe beheld, but they flue the Footmen with their Darts : yet by the grace of God (to whom be praise) we ouercame them in battaile, and possessed their Towne. But we could take none of their Indians; their wives and children also, before we assailed them by warre had fled into another Village. We found nothing in this Towne of theirs, but Otter skins, plen- 30 tie of fielh and flowre, and the trane of fish. Abiding therefore three daies we remained in that place, and after returned to our Campe, leaving 100. men there, who in the meane time should fish with the Indians Nets, to maintaine our Souldiers more plentifully : for the waters there are maruellous full of fish : for three ounces only of flowre made of fine Wheate were distributed to euerie one for one daies victuall, and euerie three daies one fish. This fishing lasted two moneths. and if any would eate fish otherwise, he must seeke them on foot foure leagues off. 9. When we returned to our Campe, they that were fit for labour among the people, were

Of the buildings of the " Circ of Bones A resend of the famine which they indurea there.

Miserable fa-

How forme faiucr of Parana or the Ruer of

separated from them that were fit for warre, that every one might be put to service agreeable vnto him. The Cirie therefore began to be built there, and a wall of earth to be raifed about it, to to the heighh of a Speare or lauelin, and in the Citie a firme and strong house for our Generall. 40 The wall of the Citie was three foot broad. But that which was built to day the next day fell downe againe. For the people wanting food, lived in great scarcitie, so that many died of famine, nor could the Horses satisfie them. There was not plentie enough of Dormice, or other-Mice, or Serpents, or other wild beafts, to affwage this lamentable famine and vnfpcakable pouertie. Not io much as shooes and other Leather could avoid this rage of devouring. It fell out also at that time, that three Spaniards having stolne a Horse, did privily eate him. Which as foone as it was discourred, they were gricuously tormented, and questioned touching the fact, and when they confessed it, they were condemned to the Gallowes. When they were hanged, three other Spaniards conforted themselves together, who the same night going to the Gallowes. cut off the legges of them that were hanged, and cut out pieces of fielh from their bodies, that so in their Cottages they might affwage vntollerable hunger by eating thereof. A certaine Spaniard (through exceeding hunger) eate his owne brother, who died in the Citie of Buenas Acres. 10. When therefore our Generall Don Petro Mendoza faw, that the people could no longer be

fustained and preferued in this place, he prefently commandeth foure small Barkes which they call Brigantines, or small men of warre, and are carried with Oares to bee made readie, whereof euerie one will hold fortie men : there were alto three other leffe called Potten. These seuen little Veffels therefore being made readie and dispatched, our Generall commanded the company to be mustered, and George Luchsam with 250 readie and able men, to faile up the River and seek out the Indians, that we might get provision of victuals and food. But the Indians understanding before of our presence, burnt their prouision of victuall, and what societ was good to eat, together 60 with their Villages, and runne away. But wee in the meane feafon got no food, and for eueric daies allowance vnto euerie man, one ounce and an halfe of bread was distributed, whereby it came to palle, that in this journie the halfe part of our Souldiers perished through famine. Wee therefore of necessitie returned to the said Towne where our Cienerall was, who greatly wonCHAPASI Buenas Acres fiercely affaulted. The people of Tiembus deferibed 1240

dred, that fo small a number of people should returne, seeing we were no more then fine mone; his ahfent, and he demanded of our Capraine George Lachfam to declare vinto him what hee had done in this journie, who lignified, that they who were wanting, died of famine, because the Indian i had confumed all the food with fire, and after run away themselues.

11. All thefe things falling out thus as I have faid, yet we continued together in the Towne How the town 11' All their things falling out in the year that the fall while the furniture of our shippes of burner Arts to whole moneth in great want, expecting while the furniture of our shippes was beinged, should be similated. In the meane while, in the yeare 1535, the Indian's jipuade vs and our Cities of adjusted and all the shippes of the indian's property of the indian's p Buenas Aeres, with the ffrength of twentie three thousand men, and in their Armie there were burnt. foure distinct Nations (to wit) Cariendes, Bartennis, Lecharade, and Tiembas. The purpose and Foure Nations to principall intention of all thefe was, to kill vs all. But praife and glorie hee to God . who faued of indient. the greatest part of vs fafe from deltruction. For rogether with the Captaines, and Ancients and other Souldiers, there were not aboue thirtie men of ours flaine.

When therefore they first came to our Citie of Buenas Meres, some of them ranne furiously to affault it others cast fierie Darts voon our houses all which (except our Generals house which only was courred with File) were only thatched : and by that meanes all our Citie, together with Their fights & all the houses was confirmed with the flames, even from the foundation. The Weapons or Darts weapons, of these Indians are made of Reed, which when they are cast or shot out, take fire in the point. They have a kind of wood also whereof they make their Darts, which if they bee fired before they be cast, are not quenched, but (et houses (couered with Thatch) on fire, and so those that 20 touch or joyne together burne together.

In this fight these Indians burnt vs also foure great shippes, which were halfe a league distant Foureships from vs on the water. But the Souldiers who were in thele thips , when they faw that mightie burned, tumult of the Indians, betooke themselves to flight from these foure shippes, into three others, which rode not farre from these, and were furnished with Ordnance. They therefore when they faw the foure thips burne, began to defend themfelues, and eagerly to affault the Indians and Het flee the bullets which caused them to leave the assault and depart, giving rest vnto the Christians. All this was done on the Feast of Saint John the Evangelist. In the yeere 1935.

1 2. All thefe things being past and done, all the people went into the ships, and our Generall They muster Don Petro Mendoza made lobn Eyollus his Deputie, creating him Lieutenant Generall, deliue- their Son ring ouer vnto him the whole government of all as allo of the people. He taking a view of the diers, and build company, of two thousand fine hundred men, which came from Spaine together in thips, hee further. found only fine hundred and fixtic aline : all the rest were dead, whom for the most part the in- The most of tollerable famine had confumed.

After this, our Lieutenant lobn Eyollus, commandeth eight little Barkes, which they call famine, Bregantines and Post, speedily to be built. And of fine hundred and fixtie which remained aline. hee tooke vnto him foure hundred men : leaving the other one hundred and fixtie to take charge of the foure great thips; ouer whom hee fet Iohn Romero the chiefe commander, leaving provision for a whole yeere, fo that foure ounces of bread were distributed to every man for his daily al-

40 13. After this our Lieutenant John Eyollus with his foure hundred Souldiers, which hee had with him, among whom also Petro Mendoza our Generall was, faileth vp the River of Parana, in the Brigantines and Potes, furnished for this purpose, vntill wee came ento the Indians, which They goeyp was pe formed in the space of two moneths, from our comming forth of the Citie of Balenas A- the River, eres, to that wee were now eightie foure leagues distant from our faid burnt Citie. When therefore we were not about foure leagues from these people (which they call Tiembus, but wee Tiembus, called them Bona speransa) and they understood of our comming before, about four hundred men of them came peaceably vnto vs in their Boats, which they call Canoas, in every one of the which Canoas fixteene person sate. When therefore we met together in the River, our Generall gaue the Captaine of these Indians of Tiembus, (whom they call Zchara Wasu) a shirt, 2 red Cap, a Hatchet, and certaine other things. Which prefents beeing received, the laid Zchare 50 Waffe brought vs into their Towne, fetting before vs fish and flesh plentifully, and sufficient food, to that we were exceeding well contented. For if this Voyage of ours had continued yet

hundred men, who came together in the ships, fiftie were dead. These people of Tiembus, weare on either nostrill a blue starre artificially made of a white and blue stone; they are large men, and of a tall stature, but the women as well young as old, are very deformed with torne faces, and alwaies bloudie : from the Nauell to the knees they are courred with Cotton-cloth, the rest is naked. Tais people hath no other meare saue fish and fiesh, nor euer lived with any other thing. The strength of this Nation is thought to be fif eene thousand 60 men or more. The Skiffes or Boates which they vie are made of a Tree eightie foote long, and Des Perso Men three broad, which (as the Fishermens Boats of Germanie) are rowed with Oares, faue that their deca being a-

but ten daies longer, we should all have died with famine, as even now in this Voyage of foure

Oares are not bound with Iron. 14. We abode foure whole yeeres in the forefaid Village or Towne, but our Generall or Ad- into Spaine mirall Petro Mendoza, by reason of his extreame and continuall sicknesse, in that hee was able diethin the

neither to stirre hand nor foote, and had spent in this journey of his owne about fortie thousand Ducates of ready money, would no longer flay with vs in this Towne, but returneth in two Brigantines to Buenes Acres, to the foure greater Shippes, and there taking two of them, and fiftie Souldiers, he intended to returne into Spaine, but scarce halfe the journey performed, the hand of almightie God fo smote him, that he miterably died. But before his departure he certainly promited vs, that he would doe his best, as soone as he, or the Ships returned into Spaine, that two other Shippes should be fent backe to the River of Plate (which by his will he had to ordained, and was faithfully also performed) furnished with Souldiers, provision of victuals Merchandife, and other things necessary for fuch a voyage.

14. The name of the Commander of these two Shippes was Alfonso Gabrers, who also brought 10 with him two hundred Spaniards, and prouision for two yeares. He arrived at the Towne of Buen from Spameto. nas Aeres, in the yeare 1 539, where we left the other two Shippes (when weedeparted) togewards the rute ther with one hundred and fixtie men. They prefently fent away a Shippe into Spaine, provided for this purpole (for fo the Counfell of the Emperours Maieftie commanded) and delivered orderly and at large to the faid Counfell the state and condition of thefe Countries, and people, and other circumstances. After this, our Generall John Eyollas confulting with Alfonso Gabrero. Martino Don Eyollas, and the reft of the Captaines, judgeth it to be most convenient to muster the Souldiers; which being done, together with ours, and those who came first from Spaine, fine hundred and fiftie men were found of thefe; they choose vnto them foure hundred men, leaving one hundred and fiftie in Tumbus. 16. By this order of the Captains, we faile up the river Parana, with thefe foure hundred men.

They fails fur-R. Pa abel.

shipped in eight Brigantines, seeking another River, whereof we were told, called Parabel, at uer of Parane the which the Carior dwell, for these were reported to abound with Turkysh graine, and roots. soward coming of the which they make wine, and also fish, and fiesh, and Sheepe as bigge as Mules, and Harts, Hogges, Eftridges, Hennes, and Geele. Departing therefore from the Hauen of Bona Speranza, with our eight Brigantines, failing foure leagues the first day, we came to a Nation called Curende which live with fielh and fish. This Iland is 1 2000. ftrong of men fit for warre, and hath great flore of Canoes. This Nation is like the former Tumbus, with little stones hanging dangling in their notes. The men also are of a tall stature, but the women, as well your as old, detorthefe Sausges med, with rugged and bloudy faces: And are no otherwise apparelled then they of Tumbus, to 10 wit, covered with a Cotten cloath from the navell to the knees, as is before faid. These Indian haue great plenty of other skinnes. There men did liberally communicate vinto vs of their pouerty, or of that little they had, Fish, Flesh, Skinnes, to whom contrariwise wee gaue Glasses, Beades, Looking-glaffes, Combes, Kniues, and Fish-hookes, and abode with them two dayes. They gave vs alio two men of Carros, who were their captines, to be our Guides and Interpreters. 17. Sailing further hence, we came to another Nation called Gulgaifi, which is able to bring

40000 men for warre, into the field. This Nation also hath two flones at their nose; it

We came to Gukail & Ma-

was thirty leagues distant from the Island Curenda, and they and the inhabitants of Tiembus have the fame language. They dwell upon a Lake fixe leagues long, and foure broat fituate on the left 🙍 fide of the River Parana. We stated here foure daies, and these men imparted to vs of their pourtie, and we did the like to them : proceeding further thence, for the whole space of eighteens daies we light on no men, but afterward we came to a River, flowing into the Countrie it felfe. In that Country we found a great number of men come together, which they call Macuerendan These have nothing to eate, saue fish, and a little flesh, and are 18000 strong of warlike men, and have a great number of Boates. These men after their manner intertained vs courteously enough; they dwell on the other fide of the River Parana, rowards the right hand, have a differing tongue from the former, and are tall men, and of a good proportion, but their women also are very deformed. They are distant from those whom they call Gulgaist fixtie foure leagues. While we re-Huge Serpent, mained idell among these people foure daies, we found an huge monitrous Serpent fine and twenty foote long, lying on the land not farre from the shoare, which was as bigge as a man of a blacke colour, spotted with a deepe yellow. This Serpent we killed with a Gunne, which when the /ndiens faw, they wondered thereat with great aftonishment, for they themselves had never seene

any fo great before. This Serpent, as the Indians themselves said, had done much hurt vnto them; for when they washed themselves in the water, the Serpents finding men there, wound their tailes about them, and having drawne them under water, devoured them, fo that the Indians knew not oftentimes what became of many of them. I diligently measured the length and thicknesse of this Serpent, which the Indians cutting in peeces, every one carried part home vnto their houses, and being fod and roafted did after eate thereof.

co,and Nepe-

18. From hence failing further vp the River of Parana, in foure daies journey we came to a Nation, called Zemais Saluaifco. The men of this Countrie are of a short stature, and of a gross body. They live with nothing elfe faue fish, flesh, and hony. Both men and women goe naked,25 Zenias Salvaif- they came into the world when they were first borne, so that they couer not their body so much

as with a thred, no not their privile parts. They make watre with the Macuerendan; the fleth they eate is the fleth of Stagges, Boares, Estridges, Conies, which excepting the taile are not much volike a Dor-moule or Rere-moufe. They are fixteene leagues distant from the Macheren. des, which distance we failed in foure daies, and abode one onely day with them.

Departing hence, we came vnto another Nation called Mepenes, who are 10000. ftrong. Mese These people dwell scattered here and there, every where in that Countrie, extending it selte force leagues in length and breadth, yet within two daies both by water and land they may all come together. The multitude of the Boates they have exceedeth the number of themselves as we faw when we were with them : and in fuch a Boate or Canoa about twentie persons 10 are carried. This people received vs in hostite and warlike manner with fine handred Canoas vpon the River, but with little profit for them felues, for we flew many of them with our fliot, for they had never before feene either Gunnes or Christians. But comming to their hories, wee could preuaile nothing against them, seeing they were a whole league distant from the River of Parana, where our Ships lay. The waters also about their Towne were very deepe; which ran out of a Lake, so that we could performe nothing against them, that was of any worth, faue that we burned and deftroyed two hundred and fiftie Canoas which we had taken. Neither did we thinke it good also for vs, to depart so farre from our Shippes. feeing it was to be feared leaft they would affaile vs from the other fide : We returned therefore to our Shippes.

This people of Mepenes fight onely upon the water, and is diffant from the former Countrie of 20 Zemais Salnaisco, from whence we departed ninetie fiue leagues.

10. Sailing up higher from thence, and in eight daies space arriving at a certaineRiver, we light Orthe River on a Nation that was very populous, called Cueremaghas, which also litteth onely with fifth and Paraboland the fielh. They have Cherrie trees, of the which they make wine. This people bestowed their best people, wereaffections upon vs, and curreoully imparted those things unto vs whereof we stood in neede. maghat, and dy-The people are of a huge and tall stature, both men and women. The men haue a little hole in the transfer of a huge and tall stature, both men and women. their noie, into the which, for ornament, they put a Parrats feather. The women paint their Men or tall faces with long blew streakes, which all the time of their life are neuer put out. They couer stature. their privities with Cotten cloath, from the nau-Il to the knees: from the forefaid people of Their gallianty Mepenes, to these Cueremaghas are fortie leagues: so we staied in this place three daies.

Departing thence, we came to another Nation, called Aygair, which also liveth with fish Aygair, and fielh. The men and women are of a tall flature : the women like the former paint their faces, and couer their prinities after the fame manner. When therefore we arrived on their coaft? taking armes, in hostile manner they resisted vs, and would have stopped our passage. We order red our battale both by land and water, and fighting with them flew many of them fifteene alfo of our men were flaine. These Aygain are thout warriers on the water, but not so by land. Being ready to fight against vs, they had conucighed away their wines and children to another place before, and had hidden, whatfoeuer prourion of meate or other like things they had, fo that we could get nothing from them. Their Village is scituate neere the Riner called lepidus, having the River called Parabellon the other fide, descending from the Montainous Countries 40 of Peru, neere the Citie Fuech Kamin. These Aygan are diltant from the foresaid Cueremachas

thirtie fiue leagues.

20. Departing from these people, we came to a Nation called Carior, fiftie leagues distant Of the people from the Again, with whom (by Gods grace) we found (as wastold vs) plentie of Mais, Potatoes Carins. and Mandischpobier, having the taste of a Chestnut, of which they make wine. They have also fish, flesh, wilde Bore, Estridges, Indian Sheepe, as big as our Mules, also Conies, Hens, Goates, and fuch like : fufficient plenty of Honie, whereof, by boiling it, they make a kinde of Coine. This Country also aboundeth with Cotten.

These people of Carior inhabit a large Countrie, extending it selfe three hundred leagues in Cariocustomes

length, and breadth: they are men of a flort flature, and thicke, and more able to indure worke and labour then the reft. The men have a little hole in their lippes, and yellow Christall 50 therein (which in their language they call Parabol) of two spannes long, and of the thicknesse of a quill or reede. The men and women both in this Countrie, goe all naked, as they were created of God. Among ft their Indians the Father fels the Daughter, the Husband the wife, Sometimes also the Brother doth either sell or change the Sister. They value a Woman at a Shirt, a Knife, a Hatcher, or some other thing of this kinde. These Carios also eate mans flesh, if they can get it. For when they take any in the warres, whether they be men or women , yong or old, they fatten them, no otherwise then wee doe Hogges. But they keepe a woman some yeeres, if the be yong, and of a commendable beautie, but if in the meane time, the apply not her felfe to all their delires, they kill, and eate her, making a folemne banquet, as marriages are wont 60 to be celebrated with vs. But they keepe an old woman, till the dye of her owne accord. Thefe Caries undertakelonger journies then any of these Nations upon the River of Place. They are

couragious and fierce in battaile, and their Villages and Townes are fituate vpon the River Parama, on an high and mounting land. 21. The Citie of these people (which the In habitants call Lampere) was compassed with a

double bulwarke cunningly made of timber, as with a hedge or inclosure, every trench being of the bredth and thickneffe of a man, and one bulwarke or trench was twelve paces diffant from the other. The trenches being digged a fathome deepe into the earth, were so high aboue the ground, as a man might reach with the length of a Sword. They had also Pits and Caues fife teene paces diftant from the wallscaft vp the height of three men, in the middeft whereof pikes were stucke, yet not appearing aboue ground, as sharpe pointed as a Pinne. They made these Pits so couered with straw, putting twigs and branches therein, with a little earth strowed betweene, that we Christians pursuing them, or being readie to assault their Towne, might fall into them. But they cast these pits for themselves, and at length they fell into them : for when our Generall lohn Eyollas, gathering all his Souldiers together, who were not aboue three hundred (for they left fixtie to guard the Brigantines) ordering and ranging the companies, went against their Citie Lampere, they vndertlanding before of our comming, making a stand a Musket that of with their armie of foure thousand men, furnished with Bowe and Arrowes after their manner, commanded that we should be told, that they would prouide vs victuall, and other necessaries, desiring vs to goe backe and returne vnto our Ships, that so departing as sooneas we could, we might peaceably returne to our companions. But it was neither good for our Generall, nor our felues, that we should content to their request : for this Nation and Countrie, by reason of the plenty of victuall, was also most fit, and commodious for ve, especially when in The Spaniards foure whole yeares past, we had not leene a morfell of bread, living onely with fish and flesh, and infoure yeeres oftentimes also in great penurie.

a morfell of bread.

Theie Caries therefore taking their Bowe and Arrowes, entertained and faluted vs therewith. But as yet, wee had no minde to hurt them, but commanded to fignific vnto them, that they should be quiet, and we would become their friends. But they would not be so contented. for they had not yet tried our Gunnes and Swords. When therefore we came fomewhat neerer vnto them, wee discharged our brasse Peeces against them. Which when they heard, and saw that so many men sell downe dead, and when neither Bullets, nor Arrowes appeared, but holes onely were seene in their bodies, they wondred with astonishment, and horribly terrified, tooke their flight in troopes; ouerthrowing one another like Dogs: and while with great celeritie they haften to shelter themselues in their Towne, more then three hundred men, in that amased feare, fell into the forefaid pits, which them felues had digged,

Afterward comming to their Citie, we affaulted it, they couragiously defending themselves. till the third day. But when they could detend themselves no longer, and were much afraid o their wives and children, which they had with them in the Towne, they earnefly entreated our fauour and mercie, promiting, that they would doe any thing for vs, and for our fakes, at our pleasure, so that wee would spare their liues. In this stirre inxteene of our men were slaine. They brought also to our Generall Eyelas, fixe women, among which the el.left was but eighteene yeeres old, they presented alto fixe Stags, and another wilde beaft, entreating vs to flay with them. They gaue two women to the Souldiers, to ferue them for Laundreffes and other feruices. They also prouided vs victuals, and other necessaries for foode. And so peace was concluded betweene them and vs.

A Caffle is

22. Thele things being fo done, the Corios were compelled to build vs a great House. of stone, timber, and earth, that the Christians might have a place of refuge, if hereafter they moforgand is cal-bed the affirm insuring the control of the control feast of the Assumption and gaue it that name. And here wee abode two moneths. These Carios are fitte leagues diftant from the Argais, and from the Hand of Bonafperanza, which the Tiembus inhabite about three hundred thir ie and foure leagues.

Making therefore a league with thele Carios, they promiled, that they would aide vs, when we went to the warres, and if we were to undertake any feruice against the Ayeais, they would fend eighteene thousand men with vs. When our Generall had thus determined, taking three 50 hundred Spaniards, with these Caries, going downe the River of Parabel, with the streams, wee marched thirtie leagues by land, till we came to the place, where the faid Areas dwelt ; we flie them both old and young, in the old place where wee left them, vnawares in their houses, while they yet flept, early in the morning betweene three and foure of the clocke (for the Carior had diligently fearched out all) oppreffing them even to the dearh; for the Caries have this cuitome that being conquerers in warre, they kill all without any commiferation or pitie.

Argais des

After this, taking away fine hundred Canoas or Boats, we burnt all the Villages to the which we came, doing much hurt besides. After one moneth past, some of the people of Ayeais came who vs, who being abient farre from home, were not prefent at this fight, and crauing pardon, yeelded them telues into our hands.

23. Continuing therefore in this Citie of the Assumption of Marie fixe moneths, we quietly refreshed our selues. In the meane space our Generall Don Eyolias enquired amongst these Carios, of the Nation called Piembos, from whom hee received answere, that it was almost an hundred leagues distant from the Citie of Affumption, and that they dwelt up the Ruer Parabol. Being

CHAPAS. Caracorilan Commodities I. Evoltas & Southiers flung bered. 1258

further demanded, whether they had plentie of food, and how and with what they lived, what their behaulour and conditions were. They antiwere againe, that these Paiembes have no other meate and prouifion, but Fleth , and Fish , and also Ceratia, which they call Algorobo , whereof shey make Meale, which they eate with their Fish. Moreoueralso they make Wine thereof. which may be compared to duf fweet Wine, for the pleafantiteffe thereof.

The Generall musters the Souldiers, and out of fourt thindred men , chooseth three hundred. whom he faw better furnished with Armes and other things then the rest, leaving the other hunwhom he aw octave, in the Citie of Affamption. Wee therefore layle vp the River, and al-wates in fine leagues diffance we arrived at fome Village finishe vpon the River of Parabol, whose parabol wei

so TribaBitants came to meere vs withall necessarie prouision.

24 Departing thence wer came to a Monitraine called Ferninds, like vinto that which they Mount Fer-call Beyenders. There we light on the faid Paiember, ewelue leagues diffant from Weibings. There mands. people Entertallied vs friendly and peaceable, but with a treacherous and deceitfull minde, as you Weibing. thall understand hereaftet. They therefore brought vs into their houses, and gaue vs Fish, Flesh, Paimbes treand Coratio or bread to eate, and so we abode nine whole dails with them. In the meane time chery. our Generall commanded to enquire of them, whether the Nation called Carcarifo were known vnto them! They answered him, that concerning them, they knew nothing, but what they Carcaife. had heard by report, to wit, that they dwelt farre hence, in a Countrie abounding with Gold and Silver, but that they had never feene any of them. They added also moreover, that thefe Ca-20 recenfor were wife men as we Christians are, and that they abound with Victuals, to wit, Maiz, Mandereb, Mandaus, Potades, Mandereb Nach te tu, Mandereb Purpy, Mandereb Ade, Mande called Sherpe parea, and other rootes; and with Hesh allo of Indian Sheepe, called Amte, which are a kinde of of Pensandir.

beaft like Affes, having feete like Kine, of a thicke and groffe skinne; and that they had plentie fremeth bigalso of Conies, Harts, Geele, and Hens : but that none of the Paiembos had ever feene them, as ger and ftronthey remember, but that they had it onely by report of others; but we found afterwards affur ger in thefe redly how all things went.

Hauing learned this, our Generall required to have some of the Pagembes to goe with vs into the Author shat Countrie, whereupon they readily offered themselves, and their chiefe Commander pre- rode on one, Sently appointed three hundred Paiember to goe with vs, to carry our victuals, and other neces- which in Peru territy appointed time animated a prepare, and of five Shippes he caused three to be de-burthen, stroyed. To the other two he appointed fittle men of vs Christians, whom he commanded that in his ablence they should stay there foure moneths, expecting his returne, and that if within the time appointed he returned not voto vs, they should goe backe with these two Boates to the Citie of the Affinmption. But it fo fell out, that we flaied whole fixe moneths with thefe Paientbor, and neuer heard any thing in the meane while of our Generall Ishn Eyellas; and prouifion of victuall failed vs. and therefore of necessicie, with Dominicke Eyellas, who in the meane time was left to command vs, we were to returne with our Shippes to the forefaid Citie of the Af-

25. The Generall departing from the faid Paiembos, he came to a Nation called Maperus, joy- Naperus, 40 ned in league and friendship with the Paiembes, who had nothing but flesh and fish. And it is a populous Nation of these Naperus; our Generall tooke certaine vnto him, to shew him the way, for they were to goe through divers Countries with great labour and in great penurie of all things; for they had tried the violence of many who refifted them in hoftile manner, the halfe part of the Christians almost being dead; being brought therefore to a certaine Nation called Peilennos; he could goe no further, but was compelled to goe backe againe with all his peo- Peilennos, ple, except three Spaniards, which by reason of their weake estate of body, he left with the

Our Generall therefore lohn Eyollas being in reasonable good health himselfe, went backe againe with all his people and Souldiers, and quietly refreshed himselfe with all his sellowes for to three daies with these Naparus, for the people were faint, being over tired with the journey : and munition and weapons failed vs, which the Neperss and Paiestos vinderstanding, conspire among themselves, to kill the Generall John Eyollas, with all his followers, which also they performed: for when our Generall marched with his Christians from Naperns, toward the Paiember, and had almost now gone halfe the way, these two faid Nations, set woon them vnawares in a thicket or Forrest (which they chole for their ambush) through which the Chrifians were togoe. There the Generall, together with his ficke and faint Souldiers, was flaughtered by them, as of fo many mad Dogges, fo that not one escaped.

ð. II.

MARTIN EYOLLAS made Generall. GABREROS comming: SCHERVES Voyage. NVNNER his infolence. Diners people and accidents described.

N the meane space, while wee fiftie men returning to the Assumption, expect our Generall, we understand what happened, by report of a certaine Indian flaue of John Ejollar who was now dead, given him of the Perfennes, who being skilfull in the Language escaped the hands of the enemies, he declared all the whole matter. This was further confirmed by two of the Paiember taken Prifoner, and it feemed good to vs Christians, that we should create Marine Eyellas often named to vs., our chiefe Commander and Generall.

watill we received other commandement from the Emperours Maieffie.

Our Generall therefore gaue commandement, that foure Brigantines should be prepared, and taking 1 co. men of the company, leaving the reft in the City of the Affumption of Mary, hee made thew that he would gather together the 150, men left with the Tiembus (as weefand before) and also these 160. Spaniards who abode with the ships in the Citie of Buenas Acres, into the faid City of the Affamption, With thefe foure Brigantines therefore hee went downe tie Rivers of Paroboll, and Parana with the streame, and came to Tiembus (which first place we called Bona feranza, but the Caftle wherein our Garrifon Souldiers were, wee named Corpas

But before we came from the Assumption to Tiembus, a certaine man of the Christians, to wit.

Captaine Franco Ruis, a Prieft called John Baban, and a certaine Secretarie John Ernandus, as it were subordinate Governours of the Christians, tooke treacherous and wicked counsell together. to kill the Captaine of the Indians of Tiembu, and certaine other Indians with him : which wice ked attempt they performed also in deed, so that, not without great impietie before our Generall Marim Don Eyellas his comming, and ours, they had flaine those Indians, from whom a long

time they had received no small benefits. Our Generall therefore commanded Anthonio Mendoza (whom he left as Commander in the Castle of Corpus Chrifti, with a Garrison of 120, of 20 our men, gitting him also promision of victuall) if his life and fafetie were deere vnto him, that in any case he should beware of the Indians, and should diligently keep watch and ward, by day and night. And if the Indians making thew of friendthip thould come vnto them, that they thould deale courteoully with them, performing all friendly offices vnto them, yet in the meane time they should carefully look vnto themselves, & be very warie in all things, left any damage should be done to themselues, or other Christians. These things being thus or dered and dispoted , hee prepareth himselfe to continue his intended journey, taking with him shofe three persons, who were Authors of the murder. When they were now about to take their parney, one of the Nobles of Tiembus Zuche Lyems by name, although he were a great friend of the Christians, vet by reason of his wife and children, and other Kintmen of his, and familiars, compelled to content 44 to their counsels and practifes the admonished our General Evollas, to cause all the Christians to be conveyed downe the River with him, for now all the Countrey had made readie all their forces, that either they might wholly cut them all off, or drive them all out of the Countrey. To whom

our Generall Martin Don Eyollas answered, that hee would shortly returne : and that his people

had firength enough to fustaine the affault or force of the Indians, and added moreover, that hee

delired, that Zuebe Lyemi with his Wife and children, and all his familiar friends, and all his

people would come ouer to the Christians, and toyne himselfe with them, which also he promited,

After this, our Generall is carried downe the River, and leaveth vs at Corpus Christia 28. Eight daies after or thereabouts, the aforesaid Indian Zuche Lyenn, sendeth one of his brethren Suelapa by name, bat deceitfully and treacheously, and requested our Captaine Men- 50 doza to grant him fixe Christians furnished with shot and other weapons, for he would bring our all his substance, with his whole Family vnto vs, and from henceforth dwell amongst vs. Our Captaine being perfusaded by these promises, gives him not sixe but fiftie Spaniards, exceeding well provided and furnished with armour and shot, the Tiembus came vnto them, and intertained them with Indas kiffe, bringing fiesh and fish, that they might eate : now when the Christians began to fall to their meate, their friends and conforts, and other Tiembus gathered together amongft them, with those also who hide themselves, in the field and houses, fall voon their nitte flaine by Tiem men, and so consecate the Banquet with them, that no man escaped aliue, except one Boy only butteacherie, called Caldere, who got out of their hands. Afterwards they fet vpon vs with 10000, firong

and befreged the Village (which we held) continually for fourteene daies, intending wholly this 60 that being brought under, they might utterly deftroy us; but God in mercie defeated their pur-

pofes, and ouerthrew their enterprizes. They had made themselves long Speaces or Jaurelings, of the Swords which they bad gotten from the flaine Christians, wherewith they fought against value in with the edge and point, dans

ting our Village day and night. Our Captaine Anthony Mendoza armed with a two hand Sword, Captain More ting our vining very more which some Indianylay in ambush, so that they could not bee seene. derestaine, derestaine,

hee cone.

Being gone therefore out of the Port, the Indian; thrust him through with their lauelings, to that hee prefently fell downe dead upon the ground. But because the Indians wanted victuals. they could fuffaine themselues no longer heere, but were compelled to leave the siege and

After this two Brigantines laden with prouision of victuall and other necessariued at our Port, which our Generall fent vnto vs from the Towne of Buenas Acres, to maintaine our felues therewith till his comming. As therefore wee were cheered at the comming of them, to they 10 who arrived with the Brigantines, incredibly forrowed and lamented for the flaughter of the Christians. Wee therefore determined by a common Councell (which thing also feemed to bee beit for va) to flay no longer in this Village of Corpus Chrifts, abiding with these Trembus, but. that being carried downe the River, gathering all our forces together, we returne to Bnena Acres, to our Generall Marsin Dominicke Ejolius. Who beeing frighted at our comming, was yehemently grieued (for the flaughter of the people, doubtfull how to confult what he should first doe, feeing also victuall and other necessarie things failed vs.

29. While therefore we continued five dayes at Buenae Acres, a Carauell came to vs out of Spame, and brought vs newes, that a thip was arrived at Saint Katharme, whole Captaine Allun-20 Gabrero, brought with him 200. Souldiers out of Spaine, which when our Captaine certainly 20 knew, he commanded one of the lesser ships, which they call a Galley, to bee made readie, that Gabrera comhe might fend her as soone as possibly he could to Saint Katharines into Brasil, which was 200, ming out of leagues diftant from Buenas Acres: making Gonzallo Mendoza Captaine thereof to governe the Spaine with finp: giuing him charge also, that if arriving at Saint Katharines, he found the ship there, they 200. Souldiers should lade one of the ships with Rice, Mandeoch, and other victuals, as seemed good vnto him. Gonzallus Mendoza therefore receiuing this commandement, requested the Generall Mer-

hee promifed. Hee therefore chose mee, and fixe Spaniards to himselfe, with twentie other

tin D. Eyellas to give him seven of the Souldiers whom hee might truft, for this Voyage which

Setting faile from Bnenas Acres, in the space of a moneth we arrived at Saint Katharines, and 30 finding the fhip there; which came out of Spaine, together with Captaine Allunzo Gabrero, and all the Souldiers, wee greatly rejoyced. Abiding with them two moneths, wee laded our thip with Rice, Mandeoch, and Turkelb Corne, as full as it could hold, fo that no more could bee put in both the ships to carrie with vs. And the day before All Samts; wee arrived at the River Parana, twentie leagues yet diffant from Buenas Aeres. Both the fhips met together that night, whose Pilots asked one another, whether wee were now in the Riner of Parana: when our Pilot affirmed we were, the other faid the contrarie, that we were yet almost twentie leagues of, For when twentie or more ships saile together, in the Euening at the going downe of the Sunne they meete together, and one of the Mafters asketh the other, what way he had made that day,

and with what wind hee would faile by night, left they should bee divided one from the others. and with what within nee would rate up mgm, the transport of the River of Parana Visifie, at the Bay or mouth thereof is thirtie leagues broad, which breadth 40 The River of Parana Visifie, at the Bay or mouth thereof is thirtie leagues broad, which breadth 40 The River of Parana Visifie, at the Bay or mouth thereof is thirtie leagues broad, which breadth The River of Faranay may in, at the bey of mounts the Port of Saint Gabriel, where the River Parana, continueth for fiftie whole leagues together, vnto the Port of Saint Gabriel, where the River Parana, Parana is eighteene leagues broad. After this our Pilot asketh the Mafter of the other flip, whether hee would laile after, to him the other made answere, that night was now at hand, and therefore he would continue fill at Sea, till the rifing of the Sunne, and that he would not make to the Land in the vnseasonable night. And this Pilot in guiding his ship was more circumspect then ours was, as the cuent afterward declared. Therefore our Mafter held on his intended

30. Sayling by night, a mighty storme troubled the Sea, so that about twelve or one of the 30. Sayining up migni, a migniy nomine to the Sea, we deferred Land, and our clocke before Sunne rifing, before we had caft our Anchors in the Sea, we deferred Land, and our 50 thip was much bruifed when wee were yet a league or more from the Land. Wee could finde no mp va macin ordinario and macing our Prayers vnto God, to intreate him to be meroutet emeute to consumerate, una manage cital vito vs. The fame hour e our fhip being split was broken in more then a chour and pieces, and fitteeneof our men, and fixe of the Indian; perished being drowned in the waters. Some taking hold of great pieces of Timber (warmer out, I with flue of my companions elcaped by the helpe of a Mait. But of fifteene perions, we found not to much as one carkaffe. Afterward we were to trauell liftie leagues on foot, when we had lost all our clothes, with all the victuals in the thep, so that we were constrained to sustaine our selves, only with Rootes and other Fruites, which we could find here and there in the fields, while wee came to the Port of Same Gabriell,

where we found the foreignd finp with her Captaine, who arrived there thirtie dayes before vs. But our Generall Martin D. Eyollas had heard before by intelligence, of this our milhap, and thinking that we were all dead, commanded fone Maffes to be read for our fooles health. When They are we were brought to Bueeas Aeres, our Generall commandeth the Captaine of our thip, and the wracked. Matter thereof to be cited, an it and to their triall, who without doubt had hanged the Pilot, if Inflicent the fo great and earnest intreactes had not been evied, yet hee was condemned for four eyers to left.

Gathering together all our companies to Buenas Aeres, our Generall commandeth the Brieantines to be made ready, and all the Souldiers to bee shipped therein, and commandeth the reit of the shippes to be burned, yet preserving the Iron Vessels and Instruments. Wee therefore once more faile up the River of Parana againe, and arriving at our foresaid Citie of the Allumption of Marie, itaying there two yeeres, we expected further commandement from the Emperours Majesty.

Aluarez Nun-

21. In the meane time while these things are thus done, a certaine Captaine Almarez Nunnez. Cabeca de Vacha commeth out of Spaine, whom Cafare Majestie had created Generall. and with foure hundred men, and thirtie Hories divided into foure thips, of the which two were greater, and the other two Carauels.

Note. Francifcus Lopez Chap. So, writeth of he was fent

from C fars Micine, with 400. men, and 46. horfes to the River of Plete. And he was 8. whole moneths in this Voyage. first in the yeere 1542. hee arrived at

The foure ships arrived in Brasill at the Hauen of Wiesain, or Saint Katharine, to seeke provifion of victuall. And when the Captaine had fent the two Carauels eight leagues from the Hapen to feeke victuals, fo great a storme tooke them, that they perished, being broken all to piethis Alumes, oces in the Sea, the men not withflanding which were in them being faued. When Aluarez the A same trait in the for a certainty, hee durit not put to Sea any more in the greater greater ships; he therefore commanded vtterly to destroy them, and trauelling by land towards the River of Place, at length came vnto vs, to the Assumption of foure hundred men bringing three hundred with him, the rest dying either of famine, or of cruell diseases. From hence the Captaine was eight whole moneths in his journey, and from the Citie of the

brought the title of his gouernment out of Spane, granted vnto him from Cafars Majellie, and therefore required, that our Generall Martin Don Eyollas, should yeeld up the whole government vnto him, which thing allo Don Eyollas, and all the company with all their heart were readie to performe, yet vpon this condition, that hee should make good proofe also, that this power and authoritie was granted vnto him from the Emperours Maiestie. But the whole aftne Allumpsion.
Shiowaacke & lembly could not wreft this from him, only the Priefts, & one or two of the Captains affirmed it. 23. The faid Aluarez Nunnez therefore taking a view of the Souldiers, found the number of the whole Army to be eight thouland men. Making friendship allowith Martin Don Eyollas, 30 each iware to other brotherly fidelity and friendship, to that Eyollas should have no lesse power

Assumption, to S. Katherines are reckoned three hundred leagues. This is to be understood of the 20

next and most direct way, for from the Affamption, downe the River to the Sez, there are three

hundred thirtie foure leagues, and to Saint Katharine three hundred. Aluarez Nunnez alfo

to command the people, then he had before. The Gouernour commandeth nine Brigantines to be made ready, that he might faile up the River as farre as it was possible. But before the ships were made readie, he fendeth three Brigantines with one hundred and fifteene Souldiers before commanding, that they should go as far as they could, and seeke out the Indians that had Maiz. Hee joyned also two Captaines vnto them, Antonio Gaberro, and Diego Tabellinus. These

Sanage nation of Surucusta

therefore in the beginning come to a Nation, called Surucusis, having Maiz, Mandeoch, and other Roots of that kind, and Mandnes also (which are like our Filbirds) and fish and fielh. The men carrie in their lips a blue stone like the bone of a Die, With this Nation we left our ships, and with them certaine of our companions, to whom we 40

Village of

committed the custodie thereof: but having gone foure dayes iourney into the Countrey, wee came to a Village pertayning to the Carios, being three hundred strong, inquiring therefore diligently there, of the state of that Countrey, wee received honest and peaceable answeres from them. Returning thence vnto our ships, and going downe the River of Parabol, we came to the Nation Achkeres. There we found Letters fent from Aluaro the Gouernour, whereby hee commanded to hang up the chiefe Captaine of these Indians, Achkeres by name. Which commandsment our Captaine obeyed without delay, and we returned home.

Achkeres hanged.

33. The whole Countrey of Dabero and Carios, were vp in Armes, loyning their forces together to inuade the Christians. For the King of Dabero was the brother of that Achteres, whom the Christians hanged, whose death hee would most seuerely avenge vpon the Christians. Our 50 Governour armeth himselfe in the meane time against lus Enemies, to vindertake some serviceagainst them. He therefore determined with the confent of his sworne brother Martin Don Eyollas, that this Eyollas should got against the said Dabero, and Carios with four hundred Chri-Gians and two thousand Indians, and either drive them out of the whole Country, or etterly roote them out. The faid Eyollas faithfully executing this commandement, leadeth his Armie out of the City of the Affamption, and meeting with the enemy, by the commandement of Cafars Maiestie first periwadeth Dabero to peace and quietnesse, but he little regarding this, would admit no treatie of peace, for he had gathered a mightie Army, fenced his Villages with Bulwarks or Rampires of wood fastened in the ground, and had compassed them about with a triple sence of takes or piles, having also call rp deepe and mightie pits, whereof we spoke before in the 21. 60 Chapter, all which wee found out before by diligent fearch. Wee flood still quietly without Armetill the fourth day, before wee proclaimed war against them, but the fourth dayin Tawas t kin. the morning, three hou es before the riling of the Sunne, making an affault, wee violently rushed and the City, and whom locuer we found there, we flue, yet taking many women, and preferring

them from flaughter, which afterward turned to our great benefit. In this affault twenty fixe of the Christians were flaine, many of the people being wounded and hutt. And many also of the Indians on our part perished but of the Caniballs 3000. slaine, Not long after Dabero, came vinto vs Dabero comiwith his people, and craued fauour and pardon. In the next Expedition Dabero fent to Numez metains 2000. Indians to aide vs. From the Carior allo he commandeth nine Brigantines to bee furnished. all which being done, 800. Christians he taketh 900. leaving 300. at the Affampsion, over whom he made lohn Satenffer Captaine. With this Army of 500. Christians, and 2000. Indians, we faile vo the River of Parabol: and the Carios had with them 8 3. boats, wee Christians had mine Brigantines, in every one of the which there were two horfes. But the horfes were conveyed over

10 Land 100, leagues, and we were tarried upon the River unto the Mountaine of Saint Ferdinand. At that place taking our horses againe into the ships, from thence afterward we were carried torward, vntill we came to our Enemies the Paiembes, but they not looking for our comming, conneved away themselves by flight with their wives and children, having first fet their houses on fire. After this we trauelled 100. leagues together, and light not on any people, at length wee came to a Nation, whose people are called Baschmeper, who have by fish and flesh, It is a populous Baschmeper, Nation, and they inhabit a large Countrey of 100, leagues broad. They have fo great a number of boats, that it is incredible to be written. Their women couer their Secrets. These people refuling to talke with vs. fled from vs. Departing from them, wee came to another Nation called Surneusis, 90. leagues distant from the Bascherepes, the people out of this Countrey louingly Surneusis, 20 and friendly entertained vs. Euery Housholder of these Surucusis dwelleth in a peculiar and pro-

per house of his owne with his wife and children. The men have a round piece of wood hanging at their eares like a Calecut Die. The women have Christall of a Skie colour, of a finger thicke hanging at their lips, they are wel-fauoured to behold, and goe altogether naked. There people about id with Turkifb Corne, Mandacch, Mandais, Padadet, fifth and fleth. And it is a vely populous Countrey.

Our Captains commanded to inquire of them concerning a Nation called Carchacaris, and alfo of the Carior. They could tell vs nothing of the Carebacaris; but concerning the Carios carebarais. they faid, that they were with them at their houses. But it was not true, having learned this, out Generall commanded to prepare our selues for the journey, for hee determined to goe

30 further into the Country. He appointed an hundred and fiftie Souldiers to flay with the (hips, to whom he gaue prounion of victuall for two yeeres. Taking the other three hundred and fiftie together with the eighteene horses, and twenty thousand Indians or Carios, who came from the Assumption with vs, he went further into the Countrey, but with little benefit to vs. For our Generall was not a man fit for fo great anattempt; befides all the Captaines and Souldiers hated Generall no: him, for his pruerie and rigorous carriage towards the Souldiers. Hauing trauelled therefore eight beloued. teene dayes journey they neuer fet eye neither woon the Carros, her any other people, and food alto failed them, to that our Generall was of necessitie to returne againe wnto the shippes. But yet Heersturneill. our Generall chargeth a certaine Spaniard Franciscus Rieffere, with tenne other Spaniards to goe forward, commanding them that if after ten dayes journey they found no people, they should 40 recurne vnto the thips, where they would ftay for them. It happened therefore that they light

vpon a populous Nation, which had plentie of Turkilb Corne, Mandeoch, and other Roots. But the Spaniards durit not come in their fight, and returning to vs, fignified this vnto our Generall, who was very defirous to have gone into this Countrey againe, but he was hindered by the waters, that he could not proceed.

He therefore commandeth a ship to be furnished againe, wherein he put eighty Souldiers, and Ernandus Rick making Ernandsu Rieffiere, Captaine intoyneth him to goe vp the River of Parabel, to discover fire fayleth up the Nation called Scherner, and therein two dayes journey, and no more to enter into the heart the River to of the Countrey, and after that to make report vnto him of the Countrey, and the Inhabitants the Guebucuthereof. Departing by thin from our Congrell, the first day was considered. It figures the first day was considered. thereof. Departing by thip from our Generall, the first day we came to a certaine Nation called Guebuecusis, on the other lide of the Countrey, whose people inhabit a certaine Iland, contay. Guebuecusis. ning thirty leagues in length, which the River Parabol compaffeth. They feed upon Mandeoch, Ilmom the Maiz, Manduis, Padades, Mandepore, Porpe Bachkein, and other Roots, and allo vpon flesh and filh. The men and women are like the former Suruenfis in Phisnomy and fauour. Wee stated this

day with them, When we were to depart the next day, they accompanied vs with ten Canoas or Boats : twice in the day time they filhed, and caught Venison, which they gave vs. Boats : twice in the day time they filhed, and caught Vention, which they gaue vs.

Spending nine dayes in this icurney wee arrived after at the Nation called Abbigras, where a Menotall Menotall Menotall great multitude of people were gathered together. The men and women, are of a great and tall flature. stature, the like whereof I faw not in all the Countrey of the River of Place, and these Achke- They are calres are thirty leagues diffant from the forefaid Surmenfis; they live by no other thing fane fifth and 1 d Achters,

res are thirty leagues diffant from the forelaid Sunucufus, they hue by no other thing saue mis and 60 fields: the women couer their fecrees. We flated one day with these Aebkeres, and from hence the flated Sunucufus returned with their ten Boats or Canoas to their Village. Afterward our Captaine disso, the Ernandus Rieffere, requested the Achkeres, to shew him what way they might goe to the Scher- flore (1 ecmes, whereto they were very readie, and fent eight Canoas or Boats from their Village with vs, meth(of these and twice every day they caught fish and fiesh, that so we might have sufficient plenty of food, creatives in

Vuuuu 2

The those parts

Indan fortifi-

26. The sinth day after our departure from them, we came to the Schernes, vnto whom from the said Achkeres, are thirtie fixe leagues. This Nation is very populous, yet they are not true and naturall, among whom the King himfelfe hath an house. But these Schernes maintaines Priest export in the Mysteries of Religion, and have a ring of wood hanging at their eares. These men also weare a blue Christall in their lips, of the shape and bignesse of Dice, they are painted with a blue colour from the paps to the prinities, with that excellency that I thinke a Painter is not to be found in all Germany which could performe the like fo finely and artificially. They are Cunning pain naked, and are beautifull after their manner.

Pri Reard woo.den Earings.

Wild pompe

of the King.

We staved therefore one day with these Schernes, and after going fourteene leagues forward in three daves journey. at length wee came to the place where their King dwelleth, from the ra which the Inhabitants are called Schernes. His Country containeth only four leagues in length. Yet hath he a Village fituate vpon the River of Parabol. Therefore leaving our thips heere, we committed the custodie thereof to twelve Spaniards, that returning wee might vie them for our defence. Wee also intreated the Sebernes dwelling there, that in the meane space they would friendly converse with the Christians, and intreate them courteously, which also they did. with necessaries for our journey, passing ouer the River Parobel, wee arrived at that place. where the feate and houle of the King was. Who, when we were almost yet a league from him. commeth forth to meete vs guarded with more then 12000. men in a Champion plaine, yet friendly and peaceably. The path wherein they marched, was eight paces broad, ffrewed with flowres and graffe on every fide, and made fo cleane, that not fo much as any little ftone, flick, and or firaw appeared. The King had also with him his Muticians, whose Instruments were like our crooked Trumpets, which wee call Schalmes. Hee gave commandement also, that they should

Stags and

hunt Stags and other wilde beaft. on both fides of the way which hee went, fo that they tooke about thirtie Stags and twentie Eftridges or landen, which spectacle was very pleasant to behold. When we were entred into the Villige, he alwaies appointed one lodging for two Chrifians. But our Captaine together with his Scruants or followers was brought into the Kings He is wont to have Musicke at the Table, and at his meate, when soeuer he pleaseth. For then

Mulicke.

they play upon the Flutes or Pipes, men leading the dances and skipping with most beautifull women, which dances and skippings feemed to strange vnto vs , that looking vpon them , wee 30 had almost forgot our felues. In the reft the Schermes are like those people of whom wee fooke before. The women make them gownes or upper garments of thinne Cotton, almost like our clothes which are some part filke, which we call Arras or Burfebet. They weave in their divers shapes of Stags, Ettridges and Indian theepe, according as every of them is more skilfull in the

In these garments they sleepe, if the Aire happen to be somewhat cold, or putting them under them they fit upon them, or vie them at their pleasure for other services. These women are very When we had stayed there foure dayes, this pettie King demanded of our Captaine what our

Gold and Sil-

pu pose was, and whether we would goe! to whom he made this answere, that he sought Gold 40 and Silver. Therefore he gave him a Crowne of Silver weighing a pound and an halfe. He gave him also a plate of Gold of a spanne and an halfe long, and halfe a spanbroad, and certaine other things made cunningly wrought of Silver, and told our Captaine that he had no more Silver nor Gold : And that there things wherewithhe presented him, were the spoiles which in time past he had gotten in war against the Amazones.

That he made mention of the Amerones and of their riches, was very pleafing to vs to heare. Our Captaine therefore presently demandeth of the King, whether we might come to them by Sea, or by the River, and how much further we had to goe, when wee were to take our journey towards them; whereunto he answered, that we could not goe to them by water but by land, and that in two whole moneths journey.

37. These women the Amazenes, have only one of their pappes, their Husbands come vnto them three or foure times in the yeere. And if the woman beeing with child by her Husband. bring forth a Male child, the fendeth him home again to his Father, but if it be a Female, the keepeth it with her : and feareth the right pap of it, that it may grow no more, which she doth for this purpole, that they may be more fit to handle their Weapons and Bowes. For they are warlike women, making continuall war with their Enemies. Their women inhabit an Iland that is very large, on every fide compaffed with water, to whom there is no acceffe but by Caneas of Boats. The Amazones have neither Gold not Silver in this Hand, but they are reported to have great Treasures in the firme land, which the men inhabit. It is a very populous Nation, and is faid to haue a King called legues, and the King of Scherues told vs the name of the place. There- 60 fore the Captaine Ernandus Ruffiere defired the King of Schernes, to joyne certaine of his men with vs, to carry our bagge and baggage for vs, and then we would enter the heart of the Country to fecke those Amazones. He willingly affenteth thereunto, yet in the meane time admonaking vs, that the whole Countrie was now overflowed with waters, and therefore we should

hane a very difficult and vneally Ioutney vnto them, and that wer could not early at this time come vnto them. But we would not give credite to his words, but were instant to have the Indians joyned with vs. He therefore gaue twentie men to our Captaine, for his owne perion, to carrie his promision and necessaries : and to every one of vs, he gave his Indians to serve vs. and carriethat little which we had. For wee were to goe eight dayes Journey, wherein wee thould por fee any Indian.

But afterward we came to a certaine Nation called Siberis; who in their language and other Siberis. things were like the Schernes. Wee were to goe for thele eight whole dayes, day and night in the water up to the knees, and sometimes reaching as high as the waste : nor could we by any Wading Journ to meanes get out of them. And if we would make fire, we were of necessitie to put it voon a rile ney. orflacke made of great blockes or pieces of wood; and it fell out often, that when wee were Bellie-thicks; about to boile our meate, both the pot and the firefell into the water, lo that after that , wee were faine to be without our meate. And Gnats also troubled and vexed vs day and night. to Gnats,

that we could not doe our necessarie worke or butinesse.

Wee therefore demanded of thole Siberis, whether wee shoul I fet have any more waters? who answered, that wee were yet foure daves to walke in the waters; and atterward were to travell five dayes by Land, and at length wee should come to a Nation called Orethislen. They fignified also vinto vs. that wee were too few in number, and therefore that wee should returne. Butthe Scherner would not doe this: for wee thought rather to fend them backe vinto their 20 Towne, who had hitherto accompanied vs, but they reliated to doe it, faying, they were enjoyned by their King not to leave vs , but should continue with vs, vatil wee came out of the Countrie againe, These Siberis toyned ten men with vs , who together with the Scherwes should show vs the way to the fore-faid Orethwisn. Wee were yet seven dayes more to Trauels in hos tranell in the waters which were so hot, as if they had beene heat upon the fire, which was waters. ter also , having no other , wee were compelled to drinke . But some might peraduenture thinke, that it was River water, but at that time, showres of raine were so common and yfuall, that they filled the whole Countrie with water, which is altogether very plaine

The ninth day we came vnto a certaine Village of the Nation Orethunfen, betweene ten and Orethunfen. to eleven of the clocke. And at twelve of the clocke, being come into the middelt of the Towne. we came vnto the Princes house. At that time a cruell and mightie Plague was very het, whereof Famine was the cause: for, two yeeres together, the Graf-hoppers had to eaten and Locusts. corrupted all manner of Corne, and the fruits of trees, that almost nothing was left them, which they might eate.

But our Captaine asked the Petie-King of this Nation, how many dayes Journey we get had to the Amazones? from whence he receiveth ant were ; That wee must yet trauch one whole The Amazons moneth, besides that all the Countrie was full of water.

The King of these Orethnisen, gaue our Captaine foure Plates of gold, and foure filter Rings, bryond the rewhich they put about their armes : but the Indians weare the Plates of gold on their forcheads gion of Trush; to for ornament, as our Nobles doe their Chaines, or Collars of Effes hanged about their neckes, it the title be For these things our Captaine gave the King of the Indians an Hatchet , Knives , and Beades, or Properly Pater-nofters, Barbers Scizzars, and fuch l.ke. Wee would willingly have craued more of them, same here debut wee durft not attempt it, because wee were but few in number, to that wee were forced to firibed. For stand in feare of them. For the multitude of these Indians was very great, and the Towne huge, was keewings in fo much as I have not feene any greater or more populous throughout all India. For the Towne hung in locies was very long, and broad.

38 Going backe therefore, we returned to the forefaid Siberis, and we Christians were ill fur-Gold and filnished with prouision of victuall, and other things, nor had we any meate, but the fruits of trees, uer, which they call Patmides, and Cardes, and other wilde roots growing under ground. And when we should returne vnto the Schernes, the halfe part of our people was deadly sicke, and that by reason of the water, through which wee were to wade for thirtie dayes together, to that wee Thirtiedaye; could neuer turne afide, or get out of the same; and also by reason of the great scarsitie and ta- wading. mine, which we must indure in this Iourney ; which calamitie was not a little encreased, in that we were compelled to drinke that his his and impure water. Abiding therefore four dayes with Profitable these Schernes, with whom the King himselfe dwelleth, we were very louingly and bountifully tricke, entertained, and prouided for. For the King gaue commandement to his Subjects, to give visall things necessarie. Euery man also had gotten for himselfe almost two hundred Du. acs onely by Cotton Gowns and Siluer, which we had gotten of them by fecret exchange of Kniues, Beades, Scizzers, and Glaffes.

60 After all this, being carried downe the River, wee returned to our Generall. But when wee came to the ships, the Generall commanded upon paine of death, that no man should goe out of the ship, and he also in proper perion comming to our Captaine, laying held of him, commanded him to be cast in Prison, and by violence tooke away from vs Souldiers, whatsoener we had gathered in this Iourney. And not contented with this, would have hanged our Captaine voon

a tree. When we abiding yet in the Brigandines understood this, taking counsell with certaine of our friends, which were ashoare, we raised a tumult and a sedition against our faid Generall. and in his prefence face to face we faid vinto him, that forthwith he should fet Captaine Ernendus Rieffere free before vs, and restore all vnto vs, which he had violently taken from vs. otherwife we would proude according to the flate and the time.

When Aluarus law this our tumult and indignation, with a willing minde, he prefently freed the Captaine from captiuitie, and restored also vinto vs whatsoeuer he had taken from vs, endeauouring with faire speaches, that we might be pacified,

Vohealthfull

39. In this Countrie Surucufis I found no Indian, who had attained to fortie or fiftie yeeres. and in all the time of my life I neuer found a Countrie leffe healthfull. It is fituate voder the 19 Tropike of Capricarne.

Wicked pre-

Our Generall talling ficke, in this his ficknesse commanded an hundred and fiftie Christians to arme themselves, and taking two thousand Carios with them, to make foure Brigandines al to readie. These he enjoyned, to goe about some foure leagues to the Iland of Surneusis by ship. and after kill and take all this people, and should principally destroy those persons, who were fortie or fiftie yeeres old. But how the faid Surneufis entertained vs before, is alreadie declared. But what reward we gaue them againe, and how welcome we were vnto them, you shall shortly vinderstand. And God knoweth we did them great injurie. When therefore wee arrived at their Towns vnawares, they came out of their houses with their Armes , Bowes and Arrowes. yet peaceably to meet vs, but forthwith a tumult arising betweene the Carios and the Surneus, 20 we Christians discharged our brasse Peeces against them, killing very many : and having taken also two thousand of their men, women, boyes and girles, wee tooke away all their housholdstuffe, and whatsoeuer might bee taken from them, as in such violent affaults is viually done. Then we returned to our G. nerall, who was well pleated with that we had done. But because our So. Idiers were for the most part feeble and ficke, and most of them also were ill affected to our Generall, and hated him, we could doe no more with them, but being altogether conveyed downe the River Parabel, we returned to our Citie the Affumption ; where wee left the reft of the Christians. There our Generall fell sicke agains of a Feauer, and kept within doores fourteene whole dayes together, more of wicked diffimulation and pride, then hindered by reafon of ficknesse.

40. All the companie hereupon, as well Noble as Ignoble, determined and decreed with one content and purpose, that they would fend this their Commander prisoner vnto Cafars Maiestie. the Treaturer or Judge, the Clarke, or Mafter of the Toll or Custome, and the Secretarie, ordained by Cafars Maieltie (whole names were Almunzus Gabrerus, Francus Mendoza, and Grains Haming 16) toking to them two hundred Souldiers, tooke our Generall, who feared nothing leffe then this, and this was done upon Saint Marker Day, in the moneth of Aprill. And they kept him prisoner an whole yeere, till they might fend him with two other Officers into Spaine in a Carauell, Martin Don Eyollas was choien Generall, who also gouerned this Countrie before, especially seeing the Souldiers also loved him : which election the better part allowed. At this The Authours time, I lay griewoully ficke of the Dropfie, which difeafe I had gotten in our Journey to the Ore- 40 thrifen, when we waded to long in the waters, and befides fuffered want, and almost intolerable hunger: By occasion of that Iourney, eightie of our men beganne to bee sicke, whereof onely

thirtie recouered health. 41. Aluarus Nunnez therefore being fent away into Spaine, the Christians began to disagree among themselves in hostile manner. These fightings and contentions continued with vsa whole yeere almost, the sending away of Aluarus giving occasion to this mitchiefe. When the Caries and Arrais, (who hitherto were our friends) perceived this, to wit, that we Christians, bare fuch treacherous hearts one to another, and vied and exercised such fighting and skirmishing amongst our selves, it fell out very acceptably to them all, and by taking Armes against vs. forced vs to peace among ft our felues.

42. Departing from the Assumption, together with our Generall, and three hundred and fiftie Christians, to whom one thousand Indians joyned themselves, which our Generall so divided. that three Indians alwaies should serve under one Christian; we went so farre forward, that we were onely three leagues distant from that place where our Enemies the Caries encamped, who being fifteene thousand men strong, had now ranged their battell. But although we were now but halfe a league from them, yet we would not fet voon them that day, because we were wearie by reason of the Journey, and many and great showres of raine troubled vs : therefore wee hid our felues in a Wood, where we lay close the night before.

Going forth the next morning at fixe of the clocke, and comming into their fight about leuen, we joyned battell, prolonging the fight till ten of the clocke. But at length they being put 60 to flight, made haste to a certaine Towne called Framidiere, foure leagues distant, which they had fortified with strong Bulwarkes. The Chiefe Commander of the Carios was called Machkarias, and in this conflict, there fell two thousand men of the Enemies, whose heads the Iessrm tooke with them. Of ours, besides those that were wounded and hurt, whom we sent backe

CHAP.4.6.2. Fræmidiere conquered. Carieba taken by treacherie.

to the Assumption, ten Christians were flaine. But wee pursued the Enemie with all our Armie. euen to their Towne Framidiere, whether the Commander of the Carios conueyed himilelie by Framidiere, flight. They have compaffed this Towne with a triple rowe of Trenches, as with a wall. The Trenches were as thicke as a man in the middle, which being digged a mans depth into the ground, rofe three tathom high about ground. They had also cast up pits, or deepe holes whereof alfo we have tooken before, in every one whereof they had pitched five or fixe stakes, sharpe pointed like Pinnes or Needles. This Towne therefore by fortification, and Garrifons of valuant and couragious men, was exceedingly well fenced, to that three dayes we befieged them in vain. vet at length, by Gods helpe, we conquered it. Wee made also great and round Targets of Ine 10 dian Sneepes skinnes, which they call Amaten, or Amidas. This beaft is of a reasonable bignesse. like an ordinarie Mule, of a grey colour, with clouen feete like a Kow, in the reft like an Affe,

yeelding plealant meate. There is great ftore of thele beafts in this Countrie, they have a skin balfe a finger thicke, Wee therefore gaue these round Targets to the Indians leperus, gining fome of them also an Hatchet: and betweene two Indians we placed an Harquebulle shot. Defroving their triple inclosure, we entred the Towne of Framidiers; we neither spared men nor women, boyes nor girles. But the greatest part of them having escaped by flight, betooke them felies to a certaine other Towne of their scalled Carieba, twentie leagues diffant from Franidi- Carieba. ere, which Towns also they fortified as ftrongly as they could. The Caries also in great numbers came together againe, incamping themselues neere an huge Wood, that if peraduenture this

20 Towns also should be wonne by the Christians, they might vie the helpe of the Wood for their

Wee came to the said Towne, and pitching our Tents, besieged it round in three places. We had also his some of our men in a Wood, to keepe diligent watch there. Supplies also of two hundred Christians, and five hundred of the leperus, and the Bathici came to aide vs. from the City of Assumption. For many of our men, both Christians, and Indians, were much wounded. So that we were of necessitie compelled to fend for a fresh supplie of Soul liers for our aide. Now therefore all our forces were foure hundred and fiftie Christians, and the Isperus and the Bathacis were thirteene hundred in number.

But our Enemies the Carieba, had much more strongly fortified this Towne with Trenches. 22 and Motes, then ever they had done any before. They had also made and framed certaine Engines, and instruments like Traps, wherewith Mise are taken, which if according to their and English. purpole and meaning, they had fallen, every one of them at one fall had flaine twentie or thirtie men. They had disposed many of these Engines hereand there about this Towne.

Wee abode therefore neere this Towne foure whole dayes, and could effect nothing of any worth , vntill Treason (which getteth the masterie enery where throughout the world) came betweene them and home. For a certaine Indian of the Caries our Enemies, who was their Captaine, to whom this towne properly belonged, came by night vnto our Generall, earnestly intreating, that we would not waite and destroy this his Towne by fire, which if wee would promise him, he would invested with vs; and would show vs the way and meanes how to 40 take it. Which when our Generall had promised, adding also this caution, that he should receiue no hurt nor damage, he shewed vs in the Wood two wayes to come to the Towne, and said, that he would raife a flaming fire therein, during which we should violently breake into it,

When these things proceeded iust according to the purpose and agreement made betweene vs. by this meanes entring we got the Towne, and great flaughter of the people was made by vs Christians: And they that thought they had escaped by fleeing, fell into the hands of the Ieperss, by whom the greatest part of them were slaine. But they had not their wines, and children then with them, but had hid them in a great Wood four leagues distant from thence. The people which escaped out of this conflict, fled to a certaine other Petie-King of the Indians, called Dabero: and the Village which entertained them, was called luberic Sabaie, and was fortie to leagues diffant from Carieba. But wee could not pursue them thither, for this reason, because what way focuer they passed, they had wasted all farre and neere, with fire, and spoyling, and had taken away all the store of prouisson and victuall. Abiding source dayes in the Towne Carke-bs, we cured the wounded, and also refreshed our selues.

43. After this we returne to our Citie, the Assumption, that after we might sayle up the Riuer, and seeke out the Towne of Iuberic Sabaie, where the King Dabero had an house, with nine Brigandines, and two hundred Canoas or Boats, wherein fifteene hundred Indians of Isperus were carried, we went up the River Parabol, to feeke our Enemies luberic Sabais.

In this Voyage also that captaine of the Carios, who betrayed the Towne Carieba to vs, ioy- 46. league ned himfelie with vs, bringing with him one thouland Carios, to aide vs against Dabero.

We goe forward therefore with all our forces gathered together on the Land and River, and come fo neere vinto our Enemies Inberic Sabaie, that we are but two leagues diffant from them. When we had arrived there, our Generall Ejollas, lent two Indians of the Carios to the Enemie into their Towne, who should perswade them in the Christians behalfe, that returning into their Countrie, with their wines and children, and all their houshold-stuffe, they should serue the

Christians with due subjection, as they did before, which if they refused to doe, they would drive them all out of the Countrie, To this Dabero the King of the Cartor, for answer, commandech to tell our Generall, That he neither acknowledged him, nor the (bristians, but if they came. they would kill them by calling bones at them. They also fend away the two Indian messengers weil bumbafted with cudgels, with this itraight charge, that they should speedily withdraw themselves from the Campe, other wife it should come to passe, that they should be slaine.

R.Stue a.

We came to a River, called Sinefia in the Indian language, almost as broad as Danubuis, halfe the height of a man deepe in some places also deeper. This River doth sometimes to increase by inundation, that it doth much hurt to the Countrie, and by reason of such inundation or ourflowing, they cannot trauaile by land. We were to passe ouer this River, and because the ener in mie had pitched their tents on the other fide of the River, they did vs much hurt in the paffing over. When they faw that we had now paffed over the River, speedily taking their flight, conuaied themselves into their towne, halfe a league distant from the River; we so purfued them. that we came to their towne of Inberic Sabaie, at the verie fame moment that they themselves entred, which also prefently we so besieged round, that none of them might either goe out or in: We also forthwith armed our selves with targets made of the skinnes of the Amydau, as aforesaid. We wan their towne.

Our Generall commanded, before we should invade them by force of armes, that we should neither kill the women, nor their children, but onely leade them away captines; whose comman lement also we obayed, but all the men that we could light upon, must dye, yet many ef- 20 caping by flight, preferred themselves, and our confederaces the leperus got one thousand of the enemies heads. All their things thus performed, thoi'e Carios, who escaped by flight, came, together with their King, and crauing parlon of our Generall, intreated that their wines and children might be restored voto them, and then they would performe all obedience of subjection vnto vs. as before, and ferue vs faithfully. Our Generall therefore received them to fauour, who afterward also continued constantly in our friendship and amitie, so long surely as I abode in those Countries. And this warre continued a yeare and an halfe, and fell out in the veare 1446.

ð. III.

A long and troublesome March from Assumption into Peru. The Authors returne.

Eturning therefore with our Shippes to our Citie the Affumption, wee staied there two whole yeares. But when in the meane time, neither the Ships came out of Spaine, nor any thing was fignified by mellengers, our Generall going torth with three hunared and fittle Spaniards, and two thousand Carios, in the yeare 1 548. Salleth up the River Parabol, with 14 feuen Brigantines, and two hundred Canoas, or Boates. But those of the people, whom the Shippes could not hold, trauaile by land with one hundred and thirty hories. Hee made Don. Franck Mendoza Captaine; giving also provision for two yeares. Their things therefore being thus letled. The Generall having fent backe fiftie to Affumpti,

on with three hundred Christian Souldiers, one hundred and thirty Horses, and two thousand

Naperus. Marais.

Carios, having gone forward eight dayes journey, found no Nation; but the ninth day wee light yoon a Nation called Naperus, the people thereof live onely by fifth and flesh. They are of a tirong and tall stature. Their women, which are not beautifull, couer their secrets. This Country is fixe and thirtie leagues diffant from the Mountaine Saint Ferdinand: here we lay all night. The day following, continuing on our journey, we came the fourth day after, to another Nation called Mapais, which is very populous; the Subjects are compelled to ferue their Noblemen, with fishing, and labours, and other worke, no otherwise then our Boores with vs, doe their Nobles. But this Nation aboundeth with Mais, Mandeoch. Ade, Mande pore, Mandeoch porpie, Padades. Mandues, Bachkeku, and other rootes, and things to eate. It hath also Stagges, Indian Sheeps, Estridges Ducks, Geese, and many other kindes of Foule. Their Woods abound in great plen-

fifrie pounds

tie with Hony, of the which also they make Wine, and put it to other necessary vies. Two kindes of The Sheepe (which they call Amidas) are of two kindes, some of them domesticall and some Amida, one a wilde, which they vie for carriages, and to ride vpon, and for other feruices, almost as we doe out Horfes, as I also rid, being carried on such a Sheepe in this very journey, more then fortyleagues, menions those When my legge was lame. They vie the same Beaits also in Peru for carriage of Merchandite, 25 60 of Peu to bear our people doe packe Horfes.

These Mapais are men of a tall stature, and warlike, converting all their labour and study to or little more. warlike affaires. Their women are faire, and cover their fecrets. They doe no worke and lavour in the fields, but the whole care of maintaining the Family, lyeth upon the man; neither doe they any thing elfe at home, faue fpinne, and weave Cotten, or dreffe meate for their husbands.

We were not about halfe a league from this Nation when they comming forth of the towner they met vs neere a certaine little Village, where they perf waded vs quietly to refresh our felues that night, for they would give vs whatfoeuer we had neede of, but this they did deceitfully and treacheroully : that also we might be more secure, they gave our Generall foure filter Crowness fuch as are vivally worne upon the head, and foure Plates of filuer, whereof every one of them was a france and an halfe long, and halfe a france broad, Thefe Places they binde to their foreheads for ornament, as we have faid before. They prefented our Captaine also with three your

When we had turned into this Village, supper being ended, and the watch set, that the people might be fafe from the treacherie of the enemie, wee gaue our felues to reft. About midnight our Generall had loft his yong wenches.

45. After this, two thousand of the forefaid Mapair came vnto vs. that ouercharging vs vnawares they might veterly ouerthrow and kill vs, but they got no great matter at our hands. and in this conflict and bickering more then one thousand men were flaine. They becake themfelues to flight, whom we purfued with great hafte, even to their Towne, but found no man there, no not to much as their wives and children : our Generall therefore diffratching one hundred and fiftie harquebuffe fhot, and two thousand fine hundred Indian Caries, pursueth thele an Mapair three dayes, and two nights with great speeds, so that we did but dine, and rested by night retrefling our felues foure or five houres with fleepe.

The third day we fuddenly came upon them gathered together in a certaine wood with their wives and children, but they were not those we sought, but were their friends; who were nothing afraid of vs, nor did they suppose that we would ever have come vnto them. Notwithflanding the anocene were forced to pay for the fault of the guilty; for when we light your then, we flew many of them, and tooke of the men, women, and children, about three thoufand persons, and if it had bin day, as it was night, none of them had scaped our hands; for an huge number of this people had gathered themselves together in a certaine Mountaine inclosed round with woods. I had gotten for my part of the spoile about nineteene men and worken, not very old, together with certaine other things.

These things performed, returning to our Campe, we quietly reposed our selues for eight daies ; for we found there, sufficient plenty of victuall, and other necessary things; from this Nation Mapais, vnto Saint Fordinandes Mount, where our Shippes rode, were fiftie leagues, and

from the Nation Naperm thirtie fix.

Marching on againe from thence, we came to a Nation called Zemie, fubiect to the forefild Zemie Mapair. They live almost as the Boores doe with vs, under the power of their Lords. In this iourney we light upon fields tilled, and let with Mais, and other rootes, and thele fruites and Fieldsof Male. meates, are all the yeare long found in the fields; for before one reape and gather the one into &c. the barne, another is ready for the haruest. And this also being reaped and gathered, it is time 40 to fowe another. Turning afide thence, we came into another Towne, whose inhabitants when they faw vs at hand, fled all away. This towne is foure leagues diffant from the forefaid Mapais. Departing hence, and travailing fix leagues in two dayes journey, we light on another Nation called Tobanna, but we found no men here, but great plenty of foode. The men of this Coun- Tabanna

trie also are subject to the Mapair. Going from hence we met with no Nation in our journey in foure dayes space. But the fer uenth day we came to a Nation called Poisses, foureteene leagues diftant from the former To- Prieses dental y we came to a reason to a second t our Generall not to enter into their Towne, but that we should stay without, in the place where he came to meete va; and our Generall would not confent, but directly marched forward, will

to he, nill he, entred into the Towne. We staied with these Peionas three dayes, and our Generall demanded many things of them concerning the nature and condition of this Countrey. When we were to depart, these Peiones gaue vs an Interpreter and a guide, that we might finde water to drinke, for there is great fearcity of water in this Country, having travailed foure leagues, we came to a Nation called Maye- Mangary: gory, and staying one onely day there, taking an Interpreter againe, and a guile, we marched forward. And these people were gentle and curteous.

Departing also from these people, when we had marched eight leagues, we came to a Nation, whose people, which were many in number, were called Marronos. I hey also gently and cur- Marronot. 60 teoully entertained vs : we abode here two dayes, and receiving a relation of the nature, and condition of the place, taking also a guide with vs, we went further forward. Departing toure

leagues from thele, we came to another Nation, yet not so populous, called Paronios. This Coun-Paronies. trie aboundeth not with victuall and foode, yet notwithstanding it is 3000. strong of men able for warre. In this Countrie we rested one day onely.

Comeras. £ 37 .0825.

Wall of buffes high hill, and compaffed round about with Bryar buffes, as with a wall, 46. We trauailed fixteene leagues turther in foure daies journey, and at length were brought vnto a certaine Nation, called Barconos: the men thereof, feeing, our comming chanced to them beyond their expecta; ion and opinion, prefently betooke themselves to flight, as soone as were came neere their towne; yet they could not escape out of our power. But when we onely craved foode of them, being very ready, they willingly gaue vs Hens, Geefe, Sheepe, Eftridges, Stags and

Departing thence, the third day after we came to a Nation, whose people were called Log-

led Symamos, where a great multitude of men came together. Their towne is fituate vpon an

Lerhannes. Grashoppers, Carcheones.

Suberis.

thu G

bames. They dwell twelve leagues removed from the former. These people had but little foode, for the Graflioppers had corrupted almost all their fruites. Therefore retting one onely night with them, after having travailed fixteene leagues in foure dayes journey, we came to another Nation called Carebeoner. The Grashoppers also had done them great displeature, but had not to much hurt them as they had done the former : abiding with them one day, we vaiderfood this of the condition and quality of the Countrie, that we should finde no water in foure and twenty or thirty leagues space: we approached to these Suberis in fix dayes space: But many of our They dve of mendied or thirth, although with these Careboons we had furn thed our telues with indifferent flore of water for this journey. But in this journey we found a roote aboue ground, having great Roote holding and broad leaves wherein water remaineth as it were in some vessels, nor is it powred out thence, 20 nor also to easily confumed, and one of these rootes containeth about halfe a measure of water.

Thete Suboris had great scarcitie of water also, neither had they any other thing besides to drink,

make drinke after this manner. They gather together the faid roote into a Morter, and out of

No rine in a, and it had not now rained for three whole moneths; yet of the roote called Mandepere, they monerhe Drinke of a

them being stamped they wring forth a mice like milke : if water may be had, wine also may be made of these rootes. In this Village there was one Well onely, which was to be kept by a watchman. So that we were not much troubled with the defire either of Silver or Grad, but the common complaint of all men, would be for want of water. In this Countrie farre and wide also noriuer waters are to be found beside these, but they vie onely that water which they gather in the cutternes. Thefe Suboris make warre with the bordering Indians, onely for water. The to Suboris, who should have shewed vs the way, by night primity stole away. We were therefore now to feeke out the way our felues, and at kingth we light woon those people called Persenner. they refusing our friendship withstood vs by armes, but got little at our hands. We tooke some of these Persennes, who told vs that there had bin three Spaniards in their towne, whereof one called /kieronimus was a trumpeter, whom John Erollas (who was fent by Don Petro Mendoza, to discouer thele Countries) left sicke there, as we have at large before rehearsed. They said therefore that the Perseunos had flaine these three Spaniards, foure dates before our comming thither, being advertised thereof by the Suboris: but they should deerely pay for this fact of theirs. Abiding foureteene daies in their towne, we fought them round about vs euerie where, till at last ta-

Maigenes.

47. Taking our journey, at length we came to the Margenes, but the people thereof relifting vs with strong hand, would not entertaine vs as friends. Their Towne being situate vpon an hill, was compassed round on enerie fide with a thicke and broad quickfet hedge, as high as a man might reach with his Sword. Wee Christians therefore with our Carios, began to affault this Towns in two divers places. But in this affault twelve Christians, together with some few of the Carios were flame, and they put vs to a great deale of trouble, before we could take and win

king them vnawares in a wood, but not al, we partly flew them, & partly led them away captiues. 40

Eight daies after the Towne taken five hundred of our Caries, taking their Bowes and Arrowes, departing fecretly and without our prinitie, about two or three leagues from our Campe, feeke out the Maigenos, who were fled. On whom when they lighted, thefe two Nations 50 fought with fo great and constant resolution, that more then three hundred men of the Caries, but of the enemies, almost innumerable, were slaine; for there was so great a multitude of them, that they forced almost a whole league in length. But the Carios fending a messenger to the towne where we were, earneftly entreated our Generall, that they would come with iome supply of Souldiers to helpe them; for the Margenes had to belet them round in a wood, that they could neither goe forward nor returne backe againe.

Which when our Generall understood, he presently commandeth the Horses to be made ready, and to fend away and dif patch one hundred and fittle Christians, but of the Carios affembled a thousand men, leaving the rest of the Souldiers in the tents to guard them, that wee being abfent, the Maigener our enemies might inuade them. We went for h therefore with this force (10 60 wit) the faid norfe, one hundred and fiftie Christians, and one thousand Carios, to helpe the Carios our friends. But fo foone as the Maigenos perceiued our comming, remouing their tents, they committed themselves to flight, and albeit we pursued them with as much speede as wee could, yet could we never oue rake them.

Retur-

CHAP.4.\$.3. Passages through the Carcokies, Machasies unto Peru.

Returning therefore to our tents, we abode there three daies; for we had found in this town e of the Mairgenos, great plentie of foode, and other things. Having travailed a continuall journey of thirteene daies, that is to fay (in our judgement and theirs who are skilfull in the celeftiall ney or unitions) two and fittie leagues, we came to a Nation, whose people are called Carcokies: and Carokies. hauing trauailed further the space of nine diies, we came into a'certaine little Countrie, sixe leagues long and broad, which was all fo thicke oueripread with excellent Sale, as if it had fowed Sale Country, Salt in great abundance, and this Salt is not corrupted winter nor fummer.

We rested two daies in this Salt Countrie, going forward, at length, after soure daies iourney, we came to the foresaid Nation Carcolies: But when we were yet foure leagues from their to wine, our Generall fent fiftie Christians, fiftie Carios to prouide vs lodgings. Hauing entred the towne, we found such an innumerable multitude of men gathered together, as in all this journey we had not feene the like; wherefore being very penfine and carefull about meafure, fending a messenger presently backe vnto our Generall; who taking his journey the very same euening, came vnto vs betweene three and foure of the clocke in the morning. But the Carcokies fuppoling there had bin no more men there then we, whom they had feene before, had now promiled themselues the victorie. But when they understood that our Generall followed vs with a greater force, they were very fad and forrowfull, and performed all friendly offices and kindeneffe vnto vs; for they could doe none other, feeing they were afraid of their wines, children, and their towne. They brought vs therefore fielh of Deere, Geefe, Hens, Sheepe, Eftridges, 20 Conies, and whatfoeuer elfe of this kinde of Veniforn, and alfo of Birds, they had alfo Turkish Samdelies

Come, Wheate, Rife, and certaine Rootes, of all which things there was great plentie in this

The men of this Countrie weare a blew stone in their lippes, as broad as a Dye. Their weapons are Darts, the states of Speaces, and round Targets made of the skins of the Indian Sheepe called Amidu. Their women haue a little hole in their lips, in the which they put Chrisfall either of a greene or blew colour: they have garments of Cotten, like to a shirt, but without fleeues : they are beautifull enough : they doe nothing else but spinne, and order things appertaining to the houshold; for tillage of the ground, and other things necessarie for the maintenance of the familie, are looked vnto by the men.

48. When we had gone three dairs journey from this towne, we came to a certaine River cale led Mackager, league and a halfe broad: and when we faw not how we might passe fately ouer without danger, at length we found out this meanes, that for euery two persons wee should make a Boate of twigs and timber, whereon being carried downe the River, they might come to the other fide of the banke; but in this paffage foure of our men were drowned. This Riuer hath most saudurie Fish, Many Tygars also are found about these places, and this River is but foure leagues onely diffant from the towne Macheafies.

The Inhabitant's comming forth to meete vs, entertained vs curteoully, speaking to vs in the Spanish tongue, whereat being astonished and foreafraid at the first, wee demanded or them to They arise in what Lord they were subject, and who was their supreame Gouernour! They therefore anof wered vs, and our Captaine, that they were subject to a certaine Noble man in Spaine, whose of Pau. name was Petro Ausuctes.

Pedro Anfuetes.

Entring into this Towne, we found certaine men and women, and little Infants also swarming with very little vermin, like our fleas. These little vermin, if they lay hold of the toes of the teete, or any other part of the body, they gnaw and enter alwaies more and more deepely Strangworms. in, and at length become wormes, such as are found in our filberds; yet if it be done in time, this mischiefe may be preuented, that it shall not hurt, but if deferring the cure it be neglected, at length by eating and gnawing, it confumeth and corrupteth whole toes.

From the often named Citie of the Assumption of Mary, to this Towne, are numbered (according to the account of the Altronomers) three hundred feuentie two leagues. And when we had flaied there about twentie daies, a Letter was brought vs from a Citie of the Kingdome of Peru, A Letter on 50 called Lima, where the Viceroy or Lieutenant of Cafars Maiestie, who at that time was Liecu- of Pou. tiatus Lagafea, had an houfe. The Letter contained, that our Generall Martin Don Fiottas should goe no further forward, upon paine of death, but abiding in the Towne Macheafies, should expect his further commandement.

But after this our Generall fent away foure persons to the Gonernor to Peru. These foure perfons journying fixe weekes in Pern, came first to that Nation called Potali, next to another called Rueskem. The third Nation to which they came, was called Plata, and the fourth, which was the Metropolis or the chiefe Citie, was called Lima.

49. This also is worthie of observation. That the Countrie of Macheafies is so fruitfull, 60 that we neither found, not faw any like it in fruitfulnelle, in all this our lourney. For if an Indian Hony in trees, going forth into the Wood, make an hole or a cleft in the first tree that commeth to hand, simi- flings. ting an Hatchet into it, fine or lixe measures of to pure Honie flowe out, as if it were sweete Wine, or Muskadell. The Bees that make this Honie are without flings, and are very fmall. This Honie being eaten with Bread, or mingled with other food, yeeldeth pleafant meate. They

make alio Drinke thereof, or Wine, of the same tathe that Muskadell hath, but sweeter. Our Generall Eyellus fo wrought with the people, that wee could flay no longer here, by reason of the want of proussion. For we had scarce victuall for one moneth.

In performing this Journey we spent a yeere and an halfe, doing nothing else, but making continuall warre. And in this Journey we had brought into our fub ection about twelue thou fand men, women, and children, who were compelled to ferue vs as bond-flaues: as I for mine owne perion did possesse about fiftie men, women, and children.

co. Wee, with our Generall Martin Don Ejollas, came vnto the Citie Allumption, but Abriego a Captaine which had rebelled against Captaine Mendoza, and slaine him would neither open the Citie to our Generall, nor yeeld it vp vnto him, nor acknowledge him for Generall, and I

But the faid Diego Abriego, being forced to forfake the Citie with fiftie Christians, who jovned them telues with him, fled thirtie leagues from vs, fo that we could atchieue nothing against him. This warrecontinued two whole yeeres space betweenevs, the two Captaines so oppofing themselves one against the other, that neither was safe from danger of other.

51. In the meanefeafon, while thefe things were thus done, I received Letters out of Spanne, and thewed to Martin Don Eyollas, I prefently defired a friendly and curreous difinistion from him. I tooke my Journey in the name of God, vpon Saint Stephens Day, which was the fixe and twentieth of December, in the yeere 1552, and departing from the Allumpion of Marie, care ried upon the River of Plate, with my twentie Indians in two Canoas or Boats, when wee had to now gone fixe and forcie leagues, we first arrived at a certaine Towne called Inberie Sabaie. In that Towne foure others allo, together with two Portugals loyned themselves with vs, having gone fifteene leagues, we came to a Towne called Gaberethe. After this having gone fixteene leagues further in foure dayes, we came to a certaine Village called Barotis. Whence departing againe, having gone foure and fiftie leagues in nine dayes, wee came to a Towne called Barele, where staying two dayes, we fought prouision and Boats to carrievs, for wee were to goe one hundred leagues up the River Parana by Boat, At length being brought to a certaine Towne called Gmgie, wee abode there foure dayes. And thus farre the Countrie and Empire of Celar Maiestie extendeth it selfe, all which places in former time were subject to the People Cariet.

42. After this therefore, all the Nation Toupin, beginneth the Countrie and Jurisdiction of 10 the Portagall, and we were compelled, leaving Parana, and our Boats, to travell by land vnto thefe Tonpin, which continued fixe whole moneths; in which Journey we were to goe over Defarts, Mountaines and Valleyes, and for the feare waxed of wildeand rauening beafts, we durft not safely take our sleepe, &c.

Wee wandred eight whole dayes through Woods and Thickets, so that although having trauelled farre and wide, yet in all my life time I had neuer gone fo rough, troublefome, and tedious a way : nor had we any thing which we might eate, fo that wee were compelled to furfaine our selues with Honie, and Roots, wheresoener we could get them: and for the danger also, to wit, that we feared left our enemies would purfue vs, we had not fo much time as to take any venilon.

Biefaie. River Vrauam.

Schenetueba.

Barny.

Barede.

Gingie.

After this wee came to a Nation called Biefaie, where staying foure dayes, wee prouided our in Telues againe of victuall, but durst not come neere their Towne, because we were so few. In this Countrie there is a River called Vrquam, wherein we faw Water-Inakes, and Serpents called Tuesca, in the Spanish Tongue Schene Ejba, which were fixteene paces long, and foure ta-

thome thicke. These Serpents doe much hurt: for if a man wash himselfe in that River, or any beaft (wim ouer, forthwith fuch a Serpent (wimming to them, windeth his tayle about the man, or beaft, and drawing them under water, deuoureth them. Proceeding further hence we trauelled about one hundred leagues, in a continued Journey of a whole moneths space, and at length came into a large Towne called Schenetveba, and rested

there three dayes. Going againe further, we came into a certaine Towne of Christians, whose Captaine was John 10

53. Moreover, proceeding further thence, we came to the Towne of Saint Vincent, From the Citie of the Affirmption of Marie, to the Towne of Saint Vincent in Brafil, are reckoned three hundred and feuentie leagues.

Setting sayle from the Towne of Saint Vincent, on Saint Iohn Baptifts Dav, which was the Hearrised at four eard twentieth of Isne, in the yeere of our Lord 1553. wee arrived at Liston, the third of Animere, September, in the yeere 1553, and with a countries, whence he had died, which I brought with me out of those Countries. September, in the yeere 1553. and while wee abode fourteene dayes there, two of my Indians

I had shought here to have added the Voyages of Iohannes Stadius, (another German, which ferned the Portugals in Brafill about Schmidels later time) published in Theodore de Bry : and had the 62 Same by me translated. But contaying little light for the Countrie, and People; and relating in manner onely his owne Tragedies, in his taking by the Sauages, and often perils of being eaten by them, as some of his friends were before his face, with other like Sausge arguments wherewith wee have glusted you alreadse: I being alreadse too volummous, base omitted the same, and hasten to other Relations.

CHAP. V.

The Observations of Sir RICHARD HAWKINS, Knight, in his Voyage into the South Sea. An. Dom. 1593. once before published, now reviewed and corrected by a written Copie. illustrated with notes, and in divers places abbreniated.

What happened in this Verage before they came neere the Aquinotical Lines with diners accidentall Dissonres vefull for

Eith the Counsels consent, and helpe of my Father, Sir John Hawkins, Knight, I retolued a Voyage to be made for the Hands of Lapan, of the Philippinas, and Moluccas, the Kingdome of China, and East Indies, by the way of the Straites of Magelan, and the South Sea.

For this purpose in the end of the yeere 1588, returning from the Journey an amedite fegainst the Spanis Armado, I caused a Ship to bee builded in the River of Thames, betwixt three pentance ; art and four hundred tunnes, which was finished in that perfection as could be required. For she oninous n.me was pleafing to the eye, profitable for flowage, good of fayle, and well conditioned. On the pate, as you all day of her lanching, thre was named, The Repentance.

The Repentance being put in perfection, and riding at Derford, the Queenes Maiestie passing characteris fort by her, to her Palace of Greenwich, commanded her Barge-men to rowe round about her, and not to terreviewing her from Post to Stemme, disliked nothing but her Name, and said, that shee would instanced in 20 Christen her a new, and that thenceforth shee should bee called the Daintie; which name shee the Reunte, brooked as well for her proportion and grace, as for the many happie Voyages shee made in her Thunderb st. Maiesties seruices : Haung taken (for her Maiestie) a great Bysten, of fine hundred tunnes lo- and this Reserve den with Iron, and other Commodities, vnder the conduct of Sir Martin Furbufher; A Carack tance, with the bound for the East Indes, under my Fathers charge, and the principal cause of taking the great Hape. Carack, brought to Dartmonth by Sir lobn Bonrow, and the Earle of Camberlands thips, Anno 1592. with others of moment in her other Voyages. To vs, thee neuer brought but cost, trouble, and care.

Hauing made an estimate of the charge of Victuals, Munition, Imprests, Sea-store; and ne- ons for preceffaries for the faid ship; consorting another of an hundred tunnes, which I waited for daily tended Voys-40 from the Straites of Giberalter, with a Pinnace of fixtie tunnes, all mine owne: And for a competent number of men for them; as also of all sorts of merchandises for trade and trafficke in all places where we should come; I began to wage men, to buy all manner of victuals & prouisions, and to lade her with them, and with all forts of commodities (which I could call to minde) fitting; and dispatched order to my servant in Plimouib, to put in a readinesse my Pinnace; as allo to take vp certaine provisions, which are better cheape in these parts then in London, as terprovided Beefe, Porke, Bisket, and Sider. The eight of Aprill, 1593. I caused the Pilot to set sayle from at Pimout? Black-wall, and to vaile downe to Gramef-end, whither that night I purposed to come. And for then at Londor that shee was very deepe loden, and her Ports open, the water beganne to enter in at them; Note. which no bodie having regard vnto, thinking themselves, safe in the River, it augmented in such Danger of nanner, as the weight of the water began to profle downe the fide, more then the winde : At length when it was feene and the sheete slowne, she could hardly be brought vpright. But God was pleafed, that with the diligence and trauell of the Companie, shee was freed of that danger: which may be a gentle warning to all fuch as take charge of shipping, euen before they let fayle, either in Ruer or Harbour, or other part, to have an eye to their Ports, and to fee those thut and calket, which may cause danger; for auoiding the many mishaps, which daily chance for the neglect thereof, and have beene most lamentable spectacles and examples vito vs : Experiments in the Great Harrie, Admirall of England, which was over-let and funke at Portfmouth with her Captaine, Carem, and the most part of his companie drowned in a goodly Summersday, with a little flaw of winde; for that her Ports were all open, and making a finall 60 hele, by them entred their definition; where it they had beene shut, no winde could laue hurt her, especially in that place. In the River of Thames, Mafter Thomas Candilh had a small thip ouer-fet through the fame negligence. And one of the Fleet of Sir Francis Drake, in Santo Domingo Harbour, turned her keele vpward likewife, vpon the same occasion; with many others. which we never have knowledge of,

Xxxxx

Comming neere the South fore-land, the winde began to vere to the South-east and by South fo as we could not double the point of the Land, and being close aboord the shoare, and putting our thip to flay, what with the chapping Sea, and what with the Tide vpon the Bowe, the mill flaving, and put vs in some danger, before we could flat about; therefore for doubling the Point of any Land better iseuer a fhort boord, then to put all in perill.

Being closers of the race of Poreland, the winde began to fuffle with fogge and milling raine and forced vs to a fhort fayle, which continued with vs three dayes; the winde neuer vering one point, not the foggetuffering vs to fee the Coaft. The third day in the fogge, we met with a Barke of Darimouth, which came from Rochell, and demanding of them, if they had made any land, answered, that they had onely seene the Edie flone that morning, which lieth thwart of 18 the Sound of Plimonth, and that Dartmonth (as they thought) bare off vs North North-eaft. which feemed ftrange vnto vs; for we made account that wee were thwart of Exmonth : with in two houres after, the weather beganne to cleere vp, and wee found our felues thwart of the Berry, and might fee the small Barque bearing into Torbay, having over-shot her Port : which errour often happeneth to those that make the land in foggie weather, and vie not good diligence by found, by lying off the land, and other circumstances, to search the truth; and is cause of the loffe of many a fhip, and the fweete lives of multitudes of men. That evening, wee anchored in the range of Darsmouth, till the floud was spent; and the ebbe come, wee set favle againe. And the next morning early, being the fixe and twentieth of Aprill, we harboured our felues in Plemonth.

Parts requifite in a good Marmer.

And in this occasion, I found by experience, that one of the principall parts required in a Mariner , that frequenteth our coaftes of England , is to east his Tides , and to knowe how they jet from point to point, with the difference of those in the Channell from those of

Abules of fome Sea-faring men-

After the hurts by a cruell storme (in which the Pinnace was funke, and the Dainties Mast cut over-hoord) repaired, I beganne to gather my companie aboord, which occupied my good friends, and the luftices of the Towne two dayes, and forced vs to fearch all lodgings. Tayerns and Ale-houses. (For some would ever bee taking their leave and never depart ;) some drinkt themselves so drunke, that except they were carried aboord, they of themselves were not able to goe one fleppe : others knowing the necessitie of the time, faigned themselves ficke; others to bee indebted to their Holts, and forced mee to ransome them; one his Cheft; another, his Sword ; another, his Shirts ; another, his Carde and Inftruments for Sea : And others, to benefit themselves of the Imprest given them, absented themselves; making a lewd living in deceiving all , whole money they could lay hold of : which is a foundall too rife among tour Sea-men; by it they committing three great offences. First, Robberie of the goods of another person : Secondly, Breach of their faith and promite: Thirdly, Hinderance (with loffe of time) vnto the Voyage; all being a common injurie to the owners, victuallers, and companie; which many times hath beene an veter ouerthrow, and vindoing to all in generall. An abuse in our Commonwealth necessarily to be reformed.

Mafter Thomas

Mafter George

No:c.

He addes another remedie in taking away impr fts. The confequence of In.

Mafter Thomas Candilb in his last Voyage, in the Sound of Plimonth, being readie to fet # fayle, complained vnto mee, that persons which had absented themselves in Imprests , had cost him about a thousand and five hundred pounds: These Varlets within a few dayes after his departure, I faw walking the streetes of Plimouth, whom the Iustice had before fought for with great diligence, and without punishment. And therefore it is no wonder that others presume to doe the like, Impunitas peccandi illecebra. The like complaint made Master George Rejmond : and in what fort they dealt with mee, is notorious, and was such, that if I had not beent provident, to have had a third part more of men, then I had need of, I had beene forced to go to the Sea vomanned; or to give over my Voyage. And many of my companie, at Sea vaunted how they had coulened the Earle of Cumberland, Malter Candish, Malter Reymond, and others, tome of fine poundes, some of tenne, some of more, and some of lesse. And truely, I thinke, to my Voyage prospered the worse, for theirs and other lew I persons companie, which were in my ship: which, I thinke, might be redressed by some extraordinarie, seuere, and present luflice to bee executed on the offenders by the Iustice in that place, where they should bee found.

The greater part of my companie gathered aboord, I fet fayle the twelfth of Iune, 1593. I cannot but aduite all fuch, as shall have charge committed vnto them, ever before they depart out of the Port, to give vnto their whole Fleet not directions for chill government, but also where, when, and how to meete, if they should chance to lofe companie, and the fignes how to knowe one another afarre off, with other points and circumstances, as the occasions shall minister matter different, at the different of the wife Commander, by publication of that which is good and necessarie for the guide of his Fleet and people; but all secret instructions, to give them sealed, 6) and not to be opened, but comming to a place appointed.

Lanching out into the channell, the winde being at East and by South, and east South-east, which blowing hard, and a floud in hand, caused a chapping Sea, and my Vice-admirall bearing 2 good fayle made fome water, and shooting off a Peece of Ordnance, I edged towards her, to

knowe the cause; who answered me, that they had sprung a great leake, and that of force they must returne into the Sound, which seeing to be necessarie, I cast about, where anchoring, and going aboord, presently found, that betwixt winds and water, the Calkers had left a seame vn- Falle calking. calked, which being filled up with Pitch onely, the Sea labouring that out, had beene fufficient to haue finke her in short space, if it had not beene discouered in time.

And for more securitie, I hold it for a good custome vied in some parts, in making an end of For preuents calking and pitching the fhip, the next tide to fill her with water, which will vindoubtedly dif- on thereof. couer the defect, for no pitcht place without calking, can fuffer the force and peaze of the water. In neglect whereof, I have feene great damage and danger to enfue. The Arke Royall of his Example. See

to Majelties, may ferue for an example : which put all in danger at her first going to the Sea , by a Caparrings last Maiesties, may terue for an example: Which put all it danger at her link going to the sea, by a voyage: in erivuell, hole lest open in the post, and couered onely with Pitch. In this point no man can be which the too circums pect, for it is the securitie of ship, men, and goods.

This being remedied, I fet fayle in the morning, and ranne South-west, till wee were cleare of was of endan-Vilbent; and then South South-west, till wee were some hundred leagues off, where wee met gered thereby, with a great Hulke, of some five or fixe hundred tunnes, well appointed, the which my companie, (as is natural to all Mariners) presently would make a prize, and loden with Spaniards goods, Aduice for and without speaking to her, wished that the Gunner might shoot at her, to cause her to amain, shooting at Which is a bad custome received and vied of many ignorant persons, presently to gunne at all Sea whatfoeuer they discouer, before they speake with them; being contrarie to all discipline, and

20 many times is the caule of diffention betwint friends, and the breach of Amitie betwint Princes; Two English the death of many, and fometimes loile of thips and all, making many obitinate, if not desperate. In ps hand the death of many, and fometimes loile of thips and all, making many obitinate, if not desperate. Comming within the hayling of the Hulke, we demanded whence the was? whither the was wronged each bound? and what her loding ? Shee answered, that she was of Demmarke comming from Spame, other by misloden with Sale: we willed her to thrike her Top-fayles, which fhee did, and shewed vs her Char. taking.

ter-parties, and Bils of loding, and then faluted vs, as is the manner of the Sea, and fo departed. Wee directed our course to the Maderas. The Madera Ilands are two: the great, callen La The Madera Madera, and the other Porto Santo; of great fertilitie, and rich in Sugar, Conferues, Wine, and Hands.

fweet Wood, whereof they take their name. Other commodities they yeeld, but thefe are the principall. The chiefe Towne and Port is on the Souther fide of the Madera, well fortified : they are subject to the Kingdome of Portugal; the Inhabitants and Garrison all Portugals.

The third of Iulie, wee past along the Ilands of Canaria, which have the name of a King- Canarie Ilands. dome, and containe thele feuen Hands, Grand Canaria, Tenerifa, Palma, Gomera, Lancerota Fortementura, and Fierro. These Hands have abundance of Wine, Sugar, Conferues . Orcall Pitch. Iron, and other commodities, and store of Cattell and Corne, but that a certaine Worme. called Gorgofbo, breedeth in it, which eateth out the fubitance, leaving the huske in manner whole. Goreefbe. The head Hand, where the Iustice, which they call Andiencia, is resident ; and whither all fuits have their appellation, and finall fentence, is the Grand Canaria, although the Tenerifa is held for the better and richer Hand, and to have the best Sugar : and the Wine of the Palma is reputed for the best. The Pitch of these Hands melteth not with the Sunne, and therefore is proper 40 for the higher workes of shipping. Betwix: Fortenentura and Laneerota is a goodly Sound, fit

for a meeting place for any Fleet. Where is good anchoring, and abundance of many forts of Fish. There is water to be had in most of these Ilands, but with great vigilance. For the naturals of them are venturous and hardie, and many times clime vp and downe the steepe Rockes and broken Hills, which feeme impossible, which I would hardly have beleeved, had I not feene it, and that with the greatest arte and agilitie that may bee: Their Armes for the most part, are Lances of nine or ten foot, with a head of a foot and halfe long, like vnto Boare-speares, saue The descripthat the head is somewhat more broad.

Two things are famous in these Ilands, the Pike of Tenerifa, which is the highest Land in my and the Pike, judgement that I have feene, and men of credite have told they have feene it more them forcie Of a Tree in leagues off. It is like vnto a Sugar loafe, and continually coursed with Snowe, and placed in the Fierro. One 50 middest of a goodly Valley, most fertile, and temperate round about it. Out of which, going for, now dwelvp the pike, the cold is fo great, that it is vnfufferable, and going downe to the Townes of the ling in Hol-

Iland Fierro, which some write & affirme, with the dropping of his leaves, to give water for the that d. 1618. in this lland, and seene this Tree, which he thus described; It is as big as an Oake of middle size, the barke white like Ha dbeame; fixe or feuen yards high, with ragged boughs; the leafe like that of the Bay, white on the bottome, and greene on the other fide. It beareth neither fruit nor flower. It is settuate in the decliuitie of a Hill; in the day it is withered, dropping in the night (a cloude hanging thereon) yeelding water sufficient for the whole Hand; which containeth 8000, soules, and above 100000, beafts, Camels, Mules, Goats, &c. It falls into a Pond made of bricke, floored with flones very thight, by pipes of Lea 1 conneighed from the Tree to it, and thence divided into fenerall Ponds through all the Hand. They which dwell up-hill fetch it 60 in barrels. They water therewith also their Corne-grounds. The Pond holds 20000, runs, and is filled in a night. He iddeed a report (perhaps deutled to keepe off buffe fingers, or with buffe tongues to militable wonders) that the Maores having then that Iland from the Christians, went to fell that Tree, but each blowe recoyled on the striker. Hee affirmed also that hee had beene to the Pike of Teneriff, two miles. He faith the South fide is healthfull, the North very Aguith, and fubicat to Calentures; and the

Iland, the heat feemeth most extreme, till they approch neere the coast. The other is a tree in the borne, told me

Inhabitants on one fide looke luftie, on the other withered.

fullenance of the whole Hand, which I have not feene, although I have beene on thoare on the Iland: but those which have feene it, have recounted this mysterie differently to that which is written, in this manner; That this Tree is placed in the bottome of a Valley ever flourishing with broad leases, and that round about it are a multitude of goodly high Pines, which ouerstop it, and as it feemeth, were planted by the Diuine prouidence, to preferue it from Sunne and winde. Out of this Valley ordinarily rife every day, great vapours and exhalations, which by reafon that the Sanne is hindered to worke his operation, with the height of the Mountaine towards the South-east, convert themselves into moissure, and so bedew all the trees of the Vallev, and from those which ouer-top this Tree, drops downe the dew you his leaues, and to from his leaves into a round Well of ftone, which the Naturals of the Land have made to receive the water; of which the people and cattell have great reliefe: but fometimes it raineth and then the Inhabitants doe referue water for many dayes to come in their Ciffernes and Tynaxes, which is that they drinke of, and wherewith they principally fuffaine themselves.

The Citie of the Grand Canaria, and chiefe Port is on the West side of the Iland; the head Towns and Port of Tenerifa, is towards the South part, and the Port and Towns of the Palma and Gomera, on the East fide. In Gomera, some three leagues Southward from the Towne, is a great River of water, but all these llands are perilous to land in, for the siege caused by the Ocean Sea, which alwaies is forcible, and requireth great circumfpection; who foeuer hath not vrgent caufe, is either to goe to the Eastwards, or to the Westwards of all these Hands, as well to avoide the calmes, which hinder sometimes eight or ten dayes fayling, as the contagion which 26 their diffemperature is wont to cause, and with it to breede Calenturas, which wee call burning The first disco- Feners. These Ilands are faid to be first discouered by a Frenchman, called John de Betancourt, about uerers of these the veere 140s. They are now a Kingdome subject to Spaine.

Hands. Exercises vpon the Sou h-

Being cleare of the llands, and feeing my felfe path hope of returning backe, without fome extraordinarie accident, I began to fet order in my Companie and victuals. And for that, to the wards of the Southwards of the Canaries, is for the most part an idle Nauigation, I denited to keepe my people occupied, as well to continue them in health (for that too much eafe in hot Countries is neither profitable nor healthful) as also to divert them from remembrance of their home; & from play, which breedeth many inconveniences, and other bad thoughts and workes which idlenesse is cause of; and so shirting my companie, as the custome is, into Starboord and Larboord men, the 20 halte to watch and worke whileft the others flept, and take reft : I limited the three dayes of the weeke, which appertained to each, to be employed in this manner : the one for the vie and cleanling of their Armes, the other for roomaging, making of Sayles, Nettings, Decking, and detenfes of our Ships; and the third, for cleanfing their bodies, mending and making their apparell, and necessaries, which though it came to be practifed but once inteuen dayes, for that the Sabboth is ever to be referred for God alone, with the ordinarie obligation which each person had befides, was many times of force to be omitted; and thus wee directed our course betwixt the Hands of Cape de Verde and the Maine. These Hands are held to bee scituate in one of the most vahealthiest Climates of the world, and therefore it is wisedome to shunne the fight of

oane de Verde.

The vowholformatic thereof.

The beare. of Feuers is the dowes ry night: 10 that the execeding moifture and vnf undneffe thereof cau-

them, how much more to make abode in them? In two times that I have beene in them, either cost vs the one halfe of our people, with Fe-. uers and Fluxes of fundrie kindes; fome shaking, some burning, some partaking of both; some peffelt with frensie, others with flouth, and in one of them it cost mee fixe moneths ticknesse, with no small hazard of life: which I attribute to the distemperature of the aire, for being within fourteene degrees of the Equinoctrall Line, the Sunne hath great force all the yeere, and the more for that often they passe, two, three, and foure yeeres without raine; and many times the earth burneth in that manner as a man well shod, cannot indure to goe where the Sunne shi-Ano ber cause neth. With which extreme heate the bodie fatigated, greedily desireth refreshing, and longeth for the comming of the Breze, which is the North-east winde, that seldome fayleth in the afternoone at foure of the clocke, or fooner: which comming cold and fresh, and finding the pores 50 which fall cue- of the bodie open, and (for the most part) naked, penetrateth the very bones, and to causeth fudden diftemperature, and fundrie manners of ficknesse, as the Subjects are divers, whereupon they worke. Departing out of the Calmes of the Hands, and comming into the fresh Breze, it causeth the like, and I have seene within two dayes, after that wee have partaked of the fresh aire, of two thousand men aboue an hundred and fiftie haue beene crazed in their health. The Inhabitants of these Ilands vie a remedie for this, which at my first being amongit them, feemed vnto mee ridiculous, but fince, time and experience hath taught to bee grounded vpon reason. And is, that vpon their heads they weare a Night-cap, vpon it a Moutero, and a Hat ouer that, and on their bodies a fute of thicke Cloth, and ypon it a Gowne, furr'd or lined with Cotton, or Bayes, to defend them from the heate in that manner, as the In- 60 habitants of cold Countries, to guard themselves from the extremitie of the cold. Which doubtleffe, is the best diligence that any man can vie, and who focuer proueth it, shall finde himselie leffe annoyed with the heate, then if he were thinly cloatned, for that where the coldaire commeth, it pierceth not fo fubtilly.

The Moone also in this climate, as in the coast of Gnyme, and in all hor Countries, hath forci-The influence ble operation in the body of man; and therefore, as the Plannet, most prejudiciall to his health, is of the Moore to be flunned; as also not to fleepe in the open Ayre, or with any Scuttle or Window open, in hot Counwhereby the one or the other may enter to hurt. For a person of credit told me, that one night tries. in a River of Gaynne, leaving his window open in the fide of his Cabin, the Moone thining voon his shoulder, left him with such an extraordinary paine, and furious burning in it, as in aboue twenty houres, he was like to run mad; but in fine, with force of Medicines and cures, after long corment he was exfed.

CHAP.S.C.I. Saint lago described with the Fraites, and Trees thereof.

Of these Ilands are two pyles: the one of them lyeth out of the way of Trade, more Wester-10 ly, and fo little frequented : the other lyeth fome fourescore leagues from the Maine, and contraineth fixe in number, to wit, Saint lago, Fuego, Majo, Bonavifto, Sal, and Brano. They are belonging to the Kingdome of Portugall, and inhabited by people of that Nation, and are of great trade, by reason of the neighbourhood they have with Gayane and Bynne: but the principall is the buying and felling of Negros. They have store of Sugar, Sale, Rice, Cotten-wooll, and Cottoncloth, Ambergreece, Cyuit, Olyphants teeth, Brimstone, Pummy Rone, Spunge, and some Gold. but little, and that from the mayne.

Saint lago is the head Iland, and hath one Citie and two townes, with their Ports. The Citie Saint lago. called Saint lago, whereof the Iland hath his name, hath a Garrison and two Forts, scituated in the bottome of a pleafant Valley, with a running streame of water passing through the middest 20 of it, whether the relt of the Ilands come for Luftice, being the feate of the Audiencia, with his Bithon. The other Townes are Plays, tome three leagues to the Eastwards of Saine Iago, placed on high, with a goodly Bay, whereof it hath his name : and Saint Domingo, a small Towne within the Land. They are on the Souther part of the Hand, and have beene facked fundry times in Anno 1,82,by Manuel Seradet, a Portugall, with a Fleete of French-men in Anno 1,88, they Sackedby Ma. were both burnt to the ground by the English, Sir Francis Drake being Generall: and in Anno nuel Sender Sir 1596. Saint lago was taken, and facked by the English, Sir Anthony Sherley being Generall: The Francis Dra fecond Hand is Fuero, fo called, for that day and night there burneth in it a Unican, whole flames and Sir dathe. in the night are seene twentie leagues off in the Sea. It is by nature fortified in that fort, as but my sberleg. by one way is any accesse or entrance into it, and there cannot goe vp aboue two men a brett. Fier hill.

30 The Bread which they spend in these slands, is brought from Portugal and Spaine, saving that which they make of Rice or of Mayes, which we call Gazane wheate. The best watering is in the lie of Brass, on the well part of the Hand, where is a great River, but foule Anchoring, as is prass, good in all these Hands, for the most part. The fruits are few, burshoftentiall, as Palmitos, Plantanos, watering. Potatos, and Coco Nuts.

The Palmito is like to the Date tree, and as I thinke a kinde of it, but wilde. In all parts of The Palmino Afrique and America they are found, and in some parts of Europe, and in divers parts different, In Afrique, and in the West Indies they are small, that a man may cut them with a knife, and the leffer the better. But in Brafil they are fo great, that with difficulty a man can fell them with an Axe, and the greater the better sone foote within the top is profitable, the reft is of no value.

40 and that which is to be eaten is the pith, which in some is better, in some worse, The Plantane is a tree found in most parts of Afrique and America, of which two leaves are The Plantan. fufficient to couera man from top to toe: It beareth fruite but once, and then drieth away, and great leanes. out of his root sprouteth vp others new. In the top of the tree is his fruit, which groweth in a great bunch, in the forme and fallinon of puddings, in some more, in some leffe. I have seene in one bunch aboue foure hundred Plantans, which have weighed aboue fourescore pound waight. They are of divers proportions, some great, tome leffer, some round, some square, some triangle, most ordinarily of a span long, with a thicke skinne that pecleth easily from the meate; which is either white or yellow, and very tender like Butter; but no conserue is better, nor of a more pleasing taste. For I never have seene any man, to whom they have bred millike, or done hure with 50 eating much of them, as of other fruites. The best are those which ripen naturally on the tree. but in most parts they cut them off in branches, and hang them vp in their houses, and eate them as they ripe. For the Birds and Vermine presently in rupning on the tree, are feeding on them. The best that I have seene are in Brasil, in an Iland called Placensia, which are small and round, Placensia, and greene when they are ripe : whereas the others in ripening become yellow. Those of the West Indies and Guynneare great, and one of them fufficient to fatisfie a man : the onely fatis they have is, that they are windie. In some places they eate them instead of bread, as in Passac

red with water; they are excellent in Conferue, and good fodden in different manners, and dried on the tree not inferior to Suckets. The Coco nut is a fruit of the fashion of a Hafell-nut, but that it is as bigge :s an ordinary The Cocos, & Bowle, and some are greater. It hath two shels, the vetermost framed (as it were) of a mulcis their kinders tude of threds, one laid upon another, with a greene skin ouer-lapping them, which is foft and thicke : the innermoft is like to the shell of a Hafell-nut in all porportion, fauing that it is greater and thicker, and some more blacker. In the top of it is the forme of a Munkies face, with

ma, and other parts of Tierra firme. They grow and prosper best when their rootes are ener cone-

two eyes, his note and a mouth. It containeth in it both meate and drinke, the meate white are milke, and like to that of the kernell of a Nut, and as good as Almonds blancht, and of great quantity: The water is cleare, as of the Fountaine, and pleafing in tafte, and somewhat answereththat of the water diffilled of Milke. Some fay it hath a fingular property in nature, for conferuing the smoothnesse of the skin; and therefore in Spaine and Porengall, the curious Dames doe ordinarily wash their faces and necks with it. If the holes of the shell be kept close, they keepe foure or fix moneths good and more; but if it be opened, and the water kept in the shell, in few daies it turneth to Vinegar. They grow upon high Trees, which have no boughes, onely in the top they have a great cap of leaves, and vnder them groweth the fruite vpon certaine twigges: and some affirme that they beare not fruite before they be aboue forty yeares old. They are mall 10 things like to the Palme trees, and grow in many parts of Afia, Afrique and America. The shels of these nuts are much effeemed for drinking cups, and much cost and labour is bestowed vpon them in caruing, grauing and garnishing them, with Siluer, Gold, and precious stones.

In the Kingdome of Chile and in Brafil, is another kinde of thefe, which they call Comillos as we may interpret (little Cocos) and are as bigge as Wal-nuts, but round and smooth, and grow in great clusters : the trees in forme are all one, and the meate in the nut better, but they have

Another kinde of great Cocos groweth in the Ander of Para, which have not the delicate meate nor drinke, which the others have, but within are full of Almonds, which are placed as the graines in the Pomegranner, being three times bigger then those of Europe, and are much like 20 them in taite.

Cynet-@ats. Munkeyes.

In these llands are Cyuet-Cats, which are also found in parts of Asa, and Afrique; esteemed for the Ciuet they yeelde, and carry about them in a cod in their hinder parts, which is taken from them by force. In them also are flore of Monkies, and the best proportioned that I have feene and Parrots, but of colour different to those of the West Indies; for they are of a rullet or gray colour and great speakers,

ð. I I.

Considerations of Currents: the Scorbute: fire in Ships; Fishes which attend them: Sea-hawking and hunting : their comming to Brafil and observations thereof.

Change of

The faire and large winde we continued our courfe, till we came within fine degrees of the Equinocity flow, where the winde tooke vs contrary by the South-well, a whom the twentieth of luly, but a keir gale of winde and a fmooth Sea, for that we might be are all a tawt; and to advantage our felues what we might, we stood to taugnt, 2 Seatterne, fightife the Eastwards, being able to lye South-east and by South. The next day about nine of the clock, 40 my company being gathered together to ferue God, which we accustomed to doe every morning Morning and and evening, it feemed vnto me that the colour of the Sea was different to that of the daies paft. evening praier and which is ordinarily where is deepe water; and so called the Captaine and Master of my Ship, I told them that to my feeming the water was become very whitish, and that it made shew of Sholde water. Whereunto they made answere, that all the lines in our Ships could not fetch grand : for we could not be leffe then threefcore and ten leagues off the Coast, which all that kept reckoning in the Ship agreed vpon, and my felfe was of the fame opinion. And fo we applied our felues to ferue God, but all the time that the feruice endured, my heart could not be at reft, and still me thought the water began to waxe whiter and whiter. Our prayers ended, I commanded aleade and a line to be brought, and having the lead in foureteene fathoms wee had 50 ground, which put vs all into a maze, and fending men into the top, prefently discourred the land of Gunne, tome five leagues from vs, very low Land, I commanded a Pecce to be shot, and Etrorin reck. lay by the lee, till my other Ships came vp. Which hailing vs., we demanded of them how farre shey found themselves offiche land; who answered, some threescore and ten, or fourescore leagues : when we told them we had founded, and found but foureteene fathorns, and that we were in fight of Land, they began to wonder; But having confulted what was best to be done, I caufed my Shallop to be manned, which I towed at the Scene of my Shippe continually, and fent her and my Pinnace a head to found, and followed them with an eafie fayle, till we came in feuen and fix fathome water, and some two leagues from the shore anchored, in hope by the Sea, or by the Land to finde some refreshing. The Sea wee found to be barren of fish , and my Boates 63 could not discover any landing place, though a whole day they had rowed along it the coast, with great defire to fet footeon shore, for that the sedge was exceeding great and dangerous. Which experienced, we fet faile, notwithstanding the contrariety of the winde, sometimes standing to the West-wards, sometimes to the East-wards, according to the shifting of the winde.

CHAP. S. S. 2. Senerall currents considered. The cause, fignes, & effects of the Scuruey. 1273

Here is to be noted, that the errour which we fell into in our accompts, was fuch as all men fall into Note. where are surrant; that fet East or West, and are not known for that there is no certain rule get practifed where are well to me under a there is of the latitude, though forms curious and experimented of our Nation, much whom I have had conference about this point, have showed me two or three manner of wages how to mub whom I have macroyerene was the left of the Edward Cotton, bound for the coaft of Brail, The left of by own to 1 me, some year experience on the left of which taken with the winde contrarie neere the line, flanding to the East-wards, and making accompt to Edward outen. be liftie or fixite leagues off the coast, with all her failes standing, came suddenly a ground upon the sholes of Madrebomba and To was caft away.

This currant from the line Equinoctial, to twentie degrees Northerly, bath great force, and fetteth 10 next of any thing East, directly upon the shore, which we found by this meanes: Standing to the Wellwards the winde Southerly, when we lay with our Ships head Weft and by South, we gained in our height more then if we had made our way good West South-west, for that the currant tooke us under the bow : but lying well or West & by North, we loft more in twelne houres then the other way we could get in foure and twentie. By which plainly we fam, that the currant did fet East next of any thing. Whether this currant runneth over one way, or doth alter, and how, we could by no meanes understand, but trait of time

and observation will discouer this, as it bath done of many others in fundry Seas. The current that setteth betwirt New-sound-land and Spaine, runneth also East and West, and New found load long time deceined many, and made some to count the way longer, and others shorter, according as the pas-sage was speedie or slow, not knowing that the surther ance or bunderance of the contrast was cause of the

20 feeding or flowing of the way. And in Sea Cards I have feene difference of abone therise leagues between the Hand Tercera and the Maine. And others have recounted unto me that comming from the Indies. and looking out for the Hands of Azores, they have had fight of Spaine. And Jome have looked out for Spaine, and have disconcred the I lands. The selfe same currant is in the Levans Sea, but runneth trade Levent Sea. betwirt the Maines, and changeable sometimes to the Eastwards, sometimes to the West-wards. In Bra- Brail and fil and the South Sea, the currant likewife is changeable, but it runneth ener alongst the Coaft, accom. South Sea, panying the winde : and it is an infallible rule, that twelve or twentie four e hours (before the winde alters) the currant begins to change.

In the West Indies onely the currant runneth continually one way, and setteth along it the coast from the Equinottsall line towards the North. No man bath yet found that thefe currants keepe any certaine Currents of 30 time or runne fo many dayer or moneths, one way as another, as doth the courfe of ching and flowing, well maller force knowne in all Seas : onely neere the shoare they have small force; partly, because of the resur which the coast causeth, and partly for the ebbing and flowing, which more or leffe is generall in most Seas. When the currant runneth North or South, it is easily discourted by augmenting or diminishing the

beight, but how to know the fetting of the currant from East to West in the maine Seas is difficult, and as Tet I baue not knowne any man, or read any Aubor, that bath prescribed any certains means or way to discours it. But experience teacheth, that in the maine Sea, for the most part it is variable; and therefore

best and fafest rule to prenent the danger (which the uncertaintie and igherance hereof may cause) is conefull and continuall watch by day and night, and upon the East and West course ener to be before the Ship, and to use the meanes possible to know the errour, by the rules which new Authors may teach: 40 beating off and on, sometimes to the Westwards, sometimes to the Eastwards, with a fairegale of winde. Being betwixt three and foure degrees of the Equinoctiall line, my Company within a few daies began to fall ficke, of a difease which Sea-men are wont to call the Scurule : and feemeth to Adicourse of be a kinde of dropsie, and raigneth most in this climate of any that I have heard or read of in the securety, or secretarial. world; though in all Seas it is wont to helpe and increase the milerie of man; it possesses all those of which it taketh hold, with a loathforme floathfulneffe, that even to cate they would be content to change with fleepe and reft, which is the most pernicious enemie in this ficknesse that

is knowne. It bringeth with it a great defire to drinke, and caufeth a generall swelling of all

parts of the body, especially of the legges and gummes, and many times the teeth fall out of

the cricke of the backe, &c. all which, are for the most part, certaine tokens of infection. The

fo fwelling of the gummes, by denting of the fielh of the legges with a mans finger, the pit remai-

the lawes without paine. The fignes to know this difease in the beginning are divers, by the The fignes ning without filling vp in a good space : others show it with their lastineste, others complaine of

cause is thought to be the flomacks feeblenesse, by change of aire in vntemperate climates, of diet in falt meates, boiled also in Salt water and corrupted fometimes; the want of exercise also either in persons or elements, as in calmes. And were it not for the monthly of the Sea by the force of windes, sydes, and corrests, it would corrupt all the world. The experience I faw in Anno 1500. Iting druce. with a Fleete of her Maiesties Ships about the Ilands of the Azores alonost six moneths, the greatest pare Strange cited of the time we were becalmed : with which all the Sea became foreplentified with fenerall forts of gellies, Ofcalmes. and formes of Serpents, Adders, and Snakes, as seemed wonderfull: some greene, some blacke, some yel-6) low, some white, some of diners colours and many of them had the, and some there were a yard and haife,

and two yards long; which had I not seene, I could hardly have beleeved. And bereof are witnesses all the Companies of the Shippes which were then present: so that hardly a man could draw a Bucket of water cleere of some corruption. In which V range, towards the end thereof many of enery Ship (fauing of the Nonperell, which was under my charge, and had onely one man fishe in all the Vojage) fell ficke

of this difease, and began te die apace, but that the speedie passage into our Countrie was remedy to the crazed, and a prefermatine for those that were not touched.

By Dict. By thift.

The best preuentian for this descase (in my judgement) is to keepe sleane the Shippe, to besprinkle ber ordinarily with Vinegar, or to burne Tarre, and some sweet samours, to feede upon as few sale Meats m the bot Country as may be, and effectally to shun all kindes of salt Fift, and to reserve them for the cold Climates, and not to drelle any meate with falt water, nor to suffer the companie to mash their Shirts mer Cloat bes in it, nor to fleepe in their Cloatbes when they are wet. For this canfe it is necessarily required. that promision be made of apparell for the Company, that they may have wherewith to shift themselves.

Being a common calamitie amone ft the ordinary fort of Mariners, to frend their thrift on the fore and to bring to Sea no more Cloathes then they have backes; for the body of man is not refreshed with any 10 thing more, then with hifting cleane Cloathes : a great prefermatine of health in hot Countries. The fecond Antidote is, to keepe the company occupied in some bodily exercise of worke, of agilitie, of paf-By labour.

times, of dancing, of vic of Armes; thefe below much to bamift this infirmitie. Thirdly, In the mor-By early eating ming at discharge of the watch, to give enery man a bit of bread, and a draught of drinke, either Berre, or Wine mingled with water (at the least, the one balfe) or a quantitie mingled with Beere, that the poores of the bodie may be full, when the vapours of the Sea ascendup. The morning draught should bee ener of the best, and choisest of that in the ship, Pure wine I hold to be more hurtfull, then the other is profitable. In this, others will be of a contrary opinion, but I thinke partiall. If not, then leave I the remedies thereof to those Phiscions and Surgeons who have experience. And I wish that some learned man would write of it. for it is the plague of the Sea, and the footle of Mariners ; doubileffe, it would bet 10 a Worke worthy of a worthy man, and most beneficiall fer our Countrie, for in twentie yeeres (fince ! have vied the Sea) I dare take upon me, to give account of ten thouland men consumed with this diseale. That which I have feene most fruitfull for this sicknesse, is sourc Oranges and Lemmons, and a water

Ten thouland English dead in 20, yeeres, By fowre O. ranges and Lemmons. By Doctor COMMITTER WATER By Oyle of the Land.

which amongst others (for my particular provision) I carried to the Sea, called Doctor Stevens water. of which, for that his vertue was not then well knowne unto me, I carried but little, and it took end quickly, but gane health to those that wied it. The Oyle of Vitry is beneficiall for this difease; taking two drops of it, and mingled in a draught of water, with a little Sugar. It taketh away the thirst, and beloth to clenfe and comfort the stomache: But the principall of all is the Ayre of the Land; for the Sea is naturall for Fishes, and the Land for men. And the oftner a man can base his people to Land, (nos hindsring bie Voyage) the better it is, and the profitablest course that be can take to refresh them. Hauing food to the Westwards some hundred leagues and more, the winde continuing with vs contrary, and the ficknesse so feruent, that every day there died more or lesse; my company

The company ficke and difmayed. Prouerbe.

in generall began to be difmayed, and to defire to returne homewards, which I hindered by good reasons and perswasions: As, that to the West Indies, we had not about eight hundred seasues. to the Ilands of Azeres little leffe, and before wee come to the Ilands of Cape de Verde, that wee should meete with the Breze; for every night we might see the reach goe contrary to the winde which we fayled by ; verifying the old Prouerbe among it Mariners ; That hee hath need of a long Mast, that will fayle by the Reach; and that the necrest Land and speediest refreshing wee could looke for, was the Coast of Brafill ce.

As wee approached neerer and neerer the Coast of Brafill , the winde beganne to vere & to the Eastwardes, and about the middle of October, to bee large and good for vs; and about the eighteenth of October, wee were thwart of Cape Saint Angufine, which lieth in fixe degrees to the Southwards of the Line : and the one and twentieth in the height of Farnambuca, but some fourescore leagues from the Coast, the twentie foure, in the height of Bayes de Todes Santos; neere the end of October, betwixt feuenteene and eighteene degrees, wee were in fixteene fathomes, founding of the great Scoles, which lye along ft the Coast, betwirt the Bay of Todos Santos, and the Port of Santos alias nueftra fenora de Vitoria; which are very perillous.

Tedos Santos. De Viteria.

But the divine Providence hath ordained great flockes of small Birds (like Spites) to live your the Rockes, and broken lands of these Sholes, which are met with ordinarily twentie leagues before a man come in danger of them.

Dangers of fire. . By hearing of

It shall not be amisse here to recount the Accidents which befell vs during this contrary wind, and the curiofities to be observed in all this time. Day and night we had continually a faire gale of wind, and a fmooth Sea, without any alteration; one day the Carpenters having Calked the Decke of our ship, which the Sunne with his extreame heate had opened, craued license to heate a little Pitch in the Cooke roome : which I would not confent vnto by any meanes: for that my Cooke roomes were under the Decke, knowing the danger; untill the Master undertooke, that no danger should come thereof, But hee recommended the charge to another, who had a better name, then experience. He suffered the Pitch to rile, and to runne into the fire. which cauled so furious a flame as amazed him, and forced all to flee his heate; one of my company, with a double paire of Gloues tooke off the Pitch-pot, but the fire forced him to let flip his hold-fast, before 60 he could fet it on the Hearth, and so ouerturned it, and as the Pitch began to runne, so the fire to enlarge it felfe, that in a moment a great part of the ship was on a light fire. I being in my Cabbin, presently imagined what the matter was, and for all the haste I could make, before I came, the fire was about the Decke : for remedie whereof, I commanded all my company to cast their

Rusge Gownes into the Sea, with Ropes fastened vnto them. Thefe I had provided for my peo. ple to watch in , for in many hot Countreyes the nights are fresh and cold; and deuided one Vicofiugge Gowne to two men, a Starboord and a Larboord man; fo that hee which watched had euer the Growne : for they which watched not, were either in their Cabbins, or under the Decke, and fo needed them not. The Gowner being well foaked, enery man that could took one, and affaulted the fire; and although some were findged, others scalded, and many burned, God was pleased that the fire was quenched, which I thought impossible; and doubtlesse, I neuer faw my lesse in greater perill in all the dayes of my life. Let all men take example by vs, not to fuffer (in any case) Pitch to be heate in the flup, except it be with a flot heate in the fire, which cannot breed danger unor 10 to permit fire to be kindled, but vpon meere necessitie; for the inconvenience thereof (is for the Presention.

CHAP.5. S.2. Directions for the anoyding of the danger of fire in ships.

moft part) remedileffe.

Great care is to be had also in cleaning of Wood, in Hooping or Scutling of Caske; and in any bust- lesse of Lubick. nelle where violence is to be vied with Instruments of Iron, Steele, or Stone; and offecially in ocening of Robick, Blacke Powder, these are not to be vied, but Mallets of Wood; for many unschances bappen beyond all expect a. Lim, or. have Powar, toge we need to from the formed by doners per fors, that comming out of the In lies, with Southing a beent burned.

tion. I have beene credibly enformed by doners per fors, that comming out of the In lies, with Southing a Bernoom of By thooping of
But of water, the water hath taken fire, and flamed up, and put all in hazard! And a Sermans of mine feetiling, of Thomas Creat told me, that in the hip wherein he came out of the Indies, Anno 1600. there happened Casks. the like; and that if with Maniles they had not smoothered the fire, they had beene all burned with a No.c. Pipe of Water, which in Scatting tooke fire. Master John Hazielocke reported, that in the Arfenall of 20 Venice happened the like, he being present. For mine owne part, I am of opinion, that some waters have By natures of

this propertie, and especially such as have their passage by Mines of Brimstone, or other Minerals, which waters. (as all men know) gine extraord nary properties unto the waters which runne by them : Or it may be that the water being in Wine Caske, and kept close, may retaine an extraordinary propertie of the Wine. Yea. I have drunke Fountaine and River waters many times, which have had a famour as that of Brimstone. Three leagues from Bayon in France, I have prooned of a Fountaine that bath this fanour, and is madicinable for many Difeafes. In the South Sea, in a River fome fine leagues from Cape Some Francisco. in one decree and an balfe to the Northwards of the Line, in the Bay of Atacames, is a River of fresh water, which bath the like fanour.

We had no small cause to give God thankes, and tooke an occasion hereby, to banish sweating By sweating

30 out of our thips, which among it the common fore of Mariners and Sea-faring men, is too ordinarily abused. So with a generall confent of all our company, it was ordained that in enery shippe there should be a Palmer or Ferula, which should be in the keeping of him, who was taken with An excellent an Oath, and that hee who had the Palmer should give to every other that hee tooke swearing order for ships in the Palme of the hand a Palmada with it, and the Fernia. And whofeener at the time of Eue- Iwearing, ning, or Morning Prayer, was found to have the Palmer, flould have three blower given him by the Captaine, or Matter, and that he should be still bound to free himselfe by taking another, or Custome feeds elle to runne in danger of continuing the penaltie; which executed; few dayes reformed the vice, which le-Vice; fo that in three dayes together, was not one Oath heard to be tworne. This brought both were that used

Ferulaes and swearing out of vie.

Ordinarily such thips as Nauigate betweene the Tropickes, are accompanied with three forts of fish The Dolphin, which the Spaniards call Dozado: the Bonito, or Spanish Makerill : and the ofduers fit: Sharke, alias Tiberune. The Dolphin I hold to be one of the fwifteft fishes in the Sea : He is like and their devinto a Breame, but that he is longer and thinner, and his scales very small. Hee is of the colour scription. of the Rain-bow , and his head different to other fifnes; for, from his mouth halfe a loan it goth The Delphin. straite vpright, as the head of a Wherry, or the Cut-water of a ship. He is very good mease if sie be in featon, but the best part of him, is his head, which is great. They are some bigger, some leller; the greatest that I have seene, might be some source foot long. I hold it not without some ground, that the ancient Philosophers write, that they bee enamoured of a man : for in meeting with Thipping, they accompany them till they approach to cold Climates; this I have noted disc ners times. For difembarking out of the West Indies, Anno 1582; within three or Boire dawes after, we met a Scole of them, which left vs not till wee came to the Hands of Azores, neese a thousand leagues. At orber times I haue noted the like. But fome may fay, that in the Sea are

many Scoles of this kind of fish, and how can a man know if they were the same ? Who may be thus facisfied, that every day in the morning, which is the time that they approach necreit the ship, we should see foure, fine, and more, which had (as it were)our eare-mark. one hurt vpon the backe; another neere the taile; another about the finnes, whielf is inflicient proof that they were the fame. For if those which had received so bad entertainmene of vs would not forfake vs, much leffe those which wee had not hure; yet that which makes them most in loue with fhips and men, are the fcraps and refreshing they gather from them.

The Bonno, or Spanish Mackerell, is altogether like vnto a Mackerell, but that it is somewhat The Bonno. more growne ; he is reasonable food, but drier then a Mackerell. Of them there are two forts; the one is this which I have described; the other so great, as hardly one man can life him; At such times as we have taken of these, one sufficed for a meale for all my company. These from the finne of the taile forwards have vpon the chyne feuen imall yellow-hillockes, choic one to ano-

ther. The Dolphins and Bonitos are taken with certaine Instruments of Iron, which we call V. C. gen, in forme of an Eele-speare, but that the blades are round, and the points like vnto the head of a broad Arrow; thefe are faitned to long staues of ten or twelve foote long, with Lines tied vnto them, and so shot to the fish, from the Beake-head, the Poope, or other parts of the ship. as occasion is ministred. They are also caught with Hookes and Lines, the Hooke beeing bayted with a red Cloth or with a white Cloth, made into the forme of a fish, and sowed your

The Sharke or Tiberane, is a fish like vnto to those which wee call Dog-fishes, but that hee is

far greater, I have feene of them eight or nine foot long; his head is flat and broad, and his mouth

The Sharke.

Superficion:

in the middle viderneath, as that of the Scate; and he cannot bite of the baite before him, but by 10 making a halfe turne; and then he helpeth himselfe with his taile, which serueth him in stead of a Rudder. His skinne is rough (like to the fifth which we call a rough Hound) and Russet, with reduith foors, faving that under the belly hee is all white : hee is much hated or Sea-faring men, who have a certaine foolish Superfittion with them, and fay that the ship bath seldome good succeffe, that is much accompanied with them. It is the most rangenous fish knowne in the Sea : for Albergouring, he swalloweth all that hee findeth. In the Puch of them hath beene found Hats, Caps, Shooes, Shirts, legges and armes of men, ends of R pes, and many other things; whatfoeuer is hanged by the thipstide, he theereth it, as though it were with a Razor; for he hath three rowes of teeth on either fide, as sharpe as nailes; some lay, they are good for Pick-tooths. They spawne not, as

Three rowes Whelping.

the greatest part of fishes doe, but Whelpe, as the Dogge or Wolfe; and for many dayes after that she hath whelped every night, and towardes any storme, or any danger which may threaten them hurt, the Damme receiveth her Whelpes in her mouth, and preferueth them, till they be able to thift for themfelues. I have feene them go in and out, being more then a foot and haite long; and after taking the Dam, we have found her young ones in her belly. My company tooke many. At the taile of one, they tied a great logge of wood, at another, an emptie Batizia well stopped, one they voked like a Hogge : from another, they plucked out his eyes, and fo threw them into the Sea. In catching two together, they bound them taile to taile. and so fet them a swimming, another, with his belly flir, and his bowels hanging out which his fellowes would have every one a fnatch at; with other infinite Inventions to entertaine the

time, and to average themselves; for that they door wed them of swimming, and fed on their flesh to being dead : they are taking with Harping Irons, and with great houkes made of purpote, with Swyuels and Chaine sefor no Line nor imall Rope can hold them, which they share not assured. There doth accompany this fifth, divers little fifthes, which are called Pilats fifthes, and are ruer woon his finnes. his head, or his backe and feede of the forage and fuperfluities of his preyes.

The manner of Hunting and Hawking representeth that which we reasonable creatures vie,

They are informe of a Trowte, and itreaked like a Mackerell, but that the itreakes are white and blacke, and the blacke greater then the white.

Sea hawking

fauing onely in the disposing of the game. For by our industry and abilitie the Hound and Hawke is brought to that obedience, that whatfoeuer they fe ze, is for their Mafter, but here it is otherwife. For the game is for him that feizeth it, The Dolphins and I mitoes are the Hounds, and the 40 Alcatraces the Hawkes, and the flying fithes the game: whose wonderfull making magnifieth the Creator, who for their fafetie, and helpe, hath given them extraordinary manner of finnes, which ferue inflead of wings, like those of the Bat or Rere-mouse; of such a delicate skinne, interlaced with bones fo curioufly, as may well cause admiration in the beholders. They are like vnto Pilchards in colour, and making; fauing that they are fomewhat rounder, and (for the most part) bigger. They flee best with a fide winde, but longer then their wings bee weate, they cannot suffaine the weight of their bodies; and so the greatest flight that I have feene them make, hath not beene about a quarter of a mile. They commonly goe in Scoles, and ferue for food for the greater files, or for the Foules. The Dolphins and Bonises doe continually hunt after them, and the Alcatrases lie foaring in the Aire, to fee when they fpring, or take their 50 flight; and ordinarily, hee that escapeth the mouth of the Dolphin, or Boxito, helping himselte by his wings, falleth priloner into the hands of the Alcatrace, and helpeth to fill his gorge.

Alcatrace.

The fight of

fourefreehers onely, and their narrower. He is all blacke, of the colour of a Crow, and of little Beili ; for hee is almost all skinne and bones. Hee soareth the highest of any Fowle that I have feene, and I have not heard of any, that have feene them reft in the Sea. Thresher, The Sword-fish is not great, but strongly made, and in the top of his chine (as a man may fay) betwirt the necks and thoulders, he hath a manner of Sword in fubiliance, like voto 2

Now of the fight betweet the Whale and his contraries; which are the Sword-fifth and the 60 bone of foure or five inches broad, and about three foote long, full of prickles of either fide, it is and Thresher. but thinne, for the greatest that I have leene, hath not beene about a ringer thicke. The Thresher

The Alcatrace is a Sea-fowle, different to all that I have feene, either on the Land, or in the

Sea. His head like vnto the head of a Gull, but his bill like vnto a Snites bill, fomewhat shorter,

and in all places alike. He is almost like to a Heronsbam, his legs a good spannelong, his wings

very long, and tharpe towards the points, with a long taile like to a Pheafant, but with three or

is a greater fith, whose taile is very broad and thicke, and very weighty. They fight in this manner: the Sword-fish placeth himselfe under the belly of the Whale, and the Thresher upon the Ryme of the water, and with his tayle thresheth vpon the head of the Whale, till he force him to give way, which the Sword-fish perceiving, receiveth him upon his fword, and wounding him in the belly forceth him to mount vp againe: (besides that, he cannot abide long wader water, The strokes but must of force rise up to breath) and when in such manner they torment him, that the fight is heard two fometimes heard about three leagues diffance, and I dare affirme, that I have heard the blowes of leagues. the Thresher two leagues off, as the report of a peece of Ordnance, the Whales roaring being Of Whales see heard much farther. It also happeneth fundry times, that a great part of the water of the Sea to round about them, with the bloud of the Whale changeth his colour. The best remedy the Whale hath in this extremitie to helpe himfelfe, is to get him to land, which hee procureth as frome as he discovereth his adversaries, and getting the shore, there can fishe but one with him and for either of them hand to hand he is too good.

Amber-greece is thought by some to breede in the Whales belly by eating of a certaine hearb, Amber-greece but that which carrieth likliest probabilities, that it is a liquor which iffueth out of certaine Fountaines, in fundry Seas, and being of a light and thicke fubitance, participating of the Ayre, fuddenly becommeth hard, as the yellow Amber, of which they make Beades, which is also a liquor of a Fountaine in the Germaine Sea : in the bottomeit is loft and white, and parraking of Amber,

the Ayre becommeth hard and ftonie : Also the Corrall in the Sea is foft, but commeth into the 20 Ayre, becommeth a ftone. Those who are of this former opinion, thinke the reason (why the Corall-Amber-grecce is sometimes found in the Whale) to be for that hee swalloweth it , as other things, which he findeth swimming upon the water, and not able to digest it, it remaineth with

him till his death.

From the Tropicke of Cancer to three or foure degrees of the Equinoctiall, the breze which is the North-east winde, doth raigne in our Ocean Sea the most part of the yeere, except it be Best times to neere the shore, and then the winde is variable. In three or foure degrees of either fide the line, paffe the line the winde hangeth Southerly, in the moneths of July, August, September, and October: all the frothe Northreft of the years from the Cape bona efferance to the llands of Azores, the breze raignest continually : and fome yeares in the other moneths also or calmes, but he that purposeth to crosse the 30 line from the Northwards to the Southwards, the best and furest passage is, in the moneths of Ianuary, February, and March. In the moneths of September, October and November is also good

passage, but not so sure as in the former. Betwixt nineteene and twenty degrees to the Southwards of the line, the winde tooke vs contrary, which together with the ficknesse of my people made me to seeke the shore, and about the end of October, we had fight of the land, which prefently by our height and the making of it, discoursed it shire to be the Port of Santon, alian nostra Senora de Vistoria, and is easie to be knowne, for it hath a great high hill ouer the Port, which (howlocuer a man commeth with the land) rifeth like a bell, and comming neere the shore prefently is discouered a white Tower or Fort, which standeth vpon the top of a hill over the Harbour, and vpon the Sea-most-land; It is 40 the first land a man mutt compasse before he enter into the Port : comming within two leagues of the shore we anchored, and the Captaines and Masters of my other Ships, being come aboord, it was thought concernent (the weakenesse of our men considered, for wee had not in our three Ships twenty foure men found) and the winde vncertaine when it might change, wee thought with policie to procure that which we could not by force, and to to offer traffique to the people

of the shore. Enering the Port, within a quarter of a mile is a small Village, and three leagues higher vp. is the chiefe towne: where they have two Forts, one on either fide of the Harbour, and within them ride the Ships whih come thirther to discharge or loade. In the small Village is euer a Garrifon of a hundreth Souldiers, whereof part affift there continually, and in the white Tower you 50 on the top of the hill, which commandeth it.

Here my Captaine, whom I fent with a Letter, had good entertainment, and those of the shore received his meffage and Letter, dispatching it presently to the Governor, who was some three leagues off in another place; at least, they beare vs so in hand. In the time that they expected the Post,my Captaine with one other entertained himselfe with the Souldiers ashore, who after the common cultome of their profession (except when they be befores) fought to please him, and finding that he craued but Oranges, Lemmons, and matters of imall moment for refreshing for his Generall, they fuffered the women and children to bring him what he would, which he gratified with double Pistolets, that I had given him for that purpose. So got he vs two or three hundreth Oranges and Lemmons, and fome rew Hens.

60 The answere of the Governor was, that he was forry that he could not accomplish our defire, being fo reasonable & good: for that in consideration of the war betweene Spaine and England, he had expresse order from his King, not to suffer any English to trade within his jurisdiction, no nor to land, or to take any refreshing upon the shore. And therefore craued pardon, and that we should take this for a resolute answere : And further, required vs to depart the Port within three daies.

which he said he gaue vs, for our courteous manner of proceeding: If any of my people from that ti ne for wards, should approach to the shore, that hee would doe his best to hinder and annow them. With this and were we resolved to depart; and before it came, with the first faire winde! we determined to be packing : but the winde fuffered vs not all that night, nor the next day. In which time I lived in a great perplexitie, for that I knew our owne weakeneffe, and what they might doe vnto vs, if that they had knowne to much. For any man that putteth himfelfe into the ene nies Port, had neede of Argus eyes, and the winde in a bagge, especially, where the enemy is ftrong, and the tydes of any force. For, with either ebbe or flood, those who are on the thore, may thrull upon him inventions of fire, and with swimming or other deuifes may cut his thore, may to the viport min measurement, and the feet of the feet of the feet, Canoas, to cables. A common practice in all het Countries. The like may be effected with Reffes, Canoas, to Boares or Pinnaces, to annoy and affault him ; and if this had beene practifed against vs, or taken effect, our Ships must of force have yeelded themselves; for they had no other people in them but fick men: many times opinion & feare preferueth the Ships, and not the people in them Wherefore

For preventi. it is the pirt of a promident Governor to consider well the dangers that may befull him, before be put himself ances &c. in

to my Fuber, Sir lohn Hawkins (notorious to the whole world) the Sp mards fired two great Shine Sugards periury.

Their punishment.

w th intention to burne my Fathers Admirall, which be prevented by towing them with his Boates and ther war. The great Ar nado of Spaine, fent to conquer England, Anno 1588, was with that felfeinter way, amendafty outstbrowne: for the fetting on fire fix or femen Ships (whereof two were mine) and letting 10 them drive mub the floud, forced them to cut their Cables, and to put to Scaso feek; a new way to Spain, In which the greatest part of their best Ships and men were lost and perished. The next night, the winde comming off the shore, we fet faile, and with our Boates and

into fuch places: fo fball he ener be promided for premention. In Saint John de Vlua, in the New-Spain,

when the Spaniards dishonoured their Nation with that foule all of periory, and breach of faith, ginen

Note for that

Barkes founded as we went. It flowed vpon the Barre not about four foote water, and once in foure and twenty houres (as in some parts of the West Indees) at full Sea there is not woon the barre about feventeene or eighteene foote water. The harbour runneth to the South-weitwards. he that will come into it, is to open the harbours mouth a good quarter of a league before he heare with it, and be bolder of the Wester-side, for of the Easterland lyeth a great ledge of Rockes, for the most part vnder water, which sometimes breake not, but with small shipping, a man may goe betwixt them and the point.

The vertue of Oranzes.

Comming abourd of our Ships, there was great toy amongst my company, and many with the fight of the Oranges and Lemmons feemed to recouer heart: This is a wonderfull fecret of the power and wifedome of God, that hath hidden to great and vinknowne vertue in this fruit, to be a certaine remedy for this infirmity; I prefently caused them all to be reparted among it our ficke men, which were so many, that there came not about three or foure to a share; but God was pliafed to fend vs a profperous winde the next day, to much to our comfort, that not any one died before we came to the Ilands, where we pretended to refresh our selues: And although our fresh water had failed vs many dayes (before we law the shore) by reason of our long Nauigation, wit out touching any land, and the excessive drinking of the sicke and diseased (which could not be excused) yet with an invention I bad in my Ship, I easily drew out of the water of the Sea lufficient quantitie of freih water to lustaine my people, with little expence of fewell, for with foure billets I itilled a hoghead of water, and therewith dreffed the meate for the ficke and whole. The water fo diftilled, we found to be wholefome and nourishing.

The coast from Santos to Cape Frio lyeth West and by South Southerly. So wee directed our

Diffilling of

course West South-west. The night comming on, and directions given to our other Ships, wee fee the waren, having a faire fresh gale of winde and large. My felie, with the Master of our Sip, having watched the night paft, thought now to give nature that which the had beene de-Vaskilfulneffe prived of and to commended the care of Steeridge to one of his Mates; who with the like travell on the Maffers part being drowne, or with the confidence which he had of him at the Helme, had not that watchfull care which was required; he at the Helme Heered West and West by South, & brought 50 vs in a little time close vpon the shore: doubtleffe he had cast vs all a way, had not God extraordinarily delivered vs : for the Mafter being in his dead fleepe, was fuddenly awaked, and with fuch a fright, that he could not be in quiet : whereupon, waking his youth, which ordinarily Providence of II pt in his Cabin by him, asked him how the watch went on; who answered, that it could not God, and the bean hopretince he laid himselfe to reft. He replyed, that his heart was so vinquies, that he could not by any meanes fleepe, and so taking his Gowne, came forth upon the Decke, and prefently discouered the land hard by vs. And for that it was fandie and low, those who had their eyes continually fixed on it, were dazeled with the reflection of the Statres, being a faire night, and fo was hindered from the true difcouery thereof. But he comming out of the drake, had his fight more forcible, to difference the difference of the Sea, and the shoare. So that forthwith hee come 62 manded him at the Helme, to put it close a starbourd, and taking our Ship, we edged off; and founding, found feane three fathome water, whereby we faw euidentiy, the miraculous mercy of God, that if hee watched our vs, as he doth continually our his, doubtleffe wee had perished without remedie : to whom be ail glory and praise enerlatting world without end.

In this point of Steeridge, the Spaniards & Portugals doe exceede all that I have feene, I meane for their care, which is chiefest in Naugation. And I wish in this, and in all their workes of Care of Stee-Discipline and reformation, we should follow their examples, as also those of any other Nation. ridge, In every Shippe of moment, vpon the halfe decke, or quarter decke, they have a chaire or feate : Exquist in the out of which whill they Nauigate, the Pilot, or his Adiutants (which are the fame officers Spaniard) and which in our Shins wee terme, the Mafter and his Mates) never depart, day nor night, from the Portugals. fight of the Compaile, and have another before them, whereby they fee what they doe, and are ever witnestes of the good or bad Steeridge of all men that take the Helme.

The next day about ten of the clocke, we were thwart of Cape Blanco, which is low fandie Cape Blanco. 10 land and perilous, for foure leagues into the Sea (thwart it) lye bankes of fand, which have little water on them; on a fudden we found our felues among ft them, in leffe then three fathome water, but with our Boate and Shallop we went founding, and so got cleare of them. The next day following, we discourred the Hands, where we purpoted to refresh our selves : they are two, and Saint lalmer Ifome call them Saint lamer his Hands, and others, Saint Anner: They lye in two and twentie de lands , alian grees and a halfe to the Southwards of the line; and towards the evening (being the fift of No- Saint Annes. uember) we anchored betwixt them and the maine, in fix fathome water, where we found out other Ships.

All which being well Moored, we prefently began to fet up Fents & Booths for our fick men; to carry them alhore, and to vie our belt diligence to cure them. For which intent our three Surge-20 ans, with their feruants, and adherents, had two Boates to waite continually upon them, to fetch whatfoeuer was needefull from the Ships, to procure refreshing, and to Fish either with Ners or Hooks, and Lines. Of these implements we had in abundance, and it yeelded vi some refreshing. For the first daies the most of those which had health, occupied themselves in romeging our Ship. in bringing afhore of emptie Caske, in filling of them, and in felling and cutting of wood: which being many workes and few hands; went flowly forwards.

Neere these llands are two great Rocks or small stands adjourning. In them wee found great Gannets. ftore of yong Gannets in their nefts, which we referred for the fick, and being bayled with pickled Porke well watered, and mingled with Ozemeale, made reasonable Portage, & was good refreshing and sustenance for them. This provision failed vs not, till our departure from them. Vpon

30 one of these Rocks also, we found great flore of the hearbe Porslane, which boyled and made in- Purslane. to Sallets, with oyle and vineger, refreshed the ficke stomackes, and gaue appetite.

With the ayre of the shore, and good therishing, many recoursed speechly : some died away quickly, and others continued at a fland. We found here fome flore of Fruits; a kinde of Cherry, Cherries. that groweth vpon a tree likea Plum-tree, red of colour, with a ftone in it, but different in making to ours, for it is not altogether found, and dented about : they have a pleafing tafte. In one of the llands we found Palmito trees, great and high, and in the top's certaine fruite like Cocos, but Palmitos. no bigger then a Wal-nut. We found also a fruit growing vpon trees in cods, the Beanes, both in the cod and the fruite. Some of my Company proued of them, and they caufed vomits and purg- Purgatiues ing. One other fruit we found, very pleasant in taste, in fashion of an Attechoque, but lesses the Attechoque 40 outside of colour red; within white; and compassed about with prickles: our people called them or Prick-pears Prick-peares : no Conferue is better. They grow vpon the leaves of a certaine roote, that is like

vnto that which we call femper vina; and many are wont to hang them up in their houses : but their leaves are longer and narrower, and full of prickes on either fide. The Fruite groweth vpon the fide of the leafe, and is one of the best fruites that I have eaten in the Indies. In tipening, prefently the Birds or Vermine are feeding on them; a generall rule to know what fruite totake or reis wholesome and good in the Indies, and other parts. Finding them to be eaten of the Beatls or fuse volknows Fowles, a man may boldly eate of them.

The water of thefe Ilands is not good; the one for being a flanding water, and full of venemous wormes and Serpents, which is neere a Butt-shot from the Sea-shore, where wee found a 50 great Tree fallen, and in the roote of it the names of fundry Portugals, French-men, and others, and among ft them Abraham Cockes, with the time of their being in this Illand. The other, though a running water, yet passing by the rootes of certaine trees, which have a smell as that of Garlique, Contagions taketh a certaine contagious fent of them. Here two of our men died with swelling of their bel-water. lies : the accident we could not attribute to any other cause, then to this suspicious water. It is little, and falleth into the fand, and toketh through it into the Sea; and therefore we made a well of a Pipe, and placed it under the rocke from which it falleth, and out of it filled our Caske: but

we could not fill aboue two tuns in a night and a day.

After our people began to gather their ftrength, we manned our Boates, and went ouer to the Maine, where presently we found a great River of fresh and sweete water, and a mightie Marish 60 Country, which in the winter feemeth to be continually ouer-flowne with this River, and others, which fall from the mountainous Country adjacent. We rowed some leagues up the River, and found that the further vp we went, the deeper was the River, but no fruit, more then the fweate of our bodies for the labour of our hands. At our returne we loaded our Boate with water, and afterwards from hence we made our Store.

nine along if the coaft, and the Daintie not being in case to goe after her, for many reasons, wee manned the Fances, and tent her after her; who about letting of the Sunne fetched her vp. and foake with her; when finding her to be a great Fly-boate, of (at least) three or foure hundreth tims, with eighteene Peeces of Artillery, would have returned, but the winde freshing in, put her to Leewards; and standing in to succour her felfe of the land, had fight of another small Bark. which airer a fhort chase she tooke, but had nothing of moment in her, for that she had bin you to the great Sholes of Abrevies in 18 degrees, and there throwne all they had by the board, to face

their lines. This and the other chase were the cause that the Farer could not beate it vo in ma-

ny dayes; but before wee had put all in a readinesse, the winde changing, shee came vn-

to vs, and made Relation of that which had past; and how they had given the small Barketo the Portugals, and brought with them onely her Pilot, and a Merchant called Pedro de efca-

lante of Pereli. In this Coast the Portugals, by industry of the Indians, have wrought many feates. At (abe Industry of the Frie they tooke a great French Shippe in the night, the most of her company being on the shore They furprife with Canoas, which they have in this Coast so great, that they carrie seventie and eightie men, in one of them. And in Isla Grand, I saw one that was about threescore foote long, of one tree as 20

San Covalian.

G at Canos, are all I have seene in Brafil, with provisions in them for twenty or thirty daies. At the Iland of San-febastian, neere Saint Vincent, the Indians killed about eightie of Mafter Gandifb his men, and tooke his Boare, which was the overthrow of his Voyage, There commeth not any Ship vpon this Coaft, whereof these Canoas give not notice present-

ly to every place. And we were certified in Ifla Grand, that they had fent an Indian from the Riner of Jewere, through all the Mountaines & Marishes to take a view of vs. and accordingly made a Relation of our Ships, Boates, and the number of men, which were might haue. But to preuent the like danger that might come your vs being careleffe and negligent. I determined one night, Wife ftratagem in the darkest and quietest of it, to les what watch our Company kept on the shore; manned our Light-horfman, and Boat armed them with Bowes and Targets, and got aftere fome good di- 30 flance from the places wherewere our Boothes, and fought to come vpon them vndiscouered : we yied all our best endeuours to take them at vnawares, yet comming within fortie paces we were discoursed; the whole and the sigke came forth to oppose themselves against vs. Which

we feeing, gaue them the Hubbub, after the manner of the Indians, and affaulted them, and they vs; but being a close darke night, they could not difcerne vs presently vpon the Hubbub. From our Ship the Gunner shot a peece of Ordnance over our heads, according to the order given him, and thereof we tooke occasion to retire vnto our Boates, and within a little space came to the Boothes and landing places, as though we came from our Ships to aide them. They began to recount vnto vs , how that at the Wester point of the Iland , out of certaine Canoas , had lanuents of a care ded a multitude of Indians, which with a great out-cry came voon them, & affaulted them fierce- 40

ly, but finding better refiftance then they looked for, and feeing themselves discovered by the Ships, tooke themselues to their heeles, and returned to their Canoas, in which they imbarked themselves, and departed. One affirmed, he saw the Canoas; another, their long haire; a third, their Bowes; a fourth, that it could not be, but that fome of them had their paiments: And it was worth the fight, to behold those which had not moved out of their beds in many moneths (vnleffe by the helpe of others) had gotten, some a bow-shot off into the woods, others into the tops of trees, and those which had any strength, joyned together to fight for their lines. In fine, the Booths and Tents were left defolate. To colour our businesse the better, after we had spent some houre in seeking out, and joyning

the Company together, in comforting, and commending them; I left them-an extraordina 52 ry Guard for that night, and so departed to our Shippes, with such an opinion of the affault, given by the Indians, that many fo possessed (through all the Voyage) would not be perfwaded to the contrary. Which impression wrought such effect in most of my Company, that in all places where the Indians might annoy vs, they were after most carefull and vigilant, as was

Coss in the

In these Hands it heigheth and falleth some five or fixe foote water, and but once in two and twentie houres; as in all this Coast, and in many parts of the West Indies; as also in the coast of Peru and Chely (fauing where are great Bayes or indraughts) and there the tydes keep their ordimary course of twice in foure and twenty houres. In the leffer of these Hands, is a Coue for a small Ship to ride in, Land-lockt, and the may moore her felfe to the trees of either fide : this we called 60

Palmito Hand. Palmito Hand, for the abundance it hath of the greater fort of Palmito trees, the other hath none at all. A man may goe betwixt the Ilands with his Ship, but the better course is out at one end. In The creatures, thefe Ilands are many Scorpions, Snakes, and Adders, with other venemous Vermine. They have Parots, and a certaine kinde of fowle like vnto Phelants, fomewhat bigger, and feeme to be of CHAP. 5. S.2. Illa Grand described. Negros good merchandize at the R. of Plate. 1281

their nature, Here we spent aboue a moneth in curing of our sicke men, supplying our wants of wood and water, and in other necessary workes. And the tenth of December (all things put in order) we fee faile for Cape Frio, having onely fixe men ficke, with purpose there to set alhore our care Frio. two Prifoners before named : and anchoring vnder the Cape, we fet our Boate a hoare, but they could not finde any convenient place to land them in, and fo returned: the winde being Southerly. and not good to goe on our voyage, we fuccoured our felues within Ifla Grand, which lyeth fome dozen or foureteene leagues from the Cape, betwixt the West, and by South and West Southweit : the rather to fet our Prifoners on fhore.

In the mid way betwire the Cape and this Hand, Iyeth the River lenero, a very good Har- Ienero. to bour, fortified with a Garrison, and a place well peopled. The Isla Grand is some eight or tenne leagues long, and causeth a goodly harbour for shipping : it is full of great sandie Bayes, and in the most of them is store of good water : within this Hand are many other smaller Hands. which cause divers sounds and creekes; and amongst these little Hands, one, for the pleasant scituation Little Hand. and fertilitie thereof, called Placentia. This is peopled, all the reft defert : on this lland our Prifoners defired to be put ashore, and promited to fend vs some refreshing, Whereto wee condescended and fent them ashore with two Boates well manned and armed, who found few Inhabitants in the Hand; for our prople faw not about foure or fine houses, not withflanding our Boates returned loaden with Plantines, Pinias, Potatoes, Sugar-canes, and I ome Hens. Amongst which they brought a kinde of little Plantine, greene, and round, which were the best of any that I have 30 feene. With our people came a Portugall, who faid, that the lland was his; hee feemed to be a Misteche (who are those that are of a Spanish and an Indian brood) poorely apparelled and mile-

rable; we feafted him, and gaue him some trifles, and hee according to his abilitie answered our courtefie with fuch as he had.

The winde continuing contrary, we emptied all the water we could come by, which we had filled in Saint lames his Iland, and filled our Caske with the water of this Ila Grand, It is a wil- Ifla Grand, dernesse coursed with Trees and Shrubs so thicke, as it hath no passage through, except a man make it by force. And it was strange to heare the howling and cries of wilde Bealts in their Woods day and night, which we could not come at to fee by any meanes; fome like Lyons, others like Beares, others like Hogs, and of fuch an 1 fo many diverfities, as was admirable. Here our Nets Shels of most 20 profited vs much, for in the fandy Bayes they tooke vs flore of fish. Vpon the shore at full Sea. theroi Peatle. marke, we found in many places certain shels, like those of mother of Pearles, which are brought out of the East Indies, to make standing cups, called Caraceles; of so great curiofitie as might move all the beholders to magnifie the maker of them : and were it not for the brittleneffe of them, by reason of their exceeding thinnesse, doub; lesse they were to be esteemed farre about the others, for more excellent workmanship I have not feene in shels,

The eighteenth of December we set faile, the windeat North-east, and directed our course for the Straits of Magalianes. The twenty two of this moneth, at the going too of the Sun, we defcried a Portugall (hip, and gaue her chase, and comming within harling of her, she rendred her selfe without any refiftance, the was of an hundred tuns bound for Angola to load Negroes, to be carried 40 and fold in the River of Plate : It is a trade of great profit, and much vied, for that the Negroes are carried from the head of the River of Plate, to Potof, to labour in the Mines. It is a bad Negro, who is not worth there five or fix hundreth peeces, every peece of ten Ryals, which they receive Price of No. in Ryals of Plate, for there it no other Merchandize in those parts. The loading of this Ship was green. meale of Caffani, which the Portugals call Farina de Paw, made of a certaine roote which the In- cafani meale dians call Tuca, much like vnto Potatoes. Of it are two kindes, the one sweete and good to be eaten (either rolled or fodden) as Potatoes; and the other of which they make their bread, called Caffani, deadly poison, if the liquor or inyce be not throughly pressed out. This Farina, in making Pancakes, and frying them with butter or oyle, and sometimes with Manteca de Puerco: when strewing a little Sugar vpon them, it was meate that our company defired aboue any that 50 was in the Ship.

The Indians also accustome to make their drinke of this meale, and in three feuerall manners. And for Br-First, is chewing it in their mouthes, and after mingling it with water, after a loathsome manner, yet the commonnest drinke that they have; and that held best which is chewed by an old woman. The second manner of their drinke, is baking it till it be halfe burned, then they beate it into Powder; and when they will drinke, they mingle a small quantity of it with water, which giueth a reasonable good taste. The third, and best, is baking it (as aforesaid) and when it is beaten into Powder, to feeth it in water; after that it is well boyled, they let it fland some three or foure daies, and then drinke it. So it is much like the Ale which is yied in England, and of that colour and tafte.

60 The Indians are very curious in planting and manuring of this Tucas It is a little shrub, & carri- The mante eth branches like hazell wands; being grown as big as a mans finger, they breake them off in the of planing middest, and so pricke them into the ground; it needeth no other art or husbandry, for out of each luca. branch grow two, three or four roots, fome bigger, some leffer: but first they burne and manure the ground, the which labour, and whatfoeuer elfe is requifite, the men doe not fo much

Хуууу 2

With the labour of the women.

as helpe with a finger, but all lyeth vpon their poore women, who are worfe then flaues; for they labour the ground, they plant, they digge and delue, they bake, they brew, and dreffe their meate, fetch their water, and doe all drudgene whatfocuer; yea, though they nurie a childe, they are not exempted from any labour : their childe they carrie in a Wallet about their necke, ordin narrly under one arme, because it may fucke when it will,

The men haue care for nothing but for their Canoas, to paffe from place to place, and of their Bowes and Arrowes to hunt, and their Armes for the warre, which is a fword of heavie blacke wood, fome foure fingers broad, an inch thicke, and an Elle long, fomewhat broader towards the top then at the handle. They call it Macana, and it is carried and wrong ht with inlaid works very curiously, but his edges are blunt. If any kill any game in hunting, he bringeth it not with I him, but from the next tree to the game, hee bringeth a bough (for the trees in the Indies have leanes for the most part all the years) and all the way as he goeth streweth little peeces of it, here and there, and comming home giveth a peece to his woman, and fo fends her for it. If they goe to the Warre, or in any journey, where it is necessary to carry prouision or Merchandize, the women ferue too carrie all, and the men neuer fuccour nor cafe them, wherein they flew greater Barbarilme then in any thing (in my opinion) that I have noted among it them, except in ese ting one another.

We tooke out of this Prize, for our prouision, some good quantitie of this meale, and the Sugar the had, being not about three or foure Chefts; after three dayes we gave the Ship to the Porise gals, and to them libertie. In her was a Portugal Knight, which went for Gouernour of Angela. 20 of the habit of Christ, with fiftie Souldiers, and Armes for a hundreth and fiftie, with his wife and daughter. He was old, and complained, that after many yeeres feruice for his King, with fundry milhaps, he was brought to that poore effate, as for the reliefe of his wife, his daughter and himsel'e, he had no other substance, but that he had in his Ship. It moued compassion, so as nothing of his was diminished, which though to vs was of no great moment, in Angola it was worth good Crownes. Onely we difarmed them all, and let them depart, faying, that they would resurne to Saint Vincents. We continued our course for the Straits, my people much animated with this volookt for refreshing, and prasted God for his bountie, providence, and grace extended towards vs. Here it will not be out of the way to speake a word of the particularities

The description on of Brafil.

Brafil is accounted to be that part of America, which lyeth towards our North Sea, betwire the River of the Amazons, neere the line to the Northwards, vntill a man come to the River of Plate in 26, degrees to the Southwards of the line. This coast generally lyeth next of any thing South and by West. It is a temperate Countrie, though in some parts it exceedeth in heate; it is full of good fuccours for shipping, and plentifull for Rivers and fresh waters. The principall has bitations, are Fernambuca, the Bay De todos los Santos, Nostra Senora de victoria, alias Santos, the River Jenero, Saint Vincents, and Placentia: every of them provided of a good Port. The winder are variable, but for the most part trade alongst the Coast.

Its Hauens.

A worme there is in this Countrie, which killed many of the first Inhabitants, before God Strang worme. was pleafed to discouer a remedie for it, vnto a religious person. It is like a Magot, but more flen. 4 Variation of the Compaffe. der and longer, and of a greene colour, with a red head. This worme creepeth in at the hinder parts, where is the euacuation of our superfluities, and there (as it were) gleweth himselfe to the gut, there feedeth of the bloud and humors, and becommeth to great, that flooping the naturall passage, he forceth the principall wheele of the clocke of our body to stand still, and with it the accompt of the houre of life to take end, with most cruell torment and paine, which is such, that he who bath beene throughly punished with the Collique can quickly decipher or demonstrate. The Antidote for this pernicious worme is Garlique: and this was discourred by a Phistian to a Religious perlon.

d. III.

THARLTONS treacherie: Discouerie of Land wnknowne : Entrance of the Straits, accidents therein, and description thereof : diners occasionall discourses for the furtherance of Marine and Naturall knowledge.

N our Naugation towards the Straits, by our observation we found, that our Compass varied a point and better to the Eathwards.

In the height of the River of Plate, we being some fiftie leagues off the coast, a storme tooke vs Southerly, which endured fortie eight houres : In the first day about the going downe of the Sunne, Robert Tharlton, Matter of the Fancie, bare up before the winde, without giving vs any token or figue, that the was in dritreffe, We feeing her to continue her courfe,

have you after her, and the night comming on, we carried our light, but the neuer aniwered vs. for they kent their course directly for England, which was the ouerthrow of the Voyage, as well for shat we had no Pinnace to goe before vs , to discouer any danger, to feeke out roades and and chornes, to helpe our watering and refreshing; as also for the victuals, necessaries, and men which The ouers they carried away with them : which though they were not many, yet with their helpe in our throw of the fight, we had taken the Vice-admirall, the first time shee bourded with vs, as shall be hereafter Voyage by a manifeited. For once we cleered her Decke, and had wee beene able to haute spared but a dozen Perfidious man men, doubtlelle, we had done with her what we would, for the had no clote fights. Moreouer, if the had beene with me, I had not beene discourred upon the coast of Perew. But I was wor-

10 the to be deceived, that trufted my Ship in the hands of on hypocrite, and a man which had left his Generall before in the like occation, and in the felle same place : for being with Mafter Thoman Candulb. Matter of a small Shippe in the Voyage wherein hee died, this Captaine being aboord the Admirall, in the night time forfocke his Fleete, his Generall and Captaine, and returned home. Pitie it is that such perfidious perfors are not more feverely punished.

Thele ablentings and cleapes are made most times sandy to piffer and steale, as well by taking The cuming of tome prize when they are alone, and without command, robinder or order their bad procee- of Runnadings, as to appropriate that which is in their intrufted fhipper caffing the fault, if they bee wayes. called to account . voon fome poore and voknowne Mariners , whom they fuffer with a little pillage, to abient themselves, the cunning lier to colour their greatest diforders, and

20 Robberies.

The Horme ceasing, and being out of all hope, wee fet faile and went on our course. During Birds like this florme, certaine great Fowles as bigge as Swannes, foured about vs, and the winde calming, the Hollanders tetled themselves in the Sea, and fed vpon the sweepings of our ship; which I perceiving, and de-tound in the firms to be of them, because they feemed farte greater then in truth they were, I caused a Hook Strains which and Line to be brought me; and with a piece of a Pilehard I baited the Hooke, and a foot from they called it, tied a piece of Corke, that it might not linke deepe, and threw it into the Sa, which, our Mores. thip driving with the Sea in a little time was a good space from vs, and one of the Fowles beeing Line & Hooke hungry, prefendly feized upon it, and the Hooke in his topper beake. It is like to a Faulcons bill but that the point is moore crooked, in that manner, as by no meanes hee could cleere himfelfe.

20 except that the Line brake, or the Hooke righted : Plucking him towards the thip, with the wauing of his wings he eated the weight of his body and being brought to the sterne of our ship, two of our company went downe by the ladder of the Poope, and feized on his neck and wings; but fuch were the blowes he gaue them with his Pinnions, as both left their hand fast, beeine beaten blacke and blue; we cait a finare about his necke, and fo triced him into the ship. By the fame manner of filhing, we caught fo many of them, as refreshed and recreated all my people for r. tr. famens, that day. Their bodies were great, but of little fiesh and tender, in talte answerable to the food whereon they feed. They were of two colours, fome white, fome grey; they had three joynts in each wing; and from the point of one wing to the point of the other, both firetched out, was aboue two fathomes.

40 The wind continued good with vs, till we came to 49. degrees and 30. minutes where it took vs Weiterly, being (as we made our account) fome firey leagues from the fhoare. Betwix- 49. and 48, degrees is Port Saint lalian, a good Harbour, and in which a man may graue his shippe, though the draw fifteene or fixteene foot water : But care is to bee had of the people called Pata- Care of the gones. They are treacherous, and of great stature, most giue them the name of Giants.

The fecond of February, about nine of the clocke in the morning, wee deferred land, which bare South-well of vs, which we looked not for to timely; and comming neerer and neerer vnto it, by the lying, wee could not coniecture what Land ir finuld be, for wee were next of any thing in 48. degrees, and no Plat, nor Sea-card which we had, made mention of any Land, which Land vnlay in that manner, neere about that height; In fine, wee brought our Lar-boord tacke aboord, knownee 50 and flood to the North-east-wards all that day and night, and the winde continuing Westerly

and a faire gale, we continued our course alongst the Coast the day and night following, In which time we made account we discouered well neere threescore leagues off the Coall. It is bold, and made small shew of dangers. The land is a goodly Champion Countrey, and peopled; wee faw many fires, but could not come to speake with the people; for the time of the yeere was farre spent to shoote the Straits, and the want of our Pinnasse disabled vs for finding a Port or Road; A caucarfor not being discretion with a ship of charge, and in an vinknowne Coast, to come neere the shoare comming sudbefore it was founded; which were causes, together with the change of the winde (good for vs donly to ne re to paffe the Strait) that hindered the further Difcourry of this Land, with its fecrets : This I anyoknowne hand forrowed for many times fince for that it had likelihood to bee an excellent Country. It Land.

60 hath great Rivers of fresh waters; for the out-shoot of them colours the Sea in many places, as we ranne alongit it. It is not Mountaynous, but much of the disposition of England, and as temperate. The things we noted principally on the Coaft, are thefe following: the Westermost point of the Land, with which wee first fell, is the end of the Land to the Westwards, as wee found afterwards. If a man bring this point South-west is rifeth in three Mounts or round Hilfockes:

Ууууу 3

Faire Iland.

bringing it more Westerly, they shoot themselves all into one; and bringing it Easterly, it riseth Point Tremount in two Hillockes. This we called Point Tremountaine, Some twelue or fourteene leagues from this point to the Eastwards, faire by the shoare, lyeth a low flat Iland of some two leagues long, we named it Faire lland; for it was all ouer as greene and smooth, as any Meddow in the Spine

Some three or four leagues Easterly from this Iland, is a goodly opening, as of a great River.

or an arme of the Sea, with a goodly low Countrey adjacent. And eight or tenne leagues from this opening, some three leagues from the shoare, lyeth a bigge Rocke, which at the first we had thought to be a ship under all her sayles; but after, as we came neere, it discourred it selfe to be Emduit-bead, a Rocke, which we called Condust-bead; for that how soeuer a man commeth with it, it is like to to the Conduit-heads about the Citie of London. All this Coast so farre as we discourred, lyeth next of any thing East and by North, and West and by South. The Land, for that it was discouered in the Reigne of Queene Elizabeth, my Souereigne Lady and Miftris, and a Mayden Queene, and at my cost and aduenture, in a perpetual memory of her chastitle, and remembrance of my endeuours, I gaue it the name of Hawkins Maiden land. Before a man fall with this Land. fome twen: y or thirty leagues, he shall meet with beds of Oreweed, driving to and fro in that Beds of Ore-Sea, with white flowres growing vpon them, and sometimes farther off; which is a good show weed, with white flowres, and figne the Land is neere, whereof the Westermost part lyeth some threescore leagues from the neerest Land of America.

With our faire and large wind, wee shaped our course for the Straits, and the tenth of Februto the Straits. ary wee had fight of Land, and it was the head-land of the Straits to the Northwards, which agreed with our height, wherein wee found our felues to bee, which was in 52. degrees and 40. minutes. Within a few houres we had the mouth of the Straits open, which lieth in 52. degrees and 50, minutes. It rifeth like the North foreland in Kent, and is much like the Land of Margates. It is not good to borrow neere the shoare, but to give it a faire birth; within a few houres we entred the mouth of the Straits, which is some fixe leagues broad, and lieth in 52. degrees, and co. minutes; doubling the Point on the starbood, which is also flat of a good birth, we opened a faire Bay, in which we might descry the Hull of a ship beaten voon the Beach. It was of the Spanish Fleet, that went to inhabit there, in Anno 1,82, under the charge of Pedro Sarmiento, who at his returne was taken Prisoner, and brought into England. In this Bay the Spaniard 30 Pedro Sarmien- made their principall habitation, and called it the Citie of Saint Philip, and left it peopled; But the cold barrennelle of the Countrey, and the malice of the Indians, with whom they badly agreed, made speedy end of them, as also of those, whom they left in the middle of the Straits, three leagues from Cape Froward to the Eastwards, in another habitation.

San Philip.

Description

We continued our course along ft this Reach (for all the Straits is as a River altering his course. fometimes vpon one point, fometimes vpon another) which is fome eight leagues long, and lieth West North-west. From this we entred into a goodly Bay, which runneth yo into the Land Northerly many leagues; and at first entrance, a man may fee no other thing, but as it were, a maine Sea. From the end of this first Reach, you muit direct your course West South-west, and some fourteene or fifreene leagues lyeth one of the narrowell places of all the Straits, This lea- 40 deth vnto another Reach, that lyeth West and by North some tix leagues. Here in the middle of the Reach, the wind tooke vs by the North-west, and so we were forced to anchor some two or three dayes. In which time we went ashoare with our Boats, and found neere the middle of this Reach, on the starboard side, a reasonable good place to ground and trimme a small ship; whereit higherh some nine or ten foot water. Here we saw certaine Hogs, but they were so tarre from vs, that we could not differen whether they were of those of the Country, or brought by the Spaniards; these were all the beafts which we saw in all the time we were in the Straits.

Hogs.

gwins. Note.

Since it hath bin plainly

In two tides we turned through this reach, and fo recovered the Ilands of Pengwins; they lye from this reach foure leagues South-west and by West. Till you come to this place, care is to be taken of not comming too neere to any point of the land; for being (for the most part) fandy, they 50 have sholding off them, and are somewhat dangerous. These llands have beene set forth by some to be three, we could discouer but two; And they are no more except that part of the Mayne, which lyeth ouer against them, be an Hand; which carrieth little likelihood, and I cannot determine it. A man may faile betwixt the two Ilands, or betwixt them and the Land on the found that all Larboord fide; from which Land to the bigger Hand is as it were a bridge or ledge, on which is the South part foure or five fathorn water; and to him that commeth neere it, not knowing thereof, may juftly caute feare : for it she weth to be shold water with his ripling, like vnto a Race. Betwize the former Reach, and these Hands, runneth vp a goodly Bay into the Countrey to the North-wards. It caufeth a great Indraught, and aboue thefe Ilands runneth a great tide from the mouth of the Straits to these Hands, the Land on the Larboard-fide is low Land and fandy (for the most part, 60 and without doubt, Hands) for it hath many openings into the Sea, and forcible Indraughts by them, and that on the Starboord fide, is all high Mountaynous Land, from end to end; but no wood on either fide. Before we paffed thefe Ilands, under the Lee of the bigger Iland we anchored, the winde beeing at North-east, with intent to refresh our felues with the Fowles of their

Ilands they are of divers forts, and in great plentie, as Pengwins, wild Ducks, Guls and Gannets: of the principall we purposed to make prouision, and those were the Pengwins, The Pengwin is in all proportion like a Goose, and hath no teathers, but a certaine downe woon Straits. all norts of his bodie; and therefore canot flee, but analyteth himfelte in all occasions with his The description feet, running as fast as most men. He liveth in the Sea, and on the Land feedeth on fish in the on of the Sea, and as a Goofe on the shore vpon graffe, They harbour themselues vnder the ground in Bur. Penguin. rowes, as the Conies; and in them hatch their young. All parts of the Iland where they haunted were undermined, faue onely one Valley which) it feemeth) they referued for their food; for it was as greene as any Medow in the moneth of Aprill, with a most fine short graffe. The slesh of to these Penswins is much of the favour of a certaine Fowle taken in the Ilands of Lander and Siller; which we call Puffins, by the tafte it is eafily difcerned that they feed on fish. They are very fat: and in dreffing must be flead as the Byter; they are reasonable meate rosted, baked, or sodden: but best rosted. We falted some doozen or sixteene Hogsheads, which served vs (whilest they lafted) in fteed of powdred Beefe. The hunting of them (as wee may well terme it) was a great Hunting the recreation to my company and worth the fight, for in determining to catch them, necessarily was Pengwin. required good flore of people, every one with a cudgell in his hand, to compaffe them round about, to bring them, as it were, into a Ring; if they chanced to breake out, then was the foort; for the ground beeing undermined, at unawares it failed, and as they ranne after them, one fell here, another there, another offering to ftrike at one, lifting vp his hand, funke vp to the arme-20 pits in the earth, another leaping to avoid one hole, fell into another. And after the first flaughter, in feeing vs on the shoare, they shunned vs, and procured to recouer the Sea : yea many times feeing them felues perfecuted they would tumble downe from fuch high Rocks and Mountaines. as it feemed impossible to escape with life. Yet as soone as they came to the Beach, presently we should fee them runne into the Sea, as though they had no hurt. Where one goeth, the other followeth, like theepe after the Bel-weather abut in getting them once within the Ring close together, few escaped, faue such as by chance hid themselves in the borrowes, and ordinarily there was no Droue which yeelded vs not a thouland, and more : the manner of killing them which the Hunters vied , beeing in a cluster together, was with their cudgels to knocke them on the head, for though a man gaue them many blowes on the body they dyed not: Befides the flesh an bruized is not good to keepe. The maffacre ended, presently they cut of their heads, that they might bleed well : fuch as we determined to keepe for store, we faued in this manner. First, wee The keeping folit them, and then washed them well in Sea-water, then salted them, having laine some fixe for flore, houres in Salt, we put them in presse eight houres, and the bloud being soaked out, wer salted

them againe in our other caske, as is the cultome to falt Beefe, after this manner they continued good fome two moneths, and ferued vs in steed of Beefe. The Guls and Gamets, were not in fo great quantitie, yet we wanted not young Guls to eate The Guls. all the time of our flay about these Ilands. It was one of the delicatest foods, that I have eaten in

all my life.

The Duckes are different to ours, and nothing to good meate; yet they may ferue for necessi- Ducks, and tie: They were many, and had a part of the fland to themselves severall, which was the highest Hill and more then a Musket thot ouer. In all the dayes of my life, I have not feene greater arte and curiofitie in creatures voide of reason, then in the placing and making of their Nests; all the Hill being fo full of them, that the greatest Mathematician of the World, could not demie how Cunning Atto place one more then there was upon the Hill, leaving onely one path-way for a Fowle to paffe chitchure. betwixt. The Hill was all levell, as if it had beene smoothed by arte; the Nests made onely of earth, and feeming to be of the felfe-fame mould; for the Nefts and the foile is all one, which, with water that they bring in their Beakes, they make into Clay, or a certaine dawbe, and after fathion them round, as with a compasse. In the bottome they contains the measure of a foot; in the height about eight inches; and in the top, the fame quantitie ouer; there they are hollowed in, somwhat deep, wherein they lay their Egges, without other preuention. And I am of opinion. 50 that the Sun helpeth them to hatch their young: their Nefts are for many yeares, and of one proportion, not one exceeding another in bignesse, in height, nor circumference; and in proportionable diffance one from another. In all this Hill, nor in any of their Nefts, was to be found a blade of graffe, a ftraw, a fticke, a feather, a moat, no, nor the filing of any Fowle, but all the Nefts Their nearnes, and passages betwixe them, were so smooth and cleane, as if they had bin newly swept & washed.

One day having ended our hunting of Pengwins, one of our Mariners walking about the lland, Of Seales, or discouered a great company of Seales, or Sea-wolves (io called for that they are in the Sea, as the Sea-woolves, Wolues on the Land) adulting vs, that he left them fleeping, with their beilies toufting against the Sunne : we prouided our felues with staues and other weapons; and fought to steale vpon 60 them at vnawares, to surprize some of them, and comming downe the side of a Hill, we were not difcouered, till wee were close voon them, notwithstanding, their Sentinell (before wee could approach) with a great howle waked them : we got betwirt the Sea and fome of them, but they hunned vs not; for they came directly vpon vs; and though we dealt heere and there a blow , yet not a man that withflood them , cleaped the ouerthrow. They reckon ner

of a Musket shot, a sword pierceth not their skinne, and to give a blowe with a staffe, is asto fmite vpon a flone : only in giving the blowe vpon his inout, prefently he falleth downe dead.

After they had recovered the water, they did as it were, forme vs, defie vs , and daunced before

Wee embarqued our felues, and fet favle with the winde at North-west, which could serve

:he Scale.

vs, vntill we had shot some Musket shot through them, and so they appeared no more. This fifth is like vnto a Calfe, with four elegs, but not about a spanne long : his skinne is hairy likea Calte : but thefe were different to all that euer I haue feene, yet I have feene of them in many parts; for these were greater, and in their former parts like vnto Lions, with shagee Their Sentinel, haire, and moltaches. They live in the Sea, and come to therpe on the Land, and they ever have one that watcheth, who admifeth them of any accident. They are beneficiall to man in their skinnes for many purposes : In their moltaches for Pick-tooths, and in their fatte to

vs but to an end or that reach, tome dozen leagues long, and fome three or foure leagues broad. It lieth next of any thing, till you come to Cape Agreda, South-west; from this Cape to Cape Fromard, the coast lieth Well South-west. Some foure leagues betwirt them, was the second The fecond peopling of the Spania ds.

peopling of the Spaniards: and this Cape lieth in 55. degrees and better. Thwart Cape Froward, the winde larged with vs. and we continued our course towards the Iland of Elizabeth; which lieth from Cape Freward some foureteene leagues West and by South. This reach is foure or frue leagues broad, and in it are many channels or openings into the Sea; for all the land on the Souther part of the Straites are Ilands and broken land; and from the beginning of this 20 reach to the end of the Straits, high mountainous Land on both fides, in most parts coursed with Snowe all the yeere long. Betwixt the Hand Elizabeth, and the Maine, is the narrowest passage of all the Stattes: it may be some two Musket shot from side to side. From this Straite to Eli-Elizabeth; Bay. zabeth Bay. is some foure leagues, and the course lieth North-west and by West, This Bay is all landie, and cleane ground on the Eatterne part; but before you come at it, there lieth a point of the shoare a good birth off, which is dangerous. And in this reach, as in many parts of the

Straites, rumneth a quicke and forcible tide. In the Bay it higheth eight or nine foot water. The

Northerne part of the Bay hath foule ground, and Rockes under water : and therefore it is not whollome borrowing of the Maine, One of Malter Thomas Candifo his Pinalles (as I have been enformed) came aground upon one of them, and he was in lazard to have left her there. The River of

From Elizabeth Bay to the River of Isronims, is force fine leagues. The course lieth West and by North, and West. Here the winde scanted, and forced vs to leeke a place to anchor in. Our Tetoximb. Boats going alongft the shoare, found a reasonable Harbour, which is right against that which Another chan- they call, River leranimo: but it is another channell, by which a man may diffembeque the Straite, as by the other which is accustomed ; for with a storme, which tooke vs one night, suddenly wee were forced into that opening vnwittingly; but in the morning, feeing our errour, and the winde larging, with two of three boords we turned into the old channell, not daring for Blanches Bay. want of our Pinaffe to attempt any new Discouerie. This Harbour wee called Blanches Bay; for that, it was found by William Blanch, one of our Masters Mates. Here having moored our thip, we beganne to make our prouttion of wood and water, whereof was plentie in this Bay, 40 and in all other places from Pengwin Ilands, till within a dozen leagues of the mouth of the

Now finding our Deckes open, with the long lying under the Line, and on the coast of Brefill, the Sunne having beene in our Zenith many times, we calked our ship, within boo d and without, about the Deckes. And fuch was the diligence wer yied, that at foure dayes end, wee had about threefcore Pipes of water, and twentte Boats of wood flowed in our thip: no man was idle, nor otherwise busied but in necessarie workes: some in felling and cleaning of wood; fome in carrying of water; fome in romaging; fome in washing, others in baking; one in heating of Pitch, anothering athering of Mullels : no man was exempted, but knew at euening, whereunto he was to betake himfelte the morning following.

Objection of Aniwere. - - 1,53

Some man might aske mee , how wee came to have to many emptie Caske in leffe then two moneths; for it feemeth much, that fo few men in such short time, and in so long a Voyage should waite so much! Whereto I answere, that it came not of excessive expense; for in health we never exceeded our ordinarie; but of a milchance which befell vs vnknowne in the Hand of Saint Innes, or Saint Anne, in the coaft of Brafill ; where wee refrelhed our felicis, and according to the sustome, laid our Caske a houres to trimme it, and after to fill it, the place being commodious for us. But with the water a cercaine worme, called Broma by the Spannard and by vs Arters, enemed alto, which eate it to tuli of holes , that all the water spaked out, and made much of our Casks of fmell vie. This we remedied the vell wee could, and discoursed it long before we came to this place.

Hereof let others take warning, m no place to have Cashe on the Shoare, where it may be another gainst mormes for it is one of the promitions which are with greatest care to be preferred in long Voyages, and bardel to be fapplied. The o Arrers, or B oma, in all bot Countries enter mio the plankes of flips, and effect throughthirs. all where are Ruers of figh water, (the common opinion u, that they are bred in figh water, and with

the current of the Rivers are brought into the Sea) but experience teacheth, that they breede in the great Seas in all hot climates, especially neere the Equinostiall Line: for lying fo long under, and neere the Line, and towing a Shalop at our sterne, comming to cleanse ber in Brafill, wee found ber all under water concred with these Wormes, as bigge as the little finger of a man, on the outside of the planks, not fully concred, but halfe the thicknesse of their bodie, like to a gellie wrought into the plante as with a Gowdee. In intle time, if the Ship be not Sheathed, they put all in bazard; for they enter in no bigger then a small Spanish Needle, and by little and little their boles become ordinarily greater then a mans finger. The thicker the planke is, the greater he groweth; yea, I have seene many ships so eaten, that the most of their plankes under water have beene like Honie-combes, and especially those between winde 10 and water. If they had not beene sheathed, it had beene impossible that they could have swomme. The entring of them is hardly to be discerned, the most of them being small as the head of a Pinne. Which.

all fuch as purpose long Voyages, are to present by freathing their ships.

And for that I have feene diners manners of fleathing, for the ignorant I will fet them downe which Of ficathing by experience I have found best. In Spaine, and Portugall, some theath their ships with Lead; which, In Spaine and besides the cost and weight, although they use the thinnest sheet-lead that I have seene in any place, yet Pottwall. it is nothing durable, but subject to many casualties. Another manner is used with double plankes, as with double thicke without as within, after the manner of furring; which is little better then that with Lead : for Plankes. besides his weight, it dureth little, because the Worme in (mall time passeth through the one and the other. A third manner of sheathing had beene vsed amongst some with fine Cannas; which is of small With Cannae.

20 continuance, and so not to be regarded. The fourib presention, which now is most accounted of is to With hunner burne the upper planke till it come to be in enery place like a Cole, and after to pitch it : this is not bad. In China, (as I have beene enformed) they wife a certaine Betane or Varnish, in manner of an In china with artificiall Puch , wherewith they trimme the outside of their ships. It is said to bee durable, and of Varnith. that vertue, as neither worme, nor water pierceth it; neither bath the Sunne power against it. Some baue deuised a certaine Pitch, mingled with Glaffe, and other ingredients, beaten into powder, with which if the ship be pitched, it is said, the worme that toucheth it, dieth: but I have not heard, that it bath beene viefull. But the most approved of all is the manner of Sheathing vied now adapes in Eng. In Empland, land with thinne boords, balfe inch thicke, the thinner the better, and Elme better then Oake; for it rineth not, it indureth better under water, and yeeldeth better to the thins fide

The insention of the materials incorporated between the planke and the sheathing, is that indeed which anayleth; for without it many plankes were not sufficient to hinder the entrance of this worms: this manner is thus : Before the Beathing board is nayled on, upon the inner fide of it, they smere it ouer Best manner with Tarre, halfe a finger thicke, and upon the Tarre, another halfe thicke of baire, such as the White- of Meathing lymers vie, and so nayle it on, the nayles not above a stanne distance one from another: the thicker they are driven, the better. Some hold opinion, that the Tarre killeth the worme; others, that the worme poffing the sheathing, and seeking a way through, the have and the Tarre so involve, that hee is cheaked therewith; which mee thinkes is most probable: this manner of sheathing was innented by my Father; and experience hath taught it to be the best, and of least cost.

Such was the diligence we vied for our dispatch to shoot the Straits, that at foure dayes end, we had our water and wood stowed in our ship, all our Copper-worke finished, and our ship calked from Post to Stemme: the first day in the morning (the winde being faire) we brought our felues into the channell, and fayled towards the mouth of the Straites, praifing God : and beginning our course with little winde, wee descried a fire vpon the shoare, made by the Indians The Naturalist for a figure to call vs; which feene, I caused a Boat to bee man'd, and wee rowed ashoare, to see what their meaning was, and approaching neere the shoare, we saw a Canoa made fast under a Rocke with a Wyth, most artificially made with the rindes of trees, and sewed together with the finnes of Whales; at both ends sharpe and turning vp, with a greene bough in either end, and ribbes for strengthening it. After a little while we might discerne on the fall of the Mountaine (which was full of trees and shrubs) two or three Indians naked, which came out of cer-50 taine Caues or Cotes. They spake vnto vs, and made divers signes; now pointing to the Har-

bour, out of which we were come; and then to the mouth of the Straites : but we vnder flood nothing of their meaning. Yet left they vs with many imaginations, suspecting it might bee to aduife vs of our Pinnace, or some other thing of moment : but for that they were vnder couert, and might worke vs some treacherie (for all the people of the Straits, and the Land neere them, vie all the villanie they can towards white people, taking them for Spaniards, in revenge of the deceit that Nation hath vied towards them upon fundry occasions:) as also for that by our stay wee could reape nothing but hinderance of our Nauigation, wee hafted to our ship, and sayled on our courfe.

From Blanches Bay to long Reach, which is some source leagues, the course lieth West South Long Reach. 60 west entring into the long Reach, which is the last of the Strates, and longest. For it is some thirtie two leagues, and the course lieth next of any thing North-west. Before the setting of Mouth los the the Sunne, wee had the mouth of the Straites open, and were in great hope the next day to be Straits. in the South Sea: bit about feuen of the clocke that night, we faw a great cloude arise out of the North-east, which began to cast forth great flashes of lightnings, and suddenly fayling with

Note

Tempeft.

a fresh gale of winde at North-east, another more forcible tooke vs assayes, which put vs in danger: for, all our fayles being a taut, it had like to have overfer our ship, before we could take in our fayles. And therefore in all fuch femblances it is great wifedome to carrie a shore fayle, or to take in all fayles. Here we found what the Indians fore-warned vs of : for they have great intight in the change of weather, and besides have secret dealing with the Prince of Darknesse. who many times declareth vnto them things to come : By this meanes and other witch-crafts. which he teacheth them, he possesseth them, and causeth them to doe what pleaseth him, Within halfe an houre it began to thunder and raine, with fo much winde as wee were forced to lie a hull, and fo darke, that we faw nothing, but when the lightning came. This being one of the narrowest Reaches of all the Straites, we were forced, every glasse, to open a little of our force fayle, to cast about our ships head : any man may conceive if the night feemed long vnto vs. what defire we had to fee the day. In fine, Phabus with his beautifull face lightned our Hemis inhere, and reloyced our hearts (having driven about twentie four leagues in twelve houres ly-

ing a hull : whereby is to be imagined the force of the winde and current.) Wee fet our fore tayle, and returned to our former Harbour : from whence, within three or foure dayes, we fet fayle againe with a faite winde, which continued with vs till we came with in a league of the mouth of the Strait , here the winde tooke vs againe contrarie, and forced vs to return agains to our former Port : where being ready to anchor, the winds scanted with vs in such manner, as we were forced to make aboord. In which time, the winde and tide put vs fo farre to lee-wards, that we could by no meanes feize it : So wee determined to goe to Eliza- 20 beth Bay, but before we came at it, the night ouertooke vs: and this Reach being dangerous and narrow, we durit neither hull, nor trie, or turne to and againe with a fhort tayle, and therefore bare along it in the middeft of the channell, till we were come into the broad Reach, then lava

fome four leagues to the Westwards of Cape Froward, we found a goodly Bay; which we na-

med English Bay: where anchored, wee presently went ashoare, and found a goodly River of

hull till the morning. When we fettayle and ran along it the coast, seeking with our Boate some place to anchor in;

The nariues houses,

fresh water, and an old Canoa broken to pieces, and some two or three of the houses of the Indians, with pieces of Seale stinking ripe. These houses are made in fashion of an Ouen seven or eight foot broad, with boughs of trees, and couered with other boughes, as our Summer houses; 30 and doubtleffe doe ferue them but for the Summer time, when they come to fish, and profite themselues of the Sea. For they retire themselues in the Winter into the Countrie, where it is more temperate, and yeeldeth better fustenance : for on the Mayne of tht Straites, we neither faw beaft nor fowle, Sea-fowle excepted, and a kinde of Black-bird, and two Hogs towards the beginning of the Straits. Here our thip being well moored, we began to supplie our wood and water, that we had spent. Which being a dayes worke, and the winde during many dayes contrary, I endeauored to keep my people occupied, to divert them from the imagination which Sloth cause of fome had conceived; that it behoued we should returne to Brasill, and winter there, and so shoot imagination. the Straits in the Spring of the yeere. One day wee rowed up the River, with our Boate and Light-horfeman, to discouer it, and the Inland: where having from a good part of the day, 49 and finding should water, and many Trees fallen thwart it, and little fruit of our labour, nor any thing worth the noting, wee returned. Another day, wee trained our people ashoare, being a goodly fandy Bay: another, wee had a hurling of Batchelors against married men; this day we were builed in wreftling, the other in shooting; so we were neuer idle, neither thought we the time long.

ming on, with a short sayle, we beate off and on till the morning. At the breake of the day conferring with the Captaine and Master of my ship, what was best to bee done, wee resolued to 50 feeke out Tobias Cone, which lieth over against Cape Fryo, on the Southerne part of the Straits. because in all the Reaches of the Straits (for the most part) the winde bloweth trade, and thereforelittle profit to be made by turning to winde-wards. And from the Ilands of the Penguini to the end of the Straites towards the South-fea, there is no anchoring in the channell : and if we should be put to lee-wards of this Come, we had no succour till we came to the Hands of Pongwins; and fome of our companie which had been with M.Th. Candifb in the Voyage in which he died, and in the fame Come many weekes, vndertooke to be our Pilots thither. Whereupon wee bare vp, being fome two leagues thither, having fo much winde as we could fearce lie by it with our course and bonnet of each; but bearing up before the winde, we put out our Topsayles and Spritfayle, and within a little while the winde began to fayle vs, and immediatly our flip gaue 60 a mightie blowe vpon a Rocke, and flucke fast vpon it. And had wee had but the fourth part of the winde, which we had in all the night past, but a moment before wee strucke the Rocke, cur tions God pro- ship, doubtlesse, with the blowe had broken her selse all to pieces.

After wee had past here some seuen or eight dayes, one evening with a flaw from the shoare,

our ship droue off into the channell, and before wee could get vp our Anchor, and iet our Sayles,

we were driven fo farre to lee-wards, that wee could not recover into the Bay; and night com-

All our labour was fruitlesse till God was pleased that the floud came, and then wee had been

off with great iny and comfort, when finding the current fauourable with vs, wee flood over to English Bay, and fetching it, we anchored there, having beene fome three hours vpon the Rock, and with the blowe, as after we faw, when our ship was brought a ground in Perico (which is the Port of Panama) a great part of her sheathing was beaten off on both fides of her Bulges. and fome four foot long, and a foot square of her falle stemme, ioyning to the Keele, wrested scroffe, like vato a Hogs youke, which hindered her fayling very much.

They founded a Cone fome fixteene leagues from the mouth of the Straite, which after wee Crabby Cone. raffed Crabby Cone. It brooked his name well for two causes; the one, for that all the water was full of a small kinde of red Crabbes; the other, for the crabbed Mountaines which ouer-topped to it: a third wee might adde, for the crabbed entertainment it gaue vs. In this Coue wee anchored, but the windefreshing in, and three or foure Hills ouer-topping (like Sugar-loaues) altered and thraight ned the pattage of the wind in such manner, as forced it downe with such violence in flawer and furious bluftings, as was like to onerfet our thir at Anchor, and caufied her to drive, and we to weight but before we could weigh it, the was to neere the Rocks and the puffes and guits of Wind fo lodden and vecertain, fomtimes feant, fomtimes large, that it forced vs to cut our Cable. and ver dangerousif our fhip did not east the right way. Here necessitie, not being subsect to any law, forced vs to put our felues into the hands of him that was able to deliuet vs. Wee cut our Cable and Savle all in one inftant : And God to flew his power and gracious bouncie cowards

vs. was pleafed that our fhip call the contrarie way towards the shoare , seeming that hee with \$0 his owne hand did wend her about : for in leffe then her length, the flatted, and in all the Voyage but at that instant, shee flatted with difficultie, for that shee was long; the worst propertie shee had. On either fide we might fee the Rockes under vs, and were not halfe a ships length from the shoare, and if shee had once touched, it had beene impossible to have escaped. From hence wee returned to Blanches Bay, and there anchored, expecting Gods good will

and pleature. Here beganne the bicternesse of the time to encrease with blustering and sharpe windes, accompanied with raine and fleeting snowe, and my people to bee dismayed againe, in manifesting a delire to returne to Brafill, which I would never content vnto , no, not fo much as

And dit men are to take ears, that they goe not one finite backy, more then it of meere force: for I Voyage out-30 bilen one seen, this any who bears yetsleds thereune, but presently they have returned bonne. At in the throwne by gi-Pryage of Masser Edward Rection; is that where the Earles of Cumberland stifferts to be great units way. charge; as alfo in that of Master Thomas Candish, in which he died. All which pretended to shoote Edward Fentas the Straites of Magelan, and by persuasion of some ignorant persons, being in good possibilitie, were and Master brought to confent to returne to Braull, to minter, and after in the Spring to attempt the paffing of the Thumacandife. Stratte againe. None of them minde any abode in Brafill : for prefently as foone as they looked homeward, one , with a little bluftering winde taketh occasion to lose companie; another complaineth, that be wanceth victuals; another, that his ship is leake; another, that his masts, sayles, cordidge fayleth him. So the willing nener want probable reasons to further their pretences. As I saw once (being but young, and more bold then experimented) in the yeere 1,82. in a Voyage, under the clarge of my Uncle

40 William Hawkins of Plimouth, Efquire, in the Indies, at the Wester end of the Iland of San Ivan Master William de Portorico; One of the foips (called the Barke bonner) being somewhat leake, the Captaine com- Hameins. playned that free was not able to endure to England : whereupon a Counfell was called, and his renfons beard, and allowed. So it was concluded, that the Victuall, Munition, and what was serunceable, stould be taken out of her, and her men divided amongst our other ships; the Hull remayning to be suite, or burned. To which I never spake word till I faw it resoluted; being my part rather to learne; then to ad-inse. But seeing the fatall sentence given, and suspecting that the Captaine made it worsethen it was, rather opon policie to come into another ship, which was better of sayle, then for any danger they might Tunne into: with as much reason as my capacitic could reach unto, I diswaded my Uncle privately; And verged, that feeing wee had profited the Adventurer; nothing, we should endeauour to preserve our principall; especially, busing men and visituals. But seeing I presupsed not, I went further, and offered

50 to finde out in the same Ship, and others, so many men, as with me would be content to carrie ber home, guing us the tria part of the audies of the lips, as fixed fixed he radued at, at her returne, by fixee in-different perfons; and to leave the Vice-admirad, which I had under my charge, and to make her Vice-different perfons; and to leave the Vice-admirad, which I had under my charge, and to make her Viceadmirall. Whereupon it was condescended, that wee should all goe aboord the ship, and that there it should be determined. The Captaine thought bimselfe somewhat touched in Reputation, and so would not that further triall should be made of the matter, faying, that if another man was able to carrie the Ship into England, he would in no case leave ber, neither would he for sake her till shee sunke under bin. The Generall commended him for his resolution, and thanked me for my offer, tending to the generall good; my intention being to force those who for gaine could undertake to carrie her home, should also doe it gra-6) tie, according to sheir Obligation. Thus, this leake-ship went well into England; where, after she made

many a good Voyage in nine yeeres. As the weather gaue leaue, wee entertained our felues the first dayes in necessirie affaites and workes, and after in making of Coale, with intent (the winde continuing long very contrarie) to see if wee could remedie any of our broken Anchours; a Forge I had

in my ship, and of fine Anchors which we brought out of England, there remained but one there was terniceable.

In the Ilands of Pengwins we loft one, in Crabbin Come another as third, vpon another occasion we broke an arme, and the fourth, on the Rocke had the eye of his Ring broken. This (one day denifing with my felfe) I made to ferue, without working him a new. Which when I tooke first in hand, all men thought it ridiculous : but in fine, we made it in that manner fo leruiceable ... till our thin came to Callen, which is the Port of Lyma, thee scarce vied any other Anchor, and when I came from Lyma to Panama, which was three yeeres after, I faw it ferue the Admirall in which I came (a ship of aboue 500. tuns) without other arte or addition, then what my ownein nention contriued.

The mending of an vnferuiceable An-

And for that in the like necessitie, or occasion, others may profit themselves of the industrie I will recount the manner of the forging our eye without fire, or Iron. It was in this fort, From the eye of the shanke, about the head of the croffe, we gaue two tunnes with a new strong Hala fer. betwixt three and four inches, giving a reasonable allowance for that, which should be the eye, and ferued in fread of the Ring, then we fallned the two ends of the Haller, to as in that part it was as frong as in any other, and with our Capiten ftretched the two bightes, that every part might beare proportionably, then armed we all the Halfer round about with fixe yarne Synnets, and likewise the shanke of the Anchor, and the head with a smooth Mat made of the fame Synnet : this done, with an inch Rope, we woolled the two bightes to the fhanke, from the croffe to the eye, and that also which was to seme for the Ring, and fitted the stocke acces. He dingly. This done, those who before derided the invention, were of opinion, that it would ferue for need onely they put one difficultie, that with the fall or pitch of the Anchor in hard ground, with his waight he would cut the Halfer in funder on the head; for preuention whereof, we placed a panch (as the Mariners terme it) ypon the head of the Anchor , with whose softmess this danger was preuented, and the Ancher past for serviceable. Some of our idle time we spent in gathering the barke and fruit of a certaine Tree, which we

Tree, hath the fauour of all kinde of Spices together, most comfortable to the stomack, and held

to bee better then any Spice whatfoer. And for that a learned Countriman of ours Doctor Tire.

ner, hath written of it, by the name of Winters Barke, what I have faid may furfice. The leafe of

Otherwhiles we entertained our felues in gathering of Pearles out of Muscles, whereof there

this Tree is of a whitish greene, and is not valike to the Aspen leafe.

Entertainment found in all places of the Straits, where we found Trees. This Tree carrieth his fruit in clufters like uoid idlenesse. a Hawthorne, but that it is greene, each berry of the bignesse of a Pepper-corne, and enery of Akind of hot them contayning within foure or fine granes, twice as bigge as a Mufferd-feed, which broken, Spice in the are white within, as the good Pepper, and bite much like it, but hotter. The barke of this &

In gathering of Winters Barge.

O: Pearles in the Straits.

they breed.

are abundance in all places, from Cape Froward, to the end of the Straits. The Pearles are but of a bad colour, and small, but it may be that in the great Muscles in deeper water, the Pearles are bigger, and of greater value, of the small feed Pearle, there was great quantitie, and the Muscles were a great refreshing vnto vs : for they were exceeding good , and in great plentie, And here let mee craue pardon if I erre, feeing I disclaime from beeing a Naturalist, by deliuering my # opinion touching the breeding of these Pearles, which I thinke to be of a farre different nature and qualitie to those found in the East and West Indies, which are found in Oysters, growing in the shell, under the ruffe of the Outler, some fay of the dew, which I hold to be some old Philosophers conceit, for that it cannot be made probable, how the dew should come into the Oyster: and if this were true, then, questionlesse, we should have them in our Oysters, as in those of the East and West Indies : but those Oysters were by the Creator, made to bring forth this rate fruit, all their shels being (to looke to) Pearle it selfe. And the other Pearles found in our Oyflers and Muscles, in divers parts are ingendred out of the fatnesse of the file, in the very libstance of the fish, so that in some Muscles have bin found twentie and thirtie, in severall parties the fish, and these not perfect in colour, nor cleernesse, as those found in the Pearle-oysters, 50 which are ever perfect in colour and cleernesse, like the Sunne in his rising, and therefore called Orientall, and not (as is supposed) because out of the East, for they are as well found in the West, and no way inferiour to those of the East Indies. Other fish, besides Seales and Crabbes, like Shrimpes, and one Whale with two or three Porpulles, we faw not in all the Seraits.

Heere wee made also a furuay of our victuals, and opening certaine Barrels of Qatten meale, wee found a great part of some of them, as also of our Pipes and Fats of bread, eaten and confumed by the Rats; doubtleffe, a fift part my company did not eate so much, as these deuoured, as we found daily in comming to spend any of our provisions. When I came to the \$22, it was not suspected, that I had a Rat in my thip; but with the bread in Caske, which wee trans ported out of the Hawke, and the going to and againe of our Boats vnto our prize, (though wee 62 had divers Cats and vied other preventions) in a small time they multiplyed in such a manner, is incredible; It is one of the generall calamities of all long Voyages, and would be carefully preuented, as much as may be. For besides that which they consume of the best victuals, they eate the fayles; and neither packe, nor cheft, is free from their furprizes. I have knowne them to

make a hole in a Pipe of water, and feying the Pumpe, have put all in feare, doubting left fome The calamitics leak had bin forung vpon the ship. Moreouer, I have heard credible persons report, that thips have been out in danger by them to be sunke, by a hole made in the bulge. All which is easily remebule. died at the first, but if once they be somewhat increased, with difficultie they are to be deftroied. And although I propounded a reward for every Rat which was taken, and fought meanes by poifon, and other inventions to confume them, yet their increase being so ordinary and many; wee were not able to cleare our felues from them.

At the end of fourteene dayes, one evening being calme, and a goodly cleare in the Eafter- Backwardnes boord. I willed our Anchor to be weyed, and determined to goe into the Channell, being gotten in the compato into the Channell, within an houre, the wind came good, and we failed merrily on our Voyage; ny. and by the breake of the day, we had the mouth of the Straits open; and about foure of the clock in the afternoone, we were thwart of Cape Defire; which is the Westermost part of the Land Cape Defire. on the Souther fide of the Straits.

d. IIII. Entrance into the South Sea; discovery of the South parts of the Straits to bee bus Ilands by Sir FRANCI'S DRAKE (which the Hollanders afcribe to MAIRE and SCHOVTEN.) Of the Iland Mocha, and the parts adionning.

Rom Cape Defire, fome foure leagues, Northwest, lie foure Ilands, which are very into the Sea two dayes and two nights to the Westwards. In all the Scrits it ebbeth and flowchildenge the Westwards. In all the Scrits is ebbeth and flowchildenge the Westwards. In all the Scrits is ebbeth and flowchildenge the Westwards. In all the Scrits is ebbeth and flowchildenge the eth more or leffe, and in many places it hieth very little water, but in some Bayes, where are discourry of

30 great Indraughts, it higheth eight or ten foot, and doubtleffe, further in, more. If a man be furnished with wood and water, and the winde good, hee may keepe the Mayne Mayre and Sea, and goe round about the Straits to the Southwards, and it is the shorter way; for besides the fore twice said experience which we made, that all the South part of the Seraits is but Hands, many times ha- led about by uing the Sea open, I remember, that Sir Francie Donee told mee, that having thos the Straits, a Sir F. Drate. frome tooke him first at North-wess, and accer veres about to the South-west, which continues with him many dayes, with the extremitie, that he could not open any sayle, and that at the freed Chapters of the could not open any sayle, and that at the freed Chapters of the could not open any sayle, and that at the freed Chapters of the could not open any sayle, and that at the freed Chapters of the could not open any sayle, and that at the freed Chapters of the could not open any sayle, and that at the freed Chapters of the could not open any sayle, and that at the freed could not open any sayle, and that at the freed could not open any sayle, and that at the freed could not open any sayle, and that at the freed could not open any sayle and the sayle at the sayle ftorme tooke him first at North-west, and after vered about to the South-west, which continued See fue, the end of the storme, he found himselse in fiftie degrees, which was sufficient testimony and proofe, teros ibba.

that he was beaten round about the Straits, for the least height of the Straits is in fiftie two de- Sir F. Drake grees and fiftie minutes; in which stand the two entrances or mouthes. And moreover, hee said, imbraceth the 40 that standing about, when the winde changed, hee was not well able to double the Southermost Southermost Iland, and so anchored under the lee of it; and going ashoare, carried a Compasse with him, and world, Since feeking out the Southermost part of the Hand, cast himselfedowne voon the vetermost point this, in that groueling, and so reached out his bodie ouer it. Presently he imbarked, and then recounted vnto Voiaga wherehis people, that he had beene vpon the Southermost knowne Land in the World, and more fur- in W. Adams ther to the Southwards vpon it, then any of them, yea, or any man as yet knowne. These testi- was Pilot monies may furfice for this truth vnto all, but fuch as are incredulous, and will believe nothing and Seb, Werts but what they fee; for my part, I am of opinion, that the Straite is nauigable all the yeere long, ye have in the although the best time bee in Nouember, December, and Ianuary, and then the windes more fa- former Tome) uourable, which other times are variable, as in all narrow Seas.

Being fome fiftie leagues a Sca-boord the Straits, the winde vering to the West-wards, wee rand one of that fleet, was 50 cast about to the Northwards; and lying the Coast along, shaped our course for the Iland Mocha. cariedby tem-About the fifteenth of Aprill, we were thwart of Baldinia, which was then in the hands of the peff(as bey Spaniards, but fince the Indians, in Anno 1 1999. dil posseffed them of it, and the Conception; which write to 64 de-Spaniards, but fince the Indians, in Anno 1999, disposement them of it, and the Lonegroom which are two of the most principal places they had in that Kingdome, and both Ports. Baldwish had which beight which beight its name of a Spanife Captaine fo called, whom afterwards the Indians tooke Prifoner, and it is the country Lid, they required of him the reason why hee came to molest them, and to take their Countrey was mountain from them, having no title nor right thereunto; he answered, to get Gold; which the harbarous nous & coveunderstanding, caused Gold to be molten, and powered downe his throate, saying, Gold was thy red with sinon, understanding, caused Gold to be emolten, and powred downe his throate, saying, Gold was 199 looking like the wish it. It stands thin forty degrees, hatha pleasant River and Natigables, Noway, It see

60 for a Ship of good burthen may goe as high vp as the Citie, and is a goodly Wood Countrey, med to extend Heere our Beefe began to take end, and was then as good, as the day wee departed from Eng. towards the Iland; it was preserved in Pickell , which, though it bee more chargeable, yet the profit payeth lands of Sale-Cordet another of that fleet after profectous succession (bill, was taken by the Partugal at the Melucon, and carried to deale capit

foner, Motha, Baldinia and Conception wonne from the Spaniards by the Indians, Beete kept moft fafely in Pickell.

Land Chale

rich of Gold.

house of Don Beltran de Castro in Lyma, neere foure yeeres olde , very good, preserued after the fame manner, notwithstanding, it had loft his Pickle long before. Some degrees before a man come to Baldinia to the Southwards, as Spaniards have told mee. lyeth the Hand Chule, not easily to be discerned from the Mayne; for he that paffeth by it, cannot but thinke it to bee the Mayne, It is faid to bee inhabited by the Spanierds, but badly, yet

that Brete should be kept good passing the Equinocaiall Line. And of our Porke I eate in the

Tland Mocha.

Note.

The nineteenth of Aprill, being Easter-euen, we anchored under the lland Moche. It lyeth in thirty nine degrees, it may bee some source leagues over, and is a high mountaynous Hill, but in round about the foot thereof, some halfe league from the Sea-shore, it is Champaine ground, wel inhabited and manured. From the Straits to this Iland, we found, that either the Coast is fee out more Wester w then it is, or that we had a great current, which put vs to the Westwards; for wee had not fight of Land in three dayes after our reckoning was to fee it; but for that wee coaffed not the Land, I cannot determine, whether it was caused by the current, or lying of the Land. But Spaniards which have Lyled along ft it, have told me, that it is a bold and fafe Coaft. and reasonable founding of it.

In this Iland of Moche we had communication and contractation with the Inhabitants . but with great vigilancie and care; for they and all the people of Chily, are mortall enemics to the Spansards, and held vs to bee of them; and fo efteemed Sir Francis Drake, when hee was in this I- 20 land, which was the first Land also that hee touched on this Coast, They vied him with so fine a treachery, that they possessed themselves of all the Oares in his Boat, saving two, and in striuing to get them also, they flue, and hurt all his men; himselfe who had fewest wounds, had three, and two of them in the head. Two of his company which lived long after, had, the one fewerteene; his name was lohn Bruer, who afterward was Pilot with Mafter Candift; and the other Treacherie of aboue twentie, a Negro Servant to Sir Francie Drake. And with me they vied a policie, which amone ft barbarous people was not to be imagined, although I wrought fure ; for I fuffered pone to treate with me, nor with my people with Armes. Wee were armed, and met voon a Rocke compassed with water, whether they came to parley and negotiate. Beeing in communication with the Caliques, and others, many of the Indians came to the heads of our Boates, and some went into them. Certaine of my people standing to defend the Boats with their Oares, for that there went a bad fege, were forced to lay downe their Muskets, which the Indiana perceiuing, endeauoured to fill the barrels with water, taking it out of the Sea in the hollow of their hands

in mine hand, gaue the Indians three or four good Lambeskinnes. The sheepe of this Iland are great, good, and fat; I have not tasted better Mutton any where, They were as ours, and doubtleffe of the breed of those, which the Spaniards brought into the Countrey. Of the sheepe of the Countrey, wee could by no meanes procure any one, although we faw of them, and vied meanes to have had of them. This Iland is fittuite in the Province of Aranea, and is held to bee peopled with the mon va-

By chance casting mine eye aside, I discoursed their slynesse, and with a Truncheon, which I had

liant Nation in all Chily, though generally the Inhabitants of that Kingdome are very cours-Their apparel, gious. They are clothed after the manner of antiquide, all of woollen; their Castockes made like a Sacke, square, with two holes for the two armes, and one for the head; all open below, without lining or other art : but of them, some are most curiously wouen, and in colours, and on both fides alike. Their houses are made round, in fashion like voto our Pidgeon houses, with a loand housing. uer in the top, to evacuate the smoake when they make fire. They brought vs a strange kinde of Tobacco, made into little cakes, like Pitch, of a bad fmell, with holes through the middle, and Strange Tofo laced many upon a ftring. The people of this Iland, as of all Chily, are of good flature, and well People of chily made, and of better countenance then thote Indians which I have teene in many parts. They are Their weapons of good understanding, and agilitie, and of great strength; Their weapons are Bowes, and Ar- 10 rowes and Macanas, their Bowes short and strong, and their Arrowes of a small Reed, or Cane, three quarters of a yard long, with two Feathers, and headed with a flint-stone, which is loofs, and hurting, the head remaineth in the wound, some are headed with bone, and some with hard wood , halfe burnt in the fire. We came betwixt the Iland and the Mayne: On the South-west part of the Hand lieth a great ledge of Rockes, which are dangerous; and it is good to be carefull how to come too neere the Iland on all parts.

Immediatly when they discouered vs, both vpon the lland and the Mayne, wee might see Their hate to them make fundry great fires, which were to give aduice to the rest of the people to bee in a readinesse: for they have continuall and mortall warre with the Spaniards, and the shippes they sec, they beleeve to be their Enemies. The Citie Imperial lyeth over against this Iland, but eight or 60 ten leagues into the Countrey : for all the Sea-coaft from Baldinia, till thirtie fixe Degrees, the Indians have now (in a manner) in their hands free from any Spaniards.

Having refreshed our selves well in this Iland, for that little time we staved, which was some three dayes we fet fayle with great toy, and with a faire winde fayled along it the Coast, and

fome eight leagues to the North-wards, wee anchored againe in a goodly Bay, and fent our Roars ashoare, with delire to speake with some of the Indians of Aranea, and to see if they would be content to entertaine amitie, or to chop and change with vs. But all that night and the next morning appeared not one person, and so we set faile againe; and towards the Evening the wind began to change, and to blow contrary, and that fo much, and the Sea to rife fo fiddenly, that wee could not take in our Boats, without spoyling of them. This storme A cruelstored continued with vs tenne dayes beyond expectation, for that wee thought our felues out of the in the Sea of Climate of fowle weather, but truely it was one of the sharpest stormes that ever I felt to en- Ladies. In it

The storme tooke end, and we shaped our course for the Iland of Saint Maries, which lyeth in Sunt Maries. thirtie feuen degrees and fortie minutes, and before you come vnto the Iland fome two leagues. in the Trade way lieth a Rocke, which afarre off, feemeth to be a flip vinder fayle. This lland is little and low, but fertill and well peopled with Indians and fome few Spaniards in it. Some ten leagues to the Northwards of this Iland, lieth the Citie Conception, with a good Port; from City of Conthis wee coasted alongst till wee came in thirtie three degrees and forty minutes. In which certifier, height lay the Ilands of Inan Fernandes, betwixt three Core and four efcore leavues from the Han Fernandes. shoare, plentifull of fish, and good for retreshing. I purposed for many reasons not to discover my selfe vpon this Coast, till we were past Lyma, (otherwise called Cinidad de los Reyes, for that Good to audid it was entred by the Spaniard the day of the three Kings;) but my company viged me to fare, that discourre

30 except I should seeme in all things to ouer-beare them, in not condiscending to that which in the opinion of all (but my felfe) feemed profitable and best, I could not but yeeld vnto, though it carried a falle colour, as the end prooued, for it was our perdition. This all my company knoweth to be true, whereof some are yet living, and can give testimonie.

But the Mariner is ordinarily so carried away with the defire of Pillage, as sometimes for Wilfulnesses very appearances of small moment, he looseth his Voyage, and many times himselfe. And so Mariners, the greedinesse of spoile, onely hoped for in ships of Trade, which goe too and fro in this Coaft, blinded them from forecasting the perill, whereinto wee exposed our Voyage, in discouering our selues before we past the Coast of Callas , which is the Port of Lyma; To bee short, wee haled the Coast abourd, and that Euening wee discourred the Port of Valparize,

30 which ferueth the Citie of Saint legs, standing some twentie legues into the Countrey; when presently wee descried source shippes at an Anchor: whereupon wee manned, and armed our Boate, which rowed towards the shippes: they seeing vs turning in , and sea. They seize ring that which was, ranne ashoare with that little they could faue; and left vs the rest; vpon some whereof, wee were Masters in a moment, and had the rifling of all the Store-houses on the shoare.

This night, I fet a good guard in all the shippes, longing to see the light of the next morning, to put all things in order; which appearing, I beganne to survay them, and found nothing of moment, faue fine hundred Botozios of Wine, two or three thousand of Hennes, and some refreshing of Bread, Bacon, dryed Beefe, Waxe, Candles, and other necessaries. 40 The rest of their lading was plankes, Sparres, and Timber, for Lyma, and the Valleyes, which is a rich Trade; for it hath no Timber, but that which is brought to it from other places. They had also many packs of Indian Mantles (but of no value vnto vs) with much Tallow, and Manteca de Puerce, and abundance of great new Chefts, in which we had thought to bee fome great masse of wealth, but opening them, found nothing but Apples therein; all which was good

Merchandize in Lyma, but to vs of smal account. The Merchandize on shore, in their store-houses And the Wares was the like, and therefore in the same predicament. The Owners of the ships game vs to vn- houses,

derstand, that at a reasonable price they would redeeme their ships and loading, which I harkened vnto; and so admitted certaine persons which might treate of the matter, and concluded with them for a small price, rather then to burne them, saving for the greatest, which I carried with me, more to give fatisfaction to my people, then for any other respect; because they would 50 not be perswaded, but that there was much Gold hidden in her; otherwise she would have yeelded vs more then the other three.

Being in this Treaty, one morning, at the breake of day, came another ship towring into the harbor, and standing into the shoare, but was becalmed. Against her we manned a couple of Boats, and tooke her before many houres. In this ship we had some good quantitie of Gold, which shee had gathered in Baldinia, and the Conception, from whence shee came. Of this ship was Pilot, and part owner, Alonso Perezbuene, whom we kept for our Pilot on this Coast; till moved with compation (for that he was a man charged with wife and children) we fet him alhoare betwixt They feize Santa and Truxillo. Out of this ship we had also store of good Bacon, and some prouision of Bread, spon another

60 Hens, and other victuall. We gaue them the ship, and the greatest part of her loading freely. this, and other victual. We gate them the hip, and the greatest part of her adding nearly.

gold.

Here wee fupiplied our want of Anchors, though not according to that which was requisite, gold.

Here wee fupiplied our want of Anchors, though not according to that which was the first thin of the high anchors. in regard of the burden of our ship; for in the South Sea, the greatest Anchor for a ship of sixe brought from or eight hundred tunnes, is not a thousand waight; partly, because it is little subject to the North Sea. formes, and partly, because those they had till our comming, were all brought out of the North

And the first Artillerie.

1394

Sea by Land; for they make no Anchors in these Countreyes. And the first Artillerie they had, was alio brought ouer Land; which was fmall, the carriage and pallage from Nombre de Dios, or Porte Bello to Panama, being most difficult and steepe, vp hill and downe hill, they are all carried your Negroes backes. But some yeeres before my imprisonment, they fell to making of Artillery and fince they force Anchors alto. We furnished our ship allo with a shift of failes of Cotton cloth, which are larre better in that Sea, then any of our double fayles, for that in all the Navigation of that Sa, they have little raine and few ftormes, but where raine and ftormes are ordin nary, they are not good; for with the wet they grow to fiffe, that they cannot be handled

In treating of the rantomes, and transporting and lading the prouisions wee made choice of wee formt tome fixe or eight dayes, at the end whereof, with reputation amongst our enemies, to and a good portion towards our charges and our ship as well stored and victualled, as the day we departed from England, we fet layle.

They depart from Lyma.

Soio.

Wine.

The time we werein this Port, I took small rest, and so did the Master of our thip, Hugh Connifh, a moit carefull orderly, and fufficient man, because wee knew our owne weaknesse; sor entrine into the Harbour, wee had but feuentie fine men and boyes, fine thips to guard, and energy and conceale one moored by himfelte, which (no doubt) if our enemies had knowne, they would have wrought some itratagem vpon vs; for the Gouernour of Chily was there on shoare in view of vs. an ancient Flanders Souldier, and of experience, wildome, and valour, called Don Alonfo de Sote The noblen s Mayor, of the habit of Saint lage, who was after Captaine Generall in Terra firme, and wrought all the inventions vpon the River of Charree, and on the shoare, when Sir Francis Drake purpo. in fed to goe to Panama, in the Voyage wherein he died. As alloat my comming into Spaine, hee was President in Panama, and there, and in Lyma, vied mee with great courtesie, like a Noble The enemy Souldier, and liberall Gentleman; hee confessed to mee after, that hee lay in ambush, with three leffe doncehundred horse and foot, to see if at any time we had landed, or neglected our watch, with Balfas, rous then the which is a certaine Rate made of Maits or Trees fastened together, to have attempted something against vs. Bu the enemy I seared not so much as the Wine; which, notwithstanding all the diligence and preuencion I could vie day and night, ouerthrew many of my people, A foule fault, because too common among it Sea-men, and deserueth some rigorous punishment with seueritie

he Bay. Note of tides. to be executed.

A Lague or better before a man discouer this Bay to the South-wards, lieth a great Rocke, or p small Hand, neere the shoare, under which, for a need, a man may rice with his ship. It is a good marke, and fure figne of the Port, and discovering the Bay a man must give a good birth to the Harbour; for it hath perillous Rockes lying a good distance off. It neither ebbeth nor floweth in this Port, nor from this, till a man come to Guayaquill, which is three degrees from the Equino. Stiall Line to the Sou h-wards; let this be confidered. It is a good Harbour for all winds, that partake not of the North; for it runneth vp South and by West, and South South-west, but it hath much foule ground. In one of these ships we found a new deuice for the stopping of a sudden leake in a ship under

for forpping a water, without board, when a man cannot come to it within boord; which was, taking a round leake without wi ker Basket, and to fill it with pieces of a lunke or Rope chopped very small, and of an inch 40 long, and after tozed all as Oacombe; then the Basket is to bee concred with a Net, the Melhes of it being at the least two inches square, and after to be tied to a long Pike or Pole, which is to goe a crosse the Baskets mouth, and putting it under water, care is to be had to keepe the Baskets mouth towards the ships fide : if the leake bee any thing great, the Oacombe may bee somewhat longer, and it carrieth likelihood to doe good, and feemeth to bee better then the flitching of a Spar: Rudders Bonnet; or any other diligence, which as yet I have feene. Another thing I noted of thefe fhips, which would be also vied by vs; that every ship carrieth with her a spare Rudder, and they have them to hang and vohang with great facilitie; and besides, in some part of the ship, they have t'e ength, breadth, and proportion of the Rudder marked out, for any mischance that may beful them; which is a very good preuention.

Ten leagues to the Northwards of this Harbour, is the Bay of Quintera, where is good ancho ring, but an open Bay; where Mafter Thomas Candilo (for the good hee had done to a Spaniard' in bringing him out of the Straits of Magellan, where, otherwife, hee had perifhed with his company) was by him betrayed and a doozen of his men taken and flaine: But the judgement of Ingratitude God left not his ingratiude vnpunished; for, in the fight with vs, in the Vice-admirall, he was wounded and may med in that manner, as three yeeres after, I faw him begge with crutches, and in that miferable efta:e, as he had beene better dead, then aliue.

punified Coquinbo.

From Balparizo, wee fayled directly to Coquinbo, which is in thirtie degrees, and comming thwart the place, we were becalmed, and had light of a ship : but for that she was farre off, and night at hand, the got from vs, and we having winde entred the Port, thinking to have had iome 60 thipping in it; but we lott our labour : and for that the Towne was halfe a league vo in the Countrey, and we not manned for any matter of attempt, worthy profecution, we made no abode on Excellent har- the shoare; but presently set sayle for the Pern. This is the best Harbour that I haue feene in the South Sea, it is land-locked for all winds, and capeable of many shippes; but the ordinary place

where the ships lade, and valade, and accommodate themselves, is betwint a Rocke and the Mayne on the Wester side, some halfe a league vp within the entrance of the Port, which lieth South, and South and by East, and North and by West. In the in-countrie, directly over the Port, is a round paked hill, like a Sugar loate, and before the entrance on the Southerne point of the Port comming in, out of the Sea, is a great Rocke, a good birth from the shoare; and these are the markes of the Port, as I remember.

Being cleace of this Port, we shaped, our cause for Arica, and left the Kingdomes of Chily, Africa in chily one of the best Countries that the Sun Shineth on: for it is of a temperate climate, and abounding mended. in all things necessarie for the use of man, with infinite rich Mynes of Gold, Copper, and fundry to other metrals. The poorest houses in it, by report of their Inhabitants, have of their owne store. Bread, Wine, Fleih, and Fruit; which is fo plentifull, that of their superfluitie they supplie other parts: fundrie kindes of cattell; as Horfes, Goates, and Oxen brought thither by the Spamierds are found in heards of thousands, wilde, and without owner; believes those of the Coun-fruits. trie, which atecommon to most parts of America: in force of which are found the Brzar stones.

and those very good and great. Amonest others they have little beasts. like voto a Squirrell, but that hee is grey, his skinne Chinchilla a is the most delucate fost, and curious Furre that I have feete of much estimation, (as is reason) rare beast. in the Pern; few of them come into Spaine, because difficult to be come by, for that the Princes and Nobles lay waite for them, they call this beaft Chinchilla, and of them they have great a-20 bundance. All fruits of Spains, they have in great plentie, faving flone fruit, and Almonds : for in no part of the Indies, have I knowne, that Plummes, Cherries, or Almonds have borne fruit : but they have certaine little round Cocos, as those of Brafil, of the bigneffe of a Wall-nut, which is as good as an Almond to desides, it hash most of the fruits naturall to America. The Gold they gather, is in two manners; the one is washing the earth in great Trayes of wood in And plente of many waters; as the earth wateth away, the Gold in the bottome remaineth. The other is. by force of Art. to draw it out of the Mynes, in which they finde it. In most parts of the Gountrie, the earth is mingled with Gold; for the Barrain (in which the Winewas) which wee found in Balpharizo, had many foarkes of Gold thining in them. Of it the Gold-fruths I carried with me (for like purpofes) made experience.

When Baldinia and Arawa were peaceable, they yeelded greatest plentie, and the best: but now, their greatest Mynes are in Commisse; as also the Mynes of Copper, which they carrie to the Pow, and fell it better cheape, then it is ordinarily told in Spanse. The Indiana Rnowing the end of the Spaniards modellation, to be principally the defire of their riches, have enafeath of gold.

Red, that no man, vpon paine of death, doe gather any Gold. In Cogumber it rainests feld one;

Every flowing. rie to the Peru, and fell it better cheape, then it is ordinarily fold in Spaine. The Indians know. The Indians but every howre of raine, is a showre of Gold when them; showith the violence of the water a showre of falling from the Mountaines, it bringeth from them the Gold : and besides, gives them water to gold, wash it out, as also for their ingenious to worke; so that ordinarily every weeke they have Processions for raine. District Contract of Street, 7

In this Kingdome they make much lianen and woollen Cloth, and great flore of Indian Man. Linnen and 40 tles, with which they furnish other parts, but all in coarse stuffe a It hath no Silke , nor Iron , ex- woollen cloth cept in Mynes, and those as yet not discouered. Lewrer is well esteemed, and so are fine linnen, quinto. woollen cloth, Haberdashers wares, edge-tooles, and Armes, or Munition. It hath his Gouernour, and Audiencia, with two Bishops: the one of Saint lago, the other of the Imperial; all under the Vice-toy, Audiencia, and Primate of Lyma. Saint Lago is the Metropolitan and Head of the Kingdome, and the feate of Iustice, which hath his appellation of Lymas.

The people are industrious and ingenious, of great strength, and inuincible courage; as in the The valour of warres, which they have fulfained aboue fortie yeeres continually against the Spaniards, hath the drawcon; beene experienced. For confirmation whereof, I will alledge onely two proofes of many ; the one was of an Indian Captaine, taken personer by the Spannards; and for that, hee was of name so and knowne to have done his denoire against them, they cut off, his hands, thereby intending to

difenable him to fight any more against them : bur he returning home, defirous to remenge this injurie, to maintain his liberty, with the reputation of his nation, and to helpe to banilla the Span. with his tongue intreated & incited them to perfeuere in their accustomed sulprand sepuration abasing the enemie, and advancing his Nation; condemning their contraries cowardlinesse, and confirming it by the cruelty vied with him, and others his companions in their milhaper thewing them his armes without hands, & naming his brethren, whole halfe feet they hadeut off, because they might be vnable to fit on horfebacke with force, arguing, that if they feared them not, they would not have vied to great inhumanitie; for feare produceth crueltie, the companion of towardife. Thus encouraged he them to fight for those lines, limbes, and libertie, choosing rather to 60 die an honourable death fighting , then to live in feruitude, as fruitleffe, members in their Common-wealth. Thus, vling the office of a Sergeant Major , and having loden his two stumpes

with bundles of Arrowes, succoured those, who in the facceeding battell had their store walled, and changing himfelfe from place to place, animated and encouraged his Countri-men, with fuch comfortable perswations, as it is reported, and credibly beleeusely that hee did much more good

For all forts of

with his words, and prefence, without striking a stroke, then a great part of the Armie did with fishting to the vemoit.

The other proofe is, that fuch of them as fight on horsebacke, are but slightly armed for that their Armour is a Beafts hide, ficted to their body, greene, and after worne cill it be drie and hard He that is best armed, bath him double : yet any one of them with these Armes, and with his Launce, will fight hand to hand with any Spaniard armed from head to foot. And it is credible reported, that an Indian being wounded through the bodie by a Spaniardi Launce, with his own hands hath crept on youn the Launce, and come to grapple with his Aduerfarie, and both fallen to the ground together. By which is feene their refolution and inmincible courage, and the defire they have to maintayne their reputation and libertie.

The mischiefe

This let me manifest, that there have beene and are certaine perfons, who before they goe to Sea, tither robbe part of the promisions, or in the buying, make penurious, unwholfome, and amaricious penus worth: and the last I hold to be the least; for they robbe onely the Villnallers and owners, but the an thers fleate from owners, victuallers, and companie, and are many times the enely emersbrowers of the Vorage . for the companie thinking themselnes to be stored with foure or fixe mounts Victuals , vom furmay, they finde their Bread, Beefe or Drinke fort ; yea, perhaps all, and fo are forced to feek bone in time of best bopes and employment. This unsablese is most ordinarie in great altions. Lastly, some are fo cunning, that they not onely make their Verage by robbing before they goe to Sea, but of that allo which commeth home, Such Gameflers, a wife man of our Nation resembled to the Mill on the River of Thames, for grinding both with flond and obbe : So, thefe at their going out, and comming home, 20 will be fare to robbe all others of their shares.

Of d-tayning dingo: wages,

But the greatest and most principall robberic of all, in my opinion, is the defrauding or the detayning of the Companies thirds or wages, accum fed by the inft God, who forbiddesh the bire of the labourer to fleep wish vs. To such I freake, as either abuse themselves in detayning at ; or else to such as force the poore man to fell it at vile and lowe prices: And lastly, to such as upon fained caulls and suits, doe deterre the fimple and ignorant fort from their due profecutions: which being too much in vie amongst vs. hath bred in thefe that follow the Sea a sealoufie in all employments, and many times can(eth mutinies and infinite inconneniences. To present this, a Chift with three lockes was appointed: I kept one, the Master another, the third one chofen by the Companie.

Of Mariners by challenge of Pillage.

No life worthiereformation are the generall abuses of Mariners and Souldiers, who robbe all they & can, under the colons of Pillage; and after make Ordnance, Cables, Sayles, Anchors, and all about Deckes to belong unto them of right; whether they goe by thirds or wages: this proceedesh from those pilfering warres, wherein enery Gallane that can arme out a Ship, taketh upon him the name and office of a Captaine , not knowing what to command, or what to execute. Such Commanders for the most part confort and some unto themselves desorderly persons, Pirates, and Ruffians, under the title of men of valour and experience: they meeting with any Prize, make all upon the Deckes theirs of dutie, Oc.

In the time of warre in our Countrie, at also in others, by the lawes of Oleton (which to our anci-Ouran, concer- ent Sea-men were fundamentall) nothing is allowed for Pillage but Apparell, Armes, Instruments, and other necessaries belonging to the per sons, in that ship which is taken : and the seto, when the ship is gained by dint of fword; with a promise, that if any particular Pillage, exceed the value of fixe crowner, it may be redeemed for that value, by the generall flocke, and fold for the common benefit. If the prize render it felfe without forcible entrie, all in generall ought to be preferred and fold in maffe, and fo equally dinided; yea, though the fire be wonne by force and entrie, yet what foener belongeth to her of taking, Sayles, or Ordnance, is to be preserved for the generalitie: Saying a Poece of Artillerric for the Captaine; another for the Gunner, and a Cable and Anchor for the Master, which are the rights due unio them; and these to be delinered, when the ship is in safety, and in harbour, oither unloden or sold: which Law or Custome well considered, will rife to be more beneficiall for the Owners, Victuallers, and Companie, then the diforders newly crest in and before remembred. For the Sayles , Cables , Anchors, and Hull, being fold (enery one spars) yeeld not the one halfe which they would doe if they were fold at ? together, besides the excusing of charges, and rebberies in the unlading and parting.

In the warres of France, in the time of Queene Marie, and in other warres (at I bane heard of many ancient Captaines) the Companiched but the fourth part, and cuery man bound to bring with him the Armes, with which be would fight e which in our time, I have knowne alfo red in France : and if the Companie vill wated them felmes, they had then the one halfe, and the Owners the other halfe for the this. powder flost, and munision. If any Prizewere taken, it was fold by the tunne, foly and goods. so at the loading permitted it; that the Merchant having banght the goods, bee might prefeutly transport them whither foener he would: By this manner of proceeding, all rested contented, all being truly payd; for thu was just dealing, if any deferned reward, he was recompensed out of the generall flocke. If any one had filched or floine, or commutted offence, be bad themso bie defert : and who once was knowne to be a difordered per fon, or a thiefe, no man would receive him into his hip : whereas now a dayes many vaunt themfelues of their thefix and disorders; yea, I have feen the common fort of Mariners, under the name of pillage, maintaine and institute their volumes most insciently, before the Queens Maiesties Commissioners, with arrogant and unformly termes. Opinion hath beld fach for tall fellowes, when in truth, they neut

prove the best men in difficult occasions. For their mendes are all set on spoyle, and can be well comented prove one volume affortates to beare the brunt, whilest they are prolling after pillage, the better to gaine and Note or brand to suffer their affortases to vente the transfer and differently places. For the orderly and quiet men, toneued finmaintaine to a ajo. Longued ho-haus ever found in all occasions to be of best use, most valuant, and of greatest sufficiency. Tet I condemne gred sellowes. none: but those who will be reputed valiant, and are not, examine the accusation. All what seems is Whit out to none: our course Decke, going for Merchandife, is exempted out of the censure of pillage; Silket, Linnen, to be reputed or Woollen cloth in whole pieces, Apparell, that goeth to be fold, or other good; what foener (though they be pillage. in remnants) manifestly knowne to bee carried for that end; or being comprehended in the Reviser. or Bills of lading, are not to be contained under the name of Pillage.

10 But as I have faid of the confort, so can I not but complaine of many Captaines and Genernours, who Hat at a bane just of journey or years and not one companies of many confirmed and confirmed, more against the outer on the greech of the action at inches from the depreciping of the action at incident alto place of actions of the confirmed at the following of the action at the following of the action at the following of the confirmed at the following the following the following of the confirmed at the following the fo absent themselues, till the beate be past, and paristion made. Some of these canse the Bills of lading to be cast into the Sea, or so to be hidden, that they never appeare. Others send away their prisoners, who ve cast into the den, or prove counter, and very news appears. Every seen a may seen primers, more formers are more worth then the sip and her clause, decemple they should not as side, cover there exert solute treasures; or many times, that which is less out of the Register or Bills of lading (with purpose to detreasers). frand the Prince of his Customes (in their conceits, beld to be excessive) is of much more value, then Concealment. that which the losp and lading is worth. Tes, I have knowne fitp: worth two hundred thou and pounds, of much more that which the hip and lading is worth. Ies, i name knowne into worth two connerces town and princip, value, then the and better, cleane swept of their principal riches, nothing but the bare bulke being left unsacked. The Trading. 20 like may be foken of that which the disorderly Mariner, and the Souldier termeib Pillage.

My Father, Sir John Hawkins, in bis infructions, in actions under his charge, had this particular The preuen-Associe: That who seemer rendred, or tooke any shop, should be bound to exhibite the Bill; of lading; to tion of vadue keepe the Captaine, Master, Merchants, and persons of account, and to bring them to him to be examined, pillagings. or into England : If they hould bee by any accident separated from binn, what soener was found wanting or into England: a support was to be made good by the Captaine and Companie, which tooke the Ship.

and this upon great punishments.

Running along it the coast, till wee came within few leagues of Arica, nothing happened vnto vs of extraordinarie noueltie or moment, for wee had the Breze fauourable, which feldome happeneth in this climate, finding our selues in 19. degrees, wee haled the shoare close aboord. 30 purpoling to fee, if there were any shippi g in the Road of Arica. It flandeth in a great large Bay, Aid in 18. degrees : and before you come to it, a league to the Southwards of the Road and Towne, is a great round Hill, higher then the reft of the land of the Bay, neere about the Towne: which we having discouered, had light prefently of a small Barque, close aboord the shoare becalmed : manning our Boat, wee tooke her, being loden with fish from Moormerene; which is a goodly Moormerene

head-land, very high, and lieth betwixt 24. and 25. degrees, and whether ordinarily some Ba ques vie to goe a fifhing euery yeere.

In her was a Spaniard and fixe Indians; The Spaniard, for that he was neere the shoare, fwam vnto the Rockes, and though we offered to returne him his barke, and fish (as was our meaning) yet he refuled to accept it, and made vs answere, that he durft not, for feare lest the lustice should 40 punish him. In to great subjection are the poore vnto those who have the administration of Theseneride Juffice in those parts, and in most parts of the Kingdomes and Countries Subject to Spaine. Info. of Spaine. much, that to heare the Iuftice to enter in at their deores, is to them defirection and defolation : for this cause wee carried her alongst with vs. In this meane while, wee had sighe of another tall thip, comming out of the Sea, which wee gaue chase vnto, but could not fetch vp, being too good of fayle for vs. Our small Prize and Boate flanding off vnto vs , descried another thippe, which they chafed and tooke also, loden with fish, comming from the Ilands of

After we opened the Bay and Port of Arica, but feeing it cleane without thipping, wee haled the coast alongst, and going aboord to visite the bigger Prize, my Companie faluted mee with 5c a vollie of small shot. Amongst them one Musket brake, and earried away she hand of him that shot it, through his owne default, which for that I have seene to happen many times, I thinke it necessary to note in this place, that others may take warning by his harme. The cause of the Muskets breaking, was the charging with two bullets, the powder being ordayned to carrie but the weight of one, and the Musket not to fuffer two charges, of powder or shot. By this overfight, the fire is restrained with the ouerplus of the weight of shot, and not being able to torce both of them out, breaketh all to pieces, fo to finde a way to its owne Centre.

And I am of opinion, that it is a great errour, to proue great Ordnance, or small shot, with double charges of powder, or fhot; my reason is, for that ordinarily the mettall is proportioned to the waight of the shot, which the Peece is to beare, and the powder correspondent to the 60 waight of the bullet : and this being granted, I fee no reason why any man should require to proue his peece with more, then is belonging to it of right: for I have feene many goodly peeces broken with fach trials, being cleane without hony combes, cracke, flawe, or other perceauable blemish, which no doubt, with their ordinary allowance would have served many yeares. If I should make choice for my felfe, I would not willingly, that any peece should come into Fore,

LIB.VII

CHAP.S.S.S. Difgrace of Spaniards. Port of Santa, Hands of Salamon.

or ship (vnder my charge) which had borne at any time more then his ordinary allowance, mifdoubting, leaft through the violence of the double charge, the Peece may be crafed within, or fo forced, as at another occasion, with his ordinary allowance he might breake in peeces : how many men fo many mindes : for to others, this may feeme harfh, for that the contrary cuftome harh fo long time beene received, and therefore I fubmit to better experience, and contradict not have that in a demy culuering, a man may put two Saker or Minion shots, or many of smaller waight: and fo in a Musket, two Calieuer shot, or many imaller, so they exceede not the ordinary waight. prescribed by proportion, art, and experience,

Hauing visited our prizes, and finding in them nothing but fish, we tooke a small portion for

The amiry of

Their ru.!?

ming.

manners and

our victualling, and gave the bigger Ship to the Spaniard againe, and the leffer wee kept with in purpose to make her our Pinnace. The Indians (which we tooke in her) would by no meanes depart from vs, but defired to goe with vs for England, faying that the Indian and English were brothers; and in all places where wee came, they shewed them selves much affectionated vnto vs. Thefewere Natiues of Moremorene, and the most brutish of all that ever I had seene ; and except it were in forme of men and speech, they feemed altogether voide of that which appertained to reasonable men. They were expert swimmers, but after the manner of Spaniels, they diue, and abide under water a long time, and swallow the water of the Sea, as if it were of a fresh River, except a man fee them, he would hardly beleeve how they continue in the Sea, as if they expert (wimwere Mermaides, and the water their naturall Element. Their Countrie is most barren, and poore of foode fif they take a fish aline out of the Sea, or meete with a peece of salted fish, they will de- an noure it without any dreffing, as favourly as if it had beene most curiously fodden or dreffed, all which makes me beleeve, that they fuffaine themselves of that which they catch in the Sea. The Spaniards profit themselves of their labour and travell, and recompence them badly, they are in worfe condition then their flaues, for to those they give fustenance, house-roome, and clothing, and teach them the knowledge of God; but the other they vie as beafts, to doe their labour without wages, or care of their bodies or foules.

The Viceroy fends an Armado against the English; which vieweth them and returneth : is againe fet forth : their fight; the English veelde voon composition : Diners martial discourses.

Bay of Pifes. CapeSangalean Chilca. Aduise ginen by Sca and

Y generall accord we eased our felues of a leake prife, and continued our course alongst the coast, till we came thwart of the Bay of Psea, which lyeth within 15 degrees and 15 minutes. Presently after we were cleare of Cape Sangalean, and his llands, we ranged this Bay with our Boate and Pinnace. It hath two small Ilands in it, but without fruite, and being becalmed, we anchored two dayes thwart of Chilea.

By Sea and by Land, those of [1919 had given advise to Don Garcia Histado de Mendoca, Marquis of Canete, Vice-roy of Pern, resident in Lima, of our being on the Coast. He presently with all possible diligence, put out fix Ships in watlike order, with well neere two thousand men, and dispatched them to feeke vs, and tought with vs, vnder the conduct of Don Bedrian de Castro Tdelaluca, his wives brother; who departing out of the Port of Callao, turned to wind-ward, in fight ouer the shore, from whence they had daily intelligence, where wee had beene discouered. And the next day after our departure out of Chilea, about the middle of May, at breake of day, we had fight each of other, thwart of Canete, we being to wind-wards of the Spanish Armado, some two leagues, and all with little or no winde. Our Pinnace or prize being furnished with Oates came vinto vs, out of which we thought to haue takenout men, and fo to leave her; but 10 being able to come victo vs at all times, it was held for better, to keepe her till necessitie forced vs to leave her; and fore was determined, that if we came to likelificod of boording, the should lay our Boate aboord, and enter all her men, and from thence to enter our Ship, and to to forfake her : Afthough by the event in that occasion, this proved good, not withflanding I hold it to be reproned, where the enemy is farre laperiour in multitude and force, and able to come and bood, if helift : and that the fureit courfe, is to fortifie the principall, and the best that may be, and to cut off all impediments, where a man is forced to defence; for that no man is affored to have time amwerable to his purpofe and will, and voon doubt whether the others in hope to faue themfelues, will not leave him in greatest extremitie.

We presently put our felues in the best order we could, to fight, and to defend our selues : our 62 prayers we made vnto the Lord God of battels, for his helpe and our deliuerance, putring our Telues wholly into his hands. About nine of the clocke, the Brefe began to blow, and wee to fland off into the Sea, the Spanuards cheeke by iole with vs, ever getting to the wind-wards vp on vs; for that the shipping of the South Sea, is euer moulded sharpe vider water, and long;

all their voyages depending upon turning to wind wards, and the Brefe blowing ever Sou-

As the Sunne began to mount aloft, the winde began to fresh : which together with the rowling Sea, that ever beateth vpon this coast, comming out of the westerne-bourd, caused a chapping Sea, wherewith the Admirall of the Spaniards frapt his mainte Mast asunder, and to began to lagge a sterne, and with him, other two Ships. The Vice-admiral! fplit her mainefaile, being come within fhot of vs vpon our broad fide, but to lee-wards: the Reate admiral cracked her maine-yard gfunder in the middeft, being a head of vs: one of the Armado, which had gotten woon the broad fide of vs, to wind-wards, durit not affault vs.

With these differees upon them, and the hand of God helping and delittering vs. night comming, we began to confut what course was best to be taken, to free our felues; wherein were diuers opinions : tome faid it was best to stand off to the Sea close by, all the night : others to lye ita hull : others to cast about to the shoare-wards two glasses, and after all the night to stand off to Sea close by. The Admirall of the Spaniards with the other two were a sterne of vs. some foure leagues; the Vice-admirall a mileright to lee-wards of vs: the Reare-admirall in a manner right a head, fome culuering that; and one vpon our loofe, within that alfo, the Moone was to rile within two houres. After much debating, it was concluded, that we should beare vp before the winds, and seeke to escape betwixt the Admirall and the Vice-admirall, which we put in execution, not knowing of any other difgrace befallen them, but that of the Reare-admirall : an till after our furrender, when they recounted vnto vsall that had past. In the morning at breake or day, we were cleare of all our Enemies, and so shaped our course alongst the Coast, for the Bay of Atacames, where we purposed to trim our Pinnace, and to renew our wood and water, and so to depart vpon our Voyage with all possible speede.

The Spanish Armado, returned presently to Callas, which is the Port of Lyma, or of the Citie Returns of the of the Kings. It was first named Lyms, and retaineth also that name of the River, which passets SessibArmado by the Citie called Lyma, the Spanish Armado being entred the Port, the people began to goe athere, where they were so mocked and scorned by the women, as scarce any one by day would Scoffed at thew his face, they reuiled them with the name of cowards and golnias, and craued licence of the Vice-roy to be admitted into their roomes, and to undertake the furrendry of the English

20 Shippe. I have beene certified for truth, that fome of them affronted their Souldiers with Daggers and Piltols by their fides. This wrought fuch effects in the hearts of the difgraced, as they vowed either to recouer their reputation loft, or to follow vs into England, and fo with expedition, the Vice-roy commanded two Shippes and a Pinnace to be put in order, and in them placed the chiefe Souldiers and Marriners of the rest, and furnished them with victuals and

The forefaid Generall is once againe dispatched to seeke vs; who ranged the Coasts and They fee forth Ports, enforming himselfe what he could: Some fiftie leagues to the North wards of Lyma, in the second fight of Mongon, we tooke a Ship halfe loaden with Wheate, Sugar, Miell de Canas, and Cordo-time, uanskins: which for that the was leake and failed badly, and tackled in fuch manner (as the Mar-40 riners would not willingly put themselves into her) we tooke what was necessary for our prouilion, and fired her. Thwart of Traxillo, wee fet the company of her ashoare, with the Pilot which we had taken in Balbarizo, referuing the Pilot of the burnt Shippe, and a Greeke, who

chose rather to continue with vs, then to hazard their lives in going ashore; for that they had departed out of the Port of Santa (which is in eight degrees) being required by the Iuftice not to weigh anchor before the Coast was knowne to be cleare. It is a thing worthy to be noted, and almost incredible, with how few men they vie to faile Few men min a Shippe in the South Sea, for in this prife, which was aboue an hundred tunnes, were but eight a Ship in the

persons : and in a Ship of three hundreth tuns, they wie not to put aboue foureteene or fifteene South Sea. persons: yea I have been credibly enformed, that with foureteen epersons, a Ship of five hun-50 dred tuns hath beene carried from Guayaquil to Lyma, deepe loaden: which is aboue two hundred leagues. They are forced ever to gaine their Voyage by turning to wind-wards, which is the greatest toyle and labour that the Marriners haue; and slow sometimes in this Voyage source or fine moneths, which is generall in all the Nanigations of this coast; but the security from flormes, and certainty of the Brefe (with the defire to make their gaine the greater) is the cause that every man forceth himselfe to the vetermost, to doe the labour of two men.

In the height of the Port of Santa, some seuen hundred and fiftie leagues to the West-wards, Port of Sante. lye the Ilanus of Salomon, of late yeares difcouered. At my being in Lyma, a Fleete of foure faile Plantation of wasient from thence to people them; which through the emulation and difford that arose a the llands of mongft them, being landed and fetled in the Countrey, was veterly overthrowne, onely one Salomon. 60 Shippe, with tome few of the people, after much mifery, got to the Philippines. This I came to the knowledge of, by a large relation written from a person of credit, and sent from the Philippines to Panama : I law it at my being there, in my voyage towards Spaine. Hauing edged neere the coast, to put the Spaniards on shore, a thicke fogge tooke vs, so that we could not fee the land; but recovering our Pinnace and Boate, we failed on our course, till wee came thwart of the Port

called Malabrigo, It lieth in feuen degrees,

Current. Punta de Au-

In all this Coast the currant runneth with great force, but neuer keepeth any certaine course. fauing that it runneth along it the coast, sometimes to the South-wards, sometimes to the Northwards, which now runneth to the North-wards, forced vs fo farre into the Bay (which a point of the land cauleth, that they call Punta de Augusta) as thinking to cleare our felues by rouing North-west, we could not double this point, making our way North North-west. Therefore speciall care is ever to be had of the current : and doubtlesse, if the providence of Almighty God had not freede vs, we had runne alhore vpon the Land, without feeing or fuspecting any fish danger; his name be euer exalted and magnified, for delivering vs from the vnknowne danger, by calming the winde all night: the Suns riting manifeited vnto vs our errour and perill, by difenuering vnto vs the land within two leagues right a head. The current had carried vs without any le winde, at the leaft foure leagues : which feene, and the winde beginning to blow, we brought our tackes abourd, and in thort time cleared our felues.

Thwart of this point of Anguffa, lye two defert Hands ; they call them Illas de Lobes, for the multitude of Seales, which accustome to haunt the shore. In the bigger is very good harbour. and secure : they lye in six degrees and thirty minutes. The next day after we lost fight of those Hands, being thwart of Parta, which lyeth in five degrees, and having manned our Pinnace and Boate to fearch the Port, we had fight of a tall Ship, which having knowledge of our being on the coaft, and thinking her felfe to be more lafe at Sea, then in the harbour, put her felfe then voderfaile: to her we gaue chase all that night, and the next day; but in fine, being better of faile then we, the freed her felfe. Thus being to lee-ward of the Harbour, and discouered, we continued our course alongst the shore. That evening, wee were thwart of the River of Gnyayagnil, which hath in the mouth of it two Hands : the Souther-most and biggest, called Puma, in three degrees; and the other to the North-wards, Santa clara,

Puma is inhabited, and is the place where they build their principall shipping: from this Riuer, Lima and all the valleyes are furnished with Timber, for they have none but that which is brought from hence, or from the Kingdome of Chile. By this River passeth the principall trade of the Kingdome of Quito; it is Naugable some leagues into the Land, and hath great abundance Those of the Peru, vie to ground and trim their Shippes in Puma, or in Panama, and in all c-

Medicinable

ther parts they are forced to carene their Shippes. In Punant higheth and falleth, fifteene or fix-30 teene foote water, and from this Hand, till a man come to Panama, in all the coast it ebbeth and floweth more or leffe; keeping the ordinary course, which the Tides doe in all Seas. The water of this River, by experience, is medicinable, for all aches of the bones, for the stone and strangurie: the reason which is given, is, because all the bankes and low land adjoying to this Ruer, are replenished with Salfapersilia : which lying for the most part soaking in the water, it participateth of this vertue, and giveth it this force. In this River, and all the Rivers of this coast, are great abundance of Alagartees; and it is faid that this exceedeth the reft, for persons of credit haue certified me, that as small fishes in other Rivers abound in scoales, so the Alagartoes in this; they doe much hurt to the Indians and Spaniards, and are dreadfull to all whom they catch within their clutches.

Scoales of

Some fine or fix leagues to the North-wards of Puma, is la Punta de Santa Elena; vnder which is good anchoring, cleane ground, and reasonable succour. Being thwart of this point, weehad fight of a Shippe, which wee chafed, but being of better faile then wee, and the night comming on, we loft fight of her; and so anchored vnder the Isla de Plata; to recouer our Pinnace and Boate, which had gone about the other point of the Iland, which lyeth in two degrees, and fortie minutes. The next day we palt in fight of Puerto Vicjo, in two degrees ten minutes; which lying without shipping, wedirected our course for Cape Passas. It lyeth directly under the Equinoctiall line; some fourescore leagues to the West-wards of this Cape, lyeth a heape of llands, the Spaniards call Illas de los Galapagos; they are defert and beare no truite : from Cape Paffaoi, we directed our course to Cape Saint Francisco, which lyeth in one degree to the North-wards so of the line : and being thwart of it, we descried a small Shippe, which we chased all that day and night, and the next morning our Pinnace came to bourd her; but being a Ship of aduite, and full of paffengers, and our Ship not able to fetch her vp, they entreated our people badly, and freed themselues, though the feare they conceived, caused them to cast all the dispatches of the King, as also of particulars into the Sea, with a great part of their loading, to be lighter and better of faile, for the Ships of the South Sea loade themselves like lighters or fand barges, presuming vpon the fecuritie from ftormes.

Being out of hope to fetch vp this Shippe, we flood in with the Cape, where the Land beginneth to trend about to the East-wards. The Cape is highland, and all couered over with trees, and so is the land ouer the Cape, and all the coast (from this Cape to Panama) is full of wood, 60 from the Straits of Magelan, to this Cape of San Francisco. In all the coast from head-land to head-land, the couries lye betwixt the North and North and by West, and sometimes more Westerly, and that but seldome: It is a bold coast, and subject to little soule weather, or alteration of windes, for the Brefe, which is the Southerly winde, bloweth continually from Balparizo to

CHAP.S.S. 5. Indians difmiffed Spaniards diffreffe Indians chafe Spaniards. 1401

Cape San Francisco, except it be a great chance. Trending about the Cape, wee haled in East Cape San Prancisco, Cabe Bay of Atacames, which lyeth some seven leagues from the Cape. In Bay of Ataca the mid way (fome three leagues from the shore) lyeth a banke of fand, whereof a man must have me. a care ; for in some parts of it there is but little water.

The tenth of Iune we came to an anchor in the Bay of Atacames, which on the Wester part hath a round hammock. It feemeth an Hand, & in high Springs, I judge, that the Sea goeth round shout it. To the Eastwards it hatha high fandie Cliffe, and in the middest of the Bay, a faire birth, from the shoare lieth a bigge blacke Rocke aboue water: from this Rocke to the fandy Cliffe, is a drowned Marth ground, caufed by his lownesse; And a great River, which is broad but of

10 no depth.

Manning our Boate, and running to the shoare, wee found presently in the Westerne bight of the Bay, a deepe River, whose Indraught was so great, that we could not benefit our felues of it, being brackish, except at a low water; which hindred our dispatch, yet in fine dayes, wee filled all our emptie Caske, supplied our want of wood, and grounded and put in order our Pinnaffe. Here, for that out Indians ferued vs to no other vie, but to confume our victuals, we exied They diffaiffe our felues of them; gave them Hookes and Lines which they craned, and some bread for a few their Indiana. dayes, and replanted them in a farre better Countrey, then their owne, which fell out luckily for the Spaniards of the Shippe which wee chafed thwart of Cape San Francisco; for victuals growing thort with her, having many mouthes, thee was forced to put alhoare fifty of her pal-

20 fengers, neere the Cape; whereof more then the one halte died with famine, and continuall wading through Rivers and waters : the rest(by chance) meeting with the Indians, which we had Somingle. put afhore, with their filhing, guide, and industry were refreshed, sustained, and brought to habi-

Our necessary businesse being ended, we purposed the sifteenth day of May, in the morning, Occasion of to setsaile, but the source enth in the cussing, we had light of a Shippe, some three leagues to their rune; Sea-wards; and through the importunitie of my Captaine and Companie, I condiscended that our Pinnace should give her chase, which I should not have done, for it was our destruction; I gave them precise order, that if they stood not in againe at night, they should seeke me at Care San Francisco, for the next morning I purposed to let sayle without delay, and so feeing that our 30 Pinnace flowed her comming, at nine of the clocke in the morning, we waird our Anchors, and flood for the Cape; where we beate off and on two dayes : and our Pinnace nor appearing, wee flood againeinto the Bay, where we descried hes, surning in wishout a maine Mail, which Handing off to the Sea, cloid by, with much winde and a chapting Geoglearing a caut-fayle, where a A caut faile is little was too much (being to finall purpose) fod aims by the pare it by the bound; and standing that which in with the shore, the winde, or rather God blinding them for our punishment, they knew not propertiona-the land; and making themselues to be to wind-wards of the Bay, bare up and were put into the the land; and making themselves to the wind that had great fresh River, which highest fifteene for the veile.

Bay of San Mathew: It is a goodly harbour, and hat had great fresh River, which highest fifteene By of S.Maor fixteene foote water, and is a good Countrey, and well peopled with Indians; they have flore them. of Gold and Emeralds. Here the Spaniards from Guay aquid made an habitation, whilit I was pri-40 foner in Lyma, by the Indians confent; but after not able to futfer the infolencies of their guelts,

and being a people of stomacke and prefumption, they suffered themselves to bee perswaded and led by a Molate. This leader many yeares before had fled vnto them from the The Indian Spaniards, him they had long time held in reputation of their Captaine Generall, and was led by a design admitted also vnto a chiefe Office by the Spaniards, to gaine him vnto them. But now the Chale the spaniards Indians uniting themselves together prefuming that by the helpe of this Molas they should force minds. the Spaniards out of the Countrey ; put their resolution in execution, droue their enemies into the woods, and flew as many as they could lay hands on tew eleaped with life; and those who had that good hap, fuffered extreame milery before they came to Quite; the place of neerett habitation of Spanierds.

To this Bay, as foone as our people in the Pinnace faw their errour, they brought their racker aboord, and turned and tyded it vp, as they could. Affoone as we came to Anchor, I procured to remedy that was amisse; in two dayes we dispatched all we had to doe, and the next morning we resolved to set sayle and to leave the coast of Permand Queto. The day appearing, we began to weigh our Anchors, and being a Pike ready to cut layle, one out of the top deferied the Spamifb Armado, comming about the Cape: which by the courte it kept, prefently gaue vs to vn- Spanif Armae derstand, who they were : though my company (as is the custome of Sea men) made them to be do. the Fleete bound for Panama, loaden with treasure, and importuned that in all haste wee should cut fayle and stand with them, which I contradicted, for that I was affured that no Shipping

would stirre vpon the coast, till they had securitie of our departure (except some Armado that might be sent to seeke vs) and that it was not the time of the yeare to carry the treasure to Pamama. And besides, in riding still at an Anchor, they ever came neerer voto vs, for they stood directly with vs, and we kept the weather gage; where if wee had put our felues vnder fayle (the ebbe in hand) we should have given them the advantage, which we had in our power, by refon of the point of the Bay. And being the Armado(as it was) we gained time to fit our felues,

Pride and vnrulineffe fore.

the better to fight. And truly (as before, to a stiffe-necked Horse) so now againe, I cannot but refemble the condition of the Mariner to any thing better, then to the current of a furious Riner repressed by force or Arte, which neverthelesse ceasieth not to seeke a way to ouerthrowe both fence and banke : Euen fo the common fort of Sea-men, apprehending a conceit in their imagic nations, neither experiment, knowledge, examples, reasons nor authoritie, can alter of remove them from their conceited opinions. In this extremitie, with reason I laboured to conuince them, and to contradict their pretences: but they altogether without reason, or against reason. breake out, some into vannting and bragging, some into reproaches of want of courage, others into withings , that they had neuer come out of their Countrie, if wee should refuse to fight with The vnaduied two ships what soener. And to mend the matter, the Gunner (for his part) assured me that with he the first tire of shot, he would lay the one of them in the fods : And our Pinnace, that she would take the other to taske. One promised, that he would cut downe the Maine-yard, another that hee would take their Flagge; and all in generall shewed a great defire to come to triall with the Enem .. To some I turned the deafe eare, with others I diffembled , and armed my felfe with patience (having no other defence nor remedie for that occasion) foothing and animating them to the execution of what they promifed, and perswated them to have a little sufferance, seeine they gained time and advantage by it. And to give them better fatisfaction I condifcended, that our Captaine with a competent number of men, should with our Pinnace goe to discouer them: with order, that they should not engage themselves in that manner, as they might not bee able to come vnto vs, or we to fuccour them. In all these divisions and opinions, our Master, Hush Dermile (who was a most sufficient man for government and valour, and well faw the errours of

> the Vice-admirall (being next her) began with her chafe to falute her with three or foure Peeces of Artilerie, and fo continued chafing her, and ganning at her. My Companie feeing this, now began to change humour: And I then, to encourage and perswade them to performe the execution of their promises and vaunts of valour, which they had but even now protested, and given affurance of, by their profers and forwardnesse,. And that we might have Sea-roome to fight. we presently weighed Anchor, and stood off to Sea with all our sayles, in hope to get the weather gage of our contraries. But the winde feanting with vs, and larging with them, we were 30 forced to lee-ward. And the Admirall weathering vs, came roome vpon vs : which being with in Musket thot, wee hailed first with our noise of Trumpets, then with our Waytes, and after with our Artilerie: which they not wered with Artilerie, two for one. For they had double the Ordnance we had, and almost sen mentor one. Immediatly they came shoaring abourd of vs. vpon our les quatter contrarie to our expectation, and the custome of men of Warre, And doubtleffe. had our Gunner beene the man hee was reputed to be, and as the world fold him to me, thee had received great hurt by that manner of boording : But contrarie to all expectation, our stearne Peeces were vriprimed, and so were all those, which we had to lee-ward (saue halfe one in the quarter) which discharged wrought that effect in our contraries as that they had fine or fixe foot water in hold, before they ful pected it.

the multitude) vied his office, as became him; and so did all those of best understanding,

In short space, our Pinnace discouered what they were, and casting about to returne vnto vs.

How farre a Commander is to truft his officers.

The inexperience of the

Speniards, and of the English

And careles.

neffe of the

Hereby all men are to take warning by me, not to trust any man in such extremities, when he himselfe may see it done : and comming to fight, let the Chieftaine himselfe bee sure to haus all his Artilerie in a readinesse, voon all occasions. This was my ouersight, this my ouerthrow. For I, and all my Companie, had that fatisfaction of the fufficiency and care of our Gunner, as not any one of vs euer imagined there would be any defect found in him. For my part, I with the reft of our Officers, occupied our felues in clearing our Deckes, lacing our Nettings, making of Bulwarkes, arming our Toppes, fitting our Wast-clothes, tallowing our Pikes, slinging our Yards, doubling our Sheetes and Tackes, placing and ordering our People, and procuring that they should be well fitted and prouided of all things; leaving the Artilerie, and other Instruments of fire, to the Gunners dispose and order, with the rest of his Mares and Adherents; which 50 (as I faid) was part of our perdition. For bearing me euer in hand, that he had fine hundred Cartredges in a readinesse, within one houres fight, wee were forced to occupie three persons, onely in making and filling Cartredges, and of five hundred elles of Canuas and other Cloth given him for that purpose, at fundry times, not one yard was to be found. For this we have no excuse, and therefore could not avoide the danger, to charge and discharge with the Ladle, especially in io hot a fight. And comming now to put in execution the finking of the thip, as he promifed, hee feemed a man without life or foule. So the Admirall comming close vnto vs, I my felfe, and the Master of our ship, were forced to play the Gunners.

Deceit of the Gunner, and his extreme careleineffe, and fulpicious

Those Instruments of fire, wherein he made me to spend excessively (before our going to Sea) now appeared not; Neither the braffe Bals of Artificiall fire to be shot with Shurbowes (where- 60 of I had fixe Bowes, and two hundreth Bals, which are of great account and lervice, either by Sea or Land) he had flowed them in fuch manner (though in double Barrels) as the falt water had spoyled them all; so that comming to vie them, not one was serviceable. Some of our Companie had him in suspicion, to be more friend to the Spaniards, then to vs; for that hee had serned fome yeares in the Torcea, as Gunner, and that he did all this of purpose. Few of our Peenew recelere, when we came to vie them, and fome had the shot first put in, and after the powder. Befides, after our furrendry; it was laid to hischarge, that he should fay; he had a Brother that ferued the King in Pern, and that he thought he was in the Armado; and how he would nat for all the world, he should be flaine. Whether this were true or no, I know not, but I am fure all in generall gaue him an ill report, and that hee, in whose hands the chiefe execution of the whole fight confilted, executed nothing as was promifed and expected.

It is requisite that all Captaines and Commanders were such, and so experimented in all offices, that Who to 2:they must be able as well to controule as to examine all manner of errors in officers. For the Government count a true 10 at Sea hardly suffereth a head without exquisite experience. The deficiencie whereof hath occasioned Marriner. Come ancient Sea-men to ftraighten the attribute of Marrinerin fuch fort, as that it ought not to be oinen but to the man who is able to build his Ship, to fit and provide her of all things necessarie, and after to but to the man who is avic to omnum on supplies. Hereby giving vs to understand, that bee should His knowledge know the parts and peeces of the Ship, the value of the timber, planke and I rensworke, so to be able aswell to haild in proportion, as to procure all meterials at a just price. And againe, to know how to cut his fayles, what length is competent to every Roape, and to be of sufficiencie to reprehend and reforme those who erre, and doe amiss. In providing his Ship for victuals, munition and necessaries, of face it must For provisione. be expected that he be able to make his estimate, and (that once provided and perfected) in season . and with expedition to fee it loden and stowed commediously, with care and proportion. After that, Hee is to 20 order the fpending thereof, that in nothing be be defrauded at home, and at Sea, euer to know how much is then, and what remaineth to be frem. In the Art of Naugation, he is bound also to know, so much, Fot Naugatio at to be able to give directions to the Pilot & Master, and confequently to all the reft of inferior officers.

In matter of guids and diffing of the Saylers, with the tackling of the Ship, and the workes which be- Office of the lang thereunto, within bourd and without, all is to be committed to the Masters charge. The Pilot is to Master. looke carefully to the Sterridge of the Ship, to be watchfull in taking the heights of Sunne and Starre; Office of the to note the way of his Ship, with the augmenting and leffening of the winds, Oc. The Boatefwaine is to Pilot. Gee his Ship kept cleane; his Makes, yards and tacklings well coated, matted and armed; his skroud; The Boateand flaies well fet; his failes repaired, and sufficiently premented with martnets, blayles, and caskets bis wine. boate fitted with Sayle Oares, thong bes, tholes danyd, windles androther : His Anchors well boyed fufe-30 In Stopped and Secured, with the rest to him appertaining. The Steward is to see the preservation of VI. The Steward. Enals and necessaries, committed unto his charge; and by measure and weight to deliver the portions anpointed, and with diffretion and good tearmes, to give favefaction to all. The Carpenter is to view the The Carpenter mailte and yards, the fides of the Shep, her deckes and columns; her pumpes and boate; and moreoner to occupie himselfe in the most forcible workes, except he brondownesse communicated. The Gunner is to care The Gunner.

stocker, & c. To be provident in working his fire worker, in making and filling his Cartreger; in accommodating his ladler, sponger and other necessaries; in stilling and drying his powder; in cleansing the armes. munition, and fuch like workes, intrusted unto him. In this manner every officer in his office, ought to be an absolute Commander, yet ready in obedience and loue, to facrifice his will to his faperiors command: This cannot but cause vaitie; and vaitie cannot but purchase a happir issue to dutifull travels. Lastin, except it be intergent and precise cases, the Head Directions in Should never direct his command to any, but the officers, and thefe fecretly, except the occasion require fecret. publication; or that it touch all in generall. Such orders would be (for the most part) in writing, that all

for the britching and tackling of his Artillery; the fitting of his floor, Tampkins, cornes, crones and lina

might know what in generall is commanded and required. The reason why the Admirall came to leewards (asafter I vinderstood) was for that her Artillery being very long, and the winde fresh, bearing a taut fayle, to fetch vs vp, and to keepe vs Wby the Spscompany, they could not vie their Ordnance to the weather of vs , but lay shaking in the nift Admirall winds: And doubtleffe it is most proper for shippes to have short Ordnance, except in the came to lee-fterne or chase. The reasons are many: viz. easier charging, ease of the Shippes side, better tra-wards. 50 nersing and mounting, yea, greater securitie of the Artillery, and consequently of the Shippe. For Rule for Order

the longer the Peece is, the creater is the retention of the fire, and fo the torment and danger of the nance. Peece the greater. But here will be contradiction by many, that dare ancueb that longer Peeces are to be preferred; for that they burne their powder better, and carry the shot further, and so necessarily of better execution : whereas the foort Artillers many times fronds much of their powder without burning, and workes thereby the Stenderer effect. To which I answere that for Land service, Forts, or Castles, the long Pecces are to be preferred; but for hipping, the shorter are much more sermiceable. And the powder in them, being such as it ough, will be all fired long before the shot come forth; and to reach farre in fights at Sea, is to little effett: For be that purpofeth to annoy his Enemie, mult not shoote at randon, Bor at point blanke, if he purpose to accomplish with his denotre, neither must be frend his shot nor powder, 60 on where a pot sun may reach his contrary; bow much the neerer, so much the better: and this duely executed, the hort Artillery will no be his effect, as well as the long; otherwife, neither short nor long are of minch simportance : but here, my meaning is not, to approve the overshort Pecces, denifed by some perfont; which at enery shot they make daunce out of their carrages, but those of indifferent length, and which

keeps the meane, betwirt scauen and eight foote.

Intertainment

The entertainment we gave vnto our contraries, being otherwise then was expected, they fell off, and ranged a head, having broken in precess all our galletie: and prefently they cast about youn vs. and being able to keepe vs company, with their fighting failes lay a weather of vs, ordinarily within Musket shot; playing continually with them and their great Artillerie; which we endured, and answered as we could. Our Pinnace engaged her felte to farre, as that before the could come vnto vs, the Vice-admirall had like to cut her off, and comming to lay vs abourd and to enter her men, the Vice-admirall boorded with her; fo that fome of our company entred our Ship ouer her bow-sprit, as they themselves reported. Wee were not a little comforted with the fight of our people in latetie, within our Ship, for in all, wee were but threefcore and fifteene men and boyes, when we began to fight, and our enemies thirteene hundred men and to boyes, little more or leffe, and those of the choise of Peru.

The Enelife 75. 1200.

The Spenifb

Here it shall not be ont of the way, to discourse a little of the Spanish Discipline, and manner of their gouernment in generall; which is inmany things different to ours. In this expedition came two Generals. the one Don Beltran de Caltro, who had the absolute authoritie and command : The other Michael Angell Pilipon, a man well in yeares, and came to this preferment by his long and painefull fernice, who though be had the title of Generall by Sea, I thinke it was rather of courtefie then by Pattent; and for that he had beene many yeares Generall of the South Seas, for the carriage and swaftage of the Silner from Lyma to Panama; Hee feemed to be an affistant, to supply that with his counsel, adnice, and experience, whereof Don Beltran had never made triall (for be commanded not absolutely, but with the confirmation of Don Beltran) for the Spaniards never give absolute authoritie to more then one. A custome to that hath beene, and is approved in all Empires, Kingdomes, Common-wealths, and Armies, rightly diffic. plined: the mix ture bath beene feldome feene to prosper, as will manifestly appeare, if we consider the issue of all actions and iourneys committed to the concrument of two or more generally. The Spaniards in their Armadoes by Sea, imitate the discipline, order and officers, which are in an

Army by Land, and devide themselves into three bodies, to wit, Souldiers, Marriners and Gunners. Then Souldiers ward and watch, and their officers in enery Ship round, as if they were on the shoare : this is the onely taske they undergoe, except cleaning their Armes, wherein they are not oner carrous. The Gunners are exempted from all labour and care, except about the Artillerie. And these are either Almaynes, Flemmings, or frangers; for the Spaniards are but indifferently practifed in this Art. The Marriners are but as flames to the reft, to morle and to toyle day and night, and those but few and bad, and not suffered to fleepe or harbour themselmes under the deckes. For in faire or foule weather, in stormes, sunne or raine, they must palle voide of conert or fuccour.

Officers in a Ship of War. Capraine of the Ship. Captaine of the Soldiers. M.Del Campo.

There is ordinarily in enery Ship of it arre a Captaine, whose charge is, as that of our Masters with vs. and alle a Captaine of the Souldiers, who commandeth the Captaine of the Ship the Souldiers, Gunners, and Marriners in her; wea, though there be diners Captaines, with their companies in one Shippe (which is whall among it them) yet one hath the supreame authoritie, and the residue are at his ordering and diffoling. They base their Mastros de Campo, Sergeant, Master, Generall (or Captaine) of the Artillery, with their Alfere Maior, and all other officers, as in a Campe. If they come to fight with another Armado they order themselves as in a battell by land: In a Vanonard, rereward, maine battell, and wings, &c. In enery particular Ship the Souldiers are let all upon the deckes; their forecast lethey account in their head Front or Vangard of their company; that abast the Mast the rereward; and the waste, the maine battell; wherein they place their principall force, and on which they principally relye, which they call their placa de armas or place of Armes; which taken, their hope is lost. The Gunners sight not, but with their great Artillerie: the Marriners attend onely on the tackling of the Ship, and bandling of the failet, and are unarmed, and subject to all misfortunes; not permitted to shelter themselves, but to be still alost, whether it be necessary or needelesse. So ordinarily, those which first faile are the Matriners and Sailers, of which they have greatest needs. They we few close fights or fireworks of all this proceedeth (as I indee) of errour in placing land Captaines for Gonernors and Commanders by Sea, where they feldome underfland what is to be done or commanded. Some that have beene our prisoners, have perfited themselves of that they have seene among st us : and 19

Ill order.

Prying of the outDiscipline. baffages, haue noted our forme of fripping our manner of defences and discipline: Sithence which estial in

Their imitati- at Sea: which doubtleffe is the best, and most proper that is at this day knowne, or practifed in the whole on of our Dif- world if the execution be answerable to that which is known and received for true and good among it vs.

cipline.

In the Captaine (for fo the Spaniards call their Admirall) was an English Gumer, who to gains Engliftman loft grace with those wider whom he served, preferring himselfe, and offered to linke our Ship with the English and the first shot he made; who, by the Spaniards relation, being traversing a peece in the bowe, to make his shot, had his head carried away with the first or second shot, made out of our Ship. It flew also two or three of those which stood next him, A good warning for those which fight a- 63 gainst their Countrie.

others disquised, under colour of treaties for ransoming of prisoners, for bringing of presents of other Im-

fuch actions as they have beene imployed in they feeke to imitate our government, and reformed discipline

The fight continued to hot on both fides, that the Artillery and Muskets neuer ceafed playing. Our contraries, towards the euening, determined the third time to lay vs abourd, with resolution to take vs, or to hazard all. The order they set downe for the execution CHAP. S.S. Spanish Vice-admiral indangered Directions for Sea-fights.

hereof, was, that the Captaine (or Admirall) should bring himselfe vpon our weather bow . and fo fall aboord of vs, vpon our broad fide: And that the Vice-admirall, should lay his Admirall aboord you his weather quarter, and fo enter his men into her; that from her, they might enter vs, or doe as occasion thould minister. The Captaine of the Vice-admirall, being more hardie then confiderate, and prefuming with

his ship and company to get the prize, and chiefe honour, waited not the time to put in execution the direction given, but preferrly came abourd to wind-wards upon our broad fide. Which The Spaniards doubtleffe was the great and especial Providence of Almightie God, for the discouraging of our e- pay deerly said nemies, and animating of vs. For although the was as long, or rather longer then our fl. ip, being their rafinefic, to rately built, and veterly without fights or defence; what with our Muskers, and what with our fire-works we clered her decks in a moment; so that scarce any person appeared. And doubt leffe if we had entred but a doozen men, we might have enforced them to have rendred vnto vs. or taken her, but our company being tew, and the principall of them staine, or burt, weedurst not. neither was it wisdome, to aduenture the separation of those which remayned : and so held that

for the belt and foundest resolution, to keepe our forces together in defence of our owne. The Vice-admirall feeing himfelte in great diftreffe, called to his Admirall for fuccour : who presently laid him aboord, and entred a hundred of his men, and so cleered themselves of vs. In this boording the Vice-admirall had at the least thirtie and fix men hurt, and fine; and among ft them his Pilot shot through the bodie, so as he died presently. And the Admirall also received

20 some loffe; which wrought in them a new resolution; only with their Artillery to batter vs; And take a and so with time to force vs to farrender, or to fink vs, which they put in execution: and placing new resolution themselves within a Musket shot of our weather quarter, and sometimes on our broad side . lay continually beating upon vs without intermission, which was doubtlesse the best and securest determination they could take, for they being rare ships, and without any manner of close fights. in boording with vs, their men were all open vnto vs, and we vnder couert and shelter. For on all parts our ship was Musket free, and the great Artillery of force must cease on either side (the thips being once grapled together) except we refolued to facrifice our felues together in fire. For it is impossible, if the great Ordnance play (the ships being boorded) but that they must fee fire Great Ordon the ship they shoot at; and then no suretie can bee had to free himselfe, as experience daily nance free a 30 confirmeth. A Peece is as a Thunder-clap. As was feene in the Spanifo Admirall after my imprifonment, crofting from Panama to Cape San Francisco, a Rayao, (for forthe Spaniards call a Thun-

derclap) brake ouer our flip, killed one in the fore-top, aftonished either two or three in the shroudes, and split the Matt in strange manner; where it entred, it could hardly be differried, but where it came forch, it draue out a great splinter before it; and the man flaine, was cleane in a of Titue : manner without figne or token of hurt, although all his bones turned to powder, and those who lived and recovered, had all their bodies blacke, as burnt with fire. In like manner the Peece of Ordnance hurteth not those which stand aside, nor those which stand aslope from his mouth but those alone which stand directly against the true point of his levell : though sometimes the wind of the shot ouerthroweth one, and the splinters (beeing accidents) mayne and hurt others. But 40 principally where the Peece doth refemble the Thunderclap, as when the ships are boorded. For

then, although the Artillerie be discharged without shot, the fury of the fire, and his piercing nature is such, as it entreth by the seames, and all parts of the ships sides, and meeting with so fit matter as Pitch, Tarre, Oaombe, and fometimes with powder, presently convertetli all into flames. For aucyding whereof, as also the danger and damage which may come by Pikes and other inventions of fire, and if any ship be oppressed with many ships at once, and subject by them to be boorded; I hold it a good courie to firike his fire and mayne yards close to his decke, and to fight with sprit-faile, and my son, and top-failes loose: so shall hee bee able to hinder them from oppressing him. Some haue thought it a good policie to launce out some ends of masts or yards by Policies to se the Ports or other parts : but this is to be yied in the greater ships, for in the lesser, though they uside boor-

50 be neuer fo ffrong, the waight of the bigger will beate out the opposite fides, and doe hurt, and dings. make great spoile in the lester. And in boording, ordinarily the lester ship hath al the harme, which the one flup can doe vnto the other.

Here is offered to speake of a point much canuassed amongst Carpenters, and Sea Captaines, diversity maintained, but yet undetermined : that is , whether the race or loftie built (bip, be best for the Merchant, and the fe which imploy themselves in trading: I am of opinion, that the race ship is most convenient; yet fo, Dispute conat that every perfect fire ought to have two decks, for the better firengithening of bersiche better succouring of Trade of her people; the better preserning of her Merchandeze and victuall, and for her greater safette from Sea and stormes. But for the Princes ships, and such as are imployed continually in the Warres, to bee Concerning built loftie I bold very necessarie for many Reasons. First, for Maiestie and terrour of the Enemie; the Prince his 60 Secondly, for harbouring of many men: Thirdly, for accomplating more men to fight: Fourthly, flips.

for placing and ving more Artillerie; Fifily, for better frengthning and securing of the ship; Sixt-9, for oner topping and subjecting the Enemie; Senenthly, for greater safegard and desence of the Stippe and company. For it is plaine, that the Stippe with three deckes, or with two and an balfe, linewes more pompethen another of her burthen with a decke and halfe, or two deckes, and

breedeth great terror to the enemy, discourring her selfe to be a more powerful ship as she is , then the other which being indeed a frip of force , seemeth to be but a Barke, and with ber low building hideth ber bur then. And who doubteth that a decke and a halfe cannot barbonr that proportion of men, that two decket. and two deckes and a halfe can accommodate to fight, nor carrie the Artillerie fo plentifully, nor fo commodioully. Neither can the ship be so strong with a decke and a halfe, as with two deckes, nor with two as with three, nor carrie her Mafts fo tant, nor fread fo great a clue, nor contrine fo many fights to answere one another for defence & offence. And the admantage the one bath of the other, experience daily teacheth

Courfes for boording,

Difuse of en-

That which hath beene floken of the danger of the Artillerie in boarding is not to be wrested, nor inter-Artillery after preted to cut off veterly the vie of all Artilleric after boarding , but rather I bold nothing more connenient in Ships of Warre, then Fowlers and great Rases in the cage workes, and Murderers in the Cobrider 10 heads, for that their execution and speedie charging and discharging is of great moment. Many I know Rines of Anti- bane left the vie of them, and of fundry other presentions, as of herehookes, stones in their tops, and are ming them, Pikebolts in their males and diners other engines of Antiquuic. But upon what inducement I cannot relate, unleffe it be because they never knew their effects and benefit, and may no doubt be used without the inconneniences before mentioned in great Ordnance. As also such may bee the occasion, that without danger some of the great Artillery may be vsed, and that with great effect, which is in the differen tion of the Commanders and their Gunners, as hath beene formerly scene and daily is experimented In the Revenge of her Maiefies, good experience was made, who funke two of the Spanish Armado lying In these boordings and skirmishes divers of our men were shine, and many hurt, and my selse to

Sir R.H. wound amongst them received fix wounds; one of them in the necke very perillous; another through

the arme perifning the bone, and cutting the finewes close by the Arme-pit; the reft not fo dangerous. The Matter of our ship had one of his eyes, his nose, and halfe his face shot away. Master Henry Courton was flaine; on thefe two I principally relied for the profecution of our voyage, if God by ficknes, or otherwise should take me away. The Spaniards with their great Ordnancelay continually playing vpon vs, and now and then parled and inuited vs to furrender our felues a Buena Querra. The Captaine of our ship, in whose direction and guide, our lives, our honour, and welfare now remained; feeing many of our people wounded and flaine, and that few were left to fultaine and maintaine the fight, or to relift the entry of the enemy (if hee should agains boord vs) and that our contraries offered vs good pertido: came vnto me accompanied with tome others, and began to relate the flate of our ship, and how that many were hure and slain, and scarce any men appeared to trauerie the Artillery, or to oppose themselues fer defence if the enemy should boord with vs againe. And how that the Admirall offered vs life and liberty, and to receive vs a Buena querra, and to fend vs into our owne Countrey. Saying, that if I thought it fo meet, hee and the rest were of opinion that wee should put out a slag of truce, and make some good composition. The great losse of blood had weakned me much. The torment of my wounds newly received made me faint, and I laboured for life, within fhort space expecting I should give vp

But this parly pierced through my heart, and wounded my foule; words failed mee where with to expresse it, and none can conceive it, but hee which findeth himselfe in the like & agonic: yet griefe and rage ministred force, and caused me to breake forth into this reprehension and execution following.

Great is the Croffe, which almightie God bath suffered to some upon mee; that assaulted by our professed enemies, and by them wounded (as you see) in body, lying pasting for breath) those whom I reputed for my friends to fight with me, those which I relied on as my brethren to defend me in all occasions. Those whom I have now ifed cherified foftered and loved as my children to fuccour me, beloe me, and to fulfame my rejutation in all extremities, are they who first draw their swords against me, are they which wound my beart, in guing me up into mine enemies hands whence proceedeth this ingratitude? whence this famtnesse of heart?whence this madnesses is the cause you sight for, vninit?is the bonor and lone of your Prince and Country buried in the duft? your (west lines, are they become loath some unto you? will you exchange 1) your liberty for thraldome, will you confent to fee that, which you have fweat for, and procured with fe great labour and adventure at the dispose of your enemies? can you content your selves to suffer my blood fall before your eyes? and my life bereft me in your prefence? with the blond and lines of your deere brethren to be unreuenged? is not an honourable death to be preferred before a miferable and flanish life? The one fulfaining the honor of our Nation of our predecesfors, and of our section the other sonominious to our felnes, and reproachfull to our Nation. Can you be perswaded that the enemy will performe his promise with you that never leaneth to breake it with others when be thinketh it advantagious? and know you not, Perfidiousnelle that with him all is consenient that is profitable? Hold they not this for a maxime; that, milla fides eft often found in fruanda cum hercticis. In which number they account vs to be. Haue you forgetten their faith violated with my father, in S. Iohn de Vluz, the conditions & capitulations being firmed by the Vicetoy, or twelve 60 Hostages, all principall personages given for the more securitie of either partie to other? Have you forgotten their promise broken with John Vibao, & bis company in Florida, basing conditioned to give them shipping and vistuals to carry them into their country? immediately after they had delinered their weapons & arms. hal they not their throats cut? have you forgotten how they dealt with John Oxenham, & bis Company,

CHAP.S.S. 5. English valour bolding out against the advantage of the enemy. 1407

in this Sea, reclding upon composition? and how after a long imprisonment, and many miseries (being carried from Panama to Lyma) and there hanged with all his Company, as Pyrates, by the Instice? And can rica from t analisa they abuse our noble natures, which being void of malice, measure all by sinceritie. but to our losse? for that when we come to demand performance, they stop our mouthes: Either with laying the inquition upon us, or with delinering us into the hands of the tordinary lustice, or of the Kines Mmillers. And then orged with their promises, they shrinke up to the shoulders, and say, That they have now no further power oner vs. They forrow in their hearts, to fee their promife is not accomplished; but now they cannot doe ut any good office, but to pray to God for us, and to intreat the Ministers in our be- The till of balle. Came wee into the South fea to put out flags of truce? And left we our pleasant England, with all this conte-10 her contentments, with intention or purpose to anaile our selues of white rags?

The Captaine and Company were perswaded to resolution; and in accomplishment of this red. promife and determination, they perfeuered in fulfaining the fight all this night, with the day They refolue and night following, and the third day after. In which time the Enemy neuer left vs day nor to fight out. night, beating continually vpon vs with his great and small shot, Sauing that every morning, an houre before breake of day, hee edged a little from vs to breath, and to remedie such defects as The Enemy were amife; as also to consult what they should doe theday and night following. This time of breathesh, interdiction we imployed in repairing our Sayles and Tacklings, in stopping our Leakes, in fishing and woolling our Masts and Yards, in mending our Pumpes, and in fitting and prouiding our felues for the day to come : though this was but little space for so many workes, yet gaue it The English re-20 great reliefe and comfort vnto vs, and made vs better able to endure the defence : for otherwise paire their our hip must of force haue funcke before our furrendrie, having many shot vnder water, and our defects,

Pumpes that to pieces every day. In all this space, not any man of either part tooke rest or sleepe, and little fustenance, besides Bread and Wine.

In the second dayes fight, the Vice-admirall comming upon our quarter, William Blauch, one of our Masters mates, with a luckie hand, made a shot vnto her with one of our sterne Peeces; it car- Vice admits ls ried away his maine Mast close by the deck wherewith the Admirall beare vp to her to see what mast thoraway harme thee had received, and to give her fuch foccour, as thee was able to fpare : which we feeing, were in good hope that they would have now left to moleft vs any longer, having wherewithall to entertaine themselves in redressing their owne harmes. And so we stood away from them close 30 by at wee could : which wee should not have done, but profecuted the occasion, and brought our omitted. felues close vpon her weather gage, and with our great and small shot hindered them from repairing their harmes: if we had thus done, they had beene forced to cut all by the boord, and it may bellying a hull, or to le-wards of vs) with a few shot we might have sunke her. At the least, it would have declared to our enemies that we had them in little estimation, when able to go from them, we would not ; and perhaps beene a cause to have made them to leave vs.

But this occasion was let flip, as also, that other to fight with them, sayling quarter winds, or before the wind : for having stood off to Sea a day and a night, we had scope to fight at our pleafure, and no man haning fea roome is bound to fight as his enemy will with difaduantage, being able otherwise to deale with equalitie : contrariwise, every man ought to seeke the meanes hee

can, for his defence and greatest aduantage to the anoyance of his contrary.

Now we might with our fore-faile low fet have borne vp before the winde, and the enemy of force must have done the like, if he would fight with vs. or keep vs company and then should we have had the advantage of them. For although their Artillery werelonger, waightier, and many more then ours, and in truth did pierce with greater violence; yet ours being of greater bore, and carrying a waightier and greater that, was of more importance and of better effect for finking and fooyling : for the smaller shot passeth through, and maketh but his hole, and harmeth Theirestells. that which lyeth in his way; but the greater shaketh and shinereth all it meeterh, and with the splinters, or that which it encountreth, many times doth more hurt, then with his proper circumference : as is plainely seene in the battery by land, when the Saker, the Demy-coluerin, the 50 Coluerin and Demi-canon (being peeces that reach much further point blanke then the Canon) are nothing of like importance for making the breach, as is the Canon; for that this (hot being

ponderous pierceth with difficultie, yea worketh better effects, tormenting, shaking and ouerthrowing all; whereas the others, with their violence, pierce better, and make onely their hole, and so hide themselves in the Wooll or Rampire. Besides (our ship being yare and good of steeridge) no doubt but we should have plaied better with our Ordnance, and with more effect then did our enemies; which was a greater terrour being able to fight with leffe disadvantage, and yet to fight with the most that could be imagined, which I knew not of, neither was able to direct though I had knowne it ; being in a manner

60 had feldome knowne it spoken of, but that it came afterwards to be put in execution. The General not being able to succour his Vice-admiral, except he should vtterly leave vs, gave them order to shift as well as they could for the present, and to beare with the next Port, and there to repaire their harmes. Himfelfe presently followed the Chase, and in short space fetched vs vp, and began a fresh to batter vs with his great and small shot. The Vice-admiral (hauing Azzzzzz

fenslesse, what with my wounds, and what with the agony of the furrendry propounded, for that Errors in fight.

1. To faht ynarmed. a. To dri ke to exceffe.

faurd what they could) cut the rest by the boord, and with Fore-fayle and Myson came after ve alio, and before the fetting of the Sun, were come vpon our broad fide, we bearing all our Sayles. and after kepe vs company, lying vpon our weather quarter, and anoying vs what shee could

Here I hold it necessary, to make mention of two things, which were most presudicial unto us, and the priccipall causes of our perdution, the errours and faults of late dayes, crept in amongst those who fol-Learned from low the Sea , and learned from the Flemings and Eafterlings. I wish that by our misfortunes athere the Flemings & would take warning, and procure to redresse them as occasions shall be offered. The one, is to fight masmed where they may fight armed. The other, is in comming to fight, to drinke themfelnes drunke. Tea. fome are fo mad , that they mingle Powder with Wine to give it the greater force, imagining that it gisome are so maa, that they mingto a some and sale force and doubt. The latter is, for the most part to true, but the former is false and beastly, and altogether against reason. For though the nature of wine with moderation , is to comfort and regime the heart, and to fortifie and firengthen the first : net the immoderate vie thereof worketh quite contrary effects.

In fights, all receits which adde courage and spirit, are of great regard to be allowed and ofed; and fair a draught of wine to be given to every man before be come to action, but more then enough is pernicious for exceeding the meanes, it offendeth, and infeebleth the sences, connerting the strength (which should refist the force of the enemy) into weakenesse: it dulleth and blindeth the understanding, and consequently depraucib any man of true valour. For that hee is desenabled to indge and apprehend the occasion, which may bee offered to affault and retire in time consenient, the raynes of reason being put into the bands of passion and disorder. For after I was wounded, this mimium bred great disorder and inconnenience in our 20 (hip, the pot continually walking, infused desperate and foolish hardinesse in many, who blinded with the fume of the liquor, confidered not of any danger, but theu, and thus would fland at hazard; fome in vains glory vaunting themselves; some other rayling upon the Spaniards; another musting bis companion to come and fand by him; and not to budge a foote from bim : which indifcreetly they put in execution, and cost the lines of many a good man, flaine by our enemies Muskestiers, who suffered not a man to hew himselfe, but they presently ouerthrew him with speed and watchfulnesse. For premention of the seconderrour , although I had great preparation of Armour, as well of proofe, as of light Corfelets, yet not a man would vie them, but esteemed a pot of wine, a better defence, then an armour of proofe : which truly was great madrelle, and a lamentable fault, worthy to be banished from awong it all reasonable people, and well to be weighed by all Commanders. For if the Spaniard Surpasseth us in any thing, it is in his temperance to and suffering : and where be hath had the better hand of us, it hath beene (for the most part) through our owne folly, for that wee will fight unarmed with him being armed. And although I have beard many wen maintaine, that in shipping armour is of little profit; all men of good understanding, will condemne such desperate ignorance. For besides, that the sleightest armour secureth the parts of a mans bodie (which it concreth) from pike, sword, and all band weapone : it likewife gineth boldreffe and courage; a man armed, gineth a greater and a weightier blow, then a man marmed, be flandeth fafter, and with greater difficultie is to be overthrowne.

furpatieth vs onely in tem-

Folly of the

The v'e & profit of arming, Spanift.

Armes more

necessary by

Sea, then at

And I neuer read, but that the glistering of the armour bath beene by Authors observed, for that (as I imagine) his show breedeth terrow in his contraries, and despaire to himselfest be be warmed. And exactly obser- therefore in time of warre, such as denote themselves to follow the profession of Armes (by Sea or by 4) Land) ought to couet nothing more then to bee well armed, for as much as it is the second meanes, next Gods protection, for preferming and prolonging many mens lines. Wherin the Spanish nation describe commendation about others, every one from the highest to the lowest, putting their greatest care in providing faire and good Armes. Hee which cannot come to the price of a Corflet , will have a coate of Mayle, a lacket, at least, a Buffe-ierkin, or a prime Coate; And bardly will they bee found without it, albeit they line, and ferne (for the most part) in extreame bot Countries.

Whereas I have knowne many bred in cold Countries, in a moment complaine of the waight of their Armes, that they smoother them and then cast them off, chusing rather to be shot through with a bullet, or lanched through with a pike, or thrust through with a sword, then to endure a little traunile and suffering. But let mee que thefe lazie ones this leffon that hee that will goe awarfare, must resolve bimselfe to fight, 50 and he that putteth on this resolution, must be comented to endure both heate and weight, first, for the safeguard of his life, and next for subduing of his enemy; both which are hazarded and put into creat danger, if hee fight unarmed with an enemy armed. Now for mine owne opinion, I am resolved that armour is more necessary by Seathen by Land, yea, rather to be excused on the shoare, then in the ship, My reason is for that on the shoare the bullet onely hurteth, but in the ship, I bane seene the splinters bull and hurt many at once, and yet the shot to have passed without touching any person. As in the Galeon, is which I came out of the Indies, in Anno 1597 in the rode of Tarcera, when the Queenes Maiefies Sups, under the charge of the Earle of Effex, chafed us into the roade, with the plinters of one flot, were stame, maymed, and fore hurr, at the least a dozen persons, the most part whereof had beene excused if they

And doubtleffe, if these errours had been forescene, and remedied by us, many of shose who were slaine and hurt, had beene on foot, and wee enabled to have sustained and maintained the fight much beiter and longer; and perhaps at last had freed our selves. For if our enemy bad come to board with us, our slofe fights were such as wee were secure, and they open unto us. And what with our Cubridge heads, one anlwering the other, our batches upon bolts, our brackes in our Deckes and Gunner roome, it was inpossible to take us as long as any competent number of men had remained, twentie persons would have sufficed for defence, and for this such ships are called Impregnable, and are not to be taken, but by surrender nor to be onercome, but with boording or finking, as in vis by experience was verified; and not in vis alone, but in the Revenge of the Queenes Maiestie, which being compassed round about with all the Ar- The Revence mado of Spaine, and boorded fundry times by many at once, is faid to base funke three of the Armado avenged. by ber fide.

Asbird and last cause of the losse of sundry of our men, most worthy of note for all Captaines, owners. The third and Carpenters: was the race building of our Ship; the onely fault Shee bad, and now adayes held cause. to for a principall grace in any ling: but by the experience which I have had, it femeth for fundry reasons Race thips of Watte diffied verienreinducial for (bips of Warre. For in (uch, those which tackle the sayles, of force must bee upon the deches, and are open without felter or any defence vyet here it will bee obicted, That for this inconnemence waste clothes are provided, and for want of them it is vinall to lace a bonnet, or fome inch shadow for the men: worthily may it bee called a shadow, and one of the most pernitions customes that can bee veed Wast-clothes, for the shadow or defence, being but of linnen or woollen cloth emboldneth many, who without it not to vieruli would retire to better fecuritie, whereas now thinking them felues unfeene, they become more bold then asother deuiotherwise they would, and thereby shot through, when they least thinke of it. Some Captaines observing this errour, have fought to remedie it in some of his Maiestes ships, not by altering the building, but by

denising a certaine defence made of foure or five inch planks, of five foot bigh, and fixe foote broad, runan ning upon wheeles, and placed in such parts of the flip, as are most open. These they name Blenders, and made of Elme, for the mast part, for that it smuers not with a shot, as Oake and other Timber will doe. which are now in vie and service, but best it is when the whole side hath one blender, and one armour of proofe for defence of those, which of force must labour and be aloft,

This race building, first came in by ouermuch boming in of our ships, and received for good, under colow of making our hips thereby the better fea-ships, and of better admantage to buil and try : but in my indgement it breedeeb many inconveniences , and is farre from working the effect they pretend, by definabling them for bearing their cage worke correspondent, to the proportion and mould of the flip, making them tender sided, and unable to carry sayle in any fresh gaile of winde, and diminishing the play of their Artillery, and the place for accommedating their people to fight, labour, or rest. And i am none of 30 those who hold opinion, that the ouer-much homing in , the more the better, is commodious and cafer for the ship, and this is out of the experience that I have lawned, which with forcible reasons I could prove, to be much rather discommodions and worthy to be referenced. But withall I bold it not necessarie to dis-course here of that particularitis, but leane the consequence to view of winderstanding, and so surcease.

All this second day, and the third day and night, our Captaine and company sustained the fight, not withit anding the difaduantage where they fought: The enemy being euer to windwards, and wee to lee-ward, their shot much damnifying vs, and ours little annoying them, for tage of Ships whenfoener a man encountereth with his enemie at Sea, in gayning the weather gage, hee is in toke ward. poffibilitie to finke his contrarie, but his energy cannot finke him; and therefore he which is forced to fight with this disaduantage, is to procure by all meanes possible to shoote downe his con-40 traries Masts or Yards, and to teare or spoyle his tackling and sayles : for which purpose, Billets

of some heavie wood fitted to the great Ordnance, are of great importance. And so are Arrowes And the best of fire to be shot out of Slur-bowes, and Cales of small shot loyned two and two together, with remedie. pieces of Wyer of fine or fixe inches long, which also shot out of Muskets are of good effect for tearing the layles, or cutting the tackling. Some are of opinion, that Croffe-barres and Chaine- Croffe-barre, shot, are of moment for the spoyling of Masts and Yards, but experience daily teacheth them not and Chamshot to bee of great importance, though neere at hand, I confesse, they worke great execution : but missiked. the round that, is the onely principall and powerfull meane to breake Mast or Yard. And in this our fight, the Admirall of the Spaniards had his Fore-mast shot through, with two round The Spaniards thot, some three yards beneath the head; had either of them entred but source inches Fore-Mast go further into the heart of the Matt, without all doubt it had freed vs , and perhaps put them into thrice thor

our hands. The third day, in the after-noone, which was the two and twentieth of Iune, 1594, according to our computation, and which I follow in this my discourse, our sayles being torne, our Mastes all perished, our Pumpes rent and shot to pieces, and our ship with sourceme shot vinder water, and feuen or eight foot of water in hold; many of our men being flaine, and the most part of them (which remained) fore hurt, and in a manner altogether fruitlesse, and the enemy offering still to receive vs a buena querra, and to give vs life and libertie, and imbarkation for our Countrey. Our Captaine, and those which remained of our Companie, were all of opinion that our best course was to surrender our selves before our ship sunke. And so by common consenta-60 greed the second time, to send a servant of mine Thomas Sanders, to fignifie vnto mee the effate of our ship and company : and that it was impossible by any other way to expect for hope of de- The Company liuerance or life, but by the miraculous hand of God in ving his Almightie power, or by an honourable furrender, which in euerie mans opinion was thought most convenient. So was I deli- come to comted by him to give also my consent, that the Captaine might capitulate with the Spanish Gene- position.

rall, and to compound the belt partido he could by furrendring our felues into his hands, vpon condition of life and libertie. This hee declared vnto mee, being in a manner word of fence, and out of hope to line or recouer : which confidered, and the circumstances of his relation, I answered as I could, that he might judge of my ftate, ready every moment to give vp the Ghoft, and vnable to discerne in this cause what was conuenient, except I might see the present state of the Ship. And that the honour or dishonour, the wel-fare or mifery, was for them, which should be partakers of life: At laft, for that I had fatisfaction of his valour and true dealing, in all the time. he had ferued me, and in correspondence of it, had given him (as was notorious) charge and credit in many occasions, I bound him, by the love and regard he ought me, and by the faith and duetie to Almighty God, to tell me truely, if all were as he had declared. Whereunto he made in antiwere, that he had manifested vnto me the plaine and naked truth, and that he tooke God to witnelle of the fame truth : with which receiving fatisfaction, I forced my felfe what I could, to periwade him to animate his companions, and in my name to intreate the Captaine and the rest to perseuere in desence of their libertie, lines, and reputation, remitting all to bis discretion: not doubting, but he would be tender of his duetie, and zealows of my reputation, in preferring his libertie, and the libertie of the Company abone all respects what sener. As for the welfare boped by a surrender, I was altogether unlikely to be partaker thereof, Death threatning to deprine me of the benefit, which the enemie offered; but if God would be pleased to free vs, the toy and comfort I should receive, might perhaps give mee force and firength to recover bealth.

Which answere being delivered to the Captaine, he presently caused a flagge of truce to be an put in place of our Enfigne, and began to parley of our furrendry with a Spaniard, which Don Beltran appointed for that purpose, from the poope of the Admirall, to offer in his name, the conditions before specified; with his faithfull promise and oath, as the Kings Generall, to take vs a buena querra, and to fend vs all into our owne Countrey. The promife he accepted, and faid, that under the same he yeelded, and surrendred himselfe, Ship and Company. Immediately, there came vnto me another servant of mine, and told me, that our Captaine had surrendred himselfe and our Ship; which understood, I called unto one Inan Gomes de Pineda, a Spanish Pilot, which was our Priloner, and in all the fight we had kept close in hold, and willed him to goe to the Generall Don Beltran de Castro from me, to tell him, that if he would give vs his word and oath, as the Generall of the King, and some pledge for confirmation, to receive vs a buena querra, and to give vs our lives and liberty, and prefent passage into our owne Countrey, that wee would surren. der our felues, and Ship into his hands : Otherwife, that he should neuerenioy of vs, nor ours any

thing, but a refolution enery, man todye fighting.

With this Message I dispatched him, and called vnto me all my Company, and encouraged them to facrifice their lives fighting and killing the enemy, if hee gaue but a fillip to any of our companions. The Spaniards willed vs to hoise out our boate, which was shot all to peeces; and so was theirs. Seeing that he called to vs to amaine our failes, which wee could not well doe, for that they were flung, and we had not men enough to hand them. In this parley, the Vice-admirall comming vpon our quarter, & not knowing of what had past, discharged her two chase peeces at vs, and hurt our Captaine very fore in the thigh, and maimed one of our Masters Mates, cal p led Hugh Manes, in one of his Armes, but after knowing vs to be rendred, he fecured vs : And we fatisfied them that we could not hoife out our boate, nor strike our fayles, the Admirall laid vs 2bourd, but before any man entred, John Gomes went vnto the Generall, who received him with great curtesie, and asked him what we required; whereunto hee made answere that my demand was that in the Kings name, he should give vs his faith and promise, to give vs our lives, to keepe the Lawes of faire warres and quarter, and to fend vs prefently into our Countrey; and inconfirmation hereof, that I required some pledge, whereunto the Generall made answere; that in the Kings Maiesties name his Master, he received vs a buena querra, and swore by God Almighty, and by the habit of Alcantara (whereof he had received Knighthood, and in token whereof, he wore Giour fent for in his breaft a greene croffe, which is the enfigne of that Order) that hee would give vs our lives 10 with good entreatie, and fend vs as speedily as he could into our owne Countrey. In confirmatie,

The English

on whereof, he tooke off his gloue, and fent it to me as a pledge. With this meffage Iohn Gomes returned, and the Spaniards entred and tooke possession of our Ship, every one crying buena querra, buena querra, of per immaniana per ti: with which our Company began to fecure themfelues.

The Generall was a principall Gentleman of the ancient Nobilitie of Spaine, and brother to the Conde de Lemos, whose intention no doubt was according to his promite; and therefore confidering that fome bad intreaty and infolency might be offered vnto me in my Ship, by the common Souldiers, who feldome have respect to any person in such occasions, especially in the case I was, whereof he had enformed himfelfe; for preuention, he fent a principall Captain, brought 60 vp long time in Flanders, called Pedro Alueres de Pulgar, to take care of me, and whilest the Ship were one abourd the other, to bring me into his Ship : which he accomplished with great humanity and courtefie; despiting the barres of Gold which were shared before his face, which

hee might alone haue enioyed, if he would : And truely he was, as after I found by triall, a

true Captaine; a man worthy of any charge, and of the noblest condition that I have knowned

The Generall received me with great courtefie and compassion, even with teares in his eyes. The mildresse and words of great confolation and commanded mee to bee accommodated in his owne Cabbine, of a Generall where hee fought to cure and comfort mee the best hee could; the like hee vsed with all after victorie. our hurt men, fixe and thirtie at least. And doubtlesse as true courage, valour, and resolution on, it requifice in a Generall in the time of battell. So humanitie, mildnesse, and courtesse after

Whilest the ships were together, the Maine-mast of the Daintie fell by the boord, and the peoto ple being occupied in rantacking and feeking for spoile and pillage neglected the principall; whereof enfued, that within a short space the Daintie grew so deepe with water, which increafed for want of preuention, that all who were in her defired to forfake her, and weaved and cried for succour to be faued, being out of hope of her recoverie. Whereupon, the Generall calling to- The Daintie in gether the best experimented men hee had, and consulting with them what was best to bee danger of done : it was resolued, that Generall Michael Angel should goe aboord the Daintie, and with Perishing. him threescore Mariners, as many Souldiers; and with them the English men, who were able to labour to free her from water, and to put her in order if it were possible : and then to recour Per rice the Port of Panama for that of those to wind-wards it was impossible to turne vp to any of them, and neerer then to leward was not any that could supply our necessities and wants, which 20 lay from vs East, North-east, aboue two hundred leagues.

Michael Angel, being a man of experience and care accomplished that hee tooke in hand, al- Michael Angel though in cleering and bayling the water, in placing a pumpe, and in fitting and mending her recourrethine Fore-faile he spent about fix and thirtie houres. During which time the Ships lay all a hull; but this worke ended, they fet faile and directed their course for the Iles of Pearles: And for that the Dainie failed badly, what for want of her Maine-faile, and with the advantage which all the South Sea ships have of all those built in our North Sea. The Admirall gave

which not withfranding (the wind calming with vs as wee approached neerer to the Land) twelue daies were ipent before wee could fetch fight of the Ilands, which to the Land twente date for the leading the Coast beginning some eight leagues West South-west from Panama, and run Many Ilands 30 to the Southwards neere thirtie leagues. They are many and most inhabited, and those which haue people haue some Negros, slaues vnto the Spaniards, which occupie themselues in labour

In times past many enriched themselves with that trade, but now it is growne to decay. The Fishing for manner of filhing for Pearles is, with certaine long Pinnaffes or small Barkes, in which there goe Pearles. foure, fiue, fix, or eight Negres, expert swimmers and great dieuers, whom the Spaniards call Bufor, with tract of time, vie, and continuall practife, having learned to held their breath long under water for the better atchieuing their worke. These throwing themselves into the Sea, with certaine instruments of their Art, goe to the bottome and seeke the Bankes of the Oysters in which the Pearles are ingendred, and with their force and Art remoue from their foundation, in which they spend more or lesse time, according to the resistance the firmnesse of the ground affordeth. Oncelosed, they put them into a bag whder their armes, and after bring them vp into their Boars, having loaden it they goe to the shoare, there they open them and take out the Pea les : they lie wnder the vetermost part of the circuit of the Oyster in rankes and proportions, under a certaine part which is of many pleights and folds, called the Ruffe, for the fimilitude it hath voto a Ruffe. The Pearles increase in bignesse, as they bee neerer the end or ioynt of the Oyster. The meate of those which have these Pearles is milkie, and not verie wholsome to be eaten. In Anme 1 83; in the lland of Margarita, I was at the dregging of Pearle Oysters, after the manner we dreg Oysters in England, and with mine owne hands I opened many, and tooke out the Pearles of them; some greater, some lesse, and in good quantitie. They are found in divers parts of the world, as in the West Indies, in the South Sea, in the East Theplaces

Indian Sea, in the Straits of Magellane, and in the Scottift Sea. Those found neere the Poles are are tound. not perfect, but are of a thickecolour, whereas such as are found neere the line are most orient and transparent : the curious call it their water, and the best is a cleere white shining, with sierie flames. And those of the East India have the best reputation, though as good are found in the West India: the choice ones are of great valew and estimation, but the greatest that I have heard of, was found in these llands of Pearles; the which King Philop the second of Spaine, gave to his daughter Elizabeth, wife to Albertus, Arch. Duke of Austria, and Gouernour of the States of Great Pearle. Flanders, in whose possession it remaineth, and is called, la Peregrina, for the rarenesse of it, being

60 as big as the pomell of a Poniard.

of the Land, or in fishing for Pearles.

In this Nauigation, after our furrender, the Generall tooke speciall care for the good intreatie The Generall of vs, and especially of those who were hurt. And God so blessed the hands of our Surgions (be-honourable vfides that they were expert in their Art) that of all our wounded men not one died, that was aliue fage, towards the day after our furrendry, and many of them with eight, ten, or twelue wounds, and some with the ficke and more. The thing that ought to moue vs to give God Almightie especiall thankes and praises wounded,

broken to pieces; and many of their Simples and Compounds throwne into the Sea; those

which remayned, were fuch, as were throwne about the ship in broken pots and bagges, and

fuch as by the Dinine Providence were referred, at the end of three dayes, by order from the

Generall, were commanded to be fought and gathered together. These with some Instruments

With thele, and or like Arguments to this purpose (to avoid tediousnesse) I omit I convinced all those whom I heard to happe upon this string; which was of no small importance for our good

entreatie, and motiues for many, to further and fauour the accomplishment of the promite lately made vnto vs.

One day after dinner (as was the ordinary custome) the Generall, his Captaines, and the better fort of his foilowers, being affembled in the Cabbin of the Poope in conference, an eager contention arose among them, touching the capitulation of Buena Querra and the purport there-

no of Some faid, that onely life and good entreatie of the prisoners, was to be comprehended there- A disputation. in others enlarged, and restrained it, according to their humours and experience. In fine my o-concerning pinion was required, and what I had seene and knowne touching that point: wherein I pawfed Buene Querta; a little, and ful pecting the Worft, feared that it might be a baite laid to catch me withall, and fo excuted my felte: faying that where fo many experimented Souldiers were joyned together my youngiulgement was little to be respected; whereunto the Generall replied : That knowledge was not alwaies incident to yeeres, (chough reason requireth, that the aged should be the wifest) but an Art acquired by action, and management of affaires. And therefore they would bee but certified, what I had feene, and what my judgement was in this point, vnto which feeing I could

not well excuse my selfe, I condescended , and calling my wits together, holding it better, to 20 shoot out my bolt, by yeelding voto reason, (although I might erre) then to stand obstinate, my will being at warre with my confent, and fearing my deniall might bee taken for discourtefie. which peraduenture might also purchase mee missike with those, who seemed to wish mee comfort and restitution. I submitted to better judgement, the reformation of the present assembly . The Resolute. laying, Sir, under the capitulation of Buena Qierra, (or faire warres) I bane ener understood, and fo it bath beene observed in these, as also in former times, that preservation of life, and good entreatie of the prisoner, have beene comprehended: and further by no meanes to bee veged to any thing contrary to his conscience, as touching his Religion, nor to be seduced, or menaced from the allegeance due to his Prince and Country : but rather to ransome bim for his moneths pay. And this is that which I have knowne practifed in our times, in generall amongst all Civill and Noble Nations. But the English, baue enlar-30 ged it one point more towards the Spaniards rendred a Buena Querra, in thefe warres; baue ener deline- The noble red toem, which have beene taken upon such compositions without ransome : but the conetousnesse of our viage of the

age bath brought in many abuses, and excluded the principal Officers from partabing of the benefit of But abused in this primiledge, in leaning them to the discretion of the Viltor, being many times poorer, then the common these dayes, Souldiers their qualities considered, whereby they are commonly put to more, then the ordinary ransome, and not being able of themselves to accomplyhit, are forgotten of their Princes, and sometimes suffer long imprisonment, which they should not.

With this, Don Beltran faid, This ambiguitie you haue well refolued; And like a worthy Gen-Don Beltran tleman (with great courtesie and liberalitie) added; Let not the last point trouble you : but be of good livissied and comfort, for I heere gine you my word anew, that your ransome (if any shall be thought due) shell be but answereth.

40 a couple of Grey-bounds for me; and other two for my Brother, the Conde de Lemes, And this I sweare to you by the habit of Alcantera. Prouided alwayes, that the King my Master leave you to my difpose, as of right you belong voto me. For amongst the Spaniar ds in their Armadoes, if there bee an absolute Generall, the tenth of

all is due to him, and he is to take choise of the best : wherein other Countries, it is by lot, that the Generals tenth is given ; And if they be but two ships, hee doth the like, and being but one, the is of right the Generals. This I hardly believed, vntill I faw a Letter, in which the King willed his Vice-roy, to give Don Beltran thankes for our ship and Artillery, which hee had given to his Maiestie. I yeelded to the Generall, most heartie thankes for his great fauour, wherewith he bound me euer to feeke how to ferue him, and deferue it,

50 In this discourse Generall Michaell Angell demanded, for what purpose served the little short Short arrowes Arrowes, which we had in our ship, and those in so great quantitie : I satisfied them, that they for Muskets. were for our Muskets. They are not as yet in vie amongth the Spaniards, yet of fingular effect and execution as our enemies confelled: for the vpper worke of their ships being Muskets proofe, in all places they palled through both lides with facilicie, and wrought extraordinary difafters, which caused admiration, to see themselves wounded with small shot , where they thought themselues secure; and by no meanes could find where they entred, nor come to the fight of a-

Hereof they proued to profit themselves after, but for that they wanted the Tampkings, which are first to bee driven home, before the Arrow bee put in, and as then understood not the fecret, Tampkis is a 60 they rejected them, as wncertaine, and therefore not to bee vied, but of all the shot vied now a small piece of dayes; for the annoying of an Enemie in fight by Sea, few are of greater moment for many re. wood turned fixeds: which I hold not constant or transfer in such the spects: which I field not convenient to treate of in publike.

A little to the Southwards of the Hand of Pearle, betwirt feuen and eight degrees, is the great Pecce. River of Saint Buena Ventura, It falleth into the South Sea with three mouthes, the head of

CHAP.S.S. Buena Querra discussed Musket arrowes not Weed by Spaniards. 1412

of fmall moment, bought and procured from those, who had referued them to a different end, did not early ferce for our cures, but also for the curing of the Spaniards, beeing many more, then Starifo Surgie thole of our Company. For the Spanifo Surgeons were altogether ignorant in their profession, and had little or nothing wherewith to cure. And I have noted, that the Spaniards in generall are nothing fo curious, in accommodating themselves, with good and carefull Surgeons, nor to fit to them with that which belongeth to their profession, as other Nations are, though they have grester need then any, that I doe know.

At the time of our furrender, I had not the Spanifb Tongue, and fo was forced to vie an Interpreter, or the Latine, or French; which holpe mee much for the vaderstanding of those, which ipake vnto me in Spanish; together with a little smattering I had of the Portugall.

Through the Noble proceeding of Don Beltran with vs, and his particular care towards mee, in curing and comforting me, I began to gather heart, and hope of life, and health, my feruants which were on foor, aduited me ordinarily of that which path. But some of our enemies, badly inclined, repined at the proceedings of the Generall; and faid, he did ill to vievs fo well; That we were Lutheran; and for that cause, the faith which was given vis, was not to be kept nor performed: 20 Others, that we had fought as good Souldiers, and therefore deferued good quarter. Others, nicknamed vs with the name of Corfarios, or Pirats; not differning thereby that they included themselues within the same imputation. Some were of opinion, that from Panama, the Generall would fend vs into Spaine; Others faid, that he durst not dispose of vs, but by order from the Vice-roy of Porn, who had given him his authoritie. This hit thenaile on the had.

To all I gaue the hearing, and laid up in the store-house of my memory, that which I thought to be of substance, and in the store-house of my consideration, endeauoured to frame a proportionable resolution to all occurrents, conformable to Gods most hely Will. Withall I profited my felte of the meanes, which should bee offered, and beare greatest probabilitie to worke our comfort, helpe, and remedie. And 10, as time ministred oportunitie, I began, and endeauoured to 12- 10 tissie the Generall, and the better fort in the points I durst intermedule. And especially to perfwade (by the best reasons I could) that wee might bee sent presently from Panama: Alleaging the promife given vs, the cost and charges enfuring, which doub leffe would bee such as deserved confideration and excuse : besides that, no wiw hilest hee was in place, and power, and authoritie in his hands, to performe with vs. that he would looke into his honour, and profit himfelfe of the occasion, and not put vs into the hands of a third person; who perhaps being more powerfull then himselie, he might be forced to pray and increate the performance of his promile; whereunto he gaue vs the hearing, and bare vs in hand, that he would doe, what he could.

The Generall, and all in generall, not only in the Peru, but in all Spaine, and the Kingdomes thereof

(before our furrendry) held all Englishmen of Warre, to bee Certarios, or Perats; which I laboured to to

reforme, both in the Peru, and also in the Counsels of Spaine, and amongst the Chieftaines, Soulditti,

and better fort, with whom I came to have conner fation; Alledging that a Pirate, or Corlario, is be,

which in time of peace, or truce floyleth, or robbeth those, which have peace or truce with them : but the

Miferifion of the terme Pi-

What a Pirate

Three for s of

English have neither peace nor truce with Spaine, but warre; and therefore not to bee accounted Pirati. Besides, Spaine broke the peace with England, and not England with Spaine; and that by Ymbargo, which of all kinds of defiances, is most reprodued and of least reputation; The ransoming of prisoners, and that by the Canon, being more hono, able, but aboue all, the most honorable is with I rumpet and Herald, to proclaime and denounce the warre by publike defiance. And (o if they should condemne the English for Pirats, of force, they must first condemne themselnes. Moreover, Pirats are those, who range the Seat without licence of their Prince; who when they are met with, are punified more severely by their cure for Lords, then when they fall into the hands of strangers : which is notorious to be en ore severely prosecuted in England (in time of peace) then in any the Kingdomes of Christendome. But the English buse all license, either immediately from their Prince, or from other thereunto anthorized, and so carnet in any sense be comprehended under the name of Pirats, for any kostilitie undertaken against Spaine, or the And so the state standing as now it doth; if in Spaine a particular man should arme a ship, and goe in

The custome of Spaine for

warfare with it against the English, and happened to be taken by them: I make no question but the company should be intreated according to that manner, which they have ever vied lince the beginning of the warre: without making further inquisition. Then if he were rich or poore, to see if he were able to give 4 ransome, in this also they are not very curious. But if this Spanish ship should fall a thwart his King! (9 Armado, or Gallies, I make no doubt but t'ey would hang the Captaine and his company for Pirats. A) reason is, for that by a special Law it is enacted : that no man in the Kingdomes of Spaine, may arme any (hip sand goe in warfare, without the Kings speciall licence and commission; upon paine to be reported a Pirate, and to be chaffized with the pun shment due to Corlarios. In England the case is different

The cuftome

Ioha Onnams Voyage to the South Sea. What the Symoves are.

Their habitation.

Their affifance.

Iohn Oxnam capitulateth with them,

His folly, Breach of promile.

at any time they could lay hand upon.

His purfuit.

La Pacheta.

The Generall

certifieth the

Audiencia of

his fucceffe.

of the Spa-

niarde

The great ioy

which, is but a little diffant from the North Sea. In the yeere 1975, or 1976, one John Oxna of Plimouth, going into the Well Indies, joyned with the Symarons. Thele are fugitive Negroes. and for the bad intreatie which their Mafters had given them, were then retired into the Monntaines, and lived upon the spoyle of such Spaniards, as they could master, and could never be brought into obedience, till by composition they had a place limited them for their freedome. where they should live quietly by themselves. At this day they have a great habitation negre Panama, called Saint lago de los Negros, well peopled, with all their Officers and Commanders of their owne, faue onely a Spanifb Gouernour.

By the affittance of these Symarons, hee brought to the head of this River, by piecemeale, and in many lourneyes a small Pinnace, hee fitted it by time in warlike manner, and with the to choice of his Companie, put himfelfe into the South Sea, where his good happe, was to meete with a couple of thippes of trade, and in the one of them a great quantitie of Gold. And among ft other things two pieces of speciall estimation, the one a Table of masty Gold, with Emralds, fent for a present to the King; the other a Lady of singular beautie, married, and a mother of children. The latter grew to bee his perdition : for hee had capitulated with these Symarons, that their part of the bootie, should be onely the prisoners to the end to execute their malice youn them fuch was the rancour they had conceived against them, for that they had been the Tyrants of their libertie.) But the Spaniards not contented to have them their flaues: who lately had beene their Lords, added to their feruntude, cruell intreaties. And they against ofeede their infatiable reuenges, accustomed to roast and eate the hearts of all those Spannards, whom

John Oxnam (I say) was taken with the love of this Lady, and to winne her good will, what through her teares and pertwasions, and what through feare and detestation of their barbarous inclinations; breaking promife with the Symarons, yeelded to her request, which was to give the prifoners libertie with their shippes; for that they were not viefull for him; notwithstanding Oxnam kept the Lady, who had in one of the restored shippes, either a Sonne, or a Nephew. This Nephew with the reft of the Spaniards, made all the hafte they could to Pamana, See the Storie and they vied fuch diligence, as within few houres, some were dispatched to seeke those who before. This is little thought fo quickly to bee ouertaken. The purfuers approaching the River, were doubtfull added of later by which of the afore-remembred three mouthes, they should take their way. In this wavering intelligence. one of the Souldiers espied certaine feathers, &c.

Comming in fight of the Ilands of Pearles, the winde beganne to fresh in with vs, and wee profited our felues of it : but comming thwart of a small Iland, which they call La Pacheta, that lieth within the Pearle Ilands, close aboord the Mayne, and some eight or tenne leagues South and by West from Panama, the winde calmed againe.

This Iland belongeth to a private man, it is a round humocke, contayning not a league of ground, but most fertile. Insomuch that by the owners industrie, and the labour of some few llaues, who occupie themselues in manuring it; and two Barkes, which he employeth in bringing the fruit it giveth, to Panama; it is faid to be worth him every weeke, one with another, a barre of filuer; valued betwixt two hundreth and fiftie, or three hundreth Pezos : which in p English money, may amount to fiftie or threescore pound : and for that, which I saw at my being in Panama, touching this, I hold to be true.

In our course to fetch the Port of Panama, we put our selnes betwixt the Ilands and the Main which is a goodly Channell, of three, foure, and fine leagues broad, and without danger; except a man come too neere the shoare on any side; and that is thought the better course, then to got a Sea-board of the flands, because of the fwise running of the tides, and the advantage to stop the ebbe : As also for fuccour, if a man should happen to be becalmed at any time beyond expectation : which happeneth fometimes.

The fewenth of July wee had fight of Perice; they are two little Hands, which cause the Port of Panama, where all the shippes vie to ride; It is some two Leagues West North-west of the o Citie, which hath alfo a Pere in it felfe for imall Barkes, at full Sea, it may have fome fixe or feuen foot water, but at lowe water, it is drie.

The ninth of July wee anchored under Perico, and the Generall prefently adulfed the Asdiencia, of that which had succeeded in his Iourney: which understood by them, caused Bonfires to be made, and every man to pur Luminaries in their houles; the fashion is much vied amonglithe Spaniards in their feaths of ioy, or for glad tidings; placing many lights in their Charches, in their windowes, and Galleries, and corners of their houses: which being in the beginning of the night, and the Citie close by the Sea shoare, shewed tovs (being farre off) as though the Citie had beene on a light fire.

About eight of the clocke all the Artilerie of the Citie was thot off , which wee might 6 difcerne by the flash of fire, but could not heare the report : yet the Armado being aduited thereof, and in a readinesse, answered them likewise with all their Artilerie: which taking end (as all the vanities of this earth doe). The Generall fetled himfelfe to dispatch aduice for the King , for the Vice-roy of Pern, and the Vice-roy of Nona Spana, for hee also

had beene certified of our being in that Sea, and had fitted an Armado to feeke vs., and to

But now for a farewell, (and note it) Let mee relate vnto you this Secret; How Don Bel. Note. tran shewed mee a Letter from the King his Master, directed to the Vice-roy, wherein hee gaue him particular relation of my precended Voyage; of the hippes; their burden; their red by Span for munition; their number of men, which I had in them, as perfectly as if hee had feene all with Gold. his owne eyes; Saying vnto mee: Hereby you may discerne, whether the King my Master have friends in England, and good and speedy aduice of all that passeth. Whereunto I replyed; It was no wonder, for that hee had plenty of Gold and Silver, which worketh this and more strange 10 effects: for my lourney was publique and notorious to all the Kingdome, whereunto he replyed, that if I thought it fo convenient, leave should be given me to write into England to the Queens Maiestie my Mistresse, to my Father, and to other personages, as I thought good ; and leaving the Letters open; that hee would fend fome of them, in the Kings Packet, others to his Vncle Don Rodrigo de Castro, Cardinall and Archbishop of Senill, and to other friends of his: Not making any doubt but that they would bee speedily in England. For which I thanked him, and ac-

I briefly made relation of all that had fucceeded in our Voyage. The difpatches of Spaine and New Spaine, went by ordinarie course in ships of aduice; but 30 that for the Peru was fent by a kinfman of the Generals, called Don Francisco de la Cuena, Which being dispatched, Don Beltran hasted all that ever he could, to put his ships in order, to returne the discourse to Lyma. Hee caused the Daintie to be grounded and trimmed, for in those Ilands it higheth of the whole and falleth fome fifteene or fixteene foot water.

And the Generall with his Captaines, and some Religious men being aboord her, and new naming her, named her the Vifitation; for that flee was rendred on the day, on which they celebrate the Visitation of the Virgin Maie. In that place the ground being plaine, and without to magnific wantage (whereby to helpe the tender fided and sharpe Ships) they are forced to shoare them on their Spanish either fide. In the middest of their solemnitie, her props and shores of one fide fayled and so worth. either fide. In the middelt of their folemnitie, her props and thores of one fide rayled and to The Dainie, thee fell over your that fide findenly, intreating many of them (which were in her) very bad-10 ly, and doubtleffe had fhee beene like the fhips of the South Sea, fhee had broken out her bulge : victation but being without Mafts and emptie (for in the South Sea, when they bring aground a shippe, they leave neither Maft. Balaft, nor any other thing abourd, befides the bare Hull) her ffrength was such, as it made no great showe to have received any domage, but the feare shee put them all

into was not little, and caused them to runne out of her faster then a vace. In these Ilands is no succour, nor refreshing; onely in the one of them is one house of straw, and a little fpring of small moment. For the water which the Shippes vie for their prouision, they fetch from another Hand, two leagues West North-west of theie; which they call Tabaga, having in it some fruit and refreshing, and some few Indians to inhabite it.

What succeeded to mee, and to the rest during our Imprisonment, with the rarities and parti-40 cularities of the Perm, and Tierra firms, my Voyage to Spains, and the successe, with the time I fpent in prison in the Pers, in the Tercera, in Seuil, and in Madrid, with the accidents which befell mee in them; I leave for a fecond part of this difcourse, if God give life, and convenient place and reft, necessarie for so tedious and troublesome a worke; desiring God that is Almightie, to give his bleffing to this and the rest of my intentions : that it and they may be fruitfull, to his glorie, and to the good of all: then shall my defires bee accomplished, and I account my felte most happie. To whom be all glory, and thankes from all eternitie.

CHAP. VI.

d briefe Note written by Master IOHN ELLIS, one of the Captaines with Sir RICHARD HAWKINS, in his Voyage through the Strait of MACE-LAN, begunne the ninth of Aprill, 1593. concerning the (aid Straite, and certaine places, on the coast and Inland of Peru.



He second of Februarie, 1 592, wee fell with the Land of Terra Australia, in 50. degrees fiftie fine leagues off the Straite of Magelan, which Land lay East and by North, or East North-east from the Straite, which is a part of Terra Australia: from which Land wee entred the Straite vpon the West South-west course : then we ran ten leagues West North-west, other ten leagues West South-west, then eight leagues South-weit, and came to an anchor on the starboord side, in a hooke where you may moore any ship in twelve fathomes water. From thence wee ranne South-west and by

Bbbbbb

cented his courtefie, and although I was my felie vnable to write, yet by the hands of a feruant I have this of mine. I wrote three or foure copies of one Letter to my Father, Sir John Hawkins. In which Letter transush, and prinaction, much agreeing with where they luft tunnes of Penzuins, and flayed them, and falted them. Thence twelve leagues South South-

west, and found good riding in twelve tathoms, fine fand: from thence to Port Famine, the

new Towne of Pedro Sarmiento, fine leagues South-west. Then West North-west fixteene

leagues, where we anchored in good riding. Then North-west and by Weit, till wee came to

the Riser of Geneuera, on the starboard side eight leagues. Then five leagues North-west

Then North-well and by West thirtie leagues, till wee came out of the Straite, which is in length one hundred and eleuen leagues. The mouth or entrance of the Straite is in thirtietwo

degrees and an halfe, and the Out-let is in the same heigth. The middle is in fittie foure degrees

leagues into the Sea : then North, vntill wee came to the Hand of Mocha, which is in thirtie eight degrees and thir is minutes, where we had good trade with the People. This Ile is three

leagues long, where great reliefe, of Mutton, Man, and other things may bee had from the In-

dians. This Ile is twelve leagues from the mayne Land. From thence wee went North, and

pait by the Ile of Saint Marie: from thence vnto Valparaifo, which flandeth in thirtie three

degrees, into which Hauen I went with our Boate, and tooke foure shippes, in which wee had Wines, and other good prouition: and there wee remayned the space of twelve dayes, And in this time I went on shoare, and tooke five houses, which were full of Wine, and other good

things: And in this time there came a shippe by the Harbour, which the Generall went to a take, but hee did not : yet I with twelue men did take her, and within one houre the Generall came to vs. The shippe had clothes of Cotton for men to weare, of the Indian making, and

lent Wine. From thence eighteene leagues into the Land is Saint Iago, a great Towne of

Spaniards. From thence wee paffed to Aries, which is in twentie degrees, as I take it. All

this Coast lieth North and South. From thence wee passed to Pifco and Chimcha, where the

Generall, and the Maiter Hugh Cornift, went to goe on shoare, but they did not. Heere wee

met with fixe of the Kings shippes, which came to seeke vs : but at that time wee escaped

tie of Lima, which is in twelve degrees and an halfe. From thence by Paira, which is an Ha-

uen, and a Towne, and standeth in five degrees. From thence wee passed by the Equinocally

Line, and went to Atacame, where were were taken, the two and twentieth of Line, 1994.

This place is in one degree to the Northward of the Line. There is from thence some eight

leagues, a Bay called, The Bay of Saint Mathem. From thence were carried voto Pana-

ma, which is in nine degrees to the Northward of the Line : where were held Prifo-

ners. From Panama wee were returned to Parts, and so to Lima. Lima is neere as bigge as

Lendon within the walls; the houses are of Lome baked, for want of Stone. There are neere

twentie thousand Negros in Lima. There are in it of Horsemen an hundred Launces, and an

hundred Carbiners, at a thousand Ducats a man by the veere. From Lima I went to Gnamares, 4

which is a good Citie fixtie leagues from Lime, to the South-eaft. Twel-e leagues from Lime

Eastward it raineth, but neuer at Lana. Twentie leagues more Southerly, towards Gnama-

ga, at Paricacco, which is a Mountaine, it is as cold as in England in our Winter: But none

will dwell there, because of the cold. Then is the Valley of Choofs having Hills on both

fides, and a River in the middeft. The Valley is eighteene leagues long, and well peopled,

and hath diners Townes: it is fortie leagues from Lima, and to through that I trauelled to

cape, with great difficultie by the wayes there are Tamboes or houses to lodge people, and some

weight firangely iowned without morter. From Lima they trade to Cufco all that comes out

of Spaine. They of Quito trade to Cufco, with wollen Cloth and Cottons: for Quito hath abusdance of theepe about it, and is a great Citie. They drive theepe to Lima twentie thousand in 4

Betweene Cuico and Potosi there is continuall trade, and the Lords or Cacionoes of the Ni-

turals will entertaine you in the way, feed you in Silver veffell, and give you very good lodging, and if they like you, they will guide you with three or foure hundred Indians.

From Gnamanga wee passed towards Cusco on hard wayes cut out of the Rockes by Gnama-

Villages. Then wee came to Cufco, which is a Citie about the bignelle of Brifton , without a 19 wall, having a Calle halfe a mile off on the fide of an Hill, builded with itones of twentie tuns

them. These places are in fourteene degrees and an halfe. From thence wee passed by the Ci-

in the bottome of the Bay, where they make excel-

After wee were come out of the Straite wee went away North-west and by North fortie

1116

Pensuin Hand. Port Famine.

The River of Geneuera

and a terce.

tome Gold.

Gnamanga.

Flocke, and be halfe a yeere in the Pallage.

Vainaraile is a Port and a

Mocha.

Santa Maria, Valgar-fo.

Gold.

Arica. Pifco. Chachs. Sixe of the Kings flips.

Lima. Paita. Alacame, Baia de Sante

Mateo. Panama, Paita. Lima.

Gnamenga.

Cuf o.

Petofi.

Maiter Lucas

In Porofi there are at worke neere an hundred thouland Indians, which the Caciasses bring in for to many dayes to worke the Mynes; and then other Caciquoes bring in as many more. I have also two Letters written by Thomas Sanders fernant to Sir Richard Hawkins, written to Sir Io in Hawkins out of the prison of Saint Lucar; in one of which hee maketh a large relation of fter Too, Lucas, Sir Io in Hawkins onto: tree prigor of Saint Lucas, where of months of one Mufter Lucas, condemned by the Holy House to the Gallies, and fent to Numbre de Dios, in which I cyage hee died: on

CHAP. S. Sir R. H. bis Dfage. Sir Iohn Hawkins bis Pardon from K. Philip. 1417

of the other I have hither added this transcript touching the viage and respect which Sir Richard Hawkins found in Peru.

I wrote in like fort of my Masters health, and of his entertaynment in his taking, and in This is part the Citie of Lima by the Vice-king of the Countrey, and how hee was beloued for his valour, of another by all brave men in those parts, the which I learned by many which came from thence, as well Letter, rich as poore, and many Negroes, feruants to Merchants, which came from thence, and were there when hee came. Hee was received by all the best in the Countrie, carried by themes a Princely house all richly hanged, the which hee had to himselfe, with a great allowance from the King, befides many prefents from the Queene: but within fixe or feuen dayes hee twas carto ried by the Fathers to the Holy Houle, not as a man to be executed, but to reft shere wiell die heard from the King what should be done with them. &c.

Having occasion here to mention Sir Iohn Hawkins, I thought good, in memorie of his name, to expresse a Pardon from the Spanish King Philip the fecond, to bin, and to the Master George Ritzwilliams , and the rest of their companie, both for the forme thereof, (being here printed from the Orioinall. Superscribed and Subscribed with the Kings owne band) and to shew the strict prohibition of Trade in the Indies.

EL REY.

DOr quanto por parte de Iuan Aquins y Iorge Fitzwilliams Ingleses por si yen nöbre de todos los demas 🕻 Ingleses que han ydo y estado en su compansa, enlo que de yuso sedsta, nos hasido hecha relaceon que noenbar gante lo que por nos esta prohibido yordenado paraque ningun estrangero yque no sea natural destos nostros Reynos, naueque, trate, us contrate enla carrera de las Indias, ni enlos puertos y lugares dellas. Los susudichos ban entrado y namegado, tratado y contratado enla dicha carrera y puertos y lugares della, y porque su intencion no ha sido dermirnos ni offender ni damnisicar, a nostros Vasallos, y por que como (abramos su desse o yuo luntad ausa sido de nos seruir end tsempo que est unimos encl. Reyne de Inglaterra, nos han pedido y supplicado que vsando de clemencia y de beniguidad conellos biziesemos merced de 20 perdonalles la culpay fenas en que anian incurrido, y nos por infra canfas y confirationes que acllo nos muenen y por les bazar merced lo anemos tenido per bien. Y per la presente les pardonamos y remitimos todas y qualesquier penas en que por razon de auer entrado y namegado enla dicha carrera de las Indixi y tractado y corractado enlos puertos y lugares dellas hasta agora ayan incurrido, y queremos que en la dicha razon no puedanser acusados ni molestados, ni por esta razon ni cansa puedan contra ellos proceder los del uneftro conceso de las Indias, ni los suezes do la casa dela constatation, ni otros algunos. Porque no. fra merced y voluntad es de les remitir como les remitimos todas las dichas penas, y de les librar, como les libramos y damos per libres y quitos delliu, bien assi como ficuellas no buniseran caydo ni incurrido, no embargantes qualesquiera leges, ordenanças, provissones y cedulas que en razon delo suso dicho ayamos bechoy dado, con quales quiere clausulas que enellas aja, o, bauer pueda, las quales todas paraen quanto to alo suso dicho las abrogamos y derogamos , aniendelas aque per expressadas & insersas de Verbo ad verbum, quedando en sufuerça y viger quante alodemas. El qual dicho perdon, gracia y remission quiremos que se entienda y estienda no solo alos doos luan Aquins y lorge Fitzwilliams, pero a todos los demas snoleses queensu compania saugdo conque esto sea y se entienda ser enrespecto delo passado, pero que por esto no seanisto permitirles ni darfeles licencia paraque de aqui adelante puedan sin nuestra expressa y particular licencia, nauegar tratar y contratar enla dicha carrera, y que se lo besieren, demas de incurrir en las penas contenidas en nuestras lejes ordenanças, cartas y promisiones, este pardon y gracia sea y ayadeser ninguno y de ningun valor y effecto, y mandamos alos del nostro conseio delas Indias y alos nostros Inexes y Officiales de la cafa dela contratacion y a otras quales quier luexes y lufticias que affilo guarden y cumplan fecha enel monastero de Santt Lorenço el real a diez dias del mes de Agusto, anno del

YELREY.

Por mandado de su Mag. S. Antonio Gracian.

V. Md. perdonea luano Aquins Ingles y assu companneros le pena enque incurriente o perauer nanegade, y contratado enlas Indeas contra las ordenes de V. Md.

Bbbbbb 2

Somnor de mill y quinien tos y setenta y un annos.

CHAP

* I found this paper amongst others of Mafter Hahl, withour the name of the Author. Lima. Payta,

Acapulca.

Zumanga.

Mexico.

Atrizco. Angeles. Dera Cruz.

Saint I, de VHua.

A briefe Relation of an * Englishman which had beene thirteene veeres Captive to the Spaniards in Peru, &c.

He eleuenth of October, 1602. we departed from the Citie of Lyma, and that day wee let Tayle from the Callon, in the Contadora, Captaine Andrea Brocho. The fifteenth of October wee came in: o Payta, and there watered, and tooke in fresh victuals; and fet fayle from thence the foure and twentieth of the fame, for to

The fourteenth of December we came to an anchor in Acapulca, we were becalmed in 17. degrees and an halfe, foure and twentie dayes, and were fet with the current men 23. degrees to the Northward, we came all the coast alongst from Colyma and Nanydad to Acapalica. The twentieth of December we came from Acapulca, with fixe Mules: and on Chrisman Day in the morning we came to Zumpanga, a Towne of Indians, where wee remayned all that day being betweene this Towne and Acapulca thirtie leagues, no Towne betwixt. The laft of December wee came to Querna vaca a Towne in the Marquesado of Hernan Cortes, thirteene leagues from Mexico.

The first of Ianuarie we came into the great. Citie of Mexico, where we remayned vntill the 20 fenenteenth, at which time we came from Mexico, in the evening, and came two leagues that night. The next day we came to Irazing, which is feuen leagues from Mexico, where wee remayned two dayes. The fine and twentieth of Ianuarie wee came to Pueblo de los Angelos, palfing in our way the Vulcan being from Mexico twentie leagues, and thorow Chullula. Thethirtieth of Ianuarie I went to Atrizco, where we were fixe dayes, being fine leagues from Mexico. The fixteenth of Februarie we came from the Pueblo de los Angelos, with fourteene Carts. fine

or fixe temes of Oxen in a Cart, for to come to the Citie of Vera craz. The feventh of March, 1603. wee came into the Vera cruz, the new Towne, where wee re-

mayned vatill the eight of Aprill, flaying for a ship of aduise. Tuefday the eight of Aprill, we fet fayle from Saint Ino de Ullua, in a Barque of aduife called, to

the Saint Lazaro, the Captaines name was Diego Garces, being of the burden of thirtie tunns. the Pilot named Diego Vyedall, we were eight and twentie persons. 1603. The nine and twentieth of Aprill we had fight of the Mariers, and were in two fathomes water, off them we faw no more nor no other, while we fell with Alla Rocha in Barbarie, which was the 14. of Iune.

The fixteenth of June wee had fight of Chiprone, and Cales, that night we came into S. Lucar. The feuenteenth of Iune in the morning, the Kings Officers came abourd of vs for the Kings Letters, and the Letters of the Mexico Fleet : where I heard newes of our good Queene Elizabeths death, and our King lames his comming to the Crowne in peace, Heere I was discharged , and had my libertie given me, fo I went to Symil the nineteenth day, where I remay ned vntill the one and twentieth of September : at which time I came to Wellus in the Condado.

The fift of Nouember I came from Wellas in the George of London. Mafter Inano Whary, the thip was Malter Hangers. I arrived at the Reculluers the feuenth of December, 1602, being fince my departure from England thirteene yeeres and nine moneths of captiuitie for the which the Lord be praised, and make me thankfull all the dayes of my life. Amen.

CHAP. VIII.

The Relation of ALEXANDRO VRSINO concerning the coast of Terra Firma, and the secrets of Peru, and Chili, where he had lived foure and thirtie yeeres. He first Towne inhabited of the Spaniards is Saint Iohn in the Ile of Portoricco, it

Saint Domingo.

is a very poore Towne. They have no Bread , but in flead thereof they vie 2 certaine Rootecalled Cazane. There is in the Towne about fixtie Spaniards, and •2 Fort. In Saint Domingo there is a very strong Fort with aboue eightie great Peeces of Ordnance. It is one of the fairest Cities in all the Indies: there are about feuen hundred Spaniards in it. It is a Bilhoprike. There is next the Towne of Moule Christo, wherein there are about eightie Spaniards. There is a small Fort. Then Ocoa, which is a very good Port, where the Fleete both comming and going, doe put in for fresh water and wood, and other necessaries. Then Porto de Plata, a small Towne, with a little Fort, about seuentie or eightie Spaniards. Porto Reale, a dishabited Towne, but a very good Port. There is nothing else in the He of Spagnola, of any importance. There are about 22000. Negros, men and women, flaues.

CHAP. 8. Al. Vrinos intelligences of the Spanish American Forts, Townes, 500, 1410

From Saint Domingo to Iamaica, an hundred leagues in this Ile there is but one Towne, which Iamaica. funderh three leagues within the Land. There are in it about fiftie Spaniards. In all these places they make Sugar in great abundance, but especially at Saint Domingo there are about eightie Ingenier, or Sugar-houles. They have neither Silver, nor Gold. They eate of the foresaid Roote for Not one natu-Bread in every place. The lle of Spaniola is inhabited onely by the Spaniards, there is not one Naturall of the Countrey.

From lamasca to Cartagena one hundred leagues. This Cartagena is a faire Citie, a very strong cartagena. Fort in the Hauen mouth and Artilerie in three parts of the Towne. A Bishoprike. They have neither Silver nor Gold : there are about 150. Spaniards. Next to this is Tule inhabited of the 10 Spaniards about fortie or fiftie : it is eighteene leagues from Cartagena alongft the coaft.

Then Santa Martha, a Citie with a imall Fort, about 100, Spaniards: there they gather great Saint Martha, quantity of Gold very fine : they are a fierce people. Santa Martha is fiftie leagues from Cartagena longft the same coaft. Vpon the same coaft is Nombre de dies about seuentie leagues from Nambre de dies. Cartagena, they have no Fort but upon the haven fide : there lyeth foure peeces of Artillary: there are in it about lixtie Spaniards. It is voiler the government of Panama. Then Veragna, about feuentie or eightie Spaniards : they gather great store of Gold aboue a million and a halfe yearely. V pon the fame coast about one hundred leagues from Veragua, fleth a towne called Coffaricea, coffarice. inhabited onely of the naturals : they gather great flore of Gold.

Ouer against Nombre de Dies on the other Sea of Sur lyetn the Citie of Panama, eighteene Panama 30 leagues diffant from thence : there is an Audience, and a Prefident, and an Archbilhope there are about four ehundred Spaniards; it is a very rich towne, full of treasure : all the Gold and Silver that com neth out of those parts into Spaine, commeth by that towne: they have no Fort but foure preces of Or inance that I ye vpon the Hauen; but to returne to the coast of the ocean Sea. From Carragena Eastwards there is a River called Rio de Labache, voon this River a prettie towne, with two hundred Spannards, where is gathered great abundance of Pearle, about one million every yeare : there is a little Fort.

A little beyond that you come to Baxemete, which is in the government of Valenzaola, and Ventuela Barbaruta, three leagues within land. Then Toom five leagues within land. Then Margarita with a strong Fort, in all these places is gathered most fine Gold. Nombre de Dies, Cartagena, Santo ta Martha, Tulu Rio de Labathe, Veragua, Barbaruta, thefe have bin spoiled two or three times by the Frenchmen.

Margaria is the vemost Towne of the Spaniards upon that coast, from whence passing into the Countrie, about foure dayes journey we came to Granada, a towne in the government of Va- Granada. lanzanela, from thence to Trugelle, which is the vemoft towne of that Prouince. So to Villetta. where beginneth the Nuevo Regno de Granada, Vele Pampelona, Ocagna, Tunza, a proper Citte with foure hundred Spaniards. Santa Fe del Nuevo Regno di Granada, the principall Citie of the Kingdome, fine hundred Spaniards : an Archbishop, a President, and an Audientia; Tocayma, Ayuage, Cariago, Arma Caramanta, Santa Fe di Antiochia, Anzerma, Cali, Buga, Popaya, 2 gouernment. Armage Mocoa, Scanze, Timana, La Plata, Newa, Paste. The end of the new Kingdome 40 of Granada. In all these Cities is gathered great abundance of Gold.

Quito the first Citie of the Kingdome of Poru. There is a Prefident, an Audience, and a Bishop. Quite. Riobamba, the Gouernment of the Squifer, Auila, Baera, Acedenia, Tombamba, Guaiaquill 2 Port towne in Mar del Sur, la Panta de Santa Helena, Porto, visio in Spanifo, Manta in Indian, Parta, Port Townes, Colibamba. The gouernment of Ishn di Salma, Sarigra, Saint Iacomo de las Valles, Santa Maria de las neves, Valladelid, Combinama, Zaem, in thefe fix townes is gathered the greatell quantitie of Gold and the finest of all the Country of Porn, Chachapaia, Moiobamba, Guanico vpon the Sea, Malabrigo, the port of Tragillo. Trugillo is two leagues within the port of Reque, Santa, Casma, Guagnara, Chancai, Lima, Cagnette, Ica, Camana, (Aerquipa, Quilea and Chali, ports of Aregupa) Arica, all these are upon the Sea coast of Peru, Guamanga and Guancanallica, where they gather all the Quick-filuer aboue fine millions enery yeare ; the Citie of Cofee, the chiefe 50 Citie of the Kingdome of Peru, Chogunago, Choquifaca, Potoffi, and Porco, where all the Silver is

gathered in the Kingdome of Pers. And this is the end of the Kingdome of Pers. In the Prouince of Tuquema, subject to Peru, Tuquema the principall Citie of the Province. Saint Ia- Tucana, como de las Torres, Arrian, Calchaqui. In the Province of Chiriguana, subiect to Peru: Santa cruze de la Sera. In the Prouince of Chili along ft the coaft ; Tarapaqua, 110, Copiape, Co- Chili quimba , la Serena, S. Iacomo , La conception , Cuye, la Imperiala, Paraifo, Valdinia, Oxorno. From Margarita or Barburata to Santa Fe del nueno regne di granada is 300.leagues by land, the ordinary way. From Santa Fe to Cuito 250, leagues. From Quito to Lima 300. leagues. From Lima to Chognifaca, or Potoffi, or Porce 300 leagues. From Potoffi to Copiapo chie e Citie of Chils 60 500, leagues. And thefe are ordinary travailed waies.

There are in Posoff and Porco 300, mines of the Spaniards, and 5000 of the Indians. The Silver Posoff and that is for the King (which is supposed to be two millions) and all the rest that is sent into Spaine Pace. is brought upon Sheepes backes unto Arica or Port of Pern from thence by Sea into Lima, A Sheepe will carry 100.li, three leagues in one day.

Bbbbb :

laden at Cartagena yearely the Kings and as much of other Merchants Атедица,

Cufco.

The Gold that is gathered in Chili, the Kings part which is about a million, and of others a million and a halfe is brought by Sea vnto Lima. All the Gold and Silver that comes to Lima is about twelve millions, from thence it comes to Panama, from Panama by land to Nombre de Dios, from thence by Sea to Cartagena. The Gold that comes out of the new Kingdome of Granada and the Province of John de Salina is brought by a River to Cartagena. So that at Cartagena there is laden out of those parts for Spaine every yeare of the Kings about five millions, and as much of other Merchants.

In all the Country of Chili there are not about 1300, Spaniards. In Arica 100. Spaniards, A. requipa is 17. leagues diffant from Chuli or Quilea the ports : it hath about 200. Spaniards. In Lie ma 1000. Spaniards. In Sensu 100. Spaniards. In Trugillo 200. it is a very wealthy towne (the Port of it Malabrigo two leagues from Trugillo. The Citie of Cufco is bigger then Rome : there is a Bishop and about 1000. Spaniards. They have the Inquisition in Lima. In Payer which is the harborough for all the Fleete for fresh provision : there are 100 men. Porto Vicio, is also another harborough where the Fleete taketh in fresh victuals. There are not three Spaniards in the towne. but about fine leaguesoff there is a small towne called Mantu, where there are but 50. Spaniards. In Panama 400. In February the Silver comes from Potolli and Porce to Lima: about the lame time the Ships returne from Chili to Lima with Gold.

In Aprill they fet forth from Lima foure Ships, and in fifteene dayes they arrive at Panama. From the point Saint Helen to Coprago it never raineth : this dry tract extendeth from the Sea coast into the Country in some places 40. miles, in some places 50. and in fundry parts of the 40 Country it is to hot that no man can endure it, and within fixe miles of that place to cold againe, that it is inough to kill any man. This thrange tract extends 1200. leagues. In the Citie of Lima and Trugillo there grow Oranges, Pomgranets, Citrons and Melons, bigger farre then those

La Lama de Camanais a very fertile feile, yeelding abundance of graffe, which beginneth at Camana and patieth by Quilca towards Chuli eighteene leagues from Camana. The jame Lome. is in some pare within a mile of the Sea and in some other places a league off from the Sea. The fame Loma is in breadth in some places halfe a league, and in other places a league, which is the greateil breadth that it beareth.

Betweene this Loma de Camana and the Sea, is nothing growing burbarren fands and stones. And within the faid Loma, is also barren for the space of eight or ten leagues. And in all the said circuit both of the Long, and from it to the Sea, and alto in rowards the land the faid diffance of eight or ten leagues it neger raineth. But farder into the Land where the hils and mountaines are, there it raineth and sometimes snoweth.

A di 24. Luglio 1981. Alesandro Orfino Romano antico dico che fon de tempo de cinquanta uno agnos. lo fon fiado Trenta quatro agnos nel regno del Peru, e ho caminado todo el regno.

CHAP. IX.

Notes of the West Indies, gathered out of PIDRO ORDONNES de Cauallos a Spanish Priest, bis larger observations.

Emeralds.



Anta Fe de Bogota, is the Mother Citie of the New Kingdome of Granada, an Archbishops See, and of the Chamber. Muso is subject to it, where is store of the best Emeralds taken out of a rocke, which a long time cannot waste. The fifth thereof is of inestimable value to the King. An Indian found there a stone which was fent to King Phillip, and his daughter Clara Eugenia, the price where- to of was about all price, nor could the Goldsmiths value it. In Saint Juan de los la-

mes are men with white faces. In all the Kingdome the townes are very frequent. There areaboue 14000. Negros which worke in the Mines there. 14000. Negres,

In Onite two things are deere, Wine, which is worth eight Rials a quart, if brought from Lima, and twelve from Spaine: and Affes, of which one hath beene worth 1 coo. Pelos. and that Wine and Affor the flore of Mares in those parts. It is a prouerbe, What is dearest in Quito? An Asse. In Lima no houses are conered with roofes, bee they never so large, because they never have raine. No Citie in India is richer then it.

Lima. Potafi and the

fes deare.

Out of Potofi are yeerely gathered great treasures. Ouer the top of this Mountaine alway hangs a cloud, even in the cleerest dayes, as it were marking and pointing out the riches there- 60 of. It rifeth in forme of a Pyramis, three leagues high, environed with cold avre. At the foot is the Citie Potoli, inhabited by twentie thousand Spanish men, and ten thousand women, as many Negroes and foure thouland Indiane. Within fix leagues about is no pasture of graffe, to that toit, Wood, and Corne are brought from other places. The entrance and Myne-workes are to

dangerous, what they which goe in , whe to take the Sacrament of the Altar , as if they went to their death, because few returne. The Earle of Villar made a proclamation, that all the Inding should have leave and libertie to labour in this Myne, and to have foure Riells 2 day for each mans worke, which they were before forced to doe for nothing ; fince which the King hath received greater profit. The King receiveth thence yearely eight or ten millions of Silver. The metalls lie two hundred Stades " (or mans heights) beneath the earth. Raine is "The Laine very needfull for the Myne-workes, which vitually falls about Christmasse. Then the President of word is \$100.00. Chareas comes thicher (as alfo to have care of the Quick-filter) that in Februarie and March they which in ordimay be readic for Lima. Chile hath two Bishoprickes, of Chile and Saint lage. It brings forth the naryfense were In fruits of Calfile, greater then Spaine it f. Ife. There are many Gold Mynes, if the Auracan Indiane could be compelled to the workes, which doe our men great harmes. I went into Chile from factor.

Peru, and thence returned to Quito.

CHAP.O.

Mexico is as great as Simil. There dwell in it three thouland Spaniards, many more women, Mexico. two hundred thousand Indians, twentie thousand Negros. The Natives are capable of Arts and Diffinline. They very much honour Priefts, Monkes, and Regulars, and when the Bell rings Ron & ro to Sermon, the Indian Boyes run vp and downe the streets croffing their fore-heads. When they Priests goe out of the Church, they cry, Bleffed be our Lord lefus Chrift, and bleffed bee his Mother Saint Marie; the Priest answeres, For euer, and they, Amen. They are liberall Almes-givers; to mee Deare Maste, faying Maffe, I remember they gave an hundred Duckets. D. Martin Cortez Marqueffe of the 20 Vallet, was author of this reuerence to Priefts by his owne example, which would fland still bare

headed, till a Priest were past, and iometimes would goe forth to meet him and kisse his hand. Hides. In New Spaine is such store of cattell, that one man often kills one thousand Beenes, and as many Goates, and fends their hides into Spaine. The Magurie tree or Cabuya yeelds Wine, Vineger, Masur tree Hony, Beds, Threads, Needles (out of the prickles of the leaves) Tables and hafts of Knines befides many medicinable vies. From Mexico to Acapulpo the Hauen on the South Sea, are ninetie leagues, and well inhabited.

The Vice-roy is Prefident at the Court at Lima, and Gouernor and Captaine Generall of that The Vice:ov Territory and of Charcas and Quito. He hath fortie thousand Duckets salary, and the charges of of Pou. Warre are paid by the King. The Territory of Lima containeth in circuit three hundred leagues. Callao. 30 Callao is the Port, two leagues from Lima, the chiefe in all the South Sea, where the Vice-roy vfeth to abide much for furnishing the Fleets which carry the treasure.

The Mynes of Ornee are given over for want of Quck-filuer, or as some say, lest the inhabitants of Potofi should remoue thither. Gnaconelica hath rich Silver Mynes, which yeerely recid eight thouland Quin: als. But fome Mountaines falling have ftopped the mynings. Saint Practs of Quito is vnder the line very temperate, three hundred leagues from Lima. There is a Chancery. Bishop, Deane, and Vniuersitie. The Territory of this Court extends two hundred and fixtie leagues. Neere the Citie are many burning Hills.

There is a twofold government in the Indies, one of Spaniards, which is the same with that of Indian govern-Spane; the other of Indians. The Spaniards in these parts neither plow the ground, nor worke in m nt. 40 the Mynes, especiall there where they are accounted gentlemen, Scarcefly shal you find any Spanifbyouth, which will betake himselfe to the service of any man, except the Vice-roy. They trade with Merchandise, are set ouer the Kings Rents, Garrisons, and Myners.

The Indians are base minded. They solemnize the Feasts of the Sacrament, Easter, and Midsomerday, with Dances, Musicke, Processions, and in the Temples religiously. On Mandy Thursday they are all chastisted. In guilds they are observant. On a certaine day they are compelled to fitten & state. render account of all their goods and poffettions. They procure Maffes at Funeralls. They are generally wittie, liers, and ftrong drinkers. They will drinke two or three dayes together cloffy. and sometimes a whole weeke. Their Feasts are like the Negros with songs and dances. With these Rites they say they pray for the dead. They never make an end, till they have spent all, and

50 then they returne to their labours. They are very expert in the Arts which they learne, although it be writing or reading, which yet is not granted them to learne. They pay yeerely to their Gouernours a certaine tribute of Silver and other things, after they are eighteene yeeres old, till fiftie. The Commendator receiveth these things, conditionally to maintaine a Priest and a Corrigidor, and to pay the tenths to the Church. This and other places are there given for two liues, the sonne or eldest daughter succeeding. The Corrigidors amongst the Indians are prohibited merchandile. A Vilitor is appointed in enery Court to goe to the places of that Precinct to en- Inflice innequire of affaires, and to decide controuerlies.

The number of Meffices is great, which wander vp and downe poore and beggarly, nor give Mefitos.

their minds to learne any handicrafts. It were good they were forced to labour. A Councell celebrated at Lima, 1583, in the third Seffion, Chap. 22. approued of the Pope and Indian Provinour King, decreed that whereforeur one thousand Indians are found together, a Teacher and Priest ciall Councell. should be set ouer them. The Indians Priests wie at the Kings charges to carrie with them many religious men : and the Issuites by the supreme Councell of India, with adule of the BB. are commanded to fend many thither for the Bishops affistance.

Ecclefiafficall

Seminaries.

The Rents and Tenths of Bishoprickes are deuided into foure parts, one of which goeth to the Bishop, a second to the Deane and Chapiter, so as the Deanes proportion is 150, the dignities 1:0. the Canons 100. The third and fourth part are divided into nine shares called Ninths, of which two returns to the King, and are bestowed on the buildings of Cathedrall Churches; and ther ninth and halfe on the Fabrickes, another ninth and halfe on the Hofpitall buildings, the fourth remayning are paid to the Vicars, Singers, Organists and other Church Officers. What remay neth is spent on the Fabrickes. All are laid out by the Bishops order. In my judgement in were very good if every Bishoprick had Seminaries and Colledges wherein the children of their Caciques and chiefe men might be educated, to be maintayned by the Caciques.

The Bishopricke of Cusco is 200. leagues long and 70. broad : that of Lima is greater by the 10 one halfe, as is that also of Quite. Whereupon the Bishops of the New World writ to the Kine that it were better to make them more Bishoprickes, each of which shall yet retaine 20000. Pezos. Euery feuenth yeere ordinarily is a Provinciall Synod in Pers, to which the Bishoppes come, some by Sea, some by Land 400. or 600. leagues, the wayes not admitting Coaches, Some have fought for Vniversities in some places to bee erected (as those of Quito) at least for Divinitie, and the liberall Arts and Indian Tongue : the Profesiors to haue foure or 5000. Ducketsa piece yeerely. There is no question but of the Indians many learned men may adorne the Schooles

and Pulpits.

Kings Reuc-

The Kings Revenue out of the West Indies is twelve Millions yeerely growing out of the fifth nus 12. Mil- of Gold and Silver, great Meltings, Customes of Ports, Indian Tributes, sale of Offices, the Cru- 20 lions fromten zade, Tribute of Rents, Quickfiluer, Fines of Courts, and the ninth part of Ecclefiafticall Rents, Popes Buls and Collations of Benefices Ecclefiasticall and Secular are subject to the King, and ordered by his supreame Councell of the Indies

CHAP. X.

Relation of the new Discourse in the South Seamade by PEDRO FERNANDEZ GIR OS Portugez I 600, with his Petitions to the King, one Englished, another in Spanish.



His man being a famous Pilot was fent with two ships from Pern to discourt he Ilands of Salomon. After hee had taken his course in the height of the Straitsof Magellanne, little more or lesse, he did discouer a mayne Land, and sayled eight hundred leagues vpon the Coast, vntill he came to the height of fifteene degrees to the Southward of the Equinoctiall Line where hee found a very fruitfull and pleasant Countrey and well peopled, abounding with Pearles, Gold and Silver,

great store of Limons; Orenges and other Fruites excellent good, and in great quantitie : great store of Goats, Hogges, Geele, Partridges, Conies and Fowle, Pepper and Spices. The Countrey is very temperate and healthfull, great store of fish of many different forts; full of wood and so goodly high Trees for thipping; very good patture, ground for Corne and Cattell.

The men of the Countrey are some tawnie, and some white of good disposition, more civil and politike then the Indians of Perwand News Hifpania.

There is in the Coast a Bay of some ewentie leagues into which there fals two great Rivers out of the Countrey, which is the place where they purpose to settle their first Plantations.

There are many Ilands in the same Coast both great and little, plentifull they are all and well

This Captaine Giroz shall be presently fent vinto Pers, with order and Commission to take vp twelve hundred men and shipping with other necessaries for the Voyage to inhabit, and as mamy more shall be sent the yeare tollowing from Nous Histories, and for the whole businesse he so is to receive five hundred thousand Duckers.

Walfingham Grefley.

The Copie of a Petition presented to the King of Spaine, by Captaine PETER FERDINAND de Quir, touching the Discourrie of the fourth part of the World, called Terra Australis incognita : and of the great riches and fertilite of the same : Printed with licenfe in Siuill, An. 1610.

SIR, Perthaps it is a Captaine Fernandez de Quires, thew vnto you, that this is the eighth * Petition, which by eight or some those eight or some hath beene presented to your Maiesties view, to perswade the conduction of some Colorida. later, which followeth in Spanish, contaying more particulars then this bath: Or elfo it may be of Lugidi Vary, &c.

nies . vnto the Land which your Maiestie hath commanded to bee discouered in the parts of Anfralia incognita. And yet to this houre no resolution is taken, neither have I received any answere or hope, whereby I might rest assured to obtaine my dispatch, although I have attended fourteene moneths in your Court, and haue imployed fourteene yeeres in this Difcouery without any profit or other respect but the benefit thereof; with which, notwithstanding infinite contradictions, I haue gone 20000. leagues by Land and by Sea, and haue diminished and finke my eftate, I haue trauelled with many afflictions in my person, and suffered such strange and extraordinary croffes that they feeme almost incredible to my felfe; and all, that fo Religious an undertake should not unworthily be abandoned. In regard whereof, I do most humbly be-10 feech your Maiestie in the bowels of the divine charitie, that you would be pleased to take order,

that I be not depriued of the fruits of this Defigne, which with fuch instance I doe defire . and which with so much instice are due vnto my continual paines and trauell: nor that I bee debarred from the effects of 10 confiderable and well grounded a request, whose principall scope is the elory of God, and of your Maiestie, and from whence infinite benefits are likely to iffice forth, which will live as long as the fabrick of the World shall subsift, and after the dissolution thereof will remaine to all Eternitie.

1. Touching the extent of these Regions newly discourred, grounding my judgement on that which I have feene with mine owneeyes, and vpon that which Captaine Lewes Paez de Torres Admirall of my Fleet hath represented vnto your Maiestie, the length thereof is as great as all 20 Europe and Alia the lelle, vnto the Sea of Bachn, Perfia, and all the Iles, aiwell of the Ocean, as of the Mediterranean Sea, taking England and Island into this account. This vnknowne Coun-

trey is the fourth part of the Terrettriall Globe, and extendeth it felfe to fuch length, that in The printed probabilitie it is twice greater in Kingdomes and Seignories, then all that which at this day doth call it rather acknowledge fubication and obedience vnto your Maiestie: and that without neighbourhood ei- than translati. ther of Tarkes or Moores, or of any other Nation which attempteth warre vpon confining Coun- on) in English treves. The Land which we have discourred, is all feated within the Torrid Zone, and a great tract cais it the fith thereof reacheth vnto the Equinoctiall Circle; the breath may be of 90. degrees, and in some part but the thereof reacheth vnto the Equinoctiall Circle; the breath may be of 90, degrees, and in tome spanish bath blaces a little leffe. And if the fuccesse proue answerable vnto the hopes, they will be found Anthe fourth, tipodes vnto the better part of Africke, vnto all Europe, and to the greater portion of Afric. But perhaps ac-

you must observe, that as the Contreyes which we have discovered in 19 degrees of latitude, are counting the better then Spaine, fo the other which are opposed so their elevation, must by proportion and East Indies for analogie prooue tome terrestriall Paradise.

2. All those quarters swarme with an incredible multitude of Inhabitants, whereof some are and this the white, others blacke and in colour like Mulatos, orthatfor Mairen and others of a mingled com- fourth, reckoplexion. Some weare their haire long, blacke, and feattered, others have their haire cripfed and ning all the thicke, and others very yellow and bright. Which divertise is an apparant argmument that there first knowne is an apparant argument, that there is commerce and communication amongst them. And this first confideration together with the bountie which Nature hath bestowed on the foile, their inex- Description of

perience of Artillery and Guns, and their viskilfulnesse in labouring in Mynes, with other sem- the peopleblable circumstances, doth induce mee to inferre, that all the Countrey is well peopled. They know little what belongeth to artificiall Trades; for they have neither fortifications nor walles, and line without the awe of Kings or Lawes. They are a simple people cantoned into partialities, and exercise much disagreement amongst themselves. The Armes which they vie are Bowes and Arrowes, which are not poisoned or steeped in the juice of venemous herbes, as the custome is of many other Countreyes; They doe also carrie Clobs, Truncheons, Pikes, Dartes to hurle with the arme, all which are framed only of wood. They doe couer themfelies from the wafte or girdling place down to the halfe of their thighs, they are very studious of cleanlinesse, tractable, cheerefull, and wonderoully addicted to bee gratefull vnto those that doe them a courtefie. as I have experienced many times. The which doth build in me a beliefe, that with the affiftance of 50 God, if they may be gently and amiably intreated, they will bee found very docible and easie of

mannage, and that we shall without much worke accommodate our selues vinto them. And it is most necessary to observe this way of sweetnesse, especially in the beginning, that the Inhabitants may be drawne along to this fo holy and fauing an end, whereof we ought to take a particular care and zeale, aswell in small things, as in matters of more importance. Their houses are built of wood, couered with Palme-tree leaves; they have Pitchers and Veffels made of earth, they are not without the mysterie of weating, and other curiofities of that kind. They worke on Marble, they have Flutes, Drummes, and wooden Spoones, they fet apare certaine places for Oratories and Prayers, and for buriall places. Their Gardens are artificially fenered into beds, bordered and piled; Mother of Pearle and the shels which containe Pearle, they have in much vie and estimation, of which they make Wedges, Ralors, Sawes, Culters, and fuch like Instru-

ments: They also doe make thereof Pearles and great Beads to weare about their neckes. They that doe dwell in the Hands, have Boats very artificially made, and exceedingly commodious for See of their fayling, which is a certaine argument that they confine upon other Nations that are of a more Boaisin Maires polified and elegant behaulour. And this also they have of our husbandry, that they cut Cocks Voyag .

1444

2. Their bread is viually made of three forts of Roots, which grow there in great abundance. Neither doe they imploy much labour in making this bread, for they do onely roft the Roots vntill they are loft and tender. They are very pleasant to the taste, wholsome and nourshing, they are of a good leng h, there being of them of an Ell long, and the halfe of that in bigneffe. There is great store of excellent fruits in these Countreyes. There are fixe kinds of Plane Trees, Almond Trees of foure forts, and other Trees called Obs, resembling almost in fruit and greatnesse the Melacatones; thore of Nuts, Orenges and Limonds. They have moreover Sugar-canes, large in fize and in great plentie, they have knowledge of our ordinarie Apples; they have Palme-trees without number; out of which there may easily bee drawne a juyce, which will make a liquor alluding much to Wine, as also Whey, Vineger, and Honey, the kernels thereof are exceeding fweet. And they have fruits which the Indians call Cocos, which being greene doe make a kinde of twine, and the pith is almost like in taste vinto the Creame of Milke : When they are rine they serue for meate and drinke both by Land and Sea : And when they wither and fall from the Tree, there sweateth out an Oyle from them , which is very good to burne in Lampes , and is medicinable for wounds, and not unpleasant to be eaten. Of their rindes or barks there are made Bottles, and other like Veffels, and the inner skin doth ferue for calking of fhips. Men doe make Cables and other Cordage of them, which are of tufficient strength to draw a Canon, and are fit for other domesticke vies. But that which is more speciall, they do there vie the leaves of Palme. trees, which they amaffe together, to make fayles of them for Vessels of small bulke and burthen. They make likewile fine thinne Mats of them, and they do ferue to couer the house with a out, and for hangings within. And of them they doe likewise make Pikes, and other forts of weapons, as also Oares to row with, and Vtensils for the house. You are to note, that these Palme-trees are their Vines, from whence they gather their Wine all the yeere long, which they make without much coft or labour. Amongst their herbage and Garden fruites; Wee have feene Melons, Peares great and little, and fundry forts of pot-herbes. And they have also Beanes. For flesh, they are stored with a great number of Hogs which are as tame as ours : they have Hennes, Capons, Partriges, Duckes Turtles, Pigeons, Stock doues, and Goats, as one of my Captaines did fee. And the Indians themselves have given vs notice of Cowes and Oxen. There are also sundry forts of fish, Harghi, Persereyes, Lize, Soles, Trowts, Shads, Macabises, Casanes, Pampani, Pilchard, Thorn-backes or Skate-fish, Cuculi, Congers, Porpoles, Rochets, Muscles, Lobiter, & and many other, the names whereof I cannot now remember. But it is probable that there are divers other kindes, fince those which I have recounted were taken hard by our ships. And you ripe and ferious confideration of that which I have represented voto you, a man may easily collect, that fuch plentifull and different varieties of all things, may yeeld great and fingular delights. There is stuffe for Marchbanes and sweet Confections of all forts, without borrowing any Spice for the composition of them elsewhere. And for my Mates the Mariners, besides those particulars which I have before fet downe, there will bee no want of Gammons, Sawiages, and other falt meates which Hogges doe yeeld; neither of Vineger, Spiceries, and other Sawces that ferue for delicacie, and to awake the appetite. And you must oberue, that many of these things, are the same with those which we have in our parts, and possibly they are there in greater abun- in dance; by all which it is eafily to be coniectured, that this Countrey is fit for the production of all that which groweth in Exrope.

4. The Riches which I have feene in those parts, are Silver and Pearle; another Captaine in his Relation, doth report that he hath feene Gold, which are the three most precious Darlings that he and are cherished in the bosome of Nature : wee have also both seene much Nutmegs, Mace, Ginger, and Pepper. There is also notice of Cinamon; and it is likely that Cloues may be found in those parts, tince so many other forts of Spiceries and Aromaticall drugges doe prosper there; and that the rather, because these Countryes Ive very neere the parallell of the Iles of Terrenatte, Bachian, and the Moluccos. There are likewife materials for all forts of Silke, and wee haue feene Anife-feed, and excellent good Ebonie, as also other kindes of wood proper for the 50 building of as many thips as one will defire, and thatfe to make fayles for the fame. Three forts of materials there are wherewithall to make Cordage, and one of them is very like vinto our Hemp-Moreover out of the Oyle of Cocos, whereof I have already made mention, there is a kind of bituminous stuffe extracted, called Galagala, which may be well vied for Pitch. They make allo a kind of Rolen with which the Indians pitch their Boats, which they call Piraguas. And lince there are Goats and Kowes in those parts, without question we shall have Goat-skins, Leather, Tallow, and field in full abundance. The Bees which we have seene there doe make proofe, that there will be no scarcitie of Honey and Waxe. And there is good appearance to discouer many other things which are not yet knowne, to fay nothing touching the forme and feite of the Countrey. Vnto all which if that bee adjoyned, which the industry of man may contribute to 60 those parts, fince there is such abundance of commodities which the Country it selfe doth yeeld, and fuch hope to transport thither those things which grow with ve(the best and cheisest which Peru and New Spaine bring forth, I have refolved to transferre thicker) it is to bee hoped, that this will to enrich that Countrey, that it will be able to nourish and furnish not only the Inhabi-

tants of the fame, and those of America, but give an acceffion vnto Spaine it felie both of Riches and extent of command : and this may bee accomplished after the manner which I have projected, and will vnfold vnto those which shall lend an affilting hand for the guiding and confummation of this worke. Now by that Land which we have alreadie difcouered outwardly and along the shoares, without entrance into the inward parts, we doe conceine a certaine Argument, that as much Riches, Commodities, and greattieffe may bee hoped from thence, as wee have already in their Countreyes. And you may bee pleafed to understand, that my principall ayme was to take a view only of these ample Regions which we have discoursed : for by reason of many ficknelles which have weakened me, and someother chances whereof I will at this time 10 make no mention, I was not able to furuay all which I defired, neither could I in a full moneth

CHAP.10. Captaine Quirs description of the South Continent.

have feene all that, which I was of my felfe inclinable to view. You are not to make your indeement of the Indians that inhabit thefe Countreyes, according to the honour of the people here. or conceive them to bee affected with the fame defires, pleasures, necessities, or estimation of things that we are: But you are to make account that they are a people whose care is stidiously placed vpon this, that they may live easily in this World, and paffe their dayes with the leaft paine and perturbation they can. And this is indeed their practife, for they do not beflow themfelnes on those things, which with such vexation and torment we here labour to obtaine.

e. There are found in this Countrey as many commodities, both for the support and delectation of the life of man, as may bee expected from a foyle that is Manurable, pleafant and verie 20 remperate. It is a fat and fertile Land, wherein many places clay is found, which will prooue of excellent vie to build houses, and to make Tiles and Brickes, and will ferue for what foeuer is vfually made of earth. There is Marble and other good ftones, wherewith if there bee occasion there may bee built itructures of greater State and Magnificence. The Country aboundeth in wood, fit for all workes and vies, whereunto the fame is commonly put. There are spacious and goodly plaines, and fields that are divided and interlaced with Brookes, Trenches, and Rivers, There are great and high Rockes, fundry Torrents, Rivers great and little, on which water-mile for Corne may with much commodiousnesse be built and placed, as also Engine to make Sugar. Tucking-mils, Forges, and all other Infromence which in their vie toe require water. We have found Salt-pits there, and which is a note of the fertilitie of the foile, there are in many places Canes whereof some are five or fixe handfuls thick, with fruit answerable to that proportion. The top of that Fruit is verie small and hard, and the skinne thereof is exceeding sweet. There are

alfo flints for fire, equall in goodnesse with those of Madrid. The Bay of Saint lames and Saint Philip, hath twentie leagues of banke, and is without mode; into which there is a fure and fafe entrance both by day and night, It is sheltered and couered with many houses, which in the clay time we have feene afarre off to lend forth fmoke, and in the night flore of fire. The Haven called The true Croffe, is of that spacious capacitie, that it is able to containe a thousand ships. The P. delavita bottome as I have faid is without mud, and hath a blackish colouted fand where withall it is co- cruz. uered. There are no gulfes or deepe pits, but an affured and easie anchorage in what part focuer you will, from forty to halfe a fathome; and it is betweene the mouthes of two Rivers, the one

40 whereof is as great as that of Guadalquinir, and hath mud of a fathome deepe, ouer which our shallops and boats did passe. For the other River, when our Skiffe went to water there, they Rivers, found the entrance fafe & easie. And a man may from the very mouth of the river take in as much fresh water as he will. The place where ships may be evidoaded hath three leagues of grauell, mingled with little flints blackish and very heavy, which will serue for ballast for ships. The bank is Praight and vnited, on which much green graffe doth grow and prosper, and that makes me to conceine that the Sea doth not beate or rage thereupon, I observe that the Trees are straight, and the branches not dismembred, which is a token that there are no tempets there. Touching the Port, befides the commodities which I have alreadie discoursed of, there is one of margellous pleasure and contentation. And that is, that at the dawning of the day you shall heare from a 50 Wood which is neere at hand, a fweet and various harmonie of a thousand Birds of all forts, a-

mong which we could diffinguish the Nightingoles, Black birds, Quailes, Gold-finches, Swallowes almost without number Parrochitos, and one Parret wee marked there, and or attres of fundry other kinds, euen downe to Grashoppers, and Field-crickets. Euery Morning and Euening we received a most odoriferous sweet smell, sent vnto our nostrels from the infinite diversitie of Flowres and Herbes which grow there, amongst which wee obsessed the blossemes of Orange and Bafill, All which (with a number of other varieties) doth make vs thinke that the Aire is cleere and healthy, and that the nature of the place is of a good temperature. The Hauen and the Bay are therefore of the greater estimation, because they have the Neighbourhood of fo Great Hands.

many goodly Hands that are there, and especially of those seven, which are faid to have two hun-60 dred leagues of extent; and furely one of them (which is some twelue leagues distant from the Hauen) is fiftie leagues in circuit. In briefe Sir, I doe affrme vnto your Maiestie, that you may give command to have a goodly and great Citie built in this Port and Bay which are 15. degrees Bavin 15 deg. and fortie minutes of the Southerne El vation, and those that shall inhabit there, shall have plen- 40 minutes, tie of riches, and all other conuenisncies which they can defire. Time will shew and discouer

all these commodities and in this place there may be made the discharge and valoading of all the wares and merchandizes of the Countries of Chiar, Peru, Panama, Newragua, Guatumala, News Spaine, Terre-natte, and the Philippines, all which Countries are under the command of your Majeffie. And if you shall acquire vnto your felfe the Dominion of these Seigniories which I doe now prefent, I doe make to great an efteeme of them, that belides their being the Key of all the reft, they will (in my opinion) proue another (hing or I apan, and equallize the other rich llands which are on this fide of Afia, in trafique of curious and precious merchandizes, to fpeake no. thing of the augmentation and extent of your power, and the establishment which you may make vinto your felfe of your Dominions, by the accession of so great a Countrie. That which I have given voto your view in my discourse, is of much stendernesse, in regard of that which I to doe probably conceine of this land, the which I am ready to make appeare in the prefence of Man thematicians, Neither will I vexe this paper to demonstrate voto you, that these Countries will be able to nourish two hundred thousand Spaniards. In summe, this is Sir, the world whereof Spaine is the Center, and that which I have related, is the nayle by which you may judge of the whole body, which I pray you to take into your observation.

6. You may judge by that which I have already represented, what the goodnesse and temper

rature of the ayre is; whereunto this may be added for a further tellimonie, that although all

our Companie were strangers, yet neuer a one of them was ficke, albeit they were in continual travell and labour, and did fometimes I weate, and iometimes take wet. They dranke water fafting, and fed many times on that which the earth did there bring forth. Neither had they any 20 regard to keepe themselves from the * Serenes, nor from the Moone or Sunne, which indeede in those parts is not ouer-vehement. Onely about midnight, they covered themselves with Wooll. which fals cueand did lye and repose themselves thereupon. And for the Inhabitants, they are commonly healry night in great (almost) thie, and many of them very aged, although they have nothing but the bare earth for their palflowers, infe- let; which is an argument of the wholeformnesse and purenesse of the soyle. For if it were a wet Gions to those and weeping ground, or had any viciousnesse in the mould, they would raise their lodgings which are 2 higher from the earth, as they doe that line in the Philippines, and other Countries which I have viewed. And this is further confirmed by their Flesh and Fish, which although it be vnsalted, aire, as moe-fore observed yet will it keepe sweete and without corruption two dayes and more. And the Fruits which in praire Voi. are brought from thence are exceeding good, as we had proofe by two that I tooke care to bring 30 along with mee, although they had not their full maturitie and growth when I gathered them from the Tree. We have not feene any barren and fandie ground, nor any Thiftles or trees that are thornie, or whose rootes doe shew themselves, no Marishes or Fennes, no Snow vpon the Mountaines, no Snakes or Serpents, no Crocodiles in the Rivers, no Wormes that vie with vs to hurt and confume our Graine, and to worke vs fo much displeasure in our houses, no Fleas, Caterpillers, or Gnats. This is a Prerogative that hath the advantage of all the priviledges that nature hath bestowed on other places, and is worthy to be compared, or rather preferred before any delicacie of the Countries of India, tome of which are abandoned and vnhabited, meerely by

reason of these incommodities, and of sundry others that are distattfull vnto the Inhabitants, as

7. These (Sir) are the greatnesse and goodnesse of the Countries which I have discourred, of

my felte haue oftentimes beene witnesse.

which I have already taken the possession in the name of your Maiestie, and vnder your Royall Banner, as appeareth by the Acts which I keepe fafely in my power, whereunto I proceeded after this enfuing manner. First (Sir) we erected a Crosse, and built a Church in honour of our Ladie of Loretto. Then we caused twentie Masses to be celebrated there, and our troopes made haste thither to gaine some Indulgences, granted on Whitfunday. We also made a solemne Proceffion, and observed the Feast of the blessed Sacrament, the which was carried in Procession, your Banner being euer displayed, and marching before it, through a great circuit of Countries, which were honoured with the presence of the same. In three severall places we set up your Title, in energy one of which we prepared and erected two Columnes, with the Armes of your Ma- 19 ieste tricked and garnished thereupon: so that I may with good right affirme, that since this will challenge to be one of the Parts of the world, the Impresse of Plus vitra is accomplished, and because it ilretcheth vnto the continent, whether it be forward or behinde it skills not, the bounds of your Dominions are with much spaciousnesseenlarged. Now all this which I have performed, receiveth its roote from this the faithfull zeale which I beare vnto your Maiestie, that to all the Titles which you already doe possesse, you may adioune this which I represent, and that the name de la Austrialia del Spiritu fanta, may bee blazoned and spread out the face of the whole world to the glory of God, who hath revealed this Countrie, and hath given mee the grace to guide my course thither, and to returne to the presence of your Maiestie, before whom I doe present and prostrate my selfe with the same affection and zeale 60 vnto this worke which I had before, and which hath growne vp with mee as it were from my cradle, and for the noblenesse and worth thereof, I doe still tender and cherish the same with the

8. I doe confidently beleeve, that your Maieslie doth vse for much produce in your Councels,

and are so magnanimous and full of Christian pietie, that you will (with your best care) embrace all the conducements which may further the habitation of these new-discouered Countries. And the principall reason to put a tye and obligation vpon we not to leave them abandoned is in. regard that this is the fole ordinary way to establish the knowledge of God, and fai h amonest them, and to bring to passe that his name may be adored and called vpon, where the Divell vlura peth fo much reuerence and inuocation. And this ought to be embraced with the more readinesse, because it is the channell to conuey and disperse all abundance of commodities amongst your fubicets. And hereby you shall be eased of many disturbances and vexations, which will affuredly be put voon you, in case the Enemies of the Church of Rome should enter and nestle there, to and should vent their erronious doctrines among it them, whereby they would convert all the bleffings which I have hitherso recounted vnto you, into affored incommodities and mifchiefes, and would arrogate vinto themselves the names of the Lords of the Indias, to the veter ruine and defolation of those Countries. I make no question but your Maiestie well weigheth, of what importance this danger, of which I speake, may proue, and what cuill consequence some other hazards may carrie with them, which are either at this time imminent, or may succeede hereafter. And if this hould happen, it would cost you in unerable thousands of gold and men, before you shall be able to give a remedy vnto the same. Acquire therefore Sir, whiles that occasion is offered you (that one day you may purchase heaven vnto your selfe) acquire (I say) with a little money which you milplice upon Perm, a neuer-dying reputation, and this New-world with all on the benefits which it reacheth out vnco you. And fince there is none that craueth a reward for thefe good tidings, that is brought you concerning fo great & fingular a bleffing, which God hath bin pleafed to locke vp untill your happie time, I am he Sir, that doe demand it, and my humble request ynto you is onely this, that you would be of that graciouthesse ynto mee, as to dispatch and rive me mine answer; for the Gallions are readie to hoife faile, and I have much way to goe. and many things must be fitted and disposed for the voyage. There is no houre passeth, which carrieth not with it an affured loffe both in regard of spirituall and temporall bleffings, the damage whereof can never be made up or repaired.

If vpon a bare suspition Christopherus Columbus did pursue his designe with so much obstinacie, you are not to account it strange in me, if the things which I have beheld with mine 20 eyes, and touched with mine hands, doe put some kinde of conftraint voon mee to be importunate.

Let it therefore please your Maiestie, among it so many expedients which you have at hand, to feuer and put apart some one for the accomplishment of this worke, that after all these languishments. I may at length meete with the successe of my desires. I doe affure you that you will finde my propositions most just, and that I shall be of sufficiencie to give you fatisfaction in all things. This, Sir, is a great worke, amongst which the Digell doth bandie himfelfe with all the puissance hee may: And it is not consonant to reason, to abandon these Countries to his tyrannic and power, whereof, know your Maiestie is Defender.

Here followeth another Petition or Declaration in Spanish, which I have not translated, that the 40 Original may be of more authoritie; and have added for further explanation and notice of particulars. I had thought also to have given the other in Spanish, and had accordingly prepared it, but for the English Readers Suke , bane corrected the once printed Copie by it, and not troubled vou with both.

 E^{L} Capitan Pedro Fernandez, de Quiros : Xa be diebo a V.M. que de la parte del Sur, esta oculta L_a quarta parte del Glovo, y que el descubrimiento que en ella bixe, lo es de vente y tres is las, cuy os nombres son. La encarnacion. San Iuan Bantista. Santelmo, Las quatro Coronadas San Miguel Archangel.La conversion de san Paulo. La Dezena. La Saguaria. La Fuostina.La del Pereorino. Nuestra 50 Sennora del Socorro. Monterrey. Tucopia. San Marcos. El Vergel. Las Lagrimas de san Pedro, Los portales de Belen. El Pilar de Zaragoça, San Raymundo. Ila is la de la Virgen Maria. Y sunsamente de aquel las tres partes de tierra llamada la Austrialia del Espiritu santo : en laqual tierra se ballo la Babya de san Felipe, y Santiago, y puerto de la Veracruz, adonde estunimos surtos con los tres navios 3. Navies. treinta y seu dias. Entiendiose ser todus tres una gran tierra, y sus altas y dobladas Serranias, y aquel Kie lo dan rio Iordan por su grandez a pare ce que osseguran la de la tierra, como de todo mas largo consta por una informacion quehize en Mexico, con diez testigos delos que fueron comigo, a la qual me remito. Mande V. M. que sea vista, y que se haga una innta de Matematicos, y Pilotos, y personas platicas, pues al presente las ay muy insignes en esta Corte, y la causa lo merece, y a V. M. le importa muchilismo. Aduierto que cita inito macion la hiziera, con todas quantas personas vinie ron de la ior-60 nada, sfuera bien admitida la ofrenda que para esto bize, o sue ra ajudado, o jo pudiera, que no me oblique a impossibles, y me veo obligado a ellos.

Digo pues sennor que en una ista que se llama Taumaco, que al parecer dista de Mexico mil y do. Taumaco ista zientary cincuenta leguas, estuurmos surtos diez dias, y que el sennor de aquella islaas, cuyo nombre es Tamay, hombre de razon, buen cuerpo, talle, 3 color algo moreno, los osos hermosos, la nariz asilada, las

broad in the

Mas de Colenta Illes verna grande tierra que se llama Manicelo.

barnas, y los cabellos crecidos, y crespos, y a su modo grane, nos ayudo con su gente y embatcaciones, ahazer a guada, lenna, de que en aquella fazon estanamos muy necessuados. Este tal vino a verme a la Nas. y dentro en ella le exemine, en la manera signiente. Lo primero le mostre su isla, y la mar, y nuestra: naos. I gente, Japunte a todas partes del Orizonte, y hize otras ciertas sennas, y con ellas le pregunte, si ania visto nausos, r hombres como los nuestros, y a esto dixo que no Preguntele si fabia de otras tierras lexas o cerca nobladas o despobladas, y luego que me entendio nombro a mas de tetenta Islas, y a una grande tierra es portugado, o des provincias, j. megr. ym. e enterior de a todas teniendo prefente la quia de nauega, por que fe lium Mancolo: 19 festoros las fries festiviendo a todas teniendo prefente la quia de nauega, por Jaber hazia el rumbo que cada una demorana, que viene a fer de aquella fa ifia a la parte del Sneffe, Sur Sudeste, o Este, y Nordeste; y para que yo entendiesse quales oran las pequennas, bazia pequennos circu-Sudsite, o citez y two usipe; y pur mym y victor and a mender cercana la tierra, y por las que eran mayoret, 10.

101, y mostrana el mar con el dedo. y con el dana a entender cercana la tierra, y por las que eran mayoret, 10. bazia mayores circulos, y las mismas demostraciones : y por aquella gran tierra abrio ambos los bracos. sinboluerlos a iuntar, mostrandaque prosegnia. Tpara dar a entender quales eran las lexanas, à estano de alli mas cerca, mostrana el Sol de Lenante a Poniente, recostana la cabeça sobre una mano, certama los osos , y contana por los dedos las noches que en el camino se dormia, y por semeiancas de zia, quales gentes eran blancas, Negros, Indios, y mulatos, y quales estanan mezelados, vonales ran sus amigos, y enemigos, y que en algunas istas se comia carne humana; y para esto hizaque mojo dia su braco, mostrando claro querer mal à estagente, y deste, y de otros modes al parecer, se entendio quanto dixo, 7 se lo repeti tantas ve zes, que mostro, cansarse dello. T dando con la mano hazia el Sur Sudeste, y otras partes, dio bien a entender quantas mas tierras ania. Mottro desseo de bolner a su casa, dile cosas que llenasse, y se despidio de mi, dandome paz en el carrillo, y con a

El signiente dia fui a su pueblo, y para mas bien enterarme delo que Tumay declaro, lleus comigo muchos Indios a la playa, y teniendo en la mano el papel, y presente la aguia de marear : a todas fui preguntando muchas vezes porlas tierras a que Tumay pujo nombre, y en todo conformaron todos, y disconnoticia de otras pobladas, todas de gentes de los referidos colores, y innsamente de aquella grande tierra, in la qual con propriet sennes dexeron que auta Bacas, ò Bufalos : 7 para dar a emerder que auta perros ladrauan, y por gallos y gallinas, cantanan, y por puerces grunnian. T affi desta manera dezsan lo que querian, y respondian a quanto se les preguntana : y porque les mostraron perlas en el boton de un relario. dieron a entender las ausa. Todas estas preguntas y diligencias, bizieron otros de mi compannia este dia, otras vezet a estos, y a otros Indios, y siempre dixeron lo musmo, y por esto so ensendio ser gente que tra- 20 taverdad.

Quando fali desta ifia de Tammaco, bizze coper quatro muy gallardos Indios, los tres fe becharon a nado, y el que quedo, y despues se lama Pedro, declaro en el puerto de Acapadeo, y por el camino, y enla cindad de Mexico adonde murio desendela vista et Marques de Montes claros lo figuiente, fin nunca variar, annque se le pre gunto en diuer se tiempos, y por muchas personas, y de muchos modos, y se le nega-Han, y contradezian (his dichota

Lo primero dixo Pedro, ser naturalde suassela que se llama Chicazana, mazor que la de Taumaco adonde de ballamos, y que de la una a la otra ay quatre dias de camino, de su embarcaciones, y que Chicayana es tierra rasa y muy abundante de los frutos y a referidos, y que la gense della es de su bue na color de Indio, cabello suelto y largo, y que se labran como el lo estama, poco enel rostro, ombros, y pechos, y que se tambien ay hombres blancos que sienen les cabellos rubios, y muy largos, y que ay mulates, cuyo cabello ne es frisado, ni de todo suelto, y que el era texedor, y soldado flechero, y que en su lengua se llamana Luca, a muger Layna, fu hlio Ley.

Dixo mas, que en aquella su isla ay muchas Ostras, como de las que vi sus conchas, y traxe algunas, que aqui tengo de tres tamanuos. El primero, es el comun de la Margarita; el segundo mayor al doble; 7 el tercero de palmo, mas y menos de diametro, y que a todas estas Ostras llaman Totofe, y que en ellas se hallan perlas, a las quales llaman Fuziquilquil : y por esto le mostre las conchas, y el las somo en las manos. y en ellas fue mostrando las partes a do se crian. Y preguntado quantas eran, y de que tamanno, dixo, que en unas se ballan mas, y en otras menos; y para dar a entender el grander dezia que las ay como arena, y como fal, y como pedrezitas, y como cuentas de rofarios, y como botones como tenia en un coleto, 150 otras mayores, y que se pescan en menos de medio estado de sondo, de piedras y arena, y que son muy gran des los trechos de mar, que alli tienen pocofondo, y que el mismo sin cabullirse las sacana con la mano, y las ponia en su Canoa, y que solo las quieren para comer su carne, a la qual llaman Canose, y que la conchas les sirmen para bazer auz nelos cucharas , y otras cofas, y que las perlas no les firmende nada.

Dixo mas, que ay en esta misma isla de chicayana otra suerte de ostrat, a la qual llaman Taquila: 7 para dar aentender su tamanno, sennalò el grandor de una buena rodela: y por bazerseme increpble la mucha camidad que divo de todas perlas, y la grandeza destas Taquilas, le pregunte si nacian dentro en los cocos, o en los arboles, o en las pennas, o en la sierra, o por fuera de las conchas dixo que no se ballan ino en le suelo del mar, y deutro en ellas las perlas, y que las ofiras las unas estan recoftadas a sodos lades, y otras enb estas y abiertas hazia arriba, y que si en algunas destas ostras entran la mano que se ciorra, y luego 60 go dixo no aymano, y que a esta cansa las sacan conpalos, y con lazadas de cuerdas, y que tienes grande y muy buena carne que ellor comen , y no bazen caso de las perlas, y que las vezes que las queria el mismo las pescana, y las llenana a su casa. Y como el Otto Viage yo mismo vi a las Indios de lassa de Santacruz, traer del enello colgadas muchas patenas mayores y menores.

endas de conchas de nacar, entendi fer leque Pedro de zia, lo mismo de las patenas, y a esta causa no hazia mucha cuenta deste dicho: mas viendo que unas vezes se enoiana, y otras con muy grande abines trabaiana por darse a entender, por esto le mostre un guyarro negro y redon do, del tamanno de uniterwels temprana, 7 le pregunte si en su tierra auia per las assi como aquella, dixo que no, porque aquel ouiarro era negro, y las perlas blancas como papel, y que quando las mirana al Sol, que la vistimbre dellas le dana en los osot, y affi hazia con ellos como fi las tuniera prefentes. Y preguntado fi las ania tan grandes coma el referido cun arro, dixe que otras ania chiquitas como el guijarro. Tluego sunto la cabeca del dedo pulgar con la del induce en forma de circulo, alli con on dedo de la otra mano, fue femalando may ores 7 meneres perlas, y que en cada hostia no ay mas de una sola : y con todo temiendo ser lo que dezia las pate-10 nas de mi sostecha, le pregun te si eranchatas, o redondas, o de otras formas. No me entendio por este len

qua ge. Luego hize como que queria poner el guy arro en el fuelo a fon de correr : y affi como lo vio, dixo con oran demostración, que quando las echa nan en el fuelo man rodando por manera que a mi entender dio claramen ta fer perius redondas, y de los tamannos referidos, y que fu bijo trabia al enello una dellas; 7 que el mismo la horado con piedra blanca, y delgada, y que el fondo de adonde las sacana, es de dos estadus mas y menos, y que en fiu conchas dan de comer a los puertos. Preguntele fi las grandes conchas tienen el milmo luft e que tienen las ordinarias que le moftre dixo que ficodas effas y otras preguntas le bize mun trocadas. y como en su tierra se llaman los arcabuzes, y otras de nuestras cosas, dixe que no las ay por manera que siempre respondio sin sos pechas, y solo dio nombre con mucha resolucion a las cosas que ellos tienen, yo afirmo por verdad que no entends escrinir la grandeza, ni el mucho numero que dixo auer de 20 toda suerte de perlas , por parecerme noticia nunca orda: mas considerando que naturaleza es po de-

rosa para criar como ya se ban visto grandes perlas , y de las comunes tan gran suma en el rio de la Hacha. Margarita, y Cubagua : y yo porfie tanto en inquirir esta su declaracion, pareciome dener dezir lo que este Indio medixotantas vezes, y a otras muchas personas, que no con menos cuy dado le examinaron, y en fuma yo hago las diligencias, y escrivo como hombre que tenoo de morir.

y no sé quando.

Dixo mas que de la isla de Tanmaco a tres dirs de camino, y de Chicayana ad os; ay otra isla mayor que Guasoo islalas dos dichas, que se llama Guaytopo, poblada de gente tan blanca, como loes en comun la nuestra. y que basta los hombres tienen rubios los cabellos mas y menos, y tambien negros, y que se labran las barrigas, y a su mbel todo en rueda, y que todas tres istas son gente amiga, y de una lengua, y que u san darse 30 la vec en los carrillos, y que tienen por sennal de enemigos quando buyen los rostros, y que en esta isla ay muchos ostrales de los tres generos menores, en grandes trechos de mar, de fondo assicoma el de Chica yana, y que tienen muchas perlas. T preguntado si el ania estado en ella, dixo que no. Luego le bolui a preguntar como fa bia lo dicho, y lo como desta manera que de aquella ista falio un nauto gran de los suyos, con mas de cincuenta per fonas, a bufcar conchas de Carer, de que ofan hazer çarçillos, y otros inquetes que cuelgan de las oreras, a otra ifla poblada que llaman Mecaraylay, que estando a vist a della, les dio Mecarajas Isla un viento contrario que les obligo a buscar su isla, de la qual estendo cerça, bolaio el viento a ser contrario, y que andando en estas bueltas se les acabo el bastimento, a cuya falta murieron quarenta perso-

nas de bambre y sed, y que el estana en la Isla de Tanmaco, quando este nanio aporto alli con solos siete bombres muy blancos, excepto eluno que era moreno, y con tres mugeres blancas, y bermofas como E-40 Spannolas, que tenian los cabellos rubios, y muy largos, y que todas tres venian cubiertas de cabeçasbasta los pies con vuos como mantos az ules, o Negros, ymuy delgados, a que llamanfosfoa, y que de todas estas diez personas, solo quedò vino el Indio Olan, al qual los nuestros quando alis lo viero en Taumaco, san blanco y tan bermeio. le llama ron el Flamenco, como queda referido, y que este Indio Olan y otros le contaron quanto ba dicho, de aquella isla de Guay tupo, y que el musmo vio ve nir a su isla de Chicayana, otro nanio de aquellos de dos vasos cargado de gente blanca y bermosa, y con muchas y muy lindas muchachas, 7 dio a entender contando por los dedos de diez en diez, ser por todos ciento y diez per-

Dixomas, que de etra isla que se llama Tucopio, que es a donde los dos Indios se ceharon a nado, como queda referido, a cinco dias de su nauegar, ay aquella gran tierra Manicolo, poblada de mucha gente lo-

Sc ra) mulata en grandes pueblos, y para dar a entender su tamanno, sennale el de Acapulco, y otros may-asanco. ores, y por esto le pregunte si ania pueblos tan grandes como Mexico, dixo que no, mas que muchas gentes, y que son su amigos, y no comen carne humana, ni se entienden las lenguas, y que es tierra de muy altas serra nias, y grandes rios, y que algunos dellos no se pueden vadear, sino passarse en canoas : y pue para ir de la ista Tucopia a aquella sierra, quando sale el Sol les queda a la mano izanierda, que viene a fer del Sur para el Sudeste. Dioc sues, que si esto es assi como lo dixo, que viene bien con la cordillera do sierras que se vieron ir corriendo a la buelta del Poniente, como esta dicho en su lugar, quando fisimos desgarrando. Mucho encarecio Pedro la grandeza po placion y fertilidad, y otras cosas desta tierra, y que el y otros Indios fueron a ella en una de fus embarcaciones, a bufcar un tronco de un grande arbol, do los muchos que ay en ella, para hazer una piraqua, y que vio alli un puer to, y dio a entender ser mayor, y

60 de boca mas cerrada que lo es el de la Babia de san Felipe y Santiago, y que el miro su sondo ser de arena, y suplay a Del astrecomo el otro ya dicho, y que tiene dentro quatro rios y mucha gente, y que per la costa de aquella sierra andunieron hazia el Poniente mas camino que ay de Asapulco a Mexico sin verle sin, y se bulmeron a su ista. Admierto que como jo ania visto aquella ista de Tucopia dixe adrede que sabia aner en ella muchas oftras ; perlas , ; que dixo que no ay sino mucho fondo, ; que es assi vercad porque lo bize Ceccce 2

Fono fono Isl

Pupan Iffa.

En Mexico lless a Pedro per des veres acafa de vue brondador de perías, y a mis vaças le mestro de tedas la generas comunes: afficemo los vio fe alegoro mucho, y dece com grao demostravam per caractemise, que en qui estrar a y muchos perías y mas thatebas que aquellas. Alefrole mes com homesco, adjoir fives grandes; abromadas, hiem mai gefto, y decegado me crabamos, y que en fa tierra ania meso. Mas alignecabase el Medida mayor del puestro de Acaptolo don Pedro Elevar, pues le mofiro vera cadena de muchos farias de polary, le preguno fi, en fa tierra ania de aquellas cadenas, alice que no. La cadena de muchos farias de polary, le preguno fi, en fa tierra ania de aquellas cadenas, alice que no. La cadena de muchos farias de polary, le preguno fi, en fa tierra ania de aquellas cadenas, alice que no. La cadena de muchos farias de polary, per la familio no amano, fe preguno fi, mais que no elfasano boradadas, pfe puedo prefumir que a faita de brocas, y de taladres, so fe apronactem de la cade de la prefum de del se conche la pería de las conches for polar de la conches for perío mesore, y del milio mostive y faciles de boradar.

zabulter le . quedando fiempre referuadas las dos, quarro, ocho, y mas braças como or le pelcan en la

Pouro gran tierra. Dro mat, que en Taumaco y vu fuito gran piloto, y que fabe las nombres de muchas terras, estas quales ha citado muchas vezes, y que de una Grantierta que fe lamar Pouto mos poládas, cos y a genus lorca, e ludos, algunos fon amigos fa yos, y otros mos pholeofos y guerros os entrefi, vraxo a fa sila de Taumaco von pagaga yo de pecho y caello colorado, ciertas fiechas com puntas a formade escobillo, y que en influente von, fast testo, y de a entender que les querian para en ellas mater must facilmente, por esta formade esta de la contrata en ella mater must facilmente, por esta moderne un entendido, y duxo fer negro al refiere de las pontas en Coloraca come ella, musba vezes le correctadox este debos, plempre mas en from esta en blemaca come ella, musba vezes le correctadox este debos, plempre mas en from esta esta funcione.

Adaierto, que en la Babipa de fam Étipé > Santago, le ballaron en una cafa muchas picitas negras perfedis, que a cafo me traeron de parett que grandes, cada una delas como una nuez., y que en la cudada de Mexico un don Francisco Pacheco desenno de minas, un Diego Comez. de Adaina la vierton en mi mi pofada, y el una dellos un mostra on lleno de aos aleptata, por efio la lleuamos lingo a cafa eu en esfanda que lo puje o un orifol, y ella por la raconos le dos unos fuego que elevifol fe desfondo, y affino se vion na da todavie, no me suma quedado con la otra parte que el ensandor requemo y en esta evo una puntilla que estradada al martillo fe tecó suco en unez piedras, diexeron fetu pietros un esta de plata : para mas estrificarfe tocarou plomo y estamo, y otra plata conescida muto a ella, mas busu alla quien divo que aquel ensago se una de teco la latural y vietro que con faliatron y curia mas busu alla quien divo que aquel ensago se una de toco la latural, a vietro que la plato en esta con colar, el en da padar afrimo los enuesos el una de la cone la latural y divero mos platoros que en sistia.

Eltas piedras ania mostrado a Pedro, y affi como las vio, dixo que en los cerros de Tamaiaco a y um chas idellas, y que fe lluma Treaque, y que todos las que aquillo gran tierra Mancolo, y que todos las Indios la aqueren, los vune para labras fe, y orres para minexer fe cen ellas, y lo mifino dixo Paulo de fistierra, que es la Bahia de fan Felipe y Santinge de admode fe traxeon, y dixee minero appea admode a minisce a questient, y que post en sunixes (a fadeuveron las minas defatas y oro de S. Lussa de la nuna Elfouma, y las de axogue de Guancauelica del Pira. Y admerto, y que destre Pedro que vos ficelas con punta de plata, puerce que por traco de la pose, que fe faillo en quel peco metal que tam a cafe feran o fista y punta de plata, puerce que por traco de la pose, que fe faillo en quel peco metal que tam a cafe from o faixo.

Para deligibilitos de la sterra y el fitto fer paralelo del Ystucheli, ana exerc que paeda fer afficano fo sixo.

Adutris de feran supe Pedrom defines que fueba danfe a extende en unufra lectros, conformo contelho

Adustriale mai que le curon usqua o per office nel la tierra gravde, come en las muchas juis y mischas que tes, yaquemas con pulmats tabradas y por idurar vivares coltres, largos cabellos rubius, negres, frija din errefior, de que elas poledas e, i imunamente en la mucha abundacia de comista de como migros corres que todos tienem. T tambien fe adustria que to do lo refesta lo auemo visito della veza, y que lavis, era donde el lumino fureso, parece fest a milma que va profiguiendo, y de la gravade-a que clien distria cara dinde el lumino fureso, parece fest a milma que va profiguiendo, y de la gravade-a que clien distria cara iterat mas al Sar Lefles, y Oelte, y que l'an a milagra que en aquella acustia quarta de gobio, cilit muy grandes, y muy effendida provincias llenastodas de muchas y muy varias escrete, y mue en todos cere 63 res una ventana quante mus fueres fabricado de quinne grados arriba y por vender fe es va caro, fi distributivos de contra d

Aduiertase que la primera vez que el Adelantado Aluaro de Mendasta sue : disentro las sua que llamo , de Salomon, ballo en ellas , y se traxeron cantidad de perlas esstadas al fue os perque los trases falo comen la carne affando las ofirsa, y que el tegundo viage que bizo el mísmo e Adelantado, desen. The second bris de nuevola is la de Santacrine, donde mirro, y que en est ay amino vi mucha e contesa, y aquesta Voysice, mucha posenula de necer referrada, y que de vora aietra is la alli cerca, se rava vor mecha cho que se lamo se viage miguelisto, y que este despues que sepa nuestra legrada, do noticio de autre en su terra muchas seria, esta congranda tempera de se se fasti, Tambien se adautera, que esta dia de autre en se tres en esta menula de nacar, de los tres tamaunes, se na vana dellas Ostiones secos, adonde se ballavon algunas perlas menula das pormanera, que suntanado o que dixe Pedro, a lo que se ba visilo, son quueze las silla de que y notica que sumen perlas, y per la vista de fas conchas, se puedan, y drum esseran, y ambren por ser Aquella poca altura, san propria pura certar se, que auma Aquellas grandes Tagavilas, lo devo al tempo, y sobo adamento certa, que per se devo devo, que o grandas perlas, que tambien da vo autre grandes conchas, capaci, dellas. Te se suma des, que Don mustro como no da de van vez sodo que por permeno baze la presua alcesso, y aque permeno baze la presua a desensa que se que son cas como a

To. Al., en est...

Drown in Pedro que ai diablo lluman Terua, y que babla con los Indus de un pala sin ser visso, y que a climsson, y atudos ellos de nocho, y muchos vezes, les paspana los rostros, y los pechos con cosa muy fina, y que questendo saber lo que est an ballunan nada; y ostro decia mosstrando cierto recato y temor dan do bun a enviendo ser seo alguna para ello bien aborrecible; y tanbien diva a etro y que no a min, que antes que a site terra su pravapa, el diablo les ania due ho que los aniamos de tra matar. Mossiman muchos desse destina de la suterna su terra, a su terra para esta decens al semon el Tamanaco chos el bun que se uniamos hocho, y que los, que los, que los, que los, que los que se a terra para esta con el consenio de la consenio del la consenio de la consenio del consenio de la consenio de la consenio del consenio de la consenio del la consenio de la consenio de la consenio de la consenio del la consenio del consenio del la consenio del la consenio del la

que a su tierra fueramos na el diablo les ania dic ho que los aniamos de ir a matar. Mostrana muchos desses de bolner a su tierra, para dezir al semor de Taumaco, todo el bien que le autamos becho, y que lo e o otros Indios su companneros, ellos mismos se hecharon de las naos a nado, que nosotros no les hizimos ningun mal. I tambien mas, para dezir a todos fus naturales quan buena cofa es fer Christiano, y que a el despues que lo era, el diablo no le hablo, ni le o y o, ni de noche le palpo, y para traer su hijo, y venirse a vinir con no forros. Y tamcien dixo, que en su illa de Chicayana, ay perros grandes como los nuestros. ane los llaman Ticuri. y que ay muchas auas como las de Europa, mas que no las Cabien comer: y una fruta quiso dezir mançanas porque las vie, y mucho gengibre, y que en su tiempo baze buen frio con ser en tan poca altura. Y mas dixo, que a los que matan bonbres los aborcan, y que nuestros cauallos son buenos para andar en ellos, mas no para fer fernido de los bonbres. Era Pedro al parecer de edad de venticinco annos. v en aquella sazon que declaro sabia poco de la lengua Castellana, y a esta causa costo mucho trabaso esta su declaración, porque se le ha negado y repets do muchas vezes, y parece que si viniera diera 30 mas razon que ba dado: mas yo creo que es mas paracreer lo que esta dicho, que no lo fuera. si llegara a ser se ladino, con que yo y todos quanto le trataro le teniamos por hombre de verdad, y de verquença. Va dia entro en la y glesia de San Francisco de Mexico, y por ver en ella muchos Crucifixos dixo, que como ania alli tantos Diofes, fi le dezian que no ania mas que un felo Dios Fuele respondido ser todos retratos del verdadeao Christo. Y con esto, y con lo demas que se le dixo parecio satisfacerse y los frazles que le oyeren se alegraron por ser pregunta de hombre que sabia discurrir ; y finalmente Domingo de Ramos murso : yo fio de la misericordia de Dios, que pues por un en estranno modo le trazo al bautismo, y a morir confessado, y olea, le y en tan sennalado dia, y son muestas de buen Christiano, que ha sido para darle su Santa gloria. Y este fue su dichoso fin, del qual deuo estar muy consolado, y parece que su diuma Magefad va ordenando, que casi no ay amedios humanos para, acabar Aquella su tan grande obra, o alme-AD nos que falten Aquellos en que mas estrine, o puedo estriuar.

le que pude inner de la le lengues de Pedro y Paulo, lo que dezir, que es muy pronunciable.

Pertodo lo dicho le voe claramente, que folo ba auidatos grandes partes de tierras a partedat defia
Europa, y de la Africa, y Africa la primera est la America, que desfinebro, Chorifonal Ciston, y la fegenda postrera del mundo, es la que vi, y pretendo pobler, y acabar de defenbrir para U.M. Efia
grandes a deus de fer abraçada, el fipo tenes touto de blos, como per fer des principos aven ten que
obra; y de tantos, y tan grandes bienes, que ninguna otra de fu genero puede fer man, si tanto al prefente,
nadelante, como lo padre moffrar (fo y ordo, pregentado.

Simdo pues este caso tan adminable quanto suema, y cuendo, tan empennada mi conciencia. 3 ferme sueste que que per abrevier, prometo a D. M. de pudiere luçar con estu. 65 yu. tan estande in tenenta, voar son par ama estigar a V. M. a lo que van este sado le terrie el tetulo de Rey Catolico, y disfeo sor de la Fé, recuerdo, quan Real, y semanda merced de Dou es esta, megada a todos los Reyes del mando, y ido a l. M. concedida, curso sondo, ò resto, es tresça carsia prandes insuitas, y a su resto de colou estu V. M. de conseguir el mas principal intento que es solo bazer la querra al mesterno, que camo estrago baze en vo numero con cossos de almat, y edimidas por la persona de Christo.

15. Grades. The first Voy.

Cecece :

cox

CHAP. II. Policie to deny planting Wine and Oyle in New Spaine.

con la esperanea que queda de quantas se han de saluar andando tiempos , siendo la saluación de una sola de tanto precio, que si necessario fuera el mismo Christo viniera, a dar la vida por ella. Y con esto quedo Sennor bien entendido de quanto valor es este becho, quantos premios dara Dios, por auerlo (contanto amor y feruor) intentado, y quantos mas grados de gloria tendra. V. M. si da fin a esta obra de tanta viedad y miles cordia, y tan diona de recebir en la memoria de las gentes aduirtiendo que no fera con tanto gasto de dineros, ni de hombres, ni con Aquellos estragos, ruynas, y escandalos, que suele aner para anerioar el derecho de muy pequennos estados, sino poner debaxo de la proteccion Real con medios todos muy fuanes, y in tificados, quanto los puedo mostrar una tan gran parte de toda la tierra poblada, pera en ella sembrar bienes, y costellos frutos que yo espero en Dios han de ser muchos, muy duices, muy ricos, y mur duraderos: y solo quiero por paga de santo quanto tanto vale, que V.M. crea la mportancia del caso, so y quanto conusene loque pido, y que en todo trato verdad, y que es animo de vender todo lo passado, presente, y venidero por un precio, y este es Sennor de valde.

A note of Australia del Espiritu Santo. Written by Mafter HAKLYYT.

Thon Fernandez, a Pilot of Lisbone, told me Richard Hakluyt, before other Portugals in Lon-Simon Bernamez, a run v. Lisono, John the eaghteenth of March 1604. That he having beene in the Citie of Lima in Peru, did perfeelly understand, that jours Ships and barkes departed from the Said Citie of Lima, about the yeare 1600, 20 in the moneth of February toward the Philippinas. Their Generallwas a Meltizo, that is to fay, the Sonne of a panier', and an Indian woman. And that feeking to make way toward the Philippinas, they were do men with strong Northerne winds to the South of the Equinoctial Line, and fell with divers rich Con trajes and llands, as it femeth, not farre from the Iles of Salomon. One chiefe place they called Monte de Plata, for the great abundance of filmer that is like to be there. For they found two crownes worth of filner, as he reported, in two handfuls of dust. And the people case them for Iron as much, and more in quantitie of filuer. They report that this place is two moneths fayling from Lima, and as much backe agame.

Concerning this Voyage also: the Licentiate Luis de Tribaldo, a Gentleman of qualitie in the Conde de villa Mediana, the Spanish Ambassadours house, told me Richard Hakluyt, that two yeeres pass the 30 Saw at Madrid, a Captaine of quality suing for license to conquer this place, or that he obtained the same. And that divers religious men and Fathers were to goe to convert them to Christianitie. They arrived at their returns from this Voyage at Peru, in the moneth of August.

CHAP. XI.

The Historie of LOPEZ VAZA Portugall (taken by Captaine WI-THRINGTON at the River of Plate, Anno 1586 with this Discourse about him) touching American places, discoueries and occurents; abridged.

Di courfe was published by M. Hale out of concavning the whole, I

Ona Hiffania was called fo by the Spaniards, when they made Discouery of it, for that it was like the Country of Spaine, though the people of the Country termed the Land after their owne Countrey Language (some one partafter one, some after another) the most part of the people called it Eucata. This Countrey hath fundry great Provinces in it, to fruitfull of all kinde of necessaries in it for man, that there is neither Africa, Afra, nor Europe, that is better ; for that of futte- 50

have added & nance for mans bodie there lacketh no store, as Wheat and all other Graines, all beafts necessary inferted thof: for man to eate or to vie, with great flore of Silkes, Mynes of Gold, Siluer, Stones, and Pearle. things which I The Countrey is very well inhabited, fo that it is thought there is no part of the Worldbetter. thought figles. The Country is very well inhabited, for that it is thought there is no part of the worldbetter ung outfuch. The King of Spaine because hee hath many other Countries under him, hee doth little efterme of as before have this Countrey, but doth take out of it all things that are for his profit, having vied thole people bin by others with great crueltie, and taking of them much Tribute; this Land hath many Ports in the North Sea, and much more in the South Sea, the principall Ports in the North fide is Saint Inan de Laa-At this place doth he discharge the Armadas that come from Spaine, and from this place they carrie their Merchandize to the great Citie of Mexico: which Citie is fixtie leagues within the Land, and knowne by the Parithes in the lame, to have a hundred and fittle thousand faire hou- 60 ies of Indians, and fix thousand faire houses the Spaniards have in it.

The feare and reverence that they vie towards the Spaniards is fuch; that one Spaniard may goe among a thousand of them, and thrike the chiefest of them and vie his pleasure, without any word given by the Indians to the contrarie, fuch is the feare that thefe filly people have of the

Spaniards. But now, thankes be to Almightie God, the Indians of that Country and Kingdome are become Christians: yet notwithstanding now and then the old men, having not forgotten their former Law, doe vie their Idolatry, which being knowneare very cruelly corrected by the Frien for the same offence. The people of this Kingdome are of a sharpe wir, and good underflanding, for what foeuer it be, Sciences or other Arts, thele people are very apt to learne it with fmall inftructing, the Indians of this Countrie doe make great ftore of Woollen Cloth and Silkes, Silkes and to that they now beginne to carrie of these Silkes for Spaine. And have all other things necessarie clothes. that any other Kingdome of the Christians have, onely Wine and Oyle, which the King of Spaine denieth to have made there, but fuch as commeth from Spaine, because of his customes, denied to not withit anding the King doch allow them to plant Vineyards for to eate of the Grapes. This Vineyards, Land is greatly commended not for that aboue mentioned, nor yet for the Gold and Silver Mynes Ports and that it bath, but for the great number of Ports for shipping it hath in the South Sea, where they shipping. make many great thips, with the which thips they have traffique with them of Peru, and Parawna, and then they have a Trade to the Philippinas, and to the llands of Molnecas and China, fo that the commodities which the Portugall carrieth for Portugall out of the East Indies, are likewife brought to the Citie of Mexico, by reason of their shipping, although not in so great quantitle, as they carry for Liftone, not for that they of Mexico either want shipping or abilitie, but because the Spaniards would conquer it with the Sword as he hath done other Linds, and not by the way of Traffique, as the Portugall loth, the principall Port from whence this Merchandize 20 doth come, is called Aquatorke, in the Coast of China on the North fide.

After the Conquett of this Kingdome of Mexico, the order how the Spaniard did divide this Land, was this. The principall Cities they refined to the King of Spaine, and to the Generall of this Conqueit, who was renowmed Ferdinando Curtie, they affigned vnto him a great Valley, or Cornanake Valas we call it a low Land betweene two Mountaines, which was called Cornonake, by which, Val-ley. ley he had the name of Marquesse of the Valley, where there were great Townes, in which some houses in this affirme to be about 400000. hre houles; whereby the rent was to him better worth then three Valley. hundred thousand Duckets by the yeere. These Rents were confirmed to him and his for ever. The other part of the Land that remayned, was parted among the rest of the Captaines and

Souldiers which were at this Conquest, some had a hundred thousand Duckets by yeare, and 40 other fortie thouland Duckets, and iome fittie thouland Duckets, and hee that had least had rea thouland Dickets by the yeare, so that now there are very few which have this Rent . for that they are most of them dead, so that great part of the faid Rents are fallen into the Kings hand, wherefore there are many infurrections against the King, which cost many a mans life.

And now to proceed farther along the Coast, which is a Land full of great Mountains, and very hot with much raine, for which caule it is a very viholome Countrey, where breedeth all notiome wormes and beafts, therefore there are very few Indians dwelling there, and no Spaniards, fo that the Countrey is almost deiolate. The first Land that is inhabited by the Spaniards along the Coast, is called Veragua, this is the most richest Land of Gold then all the rest of the Indies : therefore it is inhabited with Spaniards. In this place the people are alwayes ficke, and it raineth Gold. 40 continually, and the Land yeeldeth no fruit, lo that all their fustenance commeth from other

places, all which necessities the Spaniards suffer with great patience for the couetousnesse of the Gold , the which Gold they get out of the Rivers with the helpe of a number of Negroes. I doe verily beleeue that if this Land were now the ancient Romanes , or effe the Egyptians, they would furely make a channell from the end of this Riner de Carinas (which A Channell to iffueth from the Lake of Nicaragua) to the South Sea, for that there is no more but foure bemade, leagues betweene the Sea and the River, to that there they might Trade to the Moluccas, and to the Coast of China, to would it be sooner and easier done then the long and troublesome Voyages of the Portugals, and fooner made, then to goe through the Straits of Magellan; which is almost vnpofible to palle thorow.

From this Land of Veragua vnto the Iland of Margereta , the Coast along is called the firme Tera finna. 50 Land, not for that the other places are not of the firme Land, but because it was the first firme Land that the Spaniards did conquer after they had past the Hands. This Land is very hot, and hath much raine, and for this cause is very vinealthfull, and the most vilest place of all the rest, is Nombre de Dies cailed Nombre de Dios: which is the first place inhabited after you have passed Veragua. There first may be in Nombre de Dios: about foure hundred houles, and hath a very good Port for shipping. The cause why the Spaniards inhabited here in this place, was for that it should bee the way by Land to the South Sea, and for the Trade of Peru, that is from hence vnto the Citic of Panama Panama. eighteene leagues. And Panama standeth on the Coast of the South Sea. To this Towne of Nombre de Dies doth come all Spanish thipping, and there discharge them, then put they the 60 goods into small Barkes that goe vp a River to a house which is called , The bouse of Crosses, where the small Barkes doe discharge the goods againe. And then they put it on Mules to to

Aguatorke.

carrie it to Panama, which is fewen leagues from This house of Crosses, all which they doe with much labour and great charge, because the Land hath great store of raine, and full of Mountaines, and very vnhealthfull, therefore they often want victuals, for the victuals they have come

The Ports. Mexico.

ed handfories o Siririna Disloyand teba Oxechion, which you have be ore more complear. Varre made with the de-

eras.

from Peru, and Nova Hiftania. This Towne of Nombre de dios, fince they have had the traffice out of Spaine, are growne maruellous rich, and very well inhabited, but in fhort time the people * Here follow- left the Towne, lauing onely the Merchants, because of the vnhealthfulnesse * thereof.

The King of Spaine hearing of the affaires of Drake and Oxenbam, fent cut of Spaine three hundred Souldiers which should make warre against those Negros that had aided the Englishmen which were flaues vinto the Spaniards, but runne away from their Mafters, and loyned with the Englishmen, thinking that way to be revenged of the Spaniards crueltic. But when these three hundred Souldiers were arrived in the Countrie, at their first comming they tooke many of the Negros, and did on them great inflice; according to their faults committed, but afterwards the Souldiers were a long time before they could get one Negro. Which newes being fent vnto the King by his Captaines, asalio how the Countrie was tull of Mountaines and Rivers, and very valuealthfull, informuch that his Souldiers died, he did write to his Captaines to make agreement with those Negros, to the end the Countrie might bee in quiet. And the Negros inhabited two places where the Spanuards willed them, to was the Kings pardon proclaimed to all those Negros. from the time that they fled from their Masters into the Mountaines vnto that prefere day, on condition that all those Negros that did runne from their Masters that day forward they should he bound to bring them dead or alive; but if they brought them not, that then they should pay for them, and to make all quiet in the Mountaines : and on these conditions all things were Non-Tasnes, concluded and agreed vpon. So the Negros dwell in great Townes, where they have Spaniards for their Teachers, and a Spaniard for their ludge; and with this they hold themselves very well an contented, and are obedient vnto their Rulers. The King of Spaine hearing that Englishmen, as well as Frenchmen, have yied that Coast, hee

Sauco Evench thins taken by two Gallies. Fr. Drake with :4. ihips.

cauled two Gallies to be made, and well appointed, to keepe the Coaft; the first yeere that they were made, they tooke fixe or feuen French shippes, and after this was knowne, there vied few Englishmen, or French men of warre, to come on the Coast, vntill this yeere 1 ,86, that the aforefaid Francis Drake came with a strong Fleet, of about sourcand twentie ships, and did such harme as it is well knowne to all Christendome : but God sparing the King of Spaines life, he will sufficiently provide to keepe his Subjects from the inuations of other Nations.

Cartagena .

Now, to goe forward with our begunne worke, the first People that is in this Coast, being past Nombre de Dios, is called Cartagena, it is a healthfuller Countrie, and a greater Towne then to the other, and a better Countrie, with plentie of Victuals, and a very good Port for shipping, passing any of the rest, and is called Cartagena, for that it resembleth very much the Citie of Care tagena in Spaine: there are in it about foure hundred fire houses in the Citie; it is very rich , by reason of the ships staying there when they goe or come from Spaine. And if the ships chance to winter before they goe home, then they lie at Cartagena: alfo it is greatly enriched by the Merchandife that here they doe discharge, for to carrie to the new Kingdome of Granada; and much New Granads. Gold commeth from the faid Kingdome vnto Cartagena. This new Kingdome of Granada, is two hundred leagues within the Land. From Cartagena to this Kingdome they cannot travell by Land, because of the Mountaines, and standing waters, which lie in their way, so that they carrie their goods vp a River, called The great River of Magdalene; they can goe with their so Barques vp this River but twentie leagues, yet the River is both large and very deepe, but there runneth a great current, fo that the Barques discharge the goods at a place in the River, called Branco de Malambo, into small Canoas which rowe close by the shoare side.

Magdalina a great Riuer. The River of B. Asce de Ma-

There is a passage by the New Kingdome, and Popayan, from Cartagena to Pern, by Land, which is about fine hundred leagues, fo that taking the two hundred leagues, which they goe vp the River, the other three hundred leagues is a Countrie well inhabited, and quiet travelling, fo that oftentimes the Posts passe to and fro, but because the way is long, the Merchants doe not trauell that way but when they are forced thereunto, if any forraine Nations should take and keepe the South Sea, the King might have his treature brought to this place from Peru, and to into Spaine. For in times palt there was a rebellion in Peru by the Spaniards, against the King, 50 and thorow these Provinces he fent his power to suppresse them.

Santa Marta is a very poore Towne, because it bath beene often robbed of the Frenchmen,

and hath no trade, but by a few Indians that dwell about them. Here beginneth the great Moun-

taines conered all with inow, which compaffeth all the Countrie of India and Pern, vntill you

come to the further end of the Straites of Magelan, thele Mountaines are frene with the snowe

upon them about thirtie leagues into the Sea, in the bottome of this Wilderneffe, or Mountains,

Land that is joyning to it is full of Mountaines, and the Inhabitants are very many, and withall

of a good courage, and they wie to poison their Arrowes, so that in striking of a man, hee can-

Great Mountaines couered with fnowe.

Tagrona Valley, there is a Valley called Tagrona, which is the richell place that is knowne: but because the

70, Tands. Santa Domingo.

notescape death. Therefore it lieth vinco quered, and many Spanife Captaines there have 60 On this Coast of The Firme Land, there are above feventie Hands of Sante Domingo, and Cuta Cubi and Porta and Porto Rico, although it be not very great, yet is is inhabited by the Spaniard; the rest of all the Hands have beene inhabited by Indian, where was good flore of Gold, and Pearles, and

Emeral is: but the Spaniards have deltroyed all those Indians from off the Earth, and in many of those Hands is nothing of any value, therefore I have small cause to intreat of them: but Santa Domingo is an Iland of great bignesse, and hath beene very full of people and rich Mines of Gold and Pearles, but now all is waited away; for it was as full of people as any place of that hienelle in the world, yet now are there none left, for they were men of so hard a heart . that they killed themselves, rather then they would serve the Spaniards. It happened on a time, that a Spaniard called certaine Indians to goe to worke in the Mines, which kinde of labour did most A ftrance was grieue them, and would rather doe violence on themselues, then to goe; which the Spaniard to keepe men perceiuing, he faid voto them, feeing you will rather hang your felues then to goe and worke, aliue. will likewise hang my felfe, and goe with you , because I will make you worke in the other

world: Eur the Indians hearing this, faid, wee will willingly worke with you, because you shall not goe with verto vinwilling they were of the Spanards companie: fo that of all the Inhabitants of this lland, there was none elcaped death, but onely these few, which was by the meanes of

this Spaniard for elfe they would have hanged themfelues alfo.

There is neere this Iland another Iland greater then Santa Domingo, called Cuba; it is like cuba. voto Santa Dominge, although there is not fuch store of Sugar, the chiefest place in this fland is called Labanana, and is a very good Harbour : these people are very rich, by reason of the ship. La banana. ning that doth touch there, which are bound for Nona Hispania and Peru, therefore there is a Cattle in this Harbour kept with Spanif Souldiers; for there is no other Cattle in all the Land, 20 nor Souldiers but onely here, and in Florida. There is also another Hand inhabited with Spaniards, neere voto this, which is called Porto Rico: it is but little, and every way as plentifull as Porto rice.

the other two are.

I will follow my D courie of the Port Townes along the Coast of the maine Land, and page The Port fing once the lland of Margareta, there are no Townes inhabited by the Spaniards, till you come Townes. to Fernanbote, which is on the Coast of Brasill: yet betweene the Hand and Fernanbote, there is Fernanbote, the great Rmer of Maranoya. This River is one of the greatest in the world, it was first found The River of when as the Spaniards did feeke out the other Coaft, but none can goe into this River because of Maranon. the great current that commeth downe; and withall there are many shelues of fand lying about the mouth of it, whereby it was long before that the Riches which is in the River was knowne, vnrillothe time that the Land of Pers was conquered; at which time a Captaine called Gonfalo Pizierro, entring into the Countrie of Pern, came into a Land which they named La Cane- La Canela, la, because there tame from thence great store of Cinnamon , but not altogether so good as that

which commeth from the Indies. Proceeding further into the Countrie, he came to a great Ri- The great Riuer, where he faw many of the Countrie people come vp in Canoas , bringing Gold to buy and uer of Meranfell with the Spaniards. The Captaine feeing this, was defirous to fee the end of this River, but non. could not travell by Land because of the Mountaines, wherefore he made a small Pinnace, to goe fee from whence their Indians brought their Gold; and he fent in this Pinnace, a Captaine under him, called Orillana, with thirtie men, the which went downe the River, but could not returne to their Captaine Pizarro, because of the great current which was very strong against them, 40 and forced them to paffe the River, and enter into the Sea , and fo came to the Ilanu of Marga- Margareta and reta: but as they pailed the River, they found it well inhabited with Indians, and to have good Iland, fore of Gold. There men with their Pinnace were passing downe this River a yeere and a halfe;

for the River lieth very crooked, which maketh a long way by water, and the Spaniards never durit land, because they saw the Countrie so full of people; but tooke many Canoas, where they had good flore of Victuals, and some Gold. Now this Captaine Orillana comming vnto Margareta with this good newes and riches, hee determined with himfelfe, not to returne againe vnto his Captaine Pizarro, which fent him, but tooke his way from hence to the King of Spaine, and prefented him with the Gold that he brought out of the River. Whereupon the King fent him with a Fleet of ships, and fixe hundred men, to inhabite the faid Ruer: but because of to the great current, and shoald that are in this River, he left the most part of his men, and ships,

and with thole that remained, hee went vnto certaine Hands hard by the River, and built him Pinnaces: but the Countrie being very vnhealthfull, hee himfelfe died, and many of his men, and the reft that remained, went every one the way that pleafed him best.

The fame of this River was straightway spred thorow Spaine and Portugall, so that a Gentleman of Portugall, called Leus de Melo, which asked licence of Don Inan the third, then King of Poringall, that he might goe and conquer this faid River: for from the mouth of this River to the mouth of this River of Plate, is that part of America, which the Kings of Portugal doe hold according to the partition that the Kings of Spaine and Portugall both made betweene Brafill con themselues; fo that the King of Portugall hauing this River in his part, hee gaue it to the said quered.

60 Leus de Melo, to conquer: who taking ten ships, and eight hundred men, among which there were many Gentlemen, and comming to the mouth of this River, hee lost all the shippes faving two fayle, and in one of them that were faued was Lene de Melo, also the most part of the men that were in the ships were faued and got to shoare, and so went along voto the Hand Margaresa, from whence they were disperfed throughout all the Indies. Thus these two senerall Fleets

of theps being call away, by fuch cuill fortune, neuer any Captaine after, would give the attempt to con gher this faid River. Yet from the new Kingdome of Granade, before spoken of two or three Captaines have gone by Land to discouer it.

Pedro de Orque, None of all these came to any plaine discouerie till few yeeres past, a Capraine of the Conn. trie of N marre, called Pedro de Orane, who came into the Countrie of Peru, neere the place where before Capraine Pizzero had first di'couered, and had with him about feuen hundred men. all Spaniards, which was maruell that he could have so many, and amongst them there were many G. nelemen, and old Souldiers of Pers, which cauled many mutinies and infurrections. With all there men be came to the head of this River, (all the matters that come from the Mountaines or Pers. and the Rivers which runne within the Land from fixteene degrees, and the Line, runne all 11 to this River, which cauteth it to be fo great.) Now at the head of this River, the Captaine Pedro de Orzana ma le rifreene Pinnaces, with many Canoas, in which he carried about two thou fand Indian; to helpe him, with many Horles and other prouision, for to inhabite there foris was not possible for him to carrie all his prouition by Land, for that the Mountaines bee very great, and betweene them many small Ruers, which issue out of this great River about twentie langues into the Land. So this Captaine having all his things in good order, went downe this River with all his men, and came to a plaine Countrie from the Mountaines, where the Indiana Towns foun- did dwell, and there held a Counfell, determining in that place to build a Towns, and to fortile it very frong, because he would leave all his stude, there and such men as were not Souldiers. So they pegan to make the faid Towne, and worke on it all the Winter, where because it raineth a much, and is with all very hot, whereby ficknesse did beginne to rife among them, and also want of Victuals; wherefore his men began to murmure. There men came all out of the Land of Pers. which is the fruitfullest Land in all the World, and most richest; therefore these men were the more given to have their fill of Bread and Meat, then to lay their bodies to labour, which was the caule: that although the Countrie in which they were, was very fruitfull and also they faw with their eyes, the Gold that was there, as also how up in the Countrie it fremed much better then the place in which they were, notwithfranding they murmured, and would needs returne for Pers, from whence they came.

Lopez de Azira bis mutinie.

body, and was lame of one of his legs, but very variant, and of good experience in the warres (this man was one or the principall mutiners in Peru, and therefore given vivally thereunto) this fel-Low asked the Souldiers, what they went to freke in those Wildernesses where as they went brought, for faid he, if you feeke riches, there is enough in Perm, and there is, faid hee, Bread, Wine, Fleih, and faire Women, to that it were better to goe thither and conquer that, and take it out of the hands of the Spaniards, for that would easily be done; for that all the Souldiers, & poote men of Pers would turne vnto them, and that were a better way then to goe and conquer the fausge people in those Mountaines, so that they once having the government of Pers, that then the King of Spaine should agree with them, if not fail he, we shall not lacke them that will fend vs faccour for to have the riches that is in the Land of Pers. By these pertwalions hee brought many Souldiers to be of his minde; and agreed with a young Gentleman of Simil, called Dos # Fernando de Gosman, the which was in loue with a yong woman, that the Captain Pedro de Orzas The Captaine or Offene had, and therefore he did the fooner agree with Lope de Agire to fulfill his intent. Ons n'ght, the Captaine being afleepe in his bed, thele Souldiers entred into his Bed-chamber, & flabbed him with their Daggers, as also they slue all the Captains friends, and they made a great cit, faying, Line the Kong, time the King, wherewith all the Campe was in an vprore. Then Lope de Agus made vnto the So. Idiers a long Oration, & got them all to confent with him, some by force, some because they durst not say to the contrarie, and others with their good will, in the end they all agreed unto his determined purpole. So they made the gentleman their head, and Lope de Agne was made Captaine, this done, and because the people should the better hold their opinion, hee did as great a villanie as euer any Spaniard did, for hee made an Altar, on which hee and all the Souls fo diers did denie their feruice vnto the King of Spaine, and fo as people without a King, they choic the faid Don Fernando to be their King, and did vnto him homage.

There was a mong thele men a Souldier of Bifea, called Lopez de Agira, a very little man of

Fernando de Gafman chofen

These matters being finished, they agreed among themselves which should be the best way for them to goe to Peru, for they could not goe up the River from whence they came, for the great currant, and also it they should goe thorough the land, they should be very weake for want of Horlemen, therefore they determined to goe downe the River. Then faid this Lope de Agire,that they would carry nothing with them, but the Pinnaces and Souldiers which should fight, and that it were beit to leave behinde them, all the Indians that they brought from Peru, with the women, and ficke men, vnto which their Generall Don Fernando would not agree, for that he knew that when they were gone, the people of the Countrie would kill them all. Lope de A. 6: greehearing this, and longing to bechiefe Gouernour him lefe over all, and taking vnto him thirtie of his owne Countrie men, of his own disposition, he sodainly killed Dan Fernando, whom not twentie daies before hee had fworne to obey. But now by his fubtile working, and being withall eloquent in his talke, he cauted the people to make himselfe Governout, and made the

Extreme craeltie. Amazones, River of Marannon. CHAP. 11.

people believe that all these cruelties were done to save themselves, but the tyrannie of this man did not end here (he was of the Countrie of Bisea, a land joyning vnto France, therefore I rather believe that he was a Frenchman then a Spaniard, for that in the heart of a Spaniard there is not Hard concein Comuch crueltie as this man had.) Now he being ready to goe his way, he determined not to of French true carrie with him any Gentleman or other of high degree, and therefore hee flow all those which city by Sper. hee did know to be of high degree or Gentlemen, and then departed onely with the common Souldiers, and left behinde him all the Spanish women and ficke men, with all other

If I should rehearse all the cruell murders of this wicked man one by one I should be over much to tedious vnto you; onely I fay in as few words as I may, that this man proceeded downe the River, and had with him onely foure hundred men, but before he paffed this River, and came to Margareta, he had no more lefe but two hundred and thirtie men, for the reit hee had done to death, and left a hore among the people of the Countrie : he vied this tirannie because hee alwaies thood in feare of his life, for that if he had feene but two Souldiers talke together, hee proceeding thought that he had al waies confulted on his death, and therefore hee yied the order about faid, from an ill now he never went any way but that they had in his companie thirtie Bifcains of his owne will conflience, and minde, for to execute his cruell defire: As thefe Souldiers with their Captaine came downe the River, they faw many Canoas with Gold in them going to and fro, and people on both fides the River, where in their passage many times they landed and got good store of Gold, and

Now did they fee also that which Oryllana had reported, which was that there were Ama- R. Amagenet zones, women that fight in the warre with Bowes and Arrowes, but these women fight why so called to helpe their husbands, and not by themselves as Orillana reported from the company of men; Note the truth there were of these women in divers parts of the River, and law the Spaniards fight with their bath mocked husbands, and came and helped them, and shewed themselves more valuant then their husbands, men touching and therefore is named the River of the Amazones : the Spaniards intent onely was to palle Amazons in A downe the River, and therefore never fought to know the Countrie within the land; yet tooke fa, Africa and they good itore of Gold, and put it into one of the Pinnaces where he went himlelte, which Amarka. None Pinnace at the mouth of the Riner was cast away, but he himselfee cleaped, because as yet he had by credible

30 not made an end of his bloudie minde. But comming to the Hand of Margareta, the Gouer-repostablene nour thereof thought he had beene one of the Kings Captaines, received him with Pinnaces, and found but wasbrought to image of three of victuals, but he put him to death prefently and landed on the L. likewises, and lands and two Shippes that were in the Hands, and tooke perforce one hundred mismains. and fiftie men to goe with him, and others that went willingly, with good flore of victuals Historiana and many Horses, and then returned to the maine land, saying that with his small force Margaria. hee would fubdue the whole Indies; thinking that all the old Souldiers and poore people in feeing of him would all turne to his fide, and take his part, and so hee went deceived in his owne conceit, for he had not gone two dayes lourney up in the Land, when the Captaine of new Granade came against him with a power of men, but Lope de Agire hoping that the 40 other Souldiers would have come all vnto him, whereby his strength might bee the more; but hee was deceined, for his owne men left him and tooke the Kings Captaines part. Now feeing

himfelfe destitute of his Souldiers, and voide of all helpe, he then shewed himfelse more cruell then did the tyrant Nero, for this man killed his owne daughter, being but fixteene yeeres of Lope de Agre then did the tyrant Ners, for that man Kineu in sowine outgrace, being a the bed of Villains, alsyeth his age, which he brought with him from Pers, for that the flouid not be made the bed of Villains, day that he do show her her the bed of the bed of Villains, day that he do show her her the day that the same her the bed of the bed of Villains. nor be called the daughter of a Traitor: these words he vied vnto her, after he had given her her is flaine. d-aths wound : but before hee could finish this cruell deed, the Sould ers came vpon him , and cut him in pieces; yet his daughter did die of her wound in that place, and thus you have heard the emil end of this cruell man, for hee was the cause likewise that the King would never suffer to have this River discovered, so that the riches resteth to this day vinknowne that is in Greatiches to this River. Now having ended with this River of Marannon, all the Coast between this River and the Ri- the River of

uer of Plate, is called the Coaft of Brafill, taking the name of the wood in the Countrie, which Managon, is called Brafill wood for these is great florated in North was first found by Policy Annaly C. The coaft of iscalled Brafill wood (for there is great flore of it.) Brafil was first found by Pedro Arnales Ca- raff. brall in the second time that the King of Poringall fent his ships for the East Indies, and so tooke possession of this Land, for the King of Partugall. The King Don Emanuel, having newes hereof, fent thips for to discouer the whole Countrie, and found it to be the Land of America, which ioyneth to the Well Indies; wherefore there was some controuerie betweene him and the King of Spaine, but in the end being both kinsmen, and great friends, they agreed that the King of Portugal should hold all the Countrie that he had discovered, the which was as I have faid, from

the lland of Santa Catalina, and hereupon there have beene many contronerfies, betweene the Portugals and Spaniards and many men flaine. There came in the yeere 1587. into this River of Plate two English Ships and a Pinnace of the Seether fluite honorable the Earle of Comberland, being bound for the straights of Magelanos, and anchored ten fup. 1.5.

60 the River of Marannon to the River of Plate, although the Spaniards fay that it is no further then

CHAP.II.

they have feene going to the Straits.

Parawa now i habred by Combords. Fernamback hach ; cco. houles.

port called la Para Ina, which few yeares patt, the Frenchmen hearing of the troubles that were in Portugall, came to this place, and made there a Fort, and fo the French Ships came enery verse thither to lade Bratill wood. But they of Fernambocke with the helpe of the Spaniards went and burnt fine thips within the Port, and tooke the Fort, but some of the Frenchmen ranne into the Mountaines, and others flaine, to that the Spaniards doe there inhabit to this day. Now to returne vnto Fernambocke, inhabited by a Portugall Captaine called Eduarte Coelio, this is the oreatelt Towne in all that Coast, and hath aboue three thousand houses in it, with seventie Ingenios of Sugar, and great flore of Brafill wood, and good flore of Cotton, yet are they in great want of victuals, for that all that they have commeth out of Portugal, and from other places thereon .. the Coaft. It is a barred Harbour, and for small Barkes, this place belongeth yet to the Sonne of Eduarte Coelio, Passing hence is the Cape of Saint Augustine, and next to that is the River of Saint Borastown be- Francisco, which is allo a great River, Betweene this and the Bayba, it is all a Wildernesse, inhabilonging to the ted with cruell Sauage people; for whom focuer they take they kill to eate. The Towne of Bana King for hee belongeth to the King, and therefore the Gouernour that governeth all the Coast along, is in this gaue most part Towns of Baya, and also the Bishop; it is a Towns of a thousand houses, and hath fortis Ingenios o: uns Country to Gantle of Sugar, and much Cotton, but no Bratill wood. The Sea runneth vp fourteene or fifteene men, because leagues, where they get some ye res good store of Ambergreece; here there is plentie of victuals, they found no and although it be hot, it is a healthfull Country, and holesome aires. The next Coast is called Las Ilhas, t is a small Towne not about one hundred and fiftie houses, there are but three I genios of Sugar, the most part of these people are labouring men, and carry victuals to Fernandock in three small Barkes: this people belong voto a Gentleman called Lencas Geralde.

leagues within this River, at a little Hand hard by the Hand called Seall Hand, &c. There is a

Paris Sequeto h th toure (mall rownes. Rio de Ienero haib are. houtes. Villagaon ns

45 Ilhas hath

110, houles.

From hence, the next to this Towne is called Porto Seguero: this hath four fmal Townes, and are in all about three hundred houses, it belongeth to a Gentleman called Vasco Fernandes Contenio : from hence they goe to the River of lenero, which hath about three hundred houses. In this place also the Frenchmen inhabited first, whose Captaine was called Monsieur de Villeagenon, het made here a Fort, and plan ed good Ordnance thereon, and lades every year great fore of Brafill from thence, and had great friendship with the Sauage people, which ferued him very well. Forttaken. Of But the King of Portugal fent a power of men aganft the Frenchmen , and first tooke the French him and it you thips by Sea, and then landed, and befieged the Fort, and in time tooke them with the Captains, a have before in and because the French Captaine was a Gentleman, and neuer hurt the Porsagals, therefore they gaue thirtie thouland Duckets for his Ordnance, with all things that they had in the Fort, and to tent him for France, and the Portagals inhabited the River. There is not at this prefent but two Ingenios, and great store of Brasil-wood, with plentie of victuals.

The Coast of Saint Vincent harh toure townes. Two English fhips by Fenton and Ward.

From this River of Ienero, they go along the Coast of Saint Vincent, which hath foure Towner, the greatest is called Santos, and hath foure hundred houses, there are here three Ingenios, buta very poore Country. About few yeeres pail there came two English thins into this Harbor, which were going for the Scraits of Magellanes, who being in this Port, there came thither three of the King of Spaines thips, and fought with the Englishmen, but the Englishmen funke one of them, and therefore the King commanded a Fort to be made, because that no English shippes that were bound to the Straits should not victuall there, the which Fort standeth on the mouth of the Harbour, this Countrey belongeth to a Gentleman called Martin Alonfo de Soufa, this is the laft lahabitance in all the Coast of Brafill; this faid Coast is very full of Mountaines, and raineth much, therefore they cannot goe from Towne to Towne by Land. All the dwellings in this Country are by the Sea fide, yet the Portugals have many times travelled up in the Countrie a hundred and fiftie leagues, but finding no profit, inhabited in no place. The Coast from Saint Vincent is all full of Mountaines, till you come to the Hand of Saint Ch

Sec (42. in

Breed of 30.

Saint Unicent, talina, from this lland till you come to the Straites of Magellanes, is very plaine and with out Woods. The River of Plate was discovered by Solis, and after by Sebastian Cabot , which went one 9 hundred and fiftie leagues vp init and built a Fort; after by Don Pedro de Mendoza, who having loft eight fhips, died in the way homewards : the poore men which hee left behind him for very hunger, died the most part of them, for that there about were very few Indians, and therefore small store of victuals, but onely lived by hunting of Deere and fishing. Of all the men that this Don Pedro left behind him, there was living no more but two hundred men, which in the ship. Boats went up the River, leaving in this place called bonas agres, three Mares and Horfes. But it is a wonder to fee, that of thirtie Mares and feuen Horfes which the Spaniards left in this place, that in fortie yeeres these beafts have so increased, that the Countrey is twentie leagues up full of Horfes, whereby one may fee the pasture, and fruitfulnesse of the Countrey. The Spaniards that went up this River, were three hundred leagues up, and found the Country of full of Indians, where were great store of victuals, and the Spaniards dwelt among them as their friends, and the Indians did gine their Daughters to wife vinto the Spaniards, and fo they dwelt in one Towne together, which the Spaniards called La Afcension, which standeth on the North fide of the River. Thefe forefaid Spaniards, were twentie yeeres in this place, before any of them

in Spains heard of these poore mens dwelling in this River. But the Spanierds now waxing old, and fearing that if they were dead, that then there Sonnes which they had in this Gountrey which were very many, thould like without the knowledge of any other Christians; determined among themselves to make a ship, and so to send newes into Spaine, with Letters vnto the King, of all things that had passed within the River among them. Vpon this newes the King sent them three (hips, with a Bishop, Friers and Priests, and more men and women to inhabit with all kind of cattell. When this fuccour was come, they inhabited in two places more on the North fide of the River, and travelled three hundred leagues beyond the Afcension, but found neither Gold por Silver, but returned backe againe to Afcenfion: the people are fo multiplyed in this Citie, that to it is now one of the greatest Cities in all the Indies, and hath about two thousand houses, it is a fruitfull Countrey of all kind of victuall, and there is Sugar and Cotton, from this Citie of Afcension, one hundred and fiftie leagues toward the Rivers mouth, there is another Towne. which they call Santa Fee. Also five yeeres past, they have inhabited agains the Towns of Bonos Ayres Santa Fee. on the South fide, because they would have some Trade with them on the Coast of Brafill, but Bones Aprel there fortune was luch, that the first time that they went to Brafill, and would have returned to the River of Plate againe, they were taken by two fhippes of England, that were going to the Straits of Magellanes. The Coast along from this River to the Straits of Magellanes, is a Land

which hath not beene discouered, neither by Seanor Land, saving only certaine Ports which

20 The next that lought to passe the Straits after Magelanes were two shippes of Genea which

came to the mouth of the Straits, and with a great fforme were put back againe, and one of them whose Master was called Pancaldo, put into the River of Plate, and was call away about Bonos Arres, and to this day there is part of the thip to be feene, and fome of the men are yet living in the River among the Spaniards, and the other ship went home to Genea againe. Also there was a Bishop of Placeneis in Spaine, coueting Riches, made a fleet of foure ships to passe the Straits, and so to goe vnto the Melucess, and getting license of the Emperour, he sent his ships to the Straits, and had very faire wind til they came thither, and entring the Straits twentie leagues, the storme of Westerly windes tooke them, and droue three of them ashoare, and the other went into the Sea, and the storme being past, hee returned into the Strait to seeke his companions, and found 30 many men going on the shoare side, but the ships were beaten all in pieces, and they on the Land called vnto the thip. But the Captaine feeing that his thip was but little, and had imall store of victuals, he would not goe to them alhoare, but went on his Voyage, and paffed the Straits, and because he was alone, he would not goe to the Molnegas, but went to the Coast of Peru vnto the Citie of Lone, where the thip is yet vnto this day, the men that were in the Straits, where the three thips were cast away, were to the number of two hundred and fiftiomen, whose Captaine was called Queras, being Kinsman to the Bishop of Placentia, it is fortie yeeres fince their men Captaine were left there, but neuer heard of vnto this day. A yeere after this, certaine Merchants of the Quers, Quieds Greine in Galizas, fet forth other three thips, which thip also came to the Straits mouth, where one of them was cast away withall the men, and the other returned for Spaine, also I have had in-40 telligence that there hath beene certaine Portugal thips, which have come to the mouth of the Straits, and loft two of their Pinnaffes which they fent to know the Land, and so the ships returned, and after these other two French ships were sent from the River of leners, by Mensions de vil-Lagagnon over for the Straits, but when they came into the height of fortie five degrees, they put backe againe by a great storme of contrary winds. After all this the Gouernour of Chile, called Don Garcia de Mendoza Sonne to the Marquesse of Tanera, would also discouer the Straits from the South Sea, and fent from Chili two theps with a Captaine called Latherelie; but the danger to feeke the Straits by the South Sea, is more then by the North Sea, because all the stormes on

the North Sea, come from the Land, and in the South Sea the wind and stormes came all out of haucins and the Sea, and forceth the ship on the shoare, so that these two ships were lost in fiftie degrees. The Cond Both, a in 50 feeking of the Straits of Magelanes is fo dangerous, and the Voyage fo troublefome, that it is other English almost vnpossible to be obtained, so that for the space of thirtie yeeres, no man made account of and Duco oythe Straus be-Captaine Drake carried from the Coast of Perm, eight hundred fixtie fixe thousand pieces of tore, filter, which is eight hundred fixtie fixe Kintals at a hundred pound waight, the Kintall, and e-

uery Kintall is worth twelve hundred Duckets of Spaine, which is a Million, thirtie nine thoufand and two hundred Duckets, befides this, he carried away a hundred thouland pieces of Gold, which is ten Kintals, and every Kintall is worth fifteene hundred Duckets of Spaine, which amounteth to a hundred and fiftie thouland Duckets, besides that which hee had in the ship that was not customed, which I doe not know of, as well Pearles, Precious stones, and other things of great value, besides the money he had in coine, with all this he went towards Nona Hispamia: and at an Iland which is before you come there called The Iland of Cockles, he discharged all The Iland of things out of his ship and graued her there, and remayned there fittle dayes, from hence he went Cockets. Others

along the Coast of Hispania, where he tooke many thips laden with Spices, Silkes, and Veluets: favine Hand of Caria

but no Gold nor Silver, tor here is none on this Coaft. Pedre Sarmiento was fent to the Straits with two thips, and at the Straits met with a fforme

it, till of late veeres one Francis Drake an Englishman, &c.

Fiftie degrees fig: minutes.

and he not knowing how, nor which way in a night he was put into the Straits, the other thin runne more into the Sea, and came into fiftie eight degrees, the storme being pall, he found many Hands forming to the maine Lands, and fo returned with faire weather all along the shoare, and neuer found any other way to enter the Straits, but only that which Magellanes did discours which is thought to be otherwise by the fayings of others, which affirme the Straits to be full of Ilands, to the Southwards.

Pedro Sarmiento entred the Straits, where his men were in a mutinie, and would have return ned for Lama, but he hanged one of them, and so went on his Voyage for Spaine, and told the King that there were two narrow points in the Straits, where he might build a Fort, and that the Straits was a very good Countrey, and had great flore of Riches and other necessaries, and I very well inhabited with Indians. Vpon whose words, and for that there were more things ma. king readie in England to paffe the Straits; The King fent Diego Floris de Valdes with three and D. F. de Valdes twentie ships, and three thousand five hundred men, as also the Governour of Chili, with five hunhis diaduen- dred old Souldiers new come out of Flanders. These thips had the hardest hap of any ships that went out of Spaine fince the Indies were found, for that before they came from the Coaffor Spaine, a storme tooke them and cast away fine of the shippes, and lost in them aboue eight hun-dred men, and the rest put into Calls, notwithstanding the King sent them word that yet they should proceed : and so did with fixteene faile of thips, for that other two ships were so shaken with the ftorme that they could not goe , and in the fixteenth faile Pedro Sarmiento was fentto bee Gouernour in the Straits, and had committed vnto him fine hundred men for to flay in the Straits: he had also all kind of Artificers to make his Forts and other necessaries, with great flore of Ordnance and other Munition.

This flet because it was late, did winter on the Coast of Brasili in the River of leners, and from hence they went where the Winter was past, and about the height of fortie two degrees they had a florme, fo that Diego Flores beat vp and downe about two and twentie dayes, in which time he had one of his best ships sunke in the Sea, and in her three hundred men and ewentie women, that went to inhabit the Straits, and also most part of the munition that should bee lestin the Straits. In the end the storme grew so great, that the ships might not indure it any longer, but were put back againe vnto an Iland called Saint Catalina, and there he found a Barke, wherein were certaine Friers going for the River of Plate, which Friers told him of two great thipsof England, and a Pinnaffe that had taken them, but tooke nothing from them , nor did them any harme, but only asked them for the King of Spaines thippes. Now Diege Flores knowing that thefe English thippes would goe to the Straits, hee also was determined to goe to the Straits, although it was the moneth of February, and choosing ten ships of the fifteene that were left, hee fant three ships that were old and shaken with the storme, he put in them all the women and sick men that were in the fleet, and fent them to the River of lenero: and left two other thips which were not for the Sea at the Hand, and he with the other ten ships returned agains for the Straits. Now the three ships in which the ficke men and women were, came to the Port of Saint Vincent, where they found the two English thips, so they would have the Englishmen gone out of the Harbour, and hereupon they fell at fight, and because that these three ships were weake with the foule weather that they had, as also the men were the refuse of all the fleet, the Englishmen cashly put them to the worst, and sunke one of them, and might have sunke another if they would, but they minded not the destruction of any man; for it is the greatest vertue that can be in any man, that when he may doe hurt, he will not doe it.

The River of

Port of Saint

Iohn Drake.

lobn Drake went from them in the Pinnaffe (the cause why I know not) but the Pinnaffe came into the River of Plate, and within five leagues of Seale Iland, not far from the place where the Earle of Cumberlands thips tooke in freth water, this faid Pinnasse was cast away vpon2 ledge of Rockes, but the men were all faued in the Boate. They were eighteenemen, and went jo ashoare upon the North shoare, and went a dayes journey into the Land, where they met with the Sauage people, these people are no man-eaters, but take all the Christians that they can, and make them there flaues, but the Englishmen fought with them, and the Sanages flie fine Englishmen, and tooke the other thirteene aline, which were with the Sauges about fifteene moneties. But the Master of the Pinnasse, which was Richard Faireweather, beeing not able to indure this mifery that hee was in, and having knowledge that there was a Towne of Christians on theother fide of the River, he in the night called John Drake, and another young man which was with them, and tooke a Canoa which was very little, and had but two Oares, and fo paffed to the other fide of the River, which is about nine leagues broad, and were three dayes before they could get ouer, and in this time they had no meate, and comming to land, they his your a high way 65 that went towards the Christians and feeing the footing of Horfes, they follow it, and at last came to a House where as there was Corne sowed, and there they met with Indians which were Servants voto the Spaniards, which gave them to eate, and clothes to cover them, for they were all naked; and one of the Indians went to the Fowne, and told them of the Englishmen, fo

Vpon this the Englishmen went from this Port to Spirito Santto, where they had victuals for their Merchandize, and so returned home to England, without doing any harme in the Country. the Captaine fent foure Horiemen, which brought them to the Towne behind them, then the Captayne clothed them, and prouided for them lodging, and Iohn Drake fate at the Captaines Table, and fo intreated them very well, thinking to fend them for Spaine. But the Vice-roy of Peru hearing of this, fent for them, fo they fent him lobn Drake, but the other two they kept, because that they were married in the Countrey. Thus I know no more of their affaires. But you this newes, there were prepared fiftie Horfemen to go ouer the River, to feeke the reft of the Englishmen and Spaniards, that were also among these Sanage people, but I am not certains where they went forward or nor.

But now let vs returne to Diego Flores, who palled from the Hand of Santa Catalina, towards the to Straits in the middle of February, and comming in the height of the River of Plate, hee tent the Genernour of Chili, with three thips up the River Bonas Arres, and fo to go over land to Chili, Of

thefe three thips they loft two, but faued the men and the other provision, and the third returned for Spaine. Then Diego Flores with the other feuen ships came as high as fiftie two degrees, which is the mouth of the Straits, and because it was the end of March, which is the latter end of Summer, to that the Countrey was full of frow, and withall a furden fforme came, that he could not fee Sarmiento and his men ashoare but returned the second time to the Coast of Brafil, to the River of lenero, where he heard newes of the English thips, by the two thips that elcaped from the Englishmen, whereupon hee left his Lieutenant Diego de Ribera, and Sarmiento, that they might the next yeere returne for the Straits. So Diego de Flores with foure ships which hee had 20 left, and other foure which the King had fent to fuccour him , went all along the Coast to seeke

for the Englishmen, but could not find them, for they were gone directly for England, to he went vnto a Port called Parayna, where he found five French thips, and burnt three, and tooke two, and also the Fort that the Frenchmen had, and put in Spansards, and the Frenchmen runne into the Mountaynes to the Sauages, this done, he returned for Spaine. And his Lieutenant Diego de Rihera, and Sarmiento had the next yeere fuch good fortune, that they arrived fafely into the Straits with all their ships, and so set a hore foure hundred men, and because the ships Boat could not land being once laden, the ship that had all the victuals and munition, that ship they runne ashoare in a Bay, and as the water did ebbe they tooke all things out of her, this beeing done, Diego de Ribera left Sarmiento with foure hundred men, thirtie women, and a flip with victuals 30 for eight moneths, and with the other three returned, being in the Straits but eight dayes.

Now Pedro Sarmiento made a Towne at the mouth of the Straits on the Northfide, and put Ped a Salmiene therein a hundred and fiftie men, and from hence hee went by Land, and fent the fhip further in- 10 builded to the Straits, and fiftie leagues within the Straits at the narrowest place of all, where is a very within the good Port, here he made another Towne, which he named the Towne of King Philip, and also Two rownes. would have made a Fort, and planted Ordnance for the defence of the Seraits, but the Snow and in the Seraits, the Winter was fo great, that hee could not proceed in it; but hee tooke about fine and twentie Nombre de le-Mariners into the thip with him, and taid, hee would goe fee how the other people did, and fo fee and Philips came to the Straits mouth to the Towne, and after hee had beene there a day or two with them. Citie, he faid, that a fforme put him from the Straits by force, and broke his Cables (but his men faid to 40 the contrary, that he himselfe cut his Cables: God knoweth the truth) and so he came to the Riuer of lenero: and not finding any fuccour there came from the King, hee went to Fernambocke,

asking aide of the Captaine for victuals, the Captaine incontinent, laded his thip with victuals

and clothes for the men, fo that having these things, hee tooke his way for the Straites, but betweene the Cape of Saint Angustine, and the Baya, the wind came out of the Sea, with fuch violence, that it torced the fhip to runne ashore, where Sarmiento had three of his men drowned, and he with the reit hardly escaped; the ship was lost, and all that was in her. And then he came by Land to the Bara, and the Gouernour of Brafill, bought a Barke that was there in the Harbour, and lading her with victuals and clothes for the men, hee having this provision, with divers other more that were needfull for his men, he tooke his Voyage for the Straits, and comming as high as fortie foure degrees, he met with a fidden florme, and was forced to throw all ouer-board 50 that he carried, and was yet in the end compelled to returne for the River of lenero; where hee flayed for faccour from the King a whole yeere; but there came not to much as a Letter for him. for the King was fore grieued at Pedro Sarmiento, because he told him that in the narrowest place of the Straits it was but a mile ouer, but Diego de Ribera and others told the King that it was aboue a league broad, that if a fhip came with wind and current, all the Ordnance in the World could not hurt them, whereby the King thought that Pedro Sarmiento had deceived him, in making him to lofe formany men, and to be at fogreat a charges to no effect. Also the Governour of Sarmier and Baya, leeing the King wrote not to him, would give Sarmiento no more freecur, wherefore Sar- taken by Six miento went in his thip for Spaine, which he came last in from the Straits, and it is faid, that he was " Radigle

60 taken by Englishmen, and to carried for England. It is reported that this Sarmentg is the best Ma- Barken. tiner it all Spane, and hath fayled fartheit. After all this, the Captaine of the River lenero, lent This cilient a small thip with victuals for the Straits, but was also put backe in fortie degrees. This is all the was wire Discovery that hath beene of the Straits of Manelanes, as well by the Spaniards, as other Nati- 1880. 905, vato this years 1586. It is four yeares fince thele poors and milerable Spaniards were life 1985.

1443

Calito. Boldinia. ther they be dead or aliue.

The Land that lieth from the Straits to the Coast of Chit, no man hath travelled it by land. because of the great Mountaines of Snow that Iye in that Countrey, as also I may well say, that it hath not often beene done by Sea, for that all the fhips that have paffed that way, have at the Last gone thirtie leagues of the shore, because of the shoalds, and many little Hands that lie of the mayne land, and therefore there is nothing knowne what is in that Countrey. The first Inhibitance that you have after you paffe the Straits, is on the Coast of Chili, and is called Castro, it is the worst place of all the Coast, for that in it there is small store of Gold, and little victuall, and very cold; this place is compaffed with many shoalds, so that it is a Port but for small Barkes. I The next to this is Baldinia, but before I palle any further, I will declare vnto you the situation of Chiti. This Coast lieth North and South, and is in length about a hundred leagues; and it is not in

breadth aboue fine and twentie leagues at the most, there runne from the great Mountaines into the Sea great store of Rivers, which maketh many Valleyes, and is the fruitfullest land in the

in the Straits, from which time there hath no fuccour gone vnto them, to God he knoweth whe-

World, for that it hath bread, wine, and other victuals great flore. Thefe Rivers bee very rich of Gold, and for to shew you in few words all that this Province hath: I say, that this land lack-How chi'l was eth nothing, but might be called Paradife, but for that it lacketh only one thing, and that is first discouered peace. This land was first discouered in this order, after the Spaniards had conquered the Kinsdome of Peru, as hereafter I will flew vnto you, they found in this Kingdome of Peru great a flore of Gold, and asking the Indians from whence it came, they answered from Chile, wherefore Don Diego de Almagro, which was one of the Captaines that conquered Peru, went vpon this newes toward Chils with three hundred Horsemen. Now he must go round about the Mountains of Snow, which way the Indians that were his guides, did carrie this Captaine, because they should die all of cold, Yet the Spaniards, although they lost some of their Horses, came to the first Inhabitance of Chile, called Copiago: which is the first plain land in the entring of the Prouince but from hence he returned backe againe for Peru, because he had newes that the Indians had rifensgainst the Spaniards, & enclosed them sopon which newes he returned without going any farther into the Countrey, Now this Captayne Don Diego de Almagro, beeing flaine in the Warresof

Pedro de Val-

Catiaso.

Peru, after his death, another Captayne called Don Pedro de Baldinia, with foure hundred Horsemen went vnto Chili, and with small labour he ouercame halfe the Country, which were Subject to the Kings of Pern, for they of Chili, knowing that Pern was overcome by the Spaniards, they firsight way yeelded the Land vnto the Spaniards, but the other halfe which was the richest, and the fruitfullest part, so had God made the men the valiants and most furious that shall be found among all the Sawage people in the whole Land;

El Estado de

The Province which they inhabit, called El Estado de Aranco, is but a small Province about twentie leagues in length, and is gouerned by ten principall men of the Countrey, out of which ten they choose the valiantest man for their Generall in the Warres. The Kings of Pers in times past could never conquer this part of Chili, nor yet any other Kings of the Indians. The weapons vsed by these people of Araneo are long Pikes, Halberds, Bowes and Arrowes: they also make of them lacks of Seale-skinnes , and Head-pieces : in times past the heads of their Halberdsand Pikes were of Braffe, but now they have gotten store of Iron. They pitch their battels in manner like the Christians : for putting their Pikemen in rankes, they place Bowmen among them, and marshall their troupes with discretion and great valour. Now the Spaniards comming vnto this Prouince, fent word vnto them by other Indians, faying, that they were the children of God, and came to teach them the Word of God, and that therefore they ought to yeeld themselves vnto them; if not, they would shoot fireamong them and burne them. These people not feating the great words of the Spaniards, but defiring to fee that which they had heard reported, met them in the field, and fought a most cruell battell : but by reason of the Spaniards great Ordnance and Calcetters, they were in the end put to flight. Now these Indians thinking verily that the Spa- 10 wiards were the children of God, because of their great Ordnance which made such a noise, and breathed out such flames of fire, yeelded themselves vnto them. So the Spaniards having dimded this Province, made the Indians to serve their turnes, for getting of Gold out of the Mynes, which they enjoyed in such abundance, that he which had least had twentie thousand Pezos, but Captaine Baldinia himfelfe had three hundred thousand Pezos by the yeere. The same of these riches in the end was fored as farre as Spaine; from whence foone after reforted many Spaniards Villanueua de to the land of Chile, whom Captaine Baldinia caused to inhabit fixe Townes: to wit, Villanueua de la Serena, called in the Indian Tongue Coquimbo; the second Sant lago, which the Indianical Mapocha; the third, La Conception, called by the Indians Penco; the fourth , La Imperial; the fit, Imperial, Baldinia; and the fixt, La Villa Rica. Also he built a Fort in the middle of all the land, wherein 63 he put Ordnance and Souldiers : howbeit all this their good fucceffe continued not long : for the Indians in short time perceiung that the Spaniards were but mortall men as well as they, determined to rebell against them : wherefore the first thing that they did, they carried graff-into the

faid Forefor the Spaniards Horfes, and wood also for them to burne, among which grade the In-

Conception, Sant lave.La nia, LaVilla Rice, he firft

dians conveyed Bowes and Arrowes, with great Clubs. This done, fiftie of the Indians entred the Fort, betooke themselves to their Bowes, Arrows and Clubs, and stood in the gate of the faid the indian of Fort: from whence making a ligne vnto other of their Nation for helpe, they wanne the Fort, Chili, against and flue all the Spannards. The newes of this overthrow comming to the Towne of Conception, the Spaniards. where Captaine Baldinia was, he presently set forth with two hundred Horsemen, to seeke the Indians : taking no more men with him, because hee was in haste. And in a Plaine hee met the Indians: who comming of purpose also to seeke him, and compassing him about, slue most part of his companie, the rest escaping by the swittnesse of their Hories: but Baldmia having his Horie flaine voder him was taken aline. Whom the Indians wished to be of good courage, and to feare 10 nothing; for the cause (faid they) why wee haue taken you, is to give you Gold enough. And having made a great banquet for him, the last service of all was a Cup full of melted Gold, which The death of the Indians forced him to drinke, faying, Now glus thy felfe with Gold: and fo they killed him. This Ba'dinia. Baldinia was a most valiant man, who nad beene an old Souldier in the Warres of Italie, and at

the facking of Rome.

Vpon this discomfiture the Spaniards chose for their Captaine, one Pedro de Villa grande; Pedro de Villa who affembling all the Spaniards in Chile, and taking withhim ten pieces of Ordnance, marched grands. against those Indians; but with so bad successe, that hee lost not onely the field, and many of his men, but also those ten Peeces of Ordnance which he brought. The Indians having thus gotten the victorie, went itraightway against the Towne of Concepcion, from whence the Spaniards

20 fled for feare, and leit the Towne delolate. And in this manner were the Spanards chaled by the Indians out of the Countrie of Aranco. But newes hereof being brought to the Marquelle of Cannete, Vice-roy of Pern, he ient his fonne Don Garcia de Mendoza, against those Indians, with a great power of Horsemen, and Footmen, and store of Artilerie. This Nobleman having subdued Chili againe, and flaine in divers battels aboue fortie thouland Indians, and brought them the second time under the Spaniards subjection, newly erected the faid Fort, that stood in the midit of the Land, inhabited the Towne of Conception againe, and built other Townes for the Spaniards: and to leaving the Land in peace, he returned for Pern. But ere he was cleane departed out of the land, the Indians rebelled again, but could not do fo much mischiefe as they did before, because the Spaniards tooke better heed vnto them. From that time vntil this present, there hath beene no peaceat all ; for not withflanding many Captianes and Souldiers have done their vttermoft, yet can they not bring that People wholly in subjection. And although the Spaniards haue in this Prouince cleuen Townes and two Bishoprikes, yet haue they little enough to main- 11. Towns, and haue in this Prounce eleuen I ownes and two Binoprikes, yet haue they fittle enough to many a Biftoprikes tayne themselves, by reason of the Warres; for they ipend all the Gold that the Land yeeldeth in this.

they might worke in all their Mines.

Thus having spoken somwhat of the situation of Chili, and of the troublesome conquest there. A description of, I will return to my former difcourse where I lett, Baldwia therefore being of 150, houses, of the I owner have been house and final than the I will be t hath twice beene burnt and spoyled by the Indians; so that now it is waxen poore, but before the Baidinia. Indians facked it, it was very rich : and it standeth vp a River foure leagues from the Sea. Pal- The Province 40 fing from hence you come to the plaine Countrie of Aranco, being fituate over against the Iland o: Aranco, over

La Mocha, on which Iland the Indians that inhabite belong to the maine Land.

Hauing passed this Plaine of Aranco, the next Towne of the Spaniards that you come vnto, is situate in 38. La Concepcion which hath beene the greatest and the richest Towne in all Chili; but by reason degrees and a that the Indians have burned the same source times, it is now growne very poore, and hath small haste flore of people: rt containeth about fome two hundred houses. And because it adiovneth upon La Concepcion. the Plaine of Aranco, where there valiant Indians bee, therefore this Towne is enuironed about with a ffrong wall, and bath a Fort built hard by it : and here are fine hundred Souldiers contimually in Garrison. Betweene this place and Valparizo, the Indians call the Coast by the name Valearizo, of Mapacha. Sant lago it felte standing five and twentie leagues vp into the Countrie, is the Porto S. Isree 50 principall Towns of all Chile, and the feat of the Governour; is conflicted of about eight hun-finderly 31. dred houses. The Port of Valparizo whither the goods come from Lima by shipping, hath about d gr. 40 min.

twentie houses standing by it. The next Towne neere the Sea fide beyond this is Coquimbo, Coquimbo, the which standeth two leagues up into the Land, and containeth about two hundred houses. Next dethin 20 deg. vnto Coquimbo flandeth a Port-towne, called Copiapo, inhabited altogether by Indians which ferue the Spaniards: and here a Gentleman which is Governour of the Towne hath an Ingenio for Sugar: at this place endeth the whole Province of Chili. Here also the Mountaines ioving hard upon the Sea, are the cause why all the Land betweene Capiago and Peru, contayning one hundred and tixtie leagues, lieth defelate.

The first Towns on the Coast of Pern, called Atacama, is inhabited by Indians which are slaves A description 60 vnto the Spaniards. But before I palle any further I will here also declare vnto you the first Dif- of Peru. couerie of Peru, with other matters there o b. longing, and then will I returne to the Sea-coalt againe: and to the end you may vaderstand me the better, I will beginne with Panama. After that the Spaniards had inhabited the North tile of this mayne Land, passing over the Mountains they discouered the South Sea: where because they found Indian people with Gold and Pearles,

in the maintenance of their Souldiers : which would not bee fo, if they had peace; for then

that Nuena Espanna was at the same time inhabited by Spaniards, there beganne a tradefrom

thence to Panama: but from Panama by Sea to the Coast of Peru they could not trade in a long

time, because of the Southerly windes blowing on this Coast almost all the yeere long, which

are a hinderance to ships fayling that way: and by Land the passage was impossible, in regard

of Mountaines and Rivers: Yea it was fifteene yeeres before they passed the Iland of Perse.

which is but twentie leagues from Panama. There were at this time in Panama two men, the

one called Francisco Picarro, borne in the Citie of Traxello in Spaine, a valiant man, but withill

them, and prouided two Carauels to discouer the Coast of Perw. and having obtayned licence

of the Gouernour of that place, Francisco Pizarro set forth with the two foresaid Carauels, and

an hundred men; and Diego de Almagro stayed in Panama, to fend him Vietuals and other nes

cessaries. Now Francisco Pizarro sayling along the Coast, met with contrary windes and raine.

the vnhealthfulnesse of the coast. At last he came to an Iland called by him Isla del Galle, being fituate from the maine Land fixe leagues. From hence he fent one of his ships to Panama, for a 19

new supplie of victuals, and of men: which ship being departed, fortie of his men that remay-

poore; the other, called Diego de Almagro, was very rich. These men got a companie vmo to

likewife Cattell of all forts, among which there is a beaft, in shape somewhat resembling a Camell but no bigger then a Steere of a yeere old; they ferue to carrie burdens, their flesh being Peru, called good to eate, and their wooll apt for many purpoles. This beaft is accounted the most profitable Llamas. of all others, for the vie of man : howbeit the Spaniards fince their first comming have replenished this Countrie with Horses, Kine, Sheep and Goars, and likewise with plenty of Wheat. So that in few words, this Land hath abundance of riches and victuals, and is the healthfulleft place in the world. There were in times past Kings of this Land which were mighty Monarchs, whose Dominions stretched twelue hundred leagues, and their Lawes were very civill, save that they were worthippers of the Sunne. At what time the Spaniards first entred this Land, there to were two Brethren of the bloud Royall, which strong who should have the Kingdome, the one called Mango Inga, and the other, Atabalipa. Now Mango had possession of all the Mountaines Atabalipa and and the Land within them: and Arabaipa was Lord of all the Sea-coaft, and of the Vallies fituate between the faid Mountaines and the Sea. The Indians feeing the Spaniards at the first arrive Galler, in ypon their shoare, called them Vira coche, which in their Language fignifieth, The fome of the Sea. frite. Also Aubaling the Indian Prince fent vnto them to know what they did in his Land, and what they fought for: the Spaniards made answer, that they were the messengers of a great Lord, and that they came to speake with the Prince himselfe : who fent them word, that they should come with a very good-will; and so Atabatipa Hayed for them at a Citie called Caxamalca, being thirtie leagues diffant from the Sea fide. Whither being come, they found the Indian Prince fit-20 ting in a Chariot of Gold, carried upon mens shoulders, and accompanied with aboue sixtie thousand Indian; all ready armed for the warres. Then the Spaniards told them that they were fent from an Emperour (vnto whom the Pope had given all that Land) to convert them vnto the Christian Faith. Whereunto Atabalipa answered, that he would gladly be friends with the

another that which was none of his owne. Now while they were thus in talke, the Spaniards discharging their two Field-peeces, and their Caliners, fee woon the Indians, crying, Sant lago. The Indians hearing the noise of the Ordnance, and small thot, and seeing the fire, thought that flames of fire had been come downer from Heaven vpon them; whereupon they fled, and left their Prince as a bootie for the Spa-

Emperour, because he was so great a Monarch, but in no case with the Pope, because he gaue to

30 mards. Whom they at the first intreated very gently, wishing him not to feare, for that their comming was onely to feeke for Gold and Silver. During the time of Atabalipas imprisonment, his Captaines had flaineshis Brother Mange, and had fubdued all the Mountaines, and plaine Countries. Vpon which newes Atabalipa told the Spaniards, that if they would refeate him, hee would gue them all that they should demand. This communication having continued a whole day, at length a Souldier named Soto faid vnto Atabalipa; what wilt thou give vs to fet thee free? The Prince answered, I will give whatfoever you will demand. Whereto the Souldier replied, Thou shalt give vs this house full of Gold and Silver, thus high, lifting vp his sword. and making a stroke voon the wall. And Atabalipa faid, that if they would grant him respite to fend into his Kingdome, he would fulfill their demand. Whereat the Spaniards much maruel-

40 ling, gaue him three moneths time, but hee had filled the house in two moneths and an halfe : a matter scarce credible, yet most true: for I knowe about twentie men that were there at that time, who all affirme, that it was about ten millions of Gold and Silver, Howbeit, for all this. they let not the Prince goe, but thought that in killing of him they should become Lords of the whole Land, and so the Spaniards on a night strangled him. But God the righteous Iudge seeing this villanous act, fuffered none of those Speniards to die by the course of nature , but brought them to cuill and thamefull ends.

Voon the newes of these great riches, there came store of people out of Spaine, and inhabited many places in this Countrie. The King in recompense of the good feruices of the two foresaid partners, appointed Diego de Almagro Gouernour of halfe the Land, and Francisco Pizarro of the other halte, whom also he made a Marquesse. But these two consorts in parting of a Land

50 belonging vnto other men, fell at variance and sharpe warre betweene themselues: and at length Pixarro having flaine Almagro, got all the Land into his owne hands. Howbeit, this profession tie of Pizarro continued not long : for a baltard-fonne of Diego de Almagro, to bee reuenged of his fathers death, flue Prante, for which act he loft his head. In this controversie betweene these two partners were flaine, allo two brothers of Pizarro, and the third was carried priloner into Spaine, and there died in Prison : but the fourth, called Gonfalno Pizarre, rebelled with the whole Countrie, and became a cruell Tyrant, vanquishing many of the Emperours Captaines in battell, and possessing the Countrie in peace for two yeeres: howbeit, being in the end ouercome, hee loft his head like a Traitour. And thus died they all an euill death, that were causes of the

60 death of that innocent King Atabalipa. And yet there are mutinies raifed oftentimes by the Spaniards, but the Indians neuer rebelled, after they had once peace granted voto them. The Indian people of this Land, are parted among the Spaniards, some being flaues vnto the Gentlemen that conquered their Land, other some to others, and the residue to the King : and these Indians pay each man for his tribute feuen Pezos of fine Gold, which is about ten Ducats and an halfe, There

which put him to great trouble; and hee began also after a while to lacke victuals, for hee was fayling of that in eight moneths, which they now paffe in fifteene dayes, and not knowing the right course, hee ranne into every River and Bay that hee saw along the Coast; which was the chiefe cause that he stayed so long on his Voyage: also thirtie of his companie died by reason of

ned behinde made a mutinie, and palled vp into the Countrie, meaning to returne by Land to Panama, but in the way they all perished, for they were neuer heard of vntill this day. So that Francisco Pixarro was left upon the faid Iland onely with thirteene men: who although her had his ship there, in which he might haue returned, yet would hee rather die then goe backe; and his thirteene men also were of his opinion, notwithstanding that they had no other victuals, but fuch as they had from the maine Land in the night feafon. Thus hee continued nine moneths, before any succour was brought him from Panama: but in the end his ship returned with fortie men onely, and victuals: whereupon hee profecuted his Voyage, till hee came to the first plaine Countrie of Pern, called Tumbez, where hee found a Fort, made by the King of 30 Perm, against the Indians of the Mountaines, Wherefore Pizarro, and his men were very glad in that they had found a People of so good understanding and discretion being rich also in Gold and Siluer, and well apparelled. At this Port of Tumbez, hee tooke thirtie thousand Pezos of Gold in trucke of Merchandise, and hauing two few men to proceed any further, he carried two Indians with him, to learne the Language, and returned backe for Panama. Vpon this Difcouerie, Francisco Pizarro thought it expedient to travell into Spaine, to crave of the King the Conquest of this Land. Whither being come, the King granted his request. And with the money which he carried ouer with him, he hired a great number of men, with a Fleet of shippes , and

brought alfo along with him foure of his Brethren, very valiant and hardy men. And being come

Diego de Almagro. They fayled first to the Hand, called Isla de Galle; where Francisco Pizare,

and his Brethren went on Land, and left Diego de Almagro in the ships. And the whole num-

ber which afterward landed on the mayne Land were lixtie Horfemen, and one hundred and

of Pers, and the naturall disposition of the Inhabitants: This Countrie was called Pers, by the

Spaniards of a River fo named by the Indians, where they first came to the fight of Gold, From

But before we proceed any further, wee thinke it not amiffe to describe vnto you the situation

twentie Footmen, with two great Field-peeces.

to Panama, he straightway went on his Voyage for Pern, being accompanied with his Partner, so

Tumbez.

which River standing under the Line, till you come to Copiapo, the first Towne on the Coast of Chile, ilretcheth the Land of Pers, for the space of eight hundred leagues : vpon fixe hundred whereof, from Atacama to Tumbez, did neuer drop of raine fall, fince the Floud of Noah: and 10 yet is it the fruitfullest Land for all kinde of victuals, and other necessaries for the sustentation of The cause why mans life, that is to bee found in all the world befides. The reason why it raineth not in this Land, is because it being a plaine Countrie, and very narrow, and lowe, situate betweene the Equinoctiall and the Tropike of Capricorne, there runneth on the Weit frontier, not aboue twenty leagues from the Sea called Mar del Sur, Eastward thereof, a mightie ridge of high Mountaines coursed with Inowe; the heigth of which Mountaines fo draweth the moiltare of the cloudes vnto it felt, that no raine talleth upon the Vallies of Pers. From these Mountains inue great store of Rivers into the South Sea, with the waters whereof drawn by certaine fluces and chanels, they

moitten their Vin yards and Corne-fields, and by this meanes the Land is fo exceeding fruitfull-

Betweene thele Mountaines and the Mountaines of Chil, that firetch vnto the Straites of Ma- 60

gellin, leth a Plane of fixtie leagues ouer, being fo cold, that it yeeldeth no Wheat, but good fore of other v.ct als. This Countrie of Peru is full of people well apparelled, and of civil behaufeur. It beth many mines of God, and more of Siluer, as also great store of Copper, and Tinne-mines, with abundance of Saltpeter, and of Brimftone to make Gun-powder. There are

Canana.

Acari.

Al Calan

Lina

Same.

Paita.

Connete

Truxille.

Gusiaquil.

Tumber.

Salfaserilla.

Guaraquil.

de Posaian.

Nine Bifbon- are in this Countrie aboue fortie Cities and Townes inhabited by the Spaniards: also they have ricks, and one here erected nine B shopricks and one Archbishopricke.

Now after this Countrie was fully conquered and brought in good order, certaine Spaniarde being defirous to difcouer the land on the other fide of the Inowie Mountaines, found a very wholefome Countrie, and there inhabited. The faid Province fituate behinde the Mountaines is called The Province of Tucuman, wherein are five townes inhabited by the Spaniards, the last of them called Cordona, from which towne vnto Santa Fee fituate vpon the River of Plate it is feuentie leagues. This towne of Santa Fee was built in that place, to feeke a way to Peru by the River of Plate. And from hence downe the faid River to Buenos Agres are 1 20. leagues, and from Buenos Ayres vnto Seal-sfland you have 40.leagues.

Now having out down all that I know concerning the Countrie of Pera, and of the way from the River of Place vnto Tucuman, I will returne vnto Atacama the Southermost town vpon the coalt of Peru, where I left. From this towne of Atacama till you come to Arica, all the coalt is inhabited by Indians tubiect vnto the Spaniards. But fince Captain Drake was here, they have built Towers by the Sea fide, whereon, seeing any faile that they doe miftruft, they prefently make smoakes, and so from Tower to Tower they warne all the Country. Hauing before spoken of Arica all that I can I will now proceede to the next Port called Camana being a Towne of Spen miards, and containing about two hundred houses. Here they make store of Wine, and hauez-

buildance of Figges and Reifins. The next Towne called Acars containeth about three hundred houles, and here is made the best and greatest store of Wine in all Pers. From hence passing along 20 the coast you come to El Calao the Port of Lima consisting of about two hundred houses; and here was a ftrong Fort built fince Captaine Drake was upon the coaft. The Citie of Line ftanding two leagues within the land, and containing two thousand houses, is very rich, and of more trade then all the Cities of Pers befides, and this Citie is the feate of the Viceroy, the Archbifhon and the Inquifition.

Next vnto this Handeth a small towne of the Spaniards by the Sea fide called Santa : and next vnto Santa is another imall towns of Christians called Canners. From hence they fails vnto a rich Citie called Truxillo, being one of the principall townes of Permand containing about five hundred houses. Then followeth Pana which hath to the number of two hundred houses. Leaung this towne they passe to Ganiaguil which standeth fortie leagues up into a great Bay or River, 30 at the entrance of which River standeth Tumbez, a towne of the Indians, All this coast along from Atacama to Tumbez it never raineth, as I have before faid : fo that all the houses in their townes are not tyled, but covered with boards to keepe off the heate of the Sunne, for they feare noraine at all, Guaiaquil is the first place where it raineth, and here they gather Salfaperilla. Here Ships buik at is also great store of timber, and at this place they build many Ships. Hence they taile along the coast to a small and poore towne called Puerto Viero, which in times patt hath beene rich with Parte Vieis 2 Emralds : but now fince thesestones in regard of their plenty are growne nothing worth, this place where towne likewise is waxen very poore. Below this Village stanceth another called La Buene Emralds a-Venture: but whofoeuer goe thither must needes meete with enill fortune, the place it felie is La Buchavenfo waterish and vinholesome. Here abide not aboue twentie men, who ferue onely to transport 40 goods into a Citie standing fiftie leagues within the maine, in a Province called La governacion La governacion de Popaian. From Buena ventura and Popaian till you come to Panama there is no other towne, by region of the high Mountaines, the manifold Rucers, and the viholetomenetle of the Countrie, in this place doe inhabit the Negros that run from their Matters, and voon thele Mountaines was Oxenham the English Captaine and his men taken, as is before mentioned. Beyond thele Mountains standeth the Citie of Panama, being a rich place, by reason that all the treature which commeth from Perm is brought thither, and it consisteth of about foure hundred houses. The coast run-

ning along betweene this Citie and Nucua Espanna is called Costa rica. Next vito Costa rica, which is a Mountainous and detolate place, lieth the coast of Nicaragua, being inhabited by the Spaniards, and having many good ports belonging to it and is frequenced with trade of Merchandize; but having no knowledge of the fituation thereof, nor of the towns therein contained, I furceafe to speake any more of it.

A certaine Viceroy of Nueva Espanna called Don Luis de Velasco caused certaine Ships to be The discourry built for the discourry of the Malucos and of the coast of China: which Ships in failing thitherof the Philipp- ward from certaine Islands, eightie leagues distant from the maine land, which the Spaniards, according to the name of their King, called The Philippinas : and having conquered one of their L. lands called Manilla inhabited with a barbarous kinde of people, they built a fort and a towne thereupon, from whence they have trade with the people of China. Vnto thele Illands they have fouregreat Ships that viually trade, two of them continually going, and two comming: fo that fuch Spices and Silkes as the Portugals bring home out of the East Indies, the very lame doe a the Spaniards bring from these Islands and from China, for Mexico the chiefe Citic of Nuena Espanna. The principall Port townes of the coast of Nuena Espanna are Guatules, and Acapulco.

All the Viceroyes and Gouernours that the King of Spaine fendeth for Pern and Nuena Ef-

CHAP.II. Iles of Salomon discouered, their bounds pudiscouered. Great storme. 1447

panns have a custome, for the obtaining of his favour, to feeke and discover new Countries. But the greatest and most notable discovery that hath beene from those parts now of late, was that of the Isles of Salomon, which were found in manner following. The Licenciate Castro being The discourse gouernour of Perm, fent forth a Fleete of Ships to discouer certaine Islands in the South Sea, vpon of the Islands the coast of Peru, appointing as Generall of the same Pleete a kiniman of his called Aluares de Salomen. Mendanio, and Pedro Sarmiento as Lieutenant, and in the Viceadmirall went Pedro de Ortega. This Fleete departing forth of the hauen of Lima, and failing 800, leagues Weltward off the coaft of Pers, found certaine Illands in eleuen degrees to the South of the Equino Ctiall, inhabited with a kinde of people of a yellowish complexion, and all naked, whose weapons are Bowes and Ar-

10 rowes, and Darts. The Beafts that they faw here were Hogs and little Dogs, and they found some Hens. Here also they found a muster of Cloues, Ginger, and Sinamon, although the Sinamon Cloues, Ginwere not of the best; and here appeared vato them likewise some shew of Gold. The first Island ger, and Sinzthat the Spaniards discourred, they named Santa Izabella; and here they built a small Pinnace. mon. with the which, and with their Ships Boate they found out betweene nine and fifteene degrees of Southerly latitude, cleuen great Islands, being one with another of eightie leagues in compasse. The greatest Island that they discourted was according vnto the first finder, called Gnadalcanal, The Isle of on the coast whereof they failed 150. leagues, before they could know whether it were an Island Guadalcanal. or part of the maine land : and yet they know not perfectly what to make of it, but thinke that ir may be part of that continent which ftretcheth to the Streights of Magellan; for they coafted

20 it to eighteene degrees, and could not finde the end thereof. The Gold that they found was voon this Island, or maine land of Guadalcanal, whereas they landed and tooke a towne, finding small graines of Gold hanged up in the houses thereof. But because the Spaniards understood not the language of the Countrey, and also for that the Indians were very frout men, and fought continually against them, they could neuer learne from whence that Gold came, nor yet what store was

These Indians vie to goe to Sea in great Canoas, that will carrie one hundred men a piece, wherein they have many conflicts one against another : howbeit unto the Christians they could doe no great hurt; for that with a small Pinnace and two Falcons a few may ouercome one hundred of them. At this place foureteene men mistrusting nothing, rowed to land, to take in fresh 30 water whom on the fodaine certaine Indians in foure Canoas fet vpon, tooke the Ships Boate, and flew all the men therein; wherefore a man cannot goe on flore too flrong, nor yet be too

warie in a strange land. Hereupon the Spaniards went on shore in their Pinnace, and burnt the Towne, and in this towne they found the small graines of Gold before mentioned. They were discourring of these Islands from one to another about foureteene moneths, at the end of which time (because that your the coast where they were, the winde continuing still in one place, might be an occasion of longer tarrying) they consulted which way to returne. Southward they durit not goe for feare of great tempelts which are that way vivall: wherefore fayling to the North of the line, they fell with the coaft of Nuena Espanna; on which coaft they met with such terrible stormes, that they were forced to cut their maine maits ouer-boord, and to lye nine moneths beating it up and downe in the Sea, before they could get into any harbour of the Christians. In which time, by reason of euill government, and for lacke of victuals and fresh water, most of the men in their Admirall dyed; for five whole dayes together they had neither water Abundance of nor meate : but in the other Ships they behaued themselves so well, that the greater part of good vietuals them came fafe vnto the land. He that paffeth the Straits of Magellan: or faileth from the coast vpon the isles of Chili directly for the Malucos, must needes runne in fight of some of their Islands before spoken of. At which Illands lying to conveniently in the way to the Malucos, you may furnify your Anewrich felfe with plenty of victuals, as Hogs, Hennes, excellent Almonds, Potatos, Sugar-canes, with trade for Gold divers other forts fit for the fustenance of man in great abundance. Also among these Islands you shall have some quantity of Gold, which the Indians will give you in trucke for other commodi-50 ties. For the Spaniards in their discourry of these Islands, not feeking nor being desirous of Gold, brought home notwithstanding 40000, pezos with them, besides great store of Cloues and Gin-

ger, and some Sinamon also, which is not so good as in other places. The discouerer of these Iflands named them the Isles of Salomon, to the end that the Spaniards supposing them to be those of Salomon. Isles from whence Salomon fetched Gold to adorne the Temple at lernfalem, might be the more defirous to goe and inhabit the fame. Now the fame time when they thought to have fent colonies vnto these Islands, Captaine Drake entered the South Sea; whereupon commandement was given, that they should not be inhabited, to the end that such Englishmen, and of other Nations as passed the Straits of Magellan to goe to the Maluces, might have no succour there, but such 60 as they got of the Indian people.

A Town burnt

Negros fled fro their Mafters. Panama. Ofta rico.

of Nicarasua.

The Ifferef

CHAP. XII.

Briefe extracts translated out of IEROM BENZOS, three Bookes of the New World, touching the Spaniards cruell handling of the Indians, and the effects thereof.

Heierued La. year es in the Span (b. Indian expeditions. C.3. C.3.



Nno 1641. Ierom Benzo went from Millaine to Smill in Spaine, and thence to the New World, where he was entertained of the Spaniards, and practifed with them the huntings of the Indians; which they did by lurking in couerts, till fome of the Natiues came within their reach; by bribing the Cacikes with trifles to procure captiues, and other meanes. Peter Chalice came while we were thereto Amaracan with about 4000. flaues, and had brought many more, but with la-

bour, wearinesse, hunger, and griefe, for loss of their Countrie and friends, many had perished in the way. Many also not able to follow in the Spaniards swift march, were by them killed to preuent their taking armes. A milerable spectacle to see those troopes of slaves naked, with their hodies rent, maimed, starued: the mothers dragging or carrying on their shoulders their Indians spoiled. children howling, the neckes of all, armes and hands chained; not any growne Maide amonest them which the ippilers had not rauished, with to profuse lust that thence grew contagion and pernicious difeafes. The Sp milh horfemen in those warres vied quilted lackes with Launces and Swords; the footenen, Sword, Shield, and Croffe-bow, with lighter lackes. The moisture and

great dewes made Peeces vnferuiceable in those parts. The Islanders in Hispaniola feeing no hope of better, or place for worfe, killed their children, and then hanged themselves. The women by the juice of a certaine hearbe caused abortions, that they might not procreate flaues to the Spaniards; others hanged themselues, as their husbands had done: some threw themselves from the tops of steepe hils, o hers into the Sea and Rivers; fome started themselves, and others with sharpe stones ripped and rent out their entrals: so that of two millions there found at first, now scarfely one hundred and fiftie persons remaine. Is this to convert Sauages to the Christian faith! The fame altogether hath happened in Cuba, lamaica. Porto Ricco, and other places. Yea whatfoeuer flaues haue beene after carried into the I-3 flands, to preuent their defolation, though in incredible multitudes, have almost all perished with miferie. Once, in whatfoeuer places the Spaniards have displaied their colours, by

their examples of crueltie they have left to the Natives eternall monuments of implaca-After the native Islanders were killed with too much labour, the Spaniards procured slaves

L.1.C.1. Negro : iues

Law of Eavon diuclish de-

they employed them in Sugar-mils, and in breeding of Cattell. Some of the Spaniards are to cruell, that it a flaue hath not brought his diarie or day-foot, or otherwife hath angred his imperious Malter, he strips him naked to cloath him with stripes (according to the Law of Bain, as they call it, denifed I thinke by some cruell Dinell) his hands and feete bound, and the profirate p flaue tied to fome crosse timber, with a rod or roape he is beaten till the bloud iffue from all parts: after which the Mafter droppeth fealding Pitch or Oyle over all that wretched corpes, and then washed with Pepper of the Countrie and Salt mingled with water, he lies on a boord in a sheete or blanket till his Mafter thinkeshim fie for labour. Others make a hole in the ground and thee fet him, his head onely excepted, all night long, which these Philitians doe to cleanse and cute the vicers of corrupt bloud. If any dye in these torments, his Mailer hath no other punishment but to pay the King another for him. These cruelties caused the Negroes to flie and wander to bout, till gathering head together they grew dreadfull to the Spanifb llanders, whom they (when they got any into their hands) repaied with like cruelties. While, I was in that Hand, their ar-Armicof 7000 mie was faid to containe 7000, men, infomuch that the Spaniards feared to be driven out by 50 thele Moores and Negros. And when as An. 1545, the Prelident Cerains viged Cefars Edict for the Indians liberie, the Hand was almost brought to a defert, not about 1100. Spaniards temaining therein : which (the ftrangers increasing) were in danger to Loofe at once their his with the Hand. And the wonted meanes of getting wealth failing therein, few Spiniards are willing

from Guinnee in great multitudes, and vied their feruices in the Mines; which being exhault,

Oxenbams ftc-

Indians,

Numbre de Dios, in regard of the heate and moisture immoderate, is vnhole ime, as aifo forthe See Drakes and Weiterne Marifh or Fenne, whence are frequent funerals of the inhabitants. Not farre from it to the East, some fugitive Negros keepe in the woods, which have thine many Spaniards, and have entred into league with the Indians, hooting likewife poitoned Arrowes, and killing all the Spaniards which they can get. Gotierez a Spanift Captaine going vo the Roper of Suera, feated 60 the Caciles of Suera and Chiuppa, and faid that he came thither to reduce them from their Idolatry and the Divels tyranme, and to shew them the truth: namely, that Isfor Christ the Some ? God came from heaven to redeeme mankinde : and that he had brought a Price with loss for no other purpose but to instruct them in Christianitie. It herefore (find he) ereous your tiers to it e she tiences

the Dinine Law, and to acknowledge the fourraigntie of Charles the fifth, Cafar, King of Spaine, and Monarch of the whole world. The Indians antwered nothing, and returned home. The next day the Gouetnour fent for two other Caciques by a Spaniard, which truffing on his promife, came. and were bound in his Chamber with hard viage. They had before given him 700. Duckets; now he picked a quarrell with them, and extorted from one 2000. Duckets, wrought in the formes of Figres, Fishes, Birds, and other creatures : which the Gouernour seeing smaller then his expectation, caused a great fire to be kindled, and a cheft to be brought forth, threatning to burne him if in force dayes he did not fill it with Gold fix times; which hee promifing to doe, found meanes to eleape. Other Caciter of the Countrie hearing hereof, burned their houses, cut downer 10, their truite trees and corne, and leaving a wildernesse to the Spaniards, sled to the Mountaines, The other Cache yet in durance, having beene often threatned with death except hee brought the Gold demanded, the Governour commanded to be cast to the Dogs : hee answered, that bee could not but marnell at the Governours vanute, which had fo often threatned that which be had rather should be performed, then to line so miferable a life & contrary to his expectation, which had voluntarily come to him woon his promise. Hee added, that he meruailed much what kinde of creatures Christians were, which executed such mischieses where some they same, and that the earth could long or beare and

nourith (nch crnell beafts (o patiently.

But at last the Governour carried him prisoner in a miserable expedition, where at a turning the Gouernour demanding of a captine Indian, whether way would bring him to fome Indian 20 habitation, he answered, he could not tell; whereupon he commanded his Negro slaues to kill him, which was done. Then he demanded of the Cacike, and having like aniwer, gaue like fentence. He presently threw downe his burden, and prepared his head to the fatall stroke, with fuch patience, that the Gouernour remitted it, and gave him his life. Three flarued Spaniards were there left, and after killed by the Indians. The Gouernour commanded the Does to be killed for food, keeping the prouisions left to himselfe. I gave my part to another, because of the Hungry March wormes therein; and went to the Gouernour, hoping to receive fomewhat of him, who fent me to the roots of trees to feed thereon. Then faid another Spaniard; Sir Gonernour, if wee may not have together in good and had fortune , warre you alove. Hereupon hee divided three pounds of Cheele into foure and thirtie parts amongst vs. Two dayes after, the Indians suddenly let on vs.

30 and flue the Gouernour as hee was doing his eafement. I with anothers Helmet escaped that showre of stones, wherewith it was then exceedingly battered; and the rest being shine, with two others fled thorow a troupe of Indians making way to the Hills top, where wee found the Priest, with two others which had escaped by flight in the beginning of the fight, and after that, foure and twentie others joyned themselves to vs. The Indians perfixed vs, armed with our owne weapons, and dauncing about vs, cried in the Spanish tongue, Here is Gold Christian, here is Gold. Two which had lurked in the Woods till the Indians were gone, told vs, that the Indians had carried away the head, hands and feet of the Gouernour, and of two Negres, the reft being spoyled were throwne into the River. If we had had but foure Horses (these they feare more then all armes) they had neuer aduentured on vs. On foot the Spaniards are commonly ouer-40 come by them. In the first Mexican expedition, they tooke the Horse and Man to bee but one of Horse. That which hath carried the Spaniards into those Provinces, is onely covetousnesse, whatfo-

to the fonn of God, Creator of Heauen and Earth; and came thither to teach them the Divine

ther beleeve Him, nor bis Law. Soto finding no Mine, died at last of the bloudy Fluxe. The like may be faid of Narnaez, twelue of whose companie fell mad with famine, and fell to biting and

tearing each other. Of fixe hundred which hee carried forth, scarcely ten returned, which at Mexico reported that with breathing they had cured the ficke, and had raifed three dead men to life. But I craue pardon of their holinesse, and shall easier beleeve that they killed four eliving

men, then that they raifed halfe a dead one. Cortez fet forth by Velafquez gaue him no accounts

euer profesion they pretend of Christian Faith. Neither will any of them flay in any place Examples of where Gold is not found. Antonius Sedegnus died with thought after three yeeres trauell in couetousnelle. where Gold is not found. Antenine Stategram died with thought after three yeares trauel in Stategram and Paris with feuen hundred men, not finding this golden Sun-hine, fiftie onely of his men returning. Soto fpent in Florida, what he had gotten in Pers. He threatned fifteene Cacikes, to burne Sotos ads in them, except they brought him to the place whence they had their Gold. These promised any Florida. thing to preuent present execution, and after twelve dayes wandring were sent away with their hands cut off. When he told a Cacike which visited him with a Present, that he was a Christiana

Law: If the God, faid the Cacite, bids thee robbe, kill, burne, and commit all mischiefe, wee can nei- Pam, Namaer,

at all. Peter Aluarado left by Cortez at Mexico, fell upon the Indians amidft their dances , and flue them. And when Cortex had returned from the defeat of Narnaez, and befirged Mexico, Corre; and Al. 60 the Mexicans gathered all their Gold and Silver, and threw it into the Lake, and by no torments ustate. could bee compelled to confesse where it was; although Cortex tortured the Kings Scribe to

death, and put the King also to vaine tortures for that purpose. Some fay that Cortez stran-When I first trauelled in Nicaragua, I was entertained by a principall Cacike of those parts,

called Gonzallus, a man of scuentie yeeres of age, and well skilled in the Spanish Tongue. Hee indian conceit one morning, Litting neere him, fixed his eyes on my face, faid, Christian, whas are Christians? they require Maic, Honie, Silke, a Garment, an Indian Woman to lie with; they demand Gold and siner, Christians will not worke; they are Gamsters, Dicers, lewd and blasphemous. When they goe to Church to beare Masse, they back bite the absent, and they strike and wound each other. Hee con. cluded, that Christians were not good. I faid, they were the bad, and not the good, which did fuch things: hee replied, Where are those good? for I never yet fam any but bad. I asked, why they luffered Christians to enter their borders. Hee answered, Honest frund, thus it is : When the fame of the cruelty of Christians, which where sewer they came, filled all with fire, sword and robbers, differfed in these Prominees, had comme unto us, and wee had heard that they would innade us, wee called a lo Councell, of all our friends, and generally decreed rather to die then to yeeld our felnes subjects to the Christians. When they had entred our Borders, wee made head against them, but most of vs after long fight terrified by the Horset, fied. And wee sent two messengers to destre pardon, and peace; with no other purpese but to game time to re-enferce our firengib. Wee carried them many presents , entertarned them with dances, and within three dayes fell on them againe, but with ill successe; we seeke peace againe. and after that by common confent decree rather to die then to ferne the Christians, and to hill him who. Court foul fire from the battell. Thus wee take Armes. But our Wines come weeping to us, and befeech verather to ferne the Christians, then to die fhamefully : atherwise, to kill them first, with their children, that they may not after loffe of their hulb ands, come into the power of those bearded and cruell man. aren, was the man not more brake our hearts, and wee voluntarily submitted our persons and goods to the 20 greed Christians. Some yet, prouoked by wrongs, rebell; but were punished grienously by the Christians, not faring the very Infants. Others also which were innocent, were made flames; and wee were then possessibler of our wines, nor children, nor any thing else. Many impasient bereof, killed their children , others hanged, and others familhed themselves : till the King of Caltues Proclamation, by which wee were made free, made an end of those miseries.

The Indians, especially the sonnes of their Cacikes which can write and reade, confesse Gods Commandements good; but wonder that wee, of whom they have them, doe not keepe them. and vie thus to lay. Ho fir Christian , God forbids to take bis Name in vaine, and then continuals for enery cause, bee it neuer so light, swearest and forswearest. God sayth, Thou halt not beare falle winesse: but you Christians dee nathing but stander, and feade end. God commands to leve you meighbours at your felues, and to forgine one another: Tou oppresse the poore, are regorous to your Det. tert, and if there be any poore Christians, you give them nothing, but fend them for reliefe to our houlds. ver, and there ee any poore cultivation, we goe the chief the chief and the chief are come being the chief dee, blass been, ear se, querell, stede, comment rapes, and bowd spearer values and lust.

There are Monkes which perpetrate those things openly by day-light, which others would

Monkes and

bee ashamed to doe by night. And a Franciscan publikly preached, that there was neither Priest, nor Monke, nor Bishop in India, worthis the name of a good man. For they all had given themselves so couetousnesse, and still went to the wealthie Countries, and avoided the poorer. For these words he was apprehended, and carried to Guatimala. I have also heard Priests discour- 40 fing together, that they came out of Spaine into India for gaine, and nothing elfe. A Cafiker sonne, when hee was a childe of great towardnesse, proued afterwards very lewd; and being asked the reason, said, Since I was made a Christian, I have learned to sweare by the name of God, and by the Crosse, and by the words of the boly Gospell, and to blass beme by the life of God; and I denie him, nor doe I believe. I have further learned to play with the Die, and never to freake truth. I have alfo got mee a Sword to make frajes, and now want nothing to line like a Christian, but a Concubine, which I meane to bring home shortly. I once reproued an Indian, for dicing and blasphemie: Wee, faith he, learned these examples of your selves. And the Indians which are so lewd, are such vival. ly as have beene brought vp by some Spaniards which studie nothing else. These for the most Span, Miracles. part, are the Miracles which the Spaniards have done amongst the Indians.

Many other Indians being demanded whether they bee Christians, answere, they are, because the Bishop hath crossed and blessed them, they have built a Church, set up there our Ladies Is mage, and gotten a Bell. I asked one whether he were a Christian: What, said he, would you have me bee a Bilhops feruant ten or twelue jeeres, and keepe bis Mule? Others asked thereof, fay, that 2 Priest washed their heads soure or fine times, &c. Hee reciteth the Letter of Didacus Lopez de Zunega, and other pallages of Spaniards vices.

Lib.3. c.1.

In the third Booke Benzo relateth the Acts of the Spaniards in Pern. Francis Pizarro , Diego Almagro, and Fernand Luques a Prieft, enter into a league of Triumuirate for the Southerne Difcoueries, and therein to share equally, both the care, charge and gaine. They procure ships, and convenient provisions, and with two hundred and twentie Souldiers, Pizarro and Almagra, in 62 the yeere 1526. one a little after the other, fet fayle for Panama. Pizarro hauing fayled three hundred miles, goeth on land, and is repelled by the Indians, himfelfe wounded, and many flaine. Hereupon he returneth to Panama. Almagro went vp a River in another Region, and was kind. ly entertayned, and brought thence three thousand Duckets of Gold, with which in his re-

CH A P.12. turne he came neere to the place where Pizarro had received his badentertainment, and him felfe in fight with them loft one of his eyes, and many of his Souldiers. Being comne to Panama with Second those showes of Gold, they redintegrate their designes, and with two hundred Souldiers, and Voyage, many Indian flaues fetting layle, landed in another place, where they also were beaten backe to

their thips, and many flaine. Thence they went to the Ile Gorgon, a small and defart fland fixe 1.Gorgon,

leagues from the Continent. The Golden hopes would not permit them to give over that which this strength could not enable them to winne, and therefore Almagre is lent to Pasama to reenforce and encrease their numbers. Hee returned with eightie fue Spaniards, and found Pi-Larre, and the rest almost starued. Being refreshed they fee layle, and againe landing were re-10 pelled with the loffe of fome Souldiers , and went to a defart Hand, which they called Cock-Hand, for the shape of the Cape or Promontorie. Almagro againe returneth to Panama for more Souldiers to bee reuenged on these Indians. Most of the Spaniards cursing their couetousnesse, would have returned with him, but were not permitted, no not to write to their friends; which yet some clotely did complayning of the Countrie, the leaders and their defignes. Pedro de los Rus was then newly Gouernour at Panama, and hearing hereof prefently fent one to Cocke. Hand, cot iland, to Pizzero that hee should not detay ne any there against his will, whereupon they all fine fourteene departed. These lived on fish till Almarro came, who also could bring no supply by rea-

At last they agreed to sayle by the shoare, and search if any riches there presented themselves. Fourth expe-20 They fayled hue hundred miles, and came to Chira, a Prouince of Peru, and there going on shoare dison. tooke some cattell, and Indians to learne the Spanish Tongue. Then returning to Tambez, when no Spaniard had fo much courage, Peter of Candie (a Greeke borne in Candie) adventured to goe Peter of Candie on shoare, which he did, armed with a two-hand Sword. This spectacle of a bearded man was no little wonder to the Natiues. The Gouernour vied him kindly, leading him into the Fortreffe, wherein was a Temple to the Sunne, full of flupendious riches. At the gate hee found certaine beafts like Lions, and two Tigres, but harmlesse. And when the Gouernour would have given him at his departure certaine pieces of Gold, hee feemed to contemne them vtterly, fo to diffemble the true cause of his comming. Then comming abourd he related what hee had seene: and they with joy returned to Panama.

Hereupon Pizarrois fent to Spaine, by Almagro and Luquez, to obtaine of Cefar the conquest Capa of that Province, for which purpose they borrowed zeco. Duckets. He notwithstanding makes the fute in his owne name and accordingly obtayning commission, returned with his brethren Fernandez, Gonzales, John, Pizarri, and Martin de Aleantara, Hence grew a quarrell, his partners efteeming him perfidious, till Game compounded the matter twist him and Alexagro (Lasques being excluded, and therefore afterwards furnamed, The Foole) that Almagre (hould employ his wealth, and therefore participate in the honours, fwearing each to other, and taking the Sacrament thereupon. Thus Picarro went from Panama with 150. Souldiers, and many Hories, Fish Voyage leauing Almagro thortly to follow. Hee came to Colonchia, thence to the Hand Puna, where hee Pana non was well entertained till rapes and robberies made the Natiues take Armes, which was to their Saint rage go greater loffe, the Spanarde getting the victorie, Thence Pizarro went to the Continent of Tame-

bez, fiftie miles dittant. Where the Natiues refused his friendship, and sought to oppose him: but he by night entred the Riuer, and being guided by unpassable wayes made a great flaughter of them, spoyled the Citie, and robbed the Sunnes Temple. Atabaliba King of Peru, was then at Caffiamalca, who hearing that a ftrange bearded Peo. can.

ple had robbed his Subiects, fent to Picarro, threatning him, if he continued thus or there. Pi. Atabe zarro answered, that hee was sent by his Emperour to succour those which defired his friend- Atabeaija. ship, nor might he safely returne to him, except hee had first scene his Royall person, and declared to him things good both for his body and foule. Thus hee trauels thorow Chira, and by the Lords in the way is fued to for friendship, which hated Atabaliba. Meeting with a nauigable River, he layd the foundation of a Colonie there called Saint Michaels, and shared the spoyles Saine Michaels amongst his followers. Atabaliba derided their paucitie, and sends to them, if they loued their

lives to be gone. But he proceeded to Caffiamalea, and thence fent messengers to the King (then two miles off) to fignifie his defire of acquaintance. Fernand Pistere told him , that hee was brother to the Leader who was sent from the Pope and Cefar, to defire his friendship, and therefore delired audience, having some speciall matters to deliver to him, after which hee would bee gone. The King aniwered, hee would first have him depart his confines. The night following they prepared themselves for fight. The next day the King was in Pompe carried on mens shoulders, guarded with five and twentie thousand Indians. Friar Umeent de valle viridi a Do- Prier Vincente minican, carrying in the one hand a Crosse, in the other a Breuiarie, went to him, and by an In- embassage, not

60 terpreter, fignified that hee came to his Excellency by the mandate of the Imperiall Maiestie, in Gods names and that with the authoritie of the Roman Bishop, Vicar of the heavenly Saviour, which hath given to Cefar the Lands before vakmowne, and now first discovered, that hee might fend this ther learned and godly men, to preach his most holy Name publikely to those Nations, and to "So he calls free them from Diabolicall errours. Hauing thus faid, he gave to the King, the Law of God *, and his Bremary.

fayth, that he had created albthings of nothing, and beginning with Adam and Eue, tells how Christ had assumed fiesh in the wombe of the Virgin, and died on the Crosse, after which he rose againe, and afcended into Heauen. Then averring the articles of the refunction and of eurla-Ring life, he sheweth that Christ appointed Peter bis first Vicar for the government of the Church. and that this power succeeded to his successors the Popes, declaring lattly the power and wealth of Cafar the King of Spaine, Monarch of the whole world. Therefore the King should doe as be. same him, if he accepted his friendship, and became his tributarie and vasfall; and if lastly hee refected his falle gods and should become a Christian. Which if he would not doe voluntarity, let hom know, that be should thereunt o be compelled by force and armes.

The King answered, that not vniwillingly hee would accept the friendship of the chiefe Mo- to narch of the world, but for a free King to pay tribute to a man whom hee had neuer feene, fee. med scariely honest or inst. As for the Pope, the must needs appeare to be a foole, and a shamelessman, which was so bountifult in giving that which is none of his owne. Touching Religion. hedenied that hee would alter that which hee professed; and if they beleeved in Christ, whom the confessed to have died on the Crosse, they also beleeved in the Sunne which never died. And how (fayth he to the Frier) doe you knowe that the Christians God created all things of no. thing, and died on the Croffe? The Frier answered, that hee was taught it by his Booke, and withall reached it to him, which he looking on, faid, it faid nothing to him, and threw it to the ground. The Frier presently tookevp his Booke, and cried amaine to the Spaniards, Gee to Christians, goe to, and make them smart for so hainous a deed, the Gospels are derided and throme a. 10 way. Kill thefe Dogs which fo flubbornly despife the Law of God.

Presently Pizarro gives the figne, and leades forth his men. The Gunnes amaze the Indiana. as also the Horses, Drummes and Trumpets. Easily are they hereby, and terrour of their Swords chased, and Atabaliba himselfe taken by Pizarro, which commanded the footmen: without hure or flaughter of any Spaniard. Ferdinand his brother, Captaine of the Horfe, made a great flaughter among it the Indians, sparing neither age nor fexe, and filling the wayes with Carkaffes, The Priet alio all the time of the battell animated the Spaniards, admonishing them to vie the thrast rather then the froke with their Swords, for feare of breaking them.

The next day Pizarro visits his prisoner, and giveth him good words, who grieved with his The next day Fizarro vints in principle, and Silver veffels (fo that they states are chaines, covenanted for his ranfome to give them as much Gold and Silver veffels (fo that they states are chaines, covenanted for his ranfome to give them as much Gold and Silver veffels (fo that they states are chaines, covenanted for his ranfome to give them as much Gold and Silver veffels (fo that they states are chaines, covenanted for his ranfome to give them as much Gold and Silver veffels (for that they states are chaines, covenanted for his ranfome to give them as much Gold and Silver veffels (for that they states are chaines, covenanted for his ranfome to give them as much Gold and Silver veffels (for the states are chaines). should not breake them) as should fill up the roome as high as a man could reach. But when halte fo much was not brought in a moneths space, they perswaded Pizarro to kill him. The King excused himselfe by the length of the way, that it could not come in so some. If they would fend to Cufce, they might fee them folues cause to credit him. Sete is fent thicher with two Spemiards, which met Indians all the way laden with treasure. Almagra came to the sharing of Pizare notwithftanding retayned his former purpose to kill him, that so hee might entry

the Countrey. Atabaliba defired to bee fent to Cefar, which her refuted. And none that Gap.56 consented to his death, came to a prosperous end. When Pizarre had told him of the Sen-

tence, hee exclaimed bitterly, and then turning with his denotions to the Sunne, hee expo 40 stulated with Pozerre for breaking his eath, not onely to restore him to libertie woon his ranfome, but to depart out of his Countrie: but hee commanded his Negros to execute him, which with a cord fastned to a sticke, and wrung about his necke was toone dispatched. Then marched heeto (afeo, and was encountrered by Quifquiz, Atabalibu Captaine, whom hee ouerthrew, and entred Cusco by force, and got there more prey then before by Atabaliba. The Souldiers tortured the Inhabitants to confesse their treasures ; yea some killed the Indians in sport, and gaue them to their Dogges to eate. After this hee begannethe Citu of Kings, on the River of Lima, and made Almagro Governour of this new Province. Cafar also gave him priviledge to bee Marshall of Pers, and to conquer three hundred miles further then Pizarros conquest, for himselte. Hence arose suspicions and icalousies of Pizar- 10 ro to Almagro, and after some quarrels Almagro is sent to Chili by Pizarro, so to ridde his hands honourably of him. New Oathes also pasted. Hee pasteth ouer the snowy Hills, where divers both Men and Horles were frozen to death. Pizare receiveth foone after, the riclest Marqueffe, from Cafar.

Mango Inga, brother of Atabaliba, whom Francis Pizarro in those broyles had crowned, was by Fernandez Pizarro taken and committed to chaines in Cufco: and vpon great promites by his brother lohn freed: who feeing the Spaniards tooke a courfe of robbery rather then water rebelled, flue many Spaniards at their Mines, and fent a Captaine to (Meo, which tooke it, and flue Iohn Pizarro, with some Spaniards. The Spaniards againe recovered it, and agains lost it, Mango belieging it with an hundred thousand Indians, which burnt it, and slue the Spasia is S. The Marquelle fent Diego Pizarro, with feuentie Spaniards, against Mango; but not one of them was left to carrie tidings of their destruction. About the same time Morgonius had like success with his Spani's Band, going to relieue Cufco. Gongales Tapia was tent with eightie horfe, but

he and most of his were flame neere Guamanga. Gaeta another Captaine with his fiftie Spani

ards ranne the same fortune. The Marquesse sends Godoies with fortie Horse, but he being affavled, and feeing his men flaine, fled, and brought newes to Lima. Then did the Marqueile fend Peter Lerma with fiftie Horse, and followed himselfe, and slue many of the Indians in battell two hundred Horses, and soure hundred Spaniards, had beene loft, neither could hee heare of his brethren any thing. He fent therefore to Cortefe, to Truxillo, Nicaragua, Panama, to Alonso Aluarado, who first came to his fuccour with three hundred Spaniards, the most Horsemen. He ouerthrew Tizoia (Mangos chiefe Commander) with 50000. Indians, and againe in another battell. Meane while Almagro (whom the Marqueffe thought to bee dead) returneth out of Chili.

which had not answered his expectations, the fame whereof caused Mange, fearing to be hem-Io med in of all fides, to leave Cufee, (delpairing to recover his efface) with twenty thousand Indiens, fetling himselfe on the Mountaines ouer Gumanga. When Gafca the Prefident fent for him after, promifing him peace, he refuled, as warned by Arabalibas example. Almagro would haue entred Cufeo in his owne right, as Gouernour, which Ferdinand Picarro retufed till he had leave from the Marqueffe. But he by night entred, and imprisoned both Gonzales and Ferdinald Pizarro. The next day hee was proclaimed Gouernour, according to the Imperial committion. He hearing of Aluarado, and fearing his comming, fent to him Mellengers which Aluarado staved. but was foone after taken by Almagro in his Tents.

Then doth hee returne to Cufco pompous, fwearing to cast out all the Pizarrifts. Aluarado and Gonzales corrupting their keepers get out of prison, and acquaint the Marquelle with their 20 things, who prouided five hundred men to march against him, but the case was compromitted. Ye; did the Marquesse fer men to murther Almagro by the way as hee should come to the place appointed, which tooke no effect, hee being warned thereof. After this they are reconciled, Onthis going before and after, which foone after were broken, and brake out into open warres, in which Almage was taken, fentenced to death, which no pleading, appeale, interceffion Almago put to could reverfe; but he was first strangled in prison, and then beheaded by Ferdinand Pizarro, who death had before beene his prisoner, His Father is not knowne; hee left a Sonne by an Indian Concubine, bearing his owne name Diese.

The Marquesse sent his Brother Ferdinand to Spaine, with the processe of Almagro, and the Kings fifts. In the meane time one Rada a friend of Almagro, with yong Diego ha for confinge to against the Marquelle, who contemning their meannesse, was by them saine in his owne house with his halfe brother Martin de Alcontara: Diego Almagio invades the government, and makes all to (weare to him till Cafe had otherwise provided. Her goeth to Cafe, and there flageth in prilon. Garcia Aluanado, who had Rabbed Sortello, and would have done as much for him.

Gefar hearing of these broyles sent the Licentiate Pacca di Caffre thither with commission. betwixe whom and Diege was fought a bloudy battell, three hundred flaine, on Cafari fide one Vacca de Caftro hundred and fifthe. Dago fleeth to Custo, but by Redering Salazar, on whom hee had bestowed cuts off Diego. many benefits, was betrayed to Vasca, who cut off his head.

About this time the Decree for the Indian libertie was promulged and Blascon Numer Vela made Vice-roy of Pers, who arriving at Nambre de Dios, A. 1544, there met with many Spa- Vice-roy Vela. 40 miards which had gotten much by the fale of Indian flaves; hee committed to the Officers, and would have conficated their money, as against the late Law; which being done by him in a place out of his iurifdiction, it was upon interceffion restored. Going to Panama hee causeth the Indians to be freed, at Tumbez he meets with a Priest and a servant of Gonzales Pszarro, which had beene in the battell against Almagro, and hanged them both. He executed a Frier also which had taxed the severitie of Casars Edict, and ill rewarding those which had served him. And whileshe Casars would remit nothing of vemost rigour, he procured the hate of all, which after brake forth into a rebellion. He committed Vacca de Castro into prison, whereupon the Spaniards choic Gonzales Pizarro their Leader, Gouernor, and Procurator generall of the Pernan Prouinces. The Vice-roy also put the Kings Factor to death, whose brother the Licenciat Carnaial sware to be avenged of him. The Vice-roy after this was taken and imprisoned, but soone after sentenced to be sent back 50 to Spaine by Aluarez, who at Tumbez freed him. His brother Vela Nunnez leeking to raise forces Cap. 12

for him was taken and executed. Civill wars grew hot, a battel was fought betwixt Pizarro and the vnfortunat Vice-roy there taken, whom Carnaial in reuenge of his brothers death canfed to be done to death. Gasca, a man of great subtilty, was sent to appeale those affaires; who made the Indians to cap. 12. beare the carriages of his Armie on their thoulders, chained on a rowe, to preuent their flight; Gafcau acts : some fainting under the weight of their burthens, others with extreme thirst. Those which could not march with the Armie the Spaniards freed by cutting off their heads, to avoide the

delay of the chaine: or if they were tied with ropes, they ranne them thorow with their wea-60 pons: of some they cut off the legs, of others the nose, or armes. Gonzales Pizarro the chiefe of the Rebels, ouercame Centenns in one battell, but in another was taken by Galca, and executed; and after him his Camp-matter Carnaial, a cruell man, which would deride his owne Countrimen, when he executed them; bidding them, because they were Gentlemen horsemen, chule, which tree they would hang on. Gafea ordained that the Indians should pay tribute to

Feed, (ent ro The Marquelle

Quifquir.

Mango Inga

* The Cirie: fome fay they held the Caftle. Spanifo dif-

1454 Spaniards called Viracocha and bated. Peru Language and Letters. L 1 B.V II.

their Lords onely of such things as the Gountrie yeelded. For before, the Spaniards forced them by tortures to bring them Gold: if any not having it fled thole torturers into the Woods, the Soundards hunted them out with Dogs, and many to found were torne with Dogs, others hanged themicluss. Once; the men of Pers conceived to hard an opinion of the Spaniards, and of their cru leies, that they not onely denied them to be the former of God, but thought that they were not borne into the world like other men, supposing that so fierce and cruell a creature could not be precreated of man and woman. They called them therefore Viracochie, that is, Sea froth, as it they thence had received originall. Nor can any alter this their opinion fo deeply rooted, but God Almightie; laying, The winder overthrowe grees and houses, fire burnes them, but these Viracochie deuoure a. spings, matiably facking Gold and Silver, which as Jone as they have getten, they to play away at Dice, warre, bill one appriper, robbe, blaffberne, wickedly for freare and debie God, neuer Beune truth; and verber hans poyled of our Countrie and fortuner.

Lailly they curie the Sea, which hath brought to the Land fo fierce and dreadfull an issue. If Lasked for a Christian, they would not answers, nor looke on men. But every while could lay. There goeth a Urracochies They hid their angiene treatures, that the Spaniards should not finde them; taying, that all which they got, in comparison of thefchisklen, was but as a graine of Maiz to a dilhfull. Some they buried in the Barth, and some charge theew into the Sea. &c. A S. Single Control of the Control o

Observations of things most remarkable, codected out of the first part of the Commentaries Royall, written by the Inca GARCILASSO DE LA VEGA, Naturall of Cozco, in nine Benkes; Of the Original, Links, Conquests, Lawes and Idolatries of the Incas, or Ancient Kings of Perusand and

Flix fauthour (of the bland of the Inces, or as others and thome, Ingas, Empareurs of Frix, by the mothers spice, but father, a Spannard), both morness others drage Folomars of Sanctican affairst, speech, Socious expedition sing Fluxich, we five Booker; but the cheer of his come Comerte of Frix, the one companying, so when Employ to be Helmidal there of his come Comerte of Frix, the one companying, so when Employ to the Helmidal English are a first than a course enter. (I have Flowedly Hildens are because the theory and a few speech.)

bringing on our Stage a Portugall, eye mineffe of that Kayage, to at his come part ur aur next Alt er Book ont of the atter I purpofed mer either altte, that then myles florare a Peruan frake of Porut but the Worke growing fo great, and wee having out of Acottagend for many other sprefented formuch before, fearing to clar the Reader with fulneffe (muich map, if not bere fatte fied, gop to the Anthour) base principally colletted fuely large, as the stop, base in our stand by Affa or formation rect and and decement their Readers, where, this Anthony corrections as forces until grees. Before, the hee fernes to bold counterpose, so of sping things from their original, with our Mexican Pitture-

Tonque. Three pronunciations.

L.S.C.Z.

Ex Prefainne.
THe Language generall of Perm, bath three manner of pronunciations of fome byllables much Orno (14) different from the Spanish, in which variety of pronunciation lieth the different figures. tions of the same word. One way in the lips, another in the palate, and the third in the throat. The accent is almost alway in the last tyllable but one, fildome so the tyllable before that, and neuer in the last of all, as some ignorant of the Tongue have affirmed. That Language of Cuzco b.d.f.g i.x.h. doth allowant thefe letters following, b, d, f, g, i contonant, the fingle I (they vie the double il, as on the other fide they pronounce not the double 17, in the beginning or midst of a word, 32 but alway (ingle) and a: fo that of the Spanish Alphabet they want eight letters, accounting the fingle I, and double rr. Hence they hardly pronounce Spanish words in which these letters are. Neither is there any plurall number, but certaine particles which fignifie pluralitie, otherwife the fingular ferues for both numbers.

Monie.

In my time about 1560, and twentie yeeres after, in my Countrie there was no money coyned, but they reckoned by weight, the marke, or ownee; as in Spaine they reckon by Duckets, to in Peru by Pezos or Cattellans, euery Pezo of Silver being foure hundred and fiftie Marauedies, and reduced to Spanish Duckets, enery fine Pezos are fixe Duckets.

The fift Book A No 1484. Alonfo Sanchez of Huelua, in the Countie of Nuclia, traded in a small ship from 60 of the fifthpart. A Spaine to the Canaries, and thence to Madera. In this his triangular trade, hee was one day taken with a tempeth, which carried him twentie and eight or nine dayes hee knew not whence nor whither, and then the tempest ending, hee arrived at an Ile (which some thinke to bee Hi-(paniola) where he went on land, and tooke the height. Hee wrote all occurrents, and after a

CHAP.13. First voiage to America and Petu. Names and traditions of Peru. 1455

tedious voyage arrived at Tercera, but five of seventeene being left, which all died there (ipent This Spanish rewith their ill passage) at Christopher Colon or Columbia his house, which gaue him that heart and port some of courage to the discourry of the New World.

ourige to the amedaty of the conceale, o-Blasco Nunnez de Balbon, An. 1513, discouered the South Sea, & was thereof made Adelantado, thets denvise and the conquest of those Regions granted him by the Catholike Kings. He made three or four [up.ca.1.6.4. Ships for discovery one of which passed the line to the South, failing along the coast; and seeing Tonks. Thise an Indian Fisherman at the mouth of a River, foure of the Spaniards went ashore farre from the here guenthis

place where he was, being good runners and fwimmers to take him.

The Indian margading what kinde of creature the Ship under faile might be, was taken in the the particulars to mids of his mule and carried a shipboord. They asked him by signes and words (being somewhat are so full and refreshed after that dreadfull furprize and bearded fight) what Countrie that was, and how cal- plaine in this refreihed after that dreadfull furprize and bearded ngnt) what countrie that was, and now can author where-led. The Indian not violeritinding what they demanded, answered and told them his proper as Geman Saith name, faying Beru, and added another word, faying Pelu: as if he should have faid, if yee aske neither in the me what I am, my name is Bern, and if you aske me whence, I was in the River, Peln being the man, nor time. common name of a River in that language. The Christians conceived that hee had vinderstood hor place, &c. common name of a River in that language. The Christians conceived that nee had videlited by is agreed on: them, and aniwered to the purpole; and from that time Anno 1515, or 1516, they called by fee Gim p 2. the name of Peru that great and rich Empire, corrupting both names, as they vie in Indian words. 613. Some later authors call it Piru. After the discouery of the Incas Kingdome the name still continued, howfoeuer the Natines to this day (feuentie two yeares fince the conqueil) will not take whence and 20 it in their mouthes, although they speake with Spaniards and understand them : neither have how. they one generall name for all those Provinces, as Spine, Italy, France with vs, but call each by

its proper name; and the whole Kingdome they called Tanantinfism, that is to lay, the fourth may helper and of the World. That River a literature the called Tanantinfism. part of the World. That River allo where they tooke the Indian, was after by the Spaniards called read or china. Pern. Tucatan received the name from like accident, the first discoverers asking the place, the In- name no: ther dian answering telletan, telletan, that is, I understand you not, which they vinderstood of the pro- knowne,&c. per appellation, and corruptly called the place Tucatan.

From Panama to the Civie of Kings, the failing is very troublefome, by reason of Southerne windes which alway runne on that coast, as also of many currents: these forced the Shippes in Sir F. Dr. te that youage to make large boords of fortie or fiftie leagues into the Sea, and then againe to land-teacher of na-30 ward; vutil Fraicie Drake an Englipman (which entred by the Magellas strait 1 779.) taught bean them abstract course of follow two or three hondred beauty that the Magellas strait 1 779.) taught

them abetter courie of failing two or three hundred leagues into the Sea, which the Pilots beforedurst not doe, being searcfull of calmes, if they were once one hundred leagues from land,

otherwise also vncertaine and ignorant.

20

Touching the original of the Incas Kings of Pers, this author affirmeth, that when hee was a childe, his mother reliding in Cufco her Countrie, every weeke there came to vilite her some of Atabusta or her kindred which had eleaped the tyrannies of Atanbrallya, at which time their ordinary dil- Atabalpa his course was alway of the originall of their Kings, of their Maiettie and great Empire, Conquetts, cruelies. and Gouernment : fuch discourses the Incas and Pallas hold in their vilitations, bewailing their loses. Whiles I was a boy I rejoyced to heare them as children delight to heare tales, but being

40 growne to fixteene or feuenteene yeares of age, when they were one day at my Mothers in this discourse, I spake to the ancientest (my Mothers Vncle) desiring him to tell me what he knew of their first Kings, seeing they kept not memory of their antiquities, as the Spaniards vie in writing, which by their Bookes can tell all their antiquities and changes which have happened fince God made the World. I defired him to tell me what traditionary memorials he had or their Originals. He willing to fatisfie my request, recounted to me in manner following, adusting mee to lay vo thele layings in my heart.

In old simes all this region was untilled and overgrowne with bushes, and the people of those times sixed Indian tibles

as wilde beafts, without religion or policie, without towne or boufe, without tilling or fowing the ground, without raiment, for they knew not how to worke Cotten or Wooll to make them garments. They lived by nals. two and two, or three and three, in caues and holes of the ground, eating graffe like beafts, and rootes of trees, and wilde fruits, and mans flelb. They concred themselves with leaves, and barkes of trees, and skins

of Beafts, and others in leather. Once, they lived as wilde heafts, and their women were in common and bruish. Our Father the Sunne (this was the Incas manner of speech , because they derined their pedegree from the Sunne; and for any besides the Incas to say so, was blasphemie, and incurred stoning) seeing men live in this fashion, tooke pittie on them, and sent from heaven a Sonne and a Daughter of his owne, to instruct men in the knowledge of our Father the Sunne, and to worship him for their God; to give them lawes also and precepts of humane and reasonable course of life in civill fashion, to dwell in houses and townes, to busband the earth, to fowe and fet, to breede cattle. With thefe ordenances our father the Sunne placed these his two children in the lake Titicaca, eightie leagues from Cuico; and gave them a 60 barre of Gold two fingers thicke, and halfe a yard long, for a figne that where that barre frould melt with

one blow on the ground, there therthould place their residence and Court. Lastly, bee commanded that when they had reduced the people to ferue him, they Bould uphold them in instice with clemencie and gentlenesse, behaving themseines as a putifull Father dealeth with his tender and beloved children , like as he himselfe gaue them example in giving ligh; and heate to all the world, causing the seedes and grass

1456 Inca-traditions of Manco Capac & Mama Ocllo the first Incas, LIB, VII.

to orow, and the trees to fructifie, the cattle to encrease, the seasons to be faire, and encompassino the world once enery day: that they fould imitate him, and become benefactors to the Nations, being fent to the earth for that purpole. Hee constituted also and named them Kings and Lords of all the Nations which ther should instruct and civilize.

After these instructions he less them, and they went up from Titicaca transling to the North, still as they went firshing with that barre of Gold, which never melted. Thus they entred into a resting place feuen or eight leagues Southwards from this Citie Culco, now called Pacarec Tampu, that is, morning ileepe, and there slept till morning, which be afterwards caused to be peopled, and the inhabitants boals greatly of this name, which the lnca imposed. Thence they translled to this valley of Culco, which was then a wildernesse, and flaid fir ft in the billocke, called Huanacanti, in the midft of the Citie; and In there making proofe, bis Golden Barre easily melted at one stroake, and was no more scene. Then said our Incato his Sister and Wife, In this Valley our Father the Sunne commands vs to make our aboade; and therefore O Queene and Sister, it is meete that each of us goe and doe his endenour to affemble and draw bither the people to instruct and benefit them as our Father the Sunne hath enionned vs. From the billocke Huanacauri our first Kings went each to gather together the people. And because that is the the first place on which they were knowne to have set their feets, and thence to have gone to doe good to men; wee builded there a Temple to worfbip our Father the Sunne, in memorie of this benefit

The Prince went to the North, and the Princesse to the South: to all the men and women which they found in those wilde thickets, they pake, saying that their Father the Sunne had sent them from heaven to 20 become instructors and benefactors to all that dwell in that land, to bring them from a brutish life to cimilitie, with many other words to like purpose. Those Sanages seeing these two persons attired and adorned with ornaments, which our Father the Sun had given them, and their eares bored and open, as their descendants have continued, and that in their words and countenance they appeared like children of the Sun, and that they came to give them sustenance; they gave them credit, and reverenced them as children of the Sun, and obayed them as Kings, and calling other Sanages and acquainting them berewith, many men and women came together and followed our Kings whether they would conduct them. Our Primces gane order that some frould be occupied in providing victuall in the fields, least hunger should force them backe to the Mountaines; others in making cottages and boules, the Inca instruction them bon Culco or Cores they foould doe it. In this manner this our Imperiall Citie began to be peopled, being divided into two fift inhabited halues, Hanan Cozco and Harin Cozco, that is, the high and the low Cozco, those which the King 19 drew thitber dwelling in the high, those which followed the Queene in the low. One halfe had not more priniledges then the other, but they were all equall; but those names remained as a memoriall of those which each had attracted onely those of high Cozco were as the elder, and the other reduced by the Queen as the second sons of the same parents; or as the right band and left. In like fort the same distison was beld in all the great townes and small of the Empire, by the high linages and the low, the high and

Moreover, the Inca taught the men to doe the offices pertaining to their fexe, as to till the Land, to lowe feedes (freming them which were profitable) teaching them to make instruments for that purpofe, to make trenshes for the water, & c. The Queene on the other fide taught the women to worke in Cotten and 10 Wooll, and to make garments for their husbands and children, with other boufhold offices. These Indians thus civillized, went thorow the hils and wilde places to fearch out others, and acquainted them with thefe affaires, telling them what the children of the Sun had done for them, Shewing for proofe thereof their Vic of Aimes, new garments, and meates, and so brought much people buther, that in fixe or seuen yeares the Inca had trained many to armes for their defence, and to force those which refused to come to him. He taught them Bowes and Arrowes, and Clubs, &c. And to be fort, I fay that our first Father Inca reduced all the East to the Riner Paucartampu, and Westward conquered eight leagues to the great Riner Apurimac, and nine leaques Southward to Quequetana. In this Region our Inca caused to people aboue a bundred Townes, the greater of them of one hundred boufes.

These were our first Incas, which came in the first ages of the World, of whom all the rest of vs have 50 The Incan Em- descended. How many yeares have passed since our Father the Sunne sent the sebis first children, I cannot The incine surpire duteda- precifely fay; we hold that it is about 400, yeares. Our Inca was called Manco Capac, and our Coya, bourgoo years Mama Oclo Huaco, brother and fifter, children of the same Sunne, and the Moone, our progenitors. Valera buth 5: thinke I baue ginen thee large account of that which theu defiredly, and because I would not make thee cry, I have not recited this storie with teares of bloud shed by the eyes, as I feed them in my griened heart, to fee our Incas come to an end, and our Empire loft.

This relation I have faithfully translated from my mother tongue, which is that of the Inca, to the Spanile, which is farre shore of the Maiestie of the stile, nor so significantly as that language affordeth, and have abbreviated some things which might make odious the discourse. It is enough that I haue deliuered the truth of their conceit, as befits an Historian. Other like things 60 the faid Inea told me in those visitings and discours: at my mothers house, which I shall recite in their due places.

The common people of Pers recite other fables of their Originals, the Collafun which dwell to the South from Cozeo, and the Cuntifuy, which dwell to the West; fabling that after the CHAPIZ. Fabulous antiquities, Manco Capacs Townes, Lawes, Asts and Arts. 1457

floud, the waters ceasing, there appeared a man in Tashuacann Southwards from Cufco, so mightie that he duided the World into foure parts, and gave them to foure men which hee called Kings, to Manco Capac, the North; the South to Colla; to Tocay, and Pinabua the East and Welf, and fent each of them to their gouernments, &c. Those of the East and North haue another tale, that foure men and foure women in the beginning of the world came out of a rocke by Pancartampu, all brethren and fifters, the first of which was Manco Capac and his wife Mama Seefupp. 1060. Oello which founded Cofco (which fignifieth a nauell) and fubiceted those Nations; the second Ayar Cachi or falt; the third Ayai Vehn (a kinde of Pepper) the fourth Ayar Sanca, that is,

mirth and contents. Their fables they allegorife allo, and fome Spaniards would here finde the To eight perions which came forth of Noats Arke; wherewith I meddle not, nor with the other fables which other Indian Nations have of their progenitors; there being no honourable stocke Conceits of which is not derived from some Fountaine, or Lake, or Lyon, Tigre, Beare, Eagle, Centur or the originals other Birds of pray, or Hils, Caues, &c. But I by the faid Incar relation, and of many other In- of all chiefefacas and Indians of those townes which the laid Inca Manco Capac peopled, in the space of twenty yeares which I thereliued, received notice of all that I writ: for as much as in my childehood they related their stories to me, as they wie to tell tales to children; and after being grown in age they gaue me large notice of their Lawes and gouernment, comparing this Spanish with

the old, telling me how their Kings proceeded in peace and warre, and how they handled their fubicets : and as to their owne Sonne they recounted to me all their Idolatrie. Rites, Ceremonies, 20 Sacrifices, Fealts, and Superstitions, much whereof I have feene with mine eyes, it being not wholly left when I wastwelue or thirteene yeares old, who was borne eight yeares after the Spaniards had gotten my Countrie. I also purpoling to write a storie of their things, did write to my Schooletellowes for their helpe to give me particular information of the scuerall Provinces of their Mothers, each Countrie keeping their annals and traditions; which reporting my intent to their Mothers and kindred, that an Indian, a childe of their owne land, ment to write a Historie thereof, fearched their antiquities, and fent them to me; whereby I had notice of the conquests and acts of every Inca.

Manco Capac to the East of Cofco, peopled thirteene townes of the nation called Poques, to the West thirtie, with the Nations Majea, Chilqui, Papuri; twentie to the North of foure peo-

30 ples, Maju, Cancu, Chinchapucyu, Rimac tampu: 38.01.40. to the South, 18. of which were of the Nation Ayarmaca, the others of the Quespicancha, Mugna, Vrcos, Quennar Huaruc, Cauinna. This Nation Caninna, belieued that their first Parents came out of a certaine Lake, to which they were which fay the foules of the dead have recourfe, and thence return into the bodies which are borne. They had an Idoll of dreadfull shape, which Manco Capac caused them to leave, and to worship the Sun, as did his other valids. These townes from 100. housholds the greater, and 20. or 25, the lesse, grew to 1000. families, and the leffe to 3. or 400. The tirant Atauhualipa for their priviledges which the first Inca and his descendents had given them, destroyed them, some in part, others wholly. Now a Viceroy hath remoued them out of their ancient scituation, loyning five or fixe townes together in one place, and feuen or eight in another, a thing fo odious and inconvenient spenish altera-

40 that I ceale to mention it .

Manco Capac to reduce the abuses of their women, ordained that adultery should be punished with death, as like wife murther and robberie : hee enjoyned them to keepe but one wife, and to Mancer lawes. marrie in their kindred or tribe that they should not be confounded, and that they should marrie from twenty yeares vpwards. He caused them to gather together tame and harmelesse cattle in flockes and heards to cloath them; the Queene teaching their women to spin and weave, Hee taught them to make the shooe which they call V futa. He set a Curaca (or Cacique) ouer each seuerall Nation, chusing them to that dignitie which had taken most paines in reducing the Sauages, the mildest and best minded to the common good, to inftruct the rest as fathers. He ordained that the fruits which were gathered in each towne should be kept together, to give to each 50 man as he had neede, till lands were disposed to each in proprietie. Hee taught them how to build a Temple to the Sunne, where to facrifice and doe him worthip as the principall God, and to adore him as the Sun and Moone, which had fent them to reduce them to civilitie. He caused them to make a house of women for the Sunne, when there should be women sufficient of the Suns Nunnery bloud royall to inhabit it; and propounded all things to them in the name of the Sun, as inioy-

ned by him; which the Indians simply believed, adoring them for his children, and men divine Manco and his fuccessours were their haire poled, vsing to that purpose Rasors of flint, a Poledheads. thing so troublesome, that one of our Schoolefellowes seeing the readinesse of Scissers faid, that if your Fathers the Spaniards had onely brought vs Sciffers, Looking-glaffes, and

that it your parners the spontage had onery choosing to our Land. They weare Combes, wee would have given them all the Gold and Silver in our Land. They weare their eares with wide holes caused by are to grow into a strange and incredible widenesse, whereupon the Spaniards called them Oreiones, or men with great eares. Hee ware on his head as a Diadem or royall entigne a kinde of Ribben of many colours, which compaffed his head foure or five times a finger breadth, and almost a finger thicke. These three were Fillets.

Mances

Enfignes of dignitie.

Mancos deuiles, the Hautu or ribband, the wide hole in the care, and polling, as a kinde of Royaltie; and the first Primledge which the Inca gave to his Vasfals was to weare the fillet or ribband like the Inca, but theirs of one colour only, his of many. After some time, hee vouchfafed (as a great fauour) the polling divertified in Provinciall differences of the Eare-fathions (which was a later and greater fauour) both for the boaring and Earing, or Iewell there The Inca growing old, affembled his principall Vaffals in Cufco, and in a folemne freech told

Eufen and the Neighbours Incas by priniledge, which none elfewere ex-Poyall Dia-

them, that he intended to returne to Heauen, and to rest with his Father the Sunne which called him, (which was practifed by all his fucceffors, when they perceived themselves neere death) and now at his departure he minded to leaue them his chiefe fauour, to wit, his Royall Title, commanding that they and their Defendants should be Incar without difference, as having beene his first tubiects which he loued as children; and he hoped that they would likewife ferue his Royall bloud. Sicceffor, and augment the Empire : that their wives also should be called Pallas, as those of the Royall bloud, Oaly he refer sed the Royall Head-tire to himselie and his Descendents the Kings which was a fringe or lace coloure', extending from one fide of the fore-head to the other. His firname Capic lignifieth rich (which they understood of the mindes vertues) and mightie in armes. The name Inca lignifieth Lord, or generally those of the Royall bloud. For the Curacas, though great Lords, might not vie that Title. The King is diftinguished from all others by the appellation Capa, Capa Inca lignifying the only Lord, as the Grand Signier among the Turkes. They fuled him also Huaschacuyak, that is, Benefactor to the poore. They called them also Intip cha- to rin, the Sonnes of the Sunne. Manco Capie leigned, tome fay thirtie yeeres, others fortie. Hee had many children by his Wite Mama Ocllo Huaco, and by his Concubines (laying, it was good to multiply couldren to the Sunne.) He called his Vaffels also of the better fort, and recommendel his Heire as by Tellument in way of discourse to them, and to the rest of his children their loue and feruice of the Vallals, and to the Vallals their loyaltie to their King, and obedience to the Lawes. Then difmiffing the Vallals, hee made another speech in secret to his children, that they fhould alway remember that they were children of the Sun, to worship him as their God, and to maintaine his Lawes giving others examples therein; also to be gentle to the Indians, to uphold them in luftice without oppression : that they should recommend these thires to their posterities in all generations, saying, that they were the people of the Sunne, which he left vn- to to them as his Tellament; to whom he was now going to reit with him in peace, and from Heauen would have a care to fuccour them.

Mance die:h. fucceedeth.

Curacas.

Mancos Func-

Thus died Manco Capac, and left his Heire Sunchi Roca the el eft brother, and begotten of Cons Mama Ocilo Haaco his wite and lifter. Belides the Heire, those Kings left other somes and daugh ters which married amongst themselves to keepe the Royall bloud entire, which they tabulouly believed to be divine, and of others humane, alchough they were great Lords of Varials. called Curacas. The Inca Sinchi Roca married with his eldest litter, after the manner of his parents, and of the Sunne and Moone, thinking the Moone to be fifter and wife to the Sunne. The Ince Manco was lamented by his Vaffals very heavily, the Obsequies continuing many moneths They embalmed his corps to preferue it among ft them, and worshipped him tor a God, Senne 40 of the Sunne, offering many Sacrifices of Rammes, Lambes, Birds, Graines, &c. conteffing him Lord of all those things which he had left.

The name Inca descended to all the posteritie by the Male Line, not by the Female; all of this ranke were also called Tritip churin (children of the Sunne) and Augui, or Infanta, which Title they kept till their Marriage, and then were called Inca. The lawfull Queene was called Copa; alio Mamanchic, that is, Our Mother. Her daughters were likewife called Coya; the Concubines and other wives of the bloud Royall, were called Palla, which fignifieth a woman of Royall bloud, Concubines which were not of Royall bloud, were called Mamacuna, Mother. All the Royall Daughters were called Nufla, and if not of Royall Mothers, the name of the Prounce was added as Colla Nusta, Quitu Nusta. The name Nusta continued till they were married, and 52 then they were Hiled Palla.

The fecond Amantas, the

Go.L

learned Peru-Pachacamac. the name of Ignoto Dre.

He first Incas and their Amancas (which were their Philosophers) by light of Nature acknowledged God the Creator of all things, which they called Pachacamac (the Sunne they held to be a vilible Goo) Pacha lignifieth the World, and Camac to quicken, of Cama, the Soule, as if Pachacamae, were the foule or quickner of the Vniverle. This name they had in fuch veneration that they durft not mention it; and if they were by occasion forced thereto, they did it with holding downe the head, and bowing the bodie, lifting up their eyes to Heaven, and calling them downe to the ground, lifting vp their hands open strate from the shoulders, guing smacks or hp-motions to the ayre (Rites performed only to him and the Sunne) holding Pachacamac in 60 August mZ set, more internal reperence then the Sunne, whom they named commonly on any occasion. They faid that he gave life to the World, but they knew him not, for they had never feene him, and iw et & scent therefore neither built Temples, nor offered Sacrifice to h m; but faid they worthipped him in de valle varies, that they held the Sun for God, the earth for Mother, & Pachacama; for Creator of all,

their minds, and held him for the waknowne God. The Spaniards, which tooks him for a Deuill and knew not the generall Language, found out another name for God, Tier Uira-cocka, which Thare he and mether I, nor they know what it meaneth : and if any should aske mee how I in my Language finth her had would call God, I would answee, Pachacamac: nor is there in that generall Language any o. no proper ther name for him. And all those which Authors report are corrupted of other Languages, or name for God.

deutfed by them. The Lucy in Cazco kept a Croffe of Marble, White and Garnation, which they call lafee Critistine. They know not how long they hadat Anno 1, 60. Hert it in the Veftry of the Catheyrail Church of that Citier The Croffe was fquare, three quarters of a yard lond and

to there, fingers thicke a and fo much in breadth, all of one piece well wrought. They the Spaniards kent in one of their Houlds Royall, in a soome which they call Huace, a holyplace, came They did not adokent, but hald it in venerable efteemen deither tor the goodlineffe, or for some other respect which they knew not. The Incar and all Nations This et to them, knew not what it was to fweare : you have heard of cheir respect to the name Pachacamee. The Witnestes were latestanely demanded in waightie cales by the ludge, Doef then Notwering promise to sell sputh to the Inca? swisch he promising, the tudge gave him a careat for lying or concealing. They exceedingly feared to lye, and is they were found to doe it; were grieuoufly punithed, and in cales of great importance, with ideath, as having lied to the detay: for fo they toake to the ludge as if it were to the hold whom they worthipped for God. Behdes Pachacamac, the

to the mage as marwers and Moone (as his wirband: fifter) and harres, they were forbidden by Law to adore Acollaby this any thing. Pachacamae the supreme God had no Temples ordinarily, yet in a Valley called Pa- will bee better chacianae was a Temple dedicated to that vinime wire God. The Spaniardi attribute many other winderfield & Gols to the Long, through ignorance of their Rives in the first and second age, and of their language; and not knowing the dates fight fications of the word Hance, which in the last fyllable pronounced high in the roofe of the mouth figurierh an kiell. It figuried also chings facted in which the Denill gaue answeres, also things confederated as offerings to the Sunne; Temples likewife and Chappels and Sepulchres whence the Detail fake they gave that name all to all Huaca and the things eminent and tuperexcellene in their kind, as the fare R Trees, &c. On the contrary they divers again called the filthieft and most months our things Hasen; which might cause horrour, as the great of vinknowne 30 Snakes of fue and twentie of shirtie foot long. Hutes was applied to all things allow hich go out to the Sani.

of the common courle, as to a woman which had Twinnes, making great Fealts, and firthwing and occasioflowres in the firest with Dances and Songsfor lach her fruitfulneffe: The fame name they gade ned to asy in to heepe which had Twinner (for virally dere the that the het and in their Sacrifices rather Twins rate offered a Twinne Embe, if they had it, then amortige likewife to ah Hebe With two yolkes, to those which had in their birth any member more or lessethen vitually as if one had in toos on his foot, a horne lip, &c. alfo to Roustainer which yeelded extraordinary fource of waters, to the ranke of the inovere Hils which ranke thorow all Pera to the Mayelane Straits, to all extraordinary Mountaines; Neither did they (as the Spaniardi fay) hold thefe for Gods, nor worship thein, but for their eminence held them in the venerable respect. The same word Huaca pro-40 nounced with the last fyllable in the inner part of the throat; fignifieth to weepe; a thing vitall

in that Language, for the same word in differing pronuntiation, to fignifie things different. As for the Idoll Tangatanga, which one Authour faith they worshipped in Chuquifaca, and ration is the that the Indiang fail it was three in one, and one in three : I know no fuch Idoll, nor is there any Sunne, & worfuch word in the general Language of Perusbut the Province is one bundred and eightie leagues thip or reucfuch word in the general Language of Persons the Frontiers one number and eighter rease of the from Cozes, and the Spaniards corrupt all the words they take in their mouthes. It is likely that Inte. the Indians to flatter with the Spaniards, when they heard them preach of the Trinitie pretended acoff taxed. tome fuch likenesse of beliefe. The like I hold concerning their confessions, all which was inven- See before in ted by the Indians to currie failour with the Spaniards. I speake this as an Indian which know the Acons page naturall condition of the Indians: and I fay that they had no Idoll with the name of the Trinitie, 1041.06.

nor had any fuch word in their Language.

50 They believed the immerialitie of the foule, that the bodie was of earth, and called it Allaa- Their beliefe camafea, that is quickenedearth. They beleeved another life after this, with punishment for the oithe foule. bad and reit for the good. They divided the Vinueric into three Worlds, Heaven called Hanan pacha, or the high World, whither they faid the good men went to bee rewarded for their vertues : this World they called Hurin pacha, the World below: the third von pacha, the centre of the Earth, called, also Cuparpa buacin, that is, the house of the Denill. The life in Heaven they faid was quiet, free Three Worlds from troubles, as that of the inferior World, which we call Hell full of paine and trouble without any rest or content, whereas this present life participated of both. Amongst the loyes of the other life they did not reckon carnall delights nor other vices, but quietnesse of the minde only

63 with reflot the bodie. They believed the Refurrection vinuerfall, not glory nor paine, but to Refurrection this same temporall life. They made great reckoning of their haire which they polled or combed from their heads, to lay it vp in some place, or in a hole of the wall, and if another Indian had seene it felne thence, he would take and lay it up fafe. I have often asked the cause, and they Have superwould tell mee that we were to return againe to live in the World (they have no word for the fittion.

A Croffe in

* He feemeth

ches

Refurrection) and that the foules should raise all that belonged to their bodies forth of the graues: we therefore lay our haire together that our foules should not bee troubled to feeke the same at that day when there thall be to great hurliburly and preffure, and if it were possible wee would haue it all in one place for quicker dispatch.

Sacrifices.

The Sacrifices to the Sunne were divers; as creatures tame, great and small; Lambes were the principall, next Rammes, and then barren Ewes; Conies, all Birds which were for meate. and principali, inches cannot pulle to the Herbe Cuca, and fine garments (which they burned inftead of Incenfe; their drinkes alio, as that made of water and Maiz; and in their ordinarie meales when they have eaten and are about to drinke (for they never drinke whiles they are ea-

Peru dict.

ting) they put their finger in the midft of the first vessell, and looking vp to Heauen with reue. 10 rence, they turne vp as it were, with a fillip, a drop of that drinke, offering it with thankfulner to the Sunne, for that hee hath given them to drinke, and kiffing wife mooued their lios twice or thrice to the aire, which with them is a figne of adoration; and then drinke off the self trachefor al att without more Ceremonies. This I have feene them often doe. Yet did not the Indiana of the Prostat no Man exters. fecond age (which began and ended with the Incar government) offer the bloud or flesh of men. or Officers. but prohibited the eating thereof, wherein Historians haue bin deceiued, it beeing true indeed of Aco?: and ofome Regions before the conquest of them by the Inca. Neither did they facrifice either men or thers taxed. children when their Kings were ficke, as one Historian writeth; for they held them not for difeales, as those of the common people; but esteemed them as Messenges of their Pather the Sunne, which came to call his Sonne to reft with him in Heauen; and those were their ordinary spee-

Incat conceit of fickneffe. Eybrow-rite,

When they entred into their Temples, the principall of those which went in, put vo his hand to his eye-browes, as if he would pluck off some of the haires, and whether he plucked off any or no, he puffed to the Idoll in figne of adoration and offering; this they did not to their Kings but only to their Idols, or Trees, or places where the Deuill game answeres, Their Priests and Witches did the like, when they went into their corners or fecret places to conferre with the Deuill. This I dolatry I have also trene them performe.

Priefts of Peru.

The Priests of the house of the Sunne in Coace, were all Incar of the Royall bloud : for other feruice of the Temple were Incas of those which were such by printledge. They had a High or Chiefe Prieft, which was Vncle or Brother to the King : or at least legitimate of the bloud. The 30 Priests had no peculiar Vestment. In other Prounces where were Temples (which were many) the Natures were Priefts, the Kinfmen of the Lords of those Countries; notwithflanding the principall Priest (or Bishop as it were) was to bee an Inca, that to they might hold conformitie of Rites with the Metropolitan : for in all preeminent Offices of Peace or Warre, they had Incas their Superiours. They had many houses of Virgins which observed perpetuall Virginitie without going out of their house; and others of the Concubines for the King.

policanzothers had as it were? Priefts.

All their Lawes Civill and Sacred were attributed to Manco Capac, faying, that hee had left and perfected fome himselfe, the others for his Successors to accomplish in their times : so to give All Ordinan- authoritie to all, as from the Sunnes Ordinance. And though fome of the Incar were great Lawces arributed makers, yet no memory is left of any particulars under their name, but all is attributed to the 40

to Alanco. Division of

The Incas decided their Empire into foure parts : they called it Tauantin saya, that is, the foure parts of the World. Hereof Cozco was the Centre, which in that Inca-language lignifieth the Nawill of the Earth, or Land. The East-diution they called Antifurn of the Province Anti(2 name Anti, called by alio given to the Rew of Snowie Mountaines in the East) the West Cuntifagu, the North Com-Acofa, Ander. chafuyu; the South Collafuyn; each name derived of some Province therein so called, and continued to the furtheil extent that way, as Collafunn to Chili, fixe hundred leagues from Colla, and

Chinchasun to Quin foure hundred leagues from Chincha to the North. They ordained that in every Towne great or small of their Empire, the Inhabitants should be registred by Tithings, and one of them should take charge of the other nine, as a Decurion or Ti- 50 thingman, called Chunca Chancapa. Five of thele Decurions had another Superiour, which had the charge of firtie. Ouer two of those was another Superiour or Centurion. Fine Centuries were subjected to one which had charge of fine hundred, and two of those charges had a Chillearch or Captaine of one thousand : higher they went not.

Tithingmen. See the like with vs in Lamb.peramb. of Kent. Orders of Oi-

Tithings and

The Tithingman gave account to the Governour of those in his charge, to provide them Seed neers. Charactemagn, or Bread corne, or Wooll, or House-reparations, or other necessaries. He also was to informed thir faults to the Judges, which according to the greatnesse of the offence were also diversified in order for dispatch of luftice, and to take away need of Appeales, except in cases betwixt one Prouince and another, for which the Incasent a speciall Judge. If the Decurion neglected to informe, the fault was now made his owne, and hee corrected for it : as also in the other case of 60 proussion. Hence there were no Vagabonds nor idle persons. The Father was corrected which did not educate or correct his children; the children also were punished in correspondence of their age : and the Tithingman was to informe of both. The ludges punished them, they faid, not for the fact, but the fault in transferelling the Incas commandement which they respected as Gods.

They had no purse-punishments, Fines or Confifcations; for to leaue them poore, was but to Penalties. sine them more aibertie comite. It any-Creaca rebelled and deferued death; his sonife nice ceded No fines. not withill and ing to his States. In water they had Natines for Captuines ouer their come Countriment habing hear for their Superiours. The Judge durft not arbitrate, but execute the Law , at life bee deal for breaking the Royall commandement. " This feueritie of the Officers anchof che Lawes which for light offences inflicted death, produed rather gentle then Nothing more cruell and barbasous/few daring to transgresse vio that all that Empire, extended thirteent hun, merchall then dred leagues; and wonfilling of, to many Nations and Languages, was governed by one Law, as if fewerine vaicital besone one boute, the ratior because they held the same divine, and from the Sunnet ordinages all to

10 nance by the food! And Alla Litalisticaker was aberefore accounted facritegions and accorded litiformich that fome baueprooued accused by cheir owno conferences have made confessions without other actiliers, fearing 50 bring fauers or mens publike plagues onethe State, as Difeatetos Dearths, which they fougheres preuent by appealing God with their deaths. And I conceine, that from thefe publike confessions, the Spanit Historians have weiter chat the Indian of Pers had confession in fecret like Christians, and Confession ten tew batfours appropriated : which is falle, for in Powthey had no other then Hage mentioned and the rels, and conledians which told the Spaniards thus, aniwored to to their questions, as they thought might best fequently please thema. Heither had they any Appeales Civill or Criminall. Briery Fowne had a ludge, warres then and for highermatters they went to the Superiour Indge in the Mother Cirie; The Semences of when & where 20 ordinary ludges, were every moneth related to the Superior Hudges; and theirs to others their they have not Superiours, which were in the Court in divers degrees according to the qualitie of Cales. The Su- beene. preame were the Prefidents or Vice-royes of the four parts of the World. This report was made No auricular

to examine Sentences which had paffed, and if they were found uniust, the Authors were severely punished. The manner of sendring these reports to the lines, and to those of his Counsell, was by knotain lines of dinere colours, which ferued them as it were Ciphers for the knots of fuch ludgements or field colours declared the offences, and certaine threads of druers colours fastned to the lines, examined. fbewed the putalhment. This was their Arithmetike in which they were expert and certaine. Quippes. forme applying themselves to nothing elie. If any Provinciall controversie could not be decided by those whom the King tent, is was suspended till his Visitation of those parts, and then hee 30 himfelfe would fee, heare and fentence.

The Tithingmen allo gaue account every moneth of all which were bothie or died, and like- Monethy and wifear the end of the yeere flich as perifhed in the warres; they also relited. The like Officers yeerely acand Orders were in the Campes of warre, as in the Townes of peace. They permitted not to counter Tacke the Townes which they conquered by force. For every of those foure divitions of the Empite the Incaliad Councels of Warre, of Infice, of necessary businesse. These had subordinate Officets in divers degrees which rendred accounts of all to the Supreme Councell. Each had a Pre- But fonte prifident or Vice say swhich received those accounts, and rendred the fiffer to the King. These lors. were Inche legitimate, of great experience in Warre and Peace. And thele foure only were

Counfellors of State. Roca succeeded his Father Mango: he was called Sinchi, that is , valiant; excelling in manly Roca Incahis feates of Activity, Running, Leaping, casting stones or Dirts, Wrestling, any of his time. His acts. Fathers Obsequies beeing finished, hee sought to augment his Empire, affembled his Curacas to that end, and put them in minde of that which his Father had faid to them, when he would returne to Heauen, commanding the conversion of the Indians, to the knowledge and worship of the Sunne: whereunto he was now obliged by his place, and for the profit of the bordering Nations which had need thereof. They promifed all readinesse, and he made his expedition to Collasmy and perswaded with faire words, the Nations Puchina and Chanchi, being simple and credulous of enery neueltie (as are all the Indians) and fo proceeded without violence twentie tie.

leagues that way to the people Chuncara, irrall things following his Fathers example. Hee also 50 brought in other Nations on each hand; some affirme a great many. He is thought to have reigned thirtie yeeres : and then professing that he went to rest with his Father the Sunne, hee left L/oque Tupanqui his fonne to fucceed him, and a numerous Iffue besides. His name Lloque signifieth Lloque Tupan-

left handed (for so he was) Tunarani was added for his vertues, and fignifieth, thou shall account or quithe third reckin, to wit, his great exploits and good parts. If any thinke the word may imply a well the incarecounting of vices, let him know that in that Language it is not fo, the fame Verbe not beeing flexible to cuill transition which is vied to good, nor to good which may be applyed to cuill; but their elegance enforceth a change of the Verbe in change of the object. The name Tupangui, as Grammer. that of Capac were for their merits given to three other Incas. He reduced under fubication proceeding by the Collasur, the people Cama by perswasions. The Ayavari refused and fought with 60 him, and after fortified themselves and indured many skitmithes, but by fiege and famine were

After that he went to Pucara, which was a Fortreffe builded by him : and fent to the Pancarcalla and Hatancolla, which liftned to his proposition, being a great Nation, or rather a multitude of Nations, which had many fables of their originall, forme from a Fountaine, others from a

Sec Acela.

Caur, others from a River. They worthipped a white Ramme as their principall God, being Lords of much cattell. They faid that the first Ram in the world about, made more reckoning of them then other Indians, and had multiplied their Cattell. They offered to that Ram Lambs and tallow in Sacrifice, All of them agreed in this Ram deitie, in other their gods differing, bue now exchanged all for the Sunne. Afterwards Thiesea, and Chacagen, and Harin Pasalla were fabilised by him. Now to intermixe fomewhat of the Sciences which the lacer had. Their Aftrologie and and naturall Philosophie was little, by reason their America or Pphylo-

Of the Paruan Aftrologie, Dreames of

Ecclipies.

fopher, wanted letters. They better understood mortall learning, and left it written in the practife of their lawes. They oblerued the folitices and equincetials by certaine towers. The Mooneand Moneth they called Quilla, the yeare busts. The eclipies of the Moone they attri-bated to her fickneffe, fearing that the would dye and fall from heaven, and kill all below. and 10 therefore they founded Trumpets, Cornets, Drums, and such Instrumencs as they had, beating, and making their Dogs also to houle, thinking her affectioned to Dogges, for a certaine feruice which they fable done by them, and therefore imagine the would respect them, and awake our of her fleepe cauled by ficknesse. The ecclipse of the Sunne they say happenerh for some offence done as unit him, for which he is angrie. The spots in the Moone they fable to have come of a Fox:, which being in love with the Moones beautie, went to heaven, and touching her with his forefee: eleft thate foule memorials. They make their children to cry Mama Quilla, Mother Moone doe not dye left all perifs. The men and women cry likewife in her ecclipte with horrible noise: when she recouers her light, they say Pachacamae hath cured her and commanded her 20 not to dye, that the world should not perish; and give her great thankes. All this I have seene

with mine eyes. The lightning and thunder they adore not for gods, but honour and efteeme

them as the Sunnes feruants retrient in the ayre, not in heaven. Like account they make of the

Rainebow, which the Kings Ineas placed in their armes and foutchion. In the house of the Sunna

was a roome for each of them. They made no Prognostications nor Predictions by signes of the

In Geometrie they had some skill for partitions of their grounds, but nothing for speculations

and to much Geographie, as with plats or pictures to expresse the Nations. I have seene one of

Cufce, and the confines admirably artificiall. Arithmeticke they practifed with knots, as is faid.

and with graines of Maiz, and small stones, making perfect accompts. Musicke they had in some

tu es of art; with divers Instruments, as Pipes proportioned to a confort, and flutes and songs.

The America also had some practise of Poetrie, and composed Comedies and Tragedies. The

Actors were not base persons, but Incas and the Nobilitie, sonnes of the Curaras. The argu-

ment was the acts of their ancestors. Their were represented before the King and Lords at

Court. They had no base or dishonest parts intermixed. They made Verses short and long with

piter and lune in our Poets) the daughter of a King had a pitcher full of water to moiften the earth,

which her brother brake, and with the blow caused thunders and lightnings. They were found

in knots and particoloure threads, being very ancient. The words are thus in Pernan and Eng.

measuring the syllables without rimes, I have given an inflance; the argument is (like that of In- 40

Thunder and lightning. Rainbow.

Dream-diuina- Sunne, Moone, Comets, but by their dreames often and thrange, and by their facrifices. The Sun

every evening fet in the Sea, and with his heate dried up much of the water, and fwam voder the earth thorow it to the East. For Phisicke they yied purging and bleeding, but had no skill of Vrines or Pulse: some rootes and hearbes they made medicinable vse of, especially of

Medicine.

Chorography.

Mulicke.

Poetry.

in mondaire verfes.

lifb, the fyllables also in like number and meeter Fairest of Nimphes, Cumac Nusta Thine owne Brother, Totallay quim This thy Pitcher Puyunuy quita Now is breaking: Paquir Cayan Hina Mantara Whose hard striking Синик пивиня Thunders, lightens, And thrower fire-bolts. The partee Camri Nusta But thou fweet Nimph, Thy faire Pitcher Unuya Quita Para Munqui Powring, rainel:

Now for Handicrafts, the Goldsmiths (of which they had so many) knew not to make an anule of Iron, nor of other meetall; nor to cast Iron, although they had Mines thereof. They vfed for anuiles certaine hard ftones, of a pale greene colour, which they plained and fmoothed with rubbing one against another. They were rare and precious. They knew not how to make hammers with handles of wood, but wrought with inftruments made of Copper and Laton mingled, in forme of a Dye, of feuerall fizes, which they held in their hands to ftrike with as men 60 doe with itones. They had no Files nor Chiffels, nor Bellowes for earling of mettals, but wfed Pipes of Braffe, halfe a yard long or leffe, and loyned eight or tenne together as there was neede. Neither had they skill to make tongues. And yet did they make maruellous workes. Their Carpenters were as much to feeke or more, having no Iron tooles, but an Axe and a Hatchet and

Sometimes also Thou fendst forth haile. Chich munqui Thou lends forth fnow. Riti munqui The worlds maker, Pacha ruras Pacha camac Pachacamac Vira coch a Viracocha

Cay bmapas To this office Churafunqui Hath thee placed And authorifed. Cama Sunqui.

CHAP.13. Mechanicks, Comedies; old buildings admirable Statues Bridges.

those of Braffe: no Saw, nor Augre, nor Plainer, nor Nailes, but tastned all things with lines or ropes of a kinde of heath, Neither were their Masons in better case: they vied a certaine blacke Masons. fine not to cut but to beate their stoneworks with force of their armes, and yet have left incredible Monuments of their art. The lefutes and other Religions have instructed the youth since in other arts, in Dialogues and Comedies of Scripture. One Issuite in praise of our Lady the Virgin Mary composed a Comedie in the Aymara tongue, the argument was Gen. 3. 1 will Note. vigin creary composed a comment and between the feed and bet feed; She (to the Romiftire and and make of it this remarkeable vie) [ball break; to bead, Oc. A dialogue of the faith was recited at Potocis before 12000. Indians, and another of the Sacrament at the Citie of Kings beto fore innumerable, the Indian youth acting and pronouncing with fuch feemely gestures as much affected the Spaniards. The Licentiate Inan Cuelles read the Latin Grammer to the Mestizos of Cozco, with good fruite.

Area Capec followed his predecessors examples, and went forth with 12000.men (the for- The third Marie expeditions had beene with leffe company, as of 7000 and fo vpwards as the state encreafed) and couering his couetousnesse and ambition with pretence of converting people to his religion , came to the disemboking of the great lake Titicaca, and made Boates for transport- This lesson ing his army. He brought under by raire meanes the Tiabuanacu, which people had admirable the Spontinds buildings. One was a hand-made Mount admirable high, founded on stones ioyned with mor-

an ter, none could tell for what caufe. In one roome thereof flood two figures of Giants cut in flone with long garments downe to the ground, with coverings on their heads, well worne with age. Admirable There was also a huge wall of stones so great that it may breede wonder what force of men might buildings. Pebe able to bring or raife them where they are, feeing that in a great distance there are no quar- dro de Grona ries. There are other braue buildings, great porches or frontals, in diners places each made of chothane iti ries. There are other braue buildings, great porches or frontais, in divers places each made or this arm his one front in all the foure parts; yea to greater admiration some of these are set on frone, of which owne we're fome are thirtie foote long, and fifteene broad, and fixe in front, and these frones fo great, and the more largely. porches are of one peece; nor can it be imagined with what instruments they were wrought. The Naturals fay they are ancienter then the Ineas times, and that they imitated thefe in building the fortreffe of Cozco; and knew not who made them, but have a tradition that they were to all made in a night. It feemeth that they were neuer finished, but were onely beginnings of what the founders intended. Diego de Alcobaças Priest, my Schoolefellow, & borne in the same house

that I was, being also my forter brother, and a Preacher to the Indians; which hath beene there, wrote to me that in that Region Tiabnanaen fast by a lake called Comquinitm, there stands a marueilous house, with a faire Court fifteene yards square, compassed with a high wall, on one side whereof is a great hall 45, foote long, and 22, wide, couered like the house of the Sunne in Casce. This Court with the wals and floore, hall, roofe, porches, and thresholds of two doores (the one of the hall, the other into the court) is all made of one peece wrought in one rocke : the wals of the hall and of the wall are three quarters of a yard thicke. The roofe though it feeme of that ch is of stone. They say it was dedicated to the Maker of the World. There are also many stones cut 40 in shapes of men and women, so naturall as if they were alive drinking with cups in their hands, fome fitting, some on their feete, others as it were passing, others with children in their armes, and 1000, other postures. The Indians say that for their sinnes, and for stoning a man which pal-

fed thorow that Prouince, they were converted into flatues. But to returne to our Inca, he lubdued many Nations or pettie habitations; fuch as would not be wonne by perswasions, hee mastered with seege and hunger. Battels were very rare. Hee died having raigned about thirtie yeares, and was bewailed a yeare after the cuftome. His Sonne Capac Tupanqui succeeded, the Capac Tupanqui

His first care, after his Diadem affured, was to visite his Kingdome; in which visitation hee fpent two yeares, enquiring into the courses of his Ministers and Gouernours. After this hee 50 Went up from Cozeo with 20000. men, and went Westward. Hee caused a Bridge to be made in the River Apprimac at Huacachaca, lower then that of Accha. Hee passed over it to the faire Province Tanabura, which gladly received him; thence to Aymara, there being betwixt those two Prouinces a Region dishabited of thirtie leagues; which passed, he found at the hill Mucanfamuch people of that Province (which is thirtie leagues long, fifteene wide, rich of Ofyer Bridge. Mines of Gold, Silver, Lead and Cattell) to encounter shim. But he fought rather to befeege them on the hill, having purposely sent men about, and by hunger forced them to composition after a moneths liege. Having pacified the Armaras, hee proceeded to Cotapampa and Cotanera of the Nation Quechna; and after to the Vallie of Hacari, great and fertile. Hee made another expedition, leaving his Brother his Lieutenant of his Kingdome, and the foure Masters 60 of his Campe his Councellours, chufing others to ferue him; and went to the Lake of Paria, where two Curacas at contention , made him arbitrator , and themselues his subjects in the diuision Collaguyn. Thence thorow a spacious Countrievnpeopled, but full of Cattell and hot Springs; hee came to the Provinces Tapacri and Cochapampa. Hee made another Bridge in the water-paffage of Tuicara, The former of Huacachasa was made of Olyers, this of Bull-

Ffffff

Handicrafts.

rushes there growing, of which they made foure cables as big as a mans legge, reaching from one fide to the other; on which they laid great bundles of the fame matter as bigge as an Oxe. frongly tied together and to the Cables : ouer these bundles they made two other cables which their waies to they fastened furely with the bundles: vpon these they laid other little bundles as bigge as a mans arme, wouen into each other and with the cables; these were as the causey of the Bridge. This Bridge is thicteene or foureteene foot broad, and about one hundred and fiftie paces long. They renewed it enery fixe moneths. Often vie made readinesse and quicke dispatch. They remoued it as they faw occasion. The In. a passed further to Chayanta, thorow a dishabited Countrey : this with fine other great Provinces he subiccted, and then returned to Cozco, and rewat-

Remouing of one place to

The Kingdome now reached one hundred and eighty leagues from Cufes Southwards, and Westwards to the Sea, sixtie leagues one way, and eightie another : to the East thirteene, to the South-east fortie. He adorned the houses of the Sunne which Manco Capac had founded, and that of the Virgins, with other great workes. After this he fent the Prince Roca with an army of 20000. men, by the way of Chinchasings Northwards from Cuzco, which had continued at a flay tince Manco Capac, but seuen leagues from the Citie, the Country beyond being rough and vapeopled. He entred into the rich Countrey of Sura, which gently received him, as did alfo the next called Agueara, which was in enmitte with the former. The like successe hee had in Rucana, Nama (ca, and other Vallies to Arequepa eightie leagure outright, and foureteene in breadth. The Inca transplanted people from those parts to Aparimae, both being hot Regions. Old Inca Capac Tupanqui after theiethings dyed, leaving about eightie children (some of them left one hundred, fome two hundred, and fome about three hundred) and his Sonne Rees succeeded.

still in reputation, the Kings adorned it with sumptuous buildings, of which the principall was

cause he enriched it, being before founded by Manos. The Chappell or shrine of the Sunne was

that which is now the Church of Saint Dominge (although not the fame altogether) wrought of

polished stone. The high Altar (that we may so call it, for they knew not how to make an Alta)

itood to the East, the roofe was thatched (for they could not make tile.) All foure wals were co-

uered from the top to the bottome with Plates of Gold. In the East or high Altar stood the

other Temple but this : for indeede (whatfoeuer others fay) they worshipped no other gods

but the Sunne. This Idoll fell by lot, in the Spanife Conquerours flaring, to one Marie

Serra, whom I knew and left alice when I came to Spaine, who loft it at play in a night, whence they faid Prouerbially, bee had placed away the Sunne before it was up. Hee was after

chosen the ordinary Alcalde of the Citie many yeares, and grew to abhoore play very much.

But by such a share falling to one man, may be guessed the exceeding riches of that Citie.

On the one side and on the other of that Image were the deceased bodies of the Kings, pla-

ced according to their antiquitie, as children of the Sunne, embalmed (wee know not how)

holding their faces to the people. Onely Huapna Capac was placed before the figure of the

Sunne with his face to it: as his best beloued sonne, whom they worshipped in his life time

for his vertues. These corpes the Iudians did hide with the rest of their treasures, the

most of which is not yet knowne. Anno 1559, the Licentiate Polo found fiue of them, three

of the Kings, and two of the Queenes. The principall doore looked to the North, as it fill

abides. That and the other leffe doores were lined with plates of Gold, in manner of a

Porch. Without the Temple, on the top of the wats ran all alongst a chamfred worke of gold,

Religious re-

Many children Let vs now speake of Cozco and the holies thereof. One of the principallest Idols of that Empire was Cofco, the Imperiall Citie, which the Indi. ans worthipped as a thing facred, because it was founded by Inca Manco Capac, and because it putation of was the house and Court of the Ineas their gods. If an Indian in the way met another which Cozco and the came from Cozco, though otherwise equall, and now he himselfe were going thither, he gave him fuper Retious respect therefore as his superiour for having beene there; how much more if he were a necte dweller, or Citizen there? The like was in Seedes, Pulie, or whatfocuer was brought from Cozco, more esteemed for that cause then those of other parts in other respects as good. To hold it

the Temple of the Sunne, every Inca increasing it, which is said to be builded by Tupanqui, be-

Rich hangings figure of the Sunne, made of one planke or plate) of Gold, twice as thicke as the other places on the wals; the face round with rayer and flames of fire, all of a peece. It was fo great that it is sunsainings. tooks up all the end from one wall to the other. Neither had they any other idols in that or any

Bodiesof Kings fo that they seemed alive. They were set in their seates of Gold placed on plankes of gold, 10 Инаупа Сарас.

in forme of a Crowne, aboue a yard broad, round about the Temple. Beyond the Temple was a Cloister of foure squares (one of which was the Temple) round a-ArichCloifter bout the top whereof was such a crowne of chamfered gold, as is before mentioned, about a Fine Chappels yard broad, inflead of which the Spaniards have fet vp one of white plaifter. There were 63 squares, or seuered Chappels standing by themselues, couered I ke a pyramis, which made the Moone Chap- three other fides of the Cloifter. One of them was dedicated to the Moone, all which and the doores thereof was covered with places of Silver. Her Image was placed therein like that of the Sun, with a womans face in a planke of Silver. Thither they went to visite her, and to commend

CHAP.13. Rich Chappels of Moone, Starres, Thunder, Rainbow. Priests.

themselves to her as the wife and fifter of the Sunne, and mother of the Incas, and all their generation; and called her Mamaquillia, Mother Moone: but offered no Sacrifices to heras to the Sunnes On each hand of the Moones image were the bodies of the Queenes deceafed ranked in order of their antiquitie. Mamaoello Mother of Huayna Capac food before the Moone face to Chappell of face, for producing such a Sonne. The next roome to that of the Moone, was dedicated to the Venus & Stars. Planet Venus, and to the seuen Starres, and to all the Starres in common, which they held to Charpellof be the seruants of the Moone, and therefore placed them about their Lady to be ready at hand Starres site. for any feruice. The next roome was lined with filueralfo, and the porch of filuer. The roofe Chappell of was made with relemblances of Starres great and small, like the starrie firmament. The next thunder, light-10 to this of the Starres was dedicated to the Thunder and Lightning and Thunderbolt, all ning and bolt,

which were fignified in one word Tllapa. They worshipped them not for gods, but held Chappellor Rainebow. them for feruants of the Sunne. They made no picture thereof. The fourth roome or Chappell was dedicated to the Rainebow, which they effeemed feruant to the Sunne; this roome and the former were all garnished with gold. On the golden plankes of this was the Rainebow painted. When they law a Rainebow in the skie, they coured their mouth with their hand, faying, that if their teeth were vncouered they would confume. The fifth building was for the chiefe Priefts, and the other Priefts which ferued in the Temple, not to eate or drinke in. but for confultation about their Sacrifices: it was garnished with gold from the top to the The chiefe Priest was called Villac Vmn, that is, the Priest which speaketh, namely to the people, Priests

what the Sunne hath given him in charge, or divels, or dreames, or other divinations have foretold. Three of those fine roomes remaine, the Gold and Silver except. Those of the Moone and Starres are downe. Every file had foure Tabernacles without, which had like workes on them in stone, as within of mettall. Not onely the wals but the floores of those Tabernacles also was of Gold. The Images were alto pouldered with Gemmes, Turkesses, and Emeralds; for they had no Diamonds nor Rubies. There were twelve doores to the Cloifter, and as many Tabernacles or shrines, besides that of the Moones Chappell and of the Starres, thele were of S luer, the reft were all plated ouer with Gold in forme of Porches. They had also in the house of the Sunne Women might many other roomes or chambers for the Priests and servants of the house, which were lucas of not enter. 30 priviledge: For none but an Inca might enter into that house; nor any woman, no not the wines Moneable or daughters of the King. The Priests semed their courses by weekes, which they reckened by weekes. the quarters of the Moone : in which space they departed not out of the Temple day nor night. The Porters and all inferior officers were of the same townes which ferued in the Kings house; Servitors, there being no difference made in the two houses of the Father and the Sunne, but that one had Sacrifices, women, the other no Sacrifice in it, equall otherwise in Maiestie. For severall Sacrifices they Foundation had feuerall roomes. In the houfe were fine Fountaines of water which runne thence in pipes of Gold : the Pillars were some of stone, others of Gold hollow, others of Siluer ; there they washed the Sacrifices. Onely one of these Fountaines were left to water the garden of the Couent, till 1558, when it being occasionally broken, no Indian could tell whence that water came, or 40 how tohelpe it. Such traditions of facred things it feemes were kept by their Priefts, and now loft, Occasion seuen moneths after found the water, which they amended without further search

of the Fountaine, the pipes lying very low. the Fountaine, the pipes lying very low.

Gardenof gold
This Garden was in the Ineas time a Garden of Silver and Gold, as they had in the Kings and filw.r. houses, where they had many forts of Hearbes, Flowers, Plants, Trees, Beafts great and small, wilde tame, Snakes, Lizards, Snailes, Butterflies, small and great Birds, each fet in their place. They had Maiz, Quinua, Pulle, Fruit-trees with the fruite on them all of Gold and Silver, refembling the naturall. They had also in the house heapes of wood, all counterfeit of Gold and Golden counterfeit Silver, as they had in the house royall : likewise they had great statues of men and women, and terfeits, children, and many Pirua or Troffes for corne, every day inventing new fashions of greater Ma-50 iestie, vfing yearely on the Sunnes chiefe feltiuities to present him so much Silver and Gold wrought into counterfeit formes. All the Veffell (which was infinite) for the Temples fernice, Pots, Pans, Tubs, Hogheads, was of Gold and Silver, even to the Spades, and Pickaxes for the All reffels and Garden. Like to this Temple of Cozco were others in many Provinces of that Kingdome, in influments of which every Comma indevoured according to his power to have such riches of Gold and Silver. Gold. But the most famous was that of Tricaca.

This might for Gold and Silver compare with that of Cozoo. It is an Iland in the mids of a Lake of the same name, where their fables tell that after the floud, the Sunne first shined; and after that, he exposed his Sonne and Daughter (as ye have heard) to civillize the world. In thele Rich Temple respects it was holden for a place facred thorow all that Empire, and a Temple was built therein, all lined with plates of Gol., dedicated to the Sunne. All places fibiect to the Empire, yearely offered Gold and Silver and Precious stones, in thanks giving to the Sunne for his benefits there done them. This Temple had the fame Service as that at Cozco. Of the offerings of Gold and Silver was fuch a quantitie flored in the Ile, befides that which was wrought, that it is more

matter of wonder then credit. Blus Valera faith, that the Indians reported that there was enough Ffffff 2

and that he should neuer want bread all dates of his lite.

In the Valley of Orcos, fix leagues Southwards from Cuzco is a little Lake aboue a mile abour. 52 mill under- but very deepe, into which the report was that much of Cazco treasure was throwne. Some raking lot treas Spaniards agreed to be at colt to emptie it, Anno 1557, but having entred fiftie paces into their main: worse, by which they had thought to have conucied the water into the River Tucay, they were encountered with a rocke, which feeking to make way thorow, they brought forth more fire then stone, and were enforced to give ouer. The Indians are thought to have hidden infinite treatures. But for that barren rockie Ice the Incas were at furtl er coft to couer the stone with good earth, that it might beare Mayz (which growes no where in that cold Region) of which a 10 little quantitie grew, and by the King was offered to the Sunne in his Temple, and to the chofen Virgins in (#200, which were to fend it to other Monasteries and Temples, one yeare to one, and another to another, that they might have of that graine which feemed to have come from heauen. They fowed it in Gardens of the Sonnes Temple, and made fuch adoe about keeping and butowing it, that that Indian thought himfelte a happy man which had a graine of that Maiz,

were in it old sarily 1500. Nunnes. Some of them were ancient, called Mamacuna, that is,

Mothers which take charge, or care of the reft. Some were as Abbeffes, others as teachers of the

Nources both in rites and nandiworkes, as to ipin, weave and fow; others were porters, or pro-

speake with any man, or fee any man or wom an, but those of their owne house. Onely the

Cons and her daughters might have leave to enter and conferre with them. By them the lace

but for the Queene, or to receive Novices. They had twentie Porrers, which men might not

patie the second gate under paine of death. They had fine hundred Girles for service of the Mo-

natterie, daughters to those which the first Inca had priviledged to be Incas. These also had their

Manacunas. The principall exercise which the women of the Sinne did, was to make all the

garments and robes that the Inca or his Coya did weare, and those fine robes which were offered to the Sunne. The King himfelfe might not give those Garments to any of his Curacas which

were not of his bloud. They made also the Bread for the Sacrifices to the Sunne at the great

All the Vtenfils of the house, even to Pots and Pans, were of Gold and Silver, as in the house

of the Sunne. They had fuch a Garden also as the other, of golden Plants, Birds and Beatls, O-40

bedience and Virginitie was perpetuall, under paine of burying quicke. Any man which should

defloure, must not onely dye himfelfe, but his wife, children, kindred and neighbours. Such the

Law, but there was never found cause of execution. Like to these of Cuzco, dedicated to the

admitted of ofe of the bloud Royall, pure, and mixed, and daughters also of the Curacas as a great

fauour. Also some of the fairest of the common people to be concubines for the Inca, and not for

the Sunne, but kept with like vigilance. Their life was like the other, and their maintenance

from the Inca. Their workes the Inca might impart with others, and themselves also he might

take out for his Concul ines, which then might not returne againe, but either ferued the Queene or were sent into their Countries with great credit. Those also which were old in these houses to

might have like licente. Those that were dedicated for the King present, when hee was dead,

were called Manacuma, and were inftructers of those Concubines which entred for the

All the vellels were of Gold and Silver, as in the houses of the Sunne and of the King, so that all

the Gold and Silver in the whole Kingdome was spent in manner in the Sunnes ferrice, and of

Enery of these houses had a Governour, which must be an Inca: a steward and others off ers

fealts Raymi and Sittua, called Zanen, and the drinke which the Inca then dranke.

feneto know how they did, and whereof they had neede. The principall gate was not opened 30

Superflicious

THe Inc. 18 had houses of Virgins retired in many Provinces, touching which the Spandb Hi-fit trans than been deceived. I will speake of the house at Cusco called Acthebus, that is, the loufe of the chofen, to wit, for their beartie, or flocke, to ferue the Sunne. Thefe lived not in the 20 Houses of Vir-Temple of the Sunne, but diffant a ffreete from it, a row of houses going betweene them. For ne ther might men enter where the Nuns were, nor women where the Priefts were. It was neceffary that these women hould be of regall bloud, without any mixture of either side. There

1500. Nuns. Freeding

unders of necessaries. They haed in perpetual closure to their dying day, neither might they ftr...keneffe.

Nunsworkes.

pufume.

Gelden Gar-P. rpetuall vir-

Other Nunnes Sunne, were other Nunnes and houles in principal! Provinces of the Kingdome. In which were

Mamisum 15

those which were effeemed his descendants. The Curacus were flinted what veilels of Place they might haue for their owne vie, which was but little. They might neuer be bestewed ono-Spails whors ther men, which had beene cholen women for the Inca; for they held it a profanation of that which was holy; yea to be a flue to the leea was more efterned then to be wife of another 60 Lord. esteeming him as next to the Sunne; wherein some Spanish authors have beene deceived, yet did he reward his great men with women, but they were the daughters of other Curicas of Captaines, which held this for a fauour done them that he should eitheme their daughter is a iswell, which with his owne hand he would beflow. Sometimes (but felione) hebe to raise

fome of the Curacas his owne Daughters which were (as they effeemed fuch as were not of the wholebload battards, which hee had by women not of his Inca-kindred, which was holden

Besides these, there were many other of Royall bloud which lived retired in their owne hou- Another fort fes with vow of Virginity, though not inclosed in any Monastery : which tooke libertie to goe of Nunnes. out to visit their kindred neere them in their sicknesse or trauell. Such were highly reputed and were called Ocllo, a facred name : and if they loft their chastitie, were burned aliue or cast to the Lyons Denne, One of these very old I knew, which visited my Mother, beeing her Grandfatherstifter. Widowes in the first yeere of their widow-hood kept very close; those which had Widowes to no children married againe; but those which had, continued continent all their lines : in which respect the Lawes allowed them many priviledges, and the tillage of their grounds before the

CHEACAS OF THEATS And for matter of Marriage in Cocco, once in a yeere or two, the King affembled all the youth Marriages, of both Sexes, of his owne Linage, the Males of twentie to four and twentie, the Maids of eighteene and fo to twentie (he permitted them not fooner to marry) and called them forth, such a man and such a maide, and having joyned them with his owne hand, delivered them to their Parents : after which the Marriage Feath was folemnized by the new Parents, two, foure, or fixe dayes. These were legitimate wines and the most honoured. The day following his Officers did the like for the Citizens, observing the distinction of High and Low Cozco. The Governour 20 in each Dinifion with the Caracas did the like in their governments, the Inca never viurping but

affilting the Caraca Jurisdiction. Those of one Prounce might not marry with those of another, wards not inbut observed the Rites of the Tribes of Ifrael : nor might they goe to live out of their Provinces termarrying, or out of their owne Townes, or the Wards of the fame Towne. In defect of children by the lawfull Wife, the Inheritance by Law fell on the eldeft of the ritance.

bloud lawfull, as from Hunfear : o Manco and never to Baftards : for which Lawes take Atabuelpe destroyed all the Royall bloud, hee being a Baffard. Others might not marrie their fifter. but the lace only. The Prouinces differed in some cases, the elder Sonne of the lace succeeding, in other places all the brethren after each other, and somewhere the best esteemed of the Sonnes. Divers cu-Such viages were before the Incar times, and not broken by them.

30 The Incar made a great Feast at the wayning of the contest Son, which was at two yeeres old or vowards, & they first cut off his haire with a flint-razor, the Fathers beginning, each following in his dignity: then did they name him and offer presents. The same was imitated by the Curacas Care of Inand the people. Their children were brought vp without any dainty niceneffe. Affoone as they fants. were born they washed them in cold water, and then put them in blankets. They gave them the breaft but at morning, and noone and night, thrice a day, how much focuer they cried, left they

should be gluttons. But of I fould follow our Author in honfrold affaires, I fould be too long. Inca Roca their fixth King purised his Northerne Conquests to Chanca, a valiant Nation, Inca Roca the which fay they descended of a Lyon, and therefore worthipped the Lyon for God. I have seene them in their Feast of the Sacrament twelve of them like Herenles, attired in a Lyons skinne. He

40 proceeded to the end of the Province Autabuarila and thence to Gramarca and Hancobualis and Villes, Sulle, and Viunfulla. After that he fent his Sonne the Prince Tabuarhuarac to Antifugu of the East, where since Manco Capac they had done nothing. They say that when this Prince was borne, he wept bloud, and fo his name ngnifieth. Other Historians haue herein beene decei- Acoffe and oued. He tooke with him fifteene hundred Warriours , and three Campe-mailers. Hee went to ther, fay that Hamfea (which was after, the lot of my Father Garculaffe de la Vega) and thence to the Vallies it was thorow where the herbe Caca groweth, so much esteemed by them; and beyond it to Cannac-buay which rivite. hath five leagues of delicent almost perpendicular, and striking terrour to the beholders : how cuea. much more to them which goe downe, the way winding like a Snake? In these Provinces of the Steep & deepe Antis they worthipped Tygres and great Snakes fine and twentie or thirtie foot in length, called descent of the Amaru, which doe no harme, being as fome lay, charmed to that innocence by a great Magi-

50 cian. They worthinged also the herbe Cuca or Coca as the Spaniards call it. In this Expedition the Prince added thirtie leagues to the Empire, but ill peopled. The Inca Roca leaving the Prince his Deputie, went with thirty thousand to the Conquett of Chareas : and added fittle leagues square to his Souereigntie : after which he dyed and his Sonne Tahuar Huacae succeeded. Rocas Tahuar Huacae Lawes and Schooles which he is faid first of all to have founded in Cozco, for the Arts aforesaid, the seuenth I omit. He was wont to fay that Pachacamac must needs be a great King which had fuch a house linea. as the glorious Heauens to dwell in : alio, that if he were to worship any thing below, he would Apophibegness worship a wife and understanding man : Yet faith he, that which beginneth, groweth, dieth ir-

recoverably, ought not to be worthipped. 60 Tahnar Huacar or weep-bloud, for the ill distinings of that accident at his birth, stayed a good while in visiting his Kingdomes before hee thought upon Conquests. Yet at length hee fent his Brother Inca Mayta with twenty thousand South-westward, which conquered from Arequepa to Tacama. After this he minded a more haughtie Designe to conquer Caranca and other Regi- Tahuntmacac ons in the Divition Collafuya valiant people, but was foone called to other thoughts by the ill acts.

Tribes, towns; Lawes of Inhe-

Ftffff 3

Feare of his Senne.

demeanour of his eldest Sonne, whom therefore hee purposed to dishert for his cruell conditions. He cauled him to line with the Shepherds which kept the Cattle of the Sunne in Chita, which he did, carrying himlelfe like a Shepherd three yeeres and a halfe. He came one afternoone to his Fathers houle and tent to speake with him, who sent him word that he should got thither where he had placed him, having incurred death by breaking his precept. Hee fent word that hee came with a message from as great a Lord as himselfe, which when he had deliuered he would returne. He maruelling what Lord that should be, admitted him to his presence, and heard him tell that at moone that day, as he was feeding the Sunnes cattell, there flood a man, before him in a ftranse

habit and forme, having a beard on his face aboue a span long, and clothed to the foot, with anwhowene creature faltened to his necke. He faid (that he was the Sonne of the Sanne and brother let of Minco Capac the first Inca, and therefore to them all: that bee was named Viracocha Inca, and came from the Sunne our Father to gine him adu'se that the most of the Proninces of Chinchasuyu; both Subsetts and others, were in armes and comming with a mightie Armic to destroy the Imperiall Citie COZCO : that therefore be should preuent and premide in time. And feare them not, for in rabatfor euer aduerstie I will succour thee at my fiest and blond. After these words hee vanished away. His Father chid him and would not beleeve him. Three monethes after came newes of the Rebeilion of many Nations which had killed their Gouernours, and had affembled thirty thousand Souldiers in demand of Cozco: Hancebualla was their Generall. This was the first Rebellion of the Provinces which the Incas had conquered, and was to judden to Tabuar Huacae that hee fled out of Cozce with a few followers, with purpose to secure himselfe in Collagays. The Citizens were readie to flee each his way, till some thinking of the Prince (whom voon that Dreame or Vision they called Viracocha Inca, his former name is vnknowne) gaue him intelligence thereof, He gathered what forces he could, and followed his Father to whom having prefented in a pithy speech, the miserable leaving of the house and holies of the Sunne, and of the Sunnes Virgins to fuch prophane Enemies, hee bid those which loued an honourable death before a shamefull life to follow him : which foure thousand of the Royall bloud did, to whom others from all parts affembled. Having fet order in Cozeo, hee went with eight thousand resolute Warriours to meete the enemy which had now passed the River Aparimac.

The next day came newes of 20000, men, comming to his aide from Cantiforn, which 30 hee attributed to Viracetha which had promifed him fuccour in all diffress; this bred him respect, and confidence to the businesse with the Indians. He entertained these supplies toy fully, which told him of other fine thouland comming two dayes behind. To thefe hee tent word to Embulcado themselues in a place appointed, that so in the fury of the battle they might come forth vnexpected. This they did and much daunted the enemies, especially when with shours and cryes manifold small troupes came in alto which were of such as had fied from Cozca, who hearing of the Princes resolution made head as they could and made the Rebels thinke that they should neuer fee an end of their enemies. A brute was alto railed, and sumoured in both Campes that Viracheca turned stones and trees

into men, to figh: for the Prince. The battle continued eight hours with fo much bloud, that 40

a Brooke in the Plaine rame therewith. Twentie thouland were flaine on both fides, twelve

and his Son not about him, beleeving but two Gods the invitible and vitible as is faid; the Indians

telling Fables to please the Spaniards, and some things for want of the Language were not rightly

videritood by the Spaniards. The Prince after the Victory fent three Messengers, the first to

the house of the Sunne (for in all things they dealt with him as if he had beene a bodily man, fet-

ting him meate and drinke, &c.) the other to the house of the Virgins, the third to his Father.

Advantage by

Atollataxed, thouland of the Rebels fide befides their General and Campennafters taken.) Father Acoffa hath See fun, 1060, much of this Viracocks, but altogether fabrilous. For the Indians efterme him next to the Snane,

Their dealing

Why the Spacalled Viraco-

they came by Sea, in con-

He dealt very mildly with the Rebels and their wives and children, pardoning them and prodiding for the Widowes and Orphans. Hee was received with great Jubilee in Cozeo, and thence 50 went to the Straits of Munna, to visit his Father which seemed malcontent. They spake some words in private, and the Prince came forth and faid that his Father would not returne to Cozco. This (whether true or falle) was enough, and in vaine had he now gainfaid it; so that a Pallace of pleasures was there built for the Father to spend the rest of his dayes, his Sonne taking the Diademe. This Vision of Viraeboca with a beard and clothed to the foot, whereas the beardlelle Natives are clothed but to the knees, was the cause that the Spaniards at their first comming were called Virachoca : and for that they tooke and killed the Tyrant Atahualipa, which had flaine Hussear the right Heire, and wrought fo many cruelties. Which caused that fix Spaniardiacalled because lone, of which was Soto and Bares, went to Cozes two or three hundred leagues without harms. They called them also Incas, Sonnes of the Sunne. That which some fay, b that they were cal- 60 led Voracheea, because they came by Seas(aying that the word signifieth the fat(or fourme) of the feunmoothe Sea, they are deceived : for Virachee's the Sea of fat, or tallow (Vira, febu; cocha, mar) to that it appeares to be a proper name, and not compounded. I conceiue further that the Artillery was the cause that they were called Viracheca.

CHAP. 12. Temple, Conquests, Aqueducts, improving, dividing tilling of lands, 1452

This loca Uiracocha by his victorie and vision was so esteemed, that in his life time they worthipped him as a God lent by the Sunne for reparation of things amiffe , reuerenced him beyond his predectifiers. He built a Temple for memorial of that Vision to Viracocha in Cacha, therein Viracocha initiating, as much as was possible, the place where hee faw the fame, and therefore without a Temple. roofe : towas an hundred and twenty-foot long, and eighty wide of those fairely wrought, with foure doores, the Easterne onely open, with his figure in a Chappelly iomewhat relembling those Images which were make of the Apostles. The Spaniards destroyed it, as they did other famous workes which they found in Pern, icariely any Monument remayning : which they did to fearch for treasure under them. He made also two hoge Birds called Continues (so great; that Condines or afunder) they are fowlesof prey, fo fierce, that their dammes breake their talons, the beake for Strong, that ar once they will breake the hide " of a Cow. Hee made the picture of thefe two " Curo, pet-Birds, one representing his father in mysterie seeing from Corco, the other Unaccela, He sought haps it should to gratifie his Commanders and Subicets, and fought new conquests. Hee fent Pahnac may ta Inca his brother against Caranca, Ulaca, Lipi, Chicha and Ampaia. These two latterorshipped the ranke of Hills for their height, and for the Rivers which they yeeld. These were all subjet Oted : and Eastward to the Sierra, or Snowy Hill, Southwards to the furthert Province of Chara cas two hundred leagues from Cozco. So that the Sea and the Hills on each hand, and Southward the Defarts betwint them and Chill, bounded the Empire. Northwards het went with

20 thirty thousand warriours to Huamanea, and other Nations which hee fubiceted. Hee made a continued in water-pallage twelue foot in the channell, to run an hundred and twenty leagues from between Huge Aque. Paren and Pices to Rucana; and another thorowall the dinison Cuntifugu from South to. North one hundred and firty leagues from the high Sierras to the Quechuas: which may be ranked with the Wonders of the world confidering the Rockes they brake thorow without inflruments of steele, and onely by stones with force of hands. Neither know they to make arches, but were . driven to goe about. The Spaniarde have fuffered them all to perifh : as they have permitted two third parts of those which were to water the Corne grounds to be lost also.

E nbaffadours came from Tucma (the Spaniards call it Tucman) to the Inca, offering vaffalage, Tucma,

whom hee made to drinke in his presence (an inestimable favour) and promised formucli better 30 respect as his course deserved. Hancobnalls notwithstanding all his kinde viage, left his Countries to goe leeke new and the Inca fent Colonies to the Chances. This Inca they fay had a forttelling of the Spaniards comming. Hee died, and left his sonne Pachacenee Inca his heine. It is Suppored that he raigned aboue fiftie yeeres. Anno 1560. I faw his body in Cozes, in the poffestion of Licenciate Polo, with foure others : this with white haires, the fecond of Tapao Inca See Jup. Acolist Tupanqui, the third of Huayna Capac, which two were hoary but not whise the two other were Queens; Mama Rantu wife to Viracocha and Mama Ocilo mother of Huana Capar. They were fo whole that there wanted not haire eie-brows nor haire on the eie-lids. They had their garments, ribands, & diadems, as while they lived. They were fet as the Indians vie with their hands across on their breatts, the right hand ouer the left, their eyes downwards, as looking on the ground, 40 and seemed as if they had beene aline, and full fieshed. The lindians would never tell the Spaniards their embalming arte. They weighed so little, that they were easily carried to the Gentlemens

houses which desired to see them. The Indians by the way kneeled to them with fighs and tears. When the Inca had conquered any Province, and fetled the government, hee improved the lands which would beare Mayz, fending Enginers to that purpole for conveyance of waters, Manner of image without which they fowed no Mayz in those hot Countries. They also made plaine the fields, allouing and layd them in fquares, the better to receive the water. They made plaine the Mountaines lands. which were capable of feed, as it were in scales or steppes, one plaine subordinate to another, therefore called Andenes. Having thus improved the Land, they divided it, to each Towne their

fhare by themselues; each subdivided into three parts, one for the Sunne, a second for the King. The Sunne, and the third for the Naturals; with that prouision, that alway the Naturals should have suffi-50 cient, and if the people increased, the Sunnes and Incar part were lessened, that they should not want. The like division they made of the grounds which needed not such watering, lowed with other feels. The Andenes commonly belonged in greatest part to the Sunne, and the Inca. The

Mayz grounds they fowed every yeere, heartning them with dung, as Gardens. They first husbanded the Sunnes grounds, next that of Widowes and Orphanes, and of the Order of tile old and ficke, all which were holden for poore, and had peculiar men in every Towne appoin- lage. ted Officers for that purpose. They had feed alto, if they wanted, out of the Store-houses. Each man was tied to husband enough for prouision to his owne houshold. The lands of those which Care of Wi-

ferued in the warres were provided as those of the poore; their wives for that time being re- and Souldiers. 60 spected is widowes. And if any were flaine in the warres, great care was had of his children. After theielands, each man tilled his owne, one helping another in course; then those of the Curaca, which were last cultivated in every Towne. In Huayna Capacs time, one of the Chachapuyas was hanged for tilling the Curacas land his kiniman, before the widowes, and the Gallowes was fet up in the Curucas land, where hee had transgressed the Incas precept. The last of

1470 Order of tillage, tribuses of labour or Lice; Presents, Store-bouses. LIB.VII

Workes in with feftmall alacritic. Incas abour.

Spade.

all was the Incas lands, which thought his good to be grounded on the prosperitie of his Subiects. Thete and those of the Sunne were common workes which they did with their best ornaments and rayment, with spangles of Siluer and Gold, and feathers on their heads, as on fea fitual dayes; with fongs in breaking vp their ground, in praise of their God and Prince. One Anden neere Cozce, being the first in the Kingdome which was dedicated to the Sunne, wastilled onely by Incas and Palles of the bloud Royall with a great feath in their beath iewels, making Sones of Harlis, that is, of triumph. Their Plough (or Spade rather) was of wood, a yard longer plaine before and pointed, round behind, foure fingers thicke; halte a yard from the point was a firrup of two pieces of wood taftned to the principall, in which he fet his foot, leaping and thruling it forcibly into the ground up to the itirrup. They went in companies, feuener eight me together, and digged vp turtes of incredible bignetie. The women went besides them to helos with their hands to lift up the earth, and weed out the rootes, and to cheare them with Songs. The Land was divided to each man according to the number of his familie, and to the Cmaca

Tributesof Labour.

Women

in greater proportions ; likewife the water and other things necessary. The principall tribute which they payed was this labouring the grounds of the Sunne and Inca, gathering their fruits, and keeping them in places appointed. Of their owne private land they payd nothing. Other tributes were their making of clothes, shooes and armes for expense in watte, to which end they had wooll of the Cattell of the Sunne and Inca, which were innimerable in the Hills, and Cotton in the Plaines. The poore were sted to give on certaine daves · Lowie-tribute to many pipes of Lice fo to acknowledge fubication, and to keepe themselves cleane. The Roy- 20

Scotteemen, all kindred, Prieits, Ministers, and Corania were tribute-free; the chiefe Captaines to Centurions, the Iudges, Officers and Souldiers in time of feruice, young men under 25, and old men aboue co. and all women and maidens: Their labour was not imposed but voluntary. Gold, Siluer and Gemmes were not reckoned tribute, nor treasure, nor price of other things bought uer no money, and fold, or of mens labour. Onely they efteemed them for beautie, and thereof made voluntary presents for the Temples, Nunneries and houses Royall. For they might not visite a Superious

without a Prefent. The Caracas in the principall feafts must visite the Inca, and made him Prefents of these or other things of account, as materials for buildings, Lyons, Tigres, Beares, Parots, Monkies, great Snakes, or any other thing faire, fierce, great or strange. The King had in every Towne two places, one to keepe his goods for the feruice of the Sunne and himfelfe, ano- 30 ther for prouifion against deare yeeres; besides others for high-wayes, &c. Wooll was distributed every two yeeres, as any had need for garments for them and theirs, fo that none needed to

Hospitals.

conquelts.

begge, neither had they any beggars in later times. I neuer law Indian man or woman in my time that begged but one old woman named Ifabell, which did it more to goe from house to Innes and tra- house, as a Gipsie or Juggler, then for any need. The Iness also caused to build publike Innes for entertainment of Strangers, which had all necessaries free out of the Kings Store-houses: and any were ficke, they were likewile prouided for. None trauelled in private affaires, but in the Kings bufineffe. When any new con quest was made, they recorded on their quipus the quantitie, Courfe in new qualitie, fite and other conditions of the lands of each Prounce, Towne and Diuision, that order might accordingly be taken. The Mines were given to the Caractu. Salt, Fish and Cotton were to common, none to applie any part to himselte, but to gather what hee needed. Each man might plane trees in his owne ground and entoy them at his pleafure. The lands were divided as you

The Sixth Booke. S upendious buildings and

The fertice and ornament of the houfes Royall of the Incar may freme to have exceeded any Kings of the world in some things. The buildings of their Houfes, Temples, Gardens, and Baths were adorned with stone fairely wrought, and let to close that the joynture could not bee feene. Many of them had melted Lead or Silver or Gold for the joyning, which cauted the totall destruction of them all, by the Spaniards seeking for those metals. They had the counterfeits in Gold and Silver of herbs which growe on walls, as if they had beene the plants there 50 growing: and likewise the relemblances of Mice, Butterflies, Snakes great and small, Lizards Their boules, feeming to moue; the Incar chambers were lined with Gold, with figures of Men, Women, Birds, all knowne Beafts wilde and tame, all in their naturall figure and largenefic in Gold and Silver; the Incu Chaires of flate were of folid Gold, without backes, having a great fquate Table of Gold ouer them. All the veffels of feruice both for Table, Butterie and Kitchin, imall and great, were of Gold and S luer, and that in all the Kings houses, so that when hee journeyed in progresse they did not remoue them from one house to another, as likewise in the Prounces where he had occasion to march with his Armies, or to vilite his Kingdomes. Hee had in them also of like metals many Granaries and Repositories not to keepe Graine, but to expresse

Carmente Cieça, Zarate, Gomera,and

Hee had flore of rich garments, the Inca never ving to weare one thing twice, but guing tim the lame of the words, to his kindred. The bed-furniture was of the wooll of the Vicunna, to his, giousticafares that King Philip: Beds are thence jurnished. Feather-beds they had not, but had fuch Mandes layd ouer and under them. Tapitire was supplied with linings of Gold and Silver on the walls. CHAP.13. Golden Gardens and Woodstackes, Court-officers. Hunting; posts. 1471

Their provisions for diet were abundant, they preparing for all their kindred and feruants: the hours were from eight to nine in the morning, and in the evening lightly by day-light. Their drinking lafted till night, for whiles they eare they drinke not.

Their Gardens and Orchards had all the fairest trees and plants planted, and many others Gardens, Oscounterfeited of Gold or Silver; as Mayz with the leaves, stalkes, roots, and reedy tops of gold chards and and filter mixed, and foin other herbs and flowers; fome comming forth, fome halfe growne, Bathes, some ripe; with counterfeits of Lizards, Butterflies, Snakes, Foxes, wilde Cats (for they had none tame) Birds of all forts and postures, set on trees and plants; Decre Lions Tigres. and whattoeuer creatures the Land had, fet in due places. Their Baths had great veffels in 10 which they bathed themselves, of gold and filver, and water pipes of the same. "They had also wood-flackes counterfeited thereof. The most of which treasures the Indians hid from the couctous Spannards, vinwilling that others should bee served with that which was for the service

The feruants and officers for Water, Fewell, and the Kitchin, for the Table of state (for the Seruants and Women and Concubines provided for the Inca himfelie, Butlers, Porters, Keepers of the Ward, Officers. robe, lewels, Gardens, and in other Offices, were not particular persons: but for enery Office they had two or three Townes affigned, whole charge it was to fend men of abilitie and truft, by dayes, weekes, or moneths changed in courfe : and this was their tribute; the whole Towne being punished in any defect. These Townes were within fixe or feuen leagues of Cozco, being

20 thole which Manco the first Inca had reduced from Sauages to Townes of civilitie, and these were Incas by primitedge, and had the title and attire according. The Incas huntings were at Huntings. certains times of the years with twentie or thirtie thousand men, one halfe going on the right hand, the other on the left, circling in twen-ie or thirtie leagues, bringing in whatfoeuer wilde beafts in that compaffe, and killing all they pleafed. Every foure leagues they had Pofts , fwift Pofts. runners for fudden messages, called Chasquis, eicher by word or quipus. But now wee will re-

Pach source having finished the folemnities visited his Kingdome, to examine the courses of Pachscutee, his Gouernours : and then fet forth his brother Capac Tupanqui with an Armie, which paffed the ninth Incl. thorow the Province Sanfa, corruptly by the Spaniards, called Xanxa, which professe to be de- Sanfa Dog-30 scended of a man and a woman which came out of a Fountaine; their Townes were lke For-worthippers.

treffes: 'hey worthipped the fig ire of a Dog, and did eate Dogs flesh sauourly. They had also an I Joll like a man, in wi ich the Deuill spake. This people called Huanca were subiccted, the Tarma and Pumpu also and Chucurpu, Ancara, Huayllas (in which Province he grieuously punified Sodamites, a finne before vnknowne to the Indians) after which conquests hee returned to Cozco, having guned fixtie leagues North and South in that Expedition, continuing three Benefite and yettes. Pathamete was buile in making Lawes, building Temples, founding Houres for elect or prirogaine of chofin Urusus in the Promisers (which was to make find Promisers. Circums and Naturals of Nunnerics and chofen Ungins in the Prouinces (which was to make fuch Prouinces, Citizens and Naturals of Sun-temples. Cozeo) in erecting Fortresses also in his frontiers, and Royall Palaces in the most delectable places, and Store-houtes to keepe prouitions against yeeres of dearth. He spent three yeeres in visi-

40 ting his Kingdome, and after tent his brother Inca Capac Tupauqui with his fonne the Prince Inca Tupanqui, knighted that yeere after their manner, and fiftie housand men by Chinchusus to Peruan Knighted Pincu, Huaras, Piscopampa, Cunchucu, which being tubiceted, hee proceeded to Huamachucu, where they worshipped particoloured stones, and sacrificed mans flesh, which was in that conquest altered. After that they came to Cassamarca (famous for the taking of Atahualpa by the Spaniards) where they first stood out and after yeelded, and there was founded a Temple for the Sunne, and a house of Virgins, which after grew one of the chiefe in the Kingdome. In re- Forme of Pt. turning they subdued the Tausous, and were with festivall pompe entertained in Cozco, each Na. 1448 triumphe tion in the Citie gracing the folemnitie, fingled in their feuerall bands with warlike Musike, adding Songs of triumph: betwixt the Generall and the Prince went the Inca Pachacutec, till

50 they came to the limits of the Temple of the Sun, and then they put off their shooes, except the Shoo error Inca which at the doore of the Temple was vnshod also, where entring, adoring and rendring monic praifes for the victories, they returned to the Market place where they folemnized the feati with longs, dances, and good cheere. Each Nation arose from their place and lung and danced before

the Inca after their Countrie guile. This continued a moneth. After this the King with his fonne and brother went to the conqueft of the Vallies Pifce, River turnes Tea, Chincha, which Countries nee enriched with a Ruer from the Sierras, tuning the course ene of the Ica, Consenta, which Countries nee enriched with a River from the Sterras, turning the counter counter, which naturally went Eastward into the West, to water the grounds. All those Nations for Sea worship: fine hundred leagues space worshipped the Sea, besides the particular Idols of each People, and ped. called it Mamacocha, or Mother Sea, for her plentie of fifth, which thee gate them to eate. They Pachacomacs 60 worthipped allo the Whale for the montiros greatnesse. In another expedition the Vallies Runa Temple, and buanac, Huaren, Malla, Chilea, all subject to one Prince, were subdued, the Inca besieging and fa- Onacle seemilling their Armie. Then palled they to the Vallies of Pachacamac, Rimac, Cancay and Huaman, which also had one King, called Cuy maness. The Spaniards corruptly call Rimae. Lima:

Pachacamac had the name of the inmibile God, neither had they any Temple to him in all Pern

but here, the edifices and facrifices whereof were remarkable, Besides beasts they facrificed men. women and children. The Spaniards confound the Temple of Rimac, with that of Pachacamae, which were differing, that of Rimac being an Oracle (for Rimac fignifieth him that (peaketh) of much veneration with the Natiues, and after the conquest with the Incas. The Spaniards founded there the Citie of Kings, to named, because founded on the day of the Epiphanie. Their Idoll was kept in a Temple, not fo fumptuous as that of Pachacamac.

Cursmance refused subjection to the Incas demands in name of the Sunne, saying his Pachacamac was the Creator and preferuer of all, and therefore greater then the Sunne, to whom they had erected a Temple, where they offered the best things they had, and held him in such reue-Rices of Parba- rence, that when she King entred his Temple to worth p him , he did not dare to looke on him, lo camers Temple but he and the Prieft went backwards with their shoulders towards the Idoll : and that hee also adored Rimac which fore-told things to come; and Mamacocha, the Sea. The Inca fent him word that they also in their hearts worshipped Pachacamac, but without Temple or Sacrifice. because they knew him not, and were fearefull to pronounce his name. Many other words of perswasion passed, and peace was concluded, on condition that they should worship the Sunne. as did the Incas, and make him a Temple apart as to Pachacamae; that they should take away their Idols in the Temple of Pachacamac, and worth p him without Statue; and that they should cease humane Sacrifices : that a House of Virgins should be erected in the Valley of Pachacamae: that Cursmanen should remaine in his Lordship, acknowledging the Inca Lord Soueraigne, and obeying his Lawes, and that Rimaes Oracle should still bee in estimation. And thus Royall af- 20 faires, and those of greatest moment were after consulted of in Pachacamacs Temple, vulgar buin fles were remitted to Rimae. Pachacutee having beene a great King and Priest and Captaine, enriched the Temple of the Sunne, covering the walls with plankes of Gold, as also the Shrines, and or the Clouter. Where the Idoll of the Sunne was, there is now the bleffed Sacrament, and in the Cloitter are Processions, and yeerely Festivals in the Couent of Saint Dominge. Hee fent his sonne in another Expedition, who comming to the Valley, entred Pachacamaes

Temple, but without Sacrifices or verball Oritons, onely professing mentall adoration. He vi-

fited also the Temple of the Sunne with rich offerings, and then the Idell Rimae : and after mar-

ched to Huamac, where Chimu a great Lord reigned : from thence to Truxille in the Vallies Par-

munea, Hualling, Santa, Huarapu and Chimu. Here while Chimu would admit no new Gods, a 20

bloudy warre followed, which at last ended in his vasfallage. The Inca now having enlarged his

estate aboue an hundred and thirty leagues North and South, and in breadth from the Hills to

the Sea fome fixtie or feuenty leagues, fell to founding Townes, Temples, Store-houses, and reformed the Empire, ennobled the Schooles, augmented the Schoole-mafters, caufed all the Ca-

races and all Officers to learne the (wico Language (as common) and much enlarged (ozco. Hee

reigned about fiftie yeeres, or as others, aboue fixtie, and left Tnea Tupanqui his successor . leaving

about three hundred fonnes and daughters. The Spanish Authours confound the father and the fonne. Many of his sentences and lawes are recorded by the authour, here omitted: as likewise the

Idols.

fundaced.

Common Tongue.

See of their Feafte in

Acofta.

Coxco as Reme, mother of fuperftitions. the Fraft

Generall affembly.

The King was

They prepared themselves to this festivitie with a rigorous Fast, in three dayes eating nothing but a little white raw Mayz, and a few herbs with water; not kindling a fire in the Citie, or accompanying with their wives all that time. The Fatt ended, or the night before the

transplanting of Colonies, order of bringing up the Cutacas beires in the Court; the common or Court Tongue; the description of Cozco, the Schooles, and the three Royall Palaces, Almes, &c. for all these 40 I remit the curious to the Authour, fearing blame for this our length. Tet their chiefe Feast of the Sun, rites of triall and installing of Knights, I have added. Cozco was another Rome, in which the Sunne had foure Festivall solemnities observed, the principall in Iune, which they called Trip Raymi, as it were The Sunnes Eafter, and absolutely Raymi, in acknowlegement of the Sunnes Deity ouer all, and his being Father of the lacas, Manco and his descendants. All the principall Captaines which were not then in the warres came to it, and all the Curacus, not by precept but of deuotion, in adoration of the Sunne, and veneration of the Inca. And when age, ficknesse, distance or businesse in the Kings affaires detained them, they fent their formes or brethren with the chiefe of their kindred to that folemnitie. The King did performe the first ceremonies as Chiefe Priest: for although they had a high 50 chiefe Priest at Priest alwaies of the bloud Royall, Brother or Vncle to the King, legitimate by Father and Mother; yet in this Feath proper to the Sunne, the King himfelfe, as first-borne of the Sunne, was the principall Solemnizer. The Curacas came in their greatest brauerie, and best denifes ; some like Hercules, in Lions skinnes with their heads in the Lions head-skinne, as boatting of defcent from a Lion; Iome like Angels, with great wings of a Cuntur fourteene or fifteene foot diffant in the extremes ftretched out, as descended of that Fowle; some with vizors of most abominable and deformed formes, and those are the Tuncas; others with golden and filter ornaments; and others with other inventions. Every Nation carried the armes which they yield in fight, 25 Bowes and Arrowes, Dires, Slings, Clubs, Lances, Axes, &c. the pictures also of what society exploits they had done in the service of the Sunne or Incas. Once; all came in their best accoultre. 69 ments and branerie that they were able. Faft of three

gious care.
In the morning early the lace goeth accompanied with all his kindred, a mixed according to Aderation'of 10 their age and dignitie, to the chiefe free of the Citie called Hausopaia; and there expect the the rifing Sun; Sunne rifing, all barefooted, looking to the East with great attention; as soone as he peepes forth, fall on their elbowes (which is as kneeling here) adoring him with their armes open, and their hands before their faces, giuing killes to the ayre (as in Spaine it is the vie to kille a mans owne hand, or the Princes garment) to acknowledging him their God. The Curacas fet themselves in Festivall and another floer next thereto, called Coffiers, and make the flore adoration. After this the King Drinke, rich on is feet, others remaining on their elbowes, and taketh two great veffels of Gold full Drinke, of drinke, the one in his right hand, as in the name and steed of the Sunne, as if he did drinke to his kindred (this was their greatest courtefie of the Superior to the Inferior, and amongst friends, to give them drinke) and powres it into a pipe of Gold, by which it runneth into the house of 20 the Sunne. After this he drinketh part of that in his left hand, giving the reft to the Incar in 2 fmall Cup, or out of the same vestell (this fanctifying or giving vertue to all that is brought forth) enery man crinking a draught. The Curaeas drinke of that which the women of the Sunne have bare-foot. made. This done, they went all in order to the House of the Sunne, and two hundred paces before they came at the doore, they put off their shooes; only the King stayed till hee came at the doore. Then the Inca and his entred in and adored the Image of the Sunne, as naturall Sonnes. The Curacus abode in the street before the Temple. The suca offered with his owne hands the Oblations's veffels in which he had done that ceremony: the other lness gaue their veffels to the Priefts (for they which were not Priefts, might not doe the Prieftly office, alchough they were of the blow.) The Priests having received the lacas offered vessels, went forth to receive those of the Ca-30 races which brought them in order of their antiquity, as they had bin fubiect to the Empire; they Strange Offic-

gaue also other chings of Gold and Silver, with Sheep, Lizards, Toads, Snakes, Foxes, Tigres, Li-rings. one, variety of Birds, and whatfocuer most abounded in their Countries. The offerings ended, they returned to their fireets in order. Then the lucas Priefts, bring forth great flore of Lambes, barren Ewes and Rams of all colours (for freep in those parts are of al colours, as Horses in these all being the Cattle of the Sun. They take a black Lambe (which they efteeme the holiest colour for Auguries. Sacrifices and the Kings weare commonly black) and offer that first for Soothfaying (a thing wied Black faireft, by them in all things of moment in peace and warre, looking into the heart and lungs for prog- Soothlaying noffications) they let the head to the Eath, not tying any of his feet, open him aliue (their gold, feet), the head to the Eath, not tying any of his feet, open him aliue (their gold, feet), the den by these or four ladieur) and that on the left fide, to take out his heart and entrals with Kites thereof. 40 their hands, without cutting. The best Augury was if the lungs mooued when they were taken

forth : the worst, if the Sacrifice in the opening arose on the feet ouercomming those which held it. If one proqued valuckie, they affayed another of a Ram, and another of a barren Ewe; if all product valucky they gave over keeping the Featt, and laid the Sunne was angry for some fault. which they had done, and expected wars, Dearth, Murrayne, &c. After this Augury, they opened not the other Sacrifices abue but out off their heads, offering the bloud and heart to the Sun. The fire which they vied must bee new, given them, as they said by the hands of the Sunne,

which they did by the force of the Sunne beames shining thorow a Iewell which the High Priest Holy fire. held in his hand (as by a burning Glaffe) on Cotton. With this fire they burned the Sacrifice and rosted that dayes fiesh : and carried thereof to the Temple of the Sunne, and to the house of Vir-50 gins to keepe all the yeers. And if the Sunne did not thine, they made fire with motion of two mooth round flickes; but this absence or refusall of the Sunne they esteemed valucky. All the fieth of thole Sacrifices was rofted openly in the two threets aforefaid; they parted it among it

the Incas, Curacas, and common people which were at the Feast, giving it with the bread canen. After this they had many other Viands: and when they had done eating they fell to drinking, in Festival eating which vice they exceeded, though now the Spaniards example have that way done good, and and drinking, this vice is infamous amongst them. The Inca litting in thate tends his Kinsmen to the principall in his name to make them drinke, first the valorous Captaynes, next the Curacus which have not bin Commanders in war, then to Cozco-lucas by priviledge: the manner was this; the Inca which brought the drinke faid, the Capa Inca fends thee banketting drinke, and I come in his name to drinke

60 with thee. The Captaine or Caraes tooke the Cup with great reuerence and lifted vp his eyes to the Sunne, as giving him thankes for such a favour, and having drunke, returned the Cup to the Anca with shew of adoration, not speaking one word. Hee sends to the Captaines in generall; but to some speciall Curacas only; the rest the Incas in their owne name, and not in the Kings, cause to drinke. The Cups were holden in great veneration because the Capa Inca had touched

Feath the Priests Incas made ready the Sacrifices and Offerings , which every Nation is to prorear the Fire to Maiz called canen, Bread feffinal, wide, The women of the Sunne make that night a great quantity of dowe of Maiz called canen, Bread feffinal, whereof they make little loues as bigge as a common Apple. Neyther do thefe Indians euer eat their Maiz made into bread but at this Feath and at another called Cuna; then eating two or

three bits at the beginning of the meale; their ordinary meales in flead of bread have care parched or boyled in graine. The Virgins of the Sunne prepare this bread for the Inca, and those of his bloud; for the reit, innumerable other women are appointed, which make it with Reli-

Manner of Knights.

them with his hands and lips. After this beginning they fell to freer drinking one to another. and after that to dancing, the Fealt continuing nine dayes with great iollity, but the Sacrifices held but the first : and after they returned to their Countries.

Now for their Knights, till they had that order, they were not capeable of the dignities of warre or peace. The youths of the Royall bloud (for none elfe might be in election) from fixteen veeres old vpwards, first made experiments of themselves in rigorous tryals, whether they could indure the hard Aduentures of warre. Euery yeere, or each other yeere, these noble youths were thut yo in a house where old Masters examined them. They were to fast seuen dayes strictly. with a little raw Corne and water, to try their endurance of hunger and thirst. Their Parents and brethen all the rated for them to intreace the Sunne to fauour them. They which could not 10 fuffaine this falt, were rejected as vnfufficient. After this they heartned them with meate. and tryed their activitie in running of a certaine Race a league and halfe long, where was a Banner fer. which he that first came at was Captaine of the rest: others also to the tenth were subordinate. ly honoured. Their next tryall was in skirmish, one halfe to keepe, the other to get a Fort; and they which were now keepers, were another day befiegers, where eagernesse and emulation fometimes cost some their liues in that ludicrous warre. Then followed wreftling betwixt eguals, leaping, throwing small and great stones, also a Launce and a Dart, and other Armes, shoos ting, casting with a sling, and exercise in all weapons of warre. They caused them to watch ten or twelue nights as Centinels, comming fuddenly on them at vncertaine houres, shaming those which they found fleeping. They tryed with wands how they could indure ftripes, beating them 10 cruelly on the armes and legs (where the Indians goe bare) and if they made any lad remonstrance of forrow they rejected them, faying how would they beare their enemies weapons! They were to bee in manner vnsensible. A Fencer also made semblance with a two hand Club called Macana, another while with a Pike, to hit or ftrike them, and if they shrugged, or in their eyes or body made shew of feare, they were rejected. Next they made triall whether they had skill to make their armes of all forts, and shooes called Vina, like those which the Franciscans

After all these, the Captaines and Masters of these Ceremonies tell them of their pedigree from the Sunne, the noble Acts of their Ancestors, and instruct them in courage, clemency and mildeneffe to the poore, with other parts of morality. The Heire apparant indured no leffe rigorous to tryals then others, except in running for the Banner, and all that tryall time (which was from one New Moone to another) he went in poore and vile habit to teach him to pity the poore. These things done, the King solemnly attended, made a Speech to them, and each on their kneet received at his hand the first Enfigne of dignity, which was to boare a hole in their eares,

The New Knight kiffed his hand, and the next person to the Inca put off his Vintas, and put him on gallant shoots of Wooll. Then did he goe to another place, where other Incas put him on breeches, as the token of manhood, which before he might not weare: after which they put on his head two kinds of flowres, and a leafe of another herbe which will long keepe greene. No other men might werre those flowres. The Prince had the same Entignes, and differed only in his yellow tringe of Wooll (which none but he, and that first after his tryall, might weare) and 45 an Axe of Armes with a kinde of laueline aboue a yard long; which when they put in his hand, they faid Aucumapac, that is, for tyrant Trayters. The Kings fringe was coloured; he ware befides on his head two feathers of a Bird called Coreguenque, which are faid to bee but a Male and a Female, in one place only called Pillacannta. Their they weare vpon their fringe: and every new Successor must have new. When the Prince is Knighted all of the bloud Royall adore him as

The feuenth Інса Тирапциі

T Nea Tupanqui bestowed three yeeres in visiting his Kingdome, and afterwards resoluted on a difficult deligne, namely to paffe the Antie Eastward from Cozco, that having traversed those high Hils, he might find paffage by some Rivers running thence Eastward: for the Hils them- 50 the renth Inca. felues ftill couered with Snow falne and falling were impaffable; mooued by a tradition of many Habitations and Countries in those parts. One of which was called Musu (by the Spaniards, Moxes) to which he might enter by a River in the Antis divided into five, which all make the River Amarumaju; which I suspect to fall into the River of Plate, the greatest River knowns atter Orellans. With this determination he fent to cut a great quantity of that fluffe which the Spaniards call Higuera, wherein they fpent two yeares, making thereof a kind of Boats, so many as received ten thouland Souldiers with their provisions, each holding thirtie, fortie, fiftie more or leffe, with their prouisions in the midft. Thus went they downe the River, and had great encounter with the Chancha which lived on both fides the River, all painted and naked with feathers on their heads armed, with Bowes and Arrowes. They were reduced to subjection, and 60 fent presents of Poppenjayes, Monkies and Huacamayas, Waxe and Honey, which they continued till the death of Tupac Amara the last of the Incas, whom the Vice-roy Francis de Toledo

A Colonie of these was planted neere Tono, some fixe and ewenty leagues from Cozco. They

proceeded in their Conquest till they came at Mufu two hundred leagues from Cozco. These hearing their Relations of the Incas conquests and deuotions, and Viracocha, vision, were content to accept of their friendship, and confederacie, but not to acknowledge vallallage. They permitted them to make a plantation there, and gaue them their Daughters for Wines, being now Perusa Colons not about a thousand left, the rest wasted in the ill wayes and warres. They fent an Embassage in the Musius allo to Cozco which were well entertained and inftructed in all their Rites. These Persons would Countrie, have returned into their Countrey about the time of Huayna Capacs death hut hearing of the Spanish conquest, stayed.

Anno 1 664, one Diego Aleman a Spaniard hearing of Gold in those parts, with twelve others Spanish are to went on foote with an Indian Curaca for his guide (the ill wayes admitted no Horfes) and ha- empts truuing travelled into the Mufm Countrey after eight and twentie dayes, were fet vpon and tenne ficare. Spannards killed, Dugo himielte taken, and two only escaped in the darknesse of the night. The Indians made Diego their Captaine (of a Captine) against their enemies. About this Golden prize the Spaniar de after fell into contention, divers having gotten the grant, and many were flame by their emulous Competitors, and fo made an easie prey to the Chunchus. Three they took and after two yeeres dismilled them. One of them was a Frier and Priest whom they requested at his departure to fend for their conversion which was not done. But let vs returne to Inca

After this Expedition to the Mafin, hee refolued on the Conquest of the great Province 20 Chiribnana, which is voon the Antis Eastward from Charcas. And because the Countrey was Chiribnana. vaknowne, he fent Spies which brought word that it was a wretched Countrey, wilde Moun- A Sanage beaffe taynes, miry Marishes, Lakes and Bogs, vnprofitable for Seed and Husbandry, and the Naturals brutish worse then beatls without Religion or worship of any thing, without Law. To .. nes. or Houses, and eating mans fielh, hunting to that end the Neighbour Prouinces, and drinking their bloud without difference of fexe or age; eating also their owne when they dyed and wen they had eaten their flesh, they layd the bones together and mourned for them, burying those Relikes in Rockes or hollow Trees. They were clothed in skinnes, and abstayned not from fifters, mothers, daughters. Good Inca Tupanqui (fo they vied to call him) hearing this, faid they were more bound to the Conquest, to the end to civilize them; for therefore our Father the Sun hath

Hee fent tenne thousand men which spent two yeeres, and returned without having ef- Invasions of feded their Deligne by reason of the ill condition of the Countrey. Neyther had the V ce. roy the incas and Don Francis de Toledo any better fuccelle in the like attempt. Anno 1972. in which by reason of Saniardsusthe badnesse of the wayes unpassable for Mules, his Litter was carried on mens shoulders, whom the Chiribnanas followed with cryes threatning to eate them. Such terrour they cause to the borderers, that an hundred of them will flee from ten : yet this little conversation with those which the Inca fent, inftructed them to leave eating their dead friends, and to dwell in houses

The good King Inca Tupanani after this , proceeded to another purpose of conquering Chili, Chili different 40 and from Atacama fent Spies to discouer it, and the difficulty of the wayes: which passed the red-Deferts and left markes in the way left they should loofe it at their returne, there beeing eighty leagues of Wildernesse from Atacama to Coparapa, which is a little Progince well peopled, from which to Cuquimpu are other eightic leagues unpeopled. These having given advice to the Inca. he fent ten thousand men of warre voier the command of Sinchiruca with provisions necessary; and after them fent ten thousand others both to succour them, and to terrifie the enemy. When words would not perswade the men of Copayapa to receive the command of the Lord of the foure Sudued parts of the World, they came to skirmilhes and after to composition, upon the comming of the fecond Army, The Inca hereupon leuied other ten thousand, and sent them to follow the tormer which marched eighty leagues, and after many troubles came to another Valley or Prounce

called Cuanimpn, which they lubdued. And fo proceeded conquering all the Nations which are 50 fill you come to the Valley of Chili, whereof that whole Kingdome takes the name. This exploit was fixe yeeres in hand, the Inca still tending fresh supplies of men and provisions of armes, clothes and other necessaries, to that he had fitte thouland men of warre in Chib. They went fitty leagues further Southwards to the River of Maulli, ftil vfing faire meanes rather then cruel- Bule at Putie to reduce them. And thus the Empire was adjunced about two hundred and fixty leagues THIMBLES. beyond Atacama: yet ambition looking further, they paffed the River Maulis with twenty thousand men. Three dayes they fought cruelly till halte of both fides were slaine; the three

dayes following they were content to fit Hill in expectation, and after that departed from each other without further accomplishment. Masli was now the Southerne boundarie, and 60 the Inca having intelligence fent them word rather to cultivate and order what they had gotten then to fecke new Conquefts. Thus they fortified the Frontiers and attended the aemi- spenification nistration of Iu lice, and building Houses for the Sunne and the King. Diego de Almagro was the first Spaniard which discouered Chili, but haurng purchased nothing Almagros Di-

but couery.

Captaine his

Scaniards.

the generall Rebellion of the Indians of Peru, and of the discords and Civill warres of the Spa. P. de Malifiels, mards. Pedro de Valdinia, made the next Discouerie, and happily conquered them, but as vn. happily wasput to death by the Arancans his vallals, after hee had raifed his profits to a hundred thouland Pezos yeerely, which yet did but enlarge his appetite. The Arancans had affembled twelve or thirreene thousand, notwithstanding which numbers Valdinia still had the better, by reason of the Horsemen, ten of which would breake thorow a thousand Indians, which therefore would not deale with the Spaniards in the Plaines but kept the Hils. A certaine old Cantaine hearing hereof, would needs goe thither to fee what that Military mysterie might be, that taine hearing nereor, would need spectrum for many thoulands. He called a Councell, and asked one hundred and fiftre men should hold under so many thoulands. He called a Councell, and asked 10 if the Spaniards were mortall and made of flesh, subject to humane infirmities of wearinesse and fleepe; and likewife of their Horfes; which being affirmed, hee taught them another course of battle, dividing all their thousands into so many bands single, each of which should fight, and doe what they could, and when they were wearie should conuay themselues away, and give place to another Regiment; meanewhile to recollect themselues into their ranke againe, and to refresh themselues : to likewise should the second and third and all of them doe in their order. Thus they fought and fled, and full feemed to the Spaniards both broken and whole. they having often broken the bands, which yet kept still neere the number which they hadar first. This troubled them, their bodies and horses yeelding to wearinesse by long continuance from morning till afternoone : and then Valdinia commanded his men that they should re- 20 coyle by degrees, making a defensive warre till they might recover certayne Straits, where they might easily by the strength of the place bee defended. This was heard by one Philipa Philip berray- Chili Seruant of the Gouernours (by his Indian name, Lautram) who fled to his Countrimen. ethiis Mofter, and told them this his Masters intent. Whereupon they fent some Regiments to make good that place, fo that about Sunne-fet the Spaniards thinking to fecure themselves there, came to the Sunne-fet and irrecouerable night of their Fates. The Gouernour and a Frier were taken, the rest slaine : three Indians fled and carried newes of this difaster. Ualdinian death is dinerfly told; some say that that Philip killed him, some that another Captayne did it with a Clubbe whiles others by his promifes were wonne to give him libertie. Francie de Rieros which then was a Captayne in Chili, from the reports of 20 Indians, tels that the Chilois made dances all night, at the end of each dance cutting off a piece of the flesh of both their Pritoners and eating it before their faces, Notwith-

They came onperceined having fet double Espials on the citie. They came in Squadrons ranked in or-

der; for they brew that the Spaniards were afterpe, and had but foure men in their Corps de gard, and

to malke the round. They were blinded with their fortune some twentie dayer before having beaten the In-

dians from their Fort in Vega, and the Marishes of Paparlen, slaying many that for eight lesques a

bout no Indian durft be feene. Thus entred they the freets of that unhappy citie, and fired the bunfet;

then toste the gates, and in two boures space with fire and Sword destroyed the Towne , and wanne the

Fort and Artillery, killing foure bundred Spaniards of both Sexes; Sacked three bundred thousand Pe-

20: of Poile, consuming all the rest. The Shipper of Vallano, Villaroell, and another of Degode

Roias, were at anchor in the River, and if some had not escaped in Canoas to carry them newes, they had

ny of their wines and children for flanes to Merchants, which carried them out of their Countries, bo ing baptized, and basing kept Priests fiftie yeeres. Now first, they destroyed the Churches, and brace

the Images in pieces. Ten dayes after Coronel Francisco del Campo, came with three bundred men for

runne the like fortune. The Spaniards fenerity a little before made them thus cruell, hauing fold fo ma- (0

Others fav. molten gold downe his throate. Later accidents in Pers and Chili. Prodigious thowers of fand & aibes They tell also were broken and fruitlesse, and the Cattle great and small dyed for want of patture. For the 40 Earthquakes about Arequepa. They found their Kine dead by five hundred together in feuerall Heards, and

tenby a Citi. write that the Rebellion of Arauco groweth enery day stronger. On Wednesday the source and twentieth zen of lago in Note the A-Tancans armes

the Spaniards.

flanding they doe not ordinarily eate mans flesh. This was Anno 1553, and ever fince the Rebellion hath continued : at which time Don Sebastian rebelled in Potos and Francis Hernandes Giron in Cozco, Rebellions later then those of the Pizarrifts and Almagrifts. I might adde to these affaires of Chile, the great Earth-quakes, A. 1600. in Peru, at Arequesa the rayning of fand, as alto of allies about twenty dayes from a Vulcan breaking forth; the affect falling in places aboue a yard thicke, in some places more then two, and where left aboue a quarter of a yard, which buried the Corne-grounds of Maiz and Wheat, and the boughes of Trees fand which rained couered the fields thirty leagues one way, and aboue forty another way round ereparations which Flookes of Sheepe and Heards of Goates and Swine buried. Houses fell with the weight of the fand, others cost much industry to face them. Mighty Thunders and Lightnings were heard and feene thirty leagues about Arequepa. It was fo darke whiles those shownes lasted that A Letterwitt- at m dday they burned Candles to fee to doe their bufineffe. This from Perm: from Chile they of Nouember 1599, there came in the morning upon the citie of Valdinia, about fine thousand Indians of the bordering places, and of the places advoming to Imperiall, Pica, and Putem, three thousand borfmen and the rest foot; seuenty of them Harcabuse wen, and two hundred in coates * of Maile (Cotas) 50

CHAP.13. Span. distressed in Chili. Cosco Fort wonder of the New World. 1477

from his Excellence from Petu, to succour those Cities. Having seene this lamentable destruction, he went to success Otorno, and Villarrica, and sad Ymperiall, of which beeknew nothing but that it had Ymperial tamie beene besteged a yeere by the enemies, having nothing to eat but dead Horses, Cats, Dogges, and Hides. fied. But first be (uccoured Olorno, to which the victorious enemies had gone from Valdiuiz. Newes came at the same time, whiles I was writing, that those of Ymperiall were dead with famine, all saue twentie whom bunger forced to a worfe destine, to goe to the Indians. Lord baue mercy on vs. Amen. March 1600. from Saint Iago.

Faiber Diego de Alcohazi (whom I have before mentioned) writ to me, Anno 1601, that the Indi- Another letter ans were growne of such dexteritie in warres, that enery Indian on borsebacke with his Lance, durst 1601. 10 fally out on any Spanish Souldier, were be neuer so valiant : and enery yeere many goe from Perusbuber Indians valous.

but none returne. They have facked two Townes, and killed all they found in them, carrying away the women and daughters and fernants : and lastly, they killed in an Enboscada the Governour Loyola, which Governour was married to a daughter of Don Diego Sayritupac the Inca, which went from Villacapampa, be. Loyda flaince, fore your Worship went to those parts. God have mercy on the dead, and give remedie to the living. Octier things he writ fo irkefome, that I forbeare to recire, as of the plagues of Arequena, one of which Dearth, was that Wheate was worth that yeere ten or eleuen Ducats, and Maiz thirteene. Anno 1602. the difafters of Arequepa, continued as the lefuites have written. Anno 1604. Padre Maeftro Francisco de Castro gaue mee this turther Relation of Chili. Of thirteene Cities which are in this Francisco de Castro gane mee this interest certain to Comment Comments of Chili, the Indians baue destroyed sixe Town destroyed.

20 Chillan and Conception. They wasted and consumed therein, the Houses, Churches, Deuotion, Beautie of the fields; and yet the greatest misery is , that the In hans have gathered heart and courage for greater spoyles and destructions of Cities and Monasteries. They have bent their minds to mischiefe and cunning fratagems. They belieged the Citte Otorno, and confuming the Spanish forces, they retired to Oforto Force a Fort in which they have held them as it were in a continuall fiege, the befreged fustagning themselves taken. with feeds and berbes. In one of the fieges which that Citie fustained, they broke the Images : in the Last they billed the Centinels, and Safely entred and Sessed the Fore, the Spaniards not perceiving, and whiles they were busie in shoyle, the Spaniar is came on them, and got from them the women and Nunt. The last Dustory of the Indians, was the taking of Villatrica, with great flanghter of Spaniards, firing Villatrica cas it in foure parts. They killed all the Friers of Saint Domingo, Saint Francis, and our Lady of Pitte, ken,

30 and the Clergie men: they captined all the women which were many, and of a good account. Now let vs returne to the Inca Tupangui, who now determined to ceasile further invading and conquest, His Realme now extending a thousand leagues. He made many Fortress and Temples to the Sunne, and Nunneries, and Royall Palaces, and Conueyances of water. Especially hee bestowed paines on the Fortreile of Cozco, for which his Father had brought great store of flones. He visited his Kingdome to see with his eyes the necessities thereof that he might remedie them, which he did with fuch care, that he merited the furname of Pione. After which hee dyed full of Trophees, having enlarged his En pire to farre to the South, and a hundred and forty leagues Northwards.

Tupac Inqua Tupanqui his eldest Sonne succeeded. The Fortresse of Cozco which hee built may Tupanqui inca feeme a worke of Deuils rather then men, the flones (or Rockes rather) in three circuits about his acts and being fo many and great, the Indians auring heither Iron not Steele to cut or worke them, not death, Oxen, nor Carts to draw them, but all done with force of men with great Cables, and that thorow vneuen wayes in rough Mountains. Many of them they brought ten, twelue, fitteen leagues, Fortreffe of particularly that from which the Indians call Sajenfea, that is, mearied, which was brought fifteene leagues, and palled the River Tucay little leffe then Guadalquiur at Corduba. The most came from Murna, five leagues off. Many of them are fo close, that scar fly the place where they are Section 1956. joyned can be different, which required the lifting vp and often ferling one ftone vpon another, Aconas Reahaving neyther Square, nor Rule. Nor could they make Cranes or any fort of Engine to helpe tion. them. It feemes that the Incas thought hereby to expresse their magnificence and power, and

50 the skill of their workmen. This Fortreffe was built on a Hill on the Northfide of the Citie , fo fleepe that way that it could not bee alkulted, and therefore one wall ferued on that fide two hundred fathomes long. They had no morter but vied a kind of coloured clay fafter then it. On the other parts they made three wals one before another, each about two hundred fathomes, in forme of a halte Moone; there were itones in them, but fuch as were admirably great. A Prieft of Montilla having beene in Peru and feene them, told me that hee could not imagine how they The wonders could be laid but by the blacke Arc. And indeed this in respect of the want of Art may be faid or the world to exceed the feuen Wonders of the World : for it is easie to conceine how the Pyramides of not fo wonder-Egypt and wals of Bubylon might be made, which here is not. Eurry wall in the midd had one Fortreffe. gate which had one ftone elemated the breadth and height thereof. Betwixt one wall and ano-

60 ther was about thirty foot : the battlements were about a yard high. The height I cannot exactly tell. Within those wals were three ffrong Forts, the middlemost called Moyor Marca, or the round Fort, in which was a Conduit of good water brought farre off vinder ground, the In-One round diens knew not whence the was knowned only to the lecaland tome chiefe Councellors. In this Fort and two the Kings remained when they went to vifit the Fortrolle, and the wals were all adorned with square, gold

Gggggg 2

Labyringh.

gold and filter and counterfeits of beafts, and birds, and plants, enchafed therein, which ferned for Tapeflyy. The fecond Fort was called Paucar Marca, the third, Saclac Marca, both fquare. with Roomes for Souldiers which must be Incas of priviledge, for no other Nation might enter. it being the house of the Sunne for warre, as Temples were for Prayer. The Captaine was of the bloud Royall legitimate. They had vnder earth passages from one Fort to another very artificiall with Labyrintian windings and turnings inextricable but by a Thread. When I was a Boy I often faw the ruines thereot, but none of vs durft enter the Vaults further then wee had

The whole worke was of stone, some polished, some rude. They had to draw the great Stone Sarcules twenty thousand Indians with Cables, one halfe before, the other behind; in one vne- In uen pailage it killed three or foure thouland Indians. They call it mearied, because they were wearie and neuer layd it in the building. The Architect was Calla cunezus. The Spaniards not only doe not repaire the Fortreile, but pull it downe to build their private houses, every of their houfes in the Citie beeing therewith adorned. In such manner have they cast so great Maiesty to the ground. The three wals fland because they cannot ruine them for their greatnesse, yet some part they demolished to seeke the Chaine of gold which Huayna Capac made. This Inca beganne this Fortresse which continued fiftie yeeres before it was finished.

The eigh h King of Peru.

He Great Tupac Inca Yupanqui (his name Tupac fignifieth Refplendent or Illustrious, for such were his Acts) after the accomplishment of folemnities concerning his Fathers Funerals, and Tupe: Inca Yu- and his owne Coronation, which confumed one yeere; visited his Kingdome, the better to know and to be knowne of his Subjects, and for better execution of Justice by his Officers and Judges, in which he fpent foure yeeres. This done, he leuied forty thousand Souldiers to proceed in the sourse of his Fathers, which palliated their ambition of Souereigntie and Dominion, with reducing men from Barbarisme and beastiality to Civility and Religion. He marched to Cassamarca, and entred the Prouince of Chachapuya. Eastwards from Cassamarca, a Countrey of valiant men and very faire women. They worthipped Snakes, and the bird Cuntur was their principall God. It then contayned aboue fortie thousand Families, Their chiefe Armes were slings, and they wore a kinde of fling-net for their head tyre (bee cals both by the name honda.) Beyond them are the Huacrachucu a fierce and warly Nation, which we are on their head a blacke leash of Wooll 30 with white flves here and there, and for a feather a piece of a Deeres horne : these worshipped · in those times Snakes, and kept them pictured in their Temples and houses. These lay in the way to the former, and much bloud was loft in fight on both fides; whereupon the Inca, after their ancient custome, fought to reduce them by faire meanes, intimating that hee came more to doe them good as they had done to other Nations, fuffering the Curasas to rule still; then to rule ouer them, feeking no more but that they should worship the Sunne, and leave their barbarousnesse. He divided his Armie, and sent some to take the most commodious places, so that they were forced to feeke peace. He ftayed there, the Countrey being rainy, till the next Summer, and fent for twenty thouland men more , instructing the Huncrachucus meane while in his deuotions and Lawes, and to conuay away the waters, and make the grounds fit for feed to their so

Husevachucus

The next Summer hee entred the Prouince Chachapuya, where notwithstanding the wonted gentle message he was incountred with a cruell warre. This Province was fiftie leagues long, and twenty broad, reaching to Mujupampa, which is thirtie leagues long. The Hils were craggic, and in places very fteepe and inowie; three hundred which he fent to Ipie, were drowned in the fnow, not one escaping. The prowesse and numbers of the Inca brought all by degrees to subje-Rion, Pias, Charmac caffa (an open passage of the inowie Hill, very dangerous where the three hundred were loft) Cuntur Marca, Cassa Marquilla, all Mountaynous and craggie places, till hee came to Rayminampa, so called of a Feast which he folemnized there to the Sunne in his Campe, being a faire Valley; and thence to Muyupampa, where Ancohualla entred as is before faid in Vi- 52 racochas time, tather then he would bee a subject to the Inca; these and Casenyunca now yeelded. The next Summer hee marched on to Huancapampa, a great Nation, but divided amongit Husneapampa. themselues, naked and warring not for wealth but women, worthipping Birds, Bealts, Plants,

every one as himselfe pleated. These he tamed by hunger (starting such as came not in) and gave them Mafters to instruct them in husbandry, and how to clothe themselves, to water their fields, and to plant Townes, to that it became one of the best Prouinces in Peru. More to ennoble it, hee after built therea Temple and house of Virgins, prohibiting the eating of mans fleth, and gaue them Priests and men learned in the Lawes to instruct them. Afterwards he Three ciuill added three great Provinces, Cassa Ayabnaca and Callua to his Signory, which lived civilly, having Townes and Fortrelles, and a kind of Republike or free State, having their meetings and choice 60 of Gouernours. These Conquests ended, he spent long time in visiting his Kingdom, and by iding Temples, Nunneries, Store-houses, Aquaducts, especially taking care of the Fortreffe at Cozos.

HUMBALN OF

Some yeeres this way spene, hee marched Northward to Huanusu, which containeth many difunited Nations, whom he easily conquered, and planted Townes there, being a fertile Coun-

trie, and temperate, making it the chiefe Province of many others in those Confines. He built Pedrade Ciesa there a Temple for the Sunne, and a houle of choicen Virgins, twenty thousand Indians personmine feruices in courfe to thole two houses. He went next to the Prouince Cannars, which ware also, he calls it their haire long, tied on a knot in the Crowne. By these head-tires in the time of the Incas, each Guanus, and Indian was knowne of what Nation he was; which in my time they continued, but now they lat hithere was fay all is confounded. These Cannaris before this worshipped the Moone as chiefe Derty, and great Trees and Stones in the fecond place; but now were brought to the Incas Sunne-religion, of great flones and their Countrie ennobled with a Temple, Nunnerie, Palaces, Water-passages, &c. The Na- cunningly tion Quillacu is belowe the Cannari, the most miserable of Nations, neither having good land, placed; neere to nor are, nor water, whence grew a Prouerbe applied to couetous milers, bee is a very Quillacu: on these the Inca imposed a tribute of Lice, that is they might learne to be cleanly. Tupac Inca &c. Tupangus and his sonne Huayna Capac much ennobled those Provinces of the Cannars, and of Cannari.

Tuminamea, with building Royall houles, adorning the Lodgings in flead of Tapeftry with coun- Quillacu. terfeits of Herbs, Plants and Creatures of gold and filter, the Porches chafed with Gold and inlayed with Emeralds and Turqueiles: a Temple alio of the Sunne enchaied with Gold and Sil- calls in Thomener, the Indians custome being to make oftentation of service to their Kings, and to flatter them bamba, and is filling their Temples and Palaces with all the treatures they were able (in Pots, Pannes, and o- large in this ther vellels of gold and filter and much coftly raiment.) Having returned to Cozco, his ambition Foint. not long after brought him backe to Tumpampa, where he gained many Prouinces unto the con-20 fines of the Kingdome of Quitu, viz. Chanchan Moca, Quefaa, Pumallacia, (that is, the Land of

Lions, by reason of the flore there, being also worshipped for Gods) Ticzampi, Tiu cassa, Capamvi. Vrcollasu and Tincuracu, barren and barbarous Regions, which he fent Masters to teach Ciuilitie and Religion. Atter that, he made another expedition with fortie thousand men to Quin, Quin, the name of the Kingdome and King. It is feuenty leagues long and thirtie broad, fertile and rich. They worthipped Deere, and great Trees.

The warre continuing long, he fent for his tonne Huanna Capac to come with twelve thoufand men more to exercise him in warre. Huayna Capac fignifieth from a childe rich in magnanimoss exploits. Capac was a title given to things of greatest eminence. And this feemed præeminent in him that he neuer denied any woman any fute, wing to them gentle compellations of Hugna Capacs 30 Mother, Sifter, Daughter, according to their age, &c. Tupac Inca returned to Cozeo, and left his sonne to dispatch the warre, which was three yeeres before Quitu was reduced, beside two yeeres which his father ipent : the reason whereof was the Incas cultome to gaine not by fire and fword, but as they could make the Natiues for sake it; which had this effect, that their con-

queit was more durable, and their vaffals bare them better affection. At the end of those fine yeeres the King of Quitu ored, and the people subjected them to Huayna Capac, which vied them gently. He palled on to Quillacenca, that is, Iron-nofe Province (fo called for their boring the Quillacena, nostrils, and wearing lewels thereat) a vile, brutish, lousy People, without Religion, eating any carion. They were easily subjected, as likewise the next Province of like condition Pastu, and Otanalla a People more civill and warlike, and Caranque a barbarous Nation which worthip-40 ped ligres, and Lions, and great Snakes, in their Sacrifices offering the hearts and bloud of men which they ouercame in warre : thefe he civillized allo.

Tupac Inca was busie in his Fortresse at Cazco, keeping twenty thousand men at worke therein with great order and emulation of each Nation to exceed other. Huajna Capac returning, was received with great triumph,: and because he had no children by his eldett Sister Pillen Huaco. he was secondly married to his second Sister Rana Octio, the Incas still wing that marriage in imi- Huayna Capaci tation of Manco Capac, and for certainty of the bloud on both fides. King Tupac, and his Councell ordained that both should be lawfull Wives, and holden for Queenes, and not for Concubins. Hee married also Mama Rucu, his Vncle Amara Tupacs eldest daughter the next in bloud to the former, having no third Sifter of whole bloud. By Rana Oello he had Huafear Inca; and by

50 his Coulin-german, Manco Inca. Tupac Inca drawing neere to death called together his children (which were about two hundred) and made the wonted discourse or Testament, commending Tups Incar peace and inflice and care of their vaffals to them, and to shew themselves indeed the children of the Sunner: recommending to the Prince, the reducing and conquett of the Sauages to the service of the Sunne, and a politike life, and to follow the example of his Fore-fathers, and to chathfe the Huilleausleas which had flaine his Captaines in rebellion. Hee faid h. was now going to another life, his father the Sunne calling him to reft with him. Thus died Tupac Inca, tamous for the benefits done to his Countrie, therefore called Tupac Tara, Illustrious Father. By Mama Oello he had fixe fonnes; the eliett, Huayna Capac: the fecond, Augui Amara Tupac Inca; the third, Quehuar Tupac; the fourth, Huallpa Tupac Inca Yupangui (my mothers grand-60 father ;) the firth, Treu Inca Rimach; the fixth, Agai Masta. They embalmed his body which

Itaw Anno 1509, as if it had beene aline. The rest of this eighth Booke the Authour hath fpent in description of the creatures of principall note of those parts, in which out of Acolta, and others baning being redious already, we will not here trouble the Reader.

The ninth Booke. Ниауна Сарас the tweltth.

He mighty Huayna Capac, after other things fee in order, having a fonne (Huafear) borne. for whom he made twenty dayes feast; began to propound great and rare deuties to himfeife. One was a Chaine of gold, much fought but neuer feene by the Spaniards. The Indians vie much dancing, and are as early diftinguished one Nation from another by their dances, as by their head-tires. The lness had a grave kinde of dancing in meatures, men alone without women, hand in hand, finging in then foft paces, three hundred or more in a folemne feast, the Inca jumielfe sometimes dancing with them: at other times they danced about, still comming necrer to that Royall centre. This holding of hands in a ring gaue occasion to make the golden Chaine, that they might cance by it without touching hands, as I have heard the fore-mentioned old Inca, (my mothers Vicle) discourse. Hee told mee that it contained the length and Io bredth of the great street of Cozce, which is seuen hundred foot, and the bignesse of every linke thereof was (he faid) as bigge as his wrett. Augustin de Zarate calls it Maroma, a Cable, trom the report of Indians then living, and fayth, it was as much as two hundred Indians could lift) Much have the Spaniards tought for this and other treasures, whereof they could never finde any toot-print. Prince Inis Cuft Huallya (that was his name before, and fignifieth Huallya the Sunne of reigreing) was in memorie of that which was made to honour his birth called Huascar, an r added to Huasea (which lignifieth a Rope, their Language not differencing a Chaine from a Rope) by which addition Huafear might be without fignification, and anoyde the ill found of a Rope, which was added to his former name at his maining and polling Feast, when hee was two yeeres old. After that hee leuied fortie thousand Souldiers, and went to Quite, in which Voyage hee 20 tooke for his Concubine the eldest daughter of King Quitu aforefaid, which was there kept in

the Honfe of the chofen, or Nunnerie; and by her had Atabuallpa, and other children.

Thence he went to the Plaines, and made conquest of the Valley of Chimu (now Trueille) and

Chacma, Pacasmayn, Canna, Collque, Cintu, Tucmi, Sayanca, Mutupi, Puchiu Sallana, bestowing

much cost to conuey water, and benefit his new conquests. After some time spent at Quite, hee

leuied another Armie of fitty thouland, and conquered Tumpiz (a vicious, luxurious People,

and Sodomiticall, which adored Tigres and Lions, and facrificed the hearts and bloud of Men)

and Chunana Chintur, Collouche, and other confining places. Hee made a faire Fortresse in Tum-

pis, and fet there a Garrison : he built a House of the Sunne, and another of Virgins : and after

that entred into the Prouince Huancauillea, which had killed those Masters which his Father

him, which durit doe no other, with all the chiefe men, to whom one of the Mafters of the

Campe made a Speech of their treation and bad demerits: Notwithilanding the laca vining his

naturall clemency, and making account of his title Huacchacuyac (The benefactor or louer of the

poore) both pardoned all the common people, and would fo farre remit the better fort which had

beene doers in that businesse, that though all had descrued death, yet one onely of tenne whom

the lot should defigne to execution, should die : and of the Curacu, and Captaines, each should

lofe two teeth in the vpper iaw, and as many in the lower, both they and their descendants, in

memorie of fallitying their promise to his father. They which feared that all should palle the

that tooth-leffe, and did likewife to their fonnes and daughters, as if it had beene a fauour. One

of that Nation I knew in my fathers honfe at Cozce, which largely recounted the premistes.

fword were content, and the whole Nation would needs both men and women participate in 40

The Inca fpent much time in visiting his Kingdome from Quita to Charcas, about feuen hun-

dred leagues, and tent Vifitors to Chil, whence his father had drawne much Gold. This done,

he railed an Armie of fifty thousand men of the Northerne Preuinces, and having visited the

Temple of Pachacamae, and caused the Priests to consult with the Oracle, which promised pro-

speritte to his deligner, and the like at Rimac; hee passed thorow those Vallies to Tumpiz, and

tent to the Hand Pana, twelue leagues in compaffe, the Lord whereof was called Tampalla, a man

which kept many women and boyes for his luft; betides the Sea, their common Deitie, they wor-

mands, but after killed and threw our boord his men as they were conveying them to the Con-

tinent, and facrificing fome of them, which the Inca feuerely reuenged, both on them, and on

their confederates in the Continent, and commanded them to keepe the memorie of that dif-

mall execution in mournfull longs; enjoying them to obey his Gouernour which kept the Fer-

treffe of Tumpiz. From Tumpiz he proceeded in vifitation of his Kingdome to the Chichas, with

intent to doe the like in the Southerne part, and fent Prefents fine garments to the Gouernours,

Curacas, Captaines and Royall Officers, according to the cultome of the Incas. But hearing

that the Chachaphyas were in rebellion (to whom hee fent Mellengers, which received ill vlage

thip Tigres and Lions, and facrificed the heart and bloud of Men. Thetereceined the Incar com- 50

Typac Inca Typangus had fent to inftruct them. Hee commanded all the Curacus to come before 30

kngth and greatnelle. Hualcat as Roper.

A gold chaine

of incredible

Atabuallyas marher. Further conquests.

Vallies in the Plaines tub. ducd.

Tumpezor Tumbez lubducd. Huancauilea punified.

Husecharunac a title of the Incas.

1.Puna fubic-Their treason.

Drerylongs.

and answers) he made a Bridge, and marched ouer the River, and came to Caffu marquilla, with Chaira; upas

purpose to destroy them. The people not being able to hold out, fled into the Mountaines, and others more wifely knowing his gentle disposition, procured a Matron of their Countrie, which had beene Concubine to Tupac Inca Tupanqui to meet him with a multitude of feminine supplicants, which so well played her pititull part in a pertwatine speech seconded with cries and lamentations of that chorus of women, that the Inca relented, taking her up from the ground, called her Mamanchic (our mother) granted her request, and gave her commission to make an end of the bulineffe, fending some vnarmed Incas with her to that purpose. The Chachapuyas in rememi rance Thinkiulneffe. of this fact encompalled the place where shee had met the Inca, with three walls, not permitting the foot of man or beatl to touch fo holy ground: the vetermost wall of clay, the second of Rone unpolished, the inmost of polished stone, which the conetoninesse of the Spaniards overthrew, as they did other the best buildings, to search for treasure.

CHAP. 14. Emerald-goddesse. Foolish iewellers. Mad gallantry. Giants.

Huanna Capac went to Manta (in which Countrie stands the Port which the Spaniards call Marta. Puerto Vicio) which worthipped the Sea and Filhes, Tigres, Lions, and great Snakes, and a Punto Viceo no mongh other things a great Emerald, which they lay, was little leffe then an Effriches egge. deuctions. In their greater Feafts they shewed it publikely; the Indians came from farre to adore it, and facrifice to it, and to prefent it with small Emeralds, as daughters to the mother; the Prices and Cacike, telling them that this was the most agreeable offering. Thus were many Emeral Is gathered here together, where Don Pedro de Aluarado and his companions (one of which was my father Garcilaffe de la Vega) found them in the conquest of Pers, and brake most of them on an Anuil, laying (like bad Lapidaries) that if they were precious flones they would not breake with the greatest blowes, and it they brake they were but Glisse. But their goddesse-Emerald Emerald the Indian had conveyed away before, neither could it fince be found by any industrie. The people of Manta were open and shamelesse Sodomites, and in their marriages the Bridegrooms kinf-20 men and thends had first hanfell of the Spoule. They flayed the Captines which they tooke in

Warre, and filled the skinnes with ashes, and hanged them vp at the doores of their Temples, and in their feasting and dancing places. These with the Apichique, Pichunsti, Sana, and other Nations confining on the Coast, he subjected. These were more brutish then the Mantans, and not onely saced their faces with stones, but deformed their children with laying one boord on the fore-head, and another in the necke, so keeping them in presse from day to day, till they were foure or fue veeres old, to make them broad-faced, shauing away the haire of the crowne Platter-faced and necke, and letting it growe on the fides, making it curle and bush out to more monstrositie, From these he went to Saramisu and Passan, under the Equinoctial Line, where they wor- Bubarous

fhipped nothing at all, and had neither Towne nor House, but hued in hollow Trees, went na-30 ked, vied women in common, neither did their luits flay there; had their faces quartered into foure coloures, yellow, azure, particoloured and blacke, their haire, long, curled and full of filth, (I faw them with mine eyes when I came for Spaine) and are the fauagest people that can bee imagined. Huayna Capac would none of them, but faid, let vs returne, for those are not worthie to have ve to be their Lord. The Indians have a tradition that at the Point of Saint Elena Giants. See there came in Boats of Rulhes, huge Giants higher then common men from the knees vpwards, Jup in Acoffa. their eyes as bigge as Succes, and other members proportionable; they had no women with psq.1002.00, them, and were clothed in beafts skinnes, or naked. They fetled themselves there, and digged Wells admirably deepe in the Rocke, yeelding very coole water. One of them did eate more then fiftie men; and were forced to get fish for their diet. They killed the women of 40 the Countrie in vling them ; were great Sodomites, and were therefore at last by fire from Heauen confumed, leauing onely fome bones of them as memorials, which have beene, and still are there found. Anno 1550, there were as great bones found at Mexico. In this Point of Saint Elena, neere to Puerio Unio, are certaine Fountaines of pitchie substance fit to calke thips, boi- Bituminous ling out very hot.

Huayna Capac one Raymi or Feathday of the Sunne, looked up to the Sunne, which the high Reuerence to Priest, one of his Vincles, told him was vulawfull. But soone after hee looked vp againe, and the Sunne. againe was reproued by the Priest: but he answered, Answere mee to these questions : I am your Lord, and which of you dares bid meerife and goe a long lourney? None, faid he, would bee to mad. And if any the greatest Curaca be commanded by me to goe from hence to Chili, will he not doe it? The 50 Priestanswered, that none would disobey him in any thing. Why then I fay (faid the Inca) that Wise apophour Father the Sunne must needs have a greater and mightier Lord then himfelfe, which commands him thegme. See enery day to take (uch a lourney: for if he were a superiour Lord, he would some time or other rest himfelfe. The Carangues rebelled and were teuerely chaftifed, and 2000, of them beheaded in a Lake, and therefore called Tahnarcocha, or Sea of blond. After this, with much griefe that he was forced to fuch therpe medicines, he went to Onita, and finding his Sonne Atabaallya, wittie, wife, war- 20000 pchang like, and comely of personage (as vivally were the Incas and Pallas) hee much affected him, and including all till would have him about him, and to handled the matter, that with confent of his Brother Hn- which were afear, he fet him in possession of the Kingdome of Quita, and other Provinces, guing him expe. It inc in the timented Captaines and part of his Armie, the better to fecure himfelfe, and to pacific the vn-

60 fettled new-gained Pronunces in his Fathers life time, to that end transplanting Nations from one inpoffession. Region to another. Huayna Capac made two famous Royall waves, the one along the Hills within Land, the other Provinother by the Sea-fide. From Cozco to Quitu are fine hundred leagues by the Sierras, rockie and ces habitued by craggie way, which hee made plaine, breaking downe the high, and exalting the lowe places

fometimes lifteene or twenty stades or mans heights, that a Cart might have gone on them rill the wars of the Indians and Christians much endammaged them. By the Plaines he made another workes tracer the the workes of helfe difficultie, making mud-wals to hold in the way, forty foote broade with a high cause the me wonders both in the Vallies, and in the fands, drining stakes therein to know the way which is there fo moueable and changeable, the like space of 500.leagues. Builed in these affaires and great workes he had newes of the Spaniards (those which Rafen

Nunga de Balboa Brit discouerer of the South Sea, had fent upon discourry 1515. who, as before istani, impoled the name Peru) which filled him with wonder and care. Hee lived after this in peace eight yeares, and dyed Anno 1 523, having saigned two and fortie yeares, not minding the Probefies and profecuting of further conquests after he had heard of the Spanish Ship, by reason of a Prophesis 10

or ancient Oracle which the Incas had, that after to many Kings a strange Nation should come and delitroy their Kingdome and Idolatry. Three yeares before that Ship was feene, as they were Prodigies fore- celebrating the Sunues feitiuall folemnity, an Eagle Royall, which they call Anca, purfued fine fignifying the or fixe kiftrels and as many small haukes, which fet vpon the Eagle and beate her, so that hauing hill or the In- no way to escape, the fell in the market place among it the Incas, as feeking helpe at their hands. They tooke her and did what they could to relieue her; but within few dayes she died; an augurie feeming to prefage some dilaster to that state. There were also greater earthquakes then

the ordinary (to which Pera is vivally jubicet) and the Sea often fwelled over the shores: the aire no leffe terrified them with comets. The Moone in a cleere night had three circles round about her very great, one of bloud, the middlemost blacke, the vimost of smoake. Lingua a diviner 20 told the Inca; Onely Lord, know that thy mother the Moone adulfeth thee that Pachacamac threatneth the royall bloud, and to fend great plagues on thine Empire; the first circle fignifying the blouds warre which Sall follow when thou art gone to rest with thy Father the Sunne, betwixt thy posteritie, that in few yeares it shall altogether faile: the second shewes the destruction of our Religion and republique and altenation of thy Empire, which shall turne all into smoothe at is signified by the third circle. Inca was troubled, but put it off laying, thou haft dreamed thefe fooleries last night, and failt my Mother hath fent me fuch intelligence. But the Soothfayer answered, he might fee it with his owne eyes, and confult with other diumers, which he did, and found the fame fight and answere: hee yet made feemings not to believe, faying hee did not believe the Sunne would permit that to happen to his progenie. He offered notwithstanding many Sacrifices to him, and appointed the 30 Soothfayers in all parts to confult with their fenerall Oracles, especially with Pachacamac and Rimae, whose answers were coscure and doubtfull. These things I heard of two Captaines of Huayna Capacs guard, then eightie yeares old, and baptifed, speaking hereof with teares. Des Iuan Peshuia, and Chanca Rimachi, as also of Cushhallpa that old Inca, and of my Mother and her Brother Don Fernando Hualloa Tupac Inca. Huayna Capac one day bathing himfelfe came forth cold, and found himfelfe deadly ficke,

Huayna Capacs laft will, or freehheiore bis death.

made a testamentall discourse, saying, that he was now going to beauen to rest with his Father the Sunne, which called him out of the bath, ever fince which time be was so indisposed of body: when I am dead you hall burie my body as to veed to be done with Royall bodies, my heart and entrals in Quitu, in token of the love which I beare it; my body you shall carrie to Cozco to lay it with my ancestors. I com- 10 mendyou to my Son Atahuallpa whom I fo much loue, who remaineth for Inca in my place in this Kingdome of Quitu, and in all the rest which be shall conquer by armes to augment his Empire. And for you the Captaines of my armie, I charge you in particular to ferue bim with that fealty & love which you one to your King, in all and enery thing doing what he shall command you, which shall be the same that I shall remeale to bim by order of our Father the Sunne. I likewife commend ante you instice and clemencie towards the Vasfals, that the Title of Louer of the poore given onto us, be not loft; and that in everything you doe like the Incas, Sonnes of the Sunne. Having made this speech to his children and kinimen, he called the rest of the Captains and Coracas which were not of the bloud royall and game them in charge fealty and fernice due to their King, and at last concluded : It is many yeares lince that by The Prophetic renelation of our father the Sunne, we hold that when twelve Kings are passed of his Sonnes, there shall 50 come a new and unknowne people into those parts, and shall gaine and subject to their Empire all our King. domes and many others. I suspect that they shall be of those whom we know to have cone along it the coal of our Sea : they shall be a valiant Nation which every way shall exceede you. We well know that in met is compleat the number of twelve Incas. I certifie you that a few yeares after my departure from you. that new Nation shall come and fulfill that which our Father the Sunne hath spoken, and stall earne our Empire and rule ouer it. I command you that yee obey and serue them as men which enery wer feat have advantage of you: whose Law skall be better then ours, and their armes more mightie and mumerble then yours. I leave you in peace, for I goe to rest with my Father the Sunne which

cu bualles his that speech.

cals mee. All this the Indians held in great veneration, and fulfilled every for thereof. I remember that 60 one day that old Inca speaking in presence of my Mother, and rehearfing these things, and the Spaniards entrance, and their conqueit : I asked him how, their Countrey being fo rough, their people so warlike, and their number so many, they lost their Empire to so few Spaniards. Heattwering me, repeated the foretelling or prophetic of the Spanards aforetaid, and faid that the

Inca had commanded them to obey and serve them, for every way they should have the advantage of them. And for that objection of cowardile, he answered me. These words which our Inca faid outous, being the last that ener he spake to us, were more powerfull to subject us and quite our Empire. then the armes which thy Father and his companions brought into this Land. Thus died Huayna Capac; Ruayna Capacs his body was embalmed, and carried to Cozco; his heart interred in Quita. His funerall folem- death.

nities and mourning continued a yeare, according to the custome of the Inca Kings. Her lett 2- Indiant hate 10 boue two hundred ionnes and daughters; fome Incas affirme aboue three hundred to exaggerate

Atahualla tot the crueltie of Atabnallpa, which flew them almost all; who therefore was so odious, that causes sollowthe Spaniard, having put him to death, were thought men fent from their God the Sun to take ing.

to vengeance on the destroyer of his seede. And when they brought Cockes and Hens with them Cock conceit, into Pers, they hearing the Cockes crowing faid, that in perpetuall infamie of that tyrant and whereby it apabhominible memory of his name, they pronounced it in their crowing, saying Atabnalipa, and pearein that would answer the Cockes crowing with reckoning the name Atabuallya: wherein the children they had no imitated them in those times, so that if they had heard a Cocke crowe, they would recrow in like tune the name of Aushallpa: a thing which I my felfe and other boyes my Schoolefellowes, children of Spaniards by Indian women haue often done, together with the Indian children. They named likewise on such occasion his principail Captains, whose names were of so many syllables, Challenchims, Quillifeacha and Ruminnani. The Spaniards thought they did this for his honour,

faying the Cockes made this honorable mention of him: fo Blas Valera writeth, which received it 20 of the Indians of Quitu his naturall subjects, which applied to a good mention that which those of Cozco denifed in will, for his crueleies there done.

Huanna Capac being dead, his two Sonnes Huascar and Atabaallpa raigned quietly for the space Huascar the of foure or flue yeares, one in Cozco, the other in Quitn. After which Huafcar began to thinke thirtcenth and with himselfe that he had done ill in consenting to his father in the matter of Quitn, which now last transference was his brothers; whereby he was barred vp also from further conquests; the other three waies rour. being locked up by the Antis, the Sea and Chili; fo that his brother might by new conquefts make himfelfe greater then he : and whereas now his file was Capa Inca (onely Lord) in time, the other might both equall and exceede him. Thefe things more and more troubling him, hee Huafcars meffent a Messenger to his brother, saying; that by the ancient constitution of the first Inca Manco Ca- sage to Atabu-

30 pac, the Kingdome of Quitu, and all the Prominces which he possessing the belonged to the crowne and Empire of Cozoo, which howsoener he had quitted to him upon his Fathers command, yet was it more by force then instice, being to the losse of the crowne and presidice of the successors; and therefore neither ought his Father to command it, nor was he obliged to fulfill it. Tet feeing he had given confent, he was content upon these two condition; first that he should adde nothing to his Empire; secondly, that hee Bould doe him homage and fealtie, as his vallall and fendatarie. Atabuallpa received this mellage with great humilitie and feeming fubmition, and three dayes after returned answere, that in his heart he had alwayes reknowledged valiallage; being returned to the Inca by Post, he was much Hisanswer and content, fending reply, that he againe confirmed that estate to his Brother conditionally, that militie.

by luch a time he should make his personall homage at Cozco. Atabnallpa answered hee was a 40 happy man to understand such the Incas pleasure, that he would doe it by the time fet him; but for greater folemnitie, he did befeech his Maiestie to give him leave that all the Provinces of his estate should come with him to celebrate in Cozco the obsequies of Huayna Capac his Father, with rites agreeable to those of Quits and the other Provinces, which ended, hee and his would

doe their due homage. All this did Huascar grant, and Atabualla made vse of to his project of soueraigntie. He sent proclamation to all his Prouinces, that all men feruiceable should in such a space make ready to uieth forces to goe to Cozco to celebrate his Fathers obsequies, and to performe the homage to the Monarch affault Hugher Husicar Inca, and that therefore they should fet forth in theirbest ornaments and brauery for voder preice greater folemnitie. But privily he fent to his Captaines to levie the best Souldiers which should of obsequies

carry their armes closely; for he more minded executions then exequies. He commanded them to Huapna Ca-50 to march in bands, fine or fixe hundred together, one band two or three leagues after the other: pac. and when they came within ten or twelves dayes journey of Cozea, that they should joyne together, the laft doubling their journies to overtake the former. In this manner Atahuallpa fent aboue 30000, men, most of them old Soldiers of his Fathers, with shoise Captaines, and appointed two Camp-mafters or Generals, Challeuchima and Quizquiz. Husfear relying on the loyal - Husfears fecutie of his Subjects, and his Brothers faire promiles, not onely suspected no treation, but provided ritie. them necessaries. Atahuallpa vied this distimulation, knowing himselfe of vnsussicient power to warre openly on his brother. But some of the experimented Gouernors and Captaines, as they paffed, could not but refent and difguit this courie; and fignified to much to the Inca, who thus

60 awakened out of his dreame, fent to gather forces in the South parts and East and West : to Chinchafurn he fent not, which were the best Soldiers, because of these forces marching thorow their Countrie. The other through long peace were unaccultomed to armes, of which were leuised a. Se'o medicina boue 30000, the rest being too remote for a sudden businesse.

Atahualleas men passed the River Apprimae without contradiction, and embattelled them-

Ill conscience fearefull, and therefore ty-

Tacocha.

Dan Melchiae next in bloud

felues in three fquairons, fo marching to Villacunca within fix leagues of Cozco. He himfelfeabode full in the confines of his Kingdome, there to oblerue the fucceffe of this battel, wherein he placed his chiefe truft, by reaton of the negligence of the other fide, & the courage of his old fouldiers. These thought the shortest way the surest, before more forces might be assembled by twist Atabasil. Huslear, and within two or three leagues Weltwards from the Citie was the battell fought, in which one fide fought to get, the other to keepe the Inca, whose vnhappy fate made him prisoner to Atabually as men as he was fleeing thence with 5000, which were all in monner flaine in presence, some by the enemies, some by themselves seeing their Lord prisoner. Many also not willing to enjoy liberty after he was taken, offered themselves priloners. They fet a fure guard about the Emperours person, and sent to proclaime his taking thorow all the Empire, lest other 10 forces should come to his succour; sending word alto to their Master Atabuallya. Hee vied his elyandaidi. victory most cruelly; for distembling that he would restore Huasear to the Kingdom, he summoned all the Incarin the Empire, and all the Rulers and Officers to appeare at Cufco by fuch a day, to capitulate on certaine Articles to be observed betwirt the two Kings, that they might live together in love like brethren. Thus all the Incar, except those whom sicknesse, age, or remotentale hindred, came thither, whom Atabuallya cauled to be put to divers and cru-

For he knowing that he was not of the Incas bloud legitimate, that is, by the Cora or fifter of the King, nor yet of the whole bloud, to to challenge the inheritance by Father and Mother, removed these rubs out of the way of his ambition; yea all those who were of the halfe bloud, 20 though further from claime, yet lest they might imitate his example, he caused also to be slaine. Not contenting himselfe with the death of his two hundred brethien and fifters, the children of Huanna Capac, he proceeded to the Vicles, Coutens, and all, whe her legitimate or baftards; fome he cauled to be beheaded, some hanged, some were cast into Rivers with weights at their neckes, some cast from high precipices. All which were done before he had passed Sansa, nintie leagues off the Citie. Yea they brought forth Huafear to fee thete difmall executions, that he might dye in the death of energy of his kinfmen. The Curacas Captaines and Nobility they brought forth being the rest of the priloners bound, to the Valley of Sacfahnana, and made a long lane of them, thorow which they made poore Huafear to paffe couered with mourning weedes. and having a roapeabout his necke : they feeing their Inea in this cafe, fell downe with criesto 30 doe him reuerence, and were therefore. Il time with Ha chers and Clubs before his face. After this the cruelty passed to the women and children of the bloud royall, Atabuallya commanding to take them all (but those in the house of Virgins) which were brought to the field Tahuarpampa, or blondie field, a name confirmed by the cruell executions, by starting, hanging, and diversihed tortures on that tender fexe, and ignocent age. E ery quarter of the Moone they renewed these cruelties, from which some were yet suffered to escape, of which number were my Mother and her Brother then eleuen yeares of age or vader, which they fent away in difguiled habits of the common people; for all degrees might they be knowne by their habit.

Of the August or Infants Royall which eleaped, were Paullu and Titu the Sonnes of Huayna ry eitheiran. Capar. Den Carlot the fonne of Paulla, married with a Spanish woman, by whom hee had Den 49 Melchior Inca, which in the yeare 1602. came into Spaine to receive rewards promifed for the feruices of his Father and Grandfather in the pacification of Peru, Anne 1604. I received a letkept in Spane. ter of Valladolid that he was allowed 7500. Duckets of reuenue in the Citie of Kingt, and that Atabus fon he must bring his wife to Spaine, that the Indians which are his inheritance shall be fet ouer to the Crowne, and that he shall no more passe to the Indies. This is the chiefe of the bloud of the Incas, by the male line descended of Huayna Capae. Of Ataruallpa I knew one Sonne and two Retity Wifted, Daughters, one of which Donna Angelina by Marquelle Pigarro had a Sonne called Don Irancifco, he died a little before I came co Spaine: the next day, before his buriall many Incas came to my Mothers, and amongst others her old Vnele, who faid that Pachacamae had preferred him many yeares to feeanend of all his enemies; and inflead of mourning much, reioyed; 10 whereof I demanded the reason why we should be glad for the death of our Kinsman! he biting his mancle (which with them is a token of great a ger) laid, What, wouldit thou be the kinfman of an Auca, fonne of an Auca (that is, a tyrant traitor) which destroyed our Empire, killed our linea, confumed our bloud and linage, which did fo many cruelties fo differing from the nature of the Incas! I could cate him raw without sauce now he is dead : for his Father the traitor Ataiwallpa was not the son of Huayna Capac our Inca, but soune of Quitu Indian, which with his mother wrought treason to our King; otherwise he would never have done, no not imagined such things to his enemies, much life to his kindred , Cay not therefore, he is our kinsman, thou wrong ft thy kindred to reckon to it so cruell a tyrant, e. This Francisco whiles he lived, teeing the hatred which the Incas, and all whee Indians bate district Alaba- him, had little to doe with them, and came little abroad, they full calling him Auca. His Fa-60 ther destroyed the Officers and Servants of the Kings house, and the Townes whereof they were, being by Manco Inca priviled ged Incas, of some a third, of others a fifth or a tenth part. Heenamed also and committed great mischiefes on the Cannaries, & slew 70000.0f them, because they would not subject themselves to him at the beginning of his rising, whereby there were said to remaine fifteene times as many women as medCH AP.13. Incas posteritie, their miserie. Friers speech, Atahualpas answer. 1485

In the end of the yeare 1603, the Incas of Peru west to Don Melchior Carlos Inca, and so me, nall their names desiring ws to make supplication to his Maiestie, to command that they should Micrable state he exempted from tributes which they paid, and other vexations which they fuffer no leffe then of the language ocher common Indians. They fent painted in white Chritaffara the Tree royall from Manco Pers. Capac to Huaina Capacs some Paullu, in their ancient habit, with the coloured ribbon of their heads, and eare-rings in their eares, with Partifans instead of Scepters in their hands. Their phrate was much mixt with Spanish for now they are all Spaniolized. They rehearde much mix Tree Royell of Prince was much which cause I doe not here record it. They write with much confidence Incas and their that the King would not onely relieue them, if he were made acquainted, but reward them, as postericellto the posterity of Kings. At the side of enery Kings picture they let those of his posteritie, with wing in April the title Capac Ayllu, or the Royall flocke, diftinguilling each Kings descendents. Of Manco Ca. 1603. pacs posterity there remaine 40. Incas : of Sinchi Roca 64. of Lloque Tupanqui 63. of Capac Tupanani 56, of Maria Capac 25. of Inca Roca 50. of Tahuar Huacac 51. of Viracocha Inca 69. of Pachacutee and his Sonne Tupanqui put together 99. of Tupac Inca Tupanqui 18. of Huayna Capac 22. These two last generations (as neerer the Crowne) Arabuallya with great diligence destroved. The whole summers 567, persons, all descended by the male line; for of the female they made no such account, except they were Sonnes of the Spaniards which conquered the Land; for those they call Inew also, beleeuing that they descended of their god the Sunne. This writing was figned by eleuen Incas, agreeing to the eleuen deicents, each for all of his race.

CHAP. XIIII.

The suppliment of the History of the Incas, briefely collected out of the Authors Second part, or Generall Hiflory of Peru.



Hus have we run thorow the Authors first part, or Commentaries Roiall, of the original and hues of the face. In his fecond part, entitled the General History of Peru, he relates the Spanish Acts, Discoueries, and conquests there; part of which in Benzo, Vaz, and others ye have feene already, and the Spanish Authors haue related the same at large. I will briefely touch a few things to perfect this Friet Vincents our flory of the Incas. In the taking of Atabuallya he relateth at large the Ora-

tion of Frier Vincent de valle vnids. First, touching God, his creation of the world, and of man. Secondly, Touching Adams tinne and Christs redemption on the Crosse. Thirdly, his power gi- Note the late uen to the Apostler, and ouer them and all Christians to Peter and his successor the Pope. Fourth- ter part of this ly, the Popes gift of all those Countries to the Emperour, Lord of the world, to the end to bring Friers Oranithem to the Christian faith. Fifthly, the Emperours authorifing Francis Pizarro as his Embal- on : tor which them to the Christian tath. Fitthly, the Emperours authorning transis Fixarro as his Emoalao sador and Lieutenant, that thise Realines might receive that benefit, and that he might begin alliance inserted it at and confederacie betwirt the Emperours Maietie and the Inca, in such fort that his whole Kingdome large. Should become tributarie, and the Inca become his subject and wholly deliner op his Kingdome and renounce the administration thereof, as other Kings and Lords baue done. Secondly, after such peace and friendship, and subjection voluntary or by force, hee was to give obedience to the Pope, and receive the faith of Carilt quite abandoning his superstation of Idols, invented by the Divell. All which, O King, thou art to take well in worth as being very profitable to thee and thine : and if thou deniest, know that thous shalt be compelled by warre, fire and bloudshed, and all thine Idols skall beethrowne downe to the thou shalt be compelled by warre, fire and blondined, and all time lasts feat over involved diwnet to the Strange ground. And we will constraine thee with the Sword, that leaving thy false Religion whether thou will Preaching of or no, thou halt receive our Catholike Faith and pay Tribute to the Emperour giving up thy Kingdome Christianite 50 tohim. But if thou shalt obstinately resist, know for most certaine, God will suffer, as of old Phatao and all his Army perished in the Red Sea, that thou likewise and thine Indians shall bee destroyed by our

This Oration was kept by the tradition of Quipus (or Quippos) which are the knot-records of Caffamarca where the deede was done: the words of trinity and other Christian Mysteries were not well understood, and therefore ill deliuered by the Interpreter : that language still wanting proper tearmes for them, and being forced to Indianize Spanish words for that purpose. Atabuallpas antwere was, with great griefe for thole last words, of Pharas and destruction, lay- Autualless and ing, Atac (an interiection of forrow) and first complained of his Interpreter, and that this mi- fwer, nacing melfage was contrary to the former which they had fent him , that their Prince and they ,60 might feeme tyrants to to goe about destroying the world, killing and robbing those which had done them no wrong ; or elie that they might feeme the feruants of Pachacamac which had fent them to their destruction; which if it be so, he and his were ready to offer themselves to what-

foeuer pleased them, not for feare of their minaces or armes, but to fulfill his father Huayna Ca-

pacs command at the houre of his death, that they should serve a branded Nation more valuant

then they, which was to come and bring them a better Law and Customes. But if this bee so.

Pachacamae is pitifull and mercifull, whom they oughe to imitate, and not to beginne with

robberies and cruelties as they had done in Tumpiz, and the confines. It feemed strange, he faid.

to him, that the Emperour should bee Lord of the World, and yet the Pope should make him a

new grant; and then also is the Pope greater then he, and Lord of the world. Againe hee had the wed no reason why hee should pay tribute onely to Charles; which rather hee thought was

due to God, as Creator, or to Adam the first man, or to Christ the best man, or to the Pope which hath power to give his Kingdome and person to another, of all which he in his speech had difcourfed. And it he had any right ouer him, it had beene meet, fi ft to have fignified it to him. before menacing of warre, fire, and flaughter, &c. The Spaniards impatient of this long diff to course fell to rifling the Indians, others to robbing an Holl Temple of the Silver plates; and com-Faste victorie mine forth to fight, the Inaians raifed a great shout. But the Inca with a great voice commanded that they should not smite nor hurt the Spaniards, though they tooke or killed the King. Frier an i crue'l Soaneards which Unicens made a plautible Speech to the Spiniards, in fauour of the Indians; but they could not heare him for the crie : neither did the King calt the Booke on the ground, or the Frier crie vennot relitting. geance *, as some have written, with other things against the Pope and the death of Christ. Five thousand Indians were flaine, and no Spaniards hurt, but the Generall by one of his owne, flightwhich were there, and Goly, in the taking of Atabualipa. When he had agreed on his ranfome, which was never wholly mara, Benzo, Herr , &cc. but paid, for want of time to accomplish it *: (4605670. Duckers of it came in) Soto and Barco were tent to Cozco, which at Saufa in the way had fight of Huafear, there kept prisoner; who by an the later Inquifiors feem fignes defired aide of the Spaniards to reftore him to his Empire, promifing three times as much as athamed of Atahualipa bad done, better able to performe it, as having and knowing where to fetch the treasures of Vincents furie. bu procentors; whereas Atahuall, a had little treasure but what be tooke from Churches. They answe-See contra, red, that they mult first goe to Cozco whither they were fent and in the meane time Atabnallas can ult. has intelligence of these passages. Hee subtilly to found the Spaniards, how they would take the Busicare Dromifes to the death of his brother, fained himfelfe very forrowfull for that hee had heard one of his Captaines Spannars.

Husfear flaine, had killed him, and refused to eate, making shew of much griefe. Pizarro comforted him, and promifed to right and reuenge the euill on him which had done it. He feeing that Pizarre tooke it in no worse part, sent a speedy Post to dispatch him so suddenly, that the Spaniards could not tell but that it had beene done before. His owne death followed after (a before is recited, and 30 Huafcar at his death foretold) by the unsust instice of the Spaniards, many of which protested by word Atabualloa flaine. and writing against that eruelty, in vaine. His corps were carried to Quitu to be interred, where vnder pretence of more honourable Obsequies, Ruminnam one of his Captaines (following his 2 vanium rui examples) wrought a great treason; made a feast to Quillescache brother of Atahualha, and o-

Manco Inca. the Empire of Rome with Augullus and Auguffu'u, and of Conflantinosle

flantines.

Marco Inca Brother of Husscar, came to the Spaniards at Cozco, to demand the repossession of the Empire, by inheritance due to him. They made him faire semblance : and he offered to gan and ended with Monte; as promote the Gospell (according to his Fathers tellament, as a better Law) and the Spanish affaires. Articles were agreed on, and they granted him a Diadem with great folemnitie, bu: fo farre thort of the wonted, that the old men cried as fall for the want of that, as the yong boyes shouted for joy of this. When afterwards he propounded the accomplishment of those Articles which had beene made betwixt the Spaniards and the Indians, that the Naturals might live in quiet, and knowe what service to performe to the Spaniards, with the reall restitution of his Empire : the Gouernour Pizarro, and his brethren excused themselves by the broyles and flires 50 which had growne amongst themselves, which hitherto permitted not the accomplishment. They further expected antiwer from the E pperor their Lord, of whom he might hope for al good, (the Articles being good for both parts) to whom they had given account of the capitulations, his brother Hernando being shortly to returne with answere. But when he was a rived at Tumpiz, the Ma: queffe tooke occasion to rid himselte of the Incar importunitie, and with many faire words intreated him to returne to his Fortreffe till things might be perfected : which he doing, Maxen imprithey held him there Priloner, fearing his haughty courage. The Indians leeing their Inca Priloner, were much grieved, but he comforted them, faying, that he and they ought to obey the Spaniards, for to Huayna Capac had commanded in his Testament, and that they should not be weary till they had feene the laftiflue of thefe things. Hee hoped that this his imprisonment would 60 turne into greater liberalitie with him, thele Unacochar being a Nation comne from Heaten.

ther great men, whom having made drunke vnawares with the drinke Sora, a heady liquour for-

bidden by Law, hee flue, with Challenchima the Generall, and the Sonnes and Daughters of

Atahwallpa, and all that might stand in the way of his ambition. Hee buried aliue the Chofen

Virgins, which smiled at his reports of the Spaniards (interpreting it to lust, being done ra-

ther to please him) causing to vindermine and cut the Hills to execute that dismall fate

more terribly. After some bickerings with the Spaniards, hee fled to the Antis, and there peri- 40

The Marquelle difmifled himfelfe of the Inca, whole person and guard hee commended to his brethren Iuan and Gonzalo, and went to the Citie of Kings, to people and enlarge it. The Inst Mance with much oblequiousnelle to all the Spaniaras, and many presents of Gold, Silver,

CHAP.14. Mancos speech, atts, against Spaniards, death. Don Diego Inca. 1487

Gemmes, Fruits, &c. making no shew of griese for his imprisonment, obtayned his libertie: which he had laboured the rather, hearing that Hanando Pizarro was comming to gouetne in Manuelen-Within the Marketing of the Rings, to which place he lareement and furmoned his Captaines, and complained of the Spaniards breach of promile, in not performing taking Armes the Capitulations which they had made with Titu Aniauchi, his brother, and that they had laid him in prilon with Iron fetters: that he had perceived their ill mindes from the beginning, but fuffered it to inflifie his cause with God and with the world, that none might object to him the diffurbing of the peace. But now he could no further relie on their vaine promifes, well knowing that the Spaniards thared the Land among it themselves in Cufeo, Rimac, and Tumpiz, whereto by it well appeared that they intended not the restitution of the Empire to him: and that he was loth to make further triall of their fetters, and therefore required their best aduice, intending with Armes to recouer his right, truiting in Pachacamac, and his father the Sun, that they would not herein for lake him. They told him, that he might looke for like reward at the hands of those Strangers as Atabualha had found, not with standing the payment of his ransome: and it was Parbacamaes great grace, they had not dealt with his Royall Person likewise, &c.

Thus Mance railed forces, fo that 200000. Indians came to Cozeo, and shot Arrowes with fire An Armicof on them on all the houses of the Citie generally, without respect of the Royall houses, only they 200000, Indiana referued the Temple of the Sunne, with the Chappels within it, and the house of the Virgins : Coxco burnt which two they ipared (thogh their wealth was gone) not to commit any facrilegious act against

20 their Religion. Three Hals alto they referued wherein to make their feasts in time of raine, one of which was in the houle that had belonged to the first Inca, Manco Capac. (The author proceedes in the particular fights and feege of the Spaniards, too long here to rebearfe.) In divers places they killed feuen hundred Spaniards. But at laft Manco was driven to forfake the Countrey b by the b When Almas inequality of the Spaniards horfes, Guns and other offenfine and defenfine armes, against which go returned they had no experiments to make refistance. In the civill-vacuuill broiles and warres of the Spa- Alugrado with niards in Peru, some of them fled to Manco Inca to avoide the Viceroies feverity, one of which other Spaniards was Genez Perez a cholericke man, which playing at Bowles with the Inca, would fland fo camein, shiftely on measuring of his cast, and the earnest folly of play, that forgetting all good manners, he one day yied the Inca as if he had beene an Indian flane; wherewith the Inca prouoked gave him

30 a blow with his fift on the breaft, whereupon Gomez with his Bowle ftrooke the Inca on the head fo great a blowe, that hee fell downe dead. Whereupon the Indians fet on the Spaniards, Gemez an vin which first fled into the house to defend themselves there, but were fired out; and the Indians grateful proud which first fled into the house to derend themselves there, our were fired out; and the smith special having killed them with enraged furie, had purposed to eaterp their flesh raw: but after left Mento flow them to the birds and wilde beaits, for foode. Thus died Mases by the hands of those whom flaine. hee had preserved from death , and had kindly vied in those wilde Mountaines of Uilca campa, which hee had chosen for his securitie. I was present, when some Incas present at the act, with teares recounted this to my Mother, which came afterwards from their Moun- Sani Tuped taines with the Inca Sayri Tupac, the some of that whfortunate Prince , by order of the Vice- his sonne. ry Mendoza, Marqueffe of Canete. This Vice-roy vied (to perfwade that comming in of 40 the Inca) the Ladie Beatriz his Fathers Sifter, which fo wrought with his Guard, hee be-

ing then too young to take the Diademe, that vpon promise of certaine conditions hee came and rendted himselte to the Vice-roy, and after went to Cusco, and was baptifed by the name of Don Diego, together with his wife Cufci Huarcay, grandchilde to Huafcar Inca, Anno 1558. Shee was a faire woman, but somewhat pale, as are all the women of that Countrie, about fixteene yeeres olde. I went in my mothers name to visite the Inca, and to kille his hand, which vied mee contreoufly, and two small vessels of gilt Plate were brought forth. of which he dranke one, I the other. He spent his time, one day visiting one part, and another, another part of the Citie. Hee adored the Sacrament, calling it Pachacamae, Pachacamae. He went thence to the Valley of Tucay, and there remayned till his death, which was about three yeeres 50 after, leauing no issue but a daughter, which was married to Martin Garcia de Loyela. His bro-

ther Tupac Amaru tooke the Mountaines. Francisco de Toledo fecond sonne to the Earle of Oropesa, being Vice-roy, determined to bring Tupac Amaru from the Mountaines of Villea campa the Prince Topac Amaru, the lawfull Heire of that Em- his tragedie. pire, after his faid brothers death without iffue male. Hee fought to doe it by faire and gentle perswasions sending Messengers to that purpose, promising him maintenance from his Maiethe for his person and familie. His kindred and friends told him that his brother had received fmall recompense from them, or society with them, and therefore counselled him not to goe, it being better for him to live there, then to die with his enemies. The Spaniards counfelled the Vice-roy to force him, alledging that his Indians robbed the Merchants, hoping also by his im-

prisonment to recouer the treasures " which his progenitours had hidden. Such robberies were " Him ille le indeed committed in his father Mancos time , but feldome , they being forced thereto of ne- coma. ceffitie for want of victuals , which the Mountaines yeeld not. But after his death there was no fuch matter. The Vice-roy Tene Marin Garcia Loyela, with two hundred and fiftie Souldiers well prouided against the Inches The strength of those passages was abated, and the wayes Hhhhhh

Bloudy Vice-

What became

against the Mestizos begotten of that stocke by the Spaniards, some of which were condemned to be tortured, that so they might finde some clearer matter against them. One of their mothers came to the prilon, and cried out that they had got that reward, for that their Fathers had conquered the Countrey, for which their Children should be all hanged. Why did they not as well kill their Mothers, for whose sinnes Pachacamac had suffered this, which had beene traytors to lo the Inca for love of the Spaniards; with other outcries of vengeance in this world, and the next from Gods hand. Thus went thre crying in the street, which made the Vice-roy surcease his purpole, & he proceeded not to put any to death: but banished them to line a lingring death in divers pares of the world, out of that, which their Fathers had conquered. Some he fent to Chili (one of which was the tonne of Barco aforefaid, which had beene with Huafear) others to the new Kingdome of Granada, to the Iles of Barlonent, to Panama, to Nicaragna, and some hee fent to Spaine, one of which was i wan Arias Maldonado, who hard there an exile ten yeeres, and recounted thefe chings to mee; hee after got leave of the supreme Councell of the Indies to returne to Peru, for three yeeres to recouer his goods, and then to returne to Spaine, there to end his dayes. All the rest perished in ban shment. The Indians of the bloud Royali, which were sixe and thirtie of the principall of the bloud Royall, he exiled and confined to the Citie of Kings, and with them the two tonnes and daughter of the poore Prince, the eldest not ten yeares old; the Arche bishop of Rimac or The Kings, pitied the young girle, and brought her vp : the two fonnes with three and thirtie more died in little aboue two yeeres, comming out of a cold hilly Countrie to the hor Plaines by the Sea. The three remayning were Don Carlos my School-fellow, sonne of Don Christonall Paully, and two others, which were fent home to their houses, but died all in a veere and halfe after. Of Don Carlos sonne we have faid before, that hee came into Spaine in hope of great rewards which in Peruwere promifed him. He died Anno 1610. at Alcala de Henares of griefe to fee himfelfe shut vp in a Monastery, and left one some with three daughters. The sonne died being a childe of little more then a yeere old, and so the Rent granted by the Contra fation house at Simil to his father ceassed.

Don Melchiers the laft Incas

Now for the Prince Tupag aforefaid (to returne to him) they fentenced him to lofe his head, which was executed, the Crier proclayming his treason and tyrannies against the Catholike Maiestie of King Philip the second, King of Spaine, and Emperour of the New Word. They told the inca that he was fentenced to lofe his head, without any particular cause mentioned : hee answered , hee had done nothing worthis of death , that the Vice-roy might fend him prisoner to Spaine, to kiffe the hands of his Soueraigne-King Philip. which would be fecuritie enough. And if his tather were not able with 200000, Indians, to tubicat 200. Spaniards in Cozco, what needed the Vice-roy now feare any new commotion! The religious haitened to instruct him for baptilme, to which he was willing, he faid, his Grandfather Huayna Capae having commended the 10 Christian Law, as better then theirs: He was Christened by the name of Don Philip, with as much griefe of thole which were prefent, as was icy made at the baptifing of Sais Tupae. The Spamigrals did not imagine that the fentence should be executed, being so contrarie to humanitie, and differeeable to the Majethe of King Philip. It was performed on a Scaff Id in the chiefe Street of Cozes. Many fought to petition the Vice-roy, which knowing their errand, would admit none to audience. They let the Prince on a Mule, with a rope about his necke, his hands tied, one going before, to proclaime his treaton. He not understanding Spanifb, asked the Friers, and hearing that he proclaimed him Anca, called him to him, and faid to him, Say not fo, for thou knowest it is a Ire, and I never die or thought treason, as all the world knoweth; but say, that I must die for the Viceroys pleasure, and not for my faults against bim or the King; I appeale to Pachacamae, that this is true. 50 The multitude crying and lamenting, they feared some stirre, there being 200000 feules allembled in the ftreets, they hafted to fet him on the Scaffold. The Priests prayed him to still the clamours and out-cries of the people. Hee stretched out his arme with his hand open, which hee layd on his eare, thence letting it fall by degrees to his thigh; whereupon followed a fudden filence, as if there had not beene a man left in the Citie. Which made the Spaniards to wonder, and the Vice-roy among ft others which flood at a window to fee the execution. Thus died the Inca with great magnanimitie, as the Incas have beene in such cases accustomed, he worthinging the Images of our Saujour, and of the Virgin, as the Priefts taught him.

Leyo'as death.

He is bapti'ed . The Vice-roy returned with great wealth, and with 500000. Pezos in gold and filter, and Philip going to kiffe the Kings hand, he bad him get bun to bis boufe ; be bad not fent him to Peru, to kill 60 Vice-roys Tug: Kings, but to ferue Kings. The Councell of Indies receiving information against him arrested all his treature aforefaid, which filled him with luch griefe that hee died within few dayes af er-Logola, which had taken him, and washusband to his brothers daughter, was ient generall to Chili, where the Araucaus having spies on him, when hee had fent moit of his Souldiers to gar-

CHABAS. Description of Caxamalca, and of Atahuallpa. F. Vincents charity. 1489

rifons, with voices of birds and bearts gaue fignes to their fellowes, which came in with a great Areacan policy power of Indians, and killed him and all his Spaniards. Anno 1603.

Thus have wee fireted the creame of the Incas Historie of the Incas; the Spaniards (whose acts hee principally bandleth in his (econd part) bane enough of them owne to relate their alls, some of which also follow, and others have gone before, to bew how they conquered and weed their conquests of and in the New World. The greatnesse of that State, and strangenesse of the rising, proceeding, and ruine of the Incas, made mee the larger, though all this be not formuch in words, as one of the fenenteene Bookes, one of which it is gathered. It may bee of good use, both to understand the Spanish Indian Historians, as Acolta, & c. and in many things in which for want of Language, and acquaintance with the Incas, they To bane received and delinered errours, to amend them: and in this kinde, for antiquities, is a temeli, such as no other Peru Merchant bath fet to sale. If I have seemed consused, and without exact method, I base followed my Author, who setting forth the former part, Anno 1608, published the other, 1617. basing receined of some later occurrents better intelligence. Wee will now leave this Inca-Spaniard, and bruffy recount from the Spanish Actors and Authors, what passed in those first and great mutations. Ramulio published these three following Discourses at large, which wee have thus contracted.

CHAP. XV.

Briefe Notes of FRANCIS PIZARRO his conquest of Peru, written by
4 Spanish Captaine therein employed.



Certaine Spanish Captaine, whose name is not added to his Tractate writeth, that in Februarie 1531. he went with Pizarro from Panama, who arrived, and flayed three moneths at Tumbez, and thence went to Tangarara, and founded Saint Michaels, where he heard of Atabalipa or Atahnalpa, and his warres with his brother Cufco: who fent a Spie thither, and as hee marched, prefents, to Pizarro. Hee with tortures learned of two Indians what and where Atabalipa was. They

marched on (he fayth) to Caxemalce, a Citie foure miles in circuit, entred with two Gates. On caremake or 30 one fide of the Citie is a great Palace walled about, with a great Court planted with trees. This Caffanarea dathey call the Honje of the Sunne, whom they worthip, putting off their Shooes when they enter. And fuch there are in every great Towne. There were two thousand houses, in streets straight as a Line, the walls of strong stone, three paces (or fathoms) high; within are faire Fountaines of water, and in the midft a greater ifreet then any in Spaine, walled about; before which is a Fortreffe of ftone, with staires from the Street to the Fort. On one fide of this Street is the Palace of Atabalipa with Gardens and Lodgings, the houses all painted with divers colours : in. one roome were two great Fountaines adorned with plates of Gold, in one of which runnes water so hote that a man cannot indure his hand therein, the other being very cold. The people are neate, the women are honest, weare a wrought Girdle on their long garments, about that a 40 Mantle which courreth them from the head to the midft of the thigh. The men weare white Frockes without sleeues. The women in a Palace made Chicha for the Armie. After the Armies Chicha is a

Frockes without fleeues. The women in a Palace made Chicha for the Armie. After the Armie kind of Drinke approached, a Frier of the Order of Saint Dominite, went and told him that the Christians were mideof Maiz. his friends. The (acique (Arabalipa or Arabualipa) answered, that first hee would have them Frier Vincent. restore all that they had taken in his Land, and after hee would doe as hee should see cause. The This is denied Frier with a Booke in his hand, beganne to speake to him the things of God; hee demanded the by Incavega, booke, and the Father gaue it him, and he threw it downe about his people. The Indian Inter- because (it preter ranne and tooks it vp and gaue it the Father, who fuddenly returned, crying, Cons forth thing teemes Christians, come forth, and fet on these Enemies, Dogs, which will not accept the things of God, whose odious, rather Prince bath throwne on the ground the Booke of our holy Law. Thereupon the Gouernour founded then falle; and the Trumpets, and gaue a token to the Gunner to discharge the Ordnance, and the Spaniards on he might not the Trumpets, and gaue a token to the Gunner to discharge the Grunance, and the Spaniards of tell tales offenfoot and horsebacke rushed on with such surie, that the Indians hearing the dreadfull thunders fine to Spanish of the Artilerie, and seeing the force of the Horses, fled: the Gouernour went directly to the eares:epsecial-Litter in which Atabalipa was whom hee tooke, many Indians whose hands were cut off bea- ly to the Friers ring the same Litter on their shoulders. Sixe or seuen thousand were slaine besides many which which authorihad their Armes cut off, and other wounded.

Atabalipa, by an Indian, fent to the other Indians, that they should not flee, for hee was fill to the prefie, aliue in the Christians hands, whom hee commended for a good Nation, and commanded his to ferue them. He was about thirtie yeeres old, a personable man, somewhat groffe, with thicke Attablis taferue them. He was about thirtie yeeres old, a personable man, somewhat group, with the ken; descripting, and eves incarnate with bloud; his speech grave. The next day the Spaniards got fiftie tion of his personable man, somewhat group, with the spaniards got fiftie them; description of his personable man, somewhat group, with the specific properties of the specific pro 60 thouland Pezos of Gold(each worth one Ducket and two Carolines) and feuen thouland Markes fon. of Silver, and many Emeralds, wherewith the Cacique feemed content : and faid, that he would giue him as much Gold as would fill a roome to luch a marke, higher then a tall man could reach A Marke is in by a spanne, the roome being twenty flue foot long, and fifteene broad. The Gouernour asked these discourhow much Silver hee would give ? he faid, that hee would have tenne thousand Indians, which les 8. ounces.

zed bis Booké

Hhhhhhb 2

. Thefe first ne Cross and chiefe Citie

there.

relation.

should make a partition in the midst of the Palace, and fill it with vessels of Silver of divers forts. all which he would give for his ranfome. The Governour promifed him his libertie on this condition, and to worke no treason against the Christians. Fortie dayes were set, and twentie nasfed in which came no Gold. Then we learned that he had taken his brother Cufco " his brother entiers of Peru by the father, a greater man then himfelfe. He had told fome, that Atabalina promifed the Gold call both Huay which he had, and hee would give the Christians foure times as much as the other had promised: which being told to Atabalipa, he caufed him fuddenly to bee dispatched. Hee killed another of Huster by the his brothers, which had faid he would drinke in Atabalipas skull, but contrariwise he drunke in his; which I my felfe faw, and all that went with Hernando Pizarro. I faw the head with the skinne, the fielh drie, and the haires on, and his teeth closed, and betwixt them a Pipe of Sil- ta uer, and on the top a Cup of Gold fastned to the head, with a hole going into it. His Slaues put Chicha into the Cup, which ranne by the mouth into that pipe, whence Atabalipa drunke. Anno 1933, the Gouernour gaue his brother Hernando leaue to goe with a Companie of Soa-

niards to Guamachuce, and there he found an hundred thousand Calliglians of Gold, which they brought for Atabalipas ransome. Diego Almagro came with an hundred and fiftie men to our fuccour. Because the Gold came so slowly, Atabatipa willed the Gouernour to send three men to Culco, laying the blame on his imprisonment, which made the Indians not to obey him. These Christians were carried by Indians in Hamacas, a kinde of Litters, and were ferued. They arrived at Nanxa, where was Chilicuchima, a great Captaine of Atabalipa, the fame which had taken Culco, which had all the Gold at his command. He gave the Christians thirty burthens of Gold, an of which each weighed an hundred pounds. They faid it was little, and he gaue them five burthens more, which they fent to the Governour by a Negro, whom they had brought with them. They went on to Cufco, where they found Quizquiz, a Captaine of Atabalipas, which made tourney to differ and gold little account of the Christians. He laid that if they would not restore his Master for that Gold he would give, he would take him out of their hands : and fent them prefently to a Temple of * In the infide, the Sunne, couered with plates of Gold. The Christians without the helpe of any Indias (for In the milde, 8c. See [up. in they refused, faying they should die, it being the Temple of the Sunne) with Pickaxes of Brasse the Inca Vegas disfurnished the same, as they told vs afterwards, and spoyled the Temple. Many Pots and veffels of Gold were also brought (which there they vied for their cookery) for ransome of their Lord Atabalipa. In all the house, there was such store of Gold, that it amaled them. They were 30 amazed to see one leat in their house of Sacrifices which weighed nineteene thousand Pezos of Gold: in another where old Cufco lay buried, the pauement and the walls were covered with plates of Gold and Siluer, which they did not breake, for feare of the Indians displeasure, nor many great earthen Pots there, couered with Gold likewife. In that House were two dead and embalmed, neere to whom stood a woman with a Maske of Gold on her face, which fanned away the winde and Flies. Shee would not let them enter with their shooes on ; they went in and tooke much Gold, but not all, for Atabalina had intreated them, because there lay his Fa-

ther. They found there a great house full of Pots and Tubs, and veffels of Silver. They would have brought much more then they did, but that they were alone, and aboue two hundred and

fiftie leagues from other Christians: but they shut it vp, and sealed it for his Maiestie, and the 40

Poore thifts for horic thooes.

Temple of Pachacamac, in the former relation. This Idell perhaps was that which the Natiues had kentirons before the lacas conqueft. for then they worthinged none, Efeter treatife of this Voyage is in

Gouernour Francis Pizarro, and fet a guard on it. Ouer the Rivers as they passed, they found two Bridges together, one open for the vulgar, the other shut for the passage of great men. Hernando Pizarro travelling over the Mountaines with his Horse, where the way was made with hands in many places as a Scale or Staires, which ware off his Horse shooes, commanded the Indians to shooe his Horses with Gold and Silver, and so came to the Citie, bigger then Rome, called Pachalchami *, where in one filthie chamber was an Idoll of wood, which they faid, was their God which gives life to all things, at whole feete were many Emeralds fastned in Gold. They have him in such veneration, that none may ferue nor touch him, nor the walls of the house, but such, as they say, are called by him. It is certanie, that the Deuill there speakes to them, and tells them what they should doe. They come 50 300. leagues off to him, and offer him gold, filuer, and iewels, giving it to the Porter which goeth in and returnes them an answer. They which serue him must be pure and chaste, abstaining from eating, and women. All the Countrie of Catamer payeth him tribute. The Indians feared that the Ideal would have deflroyed the Spaniards: which nevertheleffe entred without fcraple, and brought very little Gold thence, for the Indians had hidden it all; they found the places whence they had carried great store; so that they got not about 30000, Pezos, & of a Cacike 10000, more. Chilicuchima sent them word, that he had store of Gold for them at Xanna, but deceived them.

They brought him and other great men to Atabalipa, which put coarse Cloth on them before their entrance, and did him great reverence, lifting up their hands to the Sunne, with thankes that they had feene their Lord, and came by little and little neerer him, and kiffed his 60 hands and feet, who shewed great signes of Maiestie, and would not looke any of them in the face. They tied Chilicuchima to a stake, and fet fire to him, to extort a confession of old Cuscos Gold from him, which (much burned first) faid that Quizquiz had it in keeping : and that old Cufeo, though dead, was still observed, and had victuals set before him; and told of another Pa-

uilion, where were great veffels, from whence the Gouernour fent and fetched much Gold. The Christians came from Casco with aboue an hundred and ninety Indians laden with Gold. Some vessels were so great, that twelve Indians had much adoe to bring them. The Governous melred all the small pieces, which I can well tell, for I was keeper of the house of Gold , and saw it melted, and there were aboue nintie Plates of Gold: there were in that roome two hundred great tankards of Silver and many small, with pots and other peeces very faire. I thinke I *Canterla law weighed of the Silver coooo. Markes. There were also in the same roome eighty tankards of Gold, and other great preces : there was also a heape higher then a man of those places or very fine Gold ; and to fay truth, in all the roomes of the houle were great hils or heapes of Gold 10 and Silver. The Governour put them together and weighed them before the Officers, and then shole some to make the shares for the company. The Gourmour sent the Emperour a present of 100000, peloes in fifteene tankards, and foure pots, and other rich peeces. Euery footman had 4800. peloes of gold, which made 720% Duckets, and the Horfemen twice as much. besides other aduntages. Before the fining he gue Almagor company 25000, 'pefors, and 2000, 'Others fly pefors of Old to thoir which had staid as Saint Methods: and much gold to all that came with 100000. the Captaine, two or three great Cups of gold a peece to the Merchants, and to many which had gotten it, leffe then they deserued. Hay it, for fo it fared with me. Many presently, amongel which I was, demanded leaue to returne to Spaine, and five and twenty obtained it. When Atabalipa heard they would carry the gold out of the Country, he fent for men to come Atabalipas pre-20 and affault the Gouernour A few dayes before two Sounes of old ("for came thither and lodg- tended treaton ed with the Gouernour, one of them was naturall Lord of the Countrey. Vpon newes of for- " Manceces comming, they brought Atabalipa by night to a stake to burne him alive, by the command of the Gouernour; but he faid he would be a Christian; whereupon after Baptitme they thrangled him that night, and the Countrey was quiet. The Governour made the eldest Sonne of old Cufee Lord of the Country, which caufed great toy to the Natines. Wee arrived in Smil, January the fifteenth 1 5 34.

CHAP. XVL

The Conquest of Peru and Cusco, called New Castile, and directed to she Emperour by FRANCISCO de XERES, Secretary to Captaine FRANCIS PIZARRO which conquered them.

Rancis Pixarro lived in Panama which the Governor Pedrarias de Auila had peopled. He was Sonne of Captaine Gonzale Pizarre of Trugille : hee obtaines li- Pizarres bes cence of Pedratias to goe vpon new discourries; and having bestowed a good part ginning, of his effate in a Ship and necessaries, he departed from Panama Nouember the foureteenth 1524, with one hundred and twelve Spaniards, and fome Indians. Land of Ham feuentiedaies after they went on land, which after they named Of Hunger, with gre.

eightie men, the reft being dead, and fent she Ship to the Hand of Pearles neere Panama for victu-

als, hoping of their returne in twelue dayes, which continued forty feuen, they living on the Seas wilde provisions meane whiles, whereby twenty dyed, and the rest were very weake. A Cow hide which they had for fertice of the Ship, they had shared among it them and eaten before the Ship returned. Then did they proceede on the Voyege, and came to a Towne which the inhabitants had forfaken, where they found ftore of proussions: and the next day the Countrie Pizerro wounpeople fet on them, eafily ouerthrew ours being weake, gaue the Captaine feuen wounds very ded. 50 dangerous, and left him for dead; flew five, and wounded feventeene of the reft : whereupon they returned for Panama, and he stated at Chuchama to refresh and cure himselfe. A little before Diego de Almagro his companion was gone for his fuccour with a Ship and feuenty men; and landing at the place where Pizzero was beaten, was there affaulted and loft one of his eyes; many ded, Christians were wounded, but for all that they fired the towne, and put the enemy to flight: failing thence, they came to a great River which they called Saint Iobus, and found there some

thew of Gold, and returned, and found Pizarro in Chuchama. Almagro was sent to Panama, where Pedrarias mill. ked and croffed this designe which had proved hitherto fo vaine; but he with much adoe returned with one hundred and ten men to Pi- Three yeares Zarro, with whom fiftie of the former remained of both companies, one hundred & thirty being troubles. 60 dead. In two Ships they fet forthand fpent three yeares in great trauell; hunger killed the most of them, that fiftie onely remained: not finding neuertheleffe any good Countrie. Then it was their hap to finde great hopes of Gold and riches, comming to Cancebi, and tooke fix men to cack Hand, learne their language. Almagro was fent for more men to Panama, whiles Pizarro flaied at Cock-Hand. But some had written to the Governour to be freed from thence. The Governour

Habbbb 2

Pizarre was fent into Spaine to get graunt of the Countrey, which in large Commission hee obtained, and after his returne departed from Panama with three Ships, and 180.men, and 27. Horfe. In thirteene dayes he arrived at the Port of Saint Matthen, which was as much as before Understand of he could doe in two yeares, and landing there, found all the Country in armes. They marched till they came to a great towne called Coache, which they fuddenly affaulted, and there got in Gold. to the value of 15000. Castellines, and 750 pounds of Silver, and many Emeralds, which they weight, as by mirks eight onner, by Ca-then knew not, and therefore for imall triffes exchanged them with the Indians. Thence the Go-In ounces by Cafillines Peros, vernour fent backe for men and horse to Panama and Nicaragua. He went with his Spaniards to the Isle Puna, rich and populous, which subsected themselves, and because it was winter. staid there. Thole Indians rebelled and railed forces. Hee tooke the Cacique (having vinderstanding hereot) and made great flaughter of the Ilanders, and having beheade ten principall men. he fet free the Cacique to call together the Handers, which had fled to Tumbez, Pizarro went thence to Tumbez, where he found the Indians in armes. Three which had gone in the Boates were robbed and flame, but Tumbez and many other places rued it. May 16. 1532. he departed from Tamber and was well received in many places, to which he

gaue notice that he came to bring them in lubiection to the Emperor, and to the knowledge of the holy Catholik fai hito which many of the Caciques yeelded. Comming to a good River, which he found to have a good Port, he planted a Colonie fixe leagues from the Sea, and catted it Saint Michaels. At Chira he found that the Cacique of that Towne, and another of Almotaxe had confired to kill certaine Christians; hee tooke them both with their chiefe men and burned them aline. Sparing the Cacique himselfe of Chira, whose fault was left, and giving him Almotaxe also. This execution was creadfull to the whole Country. There he shared the Gold which the Caciones, and the men of Tumber had given them, and paid the Marriners their traight. He departed thence the foure and twentieth of September 1532 having newes of A: abalipa at Caxamal-Pigaresarmy. 62: 55, abode at Saint Michaels, and with the Governor remained 62, horfemen and 102, footmen,

As he marched he received better intelligence of Atabalips, and of Cufce, in which old Cufce

lay interred in a place which had the roofe and wals coursed with Gold and Siluer. Hee fenta 30 Captaine to Canas and Guaramba, with certaine horse and foote. He learned of the way (which he paffed betwix: thefe two townes, the latter of which had a faire ftone Caftle) that it reacheth from Cufce to Quite aboue 300 leagues, fo broad that fix hertemen may ride abreft, with water paffages all alongit for travellers to drinke, and houses for their lodging every dayes journat with Mishalizar pre- this Captaine returned an Indian with a prefent from Atabalipa, of two Fountaines of flone and two burtness of dried Ducks (which is the fashion of that Country) fignifying his great delire to fee the Governour at Caxamalca. All the way from the River of Saint Michaels to Chimeba is a Vallie well peopled, hath the way made by hands, walled on both fides with trees in many places let for fliadow, made by old Cufes. The people line much after one manner. They a factifice their children, and fprinkle the bloud on their Sepulchers, and daube their Idols faces therewith, 40 Their facrifices goe dancing and finging to their death. The Temples are compaffed with flone wals and feated in the highest part of the Citie. He fent an Indian meffenger to Atabalina with words of greatest kindenesse. Leaning the Chinchs way, he tooke that which goeth to Cassanalauthorderich ed, and alcended a great Mountaine, the horsemen leading vo their horses, sometimes mounting as it were by staires, there being no other way; till they came to a fortresse of Stone, walled with and founded on the rocks. As they proceeded in this Mountaine, they found it very cold. The wafedfuch imputers on the top were very cold that without heating they could not drinke them, and they let up their tents and made fires when they staid, because of the cold.

Here came meffengers with ten Sheep for a prefent from Atabalipa, which told Pizarre of the great victories which he had had against his brother. But hee answered that his Emperour was 50 King of Spaine, and of the Indies, and Lord of the whole world, & had many fernants which were greater Lords then Atabalipa; and be had fent him into these Countries to draw the people to the knowledge of God & to his Subjection; and with thefe few Christians, faid he, I bane ouercome greater Lords then is Atabalipa. If he will have friendship I will belpe bim in bis wars or leave him in bis estate, but if he choose warre, I will doe to him as to the Cacikes of Puna and Tumbez. The Indian which Pizarro had fent returned from Caxamalca and related that Atabalipa there abode with an armie, and would have flame him, had hee not faid that the like should be done to his Messengers, then being with the Spaniards: that he could not speake with him, but an Vncle of his, which had enquired of the Christians and their armes, all which he extolled to the vtmost.

The Gouernor came to Caxamalea the fifteenth of November 1 432. Atabalipa fent other mel- 60 fengers with prefents. Fernando Pizarre was fent to his campe with another Captain, which did his meffage to him, but he did not once looke on him, but was answered by a principall man; till the other Captain fignified that he was brother to the Gouernor; & then the tyrant lifted vp his eyes and obiected the reports of their ill viage of his Casiques, but for his part he would be friend

Saint Michaels founded. Cacite and othersburned.

pounds by

Long high-

before the Incar conqueft. But our Inca ship and Cafu Spaniar de deui . tations of for domy and humane factifices &e to couer their cruelties

in ail places.

Caxanaka, Fertinand Pie CHAP. 16. Conferences of Span. with Atabalipa. Battell, prisoner, ransome.

to the Christians, taking them to be good men. They promised helpe against his enemies, He laid, he would employ them against a Cacique which had rebelled, together with his Soldiers. Pizarre answered, ten of their worlemen woul i be enough to deltroy him without helpe of your Indiant. Activities laughed and bad they should drinke, laying he would the next day ice his Brother, They to excute drinking, faid they raited but he importuned them, and women came forth with velicles of gold tull of drinke of Mayz. Hee looked on them without speaking a word, and they went againe and brought greater veifels of gold, whereof they dranke, and were licenced to depart. There feemed to be 30000, men in the Campe; they stood without their tents with lances without fight in their hands, ike to Pikes. The next morning, being Saurday, came a Mefl. nger from Atabali- otthe Indiana. to palisying that he would come to fee him with his people armed. He aniwered, that he should vie Brace bragge his pleature. The Gourmour had placed his horie and foote courtly in great houles that they clemone would In spirature 1 to Social Spirature of the figure being given, and the Orunance thereupon ded phere son discharged) then to rush out suddenly from invers pares & astaule the Indians. And seeing Asabaupa finke this ba flaid to long, till neere night, he lent a M. flenger to him, lignifying his defire to fee him, Hereupon filth store. he moved to the town with his armie in iquadrons, finging & dancing, richly adorned with g.ld diabeter rus and filter. The Governors purpose was to take him altue, or therefore expected his entrance into that walled or closes three of Caxamales, which the Indians had for taken with the fortreffe, & left quited, as Fig. to him.lt was late before he came into the town, and being come into the freete he made a stand. enrichmente The Governor tent Frier Vincent to him with a Creffe in one hand, and a Bible in the other, be- will sin the 20 ingentred where Atabahpa was, he laid by an Interpreter, I am a Prieft of God, and teach the extense, ret

Confirms things dune, and come likewife to instruct you that which the great God hath raught thered, & that vs. and is written in this Booke. And therefore on Gods behalfe, and of the Christians, I pray you after they had to become their friend; for God commands it, and it shall be well for you; and come to speake made him a with the Gouernor which expect you. Arabalipa siked for his Booke, which he gave him that. Christian Circle with the Gouernor which expect you. Atabutpa asked for his DOOKe, which he gue him had entil faith that He not knowing which way to open it, the Frier stretched forth his hand to doe it, and he with God until d great didaine bit him on the arme, and at last opened it himselfe. And without wondring at the the Specified; letters or paper, as other Indians vie, cast it away fine or hx pices from him: and to the words for their cruelwhich the Frier had faid to him, he answered with great pride : I well wot what thou hast done ties to the lain this younge, and how thou but handled my Carpurs, and taken away their goods. The First and first and force the but fone Indian without the Government handled and the but fone Indian without the Government handled. did navall 30 (were time Christian have not done this, but some ladious without the Governours knowledge, drafts, all that who knowing it caused them to make rethrusion. Associate replied, I will not depart heace till had had in Athey bring it all to me. The Frier carried this answer to the Godernor, and that he had throwne rabalipes death the holy Scripture on the ground, who prefently fet on the Industriand came to the litter where ded milerably. Atabalpa was, and tooke him by the left arme, crying Saint lames, S. lames. The Ordnance placed fuffered the the trumpets found-dythe horie and foot fet forthy the Indiana fled, the horiemen pursuing & flay- wars, &che na

Biant, Picarro bid his priloner not be amafed at his captinity, for with these Christians, though fiant. Pixarro bid his priloner not be amaled at his captuity, for with these Constraint, though sea, definited few. I have subsected greater Lords then thou are to the Emperor, whose vastall I am, who is Lord whom God 60 of Spaine, and of all the world; a d by his order I am come to conquer these lands that you may plaged for the come to the knowledge of Gou, &c. adding many words of their pitte to the conquered and his rannies to the come to the knowledge or 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge or 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of 100, occ. adding many words of the first of the knowledge of the kno the Gouernor thanked God for the bmiracle. The Sun was down before they began, and the batteli lafted halfe an houre, 2000. Indians were killed, besides those which were wounded, and Eftetes dif-3000. taken. In the free of Caxamalca, Pizarro caused to build a Church for the Masse, and fortie course of the fied the place against all occurrents.

Asabaling promifed for his ranfome to fill a roome 22.foot long, and 17.wide, with gold vp as highas the middle of the roome, higher by one halfe then a mans height, in pots and other vellels, plates & peeces ; and the same roome twice filled with filuer, in two moneths space. But so muen Hiras saib, not comming in fo foone, the Gouernor fent three men to Cufco, February 15.1533.commanding that in their

50 one of them in the name of his Maiefty, & prefence of a Notary, to take possession thereof. A Ne. Spatiard valugrowhich went with them returned, Aprill 28. with 107 burthens of gold, and seven of fillor, ed gold of 14. May 25. Fernand Pizarro came to Caxamalca with Chilcucima, May the thirteenth, the Nota carasst 7. and ry returned from Cufco with relation that they had taken possession, & had found 30. great Caties by the abunin the way besides imall. He laid that there was a Pallace with plates of gold, four esquare, each dance thereof fquate containing 350, pales from corner to corner, 700, of which they had taken away, each of which waighed 500. Castilians : from another house the Indians had taken as much as 200000. ming, pride & Castilians, which they reiected because the gold was base. He faid that Chischu was there with other vices; be 30000.men for guard of the Citie. They brought 178, burthens of gold, each as much as foure Is- (aith that the 60 disens bare on their necks, to that it could not come thither in a moneth by reason of requiring to three sent to many Indians to carry it. It was the thirteenth of June before the gold came from Enfes, winth fooles & heir

was two hundred burthens & twenty five of Silver. After this came fix ie burthens of bale gold, behaujer caus taken from wals of houtes, it was shared on S. lames his day. The nith being taken out for his fd the Inches Maiefly, every horfeman had 8880. Cathlians in gold, and 362, markes in filter, such marke being to vinde value eight ounces. The tootemen had halfe to much, tome more and tome leffe, as the Gou mour

ing, the footmen killing all in the streete, the Governour got a wound on the hand in sung his methaloces. priloner. In all this hurliburly there was not an Indian which lifted up his armes against the Chrisming, Robleds,

* A Maske is

8. ounces and

a Calilian is a

Pez which

containeth in

conntation In-

64 Urga 450.

Marauediz: e-

or Caffelianes

being fix Duc-

feuen thillings

Miltrable som

kers: about

this Peru ac-

He fet apart a quantity for those of Saint Michaels, and for those which came with Alma gre, and the Merchants, and all the Marriners, Prices of things were according : a Horfe was commonly told for 1500. Castilians of Gold; a vessell of tix quarts (Bocali) of wine for sixtie Castilians, I paid fortie for foure quares: a paire of shooes for forty, as much, or fiftie for a sword. I paid twelve for halfe an ounce of had Saffron : ten for a sheet of Paper to write; nothing feemed cheape but Gold and Silver, infomuch that they would not fland to weigh their Gold, but gaue it in maffe; and if hee gaue not twice the quantitie, hee cared not. Debtors & went from METY C. PCASS house to house with Indians laden with Gold to pay their debts. Atabalipa beeing accused of to Treason by another Cacique, that he lought to rayle forces in Quito, was therefore sentenced tobe burned, and brought forth to execution, where he faid he would be a Christian, and Frier Vincent baptized him and comforted him at his death; the Gouernour commanded he should not be burne but strangled, which was executed on a Saturday, about the same houre that he was taken. One of his Brothers was made Lord by the Governour in presence of the Caciques, with great solemnitie, they litting up their eyes to the Sunne with thankes for giving them a naturall Lord, Fernando Pizarro was ient to Spaine, and some others had license, many flocking thither, hearing of the Riches there gotten.

Herera Dec. 5.1.3. faith that Atahuallpa had defired bis libertie because his ransome was paid and his promife fulfilled (as Pizarro himfelfe by found of Trumpet acknowledged) which being deferred bis Captaines offered bunto free bim by force. Atahualpa refused and commanded them to forme the Christi. ans. The Yanaconas a flandh hind of people, desiring to free themselnes from the Oreiones and Incas in those broyles rayled fulse news that Armies were rayled to affault the Spaniards. Pizarro feeing the Atahualpa flood in his way, and hindered bis foundation of a Spanish Empire in these parts, which could not be without the diffipation of that of the Incas, nor that without Atahualy as death . Yefto tenia por infto, pues era provechiofo, He beld it suft because it was profuable : Hee fluke to the Inca complaining of insurrection which he answered was but the rumour of his enemies, that he had paid his ransome or Pizziromade frem (diffembling bis purpose) of great feare of the enemies (which caused the Spaniards to verge and important A:abalipas death (and to ipeake as you have read in them) whereupon Pizat-To bad sufficient colour for his Designe, making show that the Treasure paid in name of a ransome ma new for the lnccs libertie, has lest the indians should hade it. Frier Vincent consented also, and so he mu fentenced to be burned, &c. Hee addeth out of Seneca, Profperum ac celix icelus virtus vocatur. Thus the Kings Chronicler , faring alfothat Pernand Pizarro was Atahualpas friend, and his brother did it after his departure. He died in Prifor, and all the rest (of whose names Hereis gineth a Catalogu) were flaine and murthered in ciaill marres, or came to ill ends. Yea, fill the warres continue in Arauco, to the death of many Spaniards, befides the civil marres of Giron, de. in Peru after that of the Pizatrifts. God is inst, and therefore Pizarto the Muntberer of Atahualpa (a cruell Murtherer alle) was murthered, and so bee that murthered Pizarro, and so forwards; the Serpents issue and Generation if Hell proceeds from muriber to muriber, the Deuil bimselfs being a Muriberer from the beginning Ones, Peru alone with Chili (beth subsetts to the Incas Empire) bath more advanced the Spanish Tressure 10 then all the New World besides : neither is there any so likely may to supplant that Cattilian-American greatnesse, as by the Araucos.

CHAP. XVII.

Relations of Occurrents in the Conquest of Peru after FERNAND PIZARROS departure written at XAVXA, Iuly 15. 1534. by PEDRO SANCHO, Notary Generall in the Kingdomes of New Castile, and Secretary to the Gouernour FR. PIZARRO, subscribed by the (aid Gouernour him felfe and others, and Cent to his Maiestie.

Care with Gold, part whereof was melted being final and fine pieces, taken out of the was of a certaine house in Care, being aboue fine hundred wedges or plates of Gold, the small weighting force of Gold, the small weighting force or care. En or twelve dayes after Fernand Pizarros departure, two Spaniards came from of Gold, the imall weighing foure or five pounds a piece, the greater ten or twelve. All the wals of that Temple had beene couered with them. They brought a chaire or throne of most fine Gold, weighing eighteene thousand Pezos, and a Fountayne of Gold of 60 excellent workmanship, and the mould in which it was cast; and many other pieces, pots and veffels : which all mounted to two Millions and a halfe, and beeing melted into most fine Gold came to be one Million 320000. Pezos and vowards : out of which his Maiesties fifth was taken, aboue 260000. Pezos, they made it vp 270000. Of Silver there was coood. Markes, his Maiesties part 5000, the rest was shared among it the company according to their qualities and merits. After this, the Gouernour made an act before a Notary, in which he acquitted Atabalipa of his promife to the Spaniards, for so much as the house would hold, and caused it to bee published in Caxamaloa by the found of a Trumpet, acquainting Atapalipa himlelfe therewith by an Interterpreter, declaring withall that for his Maierties service and security of the Country, he would fill detay ne him with a guard, till more Spaniards came for his fecurity : specially confidering that hee had taken order for leaying of men of warre to affault the Spaniards, which hee had no meanes to avoid but by keeping him fast, and his Captayne Generall Chilichuchuma. A few dayes

after the Indians renealed the Treatons of that Tyrant, notwithstanding all his good viage by the 10 Gouernour and Spaniards, which was preuented by his death: his fentence of burning by reason of his Baptisme being executed with itrangling, and after his death some part of his clothes and flefth were burned. It was late in the Euening, and the next morning he was folemnely buried in the Church, as if he had beene the chiefe Spannard in the Campe : which gaue much iatisfaction to his principali Caciques and Captaines.

This done, in prefence of many Commanders and Cacines he gaue them a Lord in the name of b Other Incas the Emperour, a Sonne of Guaynacaba (Huayna Capac, or as the Spaniards vie to call him Guai- madesone calthe Emperour, a Sonne of Guaynacaba (Huayna Capac, or as the Spaniards vic to call him Guati-nacapae) called Asabalapa, b to whom the Empire was due, and placed him in his Seat, they all to ferue the offering the Rites of validlage to him, to wit, a white feather, according to their custome. The Seaniards turn. new Inca faited three dayes for the deceaffed, thut up from all locietie but his Pages, and after Without them 20 came forth honourably attired and attended with about fifty Cacites and Captaines there pre- (as in the conlent, and did eat to gether on the ground (for they vie no Tables) after which, he offered a white cliffon they Feather in token of his vassallage to the Emperour. The Gouernour received it and embraced could being fo him with much loue, and concluded a peace, taking the names of the Cacikes, and the Countries femoure under their command, and intimated that he was fent by his Emperour to give them knowledge have perfected of the true God, Father, Sonne, and Holy Ghoft, and what they thould observe for their saluation; and that that God and his Vicars left on earth(for he alcended to Heauen their to remayne in wied the Custo glorie) had given those Provinces to the Emperour to take charge thereof, who had fent him to coans again & instruct them in the Christian Faith, and to bring them vinder his obedience : and caused his those of Quito, Commission to bee read and interpreted to them. They all acknowledged the Emperour for and lastly to Commilion to bee read and interpreted to them. I ney all acknowledged the Empirion for the form of their fupreme Lord, and next under him their Lord Atabasipa, and in figne thereof listed up the Spanish (each of them twice) the Royall Banner. All this act was entred into writing with testimonies, subjection. Afand great Feafts were made by them.

At this time the Gouernour ceased the partition of the Gold and Silver amongst the Spaniards, and Atabalipa gaue the Gold of the Fitths Royal to the Treaturer of his Maiefly, which was thing but faicarried to Xauxa where the Gouernour intended to plant a Colonie of Spaniards, having intelligence of the good Countrey thereabouts. He provided him of Indians for carriages, and fent a respurpose be-Captaine with ten Horsemen to inhabit Saint Michaels till ships came, and after that to returne ing aims y by to Xanxa. He heard that some of Asabalipas Captaines had flaine Gariticas his Brother, which any way to cgrieued much both the Gouernour and the present Aisbalipa. He as he marched heard of divers rectithe Spanife 40 which were vp in Armes against him, fine leagues from Xanxa, whereupon he put Chilachachima Second shain chaines, by whose meanes the report was that they had done it. They went and adiouned ring. themsclues to Quizquiz. When he came to Xanxa, none of his Spaniards were willing to abide Garitto flaine: there becaule the Countrey was in Armes, yet he left a Colony of eighty men with Officers. About this time died Atabalipa of sicknesse, of poyson given by Chilichuchima, as was reported, who fought to have the rule remaine in Quite, and not in Cufee. The Governour had them prote free fift, auidea Successor. Calichuchima would have Aticoe Sonne of Atabilipa, but others and the Gouer- sainst Culce: nour liked better of a Brother of Atabalipa (Sonne of Guanacapa.) He came to a Towne where lo after his he found much Siluer in great sheets of twentie foot long and one broad, a finger thicke. They death it was received intelligence of a skirmish with the enemy by another band of Spaniards, in which eighteene horses were hurt and one slaine; in another the Spaniards had the victory. The Governour nued against 50 caused Chilichuchima to be burned, who refuted to become a Christian, and called upon Pachaca- the incide there mac. After this he marched to Casco, which hee entred on Friday the fifteenth of November feeking to ad-1533. And the next day made that Sonne of Gusynacapae their Lord, being the right heire, and

commanded the Cacikes to obey him. Incontinently the New Cacie (or Inca) gave order to affemble forces against Quezquiz; in tabalipato the foure dayes fine thousand were comne together well armed, with whom the Gouernour tent a Sourceignite. Captaine with fiftie Horle, remayning himlelfe for the guard of the Citie. These having done Chilichechima fomewhat against the enemy, were forced to returne by the ill mountanous pailages. The Cacique having faited three dayes, and performed and received the Rites of validlage (before mention made Lord. 63 ned in his Predeceffor)at the Gouernours request levied greater forces, fo that above five and twen- Third flaring

tie thousand went with the Spaniards, which made a Bridge of three hundred and fixtie focte of gold and long, broad enough for two Horsemen to passe abreast, and passed to Bileas. Some of them went to the fuccour of Xanna which had obtayned good fuccesse against their enemies.

The Governour after this cauled all the Gold to bee melted by experienced Indians, which a ingold,

ter which they

about Cufce, &

Josephs & mcB

mounted to 580200. Pezos and spwards of good Gold. The Emperours fifth was 116460. P. zos and vpwards. The Silver was melted, and weighed 215000. Markes, of which 170000 and vpwards was good, in Veffels and Barres, the reft alayed with other Metals. The fifth was deducted thence for his Maieftie. Amongst other things there were sheepe of fine Gold very great. and ten or twelue Statues of women in their iust bignesse and proportion, artificially composed of fine Gold. They performed like veneration to them as if they had been aline, clothing, adoring, gining them to eate and talking with them. There were others of Siluer in the fame thature. All this Treasure was shared betwixt those of Cusco and the Spaniards of Xauva.

In March 1534, the Gouernor affembled all the Spaniards, and made a folemne act of the form-Cufe a Specifi dation of a Towne and poffession taken in the midft of the chiefe ftreet, by the name of the noble and great Citie of Cusco: bounds were set out for a Church , and priviled ges allotted to such as within three yeeres should come thither to dwell. Aboue twelue thousand married Indians were deligned to the Province of Collao, to his Maiesties Mynes of Gold in those parts. After this he departed with the Cacique towards Xanxa. There he had newes of two hundred

ardsenter Peru.

and fittie comne from Parama to Saint Michaels, seuenty of them horiemen, and of Alnarador landing with foure hundred men, and one hundred and fiftie horfemen, Hauing ouerthrowne his enemies, he tooke order for founding a Church in Xanxa, and fent some Spaniards with an Army of Indians to pursue the enemies. There is a Mountayne of Snow which continueth from Caramalea to X: uxa, where Snow lyeth all the yeere. The people are more civill and better Souldiers. On the other fide the Mountayne (Eastward) they are Sauage people feeding on fruites, having fmall flore of Maiz. All their Tribute was Feathers. From Xauxa to Cufco the Countrey enlargeth it felfe from the Sea. Collao is a plaine Countrey and cold, and hath many Rivers where gold Country de- is taken. The Mountaynes continue from Tumbez to Xanxa, and thence to Cufce, if the way bee not made by hands, footmen could not passe, much lesse horsemen : and they have many houses c Immatonare, full of Bralle to worke cyp the same. All the rough Mountaynes are wrought like staires dof

stone. There are some places where soure or fine mens heights, the way is wrought and made up with stone worke; in others it is cut out of the stone. There are places of entertainment ineuery Countrey, and by the way one within two or three leagues of another, made for the Lords which vifit the Countrey : and every twenty leagues principall Provinciall Cities where the tributes of smaller places are kept. All those great Townes have store-houses full of the Countrey to Commodities. There are store of cattle and pastures with their Pastors.

The Citie of Cufco might be worthy the fight if it were in Spaine, full of great mens houles,

the most part The Fortreffe

Description of all Lords and Caciques, having houses there. The most of those houses are of stone, and some are Cufco, asit was halfe of ftone : the ftreets are ftraight in right croffes, and narrow ; in the midft runneth a Conduit of water inclosed with stone on each side of which a horseman may passe and no more. The Citie issituate on the top of a Hill, and many houses are built on the side of it, and others below on the Plaine. The Market place is square, paued with small stones. About it are source houles of Lords of Hone painted and wrought; the best of which was Guainacabas: the gate is of white and red Marble, and of other colours, and hath faire Terrasses. On the sides of the City ranne two Rivers, which rife a league higher, ouer which are Bridges. Vpon a Hill hard and rough is 40 a very faire Fortrelle of earth and itone, with great windowes towards the City. Withinit are many Roomes, and one principall Towre in the midft of foure or fine circuits e one higher then another; the Lodgings within are small, the stone very fairely wrought and so close loyned that there is no snew of morter, and as imooth as planed boords. It hath to many Roomes and Towres that a man is not able to view them all in a day. Many Spaniards which have beene in Lumbardie and other strange Kingdomes, say that they have never seene such a building as this Fortresle, nor Castle more strong. There may abide within five thousand Spaniards. It cannot be vindermined being feated on a Rocke. On the City fide which is a ragged Hill, is but one wall, on the other fide three, one higher then another, the inmost being highest. The goodliest spectacle are these encompassing circuits, being of stones so great, that no man would imagine them layd 50 there by the hands of men, as great as pieces of stonie Mountaynes and Rockes; some being of the height of thirty f spannes, and and as much in length, and none is so little but it is more 1050.

Acolla faith he then three Cart-lodes. The Spaniards preferre them before the buildings of Hercules or of the Romanes. They are reverfed & that they cannot be battered in plano, but in the flipping h turnagaines which goe outwards, made of the felfe-same stone. Betwixt wall and wall is earth laid to broad that three Carts may goe abreaft. They are made like three fteps, the fecond beginning on the height of the first, and the third on that of the second. All this Fortresse was a h Sguincio de :- Store-house of Armes, Clubs, Launces, Bowes, Arrowes, Axes, Shields, Cotton Mandilions quilted, and other armes and garments for Souldiers, gathered from all parts of the Empire, colours of divers forts and Metals. From this Fortreffe may bee feene many houses. In the Val-60 which is compassed about with Hils are about 100000. houses; many of them houses of pleafure of the Sourreignes Lords and Caciques, others are Store-houses full of Wooll, Armes,

Metrals, Clothes and fuch things as the Countrey yeeldeth; there are Horses where the Tributes are kept, and there is one, where are about 100000, dried Birds, of whole Feathers they make

f Seefup. pagmea.ured fome aboue 38. foot long, g Voltati.

earments. And there are many houses for that purpose. There are Shields, Targets, Plates of Braile to couer houles, and incredible ftore of prouitions for Warre. Euery Souereigne Lord deceasted bath his owne house of these goods and Tributes which they had in their life (for by their Law the Successor may not inheret it) their Gold, Silver, and Clothesapart. They worship the Sunne and have made him many Temples, and of all things they offer somewhat to the Sunne. Two Spannards were sent to Colao, and were forty dayes in the journey. They say it is well peopled, mountay nous, and out of measure cold : so inbiect, that having many cattle, no man dates kill any without licente, though neuer fo great. There is a great Lake (Titicaca) in the midft of the Province, in which are two Ilands, in one of which is a Temple of the Sun in great to veneration, where they offer Gold and Silver and other things. There are about fixe hundred Indians which serve there, and a thousand women. The Mynes of Gold are beyond this place, some of ten some twenty, and that of Guarnacabo is forcy fathome deepe, darke and narrow, in which one alone at once, entreth, none following till he be comne forth. Other Mynes they pursue no further then a mans height, that he may reach the earth to another: which made fome lay that all the fields were Gold Mynes. Guainacapa is honoured as if her were aliue, and his bodie is brought forth into the ffreet with Musicke and Dances, and there are fome day and night attending him to chase away the flyes. The Lords that come to the Citie, goe first and salute him, and then the King. To these Fearlts 100000, soules affembled. Had it not beene for the quarrels betwixt those of Quite and those of Cuses, the Spaniards could not have entred into Cuses, nor have Note this 20 it. And the Mountaynes are such that ten men may defend ten thousand. Many Horses fell downe and brake their neckes. The Spaniards themselves maruell at what they have done, and how they are still alue. It hath falne out well that this Sonne of Guainacaba was made their Lord, for whose love other Lords have giuen their obedience to the Emperour. He is very friendly to the Christians. July 15. 1534. in Xanxa Subscribed Francisco Picarre, &c. The end of the seventh Booke. VOY-



OYAGES

LANDTRAVELS IN FLORIDA,

VIRGINIA, AND OTHER PARTS OF THE NORTHERNE AMERICA FRENCH

Plantings, Spanish Supplantings; English VI R-Ilands Azores.

THE EIGHTH BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

30 A Relation of A L W AR O N W N E z called Capo di Vaua, *concerning that which happened to the Fleet in India, whereof PAMPHILO.

NARVAEZ Was Gouernour, from the yeare 1527. Detill the yeere 1 \$ 3 6. Who returned onto Small with three of bis companions only: translated out of RAMV-

SIO, and abbreniated.

Their Fleet; and admirable and unheard of tempest: their entrance into Florida : the Lakes, trouble some passages, incounters, disastrous successe, building Boats for returne.

HE fixteenth day of Iune, in the yeare 1527, the Gouernour The Gouernoon Pamphilo di Narnaez departed from the hauen of Saint Lucar of the Fleete. of Barrameda, with power and commandement from your Maiestie to conquer and gouerne the Prouinces, which lye from the River of Palmes vnto the Cape of Florida, all in the firme land. And the Fleete which the Gouernour brought with him The officers o-

were five Ships, wherein fix hundred men went. The Officers, uer the Flecte.

because I am to make parti ular mention of them in this Booke, were their : Capo de Vana Treasurer, Agozino Pronost Marti-all, Alonso Enriquez Auditor, and Alonso de Solie Factor, and ouerleer for his Maicfie. And besides, there was for Commil-iary, a Frier of the order of Saint Francis, called Frier Gionanni,

Ichn Gottierrez, and with him foure other Friers of the fame Order.

60 We arrived first at the lland of San Dominica, where we stayed but fortie fine dayes, to prouide our felies of certaine necessary things, and principally of Horses. There we lest more then S. Dominue.

an hundred and forty of our men, which would stay by promise and agreement which they of an numered and forty of our men, which would not the Village made with them. Departing thence, we arrived at Saint lago or Giacomo, which is The haucnof an hauen in the Iland of Cuba, and reposing our selues there certaine dayes, the Captaine furnish-S, Lames. ed himfelfe with men, munition, and hories. It hapned in that place, that a Gentleman, called

Vafques Parcalle, neere vnto the towne of the Trimtie, which is in the fame Hand, offered the The Tainitie. Governour to give him certaine victuall, which he had in the faid towne of the Trinitie, which is an hundred leagues off from the faid port of Saint Iago. Whereupon the Gouernour departed with all the Fleete, towards that towne. But arriving halfe the way at an hauen which they call the Caue of Santa Cruz, it feemed good vnto the Gouernor to abide there, and fend one Shin Anhauen calonely to receive those vietuals, and so he appointed one Captaine Pantoxa to goe thither with of Saint (193 his ship, and that for the greater fecurity, I also should goe with him, and he remained still there with the foure Ships : we having now gotten another in the Iland of Saint Domenica. Being arrived with our five Ships at the haven of the Trinitie, the Captaine Pantoxa went with Valquez. Porcalle torcceiue the victuals at the towne, which was one league diffant from the hauen. One houre after I was landed, the Sea began to be outragious, and the Northwinde was fo ftrong,

or to peff, not that the Boates durit not goe aland, nor could they with the Shippes in any fort put to the table both at Sca and Land. two contrary featons, and with much raine they continued all that day, and the Sunday The night approaching, the Sea and tempest began so much to increase, that it no leffe tormented those on the land then them at Sea; for all the houses fell downe, and all the Churches, and wee were entorced to goe feuen or eight men embracing one another arms in arme together, to be able to relift the winde, that it might not carry vs away, and to avoide the ruine of the houles, flying vnto the Forrest, the trees game vs no lesse cause of feare, then the houses had given vs : because they falling held vs in continual feare, an that they would kill vs. In this tempest and danger wee passed all the night, without finding any part or place, where for one halfe houre onely wee might fland fecure : hur principally, the midnight before wee heard noyles and great crying, and the found of Belies, Flutes, and Drummes, and other instruments, which continued vntill the more ning, that the tempest ceased. In those Countries so fearefull a thing had never beene feene. whereof I caused a testimoniall and true certificate to be made, which I have fent vnto your

the tempest.

On Munday morning we went downe to the hauen, and found not the Ships there, but faw fome of their furniture in the water; whereby we knew that they were cast away. And so we purpoied to goe along the coast, searching if we might finde any thing, but finding nothing, 30 we determined to fearth by the Mountaines, and having gone about a quarter of a league of from the water fide, wee found the Boate of a Ship fet vpon certaine trees: and further beyond. ten leagues along the coast they found two perions of my Ship, and certaine couerings and roofes of houses. And those two men were to actually transfigured and changed with weatherbeating, both of the shore, and of the Sea, that they could not know who they were, we found also a Friers habit, and a Conerlet torne in peeces, and found no other person or thing any more. Threefcore men were loft in those two Ships, and twenty horses, and those that remained aliue were thirty perions onely, who the fame day we arrived in that haven, went aland together with the Captaine Paniona. Wee remained in such manner for certaine dayes, with much trouble and great necessitie, because the sustenance and prouision of that people, was all an loft, and destroyed, with certaine wilde Beatls, and the Countrey remained in such fort that it moved great compassion in the beholders, the trees being falne, the mountaines burned, and remaining without leaves, or graffe, and so we passed untill the fift day of November, that the Gouernour of our Fleete came thither to vs, with his other foure Ships, who also themselves had passed great dangers and torments, and were escaped, because in good time they had retired themselves vnto some place of satety.

Fifth of No-

The men which he had brought with him, and those that he found there, were so much affright ted, and terrified with the loffes and dangers past, that they resolved to imbarke themselves no more in the winter, and befought the Gouernour that he would fuffer them to repose and rest themselves in those places; he perceiving their mindes, and the desire of the inhabitants, did io, 50 and gaue me the charge of the Ships, and the men, which should goe with me to winter at the The hauen of hauen of Xaqua, which is twelve leagues diftant from that place, and to going thither, we stated Sagua, or Xa jua. vntill the twentieth of February following. At this time the Gouernour came thither vnto vs. with a Brigantine which he had gotten at the Trinitie, and brought with him a Pilot, called Miruelo, who (as they laid) was a man very well practifed, and an excellent Pilot for all the coast of the North. Befides that, the Gouernour left on the coaft of the Liffars Captaine Aluaro delle Querda; with a Ship which the Gouernour had procured there, and lett forty men with him, and

twelve other with the horfe. Two dayes after the Gouernour came vnto vs, wee imbarked our felues, and were (in the whole) foure hundred men, and fourescore horses in foure Ships, and one Brigantine. The Pi- 60 lot which we had newly taken, brought the Ships through the quicke fands, which they call Canerres, so that the day following we found our felues on dry land, and so remained fine dayes, the keele of the Ships oftentimes friking upon the ground. At the end of those fine dayes, 2

ftorme from the South brought fo much water vpon the lands, that wee might come out, al-

though not without much danger. Departing thence, we arrived at Gnanignanico, where anothough not without in the freely, that we flood in great danger to be loft: at the head of the Guzzigusnico. currents we had another, where we staid three dayes. And these being ouerpassed, we went acurrents we nau another, the same and with a contrary winde, we went till wee came within The Cape of hour the Cape of Saint International and with a contrary winde, we went till wee came within The Cape of bour the Cape of the Hanana, and standing the day following to put in there, a Southerne gale S. Anthon. of winde tooke vs, which droue vs farre from the land, so that wee crossed ouer by the coast of The Hamans. Florida, and arrived the twelfth of Aprill, at the land of Marter; fo coasting the way of Florida, Marten. younholy Thursday in the same coast, we ancored in the mouth of an open roade, at the head

whereof we faw certaine houses, and habitations of the Indians. 10 The fame day Alonfo Euriquez the Auditor went out of the Ship, and landed vpon an Iland which is in the same open roade, and called to those Indians, who came and abode with vs a good space, and by way of ransome gaue him fish, and certaine peeces of Deeres flesh. The day following, which was good Friday, the Gouernour imbarked himfelfe with as many men as the

Boates could carry, and we went to the Villages or houses of the Indiant, which wee had seene, which we found all emptie and desolate, because that night the people were gone in their Canoes. One of thole houles was very great, and able to containe more then three hundred perfons, the other were much leffer, and there we found a little Bell of Gold within the Nets. The Great houses next day, the Gouernour admanced the Entigene for your Maietty, and tooks position of the whost bould be the Court of the the Court of the whost bould be the Court of the the Court of the the Court of Village in your royall name, and presented the Commissions and was received, and obayed as Golden Bell. 40 Gouernour, according to your Maiefties appointment. And so in like manner, we presented our The full towns

other prouitoes vato him, which he accepted, and obeyed according to the contents thereof, and taken in Furthern prefently cauled the rest of the men to be shipped, and the horses, which were not about two da, in the Emand fortie, because the other, through the many tempests, and beating of the Sea, and length of perors name, time, were dead. And these sew that remained, were so weakeand wearied, as at that time we could doe little feruice. The day following, the Indians of those places came vnto vs, and although they spoke vato vs, yet notwithstanding we understood them not.

The Gouernour commanded that the Brigantine should goe coasting the way of Florida, and fearch for the hauen, which the Pilot Mernelo faid he knew, but was now aftenished, and knew not in what part we were, nor where the hauen was; and the Brigantine was appointed, that if

30 they found not the hauen, to croffe ouer to the Hanana, and finde the Ship wherein Alstare della Querda was, and having taken in some victuall, to returne to finde it. The Brigantine being deing departed, we returned to enter into the Village of the same people where we had bin before, with fome other more, and we coasted the gulfe which wee had found, and having gone about foure leagues, we tooke foure Indiani, and shewed them Maiz, because vntill that day wee had not yet feene any token thereof: they faid, they would bring vs where it grew, and so they brought vs to their Village, which was not farre from thence, at the head of the gulfe, and there they shewed vsa little Marz, which was not yet ripe to be gathered. There wee found many chelts of the Merchants of Castile, and in enery one of them was the body of a dead man, all which were covered with Deeres skins painted. The Commissary thought, that it was a kinde 40 of Idolatry, so he burned the chefts with all the bodies. We also found peeces of webs of cloath,

and Pennacchi, which they had gotten out of Nona Hift aniela, and certaine * mosters of Gold. Whereupon we demanded of those Indians by fignes, from whence they had fuch things. They Samples by fignes, shewed vs: that very farre from thence there was a Prouince, called Apalachen, where- The Prouince in there was great quantity of Gold. Departing from shence, wee went further, carrying for apalates, guides those foure Indians which we had first taken, and so ten or twelue leagues off from that place, wee found another people of fifteene houses, where was a goodly Plaine sowed with Maiz, which now was ready to be gathered, and we found some also dry. There we abode two

May the first, the Governour caused two pound of Biscuit, and halfe a pound of Forke to be 50 giuen to euery one of them who were to goe with vs, and fo we departed, to enter within the land, The summe of all them who went, was three hundred men in all, among whom was the Commissary Frier lobn Scinarez, and another Frier, called Frier lobn de Palis, and three Clarkes, and the Officers. Forty of vs were on horsebacke, and so with that prouision which wee had brought, wee went fifteene dayes without finding any other things to eate, except Dates, like those of Andaluzia. In all this time we found not any Indian, nor faw any house, nor place inhabited : and in the end we found a River, which wee passed with much danger and trouble, by fwimming, and vpon rafts, and staied a day to passe ouer it, because it ranne with much fury. Having passed to the other side of the River, two hundred Indians came against vs, and the Go-

uernour went before, and after he had spoken to them by signes, they made much signes againe 60 vnto vs, that we should in your selues with them, taking fine or fixe, who brought vs vnto their houles which were about halfe a league off, and there wee found great quantity of Maiz, which flaod now ready to be gathered. After some search of the Countrey to the Sea, wee departed from that place, alwayes (as we went) inquiring for that Prouince, which (the Indians faid) was called Apalachen, and brought for guides, them that we had taken, and fo went forward

Iiiiii 2

. Catique gni-

untill the feuenteenth of June, and found no Indians that durft abide our comming. There, a v Cd. eer 1 Lord 2- signe came vnto vs, whom an Indian carried vpon his necke, and hee was couered with a Deerse skinne painted, and brought with him many people, who went before him playing vpon certaine Fittes made of canes, and so came vnto the Gouernour, and abode with him an houre, and we gaue him to vinderstand (by fignes) how that we went to Apalachen, and by those fignes which he made vs, it feemed he ment to fignifie that hee was an enemy to them of Apalachen. and would aide vs against them. We gave him Crownes, Bels, and such other things, and he gave the Gouernour the skin which he wore voon him, and so turned backe againe, and we followed presently after him. That evening we came vnto a River, which was very deepe and very broad. and ran very furiously, and not presuming to passe ouer it vpon rafts, we made a Canoa, and staied one whole day to palle ouer it : fo that if the Indians would have injured vs, they might eafily have disturbed our passage, and yet although they holped vethe best they could, wee had Strong fream, much trouble. One of our Horiemen, called lobu Velasquez, a native of Cuellar, because he would

him from his Horse, who catching hold on the raines of the bridle, drowned himselfe, together with the Horse. And those Indians of that Lord, called Dulcancellin, found the Horse, and told ve where we should finde him in the River below : and so they went to search for him, whose death King or Carigue much discontented vs. because vntill that time there was not one man of our company wanting. The Horse gaue many their suppers that night. And so having passed that River, the day following we came vnto the people of that Lord, who fent vs fome of their Maiz. The next day we departed, the Indians being fled. The Gouernour left by the way an ambufcado of certaine Horiemen, which as those Indians passed by, issued out vpon them, and tooke three or foure. who before lerued vs for guides, and they brought vs through a very troublesome Countrey to trauaile, and maruelous to behold, where were huge Mountaines, and very high Trees, whereof

not flay, tooke the River with his Horse, and the current of the River being very strong . cast

Toubleforne Countrey.

fo many were fallen to the ground, that they intangled and stopped the way, in such fort that we could not palle without going farre about, to our great trouble; and of those trees that were fal-Trees clefe len, the greater part were clett from one end to the other, through the thunderbolts that fall wich thunderthere, great tempests being alwayes in that place : with this trouble wee marched untill the fix and twentieth day of lune, at which day we came within the fight of Apalachen before they of the Towne perceined vs. We rendered great thankes vnto God, feeing our felues fo neere vn- 30 to that place, and supposing that to be true which had been spoken, and hoping we should there end our great travailes which wee had passed, as well for the long and cuill journey, as for the great famine which we had fuftained. Because, although we fometimes found Maiz, vet for the

Apalachen.

that through hunger and wearinesse had wounded their shoulders with continuall wearing of their armes, besides the other calamities they daily incountered. - The Governour commanded me to take with me nine horse, and fiftie foote, and enter the towne, which the Controler and I did, and found none but little children, and women, because at that time the men were not there, but going a little way from those places, the Indians came, and began to fight, and shoot at vs, and slew the Controllers horse; but in the end they fled, and 40 left vs, There we found great quantity of Maiz which stood ready to be gathered, and had sufficient, of which was Jzy, romaining. We found there many skinnes of wilde beafts taken by hunting, and some garments of thred little and nought worth, wherewith the women couer some

most part we went fix or eight leagues without finding any. And there were many amongstvs,

parts of their person. They had many Mils to grinde Maiz. Among these people there were forty little houses, low built, and in close places, for feare of the great tempetts to which that Countrey continually is accustomed. The houses are made of straw of stubble, and compassed about with Mountaynes Great temstanding thicke together, and great Trees, and many Scas of water, where so many and so great Trees are false, that they trouble every thing, and cause that no man is able to travell there with-

out great incumberance. The land from the place where we di barked vnto this people of Apalachen, for the most part is plaine, and the foyle confifteth of hard and folid fand, and throughout all the fame many great Trees, and famous Mountaines are found, where Nut trees are, and Labrani, and other, which they call Laguidambares: there are also Cedars, Sauine-trees, Holme-trees, Pines, Okes, and low Palme-trees like those of Cafile. Throughout all that Country there are many great and little Lakes, and fome are very trouble fome to paffe, as well for the great depth thereof, as also by reafon of the many trees, which are fallen there. The ground or bottome of them is fand : and thole Lakes which we found in the Prouince of Apalachen, are much greater then all the other which we had found untill then. There are many fields of their Maiz in this Province; and the houles are scattered through the Plaine, like those of Gerbe. The bealts which we saw there are Deere 60 of three forts, Conies, Hares, Beares, and Lions, and other, among which we faw one, that carrieth her young in a bagge, which shee hath in her belly, where shee carrieth them all the time that they are little, vntill they be able to goe, and feeke their meate themselves. And if by chance

Beafts.

yong in abag, the young stand feeking food without the damme, and people come vpon them, shee flyeth not

before the haue gathered them into her bagge. The Countrey is very cold there; and there are many good pastures for flockes.

There are also many lotts of Fowle, Gossings in great abundance, Geele, Duckes, Herons, Fowles, Black-birds, and others of ditters fores and there we faw many Falcons, Ger-falcons, Sparrows

hawkes, and many other fores of Birds. Two dayes after we came to Apalachen, the Indians that were fled returned vnto vs in peace, demanding their children, and we gaue them all, except one Cazaque of theirs; whom the Gonernour retayned, which was the occasion to cause them to depart offended; who the day sollowing returned as enemies, and affailed vs with fuch tury and fuddenneffe, that they came to To fee fire to the house where we were : but to foone as wee came forth, they fled and retired themfelues vnto the Lakes, which were very neere thereunto, Whereupon by realon of them, and the Come which was very thicke there, we could not doe them any hurt, face that we killed one man only. The day following, other Indians of another people, which was on the other fide, came to vs and affailed vs after the fame manner , that the other had done before , and fled likewife : and one of them also was flaine. We abode there fine and twentie dayes, in the which we caused three to enter within the Land, and found it very poorely peopled, and hard trauelling; in respect of the troublesome passages, Mountaynes and Lakes which are there. Wee demanded of the Cazigne whom wee had retayned, and of the other Indians whom wee had brought with vs, who were borderers and enemies to them of Apalachen, the qualitie and condition of that 20 Countrey, of the people, the victuall, and other things about it, who all plainly answered vs, that

the greatest people of all that Countrey, were they of Apalachen, and that further beyond it was without people, and very poore, that all that Countrey, and theirs were ill peopled, and that the Inhabitants were much difperfed, and that going further forth, exceeding great Lakes are found, Mountaynesstanding thicke together, and mighty Defarts, and without Inhabitants. Wee asked them of the Countrey which lay toward the South, what people and fuffenance it had, who answered vs, that going from thence towards the Sea nine dayes journey, were a people called Aste, and that the Indians of that place had much Maiz, and that there were fmall Pulie, which are like to our Ciches and Gourds, and that being so neere to the Sca, sish was there to be found : and that they were their friends.

30 Seeing the pourty of the Country, we agreed to depart from them, and goe to feeke out the Sea, and that people of Ante, whereof they told vs. And so at the end of five and twenty dayes after we came thither, we departed. The first day we passed those Lakes and troublesome passages, without feeing any Indian. But the fecond day they came vpon vs , at a Lake which was very ill to paffe: lo that the water tooke vs vp to the breaft, and many Trees were falne there, fo that we being in the middelt thereof, the Indians affayled vs, they being hid behind the trees that we might not fee them : and others were voon the trees that were falne, and beganne to shoote at vs in such lort, that they wounded many men and horses, and tooke the guide from vs which we had brought, they suddenly cast themselves into the Lakes and wounded fifteene men and horses. The Gouernour seeing this, commanded them on horsebacke to dismount, and as-40 faile them on foot, and fo they did, and the Auditor difmounted with them, and affayling them

put them all to flight, so that they entred into a Lake, and thus wee gained the passage of them. In that skirmish tome of our men (whose good armes they carried prevayled not) remayned Strong arwounded: and some of them swore, that they saw two Okes, each of them as great as a mans .ehret. legge, shot through from side to side with the Arrowes of the Indians. Which therefore is not a thing that wee should wonder at, seeing the force wherewith they deliner them, and I my felte haue seene an Arrow at the foot of an Elme, which entred an handfull in.

As many Indiantas we faw in Florida, vntill wee came to that place, are all Archers, tall of stature, and goe naked, and seeme to them that see them afarre off mighty Giants. They are maruelloufly well fet, pleafant, and of much firength and agilitie. The Bowes they ofe are as thicke Men of rall & as a mans arme, of eleuen or twelue spannes long, and they shoot two hundred paces off, and so rure, good 50 straight and levell, that they never shoote and misse. Having got over that passage, about one archess.

league from thence, we came to another Lake of the fame fort, faue that it was halfe a league long, which was much worfer then the former. This we quietly passed, and without disturbance of the Indians: because they having spent all the munition of their Arrowes, in that first affault, it remayned not in their power to be able to affault vs afresh. The next day following going ouer another fuch passage, I who went in the Vantgard descrived the Sauage people, and gaue intelligence to the Gouernour who came in the Rereward, and so going well ordered and prouided, they could not offend vs, and as soone as we were come forth into the Plaine, they came alwayes following vs. Whereupon turning about and dividing our felues into two parts, we flue two of

60 them. Auellaneda turning about ranne to helpe his boy, the Indians smote him with an Arrow on the tide of the Cuiras, and the flroke was such, that the whole Arrow almost went through behind the head, so that he suddenly dyed, and we carried him dead vnto Ame. We came to Amte, the ninth day after our departure from Apalachen: and found all the people of that place fled, having burned their houles. There we found much Maiz and Gourdes, and certaine Pulie which Jiiiii 3

The River Madelera.

we alto had discourred it as we went, by a very great River, which wee found by the way : and called it the River of Madalina, I was fent to discover the Sea, The day following we departed from Aute, and marched all that day vntill wee came where I had beene before : the way was very troubleiome, because the Hories were neither able to carrie there that were feeble, nor knew we what remedy to take, because they were enery day worse then other. Having proqued many remedies, we all agreed in one indgement, to put a very hard thing in execution, and than was to make Boats for ya to goe from thence. It feemed a thing impossible to all, because some of vs knew not how to make them, and wee had neither Iron Tooles, nor Forge, nor Ockam, 10 Pirch, nor Ropes, nor finally, any thing of to many, which were needfull in fuchan exercise : and about all we had not proution of victuall for to long time while they should be made. The day following it pleased God, that one of our men came, who said, that hee would make certaine Pipes of wood, and that with the skinnes of wild beafts, certaine Bellowes should bee made to blow, And finding vs at a time, wherein what thing foener he would, which had the leaft colour. or shadow of remedie, seemed sufficient; we said, that he should make them, and so we agreed. that of the Stirrops, Spurres and Croffe bowes, and other things of Iron which were among ve. Navles, Sawes and Hatchets should be made; and other Tooles of Iron, seeing they were so need. full. And we tooke for remedie, to have fome food while this should be put in execution, that four entries should be made into Ante, with all the Horse, and others that could goe thither. and that every third day one Horfe should be killed, to be divided among them that wrought in the making of the Boates, and them that were ficke. The entries were made with as many men

Hard thife.

and horses, as was possible, who brought thence about source hundred Staras of Maiz, although not without controuerfie and contention, with those Indians. We caused many Palmiti alio to be gathered, that with the woolley part and barke thereof, twifting and drawing them in length we might be able to vie them in itead of Ockam for the Boats. And we vied to great diligence therein, that beginning the fourth of August, the twentieth

Ockam of

of September next fine Boates were finished, of two and twenty Cubits apiece, and we stopped the chinkes, and calking with Ockam of the Palmiti; and pitched them with a certaine Gumme. which a Greeian called Don Theodoro, brought from certaine Pine-trees, and with the fame barke of the Paimiti, and of the traines, and haire of Horses we made cordage and tackling . and made favles of our fhirts, and of the Sauine trees which were there, we made fuch Oares as we thought necessary : and fuch was that Countrey, whereinto our sinnes conducted vs , that no stones were found there, to ballaft the Boates, nor faw wee any throughout all that Countrey. Wee likewife flayed the whole legges of horses, and sewed the skinne together, to make bottles to carrie water. In this meane time, tome of our men went to gather Tamarindi in the frond of the Sea, where the Indian at two feuerall times wherein they incountred them, flue ten Christians, fo necreto our Tents, that we faw them, and could not helpe them, and found them that through from fide

Strong fhot.

No ftones,

to fide, with Arrowes, to that although our men had excellent Armour, they were not able to refift their strokes, those Indians shooting with fuch dexteritie and force, as afcresaid. And our Pilots faid and fwore, that from the flat shoare which we called by the name of the Croffe, vnto this place, we frad gone about two hundred and fourescore leagues, little more or lesse, and in all that Miserable sue- Countrey we saw no Mountaines, nor had any notice by any meanes, that there were any, and before that we imbarked, besides those which the Indians had slaine, there were more then forty other men dead through ficknesse and famine.

colle of the Speniards in this Voyage.

The two and twentieth day of September, they ceased to eate horses, so that only one remayned, and on that day wee imbarked in this order. In the Gouernours Boate went nine and fortie men, and in the other which hee gaue to the Auditour and Commissary, went as many more. The third, he gaue to Captaine Alonzo del Castiglio, and Andrea Durante, with eight 10 and forty men, and another he gave vnto two other Captaines, the one called Telles, and the other Pigualofa, with feuen and forty men, and the fift he gaue to the Controller and mee . with nine and forcy men. And after the victuals and furniture, and other things were shipped, they arose no more then a fourth part about the water, and beside this we were so streighted, that we could not guide not turne in the Boats. Necessitie was so powerfull, that it made vs adventure to goe in this manner, and commit our felues vnto fo dangerous a Sea, without having any one amone vs. who knew the art of Nauigation.

Spiaggia de

That flat shoare from whence we departed, is called the Spoare of the Horses, and we went seuen dayes through those gulies with the water vp to the girdle, without feeing any figne of the Coait; and at the end of those seuen dayes, we arrived at an Iland which standeth neere voto the Land. My Boat went before, and we law fine Canowes of Indians comming, who forlooke 60 them all, and left them in our hands feeing vs come towards them. Our other Boates went before, and lighted yoon certane houses in the same Iland, where they found many of their Egges and Thorn-back were dry, and greatly releeued vs in the necessitie wherein we were.

After this, we went further, and two leagues from thence we palled a Strait which that Iland

CHAP. I.S. I.Miferable thirfs. Courteous Indians. Interchange of bostages. 1505 maketh with the Land, and called it the Strait of Saint Michael, because we passed it woon that The Strait of

maketh with the Strate of that Strate, were arrived at the Coaft, where with the five Ca- Saint Michael nowes which I had taken from the Indians, we removed fome things out of our Boars, making them fast and joyning them to ours, so that they arose two handfuls aboue water, and therewithall we turned to goe along the Coast by the way of the River of Palmes, thirst and famine al- R. of Palmes. wayes increasing : because the victuals were very scant, and almost at an end, and we wanted water, because the bottles which we had made of the skinnes of horses, became fuldenly purified and mustie, and were good for nothing, and many times wee entred into certaine gulfes and flat shoares, which went farre within the Land, and found them all shallow and dangerous. And so 10 we went thirty dayes, and sometimes found some Indian fishers , a poore and miterable people : and at the end of their therry dayes, when our necessitie for want of water, was extreame, going to the Coalt, one night we perceived a Canow comming, and feeing her wee expected that the would have arrived; but although we called voto her the would not come nor behold vs, and because it was night we followed her not, but held on our course. When day began to appeared we faw a small Iland, and went thither to see if wee would find any water there, but wee labous red in vaine because there was none. While wee staved there, a mightie tempest atose voon vs. whereupon we abode there fixe dayes, not daring to put out to Sea againe, and having paffed fue dayes without drinking, our thirst was so great, that we were forced to drinke the Sca-wa-

ter, and some dranke so largely that fine of our men dyed suddenly. We went out the same way, 20 which we had feene the Canow goe, the night before we departed thence. This day we faw our Miferable felues many times drowned, and to cast away, that there was none of vs, who did not assure him. felfe of death. But it pleafed our Lord God, who in the greatest necessities vieth to shew his famour, that about Sunne set we weathered a point which the Land maketh, where wee found it very calme and quiet. Heere many Canowes came towards vs, and the Indians that were in them, spake vnto vs, and without wonking at vs returned. They were a people of a great bodie and well fet, and carried neither Bowes nor Arrowes. Some of vs followed them vnto their houses, which stood neere vnto the water side, and leaped aland, and before the entrance of the

houses, we found many pots of water, and great quantitle of fish, and the Lord of that Countrey

offered it all wnto the Gouernour, and taking him by the hand, brought him to his houfe (their houses are of Mats very well made.) And after we entred into the house of their Cazaque or Lord, he gaue vs much fish, and we gaue them bread of Corne which we brought, and they eat it in our presence, and demanded more, which we gatte them, and the Gouernour gave the Casigne many small trifles, and abiding with him in his house, about halfe an houre within night, the Indians affaulted vs, and the reft of our men, who road very ill, beeing cast vpon that Coast, they affaulted also the honse of the Cazique where the Gouernour was, and with a stone smote him on the face : and tooke the Cazique. But he having his men to neere escaped away, and left a Mantle of his of the skinnes of the Martinet Sables, which in my judgement are the best of all Rich Furres & the World, and have a fcent whereunto the fcent of-Ambergrife, and Muske is not compara- fweete Mariole ble : and the scent thereof was smelt very farre off. We saw also other but none like vnto that. Zibelline.

Now feeing the Gouernour wounded, we fet him aboord, and caused him to bring with him the greater part of the men vnto the Boats : and fifty of our men only remayned on land, to fight with the Indians, who that night affaulted vs three times, and with fo great violence, that every time they made ve retyrea ftones caft, fo that there was not one of our men, that was not

After this we returned to imbarke our felues, and fayled three dayes: and having taken a little water, as much as the few vefiels we had, were able to carrie, wee returned to fall into the same necessitie wherein we were first. And going on our Voyage, we entred into a Strait, where abiding we law a Canow of the Indians comming, and as we called vnto them, they came, and the Governour to whose Boat they were necrest, demanded water of them, who offered it him 50 if he would give them veffels wherein to carrie it: fo a Greeke Christian, called Theodoro, of whom

mention is made before, faid that he would goe with them. And although the Gouernour, and many other laboured to diffwade him, yet he would needs goe thither, and carried a Negro with him, and the Indians left for hoftages two of their men.

Those Indians returned in the Evening, and brought vs our vessels without water, but brought not our two Christians againe: and those two men of theirs, who remayned for pledges, as soone as they spake voto them, would have cast themselves into the water, but our men who had them in the Boat held them, and so the other Indians fled and left vs much confounded and forrowful, for the two Christians which we had loft.

The morning following, many other Canoas of the Indians came vnto vs, demanding their two 60 companions which they left vs for hoftages. The Gouernour answered, that he would give them vinto them, so that they would restore vs our two Christians. Fine, or fixe Lords came with those people, and it seemed to ve, that they were of a very good disposition, and of greater authority, and retinue, then all the reft wee had found hitherto, although they were not of fo tall a fta- Defiption of ture as the other before mentioned. They wore their haire loofe, and very long, and were co-their maians.

1506

Current.

uered with mantles of Martinets, of the same fort whereof we spake before, and some of them were made of a very strange fashion, having certaine laces of the worke of Lions skinines . which feemed very faire. They prayed vs. that we would goe with them, and they would give vs one two Christians, and water, and many other things: and many Canoas came continually voon vs, endeauouring to take the mouth of that passage, and so therefore, because the place was very dangerous, we went out to Sea, where we stayed with them vntill noone, But, not being willing to reflore our Christians, and therefore we also would not reflore their two hostages, they brean to cast stones at vs with slings: making shew also that they would shoot at vs, although we faw not about three or foure Bowes among them. And while wee continued thus: a fresh gale of winde beganne to blowe, and they went their way. So, we fayled all that day vntill the Io evening, at what time my Boat that went before, discovered a point which the Land made, and at the other end I faw a River : then I anchored at a fmall Iland, which maketh that point . to flav for the other Boats. The Gouernour would not come neere it, but put into a flat shoate vety neere thereunto, where many small Ilands were, and there wee all met together, and tooke fresh water within the Sea, because the River ranne into the Sea continually, and with great violence. And that wee might bee able to bake a little Maiz which wee brought, because for two dayes before, we had eaten it raw, we went aland on that Iland, but finding no wood there, we agreed to goe unto the River, which was behind the Point one league from thence. And as wee went, the current of the River was fo great, that by no meanes it suffered vs to arrive, but drove we backe from the Land.

ð. I I.

Mifery pur sues them at Sea, and betrayes them to the Indians: thetr miserable lines and death.

ReEe (ayled foure dayes, enery one eating halfe a handfull of raw Maiz a day by ratement. At the end of these foure dayes, a tempest tooke vs, which made vsrecouer the Boat of Captaine Telles, and through the great mercy which God shewed to some of vs, 30 we were not wholly drowned. And being Winter, and exceeding cold, and so many

dayes wherein we had fustained hunger, with many blowes which wee received from the Sea. the day following the men began very much to faint, in such manner, that when the Sunne went downe, all those that were in my Boar, were fallen one voon the other, so neere vnto death, that few of them had any fense, and among all them there were not five that could stand on their feete, and when night came there remained no more but the Master and my telfe , that could mannage the Boat, and two houres within night the Master said vnto mee, that I should take charge of my Boat, because he was in such case, that he held it for certainty, that hee should die that night. And fo I tooke the rudder, and midnight being past, I went to see if the Master were dead, who faid vnto me, that fuddenly he was better, and that hee would guide the Boat vntill 40 day. Then furely I found my felfe in such state, that much more willingly I would have receiued death, then fee fo many men before me in that manner wherein they were : and after the Master tooke charge of the Boat I rested my selfe a little, but very vnquietly, because at that time nothing was further from me then sleepe. And about the morning me thought that I heard the noise and roaring of the Sea, because being a very lowe Coast it raged much, whereupon when I heard this, I called to the Master, who answered me, that he supposed we were now neere vnto the Land; and founding, we found our felues in feuen fathome, and he thought it fit, that we should abide at Sea vntill the day appeared. And so I tooke an Oare and rowed to the Lands fide, which we found one league diffant, and put the stearne to the Sea. And being neere to the Land, a waue tooke vs, which cast the Boat backe againe into the Sea as farre as a man might 10 well fling a stone, and with the great blowe which it gaue, almost all the men who remained there as dead, received their fenfes againe, and feeing vs fo neere vnto the Land, beganne to arife and goe on their hands and feete. And having landed, wee made fire in certaine trenches, and boyled fome of the Maiz which wee had brought, and found raine-water: and with the heate of the fire, the men beganne to recouer and take ftrength; and the day that we arrived there, was

After the men had eaten, I commanded Lopez de Ouiedo, who was the best able, and itrongest of all the rest, that he should goe close to any tree of them that were there at hand, and climing vp into one of them, he should discouer the Land where we were, and see if hee could have any knowledge thereof. He did fo, and faw that we were in an Iland, and found certaine poore Cot. 60 tages of the Indians, which flood folitary, because those Indians were gone vnto the field. And so he tooke a pot, a young whelpe, and a little Thorn-backe, and returned vnto vs. About halfe an houre after, an hundred Indian Archers came fuddenly vpon vs. who though they were great, yet feare made them feeme to be Giants: and they stood round about vs , where the first chree

were. It had beene a vaine thing amongst visto thinke that there were any to defend vs. because there were fearce fixe that were able to nie from the ground. The Controller and I came towards them, and called voto them, and they came neere voto vs, and wee endeauoured the best we could to fecure them; so we gaue them Crownes and Bells, and every one of them gave mee an Arrow, which is a token of friendship, and they told vs by signes that they would returne water vs in the morning, and bring vs fomewhat to eate, because at that time they had nothing.

The next morning at the breake of day, which was the houre whereof the Indians had spoken, they came vinto vs, and brought vs much fish, and certaine Roots which they eate, and are like vato Nuts, fome bigger, and some leste, which they digge valer the water with much trou-10 ble. At the evening they returned againe, and brought vs more fish, and some of the same Roots, and brought also their wives and little children with them that they might see vs : and so they returned rich in Crownesand Bells which we gaue them, and the next day they returned to vi-

fite vs with the same things, which they had done before.

Then feeing we were now prouided of fish, of those roots, and water, and other things which we could get, we agreed to embarke our felues, and proceed on our Voyage : fo wee digged the Boat out of the fand, where it was fast moored, and were constrained to strippe our selues naked, and indured great labour to launch her into the water. Being embarked, about two Crof-bow shots within the Sea, there came such a wave of water that it washed vs all, and being naked, and the cold excreme, wee let goe the Oares, and another blowe which the Sea gaue vs , ouerturned the Boat, whereupon the Controller and two other went out to escape by swimming : but the cleane contrary befell them, because the Boat strucke them under water, and drowned Three drowthem. That Coast being very faire, the Sea cast vs all aland on the same Coast, all tumbled in acd. the water, and halfe drowned, so that we lost not a man, but those three, whom the Boat Snote whiler water. Wee which remained aliue were all naked, having lost all that which wee had. which although it were but a little, yet was it much for vs at that time : and being then No-

uember, and the cold very extreme, and being in such case, that a man might easily tell all our bones, we feemed to be the proper and true figure of Death. As for my felte, I am well able to fay, that from the moneth of May pait, I had not eaten any other thing then parched Maiz, and fometimes I was in fo great necessitie, that I have eaten it raw, because although the Horses were 30 killed while they made the Boats, yet I could neuer eate them, and I did not eate fish ten times. I speake this, that every one might consider, how we could continue in that case, and above all, the North wind blew that day, to that we were neerer with death, then life. It pleased God, that feeking the brands of the fire which we had made before wee embarked, wee found light there, and so making great fires, we stood crauing mercy from our Lord God, and pardon of our sinnes. with many ceares, every one of vs griening not onely for himfelfe, but for all the reft, that hee faw in the fame state. At the fetting of the Sunne, the Indian supposing that we had not beene gone, came to finde vs, and brought vs somewhat to eate, but when they saw vs thus, in so dif-

fering an habite from the first, and in such strange manner, they were so afraid, that they turned backe againe: but I went towards them , and called them , who beheld mee with much feare. 40 Hercupon I gaue them to understand by fignes, that the Boat was cast away, and three men drowned, and there they themselves saw two dead, and the rest of vs that were now remayning were going the high way to death.

The Indians feeing the misfortune which had befallen vs, and the lamentable case wherein we Humanitie of were, with fo great calamitie and miferie, came amongst vs, and through great griefe and com- Sauages. paffion which they had of vs, beganne mightily to weepe and lament, and that from the heart, infomuch that they might be heard farre from thence, and they thus lamented more then halfe an houre. And furely, seeing these men so depriued of reason, and so cruell after the manner of brute beafts, so bewayled our miseries, it caused that in me, and all the rest of our men, the compattion and confideration of our miferies should be much more increased. The mournfull lamen-Tation being Iomewhat appealed, I demanded of the Christians, whether they thought it fit, that I should intreate those Indians to bring vs to their houses, whereunto some of them that were of

Nona Spagna, answered me, that I should not speake a word thereof, because if they brought vs home to their houses, they would have facrificed vs to their Idols. Now feeing there was no other remedie, and that, what other way focuer, death was more certaine and more neere, I cared not for that which they faid, but prayed the Indians, that they would bring vs to their houfes, and they shewed vs, that it pleafed them very well, and that wee should tarrie a little, and they would doe as much as wee defired, prefently thirty of them laded themselves with wood, and went vnto their houses, which were farre from thence : and wee remained with the rest, vntill it was almost night, and then they tooke vs, and conducting vs, we went with much an-60 guish and heaumesse vnto their hou es. And because they feared lest through the extreme coldneffe of the way any of vs should die, or swound and faint, they had prouided, that by the way

foure or five great fires should bee made, fome small space distant each from other, and at every one of them they warmed ve, and when they faw that we had taken a little strength and heate, they brought vs to another, with fo great care, that they did not fo much as fuffer vs to fet our

feete on the ground, and after this manner we were brought vnto their houses: where we found that they had prouided an house for vs, & many fires therein, and about one house after we were come thither, they beganne to dance and reioyce, which continued all the night. Although a mongst vs there was neither ioy nor sleepe, expecting when they would have facrificed vs. In the morning they returned to give vs fish, and rootes, and vsed vs so well, that wee somewhat

affired our felnes, and loft fome part of the feare of facrificing. In those dayes wherein wee abode there, I faw a small Net, with one of those Indians, and knew that it was not any of them which wee gaue them, and demanding whence they had it. they answered me by signes, that other men, such as we were, gaue it them, who abode behind that place. I feeing this, fent two Christians, and two Indians, to shew them those men, and be- Io ing gone, they met with them very neere, who came to feeke vs out, because the Indians of those places had told them of vs. These men were Captaine Andrea Dorante, and Alonso del Cafielio. with all the men of their Boat. And being come vnto vs, they were afraid to behold vs in that manner wherein we were, and were very forrowfull that they had not any thing to give vs. hea cause they had no other garments, then those which they wore. And they abode there with vs. and told vs, how on the fift day of that fame moneth, their Boat had croffed ouer, one leave

and an halfe from thence, and that they had escaped without losing any thing.

Wee all agreed together, to trimme that Boat of theirs, and that all fuch as had ftrengh, and abilitie to doe it, should goe therein, and that the rest should remaine there vntill they recovered: and that when they were able, they should goe along the Coast, and waite there till God should an conduct them with the rest of vs vnto a Land of the Christians. And as we determined, so wee did, and before we lanched the Boat into the water, Tamera an Horseman of our companie died: and the Boat which we thought should carrievs, she also made her end, and was not able to vnhold her felfe, but was fuddenly drowned. Whereupon being in that manner aforefaid, and naked, and the weather so vnseasonable to trauell, and passe ouer Rivers and Gulfes by swimming, and having no victuall, or any fustenance, nor meanes to carrie them, we determined to doe that which necessitie and force compelled vs vnto, that is to say, to winter there. And wee likewise agreed, that foure of our luftieft and ftrongest men should goe to Pannes, supposing it neere vinto that place. And that if it should please our Lord God, that they arrived there, they should give intelligence that we were there, and tell them of our necessitie and miseries. They who went 20 were very great swimmers, the one was called Alnaro Ferrante, a Portugall, who was a Carpenter, and a Mariner, the second was called Mendos, and the third Figeron a native of Toledo, and the fourth wasborne in Zaffra, and they carried an Indian with them of the Iland of Ania. These foure Christians being departed, within few dayes after there came such unseasonable

weather of cold and tempetts, that the Indians could not finde the roots, and out of the channels where they were wont to fifth, they digged no fruit at all, and things falling out fo vnhap-pily, many people began to die: and fiue Christians who were in Xamo, ypon that Coast, came to fuch excremitie, that they eate one another, vntill there remained but one onely, because there was none to eate him. Their names are thefe Siera, Diego Lopez, Corral , Palatio, Gonzalo Ruis. The Indians were fo altered through this accident, and tooke fo great an offence, that without 40 doubt, if they had knowne it in the beginning, they would have killed them all, so that all wee had beene in very great danger. Finally, in a small time, of fourescore men (which wee were in

The Christians

care one ano-

ther, for hun-

happened to the Indiani, through the which halfe of them died, and they beleeved that wee were the men that killed them: and holding it for an affured truth, they contended among themselves to kill all those few of visthat were remaining; and now comming to put it in execution, an Indian which I had, faid vnto them, that they should not beleeue that we were those that killed them : for if we had such power, we would have procured, that so many men of our owne should not have died, which they had seene dead, without any abilitie of oursto remedie and helpe them, and that now wee were very few remaining, whereof none had done 50 them any prejudice or harme : wherefore it were better that they fuffer vs to line. Thus it pleafed our Lord God, that the rest followed his counsell and judgement, and so ceased from that purpofe. Wee called this Iland the Iland of Malhade.

they eate roots. At the end of Februarie they goe into other Parts to feeke food : because the roots beginne then to growe, and are not very good. This Nation , about all other parts of the

all) there remained onely fifteene. After this mortalitie, a certaine infirmitie of the stomacke

Iland Malhado.

The people which wee found there, are of a great stature, and well set, and have no other weapons but Bowes and Arrowes, with the which they are exceeding readie and quicke. The men haue one of their paps pierced from the one fide to the other, and there are some who have Pierced paps, them both pierced, and in the hole which they make, they carrie a Cane acrosse, of the length gallantry. of two spannes and an halfe and two fingers thicke. They likewise have the nether lippe bored, and within the fame they carrie a piece of a thin Cane, about halfe a finger thicke. The women indure much drudgerie and labour. The habitation which they make in that Iland, is from Octo- 63 ber vntill the end of Februarie, and their food is the rootes aforesaid, digged under water in Nonember and December. They have Weares, but have no fish but at this time, and before that

The Indians poore life.

world, love their children, and viethem beit. And when it happeneth that any one of their worth, some court with a state of the father, mother, and kindred, with all the people lament him, and the mour - Mourning for children dieth, the father, mother, and kindred, with all the people lament him, and the mour - Mourning for ning and lamentation, continueth one whole yeere, fo that every day before the Sunne artifeth, children, the parents beginne first to lament, and after them all the people, and they doe the same at noon, and in the morning : and the yeere being ended, they accomplish their Funerals, and honourable rites of Buriall, which they performe vnto the dead; and then they wash themsclues, and thirall the apparell which they wore. They bewayle all their dead in this manner, except the aged, whom they elterne nor, for, fay they, that they base now paffed their time; and are Age dieffeeno more good torany thing, but occupie the earth, and take away the maintenance from Infants to and little children. They vie to bury the dead, vileffe they be fuch as are Phyficians among them, Phyficians whom they burne, and while the fire flameth they stand all dancing with great joy, and make burned.

powder of the bones : and when the yeere is past, wherein they performe the honourable rites, vnto their dead, they all tumble, and wallow vpon the earth, and give that powder of the bones to the kusfolke, to drinke in water. Euery one haue their proper and peculiar wives. The Phyficians are they that have most libertie, who may keepe two or three wives, and among them

there is great friendship and conformitie. When any marrieth his daughter, hee that taketh her, bringeth vnto the wite, whatfoeuer he taketh by hunting or fishing, euen vnto the day wherein he is espoaled vnto her, who carrieth it vnto the houle of the father, without daring to take or eate any thing thereof: and afterward they bring food to the house of the father-in-law for 30 him to eate, and in all this time, neither father-in-law nor mother-in-law enter into their house, nor are they to enter into their house, nor the houses of their kindred. And if by chance they

meete each other in the way, they goe a Crol-bow shot off one from the other, and so long time as they thus goe farre off, they hang downe their heads, and cast their eies on the ground; for they hold it a wicked and an euill thing to be feene, and to be spoken vnto. The women haue libertie to conuerse with the fathers-in-law, and other kinsfolke ; and they of that Iland haue Filihie and

this custome more then fiftie leagues within the Land.

They have another custome, and that is this, that when any of their brethren or children die, for three moneths they prouide nothing to eate for them of the house where they died, but let them die through hunger, if the kinsfolke and neighbours prouide them not somewhat to eate. 20 Whereupon, at the time that we were there, many people dying, there was very great famine. In the most part of the houses, because they strictly observe their eustomes and ceremonies : and they who prouded food for them, it being a very hard time, could finde but a little. And voon this occasion, those Indians that had mee went out of the Hand, and in their Canoas passed ouer

vnto the firme Land, vnto certaine flat shoares, where they had many Oysters : and for three moneths in the yeare they eate no other thing, and drinke very bad water. They have great scarcine of wood, and great multitudes of Flies: their houses are made of mats spread woon the In Ils or Oyiters, and ouer them they sleepe voon the hides of beafts, which yet they have not but by a chance. And so we continued vntill the middle of Aprill, that wee went to the Seacoalt, where wee eate Mulberries all that moneth, wherein they end their sports, and felti-

40 uall iollitie.

In that Iland whereof I have spoken, they would make vs Physicians, without examining They are made vs, or demanding the titles of our profession, and because they heale the infirmitie with blowing Physicians. wpon the difeated , and cure them with that , and with their hands : they would that wee also should doe the like, and serue them in any thing whatsoeuer. But wee laughed thereat, saying it was a left and mockery, and that weeknew not how to heale, whereupon they tooke away our food, vntill we did that which they faid. And feeing our vnbeliefe, an Indian faid vnto me, that I knew not what I faid, because stones and herbes that growe in the fields have vertue, and that he with an hot itone, laying it vpon the stomacke, cured the paine: and that wee who are men, muit of a certaintie haue greater vertue, then all other things of the world. In the end, feeing Learned argue 50 our selues in so great necessitie we were constrained to doe it, yet not hoping to helpe any at all : ment,

the manner and meanes which they observe in curing is this, that seeing themselves sicke they fend for the Physitian, to whom (after they are cured) they give all that they have; and besides procure other things from their kindred to give them. The cure which the Phylitians doe vnto them, is to cut certaine gashes where the disease or griefe is, and sucke it round about. They seare Manner of it also with fire, which among them is held a verie profitable thing, and I have proved it and it curing. fucceeded well. After this, blowing in the place where the griefe is, they suppose the disease thereby to be removed. The meanes whereby we cured them, was to bleffe them and blow vpon them, and fay a Pater noster and an Aus Mary, and pray the best we could voto our Lord God, that he would give them their health, and put it into their hearts to vie vs well. It pleafed his

60 mercy that all they for whom he praied, as soone as wee had bleffed and hallowed them, taid vnto the rest that they were found and well : and for this they vied vs verie curteously and left eating themselves to give it vnto vs , and gave vs skins and other trifling things. The famine was to exceeding great in that place, that many times I continued three dayes withou. eating any thing at all , and to did they alto, infomuch as I thought it impefible to bee

able to live : although afterward, I found my felfe in farre greater famine and necessitie, as I shall hereafter fpeake.

The Indians who had Alonfo del Caftiglio, and Andrea Dorante and the rest that remayned line : being of another Language, and other parentage, passed ouer to another part of the firme Land, to eate Oysters where they abode vntill the first day of Aprill, and presently after they returned voto an Iland neere voto it about two leagues, for that it yeelded more water, and the Iland is halfea league ouer and five in length. All the people of that Countrey goe naked, and the women only have some parts of their bodie couered with a certaine kind of Cotton which they gather from certains trees, and the Damfels couer themselues with the skinnes of wild beafts. The people differ much one from another in their Garments. There is not any Lord or Cazione to among them, and all they who are of one Family and stocke goe together. Two forts of Langua ges dwell there, one of them that are called Capaques , and the other Han: they have a custome. that if at any time they fee fuch as they know, they fland halfe an houre lamenting, before they fneake : and after that, he that is vifited arifeth first and giveth vnto the other whatforger hee polleffeth, and he receiveth it : and a little after he goeth away with that Garment, and fometimes after they have received it, they depart without speaking a word.

Lamentable falurations.

> After Dorante and Callielie returned to the Hand, they gathered together all the Christians who were fomewhat difperfed, and found them fourteene in all. I (as I faid) abode on the other fide in the mayne Land, whither my Indians had brought me, and where a great fichnesse tooke me. Now when the Christians knew that, they gave the Mantle of Martinets (which weehad 20 taken from the Cazique as aforefaid) vnto an Indian that he might bring them where I was, to fee me : and fo twelve of them came, because the other two were so weake, that they feared to bring them with them. And when they were come to the firme Land, they found another of our men, called France (co del Leon. All these thirteene went along the Coast, and as soone as the Indians who kept me were gone, they adulfed mee, and told mee that Ieronime d' Alaniz, and Lope & Ouiedo, were yet remayning in that Iland. My infirmitie hindered mee that I could not follow them, and to I faw them not otherwise, and I was of necessitie to flaw with those same Indians of the Hand more then a yeere. But by reason of the great trauell and paines whereunto they put me, as also their euill ysage of me, I determined to flye from thence, and passe ouer vnto them, who abide in the Mountaines and firme Land, whom they call the Indians of Corn. 30 so, because I could not induce the life, which I led with the other. For among many other painfull labours, I was compelled to digge Roots under the water, and among the Canes where they grew under the ground. And here with I had my fingers to spoyled, that a firaw that should have touched me, would have drawne bloud; and the Cares being full of folinters tare mee in divers parts, among which I was to goe with the Garment aforefaid, which I wore, Whereupon I endequared to goe from thence vnto those other, and with them I continued somewhat better. And because I made my selfe a Merchant, I was carefull to performe that office with the best knowledge I had. And for this cause they gave mee food, and vied mee well, and prayed mee to goe from place to place for fuch things as they needed, because in respect of the Warres which they continually make among them felues, there is neither trauelling, nor much trading among 40 them : fo that now with my trafficke and Merchandile, I went throughout the whole Countrie as farre as I would, and trauelled along the Coaft, fortie or fifeie leagues. The principall trafficke I had, were pieces of thels of the Sea, and their hides, and thels wherewith they knit a certaint fruit like vnto Beech maft, with the which they prouide for their dancings and festivall sports: and this is the greatest thing of price among them, and crownes of the Sea, and such other like things. And this is that which I carried within Land, I afterward carried hides in exc. ange, and red Ocre with the which they anoint and die their faces, and their haire: I also carried fint flores to make Arrow heads and Glue, and friffe Canes to make Arrowes : and certaine flockes which they make of Decres haire to died, that it remayneth coloured. And this office greatly analed me, because I had libertie to goe whither I would, and was not bound to doe any thing, for I was 50 not a flaue, and whitherfoeuer I went they vied mee well, and gaue mee fomewhat to eate in refpect of my Merchandize, but that which most imported mee, was, that going thus I fearched, and faw how I might see further : and among them I was very well knowne. And fuch as knew mee not defired my company, and procured meanes to know mee for the fame which I had among them. I continued about his yeeres with them in that Countrie alone, and naked as they all goe.

Queuenes and Dragnanes, In-

Igot Lope de Onieda to travell with me to feeke out the Christians : but hearing by the Indians that only three were left of our company, he left me : and I remained alone with those Indians, who were called Quenenes, and they with whom Lope went, were called Dragnanes. Two daies after Lope de Oniedo was gone, the Indians who kept Alonfo del Caffiglio, and Andrea Dorante 60 came vnto the place, as those other Indians had foretold vs to cate of certaine Nuts, wherewith they maintaine themselves, grinding certaine graines with them two monethes in the yeere, without eating any other thing; although they have them not every yeere, because some yeeres they grow, and some not. They are of the bignesse of those of Galiera, and the trees are very

great, and are there in great number. Being now neere vnto the place where they lodged, Andrea Dorante came forth to fee who it was, because the Indians had now told him that a (brifti-47 was come. And as foone as he faw me, he remained much aftonished, because they supposed I had beene long fince dead, for to the Indians told them. Wee gave God heartie thankes to fee one another, and that day was one of them, wherein wee had the greatest joy and pleasure

And after comming where Castiglio was, they asked mee whether I would goe, I answered, that my purpole was to passe into the Land of the Christians, and that I went seeking and searching how I might doe it. Andrea Dorante answered, that long since hee intreated Castiglie and to Escusmico, that we might go further, but they durst not venter to do it, because they could not iwimme, and greatly feared the Rivers and Gulfes which they were to passe over, there being many in those Countries. Wherefore seeing it had pleased our Lord God to preserve mee among to many dangers and difeates, and in the end to bring mee into their company, they determined to flie, and that I should carrie them ouer the Rivers and Gulfes which wee found. And they aduetized mee, that by no meanes, I should let the Indians know that I would goe further, because they would presently kill me, and that for this cause I was of necessitie to stay with them fixe monethes, which was the time in the which those Indians went into another Countrie to cate Tune.

Thele Tame are certaine Fruits of the bigneffe of an Egge, red and blacke, and of a very good Tame, fruits of 30 tafte. They eate them three monethes in the yeere, wherein they eate no other thing, and be- India. cause at the time when they gathered them , other Indians beyond would come with Bowes to contract and barter with them, we (when they returned) might escape from our Indians, and goe with them. With this determination I remained there, and yeelded my felfe a flaue vnto

an Indian, with whom Derante abode.

These Indians are called Mariane, and Caffiglio remained with other of their Neighbours, called Iquales. And whole we continued there, they reported vnto mee, that after they were come Iquales. out of the Hand of Malbado vpon the Sea Coaft, they found the Boat wherein the Auditor and the Friers croffed ouer, and that paifing thole Rivers which are foure, and very great : the many currents tooke the Boat wherewith they went to Sea, and foure of them were drowned, the reit 30 with much labour passed the Gulfe; and that fifteene leagues surther they found another, and as foone as they met together there, two of their companions died in the time that they had trauelled fixtie leagues, and that all the rest were yet at the point of death, and that all that journie they had eaten nothing but Creui'es and Herbs of the wall, and comming to this last Gulfe, they faid, that they found Indians who flood eating of Mulberies, who when they faw the Chris firms they went vnto the other end, and so they standing still and denising meanes to passe the Gulfe, an Indian and a Christian came vnto them, and being come, they knew it was Figheroa, one of the foure we had fent before from the Hand of Malbado, who recounted vnto them in what manner he and his companions came to that place where two of them and one Indian died all through cold and famine, because they were come thither in the hardest time of the yeere: 40 and that the Indians had taken Figheros himfelfe and Mendes , which Mendes fied afterwards. travelling the best hee could towards Panner; and that the Indians followed after him and flue him, And that abiding thus with those Indians, her enderflood that with the Marianes there was a Christian, who had passed to the other side, and he found him with them whom they call

Queuenes. Which Christian was Gernaudo d' Esquinel, a Native of Badaioz, who came in the

company of the Commissary, and that from Elgainell, hee vinderstood what end the Gouernous had, together with the Auditor and the rest: telling them how the Auditor and the Friers had lanched their Boat into the Rivers, and comming along the Coast, the Governour landed his people, and went with his Boat untill they came unto that great Gulfe, where he turned to take in his men, and paffe ouer to the other fide, and returned for the Auditor and the Friers, and all the o reft. And he declared, that being thus imbarked, the Gouernour revoked the authoritie of his Lieutenant, which the Auditor had, and gaue that charge vnto a Captaine that went with him. called Pantoffa, And that the Gouernor stayed that night in his Boat, & would not come on Land, and the Matter abode with him, and one Page who was not well, and they had neither water nor any thing to eate in the Boat : fo about midnight to hard a gale of winde from the North tooke them, that it droue the Boat into the Sea before any one faw it, for he had nothing to releeue him but one flint stone, and they knew not that he had any other thing besides. And when the men who remained on the land faw this, they went along the Coast, and finding the water so rough, they made floats with much trouble and paines, and so piffed ouer vnto the other fide. And going further they came to the point of an Hill at the water fide, and found Indians there, who 60 when they faw them comming put their things into their Canowes, and palled our to the other fide of the Coast. So the Christians seeing what the time was being in November, abode in that Mountaine becaute they found water, wood, and certaine Creuifes there, where through cold and famine, by little and little, they beganne to die. And beside this, Pantoffa who remained

Lieutenant, vied them very ill, and not being able to indure it, the Sergeant Maior Brother of

The Somiards

A crue'l cu-

ftome of he

Indians, who

while they

children (as

foone as they

cate them, be-

marrie them

to their ene-

mics not to

their kindred.

P enurious

ther beaftly

mine which

cause they

would not

Valquez Porealle, who came in the fleete from Cuba, Master of the Campe, revolted from Pantoll 4, and fmote him with a piece of wood, with the which blow hee died, and fuch as died became the moriels of the other, and the laft that died, was the Sergeant Major, and Elanine did the like, and eating him, maintained himfelfe vntill the first of March, that an Indian one of them who fled from thence came to fee if they were all dead, and after brought Efquinel away from thence with him, who being in subjection to this Indian Figheroa spake with him, and understood all this of him which wee have before declared, and prayed him to come with him. that they might goe together towards Pamico : but Esquinel would not doe it, faying, that hee underflood by Friers that Pamico was behind them, and to he remained there, and Figheroa went to the Coast where he vied to abide.

All this Figheron reported vnto vs, by the relation which Efquinel made vnto him, and to from hand to hand it came vnto me. Whereby hee might fee and know the end which all that fleete had, and the particular mitchances which happened to euerie one of the reft. And hee further faid, that if the Christians at any time should goe through those parts, it might bee, that they thould fee E(quinel, b. caule hee knew that hee was fled from that Indian with whom hee abode, vnto the other which are called Marianes, who were their Neighbours. And to having ended his Discourfe, he and Afteriano, were about to goe vnto the other Indians that were further beyond, but those Indians who kept them perceiving them, went forth and came to give them many Bultinadoes and spoiled Asturane, and wounded him on the arme with an Arrow, but yet in the end they fled, and the other Christians remained : and procured those Indians to take them an for flaues, although abiding with them and feruing them, they were as entity intreased as everany flaues were or other men of the World. Because of fixe which they were, not being contented continually to buffet, and cudgell them, and placke off their beards with the skinne, only for their pultime and recreation and only for going from one house to another, they killed three, who are those of whom I spoke before, to wit, Diego Dorante, Valdeniesse, and Diego de Helma and the other three that remained, expected that they also should make the like end, and not being able to indure that life, Andrea Dorantes fled to the Marianes, who were they with whom Efquinel abode, and they themselves reported that they had kep: Efquinel there, who afterward would have fled, because a woman had dreamed that hee should kill a childe of hers; the Indians purfued him and flue him; and they afterward shewed Andrea Dorante his Sword, 30 Crowne, Booke, and other things which he had.

They have this custome also even to kill the same male children while they sleepe, and when the female children are borne, they leave them for the Dogs to eate, and cast them away in those viero kill their places. And the reason why they doe it is this, because they say that all they of the Country male children are their enemies, and make very great warres with them. Wherefore if by chance they should marrie their Daughters, their enemies should be the more increated, who would subject them, fleep, and caft and hold them all in captinitie. And for this cause, they would rather kill them, then have any borne of themselves to become their enemies. Wee demanded of them why they married them not among themiclues, who answered, that it was a beaffly thing to marrie them voto their kinare borne) to dred, and that it was much better to kill them, then give them for wives vnto their kinsfolke 40 and enemies. And they obterue this custome, and other of their Neighbours also called laguanes, and no other of that Countrie, but they observe the same. And when they take wives, they get the women of their enemies, and the price which they pay is the best Bow that they can get, with two Arrowes. And if peraduenture they have not a Bow, they give a Net of the widenesse of a mans arme, and as much more in length. Dorante abode with them, and not long after fled from them. Caftiglio and Effenamico came into the firme Land to the laquanes. All they are Archers, and well tet, although they be not fo great as the other which we left behind, and have all their paps and their lips pierced like them. Their food principally are roots of two or three forts, which they feeke throughout the whole Countrie, which are very hard and puffe vp fuch as eat them. They flay two dayes to roaft them, and many of them are very bitter, and withall they 50 dig them with much paines, but the famine in those Countries is so great, that they cannot line The Indians in without them 1 and they goe two or three leagues to feeke them. They fometimes kill any will e beast whatsoeuer, and at certaine times take fish, but this is so little, and their hunger so great, Vipers, and o. that they eat Frogs, Ants Egs, Wormes, Lizards, Salamanders, Serpents and Vipers, which with their stinging kill men : they also eat earth, wood, and what souer they can get the dung of wild things, by reabeaits, and other things which I leave to report, and I certainly believe, that if there were flones in that Country they would eat them. They keep the sharpe bones of fishes and Serpents, which continually is they eat to grind them all afterwards, and so eate that powder. The men load not themselves nor carrie bardens, but the old men and women do all this, who are least effeemed among them, they

beare no fuch loue to their children as the other doe, whereof I have spoken before. There are fome among them, who wie that finne which is against nature. Their women are very fufficient, and able to indure labour, for of the foure and twentie houres of the day and night, they have but fixe hours of rest, and all the greater part of the night they spend in heating their Ouens, to dry those Rootes which they eate. And when the day beginneth to appeare,

CHAP.I.S.2. Nimble Hunters. Troublesome flies. Intendment of flight crossed. 1513

they beginne to draw water, and carrie wood vinto their houses, and give order for other things which they want.

nion they want. The greater part of them are great Theenes, because although among them they are well di- Theones. uided, yet if the Father or the Sonne turne but their heads about, the one taketh from the other whathour he canget. They are great and monthrous Liers and great Drunkards, and for that purpole they drink: a certaine kind of drinke. They are fo well vied to runne, that without rething themselves, or standing still at all, they runne from Morning vntill the Evening following Indians which a Deere, and in this manner they kill many, following them untill they tire them, and forme- runne a whole a Decre, and in this manuser they and many, to nothing usern what they the them yet of the times take them aline. Their houles are of Mars fee vyon foure Arches, and they take them yet of the thousand of the times take them aline. Their houles are of Mars fee vyon nothing at all to be able to pring the manuscript of the times the time haue fruit thereof, and are a very pleasant and cheerefull people, and not with standing the great running, est-

hunger they indure, they cease not to dance and sport themselues. The best time which they have is when they eate Tune, because then they have no hunger, himaline in and pale all that time in dancing, and eate day and night all the time they have them. They the chair. wring them, open them, and fet them to dry, and beeing thus dried they hang them up in Garlands like figges, and keepe them to eate by the way, when they returne thence: they also dry Does life. their Pils and make powder of them. Many times while we were with them, it to tell out, that Tune-time, we continued foure daies without eating any thing, because it was not there to be had; to make vs merrie they told vs, that wee should shortly haue Tune, and should eate many of them and 20 drinke their juice, and fill our bellies very well, and that wee should be verie cheereful and contented, and without any hunger. And when they told vs this, it was fue or fixe monethes to

the time of Tune. And when the time came, wee came to eate Tune, and by the way wee found many flies of

three lorts, very milchieuous and noisome, and all the rest of the Summer they put wato much Fliestroubletrouble, And to defend vs from them we made fires of rotten and moult wood, that it might not some, burne but make a smoake, but this defence put vs to another trouble, for all the night wee did nothing elfe but complaine of the smoake which came into our eyes, and also of the great heate Noiseme rewhich the much fire gaue vs , and wee went out to fleepe by the fide thereof, and if at any time medic. we could fleepe, they remembred vs with their bastinadoes to returne and make the fives burne. 30 They who dwell further within the Land, vie a remedie for these flies, as intollerable as this and worfe, that is to fay, they got with fire-brands in their flands burning the Fields and the Woods and the world wherefoeuer they meete with them, to make the flies to flie away : and fo also they vie to digge wnder the earth for Lizards, and other fuch like things to eare them, they vie allo to sold Deere; compassing them with many fires. Which they also doe to take away food from the beatts, that they might be constrained to goe from thence to find it, where they would have them. For they

40 them to be eaten, and in the fires which they made to hunt the flies, and tarried till the next day to take some thing to carrie with them by the way. When they depart they goe so miserably vexed with flyes, that they seeme to have the disease of Lazarus, and in this manner they expell hunger two or three times in the yeere with fo great

paines as hath beene faid : and because I have proved it, I dare affirme, that there is no travell in the World found like vnto this. They found Oxen there and I faw them three times, and eate of them : and (as I thinke, they Oxen of that

are of the bignesse of those of Spaine. They have little hornes we the Moresche cattle, and very Countrie. long haire, and some of them are ash-colour, and others blacke, and in my judgement they have better haire and much thicker then those of our Countries. Of those which are not great, they 50 make Garments to couer them, and of the greater they make shooes and Targets and these came from the North further through the Land vnto the Coast of Florida, and extend themselves farre within the Land more then foure hundred leagues. And in all this way, through the Vallies by which they come, the people that dwell there, come downe and eat of them, and fend great ftore

of hides into the Countrie. When the fixe moneths were ended, wherein I abode with the Christians, hoping to put the determination made betweene vs in execution, the Indians went to eate Tune, which might bee fome thirtie leagues from thence, and being now readie to flie from them, the Indians with whom we about, fell at variance among themselves about a woman, and beffetted and beate her, and broke her head : and for the great hatred and anger they conceived, they tooke their houses, and 60 every one went vnto their place. Whereupon it was necessarie, that all the Christians who were

there, should separate themselves with them, so that by no meanes wee could meet together againe vntill the next yeere : and in this time I passed much miserie, as well for the great famine I indured, as for the cuill viage, and had entertainment those Indians gave mee which was such, that I was faine to flie three times from those Masters that kept me, who all came diligently to Kkkkkk 2

neuer fettle themselves todwell, but where wood and water are, and sometimes they load themfelues all with this prouision, and goe to feeke Deere, which (most commonly) abide where Decretisant there is neither water nor wood : and the day they came thither they killed Deere, and some o- dry placesto ther hunting game fuch as they could get, and confumed all the water and wood in preparing avoid Hunt-

dead men. &c.

Bor. faith hec.

that they billed

feeke me that they might kill me, but it pleased our Lord God , not to suffer them to find mee and to preferue me from their hands through his infinite mercie.

As Coone as the time of Tane returned, wee Christians found our selves together agains in the fame place where we werebefore, and having now joyned together to flie from thence, and appointed the day, that very felfe fame day the Indians leparated vs, and every one went voto their place, fo I lad voto the Christians, that I would expect them at the Tune, vntill the Moone were full, and that day when I faid this vinto them, was the first of September, and the prime of the Aloone. And further I affured them, that if they came not within that time, I would go thence alone and leave them. And fo we separated our schees, and every man went with their Indians. and I flaved with mine vntill the thirteenth of the Moone; and my determination was to flie 10 thence vnto the other Indians, when the Moone should be full. On the thirteenth of the faid moneth. Andrea Dorante and Estenamico came vnto me and told me, that they had left Castiglio with other Indians, whom they call Canagadi, who dwelt neere thereabout, and that they had passed many mileries, and had lost their way. And that the day before our Indians removued from their place, and were gone towards the place where Caffielio abode to ioyne themselves with them who kept him, and make themselves friends having beene enemies and at warres, even vn. till that day: and in this manner allo we recovered Caffiglio. In all the time that were eate the Time were were thirstie and for remedie wee dranke the juice thereof, which wee powred in a trench which we made in the Earth, and when it was full, we dranke thereof vntill we were atisfied: it is sweet and pleasant, and of the colour of new wine boyled, and this they doe became there are no other veffels there wherein to put it. There are many forts of Tune, among which fome are verie good, although all feemed good vinto me, and hunger gaue mee no time to bee able

ches. For although they have Rivers there, neuertheleffe, because they never have any certaine and fetled place of abode, they have no particular water knowne to them, or appointed place where to take it. Throughout the whole Countrie there are many great and goodly fences, and of excellent pasture for flockes and herds of cattle, and it would be a very fruitfull Countrie if it were manured, and inhabited by a people which had reason and knowledge. We saw no Mountaines in all that Countrie all the time we flayed there. Those Indians told vs , that further beyond there were another people, called Cameni, who live toward the Coast, who had ilaine all the men which came in the Boat of Pigualofa and Telliz, and that they were all so weakeand ficke, that although they killed them, they did not any way defend themfelues, and to they made an end of them all, and they shewed vs their Garments and Wespons, and that the Barke remayned there on the other fide. This is the fift Boat which made up the account, because wee What became have alreadie faid, that the Sea carried away the Boat of the Governour, and that of the Andtour and the Friers was seene cast athwart the Coast, and Efquinel declared the end of them. The two wherein Castiglio, my selfe, and Dorante went, we have alreadic said, that they were

The greatest part of all this Nation drinke raine water, gathered together in certaine Tren-

ò. III.

Their flight from the Indians to others, wonderfull cures, backe and belly cares : their tranells thorow the Countrey, and hungry adventures. Divers peoples and their customes.

drowned at the Hand of Malhado.

Fter we were remoued from the place, about two daies journey from them, wee recommended our felues vnto our Lord God, and went flying thence, hoping that although 30 the time of the yeerewere now late, and the Tune ended, yet with the fruits that re-

mained in the fields, wee should be able to trauell a great part of the Countrie. And io going that first day with much feare that the Indians would have tollowed vs. wee saw certains smoakes, and going towards them after the evening we faw an Indian, who when hee faw vs fled without tarrying for vs. Whereupon we prefently fent the Negro vnto him, who when he faw him alone stated for him. The Negro faid voto him, that we came to feeke out those people that mode those smoakes, so he answered, that their horses were neere that place, and that hee would guide vs thither, and to we followed him and hee went running to give notice of our comming. And about fun-fet we faw the houses, and about two crosse-bow shoots before weecame thicker, we found foure Indians who stated for vs and courteously entertained vs. Wee told them in the language of the Mariames that we came to leeke them, who leemed to be glad of our company, and to they brought vs to their houses, and placed Dorante and the Negro in the house of a Phifitian, and me and Cafinglio, with certaine others. These people have another language, and are called Ausuares, and are they who yied to bring the Bowes vnto those our first matters, and to

contract with them: and although they be of another nation and language, yet they understand the language of them with whom we first abode; and they themselues also that selfe same day came into that place with their houses. The people presently offered vs much Tune, because they knew vs both that we had healed them.

The verie fame night that we came thither, certaine Indians came into Castiglio, and told him that they had veriegreat paine in their heads, intreating him that he would heale them : and after he had bleffed them and recommended them vnto God, in the verie same instant they said enat they were well, and that the paine was gone. So they went into their houses and brought Curcavery vs much Tune, and a piece of flesh of a wilde beast, which we knew not what it was. This being wonderfull. 10' published among them, many other diseased people came that night that he should heale them, yet ruc. and eueric one of them brought a piece of Venison, and they brought so many that we knew not Beago (which where to put them. We yeelded great thankes vnto God, who to continually euerie day increa- trauelled tourfed his mercie and his grace towards vs. Thus when the cures were ended, they began to dance the ludies with and fing their rimes, and make their sports vitill the next day at the rifing of the Sunne, and this the Spaniards

feltiuall iollitie continued three daies by reason of our comming thither. Afterward wee asked from 1541.) them of the Countrie beyond, and of the people and victualls that are found there, and they an faith that of it fwered vs. that throughout all that Countrie there was much Ture, but that they were now ended and that we should find no people, because after they had gathered the Tune, eueric one company sears returned to their houses, and that it was a verie cold Countrie, and verie few skinnes were by timereumed,

Seeing this, and confidering that the Winter, and cold time of the yeere was come we agreed to winter with them. And at the end of fine daies, after we came thither they departed thence, by breathing and went to leeke other Tune, where other people were of other Nations and divers languages : and having rauelled fine daies journey with much hunger, becaufe neither Time, nor other fruits the fickerained are found by the way, wee came to a River and fet vp our houses there, and after went to seeke to life three certaine fruits of a tree like vnto a fig tree, and there being no high way in all those places, I flaied longer then the rest in finding them, and so they returned to their houses, and I remained alone, and comming to seeke our men that night I had almost lost my selfe: and it pleased God that I pardon me, will found a tree under the which there was a fire, and at that fire I palled the cold of that night. In easter believe ao the morning I loaded my felfe with wood, and taking two fire brands I returned to feeke them.

and went in this manner five daies, alwaies with my fire and burden of wood, because if my fire should have beene extinguished in places where there had been no wood (as in many places there raised hade one is none) I was to kindle other fire brands and not to remaine without fire, because I had no other remedie against the cold, being as naked as ever I was borne. And in the night I had this reme- Ben. 1. 2. 2. 13. die, that I went to any small plat of ground beset with trees neere vnto the Ruer , and there a- I permit ome bode before the Sun went downe and made a trench in the ground and put much wood therein, ons, more tor which they vie to doe of certaine trees, whereof in those places there is great abundance, and knowledge of put many shokes together of such as were falne and drie, and about that trench I made foure fiers the Countrey, a croffe, and thought to come from time to time to renew the fiers, and had made certaine bun-then for credit dels of traw, whereof in those places there is much, and therewith I couered me in that trench, in the Indies. and in this manner defended my selfe from the cold of the nights : and on a certaine night and which you shall

the fire lite on the straw which couered mee while I was sleeping in the trench. So the fire befind in Ca/as of gan to burne verie fiercely, and although with much furiel leaped out, yet the token of the dan- another nager which I had passed remained in my haire. In all this time I eate not one morfell nor found ture. These any thing to eate, and going thus fcorched and finged much bloud isfued from my feet, and God vied great mercie towardes mee that in all this time the North winde blew not, for otherwise to connect the there had beene no remedie but I must needs haue died. At the end of my fiue daies I came to a peorlete God, River fide where I found my Indians, who together with my Christians held me for dead, and al. and therefore River lide where I found my Indians, who together with my Constitutes need to dead, and are not like to wates thought that some viper had itting me. And when they found me they greatly rejoyced to have any difee me, but principally the Christians, who faid vnto me, that vntill that time they had trauelled uine begin-50 with much hunger, and for that cause they came not to seeke mee, and that night they gave mee ning, but re

of the Tune which they had. The day following we departed thence, and went vnto the place either sally where much Tune was, wherewith we all fatisfied the great hunger which we had, and we Chriflians gave many thankes vnto our Lord God, who left vs not without remedie.

The next day many Indians came to vs in the morning, and brought five ficke men with them, the Father of who were lame and verie ill, and they came to feeke Caffiglio that he might healethem, and eue- fallhood. And ry one of them that were difeased gaue him their Bowes and Arrowes, which he received, and at why may they ry one of them that were diffeafed gaue him their Bowes and Arrowes, which and recording to the fetting of the Sun he bleffed them, and recommended them vnro God, and wee all belought to the Deuill, him with the best denotion we could that he would give them health, seeing wee saw there was either a clies it 60 no other remedie but to doe the best we could that those people might helpe vs, that so we might neuer done so

willish Ares to maintaine rapine and superstition, which are here mentioned the eff. Es thereof? Atola tells of a great miracle-Worker in the Ladies, a vicious man, and hanged for knaueries. This Comes-Head the Author is also by Schmidd before, recorded for a bad man in his acts state Riuce of Plate, I will conclude with S. Aug de vnit, Ecc. 16. Removemble ills, wel figures mendations hominum vel pertenta fallacium fpirsenum Ge. Kkkkkk :

1516 Indians cured by Christians. Dead raifed. Diabolical Superstition, LIB, VIII.

be able to get out of that miferable life ; and his infinite goodnesse dealt so mercifully with ve that when the morning came they all arole as found and strong, as if they had neuer had any difeafe. This caused them much to wonder, and likewise to render infinite thankes vnto cor Lord, and that we more entirely acknowledged his great goodnesse, and had assured hope that he would deliner vs, and conduct vs vnto the place where we might better ferue him. And for my felte. I can boldly speake, that I alwaies had an affured trust in his mercie, that hee would raise me from that captiuitie, and to I alwaies faid to my companions. When the Indians were gone. and carried away their ficke men healed, wee went thence, where the other abode eating Tame. and these are called Cacalcuches and Maticones, who are of another language, and together with them were other called Coaiss and Susolas , and on the other fide others called Ataiss, and they In maintaine warres with the Sufolas, and they shot every day amongst them : and because in those places they talked of nothing elfe but of miracles which our Lord God wrought by our meaner. they came from many parts to feeke vs that we might heale them, and at the end of two daies wherein we staied there, certaine Indians of Sufolas came vnto vs and intreated Castiglio that hee would goe to cure one that was wounded and other ficke men, faying, that among them there wisone who was readie to die. Castiglio was a verie fearefull Physitian, especially when the cures were grieuous and dangerous, and beleeued that his finnes would have caused that all the cures should not succeed well. The Indians faid vnto mee, that I should goe to heale them. because they wished mee well, and remembred that I had sometimes healed them where the nots grew, and that for the fame they had given me nuts and hides : and this was when I cameto 10 ioyne my felfe with the Christians; wherefore I agreed to goe with them, and Dorante and Efe. And when we were come neere vnto the Cottages which they have, I saw the sicke man

whom we went to cure, who was now dead, and about him stood many people lamenting, and his house plucked downe, which among them is a signe that the master thereof is dead. So when I came I found his eyes distorted, and that he had no pulie, and had all the tokens of a dead man, and as it feemed to mee it was fo, and Dorante affirmed the same vnto me. I tooke vo the matt which he had upon him to couer him, and the best I could I prayed unto the Lord, that he would give mee grace to give health vnto that ficke men, and to all the rest that had need thereof. And after I had bleffed him and blowne vpon him many times, they brought me his Bow and gaze it youto me, and a cheft of Time; and brought me to cure many other who were ill at eafe with gid. dinesse, and gave me two other chests of Tune, which I gave vnto our Indians which came with vs, and having done this wee returned vnto our lodgings : and our Indians to whom I gauethe Tame remained there, and at night returned to their houses also, and faid, that hee who was then dead whom I had cured in their presence, arose vp and was well, and walked, and eate, and spoke with them; and so all the rest which I cured remained found without any seuer, and very cheerges opinion be full. This caused very great admiration and seare, and throughout that whole Countrey they speake of nothing elfe. All they to whom this report went came to seeke vs, that we might healt them and bleffe their children; and when the Indians who abode in the company of our men, who that they killed were the Catalenebi were to go thence, they gave vs all the Tune that they had for their journey, so without leaving any for themselves, and gave vs fire-stones of an handfull and an halfe in length with the which they cut, and among them they are held in great estimation. They intreated vs that we would remember them, and pray vnto God that they might alwaies be in health, and we promifed them to doe it, and with this they went away the most contented men in the world, having given vs all the best of that which they had. So we staied with those Indians Anamares eight moneths, and this account we made by the Moone. In all this time many people came to feeke vs and faid certainly that wee were the children of the Sunne. Dorante and the Negro vntill then had not healed any, but through the great importunitie of fo many people which flocked together from all parts we became all Phylitians, although for the affurance to undertake every cure I was most noted amongst them all, and we never undertooke to cure any who told vs 50 not that hee was found and well: And they had so great confidence in vs, that they thought they could not be healed but by our hands, and they beleeved that as long as wee flaied with them not one of them could die.

or forrit of the Indians.

A dead man

raifed. If Ben-

nor rather to

he embraced

the liuing; as

this author alfo

reports of his

in the end of

this booke.

Children of

the Sunne.

All become

Physicians.

Cataleuches

MATICAREL

Sufalas and

Corios.

Ataies.

Indians:

Disholicall

They, and those who are further behind them, declared a very strange matter vnto vs, and by the fignes which they made it appeared that it fell out fifteene or fixteene yeeres fince; and this An euill thing it is, they fay, that a man went about that Countrey (which they call an Enill thing) which was of a little bodie and had a beard, although they could never cleerely fee his countenance. And when he came to any house all their haire, who were within stood vpright and they trembled, and prefently at the doore of the house appeared a flaming fire-brand, and then that man entred into the house and tooke from them what soeuer he would, and gaue them three great cuts vpon 60 the Hanke with a fire-stone very sharpe, as broad as a mans hand, and two handfulls long, and put his hand upon those gathes and drew out their bowells, and cut them about an handfull, and that piece which he cut he put upon the coales to broile : and prefencly gaue them three other cuts in one arme, and then smote them where he had lanced them, and dissoynted their arme and a

CHAP.I.S.3 Indians Slaues to Satan Leather babit. Shauing of skins good food. 1517

little after returned to fet it agains and put his hand upon their wounds, and they fay that they became faddenly whole. And that many times while they danced that Emill thing appeared among them, lometimes in the habite of a woman, and at another time like a man. And fometimes he tooke away an house or a cottage, and tooke it vp on high, and a little after fell downe againe together with it and gaue a great blow. Moreover they told vs that they give him mear, but he neuer eateth; and that they asked him whence he came, and in what part his house was; so he shewed them a cleft of the earth , and faid that his house was wnder that. At these things which they told vs we laughed exceedingly, and made a left thereof: who feeing wee beleeued it not they brought vs many of them whom that manhad taken, and we faw the fignes of the cuts Io which he had given them in the places which they had told vs. Wherefore wee faid vnto them that he was a wicked man, and after the best manner we could we gave them to understand, that if they would beleeue in our Lord God, and become Christians as we were, they should not need to feare him, and that he durit not come to doe those things vnto them : and that they should hold it for a certaintie, that while wee staied in that Countrie hee durit not appeare there, with this

they remained verie well contented. Thete Indians told withat they had feene Austuriano and Figheroa, with others who abode on the coalt beyond, whom we called those of the Fig-trees. All this Nation knew not the times by the Sunne nor Moone, nor keepe any account of the moneths or the yeere : but know the difference of the times according as the fruits come to be ripe, and by the mouing of the fiftes and Their compa-20 appearing of the Stars, wherein they are verie wise and well experienced. With them we were taxion of times alwaies well intreated, although we were faine to dig that which we had to eate with our owne hands, and carrie our burdens of water and wood. Their houses and sustenance are such as the other have behinde them, although they have much greater hunger, because they have neither Maiz, mait, nor Nuts. We went alwayes in leather like them, and in the night wee courred our

selves with Decreskins. Of eight moneths which we staied with them, in fix of them we indured much hunger, because the fish was not yet found. And at the end of that time the Tune began now to grow ripe, and before thole Indians perceived vs wee went further vnto the other,

called Maticones. They were one dayes journey from thence, whither I and the Negró came, and at the end of 30 three dayes I tent the Negro to bring Dorante and Castiglio, and when they came wee departed all together, with those Indians, who went to eate certaine small fruites of certaine trees, wherewith they maintaine themselves ten or twelve dayes, vatill the Tame come. And there other Indians joyne with them, called Arbadaes, and among them we found many ficke, weake, and fwollen, info much as we greatly maruelled thereat. And the Indians with whom wee came. returned againe the same way, and we taid we would remaine with those other, for the which they fignified that they were greatly displeased, and so we abode in the field with them. neere wnto those hortes. And when they faw vs, they withdrew themselves, and after they had reasoned a little, every one of them tooke one of vs by the hand, and brought vs to their houses. With Hungers per-

them we indured greater hunger then with the other, so that in the whole day we cate but two ambulation. 40 handfuls of those fruits which were greene, and had so much juice, that they burned our mouthes; and therebeing great fearcitie of water, they cauled much thirst to them that eate them. And the famine being fo great, wee were faine to buy two Hogges of them, and in exchange thereof, wee gaue certaine Nettes, and other things, and one skinne wherewith I co-

I have already faid, that throughout all that Countrey we went maked, and not being accustomed vato it before, we changed our skins twice in the yeare, after the manner of Serpents. And Apparell, the Sunne and the weather cauted many great fores to arile voon the brefts & shoulders of some ofvs, which put vs to great paine, in respect of the burdens which wee carried, that were very heavie, and made the cords to flick in our armes. And the earth was forough and lagged, that ma-

50 ny times when we gathered wood, when we had made an end of digging, the blound ran down from many parts of our bodies, by reason of the thornes and briers wherewith wee met, which tore vs whereforeuer they touched vs. On a time I happened to feeke wood, and after it had drawne much bloud from me, I could not carrie it on my shoulder, nor traile it along the ground; when I found my felfe in this torment, I had no other remedy nor comfort, but to thinke on the paffion of our Lord Iesus Christ, and of the bloud which he shed for me, and consider how much greater the torment might be , which hee fuffered through the crowne of thornes, then that which I indured. I contracted with those Indians, making Combes, Bowes, Arrowes, and Nets for them. Wee also made Mats, which are things whereof they have very great neede, and although they know how to make them, they will make none for feeking foode to eate the meane while, for when they fet themselves to worke, they sustaine very grear hunger, At other times they made me shaue skins, and make them thin, and the greatest prosperity that I had among them, was the day when they gaue mee any hide to shaue, because I shaued it much, and

eate those shauings, and that sufficed me for two or three dayes; yet it hapned, both with these

and the other whom we lett behinde, that when they gave vs a prece of flesh, wee eate it raw,

Famines Dif-

for if wee had boiled it, the first of them that came would have taken it, and eate ir. wherefore wer thought it had not beene well done to put it to that danger; and besides. wee were none of them that would bethinke our felues whether wee should rather eate it fod-

This was the life we led with these Indians, and that little sustenance which we had we one it by [mall trifles which we made with our hands, After we had eaten their Dogs, supposing that we had fome little strength to be able to goe further, we recommended our selues vnto our Lord God, that he would guide vs, and freed our felues from those Indians, who brought vs vnto other of their language, who dwelt neere thereunto; and fo as we went it rained all that day, and beide that, we loft the way, and were to flay at a very great Mountaine, where wee gathered to many leaves of Tune, and bakd them that night in an Ouen which we had made, and put fo much fire to them, that in the morning they were ready to be eaten, and after wee had eaten them, we recommended our felues vnto God, and went from thence, and found the way which we had loft. And having passed the Mountaine, we found other houses of the Indians, and being come thither, we faw two women and certaine little children that went on that Mountaine. who fleing vs were afraid, and fled to call their Indians, who went through the Mountaine, And being come, they staid to behold vs behinde certaine trees, so wee called vnto them, who ranne with much feare, and after we had spoken vnto them, they told vs that they had indured great famine, and that neere vnto that place many of their houses stood, and said, that they would bring vs thither : and so that night we came where fiftie houles were, and they were all amazed to behold vs. and flood aftonished through exceeding feare; and after they were somewhat comforted, they came neere vnto vs, and laid their hands vpon our faces and bodies, and after put them your their owne faces and bodies. So we flaied that night, and when the morning came, they brought the difeated that were among them vnto vs, intreating vs that wee would bl. fie them, and gave vs fuch as they had to eate, which were the leaves of Twee and greene Time rofted or dry, and for the good intertainment they gaue vs, and because they parted with that little which they had willingly, and were contented to be without meate themselves to give it vnto vs, we abode with them certaine dayes. And while we thus staied, other Indians, of them that were farre beyond, came thither, and when they would be gone, wee faid to the former ladians, that we would goe with the other, which much differed them and so we left them 30 forrowing for our departure, at they which they conceived great displeasure.

Sine Cerere & libero friges Venus iucket lithe age of twolug yearcs,

From the Iland of Malbado, all the Indians which we faw in that Countrey, Obferue this for a common custome, that if they perceive their women to be great with childe, they lye not with them, vitill two yeares be paffed, after the children be borne, to the which they give The Indians let fucke, vntill they be of the age of twelve yeares, that they are now of understanding to provide their children foode for themselues. We demanded of them, for what reason they did thus nourish them, who answered vs, that they did it for the great famine which was in that Countrey : where, as wee our felues faw, they were faine to continue fometimes three or foure dayes without eating, and therefore they let them facke, that in that time they might not dye through hunger, and it notwithstanding some should escape, they would become too delicate, and of little strength. If by 40 chance it happen that any among them be ficke, they let them dye in those fields, if he be not a childe, and all the rest that cannot goe with them remaine there, but for a childe, or a brother of theirs, they lay them upon their necke, and so they carry them.

They have all this custome to be seperated from their wives, when there is no agreement be-

tweene them, and that both they and the may marry againe with whom they pleate. And this

is viual among the yonger fort; but fuch as have children neuer fortake their wives. And when

they contend with other people, or be at variance one with another, they buffet and beate each

Other with cuide is vntill they be very weary, and then they part, and fometimes the women

part them, going betweene them, because the men come not in to part them ; and what choller

No deadly

or passion somer they have, they fight not together with their Bowes and Arrowes. And after 50 they have purferted and cudgelled each other, the braule being ended, they take their houses and women, and goe to liue in the fields, seperated from the reft, vntill their anger and choller be past: and when they are now pacified, it is not needefull that others interpose themselves to make peace and friendship, because in this manner they make it themselves. And if they who be at variance have no wives, they goe to other of their neighbours, who although they were their enemies, receive them courteously, and doe them much flactering kindnelle, and give them fuch as they have, fo that when their choller is pail, they returne rich vnto their people. They are all warlike people, and vie as great subtilty to defend them from their enemies, as they would Vicot Horles, dee, if they had bin brought up in lialy, and incontinual warre. The horles are they that onely ouercome the m, and which the Indians generally feare. They who are to fight with them, must be 60 very wary that they know not that they be faint or cowardly, and while the battaile continueth, they are to vie them the worlt they can. For if they perceive them to be timerous or cowards, it is a people that very well knoweth the time to avenge themselves, and to take courage and strength from the feare of their enemies. When they are shot in the warres, and have spent

CHAP. I.S.3. Sundry Nations of Malhada. New manner of brewing. Arrowes, they returne every one their way, without any pursuit of the enemy, although the one part be few, and the other many, and this is their cultome. They goe many times away that cleane through with Arrowes, and dye not, if they touch not the bowels or heart, nay, they quickely heale them. They ice and heare, and haue the sharpest sences, I thinke, of any men in Quickesenses,

the world. They are very well able to endure hunger, thirft, and cold, as they who are more acquainted there with then any other.

In the Illand of Malbada there are two languages: the one called Causques, and the other Han. Names of the In the firme land, afront that Iland, are others called Carruce, who take their name from the Nitions of In the firme land, arront that Hand, are others called Carrier, who take their mains from the Mountaines where they line. Further, who the coaft are others, called Deguenes, and a Me'ada.

10 front them, are others called Mendica. Farther upon the coast are the Queuenes, and afront Canonas. these within the firme land are the Marsanes, and going further vpon the coast are other, called Garnes. Gustiones, and afront those within the firme land the legunzes, at the end of them are other, cal- Digueses. led Ataus, and behinde them other called Acubadaos, and of these there are many along this Madica. bankefurther. Other called Quitoles, live on the coaft, and afront them within the firme land are the Auguares, and with their the Maliacones vnite themselves, and the Cultalentebes, and other Gamones. called Sufalm, and other called Comos, and further upon the coalt abide the Cumoles, and on the 11941225. fame coalt beyond are others, whom we called them of the Figtrees. All these Nations have ha- Fisies, and bitations, and people, and divers languages. Among them there is one language, in the which, deubedas. bitations, and people, and divers languages. Among them there is one language, in the which, when they lay vato men, looke there, they lay arrace, and to the Dogs, they lay Xo: and in all Ausumer, and 20 that Countrey they make the meleues drunke with a certaine smoake, and give what source they Mailaton's.

Like wife they drinke another thing which they take from the leaves of trees, like voto the Sufakus Comoto Mulberry trees, and baile it in certaine veffels on the fire, and after they have boyled it, they fill Comoits, the veffels with water, and fokeepe it over the fire, and when it hath beene twice boiled, they poure it out into certaine veilels, and coole it with halfe a goord, and when it gathereth much tome, they drinke it as hot as they areable to fuffer it, and while they put it out of the veffell, and entill they drinke it, they stand crying, who will drinke. And when the women perceive these exclamations, they presently settle themselves, not daring once to move, although they finde that they are very well beloued. And if by chance any of them moue, they accompt her

30 shamelesse, and cudgell her, and with much choller and anger cast away the water or drinke which they have made: and if they have drunke it, they vomit it out againe, which they doe very eafily. The reason of this their custome, they say is this, that if when they will drinke of that water, the women moue themselves from the place where they heare that voyce, some bad thing might be put into that drinke, which entring into the body, in fhort space would cause them to dye. And all the time, that that water is boyled, the veffell must be well closed and flut, and if peraduenture it flould stand vncouered, and any woman should come and passe by, they cast it away and drinke no more of it. It is of the colour of Saffron, and they drinke it three dayes without eating, and every day they drinke one * amphora, and an halfe. And when the *A vestell conwomen haue their naturall purgation, they prouide no meate but for themselues, because no o-40 ther person will eate of that which she carrieth. In the time that I continued among them, I saw gallons.

a most brutish and beastly custome, to wit, a man who was married to another, and their be cer- Sodomy. taine effeminate and impotent men, who goe cloathed and attired like women, and performe the office of a woman; they carry no Bowes, but beare very great and waightie burdens : and among them we faw many such effeminate persons, as I haue faid, and they are of greater lims and taller then the other men.

After we departed from them whom wee left lamenting, wee were with the other at their houles, and were very well intertained of them, who brought vs their children that wee should touch their hands, and fo they gave vs much Meale of Mefquiquez. Thefe Mefquiquez are certaine Fruits, which when they are on the Tree are very bitter, and are of the same fort that the fruite of Indian So Carobe are, and they eate them with the earth, and with it they are very fweet and good to eat.

The manner how they prepare them is this; they make a Trench in the Earth of what depth they please, and after they have cast the truit into this Trench they bruize and breake them very well, with a piece of wood as great as a mans legge, and three Cubits long, and after they are mingled with the earth of the Trench, they take other that are fitted, and put them into the faid Trench, and returne to bruize them a little more, and after put them into a veffell like vnto a basket, and cash to much water thereon, as is sufficient to couer it, that the water may rise to the top, and hee that hath bruized them, tafteth them in his mouth, and if hee thinke they be not iweet and pleatant, he demandeth earth and mingleth it therewith. And this he doth vntill he find it sweet, and so afterward they prepare themselves to sit round, and every one putteth in his

60 hand, and taketh as much as he can, and the feeds or kernels of those Fruits, and so the huskes they cast upon certaine hides, and he that hath brussed them gathereth them together, and returneth afterward to put them all in a basket, and cafteth water vpon them, as at the first, and fo they returne to wring out the invce and water to long as it will drop. And likewise they returne to put the feedes and huskes woon the hide, and fo in this manner they doe three or foure

The Toupin

Brailians vie

times for everie bruifing : and they that are found at this banquet, which because it is veriegreat. remaine with their bellies much puffed vp through the earth and water which they drinke; and of this the Indians made vs many great feasts, and vsed much dancing and iollitie among themsclues, for so long time as we stated there. And when we slept in the night, fixe men watched with great diligence and care, at the doore of the cottage where we abode, not ceasing to come in voto some of vs till the Sunne arose. And when we would depart from them, certaine women of other people who lived further beyond came thither, and being informed by them where their houses were, wee departed to-

wards those parts, although they earnestly entreated vs that we would not depart for that day. because those houses were very farre from thence, and that there was no way to goe thither and In that the women who came were weary; but refting themselves vnto the next day, they would afterwards goe with vs, and conduct vs thither. But we dispatched our selues thence, and went away ; and a little after those women who came thither with certaine others of the former Indians, came after vs : but there being no beaten way nor path, we prefently loft our felues, and fo went foure leagues, at the end whereof we came to drinke at a water, where wee found the women that followed vs, who told vs what great paines and trauaile they had taken to finde vs. Departing thence, and bringing those women tor our guides, wee passed a River somewhat late. and the water tooke vs vp to the breft, and might be as broad as that of Simill, and it ranne very Prongly. And at the fetting of the Sunne we came to an hundred houses of the Indians, who before we came, went all forth to receive vs with fo vehement shouting and loud exclamation, 10 that it was a fearefull thing, and gaue great blowes with their hands upon their thighes, and or Racles, and brought hollow guards with stones within them, which is the instrument of their greatest iolhave like con- little & loort, and never vie them but for their dancings, and for medicine; and none dare to take them in his hand but they. And they fay that these guords have vertue and come from heanen, because they grow not in those Countries, nor doe they know from whence they come, valelle the Rivers bring them when they overflow. And the feare and confusion of them was so great, that striuing to come neerest vinto vs and touch vs, they so thrunged vs, that it was a wonder that they had not killed vs : and not fuffering vs to fet our feete on the ground, they carried vs vnto their houses, and bare ve so aboue ground, and the presse of people so thrunged vs, that we

> make their festivall sports any more with vs for that night. They passed all that night, among themselves, in sports and dancing, and the day following, at a good houre, they brought vs before all the people of that place, that we might touch and blelle them, as we had done to the rest with whom we abode. And after this, they gave many arrower to the women of another people, who were come with them. The next day we departed thence, and all that people went with vs. And when we came to the other Indians, we were very well entertained, as of the other; and they gaue vs fuch as they had, and Deere which they had killed that day. Among thele Indians we law a new custome, to wir, that they who were first with vs, tooke the Bowes & Arrowes, Shooes and Crownes (if they had any) from them who came to vs to be healed, and after they had thus taken them away from them, they brought them before \$0 vs, that we should heale them, and being healed, that we should have them, so they departed verie well contented, and faid that they were whole.

> entred into the houses which they had prepared for vs, and would not confent that they should

After this, we departed from them, and went vnto other, of whom we were verie courteoully received, and they brought vs their difeafed persons, who when we had bleffed them, faid they were cured, and he that was not whole, beleeved that we could cure him, & for that which others told them whom we had healed, they made fuch great sport and dancing, that they suffered vs not to fleepe. Departing from them, we went where many other houles were, and where another new cuftome began, to wit, that entertaining every one of vs very well, they who came with vs, tooke all their substance from them, and rifled their houses, without leaving them any kinde of thing, which displeased vs verie much, seeing them so ill vsed who so curreously received vs, 50 and also fearing that least this might be the occasion of some alteration, or offence among them. But not being able to remedy the fame, and chastise those that did it, wee were then to furfer it, vntill we faw we had more authoritie among them. And so, even they themselves who lost their wealth, seeing we were displeased, comforted vs, saying, that we should not conceine any displeafure therear, confidering they were so well contented that they had seene vs, and that they had bestowed their substance very well, and would hereafter be paid of others who were ex-

Blinde and fquint-tyed

The next day they brought all their people before vs, the greatest part whereof are fquinteyed, and other of the same people are blinde, whereat we greatly maruelled : they are well set, and of good behaulour, and whiter then all the rest that we had seene untill then. There we be- 60 gan to fee Mountaines, which feemed to extend themselves towards the Sea, from the North, and by the relation which the Indians made, I suppose they are fifteene leagues from the Sea. We departed thence with thole Indians towards the Mountaines, whereof I now spake. And they brought vs where some of their kindred were, for they would not bring vs but to their kinsfolk,

because they were vinwilling that their enemies should receive so great a benefit, as they thought it was to lee vs. And when wee were come thither, they that came with vs spoiled the other. who knowing the custome had hid certainethings before we came thither. And after they had received vs with much joy and gladnesse; they tooke out that which they had hidden, and prefented it vitto vs, and they were Crownes, Magra, and certaine small plates of Silver. We, according to our custome, gaue them all presently to the Indians that came with vs, and having given ys that which they had, they began their dancing and festivall iollitie, and fent to call other people neere thereabouts, that they might come to fee vs, who came all about the euening, and brought vs Garlands, Bowes, and other trifling things, which for the most part we divided ato mong those other Indians. And the day following, we being desirous to depart, they would all bring vs to their friends, who remained on the top of the Mountaines, laying that there are many houses and people, that they would give vs many things: but because it was out of our way we would not goe thither, and therefore tooke our journey through the plaint neere vnto the Mountaines, which we supposed should not be very farrefrom the coast. All those people are very poore and miferable, wherefore we held it better to croffe ouer the land, because the people that dwelt further into the Countrey were better conditioned, and would views better, and we were certainely perswaded, that we should finde a more populous Countrey, and of better fultenance. And lattly, we therefore did it, because croffing ouer the land, we saw more particularities, so that if it should please our Lord God to bring some of vs out of that Countrey, 20 and to conduct ve into the land of the Christians, wee might be able to make relation and report The Indians seeing that we were determined to goe whither they would not, told vs, that

there was neither people nor Tune, nor any other thing to eate, and therefore praied vs that we would flay there for that day, and so we did. Then they fent two Indians to discouer the people that way which we purpoted to goe, and the next day we departed, carrying many of them with vs, and the women went laden with water, and our authoritie was fo great among them, that none durst presume to drinke without our leave. Two of their Phiscians gave vs two Gourds, and from that time we afterward began to carry Gourds with vs, joyning this ceremony to our authority, which among them is very great. They who accompanied vs, rifled the 40 houses: but the houses being many, and they but few, they could not carry all away, but should have bin forced to have loft the halfe, and so we went thence through many Mountaines; entring within the land more then fittie leagues, at the end whereof we found fortie houses, and among other things which they gave vs, Andrea Dorante had a thicke and great Bell of cop. Copper Bell per, with a visage ingrauen in it, which they seemed greatly to efteeme, saying that they had ingrauen. gotten it of their other neighbours : who being demanded whence they had it, they faid, that they brought it from the Northward, and that it was much worth, and greatly effeemed there. Whereupon we knew, that from what place foeuer it came, the art of casting and melting of mettals must needes be there. And hereupon we departed the day following, and croffed ouer a Mountaine of fix leagues; and the itones which were there, were of the scumme of Iron, so and late in the evening we came to many houses, seated on the side of a most pleasant River, and the Lords of the same came into the middle of the high way to receive vs with their clildren in their armes, and gaue vs many small plates of Silver, and Antimonie made in powder, Plates of Plate wherewith they annoint their faces, and gaue vs many garlands, and many mantles of the hides of Kine, and laded all them that came with vs with fuch as they had : they eate Tune, and

They told vs, that in the place where the Bell was made, were many plates of that mettall under ground, and that that Bell among them was a thing greatly effeemed, and that houses were built there, and wee supposed that it was the South Sea, for we alwayes knew that that Sea was alwayes richer then that of the North. So we departed from them, and went South Sea through fo many forts of Nations, and divers languages, that the memory of man is not able to

50 reckon them, and one people alwayes spoyled the other, and so both they that lost, and they who gained remained well contented. Through those Valleyes where we palled, every one of them carried a flicke or cudgell of three handfuls long, and they went all in troopes, and if any Hare arofe, whereof there are many in that Countrey, they turned her fuddenly, and so many Pletfant huscudgels fell upon her, that it was a marueilous matter to behold, and in this manner they made ung. her goe from one to another, fo that in my judgement it was the goodlieft hunting that could be imagined, because sometimes they came even into their hands. And when wee setled our felues at night, we had fo many of them that were given vs, that every one of vs carried eight or ten, and fuch as carried Bowes, appeared not among vs, but went apart through the Mountaines 60 to feeke deere, and when they came in the evening, they brought five, or fix for every one of vs,

and many Fowles, and Quailes, and other hunting game; and finally, what focuer all these people tooke, they presented before vs , not daring to touch or take thereof for themselues, although they should dive for hunger (because they accustomed so to doe, since they came with vs) vnlelle they had first bleffed the same. The women carried many Mats, with the which they made

Superflicious fanctitying

When that was done, wee commanded them to bake those Deere and Hares, and whatsoever elfe they had taken; which is very quickly done in certaine ouens which they make for the same purpose. Then we first tooke a little of every thing, and gave the rest to the principall and chiefa men of the people to divide it among them all : and when every one had received his part, they came vnto vs that we should blow vpon it and blesse it, for otherwise they durst not presume to eate thereof. And many times we brought with ve three or foure thousand perions; whereupon it was a great trouble to vs to blow vpon and bleffe the meate and drinke of every one of them : and for every other thing of theirs which they would doe they came to vs to aske leave : whereby it may be confidered how great the incumbrance and trouble was which wee endured. The women brought before vs the Tune, Frogs, Wormes, and what foeuer elie they could get ; because although they should bee readie to die through hunger, they would not have eaten any thing which they had not received from our hands. And to going with them wee passed over a great River which came from the North parts, and having travelled over certaine Plaines of thirrie leagues, wee found many people who came very farre off to receive vs , and came forth ento the way whether wee were to paffe, and received vs after the fame manner that the other From thence forward they observed another manner of receiving vs, as touching saccage and

fpoiling. For they that came forth into the high-way to bring vs any thing, were not spoiled of to them who came with vs ; but after we were entred into their houses, they of their owne accord offered vs what locuer they had and the houses also. Wee gaue all vnto the chiefe and principall. to the intent that they should diside it among them; and alwaies they who remained to spoiled followed vs, whereby the number of people greatly encreased through defire to bee satisfied of their loffes. And they faid vnto the relt that they should beware how they hide any thing . because it could not be but we should know it, and cause them all suddenly to die. The teare and frighting wherein they put them were to great, that the first dates they abode with vs they stood alwaies trembling, not preluming to speake, nor to lift vp their eyes to heaven. They Defert Coun- guided vs aboue eightie leagues through a defert Countrey, and very rough mountaines which were fo dry, that there was no hunting game there whereby to fultame our great hunger. In the m end having passed over a very great River, where the water tooke vp to the brest, many of those who came with vs began to lament, through the exceeding great hunger and travell which they had endured through those mountaines, which were extreame rough and troubletome to refle. The same people brought vs vnto certaine plaines, and at the end of those mountaines much people came farre off to receive vs, as the former had done, and gave fo many garments afterward to them that were with vs , that because they could not carry them they left the halfe behinds them; fo that we told those Indians that brought them, that they should take them againe that they might not be loit: who answered, that they would not doe it for any thing, because it was not their custome after they had once given a thing, to returne afterward to take it againe and Foolish libera

Women-

A riper.

Many gar-

fo they fuffered them to be loft. Then we told them that we would goe toward the place where the Sunne went downe, who faid that in those places the people were verie farre off. But wee commanded them to lend to understand that wee were comming, yet they excused themselves the best they could; saying, that they were their enemies, and that they were viwilling we should goe thither; but not daring to doe contrarie to our will, they tent two women thither, whom both the one and the other their enemies kept prisoners. And they sent these, because the women may well negotiate with the men even in the warres : and we followed them, and rested our selves in a place where wee determined to expect them, but they staied fine daies before they returned, and the Indians faid that they should find no people. Wee told them that they should bring vs toward the North, whereupon they gaue vs the same answere, that is to say, that in those places there were no peo- 10 ple but farre off, and that there was nothing there to eate nor water to bee found; yet not withstanding all this we continued obstinate, and faid, that we would goe thither, although they alwaies excused themselues the best they could : and for this cause wee were angrie, to that one night I arose and went out to sleepe in the open fields apart from them, but they came presently where I was, and neuer slept all that night with much feare, and speaking vnto me they faid that if we would not continue any longer angrie, they would bring vs whether we purposed to goe, although they were certainly affured to die by the way. Neuerthelesse wee alwaies fained that we were yet angrie, and because their feare was not remoued, a verie strange accident happened, that is to fay, that on the verie same day many of them became sicke, and the day following eight of them died. Whereupon through all the Countrey where it was knowne, they were to 60 afraid of vsthat when they faw vs they feemed even todie as it were for feare. So they befought vs that wee would not continue angrie any longer, and that wee would not cause any more of them to die, certainly perswading themselves that wee killed them onely with our will and defire. We prayed our Lord God that hee would relieue vs, and so all those that were ficke began

to recourt: at which time wee faw a verie maruellous thing, to wit, that the fathers, brethren. and wives of chem that died were exceedingly grieved to fee them fo ficke, but after they were No lamenting dead they showed not any signe or token of sorrow, nor did wee see them lament nor speake one for the dead to the other, nor make any other figne, nor durst they come neere vnto them vntill we commanded them to burie them : And for the space of fifteene daies and more that we abode with them. we neuer faw one speake to the other, nor any of their little children either laughed or cried, and if any of them lamented they carried them verie farre from thence : and with verie sharpe teeth they gashed and cut them from the shoulders to the legs ; so feeing their crueltie and being angrie thereat. I demanded why they did it, they answered me, that they did it to chassise them for la-10 menting before me. Al thele fears which they have of vs, they yet put into the heads of those who came lately to know vs, because they should give vs whatsoever they have, for they know that

we tooke nothing for our felues, but gaue euerie thing to them. This was the most obedient people, and best conditioned that we found in all that Countrie, and commonly they are well dispoied. Those that were ficke, being recovered and restored vnto health, and wee having continued there three daies, the women that we had fent came vnto vs, and faid, that they had found verie few people, because they were gone to the kine, which was now their time. Then we commanded them that were weake to remaine behinde, and those that were well to come with vs : and that two daies journey from thence those two women should goe with two of our men. to cause the people to come forth to the highwaies to receive vs. And so the morning follow-20 ing all those that were the lultiest departed with vs, and after three daies journey wee fetled our felues, and the day following Alonfo del Castiglio and Estenanicco the Negro, together with

those two women for their guides; and that who was their prisoner brought them vnto a River which ranne within a mountaine where a people abode, among whom their father was ; and these were the first houses that wee saw, which had the forme and manner of Houses artisferences

There Castiglio and Estenaniceo arrived, and after they had spoken with those Indians, at the end of three dayes Castiglio returned to the place where they left vs, and brought five or fixe of those Indians, and faid, That hee had found houses of people and of artificiall 20 building, and that the people eate pulle and gourds, and that hee had feene Maiz there. Mays,

There wee abode one day, and the next wee departed, they bringing vs with them to other built houses, where wee did eate of the same food that they eate. And after from thenceforth there was another custome, that they who knew of our comming came not forth into the high-way to meete vs as the other did ; but wee found them in their houses , and they did nothing elle for vs. And they were all fitting, and all held their faces towards Other Grange the wall, hanging downe their heads with their haire over their eyes, and all their clothes behaulour. were hanged vpaloft in the middle of the house, and from thence forward they began to give vs many mantles of hides, and they had not any thing which they gave vs not. It is a Nation of thebest and goodliest proportion of bodie that euer wee saw there, and of a more Goodly peclively spirit and agilitie, and that vinderstood vs better, and answered vs to whatsoever wee

40 demanded them , and wee call them , The people of the Kine , because the greater part of the Kine which dye in those Countries is neere thereabouts, and vp that River more then fiftie leagues, they goe killing many. These people goe all naked, after the manner of those whom wee found first. The women goe couered with certaine Deere skinnes; and fo doe some few men also, and particularly the aged, who are not serucceable for the warress It is a verie populous Countrey; and being demanded why it did not fowe Maiz, they faid, They did it because they would not leese that which they should sowe for two yeeres since their water failed, and the feafons was fo dry, that they all loft the Maiz that they had fowed, and that they could not by any meanes be affured to fowe, vnleffe first it had rained very much; and they prayed vs to fpeake vnto the Heauens that they might fend downe raine : they

50 boyle pulse in this manner. They fill a great pot halfe full with water, and put many of those stones in the fire, which will quickely burne, and when they feeth them on fire they take them up with certaine tongs of Wood, and cast them into that water in the gourd vntill they make it boyle with that fire of those stones; and when they perceive that the water boyleth, they put in that which they have to boyle, and all this time they doe no-

thing elie but take out one stone and put in another fired redde hot to make the water

Kkkkkk

d. IIII.

They come to the South Sea, and travell through a plentifull Countrey, till they meet with Spaniards ; whose crueltie and manner of conuerting Sauages is related.

They come to the South Sea.

E went Westward on our journy, & crossed ouer all the land vntil we came forth at the South Sea, and the reason that the state whether and the state of the paffed as furely we paffed it for feuenteen daies together, as they had told vs) was not to paffed as furely we paffed it for feuenteen daies together, as they had told vs) was not to able to divert vs from our intended purpole. Throughout all that Countrey vp the Riner, they gaue vs many Mantles of the hides of Kine, and wee did not eate of those their fruites.

but our sustenance was every day a piece of the fat of Deere, of the bignesse of a mans hand. which for this necessitie wee prouided alwaies to haue in a readinesse, and so wee passed all those fenenteene daies iourney, and at the end of them wee croffed ouer the River, and travelled other feuenteene daies more to the West, through certaine plaines and verie great mountaines which are found there : and there wee met with a people; who the third part of the veere eate no other thing faue the powder of ftraw, and because wee paffed that way at that fealon of the yeere wee also were constrained to eate it, vntill having finished those daies iourney wee found fetted houfes, where there was great quantitie of Maiz, and of that and Maale they gaue vs enough, and Gourds, and Pulie, and Mantles of Bombafin Cot. 20 ton, withall which we laded them whom wee had hyred there, who returned the most contented men in the world. Wee yeelded many thankes vnto God who had brought vs thither. where we found tuch plentie of fustenance.

Among these houses they had some that were of earth, and all the rest were of mats

waies found fetled houses and much sustenance of Maiz and Pulse; and they gaue vs ma-

ny Deeres skinnes and Mantles of Bombafin Cotten , better then those of New Spaine;

and gaue vs also many Garlands, and certaine Corall which grow in the South Sea, and

focuer they had, and vnto Dorante they gave Emeralds made into Arrow heads, and with

those Arrowesthey make their sports and festivall iollitie, seeming to mee very good. I deman-

ded of them whence they had them, who told me that they brought them from certaine very

high mountaines, which lye towards the North, and that they got them by exchange and

barter for quills and Parrats feathers, and there were many people there and very great hou-

fes. Among them wee faw the women more honourably and honeftly vied, then in any

other part of India which wee had feene. They weare certaine smockes of Bombasin Cotton

which reach to the knee and ouer them : foft fleeues of certaine folds or plaits of Deereskinnes

without haire which touch the ground, and they perfume them with certaine roots which

make them very fine, and so they vie them very well : they are open before and tied toge-40 ther with filken strings. They goe shod with shooes. All this Nation came vinto vs, that we

should touch and blesse them, and they were so importunate herein that they put vs to much

trouble; because the sicke and the whole would all goe from vs blessed : and it often happe-

many Turkie stones which come from toward the North, And finally they gaue vs what- 20

A plentifull Countrey with and from thence wee passed more then an hundred leagues into the Countrey, and alhouses and corne.

People which

line on the

powder of

Braw.

Corall and Emeralds.

Defire of the

Conceit that from heauen.

Many Imgua-

ned that of the women that came with vs ; some were deliuered, and as soone as the children were borne they brought them vnto vs, that wee should touch and blesse them. They accompanied vs vntill they left vs with another Nation, and among all these people they held it for a certaintie that wee came from Heauen : because all the things which they have not, and know not whence they come : they fay , that they descend from Heaven. For so long time as wee went with them, wee trauelled all the day without eating vntill night, and wee eate to little that they were aftonied to fee it. They neuer knew vs wearie, and furely wee 50 were so accussomed to trauell that we were neuer weary. We had great authoritie among them, and they held a reuerent opinion of vs, and to preferue the the same wee seldome spake vnto them. The Negro was the man that alwaies spoke and informed himselfe of the way that wee would goe by the direction of the people that were there, and touching enery other thing which we defired to know. We passed through divers languages, and our Lord God favoured vs withall, for they alwaies understood vs and we understood them, and if we demanded any thing of them by fignes they answered vs as if they should have spoken our language and wee theirs. For although we, understood fix languages, we could not thereby preuaile with all, because wee found more then a thousand differences of language. Throughout all these Countries they who have warre among themselues, became suddenly friends that they might come vnto vs and receive vs, 60 and bring vs whatfoever they had. Dorante had fixe hundred Deeres hearts given him, whereupon we called it the people of

:: popole de

Hearts. Through this Countrey, entrie is made into many Provinces which fland vpon the South Sea, and if they that defire to goe thither enter not from hence, they are loft, because the Coast

hath no Maiz, to that they are faine to eate the powder of beetes, straw, and fish, which they take in the Sea with flortes, because they have no Canowes, nor any Boat. The women cover their prinities with herbs and straw : they are a people of little understanding and miserable. We supposed that neere vnto the Coast by the way of those people which way wee went, it is more then a thousand leagues of a populous Countrey, and that they have much prouision wherein they Athousand liue, for they sowe Pulle and Maiz three times in the yeere. We saw three forts of Deere there. leagues of a live, for they lowe Pulle and Ball Miles of Castiglia. The houles of all those people for habitation are populous one as great as the biggest steeres of Castiglia. The houles of all those people for habitation are Country. cottages. They have poylon of a certaine kind of tree of the bignesse of an apple trees and they doe no more but gather, the fruit and anoing the Arrow therewith, and if they have no fruit they Great Deerc. to breake of a bough, and with a certaine milkie juyce which it hath they doe the fame. There are many of these trees that are so poylonous, that if the leaves thereof be bruised and cast into any Polionous iree flanding pooleand not running water, all the Deere and whatfoeuer other beait that drinketh

thereof fuddenly burit afunder. Wee abode three daies with these people, and about one daies journy from thence there was another people, where such showres of raine came powring downe woon vs, that by reason the River which was there was so growne we could not passe it, and so we continued there fifteene daies.

In this meane time, Castiglio law the buckle of a Spanish girdle about an Indians necke, and an Iron key fewed together with it, which he tooke from him : then we demanded what that thing was, and they answered, that it came from heaven; and questioning further with them who 20 brought them, they answered, that certaine men brought them which had beards like voto vs, who came from heaven; and comming to that river with Horfes, brought Lances and Swords, Newes of and two of them passed ouer with their Lances. Afterward, as cunningly as we could, we asked Spaniardi. them what became of those men, so they answered vs, that they went to the Sea. Wee went through many Countries, and found them all dispeopled and not inhabited, for the countrie people went their way flying through the mountaines, not daring to keepe their houses nor labour for feare of the Christians. It greatly discontented vs, seeing the Countrie verie fruitfull and exceeding pleasant and full of water and goodly rivers, and to see them afterward so solitarie and Speciards. fcorched, and the people so feeble and weake fled away and all hid, and because they sowed not in so great famine, they maintained themselves onely with the barkes of trees and roots. Wee 30 had our part of this famine in all this iourney, because they could not so well prouide for vs being fo enally hired, that it feemed they would all die. They brought vs couerings and beades, which they had hid for feare of the Christians, and gave them vnto vs. and declared how at other times the Christians had entred and passed through that Countrie, and had destroied and burned the

people, and carried halfe the men away, and all the women and little children, and that fuch as

were able to efeape out of their hands fled away. Wee feeing them fo affrighted that they could

not be fecured to fettle them felues in any place, and that they neither would nor could fowe nor labour and manure the Countrie; nay, they rather determined to fuffer themselues to die which feemed better vito them, then to expect to bee so ill intreated with so great crueltie as they had beene untill that time : and they feemed to bee greatly pleafed with vs. Notwithflanding wee 40 feared that being come vnto them who were vpon the Frontiers, and in warre with the Christians least they would vie vs cruelly, and make vs pay for that which the Christians had done vnto them. But God being pleased to conduct vs where they were, they began to feare and reverence vs. as the former had done and formewhat more, whereat we did not a little maruell. Whereby Gentlenesse it may cleerely appeare, that to allure this Nation to become Christians, and make them obedi-ficerthen ent to the Imperial Maieftie, they ought to be gently and curteoufly vied, and this is the onely crueltie. and most certaine way of all other. They brought vs to a people that abode on the top of a mountaine, where they were faine to climbe up by reason of the exceeding roughnesse of those places, where we found many people gathered together for feare of the Christians. These people recei-

ued vs with great good will and kindnesse, and gaue vs whatsoeuer they had, and aboue two 50 thousand burdens of Maiz, which wee gaue vnto those miserable and samished people who followed vs and conducted vs thither : and the day following wee dispatched foure Mellengers through the Countrie, as we yied to doe, to the intent that they should affemble and gather together as many people as they could, vinto one people which abode three daies journey off from thence; and having done this, wee departed with all the people that were there, and alwaies found the trackes and tokens where the Christians had lodged, and about midday wee found our Messengers, who told vs that they could not meet with any people, because they were all gone and fled, and hidden in the mountaines, leaft the Christians thould either kill them or make them flaues. And that the night before they had feene the Christians ; they themselves slanding behinde certaine trees to behold what they did, and they faw that they led certaine Indians 60 in a Chaine tied.

From this place, which is called the River of Petman, voto the River where Diego di Guzman P. Petman. arrived, where we understood of the Christians, may be some four efforce leagues : and from thence where the waters flaied vs, twelve leagues ; and from thence to them whom we called the people of the Harts, fine leagues : and from thence to the South Sea, were twelve leagues. Through - De Cart. LIIIII 2

Shawrs of Cold

1526

out all that Country whereforeer wee found mountaines, wee faw great flow and tokens of Gold, Iron, Antimony, and Copper, and other mettalls. In those places where the fetled house are, in lumary it is very hot. From thence towards the South of the vnpeopled Country, vnto the North Sen, it is a very naughtie Countrey and poore, where wee endured incredible famine, and they who inhabit there are a most cruell people, and of a very euill nature and behaulour. The Indians that have fettled houses, and the rest also make no account of Gold, nor of Silver, nor know for what purpoie it may ferue.

He Seak sh with his course

I tooke the Negro and eleven Indians with mee , and following the Christians by the tracke which they found, I went to three places where they had lodged, and the first day I trawelled ten leagues, and in the morning following found foure Christian Horle-men, who wonde- to red much to fee me fo strangely attired, and in the company of the Indians, and when they faw me they made a stand, and beheld me a good space, so much astonished that they dust not speake to me nor aske mee any queltion. Wherefore I spake vnto them, intreating them to bring me where there Captaine was; and to we went about halfe a league where Diego de Alcaraz abode. who was their Captaine, and after I had spoken vinto him, he told me that hee was in verie enill cafe be: aufe he had beene there many daies and could not take any Indian, and that he had not amy prouision to depart, because they began to be in great necessitie and famine there. I told him that Dorante and Castiglio were remaining behinde, who abode ten leagues from thence, with many people who had conducted vs : Whereupon he presently sent three Horse-men, and fiftie Isdians of those they brought, and the Negro returned with them to guide them; but I remained 20 there, and requested him to make me a testimoniall of the yeere, moneth, and day that I came into that place, and so he did. From this River, vnto the people of the Christians called Saint Mi. chael, which pertaineth to the jurisdiction of that Prounce, which they call Nona Galitia, are After fixe daies were past Andrea Dorante, and Arlonzo del Caftiglio came vnto vs, with thole

who came for them, and brought about fixe hundred persons with them , which were of them whom the Christians had caused to climbe into the mountaines, and hide themselves in the Countrey; and they, who wntill then were come with vs brought them, and accompanied with the Configuration and they had diffracted away all the other people which they had brought thider, and came where I was. Alers a intreated me that I would fend to call the people who abode at 30 and came where I was. Alers a intreated me that I would fend to call the people who abode at 30 and came where I was. the River fides, and had fled into the mountaines, and that they should command them tobring them victualls although it were not needfull, because of their owne accord they brought vsas much as they could, and so we presently sent our Messengers to call them : whereupon fix hundred persons came who brought we all the Maiz they had, and they brought it in certaine pipkin couered with clay, wherein they had hid it winder ground, and they brought vs whatforuer they had befides: but wee would not take any thing faue victualls to eate, but gave all the rest to the Christians to be duided among them. And after this we had much controuerfie with them; becaste they would have made those Indians slaves whom wee brought with vs : And through this displeature and disdaine at our departure, we left many Twelf Bowes which we brought, and many Budgets and Arrowes, and among them flue of Emerands, which wee remembred not and to fo we lost them. We gave the Christians many Mantles of the hides of Kine, and other things which we brought, and much adoe with the Indians to cause them to returne to their houses, and to secure them and make them sowether Maiz. They were not willing to goe but with ye, vatill they left vs with other Indians as the custome was : for otherwise if they returned without being lest with others, they teared leaft they should die, and comming with vs they feared not the Christians nor their Lances. This thing greatly displeased the Christians, who caused an Interpreser to speake vinto them in their owne language, and tell them that wee were the very lame men, who for a long time had beene terrified and loft, and were a people of meane condition

and of small force, and that they were Lords of the Countrey whom they were to serue. But

ther that the Christians hed, because we came from the place where the Sunne rifeth, and the other

Corfe ins from the place where the Sunne went downe : and that wee healed the ficke, they kil-

led the n that were found; and that wee went naked and without garments; they clothed on

har backe and with Lances, and that wee had not any couetous or infatiable defires: fo that whatto uer was given vs, wee prefently gave it voto others and had nothing our felues : and

Co Christians intend nothing elie, but to rob and steale whatsoever they find and give nothing to

any : and after this manner those Indians gave their judgement of vs, centuring allow actions cleane contrary to that which the Christians doe. And thus they answered the Christians in their

language, and did the like to others in a language which was among them which we understood,

hundred leagues of the Countrey where we transled, fo that we found no other language for the

space of four hundred leagues and more. Finally, it was not possible for vs to make those ladient

ischeeue that we were any of thole other Christians; yet with much adoe, and through our per-

fwation we made them returns vnto their houles, commanding them to rest satisfied, and bring

and choice that we twee call Primbatin; which wee hid found yied for about the space of four 62 hou led!

the I do m made lettle no no account of all this, fo that among themselves they said one to ano-19

Ingretefull

. Tric ElC.

be throwne downe under the earth in the company of Dinels , into an exceeding huge fire which never 60 hall have end, but continually and eternally torment them. And besides that, if they will become Christians, and ferue Gid after the manner that we will tell them, the Christians shall hold them for breibren, and whe them very well; and that we would command that they should not doe them any burt, nor take their Countrie from them, but become their good friends. And if they would not doe it, the Chri-Rians frould of them very conelly, and carry them for flanes into farre and remote Countries. To this Littli 2

backe their people to lowe and till the ground, which because it was so desolate, became now full of woods, albeit of it owne nature furely, it were the best Country and more fertile and ahundant then any in all those Indies: for they sowe three times in the yeare, and have many fruites, and many goodly Rivers, and other very good waters. There are many fignes, and great tokens of Mines of Gold and Silver. The people are very well conditioned, and serve the Chrithem, that are their friends, with a very good will: they are much better disposed then the people of Mexico; and finally, it wanteth nothing to make it an absolute Countrey. The Indians being dispatched, they told vs, that they would doe as much as they had commanded and bring backe their people, if the Christians would suffer them to continue: whereupon I said and certo tainely affirmed, that if they did it not, the Christians should be much to blame. And after wee had fent them away, the Christians lent vs with an Alcado, named Zebrero, and with him three other Christians, whereby it appearets how much the imaginations of men were deceived, in that we went to fecke liberty among the Corfians; and when wee had thought to have found it. the oute contrary befell vs, and by seperating vs from the conversation of the Indians, they brought vs through desolate Mountaines, because we should not see what they did, nor their euill yfage; for they had determined to goe to affault the Indians, whom wee fent away fecured Sauage infide and in peace; and so they did activey imagined; they brought va two dayes through those Moun- livy of Christian and in peace; and to they did as they imagined; they brought vs two dayes through those mountaines, without water, and without any beaten way or path, infomuch as we thought we should Inside is and

CHAP. I.S.4. Fertile Countrey. Great proffers: Hell threatned.

have burit for thirit, whereof feuen of our men died, & many friends which the Christians brought Sauages. 20 with them, could not cometall the next day at noone, where we found water : and we transiled with them about fine and twenty leagues, at the end whereof, we came vnto a people of the /ndians, which were in peace, and there the Alcado, who brought vs, left vs, and went three leagues further to a people called Caliazzan, where Melchier Diaz, the Sergeant Major, and Captaine of that Prounce abode. As soone as he knew of our comming, hee presently came the same night to finde vsout, and lamented much with vs, highly praising our Lord God, for his exceeding mercy cowards vs, and spake vnto vs, and vied vs very well, and in the behalfe of the Gouemour Nunnez di Guzman, and himielte, offered vs whatfoeuer hee had or could procure, and began to speake much of the euill viage wherewith Alearac and the rest had vied vs, fo that we held it for cereame, that if hee had bin there, that which was done vnto vs had not 30 bin done, and that night being passed, we departed for Anhaem, and the Sergeant Major intrea-

ted we earneitly to stay there, and that wee might doegreat feruite vinto our Lord God, and to wour Maieflie, because the Countrie was desolate, without manuring, and altogether defroyed, and the Indians went and hid chemielues, flying through the Mountaines, vn willing to come and flay with their people, and that we should fend to call them, and command them in the name of our Lord God, and of your Maietty, to come and inhabit the Plain, and till the Countrie. But this feemed a troubletome matter vnto vs to put it in execution, because wee had not any of our Indieas, or those who were wont to accompany vs, to helpe and further vs in such like offices. Notwithstanding we thoughe good to proue two of our Indians which we had prisoners there, who were of the same Country, and were found with the Christian' when we first came among them, 40 and faw the people that accompanied vs, & vnJeritood by them the great authority & dominion

which we had had throughout all those Countries, & the miraculous things which we had done in healing the difeafed, and many other things, and with thefe we fent others of the same people which were also with them, to call the Indians that abode in the Mountains, & those of the river Patachan, where we had found the Christians. And we willed them to tell them, that they should come vnto vs, because we would speake with them, and so secure them that went, and the other who should come, we gaue them a great gourd, of those which we caried in our hands, which was a principall token and speciall argument of great state, and with this they went and travailed seuendaies, and in the end came and brought with them three Lords of those who had fled into the Mountaines, who were accompanied with fitteene men, who brought vs Crownes, Turkies, and plumes of Feathers; and the melfengers told vs; that they had not found them of the River

50 from whence we came, because the Christians had caused them to flye into the Mountaines : So Melchier Diaz willed the Interpreter to fpenke vnto thole Indians in our behalfe, and fay vnto them, that we were come from God, who abide thin heaven, and had transiled through the world nine Mannet of yeares, faying vato all them that we found; that they should beleeve im Ood, and ferue him, because he is Spout the action Lord of all the things in the world, and that he gineth a reward and paiment unto the good, and perpetual dins. pumiliment of hell fire water the wicked : and that when the hadd men do the taketh them op mie heaven, where afterwards they had wever do uny more, nor fuffer hunger or cold, by endure any other necessition. sie; but finde there greater flory then can be imagined. And they who will not beleene nor obay him, shall

they answered the Interpreter, that they would become very good Christians, and serue God. And demanding of them, whom they adored, and to whom they facrificed, and of whom they asked water for their feede time, and health and fafety for themselues; they answered the they praied voto a man which is in heaven, and being demanded how they called him, they faid Aguar; and they beleeved that he created all the world, and the things therein. Then wee quettioned them further, whence they knew that, who answered, that their Parents told them to, and that of a long time they understood it, and knew that he fent water, and all othersood things. So wee caused the Interpreter to tell them, that hee whom they called Aguar, we called God, and that they also should call him so, and serue him, and adore him, as we had appointed, and they should finde it very good for them. They answered, that they understood all ve- In ry well, and that they would doe fo; wherefore wee commanded them to descend from the Mountaines, and that they should live secure and in peace, and dwell in the Country, and build their houses, and among them make a house for God, and set a Crosse at the entry thereof, like vnto that which we had there: and when the Christians should come, they should goe to meete them with the Crosse, without Bowes and weapons, and conduct them to their houses, and give them such as they had to eate, and so they would not doe them any harme, but would become their friends: and the Captaine gave them some of the Mantles, and yied them very well. So they departed, carrying with them the two Indians, which before were prifoners, whom we had fent as Messengers, and all this was done in the presence of the Secretary of the Gouernour, and many other witnesses. Now when the Indians were returned, all an the rest of that Province, who were friends vnto the Christians, came to see vs. and brought vs Crownes and Feathers, and wee commanded them to make Churches, and fet Croffes there, because vntill then they had not made them, and wee made them bring the children of the principall Seigniory to Baptile them : whereupon the Captaine prefently made a vowe and promile vnto God, neither to make nor cause any entry to be made vpon them, nor take slaves or people in those Countries, which we had secured, and that he would observe this, vntill your Maiefty or the Gouernour Nunez di Guzman, or the Viceroy in his name, should provide better for the feruice of our Lord God, and of your Maiefty. Christianity shall not be so difficult a matter to bring in, because two thousand leagues which

we traugiled by land and Sea, and other ten moneths, after we came out of captuitie, we traugiled without flay, and neuer found Sacrifices nor Idolatry. In this time, we croffed ouer from one Sea to another, and by the notice, which through much diligence wee procured to have, from the one coast to the other, wee suppose it to be about two hundred leagues broad and more, and wee understand that on the coast of the South Sea are Pearles and great riches, and that all the best and richest are neere there abouts. We abode in the towne of Saint Michael, vntill the fifteenth of the moneth of May, and the occasion why we staied there so long was this, because from thence vnto the Citie of Compostella, where the Gouemour Namez de Guzman made his te fidence, it was 100.leagues distance; and the Country was not inhabited & enemy, and it was fit, that other people should go with ve to conduct vs, among whom there were forty horsemen, who accompanied vs about fortie leagues, and from thence forward, fix Christians came with vs, who 40 weare apparell brought five hundred Indian flaues, and being come to Compostella, the Governour Nunez receiued vs very curteoutly, and gaue vs fuch as he had to cloath vs, which apparell for many dayes, I was not able to carry, and wee could not sleepe but on the ground. And so after tenne or He also de cri- twelue dayes wee departed for Mexico, and came thither on Saint lanes his euen, where the Viceroy and the Marquelle of the Valley kindely intreated vs , and gaue vs apparell and

To the Reader.

Aptaine Soto was the some of a Squire of Xerez of Badaioz. Hee went into the Spanish Indies when Peter Arias of Auila was Gonernour of the West Indies: And there he was without any thing else of his owne, Sane his Sword and Target : and for his good qualities and valour, Peter Arias made bim Captaine of a troope of horsemen, and by bis commandment he went with Fernando Pizarto to the conquest of Peru: where (as many persons of credit reported, which were there present) as well at the taking of Atabalipa, Lord of Peru, at at the affault of the Citie of Cuico, and in all other places where they found relistance, where some be was present, be surpassed all other Captaines and principall persons. For which cause, besides his part of the treasure of Atabalipa, he bad a good share : whereby in time hee Booke: which gas hered an hundred and fourescore thousand Duckets together, with that which fell to his part; which 60 being no part be brought into Spaine : whereof the Emperour borrowed a certaine part, which he repaired againe with of Florida dil- 60000. Rials of Place in the rent of the Silkes of Granada, and all the reft was delinered bim in the Concouery, I have tractation house of Smil. From Smil be went to the Court, and in the Court, there accompanied him John Danusco of Siuil, and Lewis Moscoso D'aluarado, Nunno de Touar, and John Rodriguez Lobillo.

200, leagues berwixt the coast of the

He could not for many daics nor fleepe on the ground. beth his voiage to Spaine, which is here

whatioeuer they had.

Except John Danusco, all the rest came with him from Peru; and enery one of them brought sourceene or Except John Danulco, all the rest came with num from revisions exery one of toem or orongest source tent or None of those of those of those of the source of Pricene county and the rall, yet because that was the first time that he was to shew himselfe in the Court, be which were mainre was not and went accompanied with those which I have named, and with his sermants, and many guilty of Acid pent francis, and come guilty of Alexander with Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which referred with Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which referred with Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which referred with Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which are the second with Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which are the second with Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which are the second with Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which Donna Habella de Bouadilla, daughter of Peter Arias belief or Alexander which are the second with the Alexander which are the second with the Alexander which are the second with the second with the Alexander which are the second with the ather which reforted unto him. He martied mero Donna Indoen de Bouautto, mangarin of the file of C. ba, and halpas death:
of Auila, Earle of Punno en Roitto. The Emperous made him the Gonernous of the Ifle of C. ba, and but by civil of Aulia, Earte of a united of Florida; with a title of Marquesse of certaine part of the lands that bee wars or other-

proma conquer.

The History partly for better knowledge of ibose parts of the world and partly for the profit of Vir.

The History partly for better knowledge of ibose parts of the world and partly for the profit of Vir.

To ginian adventurers, and a senters, I have here published for briefer then the author in Portuguic and in happened to out of him Master Hakluyt) had done; and added this to that of Neruaz. Cabeza de Vaca the Anther of that at this time had come to the Court to beg the conquest of Florida : but seeing Don Ferdi- Cabezade Vaca nando de Soto bad gotten it already for his eather sake, be said, he might tell nothing of that which they was the Gouernando de socio una genera mana offers: and being agreed to goe with him, because he would not give uer of Plate. him money to pay for a Ship, which be had bought, they brake off, and he went for Gonernour to the Rthim money to pay jor a 3 ory, water a same as some and Baltalar de Gallegos went with Soto. Those with Seto into mer of the same and enroled, which Soto liked and accepted of, and did accompany him into Flo- Florida. Trea Tida; which were in all fix hundred min. He had aiready bought senen Shipa, and had all necessary pro- in his large stomisson abourd them.

In the years of our Lord 1538, in the moneth of Aprill, the Adelantado delinered his Shippes to the age containing Captaines which were to goe in them. They arrived at Saint lago in Cuba on Whisfunday. The Citie he had tooo. of lago hath eightie houles which are great and well contrined. The most part have the wals made of men with him. boords, and are covered with thatch; it hath some bonfes builded with lime and stone, and covered with tiles. It bath great Orchards and many trees in them, differing from those of Spaine : there be Figge- Great Figs. trees which beare Figges as big as ones fift, je low within, and of small tafte; and other trees which beare fruite which they call Aranes, in meating and bigneffe the to a small Pineapple : it is a fruit very sweete Ananes. jruite wonco sory can an nance, in among ananymy new on joins a mappie on an join very james. Great Pine, in tafte: the firelbeing taken away, the ternell is the apeece of fresh chiefe. In the granges abroad in apples. the Countrie there are other great Pineapples, which grow on low trees, and are like the " Aloetree: ther are of a very good smell and exceeding good tafte. Other trees die beare a fruite, which they call 30 Mameis of the bigueffe of Peaches. Thu the Islanders doe bold for the best fruit of the country. There Mameis, an

is another fruit which they call Guayabas like Filberds, as bigge as figges. There are other trees as excellentituite bieb as a inseline, beasing one onely flocke without any bough, and the leaves as long as a casting dart: Gusyabas, and the fruit is of the bignesse and fusion of a Cucumber , one bunch beareth twenty or thirty, and as they ripenthetree bendeth downwards with them: they are called in this Countrie Plantanos, and are of a Plantanos. good tafte, and ripen after they be gathered, but thefe are the better which ripen upon the tree it felfe: they beare fruit but once, and the tree being cut downe, there firing up others out of the but, which beare fruit the next yeare. There is another fruit, whereby many people are fustained, and chiefly the saues, which are called Batatas. Thefe grow now in the Isle of Terzera, belonging to the Kingdome of Portugall, Batatas, or and they grow within the carth, and are like a fruit called lname, they have almost the taste of a Chest- Poratos.

40 nut. The Bread of this countrie is also made of rootes which are like the Batatas. And the flocke whereon those rootes doe grow is like an Elder tree : they make their ground in little billocks, and in each of them The Castans they thrust foure or fine flakes; and they gather the rootes a yeare and an halfe after they fet them. If any took one, thinking it is a Batata or Potato root, chauce to eate of it nener fo little, be is in great danger of death; which was feene by experience in a Soldier, which as foone as he had caten a very little of one of those roots be died quickly. Tory prarethele voors and frumpe them, and frumle them on a thing like a preffer the imperitude that comments from shorm to of an emit front. The Bread is of little taite and leffe fulfiance. Of the fruits of Spaine there are Figs and Oranges, & they beare fruit all the yeare, becamfe the foile is very ranke and fruitfull. In this Countrie are many good Horses, and there is greene grasse all the yeare. There be many wilde Oxen and Hogs, whereby the people of the Island is well furnished with slesh : Without the townes a-

50 broad in the Countrie are many fruits. And it bappeneth sometimes that a Christian goeth ont of the way and is loft fifteene or twenty daies, because of the many paths in the thicke grows that croffe to or fro made by the Oxen: and being thus loft they full aine themselves with fruits and palmitos: for there be many great groves of Palme trees through all the Island; they yeelde no other fruite that is of any profit. The Island; of Cuba is 300 leagues long from the East to the West, and is in some places 30 in others 40 leagues from The length North to South. It hath fix towns of Christians : to wit, S. Iago, Baracoa, Bayamo, Puerto de Princi- ot Cuba. pes, S. Elpirito, and Hauana. Enery one bath betweene thirty and forty housholds, except S. Iago and Hauana, whith have about fixtie or eightie houses. They have Churches in each of them, and a Chaplen which confesset bem and faith Masse. In S. 1290 is a Monasterie of Franciscan Friers: it hathbut few Friers, and is well provided of almes, because the Commerce is rich : The Church of S. Iago hash bonest revenew,

60 and there is a Curat and Prebends and many Priests, as the Church of that Citie, which is the chiefe of all the Island. There is in this Countrie much Gold, and few staues to get it: For many have made away themselves , because of the Christians enil vsuge of them in the Mines. A Steward of Valques A wittie stra-Porcallo, which was an inhibitour in that Island, understanding that his slaues would make away themfelues, flated for them with a cudgell in his hand at the place where they were to meete, and told them,

This Preface is contained more at large in the fixe fift Chapters of here reduced to a Preface.

that they could neither doe nor thinke any thing, that bee did not know before, and that bee came thisbee to kill him felf: with them, to the end, that if be bad veed them badly in this World, hee might ve them. worfe in the World to come : And this was a meane that they changed their purpofe, and turned home acame to doe that which be commanded them.

CHAP. II.

FERDINANDO de SOTO his Voyage to Florida and Discouerie of the Regions in that Continent: with the I rauels of the Spaniards foure yeeres together therein, and the accidents which befell them: poritten by a Portugall of the Company, and here contracted.

SOTOS entrance into Florida, taking of IOHN ORTIZ one of Naruaz his company, comming to Paracoffy, and divers other Caciques, with accidents in the way.

N Sunday the eighteenth of May, in the yeere of our Lord 1539. the Adelantado

or President departed from Hauana in Cuba with his fleet, which werenine vef-

I fels, fiue great shippes, two Carauels, and two Brigantines : They sayled feuen

May 18. 1539. de la Veza hath writ en a fto y of this youage. He faith Soto had with him 950. fouldiers, had enterrais ned for the conquest of Florida, and came with him This Author

hath but 600. Towne of Villa

The Towne of Veits. lu..c.

dayes with a properous wind. The five and twentieth day of May, the day de Pasca de Spirito Santo (which we call Whitson Sunday) they saw the Land of 30 Florida; and because of the fhoalds, they came to an anchora league from the shoare. On Friday the thirtieth of May they landed in Floreda, two leagues from a Towne of an Indian Lord, called Vena, They fet on Land two hundred and thirteene Horfes, which they bendes Mari-ners, which he brought with them, to vnburden the ships, that they might draw the lesse water. He landed all his men, and only the Seamen remained in the thips, which in eight daies, going vp with the tide euerie day a little, brought them vp voto the Towne. Affoone as the people were come on shore, he pitched his Campe on the Sea fide, hard you the Bay which went vp vnto the Towne. And relently the Captaine Generall Valques Porcallo with other feuen Horiemen foraged the Countrie halte a league round about, and found fixe Indians, which refifted him with their Arrowes, from Saint La- which are the weapons which they yie to fight with all : The Horfemen killed two of them, 40 and the other foure escaped; because the Countries cumbersome with Woods and Bogs, where the Horses stacke fast, and fell with their Riders, because they were weake with travelling spon the Sea. The same night following the Gouernour with an hundred men in the Brigantines came vpto the lighted vpon a Towne, which he found without people, because, that assoone as the Christians had light of Land, they were descried, and law along the Coalt many smokes, which the Indians had made to give advice the one to the other. The next day Lugs de Moscofo, Master of the Campe let the men in order, the Horsemen in three Squadrons, the Vantgard, the Batalian, and the R-reward : and so they marched that day, and the day following, compalling great Creekes which came out of the Bay : They came to the Towne of Veira, where the Gouernout was, on Sunday the first of June, being Trinitie Sunday. The Towne was of seuen or eight houses. The 50 Lords houte flood neere the shoare vpon a very high Mount, made by hand for strength. At another end of the Towne flood the Church, and on the top of it flood a fowle made of wood with gilded eres. Here we found some Pearles of small value, spoiled with the fire, which the Indians doe pierce and string them like Beads, and weare them about their neckes and hand-wrifts, and they efteeme them very much. The houses were made of Timber, and covered with Palme

From the Towns of Voita the Gouernour fent Alcalde Maior Baltafar de Gallegor with fortie Horièmen and eightie Footmen into the Countrie to fee if they could take any Indoes: and the Captaine lobn Rodriguez Lobillo another way with fiftie Fuotmen. lobn Rodriguez Lobillo returned to the Campe with fixe men wounded, whereof one died, and brought the toure lates 60 women, which Baltafar Gallegos had taken in the Cabbins or Cottages. Two leagues from the Towne; comming into the plaine field, he espied ten or eleuen Indians, among whom was a Cor-Bian, which was naked and foorched with the Sunne, and had his armes razed after the manner of the Indians, and differed nothing at all from them. And alloone as the Horfemen law them

they ranne toward them. The Indians fled, and some of them hid themselves in a Wood, and they ouertooke two or three of them which were wounded; and the Christian Seeing an Hosteman ruone vpon him with his Lance, began to crie out, Sirs, I am a Christian, slay here not, northefe Indians, for they have faved my life. And straight way hee called them, and putchem out of feare, and they came forth of the Wood voto them. The Horsemen tooke both the Christian and the Indians up behind them; and toward night came into the Campe with much ioy; which thing being knowne by the Gouernour, and them that remained in the Campe, they were re-

CHAP. 2.S.1. The Indians cruell purpofe. Worshippers of the Deuill.

This Christians name was John Ortiz, and hee was borne in Smill, of Worthspfull Parentage. Inha Ortiz 15. 10 He was twelve yeeres in the hands of the Indians, He come into this Countrie with Pamphila de ued 12 yeeres, Hewas twelle yeares in the lands of the andams, the came into this Country with anyone as among the Names; and returned in the ships to the Hand of Cuba, where the Wife of the Governous Pans-Floridaes of Philipside of the state of the returned backe againe to Florida: and comming to the Port in the fight of the Towne, on the shoare they faw a Cane sticking in the ground, and riven at the top, and a Letter in it and they. Nature, beleeued that the Gouernour had left it there to gine aduertitement of himfelfe, when free resoluted to goe up into the Land: and they demanded it of four or flue Indians, which walked along the Sea shoare : and they bal them by signes to come on shoare for it : which against the will of the rest lobs Ortic and another did. And associated were on the Land, from the houfes of the Towne issued a great number of Indians, which compassed them about, and tooke them

20 in a place where they could not flee; and the other which fought to defend himfelfe, they prefently killed upon the place and tooke lohn Ortiz aline, and carried him to Veita their Lord. And those of the Brigandine fought not to land, but put themselues to Sea, and returned to the the lland of Cuba. Vetta commanded to bind lohn Orize hand and foot vpon foure stakes aloft vpon a rafe, and to make a fire vnder him, that there he might bee burned : But a daughter of his defired him that he would not put him to death, alleaging, that one only Christian could do him neither hurt nor good, telling him, that it was more for his honour to keepe him as a Captine. And Veta granted her request, and commanded him to bee cured of his wounds : and affoone as he was whole, he gaue him the charge of the keeping of the Temple : because that by night the Wolves did carrie away the dead corples out of the fame : who commended himselfe to God and

30 tooke voon him the charge of his Temple. One night the Wolues gate from him the corples of a little child, the Sonne of a principall Indian; and going after them he threw a Dart avone of the Wolves, and strooke him that carried away the corps, who feeling himselfe wounded, left it, and fell downe dead neere the place; and hee not woting what he had done, because it was night, went backe againe to the Temple : the morning being come, and finding not the bodie of the childe, he was very lad. Alloone as Vous knew thereof, he resolued to put him to death; and fent by the tract, which hee faid the Wolues went, and found the bodie of the childe, and the Wolfe dead a little beyond; whereat Voice was much contented with the Christian; and with the watch which heekept in the Temple, and from thence forward effeemed him much. Three yeeres after he fell into his hands, there came another Lord called Mocogo, who dwelleth two

49 daies journey from the Port, and burned his Towne. Vens fled to another Towne that he had in journie from another Sea Port. Thus Iohn Ortizloft his office and fauour that he had with him. These people Vine being worth ppers of the Deuill, are wont to offer vp vnto him the lines and bloud of their indian or of any other people they can come by: and they report, that when hee will have them Humane Sadoe that Sacrifice vnto him, he speaketh with them, and telleth them that hee is athirst, and crifice. willerh them to facrifice vnto him. Iohn Ortiz had noticeby the Damofell that had deliuered him from the fire, how her father was determined to facrifice him the day following, who willed him to flee to Mococo : for the knew that he would vie him well : for the heard fay, that he had asked for him, and faid he would be glad to fee him: and because he knew not the way, she went with him halfe a league out of the Towne by night, and fet him in the way, and returned be-

50 cause the would not be discourred. Iohn Ortiz travelled all that night, and by the morning came A Rivers vnto a River, which is in the Territorie of Mococo. Three or foure Indians carried the newes to their Lord : who came forth a quarter of a league from the Towne to receive him; and was very glad of him. He caused him presently to sweare according to the custome of the Christians, that he would not runne away from him to any other Lord : and promifed him to entreate him very well; and that if at any time there came any Christians into that Countrie, he would freely let him goe, and give himleaue to goe to them : and likewife tooke his oath to performe the fame according to the Indian cultome. He dwelt with Mossos nine yeeres, with small hope of seeing any Christians. Alloone as our Gouernour arrived in Florida, it was knowne to Mococo, and Braightway he fignified to lohn Ortiz, that Christians were lodged in the Towne of Veita. And

60 Mocogo gaue him ten or eleven principal Indians to beare him company and as they went to the P. rt where the Gouernour was, they met with Baltafar de Gallegos, as I have declared before. Affoone as hee was come to the Campe, the Gouernour commanded to give him a fute of appatell, and very good Armour, and a faire Horfe; and enquired of him, whether hee had notice of any Countrie where there was any Gold or Siluer ! He answered, No, because hee neuer went

Para:0/1 30. leagues from Parte de Stirito Saute.

ten leagues compasse from the place where he dwelt : Butchat thirty leagues from thence dwele an Indian Lord, which was called Parocoffi, to whom Mosogo and Veita, with all the rest of thre Goalt payed Tribute, and that he peraduenture might have notice of some good Countrie: and that his Land was better then that of the Sea-coast, and more fruitfull and plentifull of Maiz Whereof the Gouernour received great contentment : and faid that hee defired no more then to find victuals, that he might goe into maine Land, for the Land of Florida, was fo large, that in one place or other there could not choose but bee some Countrie. The Cacique Mococo came to the Port to wifit the Gou mour.

The Governour answered him, That although in freeing and sending him the Christian, he had profesued his honour and promise, yet he thanked him, and held it in such esteeme, as it had no Id compariton; and that he would alwayes hold him as his Brother, and would fauous him in all things to the vtmost of his power. Then he gommanded a shirt to be given him, and other thinss wherewith the Cacique being very well contented, to his leave of him, and departed to his - was owne Towne.

From the Port de Spirito Santo where the Gouernour lay, he fent the Alcalde Maier Baltalas

de Gallego: with fitte Horiemen, and thirtie or fortie Footmen to the Prounce of Paracolli, to view the disposition of the Countrie, and informe himselfe of the Land farther inward . and to fend him word of fuch things as he found. Likewife he fent his ships backe to the Hand of Cs. ba, that they might returne within a certaine time with victuals. Vafques Porcallo de Finnera. which went with the Gouernour as Captaine Generall; (whose principall intent was to fend flaues from Flarida, to the Iland of Cuba, where he had his goods and Mynes) having made some In-rodes, and freing no Indians were to be got, because of the great Bogges and thicke Woods that were in the Countrie, confidering the disposition of the same, determined to returne to Ca-64. And sliough there was some difference betweene him and the Governour, whereupon they neither deals nor connerfed together with good countenance, yet notwithstanding with louise words hee asked him leave and departed from him. Baltafar de Gallegos came to the Paracoffi: There came to him thirty Indians from the Cacique, and faid, that their Lord was ill at eale, and therefore could not come, but that they came on his behalfe to fee what he demanded. Hee asked them if they knew or had notice of any rich Country where there was Gold or Silver. They told them they did and that toward the West, there was a Province which was called Cale; and that others that inhabited other Countries had warre with the people of that Countrie, where the most part of the yeere was Summer, and that there was much Gold : and that when those their enemies came to make warre with them of Cale, these Inhabitants of Cale did weare hats of Gold, in manner of Head-pieces. Baltafar de Gallegos, feeing that the Cacique came not, thinking all that they faid was fained, with intent that in the meane time they might fet themfelues in faftetie, fearing, that if he did let them goe, they would returne no more, commanded the thirtie Indians to be chained, and fent word to the Gouernour by eight Horsemen what had puffed whereof the Gouernour with all that were with him, at the Port de Spirito Santo received great comfort, supposing that that which the Indians reported, mght be true. Hee left Captains Calderan at the Port, with thirtie Horsemen and seventie Footmen , with provision for two to weeres, and himselfe with all the rest marched into the mayne Land, and came to the Paracoss. at whole Towne Batafar de Gallegos was : and from thence with all his men tooke the way to Cale. He passed by a little Towne called Acela, and came to another called Tocaste : and from thence he went before with thirtie Horsemen, and fiftie Footmen toward Cale. And paffing by a Towne, whence the people were fled, they faw Indians a little from thence in a Lake; to whom the Interpretor spake. They came vnto them and gaue them an Indian for a guide : and hee came to a River with a great current, and vpon a Tree, which was in the midit of it, was made a Bridge, whereon the men palled : the Horles swamme ouer by a Hawser, that they were pulled by from the otherfide: for one which they drove in at the first without it, was drowned, From thence the Gouernour fent two Horsemen to his people that were behind, to make halle 10 after him; because the way grew long, and their victuals short. He came to Cale, and found the Towns without people. He tooke three Indians which were Spies, and tarried these for his people that came after, which were fore vexed with hunger and evill wayes, because the Countrie was very barren of Maiz, low, and full of water, bogs, and thicke woods; and the victuals, which they brought with them from the Port de Spirito Santo, were ipent. Wheretoeuer any Towne was found, there were some Beets, and he that came first gathered them, and sodden with water and falt, did eate them without any other thing : and fuch as could not get them, gathered the stalkes of Maiz and eate them, which because they were young had no Maiz in them. When they came to the River which the Gouernour had passed, they found Palmitos vpon low Palme-trees like those of Andaluzia. There they met with the two Horiemen which the Go- 62 uernour fent vnto them, and they brought newes that in (ale there was plentie of Maiz; at

which newes they all rejoyced. Affoone as they came to Cale, the Gouernour commanded them

to gather all the Maiz that was ripe in the field, which was furicient for three moneths. At

the gathering of it the Indians killed three Christians, and one of them which were taken told

Paracolli. Calc.

> Paratoffi. Astla Totalie.

Another Towne. A Lake. Aiwift Riuer.

Caie.

CHAP, 2. S 1. Arich Province. Sorrowfull newes, Musicall signes of peace. 1533 the Governour, that within feuen dayes journey, there was a very great Province, and plentifull of Maiz, which was called Apalache. And prefently hee departed from Cale with fiftie Horfemen, and fixtie Footmen. He left the Master of the Campe Luys de Moscoso with all the rest of the people there, with charge that he should not depart thence untill he had word from him. And because hitherto none had gotten any slaves, the bread that every one was to eate, hee was faine himfelfe to beate in a Morter made in a piece of Timber with a Pettle, and some of them Trauelline did fift the flowre through their fhirts of Mayle. They baked their bread voon certaine Tile- Souldiers fhifti shares which they set ouer the fire. It is so troublesome to grinde their Maiz, that there were for bread. many that would rather not eat it, then grind it: and did eate the Maiz parched and fodden. The eleuenth day of August 1539, the Gouernour departed from Cale; hee lodged in a little The elementh day of August 1539, the Concernion departed from party in the day at Vinama, and Trava.

Townecalled Tiara, and the next day in another called Posano, and the third day at Vinama, and came to another Towne, which they named the Towne of Easil peace; because an Indian came in Polano. peace, laying, That he was the Cacique, and that he with his people would ferue the Gouernour, The Towne of and that if he would fet free eight and twentie persons, men and women, which his men had ta- Emill peace. the night before, he would command provision to be brought him, and would give him a guide to infructhim in his way : The Gouernour commanded them to befet at libertie, and to keepe him in faferard. The next day in the morning there came many Indians, and fet themselves round about the Towne neere to a Wood. The Indian wifted them to carrie him neere them : and that he would speake vnto them, and affure them, and that they would doe what soeuer he commanao ded them, And when he faw himfelte neere vnto them he brake from them, and ranne away fo (wiftly from the Christians, that there was none that could overtake him, and all of them fled into the Woods. The Gouernour commanded to loofe a Greyhound, which was alreadie fleshed Greyhound on them, which passing by many other Indians, caught the counterfeit Cacique, which had ef- catchesh the capel from the Christians, and held him till they came to take him. From thence the Gouer-fugitive. nour lodged at a Towne called Cholupaha: and because it had flore of Maiz in it, they named it Cholupaha. Villa forta. Beyond the same there was a River, on which he made a Bridge of Timber, and tra- A River. uelled two daies through a defert. The feuenteenth of August, he came to Caliquen, where hee Caliquen. was informed of the Province of Apalache: They told him that Pamphilo de Narvaez had beene there, and that there he tooke shipping, because he could find no way to goe forward: That there 30 was none other Towne at all; but that on both fides was all water. The whole company were verie sad for these newes; and counselled the Gouernour to goe backe to the Port de Spirite Santo and to abandon the Countrie of Florida, left he should perith as Warnaez had done : declaring. that if he went forward, he could not returne backe when he would, and that the Indians would gather vp that small quantitie of Maiz which was left. Whereunto the Gouernour answered. that he would not goe backe, till he had feene with his eies that which they reported : faying, that he could not beleeve it, and that wee should be put out of doubt before it were long. And he fent to Luys de Moscoso to come presently from Cale, and that hee tarried for him heere. Luys de Moscos and many others thought, that from Apalache they should returne backe; and in Calo they buried their Iron Tooles, and divers other things. They came to Calignen with great trouand ble; because the Countrie, which the Gouernour had passed by, was spoiled and destitue of Maiz. After all the people were come together, he commanded a Bridge to bee made ouer a River that paffed neere the Towne. Hee departed from Caliquen the tenth of September, and carried the A River. Cacique with him. After hee had trauelled three dayes, there came Indians peaceably, to visit their Lord, and enery day met vs on the way playing vpon Flutes : which is a token that they yle, that men may know that they come in peace. They faid, that in our way before was there a Cacique, whose name was Vzachil, a Kinsman of the Cacique of Caliquen their Lord , wayting for him with many presents, and they defired the Gouernour that hee would loofe the Cacique. But hee would not , fearing that they would rife , and would not give him any Guides, and fent them away from day to day with good wordes. 60 He travelled fine daies, passed by some small Townes, came to a Towne called Napetnea, the fif- Some small teenth day of September. There were thirtie or fortie Indians flaine. The rest fled to two very Townes. great Lakes, that were somewhat distant the one from the other: There they were swimming, Mapesuca. and the Christians round about them. The Calienermen and Croffe-bowmen shot at them from

the banke; but the diffiance being great, and shooting afarre off, they did them no hurt. The Go-

uernour commanded that the fame night they should compasse one of the Lakes, because they

were to great, that there were not men enow to compaffe them both : beeing belet, afforne as

night shut in, the Indians, with determination to runne away, came swimming very softly to the

banke; and to hide themselves, they put a water Lilly leafe on their heads. The Horsemen affoone

as they perceived it to ftirre, ranne into the water to the Horses breafts, and the Indians fled a-

them, that feeing they could not escape, they should yeeld themselves to the Governour : which

they did, enforced thereunto by the coldnesse of the water; and one by one, hee first whom the

cold did first overcome, cried to loba Ortiz, desiring that they would not kill him, for he came to

put himfelfe into the hands of the Gouernour. By the morning watch they made an end of yeel-

6) gaine into the Lake. So this night pailed without any reft on both fides. Iohn Orriz perswaded

Indian Subtlety.

a new Conipiracie.

ding themselves: only twelve principall men, being more honourable and valorous then the rest refolved rather to die then to come into his hands. And the Indians of Faracoff, which were now loofed out of chaines, went fwimming to them, and pulled them out by the haire of their heads, and they were all put inchaines, and the next day were divided among the Christians for their teruice. Being thus in captilitie, they determined to rebell; and gaue in charge to an Indian, which was Interpretor, and held to bee valuant, that assoone as the Gouernour did come to speake with him, hee should cast his hands about his necke, and choake him. Who, when he faw opportunitie, laid hands on the Gouernor, and before he cast his hands about his nocke, he gave him fuch a blow on the notirils, that he made them gush out with bloud, and presently all the rest did rise. He that could get any weapons at hand or the I andle wher withhe Io did grind the Maiz, fought to kill his Mafter, or the first hee met before him : a.d hee that could get a Lance or Sword at hand, bestirred himselfe in such fort with it, as though he had vsed it all his life time. One Indian in the Ma ket place enclosed betweene fifteene or twentie Footmen. made away like a Bull with a Sword in his hand, till certaine Halbardiers of the Gouernor came, which killed him, Another gat vp with a Lance to a loft made of Canes, which they build to keepe their Maizin, which they call a Barbacoa, and there he made fuch a noy fe, as though tenne men had beene there defending the doore : they flue him with a partifan. The Indians were in all about two hundred men. They were all fubdued. And some of the youngest the Gouernour gaue to then which had good chaines, and were carefull to looke to them that they gat not away. All the test becom named to be put to death, being tyed to a stake in the midst of the Market place: 10 and the Lodians of the Paracoffi did shoot them to death.

Ind to 136-0.

A Ruer.

Haralant a creat Forne. VautiL. * Aboberas.

The Gove nour departed from Napetuca the three and twentieth of September : hee lodged by a React, where two Indians brought him a Bucke from the Cacique of Vzachil. The next day he pailed by a great Towne called Hapalaya; and lodged at Vzachil, and found no people in it, because they durit not tarrie for the notice the Indians had of the flaughter of Napetuca. Hee found in that Townt great store of Maiz, French Beanes and * Pompions, which is their food, and that wherewich the Christians there fultained themselves. The Maiz is like course Millet. and the Pompions are better and more fauourie then those of Spaine, From thence the Gouernour fene two Captaines each a fundry way to feeke the Indians. They tooke an hundred men and women : of which aswell there as in other places where they made any inrodes, the Captain 30 chose one or two for the Gouernour, and divided the rest to himselse, and those that went with him. They led thefe Indians in chaines with Iron collars about their neckes; and they ferued to carrie their ftuffe, and to grind their Maiz wand for other feruices that fuch Captines could doe, Sometimes it happened that going for wood or Maiz with them, they killed the Christian that led them, and ranne away with the chaine : orhers filed their chaines by night with a piece of ftone, wherewith they cut them, and vie it in ftead of Iron. Those that were perceiued paid for them selves, and for the rest, because they should not dare to doe the like another time. The women and young boyes, when they were once an hundred leagues from their Countrie, and had forgotten things, they let goe loofe, and so they served; and in a very short space they vaderstood the Language of the Christians. From Vzachil the Governour departed toward Apalach, to and in two dayes sourney, he came to a Towne called Axille, and from thence forward the Indians were carelesse, because they had as yet no notice of the Christians. The next day in the morning, the first of October, he departed from thence, and commanded a Bridge to be made our a

Axille. A River. Ditachuco.

Officheras.

Asset Affile.

or the bear C. heie. The Sea.

River which he was to paffe. The Gouernour passed upon Wednesday, which was Saint Francis his day, and lodged at a Towns which was called Vitachneo, fubicat to Apalache: he found it burning; for the Indians had let it on fire. From thence forward the Countrie was much inhabited, and had great flore of Maiz, He pissed by many Granges like Hamlets. On Sunday the five and twentieth of October, he came to a Towne, which is called Ozela, and vpon Tuelday to Anaica Apalace, where the Lord of all that Countrie and Province was refident: in which Towne the Campenalte, whose office it is to quarter out and lodge men, did lodge all the company round about within a league and halte a league of it. There were other Townes, where was great store of Maiz, Pompions, French Beanes, and Plummes of the Countrie, which are better then those of Spans, and they grow in the fields without plantin. The victuals that were thought necessary to passe the Winter, were gathered from these Townes to Anaica Apalache. The Governour was intermed, that the Sea was ten leagues from thence. He presently sent a Captaine thither with Horsemen and Footmen: And fixe leagues on the way he found a Towne, which was named Ochece, and to came to the Sea, and found a great tree felled, and cut it into preces, with stakes fet up like mangers, and law the skuls of horfes. He returned with this newes. And that was held for certains, which was reported of Pamphilo de Narmaes, that there he had builded the barkes where 60 with he was now or the land of Elmid with he went out of the land of Florida, and was cast away at Sea. Presently the Government fent Iohn Danufco with thirty horiemen to the port de Spirita Santo, where Calderan was write order shat they should abandon the port, and all of them come to Apalache. He departed on Saturday the seuenteenth of Nouember. In Ozachil and other towner that stood in the way hee

found great flore of people already carelesse. He would take none of the Indians for not hindring himselfe, because it behooved him to give them no leasure to gather themselves together; Hee passed through the Townes by night, and rested without the Townes three or some hours. In The Port de passed through the 1 ownes by night, and letter with him twenty Indian women, spiritus and ten daies he came to the Port de Spirito Santo. Hee carried with him twenty Indian women, ten daies iourwhich he tooke in Teara, and Potano, neere vnto Cale, and fent them to Donna Ifabella, in the two nieftom afa-Carauchs, which he fent from the Port de Spirito Santo to Cuba. And he carried all the footemen Labe. in the Brigandines, and coasting along the shoare, came to Apalache. And Calderan with the horsemen, and some crossebow-men on foote went by land; and in some places the Indians set voon im, and wounded fome of his men. As soone as he came to Apalache, presently the Go-

to uernour tent fawed plankes and spikes to the Sea side, wherewith was made a Piragna or Barke, wherein were embarked thirty men well armed, which went out of the Bay to the Sea, looking for the Brigandines. Sometimes they fought with the Indians, which passed along the harbour in their Canoes. Vpon Saturday, the twenty nine of Nouember, there came an Indian through the Watch undiscouered, and fet the Towne on fire, and with the great winde that blew, two parts of it were confumed in a short time. On Sunday the twenty eight of December came lobn Dannico with the Brigandines. The Gouernor fent Francisco Maldonado, a Captain off ootmen, with fiftie men to discouer the coast Westward, &to seeke some Port, because he had determined to goe by land, &difcouer that part. That day there went out eight horfemen by commandement of the Gouernour into the field, two leagues about the Towne to feeke Indians : for they were

20 now so emboldened, that within two croffebow shot of the campe, they came & slew men. They found two men and a woman gathering French Beanes: the men, though they might have fled. yet because they would not leave the woman, which was one of their wives, they resolved to die fighting : and before they were flaine, they wounded three horfes, whereof one died within a few dates after. Calder an going with his men by the Sea-coast, from a wood that was neere the place, the Indians let upon him, and made him for fake his way, and many of them that went with him forfooke fome necessary victuals, which they carried with them. Three or fouredayes after the limited time given by the Governor to Maldonado for his going and comming, being already determined and resolued, if within eight dayes he did not come, to tarry no longer for him, hee came, and brought an Indian from a Province, which was called Ochus, fixty leagues Westward Ochus sixtie

30 from Apalache, where he had found a good Port of good depth and defense against weather. And leagues West because the Gouernor hoped to finde a good Countrie forward, he was very well contented. And he fent Maldonado for victuals to Hanana, with order, that hee would tarrie for him at the Port of Ochm, which he had discouered, for he would goe seeke it by land ; and if he should chance to flay, and not come thither that fummer, that then he should returne to Hanana, & should come againe the next fummer after, and tarry for him at that Port: for he faid he would doe none other thing but goe to feeke Ochus. Francisco Maldonado departed, and in his place for Captaine of the Chap. 11. footemen remained lobn de Guzman. Of those Indians which were taken in Napetuca, the treasurer lebn Gartan had a wong man, which faid, that he was not of that Countrie, but of another far off toward the Sunriving, and that it was long fince he had travelled to fee Countries; and that his 40 Countrie was called Tapaba, and that a woman did gouerne it: and that the Towne where shee

was refident was of a wonderfull bignesse, and that many Lords round about were tributaries to her : and some gaue her clothes, and others Gold in abundance : and he told, how it was taken out of the Mines, and was moulten & refined, as if he had feene it done, or the Divell had taught Abundance of it him. So that all those which knew any thing concerning the same, said that it was impossible Gold. to give fo good a relation, without having seene it: And all of them, as if they had seene it, by the fignes that he gaue, beleeved all that he faid to be true.

On Wednesday the third of March, of the yeere 1540. the Gouetnour departed from ... naice Apalache to feeke Tupaha. He commanded his men to goe prouided with Maiz for fixtie leavies of defert. The horiemen carried their Maiz on their horses, and the footemen at their fides : because the Indians that were for service, with their miserable life that they lead that win- Death of Is-

50 ter, being naked and in chaines, died for the most part. Within foure dayes iourney they came dianstauer. to a great River : and they made a piragua or ferrie boate, and because of the great current, they made a cable with chaines, which they fastened on both sides of the River; and the ferrie boate went along by it, and the horfes fwam over, being drawne with capitans. Having paffed the River, in a day and a halfe they came to a Towne called Capachiqui. Vpon Friday, the eleventh of March, they found Indians in armes. The next day five Christians went to feeke morters, which the Indians have to beate their Maiz, and they went to certaine houses on the backe-fide of the Campe environed with a wood; and within the wood were many Indians which came to fpie vs; of the which came other fine and fet vpon vs. One of the Christi-

60 ans came running away, giving an alarme vnto the Campe: Those which were most ready anfwered the alarme. They found one Christian dead, and three fore wounded. The Indians fled vnto a lake adjoyning neere a very thicke wood, where the hories could not enter. The Gouernour departed from Capachiani, and passed through a detert. On Wednesday the twenty one of the moneth he came to a Towns called Toalli . And from thence forward there was a diffe-Mmmmmm

Toalli. Their houses for winter and

A graffe like

Achefe.

rence in the houses. For those which were behinde vs were thatched with straw, and those of Toalli were couered with reedes, in manner of tiles. These houles are very clenly. Some of them had wals daubed with clay, which shewed like a mudwall. In all the cold Countries the Indiana have every one a house for the winter daubed with clay within & without, and the doores is very little; they flut it by night, and make fire within, to that they are in it as warme as in a flone: and fo it continueth all night that they neede not cloathes: and besides these, they have others for Summer; and their kitchins neere them, where they make fire and bake their bread; and they have barbacoas wherein they keepe their Maiz; which is an houle fet vp in the aire vpon fourfiakes, boorded about like a chamber, and the floore of it is of cane hurdles. The difference which Lords or principall mens houses have from the rest, besides they be greater, is, that they have so great galleries in their fronts, & under them feates made of canes in manner of benchest and round about them they have many lotts, wherein they lay vp that which the Indians doe give them for tribute, which is Maiz Deeres skins, and mantles of the Countrie, which are like blankets: they make them of the inner rinde of the barkes of trees & some of a kinde of grasse like voto nettles. which being beaten, is like vnto flaxe. The women couer themselues with these Mantles; they put one about them from the waste downeward; and another ouer their shoulder, with their right arme out, like vnto the Egyptians. The men weare but one Mantle vpon their shoulders after the same manner; and haue their secrets hid with a Deeres skin, made like a linnen breech. which was wont to be vied in Spains. The skins are well corried, and they give them whatcolour they lift, so perfect, that if it be red, it feemeth a very fine cloath in graine, and the blacke is 10 Excellent comost fine : and of the lameleather they make shooes; and they dye their Mantles in the same colours. The Gouernor departed from Todis the foure and twentieth of March : he came on Thurfday at evening to a small River, where a bridge was made whereon the people passed, and Bent Fernandez a Portugall fell off from it, and was drowned. As soone as the Gonernour had passed A fmall Rive the River, a little distance thence he found a Towne called Ache fe. The Indians had notice of the Christians; they leaped into a River: fome men and women were taken; among which was one that understood the youth which guided the Gouernour to Tupaba: whereby that which he had reported was more confirmed. For they had passed through Countries of divers languages, and fome which he understood not. The Gouernour fent by one of the Indians that were taken to call the Cacique, which was on the other fide of the River. He came. The Governour told him & that he was the Soune of the Sunne, and came from those parts where hee dwelt, and travelled through that Countrie, and fought the greatest Lord, and richest Province that was in it. The Ca-Seto preteuds sique told him, that farther forward dwelt a great Lord, and that his dominion was called Ocent. so be the Son He gaue hima guide and an Interpreter for that Province. The Gouernour commanded his Isof the Sunne. dians to be fet free, and trauelled through his Countrie vp a Ruer very well inhabited. Hee de-Mannerof Spa- parted from his Towne the first of Aprill; and left a very high crosse of Wood set up in the midell inhabited. miards praying. delt of the market place : and because the time gaue no more leasure, hee declared to him onely, that that croffe was a memoriall of the same, whereon Christ, which was God and man, and created the heavens and the earth, fuffered for our faluation : therefore he exhorted them that they (hould reuerence it : and they made flew as though they would doe fo. The fourth of 4-49 prill they passed by a Town called Aliamaca, and the tenth of the moneth he came to Ocute. The Cacique lent him two thouland Indians with a prefent, to wit, many Conies, & Partridges, bread of Maiz, two Hens, and many Dogs: which among the Christians were effermed as if they had Conics Partri beene fat Wethers, because of the great want of flesh meate and Salt, and hereof in many place, ges, Hens, and many times was great neede ; and they were so scarie, that if a man fell sicke, there was nothing to cherrish him withall; and with a ficknesse, that in another place easily might have been remedied, he confumed away till nothing but skinne and bones were left : and they died of pure weakenede, some of them saying, If I had a slice of meate, or a few cornes of Salt, I should not dis. And because they were thus scanted of flesh, when six hundred men that went with Sois, came to any Towns, and found thirty or forty Dogs, he that could get one and kill it, thought him-

Cofaqui. Patofa.

Atemaca-

Dogges

Ocuse.

An excellent fitte leagues. Barren Cous-

to a Province of an Indian Lord, called Patofa. This Countrie, from the first peaceable Cacique, vnto the Pronince of Patofa, which were fiftie leagues, is a fat Countrie, Beautifull, and very fruitfull, and very well watered, and full of good Rivers. And from thence to the Port de Sprito Santo, where we first arrived in the land of Florida (which may be 350, leagues, little more or leffe) is a barren land, and the most of it 60 groues of wilde Pine-trees, low and full of lakes, and in some places very high and chicke groues, whither the Indians that were in armes fled, so that no man could finde them, neither could any

felfe no small man : and he that killed it, and gaue not his Captaine one quarter, if he knewit,

he frowned on him, and made him feele it, in the watches, or in any other matter of labour that

was offered, wherein he might doe him a displeasure. On Monday, the twelth of Aprill, the

Gouernour departed from Ocuse: The Cacique gave him two hundred Tamenes, to wit, Indians

to carrie burdens : he palied through a Towne, the Lord whereof was name i Cofaqui, and came

In the Towne of Parofa, the youth which the Gouernour carried with him for an Interpte

tour and a guide, began to fome at the mouth, and tumble on the ground, as one possessed with the Divell: They faid a Gospell over him; and the fit left him. And he faid, that foure daies journie from thence toward the Sunne rifing, was the Province that hee spake of. The Indians of Parofa faid, that toward that part they knew no habitation; but that toward the Northwest. they knew a Prouince which was called Coco, a very plentifull Countrie, which had very great Townes in it. The Cacique told the Gouernour, that if he would goe thither, he would give him guides and Indians for burdens; and if he would goe whither the youth spake of, that hee would

likewife give him those that he needed: and so with louing words and offers of courtesie, they tooke their leaves the one of the other. He gave him feven hundred Indians to beare burdens. He tooke Maiz for foure dayes journie. He trauelled fix daies by a path which grew narrow more and more, till it was lost altogether: He went where the youth did lead him, and passe two Rivers Rivers. which were waded : each of them was two croflebowshot ouer : the water came to the firrops. and had so great a current, that it was needefull for the horsemen to stand one before another. that the footemen might passe aboue them leaning vnto them. He came to another River of a greater current and largeneffe, which was paffed with more trouble, because the horses did swim. Another great at the comming out about a lances length. Having paffed this River, the Governour came to a ter River. groue of Pinetrees, and threatned the youth, and made as though hee would have cast him to the dogs, because he had told him a lye, saying, it was but foure daies journie, and they had trauelled nine every day feven or eight leagues, and the men by this time were growne wearie and weake, and the horses leane through the great scanting of the Maiz. The youth said, that he knew not where he was. It faued him that hee was not cast to the dogs, that there was neuer another

whom Ishn Ortiz did understand. The Gouernour with them two, and with some horsemen and footemen, leaving the Campe in a groue of Pinetrees, travelled that day five or fix leagues to feeke a way, and returned at night very comfortleffe, and without finding any figne of way or towne. The next day, the Gouernour fent other foure with as many horsemen that could fwim, to paffe the Ofe and Rivers which they should finde, and they had choife horses the best that were in the Campe. The Captaines were Baltafar de Galleges, which went vo the River: and lobn Danufco, downe the River : Alfonfo Romo, and Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo went into the inward parts of the land. The Gouernour brought with him into Florida thirteene Sowes. The great in-

30 and had by this time three hundred Swine: Hee commanded enery man should have halfe a create of swine bound of Hogs flosh enery day : and this he did three or foure dayes after the Maiz was fpent. With this small quantitie of flesh, and some sodden hearbes, with much trouble the people were fullained. John Danusco came on Sunday late in the evening, and brought newes that hee had foundalittle Towne twelve or thirteene leagues from thence : he brought a Woman and a Boy that he had tooke there. With his comming and with those newes, the Governour and all the rest were so glad, that they seemed at that instant to have returned from death to life. Voon Monday, the twenty fix of Aprill, the Gouernour departed to goe to the Towne, which was called Aymay; and the Christians named it the Towns of Relufe. He left where the Campe had lien at the toote of a Pinetree a letter buried, and letters carued in the barke of the Pine, the

40 contents whereof was this : Digge here at the foot of this Pine, and you shall finde a letter. And this he did, because when the Captaines came, which were fent to feeke some habitation, they might fee the letter, and know what was become of the Gouernour, and which way hee was gone. There was no other way to the Towne, but the markes that Iohn Dannico left made vpon the trees. The Gouernour with fome of them that had the best horses came to it on the Monday : And all the rest inforcing themselves the best they could, some of them lodged within two leagues of the Towne, some within three and soure, every one as he was able to goe, and his strength ferued him. There was found in the Towne a storehouse full of the flowre of parched Maiz; and some Maiz, which was distributed by allowance. Here were source Indians taken, and none of them would confesse any other thing, but that they knew of none other habitation. The Gouernor commanded one of them to be burned; and prefently another confessed, that two daies An Indian burned;

50 iournie from thence, there was a Prouince that was called Cutifa-Chiqui. V pon Wednesday came ned for his the Captaines Baltasar de Gallegos, Alfonso Romo, and John Rodriguez Lobillo: for they had found the letter, and followed the way which the Gouernour had taken toward the towne. As foone as they came, he departed toward Cutifa-Chiqui. In the way three Indians were taken, which faid, that the Lady of that Countrie had notice already of the Christians, and staied for them in a

Within a little while the Lady came out of the Towne in a Chaire, whereon certaine of the principall Indians brought her to the River. She entred into a Barge which had the Sterne tilted ouer, and on the floore her mat ready laied with two cuftions voon it one voon another, where (0 the fat her downe; and with her came her principall Indians in other Barges, which did wait vpon her. She went to the place where the Gouernour was. She prefented vnto him great flore of A great cor. cloathes of the Countrie, which the brought in other Canoes; to wit, Mantles and Skins; and don of Pearles tooke from her owne necke a great cordon of Pearles, and cast it about the necke of the Gouernour; entertaining him with very gracious speeches and courtesie, and commanded Canoes to

Mmmmmm 2

and hath goodly Medows by the Ruers. Their woods are thin, & full of Walnut trees & Mulber-

ry trees. They (a.d the Sea was two daies journy from thence. Within a league & halfe about this

Towne were great Townes dispeopled, and ouergrown with graffe; which shewed that they had

been long without inhabitants. The ladians (aid, that two years before there was a Plague in that

Countrie, and that they removed to other Townes. There was in their store-houses great quanti-

ty of Clothes, Mantles of yarne made of the barkes of trees, and others made of Feathers, white.

greene, red, and yellow, very fine after their vie, and profitable for winter. There were also

flockings, and shooes. And the Laly perceiuing that the Christians esteemed the Pearles, adni-

fed the Gouernour to fend to fearch certaine graves that were in that Towne, and that he should

finde many : and that if he would fend to the dispeopled Townes, he might loade all his Horses.

They fought the graves of that Towne, and there tound foureteene rooves of Pearles, and little

Babies and Birds made of them. The people were browne, well made, and well proportioned.

and more civill then any others that were seene in all the Countrie of Florida, and all of them

went shol and cloathed. The youth told the Gouernour, that he began now to enter into the

land which he spake of: and some credit was given him that it was so, because hee vinderstood

the language of the Indians: and he requested that he might be Christened, for he faid he defired

him to be loofed from a chaine, in which vntill that time he had gone. This Countrie, as the Indians reported, had beene much inhabited, and had the fame of a good Countrie. And as it fee-

meth, the youth which was the Gouernours guide, had heard of it, and that which hee knew

by heretay, he affirmed that he had feene, and augmented at his pleasure. In this Towne was

found a Dagger and Beades, that had belonged to Christians. The Indians reported, that Christians

ans had beene in the hauen, which was two dayes fournie from this Towne, many yeares agoe.

He that came thither was the Gouernour, the Licenciate Lucas Vufquez de Ayllon, which went

quarrels and flaughters betweene some principall men which went with him, for the principall

paniola. All the Company thought it good to inhabit that Countrie, because it was in a tempe-

rate climate: And that if it were inhabited, all the Ships of New Spaine, of Pern, Santa Mar-

tha, and Tierra firme, in their returne tor Spame, might well touch there: because it was in their

way; and because it was a good Countrie, and fited ht to raise commoditie. The Governour, since

his intent was to feeke another treafure, like that of Atabalipa Lord of Peru, was not contra-

ted with a good Countrie, nor with Pearles, though many of them were worth their weight

in Gold, And if the Countrie had beene divided among the Christians, those which the In-

dians had fished for afterward, would have beene of more value : for those which they had,

because they burned them in the fire, did leese their colour. The Gouernour answered them, that viged him to inhabit, That in all the Countrie, there were not victuals to furtaine his men

one moneth; and that it was needefull to refort to the Port of Ocm, where Maldanado was to

flay for them: and that if no richer Countrie were found, they might returne againe to that

when locuer they would; and in the meane time the Indians would fow their fields, and it would

be better furnished with Maiz. He inquired of the Indians, whether they had notice of any great

Lord farther into the land. They told him, that twelve daies journey from thence, there was a

Prouince called Chiaba, fubicet to the Lord of Coga. Prefently the Gouernour determined to

feeke that land. And being a sterne man, and of few words, though he was glad to fift and know

the opinion of all men, yet after he had deliuered his owne, hee would not be contraried, and ale

gouernment: And without knowing any thing of the Countrie, they returned home to Hif. to

to become a Christian: He was Christened, and named Peter; and the Gouernour commanded 30

many Deeres skins, with many compartiments traced in them, and some of them made into hofe. Io

They paffe the Riuer. Walnut trees.

Mulbery trees for filke. The Sea two dayes iourn.e Maniles of the backes of trees. Mantles of Feathers. Pearles found in graues,

Three hundred nintic two pounds of Pearles found.

This Towne was but two daicsiournic from the hauen of Santa Helena. In the yeers Itis in 32.deg. to conquer this Countrie, and at his comming to the Port hee died; and there was a dissilion, and a halfe,

chiaha rwelue daies journie from Santa He lena: and Coffe feuen daics iournic from Chiaha: at which towns of Cofte, they had an Oxe hide.Chap. 16.

wayes did what liked himselfe, and so all men did condescend vnto his will. 8. II. Sotos fursher Difconeries in Florida and manifold various Aduen-tures till bee came to Tulla.

He Gouernour departed from Carifa Chiqui the third day of May. And because the Indians had revolted, and the will of the Ladie was perceived, that if thre could, thee would depart without giuing any Guides or men for burdens, for the wrongs fort, that for a little gaine doe put themselues and others in danger of vndoing.) The Gourmout commanded her to be kept in lafegard, and carried with him, not with fogood viage as fnee deferued for the good will the shewed. And he carried her on foot with his bond-women to looke

which the Christians had done to the Indians: (for there neuer want fome among many of a base 62 Vnto her. In all the Townes where the Gouernour passed, the Lady commanded the Indians to

CHAP. 2. 2. Indians food A Ladies deceit, Medowet fomne with Maiz. come and carrie the burdens from one Towne to another. Wee passed through her Countrie an hundred leagues, in which, as wee faw, thee was much obeyed. For the Indians did all that thee commanded them with great efficacie and diligence. In Seuen dayes space the Governour came Chalaque seven to a Province called Chalaque, the poorest Countrie of Maiz that was feene in Florida. The In. dayes iournie dientfed vpon Roots and Herbes which they feeke in the fields, and vpon wilde beatts. which they kill with their Bowes and Arrowes : and it is a very gentle people. All of them goe naked, and are very leane. There was a Lord, which for a great Prefent, brought the Gouernour two Deeres skinnes : and there were in that . Countrie many wilde Hens. In one Towne they made 700, Hens. him a Prelent of feuen hundred Hens, and so in other Townes they fent him those which they to had or could get. From this Prouince to another, which is called Xualla, hee spent five dayes: here he found very little Maiz; and for this cause, though the people were weared, and the horses very weake, hee stayed no more but two dayes. From Ocute to Cuifa-chiqui may bet dayesoff. fome bundred and thirtie leagues, whereof eightie are Wilderneffe. From Cutifa-chiqui to Xualla, two hundred and fiftie, and it is an Hilly Countrie. The Gouernour departed from Xualla toward Guarule: he passed very rough and high hils. In that rourney, the Lady of Cutifa-chiani (whom the Gouernour earried with him, asis aforefaid, with purpole to carrie her to Guanule, Rough and becaule her Territorie reached thither) going on a day with the bond-women which lead her, high hills went out of the way, and entred into a Wood, faying, thee went to ease her felfe, and fo shee deceized them, and hid her felte in the Wood; and though they fought her they could not find her. 30 She carried away with her a little cheft made of Canes in manner of a Coffer, which they call Peraca, full of vobored Pearles. Some which could judge of them, faid, that they were of great

value. An Indian woman that waited on her did carrie them. The Gouernour not to discontent her altogether, left them with her, making account that in Guazule he would aske them of her, when he gaue her leave to returne : which Coffer flice carried away , and went to Inalia with three flaues which fled from the Campe, and one Horseman which remained behind, who falling ficke of an Ague went out of the way, and was loft. This man, whose name was Alimanos, dealt with the flaves to change their euill purpole, and returne with him to the Christians : which two of them did; and Almamos and they ouertooke the Gouernour fiftie leagues from thence in a Province called Chiaba; and reported how the Lady remayned in Xualla with a flave of Andrew 20 de Vasconcellos which would not come backe with them, and that of a certaintie they lived as man and wife together, and meant to goe both to Caufa-chigai. Within fine dayes the Gouer- GuaxaD fine nour came to Guarule. The Indians there gave him a Present of three hundred Dogges, because dayes off. they faw the Christians efteeme them, and fought them to feed on them; for among them they are not eaten. In Guarule, and all that way, was very little Mair. The Gouernour fent from thencean Indian with a mellage to the Cacique of Chiahn, to define him to gather some Maiz thither, that he might reft a few dayes in (biaha. The Gouernour departed from Guazule, and Canalagua two in two dayes fourney came to a Towne called Canafagna. There met him on the way twentie dayes fourney

Indians every one loaden with a baskee full of Mulberies; for there be many, and those very good, Great flore of from Cutifa-chiqui thither, and fo forward in other Provinces, and also Nuts and Plums. And Mulberie recs no the trees grow in the fields without planting or dreffing them, and are as bigge and as ranke, as to make filke. though they grew in Gardens digged and watered. From the time that the Gouernour departed from Canalagna, he journied fine dayes through a Defert; and two leagues before he came to Chiaba, there met him fitteene Indians loaden with Maiz, which the Cacique had fent; and they told him on his behalfe, that he waited his comming with twentie Barnes full of it; and farther, that himfelfe, his Countrie, and subiects, and all things else were at his service. On the fift day of Iune, the Gouernour entred into Chiaba: The Cacique voided his owne houles, in which hee lodged, and received him with much ioy. There was in this Towne much Butter in Gourds melted like Oyle : they faid it was the fat The fat of

of Beares. There was found also great store of Oyle of Walnuts, which was cleere as Butter, Beares. 50 and of a good tafte, and a pot full of Honie of Bees, which neither before nor afterward was Oyle of Walfeene in all the Countrie. The Towne was in an Iland betweene two armes of a River, and was Hopy of Bees, feated night one of them. The River divideth it felfe into those two branches two Crosse-bow Thinks seated shotaboue the Towne, and meeteth againe a league beneath the same. The plaine betweene in an Iland. both the branches is fometimes one Croffe-bow fhot, fometimes two Croffe-bow fhot ouer. The branches are very broad, and both of them may be waded ouer. There were all along them very good Medowes, and many fields fowne with Maiz. And because the Indians stayed in their Towne, the Governour only lodged in the houses of the Cacique, and his people in the fields; where there was ever a tree, every one tooke one for himselfe. Thus the Campe lan separated one from another, and out of order. The Gouernour winked at it , because the Indians were in

60 peace, and because it was very hot, and the people should have suffered great extremitie, if it had not beene fo. The hories came thither fo weake, that for feebleneffe, they were not able to carry their Millers : because that from Cutifa-chiqui, they alwayes travelled with very little Provender, and were hanger-statued and tired ever tince they came from the Defert of Ocate. And be- The Desert of gaufe the most of them were not in case to vie in battell, though need should require, they fent Ocute, chap. 8. Mmmmmm 3

Thirtie dayes

in Chifca 10ward the

Hatchets of

Copper hol-

North.

them to feed in the night a quarter of a league from the Campe. The Christians were therein great danger, because that itae this time the Indians had fet voon them, they had beene in emil case to have defended themselves. The Governour rested there thirtie dayes, in which time, becaule the Countrie was very fruitfull, the horses grew fat: A Cacique of a Province called Coffe came to this Towne to vije the Gouernour. After he had offered himfelfe, and paffed with him some words of tendring his service and courtesie; the Gouernor asking him whether he had notice of any rich Countries he laid, year to wit, that toward the North, there was a Pronince has med Chiferand that there was a melting of Copper, and of another metal of the fame colour, fair that it was finer, and of a far more perfect colour, and far better to the fight; and that they wied in not fo much, because it was forter. And the felfe fame thing was told the Gouernour in Chaife. At Mines of Copchiqui; where we law some little Hatchets of Copper, which were said to have a mixture of Gold, But in that part the Countrie was not wel peopled, and they said there were Mountaines, per and Gold which the horfes could not patie; and for that caule, the Gouernour would not goe from Catifachique directly thither : And he made account, that travelling through a peopled Countrie, when his men and horses should bee in better plight, and hee were better certified of the truth of the chigais direct thing, he would return toward it, by Mountaines, and a better inhabited Countrie, whereby he ly North rom might haue better paffage. He fent two Christians from Chiaba, with certain Indians which knew the Countrie of Chilea, and the language thereof to view it, and to make report of that which they should find; where he told them that he would tarrie for them.

In teuen dayes he came to Coste. The second of July he commanded his Campe to be pitched 10

him, there went from the Campe certaine Footmen to the Towne to feeke some Maiz, and not

which is with in two daies of Sansa Historia.
Two Christians two Crosse-bow shot from the Towne; and with eight men of his guard he went where hee fent from Chia. found the Cacique, which to his thinking seceived him with great love. As he was talking with ha to lecke Chifca. Coffe feuen daves from Chiaha.chaz.14.

A wife Stra-

Those which

were fent to

High Moun-

A little poore

Raines

contented with it, they ranfacked and fearched the houses; and took what they found. With this despite the Indians began to rife and to take their armes : and some of them with sudgels in their hands, ranne vpon five or live Christians, which had done them wrong, and beat them at their pleafure. The Governour feeing them all in an vprore, and himfelte among them with fo few Christians, to elcape their hands vied a stratagem, farre against his owne disposition, being, as he was, very franke and open : and thought it grieued him very much that any Indian should bee so bold, as with reason, or without reason to del pile the Christians, he tooke vp a cudgell, and tooke \$ their parts against his owne men ; which was a meanes to quiet them : And prefently hee sent word by a man very fecretly to the Campe, that some armed men should come toward the place. where he was; and he tooke the Cacique by the hand, ving very milde words vnto him, and with some principall Indians that did accompany him, he drew them out of the Towne into a plaine way, and vnto the fight of the Campe, whither by little and little with good discretion the Christians began to come and to gather about them. Thus the Governour led the Canque, and his chiefe men vntill he entred with them into the Campe : and neere vnto his Tent, het commanded them to be put in safe custodie; and told them, that they should not depart without giuing him a guide and Indians for burthens, and till certaine ficke Christians were come, which he had commanded to come down the River in Canoes from Chiaba; and thofeallo which he had fent to the Province of Chifeat (for they were not returned; and he feared that the Indians had flaine the one, and the other.) Within three dayes after, those which were fent to Chife areturned, and made report, that the Indians had carried them through a Countrie fo poore of Maiz, and to rough, and ouer to high Mountaynes, that it was impossible for the Armie to trauell that Seeke Chifca reway; and that feeing the way grew very long, and that they lingred much, they confulted to returne from a little poore Towne, where they faw nothing that was of any profit, and brought an Oxe hide, which the Indians gave them, as thin as a calues skin, and the haire like a foft wool, betweene the course and fine wooll of sheepe. The Cacique gaue a guide, and men forburdens, and departed with the Governours leave. The Governour departed from Coste the ninth of luly, and lodged at a Towne called Tali.

Towne. An Oxe Hide with hairelike wooll. cap. 215. The Cacique commanded prouision necessary for two dayes, while the Gouernour was there, faith foto be brought thither: and at the time of his departure, he gave him foure women and two men, Tali, one day which he had need of to beare burthens. The Gouernour travelled fixe dayes through many from Coffe. Townes Subject to the Cacique of Coca : and as he entred into his Countrie many Indians came Many Townes vnto him every day from the Cacique, and met him on the way with meffages, one going, and of cogs. Cofa. another comming. He came to Coca vpon Friday, the fixe and twentieth of July. The Care Iuly 26. que came forth to receive him, two Croffe-bow fhot from the Towne in a chaire, which his print cipall mengarried on their shoulders, sitting vpon a cushion, and couered with a garment of Marterns, of the fashion and bignelle of a womans Huke: hee had on his head a Diadem of feathers, and round about him many Indians playing vpon Flutes, and finging.

Many great Townes. Many Plum-

There was in the Barnes, and in the fields great store of Maiz and French Beanes: The Countrie was greatly inhabited with many great Townes, and many sowne fields, which reached from the one to the other. It was pleafant, fat, full of good Meadowes voon Rivers. There Were in the fields many Plum-trees, as well of fuch as grow in Spame, as of the Countrig: and

CHAP. 2.S. 2. The Gouernors departure from Coca. Women given for carrages. 1541

wild tall Vines, that runne up the trees; and befides thefe, there were other low Vines with bigge and sweet Grapes; but tor want of digging and dreffing, they had great kernels in them. Two fores of bigge and tweet Grapes, but of the Casiques, because they should not absent themselves, Note. and carried them with him, till he came out of their Countries: because that carrying them along with him, he looked to find people in the Townes, and they gaue him guides, and men to carrie burdens : and before hee went out of their Countries, hee gaue them license to returne to their houses, and to their Porters likewise, assoone as hee came to any other Lordshippe, where they gave him others. The men of Coga feeing their Lord detained, tooke it in euill part, and renolted, and hid themselves in the Woods, as well those of the Towne of the Cacique, as those 10 of the other Townes of his principall subjects. The Gouernour sent out foure Captaines, every one his way to leeke them. They tooke many men and women, which were put into chaines: They feeing the hurt which they received, and how little they gained in abfenting themlelues,

came againe, promiting to doe whatforuer they were commanded. The Gouernor rested in Coca fine and twentie dayes. He departed from thence the twentieth 20. of August. of August tofecke a Prouince called Tafcainea: he carried with him the Cacique of Coca. Hee league farcher neere a Brooke. The next day he came to a Towne called Trana, fubiect to Coca. Tima.

He stayed there fixe dayes because of a River that passed by it, which at that time was very high; Agreet Rivers and alloone as the River furfered him to paffe, he fet forward, and lodged at a Towne named VI. Villabali. 20 libabali. There came to him on the way, on the Caciques behalfe of that Prouince, ten or twelve principall tadians to offer him his feruice; all of them had their plumes of feathers, and Bowes and Arrowes. The Gouernour comming to the Towne with twelve Horsemen, and some Footmen of his Guard, leauing his people a Crosse-bow shot from the Towne, entred into it, hee found all the Indians with their weapons : and as farre as he could gheffe, they feemed to have fome euill meaning. It was knowne afterward, that they were determined to take the Cacique of Coca from the Gouernour, if he had requested it. The Gouernour commanded all his people villabali walto enter the Towne, which was walled about, and neere vnto it passed a small River. The wall, led about. aswell of that, as of others, which afterward wee faw, was of great posts thrust deepe into the ground and very rough, and many long rates as bigge as ones armes laid acroffe betweene them,

and the wall was about the heighe of a Lance, and it was daubed within and without with clay, and had loope-holes. On the otherfide of the River was a Towne, where at that present the Cacique was. The Gouernourient to call him, and he came prefently. After he had passed with the Gouernour fome words of offering his feruices, he gave him fuch men for his carriages as he needed, and thirtie women for flaues. In that place was a Christian loft, called Mangano, borne in Salamanca, of noble Parentage, which went aftray to feeke for Grapes, whereof there is great ftore, and those very good.

The day that the Governour departed from thence, he lodged at a Towne fubicet to the Lord 8000 Gregory of Vllibabali: and the next day hee came to another Towne called Toaf. The Indiane gave the To-A. Gouernour thirtie women, and fuch men for his carriages as hee needed. He trauelled ordinarily

4º five or fixe leagues a day when he travelled through peopled Countries: and going through De- Hee travelled ferts, he marched as fait as he could, to either the want of Maiz. From Toafs, patting through ord at the fome Townes fubicat to a Casique, which was Lord of a Prouince called Tallife, he travelled fine or a leagues dayes : He came to Tallife the eighteenth of September : The Towne was great, and fittuated Tallife a great neere vnto a maine River. On the other fide of the River were other Townes, and many fields Towne. fowne with Maiz. On both fides it was a very plentifull Countrie, and had ftore of Maiz: they Septem. 18. hadvoided the Towne. The Gouernour commanded to call the Cacique; who came, and be. A mine timer tweene them passed some words of loue and offer of his seruices, and he presented vnto him fortie Indians. There came to the Gouernour in this Towne a principall Indian in the behalfe of the Cacique of Tascaluca.

After hee had refled there twenty dayes, hee departed thence toward Tafealuea. That day when he went from Talife, he lodged at a great Towne called Calife. And the next day passed Calife a great by another, and came to a small Towne of Tascalaca; and the next day hee camped in a Wood Towne. two leagues from the Towne where the Cacique refided, and was at that time. And he fent the Mafter of the Campe, Lays de Moscoso, with fifteene Horsemen , to let him knowe how he was comming. The Casique was in his Lodgings under a Canopie: and without doores, right against his Lodgings, in an high place, they thread a Mat for him, and two Cushions one vpon another, where he fate him downe, and his Indians placed themselves round about him, somewhat distant from him, to that they made a place, and a voide roome where hee face : and his chiefest men were necreft to him, and one with a shadow of Deeres skinne, which kept the Sunne from him,

60 being round, and of the hignesse of a Target, quartered with blacke and white, having a rundell in the middeit : aferre off it feemed to be of Taffara, because the colours were very perfect. It was fet on a small staffe stretched wide out. This was the deute which he carried in his warres. He was a man of a very tall stature, of great limmes, and spare and well proportioned, and was much feared of his neighbours and fubiects. Hee was Lord of many Territories and much people:

In his countenance he was grave. After the Matter of the Campe had spoken with him, he and those that went with him coursed their Hories, pranting them to and fro, and now and then toward the place where the Cacious was, who with much gravitie and diffimulation now and then lifted up his eyes, and beheld them as it were with diffaine. At the Gouernours comming , hee made no offer at all to rife. The Gouernour tooke him by the hand, and both of them fate down together on a feate which was under the Cloth of Estate.

Canoas demanded of the Indians. Fine Christians flaine. LIB.VIII

When he departed from thence, he determined to carrie him along with him for some causes. and at two dayes journey he came to a Towne called Piache, by which there passed a great River. A great River. The Governour demanded Canoas of the Indians: they faid, they had them not, but that they The Gouernour demanded Canoas of the American would make Rafts of canes and drie timber, on which hee might paffe well enough: And they to made them with all diligence and speed, and they gouerned them; and because the water went very flowe, the Gouernour and his people passed very well.

Virginia.

From the Port de Spirito Santo to Apalache, which is about an hundred leagues, the Gover-Soios traucis, nour went from East to Welt: and from Apalache to Cutifa-chiqui, which are four hundred whereby it ap- and thirtie leagues, from the South-west to the North-east: and from Cutifa-chiqui to Xualla. perfeth that he iourneved which are about two hundred and fiftie leagues, from the South to the North: and from Xuelle not farre from to Tascaluca, which are two hundred and fittie leagues more, an hundred and ninety of them he travelled from East to West, to wit, to the Province of Coca: and the other fixtie from Coca to Tascaluca, from the North to the South.

Haung passed the River of Piache, a Christian went from his companie from thence to setke a woman-flaue that was runne away from him, and the Indians either tooke him captine or floe him. The Gouernour vrged the Cacique that he should give account of him, and threatned him. that if he were not found, he would never let him loofe, The Cacique fent an Indian from thence to Mauilla, whither they were trauelling, which was a Towne of a principall Indian and his fubiect, faying, that he fent him to aduite them to make ready victuals, and men for carriages. But (as afterward appeared) be fent him to affemble all the men of warre thither, that hee had in his Countrie. The Gouernour travelled three dayes, and the third day he paffed all day thorow a peopled Countrie: and he came to Manilla vpon Monday the eighteenth of October. 13.0f October. He went before the Campe with fifteene Horlemen and thirtie Footmen. And from the Town came a Christian, whom he had tent to the principall man, three or foure dayes before, because in he should not absent himselfe, and also to learne in what fort the Indians were : who told him, that he thought they were in an euill purpose : for while he was there, there came many people

Manilla walled into the Towne, and many weapons, and that they made great hafte to fortifie the wall. Lags

de Molcolo told the Governour, that it would bee good to lodge in the field, feeing the Indian were of fuch disposition: and he answered, that he would lodge in the Towne, for he was weary of lodging in the field. When he came neere vnto the Towne, the Cacique came forth to receiue him with many Indians playing vpon Flutes and finging : and after hee had offered him-Three mantles felfe, he presented him with three mantles of Marterns. The Governour, with both the Cariques, and feuen or eight men of his guard, and three or foure Horsemen, which alighted to accompanie him, entred into the Towne, and fate him downe under a Cloth of Estate. The Cacique of Ta. 43 fealuca requested him, that he would let him remaine in that Towne, and trouble him no more with travelling: and feeing he would not give him leave, in his talke hee changed his purpok, and diffemblingly fained that hee would speake with some principall Indians, and rose vp from the place where he fate with the Gouernour, and entred into a house, where many Indians were with their Bowes and Arrowes. The Gouernour when he faw he returned not, called him, and he answered, that he would not come out from thence, neither would hee goe any further then that Towne, and that if he would goe his way in peace, hee should presently depart, and should

A gowne of

not feeke to carrie him perforce out of his Countrie and Territorie. Baltafar de Gallegos, which stood by, tooke hold of a Gowne of Marterns which hee had on; and he cast it over his head, and left it in his hands: and because all of them immediatly began 50 to stirre, Baltafar de Gallegos gaue him such a wound with his Coutilas, that hee opened him downe the backe, and prefently all the Indians with a great crie came out of the houses shooting their Arrowes. The Gouernour confidering, that it he taried there, he could not cicape, and if he commanded his men to come in , which were without the Towne, the Indians within the houses might kill their Horses, and doe much hurt, ranne out of the Towne, and before he came out, he fell twice or thrice, and those that were with him did helpe him vp againe; and hee and these that were with him were fore wounded : and in a moment there were fine Christians slaine in the Towne. The Gouernour came running out of the Towne , crying out , that every man th mild thand further off, because from the wall they did them much hurt. The Indians feeing that the Christians retired, and some of them, or the most part, more then an ordinarie pace, shot 60 with great boldnesse at them, and strooke downe such as they could ouertake. The Indians which the Christians did leade with them in chaines, had laid down their burthens neere unto the wall: and alloone as the Governour and his men were retired, the men of Masilla laid them on the Indians backes againe, and tooke them into the Towne, and loofed them presently from their

chaines, and gaue them Bowes and Arrowes to fight withall. Thus they poffesfed themselues of all the Clothes and Pearles, and all that the Christians had, which their flaues carried. And All the clothes of all the Ciotnes and Pearles, and are speaceable vntill wee came to this place, some of our men and Pearles of because the Indians had been alwairs peaceable vntill wee came to this place, some of our men and Pearles of because the Indians and becaule the Indian; had been a remained wharmed. And from others that had entred the had cheir weapons in their fardels and remained wharmed. And from others that had entred the wereloft, Towne with the Gouernour they had taken Swords and Holbards, and fought with them. When the Gourmout was gotten into the field, he called for an Horfe, and with some that accompanied him, he returned and flue two or three Indians: All the rest retired themselves to the Towne, and that with their Bowes from the wall. And those which presumed of their nimbleneffe, fallied forth to fight a thones caft from the wall : And when the Chriftians charged them, to they retired themselues at their leasure into the Towne. At the time that the broyle beganne,

there were in the Towne a Frier, and a Prieft, and a fernant of the Gouernour, with a womanflace: and they had no time to come out of the Towne: and they tooke an house, and so remained in the Towne. The Indians become Masters of the place, they shut the doore with a field gate: and among them was one Sword which the Gouernours feruant had, and with it he lie himfelfe behind the doore, thrusting at the Indians which fought to come into them : and the Frier and the Priest stood on the other file, each of them with a barre in their hands to beate him downe that first came in. The Indians seeing they could not get in by the doore, beganne to vacouer the houte top. By this time, all the Horsemen and Footmen which were behind, were

come to Manilla.

As some as the battell and the rereward were come to Manilla, the Gouernor commanded all A consultation thole that were best armed to alight, and made foure iquadrons of Footmen. The Indians leeing of the Indians those that were best armed to alight, and made toure iquations of Foundation and to the state of faying vnto him, as after it was knowne by certaine women that were taken there, that he was but one man, and could fight but for one man, and that they had there among them many principall Indians, very valiant and expert in feates of Armes, that any one of them was able to order the people there. The Gouernour was informed how there went men out of the Towne, and he commanded the Horfemen to befet it , and fent in every squadron of Footmen one Souldier with a fire-brand to fet fire on the houles, that the Indians might have no defense : all his men being fet in order, he commanded an Harquebuse to be shot off. The figne being given, the foure 30 fquadrons, every one by it felte with great fury, gave the onfet, and with great hurt on both

fides they entred the Towne. The Prier and the Priest, and those that were with them in the house were faued, which cost the lives of two men of account, and valiant, which came thither to succour them. The Indians fought with such courage, that many times they draue our men out of the Towne. The fight laited to long, that for wearinesse and great thirst many of the Christians went to a Poole that was neere the wall, to drinke, which was all stained with the bloud of the dead, and then came againe to fight. The Gouernour fesing this, entred among the Pootmen into the Towne on horiebake, with certaine that accompanied him, and was a meane that the Christians came to fet fire on the houses, and brake and overcame the Indians, who running out of the Towne from the Footmen, the Horsemen without draue in at the gates againe, 40 where being without all hope of life, they fought valiantly, and after the Christians came among them to handy blowes, feeing themfelues in great diffresse without any succour, many of them fled into the burning houses, where one vpon another they were smothered and burnt in the fire, The whole number of the Indians that died in this Towne, were two thousand and fine hundred, Thedeath of little more or leffe. Ot the Christians there died eighteene; of which one was Don Carlos, bro- 2500, Indiante

ther in law to the Gouernour, and a Nephew of his, and one Iohn de Gamez, and Men Rodriguez Poringals, and loba Vazquez de Villarens de Barca Rosa, all men of honour, and of much valour : the reit were Footmen. Beildes those that were flaine, there were an hundred and fiftie wounded with feuen hundred wounds of their Arrowes : and it pleafed God that of very dangerous wounds they were quickly healed. Moreouer, there were twelue Horses slaine, and seventy hurt, 50 All the Clothes which the Christians carried with them to clothe themselves withall , and the ornaments to fay Maffe, and the Pearles, were all burnt there: and the Christians did fet them on fire themselves; because they held for a greater inconvenience, the hurt which the Indians might

doe them from those houses, where they had gathered all those goods together, then the loffe of them. Here the Gouernour understood, that Francisco Maldonado waited for him at the Port of Ochufe, and that it was fixe dayes journey from thence; and he dealt with lobn Orsiz to keepe The Port of it tecret, because hee had not accomplished that which hee determined to doe; and because the Gibuse 6, dayes Pearles were burnt there, which he meant to have fent to Cuba for a flew, that the people hea- journey from ring the newes, might be defirous to come to that Countrie.

From the time that the Gouernour entred into Florida, untill his departure from Manilla, 60 there died an hundred and two Christians, some of ticknesse, and others which the Indians slue. He stayed in Manilla, because of the wounded men, eight and twentie dayes; all which time He stayed in Manilla, because of the wounded men, eight and twentie dayes; all which time Great and he lay in the field. It was a well inhabited and a fat Countrie, there were some great and walled waled to see. Townes: and many houses scattered all about the fields, to wit, a Cros-bow shot or two, the 18 o Nou.mone from the other. Vpon Sunday, the eighteenth of Nouember, when the hurt men were ber,

knowne to be healed, the Gouernour departed from Manilla. Every one furnished himselfe with

Maiz for two dayes, and they trauelled fine dayes through a Defart: they came to a Province

called Pafallara, vnto a Towne, named Taliepatana: and from thence they went to another, cal-

led Cabaffo: necre vnto it ranne a great River. The Indians on the other fide cried out, threat-

to make a Barge within the Towne, because the Indians should not perceive it : it was finished

in foure dayes, and being ended, hee commanded it to bee carried one night vpon fleds halfe a

league up the River. In the morning there entred into it thirtie men well armed. The Indiane

perceived what was attempted, and those which were neerest, came to defend the passage. They

to the shoare, they fled away into the Groues of Canes. The Christians mounted on Horsebacke.

and went up the River to make good the paffage, whereby the Governour and his companie

paifed the River. There were along the River some Townes well stored with Maiz, and French

Beanes. From thence to Chicaga the Gouernour trauelled fine dayes through a Defart. He came

to a River, where on the other fide were Indians, to defend the pallage. He made another Barge

in two daves : and when it was finished, the Gouernour sent an Indian to request the Cacique

to accept of his friendship, and peaceably to expect his comming : whom the Indians that were

on the other fide the River flue before his face, and presently making a great shout went their

nour came to (bicaca, a small Towne of twentie houses. And after they were come to Chicaca, an

they were much troubled with cold, because it was now Winter, and it snowed, while mest of

them were lodged in the field, before they had time to make themselves houses. This Countrie

was very well peopled, and the houles scattered like those of Manilla, fat and plentifull of Maiz.

and the most part of it was fielding : they gathered as much as sufficed to passe the Winter. Some

Indians were taken, among which was one whom the Cacique efteemed greatly. The Gouer-

nour fent an Indian to fignific to the Cacique, that hee defired to fee him and to have his friend-

thip. The Cacique came vnto him, to offer him his person, Countrie and Subjects, and told him,

that he would cause two other Caciques to come to him in peace; who within few dayes after

came with him, and with their Indians: The one was called Alimanu, the other Nicala. They

gaue a present vnto the Gouernour of an hundred and fiftie Conies, and of the Countrie gar- 30

refifted what they could, till the Christians came neere them; and feeing that the Barge came to

Talimatava A great River. ning the Christians to kill them, if they fought to passe it. The Governour commanded his men

Cananara'es.

Some Towns. A River.

December 17, way. Hauing paffed the River, the next day, being the feuenteenth of December, the Gouer-

Chicasa.

Snowe and much cold.

Conies.

A walled Towne.

ments, to wit, of Mantles of skinnes. The Cacique of Chica ca came to visite him many times: and sometimes the Governour sent to call him, and sent him an Horse to goe and come. He complained vnto him, that a Subject of his was rifen against him, and deprived him of tribute, requesting his aide against him, for he meane to seeke him in his Countrie, and to punish him ac-An Indian fira- cording to his defert. Which was nothing else but a fained plot. For they determined , as some as the Gouernour was gone with him, and the Campe was divided into two parts, the one part of them to fet vpon the Gouernour, and the other vpon them that remained in Chicaca. Her went to the Towne where he vied to keepe his residence, and brought with him two hundred Indians with their Bowes and Arrowes. The Gouernour tooke thirtie Horsemen , and eighte Footmen, and they went to Saquechuma (for fo was the Province called of that Chiefe man, 40 which he faid had rebelled.) They found a walled Towne, without any men : and those which went with the Cacique fet fire on the houses, to diffemble their treason. But by reason of the great care and heedfulnesse that was as well in the Gouernours people which hee carried with him, as of those which remained in Chicaga, they durst not affault them at that time. The Governour inuited the Cacique, and certaine principall Indians, and gave them Hogs flesh to este. And though they did not commonly vie it, yet they were to greedy of st, that every night there came Indians to certaine houses a Crof bow shot from the Campe, where the Hogs lay, and killed, and carried away as many as they could. And three Indians were taken in the manner. Two of them the Gouernour commanded to be shot to death with Arrowes; and to cut off the hands of the other; and he fent him so handled to the Cacique. Who made as though it grieved him 10 that they had offended the Gouernour, and that he was glad that he had executed that punishment on them. He lay in a plaine Countrie halfe a league from the place, where the Christians lodged. Foure Hortemen went a stragling thither, to wit, Francisco Oforio, and a servant of the Marqueffe of Afterga, called Reynofo, and two feruants of the Gouernour, the one his Page cale led Ribera, and the other Fuentes his Chamberlaine: and these had taken from the Indians forme Mantles, wherewith they were offended, and forfooke their houses. The Gouernour knew of it, and commanded them to be apprehended; and condemned to death Francisco Oforio, and the Chamberlaine as principals, and all of them to loffe of goods. The Friers and Priefts and other principall persons were earnest with him to pardon Francisco Osorio his life, and to moderate his fentence, which he would not grant for any of them. While he was ready to command them 60 to be drawne to the Market place to cut off their heads, there came certaine Indians from the Cacique, to complaine of them. Iohn Ortiz, at the request of Baltafar de Galleges and other perfons, changed their words, and told the Gouernour, that the Cacique faid, heehad notice how his Lording held those Christians in prison for his fake, and that they were in no fault, neither

had they done him any wrong, and that if hee would doe him any fauour, hee should fee them free, And he told the Indians; that the Governout faid, he had them in prilon, and that he would punish them in such fort, that they should be an example to others. Hereupon the Gouernour commanded the prisoners to be loosed. As soone as March was come, he determined to depart from Chicacs, and demanded of the Cacique two hundred men for carriages. Hee fent him anfwere, that he would speake with his principall men. Vpon Tuesday the eighth of March, the March, 1541. Governour went to the Towne where he was, to aske him for the men : he told him, he would

CHAP. 2.8.2. Chicaça fired. A great flight. A terrible out-crie.

fend the next day. As foone as the Gouernour was come to Chicage, he told Luys de Mojes fo the Camp-mafter, that hee milliked the Indians, and that hee should keepe a strong warch that 10 night, which he remembred but a little. The Indians came at the fecond watch in foure fourdrons, every one by it felte, and as toone as they were descried, they sounded a Drum, and gave

the affault with a great crie, and with fo great celeritie, that prefently they entred with the foots, that were somewhat distant from the Campe. And when they were perceived of them Character on which were in the Towne, halfe the houles were on fire, which they had kindled. That night his he she three Horsemenchanced to be scouts, two of them were of base callings and the worst men in all the Campe, and the other, which was a Nephew of the Gouernour, which vntill then was held for a tall man, thewed himleffe there as great a coward, as any of them : for all of them ranneaway. And the Indians without any relitance came and let the Towne on fire; and tarted behind the doores for the Christians, which ranne out of the houses, not having any leafure to 20 arme themselues; and as they ranne hither and thither amazed with the noise, and blinde, with the smoke and flime of the fire, they knew not which way they went, neither could they light vpon their weapons, nor faddle their Horfes, neither faw they the Indians that shot ar them. Many of the Horles were burned in the Stables, and those which could breake their hal eregat loofe. The diforder and flight was fuch, that every man fled which way he could, without leauing any to resist the Indians. But God (which chastifeth his according to his pleafire, and in the greatest necessities and dangers sustaineth them with his hand) so blinded the Indians, that they faw not what they had done, and thought that the Horses which ranne look, were men on

Horsebacke, that gathered themselves together to fet spon them. The Governour onely rode on Horsebacke, and with him a Souldier called Tapia, and fet voon the Indians, and firiking the 30 first he met with his Lance, the Saddle foll with him, which with haste was evill girde i, and to hee fell from his Horse. And all the people that were on foot were fled to a Wood out of the Towne, and there affembled themselves together. And because it was night, and that the Indiese thought the Horfes were men on horsebacke which came to fer voon them. as I faid before. they fled a and one onely remay ned dead, and that was hee whom the Governour flue with his Lance. The Towne lay alt burnt to athes. There died in this hurliburlie eleven Christians, and fiftie Horles; and there remay ned an hundred Hogges, and foure hundred were burned. It any The increase perchance had faued any clothes from the fire of Manilla, here they were burned, and many were of Hogs. clad in skinnes, for they had no leafure to take their Coates. They indured much cold in this

place, and the chiefest remedie were great fires. They spent all night in turnings without sleepe: 40 for if they warmed one fide, they freezed on the other. Some invented the weaving of certaine Mats of drie Iuie, and did weare one beneath, and another aboue : many laughed at this denice, whom afterward necessitie inforced to doe the like. The Christians were fo fooyled, and in such want of Saddles and weapons which were burned, that if the Indians had come the fecond night, they had ouercome them with little labour. They removed thence to the Towne where The Towne the Cacique was wont to lie, because it was in the champaine Countrie. Within eight dayes at. where the Cac ter, there were many Lances and Saddles made. There were Ash-trees in those parts, whereof cique lay. they made as good Lances as in Bifcay. Vpon Wednesday the 15.0f March, 1541. after the Governour had lodged eight dayes in a

Plaine, halfe a league from the place which he had wintered in, after he had let vp a forge, and 50 tempered the Swords which in Chicaga were burned, and made many Targets, Saidles, and Lances, on Tuefday night, at the morning watch, many fudians came to affault the Campe in three fquadrons, every one by themselves: Those which watched gave the alarme. The Governour with great speed set his men in order three squadrons, and leaving some to defend the Campe, went out to entounter them. The Indians were ouercome and put to flight. The ground was champaine and fit for the Christians to take the advantage of them; and it was now breake of day. But there happened a diforder, whereby there were not past thirtie or fortie Indians thine: and this it was: that a Frier cried out in the Campe without any infl occasion, To the Campe, To the Campe: Whereupon the Governour and all the rest repaired thither, and the Indians had time to faue them felues. There were fome taken, by whom the Governour informed himfelte

60 of the Countrie, through which he was to palle. The flue and twentieth of Aprill, hee departed Aprill 27. from Chicaga, and lodged at a small Towne called Alimamu, They had very little Maiz, and Alimama. they were to passe a Defart of seuen dayes journey. The next day, the Gouernour sent three Captaines euery one his way with Horiemen and Footmen to feeke prouition to paffe the Defart. And John Danufes the Auditor went with fifteene Horlemen, and fortie Footmen that

red colours.

way that the Gouernour was to goe, and found a strong Fort made, where the Indians staved for him, and many of them walked on the top of it with their weapons, having their bodies. B'acke, white, thighes and armes okered and died with blacke, white, yellow and red, ilriped like vnto panes, so that they shewed as though they went in hose and doublets; and some of them had Plumes. and others had hornes on their heads, and their faces blacke, and their eyes done round about with itreakes of red, to leeme more herce.

Iohn Danusco sent three horsemen to advertise the Governour hereof. He came presently for his intent was to drive them from thence, faying, that if he did it not, they would be embold. ned to charge him another time, when they might doe him more harme. Hee made the horsemen to alight, and fet his men in foure Squadrons : The figne being given, they fet vp the In- 10 dians, which made refistance till the Christians came neere the Fort, and alloone as they faw they could not defend them telues, by a place where a Brooke passed neere the Fort, they ran away. and from the otherfide they fhot some Arrowes : and because at that instant wee knew no ford for the horses to passe, they had time enough to get out of our danger. Three Indians were flaine there, and many Christians were hurt, whereof within few dayes, there died fifteene

A Defert of feuen dayes.

A Towne of Quiz 1412

An old Prophelie.

Ano ber Towns. Ri G ande or R de E puill

Aquixe a great Lord on the Weft fide of Rio Grande. 200. Canoes.

> Loaues made ot Prunes.

Goodly great Foure Barges

by the way. The Gouernour was inforced to depart presently toward Quizquiz, He travelled seven daves through a Defeit of many Marithes and thicke Woods : but it might all bee trauelled on horfebacke, except fome Lakes which they fwamme ouer. Hee came to a Towne of the Prouinceof Quizquiz without being descried, and tooke all the people in it before they came out of their an There came to the Campe fixe principal Indians, and faid, they came to fee what people they

were, and that long agoe, they had beene informed by their fore-fathers. That a white people should subdue them : and that therefore they would returne to their Cacique, and bid him come prefently to obey and ferue the Gouernour : and after they had prefented him with fixe or feuen skins and Mantles which they brought, they tooke their leave of him, and returned with the other, which waited for them by the Brookes fide. The Carrene neuer came againe nor lent other message. And because in the Towne where the Gouernour lodged, there was small store of Maiz, he removed to another halfe a league from Rio Grande, where they found plentie of Maiz: And he went to fee the River, and found, that neere vnto it was great store of Timber to make Bar- 30 ges, and good fituation of ground to incampe in. Prefently he remooued himfelfe thisher. They made houses, and pitched their Campe in a plaine field a Crosse bow shot from the River. And thither was gathered all the Maiz of the Townes, which they had lately passed. They began presently to cut and hew downe Timber, and to faw plankes for Barges. The Indianicane presently downe the River : they leaped on shoare, and declared to the Gouernour, That they were fubiects of a great Lord, whose name was Aquixo, who was Lord of many Townes, and gouerned many people on the other fide of the River, and came to tell him on his behalfe, that the next day he with all his men would come to fee, what it would pleafe him to command him. The next day with speed, the Cacique came with two hundred Canoes full of Indian; with their Bowes and Arrowes, painted, and with great plumes of white feathers, and many other colours, 40 with shields in their hands, wherewith they defended the Rowers on both sides, and the men of Warre flood from the head to the sterne, with their Bowes and Arrowes in their hands. The Canoe wherein the Cacique was, had a Tiltouer the sterne, and hee fate vnder the Tilt; and so w-re other Canoes of the principall Indians. And from under the Tilt where the chiefe man fat, he gouerned and commanded the other people. All loyned together, and came within a flores cast of the shoare. From thence the Cacque faid to the Gouernour, which walked along the Riuers fide with others that wayted on him, that he was come thither to visit, to honor, and to obey him; because he knew he was the greatest and mightiest Lord on the Earth; therefore hee would fee what he would command him to doe. The Gouernour yeelded him thankes, and requested him to come on shoare, that they might the better communicate together. And with-19 out any answere to that point, bee feat him three Canoes, wherein was great store of fill and loaues, made of the substance of Prunes like vnto Brickes. After hee had received all, hee thankelhim, and prayed him againeto come on shoare. And because the Caciques purpose was, to fee if with diffimulation he might doe fome hurt, when they faw that the Gouernour and his men were in readinesse, they beganne to goe from the shoare : and with a great cry, the Crossebowmen which were ready, that at them, and flue fine or tixe of them. They retired with great order: none did leave his Oare, though the next to him were flaine, and shielding themselves, they went farther off. Afterward they came many times and landed : and when any of vs came toward them, they fled vnto their Canoes, which were very pleafant to behold: for they were very great and well made, and had their Tats, Plumes, Pauefes, and Flagges, and with the mul- 60 titude of people that were in them, they feemed to be a faire Armie of Gallies. In thirtie dayes space, while the Gouernour remayned there, they made foure Barges. Assoone as those that They passe o. passed first, were on Land on the other side, the Barges returned to the place where the Gouttuer Rie Grande, nour was : and within two houres after Sunne rifing, all the people were ouer. The River

was almost halte a league broad. It a manstood still on the other side, it could not bee differned, whether hee were a man or no. The River was of great depth, and of a firong current: the water was alwayes muddie: there came downe the River continually many trees and timber, which the force of the water and fireame brought downe. There was great flore of fish in it of fundry forts, and most of it differing from the Iresh water fish of Spaine, as hereafter shall

Haning passed Rio Grande, the Gouernour travelled a league and an halfe and came to a great Towne of Aguixo, which was dispeopled before hee came thither. They eliled thirtie Indians comming ouera plaine, which the Cacque fent to discouer the Christians determination : and to alloone as they had fight of them, they tooke themselves to flight. The Horsemen pursued them, and flue tenne, and tooke fifteene. And because the Towne, whither the Gouernotir went, was neere vnto the River, hee fent a Captaine, with as many men as hee thought fufficient to carrie the Barges vp the Riuer. And because in his travelling by land, many times hee went farre from the Ruer to compalle the creekes that came from it, the Indians tooke occasion to fer voon them of the Barges, and put them in great danger, because that by reason of the great current, they durit not leave the shoare, and from the banke they shot at them. Assone as the Guernour was come to the Towne, hee prefently fent Croffe-bowmen downe the River, which came to refeue them : and vpon the comming of the Barges to the Towne, hee commanded them to be broken, and to faue the Iron for others, when it should be needfull. He lay there

20 one night, and the day following, he fet forward to feeke a Prouince, called Pacaba: which he was informed to bee neere vnto Chifes, where the Indians told him there was gold. Hee passed Pacaba neers through great Townes of Aguixo, which were all abandoned for feare of the Christians. Hee vino Chica. understood by certaine Indians that were taken, that three dayes journie from thence dwele a Great townes, great Cacique, whose name was Casqui. He came to a small River, where a Bridge was made. by which they paffed : that day ti'l Sun-fet, they went all in water, which in some places came to the waste, and in some to the knees. When they saw themselues on dry land, they were very glad, because they feared they should wander vp and downe as forlorne men all night in the water. At noone they came to the first Towne of Cajque: they found the Indians careleffe, be- The first rowne cause they had no knowledge of them. There were many men and women taken, and store of ot cape. 30 goods, as Mantles and skinnes, as well in the first Towne, as in another, which stood in a

held halfe a league from thence in fight of it; whither the Horsemen ranne. This Countrie is higher, drier, and more champaine, then any part bor lering neere the River, that vntill then they halleene. There were in the fields many Walnut-trees, bearing foft shelled Walnuts, in fashion Walnut trees like buillets, and in the houses they found many of them, which the Indians had laid up in flore. with loft their The crees diff red in nothing elle from those of Spaine, nor from those which we had seene before. but onely that they have a fraller leafe. There were many Mulberie trees and Plum trees, which bare red Plums like those of Spaine, and other g'ay, fomewhat differing, but farre better. And Many Molbes all the trees are all the yeere to fruitfull, as if they were planted in Orchards and the Woods Plantices. were very thinne. The Gouernour travelled two dayes through the Countrie of Cafqui, before 40 he came to the Towne where the Cacique was ; and the most of the way was alway by Cham-

paine ground, which was tull of great Townes, fo that from one Towne, you might fee two or Many great three. Hee fent an Indian to certifie the Cacique, that hee was comming to the place where hee Towner. was, with intent to procure his friendihip, and to hold him as his brother. Whereunto hee antweeted. That he should be welcome, and that he would receive him with speciall good will, and accomplish all that his Lordship would command him. He fent him a Prefent vpon the way : to wit, skinnes, Mantles, and fish : And after these complements, the Gouernour found all the Townes as he passed, inhabited with people, which peaceably attended his comming, and offered him skinnes, Mantles, and fish. The Cacique accompanied with many Indians came out of the Towne, and stayed halfe a league on the way to receive the Gouernour.

Within a while after both of them vied words of great offers and courtefie the one to the other, and the Cacique requested him to lodge in his houses. The Governour, to preserve the peace the better, excused himselse, saying, that hee would lodge in the fields. And because it was very hot, they camped neere certaine trees a quarter of a league from the Towne. The Ca- The chiefe cique went to his Towne, and came againe with many Indians linging. Afloone as they came to Towneo' the the Gourmour, all of them proftrated themfelues vpon the ground. Among these came two Indians that were blind. The Cacique made a speech : that seeing the Governour was the Sonne of the Sunne, and a great Lord, he belought him to doe him the fauour to give fight to those two blind men. The blind men rose vp presently, and very earnestly requested the same of the Gouernour. He answered, That in the high Heanens was bee that bad power to give them bealth, and Spanish Indian

60 what somer they could aske of him; whose sermant he was : And that this Lord made the Heavens and Preaching. the Earth, and man after his owne likenesse, and that bee suffered upon the Croffe to faue Mankind, and rofe againe the third day, and that he died as he was man, and as touching his Dininute, he was, and is immortall; and that he ofcended into Heaven, where hee standeth with his armes open to receive all Juch as turne unto him : and firatght way bee commanded him to make a very high Groffe of wood

which was set up in the highest place of the Towne; declaring unto him , that the Christians worshipped

A Townebelonging to

the same in resemblance and memorie of that whereon Christ Suffered. The Gouernour and hu men kneeled downe before it, and the Indians did the like. The Governour willed him, that from thenceforth he should worship the same, and should aske whatsoener they stood in need of . of that Lord that he told him was in Heauen. Then he asked him how farre it was from thence to Pacaba: He faid, one dayes journie, and that at the end of his Countrie, there was a Lakelikea Brooke which falleth into Rio Grande, and that hee would fend men before to make a Bridge whereby hee might paffe. The fame day that the Governour departed thence, hee lodged at a Towne belonging to Casqui: and the next day he passed in fight of other Townes, and came to the Lake, which was halfe a Croffe-bow shot over, of a great depth and current. At the time of to Cefqui.

Other rowners. his comming, the Indians had made an end of the Bridge, which was made of timber, laid one tree after another : and on one fide it had a course of stakes higher then the Bridge, for them that passed to take hold on. The Cacique of Casqui came to the Gouernour, and brought his people with him. The Governour fent word by an Indian to Cacique of Pacaha, that though he were enemie to the Cacique of Cafqui, and though he were there, yet hee would doe him no diferace nor hurt, if hee would attend him peaceably, and imbrace his friendship; but rather wouldintreate him as a Brother. The Indian, which the Governour fent, came againe, and faid, that the Cacique made none account of that which he told him, but fled with all his men out at the other file of the Towne. Prefently the Gouernour entred, and ranne before with the Horfemen, that way, by which the Indians fled; and at another Towne diffant a quarter of a league from thence, and they tooke many Indians : and alloone as the Horiemen had taken them, they delivered them to the Indians of Calqui, whom, because they were their enemies, with much circums pection and rejoycing, they brought to the Towne where the Christians were : and the greatest griefe they had, was this, that they could not get leave to kill them. There were found in the Towne many Mantles, and Deere skinnes, Lions skinnes, and Beares skinnes, and many Cats skinnes. Many came so farre poorely apparelled, and there they clothed them telue : of the Mantles, they made them Coates and Caffocks, and some made Gownes, and lined them with Cats skinnes; and likewife their Caffocks. Of the Decresskinnes, some made them also Ierkins. Shirts, Hose and Shooes: and of the Beare skinnes, they made them very good Clokes: for no water could Targers of raw Pierce them. There were Targets of raw Oxe Hides found there; with which Hides they ar- 30

Ox : hides. Pacaha, a verie great Towne belet with

Great walled Townes.

Nets found.

The divers forts of excel-

Oven roward the North of Pacaba. This is like Quinera,

Voon Wednesday the nineteenth of June, the Gouernour entred into Pacaba: He lodged in the Towne, where the Cacique vied to refide, which was very great, walled, and befet with Towres, and many loope-holes were in the Towres and Wall. And in the Towne was great flore of old Maiz, and great quantitie of new in the fields. Within a league and halfe a league were great Townes all walled. Where the Governour was lodged, was a great Lake, that came neere vnto the wall; and it entred into a ditch that went round about the Towne, wanting but a little to environ it round. From the Lake to the great River was made a weare by the which the fish came into it; which the Cacique kept for his recreation and sport ; with Nets that were found in the Towne, they tooke as much as they would : and tooke they never fo much, there 40 was no want perceived. There was also great fore of fish in many other Lakes that were thereabout, but it was loft, and not so good as that which came from the River, and the most of it was different from the fresh water fish of Spaine. There was a fish which they called Bagres: the third part of it was head, and it had on both fides the gils, and along the fides great prickes like very tharpe Aules : those of this kind that were in the Lakes were as bigge as Pikes : and in the River, there were some of an hundred, and of an hundred and fiftie pounds weight, and many of them were taken with the hooke. There was another fish like Barbels; and another like Breames, headed like a delicate fish, called in Spaine Besugo, betweene red and grey. This was thereof most esteeme, There was another fish called a Pele fish : it had a fnowt of a Cubit long, and at the end of the upper lip it was made like a Peele. There was another fish like a Westerne Shad : And all 50 of them had scales, except the Bagres, and the Pele fish. There was another fish, which somtimes the Indians brought vs, of the bigneffe of an Hogge, they call it the Perco fish : it had rowes of teeth beneath and aboue.

From thence he fen: thirtie Horsemen, and fiftie Footmen to the Province of Caluça, to see Gold & Cop- if from thence he might travell to Chifea, where the Indians faid, there was a worke of Gold and Copper. They trauelled feuen dayes journie through a Defert, and returned very wearie, eating greene Plums and stalkes of Maiz, which they found in a poore Towne of fixe or feuen A pooretowne houles. From thence forward toward the North, the Indians faid, That the Countrie was very Great flore of ill inhabited, because it was very cold : And that there were such store of Oxen, that they could keepe no Corne for them : and that the Indians lived vpon their flesh. The Governour 60 feeing, that toward that part the Countrie was to poore of Maiz, that in it they could not bee fuffained, demanded of the Indians, which way it was most inhabited : and they faid, they had notice of a great Protince, and a very plentifull Countrie, which was called Quigante, and it was toward the South.

The Governour tooke his iournie toward Quigante. The fourth day of August, hee came to Quigante. the Towne, where the Cacique vied to keepe his Retidencie : on the way hee tent him 2 Prefent The greater the Lowne, where the Lowne, and not daring to stay for him in the Towne, hee absented him in Florida. felfe. The Towne was the greatest that was seene in Florida.

They tooke many men and women. Now feeing the hurt which they fustained for their Rebellion, they came to see what the Gouernour would command them, and pasted to and from any times, and brought Prefents of Cloth and Fish. The Cacique and his two wives were in the Cloth lodeing of the Gouernour loole, and the Halbardiers of his Guard did keepe them. The Gouernour asked them which way the Countrie was most inhabited? They said, that toward the

10 South downe the River were great Townes and Casiques, which commanded great Countries. and much people : And that toward the North-weit, there was a Prouince neere to certaine College neere Mountaines that was called Coliges. The Governour and all the rest thought good to goe first to to certaine Colleges: faying, that peraduenture the Mountaines would make some difference of toile, and Mountaines that beyond them there might be some Gold or Silver: As for Quigante, Casqui, and Pacaba, they were plaine Countries, fat grounds, and full of good Medowes on the Rivers, where the Indians lowed large fields of Maiz. From Tascainea to Rio grande, or the great River, is about three hundred leagues: it is a very low Countrie, and hath many Lakes. From Pacaba to Qmgente may bee an hundred leagues. The Gouernour left the Cacique of Quigante in his owne

Towne : And an Indian, which was his Guide, led him through great Woods without any way 20 feuen dayes journie through a Defert, where at every lodging, they lodged in Lakes and Pooles in very should water : there was such flore of fish, that they killed them with cudgels; and the A new was to Indians which they carried in chains, with the mud troubled the waters, and the fifth being therewith, as it were, altonied, came to the top of the water, and they tooke as much as they lifted. The Indians of Colleges had no knowledge of the Christians, and when they came so neere the Colleges. Towne, that the Indians faw them, they fled vp a River, which passed neere the Towne, and A River. Some leaped into it; but the Christians went on both fides of the River, and tooke them, There were many men and women taken, and the Cacique with them. And by his commandement within three dayes came many Indians with a Prefent of Mantles and Decres skinnes, and two Oxe hides; And they reported, that five or fixe leagues from thence toward the North, there Two oxe hides were many of these Oxen, and that because the Countrie was cold, it was cuill inhabited : That Store of oxen the best Countrie which they knew; the most plentifull, and most inhabited, was a Protince toward the

called Capat, lying toward the South. From Sugnate to Coligea may be fortie leagues. It was a North fat foile and so plentifull of Maiz, that they cast out the old, to bring in the new. There was alfo great plentie of French Beanes and Pompions. The French Beanes were greater , and better then thote of Spaine, and likewise the Pompions, and being roasted, they have almost the taste of Cheffinuts. The Cacique of Coligon gaue a Guide to Cayas, and flayed behind in his owner Towne, We travelled five dayes, and came to the Province of Palifema. The house of the Caci- The Province que was found courred with Deeres skins of divers colours and workes drawine in them, and with of Patiferna. the fame in manner of Carpers was the ground of the house coursed. The Casigne left it so, that 40 the Gouernour might lodge in it, in token that hee fought peace and his friendship. But hee

durst not tarrie his comming. The Gouernour, feeing he had absented himselfe, sent a Captaine with Horsemen and Footmen to seeke him : He found much people, but by reason of the roughneffe of the Country, he tooke none faue a few women and children. The Towne was little and feattering, and had very little Maiz. For which cause the Gouernour speedily departed from thence. He came to another Towne called Tatalicoya, he carried with him the Cacique thereof, Tatalicoy which guided him to Cayas. From Tatalicoya are foure dayes journie to Cayas. When he came to Cayas, and faw the Towne scattered; he thought they had told him a lye, and that it was not Cayas the Province of Caya, because they had informed him that it was well inhabited : He threatned the Cacique, charging him to tell him where he was : and he and other Indians which were taken to neere about that place, affirmed that this was the Towne of Cayde, and the belt that was in that

Country, and that though the houses were distant the one from the other, yet the ground that was inhabited was great, and that there was great store of people, and many fields of Maiz. This Towne was called Tanco : he pitched his Campe in the best part of it neere vnto a River. Tanico. The same day that the Gouernour came thither, he went a league farther with certaine Horsemen, and without finding any, he found many skinnes in a pathway, which the Caeigne had left there , that they might bee found, in token of peace. For fo is the custome in that

The Gouernour rested a moneth in the Province of Cayas. In which time the horses fattened and thrined more, then in other places in a longer time, with the great plentie of Maiz and the 60 leanes thereof, which I thinke was the best that hath beene seene, and they dranke of a Lake of very hot water, and somewhat brackish, and they dranke so much, that it swelled in their bellies A Lake of hot when they brought them from the Watering. Untill that time the Christians wanted Salt, and and fomewhat there they made good flore, which they carried along with them. The Indians doe carrie it to other places to exchange it for Skins and Mantles. They make it along the River, which when made at Court Nanana 2

it abbeth, leaveth it vpon the vpper part of the fand. And because they cannot make it, with. out much find mingled with it, they throw it into certaine baskets which they have forther purpose, broad at the mouth, and narrow at the bottome, and fet it in the Aire vpon a barre, and throw water into it, and fet a small Veilell under it, wherein it falleth : Beeing strained and fer to Boyle voon the fire, when the water is fodden away, the Sale remayneth in the bottome of the Pan. On both fides of the River the Countrie was full of fowne fields, and there was flore of Maiz.

Many Oxe hides with woo! on them, as foft asfaces wool, Gemara Hifter. Gener. 449.145. Many Oxen toward the North. The great cloquence of the

Immediately the Gouernour with certaine Horsemen and fifty Footmen, departed toward Tulla, hee found the Towne abandoned : for the Indians durit not tarrie his comming. The Caerque came, and eightie Indians with him. He brought a Prefent of many Oxe hides: which, to because the Countrie was cold, were very profitable, and serued for Couerlets, because they were very foft, and woolled like theepe. Not farre from thencee toward the North were many Oxen. The Christians law them not, nor came into the Countrie where they were , because those parts were exill inhabited, and had small store of Maiz where they were bred. The Cacique of Tulls made an Oration to the Gouernour, wherein he excused himselfe, and offered him his Country, Subjects, and person. Aswell this Cacique as the others, and all those which came to the Gouernour on their behalfe, deliuered their meffage or speech in so good order , that no Oratour could veter the fame more eloquently.

His departure to Autiamque, ORTIZ his death and disasters following: SOTO takes thought and dieth. Moscosco succeedeth. They leave Florida, and arrive at Panuco.

A winter of

He Governour informed himselfe of all the Countrie round abour; and vnderstood, that toward the West was a stattered dwelling, and that toward the South-east were great to Townes, especially in a Province called Austangue, ten daies south-east witch might be about eightie leagues; and that it was a plentifull Countrey of Maiz. And because Winter came on, and that they could not travell two or three moneths in the yeere for cold, waters, and from ; and fearing, that if they should flay fo long in the scattered dwelling, they could not be sufteined ; and also because the Indians faid , that neere to Aurianque was a great water, and according to their relation, the Gouernour thought it was some arme of the Sea: And because hee now defired to send newes of himselfe to Caba, that some supply of men and horses might be fent vnto him : (for it was aboue three yeeres, fince Donna Ifabella, which was in Ha-Mana, or any other person in Christendome had heard of him, and by this time hee had lost two hundred and fifcie men, and one hundred and fiftie horses) he determined to winter in Autiam- 40 que, and the next Spring, to goe to the Sea Coast, and to make two Brigantines, and fend one of them to Cuba, and the other to Nuesa Effanna, that that which went in fafetie, might give newes of him: Hoping with the goods which he had in Cuba, to furnish himselfe againe, and to attempt the Discouerie and conquest toward the West: for he had not yet come where Cabeca de Vaca had beene. Thus having fent away the two Caciques of Cayas and Tulla, hee tooks his journie toward Antiamque: He trauelled fine dayes over very rough Mountaines, and came to dayes tournie 2 Towne called Quipana, where no Indians could bee taken for the roughnesse of the Countrie: and the Towne being betweene Hils, there was an ambulh laid, wherewith they tooke two Indians; which told them, that Autianque was fixe dayes journie from thence, and that there was another Province toward the South eight dayes journie off, plentifull of Maiz, and very well 50 peopled, which was called Guahate. But because Antiamque was neerer, and the most of the Indians agreed of it, the Gouernor made his journie that way. In three dayes hee came to a Towne called Anaixi. He fent a Captaine before with thirtie Horsemen, and fiftie Footmen, and tooke the Indians carelelle, he tooke many men and women priloners. Within two dayes atter the Gouernour came to another Towne called Catamaya, and lodged in the fields of the Towne. Two Indians, came with a falle meffage from the Cacique to know his determination. He had them tell their Lord, that hee should come and speake with him. The Indians returned and came no more, nor any other message from the Casique. The next day the Christians went to the Towne, which was without people : they tooke as much Maiz as they needed. That day they lodged in a Wood, and the next day they came to Antiamque. They found much Maiz 60 laid up in flore, and French Beanes, and Walnuts and Prunes, great flore of all forts. They tooke

fome Indians which were gathering together the stuffe which their wives had hidden. This was a Champaine Countrie, and well inhabited. The Governor lodged in the best part of the Towne,

and commanded prefently to make a fence of timber round about the Campe diffant from the hou-

Quipana, fine from Tulla.

Guahate.

Aneixi. Catamaya.

> Autiamque fixe dayesiournie

Nnnnnn 3

ies, that the Indians might not hurt them without by fire. And measuring the ground by paces, he appointed every one his part to doe according to the number of Indians which he had: prefently the timber was brought by them; and in three dayes there was an inclosure made of very high and thicke posts thrust into the ground, and many rayles hid acrosse. Hard by this Towne paffed a River, that came out of the Province of Capus; and above and beneath it was ve. A River. ry well peopled. They flayed in Antiamque three moneths with great plentie of Maiz, French Three months Beanes, Walnuts, Prunes, and Conies: which vntill that time they whew not how to catch, abode in A-And in Autienque the Indians taught them how to take them : which was; with great fpringes, tiamore, which lifted up their feet from the ground: And the fnare was made with a strong string, where-

10 unto was failned a knot of a cane, which ranne close about the necke of the Conie, because they should not gnaw the string. They tooke many in the fields of Maiz, especially when it freezed or fnowed. The Christians stayed there one whole moneth so inclosed with snowe, that they Frost and snow went not out of the Towne: and when they wanted fire-wood, the Gouernour with his Horl- A moneth of men going and comming many times to the Wood, which was two Cref-bow flot from the face. Towne, made a path-way, whereby the Pootmen went for wood. In this meane space, some Indians which went loofe, killed many Conies with their Giues, and with their Arrowes. Thefe Conies were of two forts, some were like those of Spaine, and the other of the same colour and Conies of two fashion, and as bigge as great Hares, longer, and having greater loines.

Von Monday the fixt of March, 1542, the Governour departed from Antiamque to feeke March 6. 20 Niles, which the Indians faid was neere the Great River, with determination to come to the Sea, 1542. and procure some succour of Men and Horses: for he had now but three hundred Men of warre, and fortie Horses, and some of them lame, which did nothing but helpe to make up the number : and for want of Iron, they had gone aboue a yeere vnshod : and because they were vsed to it in the plaine Countrie, it did them no great harme. Iohn Ortiz died in Autiamque; which The death of grieued the Gouernour very much: because that without an Interpreter he feared to enter farre the extra mile into the Land, where hee might bee loft : whereby it often happened, that the way that they of him, being went one day, and sometimes two or three dayes, they turned backe, and went aftray through their Interprethe wood here and there. The Gouernour spent ten dayes in trauelling from Autiamque to a ter. Prouince called Ayays; and came to a Towne that flood neere the River that paffeth by Cayas Ayays.

A River, 30 and Autiamque. There her commanded a Barge to bee made, wherewith hee paffed the River. When he had passed the River, there fell out such weather, that foure dayes he could not travell for Snow. As foone as it gaue over fnowing, he went three dayes sourney through a Wildernesse. Great fnow a and a Countrie so lowe, and so full of Lakes and euill wayes, that he travelled one time a whole bout the twenday in water, fometimes knee deepe, fometimes to the ftirrup, and fometimes they fwamme. He came to a Towne called Tutelpinco, abandoned, and withour Maiz: there passed by it a Lake, Tutelpinco.

that entred into the River, which carried a great streame and force of water. The Gouernour went a whole day along the Lake feeking passage, and could finde none, nor any way that did passe to the other side. Comming agains at night to the Towns he found two peaceable Indians, which shewed him the passage, and which way hee was to goe. There they 40 made of canes, and of the timber of houses thatched with canes, rafts wherewith they pasted Rifts wherethe Lake. They trauelled three dayes, and came to a Towns of the Territorie of Nilco, called with they pare Tianto. There they tooke thirtie Indians, and among them two principall men of this Towne. The Gouernour fent a Captaine with Horsemen and Footmen before to Nileo, because the In- Tianto. dians, might have no time to carrie away the provision. They passed through 3, or 4, great Towns; 3, or 4, great and in the Towne where the Cacique was refident, which was two leagues from the place where Towness the Gouernour remained, they found many Indian; with their Bowes and Arrowes, in manner as though they would have stayed to fight, which did compasse the Towne; and as soone as they faw the Christians come neere them without mifdoubting them . they fet the Caciques house on fire, and fled ouer a Lake that paffed neere the Towne, through which the Horses could not paffe.

The next day being Wedneiday the nine and twentieth of March, the Gouernour came to March age. Nilco: he lodged with all his men in the Caciques Towne, which flood in a plaine field, which Nilco. was inhabited for the space of a quarter of a league : and within a league and halte a league were other very great Townes, wherein was great store of Maiz, of French Beanes, of Walnuts, and Very great Prunes. This was the best inhabited Countrie, that was seene in Florida, and had most store of The best Maiz, except Coca, and Apalache. There came to the Campe an Indian accompanied with o- Countrie of thers, and in the Caciques name gaue the Gouernour a Mantle of Marterns skinnes, and a Cor- Florida. don of Pearles. The Gouernour gaue him a few small Margarites, which are certaine Beades Marterns much esteemed in Peru, and other things, wherewith he was very well contented. He promised A cordon of to returne within two dayes, but neuer came againe: but on the contrary the Indians came by Pearles, night in Canoas, and carried away all the Maiz they could, and made them Cabins on the other

This River which paffed by Nilco, was that which paffed by Cayas and Autiamque, and felt A River falling into Rio grande, or the Great River, which passed by Pachaba and Aquino, neere voto the Propince of Guachoya. Within few dayes the Governour determined to goe to Guachoya, to learne

1552

Guschora. Foure names

there whether the Sea were neere, or whether there were any habitation neere, where he mishe relieue his companie, while the Brigantines were making, which he meant to lend to the Land of the Christians. He came to Guachera vpon Sunday the seuenteenth of Aprill; hee lodged in the Towns of the Cacique, which was inclosed about, and feated a Crof-bow shot distant from the River. Here the River is called Tamalifen; and in Nilco, Tapatu; and in Coca, Mico: and in the Port or Mouth, Ri. of Kio grande.

The Cacique of Guachera brought with him many Indians with great flore of Fish, Dogges. Deeres skinnes, and Mantles. Hee asked him whether he had any notice of the Sea. Hee an-Iwered, no, nor of any Townes downe the River on that fide. The Governour thought that the Carious lyed vnto him, to rid him out of his owne Townes, and fent lohn Danufco with eight to Horsemen downe the River, to see what habitation there was, and to informe himselfe, if there were any notice of the Sea. He trauelled eight dayes, and at his returne he faid, that in all that time he was not able to goe aboue fourteene or fifteene leagues, because of the great creekes that came out of the River, and groves of Canes, and thicke Woods that were along the bankes of the River, and that he had found no habitation. The Governour fell into great dumpes, to The Gournor fee how hard it was to get to the Sea : and worfe, because his Men and Horfes every day diminifalleth ficke of fhed, being without fuccour to fustaine themselues in the Countrie : and with that thought hee fell ficke. But before he tooke his bed, he fent an Indian to the Cacique of Quigalta, to tell him. that he was the Child of the Sunne, and that all the way that he came all men obeyed and ferued him, that he requested him to accept of his friendship, and come vnto him; for he would be very glad to fee him: and in figne of loue and obedience to bring fomething with him of that which in his Councrie was most esteemed. The Cacique answered by the same Indian :

A most wirtie cique of Qui-

That whereas he faid, that he was the Childe of the Sunne, if he would drie up the Riner hee would beleene bim : and touching the rest, that he was wont to visit none : but rather that all those of whom fuer of the Ca- bee had notice did vifit bim, ferned, obeyed and paid bim tributes willingly or perferce: therefore if hee defired to fee him, it were best be should come thither: that if he came in peace, hee would receive him with speciall goodwill; and if in warre, in like manner be would attend him in the Towne where he was, and that for him or any other be would not forinke one foote backe.

By that time the Indian returned with this antiwere, the Governour had betaken himselfe to bed, being euill handled with Feuers, and was much aggrieued, that hee was not in case to passe 30 presently the River, and to seek him, to see if he could abate that pride of his, considering the Riuer went now very strongly in those parts; for it was neere halfe a league broad, and 16 fathoms deepe, & very furious, and ran with a great current; and on both fides were many Indians, and his power was not now fo great, but that he had need to helpe himielfe rather by flights then force, The Gouernour felt in himselfe that the houre approached, wherein he was to leave this pre-

fent life, and called for the Kings Officers, Captaines and principalt persons. Hee named Lags de Moscoso de Alnarado his Captaine generall. And presently he was sworne by all that were present, and elected for Gouernour. The next day, being the one and twentieth of May, 1542. Don Ferdinando departed out of this life, the valorous, virtuous, and valiant Captaine, Don Fernando de Soto, Gode Solo, the 21. uernour of Caba, and Adelantado of Florida: whom fortune advanced, as it vieth to doe others, 49 that he might haue the higher fall. Hee departed in such a place, and at such a time, as in his fickneffe he had but little comfort : and the danger wherein all his people were of perifing in that Countrie, which appeared before their eyes, was cause sufficient, why every one of them had neede of comfort, and why they did not visite nor accompanie him as they ought to have done. Luys de Moscoso determined to conceale his death from the Indians, because Ferdinando de Soto had made them beleeue, That the Christians were immortall; and also because they tooke him to be hardy, wife, and valiant: and if they should knowe that hee was dead, they would be bold to fet voon the Christians, though they lived peaceably by them. In regard of their difpolition, and because they were nothing constant, and believed all that was told them, the Adelantado made them beleeve, that he knew some things that passed in secret among themselves, 50 without their knowledge, how, or in what manner he came by them ; and that the figure which appeared in a Glasse, which he shewed them, did tell him whatsoener they practited and went about : and therefore neither in word nor deed durst they attempt any thing that might be pre-

A wittie ftratagem.

> As foone as he was dead, Luys de Moscoso commanded to put him secretly in an house, where he remayned three dayes: and remoung him from thence, commanded him to be buried in the night at one of the gates of the Towne within the wall. And as the Indians had feene him fick, and miffed him, fo did they suspect what might be. And passing by the place where he was buried, feeing, the earth moued, they looked and spake one to another. Luys de Moscoso vnderstanding of it, commanded him to be taken up by night, and to cast a great deale of fand into the 60 Mantles, wherein he was winded vp, wherein he was carried in a Canoa, and throwne into the midst of the River. The Cacique of Guachoya inquired of him, demanding what was become of his brother and Lord, the Gouernor: Luys de Moscoso told him, that he was gone to Heauen, as many other timesche did: Ind because he was to stay there certaine dayes, he had left him in his place.

The Cacique thought with himfelfe that he was dead; and commanded two young and well proportioned Indians to be brought thither; and faid, that the vic of that Countrie was, when any This is also the Lord died, to kill Indians, to waite vpon him, and ferue him by the way: and for that purpose custome of the by his commandement were those come thither : and prayed Luys de Moscoso to command them to be beheaded, that they might attend and serue his Lord and brother. Luys de Moscos told him , that the Gouernour was not dead, but gone to Heauen, and that of his owne Christian Souldiers, he had taken such as he needed to serue him, and prayed him to command those Indians to be looted, and not to vie any such bad custome from thenceforth : straightway he commanded them to be loofed, and to get them home to their houses. And one of them would not goe: to faying, that he would not ferue him, that without defert had judged him to death, but that hee

would ferue him as long as he lived, which had faued his life. All were of opinion, that it was best to goe by land toward the West, because Mueus Espan- Their generals was that way; holding the Voyage by Sea more dangerous, and of greater hazard, because maneit by land they could make no ship of any strength to abide a storme, neither had they Master, nor Pilot, Westward. Compas, nor Chart, neither knew they how farre the Sea was off, nor had any notice of it? nor whether the River did make any great turning into the Land, or had any great fall from the Rockes, where all of them might be cast away. And some which had seene the Sea-chart, did finde, that from the place where they were, by the Sea-coast to Nuena Efpanna, might be foure hundred leagues little more or leffe; and faid, that though they went somewhat about by Land n in feeking a peopled Countrie, if some great Wildernesse which they could not passe did not hinder them, by fpending that Summer in travell, finding provision to passe the Winter in some peopled Countrie, that the next Summer after they might come to some Christian Land, and that it might fortune in their trauell by Land, to finde some rich Countrie, where they might doe themislues good. The Gouernour, although he defired to get out of Florida in shorter time. feeing the inconveniences they layed before him, in travelling by Sea, determined to follow that

which feemed good to them all. On Monday the fifth of Iune, he departed from Guachoja. The Cacique gaue him a Guide to Iune ?. Chaquate, and stayed at home in his owne Towne. They passed through a Province called Ca- catale. talie : and having passed a Wildernesse of fixe dayes Journey, the twentieth day of the moneth 30 he came to Chaguate. There he was informed of the habitation that was toward the West. They Chaguate. told him, that three dayes lourney from thence was a Province called Agnacay. The Governour came to this Towne on Wednesday, the fourth of July. He found the Towne without people, Aguacay and lodged in it; heftayed there about a day; during which, he made some roades, and tooke many menand women. There they had knowledge of the South Sea.

The next day he came to a small Towne called Pate. The fourth day after his departure from Pate. Angacay be came to the first habitation of a Prouince called Amage. There an Indian was taken, which faid that from thence to Nagnatex, was a day and a halfes lourney; which they trauelled, finding all the way inhabited places. Hauing passed the peopled Countrie of Amaye, on Saturday the twentieth of July they pitched their Campe at noone between Amaye and Nagua-AO tex. The next day he came to the habitation of Naguatex, which was very feattering. Within Noguetex.

foure dayes he departed thence, and comming to the River, hee could not passe, because it was The River growne very bigge; which feemed to him a thing of admiration, being at that time that it was, fable in August and fince it had not rained a moneth before. The Indians faid, that it increased many times after at Naguatax. that manner without rayning in all the Countrie. It was supposed, that it might bee the tide Coniccures that came into it. It was learned that the floud came alway from aboue, and that the Indians of of a Sea to the all the Countrie had no knowledge of the Sea.

Hee departed from Naguatex, and within three dayes lourney came to a Towne of foure or fine houles, which belonged to the Cacique of that Prouince, which is called Niffoone : it was Niffoone euill inhabited, and had little Maiz. Two dayes journey forward the Guides which guided the 50 Gouernour, if they were to goe Westward, guided him to the Bast, and somtimes went up and downe through very great Woods out of the way. The Gouernour commanded them to bee hanged upon a tree : and a woman that they tooke in Niffone guided him, and went backe againe to feeke the way. In two dayes he came to another miferable Towne, called Lacana: an Lacana. Indian was taken in that place, and faid, that the Countrie of Nondacao was a Countrie of great Nandacae habitation, and the houses scattering the one from the other, as they vie to be in Mountaines, and had great flore of Ma z. The Cacique came with his men weeping, like them of Naguatex : for this is their vie, in token of obedience : he made him a present of much fish, and offered to doe what he would command him.

The Gouernour departed from Nondacao toward Soacatina, and in fine dayes journey came to 60 a Province called Aays. That day that the Governour departed from thence, the Indian that Aays. guided him faid, that in Nondacao he had heard fay, that the Indians of Soacatino had feene other Christians, whereof they were all glad; thinking it might be true, and that they might have entred into those parts by Nueua Espanna; and that if it were so, it was in their owne hands to goe out of Florida, if they found nothing of profit: for they feared they should lose themselves

Knowledge of

Sozcatine.

Twenty daies trauell toward the South.

Guafce : here they found fome Turkic ftones,& mantles of Cotten wooll.

> The River of Dayces: which feemeth to be Rio del oro.

No trauelling by land without an Interpreter.

Gold, Silver and precious ftones in Fla-

Turkie stones and Mantles of Cotten wooll found in Guafco. 150 leagues betweene the River of Day. cao, and Rio grande. The beginning of December. Raine with Northren winde excee.

ding cold.

in some wildernesse. This Indian led him two dayes out of the way. The Governour commanded to torture him. He faid, that the Cacique of Nondacao, his Lord, commanded him to guide them fo because they were his enemies, and that he was to doe as his Lord commanded him. The Gouernour commanded him to be cast to the dogs: and another guided him to Soacatmo, while ther he came the day following. It was a very poore Country : there was great want of Mair in that place. He asked the Indians whether they knew of any other Christians. They faid that a little from thence toward the South they heard they were. He trauelled ewentie dayes through a Country euill inhabited, where they suffered great scarlitie and trouble. For that little Maiz which the Indians had, they had hidden and buried in the woods, where the Christians, after they were well wearied with trauell, at the end of their journey went to feeke by digging what they Io should eate. At last, comming to a Prouince that was called Guasco, they found Maiz, wherewith they loaded their horfes, and the Indians that they had.

The Indiane told them there, that ten daies journie from thence toward the West, was a River called Darcae: whither they went fometimes a hunting and killing of Deere: and that they had feene people on the other fide, but knew not what habitation was there. There the Christians tooke such Maiz as they found and could carry, and going ten daies journie through a wildernesse, they came to the River which the Indians had told them of. Ten horsemen which the Gouernour had fent before, passed ouer the same, and went in a way that led to the River, and lighted upon a company of Indians that dwelt in very little cabins; who, as foone as they faw them. tooke themselves to flight, leaving that which they had; all which was nothing but mi- 20 ferie and pouertie. The Countrie was to poore, that among them all there was not found halfe a pecke of Maiz. The horsemen tooke too Indians, and returned with them to the River, where the Gouernour staied for them. He sought to learne of them what habitation was toward the West. There was none in the Campe that could vinderstand their language. The Governour affembled the Captaines and principall persons, to determine with their aduice what they should doe. And the most part said, that they thought it best to returne backe to Rio grande, or the great River of Guacheya; because that id Nilce and thereabout was store of Maiz; saying, that they would make Pinnaces that winter, and the next Summer paffe downe the River to the Seaward in them, and comming to the Sea they would goe along the coast to Nuena Elpanna. For though it seemed a doubtfull thing and difficult, by that which they had already alleadged, yet it was the last remedy they had. For by land they could not goe for want of an Interpreter. And they held that the Countrie beyond the River of Dayaco, where they were, was that which Cabeca de Vaca mentioned in his relation that he passed of the Indians, which lined like the Alarbes , hanno no settled place, and fed youn Tunas and rootes of the fields, and wilde beafts that they killed. Which if it were fo, if they should enter into it and finde no victuals to passe the winter, they could not choose but perish. For they were entred already into the beginning of October : and if they flaied any longer, they were not able to returne for raine and howes, nor to fustaine themselves in so poore a Countrie. The Gouernour (that defired long to see himselfe in a place where hee might fleepe his full fleepe, rather then to conquer and gouerne a Countrie where fo many troubles prefented themselves) presently returned backe that same way that he came.

When that which was determined was published to the Campe, there were many that were greatly griened at it; for they held the Sea voyage as doubtfull for the euill meanes they had, and as great danger as the travelling by land : and they hoped to finde fome rich Country before they came to the land of the Christians, by that which Cabeça de Vaca had told the Emperour: and that was this; That after he had found cloathes made of Cotten wooll, hee faw Gold and Silver, and stones of great value. And they had not yet come where hee had beene. For vntill that place he alwayes trauchled by the Sea coast : and they trauelled farre within the land; and that going toward the West, of necessitie they should come where he had beene. For he taid, That in a certaine place he trauelled many dayes, and entred into the land toward the North. And in Guafeo they had already found some Turkie stones, and Mantles of Cotten wooll; which the 50 Indians fignified by fignes that they had from the West: and that holding that course they should draw neere to the land of the Christians. From Daycao, where now they were to Rio grando, or the great River, was one hundred and fiftie leagues : which vnto that place they had gone Westward. They departed from Nilco in the beginning of December; and all that way, and before from Chilano, they endured much trouble; for they paffed through many waters, and many times it rained with a Northren winde, and was exceeding colde, so that they were in open field with water ouer and underneath them; and when at the end of their dayes journey they found dry ground to rest upon, they gave great thankes to God. With this trouble almost all the Indians that served them died. And after they were in Minoya, many Christians also died : and the most part were ticke of great and dangerous difeafes, which had a spice of the lethargie,

As soone as they came to Minoya, the Gouernour commanded them to gather all the chaines together, which every one had to lead Indians in; and to gather all the Iron which they had for their prouision, and all the rest that was in the Campe : and to set up a forge to make mailes, and commanded them to cut downe timber for the Brigandines. And a Portugal of Centa, who

having bin a prifoner in Fet, had learned to faw timber with a long Saw, which for fuch purpoles they had carried with them, did teach others, which helped them to faw timber. And a Eugannisan poles they had carried with them, and teach for without him they had never come out of the herbe like Genomes, who in the present about a protect that could make Ships but he) with four or fine other Flax of the Rifaine Carpenters, which hewed his plankes and other timbers, made the Brigandines: And Countries Distance of Genna, the other of Sardinia did calke them with the tow of an hearbe The mighty like Hempe, whereof before I haue made mention, which there is named Enequen. And because increasing of like Hempe, whereon before a naue made mention, wanted there is a same a despete with the Manthere was not enough of it, they calked them with the flaxe of the Countrie, and with the Manthore is more than more than the more th tles, which they rauelled for that purpole. A Cooper made for enery Brigandine two halfe hogs space, towit, Io heads, which the Mariners call quarterers, because foure of them hold a Pipe of water. In the all March and moneth of March, when it had not rained a moneth before, the River grew fo big, that it came Aprillto Nilco, which was nine leagues off : and on the other fide, the Indians faid, that it reached other The grandconto trues, which was the regres on and off second has, the sense have that treached other infrared the nine leagues into the land. In the townse where the Christians were, which was formewhat high Indian against the chart when sold the control to the chart when sold the chart when so ground, where they could best goe, the water reached to the stirrops. They made certaine rates the Coristinas. of timber, and laid many boughes vpon them, whereon they fer their horses, and in the houses Note well. they did the like. But feeing that nothing prevailed, they went vp to the lofts : and if they went Thirty Indians out of the houles, it was in Canoes, or on horseback in those places where the ground was highout of the houles, it was in Canoes, or on horieoack in those places where the ground was might eff. So they were two moneths, 2 | doubt doe nothing, during which time the River decreated have their not. The Indians ceased not to come vinto the Brigantines as they were wont, and came in Ca-right hands 20 noes. At that time the Governour feared they would fet vpon him. He commanded his men to cut off. rake an Indian fecretly of those that came to the Towne, and stay him till the rest were gone : The River inrake an Indian recretiy of choice that came to solve to white, and they tooke one. The Gouernour commanded him to be put to torture, to make him confelle once a yeare whether the Indians did practife any treason or no. Hee confessed that the Caciques of Nilco, whethe snows Guschora, and Taguanate, and others, which in all were about twenty Caciques, with a great doe melt in number of people, determined to come vpon him; and that three dayes before, they would fend March &April, agreat prefeut of fish to colour their great treaton and malice, and on the very day they would A miraculous fen I fome Indians before with another pretent. And these with those which were our slaues, They faile which were of their conspirate also, thould fet the houses on fire, and first of all possesse downe die felues of the lances which flood at the doores of the houles; and the Caciques with all their men Grande from 30 (hould be neere the Towne in ambush in the wood, and when they faw the fire kindled, should Amera 17. should be neere the 1 owne in amount in the wood, and when they are the internal indian to be kept in a daies before come, and make an end of the conquelt. The Governour commanded the Indian to be kept in a daies before they came to chaine, and the selfe same day that he spake of, there came thirty Indians with fish. Hee commanded their right hands to be cut off, and Ikne them fo backe to the Cacique of Guachera, whose thereof. This men they were. He fent him word, that he and the rest should come when they would, for he Author acdefired flothing more, and that he should know; that they taught not any thing which he knew counterhout deired florting more, and that he mound know, that they thought of the they thought of it. Hereupon they all were put in a very great feare: And the Canot before they thought of it. Hereupon they all were put in a very great feare: And the Canot before they thought of it. eign s of Nilco and Tagnanate came to excuse themselves; and a few dayes after came he of Gna. oneth 700, lavchand. The Brigandines being finished in the moneth of June, the Indians having told vs, That ing that he can the River increased but once a yeare, when the Snowes did melt, in the time wherein I mentio- ned with him the Repersence and once a years, when the Showes and having not rained a long time, it pleafrom head already increased, being now in Summer, and Hauing not rained a long time, it pleafrom headed here added by fed God that the flood came up to the Towne to feeke the Brigandines, from whence they car- that I wan Pence ried them by water to the River. Which if they had gone by land, had beene in danger of break- de Leen, the fift ing and splitting their keeles, and to be all vindone; because that for want of Iron, the spikes discourter of were short, and the plankes and timber were very weake. They shipped two and twenty of Fluida, loss were more, and the plantes in the Campe, the rest they made dried fielh of; and dressed the 80, men. Lucas Hoeges which they had in like manner, They departed from Mmoya the fecond day of Valqueiwas al-

There went from Minoya three hundred twenty and two Spaniards in seven Brigandines, with above There went from Minora three hundred twenty and two openiarist in leder of partitions, and Pamphila well made, faue that the plankes were thin, because the nailes were short, and were not pitched, de Naugez nor had any decks to keepe the water from comming in. In flead of deckes they laid plankes, went with acc. 50 whereon the Marriners might run to trim their failes, and the people might refresh themselves Spaniards, of aboue and below. They failed downe the River seventeene dayes; which may be two hundred which noraand fiftie leagnes iourney, little more or lesse: and neere vnto the Sea the River is divided into bour foure efand fiftie leagnes iourney, little more or lette: and neere vinto the Sea the Rider is didded into especi, &c. Don-two armes; each of them is a league and a halfe broad. By the way the Indians fet on them:

flew fome, and wounded many.

The eighteenth of July, they went forth to Sea with faire and prosperous weather for their with criefe. So voyage. They failed with a reasonable good winde that day and the night following, and the fatallhath Flonext day till evening fong, alwaies in fresh water, whereat they wondred much; for they were rida beene to next day till eneming long, alwaies in trelli water, whereat they wonded index, for they were spaint, that (I very farge from land. But the force of the current of the River is 6 great, and the coast there is hope) Directed 60 fo shallow and gentle, that the fresh water entreth farre into the Sea.

They indured an intolerable ftorme first, and after that the torment of an infinite iwarme of greater down Moskitos which fell upon them, which as soone as they had stung the flesh, it so infected it, as for her English

They failed 17. daies down the River, which is about 252. leagues. Fresh water almost two daies failing in the Sea. A swarmer

gricuous Moskitoes.

though

They arrined

Panes, 1542.

Septemo. 10.

311 Chriftians

halte on the

Well lide of

Cutifachiqui.

Chichs Coro.

and Talife

Talcalues.

Aquixo.

Coligon.

Rio Grande.

Amiemque.

Fl rida.

Ocute.

shough they had been even omous. For the fayles which were white feemed blacke with them. Those which rowed, valette others kept them away, were not able to rowe. Having pasted the feare and danger of the storme, beholding the deformities of their faces, and the blowes which they gave themselves to drive them away, one of them bughed at another. They met all toge-A form of the ther in the creeke, where the two Brigandines were, which outwent their fellowes. There was Sealike Pitch found a skumme, which they call Copee, which the Sea casteth up, and it is like Pitch, wherecalled Copec. with in some places, where Pitch is wanting, they pitch their ships: there they pitched their Brigandines. They rested two dayes, and then eftsoones proceeded on their Voyage. They fai-Another deep led two dayes more, and landed in a Bay or arme of the Sea, where they flayed two dayes.

From the time that they put out of Rio Grande, to the Sea, at their departure from Florida, to in the River of vatill they arrived in the River of Panaco, were two and fiftie dayes. They came into the River of Panuco the tenth of September, 1543. There arrived there of those that came out of Florida.

three hundred and eleuen Christians.

From the Port de Spiritu Santo, where they landed when they entred into Florida, to the arriued at Par Province of Ocute, which may be foure hundred leagues, little more or leffe, is a very plaine Port de Spiritu Countrie, and hath many Lakes and thicke Woods, and in some places they are of wilde Pine. Sanioisin 29. trees; and is a weakefoyle: There is in it neither Mountaine nor Hill. The Countrie of Ocute degrees and a is more fat and fruitfull; it hath thinner Woods, and very goodly Medowes voon the Rivers. From Ocute to Cutsfachiqui may be an hundred and thirty leagues : eightie leagues thereof are Defart, and have many Groues of wilde Pine-trees. Through the Wilderneffe great Rivers doe 24 palle. From Cutifachiqui to Xuala, may bee two hundred and fixy leagues : it is all an hilly Countrie, Cuifachiqui and Xuala stand both in plaine ground, high, and have goodly Medowes on the Rivers. From thence forward to Chiaba, Cogs, and Talife, is plaine ground, drie and fat. and very plentifull of Maiz. From Xuala to Tascaluca may be two hundred and fifty leavues. From Talcaluca to Rio Grande, or the Great River, may be three hundred leagues : the Countrie is lowe, and tull of Lakes. From Rio Grande forward, the Countrie is higher and more champaine, and best peopled of all the Land of Florida. And along the River from Aquixo to Pacaha, and Coligon, are an hundred and fifty leagues: the Countrie is plaine, and the woods thinne. and in some places champaine, very fruitfull and pleasant. From Coligon to Autiamane are two hundred and fifty leagues of hilly Countrie. From Antiemque to Aguacay, may bee two hundred and thirtie leagues of plaine ground. From Aguacay to the River of Daycao an hundred and twentie leagues, all hilly Countrie.

From the Port de Spirita Sante Into Agalache, they travelled from East to West, and North west. From Cuifachiqui to Xuala from South to North. From Xuala to Coca from East to West. From Coca to Tafcaluça, and to Rio Grande, as farre as the Prounce of Quizquiz and Aquixo from East to West. From Aquixo to Pacaba to the North, From Pacaba to Tulla from East to West : and from Talle to Autiamque from North to South, to the Prounce of Guachora and

Daycao, &c. This Relation of the discouery of Florida was printed in the house of Andrew de Burgos, Printer and Gentleman of the house of my Lord Cardinall the Intant. It was finished the tenth of 10 February, in the yeare one thousand five hundred fiftie and seven, in the Noble and most loyall Citie of Enera.

CHAP. III.

Divers expeditions from Mexico and other parts of New Spaine and New Biskay, especially to the more Northerly parts of America, by divers Spaniards in a bundred yeares space.

Q. I.
The Relation of NUNNO di GUSMAN written to CHARLES the fift Emperour; translated out of R AM V SIOS third Tome, and abridged.



éted.

Writ fom Mechnacan to your Maiestie (after I had written from Mexico) that I went thence with one hundred and fiftie horsemen, and as many footemen well armed, and with twelve (mall Peeces of artillery, and 7. or 8000. * Indians our 60 friends, and all neceffaries for the discouery and conquest of the Countrey from the Terlichichimechi which continue with New Spaine. I arrived at the River of the purification of Saint Mary, fo called, for passing it on that day. And because that Countrey was of the enemies, I determined to plant there three great Croffes, which I had

carried with me, well wrought and of good proportion, which after Maffe faid in Procession with Trumpets, the Captaines and I carried on our shoulders, and planted one on the River, and the second before a Church of the Purification, then begun to be builded, and the third before the way which I was to passe, "to the which Crosses with all denotion wee after made due prayer. "Alle quari to This done, the standerds of the Crosse began to be directed in the land of those infidels, which had or at the not beene done fince the Christians entred those parts. Incontinently some people met vs in which, peace, yeel ling themselues and promiting seruice. Meane while the Church was finished and walled about, that fireeene or twenty horfemen might lodge within. There Mafe was faid, and a Sermon was preached; after which certaine ordinances were red for good orders to be kept in Io the Armie. After this, on the feuenth of February possession was taken in your Maiesties name of that New Discouerie, and on the foureteenth was made the request which is accustomed to

In regard of accusations made against Caconci Lord of Mechancan for rebellion and conspira- csconci Lord cie to haue flaine vs, I marched against him and found the information true, besides other inormi- of Mechanian ties in facrificing Indians and Christians, as he had yfed to doe before he was a Christian, whereupon I condemned him to the fire, as may be feene in the processe made against him. Hauing executed this man and pacified the Countrie, I left a Spaniard in a fortrefle there built by the Indians, and trauelled fix daies in a Countrie not inhabited, three of them downe the River, leauing at every lodging place a Croffe. On the fixt day we came to the Province Chinao, full of Cuinao. 20 good Townes and abounding in victuals. The people had at first armed themselves for relistance. but when I fent Baring against them, they were all fled to the Mountaines. The light horie tooke some of the slowest not without making some defence. I fent them word not to be afraid, but to returne to their houses and give their obedience, which they refusing, I marched against them with three squadrons, and sent the Ouerseer on one part, and Captaine Ognate on the other, and I was at their backes. The Ouerfeer found none but women and children. Ognate incountred with about one hundred men with their Bowes and Arrowes wounded fleightly two horses and three men, but many of them were slaine, others taken with women and children about five hundred, which I caused to be kept together, lest the

Indiant should facrifice them after their wont. The Cacique was fled to the next Province, 20 called Cuinaquiro, of another figniorie and language. Because hee came not at my sending, I Cuinquiro. went to feeke him. Entring that Prouince where were many Townes, and great store of Wretchedhold Maiz and Fruites, wee found many people dead, facrificed, which had out of the for- pitality. mer Prouince retired thither for feare of vs, with many peeces of flesh which they vse to eate. I fent many prisoners to their friends to let them see that I came not to slav them. The language of this people none of ours could understand. The Ouerseer encountred three hundred armed with Bowes and Arrowes, which the day before had killed foure of our Indians: they fet vpon ours finging, and killed a Horse, but having lost one hundred of their company, the rest escaped. I found my men cutting the Horse in peeces, that the enemies might fee no figne of him, whereby they might know that a Horse

40 could dye. I fent the Campe Master to discouer the foord : three Indians fet on him, one Coursgious of which had a two hand I word of wood, which gaue him two blowes, but the Indian was Indian. flaine. I moued forwards, and discouered many inhabited places. Another skirmish happened with the Indians wherein aboue one hundred of them were flaine. All the Countrie is full of Maiz, Kidney-beanes, Hens, Parrats, Palmitos: there growes much Cotten, and some shewes appeared of Gold and Silver found with some of the inhabitants.

I procured the Carique to come to me with all his principal men, whom I entertained with Spanishpreachmuch kindnesse, and made a speech to them, giving them to vnderstand what God was, and the ing to convers Pope, and what they ought to doe to be faued : and how the King of Castile was the Minister of God in Infidels. earth, and Lord of all those parts subject to him; and that to me in his royall name they were to yeelde obe-

dience and service; and that they should abstaine from sacresicing & adoration to Idols and Divels which 50 they had bitberto done, because God alone was to be worshipped, feared and served, and after him they ought to ferus and obey on earth the King of Cathile. The Cacique answered that till that houre hee Indian simplihad neuer knowne any thing of that which I had spoken, nor had ever heard of any but me that citie, which I declared; but that he now conceived great pleasure to have understood it, and that from benceforth he would hold for God the King of Caltile, and would worftig him. I answered that hee ought not fo to doe, for the King of Castile was a mortall man as we our selnes are, but that hee was Lord and Soueraigne ouer vs all, and given to vs of God to rule and governe vs, and we were to ferue and obey him. And God aboue, which created heaven and earth, and all things visible and inuitible, is he which ought to be worthipped, feared, and ferued aboue all things, for a fruich (O as he giveth vs, and of his hands we hold the life and being which we have, and he is able to take

it from vs at his pleafure. In this manner he stood aduised of that which he ought to doe, although their wit and capacitie be very small, and their will much disagreeing, by reason of their ancient custome of seruing the Diuell. But feeing all things must have a beginning and labour, and herein especially

the grace of God is necessary and the holy Ghost to be infused; it is to be beleeved and hoped of his infinite gentleneffe and mercy, that having directed your Maieffie to discouer this place and conquest, in vertue thereof and good fortune, after that of God, all things shall be done profise roully, and he will fuffer to give to this Nation knowledge of the truth. And if it be not fortish denly done, yet the way shall be opened, and the Countrie conversed in, and in abited of Chris fliant, which adore and laud his holy Name, where before, the Deuill was adored with fo many adolatries; and the Baners of his most holy Crosle shall be fixed in all those Countries, that when he shall fend his Grace, those Nations may be prepared to receive it. I gave to that Cacione all the people which I had taken, and they beganne to reinhabite their houses : and after a most fumptious Croffe placed there, and possession of those Prouinces taken in your Maiesties name, I departed by the way of another Prouince called Cuifes, fituate on the other fide of a great Rie ner iffung out of a great Lake, After a battell with this People, wherein we prevailed by our Artillerie, the Cucique fent a Messenger to me, by whom I fent him word, that we came thither to have them our triends, and to take peffession of that Countrie, in the name of the Kine of Caffile. Having obtayned provisions, and passing further, in an Iland in the River happened hard skirmish, in which divers were burt, many of theirs flame and taken, and the rest fled. The last which was taken, and which fought most couragiously, was a man in habite of a woman. Salomite are- which confelled, that from a childe he had gotten his living by that filthingle, for which I canfed him to be burned.

Cuifeo.

Returning to the Campe, I caused the principall Lords of the Countrie to come to me, and pacified them, giving them dothes, reftor ng the prifoners, and bidding them returne to their habitations : gruing them to understand on behalfe of the King of Caffile, That he was Lord and the Minister of God in Earth, in which God, the King and all men of the world are to believe, to adore, feare and ferne bim as God alone, maker and Creator of all things e and on Earth to be vallals, and to obey the commandements of the King of Caltile, as his Minister: and to mee in his Royall name, and that they (hould not wor hip Idols, nor eate mans field. They answered me, that to they would dee. and their facrificing to Idols hitherto grew from hence, that they knew not what God was; and because the Deuill commanded them to observe those formes, and defired fielh and bloud of them, giving them to understand, that he was the Lord of all the world, whereupon for feare they had committed this errour, which henceforth they would ceafe to doe. Great are the finner a of all men buing, feeing God permits to great abominations to bee committed against his di-Normweil this uine Maiestie, and that such a multitude or toules are lost, and remaine blinde as brute beafts, and worfe : for they follow their naturall course, which these have lost : although some not

onely publifu the warre which is made upon them to be uninft, but also seeke to disturbe it, being the mit

Departing toward the Province of Tonola, I fent the Querleer to the Province of Cay-

waccare, on the other fide of the River. The Seniory of that Province (for they had no par-

ticular Lord) fent Meffengers that they expected mee in peace, and would give mee what I

would how to ever Coiula, Coiula, and Cumaccaro, the three neighbour Provinces were fooles,

Divinitie.

worthie and holy worke, and of most merit, (with the punishing of that Nation) that noth ng can be die in the fernice of God greater, how feener it be done by the hands of great sinners, and effectally by mit who am the greatest of all, fixce that nothing is hidden from his beate, and as the mercifull and quere all good, I bope in his infinite clemency that he will receive my meane defire, and small paine and labout, the Sword a worthie, holy, in diministion of my finnes: and will permit by his infinite bountie and grace, and because your Maiesta meritorious dith all for the feruice of God which it doth, whole charge it is to quide the enterprise in fuch manner, 40 fansfactory that the beginning be with manifesting his Name, where before, that of the Entmie was serued wholly, worke. and adored. Bee it knowne to your Maseftic, that wherefoener I come, I give all the people to underflandwhat God is, and who your Maiefie is. The Towne about this place or ford of the River is

called Guanzebi, where a Crosse was planted.

Guarrebi. Tonela a free State.

Cuinaccara. Coixla, and Coincla.

Valiant Indi-

and refolued upon warre, These fought with vs to valiantly, that some one Indian would turne his head against a Light-horseman, and taking his Lance with one hand, with the other would 50 lay on him with a club which they vie; others would lay hold on the Bridles, and those which haue beene in New Spaine, and other parts, testifie that more couragious Indians haue not brene feene. They vie Bowes, Arrowes, Clubs, and two-hand Swords of wood, a Sling, and fome Targets. The most of them feare the Horses, holding opinion that they would eate them, and a thousand of them have beene afraid of three Horsemen; yet neuerthelesse some are thus hare dy. The Countrie is temperate, they are great Sacrificers, have Silver, and some Gold: but 1 made show not to care for it, and faid I had no need of Gold, but that they should ferue, and not facrifice as before. In the place of the victorie was erected a faire Church called, The victorie of the Croffe, and a Croffe of fixtie foot long there erected. Zapatula received me in peace, Aximocuntly people fled wet fent ftore of victuals, as did also Intallan.

Zaratula. Aximocuntla.

Indian Christiawitie but in name and

Our Indians in our march had flaine and facrificed certaine women and children, the fignes whereof I tound, it being a thing impossible to remedie, notwithstanding all the punishment inflicted, how focuer forme lay, they are good Christians, And let your Maieffle believe, that they doe at this pretent time as they did before, but fecretly. And for this, and for other full caules

which I have written to your Maiestie, there ought not so much libertie be given them, nor more then that which is accustomed to their state and lining; for to doe otherwise, is to gue occasion to them to be bad, and especially this People is of such nature, that they must be very much holden under, and made to teare, that they may be good Christans.

CHAP.3. S.I. Embassadors with offers of peace. Croffes eretted.

From Xulps three E mbaffadors came to me, with offer of peace, subiection, and certaine Sil- feare. uer plates, and an Idoll made of Cotton, and full of bloud, and a Raior of itone in the midft. Xalpa. wherewith they facrificed, which was burned in their light, to their great amazement, who thought it would have destroyed all. Against Mandie Thursday a Church was creeted of reeds in a day, and deuout Procellion was then made of more then thirtie Disciplinants. On Eafter Tuef. Bloudy Pro-

to day I departed thence to Tepano, thence by Mount Amee to Teulinebano, a firong place, being Teulinebano all of stone cut round, where every Lord of the Province ought to have a house wherein to iacrifice; there had beenes great Idoll of Gold, destroyed in other warres. The Palaces were of flone engraven, some pieces of eighteene spannes, with great Statues of men, with other things like those of Mexico. The Courts of the Palaces were spacious, and faire, with Fountaines of good water. Thence I fent Captaine Verduge to Xaltenange, thorow a Valley of fixe leagues, but the people were fled to the Mountaines. A Croffe was planted, and Masse said for the service of Xaltenango. God, there where the Deuill had fo long beene ferued, and had received to many Sacrifices. I divided the Armie, one part to goe to Mechuacan (another Province, not that of New Spaine) neere to the South Sea I marched with the other to Guatailan, and there planted a 20 Croffe on a Hill, and thence to Tetitlan, accompanied with the Caciques of the Countrie:

thence to Xalifco. Heere the way was fo bad that in fitteene dayes I rode not three, and many Xalifco.

I fent to the principall Lords of Xalifeo, to whom I made the request accustomed. They were all retired to the Mountaines. Finding my felfe neere the Sea, I tooke poffession thereof for your Maiestie. At Tepique two of the Lords of Xalifeo came to me in peace, and to yeeld obedience. as three other Townes had done neere the Sea, where are faid to bee Mines of Gold. There I made Officers in your Maiesties name, as being a new Discouerie and Conquest separate from New Spane, that there might be some to receive your Maiesties fiths. Two Croffes were ere-Gred in Xalifes and two in Tepeque, a place well watered, and very fertile. In marching from 30 thence a great and dangerous battell was given vs by the Indians wherein we obtained victorie. They wounded fiftie Horses, of which onely fixe died (one Horse I affure your Maiestie, is worth

about fourt hundred Pezos) divers of the principall Commanders were wounded alio. The next day I made a Procession with a Te Denn. Thence I passed the great River of the Trinitie, to come to Omitlan, the chiefe of that Province. The Countrie is very hot, and the River full of Crocodiles, and there are many venomous Scorpions. Here was erected one Church, and two Croffes. Aztatlan is three dayes journey hence where they prepare to give mee battell. From thence ten dayes further I shall goe to finde the Amazons, which some say dwell in the Sa, some in Amazonian an arme of the Sea, and that they are rich, and accounted of the people for Goddeffes, and whiter then other women. They vie Bowes, Arrowes and Targets : baue many and great Townes; 40 at a certaine time admit them to accompanie them, which bring vp the males, as these the fe-

male iffue, &c. From Omitlan a Prouince of Mecnacan of the greater Spaine, on the eighth of Iuly, 1430.

had thought but for prolimitie, here to have added Aluarados Conquests the other way from Mexico. Pet. Aluarados two of whole Letters are extant in Ramulio. The later of them is dated from the Citie of Saint Letters to Cott lago, which hee founded. Hee writes that bee was well entertained in Guatimala, and puffed alongst tefe which had with divers fortunes, four e hundred leagues from Mexico conquering; and let your Loraship beleene this Discovere mee, this Countrie is better inhabited and peopled then all that which your Lording hath bitherto and Conquestgoverned. In this Prounce I have found a Vulcan, the most dreadfull thing that ever was some Two worst ter-30 which casteth forth stones as great as a house, burning in light stames, which falling, breake in pieces, and coner all that fiery Mountaine. Threescore leagues before wee saw another Vulcan , which sends forth a fearefull smoake, ascending up to Heauen, and the body of the smoake encompassed baife a league. None drinke of the streames which runne downe from it, for the Brimstone sent. And effecially there comes thence one principal River, very faire, but so bot, that certaine of my companie were not able to passe it, which were to make out-roades into certaine places; and search ng a Ford, found another cold River running into it, and where they met together, the Ford was semperate and passable. I beseech your Lordship to grant mee the fauour to bee Governour of this Citie, &c. From Saint I220, Inly 28, 1524.

Christians for

CHAP. 3.5.2. Many horses lost. Oratory for the Denill. Signes of rich Mines.

The Voyages of Frier MARCO de Nica, Don FR. VASQUEZ de Coronado, Don ANTONIO de Espeio, and divers into New Mexico, and the adjoyning Coasts and Lands.

Les Gamers. bit.cen c.112.

Here arolesome strife betwirt Don Antonio de Mendoza Vice-roy of New Spaine, and Cortes, each striuing to exceed the other in New Discoueries, and complaining of each Cortes, each striuing to exceed the other in the billion into Spaine, Mendoza heaother to the Emperour. Whiles Cortex went to that end into Spaine, Mendoza heaother to the Emperour. Whiles Cortex went to that end into Spaine, Mendoza heaother to the Emperour. ring formewhat by Dorantez, one of Narusez his companions in the former inland Difcourries 10 from Florida, tent both Frier Marco de Niça, with Steph. a Negro of Dorantez, and afterwards Captaine Francis Vasquez de Coronado, by Land as likewise Ferdinando Alarchon by Sea. Cortez alfo fent Francis Ollow with a Fleet of three ships for discouerie of the same Sea, commonly called the South Sea. The Voyages Ramufio hath published at large in Italian, and Master Hablent out of him in Enelish. I'shall borow leave to collect out of them and Gomara, and F. Iuan Gon-Lales de Mendoza, and others, some breese heads of things agreeing to our purpose for the berter knowledge of the Northerne America.

Topira.

Francis Valquez de Coron ado Gouernour of Nueva Galicia, Anno 1539. Writes, that hee arriued in the Province of Topira, where the Indians were fled into the Mountaines for feare of the Christians. They have houses of stone; store of Gold, Emeralds, and other Iewels; have strong to armour of Siluer fashioned in shapes of beasts, worship herbs and birds, and sing songs to them. Neere thereto is another Pronince where the people goe naked. Their Priests which they call Chichimechas keepe in the woods without houles, and eate things given of almes by the people. Both men and women goe naked; the men tye their prinie member to the knee; they have Temples couered with itraw, the windowes full of dead mens skulls. They have in a ditch before the Temple the figure of a Serpent of divers metals, with his tayle in his mouth. One every yeere is acrificed by lot, crowned with flowers and layd in that ditch, and fire put to him; which his death he takes patiently, and the yeere following is worshipped with hymnes, and after that his head is fet vp with the rest. They facrifice their prisoners burning them in another ditch without fuch ceremonies. Frier Marco de Niça went from Saint Michael in Culiacan, two hundred leagues from Mexi-

kinde of Vni-

Expedition of

Don Francisco

Sheepe as big

as Hories, with

huge hornes.

in 30.and an

with Spanifb

Vafquez.

Ill wayes.

Impious pie-

to Norage to co, with Stephen the Negro, and other Indians, and came to Petatian, and thence paffed a Defart foure dayes, and came to certaine Indians, which made much of him, fought to touch his garments and called him Harota, that is, A man comme from Heanen. Thence he trauelled to Vacupa, fortie leagues from the Sea (of California) and thence to Cenola, which in thirty dayes journey : he learned that the people by the Sea have flore of Pearles, and Targets of Kow-hides. By the way An vaknowne he had understanding of the Kingdomes of Tetontene and Acm. They shewed him an hide balle as big againe as the hide of an Oxe, and faid, it was the skinne of a beast which had but one home vpon his fore-head, bending toward his breast, and that out of the same goeth a point forward with which he breakes any thing that he runneth against. The colour of the hide was as 40 of a Goat-skinne, the haire a finger thicke. He passed thorow two Defarts. The men of Censla flie Stepben the Negro. Frier Marke went within fight of it, and fayth it is a faire Citie feated at the foot of a Hill. V pon this newes Captaine Vafquez aforefaid in Aprill, 1540. travelled with 400. Horlemen, and a great Armie of Spaniards and others, many of which died of famine both Indians and Horses. The wayes were so rough, that the Sheepe and Lambes which they carried for their prouision lost their hooses. The fixe and twentieth of May hee arrived in the Valley of Coracones, fine dayes journey from the Westerne Sea, and thence hee went to Chichileale, and Indian embroiwith much fearlitie to Cenola, which is the name of a Prouince in which are feuen Cities neere *I have a Map maneum.mean together: their houles are of stone source or fine stories high; they wie Ladders in stead of staires, and have Cellers under the ground made for Winter in manner of Stoues. The feuen Cities are 10 but small Townes with in foure leagues together. In one were two hundred houses compassed placeth Citala with walls, and some three hundred other vnwalled. They goe for the most part naked, vie halfe, and depainted Mantles, feeme not witty enough to build fuch houses; have good quantitie of Turquefferibeuin New les, some Emeralds also and Granates; great Gunee Corkes; and season (in Summer) as in Me-Mexico, on Rio xico; many bealts, as Tigres, Beares, Lions, Porkespicks, and certaine Sheepe as big as Horses, del Norte about with very great hornes and little tayles. I have feene their hornes fo great that it is a wonder. 50. Townes I have feene the heads of wilde Goats, pawes of Beares and skinnes of wilde Boares. There is names, frangame of Deere, Ounces, and very great Stags, Hares, Conies. He fent the Vice-roy an embroidered garment of Needle-worke wrought by those Indians, and clothes painted by them with the pictures of the beafts of the Countrey. It is very cold in Winter, although it be in 37, de-62 grees and a halfe. The fnow continueth feuen moneths, in so much that the people vie surred Mantles, and other winter prouisions. The Souldiers seeing little here to bee had, were offended with the Friers which had commended Sinola, and loth to returne emptie to Mexico, they proceeded to Acuco, and Cardense with his troope of Horse went thence to the Sea, Vasquez with

the rest to Tiguez, on the banke of a great River. There they had newes of Axa and Quinira. They heard of a bearded rich King also called Tatareax, whom they would visit; they burnt a Towne, and lost thirtie Horses in their way, and spent 45. dayes in siege of a Towne, which dranke in owe in itead of water and burned their goods to preuent the Spanish spoyle, then iffuorange move with their wives and children, few escaping: and divers Spaniards also were flaine, and 80, wounded, beildes Horfes. They burnt the Towne and marched to Cience, horfe and men palling ouer the River vpon the Ice being in 37. degrees ; and foure leagues from thence met Strange Kine. with a new kind of Kine wilde and fierce, of which they flue 80, the first day for their prouifion, From Cienie they went to Quinira neere 300. leagues, thorow woodleffe Plaines, making to heapes of Oxe-dung for way-markes against their returne. All that Plaine is as full of bunchbacked Kine as Serena in Spaine of Sheep:, and no other people but the Herd-men. It hailed Great baile. one day (tones as big as Oranges *. At length they came to Quintra and there found King Ta. * Melaneok. tarrax, a hoary man, naked and with a braffe lewell at his necke; whereat not a little vexed to

fee themselues gulled with reports of riches, and the Crosse worshipped, and Queene of Heauen, of which they law no figne, they returned to Mexico, and there arrived in March, 1 (42. Valquez

fell from his Horse in Tiguez, and withall out of his wits.

and remouals.

Quinira is in 40. degrees temperate, well watered, and hath store of fruits. They are appa- Quinira descrirelled with Oxe hides, and Deeres skinne. They faw thips on the coast with Alcatrazes of Gold bed out of Gerelled with Oxe hides, and Deeres kinne. They law hings on the coan with fixed acts of Solder in their Prowes, which they effected to bee of China, making fignes that they had Ships feene, 20 fayled thirtie dayes. Some Friers returned to Quinira, and were flaine. As for those bunchbacked Kine, they are the food of the Natiues, which drinke the bloud hot, and eate the fat, and often rauine the fleth raw. They wander in companies, as the Alarbes (and Tartars) following the pastures according to the seifons. That which they eate not raw, they rost, or warme rather as a fice of Oxe-dung, and holding the fielh with his teeth, cut it with Rafors of ftone. Thefe The bunch-Oxen are of the bigneffe of our Bulls, but their hornes leffe, with a great bunch on their fore- backed Oxen thoulders, and more haire on their fore-parts then behind, which is like wooll; a mane like a Herfes on their backe bone, and long haire from the knees downward, with flore of long haire at the chinne and throat, a long flocks also at the end of the males tailes. The Horses fied from them, of which they flue tome, being enraged. They are near, drinke, shooes, houses, fire, vefac fels, and their Mafters whole lubstance. Other creatures as big as Horses the Spaniards for their hornes of fines fine wooll called Sheepe; one of their hornes ordinarily weighed fiftie pounds. There are also pounds. great Dogs which will fight with a Bull, able to carrie fiftie pounds weight in their huntings Great Dogs 2

No 1581. Frier Augustine Ruiz, with two other Friers, and eight Souldiers transled Ruiz his Voy-A Non 1,81. Frier o Luguifine Rane, white the from the Mines of Saint Barbara to Los Tiguas, two hundred and fifty leagues Northwards, age to Tiguas. where, vpon occasion of one of the Friers being flaine, the Souldiers returned. The two Friers Anide Efrie 21.1 a Meffizo Itayed. Whereupon the Franciscans carefull of their two Brethren, procured An- his New Mexitonio de Effeio, a rich Mexican, with Frier Bernardine Beltran, and others, licensed to follow him 40 to fet routh on the faid Discouerie, in November, An. 1582. with an hundred and fifteene Horses, and store of prouisions. Hee passed the Conches, and the Passagnates, and Tobesos, and Immanos, (finding many Silver Mines in the way) and then came to people, which for want of Language they could not name, and heard by one of the Conches, of a great Lake, and Townes neere it. with houses of three or foure stories, but went not thither. Fifteene dayes they travelled thorow 'Voods of Pine-trees, and two thorow Woods of Poplars and Walnuts, ftill keeping by the River of the North, as they called it, till they came to a Countrie which they called Now Mexico. They came to ten Townes fituate on both fides the River, which vied them kindly. Their houses are of foure stories, well built, with Stones for Winter: their apparel of Cotton, and Deeres skinnes: both men and women ware Boots and Shooes with foles of Neats leather. Each house had an Oratorie for the Deuill, where they fet him meate, for whose ease (as they so (av) they erect Chappels also in the high-way. Thence they came to Tiguas in which were fixteene Townes: in Poala they had flaine the two Friers, and now therefore fled to the Moun- Friers flaine. taines. They four d many Hennes in the Countrey, and many metals. Hearing that there were Hennes many rich Townes Eastwards, they travelled two dayes, and found eleven Townes, and (as they thought) fortie thousand people. There are fignes of rich Mines. They heard of a Prouince Quires, fixe leagues higher up the River, which they visited, and found five Townes. They faw Quire. there . Pie in a Cage, and certaine tirafuls or shadowes, such as they vie in China, in which were Painted Vathere a Pie in a Cage, and certaine titalols or shadowes, such as they vie in Long, in which were painted the Sunne, Moone and Statres. They found themselves in 37, degrees and a halfe. Four Note thenest. teene leagues more to the North, they came to the Cunames, which had fine Townes; the greanefie of Virginal

the people many and more civill then any they had feene. They travelled thence North-westward to a Countrie which had seven great Townes, and in them thirtie thousand soules, Fifteene leagues further Westward they came to Acoma, a Acoma Towns of fixe thousand persons, seated on a Rocke fifty paces high, without any passage to it O 0 0 0 0 0 2

Sheepe with ges had in Frebulbers voyage.

60 teft was Cia, with eight Market places, the houses plaistered and painted with divers colours, nia.

ding neere each other. from 32. to 33. and a little more. But the Prouince of Cicole he ma-

but by flaires hewen in the Rocke; all their water was kept in Ciffernes. They travelled hence foure and twentie leagues Westward to Zuny or Cibola, where Vasquez had beene, and erceted Croffes, ftill flanding. Three Indians of his Armie were full alive here, which told Effeto. of a great Lake fixtie dayes journey thence, voon the bankes whereof were many Townes which had flore of Gold. Whereupon, the reft returning, hee with nine companions determined to goe thither, and came to a populous Prouince, called Mobate, and being well entertained hee perswaded the Indians to build a Fort, to secure them from the Horses, which hee said would otherwise eate them; which they did. Here he left some of his companie, and went to discouer cerraine rich Mines, whereof he had heard, fine and fortie leagues Westward, which hee found rich of Siluer. He had further intelligence also of that great Lake, and having travelled twelve leagues to the Hubstes and Tamos, populous Prouinces, being so few, they returned in Iuly, 1,88, by another way, downe a Riverealled, De las Vaccas, or Ot Kine, an hundred and twenty leagues, fill meeting with flore of those cattell, and thence to Conchos, and fo to the Valley of Saint Rartholmen in New Bilcate

TOw for Cortez his three ships, they set forth from Acapulco, the eighth of July, 1029, and

Barthelmen Cane writ from Mexico, in May, 1590, that Rodrigo del Rio, Gouernour of New Cous Letter is Bifcay was fent by the Vice-roy with five hundred Spaniards to the conquest of Cibola. in Maft. Hakl.

Francis de Ulluss Voyage in the South Sea. California, F. Alerchous

layled along it the coast Northwards to Cape Roxo, (as they stilled it, and so to the River of Saint Creffes, which coaft fome thought to bee part of the Continent, others to bee but broken 20 Lands or Ilands: and fayled to farre in the tame, that I am loth to follow them the particulars being both in Ramufo, and Maller Hakluye. Fernando Alarchon, Anno 1540. Was fent by Mendoza the Vice-roy, with two ships, who sayth, hee went to the bottome of the Bay (of Calie

formes) and fayled up the River farre into the Countrie. I remit the defirous Reader to the Authours aforefaid. To mee, Ullas the Marquelles Generall feemes to make California nothing but llands, and to have fayled within a great way, and after out of them : this other amulous Discouerer would seeme to finde it a Bay, and therefore goe h vp the River; later Maps make it an Iland, as wee haue faid; a Letter 1:95. from Los Angelos, calleth them Ilands, and fayth, they are rich, and that the Vice-roy fent to conquer them. But I am Sea-ficke, and therefore returne to our Land-discouerers. In which wee haue a lesuite first, to entertaine you, and after 30 that, a Letter of later Newes of Onnates Discoueries in thole Northerne parts of America. All which may be of vie one day, when our Virginian Plantation (which blufheth to fee fo little done after eighteene yeeres continued habitation, with fo much coft, and fo many lives and livelihoods fpent thereon) shall lift vp her head with more viue alacritie, and shake her glorious lockes, and difparkle her triumphant lookes, thorow the inland Countries to the Westerne Ocean. And indeed for Virginias Take wee have to long held you in Spanish discourses, of whose Acts this Chapter had beene the laft , but that the leaven which leaveneth in fo great part the Spanil lumpe may be knowne, to awaken English vigilance to preuent it in themselues (they had a faire caucat 1588.) and to avoide the like with others, I shall adde to these their Discoveries a Spanio Traueller, Frier, Bishop, to discouer their Discouerers ; which shall cast vp the American parcels, 49 the particular relations of which you have had already, and yeeld you the totall jumme for a conclusion to our Spanish-Indian Peregrinations.

S. III.

Extracts out of certaine Letters of Father MARTIN PEREZ of the Societie of Iclus, from the new Misson of the Province of Cinoloa to the Fathers of Mexico, dated in the moneth of December, 1591. With a Letter added, written 1605. of later Disconeries.

July 6. 1590.

Cuimechi wax-

Ince my last Letters, dated the fixth of Iuly, among the Tanteca, on which day wee came into this Province of Cmoloa, being guided by the Governour Roderigo del Rio, we passed and travelled through divers Cattles, Countrie Villages, Mines of Metall, Shepheards houses , Townes of Spaniards, and certaine Signiories, helping our neighbours by our accultomed duties, so that wee were alwaies full of butinesse. Wee passed ouer in

eight dayes the rough and hard and painefull Mountaine Tepefnan, feeing no liuing creature, fiue certaine Fowles. The caule whereof is, the force of certaine Muskitos, which trouble Horles, whereof is exceeding abundance in all the Mountaine, which were most noisome to our Hories. 60 There met vs certaine Cuimechs, which are warlike Indians, which offered vs bountifully such as they had, without doing vs any harme. There are almost an infinite number of these, which wander dispersed up and downe, doing nothing else but hunt and seeke their food. And it was told ve, that three thouland of them were affembled in a part of the hill, which befought the

Gouernour, that he would cause them to be taught and instructed in the Christian Faith. Their Minister, which was but onely one, came to visite vs. There met vs also a certaine Spanish Captaine, which had the gouernment of fix Castles or Countrie Villages in a part of the Mountane, who knowing well enough what the focietie ment by these missions, wrote vnto the father Vilitor, requelting him to grant him one of the Fathers, by whose travell twenty thousand foules might be instructed, which he would recommend vnto him.

These and other Villages we passed by not without griefe, because it was resoluted already among vs, that we should stay in no other place, but in this Prouince. A few dayes before our comming thither we wrote to fix or legen Spaniards, which dwell there without any Prieft, to and heard Maile onely once a yeare, to wit, when any Prieft, dwelling thirtie or forty leagues off, came vnto them, to confederand absolue them being penitent; who being accompanied off, came vinto them, to conteste and absolute them being pentiene; who being accompanied The towneof with most of the chiefe Indians, met vs with exceeding great toy and gladnesse, about twenty leagues distant from their dwellings, and accompanied vs vnto the second River of this Pro- and Iaced on nince, wherein the towne of Saint Philip and Iacob Handeth. This Province is from Mexico a- the second Riboue three hundred leagues, and is extended towards the North. On the right hand it hath the uer of Ginolea; Mountaines of the Tepefuanes, on the left hand the Medsterrane Sea, or the Gulfe of California: Itis but 190. on another part it fretcheth euen to Cibola and California, which are Provinces toward the leasues indeed West, very great and well inhabited. On one fide, which regardeth the North, new Mexico is but two dayes journey distant from the vetermost River of this Province (as we were enformed 20 by the Gouernour) which is fo famous and renowned, and fo full of Pagan inperfittion, whereof Otten witting

divers have often written.

They measure and divide the Province of Cinaloa with eight great Rivers which runne through the same. The reason of that diussion is this, becaute all the Castels and Villages of the inhabitants are fetled neere the bankes and brinkes of the Rivers, which are replenished with fish , and which in short space doe fall into the Mediterrane Sea, or Gulfe of California. The foyle is apt for tillage and fruitfull, and bringeth forth fuch things as are fowne in it. The ayre is cleere and wholefome. The Pefants and husband men reape twice a yeare, and among other things, store of Beanes, Gourds, Maz, and such kinde of Pulfe, whereof wee and they eate to plentifully, that there is no speech of the rising of the price 30 of things, or of Famine; nay rather a great part of the old crop perisherh oftentimes, and

they call away then old Maiz, to make roome for the new. They have great thore of Cotten Gotten woolk Wooll, whereof they make excellent cloathes, wherewith they are apparelled. Their apparell is a peece of cloath tyed upon their shoulders, wherewith as with a cloak they couer their whole Their apparel; body, after the manner of the Mexicans.

True it is, that though they be all workemen, yet for the most part of the yeare they are not couered, but goe naked ; yet all of them weare a broad girdle of the faid Cotten cloath cunningly and artificially wrought, with figures of divers colours in the fame, which the thels of Cockles and Oyfters toyned artificially with bones doe make. Moreover, they thrust many threds through their eares, whereon they hang earerings; for which purpose 40 they bore the eares of their children as foone as they be borne in many places, and hang earerings, round Stones, and Corall in them, fo that each eare is laden with fiftie of their Ornaments at least, for which cause they alwayes sleepe not lying on their sides, but with their face vpward. The women are decently courted from their waste downeward, being all the rest naked. The men as well as the women weare long haire to the women haue it Their beire. hanging downe their shoulders, the men often bound up and tyed in diuers knots: they thrust Corals in it, adorned with divers feathers and cockle shels, which adde a certaine beautie and ornament to the head. They weare many round Beades of divers colours about their neckes. They are of great stature, and higher then the Spaniards by a hand- Their great full, fo that as wee fate vpright vpon our horfes, without standing on tiptoe, they Stature. 50 easily could embrace vs. They are valiant and strong, which the warres which they Their valous, had with the Spaniards doe easily flow, wherein though they fuftained no small damages,

yet were they not unreuenged, nor without the bload of their aduerfaries. When they would fight resolutely for their vetermost libertie, they denounced and appointed the day of battell. Their weapons are Bowes and poyloned Arrowes, and a kinde of clubbe of Their weapons. hard wood, wherewith they neede not to litrike twice to braine a man. They vie also wertaine short iauelins made of red wood, so hard and sharpe, that they are not inferiour to our armed speares. And as fearefuil and terrible as they be to their enemies, to quiet and peaceable are they among themselves and their neighbours, and you shall seldome finde a quarrellour or contentious person. The Spaniards after certaine conflicts at length made friendship 60 with them, leaving their Countrie to them : but those eight Spaniards, whom I mentio- Eight Spaniards ned before, line quietly among them : and though they be called Lords, yet are they huing in Circcontented with such things as the Indians give them, offering no violence nor molestation loss

Vpon our comming into these Countries, the Indians flirred up with the fame of new men. 0000003

Trancifeans.

hefore.

(flaine there)

twelue veares

Difference of

language.

first occasion, to show how greatly they affected the Christian religion; for assoone as we entred Readineffero into the first Villages of this Prouince, the day following there affembled a great number of old hearethe Gof- and vong folkes to be baptized, which was a great comfort vnto vs; we christened full fourescore boyes and girles; we raised the mindes of the rest with good hopes, that assome as they Fours hundred were instructed with necessary doctrine, they should be partakers of the same Sacrament. Wee fou id foure hundred Christians, which having bin baptized by the Franciscane Fathers, which came into these parts twelue yeares past, when at length they were slaine by the Inhabitants 10 were left destitute of a teacher; neither can all of them be instructed by vs, vnlesse some helpe be fent vs; for belides that the people are many, they also differ in language and tongues. although there be two chiefe and most generall.

We learne two tongues with great celeritie, which albeit they be not fo vulgar and generall

yet are they more necessary : and we have profited so much in three moneths, that wee could

came by flockes vnto our lodeing, and witheffed their loue, with exceeding great fignification

of good will, with falutation and words, which yet we understood not, staying so long with vs

till they were friendly difmiffed by vs : neither neglected they the opportunitie offred voon the

Inftruction in the Catechilm

easily understand the Indians when they spake, Wherefore wee began to instuct in the Catechilme, and with godly speeches to exhort the Nation, to keepe them within the compasse of their duetie, and to deliuer them of all feare : when they fee that they receive of vs the ieruice and formes of praying to God, not in a strange but in their owne language; the which together And why doe with the Catechilme they learne with great care and shortnesse of time. And now wee have 10 you teach Ba. Christened aboue fixteene hundred, as well those of yeares as boyes; besides those source hunble in a ft ange biemaft ange yeares neglected, had scarlely any shew of Christendome, but were married with Pagans after their Countrey fashion. From many of them we tooke away their Concubines, because such is the cuitome of this Nation, that they take as many as they are able to keepe. Many of them we praying? Sixteene hunlikewife married. There are also many more which defire to be baptized, but since the people be exceeding madred newly Christ-ned. ny, and the workemen but two onely, we are not able to sustaine the labour. The last of No-

Concubines. Familia-ity

with the Divel ble finnes. Many of them fled into the Mountaines, that their children might not be Christened, because the Diuell had reported abroad, that all they should die that were Baptized. Not with standing in feuen or eight dayes we Christened two hundred and fortie children. Necessitie enforced meto 240, children leave them, and to goe to another place, to helpe our neighbours : yet I am greatly denrous to re-Christened. turne moued with a certaine pitie, because I fee this people so strongly possessed by the Divel

uember I visited the people of this tract or River, and in the space of twelve or thirteene

miles, there are foure thousand Indians at the least, which vie Bowes and Arrowes, besides #

women and children. Among these are certaine of bad name and same, which have samilia-

ri'v and acquaintance with the Diuell, with whom they commit abominable and very horri-

Thirteene Churches in

Cullyuscan.

being viterly ignorant of the faith. There are now thirteene Churches in these three Rivers, besides those which are erected by 4 little and little, neither haue we any more holy Vestments for them, then those which we carry about with vs, and one other furniture of an Altar, which belongeth to the Spaniards : we have neuer a Bell in any of these Churches. We furnished an Alter with one Croffe and certaine paper Images, which were brought hither from Culhnacan, because we want other furniture, which we lookefrom your Reuerencies, and it will be very profitable, fince this Nation is so delighted

Petatian in as. degrees and a The Christianity there

with outward ornaments. We celebrated the dedication of a Church at Petatlan, on the day of the conception of the Virgin, the Mother of God. In the same I set up a certaine small Image consecrated to the conception of the bleffed Virgin: We went on Procession, wherein the Boyes sang the Te Dewn laudamus in the vulgar language: I added a Prayer, and then red Maffe, because the fingers are yet ignor to rant of Song, and can ling nothing elie but Amen, with a rude and votuned voyce. Many of the Pagans were present, which were inuited to this holy day from other places, and were almost amazed beholding these first beginnings, wishing that the like solemnitie might be kept in their Villages. As farre as hitherto we are able to gather, the Indians the inhabitants of these and the neighbour Pagan Castles, where there is greater ftore of people, and lesse diversitie of languages, are quicke and prompt, tractable, and of easier conversion, then any that I have hitherto feene or knowne. I could with that I might fometime line privately with my felfe, but fuch is the concourse of commers, that they love me not thus quiet, and though I be filent, yet they minister divers speeches, inquiring of our things, and rehearing their owne, and come to vs in the night to prayer. They are ingenious and docile, although they have no teacher, by whole 60 instruction this force of nature should be exercised. They live in Cattles and Countrey villages, in houses ionned neere the one to the other, and builded of chalke and timber, which they adore with Mats and couerings of reedes.

In the marriages which they make, when they take many wives, it feemeth not inconveni-

ent or indecent vnto them, to take their filter, mother, or daughter, because they thinke that this maketh much for domesticall peace, and that thereby all emulation may be avoided. And though they make no account of affinitie, yet they have exceeding great regard of confanguinitie. They marriages. loue their children most tenderly for a certaine time, and teach them nothing else but such things as they know themselves, and never beate them nor chastife them for any thing, and so The badeduthey live like beafts. They marrie them at their time; and this is the forme of their marriage: cation of their they like like healts. They marrie them at their time; and this is the forme of their marriage. children.

The Parents of each partie meete together, and after conferences had between them, they dance forme of Marriage. according to their Countrie custome, and giving hands returne home; if the Bridegroome or riages. Bride be under age, they stay certaine moneths and sometime a yeare, neuer seeing one the other: afterward at time convenient the Father of the spouse giveth an house to his daughter and son in

law, with furniture thereto belonging. They also make the Bridegroome a Knight, if he be of a worthy familie, with divers rites, Their forms whereof these be the chiefest ceremonies: They deliuer him a Bowe, and instruct him how to of making wie his new weapons; and to shew a signe of his industrie and abilitie, he is turned out to some Knights. vone Lyon or wilde heaft, which when he hath killed, he is advanged to some honour and dignitie, whereby he excelleth others which are not Knights. Among the things belonging to policie, this is one which they doe obserue; that they adopt other mens children for their owne; Adoption, but this adoption into another familie hath very feuere and dangerous ceremonies, for they

thrust a sticke into their mouthes into the bottome of their throates, wherewith they are almost 20 choaked; if it fall out well, they vomit vp all the meate in their stomacke, and so they passe ouer into the right of another man. Whatfoeuer time remaineth from labour and trauaile they Their quierouer into the right of another main. Whatevoor the figures ignes. They play with exceeding play, which is like to Dice, but confifteth of diversignes. They play with exceeding play. great moderation and patience of minde, being most cunning in this kinde of sport, no oath is heard among them, nor any contentions or brabling word, though they loofe their apparell and all that they have, and goe home naked, as sometime it falleth out.

When they be ficke, if the difeafe be fore and dangerous, they digge a place for their buriall, Their burials. and so netimes it standeth fiue or fixe dayes open, which custome was very profitable to a certaine woman; for when I came into a certaine Village, and faw the ground digged very deeply, 20 knowing what the matter was, I came vnto her lying on her Couch and ficke, and hauing instructed her in the Catechisme which I had written in the vulgar Tongue, in the principles of Christian Religion, I baptised her, but the recourred. Now the cause why they open the places of their burials is this, That prefently they may couer the bodie or aftes of him that is dead (for fomtimes they burne the bodies with all the house and household staffe.) They fprinkle the Sepulchre with a certaine dust, whereof they make a drinke, and bring meate with them, and after they have wept over the Grave, they make themselves drunke, the Kinsfolke of the dead making a Fealt for them that doe a fift them. And these be their Funerals.

The Vicar of the Church of Culiacan, which is fortie two leagues from Cinoloa, where the foresaid Fathers liue, in his Lecters fent to a certaine friend writeth after this manner : In Cina-60 the Fathers labour painfully in the Lord in conuerting the Indians vito the Fath fo fruitfully and happily, that we all hold it for a Miracle. Neither can it be believed, both with what celeritie they have learned and speak the tongue of that Countrie, and with what facilitie and contentment. The Inhabitants come to bee baptized, and defire to bee instructed in the Articles of our faith. Doubtleffe it is the worke of God; wherefore the Dinine Maieffie doth fauour and promote the same.

A Letter written from Valladolid by LVDOVICVS TRIBALDYS To-LETVS to Master RICHARD HAKLVYT, translated out of Latine, touching IVAN de ONATE his Discoueries in new Mexico, fine hundred leagues to the North from the old Mexico.

WHen you shall see the English returned home out of our Spaine, and can finde no Letters sent unto you from us, perhaps, and that worthily you will accuse us of breach of our friendship, and also as little mindfull of our promise. Yet we as free from this fault salute you most willingly. For it is not long fince we arrived here, that is to fay in this Court, a little after the departure of your Countrimen into England. Yet we made our tournie by Sea and by Land indifferent pleasantly and according to our defire. After we had rested our selves a small while, we defired nothing more then to visit An-60 drew Gartia Celpedes, a man for many reflects linked unto us in most fraight bands of friendlip. He greatly resourced of your good will toward him : And Bewed me a certaine briefe yet very perspicuous Their buils, Relation of things atchiened by Don Ivan de Onate, among the Indians of New Mexico.

For therein is written, that he departed from old Mexico in the yeere 1 coo. with an Armie and carriages of fine thousand men, in which number boyes, women, youngmen and Souldiers 5000, lenti 599

Don Ivan de Onate bis frit

con learnes

are included. He carried also great those of victuals with him, flockes of Sheepe and Goates. Herds of Oxen and all things necessarie for life, also Horses and Armour, and other things which in these kind of Expeditions ought to be prouided. Therefore having travelled through divers Countries fine hundred leagues, hee found diners Nations by the way, noble for their builded Townes and reasonable civill manners. All which he received into the friendship of the King of Spaine, and they openly testified the same by publike instruments, and giving of their faith. And when with his company he came vato a Towne very ftrong by fituation of the place, built voon a most high and mightie Rocke, and was freely received by the Inhabitants, giving their right hands to each other, they courteoully supplied them with all things necessarie for their reliefe. and promifed within a while after that they would furnish them with more, fufficient to make Id a very long journie. When Onate had waited for this thing, at the day appointed hee fent his Nephew by his fifter with a few Souldiers, who entring the Towne, came into the Market place. where almost all the multitude of the Townesmen were assembled together. Now while hee with his company was busie in buying of things, suddenly the Traitours from all parts rushed yoon him and his fellowes ynawares, and by most wicked treason cut off the Captaines head and fixe others; the rest being wounded hardly escaped by flight from fo great a multitude thatasfaulted them, yet some of the enemies were flaine and thrust through. When speedily the same hereof came to Onate, taking with him a choice number of Souldiers, in a great turie he came vnto the Towne, befiged it, and after a long fight by maine force he tooke the same, slue most part. tooke the reft, burnt the Towne and razed it to the ground, that no tokens might remaine of fo 16 great a wickednesse committed against him. The Townes name was Acoma: and none of our two third parts men was flaine in the fiege thereof.

Acoma is in 22. degrees, and

Treacherous

Another greater Citie. Cibela is in 33. deerces. The Towne of Saint John. Sundry Mynes of gold and filuer newly found.

A fecond Difconerie 1602. The most famous River of Rie mas aue ocho lezuas de The Lake of Conitas, Auia unalag-

пиво Іаго пиу

euade. Anten.

de Espeio.

A faire and

goodly Citic.

Cape Califor nia, which ic feemes at this

After this he eafily proceeded forward on his journie as he did before, till he came to a mightie A mighty city. great Citie: he inforced this City with the villages adioyning to fweare obedience to the King of Spaine not altogether vn willing, yet feared by the example and ruine of the towne that was de-Grove 1. From hence he came to a greater Citie, which likewife after hee had obtained it by great friendship he sent certain men from thence to search out the oxen of Cibola, long since known by the report of one, (to wit of Valquez de Coronado) whether they were fuch indeed or no. Who when they had found a great multitude of thefe oxen, and would compatie them about, and force them into certaine inclosures or toiles, their enterprize prevailed but a little : they are so wild and fo fwift. Yet after they had killed many of them, bringing ftore of them with them, as though they had bin Deere, returning to their company and General, to the great admiration of all men, they declared the wildnesse and innumerable number of these Oxen.

A freeward employing of themselves to keepe those things which they had gotten, they builded a Towne, which they called Saint Lobns Towne, and entring into very great friendship with the people which they had lately discouered, after they had found certaine very rich Munesof mous request or the North diff gold and filter, being laden with store of other riches, they determined to line pleasantly and couered. Auto- quietly, and to end their trauels, with fingular profit of the Inhabitants in the Christian Religinie de E fio uno on and abitaring of their Idols, which in former time they worshipped most religiously.

At length within these two yeeres, leauing his fellowes there, Onate undertooke a new Dil- 40 uerie toward that most famous River of the North, which at length he discovered, being everywhere courteously entertained by the Inhabitants. At last he came to the Lake whereof long fince, have gone many reports. This is the Lake of Conibas, on the brinke whereof hee beheld a farre off a Citie feuen leagues long, and aboue two leagues broad. The houses of this Citie were separated the one from the other, and trimly and artificially builded, adorned with many trees and most goodly Gardens; and often divided with streames running betweene them. Yet none of the Inhabitants did appeare. Therefore being not furnished with a sufficient Armie, he kept his Souldiers about him in a throng place, yet he fent certaine Horsemen into the Towne to view it: who after they had ridden by a certaine space through certaine exceeding faire threets of the Citic, and could fee none of the Citizens, at length came to an exceeding great Market place, 50 which was filled with an exceeding great company of men, fortified with Rampiers and other fortifications in minner of a Fortrelle. Therefore perceiuing themselves to be vnequall to is infinite a number, they retired backe to their fellowes without attempting any thing, and so returned home to their owne houses vinder the conduct of Onate, defferring the assaulting of so great a Westerne coast Towne vntill a more connenient time : and now they keepe those places diligently, which they of America dif- haue alreadie found, and doing violence to none of the Inhabitants, they line in all happinelle courted necre and profperitie.

Moreover, other newes is brought from New Spaine, to wit, that by the commandement of the Vice-roy, the Coaits of the South Sea toward Cape Mendocino are diff ouered , and that extimewas more ceeding faire and large Hauens are found neere the Californias, which hithertono man knew, and 60 periedig dif that Cattles are there to be builded and fortified, fit to withfrand the force of the enemie : which coursed to be Haw painted with the precife longitudes and latitudes, annexed voto them.

There is no newes come of the Voyage to the Hand lately found out toward Nova Guines. It Brigs his Map, any newes come, I will carefully advertife you thereof,

It remaineth, that I speake somewhat of the instruction which I promised you and now send vnto you: to wit, that the lame was fent to the West Indies, and that according to the precepts rherein contained, all things are observed very exactly, and written to the Councell of the Indes: and that Cespeder our friend hauing diligently read ouer these Writings , hath written an excellent Volume; but he hath not obtained leaue to publish the same : for they will not have all thefe things particularly to come to light.

And there be the things which I now thought good to write vinto you, my Haklayt, meaning to have written more, if there had beene any fresher things to have written of. Neither have & yet fought out all thole that might informe me of these new Discourries : for I could not yet doe to it by reason of the shortnesse of the time. I hope hereafter I ihall haue leisure : and I know you will commend mee for my friendship towards you. Farewell from Valladolid the Nones of Tuly 160 c.

TO THE READER.

Fter fo many other Spanish Descourses and Descourses, I have added for a Spanish farewell this A of Butnolomew de las Calas a zealous Dominican Frier, after made Biloop of Chiapa, tonching the exceller committed by some Spaniards in the Continent and Ilands of America, from their first 20 Disconerse till the yeare 1542, in which this was written; the rather beere annexed, as our conclusion of Spanish Relations. The occasion (it seemeth) was his godly zeale of connersing soules to lefts Christ from the power of Elimike darkneffe, which was hindered by a worfe darkneffe in those which profesfed them files children of Light, and had the name and Sacraments of Christians. For it beeing then the custome, as von have seen in Soco, and others before, to get so much of the American Regions in Parti-tion, Commandian or a Comm ston from the King (then Charles the stift Emperour) to discover and pacifie, at their ftile bath it, that is, at the Popes Bull preferibeth, to bring into Spanish fibriection, and to convert to the Christian Faith, fo much as their Commission limited, paging the fifth part of whatformer they got to the Crowne; they abusing the Empereurs lensite, and concealing their out-rages, preceeded in connerting, as that word is derined from convertere, not from convertere, and in fach courfe 30 as this Author expresseth, if be and other Dimines which made complaint thereof to the Emperour bee to be credited. Neither is it incredible for the maine part of the Historie (we fee their owne lournals infinnate as much in milder and closer termes floor foener his zeale flings forth fiery tearmes, and paints out their Acts in the blackeft links, and most Hiperbolicall Phrases. The Isue was the alteration of gonerament in the Indies, by the gentlenesse of the Kings of Spaine, which freed them from slauerie, and tocke better order both for their boldy and finitual estate, as before we blue read in Herers. And if any thinke that I publish this in differace of that Nations I answere, Enery Nation (We fee it at bome) hath many enillmen, many Douill men. Agame, I a be whether the Authour (himfelfe a Spaniard and Dinine) intended not the honour and good of his Countrie thereby : which utfowas effected, enil manners producing good Lawes. And indeed it is at much bonour to this Bishop and the Bishop of Mexico, with 40 other Spaniards that flowed their zeale of reformation berein, at alfo to the Kings of Spaine which have effected u; as the doing it is fo ame to other Spaniards, and the generalitie here touched. The like abuses of Sauages in Bralill, you have frene by Portugals, complained of by lefuites, fup 1.7.c. 2. For my part I bounny versue in a Spaniard, in a Frier, in a lesuite : and have in all this voluminous storie not beene more carefull to show the enill acts of Spaniards, Portugals, Dutch in quarrels twist them and vs, then to make knowne what seener good in any of them, when occasion was offered. And so farre am I from delighting to thrust my finger in fores (which yet I doe on necessitie , enen with the English also) that I have left out many many innectines and bitter Epithetes of this Author, abridging him after my wont, and lopping of fuch superfluities, which rather were the fruit of his zeale, then the flowre of his History. I could atto have added the names of those which he here calleth Tyrants , the Captaines in those Expedi-50 times : but he spared them, as then living, and in Herera before you have them, which yet is angry with Ramulio for that wherein this florie doth excuse him, the concealment of their names being best commendation of fuch men. In these prunings and comission of some things (in their owne places, before related) abone a third part is left out, and yet more then enough left to teftific that Mam beart given over 1000netonsnelle or other vice, is a bottomlesse Hell, wicked and deceitfull about all ; who can fearch it? The colours which the Spaniards pretended for such executions, were the Man-entings, Sodomies, Idolatries and other vices of Americans, perhaps made worfe in the telling, and certainly with worfe vices in this fort punished by unsuffest Instice in respect of the Spaniards, whose uninfice is neverthelesse most inst in regard of God, which knoweth how to punish sinne by sinners. This Bookers extant in Spanish, Latine, Dutch, and in English also printed 1 ,82, when as peace was yet betwier England and 60 Spaine, which English Copie I bane followed.

The Prologue of the Bishop Frier BARTHOLOMBW delas CASAS or CASAVS, to the most high and mightie Prince, Our Lord Don PHILIP Prince of Spaine.

Oft high and mightie Lord, as God by his Providence hath for the guiding and commodicie of mankind in this World, in Realmes and Prounces, appointed Kines to be as Fathers, and as Homer nameth them Shepherds, and fo confequently the most noble and principall members of Common-weales: fo can we not justly doubt by reason of

the good wils that Kings and Princes have to minister Justice, but that if there be any things a- ta mille, either any violences or injuries committed, he only cause that they are not redressed, is, for that Princes have no notice of the same. For certainly if they kne w of them, they would imploy all diligence and indeuour in the remedie thereof. Whereof it feemeth that mention is mide in the holy Scripture, in the Pronerbs of Solamon, where it is faid, Rex qui fedet in folio In. deci diffipat omne malum intustu fue. For it is sufficien ly to be presupposed even of the kindly and naturall vertue of a King, that the only notice that hee taketh of any mischiefe tormenting his Kingdome, is sufficient to procure him, if it bee possible, to roote out the lame as beeing a thing

that he cannot tollerate even one only moment of time.

Confidering therefore with my felfe most mightie Lord the great mischiefes, damages and loffes (the like whereof it is not to be thought, were ever committed by Mankind) of foll regeard an great Kingdomes, or to speake more trucky, of this so new World of the Indies, which Gol and holy Church have committed and commended vnto the King of Castile, to the end they might gouerne, connert, and procure their prosperitie as well temporally as spiritually. I therefore (I fay) being a man of experience, and fiftie y eres of age or more, confidering thefe cuils, as having feene them committed, at my being in those Countries : Also that your Highnesse having information of some notable particularities, might bee mooued most earnestly to delire his Maieste, not to grant or permit to those Tyrants fuen conqueits as they have found out, and which they doe to name, (whereunto if they might bee fuff red they would returne) feeing that of themfelues, and being made against this Indian, peaceable, lowly and milde Nation which offendeth none, they be wicked, tyrannous, and by all Lawes either Naturall, Humane or Diune, veterly ! condemned, det efted and accuried : I thought it belt, least my felfe might become also guiltie, by concealing the loffe of an infinite number both of touls & bodies which are fo committed, to cause a few of their dealings which of late I had felected from among infinite others, and that might truly be reported to be printed, to the end your Highnesse might with more ease peruse and reset them ouer, Alfo whereas your Highnesse Master the Archbishop of Toleto, when hee was Bishop of Carebagena required them at my hands, and then prefented them to your Highnesse: penduenture by reason of such great Voyages as your Highnesse tooke voor you, both by Sea and by Land for matters of Estate wherein you have beene builed, it may bee you have not perufed, the ther have forgotten them, and in the meane time the rash and disordinate defire of those which thinke it nothing to doe wrong, to fined fuch abundance of mans bloud, to make defolate there is 40 large Countries of their natural Inhabitants and Owners, by flaying infinite persons, either to purloine (uch incredible treatures, do daily augment, these Tyrants proceeding vnder al counterfeit titles and colours in their inftant and importunate fute, namely, to have the faid Conquells permuted and granted vnto them : Which in truth cannot bee granted without transgreding the Law both of Nature and of God, and so consequently not without incurring mortall sinne, worthy most terrible and everlasting torments: I thought it expedient to doe your Highnesse seruice in this briefe Summarie of a molt large Historie, that might and ought to bee written of fuch flaughters and spoiles as they have made and perpetrated. Which I beseech your Highnesse to receive and reade over, with that Royall elemencie and courtefie, wherewith you vie to accept and perufe the workes of fuch your feruants, as no other defire, but faithfully to employ them- 50 felues to the common commoditie, and to procure the prosperitie of the Royall Estate.

This Summarie being perused, and the vildnesse of the iniquitie committed against these poore innocent people, in that they are fline and hewed in pieces without defert, only through the auarice ambition of those that pretend to the doing of such execrable deeds, being considered. It may please your Highnesse to desire, and effectually to perswade his Maiestie to denie any who foeuer shall demand or require so hurtfull and dete fable enterprises : yea, even to burie any fuch fuite or petition in the infernall pit of perpetuall filence, thereby flewing fuch terrour and diflike as hereafter no man may bee fobold, as once to name or speake thereof. And this (most mightie Lord) is very expedient and necessarie, to the end God may prosper, preserue and make the estate of the Royall Crowne of Castile for ever to flourish both spiritually and temporally. 60

CHAP. IIII.

A briefe Narration of the destruction of the Indies by the Spaniards : written by a Frier BART. de las CASAS a Spaniard, and Bishop of Chiapa in America.

He Indies were discoursed the yeere 1492, and inhabited by the Spanish the yeere next after enfuing : fo as it is about fortie nine yeeres fithence that the Spaniards fome of them went into those parts. And the first Land that they entred to inhanext after enfuing: 16 as it is about forthe mine years intime that they entired to inha-form of them went into those parts. And the first Land that they entired to inha-bite, was the great and most fertile lie of Hispaniola, which containeth fixe hun-bite, was the great and most fertile lie of Hispaniola, which containeth door, and dred leagues in compasse. There are other great and infinite lies round about, and dred leagues in compasse. in the Confines on all fides: which we have feene the most peopled, and the fullest of their owne native people; as any other Countrie in the World may be. The firme Land lying off from this lland two hundred and fiftie leagues, and somewhat ouer at the most containeth in length on the Sca Coast more then ten thousand leagues: which are alreadie discouered, and daily be discouered more and more, all full of people, as an Emmote hill of Emmots. Infomuch, as by that which fince, vnto the yeere the fortieth and one hath been, discourred : It feemeth that God

hath beltowed in that fame Countrie, the gulfe or the greatest portion of Mankind. God created all these innumerable multitudes in every fort, very simple, without subtletie, or craft, without malice, very obedient, and very faithfull to their naturall Liege Lords, and to the Spaniards whom they serve, very humble, very patient, very desirous of peace making, and pracefull, without brawles and strugglings, without quarrels, without strife, without rancour

or hatred, by no meanes defirous of reuengement.

They are also people very gentle, and very tender, and of an easie complexion, and which can fuftaine no trauell, and doe die very soone of any disease whatsoeuer, in such fort as the very children of Princes and Noblemen brought vp amongst vs, in all commodities, ease, and delicatenelle, are not more foft then those of that Countrie : yea, although they bee the children of Labourers. They are also very poore folke, which possesse little, neither yet doe so much as desire

to have much worldly goods, and therefore neither are they proud, ambitious, nor couetous. Their diet is fuch (as it leemeth) that of the holy Fathers in the Defert hath not bin more scarce. Intercate a non-centering and the many control and many and the many control and when they be clothed, at the most, in is but a of a Mantle of Bombacie of an ell and a halfe, or two ells of linnen fquare. Their lodging is vpon a Mat, and those which have the best : sleepe as it were vpon a Net fastened at the foure corners, which they call in the Language of the Ile of Hift aniela, Hamafas. They have their vnderitanding very pure and quicke, being teachable and capeable of all good Learning , very ant to receiue our holy Catholike Faith, and to be instructed in good and vertuous manners, having leffe incumberances and diffurbances to the attaining thereunto, then all the folfe of the world besides, and are so enstamed, ardent, and importune to know and understand the matters of the faith after they have but begunne once to tafte them, as likewife the exercise of the Sacraments of the Church, and the diuine Seruice : that in truth, the religious men haue need of a fingular patience to support them. And to make an end , I have heard many Spaniards many times hold this as affured, and that which they could not denie, concerning the good nature which they faw in them. Vndoubtedly there folkes should bee the happiest in the World, if onely they

knew God. Vpon these Lambes so meeke, so qualified and endued of their Maker and Creator, as hath bin faid, entred the Spanifb incontinent as they knew them, as, Wolues, as Lions, and as Tigres moft cruell of long time familhed : and have not done in those quarters these fortie yeeres past, nei-

So ther yet doe at this prefent, ought elle faue teare them in pieces, kill them, martyr them, afflict them, tormene them, and destroy them by strange forts of cruelties neuer neither seene, nor read, nor heard of the like (of the which fome fhall be fet downe hereafter) fo far forth that of about three Millions of foules that were in the Ile of Hilpansola, and that we have feene, there are not now two hundred natives of the Countrey. The lle of Cuba, the which is in length as farre as Three Millions now two hundred natives of the Country. I have all wafte. Saint Johns Ile, and that of Ia- Historica Ouimayor, both of them very great, very fertill, and very faire are defolate. Likewife the Iles of ede hath but Lucagos, neere to the He of Hiffaniela, and of the North fide vnto that of Cuba, in number being 1600000. aboue threefcorellands, together with those which they call the Iles of Geante, one with another, great and little, whereof the very worst is fertiler then the Kings Garden at Simil, and the

60 Countrie the healthsomest in the World : there were in these same Iles more then fine hundred thouland foules, and at this day there is not one only creature. For they have beene all of them 500000 loft in flaine, after that they had drawne them out from thence to labour in their Minerals in the lie of the Lunger. Hiffaniola, where there were no more left of the Natives of that Iland. A ship riding for the space of three yeeres betwixt all these llands, to the end, after the inning of this kind of Vin-

CHAP. 4. Bart. delas Calas bis Booke of Cruelties done in the Indies

tage, to gleane and cull the remainder of these folke (for there was a good Christian mound with pittle and compagion, to conuert and win voto Christ such as might be found) there were not found but eleuen persons which I faw: other Iles more then thirty, neere to the Ile of Saint John have likewise bin dispeopled and marred. All these Iles containe aboue two thousand leagues of land, and are all dispeopled and laid waste.

As touching the maine firme land, we are certaine that our Spaniards, by their cruelties and cutfed doings have dispeopled and made desolate more then ten Realmes greater then all Spaine comprising also there with Aragon & Portugall, and twife as much or more land then there is from Senil to lerufalem, which are about a thousand leagues : which Realmes as yet vntochis prefere day remaine in a wildernesse and veter desolation, having bin before time as well peopled as the peffible. We are able to yeelde a good and certaine accompt, that there is within the loace of the Lid fortie yeares, by those said yrannies and diuellish doings of the Spaniards, doen Rowards *12.0115 miles infly and tyrannously more then twelve Milions of foules, men, women, and children. And I doe verily believe, and thinke not to militake therein, that there are dead more then fifteene Millions of foules.

The cause why the Spanish have destroyed such an infinite of soules, hath beene onely, that they have held it for their last scope and marke to get Gold, and to enrich themselves in a short time, and to mount at one leape to very high estates, in no wife agreeable to their persons : or to fav in a word, the cause hereof hath beene their avarice and ambition. And by this meanes have died fo many Millions without faith and without Sacraments.

Of the Ile of Hispaniola.

In the He Hisbaniola, which was the first (as we have faid) where the Spaniards arrived began the great flaughters and ipoyles of people: the Spaniards having begun to take their wives and children of the Indies, for to serue their turne and to vie them ill, and having begun to eate their victuals, gotten by their sweate and travell; not contenting themselves with that which the Indians gave them of their owne good will, every one after their abilitie, the which is algates very small, forasmuch as they are accustomed to have no more store then they have ordinarily neede of, and that fuch as they get with little trauell : And that which might fuffice for three housholds, reckoning ten persons for each houshold for a moneths space, one Spaniard would eat 10

Now after fundry other forces, violences, and torments, which they wrought against them: the Indians began to perceive that those were not men discended from heaven. Some of them therefore hid their victuals, others hid their wives and children, some others fled into the Montaines, to separate themselves a farre off from a Nation of 10 hard natured and ghastly conuctfation. The Spaniards buffered them with their fifts and baftonades : preffing allo to lay hands upon the Lords of the Townes. And these cases ended in so great an hazard and desperatentic that a Spanish Captaine durst aduenture to rauish forcibly the wife of the greatest King and Lord of this Ile. Since which time the Indians began to fearch meanes to cast the Spaniards out of & their lands, and fet themselves in armes; but what kinde of armes? very feeble and weake to withfland or relitt, and of leffe defence. The Spaniards with their Horles, their Speares and Lances, began to commit murders, and firange cruelties : they entred into Townes, Borowes, and Villages, sparing neither children nor old men, neither women with childe, neither them that lay In, but that they ripped their bellies, and cut them in peeces, as if they had beene opening of Lambes shut vp in their fold. They laid wagers with such as with one thrust of a fword would paunch or bowell a man in the middeft, or with one blow of a fword would most readily, and most deliverly cut off his head, or that would best pierce his entrals at one siroike. They tooke the little foules by the heeles, ramping them from the mothers dugges, and crushed their heads against the clifts. Others they cast into the Rivers laughing and mocking, and when so they tumbled into the water, they faid, now shift for thy selfe such a ones corpes. They put of thers, together with their mothers, and all that they met, to the edge of the fword. They made certaine Gibbets long and low, in fuch fort, that the feete of the hanged on, touched in a manner the ground, every one enough for thirteene, in honour and worship of our Sautour and his twelve Apoilles (as they yied to speake) and setting to fire, burned them all quicke that were fastened. Vnto all others, whom they vied to take and referue alme, cutting off their two hands as neere as might be, and so letting them hang, they said; Get you with these Letters, to carry tydings to those which are fled by the Mountaines. They murdered commonly the Lords and Nubility on this fashion: They made certaine grates of pearches laid on pickforkes, and made a little fire underneath, to the intent, that by little and little yelling and despairing in thefe tor- 62

Torures,

Ambition.

Cruelty.

ments, they might give vp the Ghoft. One time I law foure or fine of the principall Lords roasted and broyled upon these gredie rons. Also I thinke that there were two or three of these greditons, garnahed with the like furniture, and for that they cryed out pittioully, which thing troubled the Captaine that he could

not then sleepe: he commanded to strangle them. The Sergeant, which was worse then the Hang man that burned them (I know his marne and friends in Simil) would not have them firangled, but himfelfe putting Ballets in their mouthes, to the end that they should not cry. But to Dogges. the fire, vntill they were lotely roafted after his defire. I have feene all the aforelaid things and others minite. And foraf nuch, as all the people which sould flee, hid themselues in the Mountaines, and mounted on the tops of them, fled from the men fo withoutall manhood, emptie of all pitic, behaving them as fauage beafts, the flaughterers and deadly enemies of mankinds of they tang ht their Hounds, fierce Dogs, to teare them in peeces at the first view, and in the space that one may fay a Credo, affailed and deungred an Indian se if it had beene a Swine. Thete Dogges to wrought great deftructions and flughters: And fortimuch as fometimes, although feldome, when the Indians put to death fome Spaniards upon good right and Law of dite Heftice they made a Lawe betweene them, that for one Spaniards they had to flay an hundred Indians.

There were in this He Hipaniola, fine great principal Realmes, and fine very mighty Kings, The Realmes vnto whom almost all other Lords obayed, which were without number. There were affe cer- which were in taine Lords of other feuerall Provinces, which did not acknowledge for fourraigne any of these Kings : One Realme was named Magua, which is as much to lay, as the Kingdome of the plaine. This Plaine is one of the most famous and most admirable things of all that is in the world. For it containeth fourescore leagues of ground, from the South Sea vnto the North sea, having in breadth fine leagues, and eight voto ten.

It hath on one fide and other exceeding high Mountaines. There entrethinto it about thirty thousand Rivers and Lakes, of the which twelve areas great as Ebro, and Duero, and Guadalque- Great Rivers mir. And all the Ruers which iffue out of a Mountaine which is towards the West, in number a- in Spaine. bout fire and twenty thousand, are very rich of Gold. In the which Mountaine or Mountaines, richin Gold. is contained the Prouince of Cibas, from whence the Mines of Cibas take their names, and from Cibas. whence commeth the same exquisite Gold and fine of foure and twenty Karrets, which is so renowned in these parts. The King & Lord of this Realme was called Gnavionex, which had vinder him his Vallals & Lieges fo great and mighty, that every one of them was able to fet forth threefcore thousand men of armes for the service of the King Guarianes. Of the which Lords I have knowl forme certain. This Guarionex was very obedient and vertuous, naturally defirous of peace. 30 and well affectioned to the denotion of the Kings of Caffele, and his people gaue by his commandement, every housekeeper a certaine kinde of Drumfull of Gold : but afterwards being not able to fill the Dum, cut it off by the middeft, and gave the halfe thereof full. For the Indians of that He had little or none indultrie or practife to gather or draw Gold out of the Mines. The Cacione presented vnto the King of Castile his service, in causing to be manured all the lands from the Ifabella, where the Spanish first lited, vnto the Towne of Saint Domingo, which are fiftie leavues large, on condition that he should exact of them no Gold : for hee faid (and hee faid the truth) that his Subjects had not the skill to draw it out. As for the manuring which he faid he would procure to be done : I know that he could have done it very eafily, and with great readineffe, and that it would have beene worth vnto the King every yeere more then three Millions of Caltil-Ans, betides that it would have caused, that at this houre there had bin above fiftie Cities greater

The paiment that they made to this good King and Lord, fo gracious and fo redoubted, was to dishonour him in the person of his wife, an euill (bristian, a Captaine raushing her. This King could have actended the time and opportunitie to avenge himfelfe in leaying fome armie; but he adusted to withdraw himfelfe rather, and onely to hide him out of the way, thus being banished from his Realme and state, into a Prouince of the Cignaios, where there was a great Lord his vaffall. After that the Spaniards were ware of his absence, and he could no longer hide himselfe: they make warre against the Lord which had given him entertainment, and make great flaughters through the Countrey as they goe, till in the end they found and tooke him, thrusting him loden with chaines and irons into a Ship, to carry him to Caffile : which Ship was loft upon the The greatest 50 Sea, and there were with him drowned many Spaniards, and a great quantity of Gold, among & peece of Gold the which also was the great wedge of Gold, like vnto a great loafe, weying three thousand which euer fix hundreth Castillans. Thus it pleased God to wreake vengeance of matters so lewel and turallies.

fo enormous. The other Realme was called of Marien , where is at this day the Port at one of the bounds Maries of the plaine, towards the North : and it is farre greater then the Realme of Portugall, and much fertiler, worthy to be inhabited, having great Mountaines, and Mines of Gold, and Copper very rich. The King was called Gnacanagari, which had under him many great Lords, of the

which I have known eard feene fundry. In this Kings Countrey arrived first the old Admirall, 6) when he discourred the Indies, whom at that time that he discourred the Ile, the faid Guacanagari received fo graciously, bountifully, and curteously with all the Spaniards who were with him, in giving him all entertainement and fuccour, for at the very instant was the Ship lost (which the Admirall was carried in) that hee could not have bin better made off in his owner Countrie of his owne Father. This did I understand of the Admirals owne mouth; This King

Pppppp

X eratua.

dyed, in flying the flaughters and cruelties of the Spaniards through the Mountaines, being de-Groved and deprined of his efface. And all the other Lords his fubic ets dyed in the tyrannie and fernitude that shall be declared hereafter.

The third Realme and dominion was Magnand, a Countrie also admirable, very healthfull

and very fertile, where the best Sugar of the He at this day is made.

The King of this Countrie was named Caenabo, who furpasted all the others in strength and flate, in granitie, and in the ceremonies of his feruice. The Spaniards tooke this King with great fubrilitie and malice, even as he was in his owne house, doubting of nothing. They conveied him afterwards into a Ship to carry him to Castile; but as there attended them fix other Ships in the port, all ready to hose up faile: behold how God by his just just gement, would declare, that it. Io with other things, was an exceeding great iniquitie and vniust, by fending the same night a tempest, which sinke and drenched that Nauie with the Spaniards that were within. There died al-To with them the faid Caonabo, charged with bolts and itons.

The Prince had three or foure brothers valiant men, and couragious like himfelfe, who confu dering the imprisonment of their Lord & brother so against all equitie, together with the waste and flaughters which the Spaniards made in other Realmes, and specially after that they had heard that the King their brother was dead, they put themselves in armes to encounter the Spaniards, and to auringe the wrong; who on the otherfide meeting with them on horfebacke; fo they rage in discomfitures and massacres, that the one moytie of this Realme hath beene thereby

defolate and displopled.

The fourth Realme is the fame which is named of Xaragua. This Realme was as it werethe centre or middle point, or to speake of, as the Court of this lile, the diamond over all the other Realmes in language and polified speech, in policie and good manners, the best composed and ordered. For as much as there were many noble Lords and Gentlemen, the people also being the best made and most beautifull. The King had to name Bebeche, which had a fifter called Anacasna. These two, the brother and fifter, had done great services to the Kangs of Castile, and great good turnes to the Spaniards, delivering them from fundry dangers of death.

After the deccase of Bebechio, Anacaona remained fole Soueraigne of the Realme. At a time came into this Realme the Gouernour of this He with threefcore Horfes, and more then three hundreth footemen (the horsemen alone had beene enough to spoyle and ouerrunne not this to Ile alone, but all the firme land withall :) And to him came, being called, more then three hundred Lords under affurance, of whom the chiefest, he fraudulently caused to be conueyed into a house of thatch, and commanded to set to fire. Now on this wife were these Lords burned all aliue: all the reit of the Lords, with other folke infinite, were imitten to death with their Speares and Swords. But the Soueraigne Lady Anacaona, to doe her honour. they hanged. It happened that certaine Spaniards, either of pittie or of couetou neffe, haung taken and detained certaine yong striplings to make them their Pages; because they would not haue them flaine, and fetting them behinde them on their horse backes; another Spaniard came behinde, which stabbed them through with a speare. If so be any childe or boy tombled downe to the ground, another Spaniard came and cut off his legges. Some certaine of thele Indians which 40 could escape this crueltie so vnnaturall, passed ouer vnto a little Ile neere vnto the other, within an eight leagues. The Gouernour condemned all those which had pailed the water, to become flaues ; because they had fled from their butcherie.

The fifth Realme was called Higney, ouer the which raigned an ancient Queene named Hignanama, whom the Spaniards hanged vp. The people were infinite whom I faw burnt shue, and rent in peeces, and tormented diversly and trangely, and whom I faw made slaves, even so many as they tooke alive. And now for as much as there are so many particularities in these Mallacres and destruction of those peoples, that they cannot conveniently be comprised in writing (yea I doe verily beleeue, that of a number of things to be ipoken of, there cannot be disciphered of a thousand parts one :) I will onely in that which concerneth the warres about 90 mentioned, conclude, auerre, and iustifie in conscience, and as before God, that of all others, which I ouerpaffe to speake of, or shall be able to speake of, the Indians neuer gave no more occasion or cause, then might a convent of good religious persons well ordered, why they should be robbed and flaine, and why those that escaped the death, should be retained in a perpetuall captiuitie and bondage. I affirme yet moreouer, for ought that I can belseue or coniecture, that, during all the time that all this huge number of thele Islanders have beene murdered and made away veterly, they neuer committed against the Spaniards any one mortall offence, punishable by the law of man. And concerning offences, of the which the punishment is referred voto God, as are desire of reuengement, hatred and rancour, which these people might beareagainst enemies to capitall as were the Spaniards, that very tew perfons have beene attached with the 60 blemish, and lesse violent and forcible did I finde them, by the good experience I had of them, then children of tenne or twelue yeares of age. And I know for certaine and infallible, that the Indians had euermore most just cause of warre against the Spaniards; but the Spaniards never had any just cause of warre against the Indians, but they were all diabolicall and most varighteous

more then can be spoken of any tyrans that is on the whole earth. And I affirme the selfe same for all their other acts and getts by them done throughout all the Indies.

The warres atchieued, and all the men done to death thereby, referued commonly the yong folke, women, and children (the which they departed among them, in giving to one thirtie, to another fortie, and to another an hundreth, or two hundreth, according as every one had the fauour of the head tyrant, whom they called the Gouernour) they gaue them to the Spaniardi voon that condition and colour, that they would teach them the Catholike faith, they themfelues who tooke voon them this charge of foules, commonly all idiots, or vtterly ignorant pertons, barbarous men, extreamely couetous and vicious.

Now the carke and care that their had of them, was to fend the men vnto the Mines, to make them dreine them out Gold, which is an intollerable trauell; and the women they beltowed into the Countrie to their Farmes, to manure and till the ground, which is a fore trauell, even for the very men, the ablest and mightiest. They gave to eate neither to one nor other, nought faue graffes and fuch like things of no substance; in such fort as the milke of the breasts of the wines new delinered of their childebirth dried vp; and thus dried vp in a small season, all the little creatures their yong children. Further, by reaton of the separation and not cohabiting of the men with their wives, the generation ceased betweene them. The men died with toyle and fa- Gens fint gente mine in the Minerals: these the women died of the same in the fields. By these meanes were con- ratione service fumed and brought to their ends so huge a number of the folke of this Island. By the like might

10 be abolished and exterpate all the inhabitants of the world. As touching loding, they laid vpou them fourescore or an hundreth pounds waight, which they should carrie an hundreth or two hundreth leagues: The Spanish also causing themselves to be carried in Lycers upon mens armes, or beds made by the Indians, in fashion of Nets. For they ferried their turnes with them to transport their carriages and baggage as beaits, whereby they had upon their backes and shoulders, whalles and gals as poore galled beafts. Also as touching whippings, bailtonading, buffeting, blowes with the fift, curling, and a thousand other kindes of torments, which they practifed upon them during the time that they transiled, of a truth, they cannot be recounted in a long featon, nor written in a great deale of paper, and they should be

euen to affright men withall. It is to be noted, that the destruction of these Iles and lands, began after the decease of the most gracious Queene, dame Ifabel, which was the yeare one thousand fine hundred and foure. For before there were laid wast in this IIe, but certaine Prouinces by vniust warre, and that not wholly altogether, & these for the more part, or in a manner all were conceiled from the knowledge of the Queene (vnto who it may please God to give his holy glory) forasmuch as she had a great delire, and a zeale admirable, that those people might be saued and prosper, as we do know good examples, the which we have seene with our eyes, and felt with our hands. Further note here, that in what part of the Indies the Spanish have come, they have evermore exercised against the Indians, these innocent peoples, the cruelties aforesaid, and oppressions abominable, and inuented day by day new torments, huger and monitrouser, becomming every day more cruell, 40 wherefore God also gaue them ouer to fall headlong downe with a more extreame downfall into a reprobate ienie.

Of the two Iles Saint Iohn, and Iamayca.

THE Spanish passed over the sle of Saint lohn, and to the end of Iamaica which were like Gaz-dens for Bees) 1509, letting before them the same end which they had in the sle Hispaniola, and committing the robberies and crimes aforefaid, adioyning thereunto many great and notable cruelties, killing, burning, rofting and casting them to the Dogs: furthermore, afterwards oppresfing and vexing them in their Minerals and other trauell, vnto the rooting out of these poore in-50 nocents which were in these two Iles, by supputation fix hundred thousand soules ; yea I beleeve Million in S. that they were more then a Million, although there be not at this day in either He two hundred Ism and Is persons, and all perished without faith and without Sacraments.

of the Ile of Cuba.

IN the years 1511, they passed to the He of Cuba (where were great Provinces, and great multi-Ltudes of people) they both began and concluded with them after the failion afore spoken, yea worfe and farre more cruelly. There came to paffe in this Iland matters worth the noting: ACa-60 cique, named Hathney, which had conneied himfelte from the Ile Hift aniola to Cuba, with many of his people, to avoide the calamities & practifes to vnnaturall of the Spanish: when as certain Inof his people, to audice the talkings of place of the state of the sta and befpake them : Now you know that the Spaniards are comming on this fide, and yee know to Gold, allo by experience, how they have entreated such, and such, and the people of Hayti (meaning PPPPPP 2

thereby Hilbaniola) hither they come to doe the like here. Wot yee why they doe it? they and fwered, no, voleffe it be that they are by nature voide of humanitie. He replied: They do it noe onely for that: but because they have a God whom they honour, and doe demand very much and to the end to hauefrom vs as well as others to honour him withall, they doe their vttermost to fibdue vs. He had then by him a little Cheft full of Gold and Iewels, and faid, Behold here the God of the Spaniards, let vs doe to him, if it lo feeme you good, Areres (which are wind. leffes and dances) thus doing, we shall please him, and he will command the Spaniards that they field doe vs no harme: They answered all with a loud voyce: Well faid Sir, well faid. Thus then they danced before it, vntill they were weary, then quoth the Lord Hathney, Take wee heede how ever the world goe, if we keepe him, to the end that he be taken away from vs, in the end to they will kill vs; wherefore let vs caft him into the River: whereunto they all agreed, and fo they calt it into a great River there,

This Lord and Cacique went alwayes flying the Spanish, incontinent as they were arrived at the Jie of Cuba, as he which knew them but too well, and defended himselfe when he met them. In the end he was taken, and onely for because that hee fled from a Nati a so which and cruell, and that he defended himselfe from fuch as would kill him, and oppresse him even voto the death, with all his folke, he was burned aliue. Now as he was fastined to the stake, a religious man of Saint Francis order, a deuou: person, spake to him somewhat of God and of our Faith. which things this faid Lord had neuer heard of, yet might be fufficient for the time which the butchers gaue him, that if he would beleeve those things which were spoken to him, hee should 10 goe to heaven, where is glory and reit everlaiting, that if he did not believe, hee should goe to hell, there to be tormented perpetually. The Lord after having a little pauled to thinke of the matter, demanded of the Religious man, whether that the Spaniards went to heaven; who aniwered, yea; fuch of them that were good. The Cacique aniwered againe immediately without any further deliberation, that he would not got to heaven, but that he would goe to hell, to the end, not to come in the place where such people should be, and to the end not to see a Nationso cruell. Loe here the praises and honour which God and our faith hane received of the Spaniardi,

His choife to and why.

> which have gone to the Indies. One time the Indians came to meete vs, and to receive vs with victuals, and delicate cheere. and with all entertainment ten leagues of a great Citie, and being come at the place, they prefen. # ted vs with a great quantity of fish, and of bread, and other meate, together with all that they could doe for vs to the vttermoft. See incontinent the Divell, which put himselfe into the Speniards, to put them all to the edge of the tword in my prefence, without any cause whatsour. more then three thousand soules, which were set before vs, men, women, and children. Isaw there fo great cruelties, that neuer any man liuing either have or shall fee the like.

3000.flaine.

Another time, but a few dayes after the premisses. I sent messengers vnto all the Lords of the Province of Hanana, affuring them, that they should not neede to feare (for they had heard of my credit) and that without withdrawing themselves, they should come to receive vs, and that there should be done vnto them no displeature : for all the Countrie was afraid, by reason of the mischiefesand murderings passed, and this did I by the aduice of the Captaine himselfe. After 40 that we were come into the Prouince, one and twenty Lords and Caciques came to receive vs, whom the Captaine apprehended incontinently, breaking the lafe conduct which I had made them, and intending the day next following to burne them aline, faying that it was expedient so to doe, for that otherwise those Lords one day, would doe vs a shrewd turne. I found my felfe in a great deale of trouble to faue them from the fire; howbeit in the end they escaped. After that the Indians of this lland were thus brought into bondage and calamitie, like vnto those of the lie of Hispaniola, and that they faw that they died and perished all without reme-

frying-pan in-

There was in this He an officer of the Kings, to whom they gaue for his share three hundred Indians, of whom at the end of three moneths there died by him in the travell of the Mines, two hundred and fixty: in such for, that there remained now but thirty, which was the tenth part. Afterwards they gave him as many more, and more, and those also hee made hauccke of in like manner, and still as many as they gaue him, so many he slew, vntill he died himselfe, and that the

dy: fome of them began to flye into the Mountaines, others quite desperate hanged themselves,

and there hung together husbands with their wives, hanging with them their little children. And through the crucitie of one only Spaniard, which was a great tyrant, and one whom I know, 19

there hung themselues more then two hundred Indians: and in this fashion died an infinite

6000, Infants

Divell carried him away. In three or foure moneths (my felfe being prefent) there died more then fixe thouland children, by reason that they had plucked away from them their fathers and mothers, which they 60 fent into the Mines. I beheld also other things frightfull. Shortly after they resolved to climbe after those which were in the Mountaines, where they wrought also ghastly slaughters, and thus laid waste all this lie; which we beheld not long after, and it is great pitie to fee it so dispeopled and defolate as it is.

of Terra Firma, or the firme land.

TN the yeere 1514, there landed in the Maine a mischieuous Gouernour. Hee not onely wasted or diffeeopled the Sea Coalt, but facked also great Realmes and Countries, making hauceks by flaving and murdering of peoples, infinite to be numbred, and fending them to Hell. He ouerranne and harried molt of the places in the Land, from Darien vpward, vnto the Realme and Provinces of Nicaragna within being, which are more then fine hundred leagues of the bett, and most fertile ground in the whole World, where there were a good number of great Lords, with to a number of Townes, Boronghes, and Villages, and thore of gold in more abundance then was to be found on the earth votill that prefent.

This Governour with his men, found out new forts of cruelties and torments, to cause them to discouer and give him gold. There was a Captaine of his, which slue in one walke and course which was made by his commandement, to rob and roote out more then fortie thousand soules, putting them to the edge of the Sword, burning them, and giving them to the Dogges, and tormenting them diversly : which also a Religious man of the Order of Saint Francis, who went with him, beheld with his eies, and had to name Frier Francis of Saint Romane.

The most pernicious blindnesse, which hath alwaies possessed those who have governed the Indians, in stead of the care which they should have for the conversion and salvation came to that paffe, as to command orders to ber fet do wne vnto the Indians to receive the faith, and render themielues vnto the obedience of the King of Caffile, or otherwise to bid them battle with fire and Sword, and to flay them or make them flaues : he commanded (or peraduenture the theeues, whom he dispatched to doe the execution, did it of their heads) when they were purposed to goe a rouing and robbing of any place, where they knew that there was any gold, the Indians being in their Townes and dwelling houses, without miltrusting any thing the wicked Spaniards would goeafter the guize of Theeues, vnto within halfe a league neere fome Towne, Borough, or Village, and there by themselues alone, and by night make a reading, publication, or Proclamation of the faid Ordinances, faying thus, Oyes, Caciques and Indians of this firme Land of fuch God and Kinz aplace: Be it knowne vato you, that there is one God, one Pope, one King of Caltile, which is Lord of abused.

30 theje Lands: make your appearance, all delay fet aside, berote dee him bomage, &c. Which if you hall not accomplish: Be it knowne unto you, that we will make warre upon you, and we will kill you, and make you flaue: Hereupon at the fourth watch in the morning, the poore Innocents, fleeping yet with their wives and children : these Tyrants set upon the place, calting fire on the houses which commonly were thatched, and so burne vp all quicke men, women and children, more suddenly then that they could of a great many be perceived. They maffacred at the inftant those that seemed them good, and those whom they tooke priloners, they caused them cruelly to die voon the Racke, to make them to tell in what places there were any more Gold then they found with them : and others which remained alive, they made them flaves, marking them with a hot Iron. fo after the fire being out and quenched, they goe feeke the gold in their houses. This is then the 40 deportment in these affaires of this person, with all the bond of his vngodly Christians, which

he trained from the fourteenth yeere, vnto the one and twentie, or two and twentieth yeere, fending in these Exploits fixe or moe of his Seruants or Souldiers, by whom he received as many shares, ouer and besides his Captaines Generals part, which hee leuied of all the Gold, of all the Pearles, and of all the Iewels which shey tooke of those whom they made their slaues. The felfe-fame did the Kings Officers, euerie one fending forth as many feruants as he could.

The Bishop also, which was the chiefe in the Realme, he fent his feruants to have his share in the bootie: They spoiled more gold within the time, and in this Realme, as farre forth as I am able to reckon, then would amount to a Million of Ducates, yea, I beleeve, that I make my teckoning with the least. Yet will it be found, that of all this great theeuing, they never fent to 50 the King ought faue three thousand Castillans, having thereabout killed and destroyed aboue eight hundred thousand foules. The other Tyrant Gouernours which succeeded after, vnto the yeere thirtie and three, ilue or at least wife confented, for all those which remained to slay them in that tyrannicall fluerie.

Amongst an infinite fort of mischiefes, which this Gouernour did, nor consented vnto the doing during the time of his government, this was one: To wit, that a Cache or Lord giving him, either of his good will, or which is rather to be thought for feare, the weight of nine thousand Ducates : the Spaniards not content withall, tooke the faid Lord, and tied him to a stake, fetting him on the earth, his feet stretched up, against the which they let fire to cause him to give them some more gold. The Lord fent to his house, whence there were brought, yet moreover three 60 thousand Cashillans. They goe afresh to give him new torments. And when the Lord gave them no more, either because he had it not, or because he would give them no more, they bent his feet against the fire, vittill that the verie marrow sprang out, and trilled downe the soles of his feete: to as hee therewith died. They have oftentimes exercised these kinde of torments towards the Lords, to make them gine them gold, wherewith they have also flaine them.

Prpppp 2

Another

Another time, a certaine companie of Spaniards, vling their thefts and robberies, came to2 Mountaine, where were affembled and hid a number of people, having shunned those men to pernicious and horrible: whom incontinent entring vpon, they tooke about three or fourescore. as well women as maids, having killed as many as they could kill. The morrow after, there affembled a great companie of Indians, to pursue the Spaniards, watring against them for the great defire they had to recouer their wives and daughters.

The Spaniards perceiving the Indians to approach so neere upon them, would not so forme their prey, but flabd their Swords thorow the bellies of the wives and wenches, leaning but one alone aline of all the fourescore. The Indians felt their hearts to burit for forrow and griefe which they suffered, yelling out in cries and speaking such words: O wicked men, O yee the cruell to Spaniards: doe yee kill Las Iras: They terme Iras in that Countrie the women : as if they would iav. to kill women, those be acts of abominable men, and cruell as beafts.

There was about ten or fifteene leagues from Joanama, a great Lord named Paris, which was very rich of gold : The Spaniards went thither, whom this Lord received as if they had beene his owne brethren, and made a Present unto the Captaine of fiftie thousand Castillans of hisowne voluntarie accord. It feemed vnto the Captaine and the other Spaniards, that he which gaue fuch a great fumme of his owne will, should have a great treasure, which should be the end and easing of their travels. They pretend in words to depart; but they returne at the fourth watch of the morning, fetting youn the Towne which miltrusted nothing fet it on fire, whereby was burnt and flaine a great number of people, and by this meanes they brought away in the spoile fiftie, or an threefcore thousand Castillans moe. The Cacite or Lord escaped without being slaine or taken, and leuied incontinent as many of his as he could. And at the end of three or foure daies our raketh the Spaniards which had taken from him an hundred and thirtie, or fortie thousand Castillans, and fet upon them valian ly, killing fiftie Spaniards, and recouring all the gold which they had taken from him. The others faued themselves by running away, being well charged with blowes and wounded. Not long after, divers of the Spanfo returne against the faid Cacite, and discomfite him with an infinite number of his people. Those which were not slaine, they put them to the ordinarie bondage : in fuch fort, as that there is not at this day, neither tracke nor token, that there hath beene living there either people, or fo much as one man alone borne of woman within thirtie leagues of the Land, which was before notably peopled and gouerned by 30 divers Lords. There is no reckoning able to be made of the murders which this Caitiffe with his companie committed in these Realmes which he so dispeopled.

of the Province of Nicaragua.

The yeare 1922, or twentie three, this Tyrant went farther into the Land: to bring vader his yoke the most fertile Prouince of Nicaragna, and so in thither he entred in an euill houre. There is no man which is able worthily and sufficiently to speake of the fertilite, healthsomenesse, prosperitie, and frequencie, of those Nations that there were.

He fent fiftie Horiemen, and caused to flay all the people of this Province, (which is greater 4 then the Countie of Roffillon) with the Sword : in such fort, as that hee left alive, nor man, nor woman, nor old, nor young, for the least cause in the World : as if they came not incontinentat his command : or if they did not bring him to many load of Maiz, which fignifieth in that Countrie bread Corne : or if they did not bring him fo many Indians to ferue him and others of his company: for the Countrie lay levell, as was faid, and no creature could escape his horses and deuillish rage. He fent Spaniarde to make out rodes, that is to say, to go a theeuing into other Prouinces : and gaue leave to those Rouers, to carrie with them as many Indians of this peaceable people as they lifted, and that they should serue them, whom they put to the chaine, to theend they should not give over the burdens of three or fourescore pounds weight, wherewith they loaded them, whereof it came to passe oftentimes that of foure thouland Indians, there returned 10 not home to their houses fix alive : but even fell downe starke dead in the high way : and when any were so wearie that they could march no forther for the weight of their burdens, or that fome of them fell ficke, or fainted for hunger or thirst, because it should not need to stand so long as to vnlocke the chaine, and to make the speedier dispatch, hee cut off the head from the shoulders, and to the head tumbled downe one way, and the bodie another. Now confider with your felues, what the other poore foules might thinke the whiles.

He was the caute that the Indians fowed not their grounds one whole yeeres continuance. So as now, when they wanted bread, the Spaniards tooke away from the Indians their Maiz, which they had in store for proussion, to nourish them and their children : whereby there died of famine more then twentie or thirtie thousand soules. And it came to passe, that a woman falne mad with 60 the famine flue her Sonne to eate him.

They have discomfited and oppressed in this Province a great number of people, and hastened their death in caufing them to beare boords and timber vnto the Hauen thirty leagues diffeace, so make thips with : and fent them to go leeke Honie and Wax amiddeft the Mountaines, where the Tigres denoured them : Yea they have laden women with childe, and women new delinered or lying in, with burdens enough for beatts.

The greatest plague which hath most dispeopled this Province, bath beene the licence which the Gourmour gaue to the Spaniards, to demand or exact of the Cacichs and Lords of the countrie flaues. They did give them every foure or five moneths, or as oftentimes as every one could obtaine licence of the Gouernour fitte flues : with threatnings, that if they gaue them not, Tribute flues, they would burne them aliue, or cause them to be eaten with Dogges. Now ordinarily the Indiant dee not keepe flaues, and it is much if one Cacike doc keepe two, three or foure: Wherefore to ferue this turne, they went to their fubicets, and tooke first all the Orphelins, and afterto wards they exacted of him that had two children one, and of him that had three, two: and in this manner was the Cacicke faine to furnish still to the number that the Tyrant imposed, with the great weeping and crying of the people: for they are people that doe loue (as it feemeth) tenderly their children. And for because that this was done continually, they dispeopled from the yeere 23. wnto the yeere 23. all this Realme. For there went for fixe or feuen yeeres space. fine or fixe ships at a time, carryi g forth great numbers of those Indians, for to fell them for flaues at loanama and Peru: where they all died not long after. For it is a thing proued and experimented a thousand times, that when the Indians are transported from their naturall Countrey, they soone end their liues : besides that these give them not their sustenance, neither yet diminish they of their toile, as neither doe they buy them, for ought elsebut to toile. They have 20 by this manner of doing drawneout of this Province of the Indies, whom they have made flaves. being as free borne as I am, more then five hundred thousand soules, And by the Deuillish warres 500000. Indicate being as free borne as I am, more then hue hundred thousand sources. And by the Delinium water transported. which the Spanish have made on them, and the hideous thraidome that they have laid vpon 50000. Same them, they have broughe to their deaths, other fiftie or threefcore thousand persons, and do yet daily make hauocke of them at this present. All these slaughters have beene accomplished within the space of fourteene yeeres. There may be left at this day in all this Provinces of Nicaragua. the number of about foure or fine thousand persons, which they also cause to die as yet every day.

of New Spaine.

peopled in the World, as I have alreadie faid.

IN the yeere 1517, was New Spaine discourred : at the Discourre whereof were committed great diforders and flaughters of the Indians, by those which had the doing of that Exploite. The veere 1418, there went Spanish Christians (as they terme themselves) to rob and flay, not In the some withstanding that they said they went to people the Countrie. Sithence that yeere, 1518. vn. discourse of to this present yeere 1542, the vniust dealings, the violencie, and the Tyrannies which the Spa. Horea, you miards have wrought against the Indians, are mounted to the highest degree of extremitie : those may find the felfe-same Spaniards, having thorowly lost the feare of God, and of the King, and forgotten these first slanthemselues. For the discomfitures, cruelties, slaughters, spoiles, the destructions of Cities, pillages, ters, or as this an violences, and Tyrannies which they have made in formany Realmes, and to great have been fuch Author reckoand so horrible, that all the things which we have spoken of, are nothing in comparison of those neth, supplanand so horrible, that all the things which we have spoken or, are nothing in companion or those errs, which did which have beene done and executed from the yeere 1518. vnto the yeere 1542, and as yet at rather depopulation this time, this moneth current of September, are in doing and committing the most grieuousest, last on per-and the most abominablest of all: in such fort that the rule which wee set downe before is veri-plewhole Profied : That is, That from the beginning they have alwaies proceeded from enill to worfe, and have gone ba.

yand them felues in the most greatest deforders and denills boings.

through bondages and oppretious ordinarily and personall, having beene the Countrey the most

In such wise, as that since the first entring into New Spaine, which was on the eight day of but was loth to Aprill, in the eighteenth yeere vnto the thirtieth yeere, which make twelue yeeres complete: doe more then the flaughters and the destructions have never ceased, which the bloudie and cruell hands of the the Author Spaniards have continually executed in foure hundred and fiftie leagues of Land or thereabout in haddonethen, spannar as naue continuary executed in four engineer and intereseagues of Land of therezood in whiles many of compaffe, round about Maxics, and the Neighbour Regions round about, fuch as the which them lived: might containe foure or fine great Realmes, as great and a great deale farre fertiler then is Spaine. yea his most All this Countrie was more peopled with Inhabitants, then Toledo, and Simil, and Vallodelid, and paffi nace and Sanagoce, with Barcelona. For that there hath not beene commonly in those Cities, nor neuer were fuch a world of people, when they have beene peopled with the most, as there was then in time I have tathe faid Country, which containeth in the whole compalle more then 1800. leagues:during the time of the aboue mentioned twelue yeeres, the Spaniards have flaine and done to death in the Storie, therein faid 450. leagues of Land what men, what women, what young and little children, more then also mollifyfoure Millions of foules, with the dint of the Sword and Speare, and by fire, during (I fav) the ing many 60 Conquests (as they call them.) Neither yet doe I here comprize those, whom they have slaine, Foure Milli-

and doe flay as yet euery day, in the aforefaid flauerie and oppression ordinarie. Among it other Murders and Maffacres they committed this one which I am now to speake Of New Speins of, in a great Citie more then of a thirtie thousand housholds, which is called Cholula: that is, in particular, that comming before them the Lords of the Countrie and places neere adioyning, and first and

gings in the Citie, in the houses and place of the Lord, or other principall Lords of the Citie: the Spaniards admited with themselves to make a massacre, or a chastile (as they speake) to the end, to raile and plant a dread of their cruelties in every corner of all that Countrie.

Now this bath beene alwaies their cultomary manner of doing, in every the Regions which they have entred into, to execute incontinent upon their first arrivall, some notable cruell butcherie, to the end, that those poore and innocent Lambes should tremble for feare which they should have of them: in this wife they fent first to summon all the Lords and Noblemen of the Citie, and of all the places subject vnto the same Citie: who so some as they came to speake with the Captaine of the Spaniards, were incontinent apprehended before that any body might perceive the matter, to be able thereupon to beare tidings thereof vnto others. Then were demanded of them five or fixe thousand Indians, to carry the lodings and carriages of the Spaniards: which Indians came forthwith, and were beltowed into the bale Courts of the Houles. It was a pitifull case to see these poore folke, what time they made them ready to beare the carriages of the Spaniard. They come all naked, only their fecret parts covered, having every one vpon their shoulder a Net with a small deale of victuall : they bow themselves every one, and hold their backes cowreddowne like a fort of the Lambes, prefenting themselves to the Swords: and thus being all astembled in the base Court, together with others, one part of the Spanish all armed befrowe themselves at the gates to hemme them in, whiles the rest put these poore Sheepe to the edge of the Sword and the Speares, in such fort, that there could not escape away one onely person, but that he was cruelly put to death: fauing that after a two or three dayes you might have feene come forth fundry all couered with bloud which had hid and faued themselues under the dead bodies of their fellowes, and now prefenting themselves before the Spaniards, asking them mercy and the fauing of their liues : they found in them no pitie nor compassion any whit at all, but were all he wed in pieces.

All the Lords which were about and underneath, were all bound, the Captaine commanding them to be brent quicke being bound vnto flakes pitched into the ground. Howbeit one Lord, which might be peraduenture the principall and King of the Countrie faued himfelfe, and cast himselfe with thirtie or fortie other men into a Temple thereby, which was as good vnto them 20 as a Fore, which they call in their Language, Qewe: and there he defended himselfe a good part of the day. But the Spaniards, whose hands nothing can escape specially armed for the warre, cast fire on the Temple, and burned all those which were within.

From Cholula they went to Mexico. The King Motenfuma fent to meet them a thousand of

presents, and Lords, and people, making ioy and mirth by the way.

After great and abhominable tyrannies committed in the Citie of Mexico, and in other Cities, and the Countrey, ten, fifteene, and twenty leagues compafe of Mexico: this tyrannie and pestilence advanced it selfe forward, to waste also, infect, and lay desolate the Pronince of Panace. It was a thing to be wondred at of the world, of people that there were, and the spoyles and flaughters there done. Afterward they wasted also after the selfe manner, all the Province of 40 Tritepeke, and the Province of ipelingo, and the Province of Column: each Province contayning more ground then the Realme of Leon and Castile.

This Captaine tyrant, with this gorgeous and pretended title, dispatched two other Captaines, as very tyrants and farre more cruell, and leffe pitifull then himfelfe, into great Realmes most flourishing, and most sertile, and full of people, to wit, the Realme of Guatimala, which lieth to the Seaward on the South fide, and the fame of Naco, and Honduras, otherwise called Guaymura, which coafteth on the Sea on the North fide, confronting and confining the one with the other, three hundred leagues distance from Mexico. He sent the one by Land, and the other by Sea: both the one and the other carried with them a many of troopes to fetue on horsebacke

He which went by Sea, committed exceeding pillings, cruelties, and diforders amongst the people on the Sea-coail.

The Provinces and Realmes of Naco and Honduras, which refembled a Paradife of pleasures: and were more peopled, frequented, and inhabited, then any Countrey in the world: now of late, wee comming along thereby, have teene them fo dispeopled and destroyed, that who lo should fee them, his heart would cleaue for forrow, ware hee neuer fo flinty. They have flaine within these eleuen yeeres, more then two millions of soules , having not left in more then an hundred leagues of the Countrey square, but two thousand persons, whom they slav as yet daily in the faid ordinary bondage.

The great tyrant and Captaine, which went to Guatimala (45 hath beene faid, exceeded all) 60 from the Prounces neere to Mexico, (according as himfelfe wrote in a Letter to the principali Tyrane which had fent him) diffant from the Realme of Guatimals foure hundred leagues (keeping the way by him traced) as he went, flue, robbed, burned and deffroyed all the Country; wherefocuer he became, under the shadow of title about mentioned, faying : that they should

CHAP. 4. Bart, de las Casas bis Booke of Cruelises done in the Indies.

Submit themselues voto them, in the name of the King of Spaine, who was voto them vonomic themselves which they had neuer heard speake: and which those Nations there effected bellion a sainft more visual and more cruell then they his men were. And the Tyrants giving them no relipite that Prince to of time to deliberate, they fling vpon the poore folke, in a manner as some as the mellage was which hey nedone, putting all to fire and bloud.

of the Province and Realme of Guatimala.

NO fooner arrived hee into this faid Realme: but that hee beganne with great flaughter of to Niche Inhabitants. This notwithstanding the chiefe Lord came to receive him, being carried in a Lighter, with Trumpets and Tabours, reloycings, and difports, accompanied with a great number of the Lords of the Citie of Uhlaran, head Citie of the whole Realme, doing them also fertice with all they had, but specially in giving them food abundantly, and whatsoever they demanded besides. The Spanish lodged this night without the Citie, foratmuch as the same seemed vnto them strong, and there might be thereby danger,

This Captaine called to him the next morrow the chiefe Lord, with other great Lords . who being come as meske theepe, he apprehended them all, and commanded them to give him certaine summes of gold. They answering that they had none, forasmuch as the Countrie yeelded none: he commandeth incontinent to burne them aliue, without having committed any crime

20 whatsoeuer, and without any other forme of Process or sentence.

As the Lords of all these Prounces perceived, that they had burned their source Lords. onely because they gave them no Gold, they fied all to the Mountaines, commanding their Subices to goe to the Spaniards, and to ferue them as their Lords, but that they should not discount them, nor give them intelligence where they were. With this, loe all the people of the Countrey, presenting them, and protesting to be theirs, and to serue them as their Lords: The Captains made answere that he would not accept of them, but that he would kill them if they told not where were their Lords. The Indians answered, they could not tell ought: but as touching themselves they were content, that they should employ them to their service, with their wives and children : and that they should vie their houles, and that there they might kill, or doe what-30 foeuer them pleated.

It is a wonderfull thing, that the Spaniards went to their Villages and Burrowes, and finding there these filly people at their worke, with their wines and children, neither misdoobting any thing, they pierced them with their Boars-speares, and hackled them to pieces. They came to one Burrow great and mighty, which held it felfe more aff red then any other, because of their innocency: whom the Spanib laid defolate in a manner all whole, in the space of two houres. putting to the edge of the fword, children, with women, and aged persons, and all these which could not escape by fleeing.

The Indians aduited betweene them to digge certaine ditches in the middelt of the wayes, to make their Horses tumble into, and piercing their bellies with Pikes sharp led and brent at one 40 end, there bestowed of purpose, and coursed ouer so orderly with greene turfe, that it seemed

there was no fuch matter. There fell in Horles once or twice: for the Spaniards afterwards could beware of them. But now to avenge them, they made a Law, that as many Indians as might bee taken alive, should be flung into the fame pits. Hereupon they cast in women with child, and women new deliuered of child-birth, and old folke as many as they could come by, vntill that the ditches were filled vp. It was a lamentable thing to behold the women with their children stabbed with thele pickes. All besides, they sue with thrust of Speares, and edge of Sword. They cast of them alfo to fielh fraunching Dogs, which tare them and devoured them. They brent a Lord at a great fire of quicke flames: faying, they would herein doe him honour. And they perfifted in 50 thefe butcheries fo vnnaturall, about feuen yeeres, from the yeere 24. vntill the yeere 31.

The Indians which escaped, with all other of the Countrie seeing all the mischiefes of the Spanifb, began to affemble, and put themselues in Armes: whereupon the Spaniards worke great discomfitures and saughters, returning to Guatimala, where they builded a Citie, the which Guatimala de-God of a just indgement hath reversed with three overwholmings falling all three together; the ftroyed with one was with water, the other with earth, and the third with stones, of the bignesse of ten or twentie Oxen. By fuch like meanes all the Lords, and the men that were able to beare Armes being flaine: those which remayned, were reduced into the Diabolicall seruntude aforesaid, being made tributary flaues or villaines regardant, but giving for their tribute fonnes and daugha ters, for they will have none other kinde of bond-men. And so the Spaniards sending whole 60 thips laden with them to Pers, to fell them, with their other flaughters, have deftroyed and laid defart an whole Realme, of an hundred leagues square, or aboue, a Countrie the mott bleffetull, and peopled the most that might be in the world. For the Tyrant himselfe wrote hereof, that it was more peopled then Mexico; and herein he faid the truth. He hath done to death, with Foureor fine his conforts and confreres, more then foure or five millions of foules in fifteene or fixteene yeeres millions fluxe

The Mexicani.

cruclries are

before related. and therefore

here omitted.

Shambles of

Soo. Indians

giuen for a

mans fleib.

This Tyrant had a custome, when as he went to make warre vpon any Citie or Province: to carrie thither of the Indians already under-yoaked, as many as hee could, to make warre your the other Indians: and as he gaue vnto a ten or twentie thousand men which hee led along no fustenance, he allowed them to eate the Indians which they tooke : And so by this meanes hee had in his Campe an ordinary fhambles of mans flesh, where in his presence they killed and rofled children. They killed men onely to have off from them their hands and their feete, which parts they held to be the daintieft morrels.

He was the death of an infinite fort of the Indians in making of thips, the which hee transported after this rate great itore of Artilerie, which hee loded upon the shoulders of these poore folke going naked: whereby I have feeue very many fall downe in the high way, by reason of their great burdens. He vidid whole housholds, by taking from the men their wives and daughters : the which afterwards he dispersed in gifts to his Mariners and Souldiers to please them withall, who led them along with them in their Nauies. Hee stuffed all the ships with Indians, where they died for thirst and hunger. He made two Nauies, either of a great number of ships. with the which he consumed as with fire and lightning flashing from Heauen all those peoples.

Of new Spaine, and Panuco, and Xalisco.

Fter the exceeding cruelties and flaughters aforefaid, and the others which I have omitted. 20 Awhich have beene executed in the Provinces of New Spaine and Pangeo: there came to Panuco another Tyrant, cruell and vnbrideled, in the yeere 1 25. Who in committing very many cruelties, and in branding many for flaues, after the manner aforefaid, which were all free, and in fending very many thips laden to Cuba, and Hiffaniola, where they might belt make merchandife of them, he atchieued the defolation of this Pronince.

And it hath come to passe in his time, that there hath beene given for one Mare, eight hundred Indians coules partakers of reason. And this man from this roome was promoted to be Prefident of Mexico, and of all the Prouince of New Spaine, and there were promoted with him other Tyrants, to the offices of Auditorships: in the which dignities they set forward also this to Countrie into fo extreme a desolation, that if God had not kept them by meanes of the refi-Rai ce of the religious men of Saint Francis Order, and if that there had not beene prouided with all speed a Court of Audience, and the Kings Counsell in those parts friend to all vertue, they had layd waite all New Spaine, as they have done the He of Nifaniola, There was a man, amongst those of the companie of this Captaine, who to the end to enclose a Garden of his with a wall: kepe in his workes eight thousand Indians, without paying them ought, nor giuing them to eate, in manner that they died, falling downe suddenly, and hee never tooke the more thought for the matter.

After that the chiefe Captaine which I spake of, had finished the laying waste of Panuco, and that hee vinderstood the newes of the comming of the Kings Court of Audience : hee aduled 45 with himselfe to proceed farther into the innermost parts of the Realme, to search where hee might tyrannize at his eafe, and drew by force out of the Pronince of Mexico, fifteene or twentie thousand men, to the end, that they should carrie the loades and carriages of the Spaniards, which went with him, of whom there never returned against wo hundred, the others being dead on the high-waves.

He came at the Province of Mechuacham, which is distant from Mexico fortie leagues, 2 Region as bliffefull and full of Inhabitants, as is that of Mexico. The King and Lord of the Countrey went to receive him with an infinite companie of people, which did voto them a thousand feruices and currefies. He apprehended him by and by, for that he had the bruit to be very rich of Gold and filuer : and to the end, that he should give him great treasures . he beganne to give 50 him the terments, and put him in a paire of flockes by the feet, his body firetched out, and his hands bound to a stake, he maketh a stashing fire against his feet, and there a boy with a basting fprinkle loked in Oyle in his hand, stood and basted them a little and a little, to the end to well roft the skinne. There was in one fide of him a cruell man, the which with a Crof bow bent, aymed right at his heart, on the other fide another which held a Dog fnarling, and leaping vp 25 to runne vpon him, which in leffe then the time of a Credo, had beene able to have torne him in pieces: and thus they tormented him, to the end hee flould discouer the treasures which they defired, vntill fuch time as a religious man of Saint Francis Order tooke him away from them, notwith Panding that hee died of the same torments. They cormented and slue of this fallion very many of the Lords and Cacikes in these Provinces: to the end that they should give them 60 Gold and Silver

At the tame time a certaine tyrant found, that certaine Indians had hid their Idols , as thele which had never beene better inflitected by the Spaniards of any better God, bee apprehended and detayned priloners the Lords, vntill fuch time as that they would give them their Idols,

CHAP. 4. Bart, de las Cafas his Booke of Cruelties done in the Indies.

supposing all this while they had beene of Gold or of Silver! how beit they were not fo, wherefor he chaltifed them cruelly and vniufily. But to the end he would not remayne frultrate of his intent, which was to poyle, he conftrayned the Casiles to redeeme their faid Idols; and they redeemed them for such Gold and Silver as they could finde, to the end, to worthin them toe redeemed them for usen Gold and Shoel as they come introc, to the entry, to worning them for Golds, as they had beene wont to doe aforetime.

This great Captaine passed farther from Mechidachims to the Province of Xalifeo, the which Xalifeo.

wis all whole most fult of people, and most happie. For it is one of the most fertileft and most admirable Contrue of the Indiet, which had Burrowes consayning in a manner feuen leagues. As he entred this Countrey, the Lord with the Inhabitants, according as all the Indians are accuto flomed to doe, went to receive him with prefents and toyfulneffe. Her began to commit his cruelties and mischienousnesse, which hee had learned, and all the rest had beene accustomed to pra-Bile, which is to heape up Gold, which is their God. Hee burned Townes, hee tooke the Cacikes prilioners, and gave them torments. Hee made flaues all that hee tooke. Whereof there died an infinite number tyed in chaines. The women new delfuered of child-birth, going laden with the stuffe of will Christians, and being not able to beate their owne children bea cause of tranell and hunger, were faine to cast them from them in the wayes, whereof there died

An euill Christian taking by force a young Damsell to abuse her, the mother withstood him s an infinite: and as thee would have taken her away, the Spaniard drawing his Dagger or Rapier, cut off her 20 hand, and flue the young girle with flashes of his weapons: because shee would not confent to

his appetite. Amongst many other things, he caused variably to be marked for slaues, foure thousand and fine hundred foules as free as they, men, women, and fucking babes, from of a yeereand a halfe old, vato three or foure yeeres old: which not withflanding had gone before them in perceito receine them with an infinite number of other things that have not beene fet downe in writing. His Stewards flue very many of the Indians, hanging them and burning them alive, and cafling some voto the Dogs, cutting off their feet, hands, head and tongue, they being in peace.

onely to bring them into a feare, to the end they should serue him

It is faid of him, that he hath deftroyed and burned in this Realme of Xalifeo, eight hundred 800. Towned 30 Burrowes, which was the caule that the Indians being fallen delperate, and seeing those which destroyed. remayned flow they perified thus cruelly: they lift wo themselves, and went into the Mouna taines, flaving certaine Spaniards: howbest by good night. And afterwards because of the wickednedesand outrages of other tyrants now being, which passed by that way to destroy other Provinces (that which they call discouring) many of the Indiane allembled, fortifying thema selves voon certaine Rockes. Voon the which Rotkesthe Spanish hauemade, and yet at this prefent, and afresh doe make so many cruelties, that they almost made an end of laying desolate all this great Countrey, flaying an infinite number of people.

of the Realme of Yucatan.

He yeare one thousand fine hundred twenty and fix, was deputed oner the Realme of Tucatan another caitiffe Gouernour, and that through the lies and false reports which himfelfe had made vnto the King : in like manner as the other tyrants vntill this prefent, to the end there might be committed vnto them offices and charges, by meanes whereof they might rob at their pleasures. This Realme of Tucatan was full of inhabitants; for that it was a Countrie in euery respect wholesome, and abounding in plentie of victuals, and of fruites more then Mexico; and fingularly exceeded for the abundance of Honie and Waxe there to be found, more then in any quarter of the Indier, which hath beene seene vnto this present. It containeth about three hundred leagues compasse. The people of that Countrie were the most notable of all the In-50 dier, as well in confideration of their policie and prudencie, as for the vprightnesse of their life, verily worthy the training of the knowledge of God : amongit whom there might have beene builled great Cities by the Spanish, in which they might have lived as in an earthly Paradile, if to be they had not made themselues vnworthy, because of their exceeding couetousnesse, hard hartednesse, and heinous offences: as also vinworthy they were of other moe blessings a great many, which God had let open in thele Indies. This tyrant began with three hundred men to make warrevpon these poore innocent people, which were in their houses without hurting any body : where be flew and ranfacked infinite numbers. Aud for because the Countrey yeeldeth no Gold, for if it had yeelded any, he would have confumed those fame Indians, in making them to toyle in the Mines; to the end he might make Gold of the bodies and foules of thole for whom 60 Iefus Christ suffered death, he generally made slaues of all those whom he slew nor, and returned the Ships that were come thither, vpon the blowing abroad and novice of the felling of flaues, full of people bartered for Wine, Oyle, Vinegar, powdred Bacons flesh, Garments, Horses, and that that every man had neede of, according to the Captains estimate and judgement. He would les choose amongst an hundred or fittie yong Damosels, bartering some one of the fairest, and of

the best complexion, for a Caske of Wine, Oyle, Vineger, or for Porke powdred. And in like manner he would let chools out a young hantome Strinling among it two or three hundred for the forelaid Merchandize. And it bath better feene, that a youth feeming to beethe Sonne of fome Prince, hath beene bartered for a Gheefe, and an hundred persons for an Horse. Hee corri mued in thefe doings from the yeere twentie fixe, vntill the yeere thirtie three,

As these Spaniards, want with their mad Dogges a foraging by the tracke, and hunting our the Indian men and women : An Indian woman being ficke, and feeing the could not afcape there Dogges, that they floudd not rent her as they did others since tooke a chard and hanged her felfa at a beams, having faltened at her foot a child the had of a weere old, and the had no inoner done behold thefe Curres, which come and dispatch this infant, howbeit that before it died, a Reliant

When the Spanish parted out of this Realme, one among to others faid to a Sonne of a Lord of fome Cicie or Prouince, that he should goe with him : the Boy answered, and faid, he would not forfake his Countrie, The Spannard replied : Goe with me, or elfe I will ent off thme cares. The young Indian perfitted in his hift taying, that he would not forfake his Countrie. The Spaniard drawing out his Dagger, cut oil first one, and then his other eare. The youngman abiding by it full that he would not leave his Countrie : he mangled off also his Note, with the vppermoft of his line: making no more formula fitie of the mater, then if he had given him but a philip. This danger ble wetch magnified himselfe, and vaunted him of his doings villanously vinto a reuerend Religious person, laying : that hee tooke as much paines as hee could, to beget the Indian women in ... great numbers with child, to the end, he might receive the more money for them in felling them great with childe for flaues.

In this Realme, or in one of the Prouinces of New Spaine, a certaine Spaniard went one day with his Dogges on hunting of Venison, or ele Conies, and not finding game, hee minded his Dogges that they should bee hungrie, and tooke a little tweet Babie which hee bereaued the mother of, and cutting off from him the armes and the legges, chopped them in small gobbets, giuing to every Dogge his Liverie or part thereof, by and by after these morsels thus dispatched be

caff also the rest of the bodie or the carkasse to all the kenell together.

Being now departed the Realme all the Deutlish Tyrants, blinded with the courtousnesses the riches of Pers, that reverend Father, Frier lames, with foure other Religious of Saint Fran ! cit, was moved in spirit to goe into this Realme to pacific them, and for to preach to them, and to winne vnto lefus Christ those which might bee remayning of the Butcheries and Tyrannos Murders, which the Spanish had beene perpetrating feuen continually eeres. And I below that these same were those Religious persons, the which in the yeere thirtie soure, certaine is dians of the Province of Mexico, feeding before them Meffengers in their behalfe, requested them that they would come into their Countrie, to give them knowledge of that one only God, who is God, and very Lord of all the wold : according in the end to admit them with condition, that they should enter thems lues alone, and not the Spaniards with them, that which the Religious promifed them. For it was permitted them, yea commanded them fo to doe, by the Vice-toy of New Spaine, and that there should bee no kind of difficature bee done vnto them by the Spa-40 miards. The Religious men preached vinto them the Gotpell of Christ, as they are accustomed to doe, and as had beene the holy intention of the Kings of Caffile, that should have beene done. Howbeir, that the Spaniards in all the feuen yeares space past, had never given them any fuch notice of the truth of the Gospell, or so much as that there was any other King saving himselfe, that so eyrannized over them, and destroyed them. By these meanes of the Religious, after the end of fortie dayes that they had preached vnto them, the Lords of the Countrie brought vnto them, and put into their bands their Idols, to the end that they should burne them. Afterallo they brought vinto them their young children, that they flould catechife them, whom they loue as the Apple of their eye. They made for them also Churches, and Temples, and houses. Moreouer, some other Proninces sent, and innited them, to the end that they might come to them al- 50 fo, to preach, and give them the understanding of God, and of him whom they faid to beethe great King of Castide. And being perswaded and induced by the Religious, and did a thing which neuer yet before hath beene done in the Indus. Twelve or fifteene Lords, which had very many fubiccts and great dominion, affembling enery one for his owne part his people, and taking their aduite and confent, of their owne voluntarie motion, yeelded themselves to the subjection, and to be under the domination of the Kings of Caftile: admitting the Emperour as King of Spaine, for their Liege Souereigne. Whereof also they made certaine Instruments , by them configned, which I keepe in my charge, together with the Testimonies thereunto of the said

The Indians being thus onward in the way of the faith, with the great toy, and good hope of 60 the Religious Brethren, that they should be able to winne vnto Jesus Christ all the people of the Realme that were the refidue, being but a small number of the flaughters, and wicked wars Falsed : There entred at a certaine Coaft, eighteene Spaniards Tyrants on horiebacke, and twelve on foor, drining with them great loades of Idols, which they had taken in the other Promines

of the Indians. The Captaine of those thirtie Spaniards called vnto him a Lord of the Countrie therabouts as they were entred, and commandeth him to take those Idols, and to disperse them throughout all his Countrie, felling euery Idoll for an Indian man, or an Indian woman, to make flaurs of them, with threatning them, that if he did not doe it, he would bid them battaile. That faid Lord being forced by feare, distributed those Idols throughout all the Countrie, and commanded all his subjects, that they should take them to adore them, and that they should returne in exchange of that ware Indies and Indiffes tomake flaues of. The Indians beeing affraid. those which had two chluren, gaue him one, and hee that had three gaue him two. This was the end of this Sacrilegious Trafficke : and thus was this Lord of Cacique, faine to content thele 10 Spaniards : I fay not Christians.

One of their abominable Chafferers, named lobu Garcia, being ficke, and neere his death, had under his bed to packs of Idols, and commanded his Indif Maid that ferued him, to looke to it that the made not away his Idols, that there were for Murlimens, for they were good fruffe; and that making vent of them, thee thould not take leffe then a floue a piece for one of them with another ; and in fine, with this his Testament and last Will thus denifed, the Catiffe died.

The Indians perceiving that, that which the Religious had promifed them, was as good as nothing : namely, that the Spaniards should not enter those Prouinces : and feeing the Spaniards which had laded thither Idols from other places, there to make vent of them, they having put all their Idols afore into the hands of the Friars, to the end they should bee burned, and to the end 20 the true God should be by them adored, all the Country was in a mutinie, and a rage against the Religious Friars, and the Indians comming vnto them, fay : Why have you lied unto us. in promifing us by deceits that there should not enter any Spaniards into these Countries? And why bane ron burnt our gods, feeing the Spaniards doe bring viother Gods from other Nations? Were not our Gods as good, as the Gods of other Proninces ? The Friars pacified them in the best manner that they could. not knowing what to answere them : and went to seeke out those thirty Spaniards, to whom they declared the cuill which they had done, praying them to get them thence : which the Spaniards would not doe, but faid to the Indians, that those Religious men had caused them to come thither themselves of their owne accord, which was rightly an extreme maliciousnesse. In the end the Indians deliberated to kill the Religious men: By occasion whereof, the Friers fled away o in a night, having advertisement of the case by some of the Indians.

Of the Pronince of Saint Martha.

He Province of Saint Martha, was a Countrie where the Spaniards gathered Gold in all I plentie: the Land being with the Regions adiacene very rich, and the people industrious to draw out the Gold, Wherefore alto infinite Tyrants have made thither continually with their fhips, ouer-running, and ranging along the Country, killing and spoyling those the Inhabitants. and ramping from them that gold that they had, with speedie returne ever to their thips, which went and came oftentimes. And so wrought they in those Provinces great wasts and slaughan ters, and cruelties horrible, and that most commonly on the Sea-coast, and certaine leagues within the Country. At what time there went Spanib Tyrants to inhabite there. And for as much as the Country was exceeding rich as hath beene faid, there ever fucceeded Captaines one in anothers roome, euery one more cruell then other : in fuch fort that it fremed that every one inforced himselfe, for the masterie in doing of euils. The yeere 1529, there went a great Tyrant. very resolute, with great troupes : but without any feare of God, or compassion of the nature of man, who wrought such wastes and slaughters so great, that he exceeded all others that had gone before him, himfelfe robbing for the space of fixe or seven yeeres that he lived, great Treafures : after being deceassed without confession, and fled from the place of his residence ; there fucceeded him other murdering Tyrants and Theeues, which made an end of the rest of the people : that from the yeere 1 , 29. vnto this day, they have reduced into a Wilderneffe in those same to quarters more then 400. leagues of Land, which was no leffe peopled then the other Countries which we have spoken of,

Verily if I had to make a bed-roll of the Vngraciousnesses, of the Slaughters, of the Desolations, of the Iniquities, of the Violencies, of the Massacres, and other great Insolencies which the Spaniards have done, and committed in those Prounties of Saint Martha, against God, the King, and against those innocent Nations : I should write an Historie very ample. But that may bedone if God spare me lite, hereafter in his good time : onely I will set downe a few words of that which was written in a Letter by a Bishop of this Prosince, to the King our Souereigne : and the Letter beareth date the twentieth of May, 1541. The which Bishop amongst other 61 Words Speaketh thus : I fay , facred Maustie, that the way to redresse this Countrie, is that his Ma- Bishop of S.

sessie deliner benout of the power of Stepfathers, and give unto her an huft and which may intreate her Mathallet. as is reason, and according as spee deserveth: otherwise, I am surchereaster as the Tyrants which now ter to Charles base the government, doe torment and tormogle ber, he will soone take an end, Oc. And a little below the fith. be faith: Whereby, your Missite Shall know cleerely, how those which gonerne in those quarters doe de-

ferue to be dismounted, and deposed from their gonernment, to the end, that the Common-weales may be relieved. That if that be not done, in mine aduise, they can never be cured of their diseases. His Maieitie fall understand moreoner, that in those Regions, there are not any Christians but Denils , that there are no Sernants of God and the King, but Trasters to the flate, and their King. And in trush the greatest incumbrance that I find in reducing the Indians, that are in warre, and to set them at peace. and to lead those which are at peace to the knowledge of our faith, is unnatural and cruell entreate. and to lead troje work of ear person of the Spanish, being so deeply altered, and launced, that they base nothing in more hatred and borror, then the name of Christians, the which in all these Countries ther call in their Language, Yares, that is to fay, Deuils. For the acts which they committed bere, are neither of Christians, nor of men which have the vie of reason: but of Deuils, Whereof it commethe 19 passe, that the Indies which doe see these behaviours to be generally so farre oftranged from all humanite, paye, tons to the control of the beads as in the members: they effected, that the Christians do bold the le things for a Law, and that their God, and their King are the Authors thereof. And to endenour to per [wade them otherwise, were to endenour in vaine, and to minister unto them the more ample matter, to deride and scorne lesiu Christ and his Law. The Indians that are in war, feeing the intreatie vied toward the Indians that are in peace: would choose raiber to die once for all, then to endure sundrie deaths beeing under the command of the Spanish. I know this by experience, most victorions Calar . che.

refar, Oc. from the flaughters of the mischieuous Spaniards. And hee calleth the Indians in peace, those which after having loft an infinite of their people, by the Maffacres , have beene thralled into the Tyrannicall and horrible seruitude aforesaid, and whereof in the end they haue beene fined out, desolated, and slaine, as appeareth by that which hath beene faid by the Bishoppe, which notwithstanding speaketh but little, in comparison of that which

they have juffered.

The Indians in that Countrie have accustomed to say, if when they are travelled and driven vo the Mountaines loden, they happen to fall downe, and to faint for feeblenefle, and for paine: for at that time they lay on vpon them blowes with their feet and with their flaues, and they breake their teeth with the pummels of their Swords, to make them rife, and march on without taking of breath, with these words, Out open thee, what a Villaine are thou? they ! (Ifay) the Indians, for their parts are wont to fay, I can no more: will me bere right. I doe desire to die heere : and this they say with great fighes, and being scarce able to speake, for having ther heart drawne together, declaring a great anguish and dolour.

of the Pronince of Carthagene.

His Province of Carthagene, is situate vnder, and a fiftie leagues distant from the same of Saint Martha, towards the West, confining with the Province of Cen, vnto the Gulph of Araba: which are a hundred leagues all along the Sea-side, and is a great Countrie within Land towards the South. Their Protinces lince the yeare 1458 or ninetic nine, vis.) till now have beene euil entreated , martyred , massacred , desolated like vnto that of Saint Martha.

of the Coast of Pearles, and of Paria, and of the Ile of the Trinitie.

Rom the Coalt of Paris, vnto the Gulfe of Parisfields, without forth, which are two hundred leagues: the Spanish have wrought great and strange destructions, rioting you that people, and taking aline as many as they could, to the end they might fell them for flaves: and oftentimes making them prifoners against the afforance and the promile of friendship made vn-to them. It cannot be well told, nor particularly exprest, the stundie kindes and greinous vexations, wrongs, hurts, and spoiles, which those people, indured at the Spaniards hands, from the yeere 1510. vntill this present. I will onely rehearse two or three acts, by the which it may be judged of the rest, innumerable and excessive, and worthy all torments and fire.

In the He of the Trinute, which is farre greater and more fertile then the He of Sicile, and ioyneth with the firme Land of the Coaft of Paria, and where the people are the best disposed, and most enclined to vertue in their kind, of all the Indians, as they went, there a Captaine Rouer in the yeare, 1510. accompanied with fixtie or feuentie other pettie Theeues well appointed: they published among the Indians by Proclamations, and other publishe Summons, that they should come and dwell and line with them in that Ile. The Indians received them as their owne bowels and babes : and as well the Lords as Subjects serued them with exceeding readintle, 62 bringing them to eate from day to day, as much as might fuffice to feed, as many moe people. For this is the liberalitie of all thefe Indians of the new World, to bestow on the Spaniar droi all that they have in great abundance.

The Spanish build a great house of Timber in the which the Indians should dwell alrogether.

for the Spanish would have it so, that there should bee one only house for all, and no more to compaffe that, which they had alreadie premeditate to doe, and did it. When they laid the Thatch you the binding stages or sparres, and had alreadie couered to the height of two mens length, to the end that those that were within might not see those that were without, vnder colour to halten forward the worke, that it might bee the fooner dispatched, they fet a great number of people within, the Spaniards deciding themselves, the one part of them being beflowed without, compatting the house round about with their weapons, because of those that might get forth, the other part of them presse into the house : Thus laving hands on their Swords, they beganne to threaten the Indians naked as they were, to kill them if they did to firre, and then bound them. And those which fled they hewed them in pieces : Howbeit some of the Indians which fled, both of the hurt and not hurt, with others that had not come within the house, tooke their Bowes and Arrowes and assembled themselves in another house, about an hundred or two hundred persons : And as they kept the gate, the Spaniards fet fire on the house, and burned them aliue. After with their purchale, which might bee of an hundred or fourescore persons of them which they had bound: they get them to the lle of Saint Ibbn, where they fold the one moitie, and thence to the lle of Hispaniola: where they sold the other moitie. As I reprehended the Captaine for this notable Treason, at the same time, and at the samelle of Saint lobn, he made an answere: Sir, quiet your selfe for that matter. So haue they commanded me to doe, and given me instruction which sent me : that if I could not take them by warre, 20 I should take them under countenance and colour of peace. And in truth the Captaine told mee that in all his life, he neuer had found Father nor Mother, but in this Ile of Trinitie, in respect of the friendly courselies the Indians had shewed him.

At another time, the Religious Friars of Saint Dominickes Order, beeing determined to goe preach, they received them as Angels conne from Heaven : and heard with great affection, attention, and willingnefle such words as the Religious at that time were able to give them to vnderstand, more by tignes then otherwise, for they knew not the tongue. It came to passe that there arrived there another ship, after that the ship in which the Religious men came was departed thence, and the Spanift in this Veffell, keeping their Deuillish cultome, by suttletie without the knowlede of the Religious, carried away the Lord of the Countrie called Alfonfo: were it

30 that Friars had given him this name, or else others. For the Indians love and defire to beare the name of the Christians, defiring incontinent that it may be given them even before they know any thing, that they may be baptized. They induced fraudulently this Don Alfonfo to come aboord their thip with the Ladie his wife, and other persons, making semblance to goe about to feath them. In the end there entred seventeene persons, together with the Lord and his Ladie: the Lord truiting that the Religious persons being entred into his Countrie, would keepe the Spaniards from doing any wrong : for otherwise hee would never have put himselfe in the hands of the Spanish. The Indians therefore thus being in the ship, the traiterous Spaniards hoised failes, and away they went to Hiftaniola with them, there felling them for flaues. All the Countrie feeing that their Lord and Ladie were carried away, they runne to the Religious men, purpo-40 fing to kill them. The poore men appealed the Indians in the best manner they could, saying that they would write to them at Hilpaniela by the first ship that went, and would take such care

and order in the matter, that their Souereigne should bee restored them againe with those that were in his company. God fent immediately a ship thither, and they wrote to the Spanish Relia gious men that were in the Ile of Hispaniola. They cry out, and call Heauen and Earth witnesse against them, both first, and fundrie times after: But the Iudges of the audience, would neuer give them audience to doe them Iustice, for becaute themselves had part in the bootie of the In. dians, which the Tyrants had so against all right and reason taken. The two Religious men, which had promifed the Iudians of the Countrie, that their Lord Don Alfonso, with others should come home with the rest within foure moneths, seeing that they came not neither in foure 50 nor eight made themselues readie to the death, and to give their life, which they had gaged

before they came out of Spaine, if neede should bee, and in that fore the Indians tooke vengeance on them in killing them infilly, notwithstanding that they were innocent: Searill Friera for because that they thought, that the Religious men had beene the occasion of this killed for o-

Another time, by reason of the great Tyrannies and execrable acts of the cursed ones,

bearing the name of Christians, the Indians slue other two Religious men of Saint Dominickes Order, and one of Saint Francis. Whereof I can be a good witnesse for that I escaped at the time miraculously from the same death, of the which it should be a hard matter to intreat, and would be to amaze men, by reason of the grieuousnesse and horriblenesse of the case. Wherefore I will 60 not lay it abroad (for being too testious) untill his time, and at the day of sudgement it shall bee more euident, when God thall take vengeance of the Theeueries fo horrible and to abominable as are done by those which beare the name of Christians against the Indians.

Another time in those Prounces at the Cape of the Codera, (as they call it) there was a Towns, the Lord whereof was named Higneroto a name either proper to the person, or it may Qqqqqq 2

be common to the Lords of the place. This Lord was so bounteous, and his people so verticone and feruiceable, that as many Spaniards as came thither by flip, they found there good entertainment, meate, lodging, all cheering, and refreshing. This taid Lord had also delivered many from death of those which were fled thither out of other Prouinces, where they had rioted and tyrannized, and come thither ficke, and halredead for hunger, whom they refreshed, and afterward fent them away fafe, to the Ile of Pearles, where there were Spansards, and might have flaine them if he had would, without that euer any should have knowne it. And shortly to fav the Spanish did call the Subjects of Higurroto, the House and Harbour of every body. A Catiffe Tyrant adulted himselfe to out-rage that people also, when as they thought themselves sure enough : and getting him to a ship , he had there innited a great number of people to come a 10 boord her as they were accustomed to doe, and to trust the Spaniards. A great number of people being entred into her, men, women, and children, hee hoyfed failes, and went to the The of Saint John, where he fold them all for flaues. I came at the fame inftant to the He of Saint John, and I faw the Tyrant, and vinderstood what he had done. He had destroyed all that Townthin; whereby he did great harme to all other his fellow Tyrants, wonted to rob, and roue all along those Coasts, intomuch as they had in abomination this act to hideous, being bereft there. by of their Harbour, and house of retire, as ordinary and familiar viito them as it had beene their owne home and house.

Two Millions of itolnel n-

They have fingled out at times from all this Coaft, the which was very well peopled wnto the Iles of Saint John and Hifpaniola, aboue two Millions of foules, feifed vpon by their purchases in 20 theening and robbing : which also every one of them they have flaine not long after, by thrufling them into the Minerals and other tormoiles, bendes the great numbers there were therealreadie before time, as we have abouefaid. It is a tried case, that they neuer conuey away their shippings of Indians so robbed and pur-

fage at Sea,

chafed as I have laid, but that they cast the third part into the Sea, besides those which they slay, when they will fort them to themselves for their chaffer. The cause is, that when as they will by all meanes attaine to the end which they have proposed to themselves: they have need of a great number of people, for to draw a great deale of money, according to the quantitie of the flanes; and they prepare but a very small deale of sustenance and water, to serue but a few perfons ; to the end that those Tyrants whom they cal Purneyours of the Prips should not spend them 30 much. And there is but even scarse enough, faue to serve the Spaniards turne which goe a roung and robbing : and there is alwaies wanting for the poore Indians. Wherefore also they die for hunger and thirst : and then there is none other remedie but to east them ouer the boord into the Sea. And verily a man among them did tell me, that from the Ile of Lucayos, where had beene wrought great flaughters in this manner, vnto the I fle of Hilpaniela, which are fixtie or feuentie leagues there trended a ship all alongst, without that it had enther Compasse or Mariners Card being guided onely by the tracke of dead Indians carkasses floating upon the Seas, of them which had bin cast in. And after they be landed in the lle, whither they bring them to make sale of them it is to make a heart to yearne of whofosuer, have he never fo lit le compation to behold them naked and famished, fall downe and faint for hunger and thirst, women, and aged men, and 40

Manner of

Afterwards they soone after separate them, as it were Lambes, the fathers from the children, and the wives from the husbands, in making troupes of them of ten or twentie persons, and so cast lots on them, to the end, thole Purneyours should take their share, which are those who doe rigge and furnish two or three ships for the Nauie of those Tyrants, seasing upon all they come by, and pulling the poore men out of their owne housen. And looke when the lot falleth woon the flocke where there were among them any old or ficke person, the Tyrant to whom the same the north white the Denil take the old Graybeard, why does thou give him nee, to the end I should see the close to the send I should see him? And this sick Rasad, what have I to doe that hee should fall out to my let: 10 (3)

the end, I (bould be his Physician to cure him? The tyrannie which the Spanish exercise over the Indians, to fish for Pearles, is one of the cruelleft things that is in the World. There is no hell in this life, nor other desperate state in this Pearle-fifting. World, that may be compared vinto it: although that the Trade of Gold finding, be in his kind, very grieuous, and very miterable. They let them into the Sea, three, foure, or fine fathome forth downeright under water, from the morning vatill Sun-fet, where they are continually flitting without flint, to plucke Oyfters, in the which are engendred the Pearles. They lurge vp aboue the waters, with a Net full of Oysters to take breath : where standeth readic a Spenish Tormentor, in a little Cocke Boate, or a Brigantine, and if the poore wretches flay neuer jolittle while to rest themselves: they all to be buffet them with their fists, and draw them by the haire into the water to returne to their fifting. Their fullenance is fift, and the fame very file 60 which containeth the Pearles, and the bread Cacabi, or some Maiz, which are the kinds of bread of that Countrie : the one of very flender nourishment, the other is not easie to bee made into bread, of the which also, they neuer gue them their belly full. The beds that they lodge them in a nights, is to fet them by the heeles, their bodies recovling on the cold ground, in a paire of

flockes for feare of running away. Sometimes they are drowned in the Sea, and at their fifthing and travell picking of Pearles, and never rife vp againe about the water; because the * Bunches * Sharker and whirlepooles doe kill them and eate them.

It is impossible, that men should be able to live any long season winder the water without taking breath, the continual cold piercing them, and to they die commonly, parbraking of bloud at the mouth, and of the bloudy fluxe, caufed by the cold. Their baires, which by nature are cole blacke, alter and become after a branded ruffet, like to the haires of the Sea-welues. The Salta peter preaketh out of their shoulders, in such fort, that they seeme to bee a kinde of monsters in

the shape of men, or elfe some other kinde of men. They dispatched in ridding about this in-10 Supportable travell, or rather to Speake rightly, this devilish torment, all the Lucatan Indians which were in the lies, having favoured this gaines, and every Indian was worth whto them a fittie, or an hundred Castillans. They made an open Marc of them, notwithstanding it were inhibited them, by the Magistrate otherwise vimercifull : for the Lucasens were good swimmers. They also, about these things have slaine a number of the people of other Provinces.

of the River Yuia pari.

Here runneth through the Province of Paris, a River named Tais Pari, more then two hundred leagues within land from the head. There entred the fame River, an volucky tyrant, a 20 great many leagues voward, in the yeare 1 c29, with four hundred men, or more : which there wrought great flaughters, burning aliue, and putting to the edge of the fword, an infinite fort of Indians, which were in their lands and houses, doing hurt to no creature, and therefore secures and miltruling nothing.

In the end hee died an evill death, and his Nauie was disparaged : aloeit that other tyrants there were which tucceeded him in his mischieuousnesses and tyrannies; and vet at this day this ther they goe, destroying, and flaying, and plunging into Hell the foules for whom the Sonne of God fhed his bloud.

Of the Realme of Venefuela.

He yeere 1 526, the King our Soueraigne, being in uced by finister informations and per-I (wallons damageable to the State, as the Spaniards have alwaies pained themselves to conseale from his Maiette the damages and di honours which Gol and the foules of men, and his State doeth receive in the Indies: granted and committed a great R alme, greater then all Spaine (Venefuela, with the government and entire jurifdiction) vnto certaine Dutch Merchants, with certaine capitulations and conventions accorded betweene them.

These same entring the Countrey with three hundred men : they found the people very amiable, and meeke as Lambes, as they are all in those parcs of the Indies, vntill the Spanish doe outrage them. These set upon them without comparison a great deale more cruelly, hen any of the other tyrants, of the which wee have spoken before: shewing themselves more vanaturall and fierce, then raging Tigres, or Wolves, or ramping Lions. There have layd defolate and deffroyed more then foure hundred leagues of most terrile land, and therein of Prounces exceeding and wonderfull, faire Valleyes to the breadth of forty leagues, and Bournes very great, full of prople and of Gold. They hau: flaine, and wholly discomfitted great and divers Nations, fo farre forth as to abolish the Languages wonted to bee spoken, not leaving alive that could skill of them: valeffe some one or other, who had hid themselves in the caues and bowels of the earth, ficeing the dint of the fword, fo raging and plaguing. They have flaine destroyed, and fent to Hell by divers and strange manners of cruelties and vngodlinesies, more (I suppose) then foure or fine millions of foules : and yet at this present they ceaffe not to doe the same by in- Foure or fine 50 finite outrages, spoyles and slaughters, which they have committed, and doe commit daily vnto in Venezuela.

They tooke the Lord Soueraigne of all the Province, without all cause, onely to be reaue him of his Gold, giving him also the torture: which Lord vinbound himselfe, and escaped from them into the Mountaines, wherefore also the Subjects rose, and were in a mutinie, hiding themselves vpon the Mountaines, among it the hedges and bushes. The Spaniards make after to chale them, and having found them, commit cruell maffacres, and as many as they take alive, they fell them in port fale for flaues. In Jiuers Provinces, yea in all where they became before that they tooke the Soueraigne Lord, the Indians went to receive them with longs, and dances, and with prefents of Gold in great quantitie. The payment made them, was, to bee put to the edge of the o fword, and hewen in pieces. One time, as they went to receive the Spanish in the fashion abouefaid : the Dutch Captaine tyrant caufed to bee put in a thatched house a great number of people, and hakled in pieces. And being on high, neere the top of the house, certaine beames, which divers had got vpon, avoyding the bloudy hands and fwords of those people (O mercia

leffe beaits) the deuilish man, fent to put to fire, whereby as many as there were, were burned Qqqqqq 3

aliue. By this meanes the Countrie remayned very defart, the people fleeing into the Mountaines, where they hoped to faue themselves.

They came into another great Province, in the confines of the Province and Realme of Saint Martha, where they found the Indians peaceable in their Burroughs, and in their houses, doing their bulinelle: they continued a long time with them, eating their store, and the Indians ferued them, as if they had to receive of them their life and fafeguard, supporting their continual oppreffions, and vivall outragiousnelles, which are intolerable : belides that one Spanis glutton, eateth more in one day, then would fuffice an whole houshold of more then ten Indians. They gave them at that time, a great quantitie of Gold, of their owne good-will, over and befides, other feruices innumerable, which they did voto them. At the end as thefe tyrants would in depart the place, they admifed to pay them for their lodging, in this manner.

The Almaine tyrant Gouernour, commanded to take juch Indians as they could, with their wives and children, and that they should shut them vp within an inclosure, letting them know. that who fo would come forth, and be let goe free, that he should redeeme himselfe at the pleafure of the vniuft Gouernour: in giving so much Gold for himselfe, so much for his wife, and fo much for every poll of his children. And yet to prefe them the more, he commanded to give them nothing to eate, virill fuch time as they had performed the quantitie of Gold inflicted them for their ransome. Many sent to their houses for Gold, and bought out themiclues as they were able, and those same were deliuered, and went abroad about their businesse to get their liuing. The tyrantient certaine Spanish thieues and robbers, to goe take them againe the second 20 time, after they had beene redeemed. They are carried to the percloie, and there wrung with hunger and thirit, to the end, that they should yet once againe pay for their freedome, And there were many amongst them, which were taken and rantomed two or three fundry times. Others which had not to gue, for because they had all they had, hee let them within the toyle die for hunger. And in this manner hath beene destroyed a Pronince very rich of people and gold, the which hath a Vale or Bourne of fourtie leagues, where hath beene brent a Burrough of the receit of a thouland housholds.

This Tyrant resolued with himselfe to pierce farther into the Countrey, with a great defire to discouer on that side, that Hill of Pers. By occasion of which accurred Voyage both hee and others carried forth with them, Indians infinite, loden with two or three quintals 30 weight, and being enchained. If any were weake and weary, fainting for hunger, or travelling, they cut incontinent his head off euen with the collar of the chaine that yoked them: because they should not need to vnhamper the others that went with the same collars about their neckes, and so tumbled the head on the one side, and the body on the other. And the lock of him that had fofayled was distributed and bestowed upon others. To tell of the Prouinces, which hee hath layed defart, and the Townes and places which hee hath brent, for all the houles are thatched, and to number the Nations which hee hath slaine, and the cruelties, and murders particular, which hee had committed by the way, it would bee a thing scarse credible: howbeit very true and wonderfull. In this tame very course and steppes marched sithence the other tyrants, who came from the laid Venefuela, and others of the Province of Saint Marba, 40 with the selfe same holy intention to discouer the same sacred golden Palace of Peru: and found the whole Countrie in length more then two hundred leagues fo burned, dispeopled, and spoyled, having beene before most notably peopled, and most fertile, as hath beene faid, that themselves as very tyrants and sauage beasts as they were, wondered and stood aftonished to see the trackes of the destructions so lamentable, wheresoeuer he had passed.

All these things have beene given in evidence with the depositions of many witnesses the Attorney of the Councell of the Indies, and the euidences are kept amongst the Records of the fame Councell: and yet have they never burnt alive, any of those execrable tyrants. Those Provinces of Venesacla with the others which they have laid waste, and dispeopled more then foure hundred leagues forthright, as hath beene faid, is a region the molt bliffetull, and the richeft 50 of Gold, and was the best peopled of any in the world: in such fort, that they have disturned from the Kings Coffers, and occasioned the lose in this Realme of about two millions of rent, within feuenteene yeeres fithence by palt, that these enemies of God and the King have begunne

to destroy it : neither is there any hope that ever those losses will be repaired.

These seventeene yeeres they have tent by Sea a great number of thips loden and stuffed with Indians, to make file of them as flaues at Saint Marsha, at the lles of Hiff aniola, and of lamages. and at Saint lobus Ile, moe then one million: and doe lend daily, as now this yeere 1542; the Court of the Audience Royall not withflanding established, for, and at Hispaniela, tight well ier ing all this, and diffimuling to fee it, yea, favouring and supporting all the matter: as likewife they have had their eyes blinded at all the other tyrannies and ranlackings infinite, which have 60 beene done in all this coaft of the Firme land which are about four hundred leagues, the which have beene and now are vinder their jurifdiction, like vinto Venefuela, and Saint Marcha; all which the faid Court might very well have empeached and remedied.

Of the Proninces of the firme land, or quarter that is called Florida.

men were an TNto these Provinces went three tyrants at three divers times since the yeere 1510. or 1511. Lithhere Atthere to put in vie the acts which others, and two of them from among themselves have com- ter firm Lucas Ithere to put in vie the acts which others, and two of them from along them to the pet to the indians: to the end to afpire to high degrees, in no respect conmitted in other perions, higher then their merits in the Common-wealth could conceine, with Pampbilo de the bloud and destruction of their neighbours: and they are dead all three of an euill death, and Norance with their houses likewile have beene destroyed with them, the which they had builded in times past, 400. And their nomes macwire markind, as I can be a fufficient witnesse of all three, and their memory is tourthly Fedinardo de Solo now abolished from of the face of the earth, as if they had neuer beene in this world.

The fourth tyrant, that came last in the yeere 2538. cunningly adulted, and being fully fur- formelay, and nished; it is three yeeres since there is no tidings concerning him. Sure he is one of the notori- they which is, oufest and beit experimented amongst them that have done the most hurts, mischieues, and de le. st, 600 cn. fructions in my Realmes with their conforts : wherefore I beleeue that God hath giuen him whole flories like end vnto the others.

of the River of La Plata, that is to fay, Of Silver.

20 C Ithence the yeere, one thousand five hundred, and two or three and twenty : certaine Cap-Draines made three or foure Voyages vp the River of Plata, where there are great Provinces Secheforein and Realmes, and Nations well ordered and endued with understanding. In generall wee vn- schmidel. derstood, that they have made there great butcheries and invisions: but like as this Counter is farre discoasted from the Indies most samous, so we are not able, to quote the notablest points in particular.

Of the mighty Realmes, and large Prouinces of Peru.

TN the years 1531, went another great tyrant with certain other conforts, to the Realmes of 1) Pers, where entring with the fame title and intention, and with the fame proceedings as all the rest before gone, foral much as he was one of them, which had of long time been exercised in all kindes of cruelties and murders, which had beene wrought in the firme land, fichence the veere 1510. hee tooke encouragement to accrue in cruelties, murders, and robberies: being: a man without loyal tie and truth, laying waste Cities and Countries, bringing them to nought. and etterly vindoing them by flaying the Inhabitairts, and being the cause of all the euils, which enfued in that Countrie.

He flue and laid waste at his first arrivall with a mischiefe certaine boroughes, from whom he pillaged a great quantitie of Gold. In an lland neere to the same Provinces, named Pagna, well peopled and plealant, the Lord thereof with his people received them as it had beene Angels 40 from heaven : and fix moneths after, when as the Spanish had eaten vp all their prouision : They discovered also vnto them the corne which they kept vnder ground, for themselves, their wives. and their children, against a dry time and barren : making them offer of all, with trees plentituil to fpend and eate at their pleasure. The recompence in the end which they made them, was to put to the edge of the Sword and Lance, a great quantitie of those people. And those whom they could take aliue, they made flaues : with other cruelties great and notable which they committed, dispeopled as it were all that Ile.

From thence they make to the Prouince of Tumbala, which is in the firme land, where they flay and destroy as many as they could come by. And because all the people were fled as affrighted by their horrible acts, they faid that they made an infurrection, and rebelled against the King of Spaine. This tyrant had this policie, and kept this order of proceeding, that vnto all to those whom he tooke, or vato others which presented him with Gold and Silver, or other things which they had : he commanded them to bring more, vntill such time as he perceived that either they had no more, or that they brought him no more. And then he would fay, that he accepted them for the vallals and lieges of the King of Spaine, and made much of them : and would cause it to be proclaimed at found of two Trumpets, that from thenceforth they would take them no more, and that they would doe them no manner harme at all: fetting it downe for good ande lawfu!!, all whatfoeuer he had robbed from them.

A few dayes after the King and Emperour of those Realmes, named Atabaliba, came accompanied with a number of naked people, bearing their ridiculous armour, not knowing neither 6) how Swords did carue, nor Speares did pierce, nor Horles did run, nor who or what were the Spaniards. Hee commeth to the place where they were, taying: Where are these Spaniards? Let them come, I will not stirre a foote, till they fatisfie me for my Subjects whom they have flaine, and my boroughs which they have dispeopled, and for my wealth, which they have bereaued me.

Iuan Ponce de men were all

ven haue betore. Ot Sote was no newes 41.1542, when

A million of flaucs.

The Spaniards fet against him, and slew an infinite fort of his people: they tooke him also in person, who came carried in a Litter borne vpon mens shoulders. They treate with him, to the Fifteene Milli- end that he should ransome himselfe. The King offereth to performe foure millions of Castillans. and performeth fifteene, they promife to release him: notwithstanding in the end, keeping nor Atsbalips ran- faith nor truth (as they never kept any in the Indies, vnto the Indians) they laid to his charge altogether vntruely, that by his commandement the people affembled. The King answered, that in all the Countrie there moved not a leafe of a tree, without his good will : that if there affembled any people, they were to believe that it was by his commandement, and as touching himtelfethat he was prisoner, and they might slay him.

All this notwithstanding, they condemned him to be burnt aliue: but at the request of some 10 certaine, the Captaine caused him to be strangled; and being strangled, hee was burned. This King vn lerstanding his sentence, said : Wherefore will you burne we? What trespaffe baue I done yee? Did not you promise me to set me at libertie, if I game you the Gold? And have I not performed more then I promifed? Seeing you needes will have it fo, fend me to your King of Spaine: fpeaking other things, to the great confusion and detestation of the great wrongfulnesse that the Spaniards vied, whom in the end they burned. Here let be confidered the right and title of this warfare, the imprisonment of this Prince, the sentence, and the execution of his death, and the conficience, whereby they possesse great treasures, as indeede they have robbed in those Realmes from this King and other fenerall Lords infinite.

As touching the innumerable cruelcies, and notable, for the mischiefes and enormities withall 20 committed in the rooting out of those peoples by them, who call themselves Christians: I will here rehearle some certaine, the which a Frier of Saint Francis order saw at the beginning, and the same certified voider his name and signe: sending them into all those quarters, and amongst others into this Realme of Caftile, whereof I retaine a Copie in my keeping, in the which it is

Teftimony of Frier Marke touching Pi-3079 and the

mer Ilands.

I Frier Marke, of the order of Saint Francis, commissivic oner the other Friors of the Same Order in the Provinces of Peru, and who was one of the first religious men, which entred unto the said Provinces with the Spaniards : doe fay, bearing true testimonie of certaine things, the which I have seene with mine Spanior swhich eyes in that Countrie, namely, concerning the entreatie and conquests made over the natural inhabitants firft entred Per of the Countrie: firft of all I am an ere witneffe, and have certaine knomledge, that those Indians of Peru, & are a people the most kinde bearted that hath beene seene among all the Indians, being courteous in conner fation, and friendly unto the Spaniards. And I fam them gine to the Spanish in abundance, Gold. Silver, precious stones, and all that was asked them, and that they had, doing them all kinde of service lawfull. And the Indians never reclied forth to warre, but kept them in peace fo long time, at they game them not occasion, by their enill entreating of them and their cruelties, but contraring received them with all amitie and honour in their boroughes, in giving them to ease, and as many flaves manifind and womenkinde, as they demanded for their fernice.

Item, I am witneffe, that wethout that the Indians gaue occasion : the Spanish as foone as they were entred the land, after that the great Cacique Atabalipa, had given to the Spanish more then two millions of Gold, and had put into their power the whole Countrie without resistance, incomment they bur- 40 ned the faid Atabalipa, which was Lord of the whole Countrie. And after him they burnt his captains generall Cochilimaca, who had come to the Governour in peace with other Lords. In the like manner also a few dayes after they burned a great Lord named Chamba, of the Province of Quito, without any fault at all, and without having given the least occasion that might be. In like manner they burned oniustly Schappera Lord of the Canaries ". Also they burnt the feete of Aluis a great Lord among stall * A people of those which were in Qitto, and caused him to endure fundry other torments, to make him tell where was the Gold of Atabalipa : of the which treasure, as it appeared, be knew nothing. good warriors,

Alfo they burnt in Quito Cofopanga, who was Gouernour of all the Provinces of Quito, which upon not of the Can the request to him first made by Sebastian of Bernalcafar, Captaine under the Conernour, was come to them in peace : and onely because he gave them not Gold so much as he demanded of him they harned him 30 with very many other Caciques and principall Lords. And for ought that I can understand, the intent of the Spaniards was, that there hould not be left aline one Lord in the whole Countrey.

Item, I certifie, that the Spaniards caused to affemble a great number of Indians, and locked them up in three great boufes, as many as could be pored in, and festing to fire, they burned them all, mubeut that they had done the least thing that might be, or had given to the Spanish the least occasion thereof · what soener. And it came to passe, that a Priest, who is named Ocanna, drew a yone Boy out of the fire, in the which he burned, which perceiving, another Spaniard tooke from out of his hands the Boy and flung him into the middest of the flames, where he was resolved into ashes together with others. The which Spaniard returning the same day to the Campe, fell downe dead suddenly, and mine admict was, be

Item, I affirme, to have feene with mine owne eyes, that the Spanish have cut the bands, the nofes, and the eares of the Indians, and of their women, without any other cause or surpose, saue onely that so it came into their fantaste, and that in so many places and quarters, that it fould be too tedious to tebearfe. And I have feene, that the Spanish have made their Mastives runne upon the Indians to rest them in pieces. And moreover, I have seene by them burnt so many houses, and whole boroughes, or townthiss, that I am not able to tell the number. Alfost is true, that they violently plucked the little infants fron the Mothers dagges, and taking them by the armes, did throw them from them as farre as thes could: Together with other enormities and cruelties without any canfe which gaue me aftonil ment to behold them, and would be to long to rehearfe them.

Item, I saw when they sent for the Caciques and other principall Indians, to come see them in prace, and affurance to them made, promising them [afe conduit : and incontinent as they were arrived, they burned them. They burned two whiles I was present the one in Andon and the other in Tumbala : and I could never prevaile with them to have them delivered from burning, preached I unto them never fo much. And in God and my conscience, for ought that ener I could perceine, the Indians of Peru, nener lift themselves up, nor never rebelled for any other cause, but for the entill entreating of the other side. at is manifelt unto enery one, and for infl cause : the Spaniarus destroying them tyrannoully against all reafon and suffice, with all their Countrie, working upon them fo many outrages, that they were determined to die, rather then to suffer much another time. Item, Ifay, that by the report of the Indians themselmes, there is yet more Gold bidden then is come to light, the which because of the wninstices and cruelties of the Spaniards, they would not discouer, neither ener will discouer, so long as they stall be so enill entreated, but will choose rather to dye with their fellowes. Wherein God our Lord bath beene highly trespassed against and the Kings Maiestie enill served, having beene defrauded in that, that his bigbnesse hath If (uch a Countrie, as hatb beene able to reelde suftenance to all Caltile : for the recoverie of which Coun-

20 trie, it will be a matter of great difficultie, dispence, and charges. All these hitherto are the formall words of the fand religious person : the which are also rati- Bishop of Mexfied by the Bilhop of Mexico, which witneffeth that the reuerend Father hath to his know- ico tift mony. ledge affirmed all the about faid. It is here to be confidered, that the good Father faith, that he faw those things. For tha , that he hath beene fiftie or an hundred leagues vp into the Countrie, for the space of nine or ten yeares, and at the very beginning, when there were not as yet but very few of the Spaniards : but at the ringing of the Gold, there were quickely gathered and Bocked this her foure or five thousand, which shed themselves forth over many great Realmes and Prounces, more then five hundred or fixe hundred leagues, the which Countrey hath beene throughly destroyed, they executing still the felfe same practites, and others more bat-20 barous and cruell.

Of a veritie, from that day vinto this present, there hath beene destroyed and brought to desolation moe foules then he hath counted ; and they have with leffe reverence of God or the King. and with leffe pittie then before, abolished a great part of the linage of mankinde. They have flaine voto this day in these same Realmes (and yet daily they doe flay them) moe then foure FoureMillions Millions of foules. Certaine dayes pailed, they pricked in shooting with darts of reedes to death flaine in Pers, a mightie Queene, wifcof Eling, who is yet King of that Realme, whom the Spaniards by laying &c. hands vpon him compelled to rebell, and in rebellion he perfifteth. They tooke the Queene his wife, and to as hath beene faid, flue her against all reason and instice, being great with childe as the was, as it was faid onely to vexe her husband withall.

of the new Realme of Granado.

VI thin the yeare 1539: there tooke their flight together sundry tyrants, flocking from Venesuela, from Saint Mariba, and from Cartbagene, to search for the Perous: and there were allo others which came downe from Pers it felfe to affay, to make a glade farther into the Countrie : And they found from beyond Saint Marthas and Carthagene three hundred leagues vp into the Countrie, fertile lands, and admirable Prounces, full of infinite people, kinde hearted like the rest, and very rich, as well of Gold as of precious stones, which they call Emeralds. Vnto the which Prouinces they gave the name of New Granado: for because that the tvrant which came first into this Countrey, was a Granadan, borne in our Countrey. A Gouer-

50 nour, for as much as he which robbed and flew in the new Realme of Granado, would not admit him for confort with him to rob and flay as did he : he procured an enquirie, and thereby euidence came in against him with fundry witnesses upon the fact of his slaughters, disorders, and murders which he had done, and doth as yet vnto this day, the processe of which enquirie, together with the euidences was read, and is kept in the Records of the Countell of the Indies.

The witnesses doe depose in the same enquirie, that the said whole Realme was in peace, the Indians feruing the Spaniards, giving them to eate of their labour, and labouring continually, and manuring the ground, and bringing them much Gold and precious stones, such as are Emeralds, 60 and all that which they could or had the Townes, and the Lordinips, and the people being diitributed among it the Spaniards every one his share : which is all that they studie for, for that, that it is their meane way to attaine to their last end and scope, to wit, Gold. And all being subdued to their tyrannie and accustomed bondage, the tyrant the principall Captaine which commanded ouer that Countrey, tooke the Lord and King of the Countrey, and detained him priBart, de las Casas his Booke of cruelties done in the Indies. LIB.VIII

foner fix or feuen moneths, exacting of him Gold and Emeralds without cause or reason at all. The faid King, who was named Bogata, for feare which they put him in , faid that hee would give them an houle full of Gold: noping that he should escape out of the hands of him which tormented him. And he fent Indians which should bring him Gold, and by times one after annther, they brought in a great quantitie of Gold and precious stones. But because the King did not give an whole house full of Gold, the Spaniards bid kill him : fithence that he did not accomplish that which he had promifed.

King Buzata tentenced. executed.

The tyrant commanding that this King should be arraigned before himselfe: They sommon and accule in this order the greatest King of all that Countrie, and the tyrant giveth sentence condemning him to be racked and tormented, if he doe not furnish forth the house full of Gold. In They give him the torture and the strapado with cords; they fling burning fewer vpon his naked belly; they lay on bolts vpon his feete, which were fastened to one stake, and gird his necke fast vnto another stake, two men holding both his hands, and so they set fire vnto his feete : and the tyrant comming vp and downe now and then, willeth him to have his death giuen him by little and little, if he made not ready the Gold. Thus they dispatched and did to death that Noble Lord in those torments, during the execution whereof, God manifelled by a figne, that those cruelcies displeased him, in confurning with fire all the towne where they were committed. All the Spaniards to the end to follow their good Captaine, and having none other thing to doe, but to hackle in peeces those poore innocents doe the like, tormenting with divers and fauge torments enery Indian, both Cacique or Lord of every people or peoples, with all their an flockes, that were committed to their charges: those faid Lords with all their subjects sening them, and giving them Gold and Emeraulds as many as they could, and as much as they had: Tormenting them onely to the end they should give them more Gold, and rich Minerals: thus they broyled and dispatched all the Lords of that Countrie.

For the great seare of the notorious cruelties that one of the pettie tyrants did vnto the Indiant, there transported immielfe voto the Mountaines, in flying so great crueltie, a great Lord name. Dayrama, with many of his people. For this they hold for their last remedy and refuge, if it might have prevailed them ought: and this the Spaniards call infurtection and rebellion. Which the Capraine head tyrant having knowledge of, he fendeth supplie of Souldiers vnto the faid cruell man (for whose cruelties sake, the Indians that were peaceable, and had endured in great tyrannies and muchiefes, were now gone into the Mountaines) to the end he should purfire them. Who, because it sufficeth not to hide them in the entrals of the earth, finding there a great multitude of people, flue and dispatched them, aboue fine hundred soules, what men, what women, for they received none to mercy. Also the witnesses depose, that the said Lord Datama, before that the Spaniards put him to death, came to the cruell man, and brought him foure or five thousand Castillans, the which notwithstanding he was murdered as a-

Another time many Indians being come to serue the Spaniards, and seruing them with humilitie and simplicitie, as they are accustomed to doe, reputing themselves affured : behold the Captaine of the towne where they ferued, who commeth by night, commanding that those Indian 40 should be put to the edge of the sword, when they had supped, and whiles that they were a fleepe, taking their rest after the toyle which they sustained the day time. And this he did, for that it feemed him necessary to doe this massacre, to the end to engrave an awe of himself in the hearts of all the peoples of that Countrie.

Another time the Captaine commanded to take an oathe of the Spaniards, to wit, how many every one had in his feruice of the Caciques, and principall Lords, and Indians of the meaner for; that incontinent they should be brought to the most open place of the Citie, where he commanded that they should be beheaded : thus were there at that time put to death foure or five hun-

dred foules. Moreoverthese witnesses depose concerning another of the pettie tyrants, that he had exere 10 cifed great cruelties in flaying, and chopping off the hands and nofes of many persons, aswell men as women, and destroying very much people. Another time the Captaine sent the selfe same cruell man with certaine Spaniards into the Province of Bogata, to be informed by the inhabitants what Lord it was, that was successour vnto the chiefe Lord , whom hee had made to die that cruell death in those torments spoken of before : Who running along the Countrie throughout many places, tooke as many Indians as he could come by, And for that he could not learne of them, what he was that succeeded that Lord, he mangled off some hands, he bid cast others, men and women vnto hungrie Mastiues, who rend them in peeces. And in this manner have beene delitroyed very many Indians, and Indiffes. One time, at the fourth watch of the night, he went to overrun Caciques or Governours of the land, with many of the Indians, which were in peace, 60 and held themselves affured (for he had given them his faith, and allorance that they should receiue no harme nor damage) vpon credit whereof, they were come forth of their holes in the Mountaines, where they had beene hill, to people Plaine, in the which food their Citie: thus being common without suspition, and trusting the affurance made, he tooke a great number, as

well men as women, and commanded to hold out their hands stretched against the ground, and himfelfe with a woodknife cut off their hands, telling them that he did on them this chastifement, for that they would not confesse where their new Lord was, which had succeeded in the charge of government of the Realme.

narge or government.

Another time for that the *Indians* gaue him not a coffer full of Gold, that this cruell Captaine required them: he fent men to warre vpon them: who cut off the hands and nofes of men and women without number. They cast others before their dogs being hunger bitten, and vied to the feare of feeding on flesh, the which dispatched and deuoured;

Another time the Indians of that Realme perceiving that the Spaniards had burnt three or 10 foure of their principall Lords, they fled for feare vp into a Mountaine, from whence they might defend themfelues against their enemies so estranged from all humanitie. There were of them by the testimonie of the witnesses foure or fine Indiant. This aboue said Captaine sent a great and notable tyrant, which exceeded farre most of those to whom he had given the charge to ransacke and waste, together with a certaine number of Spaniards, to the end that they should chastile the Indian rebels; as they would feeme to make them for that they were fled from a pestilence and flaughter fo intollerable. Well, so it is that the Spanife by force prevailed to get up to the Mountaine: for the Indians were naked without weapons. And the Spaniards cryed peace vnto the

Indians; aftering them, that they would doe them no harme : and that they of their parts should not warre any longer. Streight way as the Indians stinted from their owne defence, the vile cru-20 ell man sent to the Spaniards to take the forts of the Mountaine, and when they should get them to enclose within them the Iudians. They fet then like vnto Tygers and Lyons, voon these lambes so meeke, and put them to the edge of the sword, so long that they were faine to breath and rest themselves. And after having rested a certaine season, the Captaine commanded that they should kill and cast downe from the Mountaine, which was very high, the residue that were aliue; which was done. And these witnesses say, that they saw as it were a could of Indians call downe from the Mountaine, to the number by estimation of seven hundred men together, where they fell battered to peeces.

And to atchieue all his great crueltie, they fearched all the Indians that were hid among ft the bulhes : and he commanded to cut off their heads, at blockes ends; and fo they flue them and caft 30 them downe the Mountaines: yet could not be content himselfe with those faid things so cruell, but that he would make himfelfea little better knowne, augmenting his horrible finnes, when as he commanded that all the Indians men and women, which some private persons had taken aline (for every one in those massacres is accustomed to cull out some one or other mankinde and womankinde, to the end to become his feruants) should be put into a strawen house, saving and referring those, which seemed necessary to be employed in their service, and that there should be put to fire thus were there burned fortie or fiftie. Hee caused the reft to be flong to the carrion dogs, which rend them in peeces, and deuoured them.

Another time the selfe same tyrant went to a Citie called Cotta, and tooke there a number of Indians, and caused to be difmembred by his dogges, a fifteene or twenty Lords of the principall. 40 and cut the hands of a great multitude of men and women : which faid hands he hanged one by another on a pole, to the end the other Indians might fee that which hee had done vnto them. There were to hanged one by another threescore and ten paire of hands. Hee slifed off besides from many women and children their nofes.

No creature living and reasonable, is able to decipher the mischieses and cruell dealing of this fellow, enemy of God. For they are without number, neuer otherwise heard of, nor feene : those, I meane, which hee hath done in the land of Guatimala, and all about where he hath

The witnesses say for a surcharge, that the cruell dealings and slaughters which have beene committed, and are yet in the faid Realme of new Grenado, by the Captaines themselues in gerto fon, and by their confents given vnto all the other tyrants, wasters, and weeders of the nature of man, which were in his company, and the which hath laid all the Countrie wilde and waste, are such and so excessive, that it his Maiestie doe not take some order therein in some time (albeit that the flaughter and discomfirure of the Indians is done onely to bereaue: nem of their Gold, the which they have none of, for they have furrendred all that which they had) they will in a short time make an end of them so in such fort, that there will be no more Indians to inhabit the land, but that it will remaine in a wildernesse without being manured.

There are other great Prouinces, which bound vpon the faid Realme of new Grenado, which they call Popayin and Cali, and three or foure others, which contains more then fine hundred leagues of ground, which they have destroyed and desolated in the ame manner, as they have 60 done others, robbing and flaying with torments, and the enormities afore spoken of. For the land is very fertile, and those that come from thence now daily, doe report, that it is a ruefull thing to fee formany goodly Townes burned and laid defolar, as they might behold paffing vp and downe that way : to as there, where there was wor to be in one towne a thousand or two thousand households, they have not found fiftie, and the rest veterly ransacked and dispeopled.

And in some quarters they have found two or three hundred leagues of Land dispeopled and burned, and great Cities deliroyed. And finally, by that , that fithence into the Realmes of Peru. of the Province file of Quito, are entred farre into the Countrey fore and fell tyrants, as farre ac to the faid Realme of Grenado, and of Popayan, and of Cali, by the coast of Caribagene, and Arabe, and other accurred tyrants of Caribagene have gone to affault Quite, and moreover, afterwarde of the Rivers fide of Saint lobn, which is on the South fide, all the which have met to ione hands together in this exploit: they have rooted out and dispeopled about fixe hundred leagues of land, with the loffe of an infinite of foules , doing still the felfe fame to the poore wretches that remaine behinde, howfoeuer innocent they appeare to be.

After the ends of the flaughters and maffacres of the warres, they bring the people into the horrible bondage aboutlaid, and give them to the commandement of Deuils, to one an hundred Indians, to another three hundred. The commander Deuill commandeth, that there come before him an hundred Indians, which incontinent prefent themselves like Lambes. He causing forty or fifty among ft them to haue their heads cut off: fayth vnto the other there present, I will ferue you of the fame fauce, if you doe not me good feruice, or if fo be, that you goe out of my fight without my leave. That for the honour of God, all they that have read this piece of worke. or shall give it a reading, consider now, whether this act, so hideous, fell and vnnaturall, doe not exceed all cruelty and inequitie, that may bee imagined, and whether the Spaniards have any wrong offered them when a man calleth them Diuels, and whether were better, to give the Indians to keepe to the Deuils in Hell, or the Spaniards which are at the Indies.

After this I will rehearse another denilish part, the which I cannot tell whether it beelesse 20 cruell and voide of manhood, then are those of fauage beatts: that is, that the Spanifb which are in the Indies, dee keepe certaine Dogs most raging, raught and trained wholly to the purpose,to kill and rend in pieces the Indians. That let all those that are true Christians, yea, and also those which are not fo, behold, if ever there were the like thing in the whole world : that is, to feed thole Dogs, they leade about with them wherefoeuer they goe a great number of Indians in chaines, as if they were Hogs, and kill them, making a shambles of mans flesh. And the one of them williay to another, Lend mee a quarter of a villaine, to give my Dogs some meate, vntill I kill one next, allogether as if one thould borrowe a quarter of an Hogge or Mutton. There be others which goe forth a hunting in the morning with their curres, the which being re- to turned to eate, if another aske him: How have yee fped to day! they answere, Very well: for I have killed with my Dogs to day, fifteene or twenty Villacoes. All these diabolicall doings, with others like haue beene proued in the fuits of Law, that the tyrants haue had one of them against another. Is there any case more ougly or vnnatural!

I will here now deport me of this discourse, vitill such time, that there come other newes of things, in vngraciouinesse more notorious and remarkable (if it so bee, that there can beeany more grieuous) or vntill fuch time as we may returne thicher to behold them our felues anew, as we behold them for the space of two and forty yeeres continually with mine owne eyes : proteffing in a good conscience before God, that I doe beleeve, and I hold it for certaine, that the damages and loffes are io great, with the deftractions and ouerthrowes of Cities, maffacres and murders, with the cruelties horrible and ougly, with the rauins, iniquities and robberies, all the which things have beene executed amongst those people, and are yet daily committed in those quarters: that in all the things, which I have spoken and deciphered, as I was able the netrest to the truth: I have not said one of a thousand, of that which has h beese done, and is daily a doing at this prefent, bee it that you confider the qualitie, or bee it, that yee confider the

quantitie. And to the end that all Christians have the greater compassion of those poore innocents, and, that they complaine with me the more their perdition and destruction, and that they detell the greedineffe, loftineffe, and felneffe of the Spamb: that all doe hold it for a most vincounte veri-What conuer- tie, with all that hath beene abouelaid, that fithence the first Discouerie of the Indies untill now, 50 fions & know- the Indias, neuer did harme vnto the Spanifo in any place wherefoeuer, vntill fuch time, that ledge of God they first received wrongs and iniuries, being robbed and betrayed: but indeed did repute them to be immortal, supposing them to be descended from Heauen, and they received them for such, untill fuch time as that they gaue it forth manifeltly to be knowne by their doings, what they were, and whereto hey tended.

I will adioune hereunto this, that from the beginning unto this houre, the Spaniards have lad no more care to procure hat vnto those people should be preached the Faith of lefus Christ, then as if they had beene Curredogs, or other beatls : but in lieu thereof, which is much worldthey have forbilden by expressen eanes the religious men to doe it, for because that that feemed vnto them an high rance likely to be, to the getting of their Gold, and there riches which their 60 anarice foreglutted in. And at the day there is no more knowledge of God throughout the Indies, to wit, whether he be of timber, of the aire, or the earth, then there was an hundred yeeres agoe, excepting New Spaine, whither the religious men haue gone, which is but a little corner of the Indies : and to are they perished, and doe perish all with Faith, and without Sacraments.

I brother Bartholomen de las Cafas or Cafass, religious of the Order of Saint Dominicke, which by the mercy of God am come into this Court of Spaine, to fue that the Hell might bee withdrawen from the Indies, and that thefe innumerable foules, redeemed by the bloud of Iefus Christ. fhould not perifh for euermore without remedie, but they might know their Creator and be faned; also for the care and compassion that I have of my Countrey, which is Castile to the end that God destroy it not for the great sinnes thereof, committed against the Faith and his honour, and against our neighbours: for certaine mens sakes notably zealous of the glory of God. touched with compassion of the afflictions and calamities of others, followers of this Court: howbeit, that I was purposed to doe it, but I could not so some have done it, because of my con-10 tinual occupations, I atchieued this Treatife and Summarie at Valencia, the eight of December, teas, the force being mounted to the highest type of extremitie, and all the violences, tyrannies, deiolations, anguishes, and calamities abouefaid, spred ouer all the Indies, where there are Spaniards, although they be more cruell in one part then they be in another, and more fausge

Mexico and her confines are leffe euill intreated. In truth, there they cannot execute their outrages openly, for that there and not ellewhere, there is some forme of inflice, as slender as it is. For because that there also they kill them with deuilish tributes : I am in good hope, that the Emperour and King of Spaine, our liege Soueraigne Lord, Don Charles the fift of that name, who beginneth to have videritanding of the mitchiefes and treafons that there have beene . and 20 are committed against those poore people, against the will of God, and his owne, (for they have alwaies cunningly concealed the truth from him) will roote out those euils, and take some order for this new world that God hath given him, as vnto one that loueth and doeth justice : whose honour and prosperous estate Imperiall, God almightie vouchsafe to blesse with long life, for the benefit of his whole vniuerfall Church, and to the faluation of his owne Royall foule. Amen.

After having couched in writing the premises, I understood of certaine Lawes and Ordinances, which his Maiestie hath made about this time at Barcellone, Anno 1 42. in the moneth of Nouember, and the yeere following at Madrill: by the which Ordinances, there is order fet downe, as the case them seemeth to require : to the end, to cut off the mischieses and fins which are committed against God and our neighbours, tending to the veter ruine and perdition of this 30 new world, His Maiestie hath made these Lawes, after having holden many assemblies of persons of authoritie, of learning and confeience, and after hauing had disputations & conferences in Valladelid : and finally with the affent and admite of all those others which have given their admite in writing, and have beene found neerest approaching vnto the Law of Iefus Christ, and withall free from the corruption and foyle of the treasures sobbed from the Indians: the which treasures have foyled the hands, and much more the foules of many, overwhom those treasures and avarice have got the mafterie, and where hence hath proceeded the blinding, which hath caufed for to marre all without remorfe. These Lawes being published, the creatures of those tyrants, who then were at the Court, drew out fundry copies thereof (for it grieued them at the hearts : for that it leemed them that thereby there was a doore flut vp vnto them against their rauine and 40 extortion afore rehearfed) and dispersed them into divers quarters of the Indies. Those which had the charge to robbe, root out, and confume by their tyrannies, (euen as they had neuer kept any good order but rather disorder, such as Lucifer himselfe might have held) as they read those copies before the new Judges might come to execute their charge, knowing it (as it is faid, and that very credible) by those who vntill this time have suported and maintayned their crimes and outrages, to be likely that fuch execution should be vied of those Lawes: they ranne into a mutinie in such wife, as that when the good Iudges were come to doe their duties, they adulfed with themselves (as those which had lost the feare and love of God) to cast off also all shame, and obedience which they owe to the King, and so tooke vnto them the name of name of open and arrant traitors, behaving themselves as most cruell and gracelesse tyrants: and principally, 50 in the Realme of Pern, where presently this yeere 1442. are committed acts to horrible and frightfull, as neuer were the like, neither in the Indies, nor in all the world belides, not onely against the Indians, the which all or in a manner all are slaine, all those Regions being dispeopled: but also betwixt themselves by a just judgement of God, who hath permitted that they should be the Butchers one of an other of them. By meanes of the Support of this rebellion , none of the Samiards. all the other parts of this new World would obey those Lawes: But under colour of making supplication to his Maiesty to the contrary, they have made an insurrection as well as the others. For that it irketh them to leave their estates and goods which they have vsurped, and to vabinde the bands of the Indians, whom they detaine in a perpetuall captiuitie. And there where they 60 ceale to kill with the fword, readily and at the inftant, they kill them a little and a little, by perfonall flaueries, and unjust charges and intolerable. That which the King could not hitherunto let: for because that they all, great and little, roue and robbe, some more, some lesse: some ouertly, and some couertly, and under the pretence of serning the King: dishonour God, and

Refer

robbe the King.

Part of a Letter written by one which faw things mentioned.

Ee gave licence to put them to the Chaine, and in bondage: That which they did: and the Cap.
Laine led after hims three or foure drones of these persons enchained: and in this doing, he procu. red not that the Countres (hould bee inhabited and peopled (as had beene consenient should have done) but robbing from the Indians all their victuals they had, the inbornes of the Country were reduced to (such an extremetie, that there were found great numbers dead of famine in the high-wayes. And the Such an extremitie, that there were joining great mainter with the carriage of the Spaniards, hee was the Indians comming and going to and fro the coast, laden with the carriage of the Spaniards, hee was the To howfand death by thefe meanes of about ten thoufand. For not one that arrived at the very coast escaped death : by reason of the excessive beate of the Countrey.

After this, following the same traft and way, by the which Iohn of Ampulia was gone , bee sent the Indians which be had purchased in Quito, a day before him, to the end they should discouer the bourges of the Indians, and foodld pillage them, that when be came with bis maynie be might finde bis bootie ready. And those Indians were his owne mates : of the which such a one had two hundred, such a one three hundred, and fuch a one a bundred : according to the baggage that every one of them bad: which indians came to yeeld themselues to their Masters with all that they had robbed.

After that the faid Captaine was returned from the coast, hee determined to depart from Ouito. and to goe feete the Captaine Iohn de Ampudia, leaning thereto moe then two hundred of Footmen and Horsemen, among it whom were a great many Inhabitants of the Citie of Quito. Unto those Inhabitants tants the Captaine cane licence to carrie with them the Cacikes, that were escheated them in sharing. with as many Indians as they would. That which they did: and Alfonio Sanches Nuita carried forth with him his Cacike, with moe then an hundred Indians besides : and in like manner Peter Cibo. and bis Cousin: and they led out more then an hundred and fifty with their wines : and sundry also feed out their children, because that in a manner every one died for hunger. Also Moran Inhabitant of Popayan, sarried out moe then two bundred persons. And the like did all the rest, Citizens and Souldiers, enery one after his abilitie: the Souldiers crawing that they might base licence ginen them to captine these Indians men and women, which they carried forth: the which was granted them untill the death of the faid captimes, and those deceased, to take as many more.

When they departed out of the Pronince of Quito, they carried out moe then fixe thousand Indians. men and women, and of all those there never returned home into their Countrie twenty persons. For they died all through the great and excessive travell, which they made them indure in those broyling Comm tries contrary to their nature. It bappened at that sime, that one Altonfo Sanches, whom the fuld Captaine fent for Chieftaine ouer a certaine number of men into a Pronince there, met with a good company of women, and young boyes laden with villuals : who flaved waiting for them without moning from the place to give them of that which they had, and having so done, the Captaine commanded that they build be put to the Sharpe of the Sword.

It came to passe also, that at the time that the faud Captaine came into the Province of Lili, to a Towne called Palo, neere unto the great Riner, where hee found the Captaine Iohn de Ampudia, 40 which was gone before to discouer, and pacifie the Countrie : the faid Ampudia kept a Citie by him promided of a Garrison, in the name of his Maiestie, and of the Marques Francis of Pizarro: and had fet oner them for Governours ordinary, one Petre Solano of Quennoues, and eight Connsellours, and all the rest of the Countrie was in peace, and shared out amongst them. And as bee knew that the faid Captaine was in the faid River, bee came to fee him, with a great number of the Inbabr sants of the Countrie, and peacefull Indians, laden with victuals and fruits. Shorely after also all the neighbour Indians came to fee him, bringing him food. There were the Indians of Xamundi, and of Palo, and of Soliman, and of Bolo.

Now because that they brought no Mahis which he would have, he sent a great number of Spaniards with their Indians, to goe fourch for Mahis: commanding them to bring some where some they found so any. So went they to Bolo, and to Palo, and found the Indians men and women in their houses in peace and the faid Spaniards with those that were with them, tooke them, and robbed their Mahis them Gold, and Conerings, and all that they had, and bound many.

Wherefore, they seeing that the Captaine kept no Faith with them: all the Countrie arose and revolsed from the Spanish, whereof enfued great damage, and God and the Kings Maiestic offended: and by this meanes the Countrey remayned dispeopled: for that the Olomas and the Manipos their enemits, which are Mountaine people, and warlike, descended daily to take and robbe them, when they perceived the Citie and places of their abode left defitiute. And amongst them bee who was the firinger, aid Cruell famine. eate up his fellow, for all ded for famine. This done, the Captaine came to the Citie of Ampulia, where he was received for Generall. From this place they goe to a Citie called Tukilicui, from whence the Ca-60 cike of the place reelded forth incontinent in peace, a number of Indians going before him. The Captaine demanded Gold of him and of his Indians. The Cacike told him that hee had but a small deale, and that which he had should be given him: and immediatly all beganne to give him all that they had.

Whereupon the faid Captaine game unto energy of them a ticket, with the name of the faid Indian, for

a testimonialithat he had genen him Gold: affirming that hee which should have never a ticket, should a estimation of the Doggesto bee denoused, because be gave him no Gold. Whereupon the Indians for feare that they were put m, gaue him all the Gold that they were able: and those which had none fled into the Mountaines and other Townes, for feare to bee flame. By reason whereof perished a great number of the native Inhabitants of the Countries. And Shortly after, the fuel Captaine commanded the Cacike to fend two Indians to another Citie named Dagna, to will them that they foodld come in peace, and bring bim Gold in abundance. And somming to another Citie, bee fent that night many Spaniards to take the Indians, and namely of Tulilicui. So at they brought the next morrow abone an bundred per fons : and all those which could be are burdens, they tooke them for themselves, and for their To Souldiers, and put them to the chaine, whereof they died all. And the faid Captaine game the little children unto the fast Cacike Tutilicus, that bee should este them: and in truth, the skinnes of those children are kept in the house of the land Cacike Tulilicui full of albes: and so departed hee from thence

without an Interpreter, and went towards the Proninces of Caltile, where bee soyned himselfe unto the Captaine Iohn de Ampudia, who had fent him to discouer another way, doing both of them creat outrages, and much mischiefe unto the Inhabitants of the Countrie where they became. And the faid Iohn de Amoudia came to a Citie, the Cacike and Lord whereof called Bitacut, had caufed to make certaine Duches to defend himfelfe, and there fell into the same two Horses, the one of Antonie Rodondos, the other of Marc Marqueiss. That of Marcos Marquis died, the other not. For which cause the faid Ampudia commanded to take all the Indians men and women that might be : and thereupon take and 20 layed together more then an hundred persons, whom they cast aline into those Ditches and fine them. and brent withall more then an hundred boufes in the faid Citie. And in that manner met in a great

Citie, where without summoning (the Indians being at peace, and without any pokesman to goe betweene them) they five with their Speares a great number of them, making on them mortall warre, And wit is (sid foone after they were met, the faid Ampudia told the Captaine what he bad done in Bitaco, and bow he cast formany into the Ditches: and the faid Captaine answered, that it was well done, and that he for his part had done as much at the Risser Bamba, when hee entred the same, which is in the Prounce of Quito, and that he had flung into the Ditches moe then two hundred persons; and there they flared warring on all the Countrie. Soone after he entred into the Promince of Bitu, or Anzerma: in making cruell warre with fire and blond till they came as farre as unto the Salt-boules. And from 30 thence he fem Francis Garcia before him to pillage, who made cruell warre on the natural Inhabitants

of the Countrie as he had done before bim. The Indians came onto him two and two, making fignes. that they demanded peace on the behalfe of the whole Countrie: alledging that they would affoord him, all that be could reasonably demand, were it Gold, or Women, or Victuals, onely that they would not kell them, as indeed it was a troth. For themfelues afterwards confessed it to bee fo. But the faid Francis Garcia bid them get them packing : telling them moreoner, that they were a fort of drunkards . and that beeunderstood them not, and foreturned bee to the place where the faid Captaine was, and they made a complet, to ouerranne all the Prosince, making criell warre on all the Countrie, in sposling, robbing and flaying all: and with the Souldiers, which bee brought with him, drew thence mee then two thousand faules, and all those died in the chaine. Before departing the place which bee had peopled, they 40 flue more then fine hundred per fous. And fo returned to the Pronince of Calili. And by the way if

any lade or Indesie, were weary, in such fart, that they could not passe any further, they did incontinently bead them, paring it off from the Shoulders even with the chaine, to the end not to take the paines to open the locke thereof: and to the end that others which went the fame way bould not make wife to bee sicke, and by this meanes died they all: and in the high-wayes were left all those people which hee made his purchase of out of Quito, and of Pallo, and of Quilla Cangua, and of Paxa, and of Popayan, and of Lili, and of Cali, and of Anzerma, and a great unmber of people died. Alfo immedeatly upon their returne to the great Citie, they entred into it, flaying all that they could: taking in that day moe then three bundred per fons, &c.

Mong divers the remedies by Friat De les Cafee Bishop of the Royal Towns called Chiana, 50 Apropounded in the assemblie of fundry Prelates named Parsons, by his Maiesties commandement gathered together in the Towne of Valladolid, the yeere of our Lord 1542, for order and reformation to be observed in the Indies: the eighth in order was this enfuing, which comfifteth

vpon twentie reasons and motions. The eight Remedie, is among all other principall and most in force, as without which all the rest are to no purpose, for that they all have relation thereunto, as every motion to his proper end, in whatfoeuer toucheth or is of any importance vnto your Maieftie, which no man can exprese; in as much as thereupon dependeth at the least the whole loffe or preferuation of the Indies. And the remedie that I speake of is this, that your Maiestie doe determine; decree, command , and 60 folemnely in your fourraigne Courts ordaine by pragmaticall Sactions and Royall Statutes, that

all the Indies as well already fubdued, as hereatter to be fubdued, may be inferted, reduced, and incorporate into the Royall Crowne of Castile and Leon, to be holden in chiefe of your Maiette as free fubiects and vaffals, as they are. Likewife that they be not given in commendant unto the Spaniards: but that it stand as an inviolable constitution, determination and Royall Law, that

they never, neither at this time, neither hereafter in time to come, may bee alienated or taken from the faid Royall Crowne, neither that they be given, commanded, demiled in fee farme, by deposit, commandement or alienation, either under any other title or manner whatsoeuer, and be difmembred from the Royall Crowne, for any whattoeuer the feruice or defert of any, either voon any necessicie that may happen, or for any cause or colour whatsoever that may be pretended. For the inviolable obleruation, or establishment of which Law, your Maiestie shall formally fweare by your Faith, and on your Word and Royall Crowne, and by all other facred things. whereby Chriftian Princes doe vitually fweare, that at no time neither your felfe, neither vour fuccessours in their ten Dominions, or in the Indies, so farre as in you shall he, shall renoke the fame : and you shall further set do wne in expresse words in your Royall Will and Testament that Io this decree be ever kept, maintayned, and vpholden: also that to farre as in your felfe or in them shall lie, they shall confirme and continue the same. And for proofe of the necessitie hereof there bee twenty reasons to be alledged : out of which twenty we have drawne and put in writing so many as may feeme to ferue to our purpofe.

the feeond reafon.

The Spaniards through their great avarice and covetouinelle to get, doe not permit any re. ligious persons to enter into their Townes and Holds which they possesse, alledging that they receive double losse by them. One and the principall is, that religious persons doe keepe the ledies occupied when they gather them together to their Sermons, fo as in the meane time their worke is omitted, while the Indians being idle, labour not : yea, it hath fo fallen out, that the Indians being in the Church at the Sermon, the Spaniard comming in, in the face of al the people, 20 hath taken fitty, or an hundred, or so many as he hath needed to carrie his baggage and stuffe, and fuch as would not goe, he hath loden with stripes, spurning them forth with his feet, thereby, to the great griefe both of the Indians, and of the religious perfons troubling and molesting all

Out of the third reafon.

The Spaniards are charged to instruct the Indians in our holy Catholike Faith: whereupon on a time when we examined Iohn Colmeners of Saint Martha, a fantasticall, ignorant, and foolish man, who had gotten a great Towne in commendam, and had a charge of foules, he could not tell how to bleffe himfelfe : and asking him what doctrine he taught the Indians committed to his charge, he faid, he gaue them to the Deuill : also that it was enough for him to say, Per figning fanctin Cruces. How can the Spaniards that travell to the Indies, how noble or valuant focuer they be, have any care of the soules, when the most of them are ignorant of their Creede and ten Commandements, and knowe nor the matters percayning to their owne faluation, neither doe travell to the Indies for any other purpose but to satisfie their owne defires and covetous affections, being for the most part vicious, corrupt, vinhonest, and disordinate persons: so as hee that would weigh them in an equall ballance, and compare them with the Indians, should find the Indians without comparison, more vertuous and holy then them. For the Indians what infidels focuer they be, doe neuertheleffe keepe them to one and their owne wife, as nature and neceffitie teacheth, and yet we fee fome Spaniard have fourteene or more, which Gods Commandements doe forbid. The Indians devoure no mans goods, they doe no man wrong : they doe not vexe, trouble, or flay any, where themselves doe see the Spaniards commit all finnes, iniquities, 40 and treacheries, that man can commit against all equitie and instice. To be briefe, the Indians doe not believe any thing, but doe mocke at all that is shewed them of God, being in truth fully rooted in this opinion of our God, that he is the worft, and most vniust, and the most wicked of all Gods, because he hath such servants : also concerning your Maiestie, they thinke you the most vniust and cruell of all Kings, because you doe both fend thither and keepe here such euill Subiects, supposing that your Maiestie doth feed upon humane fiesh and bloud. .

Our of the

The Spaniards having authoritie to command, or particular interest in the Indies, cannot by reason of their great couetousnesse abitaine from afflicting, troubling, disquieting, vexing, or oppreffing the Indians, taking away their goods, lands, wives, or children, and ving among them many other kindes of iniquitie, for the which they can have no redreffe, fanction, or warrant at 50 your Maiesties chiefe Iustice, because the Spaniards doe make them afraide : vea sometimes doe kill them left they should complaine. They doe night and day moorne after their Gods , thinking them to be better then ours at whom they fulfaine fuch harmes, while contrari wife of their owne they reape there so many commodities: and there is nothing that troubleth them so much as the Christians.

Out of the fifth reasons

Wee can show to your Maiestie ; that the Spaniards have within eight and thirty or fixty yeers flaine of just accompt, about twelve millions of your Subjects: I will not fay how mightely this world of people might have multiplied. This Countrey being the fertilest, whether for cattell, or mankinde, that is in the world t the foyle being for the most part, more temperate and fauoitrable to humane generation. All these innumerable persons, and all these 60 people have the Spaniards flaine, to the end to heare fway, governe, and command over the relt: and when in visual warres they have flaine them; then doe they vie the reft, who juftly have withthood them, in drawing Gold and Silver, yoking them together like healts, to make them carrie their burdens.

What plague of petitience, or mortalitie could there have fallen from heaven that had beene able to confume or make waste aboue 2500. leagues of flat Country, replenished with people, and would not have lett either travailer or inhabitant ?

The Spaniards onely for their temporall commoditie, have blemished the Indies with the Out of the preatest infamie, that any man even among the most horrible and villanous persons in the world, fixed reason. could be charged withall, and whereby they have fought to take them out of the degree of mankinde : namely that they were all polluted with the abominable finne against nature : which is a wretched and falle flander. For in all the great Hes, Hifpaniola, Saint lohn, Cuba, and Lamaica: Also in the fixtie Iles of Lucayos, which were inhabited with an infinite number of people, the fame was neuer thought vpon; in some other part there is a voice of a few: for whole lakes neuertheleffe all that world is not to be condemned. We may fay as much of the eating of mans flesh, which likewise those places that I have named are free of; although that in other places thy doe it indeede. They be also charged with their Idolatrie. The Spaniards have purposely and effectually hindered the teaching of the Law of God and Ielus Christ: with all other vertues among the Indians, and driven away the Religious persons out of Townes and Fortrelles, least they should see and disclose their tyrannies ; yea, they have by their suill example, infected and correspeed the Indies, teaching them many odious behaviours and vices, which before they knew not, as blasp'eming the name of Ielus Christ, practifing of vsurie, lying, and many other abhominations wholly repugnant to their nature.

inations wholly repugnant to their nature.

The Spaniards doe sucke from the Indians the whole substance of their bodies, because they unshreason. have nothing else in their houses. They make them spit bloud: They exhibite them to all dangers: They lay vpon them fundry and intollerable trauailes: and more then all this, They loade them with torments, beatings, and forrowings: To be briefe, they spoile and consume a thoufand manner of waves.

Befiles all that the Indians doe indure in feruing and pleasing the Spaniards, there is yet a Out of the butcher or cruell hangman, to keepe them in awe appointed in every Towne and place, and is eight reason. tearmed Estanciers or Calpifque: who hath authoritie to lay his clawes voon them, and to make them labour, and doe what the Lord Commander or chiefe thiefe will. So 2s if in hell there were no other torment, yet were this incomparable. This hangman whippeth them, he ladeth them

20 with stripes, he batteth them with scalding grease, he afflicteth them with continual torments and travels, hee forceth and defloureth their daughters and wives, dishonouring and abosing them : he deuoureth their Hens, which are their greatest treasure, not because themselves doe eate them, but that of them they offer presents and service to their greatest Lord and chiefe tyrant : he vexeth them with innumerable other torments and griefes : and least they should complaine of fo many injuries and miferies, this tyrant putteth them in feare, faying ; that hee will accuse them, and say that he see them commit Idolatry. To be briefe, they must please and contencaboue twenty difordinate and vnreasonable persons; so as they have foure Lords and Masters. Your Maiestie, their Cacique, him that hath them in commendam, and the Estanciero of whom I last spake, which Estanciare is to them more grieuous to beare then a quintall of lead, a-40 mong which we may also in truth adde all the Mochaches and Moores, that doe serue the Commander and Mafter, for they all doe moleit, oppresse, and rob these poore people.

It is greatly to be feared, least God will lay Spaine desolate, even for those horrible sinnes that Out of the this Nation hath committed in the Indies, whereof we doe euidently behold the fourge, and all tenth reasons the world doth fee and confesse that already it hangeth ouer our heads, wherewith God doth afflict and thew that he is highly offended in those parts through the great deftruction and waste of those Nations, in that of so great treasures have bin transported out of the Indies into Spaine (the like quantitie of Gold and Silver, neither King Salomon, neither any other worldly Prince euer had, iaw, or heard of) there is none left, belides that of that that was here before the Indies Note. were discouered, there is now none to be found, no neuer a whit. Hereof it commeth that things are thrife dearer then they were, the poore that have want doe fuffer great miferies : and your

Maiestie cannot dispatch matters of great importance.

So long as Lares bare fway and ruled, that was nine yeares, there was no more care of teaching Out of the eleor bringing the Indians to faluation, neither was there any more labor employed, or once thought uenthreafon, of to that purpose, then if they had beene Trees, Stones, Dogs, or Cats. He wasted great townes and fortrelles, he gaue to one Spaniard a hundred Indians, to another fiftie, to another more or leffe, as every man was in liking or favour, and as it pleafed him to grant. He gave children, and old men, women with childe, and in childebed, men of countenance and commons, the naturall Lords of the Townes and Countries, he parted them among those to whom hee wished most wealth and commoditie, ving in his Letters of command this speech following : To you such a 60 man, are ginen fo many Indians with their Cacique, them tou fe in their Mines and affaires. So as all, great and small, yong and old, that could stand on their feete, men, women with childe, or in childebed, one or other, trauailed and wrought fo long as they had any breath in their bodies. He gaue leave to take away married men, and to make them draw Gold, tenne, twenty, thutie, tortie, or eightie leagues, or farther. The women remained in farme houses and granges, in

Recerra

great labours. So that the man and wife should not see one another in eight or ten moneths or a whole years. And at their meeting they were fo worne with labour and hunger, that they had no minde of cohabitation, whereby their generation ceased, and their poore children peruhed. because the mothers through hunger and trauaife had no milke wherewith to nourish them: This was a cause that in the Ile of Cuba, one of vs being there, there perished in the space of three moneths for hunger 7000, shildren, tome desperate women strangled and killed their owne children, others finding themselues with childe, did eate certaine hearbes thereby to loose their fruit, so that the men died in the Mines, the women perished in the farme houses, their whole generation in a short space decayed, and all the Countrey lay desolate. The said Gouernour, to the end without release to keepe them in continual labour, still gaue them away, and yethe- 10 fides their great labors he suffered them rigorously, and very austerely to be misuted. For the Soa. niards that had them in command, appointed certaine hangmen over them, some in the Mines. whom they tearmed Miniers, others in the Farmes, that were called Eftanciers : vnnaturall and pittileffe persons that beate them with staues and cords, boxing them, pricking them with needles, and still calling them dogges: neither did they ever shew any signe of humanity or clemencie, but all their dealings did confift of extreame seueritie, riot, and bitternesse.

The Governour had also in the Spanish Townes and Forts, certaine of the most honorable and principall persons about him, whom he called Vilitors, vnto whom also besides their other ordinary portions that he had given them, he gave in respect of their offices one hundred Indians to ferge them. Thefe in the Townes were the greatest executioners, as being more cruell then the 20 reft. before whom Athuaziles del camoo brought all fuch as had bin taken in this chafe. The accufer, he that had them in command, was prefent, and accused them, saying ; Thu Indian. or those Indians are dogs, and will doe no fermice, but doe daily run to the Mountaines, there to become lotterers and vagabonds: and therefore required that they might be punished. Then the Visitor with his owne hands bound them to a Pale, and taking a pitched cord, in the Gallies called an Eele, which is as it were an iron rod, gaue them fo many itripes, and beate them fo cruelly, that the bloud running downe diuers p.rts of their bodies, they were left for dead. God is witnesse of the cruck-

ties committed among those lambs.

Throughout the yeare they never knew holiday, neither might be suffered from labour little or much, Besides that during all this toyle, they never had sufficient food, no not of Cacabi. Some \$ there were that through niggardlineffe wanting meate to give them, would fend them two or three dayes abroad into the fields and Mountaines, to feede where they might fatisfie themfelnes with such fruite as hang on the trees, and then you the force of that which they brought in their guts, would force them to labour two or three dayes more without gining them any one morfell to eate. The Gouernour commanded they should be paid their day wages and expenses for any labour or feruice that they should doe to the Spaniard, and their wages was three blankes every two dayes, which in the yeare amounted to halte a Caffelin. Thus grew they into fickenesse through long and grieuous trauailes, and that was soone caught among them. When the Spaniards perceived the fickeneffe increase, so as there was no profit or fervice to be looked for at their hands, then would they fend them home to their houses, gaing them to spend in some 49 thirty, forty, or eightie leagues trauaile, some halte dozen of Radish or Reforter, that is a kinde of namet roote, and a little Cagabi, wherewith the poore men travailed not farre before they should desperately dye, some went two or three leagues, some ten or twenty, so desirons to get to their owne home, there to finish their hellish life that they suffered, that they even fell downe dead by the wayes; fo as many times we found fome dead, others at deaths doore, others groning and pittifully to their powers pronouncing this word, bunger, bunger. Then the Gouernour feeing that the Spaniard had in this wife flame halfe or two third parts of thele Indians, whom hee had given them in command, he came a fresh to draw new lots, and make a new distribution of Indians: still supplying the number of his first gift, and this did hee almost

Pedrarias entred into the firme land, as a Wolfe that had long beene statued doth into a flocke of quiet and innocent Sheepe and Lambs: and as Gods wrath and fcourge, committing infinite flughters, robberies, oppressions and cruelties, together with those Spaniards whom he had leuied, and laid waite to many Townes and Villages, which before had bin replenished with people, as it were Ant hils, as the like was never feene, heard of, or written by any that in our dates have deale in Histories. He robbed his Maiestie & Subiects with those whom he tooke with him, and the harme that he did amounted to aboue foure, yea fix Millions of Gold : hee laid aboue fortic leagues of land delart, namely from Darien, where he first arrived, vnto the Province of Nicaraga, one of the fruitfullest, richest and best inhabited lands in the world. From this curfed wretch sprang first the pestilence of giving the Indians in command, which afterward hath infected all 62 thole Indies where any Spaniards doe inhabit, and by whom all these Nations are consumed; so that from him & his commands have proceeded the certaine walte and detolation that your Maiestie haue fultained in these so great lands and dominions, since the years 1:04.

When we shall fay that the Spaniards have wasted your Maiesties, and laid you desolate form

Kingdomes bigger then Spaine, you must conceine that we have seene them wonderfully peopled; and now there is no body lefe, because the Spaniards have slaine all the naturall inhabitants by meanes aforeignd, and that of the Townes and Houses there remaines thought the bare wals: even as if Spains were all dispeopled, and that all the people being dead, there remained onely the wals of Cities, Townes and Caftels.

Your Maiestie have not out of all the Indies one marvedy of certaine perpetuall and set rent, Our of the but the whole reuenewes are as leaves and thraw gathered upon the earth, which being once gathered vp doe grow no more : euen fo is all the rent that your Maiestie hath in the Indies. vaine and of as small continuance as a blaft of winde, and that proceedeth onely of that the Spaniards 10 have had the Indians in their power; and as they doe daily flay and roft the inhabitants, so must be

necessarily ensue that your Maiesties rights and rents doe wast and diminish.

The Kingdome of Spaine is in great danger to be lost, robbed, oppressed and made desolate by forraigne Nations, namely by the Turkes and Moores, because that God who is the most just. true, and foueraigne King ouer all the world, is wroth for the great finnes and offences that the Spaniards have committed throughout the Indies. But had chosen Spaine as his minister and infrument, to illuminate and bring them to his knowledge, and as it had bin for a worldly recompence, besides the eternal reward, had granted her so great naturall riches, and discouered for her fuch and fo great truitfull and pleafant lands,&c.

In as much as our life is short, I doe take God to witnesse with all the Hierarchies and thrones 20 of Angels, all the Saints of the heavenly court, and all the men in the world; yea, even those that shall hereafter be borne, of the certificate that here I doe exhibite: also of this the discharge of my conscience, namely that if his Maiestie granteth to the Spaniards the aforesaid divellish and tyrannous partition, not with Handing what locuer lawes or flatutes shall be deuised, wet will the Indies in first space be laid desarcand dispeopled, even as the He of Hipaniola is at this present, which otherwise would be most fruitfull and fertile; together with other the lles & lands aboue 2000 leagues about, besides Hispaniola it selfe and other lands both farre and neere. And for those finnes, as the holy Scripture doth very well informe, God will horribly chaftize, and peraduenture wholly lubuert and roote out all Spains. Anno 1542.

The summe of the disputation betweene Fryer BARTHOLOMEVY de las CASAS or CASAVS, and Doctor SEPVLVEDA.

Octor Sepulueda, the Emperours chronographer, having information, and being perfwa? Deed by certaine of those Spaniards, who were most guiltie in the slanghters and wastes committed among the Indian people, wrote a Booke in Latine, in forme of a Dialogue very eloquently, and furnished with all flowers, and precepts of Rhetoricke, as indeede the man is very learned and excellent in the faid tongue : which Booke confifted vpon two principall conclusions; 40 the one, That the Spaniards warres against the Indians, were as concerning the cause and equitie that moved them thereto, very just : also, that generally the like warre may and ought to be continued. His other conclusion, that the Indians are bound to submit themselves to the Spaniards, government, as the foolish to the wife : if they will not yeelde, then that the Spaniards may (as he affirmeth) warre voon them. These are the two causes of the losse and destruction of so infinite numbers of people : also that aboue 2000, leagues of the maine land, are by fundry new kindes of Spanish cruelties and inhumaine dealings bin left desolate in the Ilands : namely by Conquests and Commands as hee now nameth those which were wont to be called

The faid Doctor Sepulneda coloureth his Treatile, under the pretence of publishing the title which the Kings of Castile and Lean doe challenge in the government and universall loveraigntie of this Indian world; fo feeking to cloake that doctrine which he endeuouteth to differie and featter as well in thefe lands, as also through the Kingdomes of the Indians. This Booke he exhibited to the royall Councell of the Indies, very earnestly and importunately lying upon them for licence to print it, which they fundry times denied him in respect of the offence, dangers, and manifest detriment, that it seemed to bring to the Common-wealth.

The Doctor feeing that here he could not publish his Booke, for that the Counfell of the Inder would not suffer it, he dealt so farre with his friends that followed the Emperours Courc, that they got him a Patent, whereby his Maiestie directed him to the royall Counsell of Castile, who knew nothing of the Indian affaires : voon the comming of these Letters the Court and 60 Cou sell being at Aranda in Due"o, the yeare 1547. Fryer Bartholomen de las Cafas or Cafain, Bishop of the royall towne of Chiapa, by hap arrived there, comming from the Indians, and hauing intelligence of Doctor Sepulneda his dritts and deuifes, had notice also of the Contents of his whole Booke : but vinderitanding the Authors permitious blindenesse, as also the irrecoverable loffes that might endue upon the printing of this Booke, with might and maine with flood it,

diffeouring and reuealing the poyfor wherewith it abounded, and whereto it pretended.

The Lords of the Royall Countaile of Castile, as wife and just ludges, determined therefore to fend the faid Booke to the Vuiuersities of Salamanca and Alcala, the matter being for the most part therein Theologically handled, with commandement to examine it, and if it might bee printed, to figne it : which Vniuerfities after many exact and diligent disputations, concluded

that it might not be printed, as contavnius corrupt doctrine.

The Doctor not so fatisfied, but complaining of the Vniuersities aforesaid, determined, notwithflanding to many denials and repulles at both the Royall Countailes, to fend his Treatile to his friends at Rome, to the end there to print it, having first transformed it into a certaine App. logie written to the Bilhop of Segonia, because the same Bilhop having peruled the Treatie and Booke aforesaid, had brotherly and charitably as his friend by Letters reprooued and counsailed him. The Emperour vnderstanding of the Impression of the faid Booke and Apologie, did im. mediately dispatch his Letters Patents, for the calling in and suppression of the same, comman. ding likewife to gather in againe all Copies thereof throughout Cafile. For the faid Doctone had published also in the Castilian Language a certaine abstract of the said Booke, thereby to make it more common to all the Land : and to the end do that the Commons, and fuch as you derstood no Latine, might have some vie thereof, as being a matter agreeable and toothsometo fuch as coueted great riches, and fought wayes to clime to other estates, then either themselves, or their Predeceffors could neuer attaine vnto without great coft , labour, and cares, and oftentimes with the loffe and destruction of divers.

Which when the Bishop of Chiapa understood, hee determined also to write an Apologie in 2 the vulgar tongue, against the said Doctors summarie in defence of the Indies, therein impugning and undermining his foundations, and answering all reasons, or whatsoeuer the Doctor could allease for himselfe, therein displaying and setting before the peoples face the dangers, incomeniences and harmes in the faid doctrine contained.

Thus as many things patied on both fides, his Maiestie in the yeere 1550, called to Valadeld. an Affembly of learned men, as well Diuines as Lawyers, who beging joyned with the Royall counfaile of the Indies should argue, and among them conclude, whether it were lawfull without breach of Iustice, to leuie warres, commonly tearmed conquests, against the Inhabitants of those Countries, without any new offence by them committed, their infidelity excepted,

Dector Sepulneda was fummoned to come and fay what he could, and being entred the Counfaile Chamber, did at the first Seision veter his whole minde. Then was the faid Bishop likewist called, who for the space of fine dayes, continually did reade his Apologie : but being somewhat long, the Divines and Lawyers there affembled, befought the Learned and Reverend Father Deminicke Soto his Maiesties Contestor, and a Dominican Friar, who was there present . to reduce it into a Summary, and to make to many Copies as there were Lords, that is fourteene, to the end they all having fludied upon the matter, might afterward in the feare of God fay they mindes.

The faid Reu-rend Father and Master Soto, set downe in the faid Summary, the Doctors resfons, with the Bishops answeres to the same. Then had the Doctour at his request a Copie deli- in uered him to answere : out of which Summarie he gathered twelue against himselfe, whereto he madetwelve answeres, against which answeres the Bishop framed twelve Replyes.

Doctor Sepulueda his Prologue to the Lords of the Affembly, beganne thus. Most worthy and Noble Lords, fith your Lordships and Graces have as Judges for the space of five or fixe dayes heard the Lord Bishop of Chiapa reade that Booke, whereinto he hath many yeeres laboured to gather all the reasons that either himselfe, or others could invent to prove the conquest of the Indies to be vniuit, as feeking first to subdue barbarous Nations before we preach the Gospell vntothem, which have beene the viuall course correspondent to the grant made by Pope Alexander the fixt, which all Kings and Nations have hitherto taken and observed: it is meete, and I doe so defire you, that I who take upon me to defend the grant and authority of the Apostolike Sea, together 50 with the equitie and honour of our Kings and Nation, &c.

Out of which Replies, here followeth the Abstract of two that stand vs insteed. The report is vntrue that the Indians did yeerely facrifice in New Spaine twenty thousand persons : either one hundred or fiftie. For had that beene fo, we could not now have found there fo much people; and therefore the Tyrants have invented it, thereby to excuse and instifie their Tyrannies : alio to detaine so many of the Indians as escaped the oppression and desolation of the first Vintage, in bondage and tyrannie. But we may more truely fay, that the Spaniards during their abode in the Indies, have yeerely facrificed to their so deerely beloued and reverend Goddelle Courton frest more people, then the Indians have done in a hundred yeeres. This doe the Heavens, the Earth, the Elements, and the Starres both testifie and bewaile: the Tyrants, yea, the very Ministers of 60 these mischiefes cannot deny it. For it is euident how greatly these Countries at our first entric iwarmed with people, as also how wee have now laid it waste, and dispeopled the same : wee might euen blush for shame, that having given over all feare of God, wee will yet nevertheleste feeke to colour and excuse these our so execrable demeanours : considering that only for getting

CHAP. S. Many Soules destroyed. Psllareretted. Two Serpents. wealth and riches, we have in fortie five or fortie eight yeeres, wasted and confirmed more Land then all Ewope, yea and part of Asia, doe in length and breath containe, robbing and vurping

which we have feene well inhabited with hu- Twenty Milwhen the warm whom there have been flaine and deftroyed twentie "Millions of foules. lions deftroid In the welfto and last Reply as followeth, The Spaniards have not entred into India for any de-In the twellto and tast Kept as Journets, a 100 production, either to fauour, and procure the lions, which is fire to exalt Gols honour, or for zeale to Christian Religion, either to fauour, and procure the lions, which is faluation of their Neighbours, no, neither for their Princes seruice, whereof they doe fo vainely tobe voderbrigge : but Couetouneffs bath brought them, and Ambition hath allured them to the perpetu- flood of fome all dominion ouer the Indies, which they as Tyrants and Deuils, doe court to bee parted among greater part,

an dominion one the American hardy, doe feeke no other but to expell and drue the Kings of not of all the to them; and to speake plainly and flatly, doe feeke no other but to expell and drue the Kings of Indies, Yea, Laftle out of all that World, and them felues leizing thereupon, by Trannie to viurpe and take only in Now ypon them all Royall Sourrementie.

ras. Guatimala. Venefuels, Peru, and the Cooft of Peris, he reckoneth about 20. Millons: befides three Millions in Hispaniels, halfe a Mullion in the r organa cara, and tallion in lamate, and Saint least Hands: 800000 in Tora Firms, in Nicarque, \$5,0000, that I men-Lucques, 0.00000. Of talue multitudes in Cube, Fanuce, Florida, Talifes, Tacatan, Saint Mariba, Car. bagens, New Granads , River of tion not the innumerable multitudes in Cube, Fanuce, Florida, Talifes, Tacatan, Saint Mariba, Car. bagens, New Granads , River of

CHAP. V.

Notes of Voyages and Plantations of the French in the Northerne America : both in Florida and Canada.

F the French Plantation in that part of Brafill by Villagaynon, which therefore Frier Themet called France Antartike, you have feene alreadie in Leriau. Befides the Erench have almost from the first beginnings of the Spanish Plantation, with the Eroseo have almost from one mix neglicitings of the Symple ratheron, with As cut of Onimen.of. warre haunted those Coasts, and taken many Spanish prifes. The French Agency of have allo made other Discourries, and settled some habitation for a time in the in before ob-Northerne parts of the New World.

John Verranano a Florentine was ient. Anno 1524. by King Francis the first, and Madame Regent his Mother, who is faid to have discourred from the eight and twentieth to the fitteth degree; (alt which and much more had long before beene discouerd by Sir Sebastian Cabos for the Sir Seb, Cabos; King of England, who was the first that fet foote on the American Continent in behalfe of any Chriftian Prince Anne 1496, or 45 otheses 1497, and therefore the French reckoning tallet he fhort, fome of which Nation von Verazante Discourry challenge I know not what right to all that Coult, and make their New France neere as great as all Europe. Toleaue that, we are to do them Historicall right in relating their actions in those parts. The Rives and Customes of Florida are related at large by Rene Laudenniere, by Master Haklant translated, and in his Workes published. Laudonniere was fent by that famous Admirall Chaffillon with John Ribalt, Anno 1562: who ar- Cap, Ribalt. 40 rived at Cape François in Florida in thirtie degrees and there erected a Pillar with the French Armes. The River they called the Rauer of May, having entred it on May day. In the Woods they found great store of red and white Mulberie Trees, and on their tops an infinite number of Silk-wormes, Eight other Rivers they diffcouered to which they gave the names of Seine, Sem- Sike-wormes me, Lopre; Cherente, Garonne, Gironde, Belle, Grande, and after that Belle a Voire, and Port Royal; pore Royal in In this last they anchored; the River at the mouth is three French leagues broad : hee sayled vp 32. degrees. many leagues, and erecited another like Pillar of ftones. Ribat having built a Fort and furnished it wichtprouifions, called it Charles Bort, and left a Golome there vider Captaine Albert. Thefe found great kindnelle with their Indian Neighbours, till differeion happened amongst themfelues, the Captaine for a small fault hanging a Souldier and exercising feveritie were the reft, Mutinie, Capt 50 which thereupon in a mutinie flue him, and having cholen a new Captaine, they built a Paintife Albert flaine. and furnished it alwell as they sould to returne for France, but furprized in the way with calmes, and expence of their prouition, they first did eare their shoes and Buffe lerkins, and yet continuing familhed, they killed one of their fellowes called La Chere, and made cheere of him, and after mer with an English Barke which releeved them, and fetting someon Land, brought the

rest to Queene Elizabeth. The cause of their not relecting according to promise was the Civil warres, which beeing compounded the Admirall procured the King to tend three Stips to Florida under the command of the Author Rene Landonniere, which let taile in Aprill 1564. He went on howest Dominica, The fecond in which lland his men killed two Serpents nine foote long, and as bigge anamant logge, The Golonie. 60 two and twentiethof Iune, they landed in Floritanten leagues about Capa Plangues; and after in the River of May, where the Indians very toy tothly welcommed them, and sthe Bone Piller & Stone Piller rected by Ribalt was crowned with bayes and baskers of Mill or Marz fet at the foot, and they worthipp d. killed the lame with great reusence. One of Paracouff (or the King) his Somica prefence scale , Captain with a wedge of filter. With another Parceally they law one old Father Wild with tage,

Note, the Popes Bull is pretended: which, and our answere to it. Men nigh 500. veeres old. The Vaffals are petty N'e-Lords of Vil-

but living, and of his loines fixe generations descended, all present, so that the Sonne of the eledeft was imposed two hundred and fiftie yeeres old. They planted themselues on this River of May, and there built a Fort which they called Carolina of their King Charles. Landonniere fent Outroni his Lieutenant to fearch out the people called Tomages, whence that filter wedge had comme, and there heard of a great King Olata Ouae Utina, to whom fortie Kings were veliale. Seturiona was laid to have thirtie, and to be enemie to Vina.

A tearefull lightning happened which burned fine hundred acres of ground, and all the fowler after which followed fuch a hear, that as many fish were dead therewith at the mouth of the River, as would have laden fiftie Carts, and of their putrifaction gricuous diseases. The Sanger had thought the French had done it with their Ordnance. He got some prisoners of Vimas fish to iects which Saturiona had taken and fent them to him, fome of his men affiffing Vina in his warres against Poranon one of his enemies, and returning with some quantitie of Silver

Murinies.

-lages.

Whiles things continued in good termes with the Sanages Mutinies and Conspiracies fell out among it the French, fome confpiring to kill the Captaine, others running away with the Barke one of which robbed by S.a, and after was driven by famine to feeke to the Spaniards at Hanne and when two other Barkes were a building, a third Contpiracie feized on the Captaine, detain ned him Pritoner, and forced him to subscribe their passe with these two Barkes. Away they went and the next division was among the hem selves, one Barke departing from the others, One of them after divers Piracies came backe, and the chiefe mutinies were executed. Francis less 10 one of the other Barke was he which after brought the Spaniards thither to deftroy them. The Indians vie to keepe in the Woods Ianuarie, Februarie, and March, and live on what they take The Virginians in hunging; fo that the French neither receiving their expected reliefe from France, nor from the a o bau luch Sanages which had no Corne, having before fold them what they had, fuffered grieuous famine: they retolued to build a vetfell able to carrie them into France, the Sauages making Aduntages of their necessities (according to the wonted perindiouinesse of those wilde people) whereupon they tooke King Vina Pritoner with his Sonne to get food for his ranfome. The famine was fo

a cuft-m:-

Civell famine. Tharpe that it made the bones to grow thorow the skinne, and when the Maiz by the and of May came to some ripenesse, food it selte ouercame their weake stomacks. Some reliefe they had by Sit lobn Hawkens who came thicher with foure thips, guided by a man of Deepe which had been ! there in Ribalts Voyage, who also offered to transport hum, and fet them all on land in France. This he refuted, but made good aduantage hereof with the Sanages, telling them that this was his brother which brought him great reliefe and plentie, whereupon all fought his friendfhin. His men at last generally fearing to continue in that milery, wanting both apparell and victual, and meanes to returne, to wrought with him, that not daring to give the Silver, and fuch things ashe had gotten in the Countrie (which might bring an English Plantation into those parts) he bought a flup of Sir John Hawkens, who partly fild and partly gave them provisions also of apparell and victuall for their returne; and as Laudonniere acknowledgeth like a charitable man, faued

Whiles thus they were preparing to fet faile. Captaine Ribals came into the River with feven 40

faile foure greater and three leffe (whom the Admirall had fent, hearing that Landomiere lorded

but in swiftnesse of faile, whereby they escaped the pursuite of the Spaniards, and observed their

I as his oreat kindnefle. Third Flor dan Vovage by C.

and domineered in cyrannicall and infolent manner) and svas folemnely welcommed in the end of August 156c. A while after, when as the Indians had filled Captaine Ribals with golden hopes Gold Mynes of the Myries at Apalatei, some proofes whereof were found to be perfect gold, fixe great ships of Spaniards same into the River on the fourth of September, and madefaire thew to the French, which trulted them neuer the more, but let flip their Anchors and fled; being no way matchable

Maffacre. Cap. Dome !T

Three Forts Spansb.

courie fending word thereof to Captaine Ribatt. The High Admiral Chaftillon also had in his the French and last Letters written to Ribale, that he had intelligence out of Spaine, of Don Pedro Melender plantin Flati- his Expedition to Florida, suft before his comming from France, Captaine Ribals embarkes him- 50 leite the eighbor September, pretending to goe feeke the Spaniards, which foone after came to Reke the French at their Fott, guided by Francis lean, before a Mutiner . now also a Traytour, who showed the Captaine to the Spaniardi. Notwithstanding their assault, Laudonniere made an escape with some others over the Marishes into the ships, and so returned first into England. and after into France. Captaine Ribalt was surprized with a Tempest which wracked him vpon the Coast, and all his ships were castaway, himselfe hardly escaping drowning, but not escaping the more then Rockie Spaniards which madacred him and all his companie. This butcherin was revenged in a fourth Floridan Voyage made from France , by Captains Gaurgues, Anna 1567, who borrowed and fold to fee forththree thips, and entring the River Tasanecours (which site Erench called Seine) he made league with eight Sausee Kings, which had 60

each thereof with swelue hundred Souldiers in them well prouded for Munition.

beene much supighted by the Spaniards, and were growne as diffigurential to them. The Spaniards were accounted foure fundred iftong, and had divided themselves into three Forts vpon the River of Many she greateit begun by the French; two fmaller nerrer the Rivers mouth to forthe

In Aprill 1568, he tooke their two Forts and flue all the Spaniards, the vindicative Sanages giung him vehement and eager affiftance, especially Oloscara, Nephew to Saintiona. As they went to the Fort, he faid, that he should die there, and therefore defined Gonrewes to give that to his wife which he would have given himfelfe, that it might bee buried with himfor his better. Why the Sassa his wire with the volume to the Village of the Sonies departed. This Fort was taken, the Spaniards forme flame, goods interred others taken, and hanged on the same trees on which the French hung; flue of which on of these with them. Spaniards: confessed he had hanged, and now acknowledged the Diuine Instice. In steed of the Writings which Melendes had hanged over them, I doe not this as to Frenchmen but as to Lutherans, Gourgues let vp another, I doe not this as to Spaniards or Mariners, but as to Traitors, Robbers Inflrequitall, to and Muriberers. The Forts he razed, not having men to keepe them, and in Iune following arrived in Rockel. Comming to the King with expectation of reward, the Spanift King had to poffessed him, that he was faine to hide himselfe. This Dominicke de Gourgnes had beene an old Souldier, once imprisoned, and of a Captaine made a Gally-flaue by the Spaniards, and grew for his feruice in reputation with the Queene of England : he died Anno 1582. And thus much of the French Voyages in Florida, for Voginias lake worthy to be knowne of the English. Now

for their more Northerne Voyages and Plantations. Mafter Haklurs hath published the Voyages of laques Cartier, who in Aprill 1534. departed from Saint Malo with two ships, and in May arrived at Newfoundland. On the one and twentieth of May they came to the Iland of Birds a league about, to full of Birds as if they were fowel and there, and a hundred times as many hourring about it, some as bigge as layes, blacke and white liand or finds with beakes like Crowes, lying alway on the Sea; their wings not bigger then halic ones hand, in 49 degrees which makes that they cannot fle high. In leffe then halfe an houre they filled two Boats with 40, minutes, them. These they named Aporatz; another lesse Port, which put them elues under the wings of others greater, they called Godeta, a third, bigger and white, byting like Dogges they called Margauly, Though the lland be fourteene leagues from the Continent, Beares come thither to Margauly feed on those Birds. One white one as bigge as a Kow they killed in her swimming, and found feeme to be her good meate. Three such Bird Hands they also discourred the fine and twentieth of June, which Pengmins. they called the llands of Marganix. There also they found Morfes, Beares and Wolues, But thele Northerne Coasts are better knowne to our Countrymen : then that I should mention his to French names, which from Cabets time almost forty yeeres before had beene knowne to the

English. The next yeere Cartier fet forth with three ships to Saint Lawrence his Bay, and so to the Ria uer of Hochelaga. They went to Canada, and to the Towne of Hochelaga. They faw the great and fwift fall of the River, and were told of three more therein. The Scorbute that Winter killed fine and twentie of their men in their Fort: the rest recoursed by the vie the sip and leanes of a tree called Hameda, which was thought to be Saffafras. These reports of Canada, Saguenas, and Hochelaga, caused King Francis to fend him againe, Arno 1540. purpoting also to fend lobn Francis de la Roche, Lord of Robewall to be his Lieutenant in the Countries of Canada, Saguenay, L. of Rebenell, and Hochelaga. Hee went Anno 1542, his chiefe Pilot was lobn Alphonso of Xantongne, whose 8) Notes, as also the Relation of that Voyage with three shippes, and two hundred persons, men, women and children, Matter Hablust hath recorded. He built a Fort and wintered there: and

then returned. These were the French beginnings, who have continued their Trading in those parts by yeerly Voyages to that Coast to these times, for fishing, and sometimes for Beauers skinnes and other Commodities. One Sanales is faid to have made two and forty Voyages to those parts. Sanaless 42. Marke Lescarbos hath published a large Booke called Nona Francia, and additions thereto, part Voya, esto of which we have here for better intelligence of those parts, added with Champleins Discourries. Newfounding.

CHAP. VI.

The Voyage of SAMVEL CHAMPLAINE of Brouage, made unto Canada in the yeere 1603. dedicated to CHARLES de Montmorencie, dre, High Admirall of France.



Edeparted from Honflew, the fifteenth day of March 1602. This day we put in- Their Voyago to the Roade of New Haum, because the winde was contrary. The Sunday fol. to Tadaular, lowing being the fixteenth of the faid moneth, we fet faile to proceed on our Voy. the fail to the faid moneth, we fet faile to proceed on our Voy. age. The feuenteenth day following, we had fight of lersey and Tarnsey, which are Hes between the Coaft of Normandie and England. The eighteenth of the laid

moneth, wee discryed the Coast of Britame. The nineteemth, at seven of the clocke at night, we made account that we were thwart of Ulhent. The one and twentieth, at feuen of clocke in the morning, we met with leuen ships of Hollanders, which to our sudgement came from the

S.Marie.

about cight

Camption. Gashepe.

The River

Mantanne.

The Pike.

ter on the

Indies. On Eafter dav, the thirtieth of the faid moneth, wee were encountred with a great for ne, which feemed rather to be thunder then winde, which lasted the space of seuenteene dayes, but not to great as it was theewe first dayes; and during the faid time we rather lost way then gained.

The fix: eenth day of Aprill the ftorme began to cease, and the Sea became more calme then before, to the contentment of all the Company; in such fort as continuing our faid course vatill the cighteenth of the fail moneth, we met with a very high Mountaine of Ice. The morrow A banks of lee after we discried a banke of Ice, which continued about eight leagues in length, with an infinite A same of the mamber of other smaller peeces of Ice, which hindred our passage. And by the indgement of our long in 45.de- Pilot, the faid flakes or Ice were one hundred or one hundred & twenty leagues from the Coun- Io grees and two try of Canada: and we wereing degrees and two third parts; & we found paffage in Addes. The frond of May, at eleuen of clocke of the day, we came vpon The Banke in 44. degrees one third The Ranke in and deer, one part. The fixt of the faid moneth, we came to neere the land that we heard the Seabeateagainst the shore, but we could not descrie the same through the thicknesse of the fogge, whereunto thele coails are lubiret; which was the cause that we put farther certaine leagues into the Sea. fubica to fogs. vntill the next day in the morning, when we descried land, the weather being very cleere, which The Cape of was the Cape of Saint Marie. The twelfth day following we were overtaken with a great flaw of winde, which lafted two dayes. The fifteenth of the faid moneth, wee descried the Isles of The Isles of S. Saint Peter. The fewenteenth following we met with a banke of Ice neere Cape de Raie, fixe leagues in length, which caufed vs to ftrike faile all the night, to avoide the danger we might in- 20 A broke of Le course. The next day we fet faile, and deforied Capelle Raie, and the Illes of Saint Paul, and Cape 6.1:21 ues long de Saint Laurence, which is on the South fide. And from the faid Cape of Saint Laurence vnto Cape ac Raie. Cape de Raie, is eighteene leagues, which is the breadth of the entrance of the great Gulfe of Canada.

The fame day, about ten of the clocke in the morning, we met with another Hand of Ice, which was about eight leagues long. The twentieth of the faid moneth, we discried an Ille, Antland of Ice which containeth fome five and twenty or thirty leagues in length, which is called the Isle of Assumption, which is the entrance of the River of Canada. The next day we descried Gachepe which is a very high land, and began to enter into the faid River of Canada, ranging the South The lie of A/coaft vnto the River of Mantanne, which is from the faid Gachepe fixtie fine leagues; from the faid River of Mantanue we failed as farre as the Pite, which is twenty leagues, which is on the South fide alfo: from the faid Pike we failed ouer the River vnto the port of Tadoufac, which is fifteene leagues. All these Countries are very high, and barren, yeelding no commoditie. The foure and twentieth of the faid moneth we cast anker before Tadonfae, and the fix and twentieth Gache cooleg we entred into the faid Port, which is made like to a creeke in the entrance of the River of Saquenay, where there is a very firange current and tide, for the fwiftneffe and depth thereof. where The description formetimes strong windes do blow, because of the cold which they bring with them; it is thought on or the hat that the faid River is five and forty or fiftie leagues vnto the first fall, and it commeth from the

Tadoufac from North North-west. The faid Port of Tadoufac is little, wherein there cannot ride about tenor The River of Sagenay falle h twelve Ships : but there is water enough toward the East, toward the opening of the said River 40 of Sagenay along by a little hill, which salmost cut off from the maine by the Sea: The rest of into Camada. the Countrie are very high Mountaines, whereon there is little mould, but rockes and fands full This of Sagenav is in Lefcar. of woods of Pines, Cypreffes, Fir-trees, Burch , and fome other forts of trees of small price. bots Mapex-There is a little Poole neere vnto the faid Port, enclosed with Mountaines couered with woods. prefied to en-At the entrance of the faid Port there are two points, the one on the West fide running a league into the Sea, which is called Saint Matthewes point; and the other on the South-east fide, North fide of Canada about containing a quarter of a league, which is called the point of all the Dinels. The South and South 51.01 40, trom South-east, and South South-west windes doe strike into the faid hauen. But from Saint Matthence to the Sca shore of themes Point, to the said Point of all the Deuels, is very neere a league : Both these Points are dry Canadais about at a low water.

which entring into the Sca, hath 100 miles, and up to the fals (which Voyage followeth) continue in a marucilous breadth, fo that it may be for greatnesse reputed greater then any other River in our world or in the Northerne parts of the New sfull allo of Lakes and Hands for greater magnificence,

The great Sa-THe feuen and twentieth day we fought the Sauages at the Point of Saint Matthew, which gamo, their is a league from Tadoufac, with the two Sauages whom Monfieur du Pour brought with t-- As & wars. him, to make report of that which they had seene in France, and of the good entertainement The Iraceis. which the King had given them. As foone as we were landed we went to the Caban of their Two Sauages great Sagamo, which is called Anadabijou, where we found him with some eightie ora hundred brought out of of his companions, which were making Tabagie, that is to fay, a Feath. Hee received vs very 60 well, according to the custome of the Countrey, and made vasit downe by him, and all the Sauages fat along one by another on both fides of the faid Cabine. One of the Sauages which we or one of the found that brought with vs began to make his Oration of the good entertainement which the king had given them, and of the good viage that they had received in France, and that they might affine we brought

themselves that his said Maiestie wished them well, and defired to people their Countrey, and to make peace with their enemies (which are the Irecois) or to fend them forces to vanguish them. man peace which they had feene, and The Investiges, Houses, and people which they had feene, and The Investiges our manner of liuing. He was heard with to great filence, as more cannot be vetered. Now when nemies to de our manner or monte, as was neared within gives interior as more cannot be vetteren. Prove within he had ended his Oration, the faid grand Sagne Anadobies, having he area him attentively additions.

Began to take Tobacco, and game to the faid Monfieur da Pons Grans of Saint Male, and to mee, and to certaine other Sagamos which were by him : after he had taken store of Tobacco, he beean to make his Oration toall, speaking diftinctly, resting sometimes a little, and then speaking againe, faying, that doubtlefle they ought to be very glad to have his Maiestie for their great The Oration in friend: they answered all with one voyce, ho, ho, ho, which is to say, yea, yea, yea, He proceeding forward in his speech, faid, That he was very well content that his faid Maleftie should people their Countrey, and make warre against their enemies, and that there was no Nation in the world to which they willied more good, then to the Franch. In fine, hee gaue them all to understand what good and press they might receive of his faid Maiestie. When hee had ended his foeeth, we went out of his Cabine, and they began to make their Tabagie or Feaft, which they make with the fleft of Origuac, which it like an Oxe, of Beares, of Seales, and Beuers, which are the most ordinary victuals which they have, & with great flore of wilde Fowle. They Beaft has a had eight or ten Kettels full of meate in the middelt of the faid Cabine, and they were fet one Oze. from another some fix paces, and each one woon a seuerall fire. The men sat on both sides the to houle (as I faid before) with his dift made of the barke of a tree: and when the meate is fodden. there is one which deuideth to every man his part in the fame diffies, wherein they feede very

CHAP.6. Faire Caftles. Manner of Dancing, Point of Saint Mathew.

filthily, for when their hands be fattie, they rub them on their haire, or elfe on the haire of their dogs, whereof they have flore to hune with, Before their meate was fodden, one of them role vp, and took a dog, & danced about the faid Kettels from the one end of the Cabin to the other: when he came before the great Sageme, he cast his dog perforce voon the ground, and then all of them with one voice, cried, ho, ho, which being done, he went and fat him downe in his place; then immediately another role vo and did the like, and fo they continued untill the meate was fodden. When they had ended their Feaft, they began to dance, taking the heads of their enemies in their hands, which hanged you the wall behinde them; and in figne of ioy there is one or two to which fing, moderating their voice by the measure of their hands, which they beate woon their knees, then they reft fometimes, and cry, ho, he, ho; and begin againe to dance, & blow like a man that is out of breath. They made this triumph for a victory which they had gotten of the Ireceit, A videole con

of whom they had flaine some hundred, whose heads they cut off, which they had with them for ten of the Irithe ceremony. They were three Nations when they went to war; the Effectioning, Algorimequins, and Mountainers, to the number of a thousand, when they went to war against the freese, whom they encountred at the mouth of the River of the land Irocon, and flew an hundred of them. The war which they make is altogether by furprifes, for otherwise they would be out of hatt; & they The Riner of feare the faid Irocoic very much, which are in greater number then the faid Mountainers. Efteche- the total mins and Algommequins. The twenty eight day of the (aid moneth, they encamped themselves The Irosen at 40 in the forefaid haven of Tadonfas, where our Ship was jat the break of day their faid great Sagamo in great number. came out of his Cabine, going round about all the other Cabins, and cried with a loud voice that they should dislodge to goe to Talenfac, where their good friends were. Immediately enery man

in a trice tooke down his cabin, and the faid grand Captain, fift began to take his cance, & carried it to the Sea, where he embarked his wife and children, & flore of furs; and in like manner did well neere two hundred canowes, which goe ftrangely; for though our Shallop was well manned, yet they went more swift then we. There are but two that row, the man and the wife. Their Ca- Two hundred nowes are some eight or nine pases long, and a pace, or a pace & a halfe broad in the middest, and Canowes, grow sharper & sharper toward both the ends. They are very subject to ouesturning, if one know not how to guide themsfor they are made of the barke of a Birch tree, firengthned within with little circles of wood well & handsomely framed, and are so light, that one man will carry one of them eafily and enery Canowe is able to carry the weight of a Pipe; when they would paffe ouer any land to goe to some River where they have busines, they carry them with them. Their Cabins are low, made like Tents, couered with the faid barke of a tree, and they leave in the roofe about a Their Cabins

foot spacevncoueted, wherby the light commeth in; and they make many fires right in the midit madel ketches of their Cabin, where they are sometimes ten housholds together. They he vpon skins one by an- and couered other, and their dogs with them. They were about a thouland persons, men, women and children. with the backs The place of the point of S. Matthew, where they were first lodged, is very pleasant; they were at thebottome of a little hill, which was ful of Fir & Cypreffe trees: vpon this point there is a little Cypreffe trees leuel plot, which discouereth far off, & vpon the top of the faid hill, there is a Plain, a league long, 60 and halfe a league broad, couered with trees; the foile is very landy, and is good pasture; all the reft is nothing but Mountains of very bad rocks: the Sea beateth round about the faid hil, which is dry for a large halfe league at a low water.

THe ninth day of June the Sauages began to make merzie together, and to make their feaft, as bumors, tamin A Thate faid before, and to dance for the aforefaid victory which they had obtained against fuperfittion & cher

Theheriumaka

France. Anadabijon, The Oration with ve.

their enemies. After they had made good cheere, the Algoumequins, one of the three Nations

went out of their Cabins, and retired themselves apart into a punishe place, and caused all their women and girles to fit downe in rankes one by the other, and sood themselves befinde, then

finging all mone time, as I have faid before. And Juddenly all the women and mandens began to

Porke-pike.

endure great

famine

minging an mone time, as a mane ran oction, and many the young and their Mantis of skins, and Hippper themselves, and their Mantis of skins, and Hippper themselves, which are participles oddered with Manietis, which are participles and chaines enterlaced made of the har of the large them has re of the Porkelpoke, which they due of divers colours. After they had made an end of their themselves are of the Porkelpoke, which they due of divers colours. longs, they cried all with one voyce, ho, lio, ho; at the lame inftant all the women and maidens coursed the melus with their Mantels, for they lye at their feete, and reft a thort while; and then effloore, beginning against o fing, they let fall their Mantels as they did before. They goe 19 Their manner not out of one place when they dance, and make certaine gestures and motions of the body, first o' dance.

ifting yp one foot and then another, thamping ypon the ground. While they were dancing lifting yp one foot and then another, thamping ypon the ground. While they were dancing the second to the second the secon game of the 44- and why im, perfect evolution, practices the new part of the configuration of the choice we trickyc for fee and made a peech and fail to the Mountainers and Englementary to fee the few we trickyc for the widory which we have obtained of our enemies ye must doe the like, that we may be continued to the configuration of the confi tented: then they all together cred, ho, ho, ho, Alloone as hee was returned to his place, the great Sagamo, and all his companions cast off their Mantels, being starke naked saue their printties, which were congred with a little skin, and tooke each of them what they thought good, as Mitachias, Hatchets, Swords, Kettels, Fat, Flesh of the Orignac, Scales, in briefe, euery one 20 had a prefent, which they gave the Algonmeguire. After all these ceremonies the dance cealed and the faid Algound quint both men and women carried away their prefents to their lodgings. They chole out allo two men of each Nation of the belt disposition, which they caused to run,

and he which was the swiftest in running had a present, All their people are of a very cheerefull complexion, they laugh for the most part, henertheleffe they are formewhat melancholly. They speake very diffinedly, as though they would make themselues well understood, and they stay quickely bethinking themselues a great while, and then they legin their speech againe : they often vie this fashion in the middell of their Orations

in counfaile, where there are none but the principals, which are the ancients : the women and in contains, where there are hone on the principals without are the ancients are women and children are not prefers. All these people flowerimes column for great carriery, what they are all 30 most colifficiated to cate one another, through the great colds and inowes; for the Beats and These Sauzges Fowles whereof they fure, retire themselves into more hot climates. I thinke if any would teach them how to live, and to learne to till the ground, and other things, they would learne very

well; for I silure you that many of them are of good judgement, and answere very well to the purpole to any thing that a man shall demand of them. They have one naughty qualitie in them, Their had quar which is, that they are given to revenge, and great lyars, a people to whom you must not give too much credit, but with reason, and standing on your owne guard. They promile much and performe little. They are for the most part a people that have no Law, as farre as I could fee and enforme my felfe of the faid great Sagano, who told me, that they constantly believe, that there The beliefe of is one God, which hath made all things: And then I faid vnto him, fince they believe in one 40

red me, that after God had made all things, he tooke a number of Arrowes, and stucke them in

They beleene Son one Mother and the

God onely, How is it that he cent them into this world, and from whence came they? he answethe ground, from whence men and women grew, which have multiplied in the world vntill this prejent, and had their originall on this fathion. I replied vnto him, that this which hee faid was talle; but that indeede there was one God onely, which had created all things in the earth, and in the heavens : leeing all thele things to perfect, without any body to governe this world beneath, he tooke of the flime of the earth, & thereof made Adam our first Father. As Adam fl.pt, God tooke a rib of the fide of Adam, & thereof made Euc, whom he game him for his companion; and that this was the truth that they and we had our originall after this marrier, and not of Arrowes as they believed He faid nothing voto me, faue, that he believed rather that which I faid, 10 then that which he told me. I asked him also, whether he beleeved not that there was any other but one God onely, He sold me, that their beliefe was, That thete was one God, one Sonne, one one God, one Mother, and the Sunne, which were foure ; yet that God was about them all : but that the Son was good and the Sunne in the firmament, because of the good that they received of them; but that the Mother was naught, and did eate them, and that the Father was not very good. I he wed him his errour according to our faith, wherein he gaue mee some small credit. Idemanded of him, whether they had not feere nor heard fay of their ancellors, that God came into the world. He rold me, that he had neuer seene him, but that in old time there were five men which went toward the Sunne fetting, which met with God, who asked them, Whither goe ye They faid, we goe to feeke our liuing : God answered them, you shall finde it here, They went far- 60 thet, without regarding what God had faid unto them : which tooke a flone, and touched wo of them with it, which were turned into a stone: And hee said againe vnto the other three, Whither goe yee? and they answered as at the first : and God faid to them againe, Goe no further, you shall finde it here. And feeing that nothing came unto them, they went fur-

CHAP.6. The Divell appeareth to the Indians. Their Ceremonie in Marriage. 1609

ther: and God tooks two states, and touched the two first therewith, which were turned ther; and God asked him againe, whither go-into flaves; and the fitt flaved and would goe no turther; And God asked him againe, whither goeft thou! I goe to feeke my living : flay and thou shalt finde it. He stayed without going any further, and God giue him meate, and he did eaternereof; after he had well fed, hee returned with other Sauages, and told them all the former frome. He told them also, That another time there was a man which had itore of Tobacco (which is a kinde of hearbe, whereof they take the smoake.) And that God came to this man, and asked him where his Tobacco pine was? The man tooke his Tobacco pipe and gaue it to God, which took: Tobacco a great while : after hee had taken fore of Tobacco, God broke the faid pipe into many peeces : and the man asked him, why to haft thou broken my pipe, and fieit that I have no more? And God tooke one which hee had, and gaue it him, and tata vnto him; loe here I gue thee one, carry it to thy great Sagamo, and

charge him to keepe it, and if he keepe it well he shall neuer want any thing, nor none of his companions. The faid man tooke the Tobacco pipe, and gaue it to his great Sagamo, which as long as he kept, the Sauages wanted nothing in the world. But after that the faid Sagame loit long as he kept, the Sauages winted nothing in the works. Surfection the rate among amount of this Tobacco pipe, which was the occasion of great famine, which to meet mest they have a mong time increase. this 1 obacco pro- whither he beleeued all this? he faid yea, and that it was true. This I beleeue is more the Sarthem. I asked him whither he beleeued all this? he faid yea, and that it was true. This I beleeue is more the Sarthem. the cause wherefore they say that God is not very good. But I replied and told him, that God uses.

was wholly good; and that without doubt this was the Diuell that appeared to these men, and that if they would believe in God as we doe, they should not want any thing needefull. That 30 the Same which they beheld, the Moone and the Startes were created by this great God, which hath made heaven and earth, and they have no powerbut that which God has h given them. That we believe in this great God, who by his goo in the hath tent ve his deare Sonne, which being conceived by the holy Ghoit, tooke humaine figh in the Virginall wombe of the Virgin

Marie, having bin thirty three yeares on the earth, working infinite miracles, railing up the dead, healing the ticke, cafting our Diucls, giving fight to the blinde, teaching men the will of God his Father, to terue, honour, and worthip him, did thed his bloud, and fuffred death and patfion forys, and for our tinnes, and redeemed mankinde, and being buried, he rote againe, he oefcended into hell, and ascended into heasen, where he sitteth at the right hand of God his Father. That this the beleefe of all the Christians, which beleeue in the Father, the Sonne, and he 30 holy Ghoft, which neuertheleffe are not three Gods, but one onely, and one onely God, and one

Trinicie, in the which none is before or after the other, none greater or leffe then another. That the Virgin Mary the Mother of the Sonne of God, and all men and women which have lived in this world, doing the commandements of God, and f. ffring martyrdome for his name lake, and by the permission of God have wrought miracles, and are Saints in heaven in his Paradite, doe all pray this great divine Maieftie for vs, to pard in vs our faults and our linnes which we doe againft his Law and his Commandements : and fo by the prayers of the Saints in heaven, and by our prayers which we make to his diurne Mareftie, he giveth that which we have neede of, and the Divell hatn no power over vs, and can doe vs no harme: That if they had this beliefe, they should be as we are, and that the Divell should be able to doe them no hurt, and should never wont 40 any thing necessary. Then the faid Sagamo told me, that he approued that which I faid. I asked him what ceremony they yied in praying to their God? He told me, that they yied none other

ceremonies, but that every one praied in his heart as he thought good: This is the cause why I beleeue they have no law among them, neither doe they know how to worthip or pray to God, and line for the most pare like brute beasts, and I thinke in short space they would be brong it to begood Chriftens, if their Countrie were planten, which they delire for the moil part.

They have among them certaine Sauages which they call Polocona, which speak with speak with the Diuell, which telleth them what they muit doe, as well for the warre as for other things; the Diuella and if he should command them to put any enterprise in execution, either to kill a French man, orany other of their Nation, they would immediately obey his commandement. Also they 50 beleeue that all the dreames which they dreame are true : and indeede there are many of them,

which fay that they have feene and dreamed things which doe happen or shall happen. But to speake truely of these things, they are visions of the D well, which doth deceive and seduce them. Loe this is all their beliefe that I could learne of them, which is brutish and bestiall. All these people are well proportioned of their bodies, without any deformitie, they are well fet, and the They paint women are well shapen, fat and full, of a tawnie colour by abundance of a certaine painting with an Oliue wherewith they rubbe themselves, which maketh them to be of an Oliue colour. They are colourapparelled with skins, one part of their bodies is couered, and the other part vincouered; but in the winter they couer all, for they are clad with good Furres, namely with the skins of Originac, of skins.

Otters, Beuers, Lea-boores, Stagges, and Deere, whereof they have flore. In the winter when 60 the Snowes are great, they make a kinde of racket which is twice or thrice as bigge as one of Adeliceto go ours in France, which they fasten to their feete, and fo goe on the Snow without linking; for on the snow otherwise they could not hunt nor trauaile in many places. They have also a kinde of Marriage, with a Racker. Which is, that when a Milde is foureteene or fifteene yeares old, fhee shall have many fernants Themarriage and friends, and the may have carnall company with all those which the liketh, then after five of the Savages.

Sausges which

or fix yeares, the may take which of them the will for her husband, and to they thall live tooether all their life time, except that after they have lived a certaine time together and have no children, the man may forfake her and take another wife, faying that his old wife is nothing worth, to that the Maides are more free then the married Women. After they be married they be chafte, and their husbands for the most part are lealous, which give presents to the Father or Parents of the Maide, which they have married: loe this is the ceremonie and fashion which they vie in their marriages.

Their buriels after the Tar-They beloeue

Touching their burials, when a man or woman dieth, they make a pit, wherein they put all the goods which they have, as Kettels, Furres, Hatchets, Bowes and Arrowes, Apparell. and other things, and then they put the corps into the grave, and cover it with earth, and fet flore 10 of great peeces of wood ouer it, and one stake they set up on end, which they paint with red on the top. They believe the immortality of the Soule, and fay that when they be dead they soe into other Countries to reloyce with their parents and friends. my of the louic.

He eleventh day of Iune, I went fome twelve or fifteene leagues vp Saguenay, which is a

faire River, and of incredible depth; for I beleeue, as farre as I could learne by conference

whence it should come, that it is from a very high place, from whence there descendeth a fall of

water with great impetuolitie : but the water that proceedeth thereof is not able to make fuch

a River as this; which neuertheleffe holdeth not but from the faid course of water (where the

which space are fortie fine or fiftie leagues, and it is a good league and a halfe broad at the

most, and a quarter of a league where it is narrowest, which causeth a great current of water. All the Countrie which I faw, was nothing but Mountaines, the most part of rockes couered with

woods of Fir-trees, Cypreffes, and Birch-trees, the foyle very unpleasant, where I found not

a league of plaine Countrey, neither on the one fide nor on the other. There are certaine hils of Sand and Illes in the faid River, which are very high aboue the water. In fine, they

are very Defarts voide of Beafts and Birds; for I affure you, as I went on hunting through places which feemed most pleasant vnto mee, I found nothing at all, but small Birds which

are like Nightingales, and Swallowes, which come thither in the Summer; for at other times I thinke there are none, because of the excessive cold which is there; this River com- 30

meth from the North-west. They reported vnto me, that having passed the first fall, from

whence the currant of water commeth, they passe eight other sants or fals, and then they tra-

uaile one dayes journey without finding any, then they passe ten other fants, and come into a

Lake, which they paffe in two dayes (euery day they trauaile at their eafe, fome twelue or fif-

teene leagues :) at the end of the Lake there are people lodged : then they enter into three other

Rivers, three or foure dayes in each of them; at the end of which Rivers there are two or

three kinde of Lakes, where the head of Saguenay beginneth : from the which head or

fpring, vnto the faid Port of Tadonfac, is ten' dayes iournee with their Canowes. On the fide

N Wednedday the eighteenthday of Iune, we departed from Tadonfae, to go to the Sauli:
we palled by an Ile, which is called the Ile du lieure, or the Ile of the Hare, which may be

fome two leagues from the Land on the North fide, and some seuen leagues from the said Tadon-

fac, and fine leagues from the South Coast. From the Ile of the Hare we ranged the North Coast

about halfe a league, vnto a point that runneth into the Sea, where a man must keepe farther off. 50

The faid point is within a league of the Ile, which is called the Ile du Coudre, or the Ile of Fil-

berds, which may be some two leagues in length: And from the faid Ile to the Land on the North

fide is a league. The faid Ile is somewhat euen, and groweth sharpe toward both the ends; on the

West end there are Medowes and Points of Rockes which stretch somewhat into the River. The faid He is somewhat pleasant, by reason of the Woods which enuiron the same. There is store of

Slate, and the foyle is somewhat grauelly: at the end whereof there is a Rocke which stretcheth

into the Sea about halfe a league. We passed to the North of the faid Ile, which is distant from

first fall is) unto the Port of Tadonfac, which is the mouth of the faid River of Saguenay, in 20

The River of Saguenay, & his Ch20 4. A violent fall o, water.

the immortali-

A Mountainous Country.

The report of the beginning of the River of Ѕациенау.

A Lake two daies iournie long. Three other Riuers. Two or three Likes, where n

of the faid Rivers are many lodgingings, whither other Nacions come from the North, to trucke with the faid Mountainers, for skins of Beuers and Marterns, for other Merchandiles, which the the head of French Ships bring to the faid Mountainers. The faid Sauages of the North fay, that they fee a Saguenay be-Sea, which is falt. I hold, if this be fo, that it is some gulfe of this our Sea, which disgorgeth it selfe ginneth. That is, 120. by the North part between the lands; and in very deede it can be nothing else. This is that which leagu es. I have learned of the River of Saguenay. People of the North. Afalt fea.

Iourney to the fall and to certaine llands, arriual at Duebec. Chap.s. The Ifle of the Hare. The Ide of Filberds.

the He of the Hare twelve leagues. The Thursday following we departed from thence, and anchored at a dangerous nooke on the Northfide, where there be certaine Medowes, and a little River, where the Saunger lodge 60 tometimes. The faid day wee still ranged the Coast on the North, vnto a place where wee put backeby reasons of the winds which were contrary vnto vs, where there were many Rockes and places very dangeous : here we stayed three dayes wayting for faire weather. All this Coast is nothing but Mountaynes as well on the South fide as on the North, the most part like the Coast

of the River of Saguenay. On Sunday the two and twentieth of the faid moneth wee departed to goe to the le of Orleans, in the way there are many Iles on the South shoare, which are low and couered with trees, shewing to be very pleafant, contayning (as I was able to iudge) fome two leagues, and one league, and another halfe a league. About thele lles are nothing but Rocks and Flats, very dangerous to passe, and they are distant some two leagues from the mayne Land on the South.

And from thence wee ranged the Ile of Orleans on the Southfide : It is a league from the The Ile of Or-North shoare, very pleasant and leuell, contaying eight leagues in length. The Coast on the Leane. South shoare is low land, some two leagues into the Countrey : the faid lands begin to be low oto uer against the faidlle, which beginneth two leagues from the South Coast : to passe by the North fide is very dangerous for the bankes of Sand and Rockes, which are betweene the faid lle and the mayne Land, which is almost all dry at a low water. At the end of the faid lle I saw a fall of water, which fell from a great Mountaine, of the faid River of Canada, and on the top of the faid Mountaine the ground is levell and pleafant to behold, although within the faid Countries a man may fee high Mountaynes which may bee fome twenty, or fine and twenty leagues wichin the Lands, which are neere the firit Saule of Saguenay. We anchored at Quebec, which Queben is a Strait of the faid River of Canada, which is some three hundred pales broad : there is at this Strait on the North fide a very high Mountayne, which falleth downe on both fides : all the reft is a leuell and goodly Countrey, where there are good grounds full of Trees, as Okes, Cypreffes, 20 Birches, Firre-trees and Afpes, and other Trees bearing fruit, and wild Vines: So that in mine opinion, if they were dreffed, they would be as good as ours. There are along the Coast of the Dismants. faid Quebec Diamants in the Rockes of Slate, which are better then thofeof Alonfon. From the faid Quebec to the Ile of Condre, or Filberds, are nine and twenty leagues.

1611

N Munday the three and twentieth of the faid moneth, we departed from Quebec, where the River beginneth to grow broad sometimes one league, then a league and an halfe or Of the point of the River beginned to grow broad sometimes one league, then a league and an halfe or Of the point of the River beginning to the River b two leagues at most. The Countrey groweth still fairer and fairer, and are all low grounds, of S. Craix, of without Rockes, or very few. The North Coast is full of Rockes and bankes of Sand : you must Batillon, of the take the South tide, about some halfe league from the shore. There are certaine small Rivers which Rivers, Rocks, 30 are not nauigable, but only for the Canowes of the Sauges , wherein there be many fals. Wee les, Lands, anchored as high as Saint Croix, which is diftant from Quebec fifteene leagues. This is a low Trees, Fruits, point, which rifeth vp on both fides. The Countrey is faire and levell, and the foyles better then Countries, in any place that I have feene, with plenty of wood, but very few Firre-trees and Cyprelles, which are trong There are in these parts great store of Vines, Peares, imall Nuts, Cheries, Goole-beries, red and Quebe voto greene, and certaine small Roots of the bignesse of a little Not, resembling Musheroms in taste. The 3. Kiners. greene, and certaine imali Roots or the bignesse or a little wat, retembling number of the Chap 6.
Which are very good roaded and fod. All this foyle is blacke, without any Rockes, faue that Saint Croix, there is great flore of Slate : The foyle is very fott, and if it were well manured it would yeeld 14. leagues. g eat increase. On the Northilde there is a River which is called Basiscan, which goeth farre in- Ground Nuts. to the Countrey, whereby fometimes the Algenmequins come downe : and another on the fame The Ruce Ed-40 file three leagues from the faid Saint Croix, in the way from Quebec, which is, that where Iac- ifcan gust Quarter was in the beginning of the Discouery which he made hereof, and hee passed no Anosher Rises farther. The faid River is pleafant, and goeth farre vp into the Countries. All this North Coaft is very levell and delectable.

On Tuesday the source and twentieth of the faid moneth, wee departed from the faid Saint Cross, where we stayed a tyde and an halfe, that we might passe the next day following by day light, because of the great number of Rockes which are thwart the River (a strange thing to behold) which is in a manner dry at a low water : But at halfe flood, a man may beginne to paste fafely; yet you must take good heed, with the Lead alwayes in hand. The tyde floweth heere Agoodly almost three fathomes and an halfe : the farther we went, the fairer was the Countrey. We went fome fine leagues and an halfe, and anchored on the North fide. The Wednelday following wee

50 departed from the faid place, which is a flatter Countrey then that which we paffed before, full of great store of Trees as that of Saint Croix. We passed hard by a little lle, which was full of Vines, and came to an Anchor on the South fide neere a little Hill: but beeing on the top thereof Vines.

There is at other little He three leagues from Saint Croix, toyning neere the South shore. Wee departed from the faid Hill the Thurlday following, and passed by a little He, which is neere the Sixe (mall) North shoare, where I saw fixe small Rivers, whereof two are able to beare Boats farre vp, and Rivers. another is three hundred pases broad : there are certaine llands in the mouth of it; it goeth farre vp into the Countrey; it is the deepest of all the reit which are very pleafant to behold, the foyle 6) being full of Trees which are like to Walnut-trees, and have the same smell : but I saw no Fruit,

which maketh me doubt : the Sanages told me that they beare Fruit like ours. In passing further we met an Ile, which is called Saint Eley, and another little Ile, which is hard by the North shoare : we passed betweene the faid He and the North shore, where betweene the one and the other are some hundred and fiftie paces. From the faid Ile we paged a league and

Another fmall

A betrer tempermuce. 15 leagues.

be planted.

A great Lake. The head of Saguetay 106. leagues off.

the North fide is very good, one may palle freely there, yet with the Lead in the hand, to avoid certaine points. All this Coast which we ranged is mouing Sand; but after you be entred a little into the Woods, the foile is good. The Friday following we departed from this Ile, coafting fill the North fide hard by the shoare, which is low and full of good Trees, and in great number as farre as the three Rivers, where it beginneth to have another temperature of the feafon , fomewhat differing from that of Saint Croix : because the Trees are there more forward then in any place that hitherto I had feene. From the three Rivers to Saint Croix are fifteene leagues. In this River are fixe Ilands, three of which are very small, and the others some five or fixe hundred a lland fi to paces long, very pleasant and fertile, for the little quantitie of ground that they containe. There to is one lland in the middest of the land River , which looketh directly upon the passage of the River of Canada, and commandeth the other Ilands which lye further from the shoare, as well on the one fide as on the other, of foure or fine hundred paces : it rifeth on the South fide, and falleth fomewhat on the North fide. This in my judgement would be a very fit place to inhabit; and it might bee quickly fortified : for the situation is strong of it selfe,, and neere vnto a great Lake. which is about four leagues diffant, which is almost iny ned to the River of Saguenay, by the report of the Sauages, which travell almost an hundred leagues Northward, and passe many Saules. and then goe by Land some flue or sixe leagues, and enter into a Lake, whence the faid River of Sagnener receiveth the best part of his Spring, and the faid Sauages come from the faid Lake to Tadoufac. Moreover, the planting of The three Rivers would be a benefit for the liberty of certaine Nati-

an halfe, on the South fide neere vnto a River, whereon Canowes might goe. All this Coaff on

ons, which dare not come that way for feare of the faid Irocois their enemies, which border vpon all the faid River of Canada. But this place being inhabited, we might make the Irocois and the other Sauages friends, or at least wife under the fauour of the faid Plantation, the faid Sauages might paffe freely without feare or danger : because the said place of The shree Riners is a pallage. All the foyle which I faw on the North shoare is fandy. Wee went vp aboue a league A great course into the faid River, and could passe no further, by reason of the great current of water. We took a Boate to learch vp further, but we went not past a league, but we met a very Strait full of water, of some twelue paces, which caused vs that we could not passe no further. All the ground which I faw on the bankes of the faid River rifeth more and more, and is full of Firre-trees and 30 Cypresse Trees, and hath very few other Trees.

Great Lake described and River of the The Lake of Arzolefme. 15. leagues.

N the Saturday following, we departed from *The three Riners*, and anchored at a Lake, which is foure leagues diffant. All this Countrey from *The three Riners* to the entrance of the faid Lake is low ground, even with the water on the North fide; and on the South fide it is somewhat higher. The faid Countrey is exceeding good, and the most pleasant that hitherto we had frene: the Woods are very thinne, to that a man may trauell eafily through them. The next day being the nine and twentieth of Iune, we entred into the Lake, which is some fifteene leagues in length, and some seuen or eight leagues broad : At the entrance thereof on the South-A great River, fide within a league there is a River which is very great, and entreth into the Countrey some fix. 40 Another small tie or eightie leagues, and continuing along the same Coast, there is another little River, which pierceth about two leagues into the Land, and commeth out of another small Lake, which may containe some three or foure leagues. On the North fide where the Land sheweth very high, a man may fee some twentie leagues off; but by little and little the Mountaynes beginne totall toward the West, as it were into a flat Countrey.

The Sauages fay, that the greatest part of these Mountaynes are bad foyle. The faid Lake hath some three fathoms water whereas we passed, which was almost in the middest: the length lieth East and West, and the breadth from North to the South. I thinke it hath good fish in it, of fuch kinds as we have in our owne Countrey. Wee passed it the very same day, and anchored about two leagues within the great River which goeth vp to the Sault : In the mouth whereof 50 Two leagues. are thirtielmall llands, as farre as I could difcerne; some of them are of two leagues, others a 30. ma! Ilands. league and an halfe, & some lesse, which are full of Walnut-trees, which are not much different from ours; and I thinke their Walnuts are good when they bee ripe : I faw many of them under the Trees, which were of two forts, the one small, and the others as long as a mans Thumbe, Wal nuts of Store of Vines, but they were rotten. There are also store of Vines upon the bankes of the said Ilands. But when the waters be great, the most part of them is couered with water. And this Countrey is Good Counyet better then any other which I had feene before.

tins. The River of of fortification with flakes.

The last day of Iune wee departed from thence, and passed by the mouth of the River of the Irocois; where the Sauages which came to make warre against them, were lodged Their manner and fortified. Their Fortresse was made with a number of posts let very close one to ano. 62 ther, which loyned on the one fide on the banke of the great River of Cinada, and the other on the banke of the River of the Irecois : and their Boates were ranged the one by the other neere the shoare, that they might flie away with speed, if by chance they should bee further fed by the Irocois . For their Fort is couered with the barke of Okes , and ferneth them for nothing elic, but to have time to embarke themselves. We went up the River of the Irocois some fine or fixe leagues, and could passe no farther with our Pinnasse, by reason of the great course of nue or the respect, and also because we cannot goe on Land, and draw the Pinnasse for the multitude of Trees which are vpon the bankes.

CHAP. 6. Wholfome River. Many Iles and fruitfull trees. Low Land.

Seeing we could not passe any further, we tooke our Skiffe, to see whether the current were more gentle, but going vp fome two leagues, it was yet stronger, and wee could goe no higher. Being able to doe no more we returned to our Pinnasse. All this River is some three hundred or foure hundred paces broad, and very wholfome. Wee faw fue Ilands in it, diffant one from the other a quarter or halfe a league, or a league at the most : one of which is a league long, which is 10 the necreit to the mouth, and the others are very small, All these Countries are coursed with Fine I and Trees and low Lands, like those which I had seene before; but here are more Firres and Cyptesfesthen in other places. Neuerthelesse, the foile is good, although it bee somewhat fandy. This Ruer ronneth in a manner South-west. The Samages lay, that some fifteene leagues from the place where we were vp the Riuer, there is a Sault which falleth downe from a very steepe place, where they carry their Canowes to paffe the same some quarter of a league, and come into a Lake; most Southat the mouth whereof, are three Ilands, and being within the fame they meete with more Iles: weft. This Lake may containe some fortie or fiftie leagues in agth, and some fine and twentie leagues A Lake some in breadth, into which many Rivers fall, to the number of tea, which carrie Canowes very far fortie or fitte in preading into windin many the end of this Lake, there is another fall, and they enter againe in-20 to another Lake, which is as great as the former, at the head whereof the Irocon are lodged. They of the Irocon.

fay moreouer, that there is a River, which runneth vnto the Coast of Florida, whether it is from The goodnesses the faid laft Lake some hundred, or an hundred and fortie leagues. All the Countrey of the Iro- and short with the faid last Lake some hundred, or an hundred and rortic leagues. All the Country of the 1702 terof the cost is somewhat Mountaynous, yet not with standing exceeding good, temperate, without much Country of Winter, which is very short there.

Fter our departure from the River of the Irosess, wee anchored three leagues beyond the Their arrival A fame, on the North fide. All this Countrie is a lowe Land, replenished with all forts of at the Sault or trees, which I have spoken of before. The first day of July we coasted the North fide, where the Fallof the Riwood is very thinne, and more thinnethen wee had feene in any place before, and all good land uer of Canada, wood is very thinne, and more thinne then wee had feene in any place perfore, and an good fand the defeription for tillage. I went in a Canoa to the South shoare, where I law a number of Iles, which have thereof. Cha. 8.

many truitfull trees, as Vines, Wal-nuts, Hafel-nuts, and a kinde of fruit like Cheft-nuts, Che-Fruitfull Trees ries, Oskes, Aspe, Hoppes, Ashe, Beech, Cyprelles, very few Pines and Firre-trees. There are of many lores. alio other trees which I knew not, which are very pleafant. Weefound there flore of Strawberries, Raso-berries Goof-berries red, greene, and blue, with many small fruits, which growe there among great abundance of graffe. There are also many wilde beafts, as Orignas, Stagges, Orignas are be-Does, Buckes, Beares, Porkepickes, Conies, Foxes, Beaners, Otters, Muske-rats, and certaine fore faid to bee other kindes of beafts which I doe not knowe, which are good to eate, and whereof the Sauages haps Buffes. line. Wee passed by an Ile, which is very pleasant, and containeth some source leagues in length, Lesartor, that and halfe a league in breadth. I faw toward the South two high Mountaines, which shewed Orignaes are

40 some twentie leagues within the Land. The Sanages told mee, that here beganne the first fall Ellans. of the foresaid Ruer of the Irocou. The Wednesday following wee departed from this place, Apleasant Ile, of the foreign Ruler of the 17000. The vocalities and fayled fome five or fixe leagues. Wee faw many Ilands: the Land is there very lowe, and Many Ilands. these lies are couered with trees, as those of the River of the Irocass were.

The day following, being the third of July, we ranne certaine leagues, and passed likewise by July ?. many other Ilands, which are excellent good and pleasant, through the great store of Medowes Many more which are thereabout, as well on the shoare of the maine Land, as of the other llands: and all llands. the Woods are of very small growth, in comparison of those which wee had passed. At length We came this very day to the entrance of the Sault or Fall of the great River of Canada, with The entrance fauourable wind; and wee met with an Ile, which is almost in the middest of the said entrance, of the Sault or 50 which is a quarter of a league long, and passed on the South side of the said lie, where there was Fall. not past three, foure or fine foot water, and sometimes a fathome or two, and straight on the Anile. fudden wee found agains not past three or foure foot. There are many Rockes, and small Hands, whereon there is no wood, and they are even with the water. From the beginning of the forefaid Ile, which is in the middeft of the faid entrance, the water beginneth to runne with a great force. Although we had the wind very good, yet wee could not with all our might make any rentor water. great way: neuertheleffe wee paffed the faid He which is at the entrance of the Sault or Fall. When wee perceived that wee could goe no further, wee came to an anchor on the North shoare ouer against a small Hand, which aboundeth for the most part with those kinde of fruits which I have spoken of before. Without all delay wee made ready our skiffe, which wee had made of 60 purpose to passe the said Sault: whereinto the said Monsteur de Pont and my selfe entred, with Monsteur du

certaine Sauages, which we had brought with vs to flew vs the way. Departing from our Pin- Pont na Monnace, we were fearfe gone three hundred paces, but we were forced to come out, and caule certain four du Cham. Mariners to goe into the water to free our Skiffe. The Canoa of the Sauages palled eatily. Wee plane fearch met with an infinite number of small Rockes, which were even with the water, on which wee the Sank, touched oftentimes.

Two great Hands

A kind of Lake

3. 5t 4. Mountaines on the South fide. Two Rivers.

The furie of the fall of w.rer.

The Spale a league broad.

rer about the Ten Saules Temperate The Sault is in 45 degrees and certaine mi-A drau he of the Sauages. The first rethe Head of the River. A Riuer runtri: of the Algeumequins. A Like of 15. kanues.

Another Lake of 4. lengues. Five other Saults. A Lake of 80. leagues long. Brack ih water Ir feemeth hereby to trend fonthward. 60, leagues long, very brackish.

There be two great Hands, one on the North fide, which containeth some fifteene leagues in length, and almost as much in breadth, beginning some twelve leagues vp within the River of Canada, 2011g toward the River of the Irocon, and endeth beyond the Sault. The Hand which is on the South fide is fome foure leagues long, and fome halfe league broad. There is also another lland, which is neere to that on the North fide, which may bee some halfe league long, and fome quarter broad: and another small Hand which is betweene that on the North fide, and another neerer to the South shoare, whereby wee passed the entrance of the Sault. This entrance being paffed, there is a kinde of Lake, wherein all thefe Hands are, some five leagues long and almost as broad, wherein are many small Ilands which are Rockes. There is a Mountaine neere almost as proad, wherein are into the Countrie, and a little River which falleth from In the faid Mountaine into the Lake. On the South fide are some three or foure Mountaines, which feeme to be about fifteene or fixteene leagues within the Land. There are also two Rivers : one. which goesh to the first Lake of the River of the Irocois, by which fometimes the Alsoumagains injude them : and another which is necrevato the Sault, which runneth not faire into

LIBVIII.

At our comming neere to the faid Sault with our Skiffe and Canoa, I affure you, I neuer faw any threame of water to fall downe with fuch force as this doth; although it bee not very high, being not in some places past one or two fathoms, and at the most three: it falleth as it were steppe by steppe : and in enery place where it hath some small heigth, it maketh a strong boyling with the force and iteragin of the running of the water. In the breadth of the faid Sault, 20 which may containe fome league, there are many broad Rockes, and almost in the middest, there are very narrow and long llands, where there is a Fail as well on the fide of the faid Iles which are toward the South, as on the North fide : where it is fo dangerous, that it is not polfible for any man to palle with any Boat, how small soener it be. We went on land through the Woods, to fee the end of this Sault : where, after wee had trauelled a league, wee faw no more The swift cur. Rockes nor Falls . but the water runneth there fo swiftly as it is possible : and this current larent of the was freth for three or foure leagues : fo that it is in vaine to imagine, that a man is able to passe the faid Saults with any Boats. But he that would paffe them, must fit himselfe with the Canoas of the Sauages, which one man may eafily carrie. For to carrie Boats is a thing which cannot be done in to fhore time as it should bee to bee able to returne into France, vnleffe a man would 20 winter there. And beside this firit Sault, there are ten Saults more, the most part hard to passe. aire, and good So that it would be a matter of great paines and travell to bee able to fee and doe that by Boat which a man might promife himselte, without great cost and charge, and also to bee in danger to travell in vaine. But with the Canoas of the Sauges a man may travell freely and readily into all Countries, as well in the imall asin the great Rivers: So that directing himfelfe by the meanes of the faid Sauages and their Canoas, a man may fee all that is to be frene, good and bad, within the space of a yeere or two. That little way which wee trauelled by Land on the side of the faid Sault, is a very thinne Wood, through which men with their Armes may march eafily, without any trouble; the aire is there more gentle and temperate, and the foyle better then in portor the place that I had feene, where is store of fach wood and fruits, as are in all other places be- 40 fore mentioned: and it is in the latitude of 45, degrees and certaine minutes,

When we law that we could doe no more, we returned to our Pinnace; where we examined the Sauages which we had with vs, of the end of the River, which I caufed them to draw with into the Count their hand, and from what part the Head thereof came. They told vs, that beyond the first Stult that we had seene, they travelled some ten or fifteene leagues with their Canoas in the Riuer, where there is a River which tunneth to the dwelling of the Algoumequins, which are some fixty leagues diffant from the great River; and then they paffed five Saults, which may containe from the first to the last eight leagues, whereof there are two where they carrie their Canoas to palle them : euery Sault may containe halfe a quarter or a quarter of a league at the most. And then they come into a Lake, which may be fifteene or fixteene leagues long. From thence they 50 enter againe into a River which may be a league broad, and travell tome two leagues in the same; and then they enter into another Lake some source or fine leagues long : comming to the end thereof, they passe five other Saults, distant from the first to the last some five and twenty or thirty leagues; whereof there are three where they carrie their Canoas to palle them, and thorow the other two they doe but draw them in the water, because the current is not there so ftrong, nor so bad, as in the others. None of all these Saults is so hard to passe, as that which we faw. Then they come into a Lake, which may containe fome eighty leagues in length, in which Another Lake are many llands, and at the end of the same the water is brackish, and the Winter gentle. At the end of the faid Lake they passe a Sault which is somewhat high, where little water descendeth: there they carrie their Canoas by land about a quarter of a league to paffe this Sault. From 60 thence they enter into another Lake, which may be some fixty leagues long, and that the water thereof is very brackish: at the end thereof they come vnto a Strait which is two leagues A Strait of 2. Another migb- broad, and it goeth farre into the Countrie. They told vs, that they themfelues had pasted no farther; and that they had not feene the end of a Lake, which is within fifteene or fixteene

leagues of the farthest place where themselves had beene, nor that they which told them of it. has knowne any man that had feene the end thereof, because it is so great that they would not hizard themselves to sayle farre into the same, for feare lest some storme or gust of winde should hazara enemieraes to ay that in the Sammer the Suame doth fet to the North of the faid Lake, The fourherne and in the Winter is fetteth as it were in the middest thereof: That the water is there excee- fination of a falt, to wit, as falt as the Sex water. I asked them whether from the last Lake which they had great Lake, frene, the water deliended alwaies downe the Riter comming to Gafeberay? They told me, no: here, the water determined Lake onely it descended to Gaschepay: But that from the last Sault, water. which is fomewhat high, as I have fail, the water was almost still; and that the faid Lake

10 might take his course by other Rivers, which passe within the Lands, either to the South, or to Many Rivers the North, whereof there are many that runne there, the end whereof they fee not. Now, in running found the North, whereor there are many that runne there, the end whereor they remote Avow, in and north, my judgement, if so many Rivers fall into this Lake, having so small a course at the said Sault, Hadson River my rues it must needs of necessitie fall out, that it must have his issue forth by some exceeding great River. may be one of But that which maketh me beleeue that there is no River by which this Lake doth iffue forth thefe. (confidering the number of formany Rivers as fall into it) is this, that the Sauages have not An exceeding feene any River, that runneth through the Countries, faue in the place where they were. Which great River. maketh me beleeue that this is the South Sea, being falt as they fay : Neuertheleffe we may not The fouth Sea. giue so much credit thereunto, but that it must bee done with apparent reasons, although there be some small shew thereof. And this affuredly is all that hitherto I have seene and heard of the

20 Sauzees, touching that which we demanded of them.

VV Ee departed from the faid Sault on Friday the fourth day of July, and returned the Of Conda, and it have day to the River of the Irocois. On Sunday the fixth of July wee departed from or the Fals and or the Fals and thence, and anchored in the Lake. The Monday following wee anchored at the three Rivers. Lakes which it This day wee fayled fome foure leagues beyond the faid three Rivers. The Tuesday following passethby. we came to Quebec; and the next day wee were at the end of this Ile of Orleans, where the Satages came to vs, which were lodged in the maine Land on the North fide. Wee examined two July 4. or three Algoumiquins, to lee whether they would agree with those that wee had examined touching the end and the beginning of the faid River of Canada. They faid, as they had drawne Another reout the shape thereof, that having passed the Sault, which wee had seene, some two or three port of the Al-

leagues, there goeth a River into their dwelling, which is on the North fide. So going on for- goumequin Saward in the faid great River, they passe a Sault, where they carrie their Canoas, and they come uages. to paffe fine other Saults, which may containe from the first to the last some nine or ten leagues, and that the faid Saults are not hard to passe, and they doe but draw their Canoas in the most part of the faid Saults or Falls, fauing at two, where they carrie them: from thence they enter into of the laid Saults or Falls, fauing at two, where they carrie them. Home fixe or feuen leagues: A River or a River or feuen leagues: A River or Lake 600 7. and then they passe five other Falls, where they draw their Canoas as in the first mentioned, 12- leagues long, uing in two, where they carrie them as in the former: and that from the first to the last there are some twenty or fine and twenty leagues. Then they come into a Lake contaying some ALake 150.

hundred and fifty leagues in length: and foure or fine leagues within the entrance of that Lake leagues long. there is a River which goeth to the Algoumequins toward the North; and another River which A River on the goeth to the Irocois, whereby the said Algoumequins and Irocois make warre the one against the ing toward the other. Then comming to the end of the faid Lake, they meete with another Fall, where they Alzewinequine carrie their Canoas. From thence they enter into another exceeding great Lake, which may A Riser on containe as much as the former: They have beene but a very little way in this last Lake, and the south fide. have heard fay, that at the end of the faid Lake there is a Sea, the end whereof they have not Anotherexfeene, neither have heard that any have feene it. But that where they have beene, the water is Lake. not falt, because they have not entred farre into it; and that the course of the water commeth A Sea, the end from the Sun-fetting toward the East; and they knowe not, whether beyond the Lake that whereof the

they have seene, there be any other course of water that goeth Westward. That the Sunne set- Sauages never teth on the right hand of this Lake: which is, according to my inagement, at the North-west, It seemed to little more or leffe; and that in the first great Lake the water freezeth not (which maketh mee lie fouthward. judge that the climate is there temperate) and that all the Territories of the Algoumequins are lowe grounds, furnished with small store of wood: And that the coast of the Irocois is Mountainous, neuertheleffe they are excellent good and fertile foyles, and better then they have feene any where elfe: That the faid Irocois relide some fifty or fixty leagues from the faid great Lake. And this affuredly is all which they have told mee that they have feene: which differeth very little from the report of the first Sauages. This day wee came within some three leagues of the The Ile Coudres

He of Condres or Filberds. On Thursday the tenth of the said moneth, wee came within a league and an halfe of the Liture of Of Ile Du Lieure, or Of the Hare, on the North fide, where other Sauages came into our Pinnace, the Bare. among whom there was a young man , an Algonmequin, which had travelled much in the faid The thirdregreat Lake. Wee examined him very particularly, as wee had done the other Sauages. Hee told port made by vs, that having pasted the faid Fall which wee had seene, within two or three leagues there is a agreat Travel-

Сн л р. б.

lea_ues long.

Avery great Whole falt A great and maine Sea. A River which goeth to the Alcoumequias.

River, which goeth to the faid Algoumequins, where they be lodged; and that passing vo the great River of Canada, there are five Falls, which may containe from the first to the last some eight or nine leagues, whereof there bee three where they carrie their Canoas, and two others wherein they draw them : that each of the faid Falls may be a quarter of a league long : then they come into a Like, which may containe some fitteene leagues. Then they palle fine other Falk, which may containe from the the first to the last some twenty or fine and twenty leagues; where there are not past two of the faid Falls which they p. ff: with their Canoas, in the other three they doe An exceeding but draw them. From thence they enter into an exceeding great Lake, which may containe great Like 300 fome three hundred leagues in length : when they are passed tome hundred leagues into the said Lake, they meet with an Iland, which is very great; and beyond the faid Iland the water is In brackish: But when they have passed some hunared leagues farther, the water is yet falter: and Brockshwater, comming to the end of the faid Lake, the water is wholly falt. Farther he faid, that there is a More brackift Fall that is a league broad, from whence an exceeding current of water descendeth into the faid Lake. That after a man is piffed this Fall, no more land can be feene neither on the one fide nor on the other, but so great a Sca, that they never have seene the end thereof, nor have heard tell. that any other haue i cene the fame. That the Sunne fetteth on the right hand of the faid Lake: and that at the entrance thereof there is a River which goeth to the Algoumequins, and another River to the Irocois, whereby they warre the one against the other. That the Countrie of the Irocoss is somewhat mountainous, yet very fertile, where there is store of Indian Wheat and other fruits, which they have not in their Countrie: That the Countrie of the Algoumequins 20 is lowe and fruitfull. I enquired of them, whether they had any knowledge of any Mines! They told vs, that there is a Nation which are called, the good Irocois, which come to exchange for merchanules, which the French thips doe give to the Algoumequins, which lay, that there is A Mine of fine toward the North a Mine of fine Copper, whereof they shewed vs certaine Bracelets, which they had received of the faid Good Irocon; and that if any of vs would goe thither, they would bring them to the place, which should bee appointed for that butinesic. And this is all which I could learne of the one and the other, differing but very little; faue that the fecond which were examined, faid, that they had not tafted of the falt water : for they had not beene so faire within the faid Lake, as the others : and they differ some small deale in the length of the way, the one fort making it more short, and the other more long. So that, according to their report, from 10 the Sault or Fall where wee were, is the space of some soure hundred leagues wnto the Salt Sea. which may be the South Sea, the Sunne fetting where they fay it doth. On Friday the tenth of the faid moneth we returned to Tadoufae, where our ship lay.

leagues from the first Sault to the South

Their Voyage from Tadoufac to the lle rercee: of many forts of Mines.

Chap. 10. to Fadoufac. Armouchides The description of the Port of Garbe-

The Bay of aduenture.

The Bay of Heate.

The River of Mautanne. Trearcand Mi The Kiuer Sou-A Mine of Copper.

Sloone as wee were come to Tadoufac, wee embarqued our felues againe to goe to Gachesas, A which is dittant from the faid Tadoufac about some hundred leagues. The thirteenth day of the faid moneth we met with a companie of Sauges, which were lodged on the South fide, almost in the mid-way betweene Tadonfae and Gaebapa. Their Sagamo or Captaine which led and Courries, them is called Armouebides, which is held to be one of the wifeft and most hardy among all the Sauages: Hee was going to Tadoufac to exchange Arrowes, and the flesh of Orignars, which 40 found foundry they have for Beauers and Marterns of the other Sauages, the Mountainers, Effechemans, and Algoumequins.

The fifteenth day of the faid moneth we came to Gachepay, which is in a Bay, about a league from Gaberer and a halfe on the North fide. The faid Bay containeth tome feuen or eight leagues in length, and at the mouth thereof foure leagues in breadth. There is a Ruer which runneth fome thirty leagues vp into the Countrie : Then we faw another Bay, which is called the Bay des Mollus, or the Bay of Cods, which may be some three leagues long, and as much in bredth at the mouth, From thence we come to the He Percee, which is like a Rocke, very fleepe rifing on both fides, wherein there is a hole, through which Shalops and Boats may paffe at an high water: and at a lowe water one may goe from the maine Land to the faid Ile , which is not pait foure or fine co hundred paces off. Moreouer, there is another Hand in a manner South-east from the lle Perces about a league, which is called the Ile de Bonne-aduenture, and it may bee some halfe a league The II de Bost long. All thefe places of Gachepay, the Bay of Cods, and the Ile Percee, are places where they make dry and greene Fish. When you are possed the lle Percee, there is a Bay which is called they Bay of Heate, which runneth as it were Well South-well, some source and twenty leagues into the land, containing some fifteene leagues in breadth at the mouth thereof. The Sauages of Canada fay, that up the great River of Canada, about fome fixtie leagues, ranging the South coaft, there is a small River called Mantanne, which runneth some eighteene leagues vp into the Countreys and being at the head thereof, they carrie their Canowes about a league by land, and they come into the faid Bay of Heate, by which they goe sometimes to the Isle Percee. Also 60 they goe from the faid Bay to Tregate and M. famichy. Running along the faid coast we passe by many Rivers, and come to a place where there is a River which is called Souricona, where Monfieur Prenert was to difcourr a Mine of Copper. They goe with their Conowes up this River three or foure dayes, then they passe three or foure leagues by land, to the faid Mine, which is

hard vpon the Sea thoate on the South fide, At the mouth of the faid River, there is an Inara vpou un mot into the Sea; from the faid Illand vnto the Isle Perces, is some fixtie or fe- An lland. nanu yang a scill following the faid coast, which trendeth toward the East, 901 meete A Scian bewente a serait, which is two leagues broad, and fine and twenty leagues long. On the Extitude of Cape Breisa with a strain, and in called the like of Saint Laurence, where Cape Breton is; and in this place a Na- and the maine tion of Sauages, called the Sauricais, doe winter.

Paffing the Strait of the lies of Saint Lawrence, and ranging the South-west Coast, you come to a Bay which is yneth hard vpon the Myne of Copper. Pailing farther there is a River, which muncth threaffere and currence leagues into the Country; which reacheth necreto the Lake of numeral variables and stated and be an exceeding great-benefit, if these might be found a paling on the Coast of Florida Heese to Images make the land great Lake, where the warter is tale; siwell for the Manigation of thips, which thousand the land great Lake, where the warter is tale; siwell for the Manigation of thips, which thousand bet librect to lo many penils anthey are in Canada, se for the thortning of the way about three handred leagues. And ac is must cerame, this chee are Riters on the Goaff of Florids, which minute to the followined, which pierce up into the Gountries, where the followine exceeding good and ment on the fertile, and very good Hauene. The Country and Coaft of Florida may had another temperature of the featon, and may be emore tertile in abundance of fruites and other things, then that or Pagaine. which I haur feene : But at cannot haue more euen nor better fayles, then those which we have

feene.

30 The Sauages say, that in the sore said greet Bay of Hest there is a River, which runneth up A River.

A Like twenty we fome twentie leagues into the Coun rey, at the head whereof there is a Lake, which may be leagues in about twentie leagues in compaile, wherein is lighte flore of water, and the Summer it is dried compaffe. 40, where n they find, about a foot and an halfe under the ground a kind-of Metall like A merall like to iduer, which i showed theme, and that in another place neers the laid Lake there is a Myne of Silver. Copper. And this is that which I learned of the forefind Savages.

L departed from the the Borger the sinteenth day of the faid moneth to returns to Ta- Our course douber. When we were avening three lengues of Capele Vifuse, or the Biffuop Cape, present Tawe were encountred with a florme which latted two dayes, which forced vs to put roomer with dame, with 30 agreat creake, and to flay for faire weather. The day following we departed, and were encounted determined tred with another florme : Being tosh to parroome, and thinking to gaine way wee touched on of the le the North shore the eight and twentieth day of Laty the creeke which is very bad, because of the edges of Rockes which lie there. This creeke is in 98, degrees and certaine minutes. The next dy we anchored neuera Riuer, sehich is called Sant (Meganier Riuer, whiter at a fall fea is Baye, and fone three fathomes water, and a fathome and an halfe at a low outers this Riuer goeth faire by. Shoalds which into the Land. As facre as I could fee within the Land on the Baft fhoare, there is a fill of water which entreth into the faid River , and falleth fome fiftie or fixtie fathomes downe, from whence commeth the greatest part of the water which descended downe. At the mouth thereof there is a banke of Sand, whereon at the abbe is but halte a fa home water. All the Coaft to- shoare. 40 ward the East is mousing Sanda there is a point somehalfe league from the faid Riuet, which The River of

ftretcheth nalfea league inco the See : and toward the Weft there is a fmall lland: this place is in Same attageret tretcheth nattea leggue into the set : and toward the west deer is a traditional time passes of the fittle degrees. All chefe Countries are exceeding bad, full of First-trees. The Land here is some very bash. what high, but notio high as that on the Southfide. Some three leagues beyond we palled neere Countries. vato another River, which feemed to be very great, yet barred for the most part with Rockes; Some eight leagues farther there are Pount which runneth a league and an halfe into the Sea, Toolist that where there is not paft a fathome and an halfe of water. When you are paffed this Point, there funnoch into is another about foure leagues off, where is water enough. All this Coast is low and landie. Foure the fealeagues beyond this there is a creeke where a River entreth : many thips may paffe heere on the A good Creek, Well fide : this is a low point, which runneth about a league into the Seasyou must runne along where many the Easterne shoare some three hundred paces to enter into the same. This is the best Hauen ships may rider

50 which is all along the North moare; but it is very dangerous in going thither, because of the flats and sholds of fand, which lye for the most part all along the theare, almost two leagues into the Sea. About fix leagues from thence, there is a Bay where there is an Isle of fand; all this Bay is A Bay. very shallow except on the East file, where it hath about four fathoms water : within the channell which entreth into the faid Bay, some foure leagues up, there is a faire creeke where a River ACreeke. entreth. All this coalt is low and sandie, there descende tha fall of water which is great. About fine leagues farther is a Point which ilretcheth about halfe a league into the Sea, where there is a creeke, and from the one point to the other are three leagues, but all are should, where is little water. About two leagues off, there is a strand where there is a good hauen, and a small River,

60 wherein are three Illands, and where Ships may harbour themselves from the weather. Three leagues beyond this, is a fandie point which runneth out about a league, at the end whereof there Two little for is a small Islet. Going forward to Lefquenius, you meete with two little low Islands, and a little Hands. rocke neere the shoare : these fard Hands are about halfe a league from La/quenims, which is a ve- Lessagn a ry bad Port, compassed with rockes, and dry at a low water, and you must fetch about a little very bad Port,

Souricois. A great River weft coaft

Crecks, Potts

The River wh re he rales hill the whales. of Augus.

point of a rocke to enter in, where one Ship anely can passe at a time. A little higher there is a River, which runneth a little way into the land. This is the place where the Basks kill ele Whales: to fav the truth, the haven is starke naught. Wee came from thence to the forelaid has Our arrivall at uen of Tadonfac, the third day of August. All these Countries before mentioned are low toward Tadouf whe 30 the shoare, and within the land very high. They are neither so pleasant nor fruitfull as those on the South, although they be lower. And this for a certaintie is all which I have feene of this Nore

Of the A: moughiceis Sauages and of their monftrous thape. The difcourfe of Men-Gest de Present of Saint Male, touching the diffeuerie of the South well Coaft. Cb.12. The Ceremonies which they vie before they go to the

A Tour comming to Tadonfac, we found the Sanages which wee met in the River of the Ire-A cois, who met with three Canowes of the Iracon in the first Lake, which fought against tenne others of the Mountayners; and they brought the heads of the Iracon to Tadonfac, and there was but one Mountayner wounded in the arme with the fhot of an Arrow, who dreaming of fomething, all the other tenne must feeke to content him, thinking also that his wound thereby would mend if this Sasage die, his Parents will reuenge his death, either vpon their Nation or voon others, or at least wife the Captaines must give Presents to the Parents of the dead, to content them; otherwife as I have faid, they would be revenged : which is a great fault amone them. Before the faid Mountayners fet forth to the Warre, they affembled all, with their richett apparell of Furres, Beauers, and other Skinnes adorned with Pater-noffers and Chaines of diners colours, and affembled in a great publike place, where there was before them a Sagame whose to name was Begenrat, which led them to the Warre, and they marched one behind another, with retired themselves into their Cabines, and the Sanages went to warre against the Irocois.

Their deparcure from Tadesta: Armon:hicois deformed Satinges.

The Souricois

The Relation of the Copper Myne on the South Coaft.

Blacke pain-An He wherein another kind of Metall is found, which is white being

> Other Mynes. The description of the the faid Myne falleth almost in the mid way of that whereby Monsieur Preners returned, and there are as it

their Bowes and Arrowes, Mafes and Targets, wherewith they furnish themselues to fight and they went leaping one after another, in making many gestures of their bodies, they made many turnings like a Snaile : afterward they began to dance after their accustomed manner, as I have faid before : then they made their Feast, and after they had ended it, the women stripped themfelues starke naked, being decked with their fairest Cordons, and went into their Canowes thus maked and there danced, and then they went into the water, and strooke at one another with their Oares, and beate water one upon another ; yet they did no hurt, for they warded the blowes which they strooke one at the other. After they had ended all these Ceremonies, they The fixt day of August we departed from Tadoufac, and the eighteenth of the faid moneth we arrived at the He Perges, where wee found Menfezer Presers of Saint Male, which came from the Myne, where he had beene with much trouble, for the feare which the Sanager had to mett with their enemies, which are the Armonebicon , which are Sauges very monffrous, for the shape that they have. For their head is little, and their body short, their armes small like a bone. and their thigh like; their legges great and long, which are all of one proportion, and when they fit woon their heeles, their knees are higher by halfe a foot then their head, which is a ftrange thing, and they seeme to be out of the course of Nature. Neverthelesse, they be very valuant and resolute, and are planted in the best Countries of all the South Coast : And the Souriesis do greatly feare them. But by the incouragement which the faid Monfieur de Prenert gaue them, hee An brought them to the faid Myne, to which the Sanages guided him. It is a very high Mountaine, riling fomewhat over the Sea, which gliftereth very much against the Sunne, and there is great ftore of Verde-greafe illuing out of the faid Myne of Copper. He faith, that at the foot of the faid Mountayne, at a low water there were many morfels of Copper, as was otherwise declared Another Mine vnto vs, which fall downe from the top of the Mountaine, Paffing three or foure leagues further toward the South, there is another Myne, and a imall River which runneth a little way vo into the Land, running toward the South, where there is a Mountaine, which is of a blacke painting, wherewith the Sauages paint themselues : Some fixe leagues beyond the second Myne, toward the Sea, about a league from the South Coast, there is an Ile, wherein is found another kind of Metall, which is like a darke browne : if you cut it , it is white, which they vied in old time 50 for their Arrowes and Kniues, and did beate it with flones. Which maketh me beleeve that it is not Tinne, nor Lead, being so hard as it is; and having shewed them silver, they faid that the Myne of that He was like ynto it, which they found in the earth, about a foot or two deepe. The faid Monfieur Prenert gave the Sanages Wedges and Cizers, and other things necessarie to draw out the faid Myne; which they have promifed to doe, and to bring the same the next years, and give it the faid Monfieur Presert. They fay also that within some hundred or one hundred and twentie leagues there are other Mynes, but that they dare not goe thither unleffe they have Frenchmen with them to make warre vpon their enemies, which have the faid Mynes in their possession. The said place where the Myne is, standeth in 44. degrees and some few minutes, neere the South Coast within fine or fixe leagues : it is a kind of Bay, which is certaine leagues 62 broad at the mouth thereof, and somewhat more in length, where are three Rivers, which fall

into the great Bay neere vnto the He of Saint lobe, which is thirtie or five and thirtie leagues

long, and is fixe leagues distant from the South shoare. There is also another little River, which

were two kind of Lakes in the faid River. Furthermore, there is yet another small River which

goeth toward the Mountaine of the painting. All thefe Rivers fall into the faid Bay on the South-east part, neere about the faid lie which the Sauages lay there is of this white Metall. On A good Hauen the North fide of the fard Bay are the Mynes of Copper, where there is a good Hauen for flips, at the Copper and a small Hand at the mouth of the Hauene the ground is Oze and Sand, where a man may run his ship on shoare. From the said Myne to the beginning of the mouth of the said Rivers is some fixtis or eightie leagues by Land. But by the Sea Coaff, according to my judgement, from the pallage of the Ile of Saint Laurence and the Firme Land, it cannot be past fiftie or fixtie leagues to the faid Myne. All this Countrey is exceeding faire and flat, wherein are all fores of trees, which wee law as wee went to the first Saule vp the great River of Canada, very small store of to Firre-trees and Cypreil's. And this of a truth is as much as I learned and heard of the faid Mon-

The Efore we departed from Tadonfac, to returne into France, one of the Sagamoz of the Moun- Their returned Drayners named Bechourat, gaue his Sonne to Monsteur du Pont to carrie him into France, Chap.13. and he was much recommended vato him by the Great Sagamo Anadabijon, praying him to vie him well, and to let him fee that, which the other two Sauages had feene which we had brought backe againe. We prayed them to give vs a woman of the Irocois, whom they would have eaten: whom they gave voto vs, and we brought her home with the forelaid Sanage. Monsteur de Prenert in like manner bronght home foure Sanages, one man which is of the South Coalt, one

30 Woman and two children of the Canadians. The foure and twentieth of August, we departed from Gachepay, the ship of the said Monfenr Present and ours. The second of September, we counted that wee were as farre as Cape Rafe. The fift day of the faid moneth we entred vpon the Banke, whereon they vie to fill. The Banke. fixteenth, we were come into the Sounding, which may be some fittle leagues distant from the inclounding, Ulhant. The twentieth of the laid moneth we arrived in New Hanen by the grace of God to all Vfhant. our contentments, with a continuall fauourable wind.

CHAP. VIL

The Patent of the French King to Monsieur de Monts for the inhabiting of the Countries of La Cadia Canada, and other places in New France.



Entry by the grace of God King of France and Nauatte. To our deare and well beloned the Lord of Monts, one of the ordinarie Gentlemen of our Chamber, greeting. As our greatest care and labour is, and hath alwayes beene, fince our comming to this Crowne, maintaine and conferue it in the ancient dignitie, greatnesse and splendour thereof, to ex-tend and amplisse, as much as lawfully may bee done, the bounds and limits of the same. We being, of a long time, informed of the fituation and condition of the Lands and Ter-

ritories of La Cadia, moved abone all things, with a fingular zeale, and denout and constant resolution. which we have taken, with the helpe and affistance of God, Author, Distributour, and Protectour of all Kingdomes and Estates, to canse the people, which doe inhabit the Country, men (at this present time) Barbarous, Atheists, without Faith, or Religion, to be connerted to Christianitie, and to the Beliefe and Profession of our Faith and Religion: and to draw them from the ignorance and unbeliefe wherein they are. Having also of a long time knowne by the Relation of the Sea Captaines, Pilots, Merchants and others, who of long time have haunted, frequented and trafficked with the people that are found in the Said places, how fruitfull, commodious and profitable may be unto us, to our Estates and Subjects, the 50 Dwelling, Possession, and Habitation of those Countries, for the great and apparent prosit which may be drawne by the greater frequentation and habitude which may bee had with the people that are found there, and the Trafficke and Commerce which may be, by that meanes safely treated and negotiated. We then for these causes fully trusting on your great wisdome, and in the knowledge and experience that you bane of the qualitie, condition and situation of the faid Countrie of La Cadia : for diners and fundry Nanigations, Voyages and Frequentaions that you have made into those parts, and others reere and bordering aponit: Affuring our selves that this our resolution and intention, being committed anto you, you will attentimely, diligently, and no leff-couragiously and valorously execute and bring to such perfection as we defire : Haus expresty appointed and established you, and by these Presents, signed with our owne hands, doe commit ordaine, make, constitute and establish you, our Lieutenant Generall, for to represent 60 our person, in the Countries, Territories, Coasts and Co fines of La Cidia Tobegin from the 40. degree unto the 46. And in the seme distance, or part of it, as farre as may bet done, to establish, extend and make to be in me our N me, Might and Authoritie. And under the same to subject, submit and bring to obedience all the people of the faul Land and the Borderers thereof: And by the meanes thereof. and all lamfull majes, to call, make, instruct, provoke and incite them to the knowledge of God, and to the

The rest of

here for bre-

with the Pro-

uifoes, &c.

And let not

Englishmen

roome for

feare want of

habitations;

thefe being

other Carle

many inter-

ruptions, and

of Trade with

Sauages then

otherwife, I

haue omitted many digref-

fions and dif-

the Authour;

fumme of his

moft ample Worke. His

Map but for

coft, I would

baue here ad-

ded. I haue

diurrs by me which I take

more exact, I

am fure with

many many

particulers

wanting in

courles of

ged by the French in Way

worthy the

CHAP.7. Bay fortic leagues in length. Spaniar de exceeding cruelties,

light of the Faith and Christian Religion, to establish it there : And in the exercise and profession of the same, keepe and conferne the said people, and all other Inhabitants in the said places, and there to command in peace, reft and tranquillise, as well by Sea as by Land : to ordaine, decide, and canfe to bee executed all that which you hall indee fit and nesessarie to be done, for to maintaine, keepe and conferue the faid places under our Power and Authoritie, by the formes, wayes and meanes prescribed by our Lawes. And for to have there a care of the lame with you, to appoint, establish, and constitute all Officers. as well in the affaires of Warre, as for Instice and Policie, for the first time, and from thence forward to name and present them vato vs : for to be disposed by vs, and to give Letters, Tules, and such Provisors as Shall be necestarie. &c.

Ginen at Fountain-Bleau the eight day of Nonember : in the yeere our Lord 1603. And of our 10 Resone the fifteenth. Signed Henry : and underneath by the King, Potier; And fealed upon finale

labell with yellow Waxe.

The Voyage of Monsieur de Monts into New France, written by MARKE LESCARBOT.

A Onfieur de Monts having made the Commissions and Prohibitions before said , to Mbee proclaimed thorow the Realme of France, and especially thorow the Ports and maritine Townes thereof, cauled two shippes to bee rigged and surnished, the one 20 thi Parentis under the conduct of Captaine Timothy of New-bauen , the other of Captaine Morell of Honfleur. In the first , hee shipped himselfe , with good number of men of account , as nitie omitted : well Gentlemen as others. And for as much as Monfieur de Pourrucourt was, and had beene of a long time, delirous to tee those Countries of New France, and there to finde out and choose fome it place to retire himfelfe into, with his Family, Wife and Children, not meaning to be the last that should follow and participate in the glorie of so faire and generous an enterprize, would needs goe thither, and shipped himselfe with the said Monsieur de Monts, carrying with him tome quantitie of Armours and Munitions of Warre; and fo weighed Anchors from New-French Plantabauen the feuenth day of March 1604. But being departed fomewhat too foone, before the Win- 20 mons or Sauage ter had yet left off her frozen Weed, they found there of Icie bankes, against the which they very thin, the were in danger to strike, and so to be cast away.

The Voyage was long by reason of contrarie winds, which seldome hapneth to them that set out in March for the New-found lands, which are ordinarily carried with an East or Northerne ing, or planta- winde, fit to goe to the fe Lands. And having taken their course to the South of the lie of tion, having to Sand or Sablon, or Sand, for to shunne the faid Ices, they almost fell from Caribdas into Sey da, going to frike towards the faid Ile, during the thicke mists that are frequent in that Sea. In the end, the fixt of May they came to a certaine Port, where they found Captaine Roffignol of New-bauen, who did trucke for skinnes with the Sauages, contrary to the Kings Inhibitions, more frequenwhich was the cause that his ship was conficated. This Port was called Le Port du Roffignol, ha- 10 uing (in this his hard fortune) this onely good, that a good and fit Harborough or Port, in those

Coaits beareth his name.

From thence coasting and discouring the Lands, they arrived at another Port, very faire, which they named Le Port de Moutton, by reason that a Mutton or Weather hauing leaped o. uer-board and drowned himselfe came aboard againe, and was taken and eaten as good prize. Neere the faid Montton Port there is a place so replenished with Rabbets and Conies, that they almost did eate nothing elfe. During that time Monsieur Champlem was fent with a shallop to feeke farther off a fitter place to retire themselues, at which Exploit he carried so long, that deonly for knowliberating upon the returne, they thought to leave him behind: for there was no more victuals: ledge of those parts, prefenand they ferued themselues with that, that was found in the faid Rossignols ship, without which so ting the briefe they had beene forced to returne into France, and to to breake a faire enterprize at the very birth and beginning thereof; or to starue, having ended the hunting of Conies, which could not still

All New France in the end being contained in two ships, they weighed Anchors from Port du Montton, for to imploy their time, and to discouer Lands as much as might before Winter. Wee came to Cape de Sable, or the Sandie Cape; and from thence we failed to the Bay of Saint Marie, where our men lay at Anchor fitteene dayes, whileft the Lands and passages as well by Sea as by River might be descried and knowne. This Bay is a very faire place to inhabit, because that one is readily carried thither without doubling. There are Mynes of Iron and Siluer; but in no great abundance, according to the triall made thereof in France. A Priest losing his way in the Woods 60 was mitting fixteene dayes. Whereupon a Protestant was charged to have killed him be-

both his Mapp: and Discourse show that the French discoursed not so neers Virginia, as Hudsons River; and that the French P'anazione bute beene more Northerly farre, then our Northerne Virginia, and to the Southerne, not a finadow in compaifin of and numbers.

cause they quarrelled sometimes for matters of Religion. Finally, they sounded a Trumpet thorow the Forreit, they shot off the Canon divers times, but in vaine: for the roaring of the Sea, stronger then all that, did expell backe the found of the faid Canons and Trumpets. Two, there and foure dayes palled he appeareth not. In the meane-while the time haftens to depart, so having tarried so long that hee was then held for dead, they weighed Anchors to goe further, and to fee the depth of a Bay that hath some fortie leagues length. and fourteene (yea eighteene) of breadth , which was named La Baye Francoife, or the Language Francoife

In this Bay is the passage to come into a Port, whereinto our men entred, and made some 10 abode, during the which they had the pleasure to hunt an Ellan, or Stagge, that croffed a great Lake of the Sea, which maketh this Port, and did swimme but early. This Port is ennironed with Mountaines on the North fide : Towards the South bee small Hills, which (with the faid Mountaines) doe powre out a thousand Brookes, which make that place pleasanter then any other place in the World : there are very faire talles of waters, fit to make Milles of all forts. At the East is a River betweene the taid Mountaines and Hilles, in the shippes may faile fifteene leagues and more, and in all this diffance is nothing of both fides the River but faire Medowes , which River was named L' Equille , because that the first fish taken therein was an Equille. But the faid Port, for the beautie thereof was called Port Royall, Monfieur The River of

de Pontrincourt having found this place to bee to his liking demanded it, with the Lands L'Equille. 20 thereunto adiopning, of Monsieur de Monts: to whom the King had by Commission, before inferted, granted the distribution of the Lands of New France from the fortieth degree to the fixe and fortieth. Which place was granted to the laid Monsieur de Poutrincourt, who fince hath had Letters of confirmation for the same of his Maiestie, intending to retire himselfe this ther with his Family, and there to establish the Christian and French Name, as much as his power shall stretch, and God grant him the meanes to accomplish it. The Port contayneth eight leagues of circuit, besides the River of L' Equillo. There is within it two Iles very faire and pleasant: the one at the mouth of the faid River, which I deeme to bee of the greatnesse of the Citie of Beauvais: The other at the fide of the mouth of another River, as broad as the River of Oife, or Mane, entring within the faid Port: The faid lie beeing almost of the greatnesse of the other: and they both are wooddie. In this Port, and right ouer against the former Ile, wee dwelt three yeeres after this Voyage. We will speake thereof more at large

From Port Royall they failed to the Copper Myne, whereof wee have spoken before else- A Copper where. It is a high Rocke betweene two Bayesof the Sea, wherein the Copper is coniouned Myae, with the stone, very faire and very pure, such as is that which is called Rozette Copper. Many In the all and with the itone, very faire and very pure, fuch asis that winder is called Roberts Supply and 19. Chap, of Gall-smithes have seene of it in France, which doe say that winder the Copper Myne there is second might bea Golden Myne : which is very probable. For if those excrements that Nature expelleth forth be so pure, namely, small pieces that are found vpon the gravell at the foote of the whole Volume Rocke, when it is low water, there is no doubt that the Metall which is in the bowels of the vniranflated. 40 earth is much more perect, but this is a Worke that requireth time. The first myning and working is to have Bread, Wine and Cattle, as we have faid elfe-where. Our felicitie confifteth not in Mynes, specially of Gold and Silver, the which serne for nothing in the tillage of the ground, on, nor to Handicrafts vie. Contrariwise, the abundance of them is but a charge and burthen, that keepeth man in perpetuall verquiet, and the more he hath thereof, the leffe rest enioyeth he, and

his life leffer affured voto him.

Before the Voyages of Peron great riches might have beene set vp in a small place, in stead Note. This that in this our age by the abundance of Gold and filter the fame is come at no value nor effeeme. French Author One hath need of huge Chefts and Coffers to put in that , which a small Budget might haue was a Romifb contained. One might have travelled with a Purse in ones sleeue, and now a Cloke-bagge and a which yes To Horse must expressly be had for that purpose. Wee may suffly curse the houre that greedie Aua- head for that purpose. rice did carrie the Spaniard into the Welt, for the wofull events that have enfued thereof. For freely of the when I consider that by his greedinesse he hath kindled and maintayned the Warre thorow all Seamands. Christendome, and his onely studie hath beene how to destroy his Neighbours (and not the Turke) I cannot thinke that any other but the Deuill hath beene the Authour of their Voyages. And let not the pretence of Religion be alleaged vnto mee : for (as wee haue faid elfewhere) they have killed all the of-fpring of the Countrey with the most inhumane torments that the Deuili hath beene able to excogitate. And by their cruelties have rendred the Name of God odious, and a name of offence to those poore people, and have continually and daily blafphemed him in the midft of the Gentiles as the Prophet reprocheth to the people Efay 22.00163. 60 of Ifract. Winessehim that had rather bee damned, then goe to the Paradise of the Spa-

Among these Copper Rockes there is found sometimes small Rockes covered with Diamonds fixed to them. I will not after them for time, but that is very pleating to the fight. There are allo certaine flinning blue itones, which are of no leffe value or worth than Turkie Stones. Turkie flones, Tttttt 2

Monsieur de Champdore our guide for the Navigations in those Countries, having cut within a Rocke one of those stones, at his returne from New France hee brake it in two, and gaue one part of it to Monsieur de Monts, the other to Monsieur de Poutrincourt, which they made tobe put in Gold, and were found worthy to be presented the one to the King by the faid Poutrincourt, the other to the Queene by the faid de Monts, and were very well accepted. I remember that a Goldsmith did offer fiteene Crownes to Monsieur de Pontrincourt for that hee presented to his

New France, Bay of Saint Marie. Common place. LIB.VIII.

Vines.

The commoditte of Vovaging by the

This River is one of the fairest that may be seene, having store of Hands, and swarming with filhes. This last yeere 1608, thy laid Monfieur de Champdore, with one of the faid Monfieur de Monte his men, hath beene tome fiftie leagues vp the laid River : and doe witneffe that there is great quantitie of Vines along the shoare, but the Grapes are not so bigge as they be in the Countrie of the Armonchiquou: There are allo Onions, and many other forts of good hearbs. Asfor Great Grapes
among the deamong the deof Cedar Trees. Concerning fishes the faid Champdore hath related vinto vs, that putting the Abundance of Kertle ouer fire, they had taken fish sofficient for their Dinner before that the water was bot. Moreover this River, firetching it felte tarre within the Lands of the Savages doth marvellously thorten the long travels by meanes thereof. For in fixe dayes they goe to Gafbepe , comming to the Bay or Gulte of Chaleur, or heate, when they are at the end of it, in carrying their Canowes fome few leagues. And by the fame River in eight dayes they go to Tadonfac by a branch of the firme which commeth from the North-well. In such fort that in Port Royall one may have within fifteene or eighteene dayes newes from the Frenchmen, dwelling in the great River of Canada, by these wayes: which could not be done in one moneth by Sea, nor without danger.

The He of S. leagues from S. Johns Riner.

L-auing Saint Johns River, they came following the Coast twentie leagues from that place, to a great River (which is properly Sea) where they fortified themselves in a little Iland seated in the middett of this River, which the faid Champleine had beene to discouer and view. And seeing it throng by nature, and of easie defence and keeping, besides that the season beganne to slide away, and therefore it was behoouefull to prouide of lodging, without running any farther, they resolued to make their abode there.

As they began to vitit and fearch the Hand, Monfieur de Champdore (of whom we shall henceforth make mention, by reason he dwelt source yeere in those parts, conducting the Voyages 20 made there) was fent backe to the Bay of Saint Mary, with a Mine-finder, that had beene car-Remove to the ried thither for to get fome Mynes of tiluer and Iron , which they did . And as they had croffed Bay of S.M. 7, the French Bay, they entred into the faid Bay of Saint Marie, by a narrow Straite or passage, man was foul which is betweene the Land of Port Royall, and an Iland called the Long lle: where after some abode they going a filhing, Monfieur Anbri (the Priest before lost) perceiued them, and beganne The Long le. with a feeble voice to call as loud as he could; and put his Handkercher, and his Hat on a states end, which made him better to be knowne. During thele fixteene daies hee fed himfelfe but by (I know not what) small fruits, like vnto Cheries, without kernell (yet not so delicate) which are fearfly found in those Woods. They gave him food by measure, and brought him backe againe to the company at the lland of Saint Croix, whereof every one received an incredible ioy 40 and confolation. Before we speake of the ships returne into France, it is meete to tell you how hard the lle of

Saint Croix.

The fruitfulneffe of the

The Iland in compatie.

Muicles.

on of the leof Saint Croix is to bee found out, to them that were never there. For there are fo many lles and great Bayes to goe by, before one be at it, that I wonder how ever one might pierce to farre for to finde it. There are three or foure Mountaines, imminent aboue the others, on the fides: But on the North fide, from whence the River runneth downe, there is but a sharpe pointed one, aboue two leagues diffant. The Woods of the maine Land are faire and admirable high and well growne, as in like manner is the graffe. There is right ouer against the Hand fresh water brooks, very pleasant and agreeable, where divers of Monsseur de Monts, his men did their bulinesse, and builded there certaine Cabanes. As for the nature of the ground it is most excellent and motta- 50 bundantly fruitfull. For the faid Monsieur de Monts, having caused there some piece of ground to bee tilled, and the same sowed with Rie (for I have seene there no Wheate) hee was not able to tarrie for the maturitie thereof to reape it; and notwithstanding, the graine, fallen, hath growne and increased so wonderfully that two yeeres after we reaped and did gather of it as faire, bigge and weightie, as in France, which the foile had broughe forth without any tillage : and yet at this prelint it doth continue still to multiply every yeare. The faid Hand containeth some halfe halte a league a league of circuit, and at the end of it on the Sea lide, there is a Mount or fmall Hill, which is (as it were) a little He leuered from the other, where Monfieur de Monts his Canon was placed: There is also a little Chappell built after the Sauage fashion. At the foot of which Chappell there is such store of Muscles as is wonderfull, which may bee gathered at low water, but they 60 are imall.

Now let vs prepare and hoife vp failes. Monfieur de Poutrincourt made the Voyage into theile parts with some men of good fort, not to winter there, but as it were to seeke out his feate, and find out a Land that might like him. Which he having done, i ad no need to foiourne there any longer. So then the ships being ready for the returne, he shipped himselfe, and those of his companie, in one of them.

one, in one of the contraction, Monsteur du Monts his people did worke about the Fort; Poutsmoute During the foresaid Nauigation, Monsteur du Monts his people did worke about the Fort; Poutsmoute which he leated at the end of the Illand, opposite to the place where he had lodged his Cannon. into France. Which was wifely confidered, to the end to command the River vp and downe. But there was an The building Which was writely connected, to the end to command the court of all own thou any shelter, but of the at the lie of inconvenience, the said Fort did lie towards the North, and without any shelter, but of the s. Croix. trees that were on the Ile shoare, which all about he commanded to be kept, and not cut downe. The most vegent things being done, and hoary snowy Father being come, that is to say, Win- Three discom-

ter, then they were forced to keepe within doores, and to live every one at his owne home: du-modities in to mag which time, our men had three special discommodities in this Iland, videlices, want of S. Croix. wood, (for that which was in the faid lle was spent in buildings) lacke of fresh water, and the continuall watch made by night, fearing some surprise from the Sauages, that had lodged themfelues at the foot of the Lid Hand, or some other enemie. For the malediction and rage of ma- Wickednesse ny Christians is luch, that one mult take heed of them much more than of Infields. A thing of many thriwhich erieueth me to ipeake: would to God I were a lyar in this respect, and that I had no caule to freake it! When they had need of water or wood, they were confirmed to croffe ouer the River, which is thrice as broad of every fide, as the River of Seine. It was a thing painfull The River of and tedious, in fuch fort, that it was needfull to keepe the Boat the whole day, before one Roan. might get those necessaries. In the meane while the cold and snowes came vpon them, and the 20 Ice fo ftrong, that the Sider was frozen in the veffels, and every one his measure was given him Vnknown fickout by weight. As for Wine it was distributed but at certaine dayes of the weeke. Many idle neffes, vir. the fluggish companions dranke snow-water, not willing to take the paines to crosse the River. Scorbute or Briefly, the voknowne fickneffes like to those described voto vs by lames Quartur, in his Rela-Scuruse, the Briefly, the volknowne ficknesses like to those described vinto vs by sames Marter, in his Actagreatest plague
tion, affailed vs. For remedies there was none to bee found. In the meane while the poore ficke
of Nauigations creatures did languith, pining away by little and little, for want of fweet meates, as Milke or and new Planfpoon-meate for to fustaine their fromackes which could not receive the hard meates, by reason tations, Fortiof let, proceeding from a rotten flesh which grew and ouer-abounded within their mouthes; fications and

of let, proceeding from a rotten nem which grew and ouer-abounded within their incommends beand when one thought to root it out, it did growe againe in one nights space more abundantly fieed, where than before. As for the tree called Annedda, mentioned by the faid Quartier, the Sauages of these wantof fresh 30 Lands knowe it not. So that it was most pitifull to behold every one, very few excepted, in diet and of bathis miferie, and the miferable ficke folkes to die, as it were full of life, without any possibilitie dily labour, or this miterie, and the miterable ficke roikes to die, as it were out or inc, without any pointonite who had to be fuccoured. There died of this fickneffe thirty fixe, and thirty fixe or forty more that were too much a tobe fuccoured. The recoured themselves by the helpe of the Spring, as foone as the comfortable thing, which is the recoured themselves by the helpe of the Spring, as foone as the comfortable thing, which is the recourse of the spring as fooders. feason appeared. But the deadly season for that sicknesse is in the end of Ianuary, the moneths grosse aires in of February and March, wherein most commonly the sicke doe die, enery one at his turne, ac- the Countries cording to the time they have begunne to be ficke; in fuch fort, that he which beganne to be ill ouergrowne cording to the time they have begunne to beneke: in nutrior, that he which beganne to with wood, or in February and March, may escape, but he that shall ouer-haste himselfe, and betake him with marifies, to his bed in December and Ianuary, he is in danger to die in February, March, or the beginning bogs and vn-

Monsieur de Poutrincours made a Negro to be opened, that died of that sicknesse in our Voy- ters are chiefe age, who was found to have the inward parts very found, except the stomacke, that had breedersthere-

wrinkles, as though they were vicered.

As for the food, this ficknesse is caused by cold meates, without juyce, grosse and corrupted, and for must then take heed of falt meates, smoothy, musty, raw, and of an entil sent, likewise of of this disease, dried fishes, as New-found-Land fish, and stinking Rayes : Briefly, from all melancholy meates, the chiefe which are of hard digefting, are easily corrupted, and breed a grosse and melancholy bloud. I points whereof would not (tor all that) bee so scrupulous as the Physicians, which doe put in number of grosse pressed for the and melancholy meates, Beeues shelh, Beares, wilde Boares and Hogs shelh (they might as well benefit of our adde vnto them Beauers flesh, which notwithstanding wee have found very good) as they doe English Coloto among fifther the Tons, Dolphins, and all those that carrie Lard: among the birds, the Hernes, in which it is Duckes, and all other water birds: for in being an ouer-curious observator of these things, one duction manufaction in the behavior of those and the properties of the state of th might fal into the danger of staruing, and to die for hunger. They place yet among the meats that ny hundreds are to be shunned Bisket, Beanes and Pulse, the often ving of Milke, Cheese: the grosse and harth boue hereby Wine, and that which is too small, white Wine, and the vie of Vinegar: Beere which is not fertified well fodden, nor well feummed, and that hath not Hoppes enough. Alto waters that runne thowell folden, nor well fourmed, and that hath not Hopper enough. Also waters that runne those of the dead row rotten wood, and those of Likes and Bogges, still and corrupted waters, such as is much in and sicke. Holland and Frizeland, where is observed that they of Amsterdam are more subject to Palites and Dangerous fliftning of finews, then they or Roserdam, for the abouefaid caute of flill and theepy waters: which moneths, besides doe ingender Dropties, Dysenteries, Fluxes, quartaine Agues, and burning Feuers, swel- The opening 60 lines, vicers of the Lights, flortheffe of breath, ruptures of children, (welling in the veines, body. fores in the legges : finally, they wholly belong to the Jifeale whereof we speake, being drawne What food by the Spleene, where they leave all their corruption.

Sometimes this fickneffe dothalto come by a vice which is even in waters of running Foun-lind difeate, taines, asif they be among, or neere Bogges, or if they issue from a muddy ground, or from a Badwaters. Tttttt 3

Plin.li.25.6.3.

Stomaccacè.

Scelatitie.

an herbe.

place that hath not the Sunnes afpect. So Plinie reciteth that in the Voyage which the Prince Cafar Germanicus made into Germanie, having given order to his Armie to paffe the River of Rhore, to the end to get full forward in the Countrie, he did fet his campe on the Sea shoare. vnon the coast of Frizeland, in a place where was but one onely Fountaine of fresh water to hee found, which not withflanding was to pernicious, that all they that dranke of it loft their teeth in leffe than two yeeres space, and had their knees so weake and disionnted, that they could not beare themselves. Which is verily the sicknesse whereof wee speake, which the Physicians doe call Stomaccace, that is tolay, Monthes fore ; and Scelotyrbe, which is as much to fay, as the flaking of thighs and legges. And it was not possible to finde any remedie, but by the meanes of an herbe called Britannica, or Scuruy grafe, which besides is very good for the sinewes, against Io Britannica, or Scuruy graffe, the fores and accidents in the mouth: against the Squinancie, and against the biting of Serpents. It hath long leaurs, drawing in colour a darke greene, and produceth a blacke roote. from which liquor is drawne, as well as from the leafe. Strabo fayth, that the like cafe happened to the Armie that Elius Gallus brought into Arabia, by the commission of Augustus the Emperour. And the I ke also chanced to King Saint Lemes his Armie in Egypt, as the Lord de lomuille reporteth Other effects of bad waters are feene neere vnto vs, to wit,in Sauor, where

Strabo. Monfieur de

The Gouitres of Saunte When the is

Windes,

Next to waters, the aire is also one of the Fathers and Ingenderers of this ficknesse, in boggy against health and watrish places, and opposite to the South, which is most often ramy. But there is yet in New 20 France another bad qualitie of the aire, by reason of Lakes that be thicke there, and of the great rottennesse in the Woods, whose odour the bodies having drawne vp, during the raines of Autumne and Winter, early are ingendred the corruptions of the mouth, and iwelling in the legges before ipoken, and a cold entreth vnfenfibly into it, which benummeth the limbes, flifneth the finewes, constraineth to creepe with crutches, and in the end, to keepe the bed. And for as much as the windes doe participate with the aire, yea are an aire running with a more vehement force than ordinary, and in this qualitie have great power over the health and ficknesses of men, This noisome qualitie of winde proceedeth (in my judgement) from the nature of the Countrie thorow which it paffeth , which (as wee haue faid) is full of Lakes, and those very great, which bee (as it were) flanding and flill waters. Whereto I adde the exhalation of the rottenwest part is great, large and spacious.

the women (more than men, because they are of a colder constitution) have commonly swel-

lings in their throats, as bigge as Bottles.

Scalons.

The leafons are also to be marked in this difease, which I have not seene nor heard of, that it begins to worke, neither in the Spring time, Summer nor Autumne, vnleffe it be at the end of it, but it Winter. And the cause thereof is, that as the growing heate of the Spring maketh the humours closed up in the Winter to disperse themselves to the extremities of the body, and so cleareth it from melanchely, and from the notione humors that have beene gathered in Winter: fo the Autumne, as the Winter approacheth, draweth them inward, and doth nourish this melancholy and blacke humour, which doth abound specially in this season, and the Winter being come sheweth forth his effects at the costs and gricte of the poore patients. I would adde willingly to all the aforeful causes the bad food of the Sea, which in a long Voi-

age brings much corruption in mans body. This ficknesse proceeding from an indigestion of sude,

eroffe, cold and melancholy meates, which offend the flomacke, I thinke it good (fubmitting

Badford and di commodities of the Sea. Aduice for the fickneffes of New France.

Good Wine.

Herbes in the Spring time.

Stoues. Beddington in Survie. at Sir

my telfe to better judgement and aduice) to accompany them with good lawces, be it of Butter, Oyle, or Fat, all well spiced, to correct as well the qualitie of the meate, as of the bodie inwardly waxen cold. Let this be faid for rude and groffe meates, as Beanes, Peafe, and fish: for he that shall eate good Capons good Partridges, good Ducks, and good Rabets, may be affured of his health, or else his body is of a bad constitution. We have had some sick, that have(as it were) raised yp from death to life : for having eaten twice or thrice of a coolice made of a Cocke, good Wine taken according to the necessitie of nature, is a soueraigne preservative for all sicknesses, and particularly for this. The young buds of herbs in the Spring time be also very soueraigne. And as for that which concerneth the exteriour parts of the body, we have found great good in wearing woodden Pantaphles, or Patins with our shoots, for to avoide the moistnesse. The houles neede no opening nor windowes on the North-west side, being a winde very dange-

rous: but rather on the East fide, or the South. It is very good to have good bedding (and it was good for mee to have carried things necessary co this purpose) and above all to keepe himselfe neate. I would like well the vse of Stoues, such as they have in Germanie, by meanes whereof they feele no Winter, being at home, but as much as they pleafe. Yea, they have of Gardens. Such them in many places, in their Gardens, which doe so temper the coldnesse of Winter, that in Thauescene at this rough and sharpe season there one may see Orange-trees, Lymmon-trees, Fig-trees, Pom- 60 granat-trees, and all such forts of trees, bring forth fruit as good as in Prouence.

The Sauages vie Iweatings often, as it were every moneth, and by this meanes they presente themselues, driving out by sweate all the cold and evill humours they might have gathered. of the Sausges But one fingular prefervative against this perfidious ficknesse, which commeth so stealingly, and

which having once lodged it felfe within vs, will not bee put out, is to follow the counfell of which nature on the wife, who having confidered all the afflictions that mangine to A mery heart him that is wife amonit the wife, who having confidered all the afflictions that mangine to himfelieduring his life, hath found nothing better then to reiore himfelfe, and doe good, himselfeduring his life, hath found nothing better then to reinjee himselfe, and doe good, a tree pre-mainer take plasses in his owne worker. They that have done fo, in our companie, have found themselves against me well by it: contrariwite tome al waies grudging, repining, neuer content, idle, have beene found Scurue. out by the same disease. True it is, that for to enjoy mirch it is good to have the sweetnesse of fresh Ectel (3, 12,22) meates, Flefies, Fiftes, Milke, Butter, Oyles, Fruits, and fuen like, which wee had not at will much (I mean the common fort: for alwais some one, or other of the companie did furnish Mon. fieur de Pontrincourt, his Table with Wilde-fowle, Venison or fresh Fish) Andit wee had halfe

to a dozen Kine, I beleeue that no body had died there. Necessia Anna, a Defect time, necessary for the accomplishment of mirth, and to the end one may Necessias. of take pleasure on the worke of his hands is every one to have the honest companie of his law- having women full wrife: for without that, the cheere is neuer perfect; ones minde is al waies vpon that which into the Counone loues and defireth; there is still fome forrow, the body becomes full of ill humours, and fo trey. the fickneffe doth breed. And for the last and soueraigne remedie, I send backe the Patient to the tree of life (for fo one may well qualifie it) which lames Quartier doth call Anneda, yet vn- Treeof life. knowne in the coalt of Port Royall, valetie it bee, peraduenture the Safafras, whereof there is Safafras. quantitie in certaine places. And it is an assured thing, that the faid tree is very excellent. But Monsser chanses Monsteur Champlain, who is now in the great River of Canada, passing his Winter, in the this present 30 same part, where the said Quartier did winter, hath charge to finde it out, and to make proui- yeere 1609. in

THe rough season being passed, Monsseur de Monts, wearied with his bad dwelling at Saint The discourse Craix, determined to leeke our another Port in a warmer Countrie, and more to the South: of new Lands And to that end made a Pinnace to bee armed and furnished with victuals, to follow the coast, by Monstear de And to that end made a Pinnace to bee armed and turnined with victuals, to route with Mount; fabrand discourring new Countries, to seeke out some happier Port in a more temperate aire. Hee lous tales and made in this Voyage but about an hundred and twenty leagues, as wee will tell you now. From reports of the Saint Croix to fixty leagues forward, the coast lieth East and West: at the end of which fixty Riverand saileagues is a River, called by the Savages Kumbeki. From which place to Malebarre it lieth ned Towneof 30 North and South, and there is yet from one to the other fixty leagues, in right line, not follow - Norembega North and South, and there is yet from one to the other many leagues, in right line, northing Kinibeli axy ing the Bayes. So farre firetcheth Monfisur de Monts his Voyage, wherein hee had for Pilot kagues from in his Vessell, Monsieur de Champdore. In all this Coast so farre as Kunbeki, there are ma- S. Croix. ny places where shippes may bee harboured amongst the llands, but the people there is not so frequent as is beyond that : And there is no remarkable thing (at least that may bee seene in the outlide of the Lands) but a Ruer, whereof many have written fables one after another.

I will recite that which is in the last Booke, intituled, The univerfall Historie of the West Indies, Printed at Donay the last yeere 1607, in the place where hee speaketh of Norombega: For in reporting this, I shall have also faid that which the first have written, from whom they

haue had it.

CHAP.7.

Moreouer, towards the North (layth the Authour, after bee had spoken of Virginia) is Norom- Fabulous sales bega, which is knowne well enough, by reason of a faire Towne, and a great River, though it is not of the River found from whence it hath his name: for the Barbarians dee call it Aguncia : At the mouth of Nerombeta. this Riner there is an Iland very fit for filbing. The Region that goeth along the Sea, doth abound in filb, and towards New France there is great number of wilde heafts, and is very commodious for hunting ; the Inhabitant: doe line in the fame manner as they of New France.

If this beautifull Towne hath euer beene in nature, I would faine knowe who hath pulled it downe : For there is but Cabins heere and there made with pearkes , and couered with barkes of trees, or with skinnes, and both the River and the place inhabited is called Pempte- Pemptegon, goet, and not Agguncia. The River (fauing the tide) is scarce as the River on that coast, be-

30 cause there are not Lands sufficient to produce them, by reason of the great River of Canada, which runneth like this coaft, and is not fourescore leagues distant from that place in croffing the Lands, which from elfe-where received many Rivers falling from those parts which are towards Norombega : At the entrie whereof, it is so farre from having but one Iland, that rather the number thereof is almost infinite, for as much as this River enlarging it selfelike the Greeke Lambda A, the mouth whereof is all full of Iles, whereof there is one of them lying very farre off (and the formost) in the Sea, which is high and markable about

But some will say that I equiuocate in the situation of Norombega, and that it is not placed Objection where I take it. To this I as I wer, that the Author, whose words I have a little before alleaged, is in Aniwer. 60 this my fufficient warrant, who in his Geographicall Mappe, hath placed in the mouth of this River in the 44. degree, and his supposed Towne in the 45. wherein we differ but in one degree, which is a small matter. For the River that I meane is in the 45. degree, and as for any Towne, there is none. Now of necessity it must be this river, because that the same being passed, and that of Kinibeti, (which is in the fame high) there is no other River forward, whereof account should be

made, till one come to Virginia. I say furthermore, that seeing the Barbarians of Norombeed doe live as they of new France, and have abundance of hunting, it must be, that their Province be sean our new France; for fiftie leagues farther to the South-west there is no great game, bethe woods are thinner there, and the Inhabitants fetled, and in greater number then in No.

Kinibeki.

The Bay of Marchin, 1607. Chest hoes. The ground manured. Vines.

Malebarre. Exechemins.

The Armouchiof the Armon-

The arrivall of Monfieur du Point. 1605.

Trafficke with the Sauages. Beuers Otters,

Hand Mile.

The River of Norombega being passed, Monsieur de Monts went still coasting, vntill he came to Kinibeki, where a River is that may shorten the way to goe to the great River of Canada. There is a number of Sauages Cabined there, and the land beginneth there to be better peopled. From Kinibeki going farther, one findeth the Bay of Marchin, named by the Captaine his name that commandeth therein. This Marchin was killed the yeare that we parted from New France 10 1607. Farther is another Bay called Chonakoet, where (in regard of the former Countries) is a great number of people : for there they till the ground, and the region beginneth to be more temperate, and for proofe of this, there is in this land ftore of Vines, Yea, euen there be Ilands full of it (which be more fubicat to the inturies of the winde and cold) as we shall fav hereafter. There is betweene Chonafoet and Malebarre many Bayes and Iles, and the Coast is fandy. with shallow ground, drawing neere to the faid Malebarre, fo that scarce one may land there

The people that be from Saint lobus River to Kinibeki (wherein are comprised the Rivers of Saint Croix and Norombega) are called Etechemins. And from Kinibeki as farre as Malebarre and and realtons farther, they are called Armonebiquois. They be traitors and theeues, and one had neede to take 20 heede of them. One of them from a man of Saint Males tooke a Kettell, and ran away speedi-The twifmede by with his bootie. The Malonin running after, was killed by this wicked people : and although the fame had not hapned, it was in vaine to purfue after this theefe ; for all thefe Armonchiquois are as (wife in running as Grayhounds; as we will yet further lay in fpeaking of the voiage that Monsieur de Pontrincourt made in the same Country, in the yeare 1606.

The Spring feafon being paffed in the Voyage of the Armonchiquois, Mounfieur du Pont, fur-

named Grane, dwelling at Honflenr, did arrive with a company of some forty men, for to eale the

faid Monfieur de Monts and his troope, which was to the great toy of all, as one may well imagine; and Canon thots were free and plentifull at the comming, according to custome, and the found of Trumpets. The faid Monfieur de Pont, not knowing yet the ftate of our French men, did 10 thinke to finde there an affured dwelling, and his lodgings ready : but confidering the accidents of the strange sicknesse, whereof we have spoken, he tooke advice to change place. Monsieur de Monts was very defirous that the new habitation had beene about 40. degrees, that is to fay 4. degrees farther then Saint Croix : but having viewed the Coast as farre as Malebarre, and with much paine, not finding what he defired, it was deliberated to goe and make their dwelling in Transmigrati. Port Royall, vntill meanes were had to make an ampler discouery. So every one began to packe on from S. Croix up his things: That which was built with infinite labour was pulled downe, except the Storehouse, which was too great and painefull to be transported, and in executing of this, many voyages are made. All being come to Port Royal they found out new labours: the abiding place is chofen right ouer against the Hand, that is at the comming in of the River L'Esquille, in a place 40 where all is covered over, and full of woods as thicke as possibly may be. The Moneth of September did already begin to come, and care was to be taken for the villading of Monsieur du Pont his Ship, to make roome for them that should returne backe into France. Finally, there is worke enough for all. When the Ship was in a readinesse to put to failes, Monsieur de Monts having feene the beginning of the new habitation, shipped himselfe for his returne with them that would follow him. Notwithstanding many of good courage (forgetting the griefes and labours paffed) did tarry behinde, amongst whom were Monsieur Champlaine and Monsieur Champdore, the one for Geographie, and the other for the conducting and guiding of the volages that should be necessary to be made by Sea.

The Winter being come, the Sauages of the Countrey did affemble themselues, from farre to 10 Port Royall, for to trucke with the Frenchmen, for such things as they had, some bringing Beauers skins, and Otters (which are those whereof most account may be made in that place) and also Tabagua is a Ellans or Stagges, whereof good buffe be made: Others bringing flesh newly killed, wherewith fausge tearmes they made many good Tabagies, or feafts, living merrily as long as they had wherewithall. They never wanted any Bread, but Wine did not continue with them till the feafon was ended. For when we came thither the yeare following, they had beene about three Moneths without any Wine, and were very glad of our comming, for that made them to take agains the tafte of it.

The greatest paine they had, was to grinde the Corne to have Bread, which is very painfull with hand-mils, where all the ffrength of the body is requifite. This labour is fo great, that the 60 Sauages (although they be very poore) cannot beare it, and had rather to be without bread, then to take to much paines, as hath beene tried, offering them halfe of the grinding they should doe, but they choosed rather to have no corne. And I might well beleeve that the same, with other things, hath beene great meanes to breede the ficknesse spoken of, in some of Monsieur

CHAP.7. An enterprise atchieued. The Bay of Hoate, Mists and Colds.

du Pont his men : for there died fome halfe a dozen of them that winter. True it is, that I finde a The number defect in the buildings of our Frenchmen, which is, they had no ditches about them, whereby the of the deadwaters of the ground next to them did run vinder their lower-most roomes, which was a great Fault in their waters of the ground next to them did tun vider then lower thorizont foomes, which was a great buildings, hindrance to their health. I adde besides the bad waters which they vsed, that did not run from a quicke fpring, but from the neerest brooke.

The winter being passed, and the Sea naugable, Monsieur du Pont would needes atchieue the The furniture The winter being palied, and the Sea naugable, Moniteur an Pont Would needed a territor the of Mouleur and Pont would need a territor for some source per terrorife begun the years before by Monfieur de Monts, and to goe fecke out a Port more Source Pont to some to therly, where the ayre might be more temperate, according as he had in charge of the faid Monfieur de Monts. He furnished then the Barke which remained with him to that effect. But be- of new lands. ing fet out of the Port, and full ready, hoilted up failes for Malebarre, he was forced by contrary windetwice to pur backe againe, and at the third time the faid Barke strake against the rocks The wracke at the entry of the faid Port. In this diffrace of Neptune, the men were faued with the better part of prouision and merchandise; but as for the Barke it was rent in peeces. And by this mishap the Voyage was broken, and that which was so desired intermitted. For the habitation of Port Royall was not judged good. And notwithstanding it is, on the North and North-west sides, Gauses of dea well sheltered with Mountaines, distant some one league, some halfe a league from the Port and lay in establish the River L'Efquelle. So we fee how that enterprises take not effect according to the delires of ing the dwelmen, and are accompanied with many perils. So that one must not wonder if the time be long ling place of in establishing of Colonies, specially in lands foremote, whose nature, and temperature of aire the itenchment an is not knowne, and where one must fell and out downe Forrests, and be constrained to take heed, not from the people we call Sauages, but from them that tearme themselues Christians, and yet haus but the name of it, curied and abhominable people, worse then Wolues, enemies to God

This attempt then being broken, Monfieur da Pont knew not what to doe, but to attend the fuccour and fupply that Monfieur de Monts promifed parting from Port Royall, at his return into France, to fend him the yeare following. Yet for all events he built another Barke and a Shallop for to feeke French Ships in the places where they vie to dry fifh, fuch as Campfean Port, Englib Port, Misamichis Port : the Bay of Chaleur (or Heat) the Bay of Mornes or Coddes, and others in great number, according as Monsieur de Monts had done the former yeare, to the end to 30 Ship himfelfe in them, and to returne into France, in case that no Shippe should come to suc-

Bout the time of the before mentioned Shipwracke, Monfieur de Monts being in France, The third vor-A knowing Monfieur de Pontrincourt his defire, he wrote voto him, and fent a man of purpole age made by to give him notice of the Voyage that was in hand, Which the faid Monfieur de Pontrincourt ac. Monfieur de cepted of. He was no fooner come to Paris, but that he was forced to depart, not having fearle Poutrineurt. time to prouide for things necellary. And I having had that good hap to be acquainted with him some yeares before, he asked me it I would take part in that bu'ineste?

Being come to Rochell, we found there Monfieur de Monts, and Monfieur de Pontrincourt, that 40 were come in Poste, and our Ship called the Ionas, of the burthen of one hundred and firtie tuns. ready to passe out of the chaines of the Towne, to tarry for winde and tide. The tyde I fay, be- Ruchel cause that a great Ship laden, cannot come to sea from Rochell, but in spring tydes, vpon the new and full Moone, by reason that in the Towne roade there is no sufficient depth. I believe, that after so many trials, none would have ventured to goe plant Colonies in those parts, that Countrey being fo ill spoken of, that every one did pittie vs, considering the accidents happened to The courage them that had beene there before. Notwithitanding Monfieur de Monts and his affectates, did of Monfieur de beare manfully this loffe.

The Saturday, Whitson eue, the thirteenth of May, we weied our anckers, and failed in open Sea, so that by little and little we lost the fight of the great Towers and Towne of Rochell, 13. of May then of the lles of Rez and Oleron, bidding France fare-well. It was a thing fearefull for them that were not yied to fuch a dance, to fee them carried ypon so moueable an element, and to be at every monent (as it were) within two fingers breadth to death. We had not long failed, but Meetings of that many did their endeuour to yeelde vp the tribute to Neptune. In the meane while we went full forward, for there was no more going backe, the planke being once taken up. The fixteenth of May we met with thirteene Holanders, going for Spaine, which did inquire of our voiage, and io held their course.

About the eighteenth day of Iune, we found the Sea-water, during three dayes space, very warme, and by the same warmth, our Wine also was warme in the bottome of our Ship, yet the ayre was not hotter then before. And the one and twentieth of the faid Moneth, quite contra- Great cold. 60 ty, we were two or three dayes to much compatted with Miftes and Coldes, that wee thought our felues to be in the moneth of lanuary, and the water of the Sea was extreame cold. Which continued with vs vntill we came upon the faid Banke, by reason of the faid Mists, which outwardly did procure this cold voto vs. When I feeke out the cause of this Antiperistase, Lattribute cause of the L it to the Ices of the North, which come floting downe vpon the Coast and Sea adioyning to ces of New.

Ments and his

New-found-land, and Labrador, which we have faid ellewhere, is brought thither with the Sea. by her naturall motion, which is greater there, then elfewhere, because of the great space it bach to run, as in a gulie, in the depth of America, where the nature and lituation of the vinuerial earth doth beare it eafily. Now these Ices (which sometimes are seene in bankes of ten leagues length, and as high as Mountaines and hils, and thrice as deepe in the waters) holding, as it were, an Empire in this Sea, drive out farre from them, that which is contrary to their coldnesse, and confequently doe binde and close on this fide, that small quantity of milde temperature that the Summer may bring to that part, where they come to feate and place themselves.

Before we come to the Banke, which is the great Banke where the fishing of greene Codneerethe great fishes is made (to are they called when they are not dry, for one must goe aland for the drying of 10 them) the Sea-faring-men, belides the computation they make of their courfe, have warnings when they come neere to it, by Birds, which are knowne : euen as one doth them of these our parts, returning backe into France, when one is within one hundred or one hundred and twenty quets, flaploies leagues neere it. The most frequent of these Birds, towards the said Bankes, be Godes, Fou-

quets, and other called Happe foyes. The Banke whereof we speake, are Mountaines grounded in the depth of the waters, which are raifed up to thirty, fix and thirty, and forty lathams, neere to the upperface of the Sea. This Banke is holden to be of two hundred leagues in length, and is eighteene, twenty, and twenty foure leagues broad, which being paffed, there is no more bottome found out, then in these parts, vittill one come to the land. The Ships being there arrived, the failes are rowled up, and there 20 filling is made for the greene-fish. There is farther off, other Bankes, as I have marked in the faid Map, when the which good fishing may be made ; and many goe thither that know the places. When that we parced from Rochel, there was (as it were) a Forreit of Ships lying at Chef de Boie (whereof that place hath taken his name) which went all in a company to that Country, preuenting vs (in their going) but onely of two daies.

The filling of

Haning seene and noted the Banke, we hoisted up failes and bare all night, keeping still our Coast to the West. But the dawne of day being come, which was Saint lohn Baptists Eue, in Gods name we pulled downe the failes, paffing that day a fishing of Cod-fish, with a thoufand mirths and contentments, by reason of fresh meates, whereof we had as much as we would, having long before wished for them. Monsieur de Pontrincourt, and a yong man of Retel named 30 Le Flerre, who by reason of the Sea-ficknelle were not come out from their beds nor Cabines, Hap foy's, why from the beginning of the Nauigation, came vpon the hatches that day, and had the pleasure not onely of fishing of Cod, but also of those Birds, that be called by the French Marriners Hapfoyes, that is to fay, Liuer-catchers, because of their greedinesse to denoure to liners of the Codfishes that are cast into the Sea, after their bellies be opened, whereof they are so couetous, that though they fee a great Powle ouer their heads, ready to frike them downe, yet they aduenture themselues to come neere to the Ship, to catch some of them, at what price soeuer. And they which were not occupied in filhing, did paffe their time in that sport. And so did they, by their diligence, that we tooke fome thirty of them.

In this filhing, we iometimes did take Sea-dogs, whole skins our Ioyners did keepe carefully 40 Sea dogsskins to smooth their worke withall. Item, fishes called by Frenchmen Merlus, which be better then Cod, and fometimes another kinde of fish, called Bars : which diversity did augment our delight. They which were not buile in taking neither Fishes nor Birds, did passe their time in gathering the hearts, guts, and other inward parts (most delicate) of the Cod-fish, which they did Excellent fawmince with lard and spices, and with those things did make as good Bolonia Sauliges, as any can

figes made The weather in those Se 18 contrary then in ours.

The causes of Mift, on the Well Seas.

wards of Cod. be made in Paris, and we did care of them with a very good stomacke. From the eighteenth of Iune vntill we did arrive at Port Royal, we have found the weather quite otherwise to that we had before. For (as we have already faid) we had cold milts or fogs, before our comming to the Banke (where we came in faire sunshine) but the next day, we fell to the fogs againe, which (a farre off) we might perceine to come and wrap vs about, holding vs 30 continually priioners three whole dayes, for two dayes of faire weather that they permitted vs : which was alwayes accompanied with cold, by realon of the Summers absence. Yea euch divers we have frene our telues a whole fennight, continually in thicke fogges, twice without any thew of Sunne, but very little, as I will recite hereafter, And I will bring forth a reason for fach effects which feemeth vinto me probable. As wee fee the fire to draw the moistingle of a wet cloth, opposite vnto it; likewife the Sunne draweth moistnesse and vapours both from the Sea and from the land. But for the diffoling of them, there is here one vertue, and beyond those parts another, according to the accidents and circumstances that are found. In these our Countries it raileth vp vapours onely from the ground, and from our Rivers: which eartily vapours, groffe and waighty, and participating lefte of the moift ellement, doe cause vs a hot are, and the 62 earth discharged of those vapours, becomes thereby more hot and parching, From thence it commeth, that the faid vapours, having the earth on the one part, and the Sunne on the other, which heateth them, they are easily dissolved, not remaining long in the ayre, volesse it be in winter. when the earth is waxen cold, and the Sunne beyond the Equinoctial line, farre off from Va

From the same reason proceedeth the cause why Mists and Fogs be not so frequent, nor so long in she French Seas, as the New-found-land, because that the Sunne, passing from his rising, about the grounds, this Sea, at the comming thereof, receiveth almost but earthly vapours, and by a long foace retaineth this vertue to diffolue very foone the exhalation it draweth to it felfe. But when is commeth to the middelt of the Ocean, and to the faid New-found-land, having elevated and affumed in fo long acourse a great abundance of vapours, from this moist wide Ocean, it doth not fo cafily diffolue them, as well because those vapours be cold of themselves, and of their nature, as because the element which is neerest under them, doth simpathize with them, and presetueth them, and the Sunne beames being not holpen in the diffoliung of them, as they are vpon the to earth. Which is even seene in the land of that Countrie, which (although it hath but small heate, by reason of the abundance of woods) notwithstanding it helpeth to disperse the Miss and Fogges, which be ordinarily there, in the morning, during Summer, but not as at Sea, for about eight a clocke in the morning they begin to vanish away, and ieroe as a dew to the

round.
The eight and twentieth day of Inne, we found our felues vpon a small banke (other then the great Banke whereof we have (poken) at forty fathams. From that time forward, we began to The discourt defery land-markes (it was New-found-land) by hearbes, mosses, showers, and peeces of wood, of S. Peters L. that we alwaies met, abounding the more, by io much wee drew neere to it. The fourth day of lands. Lily, our failers, which were appointed for the last quarter watch, descried in the morning, ve- Plane disco-Lity, our railers, which were appointed to the fail quarter water, deterred in the monthly are usery of the 20 ry early, every one being yet in bed, the Iles of Saint Peter. And the Friday the fewenth of the Land. faid Moneth, we discourred, on the Larboord, a Coast of land, high raised vp. Euen our Dogs did thruit their nofes out of the Ship, better to draw and fmell the iweet ayre of the land, not being able to containe them selves from witnessing, by their gestures, the joy they had of it. We dread within a league neere vnto it, and (the failes being let downe) we fell a fishing of Cod, the fibure of the Binke beginning to faile, They which had before vs made voyages in thoseparts, did sudge vs to be at Cipe Breton. The night drawing on, we flood off to the Sea-ward : the Cap Breton next day following, being the eight of the faid moneth of July, as we drew neere to the Bay of Campleau. Campfeau, came, about the evening, milts, which did continue eight whole dayes, during the Eight daies. which we kept vs at Sea, hulling still, not being able to goe forward, being resisted by West and Which were twindes. During their eight dayes, which were from one Saturday to another, God Gods fauous (who hath alwayes guided these voyages, in the which not one man hath been lost by Sea) shewin danger. ed v: his speciall fauour, in sending vnto vs, among the thicke fogges, a clearing of the Sunne, which continued but halfe an houre : And then had we fight of the firme land, and knew that we were ready to be call away vpon the rockes, if wee had not speedily stood off to Sea-ward. Fin ally, vpon Saturday, the fifteenth of July, about two a clocke in the afterdoone, the skie began to falute vs, as it were, with Cannon shots, shedding teares, as being forry to have kept vs Calm weather. folong in paine. So that faire weather being come againe, we law comming ftraight to vs (we Morueilous obeing foure leagues off from the land) two Shallops with open failes, in a Sea yet wrathed. This dours comthing gaue vs much concent. But whill we followed on our course, there came from the land ming from the 40 odors vincomparable for sweetnesse, brought with a warme winde, so abundantly, that all the land. Orient parts could not procure greater abundance. We did stretch out our hands, as it were to take them, so palpable were they, which I have admired a thousand times since. Then the two Shallops did approach, the one manned with Sanages, who had a Stagge painted at their failes, The boording the other with Frenchmen of Saint Maloes, which made their fishing at the Port of Camfeau, but the Sanages were more diligent, for they arrived first. Having meuer feene any before, I did ad- The Sanages

mire, at the first fight, their faire shape, and forme of visage. One of them did excuse himselfe, for goody men. that he had not brought his faire beuer gowne, because the weather had beene foule. He had but one red peece of Frize vpon his backe, and Matachiaz about his necke, at his wrifts, aboue the Matachiaz be elbow, and at his girdle. We made them to eate and drinke. During that time they told vs all carkanets, nekthat had passed, a yeare before, at Port Regal whither we were bound. In the meane while they laces bracelets 50 of Saint Malos came, and told vs as much as the Sanages had. Adding that the wednesday, when girdles. that we did fhun the rockes, they had feene vs, and would have come to vs with the faid Sauages, but that they left off, by reason we put to the Sea : and moreover that it had beene alwayes miliar Sea, it faire weather on the land : which made vs much to maruell : but the caule thereof hath beene is faire weather

shewed before. Thete Frenchmen of Saint Maloe were men that did deale for the associates of on land, Monfieur de Monts, and did complaine that the Baskes, or men of Saint lohn de Lu (against the King his Inhibitions) had trucked with the Sanages, and carried away about fix thousand Beauers skins. They gaue vs fundry forts of their fifthes, as Bars, Marlins, and great Fletans. rs skins. They gaue vs jungry lorts of their fifties as Bars, Marins, and great rietans.

At the parting, fome number of ours went aland at the Port of Campleau, as well to fetch vs of feme or our

60 some wood and tresh water, whereof we had neede, as for to follow the Coast from that place company, goto Port Royall in a Shallop, for we did feare least Monsieur de Pont should be at our comming this ing aland. ther already gone from thence. The Sanages made offer to goe to him thorow the woods, with The Sanages do promife to be there within fix dayes, to aduercife him of our comming, to the end to cause his ways mall thay, for as much as word was left with him to depart, vnleffe hee were fuccoured within the time.

fixteenth day of that moneth, which he failed not to doe : notwithflanding our men defirous to fee the Land neerer, did ninder the fame which promited vs to bring vnto vs the next day the faid wood and water, if wee would approch neere the Land, which wee did not, but followed

Mifts. Calmes.

Port ou Mou-

Tuefday the feuenteenth of July, wee were according to our accustomed manner, surprized with milts and contrarie wind. But the Thursday wee had calme weather, so that whether it Port of Roffe, were milt or faire weather wee went nothing forward. After this calme wee had two daves of fogges. The Sunday the three and twentieth of the faid moneth, wee had knowledge of the Port Du Roffignoll, and the same day in the afternoone, the Sunne shining faire, we call Ancher at the mouth of Port du Menton, and we were in danger to fall vpon a should, being come to two
hargewee fathomes and a halfe depth. We went aland seuenteene of vs in number, to teach the wood and to in the Landar water, whereof we had need. There we found the Cabins and Lodgings, yet whole and unbroken, that Monfieur de Monts made two yeeres before, who had foloutned there by the space of one moneth, as we have faid in his place. We faw there, being a fandy Land, store of Okes. hearing Acornes, Cypreffe trees, Firre-trees, Bay-trees, Muske-rofes, Goofe-berries, Purflen, Rafpies, Fernes, Lylimachia, (a kind of Sammonee) Calamus odoratus, Angelica, and other Simples, in the space of two houres that wee tarried there. Wee brought backe in our ship wilde Perze, which we found good. We had not the leiture to hunt after Rabets that be there in great numher not farre from the Port, but we returned abourd as foone as we had laden our felius with water and wood : and fo hoifed up failes. Tuesday the flue and twentieth day we were about the Cap de Sable, in faire weather, and 20 made a good journey, for about the evening we came to fight of Long Ile, and the Bay of Saint

Marie, but because of the night we put back to the Seaward. And the next day we cast Anchor

at the mouth of Port Royall, where wee could not enter by reason at was ebbing water, but we

gaue two Canon that from our thip to falute the faid Port, and to aduertize the Frenchmen that

out much difficultie, for that we had the wind contrarie, and gufts of wind from the Mountains,

which made vs almost to strike vpon the Rockes. And in these troubles our ship bare still con-

neffe of it, and the Mountaines and Hils that interoned it, and I wondred how fo faire a place did

remayne defert, being all filled with Woods, feeing that fo many pine away in the World,

which might make good of this Land, if onely they had a chiefe Governour to couduct them

thither. We knew not yet, if Monsieur du Pont was gone or no, and therefore wee did expett

that hee should send some men to meete vs; but it was in vaine : for hee was gone from thence

twelve dayes before. And whilest we did hull in the middest of the Port Memberson, the grea-

What! You fland here a dining (for it was about noone) and doe not fee a great ship that com- 40

meth here; and we know not what men they are: Suddenly these two men ranne vpon the

Bulwarke, and with diligence made readie the Canons, which they furnished with Pellets and

touch Powder. Memberton, without delay, came in a Canow made of Farkes of trees, with

a Daughter of his, to view vs : And having found but friendship, and knowing vs to be French-

men, made no alarme. Notwithstanding one of the two Frenchmen left there, called La Taile,

came to the shoare of the Port, his match on the cocke, to know what we were (though he knew

it well enough, for we had the white Banner displayed at the rop of the Mast) and on the folden

four evolley of Canons were floot off, which made innumerable echoes: And from current, the

Fort was faluted with three Canon shots, and many Musket shots, at which time our Trumpe-

uing God thankes, in feeing the Sausges Cabins, and walking thorow the Medowes. But I can-

not but praife the gentle courage of these two men, one of them I have alreadie named, the other

is called Miquelet : which deterue well to be mentioned here, for basing to freely exposed their

lives in the confernation of the welfare of New France. For Monfieur du Port haung but one

Barke and a Shallop, to feeke out towards New-found-land, for French shippes, could not charge

himselfe with so much furniture, Corne, Meate, and Merchandiles as were there : which he had

bin forced to cast into the Sea(and which had bin greatly to our prejudice, and wedid feare it ve-

ter was not flacke of his dutie. Then we landed, viewed the house, and we passed that day ingi- 50

Thursday the seuen and twentieth of July, we came in with the sloud, which was not with-

trarie, the Poopebefore, and sometimes turned round, not being able to do any other thing else. 20

Le cap de Sable. Long Iland. The Bay S. Mary. to Port Roral.

Difficulties in comming in.

we were there.

The beautie of Finally, being in the Port, it was vnto vs a thing maruellous to fee the faire diffance and large-

Sagames figniteelf Sagames of the Souriques (fo are the people called with whom we were) came to the French

fieth Capraine Fort, to them that were left there, being only two, crying as a mad man, faying in his Language;

Praises of the two Frenchmen Fort of Port Rozall.

The tilling of the ground.

du Pent.

ry much) if thefe two men had not adventured themselves to tarrie there, for the preserving of those things, which they did with a willing and toyfull minde. The Friday, next day after our arrivell, Monfieur de Poutrincourt affiched to this Enterprize, 60 as for himselfe, put part of his people to worke in the tillage and manuring of the ground, whileit the others were employed in making cleane of the Chambers, and every one to make readie that which belonged to his Trade. In the meane time those people of ours that had left vs at Campfeau, to come along the Coaft, met (as it were miraculoully) with Monfeur du Pont,

among Hands, that bee in great number in those parts. The faid Monfiem du Pont, at this hanpic and fortunate meeting, returned backg so fee we in the Port Royall, and to ship himselfe in the longe, to returne into France. As this chance was beneficiall vnto him, fo was it vnto vs , by the meaner of his thips that hee left with vs. For without that, wee had beene in tuch extremitie that we had not beene able to goe nor come any where, our thip being once returned into France. Hee arrived there, on Monday the last of July, and tarried set in Port Royall, vntill the eight and twenty of August. All this moneth we made merry.

At the very beginning, we were delicous to fee the Countrie up the River, where wee found Medowes, almost continuall about twelve leagues of ground, among which, brookes doe runne to without number, which come from the Hills and Mountaines adjoyning. The Woods very thicke on the water shoates, and so thicke, that fometimes, one cannot goe thorow them. In the passage to come forth from the same Fort, for to gonto Sea , there is a Brooke, which talleth from the high Rockes downe, and in falling disperseth it selfe into a small raine, which is very delightfull in Summer , bequife that at the foore of the Rockethere are Caues , wherein one is courted, whilst that this raine falleth fo pleafantly : And in the Caue (wherein the raine of this Brooke falleth) is made, as it were, a Rain-bowe, when the Sunne fhineth : which hath The forme of & given me great cause of admiration.

Within fifteene leagues of our dwelling; the Countrey, thorow which the River L'Eaville der a Cauc. paffeth, is all plaine and euen. I have feene in those parts many Countries , where the land is an all even, and the fairest of the world. But the perfection thereof is , that it is well watered.

And for witnesse whereof, not onely in Port Royall, but also in all New France, the great River Greatest of of Canada is proofe thereof, which at the end of foure hundred leagues is as broad as the grea- Genada 400. tell Rivers of the world, replenished with Iles and Rockes innumerable: taking her beginning leavues from from one of the Lakes which doe meete at the streame of her course (and so I thinke) so that it the mouth. hath two courses, the one from the East towards France: the other from the West towards It springs from the South Seas which is admirable, but not without the like example found in our Europe, a Lake. For the River which commeth downe to Trent, and to Verone proceedeth from a Lake which produceth another River, whole courle is bent opposite to the River of Line, which falleth into the River Danbe. So the Nile iffueth from a Lake that bringeth forth other Rivers, which dif-30 charge themfeluesinto the great Ocean.

Let vis returne to our tillages for to that must wee apply our selves : it is the first mine that Which is the must bee fought for, which is more worth than the treatures of Atabalina : And hee that hath first mine, Corne, Wine, Cattell, Woollen and Linnen, Leather, Iron, and afterward Cod-fish, he needeth nanther treatures, for the necessaries of life. Now all this is (or may be) in the Land by vs described : vpon which Monsieur de Pontrincourt having cauled a second tiliage to be made, in fifteene dayes after his arrivall thither, he fowed it with our French Corne, as well Wheat and Rie, as with Hempe, Flaxe, Turnep feed, Radice, Cabages, and other feeds : And the eight day following, he faw that his labour had not beene in vaine, but rather a faire hope, by the production that the ground had already made of the feedes which thee had received. Which being shewed 40 to Monfieur du Pont, was vinto him a faire subject to make his relation in France, as a thing altogether new there. The twentieth day of August was already come, when these faire shewes August 20. were made, and the time did admonish them that were to goe in the Voyage, to make ready.

after many peales of Ordnance, they weighed anchor to come to the mouth of the Port, which is commonly the first dayes iourney.

Monsieur de Monts being desirous to reach as farre into the South as he could, and seeke out a Cause of the place very fit to inhabite, beyond Malebarre, had requested Monsieur de Poutrincourt to passe Voyage made farther than yet he had done, and to feeke a convenient Port in good temperature of aire, making no greater account of Port Royall than of Saint Croix, in that which concerneth health. mouchinguis.

Whereunto they beganne to give order, fo that the five and twentieth day of the same moneth,

50 Whereunto the faid Monfieur de Pontrincourt being willing to condescend, would not tarrie for the Spring time, knowing he should have other employments to exercise himselfe withall. But freing his fowings ended, and his field greene, refolued him felfe to make this Voyage and Difcouerie before Winter. So then hee disposed all things to that end, and with his Barke anchored neere to the lands, to the end to get out in companie.

The eight and twentieth day of the faid moneth each of ve tooke his course, one one way, Parting from and the other another, diverfly to Gods keeping. As for Monfieur du Pont he purposed by the Port Royall. Way to let vpon a Merchant of Roam, named Boyer, who (contrary to the Kings inhibitions) was in those parts to trucke with the Sauages, notwithstanding hee had beene deliucred out of prison in Rochell, by the consent of Monsieur de Poutrincours, under promite hee should not goe

thither; but the faid Bojer was already gone. And as for Monfieur de Poutrincourt, hee tooke his course for the Ile of Saint Croix, the Frenchmens first abode, having Monsieur de Champdore for Mafter and Guide of his Barque: but beeing hindered by the winde, and because his Barque did leake, hee was forced twice to put backe againe. In the end hee quite paffed the Faire Ric Bay Françoife, and viewed the faid He, where hee found ripe Corne, of that which two yeeres found at

Rain-how vo

before S.Creix.

Vuuuuu

Their meaning is to plant beyond Malebarre to the louthward. A ditch profitibly made. What flore of workmen and lab arers in Muffels, Lob-

fters, Crabs. Good prouifignof wilde

What quantity of Bread and Wine.

* A kinde of Stag, or red Deere. The liberall nature of the Sausges. What carth is in the Medowes.

Ellans in the

not, if there bee any ground, there are Woods. Et vs returne to Monfieur de Pour incourt, whom we have left in the Ile Saint Croix. Having 50 made there a reuiew, and cherished the Savages that were there, hee went in the space of foure dayes to Pemptegoet, which is that place fo famous vnder the name of Norombega. There needeth not fo long a time in comming thither, but hee tarried on the way to mend his Barke: for to that end he had brought with him a Smith and a Carpenter, and quantitie of boords. Hes crossed the Iles, which bee at the mouth of the River, and came to Kimibeki, where his Barke was in danger, by reason of the great streames that the nature of the place procureth there. This was the caule why hee made there no stay, but passed further to the Bay of Marchin, which is the name of a Captaine of the Sauages, who at the arrivall of the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt, beganne to crie out aloud Ho He: whereunto the like answere was made vnto him. Hee replied, asking in his Language, What are yee? They answered him, Friends: And thereupon 60 Monsteur de Pourrincoure approaching, treated amitie with him, and presented him with Knines, Hatchets, and Matachiaz, that is to fay, Scarles, Karkenets and Bracelets made of Beades, or Quills made of white and blue Glaffe; whereof hee was very glad , as also for the confederacy Confederacy that the faid Monfieur de Poutrincours made with him, knowing very well that the fame would

before was fowed by Monfieur de Monts, which was faire, bigge, weighty, and well filled Hee fent voto vs some of that Corne to Port Regall, where I was requested to stay, to looke to the house, and to keepe the rest of the companie there, in concord. Whereunto I did agree (though it was referred to my will) for the allurance that wee had among our felues, that the veere following wee should make our habitation in a warmer Countrie beyond Malebarre, and that wee should all goe in companie with them that should bee fent to vs out of France. In the meane while I employed my felie in dreffing the ground, to make inclosures and partitions of Gardens, for to fowe Corne and Kitchin herbes. Wee caused also a Ditch to bee made all about the Fort, which was very needfull to receive the waters and moiftneffe , that beforedid runne viderneath among the rootes of trees, that had beene fallen downe: which peraduenture did make the place valuealthfull. I will not fland in describing heere, what each of our other workmen and labourers did particularly make. It sufficeth, that wee had store of Ioyners, Carpenters, Maions, Stone-caruers, Lock imithes, Tzylors, Boord-fawyers, Mariners, &c. who did Their exercise exercise their Trades; which (in doing their duties) were very kindly vsed, for they were as and manner of their owne libertie for three houres labour a day. The ouerplus of the time they bestowed it. in going to gather Mussels, which are at lowe water in great quantitie before the Fort, or Lobfters, or Crabbes, which are in Port Royall, under the Rockes in great abundance, or Cockles. which are in every part in the oze, about the shoares of the faid Port: All that kinde of fish is taken without Net or Boat. Some there were that fometimes tooke wilde-fowle, but not being skilfull, they spoyled the game. And as for vs , our Table was furnished by one of 20 Monficur de Monts men, who provided for vs in fuch fort that wee wanted no fowle , bringing vnto vs, fometimes halfe a dozen of birds, called by Frenchmen, Outards (a kinde of wilde Geefe) fometimes as many Mallards, or wilde Geefe, white and gray, very often two or three dozen of Larkes, and other kindes of birds. As for Bread, no body felt want thereof, and euery one had three quarts of pure and good Wine aday. Which hath continued with was long as wee have beene there, fauing that, when they, who came to fetch vs, in Read of bringing commodities vnto vs, helped vs to spend our owne. For our allowance, wee had Peale, Beanes, Rice, Prunes, Raifins, drie Codde, and falt Fleih, besides Oyle and Butter. But whensoeuer the Sauages, dwelling neere vs, had taken any quantitie of Sturgions, Salmons, or imall fiftes; Item, any Beuers, * Ellans, Carabous (or fallow Deere) they brought vnto vs halfe of it: and 20 that which remained they expoled it sometimes to sale publikely, and they that would have any thereof did trucke Bread for it. Wherein is to be noted a thing that now I remember. It is, that being necessary to cut turfes

to couer the Piles of wood, heaped to make the faid Coales, there was found in the Medowes three foote deepe of earth, not earth, but graffe or herbes mingled with mudde, which have heaped themselues yeerely one vpon another from the beginning of the world, not having beene mooued. Neuerthelesse the greene thereof serueth for pasture to the Ellans, which wee have many times seene in our Medowes of those parts, in herds of three or foure, great and small, fuffering themselues sometimes to bee approached, then they ranne to the Woods: But I may fay moreouer, that I have feene, in croffing two leagues of our faid Medowes, the fame to bee 43 all troden with trackes of Ellans, for I knowe not there any other clouen footed beafts. There was killed one of those beafts, not farre off from our Fort at a place where Monfieur de Monis having cauled the graffe to bee mowed two yeeres before, it was growne againe the fairest of the world. Some might matuell how those Medowes are made, seeing that all the ground in those places is couered with Woods. For Letisfaction whereof, let the curions Reader knowe, that in high Spring tides, specially in March and September, the floud couereth those shoares, which hindereth the trees there to take roote. But enery where, where the water overfloweth

Pautrincourts discouery. Pemptegoet the true name of the fabulous Norombega. Kiniveki.

The Bay of

bee a great aide and support vnto him. Hee distributed to some men that were about him, amono a great number of people, the Prefents that the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt gaue him. to whom hee brought store of Originac, or Ellans fielh (for the Baskes doe call a Stagge, or El- Originac or Ellan, Orignac) to retresh the companie with victuals. That done, they fet fayles towards Cho- lan Champlein nation, original visual of Captaine Olmachin is, and where the yeere following was made the like Oxen. warre of the Souriquois and Etechemins, vnder the conduct of the Sagamos Memberton, which The River of I have described in Verses, which Verses I have inserted among the Muses of New France. At Olmechin. the entry of the Bay of the faid place of Chonakoet there is a great Hand, about halfe a league Port De Chonacompasse, wherein our men did first discouer any Vines (for although there bee some in Ansland of

10 the Lands neerer to Port Royall, notwithstanding there was yet no knowledge had of them) Vines, which they found in great quantitie, having the trunke three and foure foote high, and as biose as ones fift in the lower part, the Grapes faire and great, and some as big as Plummes, or leffer : but as blacke , that they left a staine where their liquour was spilled : Those Grapes, I fav. lying ouer bushes and brambles that growe in the same Iland, where the trees are not so thicke as in other where, but are fixe or feuen rods distant assunder, which causeth the Grapes to be ripe the fooner; having befides a ground very fit for the fame, gravelly and fandy. They tarried there but two houres : but they noted, that there were no Vines on the North fide, even as in the Ile Saint Croix are no Cedar trees, but on the West fide.

From this lland they went to the River of Olmechin, a Port of Chanakoet, where Marchin The River of 20 and the faid Olmechin brought to Monsieur de Pontrincourt a prisoner of the Souriquois (and there-Olmechin, fore their enemy) which they gave vnto him freely. Two houres after, there arrived two Sa- The galantuases, the one an Eteshemin, named Chhondun, Captaine of the River Saint Iohn, called by the neife of the Sauages Organdi: The other a Souriquois, named Messamoet, Captaine or Sagamos of the River of Port De la the Port De la Heue, where this priloner was taken. They had great store of Merchandises Beet. trucked with Frenchmen, which they were comming to veter, that is to fay, great, meane, and small Kettles, Hatchets, Kniues, Gownes, short Clokes, red Waste-coates, Bisket, and other things: whereupon there arrived twelve or fifteene Boats, full of Savages of Olmechine fubie. The Savages ction, being in very good order, all their faces painted, according to their wonted custome, when they will feeme faire, having their Bow and Arrow in hand, and the quiver, which they laved faces.

30 downe aboord. At that houre Messamoes beganne his Oration before the Sauages: shewing The Oration them, how that in times pait, they often had friendship together : and that they might easily of Meffamoti. ouercome their enemies, if they would have intelligence and ferue themselves with the amitie of the Frenchmen, whom they saw there present to knowe their Countrey, to the end to bring commodities vnto them hereafter, and to fuccour them with their forces, which forces he knew. and hee was the better able to make a demonstration thereof voto them, by so much that hee which spake, had before time beene in France, and dwelt there with Monsieur de Grandmont. Gouernour of Bayonne, Finally, his speech continued almost an houre with much vehemency and affection, with a gesture of body and armes, as is requisite in a good Oratour. And in the end Messamos afhe did cast all his merchandises (which were worth about three hundred crownes, brought into festion to the

40 that Countrie) into Olmechin his Boat, as making him a prefent of that, in assurance of the loue Frenchmen. hee would witnesse vnto him. That done the night hasted on, and every one retired himselfe. and liberality But Meffamoet was not pleased, for that Olmechin made not the like Oration vnto him, of Meffamoet, nor requited his present: For the Sauages have that noble qualitie, that they give liberally, ca- The Sauages fling at the feet of him whom they will honour, the Prefent that they give him : But it is in be liberall. hope to receive some reciprocall kindnesse, which is a kinde of contract, which wee call, without name, I give thee, to the end thou shouldest give mee. And that is done thorow all the world. Therefore Meffamoet from that day had in minde to make warre to Olmechin. Notwithstan. A Corn-counding, the next day in the morning he and his people did returns with a Boate laden with that trie, Beance, Pumpions, and

which they had, to wit, Corne, Tabacco, Beanes and Pumpions, which they diffributed here Grapes, 50 and there. Those two Captaines Olmechin and Marchin have fince beene killed in the warres. In whose stead was chosen by the Sauages, one named Beffabes, which since our returne hath Beffabes. beene killed by Englishmen: and in stead of him they have made a Captaine to come from within the Lands, named Asticou, a grave man, valiant and redoubted, which, in the twinkling of Asticou, an eye, will gather up a thousand Sauages together, which thing Olmechin and Marchin might alfodoe. For our Barkes being there, presently the Sea was seene all couered ouer with their Boates, laden with nimble and lufty men, holding themselues vp straight in them: which wee cannot doe without danger, those Boates being nothing else but trees hollowed. From thence Canoas, Monsteur de Poutrincourt following on his course, found a certaine Port very delightfull, which Avery good

had not beene seene by Monsieur de Monts: And during the Voyage they saw store of smoke. Port. 60 and people on the sheare, which inuited vs to come aland: And seeing that no account was made of it, they followed the Barke along the fand, yea most often they did outgoe her, so swite. The applies of are they, having their Bowes in hand, and their Quiners vpon their backes, alwaies finging and the Ann withdancing, not taking care with what they should live by the way.

Monsieur de Poutrincourt hauing landed in this Port, behold among a multitude of Sa-

uages a good number of Fifes, which did play with certaine long Pipes, made as it were with Canes of Reedes, painted ouer, but not with fuch an harmonie as our Shepheards might doe: And to flew the excellency of their arte, they whilled with their nofes in gambolling, accorand as this people did runne headlong, to come to the Birke, there was a Sauage which hurt ding to their fashion.

A Sausse wounded.

himselfe grieuoully in the hecle against the edge of a Rocke, whereby hee was enforced to remaynem the place. Monfieur de Poutrincourt his Chirurgion, at that inflant would apply to this hurt that which was of his Arte, but they would no permit it, vntill they had first made their mouthes and mops about the wounded man. They then layed him downe on the ground, one of them holding his head on his lappe, and made many bawlings and tingings, whereunto to Their mouthes the wounded man answered but with a Ho, with a complayning voice, which having done they bout him that veelded him to the cure of the faid Chirurgion, and went their way, and the Patient alfoatter hee had beene dreffed: but two houres after he came againe, the most focund in the world, hauing put about his head, the binding cloth, wherewith his heele was wrapped, for to leeme the The day following, our people entred farther into the Port, where being gone to fee the Ca-

bins of the Sauages, an old woman of an hundred or fixfore yeeres of age, came to caft at the

was hurt.

and mops a-

The Prefents of a Sauage woman. Hempe very taite. Beanes. Quantitie of

feete of Monfien de Poutrincourt, a loafe of bread, made with the Wheat called Mabis, then very faire Hemps of a long growth; Item, Beanes, and Grapes newly gathered, because they had ieene Frenchmen eate of them at Chanakeer. Which the other Sauages feeing, that knew it not, 20 they brought more of them than one would, emulating one another; and for recompence of this their kindnesse, there was set on their foreheads a Fillet or Band, of paper, wet with spittle, of The imputity which they were very proud. It was fiewed them, in preffing the Grape into a Glaffe, that of that we did make the Wine which wee did drinke. Wee would have made them to eate of th-Grape, but having taken it into their mouthes, they spitted it out, so ignorant is this people of the best thing that God hath given to Man, next to Bread. Yet notwithstanding they have no want of wit, and inight be brought to doe some good things, if they were civilized, and had the vic of Handy-craus. But they are lubtile, theeuish, traiterous, and though they bee naked, yet one cannot take heed of their fingers , for if one turne neuer to little his eyes afide, and that they fpie the opportunitie to steale any Knife, Hatchet, or any thing elie, they will not miffe not 10 fayle a it; and will put the theft betweene their buttockes, or will hide it within the land with their foot to curing y, that one shall not perceive it. Indeed I doe not wonder if a peoture of the dr. ple poore and naked be treenth, but when the heart is malicious, it is vie xcufable. This people is fully that they mult be a hindled with retrour: for if through loue and gentleneffe one gue them too free access, they will practife some surprise, as it hath been knowne in divers occafions heretotore, and wall yet here-after he feene. And without deterring any longer, the fecond day after our comming thither as they law our people busie awashing Linnen , they came some fitty, one tollowing another, with Bowes, Arrowes and Quiners, intending to play some bid part, asit was consect ared upon their man er of proceeding; but they were presented, some of our men going to meet them, with their Muskets and Matches at the cocke, which made some 40 them and hims out more game, to meet make them, the manufacture of them runne away, and the others being compaffed in, hauing put downe their weapons, came them, may ruth mem, may trutt to the control of the manied to trucke the Tabacco they had for our merchandifes.

The next day the Coptaine of the faid place and Port, came into Monsseur de Pontrincourts

Barke to feehim: wee did martiell to see him accompanied with Olmechin, feeing the way was

maruellous long to come thither by Land, and much therter by Sea. That gaue cause of had iu-

spicion, albeit hee had promised his love to the Frenchmen. Notwithstanding they were gently

received. And Monsieur de Poutrincourt gave to the laid Olmechin a complete garment, where-

with being clothed, hee viewed himfelfe in a Glaffe, and did laugh to fee himfelfe in that order.

hee was returned unto his Cabins, he distributed it to fundry of his men, to the end that one alone ffould not be overpeffered with it. Now during the time of the laid Monfieur de Pourin-

court was there, but g in doubt whether Monstew de Monts would come to make an habitation on that Coast, as her wished it, her made there a piece of ground to be tilled, for to lowe Come

Bit a little while after, teching that the same hindred him, although it was in October, when 90

Note how the Armouchiquois muft by deals withali This the only way to ciuilize throat, as in the Virginian maffacre ap. pear-th. Sufpicion for the comming of Gimechin.

mouchiqueis.

of garments.

Corne fowed, and Vines planted.

and to plant Vines.

100 Boats of

As they were a deliberating to palle farther, Olmeebin came to the Barke to fee Monfieur de Pontrincours, where haung carried certains hours, either in talking or eating, hee faul, that the next day an hundred Boates should come, contayining every one fixe men; but the comming of fach a number of men, being but troublefore, Monfieur de Poutrinceurs would not tarrie ter them; but went away the fame day to Malebare, not without much difficultie, by realist of 50 Peni of holds the great threames and thoulds that are there. So that the Barke having touched at three foot of the Chalco meaning and monats that are there so that the Darke nating followed at three works, we thought to be call away, and wee beganne to virlade her, and put victuals into the Chalco meaning the Cha the Shalop, which was behind, for to face vs on Land: but being no rull Sea, the Barke came aflore within an houre. All this Sea is a Land operflowed, as that of Mount Saint Michaels, a

fanday ground, in which, all that refleth is a plaine flat Countrey as farre as the Mountaines. which are seene fifteene leagues off from that place. And I am of opinion, that as fare as Virginia. Note. it is all alike. Moreouer, there is here great quantity of Grapes, as before, and a Country very Great antiquifull of people. Monfieur de Monts being come to Malebarre in an other leason of the yeare, ty of Grapes, eathered onely greene Grapes; which he made to be preferued, and brought some to the King. But it was our good hap to come thither in October, for to fee the maturity thereof. I have here Hereupon before shewed the difficulty that is found in entering into Malebarre. This is the cause why chap.7. Mantieur de Pontrincourt came not in with his Barke, but went thither with a Shallon onely.

which thirty or forty Sauages did helpe to draw in ; and when it was full tide (but the tide doth 10 not mount here but two fathams high, which is feldome feene) he went out, and retired himfelfe Two fathames into his faid Barke, to passe further in the morning, as soone as he should ordaine it.

He night beginning to glue place to the dawning of the day, the failes are hoifed vp, but it was but a very perilous naugarion. For with this small Vessell they were forced to coast Danger. the land, where they found no depth : going backe to Sea it was yet worfe : in fuch wife that they did ftrike twice or thrice, being raifed vp againe onely by the waves, and the rudder was broken, which was a dreadfull thing. In this extremity they were conftrained to cast anker in the Sea, at two fathams deepe, and three leagues off from the land. Which being done, Daniel Har (a man which taketh pleasure in shewing forth his vertue in the perils of the Sea) was sent 20 towards the Coast to view it, and see if there were any Port. And as he was neere land he saw a Sauage, which did dance, finging, yo, yo, yo, he called to him to come neerer, and by fignes ask- Oigoudi, or Si ed him if there were any place to retire Ships in, and where any fresh water was. The Sauace Johns River. basing made figne there was, hee tooke him into his Shallop, and brought him to the Barke. Sauages of

wherein was Chkondun Captaine of the River of Oigouds, otherwise Saint Johns River: who undryNavone being brought before this Sausge, he vnderstood him no more than did our owne people: true it one another, is, that hy lignes he comprehended better then they what he would fay. This Sauage shewed the places where no depth was, and where was any, and did fo well indenting and winding here and there, alway the led in hand, that in the end they came to the Port shewed by him. 20 where small depth is; wherein the Barke being arrived, diligence was vied to make a forge A force and for to mend her with her rudder, and an Ouen to bake Bread, because there was no more an ouen sade. Bicket left.

Fifteene dayes were imployed in this worke, during the which Monfieur de Poutrincourt, ac. A croile fet ip cording to the laudable cultome of Christians, made a Crosse to be framed and set up young greene Banke, as Monsieur de Monts had done two yeeres before at Kinibeki and Malebarre. Now among these paineful exercises they gave not over making good cheere, with that which both the Sea and Land might furnish in that part. For in this Port is plenty of Fowle in taking of which many of our men applied themselves: specially the Sea Larkes are there in so great flights that Monsieur de Poutrincourt killed eight and twenty of them with one Caliuer shot. Abundance of As for fishes, there be such abundance of Porpeles, and another kinde of fish, called by Frenchmen Larkes & fishes 40 Soufleurs, that is to fay, Blowers, that the Sea feemes to be all couered ouer with them. But they had not the things necessary for this kinde of fishing, they contented themselves then with shel-fish, as of Oysters, Skalops, Periwincles, whereof there was enough. The Sauges of the Shel-fish.

After certaine daves, the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt, seeing there great assembly of Sausges. came ashoare, and to give them some terrour, made to march before him one of his men, flourish- The triall of ing with two naked iwords. Whereat they much wondred, but yet much more when they faw Trenth weathat our Muskets did pierce thicke peeces of wood, where their Arrowes could not fo much as pons before fcratch. And therefore they neuer affailed our men, as long as, they kept watch. And it had beene

so good to found the Trumpet at enery houres end, as Captaine lames Quartier did. For (as Mon- Good influence) sent de Pourrincourt doth often (ay) One must never lay bait for theenes; meaning, that one must don. neuer give caufe to any enemy to thinke that he may furprife you: But one mult alwayes fliew that he is mistrusted, and that you are not asleepe, chiefely when one hath to doe with Sauages, which will neuer fet you him that resolutely expects them; for soone after they killed soure of Our men which were careleffe. They named this Port, Port Fortune.

Counfell being taken, it was refolued to returne into Port Royall: Monsieur de Pontrincourt befides all this, being yet in care for them whom he had left there, fo they came agains for the third time into Port Fortune, where no Sauage was feene. V pon the first winde, the faid Monsieur de Pontrinconrt weighed anker for the returne, and being mindfull of the dangers passed he fai-60 led in open Sea : which shortned his course, but not without a great mischiefe of the rudder, Petilla

which was againe broken; in such fort, that being at the mercy of the waves, they arrived in the end, as well as they could a monght the Hands of Norombega, where they mended it. Monsten The arrivallof de Pourrincours artiued in Port Rayall the foureteenth day of November, where we received him Monteur de

tide onely.

other fide did Bring fish, and Grapes within baskets made of rushes, for exchange with some of Grapes.

R folution for

Postrincourt.

The state of their winter. Coales. The vie of the Compaffe in land voiages.

The inflitution of the Order Bontemps

ner, or fuch a Cooke place in London.

> Store of Stur-Betore in

gions. chap.113. The viage of: the Sauzges.

The Sauages haue care of the Frenchmen.

Bad winde.

The state of Win et wea-

Snow is profi-

Frofts when they are.

uer it be, the Snow is very profitable for the fruits of the earth, to preferue them against the iroft, And as the skie is seldome coursed with clouds towards New-found-lands in Winter time, so

The publike reloycing being finished, Monsieur de Pontrincourt had a care to see his corne, the greatest part whereof he had sowed two leagues off from our Port, by the River L'Esquelle; and the other part about out faid Pore : and found that which was first fowen very forward, but not the last, that had beene fowed the fixth and tenth dayes of Nouember, which notwithstanding How they feet did grow under the Snow, during Winter, as I have noted it in my fowings. It would be a tedious thing to particularife all that was done among it vs during Winter: as to tell how the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt caused many times coales to be made, the forge-coale being spent : That he caused waies to be made thorow the woods: That he went thorow the Forrests by the guide of the Compaile, and other things of fuch nature. But I will relate that, for to keepe vs merry and clenly concerning victuals, there was an order established at the Table of the said Monstear to de Poutrincourt, which was named L'ordre de bon temps, the order of good time (or the order of mirth) at first invented by Monsieur Champlein, wherein they (who were of the same table) were

every one at his turne and day (which was in fifteene dayes once) Steward and Cater. Now his care was that we should have good and worshipfull fare, which was so well observed, that (although the Belly-gods of their parts doe often reproach vnto vs that we had not La Rue aux Ours of Paris with vs) we have ordinarily had there, as good cheere as we could have at La Rue of Beare firet aux Ours, and at farre leffer charges. For there was none, but (two dayes before his turne came) or Bearetiteet was carefull to goe abuncing or fifting, and brought some daintie thing, besides that which was of our ordinary allowance. So well, that at breaktaft we neuer wanted some modicomor other. of fish or field; and at the repail of dinners or suppers, yet lesse; for it was the great banquet, 20 where the Gouernour of the feath, or Steward (whom the Sauages doe call Atollegi) nauing made the Cooke to make all things ready, did march with his Napkin on his shoulder, and his staffe of office in his hand, with the colour of the order about his necke, which was worth aboue foure crownes, and all of them of the order following him, bearing every one a dish. The like allo was at the bringing in of the Fruit, but not with lo great a traine. And at night after

grace was faid, he refigned the Collar of the Order, with a cup of wine, to his fuccessour in that charge, and they dranke one to another. I have heretofore faul that we had abundance of Fowle, as Mallards, Outards, Geele gray and white, Partridges and other Birds: Item, of Ellans or Stage fielh, of Caribous or Deere, Beuers, Otters, Beares, Rabbets, Wilde-cats or Leopards, Nibsches, and fuch like, which the Sauages did take, wherewith we made as good diffies of meate, as in the 30 Cookes shops that be in La rue aux Ours, Beare streete, and greater store; for of all meates none is fo tender as Ellans flesh (whereof we made good pasties) nor so delicate as the Beauers-taile. Yea, we have had sometimes halfe a dolen Sturgions at one clap, which the Sauages did bring to vs, part whereof we did take, paying for it, and the rest was permitted them to sell publikely, and to trucke it for Bread, whereof our people had abundantly. And as for the ordinary meate brought out of France, that was distributed equally, as much to the least as to the biggett. And the like with Wine, as we have faid. In fuch actions we had alwayes twenty or thirty Sauages,

men, women, girles and Boies, who beheld vs doing our offices. Bread was given them gratic, as we doe here to the poore. But as for the Sagamos Memberton, and other Sagamos (when they came to vs) they fat at table eating and drinking as we did : and wee tooke pleafure in feeing 40 them, as contrariwise their absence was irkesome vnto vs; as it came to passe three or soure times that all went away to the places where they knew that game and Venison was, and brought one of our men with them, who lived some six weekes as they did without Salt, without Bread and without Wine, lying on the ground vpon skins, and that in snowie weather. Moreover they had greater care of him (as also of others that have often gone with them) than of them-

felies, faying, that if they should chance to dye, it would be laid to their charges to have Such government as we have spoken of, did serve vs for preservatives against the Country dif-

Preterration against Scury cafe. And yet four of our died in February and March, of them who were of a freefull conditional cafe. on fluggish. And I remember I observed that all had their lodgings on the West side, and looking 30 towards the wide open Pore, which is almost four pleagues long, shaped ouale-wife, besides they

We had faire weather almost during all the Winter: for neither raines nor fogges are so frehad all of them ill bedding. quent there as here, whether it be at Sea or on the land : The reason is, because the Sun-beames, by the long distance, have not the force to raise vp vapours from the ground here, chiefely in a Countrey all wooddy. But in Summer it doth, both from the Sea and the Land, when as their and Mills be force is augmented, and those vapors are diffolied finddenly or flowly, according as one approachheaftein whater eth to the Equinoctiall line. Raines being in those parts rare, in that sealon, the Sunne likewife flineth there very faire, after the fall of Snowes, which we have had feuen or eight times, but it is easily melted in open places, and the longest abiding haut beene in February, Howist 60

and to ferue them as a for gowne. are there morning frolts, which doe increase in the end of Ianuary, February, and in the begin-

ning of March, for vntill the very time of Ianuary, we kept vs still in our doublets: And I reming or March, St. And I fe-member that on a Sunday, the foureteenth day of that moneth, in the afternoone, wee forted our felues finging in Municke vpon the River L'Efquelle, and in the same moneth were went to fee our returning in Flore our Fort, and did dine merrily in the Sun-shine : I would not for all Conformity Contermity
that fay that all other yeares were like vnto this, For as that winter was as milde in these parts, of weather in thefe laft Winters of the yeares 1607. 1608. have beene the hardest that ever was seene; it hath East and West also been alike in those Countries, in such fort, that many Sauages died through the rigour of the France. also beene alike in those Countries, in ucustort, that many saturdes after through the The great weather, as in these our parts many poore people and trauellers have beene killed through the Frost 1607. Samehardnesse of Winter weather. But I will say, that the yeare before we were in New France, to the Winter had not beene fo hard, as they which dwelt there before vs haue testified vnto me. Let this suffice for that which concerneth the winter season. But I am not yet fully satisfied in Let this time to that within the felfesame parallell the season is in those parts of New Wherefore is France more flow by a moneth than in thefe parts, and the leaves appeare not vpon the trees but the feation late towards the end of the moneth of May: valeffe wee lay that the thickneffe of the wood and greatnesse of Forrests doe hinder the Sunne from warming of the ground; Item, that the Country where we were is iovning to the Sea, and thereby more fubicat to cold, And befides that, this land having never beene cilled is the more dampish, the trees and plants not being able easily to

as we have heretofore fooken. 20 The cold being passed, about the end of March the best disposed amongst vs strided who should Dressing of best till the ground, and make Gardens, to sowe in them, and gather fruits thereof. Which was Gardens, to very good purpole, for wee found great difcommodity in the Winter for want of Garden to very good purpose, so wee todaid good ero hearbes. When every one had done his towing it was a marueilous pleafure in feeing them daily from the grow and fpring vp, and yet greater contentment to vie thereof io abundantly as wee did: io ground. that this beginning of good hope made vs almost to forget our native Countrie, and especially when the fish began to haunt fresh-water, and came abundantly into our brookes, in fuch innu- Abundance of merable quantity that we knew not what to doe with it.

draw fap from their mother the earth. In recompence wherof the Winter there is also more flow.

Whilelt fome laboured on the ground, Monsteur de Poutrincourt made fome buildings to be The care of prepared, for to lodge them which he hoped should succeede vs. And considering how trouble- Monsieur de 30 Some the Hand-mill was, he caused a Water-mill tobe made, which caused the Sauages to ad- Pour recourt in fome the Hand-mill was, he caused a water-mill tope made, which came not into the spirit of men from the prouising for mire much at it. For indeede it is an invention which came not into the spirit of men from the the that should first ages. After that, our workmen had much rest, for the most part of them did almost nothing. the that should first ages. But I may fay that this Mill, by the diligence of our Millers, did furnish vs with three times The building more Herrings then was needefull vnto vs for our fustenance. Monsteur de Pontrincourt made of a water-miltwo Hogheads full of them to be falted, and one hoghead of Sardines, or Pilchers to bring into Abundance of France for a flew, which were left in our returne at Saint Maloes, to some Merchants.

Among all their things the faid Monsieur de Poutrincourt did not neglect to thinke on his returne. Which was the part of a wife man, for one must neuer put so much trust in mens promifes, but one must consider that very often many disafters doe happen to them in a small moao ment of time. And therefore, euen in the Moneth of Aprill, he made two Barkes to be prepared, a great one and a small one, to come to seeke out French-ships towards Campseau, or Newfound-land, if it should happen that no supply should come vnto vs. But the Carpentry-worke being finished, one onely inconvenience might hinder vs, that is, we had no Pitch to calke our Great ouct-Vessels, This (which was the chiefest thing) was forgotten at our departure from Rochel. In fight. this important necessitie, the said Monsieur de Pontrincourt aduised himselfe to gather in the Monsieur de woods quantity of the gumme issuing from Firre-trees. Which he did with much labour, go. Pour incourt ing thither himselte, most often with a Boy or two: so that in the end hee got some hundred his inuention. pounds weight of it. Now after these labours, it was not yet all, for it was needefull to melt and purifie the same, which was a necessary point and voknowne to our ship Master Monsieur de Champ-dore, and to his Marriners, for as much as that the Pitch we have, commeth from Nor-

50 moge, Suedland, and Danzick. Neuertheleffe the faid Monfieur de Poutrincoure found the meanes to draw out the quintessence of these Gummes and Firre-tree barkes : and caused quantity of Brickes to be made, with the which he made an open furnace, wherein he put a limbecke made with many kettles, joyned one in the other, which hee filled with those gummes and barkes: Then being well coursed, fire was put round about it, by whose violence the gumme enclosed within the lembecke melted, and dropped downe into a bason; but it was needefull to be very watchfull at it, by reason that if the fire had taken hold of the Gumme, all had beene loft. That was admirable, especially in a man that neuer faw any made. Whereof the Sauages being aftenied, did fav in words borrowed from the Basques, Endis chaue Normandia, that is to fay, that ges call ali 60 the Normans know many things. Now they call all Frenchmen Normands, except the Baf. French men

ques, because the most part of fishermen that goe afishing there, be of that Nation. This remedie No mands. Came very fiely vnto vs, for those which came to feeke vs were fallen into the fame want that

Newes out of

The contents

of the Letters

written to

Monfuur de

and why.

ronsieur de

The Eaglib

10 Virginia

ATTIMEOUT!

Poutrincours.

The focietie

He Sunne did but beginne to cheere the earth, and to behold his Mistris with an amorous a spect, when the Sagamos Memberton (after our Prayers solemnely made to God, and the their returne. break-falt distributed to the people, according to the custome) came to give vs advertisement that he had seene a sayle vpon the Lake, which came towards our Fort. At this joyfull new es every one went out to fee, but yet none was found that had fo good a fight as he, though he be aboue a 100, yeeres old; neuerthelesse we spied very soone what it was. It was onely a small Bark vnder the charge of a young man of Saint Maloes, named Chenalter, who beeing arrived at the Fort, deliuered his Letters to Monsieur de Poutrincourt, which were read publikely. They did write vato him, that for to helpe to laue the charges of the Voyage, the fhip (being yet the lonau) should stay at Campleau Port, there to fish for Cods, by reason that the Merchants affociate 10 with Monfeur de Monts, knew not that there was any fishing farther then that place: Notwirh. standing if it were necessary he should cause the ship to come to Port Reyall. Moreover, that the focietie was broken, because that contrary to the King his Edict, the Hollanders, conducted by of Monsteur de a traiterous Frenchman, called La lennesse, had the yeere before taken up the Beuers and other Mants broken, Furres, of the great River of Canada. Notwithstanding, after that Monstean de Pourrincourt, had a long while mused hereupon, he said, that although he should have no bodie to come with him. but onely his family, hee would not forfake the enterprize. It was great griefe vnto vs to abanhas resolution. don (without hope of returne) a Land that had produced vnto vs fo faire Corne, and fo many faire adorned Gardens. All that could be done untill that time, was to find out a place, fit to make a Nation going fetled dwelling, and a Land of good tertilitie. And that being done, it was great want of courage to giue ouer the enterprise, for another yeare being passed, the necessitie of maintayning an with a zealous habitation there, should be taken away, for the Land was sufficient to yeeld things necessarie tor intent to plant true religion & life. This was the cause of that griefe which pierced the hearts of them which were desirous to fo to increase fee the Christian Religion estabished in that Countrey. But on the contrary, Monsieur de Christs bleffed Monts, and his affociates, reaping no benefit, but loffe, and having no helpe from the King, it flock,no doubt wasa thing which they could not doe, but with much difficultie to maintayne an habitation in he will bee their leader.

Monsteur de Monts is enuied.

Robbing from

The Sauages

Salmons.

Affembly of Sauages a Filtny trading.

those parts. Now this enuie for the Trade of Beauers with the Sauages, found not onely place in the Hollanders hearts, but also in French Merchants, in such fort that the priviledge which had beene given to the faid Monfieur de Monts for ten yeeres was revoked. The vnsatiable avarice of men 30 is a strange thing, which have no regard to that which is honest, so that they may rifle and catch by what meanes locuer. And thereupon I will fay moreouer, that there have beene fome of them that came to that Countrey to fetch vs home, that wickedly have prefumed so much as to strip the dead, and steale away the Beauers, which those poore people doe put, for their last benefit, you them whom they bury, as we will declare more at large in the Booke following. A thing that maketh the French name to be odious, and worthy ditdaine among them, which have no fuch fordid qualitie at all.

Fifteene dayes after, the faid Monfieur de Pourrincourt fent a Barke to Campfeun, with part of our Workmen, for to beginne to pull downe the house. In the beginning of lune the Sauges, about foure hundred in number, went away from the dwelling that the Sagamos Memberson had 49 newly made, in forme of a Towne, compared about with high pales, for to go to warres against the Armonchiquois, which was at Chonakoes some eightie leagues distant from Por: Royall, from whence they returned victorious.

Monsieur de Pourrincours being not willing to depart thence, vntill hee had seene the issue of his expectation, that is to fay, the ripenesse of his Corne, hee deliberated, after that the Sauges were gone to warres, to make Voyages along the Coast. And because Chandler was desirous to the Coalt of ather forme Beuers, he fent him in a small Barke to the River of Saint Isbn, called by the Sauages, Onigondi, and to the He Saint Cross: And he, the faid Monsteur de Poutrincourt, went in a Shallop to the Copper Myne. I was of the laid Chenalier his Voyage : we crosted the French Bay to goe to the fad River, where, as ioone as wee arrived, halfe a doozen Salmons newly takin, jo were brought to vs : we folourned there foure dayes, during which, we went into the Cibins of Sagamos (bkondun, where we law some eightie, or a hundred Sauages, all naked except their prinie members, which were a making Tabagy (that is to fay, a banquetting) with the meale that the faid Cheualier had trucked with them for their old skinnes full of Lice.

The Towne of Onigondi (to I call the dwelling of the faid Chondur) was a great inclosure vpon an Hill, compassed about with high and small Trees, tied one against another, and within it many Cabins, great and small, one of which was as great as a Market Hall, wherein many housholds retired themselves: And as for the same where they made their Tabage, it was somwhat leffe. A good part of the faid Sauages wete of Gachepe, which is the beginning of the great Ruer of Canade; and they told ve, that they came from their dwelling thirder in fixe dayes, which 60 made me much to maruell, feeing the distance that there is by Sea, but they thorten very much their wayes, and make great Voyages by the meanes of Lakes and Rivers, at the end of which being come, in carrying their Canowes three or four leagues, they get to other Rivers that have a contrary courfe. All these Sauages were come thither to goe to the warres with Membertonagainit the Armonebiquois.

When we returned to our Barke, which was at the comming in of the Port, halfe a league off from thence, sheltered by a causis that the Sea hath made there, our men, and specially Capitaine Champdore, that conducted vs, were in doubt, lest some mischance should happen vnto vs. and haunge seene the Sauages in armes, thought it had beene to doe vs some mischiefe, which had beens very easie, for we were but two, and therefore they were very glad of our returne. After Thesubiltie which, the next day came the Wizard or South-fayer of that quarter, crying as a mad man to- of an Autment wards our Barke. Not knowing what he meant, hee was sent for in a Cock-boat, and came to or Sauge parley with vs, telling vs that the Armouchiqueis were within the Woods, which came to affaile Southfayer, paney, and that they had killed some of their folkes that were a hunting: And therefore that we to should come aland to assist them. Having heard this discourse, which according to our judge-

ment, tended to no good, we told him that our journies were limited, and our victuals also, and that it was behouefull for vs to be gone. Seeing himselfe denied, he said that before two yeeres were come about, they would either kill all the Normans, or that the Normans should kill them. We mocked him and told him that we would bring our Barke before their Fort to ranfack them all: but we did it not, for we went away that day : And having the wind contrarie, we sheltred our selues vnder a small lland, where we were two dayes : during which, some went a shooting at Mallard for prouition; others attended on the Cookerie: And Captaine Champdore and my felfe. went along the Rockes with Hammers and Chiffels, feeking if there were any Mynes. In doing whereof we found quantitie of Steele among the Rockes, which was fince molten by Monfieur

20 de Poutrincourt, who made wedges of it, and it was found very fine Sceele, whereof he caused a Knife to be made, that did cut as a Razor, which at our returne he shewed to the King.

From thence we went in three dayes to the Ile Saint Croix, being often contraried with the winds. And because we had a bad coniecture of the Sauages, which we did see in great number, at the River of Saint lobn, and that the troupe that was departed from Port Royal was yet at Menane, (an Ile betweene the faid Port Royall and Saint (row) which we would not truft, we Menane. kept good watch in the night time: At which time wee did often heare Seales voyces, which Good watch. were very like to the voice of Owles: A thing contrarie to the opinion of them that haue faid Seales voices, and written that fishes have no voice.

Being arrived at the Ile Saint Croix, we found there the buildings, left there all whole, faving The arrivall in Being arrived at the He Saint Grown, we found there the buildings, left there are whosey wants the He of Saint 70 that the Store-house was vincouered of one fide. Wee found there yet Sacke in the bottome of a Croix. Pipe, whereof we dranke, and it was not much the worfe. As for Gardens, wee found there The flate of Coale-worts, Sortell, Lettuces, which we vied for the Kitchin. Wee made there also good Pa- the fame, sties of Turtle Doues, which are very plentifull in the Woods, but the graffe is there so high that Turtles. one could not find them when they were killed and fallen in the ground. The Court was there, full of whole Caskes, which fome ill disposed Mariners did burne for their pleasures, which thing when I saw, I did abhorre, and I did iudge, better then before, that the Sauages were (being lesse civilized) more humane and honester men, then many that beare the Name of Christians, having The Sausgen civilized) more humane and honeiter men, then many that over the traine of Chineses, statute of the trained of better naduring three yeeres, spared that place, wherein they had not taken so much as a piece of Wood, ture then ma-

nor Sale, which was there in great quantitie, as hard as a Rocke. Going from thence, we cast Anchor among a great number of confused Iles, where wee heard Anumber of some Sauages, and wee did call to make them come to vs. They answered vs with the like call. Hes, Whereunto one of ours replied, Onen Kiran? that is to fay, What are yee? they would not difcouer themselues. But the next day Oagimons, the Sagamos of this River, came to vs, and wee knew it was he whom we heard. Hee did prepare to follow Memberton and his troupe to the warres, where he was grieuously wounded, as I have said in my Verses vpon this matter. This Osomont hath a Daughter about eleven yeeres old, who is very comely, which Monsieur de Poutrincourt defired to haue, and hath oftentimes demanded her of him to give her to the Queene, promiting him that he should never want Corne, nor any thing elfe, but he would never condit- The love of

cend thereto. Being entred into our Barke he accompanied vs, vntill wee came to the broad Sea, where hee towards their put himfelfe in his shallop to returne backe; and for vs we bent our course for Port Royall, where Ariual linto we arrived before day, but we were before our Fort, iust at the very point that faire Aurora be- Post Royall. gan to thew her reddie cheekes upon the top of our wooddie Hils; every bodie was yet afleepe, and there was but one that role vp, by the continual barking of Dogges; but wee made the reft soone to awake, by Peales of Musket-shots and Trumpets found. Monsieur de Poutrincourt was but the day before, arrived from his Voyage to the Mynes, whither we have faid that hee was to goe, and the day before that, was the Barke arrived that had carried part of our Workmen to Campleau. So that all being affembled, there rested nothing more then to prepare things necesfary for our shipping. And in this butinesse our Water-Mill did vs very good feruice , for other- vices a Vis

wise there had beene no meanes to prepare Meale enough for the Vovage, but in the end wee tor mil had more then wee had need of, which was given to the Sauages, to the end to have vs in re-

Vpon the point that we should take our leane of Port Royall, Monsieur de Pontrincourt fent his. The description Whon the point that we should take our rease or Port words, his point at 1 our men, one after another, to find out the ship at Campfean, which is a Port being between fewer decompless.

taire Cod

The Rain-bow appearing in

the water.

Port Saualet. 42, Voyages made in New-Sund-land. Good filbing.

Exceeding faire Corne. Faire Wheate.

The Sauages returne from the warres. The Saurges teares at the going away of the Frenchmen. Meale left behinds.

Monsieur de Poutrincourt his going away.

The departing from New

> The fight of the Corlingues. Ha ueft of New France, thewed to the

Being at Paris, the faid Monsieur de Poutrincourt presented to the King with the fruits of the Land from whence he came, and especially the Corne, Wheate, Ric, Barley and Oates, as being

or eight Hands where ships may be sheltered from windes : and there is a Bay of aboue fifteene leagues depth, and fixe or feuen leagues broad. The faid place being diffant from Port Royall aboue one hundred and fiftie leagues. For victuals, wee wanted for no fish, for in halfe an houres Abundance of fishing we might take Cod enough for to feed vs a fortnight, and of the fairest and fattest that euer I faw, being of the colour of Carpes; which I have never knowne nor noted, but in this part of the faid Cap de Sable; which after we had pasted, the tide (which is swift in this place) brought Port dela Hene vs in fhort time as farre as to the Port De La Hene, thinking that wee were no further then the Port de Monton. There we tarried two dayes, and in the very same Port wee faw the Codsbite at the Hooke. We found there store of red Gooseberies, and a Marcaffite of Copper Myne: we also made there some trucking with the Sauages for skinnes.

From thence forward we had wind at will, and during that time it happened once, that being you the hatches, I cried out to our Pilot Monsieur de Champdore, that we were readie to strike. thinking I had feene the bottome of the Sea; but I was deceived by the Rain-bow which did appeare with all his colours in the water, procured by the shadow, that our Boare-spright savle did make ouer the same, being opposite to the Sunne, which assembling his beames, within the hollownelle of the same sayle, as it doth within the Cloudes, those beames were forced to make a reperberation in the water, and to thew forth this wonder. In the end wee arrived within foure leagues of Campfeau, at a Port, where a good old man of Saint lohn de Lus, called Captaine Saualet, received vs with all the kindnesse in the World. And for as much as this Port (which is little, but very faire) hath no name, I have qualified it in my Geographicall Mappe, with the 20 name of Squalet. This good honest man told vs that the same Voyage was the two and fortieth Voyage that he had made into those parts, and neverthelesse the New-found-land-men doe make but one in a yeere. He was maruelloufly pleated with his fifthing; and told vs moreouer that hee tooke every day fittie Crownes worth of fish, and that his Voyage would bee worth one thoufand pounds. He payed wages to fixteene men, and his veffell was of eightie tuns, which could carrie 100000 dry filhes. Wee were foure dayes there, by reason of the contrary wind. Then came we to Camplean,

where we tarried for the other Barke, which came two dayes after vs. And as for Monfieur de Postrincourt, as foone as he faw that the Corne might be reaped, he pulled vp fome Rie, root and all, for to shew here the beautie, goodnesse and vnmeasurable height of the same. Hee also made 30 gleanes of the other forts of Seeds, as Wheat, Barley, Oates, Hempe, and others for the same purpole, Delighting my selfe in this exercise, God hach bleded my poore labour, and I haue had in my Garden as faire Wheate as any can be in France, whereof the faid Monfieur de Poutrincourt gaue ynto mee a gleane, when hee came co the faid Port de Campfeau. Hee was readie to depart from Port Royall, when Memberton and his company arr ued, victorious ouer the Armonchiquois. At the instant request of the faid Memberton he tarried yet one day. But it was pitious to fee at his depirting, those poore people weepe, who had beene alwayes kept in hope that some of ours should alwayes tarrie with them. In the end promise was made vinto them, that the yeere following housholds and families should bee sent thither, wholly to inhabit their Land, and teach them Trades for to make them line as wee doe, which promise did somewhat comfort them. 49 There was left remayning ten Hogs-heads of Meale, which were given to them, with the Corne that we had fowed, and the possession of the Manour if they would vieit, which they have not done. For they cannot be constant in one place, and line as they doe. The eleventh of August the faid Monsieur de Poutrincourt departed, with eight in his compa-

nie, from the faid Port Royall, in a shallop to come to Camplean : A thing maruellously dangerous to croffe fo many Bayes and Seas in fo small a veffell, laden with nine persons, with victuals neceffarie for the Voyage, and reasonable great quantitie of other stuffe. Being arrived at the Port of Captaine Sanalet, he received them all as kindly as it was possible for him: And from thence they came to vs. to the faid Port of Campfeau, where we tarried yet eight dayes. The third day of September, we weighed Anchors, and with much adoe came wee from among the Rockes, 50 that be about the faid Camplean. Which our Mariners did with two shallops that did carrie their Anchors very farre into the Sea, for to vphold our ship, to the end she should not strike against the Rockes. Finally, being at Sea, one of the faid shallops was let goe, and the other was taken into the Ionas, which belides our lading, did carrie 100000, of fish, as well drie as greene. Wee had reasonable good wind untill we came neere to the Lands of Europe: But we were not overcloyed with good cheere, because that they who came to fetch vs, presuming we were dead did cramme themselues with our refreshing commodities. Our Workemen dranke no more Wine, after we had left Port Royall: And we had but small portion thereof, because that which did ouer abound with vs; was drunke merrily in the company of them that brought vs newes from France. The fixe and twentieth of September wee had fight of the Sorlingnes, which bee at the 63 Lan is end of Cornewall in England, and the eight and twentieth thinking to come to Saint

the most precious thing that may be brought from what Countrey socuer. The said Monsienr de Postrincourt had bred tenne Outards, taken from the fhell, which hee thought to bring all into France, but five of them were loft, and the other five he gave to the King . who delighted much in them , and they areat Fountaine Bellean; Vpon the faire shew of the fruites of the faid Coun- Outerds, of trey, the King did confirme to Menseur de Monte the priviledge for the Trade of Beuers with wild Geefe the Sauages, to the end to give him meanes to establish his Colonies in New France. And by this the King. occasion he lent thither in March last, Families, there to beginne Christian and French Common. Privilege of wealths, which God vouchfafe to bleff: and increase. The faid thips being returned, we have had report by Monfieur de Champdore, and others, of

I ne san imps seung returnen, we naue nan reportoy manneur ac thempare, and others, in the the contrie which we had left, and of the wonderful beautie of the Contrie that if the fail Monfier de Pourtmoner had lowed before his departure, together of the grifting that the fallen in the Gardens, which have so increased that it is an increasible thing. Monfiertand like the News from ther fix or feuen barrels of the Corne that we had fowed and had we one left, which he referred New France for the Frenchmen, whom he looked for, who arriving hee faluted with three Muskiet flors and fince our come Bonfires. When it was laid to his charge that he had eaten our Pidgeons; which wee left there, thence. he fell a weeping, and embracing him that told it him, faid, that it was the Macharas, that is to It is very dam fay, the great Birds which are Eagles, which did eate many of them . while wee were there, gerousto Moreourr, all great and small, did inquire how we did, naming every one by his owne name, teach the Sawhich is a witnesse of great loue.

From Port Royall, the faid Chempdore went as fatte as Chonahouer, the beginning of the Armouchiquois Land, where hee pacified that Nation with the Ereshemins, which was not done without folemnitie. For as hee had begun to speake of it, the Captaine, who is now insteed of Olmechin, named Aftikon, a grave man and of a goodly presence, how savage soever hee be , dez manded, that some one of the faid Etechemins should be sent to him, and that he would weat with The Saugus him. Quemont, Sugamos of the River Saint Croix, was appointed for that purpose, and he would wisdome. not truft them, but vuller the affurance of the Frenchmen, he went thither. Some Prefents were made to Aitkon, who, voon the speech of peace, began to exhort his people and to shew them the causes that ought to induce them to hearken vinto it. Whereunto they condifcended, making an exclamation at every Article that he propounded to them. Some five yeeres agoe Monfient 30 de Monte had likewise pacified those Nations, and had declared unto them, that he would bee enemie to the first of them that should begin the Warre, and would pursue him. But after his returne into France, they could not containe themselves in peace. And the Armonebiquou did kill a Souriquois Sauage, called Panoniae, who went to them for to trucke Merchandize, which he tooke at the Store, house of the faid Monsieur de Monts. The Warrenbour mentioned happened by reason of this faid murther, under the conduct of Saganos Memberton: the faid Warre was Monteur China made in the very same place, where I now make mention, that Monstour de Champdore did treate pleis is now in

great and vncomparable River, and of the Countries which it washeth on both sides, by the diligence of the faid Champlem. As for Monsieur de Pontrincourt, his desire is immutable, in this resolution to inhabit and a- Monsieur de dorne his Prouince, to bring thither his family, and all forts of Trades necessary for the life of his resolution. man. Which, with Gods helpe hee will continue to effect all this prefent yeere 1609. And, 1602. as long as hee hath vigour and firength, will profecute the fame, to live there under the Kinga obeviance.

The Author hath written another large Booke of the Rites of the Sanages of those parts, which I baue omitted , partly because Champlein in the former Chapiter bath ginen us large instructisons of the same, and because in our Virginian, and New England, and New-found-land, our men will relate the like; and because I seeke to bee short, howsoener my Subject causeth mee to bee voluminosu.

Benera confinmaces the wie

the peace this yeere. Monlieur Champlein is in another place, to wit, in the great River of Canada, the River of neere the place where Captaine Iames Quartier did winter, where hee hath fortified him felfe. Canada. having brought thither housholds, with Cattle and diversionts of fruit-trees. There is store of Entittrees no Vines, and excellent Hempe, in the same place where he is, which the earth bringeth forth of it Vines. felfe. He is not a man to be idle, and we expect thortly newes of the whole Discouerie of this Hempe.

CHAP. VIII.

Collections out of a French Booke, called Additions to Nona Francia: containing the Accidents there, from the yeere 1607. to 1611.

Onsieur de Monts hauing his priviledge prorogued for one yeare, with some affoci-

place of the Riute of Conside, which the Savages call Kebee, some fortie leagues about the Riuer

reason, the place is commodious to command, through all that great River. Monfier Cham-

plein, else Kings Geographer, very skilfull in Sea matters, and who delighteth maruellouffy in

chesenterprises, tooks vpon him the charge of conducting, and gouerning this first Colonie.

fent to Kebec. Where being arrived, it was needefull to make houses for him, and his compame; wherein there was no toyle wanting, fuch as we may imagine, as was the labour of Cap- 20

taide lacques Quartier, at his arrivall in the place of the faid River, where he wintered and fo

Mensieur de Monts, in the Ile of Saint Croix; whereby did islue vnknowne sicknesses, which tooke away many men: for there was not found any Timber ready to be put in worke, norany

huildings to lodge the workemen in : they were driven to fell downe the wood by the roote, to

cleare the ground, and to lay the first foundations of a worke, which (with the helpe of God) shall

among thefe, which did confpire against the faid Champlein their Captaine, having deliberated to put him to death, first by poilon, afterwards by a traine of Gunpowder; and after, hauing

But as our Franchmen haue oftentimes bin found mutinous in fuch actions; fo there were some

piltered all, to come to Tadonfue, where Barkes and Rechel Ships were, to make their retuine in qu them to these parts. But the Apothecary, of whom the poylon was demarked, disclosed the

The people being lodged stone store of Corne was fowed, and a number of Gardens were

made, where the ground did reftore plentifully, the feedes received. This Land bringeth forth,

naturally, Grapes in great quantity: the Walnut-trees are there in abundance, and Chestnut-

trees alio, whole fruite is in the forme of an halfe moone; but the Walnuts are with many cor-

ners or edges, which be not divided. There is also great store of Pumpions, and very excellent

fift, as any other River in the world. It is thought, that Bevers, are not here fo good, as you the

coast of the Etechemins and Souriquois; yet notwithstanding, I may say very well, that I have

Hempe, wherewith the Sauages make fifthing lines. The River there doth abound with as much 40

The winter being come, many of our Frenchmen, were found greatly afflicted with the ficke-

neffe, which is called the Scuruie, whereof I haue fpoken elfewhere, Some of them died there-

of, for want of present remedy. As for the tree called Annedda, so much renowned by lacques

matter. Whereupon, Information being made, one of them was hanged, and some others con-

aces, fent vato his Gouernment three Ships, furnished with men and vietuals.

and for the delige that Monferer de Monte hath to pierce through the Land to the

Welterne Sea coast, to the end he should not be an hinderance visto him, and to be able thereby to reach one day, to China, he determined to fortifie himselfe in a

And foral much as Monfieur de Pourrincourt hath taken his part on the maine Sea. 10

his lending of

Note the intention of the French.

Kebee 40. leag. aboue Saguenay

of Sagnenay. There it is narrower, being no broader then a Canon will carry : and fo, by that

A conspiracy.

be the fubiect of many wonders.

du Pone of Honficur was Commander.

Exemplary pur demand to the Gallies, which were brought backe into France, in the Ship, wherein Monfress nishmens.

The naturall

Blacke Fox:s. feene skins from thence of blacke Foxes, which feeme to exceede Sables, or Marterns.

Quartier, it is not now to be found. The faid Champlein made diligent fearch for the fame, and could have no newes thereof: and notwithstanding his dwelling is at Kebec, neighbouring

Champleins

on the place, where the faid Quartier did winter. Whereupon, I can thinke nothing elie, but that the people of that time, have bin exterminated by the Iroqueis, or other their 50 The Spring time being come, Champlein having had a long time a minde to make new discoueries, was to choose, either to make his way to the Iroquou, or to goe beyond the fall of the great River, to discouer the great Lake, whereof men ion hath bin made heretofore. Notwithstanding, because the Southerly Countries are more pleasant, for their milde temperature; he resolued himselfe, the first yeare, to visite the Iroquou. But the difficulty confisted in the going thither; for we are not able of our felues to make those Voyages, without the affiffance of the Sauages. These Countries are not the Plaines of Champaigne, nor of Vatan, nor the ingratefull wood of Limofin. All is there couered with woods, that leeme to threaten the clouds. And at that time his company of men was but weake, as well by reason of the former mortality, as of 62 the infirmities of fickneffes, which were yet continuing. Notwithstanding, being a man, who is aftonished with nothing, and of a gentle conversation, knowing wisely how to acquaint, and accommodate himfelfe with thole people, after having promifed them, that when the land

of the Iroqueis, and other Countries should be discouered, the great French Sagamor (meaning

CHAP.S. River of the Irocois. Challenge to combat. Agreement with Captaines. 1643

our King) would give them great rewards : he invited them to goe to warre against the faid Iroquous, promiting (tor himfelfe) that he would take part with them. They (in whom the defire quant, promining doct, and who delight in nothing more then in warre) paffe their word vnto him. and arme themselves about one hundred men, for that effect, with whom the said Champlein venand affice them. So they the shimfelfe, accompanied with one man, and one of Monfieur de Monts his footemen. So they tures minitures, and their voyage in the Sauges Barkes, and Canoes, along the great River, as farre as the to the Ireauch. entring into the River of the Iroquois : wherein being entred, within certaine dayes, they went yn vnto the Lake of the faid Iroquois. But one may demand with what did fo many people line. in a Countrie where no Innes are? I wonder as much at that as others doe; for with them there to is not any meanes of hung, but by hunting; and in that, they doe exercise themselves through the woods in their trausiles. Champleir and his men, were forced to hue after their manner. For although they had made prouision of Bread, Wine, and Meate, out of the storehouse, the same Their arrival could not have ferued them, to make accompt of, Finally, being come into the faid Lake, they at the Lake were many dayes a croffing of it (for it is about fixtie leagues of length) without giving know- which is fixtie ledge of their being there, and so the said Champlein had time to view their Tillage, and the faire leagues long. llands, that ferue for an ornament to their great extension of water. These people are much like Faire llands in Ilands, that letue for an ornament to their great extension of water, I here people are marked that to the Armouchiquois, in their fashion of liung. They fowe Indian Maiz and Beanes, and haue the Indian Maiz and Beanes, and haue quantity of faite Grapes, whereof they make no vie and very good rootes. Euery Family have another exertheir ground round about their dwellings; Fores also, yet no Townes, made with buildings of cife. 20 three or foure stories high, such as they have in new Mexico (a Countrie situated much farther Houses of

In the end, our men being discouered, the alarum was given among the Iroqueis, who affem- The alarum abled themselves. And as the Iroquois did approach, Champlein, who was armed with a Musket. mong the Irocharged with two bullets, would have fet himfelfe forward to aime, to make at one of the forwarded of the Iroquois, who did braue it, challenging his enemies to the combat. But the Sa- The Prudence nages of Kebec told him in their language, no, doe not fo, for if they once difcouer you, not beof the Saugees. ing accustomed to see such folkes, they will forthwith runne away, and make no stand; so shall we loofe the glory which we expect of this charge; withdraw your felfe therefore behinde our formost ranke, and when we shall be neere, you shall advance your selfe, and shoote at those two 30 feathered fellowes, whom you fee the formost, in the middeft of the troope; which was found good, and executed by the fail Champlem, who with one shot laid them both to the ground, as the lathrelated vato vs. He, who affilted him, did also his duetie. But on a sodaine, all was in Flights ne nautrement vince a fuch a noile, and death so vnexpected. V pon this feare, the men of Ke-disorder, astonished at such a noile, and death so vnexpected. V pon this feare, the men of Ke-fer looling no occasion, followed earnestly their enemies, and killed about fiftie of them, whose selection of the strong state of the s heads they brought backe, to make therewith merry feafts, and dances, at their returne, accor-

ding to their cultome. These things so passed, Champlein tooke againe his course towards ancient France, where he arrived in October 1609. having left the government of New France to a good reverent old man called Captaine Pierre. And for as much as the accidents of the former ficknesse, were stared to Capt. Pierre. 40 come; the winter following, Captaine du Pont of Honfleure (a man very well worthy to hold Captain Page. ranke among the Heroes of the laid Prounce, for haung bin the first that came to the Fals of the great River, after lacques Quartier, having also wintered in Port Royall, and almost every yeare, made voyages to those parts, for the reliefe of them that were there) gaue aduse, that wood should be ready cut downe, for those that should tarry there all the winter, and thereby to free them from painfull toyles. That helpe hath bin of fuch force, that befides this, having their buildings made, they have left no infirmitie nor mortality. So he returned, and with him the faid None died, nor

Champlein, and those that would returne. In the meane while, preparations were made for another voyage, against the returne of the faid Champlein, to the end to profecute his discoueries, and confequently, to relieue the faid Captaine Pierre. He tooke againe for the fecond time the Lieutenancy of the faid Monfieur de Monts, new Voyago. 50 for the government of Kebec, and fetting out in the beginning of March, was forced divers times to turne backe, by reason of contrary windes; which made him to arrive late, as did also Monfeur de Poutrinconrt, of his part. And neuertheleffe, in that fmall time, which hee had in those A Lake of an parts, he exploited a great pecce of worke, hauing gone this yeare, as farre as a great Lake, hundred leng-

of an hundred leagues in length, which is beyond the Fals of the great Riuer of Canada eigh-Having then reviewed the state of all things at Kebee, and learned what occurrences had past. Agreement to fed there, fince his departure; he made an agreement with the Captaines of the faid place, and with them of Tadoussac, to goe on warfare about the Fall of the said River, promising them to great Like. 60 procure an hundred Frenchmen, to affift them in the extirping of all their enemies; and that they

should have as many of their owne men, of their side, which they liked very well. But the day appointed being come, and the Frenchmen not come, he excused the matter vpon the weather, which had beene boiltrous for Sailers: and for want of whom, hee told them, that himselie would goe with them, and follow their fortunes. They feeing they could doe no better, accepted

champlein his

1614 Lake 100 leag, in length Beasts great and small Sauages Baptized. LIB. VIII.

of his offer, and went together with some other Frenchmen more, along the same faire River : the Sauares still hunting for proussion for the kitchin. And they travailed so farre, that after having paffed the Fals, they crossed some Lakes, and in the space of eighty leagues, came to that other Lake, which we have faid to be of an hundred leagues in length: where (as the faid Champlein A Battell.

plein had received a blow on the chine bone, whereof he is not yet fully healed. Since, he made a confederacy with other Nations of those parts, farther diffant from the mouth of the Lake, who promifed him, that the next yeare following (which is this yeare 1611.) they would conduct him with all afforance, as for as the fartheit end of the fail Lake. He, for his part, promifed them to faire, and shewed them as well as he could, the greatnesse of our King, and of his Kingdome; and for to make them certaine thereof, be tooke with him a yong man, fonne of a Captaine of those parts, called Sanignon, a man of a good shape, strong, vigorous, and of great courage, whom he hath brought into France, to make report, vpon his returne, of that which he hath feene. This Country(by the report of the faid Champlein) is one of the fairest Countries of the world, much tilled. A faire Coun- abounding with chafe Deere, and Fish, Vines, Hempe, good Roots, Walnut-trees, Cheftnut-trees.

Bouers burnt.

Plantrees and others.

Hories.

Maniellous

Hone for the Ballage to China. Some great the Westerne

Sea. Sca.

A confpiracy.

Their arrivall heutholdftuffe

Sagamos doth

hath recited vnto me) they were prefently fet vpon by the Sauages of the Country, and it was behoonefull vinto them, to fland in good order, & well to derend themselves, after the said Cham-

burne Hogges : and to by that meanes, that haire and wooll, which we goe fo farre of and with fo many perils to leeke for, is loft. There are Beat's great and small, differing from ours, and Hor- 20 fes, as the faid Sanignon hath shewed vs, by the neighing. But I dare not give for current that which Monfieur de Monts hath recited vinto me, that thefe Nations have tame Beares, which they teach, to carry them upon trees for want of ladders. They have Forts, such as they of Vir-Forts & towns nia haue, which are great inclosures with trees, loyned together in forme like a Pale, and within those inclosures are houses made, two or three stories high. The lower and higher parts doe ferue for the men when they must defend themselves from the assalts of their enemies. For in the flories.
Strong bowes. lower parts there are big Bowes, for the bending of which, the strength of six men is required, and they have Arrowes, that knocke downe men. Aboue, they have murthering holes, or battlements, from when e to fling or cast stones, and also to shoote with Bowes, when they will hit their enemies a farre off. In the middle roomes are the women, which faile not in doing 30 that helpe which their fexe may affoord. And in this middle flory, they lay up their Corne

There are flore of Beuers along this Lake, but the Inhabitants doe burne them, as here wee

and other prouisions. Champlein promileth vs neuer to give over vntill he have pierced as farre as to the Western Sea. or that of the North, to open the way of China; in vaine by for many thought for. As for the Western Sea, I beleene that at the farther end of the greatest Lake, which is very far beyond that River running whereof we foake of in this Chapter, there will be found fome great River, which will fall into Westward into the same, or office from it (as doth that of Canada) and never into the said Westerne Sea. And as for the Northerne Seathere is hope to come neere to it by the River of Saguenay, there being but The Northern small distance from the head of the faid River, to the faid Sea.

It is now fit to speake of Monsieur de Poutrincourt, a Gentleman of long time resolute in these 40 actions, who having made his preparation at Diepe, fet faile the 25. of February 1610. with a Atedious Na- number of honeit men, and Artificers. This Naugarion hath bin very tedrous and trouble tome; for from the beginning they were driven within light of the Azores, and from thence, almost continually beaten with contrary windes, by the space of two moneths; during which time (as idle people doe commonly occupie their (pirits in ea: II) some, by secret practises, durst conspire against their Captaine, whom notwithstanding, the faid Poutrincourt, according to his accultomed clemency, did pardon.

Having made a review of that coast, he came into Port Royall, where he brought much conat Por Roal. folation to the Sauages of that place. As for the buildings, they were found all whole, except the Buildings and courring, and every parcell of houshold stuffe, in the same place where they were left.

The first care that the fand Monsteur de Pourrincourt ha , was for the tillage of the ground, and to dispose it to receive the seede of corne, for the yeare following; which being finished, hee would not neglect that which belonged to the (pritualty, and whereunto the chiefest aime of his trangiles did tend, which was, to procure the faluation of those poore fangue and barbabarous The fift Chris people. After necessary instruction given, they were baptized upon Saint John Baptist his day, figures made the four and twentieth of Iune, 1610, to the number of one and twenty perions; to every one in New France. of which was given the name of some great or notable person of these parts.

1. Membertou great Sagamos, being aboue an hundred yeares of age, was baptized by Sir leffe Fleche Priette, and named by Monsieur de Poutrincourt, Henry, after the Kings name. Prince, Ruler, 2. Actaudinech, third Sonne of the laid Henry Memberton, was by the faid Pourrincourt, named 60 or Castaine.

The King was Paul, after the name of Pope Paul. 3. The wife of the laid Henry, was named by the hid Pour trincourt, after the Q renes name, that is to lay Marie. 4. Mombertocoichie, alias Iudas, elier forme to Memberton, being about fixety yeares old, was also captized, and by Monfigur de Buncour, named Lewes, after the name of my L ra the Daulphin, &cc.

Memberton, chiefe Sagamos of these Countries, moued with a religious zeale (but without knowledge) faith, that he will denounce open wars against all them that will refuse to become

Shorely after these spiritual regenerations, Monsieur de Poutrincourt his son was sent backe. A returne in-Christians. into France to take a new charge : In doing whereof, he certified the Queene, what had bin done to France, in those Christenings; whereby she received a marueilous contentment. But this one things is to in those distributed the Nauigation were tedious in going, yet in the returne it was very short; for being come to the fishing banke, which is fiftie leagues on this side New-found-land, he was brought in a fortnight into France, in which time they commonly make their returne. Vpon the To Banke they heare the newes of our good Kings death, whose soule resteth with God, and whose posterity we pray God to blesse.

The Author reports another Voyage 1611. by the Lord of Sant Iust; but I have hafte to the English Plantation for whole lake thele are published: there being no great matter of history of thole parts therein. As for the Articles of a Societie concluded, and the names of those which entred therein, till we have greater effect thereof, I shall not trouble you with the recitall thereof.

CHAP. IX.

The first plantation of English Colonies in Virginia briefely mentioned.



Ir Walter Raleigh, a man more famous then happy, had obtained of Queene Elizabeth, of glorious memory, a Patent for discouering and peopling of vnknowne The first Voyparts not actually possessed by any Christian Prince, dated March 25, A. Reg. 26, and possessed by the 27 of Aprill 1584 he let forth two Barkes wider the command of Matter taken. Phillip Amadas, and Master Arthur Barlow, which arrived on that part of A- Virginia namerica, which that Virgin Queene stiled Virginia, and thereof in her Maiesties med so by Q.

20 name tooke possession July 12, and having taken view and liking of the Country, and had con- Elizabeth. ference and trade with the Sauages, obseruing aboue foureteene seuerall sweete smelling timber trees, and many other commodities; they returned with two of the Sauages, Wanchefe and Manteo, and arrived in England in September.

Aprill 9. 1587. Sir Richard Greeneuile was fent by Sir Walter Raleigh with a fleete of feuen Second Voyfaile, which landed in the Ile of Saint John Port Ricco, May 12. and there fortified themselves, age and built a Pinnace. The Spaniard promifed to furnish them with victuals, but did not, where- Sir R. Greenkile. upon they tooke two Frigates. In Hispaniola they had friendly greetings and trade June 26 they anchored at Wocoken, where by the vulkilfulnesse of Fernando the Master, their Admirall strooke

on ground and funke. In the 20, of July, the Generall returned for England, and tooke a Spanish Ship of three hundred tunne richly laden by the way, boording her with a Boate made of the boords of Chefts, which as foone as hee had boorded her fell in funder and funke at the Ships fide. In the Comtrie was a Colonie, left under the gouernment of Master Ralph Lane, viz., Master Phillip Amadas, Malter Hariot, Malter Alton, Malter Edward Stafford, Malter Prideox, Captaine Vaughan, and aboue a hundred others. Master Lane writ from his new Fort in Virginia, that if Virginia had Kine and Horses in reasonable proportion, no Countrie in Christendome were comparable to it. They discourred from Roaneak to the Chesepians, aboue one hundred and thirty miles, to Chamanock North-Well as farre. The Sanages confpired against the English, the principall was Pemisapan, who loft his head in the quarrell, in the beginning of June 1586, and Sir Francis Drake 50 comming thither from the facke of divers Spanish Townes, to visite the Colony, on the nine-

teenth, tooke the Colony with him in his victorious Fleete, and brought them into Engla d. The fame yeere had Sit Walter Raleigh prepared a fhip of a hundred tun, fraught with provision Third Voyage. for the Colonie, which fetting forth late, arrived at Hartoraske immediatly after the departure of the Colonie, which having fought in vaine, the returned with her provisions for England. About a fortnight after her departure, Sir Richard Greeneuile, Generall of Virginia, accompanied with three Ships arrived there, and neither hearing of the Ship, nor of the Colonie which he had left there the yeare before, after long and vaine learch, he left fifteene men to hold polestion of the nic. Countrie, in the Ile of Rosmosk, furnished for two yeares, and returned, by the way making spoyle on the Townes of the Azores, and there taking divers Spaniards. Master Thomas Hariot Master Themas 6) writa large History of the Men, Beatle, Fishes, Fowles, Plants, and Commodities of Virginia, Heriot,

fubscribed allo by Mafter Ralph Lane, extant in Mafter Hacklun his third Tome. In the yeare 1587. Sir Walter Raleigh, continuing his purpose of Plantation, sent another Co. Fifth Voyage lonie of one hundred and fiftie persons, vnder the government of Mafter Iohn White; to him he and third Coappointed twelue Affiffants, vn:0 whom he gaue a Charter, and incorporated them by the name lonic.

CHAP.II. Saint Maries Hand, Sauages shew themselues; store of fish.

1647

of Gonernour and Affiftants of the Citie of Raleigh in Virginia, Thefe arrived on July 22. at Hatoraike, where they went on thore to feeke the fitteene men left there the yeare before, withintent after to plant at the Bay of Chelepiok, according to Sir Walter Raleigh his directions, there to make their feate and Fort, By Mantes they learned how the Sauages had fecretly affalted the fitteene English, and flaine fome, the other being forced to flee, it was not knowne whither. Mantes was Christened, and by Sir Walter Raleighs direction, made Lord of Roanoak, Miftris Dare the Gouernours daughter was delivered of a daughter, which was baptifed by the name

En: !fbborne thate.

The Company were very important with the Gouernour, to returne for England, to Supply their detects; to which, with much vn willing neffe he yeelded, Aug. 27. and Octob. 16. arrived 10 in Ireland, and after in England.

Anno 1590, the faid Matter lohn White put to Sea with Ships, and two Pinnaces, with purpose Si: a Voyage. for Virginia, where they anchored at Haterask in 36. 20. Aug. 15. They found some of the goods (fuch as the Sauages could not make vie of) and tokens as if they were at Croatoan; but the winds violence permitted no further fearch, and they returned to the Azores, and after to England, arriving at Plummouth, Octob. 24.

Maffer BARTHOLOMBUV GOSNOLDS Letter to his Father, touching his first Vorage to Virginia, 1 602.

MT duetie remembred, &c. Sir, I was in good bope that my occasions would have allowed mee so much libersie, as to have come unto you before this time; otherwise I would have written more at Large concerning the Countrie from whence we lately came, then I did: but not well remembring what I baue already written (though I am affured that there is nothing fet downe disagreeing with the truth) I thought it fittest not to goe about to adde any thing in writing, but rather to leave the report of the rest till I come my (elfo , which now I hope shall be shortly , and fo some as with conveniency I may. In the meane time, not with flanding whereas you feeme not to be fatisfied by that which I have already writen, concerning some especiall matters. I have here briefely (and as well as I can) added these few lines for 30 your further fattifaction: and first as touching that place where we were most resident, it is in the Latitude of 41 degrees, and one third part; which albeit it be fo much to the Southward, jet is it more cold then those parts of Europe, which are scitnated under the same paralell: but one thing is worth the noting, that notwithstanding the place is not fo much subject to cold as England is, yet did me finde the Spring to be later there, then it is with us here, by almost a moneth : this whether it hapned accidentally this last Spring to be fo, or whether it be fo of course, I am not very certaine; the latter seemes most likely, whereof also there may be ginen some sufficient reason, which now I omit : as for the Acornes we saw gathered on heaves, they were of the last yeare, but doubtlesse their Summer continues longer then ours. We cannot gather by any thing we could observe in the people, or by any triall we had thereof our selves but that it is as healthfull a Climate at any can be. The Inhabitants there, as I wrote before, being of tall 40 stature, comely proportion, strong, altine, and some of good yeares, and as it sould seeme very healthfull, are sufficient proofs of the healthfulnesse of the place. First, for our selves (thankes be to God) we had not a man ficke two dayes together in all our Voyage; whereas others that went out with vs, or about that time on other Voyages (especially such as went upon reprisall) were most of them insetted with sicknesse, whereof they lost some of their men, and brought home a many sicke, returning notwithstanding long before ws. But Verzzzano, and others (as I take it, you may reade in the Books of Discouries) doemore particularly intreate of the Age of the people in that coast. The Sasafras which we brought we had upon the Hands ; where though we had little disturbance, and reasonable plenty : yet for that the greatest part of our people were imployed about the fitting of our house, and such like affaires, and a few (and thise but eafie labourers) undersooke this worke, the rather because we were informed before our going forth, that 50 a tunne was sufficient to clor England) and further, for that we hadrefolued open our returne, and taken view of our victuall, we sudged it then needefull to vice expedition; which afterward we had more certaine proofe of ; for when we came to an anker before Portsmouth, which was some foure dayes after we made the land, we had not one Cake of Bread, nor any drinke, but a little Vinegar, left : fr:hefe and other reasons, we returned no otherwise laden then you have heard. And thus much I hope shall suffice sill I can my selfe come to give you further notice, which though it be not so some as I could have wish, yet I hope it shall be in convenient time. In the meane time chaning your pardon, for which the vergent occasions af my stay will pleade, I humbly take my leane. 7. Septemb. 1602.

Your dutifull Sonne,

BARTH. COSNOLD.

CHAP. XI.

The Relation of Captaine Gosnots Voyage to the North part of Virginia, becanne the fixe and twentieth of March, Anno 42. ELIZABETHE Regina 1602. and delivered by GABRIEL ARCHER, a Gentleman in the faid Voyage.

He faid Captaine did fet fayle from Famonib, the day and yeere aboue written accompanied with thirtie two persons, whereof eight Mariners and Saylers, twelue purpofing upon the Discouery to returne with the ship for England, the rest remayne there for population. The fourteenth of Aprill following, wee had fight of Saint Maries an Hand of the Afforis.

The three and twentieth of the same, beeing two hundred leagues Westwards

from the faid lland in the latitude of 37, degrees. The water in the mayne Ocean appeared yel- Ocean seelow, the space of two leagues North and South, where founding with thirtie fadome Line, wee ming yellow, found no ground, and taking vp some of the faid water in a bucket, it altered not either in colour or taite from the Sea Azure.

The feuenth of May following, we first saw many Birds in bignesse of Cliffe Pidgeons; and 20 after diners other as Pettrels, Cootes, Hagbuts, Pengwins, Murres, Gannets, Cormorants, Guls, with many elle in our English Tongue of no name. The eight of the same the water changed to a yellowish greene, where at seuentie fadome we had ground. The ninth, wee had two and twentie fadome in faire landie ground, hauing voon our Lead many glittering Stones, somewhat heavie, which might promise some Minerall matter in the bottome, we held our selves by computation, well neere the latitude of 43. degrees.

The tenth wee founded in 27. 30. 37. 43. fadome, and then came to 108. fome thought it to be the founding of the Westermost end of Saint lohns Hand, vpon this banke we saw sculs of fish in great numbers. The twelfth we hoyled out halfe of our shallop, and sounding had then eightie fadome without any current perceiued by William Strete the Master, one hundred leagues Westward from Saint Maries til we came to the foresaid foundings continually passed fleeting by we reward from Saint 27 and to have their moueable course towards the North-east, a matter to set sea-oare. fometubile inuention on worke, for comprehending the true cause thereof. The thirteenth, wee

founded in feuentie fadome, and obterued great beds of weedes, much woode and divers things effe floating by vs, when as we had smelling of the shoare, such as from the Southerne Cape and Smell of the Andulazia in Spaine.

The fourteenth, about fix in the morning we descried Land that lay North, &c. the Northerly part we called the North Land, which to another Rocke vpon the fame lying twelue leagues Weit, that wee called Sauage Rocke, because the Sauages hift shewed themselues there, fine Sauage Recke. leagues towards the faid Rocke is an out Point of woodie ground, the Trees thereof very high 40 and ifraight, from the Rocke East North-east. From the faid Rocke, came towards vs a Bifeay shallop with faile and Oares, having eight perions in it, whom we supposed at first to bee Chrifians diffressed. But approching vs neere, wee perceived them to bee Savages. These comming Savages. within call hayled vs , and wee answered. Then after signes of peace , and a long speech by one of them made, they came boldly aboord vs being all naked, fauing about their shoulders certaine

loofe Derre-skinnes, and neere their wastes Seale-skinnes tyed fast like to Irih Dimmie Troufes. One that feremed to be their Commander wore a Wastecoate of blacke worke, a paire of Breeches, cloth Stockings, Shooes, Hat, and Band, one or two more had also a few things made by some Christians, thete with a piece of Chalke described the Coast thereabouts, and could Their behauis name Placentia of the New-found-land, they spake divers Christian words, and seemed to voider- our. 50 fland much more then we, for want of Language could comprehend. These people are in colour fwart, their haire long votyed with a knot in the part of behind the head. They paint their bodies, which are frong and well proportioned. These much defired our longer stay, but finding our selves short of our purposed place, we set faile Westwards, leaving them and their Coast. About fixteene leag es South-west from thence, wee perceiued in that course two small Ilands, the one lying Eastward from Sanage Rock, the other to the Southwards of it, the Coast we left was

full of goodly Woods, faire Plaines, with little greene round Hils aboue the Cliffes appearing

vnto vi, which are indifferently railed, but all Rockie, and of shining stones, which might have perfwaded vs a longer flay there. The fifteenth day wel ad againe fight of the Land, which made a head being as wee thought 60 an Hand, by readin of a large found that appeared Westward betweene it and the Mayne, for comming to the West and thereof, we did perceive a large opening, we called it Shole-hope: Necre Shile-hope. this Cape we came to Auchor in fifreene fadome, where wee tooke great store of Cod-fish, for which we altered the name, and called it Cape Cod. Here wee faw fouls of Herrings, Mackerels Cape Cod. and other thail fich in great abundance. This is a low fundie shoare, but without danger, also wee

came to Anchor againe in fixteene fadome, faire by the Land in the latitude of 42. degrees. This Cape is well neere a mile broad, and lieth North-east by East. The Captaine went here ashoare and found the ground to be full of Peafe, Strawberies, Hurtheries, &c. as then vnripe, the fand alfo by the floare fomewhat deepe, the fire-wood there by vs taken in was of Cypreffe, Birch. Wich-hazell and Beech. A young Indian came here to the Captaine, armed with his Bow and Arrowes, and had certaine plates of Copper hanging at his Eires, hee shewed a willingnesse to helpe vs in our occasions.

The fixteenth, we trended the Coast Southerly, which was all champaine and full of graffe.

Poin, care,

but the Hands fornewhat wooddie. Twelve leagues from Cape Cod, we descried a point. with some breach a good distance off, and keeping our loffe to double it, wee came on the furden into to shoale water, yet well quitted our selues thereof. This breach wee called Tuckers Terror . voon his expressed feare. The Point we named Point Care, having passed it wee bore vp againe with the Land, and in the night came with it anchoring in eight fadome, the ground good. Thefee uenteenth, appeared many breaches round about vs, fo as wee continued that day without remooue.

Gilberts Point. Diuers Ilinds. Sausgen

Pengwins.

The eighteenth, being faire we fent forth the Boat, to found ouer a Breach, that in our course lay of another Point, by vs called Gilberts Point; who returned vs foure, five, fixe and feuenfadome ouer. Alfo a Discouery of divers Ilands which after prooved to bee Hils and Hummocks. dittinct within the Land. This day there came vnto the thips tide divers Canoas; the Indiani apparelled as aforefaid, with Tobacco and Popes Heeled with Copper, Skins, artificiall ffrings and 20 other trifles to barter, one had hanging about his necke a plate of 11th Copper in length a foot, in breadth halfe a foot for a breft-plate, the Eares of all the reit had Pendants of Copper. Also one of them had his face over painted, and his head stucke with feathers in manner of a Turkey Cocks traine : There are more timerous then those of the Sau ge Rocke, yet very theeuilh.

The nineteenth, we passed over the breach of Gilberts Point in source or fine fadome, and anchored a league or somewhat more beyond it; betweene the last two Points are two leagues, the interim, along shoale water, the latitude here is 41. degrees two third parts.

The twentieth, by the ships side we there killed Pengwins, and law many sculs of fish. The Coast from Gilberts Point to the supposed Hes lyeth East and by South. Here also we discovered two Inlets which might promife fresh water, inwardly whereof we perceived much imoake, as 30 though some population had there beene: This Coast is very full of people, for that as we tren-

ded the same Sauages Hill runne along the shoare, as men much admiring at vs. The one and twentieth, we went coasting from Gilberts Point to the supposed Iles, in tenne, nine, eight, seuen, and fixe fadome close aboord the shoare, and that depth lyeth a league off. A little from the supposed Hes appeared vnto vs an opening, with which we stood sudging it to bee the end of that which Captaine Gofnell descrieth from Cape Cod, and as hee thought to extend some thirtie or more miles in length, and finding there but three fadome a league off, we omitted

to make further discouerie of the same, calling it Shole-hope.

From this opening the Mayne lyeth South-welf, which coafting along we faw a difinhabited Manhabit From this opening the Mayne lyeth South-welf, which coafting along we faw a difinhabited Manhabit Fire and named it Marthau Frequent, 40 from Shole-hope it is eight leagues in circuit, the Hand is fine miles, and hath 41. degrees and one quarter of latitude: the place most pleasant; for the two and twentieth, we went ashoare, and found it full of Wood, Vines, Goofeberie bushes, Hurtberies, Raspices, Eglentine, &c. Heere we had Cranes, Hearnes, Shoulers Geefe, and divers other Birds which there at that time vpon the Cliffes being fandie with some Rockie stones, did breed and had young. In this place we law Deere, heere we rode in eight fathome neere the shoare, where wee tooke great store of Cod, as before at Cape Cod, but much better.

The three and twentieth wee weyed, and towards night came to Anchor at the Northwest part of this lland, where the next morning off, red vnto vs fast running thirteene Sauages apparelled as aforefaid, and armed with Bowes and Arrowes without any teare. They brought 10-50 bacco, Deere skins and some sodden fish. These offered themselves vnto vs in great familiaritie, who feemed to be well conditioned. They came more rich in Copper then any before. This Iland is found, and hath no danger about it.

Elizabethi Ile.

The four and twentieth, we fet faile and doubled the Cape of another Iland next vnto it, which wee called Douer Cliffe, and then came into a faire Sound, where wee roade all night, the next morning wee fent off our Boate to discouer another Cape, that lay betweene vs and the Mayne, from which were a ledge of Rockes a mile into the Sea, but all aboue water, and without danger, we went about them, and came to Anchor in eight fadome, a quarter of a mile from the shoare, in one of the stateliest Sounds that ever I was in. This called wee Gofnolls Hope; the Northbanke whereof is the Mayne, which stretcheth East and West. This lland Captaine Gof- 60 noll called Elizabeths Ile, where we determined our abode : the distance betweene every of these Ilands is, viz. from Marthaes V meyard to Douer Cliffe, halfe a league ouer the Sound, thence to Elizabeths Ile one league diffant. From Elizabeths Ile vnto the Mayne is foure leagues. On the North fide neere adjoyning voto the lland Elizabeth, is an Ilet in compasse halfe a myle full

CHAP. 10. Haps Hill. In-creekes or fundie Coues. Skins of wild bealts.

the Mayne appeareth another the like, that I called Haps Hill, for that I hope much hap may be Haps Hill. expected from it. The five and twentieth, it was that we came from Gofnolls Hope. The fix and twentieth, we trimmed and fitted vp our Shallop. The feuen and twentieth, there came vnto vs an Indian and ewo women, the one we supposed to be his Wife, the other his Daughter, both cleane and strate hodied, with countenance iweet and pleafant. To these the Indian gaue heedfull attendance for

that they shewed them in much familiaritie with our men, although they would not admit of a-

of Cedars, by me called Hills Hap, to the Northward, of which in the mouth of an opening on Hill Hen.

ny immodest touch. The eight and ewentieth we entred counfell about our abode and plantation, which was concluded to be in the West part of Elizabeths Iland. The North-east thereof running from out our ken. The South and North standeth in an equall Parallel. This Iland in the Westernde admitteth fome Increekes, or fandie Coues, fo girded, as the water in some places of each fide meeteth , to which the Indians from the Mayne doe oftentimes refort for fishing of Crabs. There is eight fadome very neere the shoare, and the latitude here is 41. degrees 10. minutes, the tread h nom Elecabets ! Sound to Sound in the Welter part is not palling a mile at moit, altogether vnpeopled and dilinhabited. It is ouer-growne with Wood and Rubbish, viz. Okes, Ashes, Beech , Wal nut, 10 minut : Weech-halfe, Saffafrage, and Cedars, with divers other of vnknowne names. The R . With is contribute.

wild Pezze, young Saffafrage, Cherie trees, Vines, Eglentine, Goose-berie bushes, Hawtmorne, so Honiliuckles, with others of like qualitie. The herbs and Roots are Strawberies Rafes. Ground Nuts, Alexander, Surrin, Tanie, &c. without count. Touching the fertilitie of the levele by cur owne experience made, we found it to be excellent for fowing fome English pulse it sprowted out in one fortnight almost halte a foot. In this Iland is a stage or Poud of tresh water, in circuit two miles, on the one fide not distant from the Sea thirtie yards, in the Centre whereof is a Rockie Islet, contayning neere an Acre of ground full of wood, on which wee beganne our Fort and Fort legin place of abode, disposing it selfe so fit for the same. These Indians call Gold Wasfador, which ar-

gueth there is thereof in the Countrey. The nine and twentieth, we laboured in gerting of Saffafrage, rubbishing our Ittle Fort or Islet, new keeling our shallop; and making a Punt or Flat bottome Boate to passe to and tro our 20 Fortouer the fresh water, the powder of Saffafrage in twelue houres cured one of our Company that had taken a great Surfet by eating the bellies of Dog-fish , a very delicious meate.

The thirtieth, Captaine Gofnoll with divers of his company went voon pleafure in the falllop towards Hills Hap to view it, and the Sandie Coue, and returning brought with him a Canca that foure Indians had there left being fled away for feare of our English which we brought into

The one and thirtieth, Captaine Gofnoll desirous to see the Maine, because of the distance, hee fet tayle ouer; where comming to anchor, went ashoare with certaine of his companie, and immediatly there prefented vn to him men women and children, who with all curteous kindnesse entertayned him, giving him certaine skinnes of wilde beafts, which may be rich Furres, Tobac-4000, Turtles, Hempe, artificiall Strings coured, Chaines, and fach like things as at the innant The rethey had about them. These are a faire conditioned people: On all the Sea coast along we found Muffell shells that in colour did represent Mother-of-pearle, but not having meanes to dredge,

could not apprehend further knowledge thereof. This Maine is the goodlieft Continent that ener we faw, promifing more by farre then we any way did expect: for it is replenished with faire fields, and in them fragrant Flowers, also Medowes, and hedged in with stately Grones, being furnished also with pleasant Brookes, and beautified with two maine Rivers that (as wee judge) may haply become good Harbours, and conduct vs to the hopes men fo greedily doe thirst after. In the mouth of one of thele Inlets or Rivers lieth that little Ile before mentioned, called Happer Hill, from which vnto the Westermost end of the Maine, appearing where the other Inlet is, I account some fine leagues, and the Coast betweene bendeth like a Bow, and I yeth East 50 and by North. Beyond thefe two Inlets we might perceive the Mayne to beare up South-week. and more Southerly. Thus with this tafte of Discouery, we now contented our felues, and the fame day made returne vnto our Fort, time not permitting more sparing delay.

The first of lune, we employed our felues in getting Sassafrage, and the building of our Fort. The fecond, third and fourth, we wrought hard to make readie our house for the provision to bee had ashore to suffaine vs till our ships returne. This day from the Mayne came to our ships side a Canoa, with their Lord or chiefe Commander, for that they made little itay only pointing to the Sunne, as in figne that the next day hee would come and visit vs, which hee did ac-

cordingly. 60 The fifth, wee continued our labour, when there came vnto vs ashoare from the Mayne sittle Sauages, flout and lustie men with their Bowes and Arrowes, amongst them there seemed to be one of authoritie, because the rost made an inclining respect vinto him. The ship was at their comming a league off, and Captaine Gofnoll aboord, and so likewise Captaine Gilbert, who almost neuer went alhoare, the company with me only eight persons. These Indians in hastie manner

came towards vs, fo as we thought fit to make a stand at an angle betweene the Sea and a fresh water, I mooued my telfe towards him feuen or eight steps, and clapt my hands first on the sides of mine head, then on my breaft, and after prefented my Musket with a threatning countenance. thereby to fignifie vnto them, either a choice of Peace or Warre, whereupon hee vfing mee with mine owne fignes of Peace, I stept forth and imbraced him, his company then all fate downe in manner like Grey-hounds vpon their heeles, with whom my company fell a bartering. By this time Captaine Gofnell was come with twelve men more from aboord, and to shew the Sauage Seignior that he was our Captaine, we received him in a guard, which he passing thorow, saluted the Seignior with ceremonies of our falutations, whereat he nothing mooned or altered himselfe. Our Capraine gaue him a ftraw Hat and a paire of Kniues , the Hat awhiles hee wore , but the IO Kniues he beheld with great maruelling, being very bright and sharpe, this our courtese made

them all in loue with vs. The fixt being raine, we fpent idlely aboord. The feuenth, the Seignior came againe with all his troupe as before, and continued with vs the most part of the day, we going to dinner about noone, they fate with vs and did eate of our Bacaleure and Mustard, dranke of our Beere, but the Mustard nipping them in their noses they could not indure : it was a sport to behold their faces made being bitten therewith. In time of Dinner the Sauages had stolnea Target wherewich acquainting the Seignier, with feare and great trembling they restored it againe, thinking perhaps we would haue beene reuenged for it, but feeing our familiaritie to continue, they fell a fresh to roasting of Crabs, Red Herrings, which were exceeding great, ground Nuts, &c. as be- 20 fore. Our Dinner ended, the Seignier first tooke leave and departed, next all the rest saving foure that stayed and went into the Wood to helpe vs digge Sassafrage, whom we defired to goe abourd

vs, which they refused and so departed.

Their purpole

The eighth wee divided the victuals, viz. the thips fore for England, and that of the Planters. which by Captaine Gilbert: allowance could be but fixe weekes for fixe moneths, whereby there fell out a controuer sie, the rather, for that some seemed secretly to vinderstand of a purpose Captaine Gilbert had not to returne with supplie of the iffue, those goods should make by him to be carried home. Besides, there wanted not ambitious conceits in the mindes of some wrangling and ill disposed persons that ouerthrew the stay there at that time, which vpon consultation thereof had, about fine dayes after was fully refolued all for England againe. There came in this 30 interim aboord vnto vs, that flayed all night, an Indian, whom wee vied kindly, and the next day fent ashoare hee shewed himselfe the most sober of all the rest, wee held him sent as a Spie. In the morning he filched away our Pot-hookes, thinking he had not done any ill therein; being ashoare wee bid him strike fire, which with an Emerald stone (such as the Glasiers vie, to cut Glasse) he did. I take it to be the very same that in Latine is called Smiris, for striking therewith vpon Touch-wood that of purpose hee had, by meane of a mynerall stone vsed therein, sparkles proceeded and forthwith kindled with making of slame. The ninth, wee continued working on our Store-house for as yet remayned in vs a defired resolution of making flay. The tenth, Captaine Gosnos fell downe with the ship to the little life of Codars, called Hill happe, to take in Cedar wood, leauing mee and nine more in the Fort, onely with three meales meate, 40 ypon promise to returne the next day. The eleventh, he came not, neither sent, whereupon I commanded source of my companie to

feeke out for Crabbes, Lobsters, Turtles, &c. for fustayning vs till the ships returne, which was gone cleane out of fight, and had the winde chopt vp at Southewest, with much difficulty would shee haue beene able in short time to haue made returne. These foure Purveyers, whom I counselled to keepe together for their better safety divided themselves, two going one wayes and two another, in fearch as aforefaid. One of these petie companies was assaulted by foure Sauage affault Indians, who with Arrowes did shoot and hurt one of the two in his side, the other a lufty and nimble fellow, leapt in and cut their Bow-strings whereupon they fled. Being late in the euening, they were druten to lie all night in the Woods, not knowing the way home thorow the 50 thicke rubbish, as also the weather somewhat stormie. The want of these forrowed vs much,

as not able to coniecture any thing of them vnlesse very enill.

The twelfth, those two came vnto vs againe, whereat our joy was encreased, yet the want of our Captaine, that promifed to returne, as aforefaid, ftrooke vs in a dumpish terrour, for that hee performed not the same in the space of almost three dayes. In the meane wee sustayned our selues with Alexander and Sorrell pottage, Ground-nuts and Tobacco, which gave nature a reafonable content. Wee heard at last, our Captaine to lewre vnto vs, which made such musike as fweeter neuer came vnto poore men.

The thirteenth, beganne fome of our companie that before vowed to flay, to make renolt: whereupon the planters diminishing, all was given over. The fourteenth, fifteenth, and fix. 63 teenth wee spent in getting Salafrage and fire-wood of Cedar, leaving Houle and little Fort by ten men in nineteene dayes sufficient made to harbour twenty persons at least with their neces-

The feuenteenth, we fet fayle, doubling the Rockes of Elizabethi Iland, and paffing by Douer

CHAP.11. Cranes, Hernsbowes, and Geese. Lakes of fresh water.

Cliffe, came to anchor at Marthaes Vineyard being fine leagues diftant from our Fort, where we went ashoare, and had young Cranes, Herneshowes, and Geete, which now were growne to pretie bigneffe.

The eighteenth, we let layle and bore for England, cutting off our Shalop, that was well able Returned to land fine and twenty men, or more, a Boate very necessary for the like occasions. The winds doe raigne most commonly vpon this coast in the Summer time, Westerly. In our homeward course wee observed the forelaid fleeting weeds to continue till we came within two hundred leagues of Europe.

The three and twentieth of July we came to anchor before Exmouth.

CHAP. XI

Notes of the same Voyage taken out of a Tractate written by I A M E S Ro. SIER to Sir WALTER RALEIGH, and of MACES Vovage to Virginia.

Lizabeth: Ilaud is full of high timbred Oakes, their leanes thrice fo broad at ours; Ce. Oaken Cedatel aurs, firaught and stall; Beech, Elme, Holle, Wal must trees in adundance, the finit as Beech, Elme, bigge as ours, as appeared by those wee found under the trees, which had less all the trees, year our athered; Halfe-must trees, Cherrice trees, the leafe, have and bypaesse our trees. A callerium from ours in E. valout, has the stable heaves has helistimus as a callerium from ours in E. valout, has the stable heaves has helistimus as called. differing from ours in England, but the stalke beareth the blossomes or fruit at the end

thereof, like a cluster of Grapes, fortie or fiftie in a bunch; Saffafras trees great plen. Saffafrastrees, tie all the Ilandouer, a tree of high price and profit; also divers other fruit-trees, some of them with Divers other frange barkes, of an Orange colour, in feeling foft and smooth like Velnet: in the thickest parts of these trees.

Woods, you may fee a furlong or more round about.

On the North-west side of this Iland, neere to the Sea-side, is a standing Lake of fresh water, almost On the North-west fide of this Iland, neere to the Sea-fide, is a francing Lave of frew muer, aimoss three English miles in compasse, in the miast whereof stands a woody ground, an acre in quantitie, or not miles about; 10 aboue: this Lake is full of small Tortoifes, and exceedingly frequented with all sorts of fowles before rebearfed, which breed, some lowe on the bankes, and others on lowe trees about this Lake in great abundence, whose young ones of all forts wee tooke and eate at our pleasure: but all these fowles are much Abundance of dance, whose young ones of an loves were tooke and oute at our presumer; but an toole founds are much bigger than ours in England. Also, in enery lland, and almost enery part of enery lland, are great bigger than hore of Ground-nuts for the together on a string, some of them as bigge as Hennes egges; they growe not ours in Engtwo inches under ground : the which Nuts wee found to bee as good as Potatoes. Alfo, diners forts of land. hell-fifb, as Scalops, Muffels, Cockles, Lobsters, Crabs, Oisters, and Wilkes, exceeding good and very Ground nuts. treat. But not to cloy you with particular rehearfall of fuch things as God and Nature bath bestowed Shell inh. on these places, in comparison whereof, the most fertile part of all England is (of it selfe) but barren; wee went in our Light-borfman from this lland to the Maine, right against this Iland some two miles 40 off, where comming allocare, wee flood a while like men ranished at the beautie and delicaty of this sweet The exceeding inle; for befides diners cleere Lakes of freih mater (whereof wee fam no end) Medowes very large, beauty of the logic; for behave ainers cleere Lager of fich mater (whereof we faw no end) Orecannes very large, maine Land. and full of greene graffe; even the most wooddy places (I fpeake onely of such as I saw) doe growe so Great Lakes. and that of greene grays; exemine most nouncy present of first and apart, one tree from another, upon greene or affect ground, somewhat higher than the Plainet, Large Medows diffinit and apart, one tree from ansieer, upon greene graph greene the standard of the standa and comming up to them, at first they expressed some feare; but being emboldned by our courteous vlage, and some trifles which we gave them, they followed us to a necke of Land, which wee imagined had beene senered from the Marnet but finding it otherwise, wee perceined abroad Harbour or Riners mouth, A broad Riverwhich came on into the Mayne; and because the day was farre spent, we were forced to returne to the Iland from whence we came, leaning the Disconery of this Harbour, for a time of better lessure. Of A good Har-10 the goadnesse of which Harbour, as also of many others thereabouts, there is small doubt, con-bout. sidering that all the Hands, as also the Maine (where wee were) is all Rockie Grounds and broken

Now the next day, wee determined to fortifie our felues in a little plot of ground in the middest of the Lake abone mentioned, where wee built an honfe, and concred it with (edge, which grew about this Lake in great abundance; in building whereof, wee spent three weekes and more: but the second day after our comming from the Maine, wee estied eleven Canoas or Boats, with fifty Indians in them., 11. Canoas comming toward us from this part of the Maine, where wee two dayes before landed: and being louth with so Indiane they should discouer our fortification, wee went out into the Sea side to meets them; and comming some- in them. what neere them, they all fate downe upon the stones, calling aloud to us (as wee rightly ghessed) to doe the like, a little distance from them : having (ate a while in this order, Captaine Goincle willed mee

to goe unto them; to fee what countenance they would make; but as foone as I came up unto them. one of them, to whom I had given a Knife two dayes before in the Maine, knew mee (whom I also very well remembred) and (miling upon me, spake somewhat unto their Lord or Captaine, which sate in the midst Their Captain of them, who presently rose up and tooks a large Bener skinne from one that stood about him, and gane

came towards vs, fo as we thought fit to make a stand at an angle betweene the Sea and a fresh water. I mooued my felfe towards him feuen or eight steps, and clapt my hands first on the fides of mine head, then on my breaft, and after prefented my Musket with a threatning countenance. thereby to fignific vnto them, either a choice of Peace or Warre, whereupon hee vfing mee with mine owne fignes of Peace, I stept forth and imbraced him, his company then all fate downe in manner like Grey-hounds voon their heeles, with whom my company fell a bartering. By this time Captaine Goffoll was come with twelve men more from aboord, and to shew the Sauge Seignior that he was our Captaine, we received him in a guard, which he passing thorow, saluted the Scienier with ceremonies of our falutations, whereat he nothing mooued or altered himfelfe. Our Captaine gaue him a straw Hat and a paire of Kniues, the Hat awhiles hee wore, but the 10 Kniues he beheld with great maruelling, being very bright and sharpe, this our courtesemade them all in love with vs.

The fixt being raine, we fpent idlely aboord. The feuenth, the Seignior came againe with all his troupe as before, and continued with vs the most part of the day, we going to dinner about noone, they fate with vs and did eate of our Bacaleure and Mustard, dranke of our Beere. but the Mustard nipping them in their noses they could not indure : it was a sport to behold their faces made being bitten therewith. In time of Dinner the Sanages had itolnea Target wherewith acquainting the Seignier, with feare and great trembling they restored it againe, thinking perhaps we would haue beene reuenged for it, but feeing our familiaritie to continue, they fell a tresh to roalting of Crabs, Red Herrings, which were exceeding great, ground Nuts, &c. as be- 20 fore. Our Dinner ended, the Seignier hift tooke leave and departed, next all the reft fauing foure that stayed and went into the Wood to helpe vs digge Sasiafrage, whom we defired to goe abourd

vs, which they refused and so departed.

The eighth wee divided the victuals, viz. the thips fore for England, and that of the Planters, which by Captaine Gilberts allowance could be but fixe weekes for fixe moneths, whereby there fell out a controuer sie, the rather, for that some seemed secretly to vinderstand of a purpose Capa taine Gilbert had not to returne with supplie of the iffue, those goods should make by him to be carried home. Besides, there wanted not ambitious conceits in the mindes of some wrangling and ill disposed persons that ouerthrew the stay there at that time, which upon consultation thereof had, about five dayes after was fully resolved all for England againe. There came in this 30 interim aboord vnto vs, that flayed all night, an Indian, whom wee vied kindly, and the next day fent afhoare hee fhewed himfelfe the moft fober of all the reft , wee held himfent as a Spie. In the morning he filched away our Pot-hookes, thinking he had not done any ill therein; being ashoare wee bid him strike fire, which with an Emerald stone (such as the Glasiers vie, to cut Glaffe) he did. I take it to be the very fame that in Latine is called Smiris, for firiking therewith vpon Touch-wood that of purpose hee had, by meane of a mynerall stone vsed therein. sparkles proceeded and forthwith kindled with making of flame. The ninth, wee continued working on our Store-house for as yet remayned in vs a delired resolution of making stay. The tenth, Captaine Gosnos fell downe with the ship to the little llet of Cedars, called Hill happe, to take in Cedar wood, leaving mee and nine more in the Fort, onely with three meales meate, 40 wpon promife to returne the next day. The eleuenth, he came not, neither sent, whereupon I commanded source of my companie to

feeke out for Crabbes, Lobsters, Turtles, &c., for fustayning vs till the ships returne, which was gone cleane out of fight, and had the winde chopt up at Southwest, with much difficulty would shee haue beene able in short time to haue made returne. These foure Purveyers, whom I counselled to keepe together for their better safety divided themselves, two going one wayes and two another, in fearch as aforesaid. One of these petie companies was assaulted by foure Sauage affault Indians, who with Arrowes did shoot and hurt one of the two in his side, the other a lusty and nimble fellow, leapt in and cut their Bow-strings whereupon they fled. Being late in the euening, they were driven to lie all night in the Woods, not knowing the way home thorow the 30 thicke rubbish, as also the weather somewhat stormie. The want of these forrowed vs much,

as not able to coniecture any thing of them valefie very enill.

The twelfth, those two came vnto vs againe, whereat our joy was encreased, yet the want of our Captaine, that promised to returne, as aforesaid, strooke vs in a dumpish terrour, for that hee performed not the same in the space of almost three dayes. In the meane wee sustayned our felues with Alexander and Sorrell pottage, Ground-nuts and Tobacco, which gave nature a reafonable content. Wee heard at last, our Captaine to lewre vnto vs, which made fuch musike as sweeter neuer came vnto poore men.

The thirteenth, beganne fome of our companie that before vowed to flay, to make revolt: whereupon the planters diminishing, all was given over. The fourteenth, fifteenth, and fix. 63 teenth wee spent in getting Sasafrage and fire-wood of Cedar, leaving House and little Fort by ten men in nineteene dayes sufficient made to harbour twenty persons at least with their necesfary prouifion.

The feuenteenth, we fet fayle, doubling the Rockes of Elizabeth Iland, and paffing by Douer

CHAP.11. Cranes, Hernsbowes, and Geese. Lakes of fresh water.

Cliffe, came to anchor at Marthaes Vineyard being fine leagues diftant from our Fort , where we went ashoare, and had young Cranes, Herneshowes, and Geete, which now were growne to pretie bigneffe.

retie Dignetie.

The eighteenth, we let layle and bore for *England*, cutting off our Shalop, that was well able Returned to land fine and twenty men, or more, a Boate very necessary for the like occasions. The winds doe raigne most commonly upon this coast in the Summer time, Westerly. In our homeward course wee observed the forelaid fleeting weeds to continue till we came within two hundred leagues of Europe.

The three and twentieth of July we came to anchor before Exmonth.

CHAP. XI.

Notes of the same Voyage taken out of a Tractate written by I A M E S Ro-SIER to Sir WALTER RALEIGH, and of MACES Voyage to Virginia.

Lizabeths lland is full of high timbred Oakes, their leaves thrice fo broad as ours : Ce_ Oakes.Cedatil Leaenthis ilana is jud op toght immored Autes, their leaunes torrice fo broad as own; Ce. Diskenk-dirich dars, firaght and tail; Beech, Elme, Hollie, Fall mit treis in abundance, the first as Beech, Elme, the buge as own; as appeared by those wee found under the trees, which bud lien all the trees, which bud lien all the trees. On the same of the period of the same trees, the leafe, barbe and byought not trees. Cherric trees, the leafe, barbe and byought not trees. Cherric trees, the leafe, barbe and byought not trees, differing from our in E. Ighand, but the fluid beauth to be followed or faith at the end thereof, they a cluster of graper, further on fifthe in a bunch; Sallifans tree; great plan. Salfiras trees, other than the salf and the trees of the bunch was and motion. All human the first trees, the trees of the first trees, the first trees of the first trees, the first t

tie all the Handouer, a tree of high price and profit; also diners other fruit-trees, some of them with Diners other frange barkes, of an Orange colour, in feeling foft and smooth like Veluet: in the thickest parts of these

Woods, you may fee a furloug or more round about.

Weeds, you may see a privage we were voin account.

Outshe Noth welf she of this Island, were so the Sea-side, is a standing Lake of fresh water, almost three lines English miles a compass, on the miss shours of many accounts, we ware in quantitie, or not miles about the standing of th bearfed, which breed, some lowe on the bankes, and others on lowe trees about this Lake in great abundance, whose young ones of all forts wee tooke and eate at our pleasure: but all these fowles are much Abundance of dance, whose young ones of all sorts wee tooke and sale at our pleasure; but an toole justes are much fowles, much bigger than ours in England. Also, in enery iland, and almost enery part of enery iland, are great bigger than fore of Ground-nuts fortie together on a string, some of them as bigge as Hennes egges; they growe not ours in Engtwo inches under ground: the which Nuts wee found to bee as good as Potatoes. Alfo, diners forts of land. Bell-filb, as Scalops, Muffels, Cockles, Lobsters, Crabs, Oisters, and Wilkes, exceeding good and very Ground nuts. meat. But not to cloy you with particular rehear fall of fuch things as God and Nature bath bestowed Shellfish, on these places, in comparison whereof, the most fertile part of all England is (of it selfe) but barren; wee went in our Light-borfman from this lland to the Maine, right against this Iland fome two miles off, where comming alhoure, wee flood a while like men ranifoed at the beautie and delicary of this sweet The exceeding Inle; for besides diners cleere Lakes of fresh water (whereof wee Saw no end) Medowes very large, beauty of the logic; for beinder diners cleere Lakes of freid mater (moereof me fam no end) Cricamus very large, maine Land, and full of greene graffe; enen the most wooddy places (I speake onely of such as I saw) doe growe so Great Lakes. indful of greene graffe; eurs the mail woods places (I speake ours) of you as a sure you we know the continues of the state of the state. I sage Medows as f Nature would form ber faife about her power, artificial. Hard by we eithird fewn Indians. Secuen Indians. and comming up to them, at first they expressed some feare; but being emboldned by our courteous vsage, and some trifles which we game them, they followed us to a necke of Land, which wee imagined had beene fewered from the Mayne; but finding it otherwise, wee perceined abroad Harbour or Rivers mouth, A broad River which came up into the Mayne : and becanse the day was farre spent, we were forced to returne to the I. land from whence we came, leaving the Discouery of this Harbour, for a time of better lessure. Of A good Har-10 the goadnesse of which Harbour, as also of many others thereabouts, there is small doubt, con-bout. sidering that all the Hands, as also the Maine (where wee were) is all Rockie Grounds and broken

Now the next day, wee determined to fortifie our felues in a little plot of ground in the middest of the Lake abone mentioned, where wee built an honfe, and conered it with sedge, which grew about this The English Lake in great abundance; in building whereof, wee spent three weekes and more: but the second day after our comming from the Maine, wee espied eleven Canoas or Boats, with fifty Indians in them, 11, Canoas comming toward us from this part of the Maine, where wee two dayes before landed: and being loath with so. Indiane they should discouer our fortification, wee went out into the Sea side to meete them; and comming some in them. what neere them, they all fate downe upon the stones, calling aloud to us (as wee rightly ghe fed) to doe the like, a little distance from them : baning fate a while in this order, Captaine Golinoli willed mee to goe unto them; to fee what countenance they would make; but as foone as I came up unto them one of them, to whom I had given a Knife two dayes before in the Maine, knew mee (whom I also very well remembred) and smiling upon me, spake somewhat unto their Lord or Captaine, which sate in the midst Their Captain

of them, who prefently rose up and tooks a large Beuer skinne from one that stood about him, and gaue

o flav bruken off.

CHAP.II.

it unto me, which I requited for that time the best I could: but I, pointing towards captaine Gosnold made fignes unto him, that hee was our Captaine, and defirous to bee his friend, and enter league with bim, which (as I perceived) be understood, and made signes of iny: whereupon Captaine Gosnold, with the rest of his companie, being twenty in all, came up unto them; and after many signes of gratulations (Captaine Goinold presenting their Lord with certaine trifles which they wondred at, and highly skee. med) wee became very great friends, and sent for meat abourd our Shalop, and game them such meater as wee bad then ready dreffed, whereof they misliked nothing but our Mustard, whereat they made many a Cours face. While wee were thus merrie, one of them had conneighed a Target of ours into one of their Canous, which wee suffered, onely to true whether they were in subjection to this Lord, to whom we made lienes (by bewing him another of the same likenesse, and pointing to the Canoa) what one of his com- to name had done: who suddenly expressed some feare, and speaking angerly to one about him (as wee perceined by his countenance) cansed it presently to be brought backe againe. So the rest of the day wee thent in trading with them for Furres, which are Beaners, Luzernes, Marterns, Otters, Wilde-cat skinnes, very large and deepe Furre, blacke Foxes, Conie skinnes, of the colour of our Hares, but somewhat leste. Deere skinnes very large, Seale skinnes, and other beafts skinnes to us unknowne.

They have also great store of Copper, some very red, and some of a paler colour; none of them but

have Chaines, Eare-rings, or Collars of this metall: they head some of their Arrowes berewith much

like our broad Arrow heads, very workmanly made. Their Chaines are many hollow pieces semented

together, each piece of the bigneffe of one of our reeds, a finger in length, ten or twelve of them toos.

Bandelieres a bandfull broad, all bollow pieces, like the other, but somewhat shorter, foure hundred vieces

Sculls, and other thinne plates of Copper, made much like our Boare-speare blades, all which they so little

elterme, as they offered their fairest Collars and Chaines for a Knife, or fuch like trifte, but wee seemed

little tores and it; net I was desirous to understand where they had such store of this mettall, and made

lianes to one of them (with whom I was very familiar) who taking a piece of copper in his hand, made a hole

with bis finger in the ground, and withall pointed to the Maine from whence they came. They fire fire

in this manner; enery one carrieth about him in a Purse of tend Leather, a Minerall stone (which I take

to be their Copper) and with a flat Emerie stone (wherewith Glasiers cut glasse, and Cutlers glass blades)

two, a parke fallet b upon a piece of Touch-wood (much like our Spunge in England) and with the least

parke he maketh a fire presently. Wee had also of their Flaxe, wherewith they make many strings and

cords, but it is not fo bright of colour as ours in England : I amperfraded they base store growing op-

on the Maine, at also Mines, and many other rich commodities, which we, wanting both time and meanes

our llund two or three miles from our Fort : but the fourth day they returned to the Maine, pointing

they would come from the Maine to us againe: but being in their Canoas a little from the shoare, they made buge cries and shouts of soy unto us, and wee with our Trumpet and Cornet, and casting up our 40

caps into the aire, made them the best farewell wee could: yet fixe or fenen of them remayned with us

behinde, bearing us companie enery day in the Woods, and belped us to cut and carrie our Sassafras, and

These people as they are exceeding curteous, gentle of disposition, and well conditioned, excelling all

others that we have seene; so for shape of body and louely famour, I thinke they excell all the people of

America; of flature much higher than wee; of complexion or colour, much like a darke Oline; their

eye-browes and baire blacke, which they weare long, tyed up behinde in knots, whereon they pricke feathers of fowles, in faltion of a Crownet: Some of them are blacke thinne bearded; they make beards of

the haire of beafts: and one of them offered a beard of their making to one of our Saylers, for his that

and close about their neckes. They pronounce our Language with great facilitie; for one of them one

Thus they continued with vs three dayes, enery night retiring themselves to the furthermost part of

tied fait to the end of alittle flicke, gently bee friketh upon the Minerall flone, and within a froke or 30

ther on a String, which they weare about their neckes; their Collars they weare about their bodies like 20

Red Copper in abundance. Chaines.

Scuerall fores

Furres.

Collars. Drinking cups in a Collar, very fine and enenly set together. Besides these, they have large drinking Cups made like of Copper.

Mines of

Flaxe.

could not possibly disconer.

Come of them lay abourd our (hip.

fine or fixe times to the Sunne, and once to she Maine, which we under flood, that within fine or fixe dayes

Indians apt for fervice. Saffafras. A goodly people, and of good condi-

> grew on bis face, which because it was of a red colour, they indged to be none of his owne. They are quicke 50 eyed, and stedfast in their lookes, fearelesse of others barmes, as intending none themselves; some of the Their apparell. meaner fort given to filching, which the very name of Sauages (not weighing their ignorance in good or enill) may easily excuse: their garments are of Deere skinnes, and some of them we are Furres round

day jitting by mee, upon occasion I fake smiling to him these words: How now, firrha, are you so fawcy with my Tobacco : which words (without any further resettion) be suddenly pake fo plame and distinctly, as if hee had beene a long Scholer in the Language. Many other such trials wee had, Their women. which are here needlesse to repeat. Their women (such as wee sam) which were but three in all, were but lowe of stature, their eye-browes, haire, apparell, and manner of wearing, like to the men, fat, and very well-fanoured, and much delighted in our companie; the men are very dutifull to-60 wards them. And truly, the wholfemnesse and temperature of this Climate, doth not onely argue this people to be answerable to this description, but also of a perfect constitution of body, active strong, health-The goodnesse full, and very wisty, as the fundry toyes of theirs cunningly wrought, may easily witnesse.

of the Climate For the agreeing of thu Climate with vs (I freake of my selfe, and fo I may infly doe for the rest of

our companie) that we found our health and strength all the while we remayned there, so to renew and encrease, as notwethstanding our diet and lodging was mone of the best, yet not one of our companie (Ged be thanked) felt the least grudging or inclination to any disease or sicknesse, but were much fatter, and in better bealth than when we went out of England : but after dur Barke had taken in fo much Saffafras, Cedar, Furres, Skinnes, and other commodities, at were thought connenient; some of our companie that had promifed Captaine Gosnold to stay , having nothing but a saving voyage in their mindes. made our companie of Inhabitants (which was small enough before) much smaller ; so as Captaine Golnolu feeing his whole strength to confist but of twelve men, and they but meanly provided , determined to returne for England, leaving this Iland (which be called Elizabeths Iland) with Their returne,

to as many true for rowfull eyes, as were before defirous to fee it. So the eighteenth of lune, being Fridar, we weighed, and with indifferent faire winde and weather came to anchor the three and twentieth of luly, being alfo Friday (in all, bare fine weekes) before Exmouth.

Your Lordships to command. IOHN BRERETON.

A briefe Note of fuch commodities as we faw in the Countrie, notwithstanding our small time of stay.

Rees. Saffafras trees, the roots whereof at three shillings the pound are three hundred thirty 10 I fixe pound the tunne. Cedars tall and ftraight, in great abundance : Cypres trees, Oakes, Wal-nut trees great ftore, Elmes, Beech, Hollie, Halle-nut trees, Cherrie trees, Cotton trees, and other fruit-trees to vs vnknowne. The finder of our Sassafras in these parts, was one Master Robert Meriton.

Fonles, Eagles, Hernshawes, Cranes, Bitters, Mallards, Teales, Geese, Pengwins, Ospreis and Hawkes, Crowes, Rauens, Mewes, Doues, Sea-pies, Black-birds with carnation wings. Beefts. Deere in great flore, very great and large; Beares, Luzernes, blacke Foxes, Beauers, Otters, Wilde-cats very large and great, Dogs like Foxes, blacke and sharpe noted; Conies.

Fruits, Plants, and Herbes. Tabacco, excellent tweet and ftrong; Vines more plenty than in France, Ground-nuts, good meate and also medicinable; Strawberries, Ralp-berries, Goofeberries, Hurtleberries, Peafe growing naturally, Flaxe, Iris Florentina, whereof Apothecaries make (weet balls : Sorrell, and many other herbes wherewith they made Sallets.

Fibes. Whales, Tortoiles, both on Land and Sea; Seales Cods, Macketell, Breames, Herrings, Thornbacke, Hakes, Rock-fish, Dog-fish, Lobsters, Crabbes, Mussels, Wilkes, Cockles, Scallons, Oviters.

Snakes foure foot in length, and fixe Inches about, which the Indians cate for dainty meate, the skinnes whereof they vie for girdles.

Colours to die with, red, white, and blacke.

courfe may come to light.

Messals, and Stones. Copper in great abundance, Emerie stones, for Glasiers and Cutlers, Alabafter very white, Stones elittering and thining like Minerall itones; Stones of a blue met-40 talline colour, which we take to bee Steele oare; Stones of all forts for buildings; Clay, red and white, which may proue good Terra Sigillata.

A briefe Note of the fending another Barque this present weere 1602. by Sir WALTER RALEIGH, for the fearching out of his Colonie in Virginia.

C Annuel Mace of Weimouth, a very fufficient Mariner, an honest sober man, who had beene at Ourginia twice before, was employed thither by Sir Walter Raleigh, to finde those people which were left there in the yeere 1587. To whole fuccour he hath fent fine fenerall times at his owne charges. The parties by him let forth, performed nothing; some of them following their owne profit elsewhere; others returning with friuolous allegations. At this last time, to anoide all excuse, hee bought a Barke, and bired all the companie for wages by the moneth : who departing from Weimouth in March last, 1602. fell fortie leagues to the South-westward of Hataraske, in 34. degrees or thereabout; and having there spent a moneth; when they came song the coast to lecke the people, they did it not, pretending that the extremitie of weather, and losse of some principall ground-tackle, forced and seared them from searching the Port of Hataraske, to which they were fent. From that place where they abode, they brought Saffa-60 fras, Radix Chine, or the China Root, Beniamin, Caffia lignes and a rind of a tree more itrong

than any Spice as yet vnknowne, with divers other commodities, which hereafter in a larger dif-

CHAF.

CHAP. XII.

A Voyage fet out from the Citie of Bristoll at the charge of the chiefest Merchants and inhabitants of the faid Citie with a small Ship and a Barke for the discourie of the North part of Virginia, in the yeere 1603. under the command of me MARTIN PRINGE.

Pon many probable and reasonable inducements, vsed vnto sundry of the chiefest 1a Merchants of Briftoll, by Malter Richard Habluyt Prebendary of Saine Anonfines the Cathedrall Church of the faid Citie, after divers meetings and due confultation they resolved to set forth a Voyage for the farther Discouerie of the North part of Onguina. And first they fent the said Master Haklust accompanied with one Matter John Angell, and Matter Robert Salters (which had beene

in the faid Discouerie the yeere before with Captaine Bartholomew Gosnold) to obtaine permission on of Six Walter Raleigh (which had a most ample Patent of all those parts from Queene Elizabeth) to entermeddle and deale in that action. Leave being obtained of him vnder his hand and now a Mieffer Seale, they speedily prepared a small ship called the Speed-well in burthen about fiftie tunnes, and bath both manning the same with some thirtie men and Boyes, wherein went for Master and chiefe Com- 26 mander in the Voyage one Martin Pring, a man very sufficient for his place, and Famund longs his writing to mee teffified his af- Mate, and Robert Salterne about mentioned, as their chiefe Agent, with a Barke called the Diffedion to Vir. couerer, of fix and twentie tunnes or thereabout, wherein went for Mafter William Browne, and Samuel Kirkland his Mate, both good and skilfull Mariners, being thirteene men anda Boy in ginia. M.Priag whole all in that Barke. The aforelaid ship and Barke were plentifully victualled for eight monethes, Voyage to the East Indies are and turnished with slight Merchandizes thought fit to trade with the people of the Country, as Hars of divers colours, greene, blue and yellow, apparell of coarie Kersie and Canualle readie made, Stockings and Shooes, Sawes, Pick-axes, Spades and Shouels, Axes, Hatchets, Hookes, Kniues, Sizzers, Hammers, Nailes, Chiffels, Fish-hookes, Bels, Beades, Bugles, Looking-glasses, Thimbles, Pinnes, Needles, Threed, and such like. They set faile from Kingrode the twentieth 30

day of March. April 10, 1603.

M. Salterne vet

liueth neither

ie hiezeale

dead to this

Tome.

We set faile from Milford Hauen (where the winds had flayed vs a fortnight, in which space we heard of Queene Elizabeths death) the tenth of Aprill 1603. In our course we passed by the Iles of the Agores, had first fight of the Pike, and afterward of the Hand of Cherno and Flores, and after we had runne some fine hundred leagues, we fell with a multitude of small slands on the of lune, which Ilands wee North Coait of Virginia, in the latitude of 43 . degrees, the They discouer found very pleasant to behold, adorned with goodly graffe and fundry forts of Trees, as Cedars, Spruce, Pines, and Firre-trees. Heere wee found an excellent fishing for Cods, which are better many linds. then thole of New-fsund-land, and withall we faw good and Rockie ground fit to drie them vp-Good fifting on : also we fee no reason to the contrary, but that Salt may bee made in these parts, a matter of 40 no small importance. We sayled to the South-west end of these Ilands, and there rode with our ships under one of the greatest. One of them we named Foxe Iland, because we found those kind of beafts thereon. So palling through the rest with our Boates to the mayne Land, which lieth for a good space North-east and South-west, we found very tafe riding among them, in fixe, seuen, eight , ten and twelue fathomes. At length comming to the Mayne in the latitule of 43. degrees and an halfe, we ranged the same to the South-west. In which course we found foure Inlets, the most Easterly whereof was barred at the mouth , but having passed over the barre, wee ranne vp into it fine miles, and for a certaine space found very good depth, and comming out againe, as we failed South-westward, wee lighted vpon two other Inlets, which vpon our search we found to pierce no: farre into the Land, the fourth and most Westerly was the best, which 50 we rowed up ten or twelue miles.

place.

In all their places we found no people, but fignes of fires where they had beene. Howbeit we beheld very goodly Groues and Woods replenished with tall Okes, Beeches, Pine-trees, Firre-trees, Haiels, Wich-haiels and Maples. We faw here also fundry forts of Beafts, as Stags, Deere, Beares, Wolues, Foxes, Lusernes, and Dogges with sharpe noses. But meeting with no Saliairas, we left these places with all the foresaid Hands, shaping our course for Sanage Rocke, discouered the yeere before by Captaine Gofnold, where going vpon the Mayne we found people, with whom we had no long convertation, because here also we could find no Sallafras. Departing hence we hare into that great Gulfe which Captaine Gofnold ouer-flot the yeere before coasting and finding people on the North fide thereof. Not yet fatisfied in our expectation, we left them 60 and failed ouer, and came to an Anchor on the South fide in the latitude of 41. degrees and odde minutes: where we went on Land in a certaine Bay, which we called Whisfon Bay, by the name of the Worshipfull Master lobn Whitfon then Maior of the Citie of Briffoll, and one of the chiefe

Aduenturers, and finding a pleasant Hill thereunto adiovning, wee called it Mount Alaworth,

Sautge Rocke.

for Master Robert Aldworths sake a chiefe furtherer of the Voyage, aswell with his Purie as with his trauell. Here we had sufficient quantitie of Sassafras.

At our going on shore, vpon view of the people and fight of the place, wee thought it conuenient to make a small baricado to keepe diligent watch and ward in, for the adurrizement and fiscour of our men, while they should worke in the Woods. During our abode on shore, the The people people of the Countrey came to our men sometimes ten, twentie, fortie or threescore, and at one vifit them, rime one hundred and twentie at once. We vied them kindly, and gaue them divers forts of our meanest Merchandize. They did eat Pease and Beanes with our men. Their owne victuals were

most of fish.

mout of amile to We had a youth in our company that could play vpon a Gitterne, in whose homely Musicke The Samees they tooke great delight, and would give him many things, as Tobacco, Tobacco-pipes, Snakes take great deskinnes of fixe foot long, which they vie for Girdles, Fawnes skinnes, and fuch like, and dan- light in muf ke ced twentie in a Ring, and the Gitterne in the middest of them, ving many Sauge gestures, finging Io, Ia, Ia, Ia, Ia; him that first brake the ring, the rest would knocke and cry out vpon. Dances. Some few of them had plates of Braffe a foot long, and halfe a foote broad before their breafts. Their weapons are Bowes of fine or fixe foot long of Wich-hafell, painted blacke and yellow, Weapons the ftrings of three twifts of finewes, bigger then our Bow-ftrings. Their Arrowes are of a yard and an handfull long not made of Reeds, but of a fine light wood very fmooth and round with three long and deepe blacke feathers of some Eagle, Vulture, or Kite, as closely fastened with 20 some binding matter, as any Fletcher of ours can glue them on. Their Quiuers are full a vard long, made of long dried Rushes wrought about two handfuls broad aboue, and one handfull beneath with prettie workes and compartiments, Diamant wife of red and other colours.

We carried with vs from Brissoll two excellent Mastines, of whom the Indians were more a. The great rie fraid, then of twentie of our men. One of these Mastines would carrie a halfe Pike in his mouth. And one Master Thomas Bridges a Gentleman of our company accompanied only with one of these Dogs, and passed fixe miles alone in the Countrey having lost his fellowes, and returned fafely. And when we would be rid of the Sauages company wee would let loose the Mastines, and faddenly with out-cryes they would flee away. These people in colour are inclined to a fwart, tawnie, or Chestnut colour, not by nature but accidentally, and doe weare their haire brayded in foure parts, and truffed vp about their heads with a small knot behind : in which haire of theirs they flicke many feathers and toyes for brauerie and pleasure. They couer their Ornaments,

prinities only with a piece of leather drawne betwixt their twifts and fastened to their Girdles behind and before : whereunto they hang their bags of Tobacco. They feeme to bee somewhat italous of their women, for we faw not past two of them, who weare Aprons of Leather skins before them downe to the knees, and a Beares skinne like an Irih Mantle ouer one shoulder. The men are of stature somewhat taller then our ordinary people, strong, swift, well proportioned, and given to treacherie, as in the end we perceived.

Their Boats, whereof we brought one to Bristoll, were in proportion like a Wherrie of the River Thefathion of of Thames, seuenteene footlong and soure foot broad, made of the Barke of a Birch-tree, farre their Boats, 40 exceeding in bigneffe those of England: it was sowed together with strong and tough Oziers or twigs, and the fearnes couered ouer with Rozen or Turpentine little inferiour in fweetneffe to Excellentfweet

Frankincense, as we made triall by burning a little thereof on the coales at fundry times after Rozen and our comming home: it was also open like a Wherne, and sharpe at both ends, saving that the beake was a lirtle bending roundly vpward. And though it carried nine men standing vpright, yet it weighed not at the most aboue fixtie pounds in weight, a thing almost incredible in regard of the largenesse and capacitie thereof. Their Oares were flat at the end like an Ouen peele, made of Ash or Maple very light and strong, about two yards long, wherewith they row very swiftly : Passing vp a River we law certaine Cottages together, abandoned by the Sauages,

and not farre off we beheld their Gardens and one among the rest of an Acre of ground , and in Their Gardens the same was sowne Tobacco, Pompions, Cowcumbers and such like; and some of the people Corne and had Maiz or Indian Wheate among them. In the fields we found wild Peafe, Strawberries very plants. faire and bigge, Goole-berries, Raipices, Hurts, and other wild fruits.

Hauing spent three Weekes upon the Coast before we came to this place where we meant to flay & take in our lading, according to our instructions given vs in charge before our setting forth, we pared and digged up the Earth with shouels, and sowed Wheate, Barley, Oates, Pease, and fundry forts of Garden Seeds, which for the time of our abode there, being about feuen Weeks, although they were late fowne, came vp very well, giving certaine testimonie of the goodnesse of the Climate and of the Soyle. And it feemeth that Oade, Hempe, Flaxe, Rape-feed and fuch like which require a rich and fat ground, would prosper excellently in these parts. For in divers

places here we found graffe about knee deepe. As for Trees the Country yeeldeth Saffafras a plant of fourreigne vertue for the French Poxe, and as some of late have learnedly written good against the Plague and many other Maladies; Vines, Cedars, Okes, Ashes, Beeches, Birch trees, Cherie trees bearing fruit whereof wee did eate, Hafels, Wich-hafels, the best wood of all other to make Sope-ashes withall, Walnut-trees,

Maples,

Maples, holy to make Bird-lime with, and a kinde of tree bearing a fruit like a small red Peareplum with a crowne or knop on the top (a plant whereof carefully wrapped vp in earth, Mailer Robert Salterne brought to Briftoll.) We found also low trees bearing faire Cheries. There were likewise a white kind of Plums which were not growne to their perfect ripenesse. With diuers other forts of trees to vs vnknowne.

The Beafts bereare Stags, fallow Deere in abundance, Beares, Wolues, Foxes, Lufernes, and (iome fay) Tygres, Porcupines, and Dogges with sharpe and long nofes, with many other forts of wild beafts, whole Cales and Furres being hereafter purchased by exchange may yeeld no smal gaine to vs. Since as we are certainly informed, the Frenchmen brought from Canada the value of thirtie thouland Crownes in the yeere 1 604. almost in Beuers and Otters skinnes only. The 12 most vivall Fowles are Eagles, Vultures, Hawkes, Cranes, Herons, Crowes, Gulls, and great store of other River and Sea-fowles. And as the Land is full of Gods good bleffings, fo is the Seareplenified with great abundance of excellent fifh, as Cods sufficient to lade many ships, which we found vpon the Coast in the moneth of Iune, Seales to make Oile withall, Mullets, Turbuts, Mackerels, Herrings, Crabs, Lobsters, Creuises, and Muscles with ragged Pearles in them. By the end of July we had laded our small Barke called the Discouerer, with as much Sasta-

Barke fent

fras as we thought sufficient, and sent her home into England before, to give some speedie conten; ment to the Aduenturers : who arrived lafely in Kingrode aboue a fortnight before vs. After their departure we fo bestirred our selues, that our shope also had gotten in her lading, during which time there fell out this accident. On a day about noone tide while our men which vied 20 to cut downe Sallafras in the Woods were alleepe, as they vied to doe for two houres in the heat Danger of the of the day, there came downe about feuentcore Sauages armed with their Bowes and Arrowes, and enuironed our House or Barricado, wherein were toure of our men alone with their Muskets to keepe Centinell, whom they fought to have come downe vnto them, which they vtterly refuied, and stood voon their guard. Our Master likewise being very carefull and circumspect having not past two with him in the shippe put the same in the best defence he could , left they should have invaded the same, and caused a piece of great Ordnance to bee shot off, to give terrour to the Indians, and warning to our men which were fast asleepe in the Woods: at the noyfe of which Peece they were a little awaked, and beganne a little to call for Foole and Gallent, their great and fearefull Mastines, and full quietly laid themselues downe againe, but beeing 30 quickned vp eftsoones againe with a second shot they rowsed vp themselues, betooke them to their weapons and with their Mastines, great Foole with an halfe Pike in his mouth drew downe to their ship : whom when the Indians beheld afarre off, with the Mastine which they most feared, in diffembling manner they turned all to a ieft and sport, and departed away in friendly manner : yet not long after, euen the day before our departure, they fet fire on the Woods where wee wrought, which wee did behold to burne for a mile space, and the very same day that wee weighed Anchor, they came downe to the shoare in greater number, to wit, very neere two hundred by our estimation, and some of them came in their Boates to our ship, and would have had vs come in againe : but we fent them backe, and would none of their entertainment.

About the eighth or minth of August, wee left this excellent Hauen at the entrance whereof 40 we found twentie fatkomes water, and rode at our ease in seuen fathomes being Land-locked, the Hauen winding in compasse like the shell of a Snaile, and it is in latitude of one and forty de-

grees and five and twentie minutes. This by the way is not to be forgotten, that our Captaine fell fo much to the Northward because he would find high grounds, where commonly the best Hauens are: which also fell out to his expectation. We also observed that we could find no Sassatias but in landie ground, In our returne we brought our selves into the latitude of eight and thirtie degrees about the Acres for certaine causes, and within five weekes space came from our Port of Virginia, into the Soundings of England, but there being long encountred with Easterly winds, we came at length into Kongrade, the fecond of October 1603. The Difcouerer was out fine moneths and an halfe. The 30 Speedwell was out fixe moneths upon the Voyage.

A Relation of the Voyage made to Virginia, in the Elizabeth of London, a Barke of fiftie tunnes by Captaine BARTHOLOMEW GILBERT, in the yeere 1603. Written by Master THOMAG CANNER a Gentleman of Bernards Inne his companion in the same Voyage.

VPon Wednelday in Easter weeke, the seuenteenth of Aprill after, I had taken my leave of fome few of my louing and deere friends in Bernards Inne, I rode toward Southampton, there to bespeake Bisket and some ocher promition for our Barke, wherein Master Bartholomes Gilbert went as Captaine, which had beene in Virginia the yeere before with Captaine Baribalomen Gofnold. After our bufineffe was dispatched here, wee carae into Plimmonth, from whence wee out forth the tenth of May. And the fix and twentieth of the same, we were in the latitude of 22. degrees, hoping to haue had fight of the Ile of Madera, whereof we miffed, in which course we met with two or three English men of watre.

The first of Iune, we were in the latitude of 27. degrees, and haled ouer toward the llands. of the Welt Indies, and the fifteenth of this moneth toward night wee faw Land. Mafter Gilbert and the Master Henrie Suite dwelling within the Iron Gate of the Towre of London, tooke it to be the Bermudas: being very neere the shore they founded many times and had no ground, at the last they found good ground in fourteene or fifteene fathomes. There weecast Anchor. In to the morning we weighed, and founded still as we trended by the shoare : but after wee were past a Cables length from our Road, we had no Land againe in forty or fifty fathomes : we kept full by the shore not yet being certaine what Iland it was. The sixteenth in the morning, wee spied the people comming from the shore, who when they came neere, cried out for barter or trade: when they came close aboord, they made fignes and cried out to fee our colours, which we prefantly put forth in the maine top, and told them we were Ingleses, Amigos, and Hermanos, that is, Englishmen, their friends and brothers. Afloone as they understood we were Englishmen, they were bolder to come neere: we threw them a Rope, and one came aboord vs: wee traded with them for some Tobacco, Pine-apples, Piantanes, Pompions and such things as they had : wee gave them Bugles, Kniues, Whittles, and fuch toyes. Here we kept close by the shore. When this 30 Canoa had traded with vs, and vttered all they had and drunke of our Beere, beeing kindly vied they departed: and then prefently after divers Canoas came, we traded and vied them as the first. They trade as One of them told vs that Iland was Santa Lucia, We bestowed all that forenoone shaking in the Santa Lucia. wind (for we had no ground to Anchor) neere the shore to trade with them. Then wee set our course for Saint Vincent, but finding a current against vs and the wind very scant, we doubted we should not fetch it, and that if we did, peraduenture we might bee put to the leeward of Dominica, and to consequently of Menis or Nienes; for which Iland we were specially bound for to cut Lienum vita, in the fame. Therefore Mafter Gilbert thought good to let Saint Vincent alone, although in it is the best Tobacco of all the llands, yet in the end hee put roomer for Dominica. whereof we had fight the fenenteenth of June, and came close to the shore; and presently one

30 Canoa came aboord, as at Santa Lucia, being fent with two men belike to discouer vs, and to see what entertainment they should have, we vied them kingly and so dismissed them. There came

more full of men, with divers of their commodities. The nineteenth in the morning being Sunday, we anchored in a good Road at Menis, and af Menis. ter went on shore to feeke Lignum vitz, Master Gibert, with the Master and divers of the company fought farre into the Woods, but found none but one little Tree, and here and there where one had bin cut : fo we were in doubt to find enough heere to load our ship, a just plague vnto vs for prophaning the Sabbath in trauelling about our worldly bufineffe, when there was no neceffitie. This day in the Euening some went out with the Boate vnto the shore, and brought on boord a Tortoyle fo big that foure men could not get her into the Boate but tied her fast by one Great Tor-Dege water the Boat, and fo towed her to the ship, when they had her by the ship, it was no easie toyle.

matter to get her on boord.

young one.

The next day we went on shore agains to fearch another part of the wood for Lignum vita: Lignum vita. and then God be thanked we found enough. This day at night we opened our Tortoyle, which had in her about 500. Egges, excellent (weet meate, and so is all the whole fish. Vpon Tuefday in the morning we went all on thore fauing the Carpenter and Thomas , and Matter Gilberts man to fell wood, and this day we felled good fore. All the reft of this moneth and three dayes more we continued here every day labouring fore, first in fawing downe the great trees, and fawing them againe into logs, portable out of the thicke wood to the Sea-shoare, so in the Boates, and so to the flup : where M. Gilbert his paines profited double as well in example as in worke, for hee 59 was neuer idle, but either fearthing out more trees, or fetching drinke for the Labourers, or doing one thing or other : fo that in this just fortnight that wee stayed here, wee had gotten on boord some twenty tuns. Within a few dayes after the Tortoyle was eaten God fent vs another. One of these fishes were sufficient meat for twentie men for three or foure dayes if it could bee preserued, but in that Climate no falting can preferue it about two dayes, hardly to long. Now the wood growing thinne, and hardly to be found on this Iland, he thought it best to stay no longer here, but to goe for Virginia, to learch for better ftore. And fo voon Sunday the third of July in the afternoone we weighed Anchor, and failed North-west and by North, and that night passed by Saint Christopher, and another little Hand. Manday the fourth in the morning we had light of S. Christopher. the Hand, we went into the Woods to fearch for Lignum vite, but found none but one tree, which he cut and went on boord, we fought also for fresh water, but found none : At Euening went on Abundance of shore into the bottome of the Bay to dray the Net; and there we gat good store of fine iresh fish, Tortoyics. and much more, enough to have laden our Boat we should have gotten, if at every draught we had not had in the Net a Tortoyle, which fill brak through and so carried away the fifth with mem. At one draught among the reft we had two in the Net, a yong one and an old on : the Net held the

CHAP. 12. Store of Munition. Dangerous Rockes, Miraculous deliuerance.

1650

They diffem-

Wee weighed and went through betweene the two Ilands into the mayne Ocean, toward our long deired Countrey Unginia, distant three hundred and fiftie leagues from vs. Wee favled North North-weit.

The feuenth, we ran ftill North-west and North and by West. The eight, weekept the same course. The ninth, we kept flill the same course. The winde beganne to vere some thing to the Southward, which had beene constant still, from the Ilands of the Canaries, vnto the Ilands of The Westerne the West Indies. And now began the winde to draw towards the West, and then is it as conwinds begin. frant there. The reason I deferre to longer consideration. The current setteth out of the Gulfe of

Poore lohn.

Mexico, and from the mayne shore. Sunday the tenth, we kept still the same course, and had now but a small gale almost becalmed. In The eleuenth, we continued the same course with the same small gale we went North. Tuesdaw the twelfth we kept the same course, if any at all, for, for the most part we were becalmed.

Wednesday the thirteenth, the calme continued, the Sunne being extremely hot in the calme. Thursday the fourteenth, the calme continued as hot as before. These dayes we ayred our Newland, fish called Poore lobn. which proued ill done. For after it was ayred, it rotted the sooner being burnt in the fame. On Friday the fifteenth, God fent vs a reasonable gale. The fixteenth and feventeenth, the calme came againe. Munday, we had a good gale, and went North and by West, and North North-west. The nineteenth, twentieth, and one and twentieth, we had an excellent gale, and ranne North North-west. Then we cast out the Lead and looked our for land. but found no ground nor faw no land, and therefore we much doubted that the current had fet vs 20 very farre to the leeward of the place which wee were bound for, being the Chefepian Bav: but Ground in 30. that could not be knowne till it pleated God to bring vs to land. In the afternoone about fixe of the clocke we cast out the Lead againe, and had ground in thirtie fathomes, whereof we were glad and thanked God, knowing we could not be farre from land.

Saturday the three and twentieth in the morning, about eight of the clocke wee law land in the height of 40. degrees and odde minutes, very fine low land, appearing farre off to bee full of tall Trees, and a fine landie shoare, but a great siege : we saw no Harbour, and therefore coasted along to feeke one to the Northward, the wind being at West.

Sunday the foure and twentieth, the wind being about the North-east we beat hard to fetch An Headland, an Head-land, where we thought we faw an Harbour : but when we came up with it, weeper- 10 ceiued it was none, and all our labour loft. And therefore the wind beeing now more full in our teeth at the North-east, wee considered it were better to put roome, so that if the winde should ftand, then we should fetch the Bay of Chefepian, which Master Gibert so much thirsted after, to feeke out the people for Sir Walter Raleigh lett neere those parts in the yeere 1587, if not, perhaps we might find some Road or Harbour in the way to take in some fresh water : for now wee On Munday the fine and twentieth of July at night wee came neere the mouth of the Bay!

the Chefein but the wind blew jo fore, and the Sea was fo high, that the Master durst not put in that night into the Sea : and so continued next day.

On Wednesday the seuen and twentieth, at night the winde came faire againe, and wee bare 40 againe for it all night, and the wind prefently turned againe. Thursday the eight and twentieth, considering our extremitie for water and wood, victuals and beere likewese consuming very fast, They departed we could no longer beate for it, and therefore ran roomer, determining for this time to feeke it

Eagward from the mouth of the Chefepioc grance of a Ri-

Captaine Gil-

the Indiant.

Friday the nine and twentieth, being not farre from the shoare, which appeared vnto vsexceeding pleasant and full of goodly Trees, and with some shew of the entrance of a River, our Captaine Bartholomew Gilbert accompanied with Malter Thomas Canner a Gentleman of Bernards Inne, Richard Hartfon the Mafters Mate, Henry Kenton our Chirurgion , and one Derricke a Dutchman, went on shore in the Boate from the ship which lay aboue a mile from the land, and with their weapons marched up into the Countrey, leaving two youths to keepe the Boate : but 50 shortly after the Indians set wpon them, and one or two of them fell downe wounded in fight of our yong men that kept the Boat, which had much a doe to faue themselves and it. For tome of the Indians roming downe to them, would have haled it on thore, which notwithstanding they faued, and with heavie hearts gat vnto the ship with the losse of their Captain and foure of their principall men. Thus being but eleuen men and Boyes in all in the ship, though our want of water and wood were great, yet wee durst not aduenture the losse of any more of our small company in this place; Therefore our Master Henry Suie tooke his course home for England by the Ies of the Acores, and fell first with the Pike, and afterward entring into our Chanell, had first fight of Portland, and thence came up the River of Thames unto Rateliffe, about the end of September

1603. finding the Citie most grieuously infeded with a terrible plague.

CHAP. XIII.

Extracts of a Virginian Voyage made An. 1605. by Captaine GEORGE WAYMOVTH, in the Arch-angell. Set forth by the Right Honorable HENRY Earle of South-hampton, and the Lord TMOMAS ARVNDEL, written by TAMES ROSIER.

Pon Easter day, the last of March, the winde comming at North North-east: 2- March. bou: fiue of the clocke after noone, we weighed anchor and put to Sea from the Eafter day wee Downes, [in the Name of God] being very well included, and furnished with put o Sea. Munition and all necessaries whole companie being nine and twenty persons, of whom I dare boldly say, few Voyages have beene manned forth with heart Sea. better Sea-men generally, in respect of our small number.

Munday the thirteenth of May, about eleven of the clocke in the fore-noone, our Captaine judging we were not farrefrom Land, founded; and we had loft oze in an hendred and fixty fa- Sounding wee thome: at foure of the clocke after noone wee founded againe, and had the like oze in an hun-found ground, dred fa: home.

From ten a clocke that night till three a clocke in the morning, our Captain tooke in all Sayles 20 and lay at hull, being defirous to fall with the Land in the day time, because it was an voknown Coast, which it pleased God in his mercy to grant vs, otherwise furely we had runne our Shippe vpon the hidden Rockes, and perished all: for when we set sayle, we sounded in an hundred fathom : and by eight a clocke, having not made aboue five or fixe leagues, our Captaine vpon a fulden change of water, supposing verily he saw the said : prefently sounded, and had but fine May 14. Land fathome : much maruelling because we faw no Land, he sent one to the top, who descried a whitilh fandy Cliffe, which bare West North-west about fixe leagues off: but comming neerer within three or foure leagues, we faw many breaches still neerer the Land. At last we espied a great breach ahead vs right along the shoare, into which, before we entred, our Captaine thought best to hoise out his Ship-boat and sound it : which if hee had not done, wee had there ended our 30 Voyage, together with our lives: for he bare vp the Ship as neere as he could after the Boate, vntill Master (am his Mate being in the Boat, weffed and called to him to winde about and

fland off, for in this breach he had very shoald water, two sathome vpon Rockes, and sometime they supposed they saw the Rocke within three or foure foot, whereon the Sea made a very high strong breach, which we might discerne (from the top) to rusine along as wee sayled by it, fixe or feuen leagues to the Southward : and we law no end thereof. Wherefore we were constrained to put backe againe from the Land; and founding (the weather being faire) wee found our felues embayed with continual Shoalds and Rocks, in a most vincertaine ground; as by judge- A dangerous ment of our Captaine and whole companie, they had neuer knowne the like; from fine and fixe place of rocks farhome, at the next cast of the Lead wee should have fifteene and eighteene fathome all hard and shoolds. 4c Rocke ouer many which (by the vnfpeakable goodnesse and mercy of God towards vs) wee pas-

fed. For if we had bare in with it but the day before (which was exceeding tempeftuous) or in the night, we could by no meanes have escaped the danger. But God so blessed vs, that we had weather and winde as faire as poore men could wish, in this diffrese, whereby we both perfectly differned enery breach, and with the winde were able to turne, where wee faw most hope of fatest passage. Thus we parted from the Land, which wee had not so much before defired : and at the first fight rejoyced: as now wee all joyfully praifed God, that it had pleafed fam fo miraculoully to deliver vs from lo imminent danger of death before our eyes. Our Captaine Latitude 41. found himfelfe in the latitude of 41 degrees and an halfe. Here we found great store of filh, and degrees and hw many Whales, as we had done two or three dayes before.

Wee flood off that night and all the next day, being Wedneflay: but the winde fill conti-So ming for many dayes betweene the points of South South-west and West South-west, so as we could not by any possible meanes make any way to the Southward in regard of our great want of water and Wood (which was now Ipent) wee much defired Land, and therefore fought for it, where the winde would bett fuffer vs to re resh our felges.

Thursday the fixteenth day of May, we stood directly in with the Land : and we much martelled that we deferred it not : wherein wee found our Sea Charts very falle laying our Land Sea-charts where none was, for though we bare in directly with it according to them: yet in almost fifty talle. leagues running we found none.

Friday the feuenteenth of May, about fixe a clocke at night, wee deferred Land, which have 60 from vs North North-east: but because it blew a great gale of winde, the Sea very high and neere night, not fit to come vpon an vnknowne co.ft, our Captaine flood off till two of the clocke in the morning being Saturday and Whition Ete: then flanding with it againe, wee de- Land descried. foried it by eight a clocke in morning, bearing North-east from vs. It appeared a meane high made it claud-Land, as we after found it, being but an Iland of no great compasse; but I hope the most fortunate Үу**у**ууу 3

Great plenty of fifh.

Voon Wille funday wee came into an

Pentecol Har-

Clay.

Our Pinnace Lanched. Varietie of

Wee fished.

The frairs of the Hands.

Trees. Turpentine plentifull, for

that euer men discouered, as shall appeare by the sequell. About twelve a clocke that day, wee came to an anchor on the North tide of this Iland in forty fathome water, about a league from shoare. This Iland is woody, growne over with Firre, Birch, and Beech, as farre as we saw along Our Captaine the shoare, and so likely to be within. On the Verge growe Gooseberries, Strawberries, wilde Peale, and wilde Rose bushes. The fresh water issued down the rocky Cliffes in many places : and much towle of fundry kindes breed vpon the shoare and Rockes. While wee were at shoare our men aboord with a few hookes got about thirty great Cod and Haddocke, which gaue was a taffe of the great plenty of fish which we found afterward, wherefoeuer we went vpon the coast.

From hence we might discerne many Hands, and the maine Land, from the West South-west to the East North-east; and North North-east from vsa great way as it then seemed (and as we 10 the Maine and after found it) vp into the Maine, we might discerne very high Mountaines, although the Maine feemed but lowe Land, which gaue vs a hope, that it might pleafe God, to direct vs to the Difcourry of some good, although wee were driven by windes tarrefrom that place, whether both by our direction and delire, we euer intended to thape the course of our Voyage.

The next day being Whitfunday, because we rode too much open to the Sea, and windes, wee wayed anchor about twelue a clocke, and came along to the other Ilands more adioyning to the Maine, and in the Road directly with the Mountaines, about three leagues from the first Hand where we anchored. When we came neere vnto them (founding all along in a good depth)our Captaine manned his Ship-boat, and fent her before with Thomas Cam one of his Mates, whom he knew to be of good experience, to fearch and found about and between the Hands for a place 20 fafe for our ship to ride in. In the meane while we kept aloofe at Sea, having given order to them in the Boat, by a token to weffe in the ship if he found a convenient Harbour, which it pleased God to fend vs, farre beyond our expectation in a most fafe birth, defended from all windes in an excellent depth of water for ships of any burthens in fix, seuen, eight, nine and ten fathome voon a clay oze, very tough, where is good moring, even on the Rocks vpon the Cliffe fide.

We all with great admiration praised God, who had from so apparent danger miraculously delivered vs, and directed vs vpon this day (vpon which he fent the chiefe promifed Director of all goodnesse vnto his Apostles and Disciples)into such a place, wherof here before we reade none to goodnesse vato his Apolities and Direction, and then which neither our felues could wish, or Nature affoord more secure. In remembrance whereof, our Captaine named it Pentecost Harbour.

Whitfun Munday the twentieth day of May, by three a clocke in the morning, our Captaine caused the Shalop to be carried ashoare: where while some were busied about her, himselfe set others to worke in digging Wels to receive the water, which we found isluing downe out of the Land in many places, and rifing amidft the rocky Cliffes. In digging (amongst other things) we found in some places (and not deepe) clay ground, blue, red and white, to make Bricke or Tile, fit for building. This day our Pinnace was fitted together and lanched, in small time with two or three hookes were fifted fufficiently for our whole companie three dayes, with great Cod, Hadocke, and some Thornbacke. Towards night we drew with a small Same of 20, fathom just by the hoare, where we got about 30. very good Lobiters, many Rockfish, some Plaise, and other Small fishes very good; and fishes called Lumpes, very pleasant to taste. And this wee generally 40 observed, that all the fish of what kind soever we tooke, were well fed, fat, and in tast very sweet.

Wednesday the two and twentieth of May, our Captaine went ashoare with our men, where wee felled and cut wood for our thips vie, cleanfed and fooured our Wells. Wee likewite digged a small plot of ground, wherein among some Garden seeds (which most the birds destroyed) we fet Peale and Barley, which in fixteene dayes grew eight inches, and fo continued every day growing more than halfe an inch: although this was but the crust of the ground, and farre inferiour to the mould we after found in the Maine.

All the next day we labored hard to make vp our wood, because our Captaine intended not to fore, or spend any more time in that of our Voyage. This day our Boat fished againe as before, because wee still were much retreshed with the fresh fish.

Friday the foure and twentieth of May, after we had made an end of cutting wood, and carrying some water aboord our ship. Our Captaine with sourteene shet and Pike marched about, and thorow part of two of the Ilands, one of which we gheifed to be foure or fine miles in compasse, and a mile broad.

Along the shoare, and some space within where the wood hindereth not, growe plentifully, Rashberries, Gooseberries, Strawberries, Corane trees, Rose bushes, wilde Vines, Angelica a loueraine herbe, many other fruits wee knew not. All within the Hands, growe wood of fundry forts, some very great, and generally all tall : Beech, Birch, Ash, Maple, Spruce, Cherrie tree, Ewe, Oake great and firme, with fo fine graine and colour, as our Captaine, and men of best experience, had neuer seene the like. But the First trees great and small are most abundant, which 65 I name last, as not the least of excellent profit : for from it issueth Turpentine in maruellous plenty, and so sweet as our Chirurgeon and others affirmed they neuer faw so good in England. Wee pulled off much Gumme congealed on the outfide of the Barke which gave an odour like Frankincense. This would be a very great benefit for making Tarre and Pitch.

We staied the longer in this place, not onely because of our good Harbour (which is an excellent comfort) but alio because euery day we found the Hand, more and more to discouer vnto vs his pleasant fruitfulnesse, inlomuch, as many of our company wished themselves settled here.

Alfo our men found abundance of great Mussels among the Rockes; and in some of them ma. Pearle. ny small Pearles. In one Mussell (which we drew vp in our Same) was found sourceene Pearles. ny man valer of one was of pretty bigneffe and orient, in another aboue fifty small Pearles; and if one had had a Dragge, no doubt we had found some of great value, seeing their did certainely shew that here they were bred: the shels within all glistering with mother of Pearle.

Thursday the thirtieth of May, the Captaine with thirteene departed in the Shallop, leauing

10 the Ship in a good harbour.

Divers Canoas of Sauages came to vs. The thape of their body is very proportionable, and Their thane of well countenanced, not very tall, nor bigge, but in flature like to vs; they paint their bodies body. with blacke, their faces some with red, some with blacke, and some with blew. Their closwith olacke, then laces older skins, hanging downe to their knees before and behinde, made thing. falt together vpon the shoulder with a leather string; some of them weare sleeues, some buskins of leather tewed very thin and foft. Some weare the haire of their skins outward, some inward; they have besides a peece of skin, which they binde about their waste, and betweene their legges to couer their prinities. They fuffer no haire to grow vpon their faces, but vpon their head very long and very blacke, which behinde they binde vp with a ftring on a long round knot, fome 20 of them have haire all curled naturally. They feemed all very civill and very merry, thewing tokens of much thankfulneffe for those things we gaue them; which they expresse in their lan- Of good eakens or muon enanktuinene to those stated. We found them then (as after) a people of very pacity and vaguage by these words, sb, bo, often repetated. We found them then (as after) a people of very pacity and vadursanding.

good invention, quicke vnderstanding, and ready capacity. on macricion, quiese vinestranians, and Beech, strengthned within with ribbes and hoopes of Their Canass wood, in fo good falhion and with fuch excellent ingenious art, as our men that had beene often very artificially in the Indies, faid they farre exceeded any that ever they had seene. The chiefe of them told me by fignes, that they would goe fetch Furres and Skins, and pointed to be with vs againe by that

time the Sunne should come somewhat beyond the midst of the firmament. About ten a clocke this day we descried our Pinnace returning towards vs. Our Captaine had

30 in this small time discouered wpa great River, trending all almost into the Maine. Vntill his re- Triffes left can turne our Captaine left on shoare where they landed, in a path (which seemed to be frequented) shoare, a Pipe, a Brooch, and a Knife, thereby to know if the Sauzges had recourfe that way, because they could at that time see none of them, onely a Beast a farre of, which they thought to be 2 Deere.

The next day being Saturday, and the first of June, wee traded with the Sauages all the fore. Weemaded none you the Shoate, where were eight and twenty Sauges, and because our Ship rode nigh, with the Sauges were but the or fixe, where for Kniues and other triflet to the value of foure or fine the first when the saugest sau we were but fine or fixe, where for Kniues and other trifles, to the value of foure or fine shillings, we had forty good Skins, Beuers, Otter, and other which we knew not what to call them. Our trade being ended, many of them came aboord vs, and eate by our fire, and would be very merry

49 and bold, in regard of our kinde viage of them. Our Captaine shewed them a strange thing which they wondered; His Sword and mine having beene touched with the Loadstone, tooke They wondered vo their Knife and held it falt when they plucked it away; and made their Knife turne being arther fed of laid on a blocke : and giving their Knife a touch with his Sword, made that take vp a Needle, the Loadstone which they much marueiled at. This we did to cause them to imagine some great power in vs. and for that to love and feare vs.

When we went a Shoare to trade with them in one of their Canoas, I faw their Bowes and Arrowes, which in their fight I tooke vpand drew an Arrow in one of them, which I found Their Bostes to be of a reasonable strength, able to carry an Arrow fine or fix score strongly; and one of them tooke it and brew as we draw our Bowes, not like the Indians. Their Bowe is made of Beech in

50 fashion of our Bowes, but they want nocks, onely a string of leather put through a hole at one end, and made fast with a knot at the other. Their Arrowes are of a much greater fize then our and longer, feathered with three feathers tyed on, and nocked very artificially, headed with a long shanke bone of a Deere, made very sharpe, and some Iron heads, with two sangs in manner of a harping Iron. They haue likewise Darts headed with sharpebone, one of which I darted Darts, among the Stones and it brake not. Thefe they vie very cunningly to kill Fish . Fowle,

They gave vs the best welcome they could, spreading Deere skins for vs to sit on the ground Tobacco exby their fire, and gaue vs of their Tobacco in our Pipes, which was most excellent, and so gene- cellent the Sarally commended of vs all to be as good as any we ever tooke, being the simple Leafe without unger gave vs to any composition, very strong and of a pleasant sweete taste: they gave vs some to carry tocur

Captaine, whom they called our Balhabe, neither did they require any thing for it; but we would receive nothing from them without remuneration. Here we faw their women, who flood behinde them, as defirous to fee vs, but not willing to Wefawihi:

be leene, for before when locuer we came a Shoare, they retired into the woods; whether it Women

were it regard of their owne naturall modelty being naked, or by the commanding isloufie of

their husbands, which we rather infpected; for it hath beene an inclination noted alwayes gene-

rally in Sauages, wherefore we would by no meanes feeme to take any special notice of them.

They were very well fauoured, low of stature, and exceeding fat; they had two little children

very far, and of good countenance, which they love tenderly, all naked, except their legges.

which were couered with thin leather buskins, failned with flraps to a Girdle about their waite.

which they gird very streight, and is decked round about with little round peeces of Copper. To

there we gaue Chaines, Bracelets, and other trifles, which the Sauages feemed to accept with

At our comming away, we would have had those two that supped with vs to goe aboord and In

fleepe, as they had promifed our Captaine; but it appeared their company would not fuffer

great kindneffe.

them, whereat we might easily perceive they were much grieved ; but not long after our denarture they came with three more to our Ship, figning to vs, if one of our Company would goe lye a Shoare with them, they would flay with vs. Our Captaine would command none : but Griffin, one of them we were to leave in the Countrey, by their agreement with my Lord the Right Honorable Count Arundell (if it should be thought needefull or convenient) went with them in We brought their Canoa; and three of them stayed abourd vs. Whom our Captaine and whole Company them home avery kindely vied, himfelfe faw their lodging prouided, and them lodged in an old Saile vpon the Orlop, and because they most feared our Dogs, they were tyed vp whensoener any of them

Ceremonies of the Sauages

gaine.

Griffin which lay on Shoare, reported vinto me their manner, and (as I may tearme them) the Ceremonies of their Idolatry, which they performe thus. One among them (the eldeft of the company as he indeed) rifeth right up, the rest fitting still, and todainely cryed, Bomb, wanth; then the women fall downe, and lye vpon the ground, and the men altogether answering the fame, fall a stamping round about with both feete as hard as they can, making the ground shake, with fundry loud outcries, and change of voyce and found; many take the fire thickes and thrust them into the earth, and then relt filent a while, of a fudden beginning as before, they looke round about, as though they expected the comming of fomething (as lice verily supposed) and continue stamping till the yonger fort fetch from the Shoare Scones, of which every man take one, and first beate upon them with the fire sticks, then with the Stones beate the ground with 30 all their (trength : and in this fort (as the reported) they continued about two houres. In the time of their Pauole, our watch aboord were finging, and they figned to him to doe fo, which he did, looking and lifting up his hands to heaven : then they pointed to the Moone, as if they imagined hee worshipped that, which when he with fignes denied, they pointed to the Sunne riling, which hee likewife difliked, lifting up his hands againe, then they looked about, as though they would fee what Starre it might be, laughing one to another. Afterithis ended, their wines fe- they which have wines take them a part, and withdraw themselves severally into the wood all night. The next morning, as soone as they saw the Sunne rise, they pointed to him to come with

them to our Sup, and having received their men from vs, they came with all their Canoas and 40

company houering about our Ship, to whom (because it was the Sabbath day, I signed they

cretly.

co Pipe.

should depart, and at the next Sunne rising wee would goe along with them to their houses, which they understood (as we thought) and departed : three of their Canoas coursing about the Iland, and the others towards the Maine. This day about fine a clocke afternoone, came three Their Tobacother Canoas from the Maine, of which some had beene with vs before, and they came directly aboord vs, and brought vs Tobacco, which we tooke with them in their Pipe, which was made of earth very strong, but blacke and short, containing a great quantity. Some Tobacco they gaue to our Captaine, and some to me, in very civill kinde manner : we requited them with Bread and Peafe. When we came at Shoare, they all most kindely entertained vs, taking vs by the hands, as they had observed we did to them abourd in token of welcome, and brought vs to 50 They gaue vs fit downe by their fire, where fat together thirteene of them. They filled their Tohacco Pipe, Tobacco in a which was then the short claw of a Lobster, which will hold ten of our Pipes full, and we dranke Pipe of a Lob. of their excellent Tobacco as much as we would with them; but wee faw not any great quantity to trucke tor, and it seemed they had not much left of old, for they spend a great quantity yearely by their continual drinking : they would figne vnto vs that it was growne yet but a

fters Claw. little aboue ground, but it would be high, with a leafe as broad as both their hands; and of-

and Griffia.

(whom wee take to be their King, or some great Commander) had plenty of Furres and much Tobacco. At our departure they made figne, if any of vs would flay there a shoare, some of them would 60 goelye abourd with vs : at which motion Mafter Booles, leruant to the Right Honorable Count Arundell, being defirous to fee the manner of the torelaid Ceremonies, stated with them, and Maiter Booles had Griffin with him ; and three of the Sauages lodged with vs, in manner as the night before.

ten would (by pointing to one part of the Maine Eastward) figne vnto vs that the Bashabe

Early the next morning being Munday, the third of June, when they had brought our men 2

boord, they came about our Shippe, earnestly by signes desiring we would goe with them along to the Maine, for there they had Furres and Tobacco to traffique with vs. Wherefore our Captaine manned the Shallop, with as many men as he could well, which was but fifteene with the Rowers, and we went along with them: two of their Canoas they fent away before, and they which were abourd vs all night kept company with vs to direct vs. This we noted as we went along, they in the Canoa with three Oares, would at their will goe a head of vs and about vs, when we rowed with eight Oares strong: such was the swittnesse by reason of the

lightnesse, and exquisite composition of their Canoa and Oares. When we came neere the point, where we faw their fires, where they intended to land, and to where they imagined some few of vs should come on Shoare with our merchandise, as wee had

accustomed before : when they had often numbred our men very diligently, they scoured away to their company, not doubting we would have followed them. But when wee perceived this, and knew not either their intents, or number of Sauages on the Shoare, our Captain after confultation flood of and weffed them to vs, determining that I should goe a Shoare first to take a view of them, and what they had to traffique, if he whom at our first light of them seemed to be of most respect, and being then in the Canoa, would stay as a pawne for me. When they came to vs (notwithstanding all our former courtelies) he veterly refused, but would leave a yong Savage. and for him our Captaine lent Griffin in their Canoa, while we lay hulling a little of. He at his returne reported, they had there affembled together, as he numbred them, two hundred foure-20 feore and three Sauages, enery one his Bowe and Arrowes, with their Dogges, and Wolves

which they keepe tame at command : and not any thing to exchange at all, but would have 1835 suages which they keepe tame at command: and not any thing to exchange at an, out would have allembled in a drawne vs farther vp into a little narrow nooke of a Riner, for their Furres as they trecherie.

We began to alter our opinion of them, and to joyne them in the ranke of all Sauges, who Difposition of have beene by all travailers and in all discouries found very treacherous, neuer attempting mil- Sauages in the chiefe, vnrill (by some remisnesse) fit opportunity affordeth them certaine ability to execute the Purman Mafame. Wherefore we humbly gaue God chankes, who had ginen vs vnderstanding to preuent heir dealness this, and thereby warning to foresee and prepare our selves against the like danger. And after found courses 200d aduife taken, our Captaine determined, to soone as we could to Ship some of them, least (be-36 ing furpicious we had discoursed their plots) they should absent themselves from vs, which sure-

ly they had done, if we had not laid hold of the next occasion. Tuesday came to the Ship, there were two Canoas, and in either of them three Sauages, of whom two were below at the fire, the other flaied about the Ship for victuall : and because we could by no meanes entice them aboord, we gaue them a Can of Peate and Bread, which, they carried to the shoare to eate, but one of them brought backe our Can againe presently, and staied aboord with the other two, for he being yong of a ready capacitie, and one wee most desired to bring with vs into England, had received exceeding kinde vlage at our hands, and therefore We caught has was much delighted in our company: we shipped him, and foure others, two Canoas, with all Canoas, and

their Bowes and Arrowes, which is the chiefe substance they possesse: Saturday the eight of Iune, our Captaine being defirous to finish all businesse about this Harbour, very early in the morning with the Pinnace coafted fine or fixe leagues about the Hands ad- Qur Captaine joyning, and founded all along whereforer he went: helikewife diligently fearched and foun- founded aded along before the mouth of the Harbotr, shout the Rocks which flow themselves at all times, Rockes and are an excellent breach of the water in as makes concerned in to offend the Markov This. and are an excellent breach of the water, fo as no Sex can come in to offend the Harbour. This mouth of die he did to instruct himselfe, and thereby able to direct others that shall happen to come to this Harbout. place : for every where both neere the Rockes and in all founding about the Ilands, wee never found leffe water then foure or fine fathome, which was very feldome, but feuen, eight, nine, and ten fathome, is the continual founding by the shoare, in some places much deeper, woon clay

Oaze or foft Sand. This day about one a clocke afternoone, came from the Eastward two Canoas abourd vs, Two Canoas wherein was he that refused to stay with vs for a Pawne, and with him fix other Sauges, whom come about we had not feene, who had beautified themselues after their manner very gallantly, though their vatrem the cloathing was not different from the former, yet they had newly painted their faces very deepe, Balance fome all blacke, some red, with stripes of blew over their vpper lip, note, and chin. One of them ware a kinde of Coronet about his head, made very cunningly of a substance like stiffcharte, co- Their Ornaloured red, broad, and more then a handfull in depth, which he fo much effeemed, as he would ments of galnot for any trucke exchange the fame : other weare the white feathered skins of fome Fowle

round about their head, Iewels in their eares, & Bracelets of httle white round bone, faltened together upon a leather fitting. These made not any show that they had notice of the other before ta-60 ken but we understood them by their speech & fignes, that they came fent from the Baltabe, and that his defire was, we would bring up our Ship (which they call a **Quiden**) to his houle, being as they pointed upon the Maine towards the East, from whence they came, and that he would exchange with vs for Furres and Tobacco: but because we had no desire to discouer any further that way, and now making what speede we could up the River; wee let them understand; that

if their Balbabe would come to vs, hee should be very welcome, but wee would not remove

Tuefday, the elementh of June, we paffed up into the River with our Ship about fix and tweninto the River ty miles; of which (were it not of necessitie I must report somewhat) I had much rather not to with our Ship. Write, then by my relation to detract from the worthinesse thereof, not being sufficient in words to expresse the abundant vtilitie and sweete pleasantnesse it yeeldeth. For the River besides that it is thise of hereafter by Shipping to bring in all traffiques of Merchandife.

The first and chiefest thing required for a Plantation, is a bold Coast, and faire Land to fall

The profits of with. The next, a fafe Harbour for Ships to ride in. the River.

The first is a speciall attribute to this Shoare, being most free from Sands or dangerous Rockes. Io Saint Georges in a continuall good depth, with a most excellent Landfall as can be defired; which is the first Hand, named Saint Georges Hand. For the fecond, by judgement of our Captaine, who knoweth most of the Coast of England, and most of other Countries (having beene experienced by implyments in discourries and trauailes from his childehood) and by opinion of others of good judgement in our Ship. Here are more good Harbours for Ships of all burthens, then all England can afoord : And farre more secure from all windes and weathers, then any in England, Scotland, Ire-Lind, France, Spaine, or any other part hitherto discouered, whereof we have received any relation: for the files without the River in the channell and Sounds about the Ilands adjoyning to the Mouth thereof, no better riding can be defired for an infinite number of thips) the River it felfe as

The breadth of the River

and Carine Ships.

Salmons and fore of filb. The Land.

The Wood.

This River

We marched

vp into the land about three miles.

it runneth up into the Maine very nigh fortie miles towards the great Mountaines, beareth in 20 for almost 40, breadth a mile, fometimes three quarters, and halfe a mile is the narrowest, where you shall neuer have vider foure or five fathom water hard by the Shoare, but fix, feuen, eight, nine, and ten The ground is fathom at a low water. And on both fides, every halfe mile, verie gallant Coues, some able to Dize & Clay. containe almost a hundred Sayle, where the ground is excellent foft caze with a tough clay voder for Anker hold; and where Ships may lye without either Anker or Cable onely mored to the Shoare with a Hazur. It floweth, by their judgement, fixteene or eighteene foote at a high wa-Docksto grave ter. Here are made by nature most excellent places, as Dockes to grave and Carine Ships of all burthers, fecured from all windes, which is such a necessary incomparable benefit, that in few places in England, or in any other parts of Christendome. Art with great charges can make

It yeeldeth plentie of Salmons, and other fishes of great bignesse, and assuredly great probabilitie of better things therein to be found, feeing about the Ilands wee had fuch certaine hope of Pearle and Oare. Besides all these commodities innatine to this River, the bordering Land is a most rich neighbour trending all along on both sides, in an equall Plaine, neither Mountainous nor Rockie, but verged with a greene bordure of graffe, doth make tender vnto the beholder of her pleafant fertility, if by clenfing away the woods, fine were connected into Medow. The Wood it beareth is no fhrubbifh, fit onely for fewell, but good tall Firre , Spruce, Birds, Beech, and Oake, which in many places is not fo thicke, but may with small labour be made feeding ground, being plentifull like the outward Hands with fresh water, which streameth downe in

many places.

As we passed with a gentle winde vp with our Ship in this River. Any man may conceine with what admiration wee all confented in ioy; many who had beene erauellers in fundry Countries, and in the most famous Rivers, yet affirmed them not comparable to this they now beheld. Some that were with Sir Walter Raleigh, in his Voyage to Guiana, in the Discourry of presentations the River Orienoque, which eccoed fame to the worldseares; gave reasons why it was not to be Before the Ri. compared with this, which wanteth the dangers of many Shoakls and broken grounds, whereperorette Ri. with that was encombred. Others preferred it farre before that notable River in the West Indias, called Rio Grande: some before the Rivers of Burdana, Orleance, and Brest in France, Naunce, and the River of Rhoane : which although they be great and goodly Rivers, yet it is no detraction from them to be accounted inferiour to this, which not onely yeeldeth all the aforefaid pleafant 50 profits, but also appeared infallibly to vs free from all imagined inconveniences. I will not pre-Ferre it before our River of Thames, because it is Natale folum, Englands richeit treasure, but wee all did wish those excellent Harbonrs, good Drepes, in a continuall convenient breadth, and fmall tide gates, to be as well therein for our Countrie good, as wee, found them, here (beyond our hopes) in certaine for those to whom it shall please God to grant this Land for habitation: which if it had with the other inseperable adherent Commodities here to be found; then I would boldly affirme it to be the most rich, beautifull, large, and secure harbouring River that the world affordeth; for if man should wish, or Art invent, a River subject to all conveniencies, and free from all dangers, here they may take a view in a Plat-forme framed by Nature, who in her perfection farre exceedeth all Arts inuention.

Wednefday the twelffth of fune, our Captaine manned his Shallop with feuenteene men, and on the total Code of the Rune, where united his ran vp to the Codde of the River, where we landed, leaving fix to keepe the Shallop till our returne, Ten of vs with our Shot, and some armed, with a Boy to carry Powder and Match, marched vp into the Countrie towards the alcuntaines, which we deferied at our first falling with the

Land, and were continually in our view. Vnto some of them the River brought vs so neere, as we judged our felues when we landed, to have beene within a league of them, but we found them not, having marched well nightfoure miles up in the Maine, and paffed three great hils; wherefore because the weather was parching hot, and our men in their Armour not able to travell farre and returne to our Pinnaffe that night, we resolved not to passe any further, being all very weary of fo tedious and labourfome a trauell.

To this marchive puffed ouer very good ground, pleasant and fertile, fit for pasture, having Good Posture. but little wood, and that Oake, like tands left in our Pattures in England, good and great fit timber for any vie; fome small Birch, Hazell and Brake, which might in small time be clinfed with few men, and made good errable Land; but as it is now will feede Cattell of all kindes with

Fodder enough for Summer and Winter. The foyle is good, bearing fundry Hearbes, Graffe, and Stawberries, in many places are low thickets, like our Copiffes of small Wood: And it doth all resemble a flately Parke, wherein appeare some old trees with high withered tops, and other floorthing with huing greene boughes : till we came to the Hils vpon which doe grow excee- Timber trees ding tall, itreight, and excellent great timber of fundry kindes, mast for Ships of foure hundred tunnes, and at the bottome of every hill, a little run of fresh water; but the furthest and last we came untoran with a great streame able a driue a small Mill. Wee might see in some places, Deere. where Deere and Hares had beene; and by the rooting of ground we supposed wilde Hogs had Hares. ranged there, but we could defery no Beaft, because our noise still chased them from vs.

We were no fooner come aboord our Pinnasse, returning towards our Ship, but wee espied a Canoa comming from the further part of the Cod of the River Eastward, which hasted to vs; wherein with two others was he whom we accounted chiefe of his Company; and his comming was very earnestly importuning to have one of our men to goe lye with their Balhabe or Captaine (as they now tearmed him) who was there ashoare (as they figned) and then the next A plot of the morning he would come to our Ship with Furres and Tobacco. This we perceived to be onely a Sausges, meere device to get possession of any of our men, to ransome all those we had taken; which their naturall pollicy could not foshaddow, but we did easily discouer and preuent.

These meanes were by this Sauage practised, because we had one of his kinsmen prisoner, as

we judged by his most kinde viage of him, being aboord vs together. 10 Thursday, the thirteenth of Iune, by two a clocke in the morning / because our Captain would take the helpe and advantage of the Tide) in the Pinnace with our Company well provided and furnished with Armour and Shot both to defend and offend : we went from our Ship vp to that We searched part of the River which trended West into the Maine, to search that, and wee carried with vs part of the Ria Crosse to erect at that point; which, because it was not day-light, we left on shoare vntill our uer, returne backe, when we fet it vp in manner as the former. And this we diligently observed, that Weser vp and in no place either about the llands, or vp in the Maine, or along the River, wee could differne other Croffe. any token or figne that ever any Christian had beene before; which either by cutting wood, digsine for water, or fetting vp Croffes (a thing neuer omitted by any Christian travailours) wee figure that the

should have perceived some mention left. 80 But to returne to our River, vp into which we then rowed by estimation twenty miles. What before profit or pleafure is described and truely verified in the former part of the River, is wholly doubled in this; for the breadth and depth is fuch, that any Ship drawing feuenteene or eighteene foote water might have passed as farreas we went with our Shallop, and by all our indgements much further, because we left it in so good depth; which is so much the more to be esteemed of greater worth, by how much it trendeth further vp into the Maine : for from the place of our Ships riding in the Harbour, at the entrance into the Sound, to the furthest point wee were in this River, by our estimation was not much lesse then threescore miles. From each Banke of this River, are divers branching streames running into the Maine, whereby is afforded an vnspeakea- Conveniency ble profit, by the conveniency of easie transportation from place to place, which in some Countion. tries is both very chargeable, and not fo fit, by Carriages on Wane or Horlebacke, Here wee faw

50 ftore of Fifth, some leaping about water, which we judged to be Silmon, for they were great. All Salmon and along is an excellent mould of ground, the wood in most places, especially on the Easterne side, great plenty very thin, chiefely Oake and Imall Birch, bordering low vpon the Riuer, all fit for Meddow and pleasant Pasture ground. And in that space wee went, wee had on both sides the River many plaine places of cleere Meddow, some of three or foure acres, some eight or nine, so as we judged in the whole to be betweene thirty and forty acres of good graffe, and where the Armes ronne into the Maine, there likewife went a space on both sides of the cleare graffe, how farre we knew not. In many places we might see pathes Bealts had made to come downe to watering. And we all concluded (as I verily thinke we might rightly) that we should never see the like River in

60 euery degree equall, vntill it pleafed God we beheld the fame againe : for the further we went, the more pleafing it was to every man, alluring vs fill with expediation of better; fo as our men (although they had with great labour rowed long, and eate nothing) for we carried with vs We were all no victuall but a little Cheefe and Bread, yet they were fo refreshed with the pleasant beholding thereof, and so loath to tortake it, as some of them affirmed, they would have continued this Ruce.

veonthe Hils-

Hogges.

1665

The Hand

where we wa-

Infula Sanfie

fect oblerus-

Temperature

tion on the

of climate.

Rocke.

willingly with that onely fare and labour two dayes; but the Tide not fuffering vs to make any longer itay (because we were to come backe with the ebbe) and our Captaine better knowing what was fit, then we; and better what they in labour were able to endure, being very loath to make any desperate hazard, where so little necessitie required, thought it best to make returne. because whether we had discouered, was sufficient to conceiue that the River ranne very farre into the Land : for we passed fixe or seuen miles altogether fresh water (whereof we all dranke) forced up by the flowing of the Salt, which after a great while ebbe where we left it, by bredth and depth of Channell was likely to runne by estimation of our whole companie an vnknowne way further. And as our Captaine verily thought (although hee then concealed it) might polfibly make a paffage into (or very nigh) the South Sea: which hee neither had commission nor Io time now to scarch, but hath left that till his next returne : if it shall so please God to dispose

Friday the fourteenth of June early, by foure a clocke in the morning with the Tide, our two Boats, and a little helpe of the winde, we warped our shippe do wne to the Riuers mouth: and there came to an anchor about about eleuen a clocke. Afterward our Captaine in the Pinnace. fearched the founding all about the mouth and comming into the River, for his certaine infirm-Gion of a pertect delcription.

The next day being Saturday, we weighed anchor, and with a briefe from the Land, we favled un to our watering place, and there stopped, went ashoare, and filled all our empty caske with

rered is named Our Captaine vpon the Rocke in the middest of the Harbour made his certaine observa-Crucis, becaufe there wer let tion by the Sunne, of the height, latitude, and variation exactly upon all his Instruments: our firth Croffe 1. Aftrolabe. 2. Semitphere. 3. Ring-inftrument. 4. Croffe staffe. 5. And an excellent Com-Our Gapcaine pas, made for the variation. The latitude he found to be 43. degrees 20. minutes, North. The variation, 11. degrees 15. minutes, viz. one point of the Compas Westward. And it is fo much made his perin England at Lime-bouse by London, Bastward. The temperature affoorded to vs no speciall alteration from our disposition in England: somewhat hotter vp into the Maine, because it lieth open to the South, but scarse yeelding a sensible difference to any of vs. The aire so wholsome, as I suppose, not any of vs found our selues at any time more healthfull, more able to labour, nor with better flomachs to fuch good fare, as we partly brought, and partly found.

Sunday the fixteenth of lune, the winde being faire, and because wee had fet out of England vpon a Sunday, descried the Hands vpon a Sunday, and (as we doubted not) by Gods appointment, happily fallen into our Harbour vpon a Sunday : fo now befeeching him with like prosperitie to blesse our returne into England: and from thence (with his good-will and pleasure) to hallen and fortunate our next arrivall here. Wee fet sayle and quit the Land vpon a Sunday.

Tuesday the eighteenth day of June, being not runne aboue fine and thirty leagues from Land, and our Captaine for his certaine knowledge how to fall with the Coast, having founded every watch, and from fifty fathom had come in good deeping to feuenty, and fo to an hundred. This day, the weather being faire, after the foure a clocke watch, when he thought not to haue found ground, before founding in aboue a hundred fathom, we had ground in foure and twenty fathom. 40 Wherefore our Sayles being downe, one of our men presently cast out a hooke, and before hee indged it at ground was fished and haled wp an exceeding great and well fed Cod: then there were cast out three or foure hookes more, the fish was so plentifull and so great, as when our Captaine would haue fet fayle, we desired him to suffer them to take fish a while, because wee were fo delighted to feethem catch fish so great, so fast as the hooke came downe, some playing with the hooke they tooke by the backe. And one of the Mates, with two hookes at a Lead, at fine A fifty banke. draughts together haled up ten fifthes all were generally very great, some were measured. This cauled our Captaine not to maruell at the shoalding: for he perceived it was a fish-banke, which (for our farewell from the Land) it pleased God in the continuance of his bleffings to give vs knowledge of.

Sunday the fourteenth of July about fix a clocke at night we were come into founding in our Channell: but for want of fight of the Sunne and Starre, to make a true observation: and with contrary windes we were constrained to beate up and downe till Tuesday the fixteenth of July, when by fine a clocke in the morning wee made Sylly: from whence hindred with calmes and small windes. Vpon Thursday the eighteenth of July about foure a clocke wee came to anchor fafe ly in Dartmonth, which Hauen haply (with Gods affiftance) wee made the laft and firk Harbour in England, as the Termini of our Voyage.

A briefe Note of what profits we found the Countrie yeeld: in the small time of our stay there.

Trees. Oake, of an excellent graine , flaight, and great timber ; Elme , Beech , Birch , very tall and, great of whole Barque they make their Canoas; Nut-halle, Halle, Alder, Cherry tree, Ath, M. ple, Ewe, Spruce, Atp, bir in great abundance; many other fruit trees which we know not. Forder, Eagles, Hernshavies, Cranes, Duks great; Geefe, Swans, Penguins, Shark, Crow, Rauen, Kite, Soga, Mewes, Douts, Tortles, birds of fundry colours; and many other fowles vnknown.

Reafis, Deere red and fallow, Beare, Wolfe, Beauer, Otter, Hare, Conie, Matterns, Sables, Hoes, Porkelpines. Polcats, Cats, wilde great, Dogs some like Foxes, some like our other beasts the Sanager ligne votto vs with hornes and broad eares; which we take to be Olkes or Loshes.

Filhet, Whales, Porpoile, Seales, Cod, very great; Haddocke, great; Herring, Plate, Thornbacke, Rock-fish, Lobster, great ; Crabbe , Mussels , Cockles , Wilks , Cunner-fish , Lumpe-fish, Whiting: the Sauages figne voto vs that they have Tortoife very great.

Plants, Fruits, Herbs. Tobacco, excellent, Sweet and Strong; Vine, wilde; Strawberries, Raspherries, Gooleberries, Hurtleberries, Corane trees, in abundance; Role bushes; Peale, which the Sauges figne to be very great in the Maine; Ground-nuts; Angelica, a most foueraigneherbe : and an herbe that spreadeth like Camomell, and smelleth like sweet Marjoram, great plenty, Good Dies, which appeare by their painting, which they carrie with them in bladders,

Words which I learned of the Sauages, in their Language Sunne or Moone, Kefus. Cod-fish, Biskeiore. A fish with hornes, Manedo. Lobster, Shoggab. Rock fish, Shagarocke. Cockle-fish, Hesucke. Muskell, Shoorocke. Cunner-fish, Tattaucke. Crabbe. Wulforaha, Porpoite, Mulcopeinck, Plaile, Anego. Tortoile, Romcanecke. Peale, Uhcomono. Tobacco, Tomoch. A leafe, Mebeere. A weed, Calherufb. A Firre tree, Seteoch. A stone, Nabscurt. 20 A Bowe, Shoanor. An Arrow, Tobood. Barke of a tree, Mashquere. Water, Shamogoon. Sand, Cheemsch. Crowe, Cagagoofe, Haire, Meffer or Meris. A board, Nicowur. A Beare, Rog foo. Beauer, Paneah. Otter, Nymemano. Rat, Sanuke. Polcat, Pocamka. Cat, Pushnek. Fallow Deere, Coribo, Hogge, Madofo, Red Deere, Moofurr. They tell vs of other beafts, which they call, Ta-(anus, Pilho, Narsim. Teeth, Ibider. A hand and finger, Breecke. A Naile of the hand, Cushe. Janus, 1908, Codd. A foot, Muffette. Plum-tree, Epiegan. Strawberry, Phos. Gooleberry, Schwa-ner, Cherry tree, Efregenoum. Corant tree, Afreemena, Rashberrie, Kietemy, A tippe, Me-ner, Cherry tree, Efregenoum. toan, Fire, Squida. The maine Land, Bemoquiducke. Sea, Shonbbe. Father, Wado. Sonne, Ufto. Wane of the Sea, Tobooge, Pitch and Tallow, Poco. Wilde Role, Minusbeck, Birch, Pasquar. Sword, Edagamancke. Mountaine, Machoucke. Winde, Puckchamsen. Bloud, Pagagocun. Red Paint, Woroman. Blacke Paint. Cogolho. A Dogge, Remgofe. A Ship or Boat, Quiden. An Oare, Wattoboganor. A Garnepo Fly. Chuffuab. Bread, Paune, Raine, Soogoran. A note, Peech-ten. An Axe or Hatchet, Tomaheegon, A Knife, Quodogon, Oake Askabeffe, White Bone, whereof they have Chaines, Girdles , Bracelets , Speefone. The Checke, Canoah. A Shirt or Coat, Tenoganuke, The Chinne, Queb, An Eye, Sheefack, Eylid, Momon. Forchead, Scottoquab. An Eare, Famwucke. A fish-hooke, Makeecon. A Rainbow, Shemogon.

The Names of their chiefe Governours, whom they call Sacomob. 1. Balhabez. 2. Abatuckquifte. 3. Bdahanedo, one of them we have. 4. Abokeefuffick. 5. Sburokinit. 6. Pfaheno. 7. Menteelmet, 8. Ageemobuck. 9. Mawermet. 10. Chanacoboin. 11. Amilquir. 12. Muasacoromoneete. Thefe dwell vpon the Maine, and weare an ornament of white bone vpon their head; and Chaines, and Bracelets, and Girdles, and have their skinne garments laced with them.

The Names of our Verginians. Edahanedo , Brother to the Bashabes. Amooret, his Erother. Satacomoah . Maneduck . Scikaworrowfe.

Thus have I given thee the proceedings of Virginia and New Englands Discourrie: for the originall beginning of the Discourrie, Sir Sebattian Cabot was the first Discourrer both of it and the rest of the Continent of America. The first Plantation was more Southerly by the charges of Sir Walter Raleigh: as before is showed. The next yeare New Patents were obtained of his Maiestie, for a donble Plantation in these parts. I trouble not the Reader with the whole Patent, both because it hath sustained diversified alteration, division and subdivision, and because I more minde things there done, than bere; for which cause I have also omitted the Articles and instruction two dayes after dated, signed, 50 and fealed, with the Prince Seale for the government of the faid Plantation, of both which I baue the Copies by mee; I onely bere gine thee the beginning of the first Patent, Aprill 10. 1606.

CHAP. XIIII.

The description of the Ilands of Acores, or the Flemish Ilands, taken out of Linschoten, with certaine occurrents, and English acts.



He Iles of Açores, or the Flemish Ilands are seuen, that is, Tercera, Saint Mary, Linstote. 07. Saint Gorge, Gratofa, Pico, and Faind. There are yet two Hands called Flores me limits and Corne, which are not contained under the name of of cores: but yet at this W yealed day are under the government of the fame llands fo that they are in all account days. day are under the government of the fame Hands, fo that they are in all, accoun- Agorts. ted nine llands. They are called Acores, that is to fay, Sparhawkes or Hawkes, because that in their first discouery, they found many Sparhawks, in them, wherof they hold the name, although at this day there is not any there to bee found. They are allo

called the Flemish Hands, that is, of the Netherlanders, because the first that inhabited the same. were Netherlanders, whereof till this time there is a great number and off fpring remayning, that in manner and behausour are altogether like Netherlanders, and there is yet in the fame Iland a running water, that iffueth out of a Hill, and fo runneth into the Sea, whereas ver those islues or off-springs of Nesherlanders inhabite, and is called Aribera dos Frameneos, that is the Flemilo River.

Teregra. Angra.

The principall Hand of them all, is that of Tercera, called Infula de Iefu Christin of Tercera. It is betweene fifteene or fixteene miles in compaste, and is altogether a great Cliffe of Land, whereby in it there is little roome: for it is as it were walled round about with Cliffes: but where any ftrand or fand is, there standeth a Fort. It hath no Hauens nor entrance of waters. Io for the fecuritie and fafety of the shippes, but onely before the chiefe Towne called Angra. where it hath an open Hauen, which in forme is like a Halfe-moone, by the Portugals called Angra, whereof the Towne hath her name. It hath on the one fide in manner of an elbow flicking forth, two high Hills, called Brefil, which stretch into the Sea, so that afarre off they feeme to bee divided from the Iland. Those Hills are very high, fo that being vpon them. a man may fee at the leaft tenne, or twelue, and fometimes fifteene miles into the Sea, being cleare weather. Vpon their Hills there iland two fmall ftone Pillers, where there is a Centinell placed, that continually watcheth to fee what shippes are at Sea, and so to aduertise those of the Iland : for that as many thippes as he feeth comming out of the West, that is from the Spanish Indies, or Brasilia, Cabo verde, Guinea , and the Portugal Indies, and all other wayes ly- 20 ing South or Welt, for every shippe bee setteth a Flagge vpon the Pillar in the West, and when the shippes which hee descrieth, are more than fine, then hee setteth vp a great ancient, betokeping a whole Fleete of shippes. The like hee doth vpon the other Pillar , which standeth in the East, for such shippes as come from Portugall, or other places out of the East or North parts, these Pillars may bee easily seene in all places of the Towne, by reason of the highnesse of the Hills, fo that there is not one shippe or sayle that is at See, or maketh towards the Iland , but it is presently knowne throughout all the Towne, and ouer all the whole Hand : for the watch is not holden onely upon those two Hills jutting into the Sea, but also upon all corners, Hills and Cliffes throughout the Iland, and as foone as they perceive any shippes, the Governour and Rulers are presently advertised thereof, that they may take such order therein as neede requireth. 30 Vpon the furthest corner into the Sea Standeth a Fort, right against another Fort that answer reth it : fo that those two Forts doe shut and defend the Mouth or open Hauen of the Towne, where the shippes lie in the Road, and so no shippe can either goe in or come forth, without the licence or permission of those two Forts. This Towne of Angra is not onely the chiefe Towne of Tercera, but also of all other Townes within the Hands thereabouts. Therein is resident, the Bishop, the Gouernour for the King, and the chiefe place of Judgement, or tribunal Seate of all the Hands of Acores. Three miles from this Towne lieth another Towne towards the North, called Villa de Praya,

(for Praya is as much to fay, as Strand) because it lieth hard by a great strand, and for that cause there is little traffique thither, as not having any convenient place for shippes to come at 40 it : yet sometimes there commeth some one, that by reason of contrary winde cannot get be-Angra descried forethe Towne of Angra, and so by constraint discharge their goods in that Towne, which from thence are carried by Land to Angra, and yet some part thereof is spent and vfed there. It is walled and well housed, but not many people in it, and such as are in it, doe get their liuings most by husbandry : for there are very faire Corne lands. The lland is Wines small, likewife very fruitfull and pleasant, it hath much Corne and Wine, but the Wine is not very good to carry into other Countries thereabouts, because it is small and will not long continue,

fo that it is vied in the Countrey by the common people : but fuch as are of wealth, for the most Commodities. Part drinke Wines of Madera, and Canaria. It aboundeth in Flesh, Fish, and all other necessaries and meates for mans bodie, wherewith in time of need they might helpe themselues. Oyle 50 there is none, but it commeth out of Portugall. Also Salt, Pots, Pans, and all kind of earthen Veffells, Chalke, and such like are brought thither out of other places, for there they are not to bee found : for fruits they have (befides Peaches of divers kindes, and in fo great abundance that is is strange) Cherries , Plums, Walnuts, Halle-nuts, Cheinuts, but those not very good : of Apples, Peares, Oranges and Lemons, with all fuch like fruits there are fufficient. Of all forts of Hearles and Plants, as Coleworts, Radishes, and fuch like they have at their certains times of the yeere. They have likewife in that Iland a certaine fruit that groweth under the earth, like Radishes or other roots, but the Leaues or Plants are Trees like Vines, but different leaues, and groweth longwise vpon the ground : it beareth a fruit called Batatas, that is very good, and is fo great that it weigheth a pound, some more, some leste, but little esteemed : and 60

yet it is a great sustenance and food for the common sort of people. It is of good account in

Portugall, for thither they vie to bring it for a Present, and those of the Hand by reason of the great abundance doe little esteeme it. There is also another kind of stuffe that is sowed like

Corne, and is a fruit : it groweth upon the root of the graffe or leaues, and is round and as bigge

Batatas.

Fruits,

as a great Peale, but not fo round : in eating it tasteth like Earth-nuts, but harder to bite : it is likewise a good meate, and much esteemed in other places: but by reason of the great quantitie thereof, it is most vied to facten their Hogges, and is called funfai. There is also in the Iland a certaine Plant, which is found in all places thereof in the open fieldes: it groweth as high as a man, and beareth no fruit, onely the roote thereof is a fubftance, of the thicknesse of A roote fit to a mans two fifts, and in thew as if it were naturall golden haire, and in handling like foft Silke, be worth. which is vied there to stuffe and fill their Beddes in stead of Wooll and Feathers : and I doe certainly believe, if any man of understanding would take it in hand, it would well be would The principallest traffique of this Iland, is their Woade, such as wee vie for dying (where-10 of much is made in that Iland, and is fetched from thence by Englishmen, Scott, and Frenchmen, in barter for Cloathes and other wares, who continually traffique into that Iland: and although by reason of the warres, the Englishmen are forbidden to traffique thither, yet under the names of Scots and Frenchmen, they have continuall trade there. The Hand hath not any wilde beafts or fowles, but very few, fauing onely Canary birds, which are there by thoufands, canary birds. where many Birders take them, and thereof make a daily living, by carrying them into divers places. It hath also wonderfull many Quailes , which they call Codornifen: of tame fowles, as Hennes, and Gynnie Hennes are there likewise great store. Hunting is there little vsed, but onely for Conies, which are very great: Hares, Harts, Partridges, Venilon, and such like, are not there to be found, because of the little respect and care the Inhabitants have to breed any such 30 things. Fish is very plentifull, and of divers kindes, and very good: in Summer there is great flore taken, for in Winter they can hardly brooke the Seas. The chiefe moneths of Winter Winter. weather for raine and stormes are, Ianuarie, Februarie, March and Aprill, and also the moneth of September is commonly very flormy : all the other moneths it is commonly good weather. The Countrey is very hilly, and in some places wooddy, full of bushes and trees: it is hard to trauell, because their wayes for the most part are stony, so that for a mile, or a mile and a halfe together, men can fee no ground, but onely stones, which for sharpnesseand fashion shew like Stones. pointed Diamants, whereby one can hardly treade vpon it, left it should cut through both shoes and feet : and yet it is all planted with Vines , fo full and thicke , that in Summer time you can hardly see through it, for that the rootes thereof doe growe betweene the stones : so that a man 30 would thinke it impossible that any thing should growe therein; and which is more, in some places it feemeth impossible for a man to treade voon it, being so wilde and desart as it sheweth, and nothing but hard itones and Rockes. On good ground their Vines will not growe, but onely in the wilde and stony places: and for that cause they are much esteemed.

The good groundes and plaine fieldes, which in some places are very many, especially by Villa da Praya, are fowed with Corne and Woade, and they have fo much Corne, that they neede not bring any from other places: although that besides their Inhabitants, and naturall borne Handers, they have continually with them fourteene Companies of Spaniardi, which are all fedde and nourished by the Corne that groweth in the Countrey , vnlesse there chance to come a hard and unfruitfull yeere, as oftentimes it doth, for then they are forced to helpe so themselves with forraine Corne, and that especially because of the Souldiers that lie in the Iland: and yet it is strange, that the Corne, and all other things in the Iland continue not about one yeere, and that which is kept aboue a yeere is naught, and nothing worth. And therefore Corne willian to keepe their Corne longer than a yeere, they are forced to burie it in the earth for the space of but a yeere. foure or fine moneths together, to the which end every Townesman hath his Pit at one end of the Towne in the common high-way, which is appointed for the purpole, and every man fetteth his marke voon his Pit-stone: the Corne is but lightly buried in the earth: the holes Corne busied. within are round, and the toppes thereof fo wide that a man may creepe in, whereunto there is a stone purposely made to couer it , which shutteth it vp very close. Some of the Pittes are so great, as that they may hold two or three lastes of Corne, some greater, and some smaller, as

50 every man hath his provision: and as soone as the Corne is reaped, and fanned (which is in July) euery man putteth his Corne into those Pittes, laying flraw under and round about it, and then they fill it full, or but halfe full, according as their quantitie is, and fo ftep it vp with the stone, which they couer with earth, and so let it stand vntill Christmas, when every man that will fetch home his Corne: some let it lie longer, and fetch it by little and little, as they wie it: but the Corne is as good when they take it out, as it was at the first houre that they put it in : and although that Carts, Horses, and men doe commonly passe ouer it, and also that the raine raineth vpon it, yet there entreth not any drop of raine or moulture into it: and if the Corne were not buried in that manner, it would not continue good aboue foure moneths together, but would be spoiled : and when it hath beene thus for a long time buried in the earth, it will continue the 60 whole yeere through, and then they keepe it in Chiffs, or make a thing of Mats, like a Ccope,

to preserue it in, not once stirring or moouing it, and so it continueth very good. The greatest commoditie they have in the Land , and that scrueth their turnes best, is their

Oxen: and I beleeue they are the greatest and fairest that are to bee found in all Christendome, Great Oxen - with

Calledbyth, it with vomeafurable great and long hornes. Every Oxe hath his feuerall namelike men, and althoug's there bee a thouland of them in a heard, and that one of them bee called by his name. he pretently commeth forth voto his mafter that calleth him. The Land is very high, and asie feemeth hollow : for that as they palle over a Hill of itone, the ground foundeth under them as if it were a Seller, fo that it feemeth in divers places to have holes under the earth, whereby it is

Brimffone.

much fubic Ct to Earthquakes, as also all the other Hands are : for there it is a common thing, and all those Ilands for the most part have had Myne of Brimstone, for that in many places of Tera cera, and Saint Michael, the imoake and fauour of Brimstone doeth shill islue forth of the ground. Ho: Springs. and the Countrey round about is all findged and burnt. Allo there are places wherein there are Fountainer and Wells, the water whereof is so hot that it will boyle an egge, as well as if it hung ouer a fire.

Gualua Spring ming wood interftone.

In the Hand of Tercera, about three miles from Angra, there is a Fountaine in a place cal-Ird Gualua, which hath a propertie, that all the wood which falleth into it, by length of time converteth into flone, as I my felfs by experience have tried. In the fame Fountaine by the roote of a tree, whereof the one halfe runneth under that water, and is turned into as hard ftone as if it were Steele: and the other part of the roote (which the water toucheth not) is fill wood and root, as it should be. The Hand hath great store and excellent kinds of wood, free cially Cedar trees, which growe there in in great numbers, that they make Scutes, Carts, and other groffe workes thereof, and is the commonest wood that they vie to burne in those Countries, whereby it is the wood that with them is least efteemed, by reason of the great quantity 20 thereof. There is another kinde of wood called Sanguinbo, and is very faire of a red colour and another fort that they call white Wood, being of it felfe as white as Chalke: other that is perfect yellow, and all naturall without any dying; and therefore there are divers good worke-

Sanguinbo wood. White and vellow woods.

Cedars com-

men in Tercera, that are skilfull in loyners Occupation, and make many fine pieces of worke, as Deskes, Cupboords, Chiffs, and other fuch like things, whereof many are carried into Ports. gall, and much efteemed there, as well for the beauty of the wood, as for the workmanlh p. And specially the Spanish Fleet, which ordinarily refresh themselves in that Iland, doe carrie much of it from thence; for it is the best and finest that is made in all Spaine and Portugall, although it bee not compar ble to the Deskes , and fine workmanship of Nurembergh, and thole Countreves: but for Wood is excelleth all other Countreves, for that they have in the Spanift 30 Fleete, besides their owne kindes of woods, at the least a thousand forts of wood of all colours that man can imagine or deuife, and so faire, that more fairer can not bee painted. There is a certaine kinde of wood in the Iland Pico, fituate and lying twelve miles from Terce-Teixo a kind of ra, called Teixo, a most excellent and princely wood, and therefore it is forbidden to bee cut, but onely for the Kings owne vie, or for his Officers. The wood is as hard as Iron , and hath a colour within, as if it were wrought, like red Chamlet, with the same water, and the older it is, and the more vied, the fairer it is of colour, fo that it is worthie to bee efteemed, as in

Inhabitants.

Souldiers.

Strangers.

truth it is. All those Ilands are inhabited by Portugals: but fince the troubles in Portugal, there have beene divers Spanift Souldiers fent thither, and a Spanift Governour, that keepe all the For's and 40 Castles in their polieshous, although the Portugals are put to no charges, nor yet hardly vied by them , but are rather kept fhort, fo that not one Souldier dareth goe out of the Towne, with out licence; and therefore men may quietly travell throughout the Iland, both day and night, without any trouble. Likewise they will not suffer any stranger to travell to see the Countrey : and this order was not brought up by the Spaniards, but by the Portugals themselves, before their troubles, (for they would never permit it:) and which is more, all strangers that came thither were viually appointed a certaine streete, wherein they should sell their wares, and might not goe out of that fireete. Now it is not to fireightly looked vnto, but they may goe in all places of the Towne, and within the Iland, but not about it, to view the Coast: which notwithstanding was granted vnto vs , by the Gouernour himselfe , who lent vs his 50 Horses to ride about, and gaue vs leave to see all the Forts, which at this time is not permitted to the naturall borne Handers, neither are they so much credited. Wee rode twice about the Hand, which hee granted vs I-aue to doe, by meanes of certaine particular friendship wee had with him : neither could the Partugals hinder vs therein , because were in the Kings feruice, as Factors for the Kings Pepper, and for that, they accounted vs as naturall borne Portugals: for the Gouernour would willingly have had mee, to have drawne a plot of the whole Iland, that hee might have fent it to the King : wherein I excuted my felfe : yet I made him the Towne with the Hauen, comming in, and Forts of Angra, which heefent vnto the King, the like whereof you may in this Booke behold ; for the which the Gouernour was greatly affected voto mee, and thewed mee much friendship. Wee had in our Lodging a French Mer- 60 chant and a Scot, that willingly would have gone with vs, to fee the Iland, but could not be fulfered : for the Portugals thinke that they would take the proportion thereof, and to teeke to defeate them of their right.

But returning to our matter, the Hands are very good, and holesome ayre, and the diseases that are most common in those Countries, though not very plentifull, but onely here and there that are mort common and of Ar, that is, a kinde of bad agre that taketh them, and maketh The agre. 4 one, are one nonnease and and their limmes, or of fome one limme : and another fick-difease. sieffe, that is called O Sange, that is, a certaine bloud, that haftely commeth spon a man as a fwelling in the eyes, or other places of the face, or of the body, and is as red as bloud, for (as they (av) it is nothing elle but meere bloud : these are two difeases like the plague, and are commonnel fickneffes in those Countries, which grow by reason of the great windinesse of the Hands. that are subject to all stormes and foule weathers, and are infeatonable morst, which is one of 10 the principal causes of these diseases : for the windes are there to strong and dangerous, that they Strong windes

continue both the Iron and the Steele of their houses, and bring them into powder: for I have feene Iron grates in the Kings Custome house, as thicke as a mans arme, and the windowes of hard free stone, which were to confumed by the winde, that the Iron in some places was become as thin as a ftraw, and the ftone in like fort; and therefore in those Countries they wie to make their Roofes and Painthoufer of itones, which they digge in the water, out of fands woon the Sea coatt of those Hands, whereon the winde hath not fo great a power to confirme it : and yet that Customehouse had not beene made aboue fix or seuen yeares before, at the most.

In this Iland belides the two Townes, there are divers great Villages, as Saint Sebalians. Saint Barboran, Altares, Gualua, Villa noua, with many other Parifhes and Hamlets: fo that for the 20 moit part it is built and inhabited, fauing onely the places that are wilde and full of Woods, which can hardly be trauelled, much leffe inhabited. Their most traffique is (as I said before) the wood that groweth in those Countries, I meane for such as deale in Merchandise, and the workemen that make it : but the rest waite for the flee:es that come and goe to and from the Spanish and Portugall Indies, from Brafilia, Cabo, Verde and Guinea : all which Countries doe commonly come vnto Tercera to refresh themselues, as lying very fitly for that purpose : so that all the inhabitants doe thereby richly maintaine themselues, and fell all their wares, as well handy workes as victuals vnto those Ships : and all the Hands round about doe as then come vnto Tercera with their wares, to fell it there. For the which cause the Englipmen and other firangers keepe continually about those Hands, being affured that all Ships for want of refreshing must of 10 force put into those llands, although at this time many Ships doe avoide those Hands, to the great

discommodity of the Ilands and the Ships. Fion Tercera Southeast, about feuen and twenty or eight and twenty miles, lyeth the Iland of Saint Michael, which is about twenty miles long, and is likewife full of Townes and Villages Southerly inhabited by Portugals, for ayre and all other things like vnto Tercera. The chiefe Towne is called Punta del Gada, where there is great traffique of English, Scots, and Frenchmen, onely (as in Tercera) because of the woad, which is more abundant in that Iland, then in all the rest of them: for that every yeare there is made above two hundreth thousand Quintals of Wood. It hath likewife great abundance of Corne, fo that they helpe to victuall all the Hands that are round about them. It hath neither Hauens nor Rivers, but onely the broad Sea, and haue leffe fafegard and 40 defence then those which are of Tercera: but there they lye not vader the commandement of any Fort : fo that many fet fayle with all the windes, and put to Sea, which in the road of Tersera they may not doe: and therefore the strangers Ships had rather fayle to Saint Michaels, for there they can not be constrained to doe anything, but what they will themselues to doe, There is also a company of Spaniards in a Castle that standeth by the Towne of Punta del Gade.

which is made by the Spaniards for the defence and maintenance of the fame towne. Prom the Hand of Saint Michaels Southwards twelve miles, lyeth the Island Santa Maria, Saint Me which is about ten or twelue miles compasse, & hath no traff que but onely of pot earth, which the other Ilands fetch from thence. It hath no Woad, but is full of all victuals like Tercera, and inhabited by the Portugals. There are no Spaniards in it : because it is a stony Country, like Ter-50 errs, and hard to boord : whereby the inhabitants themselves are sufficient and able enough to

defend it. While I remained in Tercera, the Earle of Cumberland came thither, to take in fresh water, and some other victuals; but the inhabitants would not suffer him to have it, but wounded both himfelfe and divers of his men, whereby they were forced to depart without having any

From Tercera North Northwest about seuen or eight miles, lyeth a little Iland called Gratis. fa, and is but five or fixe miles in compaffe, a very pleafant and fine Iland, full of all truits and all other victuals, fo that it not onely feedeth it felfe, but also Tercera, and the other Ilands about it, and hath no other kinde of Merchandife : it is well built and inhabited by Portugals, and hath no Soldiers in it, because it is not able to beare the charge. The Earle of Cumberland while lay Earle of Cum 60 in Tercera, came vnto that Iland, where himfelfe in person, with seuen or eight in his company berland. See

went on land, asking certaine Beafts, Hens, and other Victuals, with Wine and fresh water, which full fact. they willingly gaue him, and therewith he departed from thence, without doing them any here: for the which the inhabitants thanked him, and commended him for his curtefie, and keeping of his promife.

LIB.VIII.

Saint Gemze.

1672

From Tercera West North-west, eight or nine miles, lyeth the Hand of Saint George. It is about twelve miles long, but not about two or three miles at the furthest in breadth at is wooddy and full of hils: it hath no speciall traffique, but onely some Woad, and yet very ligile of it. The inhabitants line most by Cattell and tilling of the Land, and bring much victuals to fell in Tercera : it hath likewife many Cedar trees, and other kindes of wood, that from thence are brought vnto Tercera, and fold vnto the Loyners, which for that occasion dwell onely in Tercera.

Farael.

From Saint George Well South-well feuen miles, lyeth the Iland called Fayael, which is feuenteene or eighteene miles in compaffe ; it is one of the beit llands next vnto Tercera, and Saine Michaels e it aboundeth in all forts of victuals, both flesh and fish, so that from this Iland the most part of victuals and necessaries commeth by whole Carnels vnto Tercera: it hath likewise to much Wood, fo that many English Ships doe traffique thither, The principall road and place is the Towne called Vitta dorta: there the Ships likewife doe lye in the open Sea vader the Land. as they doe before all the other llands by this Towne there lyeth a fortrelle, but of fmall importance: and because the inhabitants of themselves doe offer to defend the Iland against all enemies, the Soldiers discharged from thence, which before that time lay in the Fort, complaining that they were not able to maintaine nor lodge them. The fame time that the Earle of Cumber. land was in the Iland of Gratiofa, he came likewife to Fayael, where at the first time that hee came, they began to refift him, but by reason of some controuersie among them, they let him land where he rafed the Castle to the ground, and sinke all their Ordnance in the Sea. taking with him certaine Caruels and Ships that lay in the road, with provision of all things that hee 20 wanted; and therewith departed agains to Sea. Whereupon the King caused the principall actors therein to be punished, and fent a company of Souldiers thither againe, which went out of Tercera, with all kinde of warlike munition, and great that, making the Fortrelle up againe, the better to defend the Hand, trufting no more in the Portugals. In that Hand are the most part of the Netherlanders off-fpring, yet they vie the Portugals language, by reason they have beene so long conversant among them, and those that vsed the Dueb tongue are all dead : they are great-

ly affected to the Netberlanders and strangers.

Farael taken taken by Earle Cumberland.

Pice.

Tercera South-west and by West twelve miles, lyeth the Iland called Pico, which is more then fifteene miles in length. It is so named of a high Mountaine that standeth therein called Pico, 30 which is to high, that some thinke it is higher then the Pico of Canaris. When it is cleare weather, it may as perfectly be seene in Tercera, as if it were not halfe a mile from thence, and yet it lyeth about twenty fine miles from it : for it is at the furthest end of the Iland towards Fayael. The top of it is seene cleare and bright, but the nether part is coursed with clouds, and with the Horizon, whereby the Hand is much spoken of. It is very fruitfull of all kindes of victuals, like Fayael, and hath great store of wood, as Cedars & all other kindes, and also the costly wood Teixo. There they build many Caruels and small Ships; and from thence, by reason of the abundance of wood, they ferue the other Ilands with wood. It is also inhabited as the rest are, their chiefe traffique being Cattle & husbandry. It hath much Wine, & the best in all those Ilands, and it hath the fauorest & pleasantest Oranges that are throughout all Portugall: so that they are brought into 40 Tercera for a present, as being there very much esteemed, and in my judgement they are the best that ever I tafted in any place, Angra, in the Hand of Tercera is the chiefe Towne and Ruler over

From Fargel Southeast three miles, and from Saint George South-west foure miles, and from

Pleafant Oranges.

Corne.

From Tercera Westward to the Iland named Flores are seventy miles: it is about seven miles compasse, it is also inhabited by Portugals, & hath no speciall merchandise, but onely some wood, it is full of Cattle, and other necessary prouitions, and lyeth open to all the world, & to whoseuer will come thither, as well Englishmen as others : for that the inhabitants have not the power to refift them. A mile from thence Northward, lyeth a little Iland of two or three miles in compaffe called DeCorno. The inhabitants are of the same people that dwell in Flores. Between those two Ilands and round about them, the Englishmen doe commonly stay, to watch the Ships that 50 come out of the West: for those are the first Ilands, that the Ships looke out for and descry, when they faile vnto Tercera, wherby the inhabitants do but little prosper, because they are at the pleafure & commandment of all that will come vnto them, and take their goods from them, as oftentimes it hapneth. Yet for all their pouerty, not to loofe both lands and goods, they must content themfelues, and faile with enery winde,

The Ile of Tercera lyeth under thirty nine degrees, in the same height that Lisbone lyeth; and is diftant from Lisbone lying right East and West two hundred and fifty Spanish miles.

Of certaine notable and memorable accidents that happened during my continuance in Tercera: in which are related many English fleetes, Sea-fights and Prizes.

He fecond of October Anno 1589, at the Towne of Villa dan Praya, in the Iland of Tercera, two men being in a field hard without the towne were killed with lightning. The ninth of

the fame month there arrived in Tercera 14. Ships, that came from the Spanifb Indies, laden with Cochenile, Hides, Gold, Silver, Pearles, and other rich water. They were fifty in company, when they departed out of the Iland of Hanana, whereof, in their comming out of the Channell, eleuen funk in the fame Channell by foule weather, the reit by a fforme were scattered & seperated one from the other. The next day there came another Ship of the lame company, that failed close vnder the Hand, lo to get into the Road; where the met with an English Ship, that had not about three call Peeces, & the Spaniard twelve. They fought a long time together, which we being in the Iland might flan! & behold: wherupon the Gouernor of Terera ient two Boats of Musketiers to helpe the Ship; but before they could come at her, the English Ship had those her under water, and to we law her linke into the Sea, with all her failes vp, and not arry thing feelie of her about the water. The Englishmen with their Boate laued the Captaine and about thirty others with him, but not one peny worth of the goods, & yet in the Ship there was at the leaft to the value of 200000. Dicats in Gold, Silver, and Pearles, the rest of the men were drowned, which might be about to persons, among the which were some Friers and women, which the Englishmen would not saue; Those that they had faued they set on land; & then they failed away. The 27.0f the fame month, the faid 14. Ships having refreshed the clues in the Iland, departed from Tercera to wards Simil, and comming vobs the coalt of Spaine, they were taken by the Englift Ships, that lay there to watch for them, two onely excepted which escaped away, & the rest were wholly carried into England. About the same time the Earle of Cumberland, with one of the Queenes Ships, and fine or fix

20 more, kept about those Hands and came oftentimes so close under the Hand, and to the Road of Angra, that the people on land might easily tell all his men that he had aboord, and knew such as walked on the Hatches: they of the Hand not once flooting at them, although they might easily have done it, for they were within Musket shot both of the Towne and Fort. In these places he continued for the space of two Moneths, and failed round about the Hands, and landed in Gratiofs and Farael, as in the description of those Ilands I have already declared. Here he tooke divers Ships and Carvels, which he fent into England: fo that those of the Hand durft not once put forth their heads. At the fame time about three or foure dayes after the Earle of Cumberland had beene in the Iland of Fayael, and was departed from thence, there arrived in the faid Iland the number be of Fayael fix Indian Ships, whose Generall was one luan Dorym: and there they discharged in true. to the Iland fortie Millions of Gold and Silver. And having with all speede refreshed their Ships, fearing the comming of the Englishmen, they fet faile, and arrived fafely in Saint Lucas, not meeting with the enemy, to the great good lucke of the Spaniards, and hard fortune of the Englishmen; for that within leffe then two daies, after the Gold and Silver was laden again into the Spanilb Ships, the Earle of Cumberland failed againe by that Hand; fo that it appeared that God would not let them haue it, for if they had once had fight thereof, without doubt it had beene

theirs, as the Spaniards themselves confessed.

brought the newes, but the reft were drowned.

In the moneth of November, thereamized in Tercera two great Ships, which were the Admirall and Viceadmirall of the Fleete laden with Silver, who with flormy weather were seperated from the Fleete, and had beene in great torment and diffresse, and ready to finke; for they were an forced to vie all their Pumps ; fo that they wished a thousand times to have met with the Engliftmen to whom they would willingly have given their Silver, and all that ever they brought with them, onely to faue their lives. And although the Earle of Cumberland lay still about those llands, yet they met not with him, so that after much paine and labor they got into the Road before Angra, where with all speed they vnladed, &discharged aboue 5. Millions of Silver, all in peeces of 8. and 10, pound great : fo that the whole Ray lay couered with plates & Chefts of Silver, Fine Millions. full of Ryals of eight, most wonderfull to behold : each Million being ten hundred thousand Ducats befides Pearles, Gold, and other stones, which were not registred. The Admiral & chief commander of those Ships and Fleete called Alnaro Flores de Quiniones was licke of the Neapolitan diteale, and was brought to land, whereof not long after he dyed in Symilia. He brought with him the Kings broad Scale and full authority to be Generall & chiefe commander vpon the Seas, and 50 of all Fleets or Ships, and of all places & llands, or Lands wherefoeuer he came : whereupon the Gouernor of Tercera did him great honor, and betweene them it was concluded, perceiuing the weaknesse of their Ships, and the danger of the Englishmen, that they would send the Shipsempty with Soldiers to conuey them, either to Simil or Lisbone, where they could first arrive, with adulte Pato his Maiefly of all that had path, and that he would give order to fetch the Silver, with good and lafe convoy. Wherepuon the laid Aluaro Flores staied there, under colour of keeping the Silver,

but specially because of his difease, and for that they were afraid of the Englishmen. This Aluaro Flores had alone for his owne part abone fifty thousand Ducats in Pearles, which he shewed vnto vs, and fought to fell them, or barter them with vs for Spices, or bils of exchange. The faid two 60 Ships let faile with three or foure hundred men, as well Soldiers as others, that came with them and not one man faued. The Vice-admirall cut downe her Mast, and ranne the Ship on ground out of India, and being at Sea had a storme, wherewith the Admirall burst aud sunke in the Sea, hard by Sentunal, where it built in peeces, some of the men fauing themselves by swimming, that

CHAP.14.

In the fame moneth, there came two great ships out of the Spanish Indies , and being within halfe a mile of the Road of Tercera, they met with an English thippe, that after they had fought long together, tooke them both. About leven or eight moneths before, there had beene an En. glif (hip in Tercera, that vnder the name of a Frenchman came to traffique in the lland, there to lade wood, and being discouered was both ship and goods conficated to the Kings vie and all the men kept priloners : yet went they vp and downe the ffreets to get their liuings, by labouring like flaues, being in deed as fafe in that Iland, as if they had beene in prifon. But in the endy pon a Sanday all the Sailers went downe behind the Hils called Brefill : where they found a Fifherboat, whereinto they got, and rowed into the Sea to the Earle of Comberlands thip, which to their great fortune chanced at that time to come by the Hand, and anchored with his thips about 10 halfe a mile from the Road of Angra, hard by two small Hands, which lye about a Bales shoe from the Hand, and are full of Goats, Buckes, and Sheepe, belonging to the Inhabitants of the Iland of Tercera. Those Saylers knew it well, and thereupon they rowed voto them with their Boats, and lying at Anchor that day, they fetched as many Goats and Sheepe as they had neede of : which those of the Towne and of the Hand well faw and beheld, yet durit not once go forth. fothere remayned no more on Land but the Mafter, and the Merchant, of the faid Englifb thin. This Mafter had a Brother in Law dwelling in England, who having newes of his brothers imprisonment in Tercera, got licence of the Queene of England, to fet forth a ship, therewith to fee if he could recouer his losses of the Spaniards, by taking tome of them, and so to redeeme his brother, that lay priioner in Tercera, and he it was, that tooke the two Spanish thippes before the 20 Towne. The Matter of the fhip aforefaid, standing on the shore by me, and looking vpon them, for he was my great acquaintance, the flaipss being taken, that were worth three hundred thoufand Duckets, he ient all the men on Land fauing only two of the principall Gentlemen which he kept abourd, thereby to ransome his brother; and sent the Pilot of one of the Indian ships that were taken, with a Letter to the Gouernour of Tercera : wherein he wrote that hee should deliuer him his brother, and he would fend the two Gentlemen on Land: if not, he would faile with them into England, as indeed he did, because the Gouernour would not doe it, faying that the Gentleman might make that fuite to the King of Spaine himfelfe. This Spanish Pilot we bid to Supper with vs, and the Englishmen likewise, where hee shewed vsall the manner of their fight, much commending the order and manner of the Englapmens fighting, as also for their courteous 30 ving of him; but in the end the English Pilot likewife thole away in a French thip, without paying any ransome as yet.

In the moneth of Ianuary 1590, there arrived one ship alone in Treera, that came from the Spanish Indices, and brough newes, that there was a sheer of a hundred ships which pur out from the Firme Land of the Spanish Indices, and by a storme were driven you the Coast Called Fierda, where they were all cast away, she having only escaped, wherein these were great riches, and many men lost, as it may well be thought is to that they made their account that of two hounded and twentie ships, that for certaine were knowned to have put out of Nons Spaigna, Santo Domingo, Flancas, Capowerde, Brafilia, Goinea, che. In the yeare 1989, to layle for Spaise in Portugal, there were not about fourteene or sittene of them arrived these in safetie, all the rest being

either drowned, burft or taken. In the fame Moneth of Ianuary, there arrived in Tercera fifteen or fixteene ships that came from Simila, which were most Flie boats of the low Countries, and fome Brittons that were arrested in Spaine: these came full of Souldiers, and well appointed with municion, to lade the filuer that lay in Tercera, and to fetch Aluares de Flores, by the Kings commandement into Spaine. And because that time of the yeerethere is alwayes fformes about those Ilands, therefore they durit not enter into the Road of Tercera, for that as then it blew fo great a storme, that some of their thips that had anchored, were forced to cut downe their Mafts, and were in danger to bee loft : and among the rest a ship of Biscay ranne against the Land, and was stricken in pieces, but all the men faued themselues. The other ships were forced to keepe the Sea, and separate themselues one from the other, where winde and weather would drive them, vntill the fitteenth of March : for that in all that time they could not have one day of faire weather to anchor in, whereby they indured much miserie, curfing both the filuer and the Hand. This storme being past, they chanced to meete with small English thip of about fortie tunnes in bignesse, which by reason of the great wind could not beare all her failes : fo they fet vpon her , and tooke her , and with the English flagge in their Admirals sterne they came as proudly into the Hauen, as if they had conquered all the Realme of England : but as the Admirall that bare the English flagge vpon her sterne, was entring into the Road, there came by chance two English ships by the Hand, that paid her so well for her paines, that they were forced to cry Miferwordia, and without all doubt had taken her, if the had beene but a mile further in the Sea : but becaule the got under the Fortreffe, which al- 62 to began to shoot at the Englishmen, they were forced to leave her, and to put further into the Sea, having flaine five or fixe of the Spaniards. The Englishmen that were taken in the small thip were put vinder hatches, and coupled in bolts, and after they had beene Prifoners three or foure dayes, there was a Spanife Enfigne-bearer in the fhip, that had a brother flaire in the fleet that came for

England, who as then, minding to reuenge his death, and withall to shew his man-hood to the English Captiuses, that were in the English Shippe, which they had taken, as a storefaid, tooke a Ponyard in his hand, and went downer under the Hatches, where finding the poore Englishmen itting in bolts, with the same Ponyard he stabbed sixe of them to the heart: which two others of them perceiving, clasped each other about the middle, because they would not bee mutt ered by him, three themselves into the Sea, and there were drowned. This self was of all the Seasian and individed and very ill taken, so that they carried the Spaniard prisoner with Lishmen, where being articule, the King of Spanie willed he should be sent into England, that the Queene of England might vie him as she thought good: which senence his striends by intreating to to be so received, now withshanding he commanded he should without all facour be reheated? but you a good Friday, the Cardinall going to Maise, all the Captaines and Commanders made so great intreatie for him that in the end they got his pardot. This I though good to note, that men might vadertand the bloudte and honest minds to give that men might vadertand the bloudte and honest minds to when they have men when

their moversion. The fame two Esphib hips, which followed the Spanifb Admirall, till hee had got vinder the Fort of Terera, as I had before, par into the Sea, where they met with an other Spanifb flips being of the fame fleete, that had likewise beens featered by the floring and was only milling for the rellty in the Road at this small flip the Esphilmen coke, and fent all the men on flore, nor burning any of them to the florehad knowne, what had beene done who the forefaid En-

20 glib Captines, I beleeue they would foone have revenged themselves, as afterward many an innoent foule payed for it. This ship thus taken by the Englishmen, was the same that was kept and conflicated in the Ilando Terera, by the Englishmen that got out of the Iland in assume that all the same from the Indies, where with they failed to Saine Lucas, where it was also arreited by the Duke, and appoined to goe in company to section the filter in Terera, because it was a shippe that slyded well: but among the Spaniards sheete it was the meaneth of the Company. By this meanes it was taken from the Spaniards, and carried into England, and the Owners had it againe; when they least thousands.

The nineteenth of March, the aforefaid fhips, being nineteene in number, fee faile, hauing Lagon The nineteenth of March, the aforefaid fhips, being nineteene in number, fee faile, hauing Lagon the Kings filter, and received in Albano Flores the Dissinous; with his company, and good proution of necessaries and admitted to fight valiantly to the last man, before they would yeeld or lofe their riches; and although they ite their courfe for Saint Lucas, the wind draw them wnto Lifbours, which (as it feemed) was willing by his force to helpe them, and to bring them thither in fafetic: although Albano de Wass willing by his force to helpe them, and to bring them thither in fafetic: although Albano de Flores; both against the wind and weather would perfore haue failed to Saint Lucas, but being contrained by the wind, and importunite of the Sailers, that protested they would require their losses and damages of him, he was content to faile to Lifones; from whence the filter was Land carried into Saintia. At Cape Saint Florens, there is a Fleet of twentie English fhippers, to witch for the Armada, to that it they had put into Saint Lucas, they had failen right into their head, which if the wind laid ferrued they had done. And therefore they may by that the wind

water nor the Artimans, to that it mely had been. And therefore they may fay that the wind had lent them a happir Voyage; for if the Englipmen had mer with them, they had furely been in great danger, and polibly but few of them had cleaped, by realon of the feare wherewith they were polified, becault Fortune or rather God was wholly againft them. Which is a fufficient caule to make the Spainards out of heart, to the contrariet og jute the Engliffmen more courage, and to make them bolder for that they are victorious, flout and valiant: and leeing all their enterprizes due take to good effect, that thereby they are become Lords and Masters of the Sea; and need care for no man, as it well appeared by this burief Distourie.

In the month of March 1590. There was a Blafing Starrewith a taile feene in Tercera, that continued four nights together, stretching the tayle towards the South.

In the moneth of Mey, a Caruell of Fayarlarriued at Tercera, in the Hauen or Road of Argra, laden with Oxen, Sheepe, Hennes, and all other kinds of vickulas, and full of people, which by a forme had broken her Ruther, whereby the Sec act her about and therewith the funks, and in her were drowned three children, and a Firet Franciscan, the reft of the men faued themselves by fwimming, and by helpe from thehlore, but all the Cartle and Hennes came drowned to had the Firet was buried with a great Procession and Solemnitte, etherming him for a Saint, because he was taken up deat with his Booke between the isames; for the which cause curry man came to looke on him as a Mirale, guing great Offerings to lay Maifes for his loote.

The first of August, the Governor of Treera, received adulte out of Peringal and Spaine, that two years is before the date of the Letters, there were hydrod out of England twelve great hip yes of well appointed, with full reliabition to take their iournie, seunor of them into the Peringal Indus, and the other five to O'Malacas; of the which five, two were cast away in passing the Straits of Magellanes, and three Lyyled to Malacas; but what they had done there, was as then not knowne. The other seven pushed the Cupe de bona Speranza, and arrived in Indus, where they put into the Coalt of O'Malabares, but bet them goe agains: and two Turk-sh Gallies, that came

. . .

out of the Straits of Mecca or the Red Sea, to whom likewife they did no hurt. And there they laded their fhips wis Spices, and returned backe againe on their way : but where or in what place they had laden, it was not certainely knowne, fauing onely that thus much was written by the Gouernour of India, and fent ouer Land to Venice, and from thence to Madrill.

Six M.Frobilher.

The feventh of August, a Nauie of English ships was feene before Tercera, beeing twentie in number, and fine of them the Queenes thips : their Generall was one Martin Frobifber, as wee after had intelligence. They came purposely to watch for the fleet of the Spanish Indies, and for the Indian thips, and the thippes of the Countries in the West : which put the Handers in great feare, specially those of Fayael, for that the Englishmen sent a Trumpet to the Governour to aske certaine wine, flesh, and other victuals for their money, and good friendship. They of Farael did nor onely refuse to give eare vnto them, but with a shot killed their Messenger or Trumpetter : which the Englishmen tooke in cuil part, fending them word that they were best to looke to themselves, and stand upon their guard, for they meant to come and visit them whether they would or no. The Gouernour made them answere, that he was there, in the behalfe of his Maiestie of Spaine and that he would doe his best, to keepe them out, as he was bound : but no thing was done, although they of Farael were in no little feare, fending to Tercera for aide, from whence they had certaine Barkes with Powder and Munition for warre, with some Bisket and other necellary prouition.

The thirtieth of August, we received very certaine newes out of Portugal, that there were 20 eightie thips put out of the Caranho, laden with Victuals, Munition, Money, and Souldiers, to goe for Britaine to aide the Catholikes and Leaguers of France, against the King of Nauarre. At the fame time, two Netherland Hulkes, comming out of Portugal to Tercera, beeing halfe the Seasouer, met with foure of the Queenes shippes, their Generall beeing Sir lobn Hankins, that flaved them, but let them goe againe, without doing them any harme. The Netberlanders reported, that each of the Queenes ships had eightie Peeces of Ordnance, and that Captaine Drake lay with fortie thins in the English Channell, watching for the Armie of Carnello and likewife that there lay at the Cape Saint Vincent tenne other English thips, that if any thips escaped from the Ilands, they might take them. Those tidings put the Ilanders in great feare, lest if they failed of the Spanish fleete, and got nothing by them, that then they would fall upon the Hands, be- 20 caule they would not returne emptie home, whereupon they held straight watch, sending aduife voto the King what newes they heard.

The first of September, there came to the lland of Saint Michael a Portugal ship, out of the Hauen of Pernanbuce, in Brafilia, which brought newes that the Admirall of the Portugall fleet, that came from India, having miffed the Hand of Saint Helena, was of necessitie constrained to put in at Pernanbuco, although the King had expreily under a great penaltie forbidden him foto doe, because of the Wormes that there doe spoile the ships. The same ship wherein Bernaldine Rybero, was Admirall, the yeere before 1589. Sayled out of Liftone into the Indies, with fine thips in her company, whereof but foure got into India, the hit was neuer heard of, so that it was thought to be cast away : The other foure returned fafe againe into Portugal, though the Ad- 40 mirall was much spoiled, because he met with two English ships, that fought long with him, and

flue many of his men, but yet he escaped from them.

The fift of the same moneth, there arrived in Tercera, a Caruell of the Iland of Corno, and brought with her fiftie men that had beene spoyled by the Englishmen, who had fet them on shore in the Hand of Corno, being taken out of a shippe that came from the Spanifo Indies, they brought tydings that the Englishmen had taken foure more of the Indian ships, and a Carnell with the King of Spaines Letters of aduite for the thips comming out of the Portugall Indies, and that with those which they had taken, they were at the least forty English ships together, so that not one Barke escaped them, but fell into their hands, and that therefore the Portugall ships comming out of India, durft not put into the Hands, but tooke their course underfortie and forcie two de- 50 grees, and from thence failed to Lifton, flunning likewife the Cape Saint Vincent, otherwife they could not have had a prosperous journey of it, for that as then the Sea was full of English thips. Wherupon the King admied the fleet, lying in Hanana, in the Spanish Indies ready to come for Spaine, that they should stay there all that yeere till the next yeere, because of the great danger they might fall into by the Englishmen, which was no small charge and hinderance to the fleet, for that the ships that lie there doe consume themselues, and in a manner eate vp one another, by reason of the great number of people, together with the scarcitie of all things, so that many thips chose rather, one by one to aduenture themselues alone, to get home, then to stay there : all which fell into the Englishmens hands, whereof divers of the men were brought into Tercera, for that a whole day we could fee nothing elfe, but spoyled men fet on shore, some out 60 of one ship some out of another, that pittie it was to see, all of them cursing the Englishmen, and their owne fortunes, with those that had beene the causes to prouoke the Englishmen to fight, and complayning of the small remedie and order taken therein by the King of Spaines Officers.

The nineteenth of the same moneth, there came to Tercera a Caruel of Lifen, with one of the

Kings Officers, to cause the goods that were faued out of the ship, which came from Malacea, (for the which we stayed there) to be laden, and lent to Lifton. And at the same time there put out of the Carunda one Don Alonfo de Baffan, with fortie great ships of warre to come vato the Ilands, there to watch for the fleet of the Spanish and Portugal Indies, and the goods of the Malaces hip being laden, they were to convoy them all together into the River of Life on : but being certaine dayes at Sea, alwayes having a contrary wind they could not get who the Hands: only two of them that were feattered from the fleet, they prefently returned backe to feeke them ; in the meane time the King changed his minde, and caufed the fleet to flay in India, as I faid before : and therefore he fent word vnto Don Alongo de Baffan, that hee should return e againe to the Ca-10 rands, which he prefently did (without doing any thing, nor once approching neere the llands, fauing only the two forefaid thips, for he well knew that the Englifemen lay by the Hand of Corso, but he would not wifit them : and fo he returned to the Hausn of Carmba, whereby our goods that came from Malacea, were yet to thip, and cruffed vp againe, forced to flay a more fortunace

time, with patience perforce. The three and twentieth of O Cober, there arrived in Tecera 2 Caruell, with adule out of

Portingal, that of fine ships, which in the yeere 1 550. were laden in Lift on for the Indies, foure of them were turned agains to Portingall, after they had beene foure moneths abroad, and that the Admirall, wherein the Vice-roy called Mathia de Alburkerke lailed, had only gotten to India, as afterward newes thereof was brought ouer Land, having beene at the least eleven monethes at 20 Sea, and neuer faw Land, and came in great milery to Malacca. In this ship there died by the 180. mendie

Sea, and neuer faw Land, and came in great mitery to Datacess. In this tinp tiete even by the way two hundred and eightie men, according to a note by himfelfe made, and lent to the Cario one Woyage; one Woyage; one Voyage, dinall at $Li\beta$ on, with the names and furnames of enery man, together with a description of his by one mans Voyage, and the mifery they had indured : which was only done, because he would not lose the vanite. gouernment of India: and for that cause he had swotne either to lose his life, or to arrive in India as indeed he did afterwards, but to the great danger, losse and hinderance of his company. that were forced to buy it with their lines, and onely for want of prouision, as it may well bee thought: for he knew full well that if he had returned backe againe into Portingall, as the other thips did, hee should have beene casheered from his Indian Regiment, because the people began alreadie to murmurre at him, for his proude and loftie minde. And among other things that 30 shewed his pride the more, behind aboue the Gallery of his ship, he caused Fortune to be painted. and his owne Picture with a staffe standing by her, as it were threatning Forume, with this Poesie, Quero que vencus, that is, I will have thee to overcome: which beeing read by the Cardinall and other Gentlemen (that to honour him aboord his thip) it was thought to be a point of ex-

ceeding folly. But it is no ftrange matter among the Portingalle, for they about all others mult of torce Let the Foole peope out of their fleenes, specially when they are in authoritie : for that I knew the faid Mathias de Alberkerk in India, being a Souldier and a Captaine, where he was e-Reemed and accounted for one of the best of them, and much honoured, and beloued of all men. as behaving himfelfe courteoutly to every man : whereby they all defired that he might be Viceroy. But when he once had received his Patent with full power and authoritie from the King to DeVice-roy, hee changed so much from his former behaviour, that by reason of his pride, they all began to feare and curie him, and that before he departed out of Lifton, as it is often feene in many men that are advanced vnto state and dignitie.

The twentieth of Ianuary, Auno 1591, there was newes brought out of Portingall into Tersera, that the Englishmen had taken a thip, that the King had fent into the Portingal Indies, with aduile to the Vice-roy, for the returning againe of the foure ships that should have gone to India, and because the ships were come backe againe, that ship was stuffed and laded as full of goods as possible it might be, hauing likewise in ready money fine hundred thousand Duckets in Rials of eight, besides other wares. It departed from Liftone in the moneth of November 1590. and met with the Engliftmen, with whom for a time it fought : but in the end it was taken and carried 50 into England with men and all, yet when they came there the men were let at libertie, and retur-

ned into Liftone, where the Captaine was committed Prifoner: but hee excufed himfelfe, and was released, with whom I spake my selfe, and he made this report vnto me. At the same time also they tooke a thip that came from the Myne laden with Gold, and two thips laden with Pepper, and Spices that were to faile into Italie, the Pepper onely that was in them, being worth 178000. Duckets: all theleships were carried into England, and made good prize.

In the moneth of July , An. 1591, there happened an Earth-quake in the Hand of S. Michaell, which continued from the fix and twentieth of July to the twelfth of August : in which time Earthquake no man durft flay within his house, but fled into the fields, fasting and praying, with great for- most terrible. 40 tow for that many of their houles fell downe, and a Towne called Villa Franca, was almost cleanerazed to the ground all the Cloysters and houses shaken to the earth, and thereia some

people flaine. The Land in tome places rose vp, and the Cliffes removued from on place to another, and some Hils were defaced and made even with the ground. The Earthquake was so Arong, Province. that the flips which lay in the Road, and on the Sea, shaked as if the World would hate turned round: there sprang also a Fountaine out of the earth, from whence for the space of four dayes,

1678

Sir Richard

Hat Tom. 2.

Tais Storie

There were

Shippes the

Sir Richard

counfeiled

(which had

and thought

to made way

thorow their

there flowed a most cleare water, and after that it ceased. At the same time they heard such thunder and noise under the earth, asif all the Dinels in hell had beene affembled together in that place, wherewith many died for feare. The Hand of Tercera shooke foure times together. to that it feemed to turne about, but there happened no misfortune vato it. Earthquakes are common in those Ilands, for about twenty yeares past there happened another earthquake. where in a high Hill that lyeth by the same towne of Villa Franca, fell halfe downe, and covered all the towne with earth and killed many men.

. The fine and twentieth of August, the Kings Armada, comming out of Farolartiued in Terces ra, being in all thirty Ships, Biskaies, Portugals, and Spaniards : and ten Dutch flye-boates, that were arefted in Lisbone to ferue the King, besides other small Ships Pataxos, that came to serue to as meffengers from place to place, and to difcouer the Seas. This Nauie came to flay for and connov the Sups that thould come from the Spanish Indies, and the five-boates were appointed in their returns home, to take in the goods that were faued in the loft Ship that came from Malacea, and to convoy it to Lisbone.

The thirteenth of September the faid Armado arrived at the Hand of Corne, where the Eng. Ulmen wish about fixteene Ships, as then lay, flaying for the Spanish Fleete: whereof fome or the most part were come, and there the English were in good hope to have taken them. But when they perceived the Kings Army to be firong, the Admirall being the Lord Thomas How. and, commanded his Fleete not to fall your them, nor any of them once to seperate their Shippes Greenuile. See from him, valefie he gaue commission to to doe : notwithstanding the Vice-Admirall, Sir Rich- 20 and Greenfield, being in the Ship called the Remenge, went into the Spanish Fleete, and shot among them, doing them great hurt, and thinking the rest of the company would have followpenned by Sie ed : which they did not but left him there, and failed away; the cause why they could not know: which the Spaniards perceiving, with feuen or eight Ships they boorded her, but she withstood but fix of thefe them all, fighting with them at the leaft twelve houres together, and funke two of them, one Queenes : and being a new double Flie-boate of twelve thouland tunnes, and Admirall of the Flie-boates, the other a Biscaine: But in the end by reason of the number that came upon her, she was taken, but Greenstie ftaid to their great lose; for they had lost in fighting, and by drowning about four hundred men; and to recover his of the English were slaine about a hundred, Sir Richard Greenfield himselfe being wounded in his men on thore; braine, whereof afterwards he died, He was borne into the Ship called the Saint Paul, wherein 30 93.of his men were ficke. He was the Admirall of the Fleete Don Alonfo de Barfan : there his wounds were dreft by the Spascorned to five nilly Surgeons, but Don Along himselfe would neither fee him, nor speake with him; all the as the Mafter rest of the Captaines and Gentlemen went to visite him, and to comfort him in his hard fortune, wondring at his courage and flout heart, for that he shewed not any signe of faintnesse nor changing of colow. But feeling the houre of death to approach, he spake these words in Spanish, and beeneberter) faid : Here dre ! Richard Greenfield, with a joyfull and quiet minde, for that I have ended my life at a true Souldier ought to doe, that hath fought for his Countrey, Queene, Religion, and honour, whereby my Soule most toyfull departeth out of this body, and shall alwayes leave behinde it an enerlasting fame of a valiant and true Soldier, that hath done his duetie, as bee was bound to doe. When he had finished these or such other like words, he gaue up the Ghost with great and stout courage, and no man 40 could perceive any true figne of heavineffe in him.

This Sir Richard Greenfield was a great and a rich Gentleman in England, and had great yearsly reuenewes of his owne inheritance : but he was a man very vnquiet in his minde, and greatly affected to warre; in so much as of his owne private motion he offered his fervice to the Queene. him, becalmed He had performed many valiant acts, and was greatly feared in these Ilands, and knowne of every man; but of nature very severe, so that his owne people hated him for his fiercenesse, and spake very hardly of him : for when they first entred into the Fleete or Armado, they had their menge could not feele her failes great faile in a readinelle, and might possibly enough haue failed away; for it was one of the best nor helme, and Ships for faile in England; and the Mafter perceiuing that the other Ships had left them, and folwasboorded lowed not after, commanded the great faile to be cut, that they might make away : but Sir Rich- 50 by the S. Philip ard Greenfield threatned both him, and all the rest that were in the Ship, that if any man laid hand vpon it, he would cause him to be hanged, and so by that occasion they were compelled to fight, and in the end were taken. He was of to hard a complexion, that as hee continued among the Spanish Captaines while they were at dinner or supper with him, hee would caroufe three or foure Glasses of Wine, and in a brauery take the Glasses betweene his teeth, and crash feuerall Armathem in peeces, and (wallow them downe, so that often times the bloud ran out of his mouth without any harme at all voto him : and this was told me by divers credible persons that many times flood and beheld him. The Englishmen that were lest in the Ship, as the Captaine of the fpent to the

laftbarrellinor had fifth about 100 found mento fulfaine to the brunt. Yet the endured fifter ne houres fight, fifteene Armadas by turne, 800, flot, 60 many entries, 53, failes of men of warre, and 10000, men to doe this. After all this, Sir R. Greunfeld now wounded, commanded to be " vp the Ship but the Captaine intreating to the contrary, he Miker was fent, vnknowne to Sir R Greefield, to treat a composition with a tran the Generall, who yeelded their lives to be faued, and to be fint for England, the better for to pay raniome. but free meane time from prison and Gallie. Almost 1000,01 the enemies were flaine in this light. Thus have I given you the birish of Sir Walters report also, tomake this storie compleate. Soldiers,

CHAP.14. Great surrefie shewed. The Reuenge cast away in Tercera.

Souldiers, the Master and others were dispersed into divers of the Spany Ships that had taken them, where there had almost a new fight arisen betweene the Biscaines and the Portugals; while each of them would have the honour to have first boorded her, so that there grew a great noise and quarrell among them, one taking the chiefe Ancient, and the other the Flagge, and the Captaine and enery one held his owne. The ships that had boorded her were altogether out of order and broken, and many of their men hurt, whereby they were compelled to come into the Iland of Tercers, there to repaire themselves: where being arrived, I and my chamber-fellow, to heare fome newes went abourd one of the Ships being a great Biscaine, and one of the twelue Apofiles, whose Captaine was called Bertandono, that had bin Generall of the Biscaines in the fleete to that went for England. He leeing vs, called vs vp into the Gallery, where with great curtefie hereceized vs, being as then fet at dinner with the English Captaine that fat by him, and had on a lute of blacke Veluet; but he could not tell vs any thing, for that he could speake no other language but English and Latine, which Bartandono also could a little speake. The English Captaine that he might come on land with his weapon by his fide, and was in our lodging with the Englifoman that was kept priloner in the Hand, being of that thip whereof the failers got away, as I laid before. The Gouernour of Tercera bad him to dinner, and fhewed him great curtefie. The Matter likewise with licence of Bartandono came on land, and was in our lodging, and had arthe leaft ten or twelve wounds, as well in his head, as on his body, whereof after that being at Sea, betweene Lisbone and the llands he died. The Captaine wrote a Letter, wherein he de-20 clared all the manner of the fight, and left it with the English Merchant that lay in our lodging, to find it to the Lord Admirall of England. The England Captaine comming to Lisbone, was there well received, and not any hurt done vnto him, but with good condoy fent to Sentunal, and from thence tayled into England, with all the self of the Englishmen that were taken

The Spanish Armie stated at the Hand of Corno till the last of September, to assemble the rest of the Fleete together: which in the end were to the number of one hundred and forty fayle of Ships, parely comming from India, and parely of the Army, and being altogether ready vnto faile to Tercera in good company, there foldinly role to hard and cruell a storme, that those of the Great storme,

Hand did affirme, that in mans memory there was neuer any fuch feene or heard of before : for 30 it seemed the Sea would have swallowed up the Hands, the water mounting higher then the Cliffes, which are to high that it amafeth a man to behold them : but the Sea reached aboue them, and living fiftes were throwne vpon the land. This ftorme continued not onely a day or two with one winde, but seven or eight dayes continually, the winde turning round about, in all places of the compate, at the leaft twice or thrice during that time, and all alike, with a continuall stormeand tempest most terrible to behold, euen to vs that were on shore, much more Greathuris. then to fuch as were at Sea : fo that onely on the Coatts and Clifts of the Hand of Tercera, there were about twelue Ships cast away, and not onely upon the one side, but round about it in every corner: whereby nothing elfe was heard but complaining, crying, lamenting, and telling here is a ship broken in peeces against the Cliffes, and there another, and all the men drowned: so that 40 for the space of twenty dayes after the storme, they did nothing else but fish for dead men, that Reseggereues.

for the space of twenty dayes after the storme, they did nothing encount and not dead men, they god with the continually came driding on the shore. Among the rest was the English ship called the Renenge, Jose of about that was call away young Chiffe neere to the Hand of Tereers, where it brake in a hundred pee- 100.0therships ces, and funke to the ground, having in her fewenty men Galleges, Biscaines, and others, with of the spaniards some of the captine Englishmen, whereof but one was laued that got vp vpon the Cliffes aliue, attending her and had his body and head all wounded, and he being on thore brought vs the newes, defiring to fates: as great be fhriuen, and thereupon prefently died. The Reusage had in her divers faire Braffe Peeces, that were all funke in the Sea, which they of the Hand were in good hope to weigh vp againe the next Summer following. Among these Ships that were call away about Tercera, was likewise a Flie-boate, one of those that had bin arested in Portugal to serue the King, called the White 50 Done. The Master of her, was one Cornelinu Martenson of Schiedam in Holland, and there were in her one hundred Souldies, as in every one of the rest there was. He being over ruled by the Captaine, that he could not be Master of his owne, fayling here and there at the mercy of God, as the storme droughim, in the end came within the fight of Tercera: which the Spaniards per-

ceiuing, thought all their fafety onely to confist in putting into the Road, compelling the Mafter and the Pilot to make towards the lland, although the Master refused to doe it, saying, that they were most fore there to be cast away, and vererly spoiled but the Captain called him drunkard, & Heretick, and striking him with a staffe, commanded him to do as he would have him. The Mafter feeing this, and being compelled to doe it, faid: well then my Mafters, feeing it is the desire of you all to be cast away, I can but loofe one life; and therewith desperately he failed to-60 wards the shoare, and was on that side of the sland, where there was nothing effe but hard stones and Rockes, as high as Mountaines, most terrible to behold, where some of the Inhabitants stood

with long ropes and corke bound at the end thereof, to throw them downe vnto the men, that they might lay hold upon them and faue their hues; but few of them got so neere, most of them being calt away, and smitten in peeces before they could get to the wall. The Ship sailed in this Aaaaaaa

fquadrons, and made fome foring loofe till the great-neffe of the S.Philipof 1500 tuns being in the winde of his failes; fo nenge could not and foure others. Thefe were bearen

das affailed

her. All her

Powder was

manner (as I faid before) towards the Hand, and approaching to the shoare, the Master being an old man, and full of yeares, cailed his Sonne that was in the ship with him, and having imbraced one another, and taken their last farewell, the good old father willed his Sonne not to take care for him, but feeke to faue himfelte : for (faid he) fonne, thou art yong, and may have fome hope to faue thy life, but as for me it is no great matter (I am old) what become of me, and therewith each of these shedding many teares, as every louing father and kinde childe may well confider ; the ship fell upon the Cliffes and brake in peeces, the Father on the one fide, the sonne on the other fide falling into the fea, each laying hold upon that which came next to hand, but to no purpose; for the sea was so high and furious, that they were all drowned, and onely sourceteene or fitteene faued themselves by swimming, with their legges and armes halfe broken and to out of ioynt; among the which was the Masters sonne, and soure other Dutch Boyes : the rest of the Spaniards and failers, with the Captaine and Mafter were drowned: whose heart would not melt with teares to behold fo grieuous a tight, specially confidering with himselfe that the greatelt cause thereof was the bealtlinesse and intolency of the Spaniards, as in this onely example may well be feene : whereby may be confidered how the other ships sped, as we our selues did in part behold, and by the men that were faued did heare more at large, as also some others of our Countries on that as then were in the like danger can well witnesse.

On the other Hands the loffe was no leffe then in Tercera; for on the Hand of Saint George there were two Ships cast away : on the Iland of Pico two Ships : on the Iland of Gratiofa three fhips, & belides those there came everywhere round about divers peeces of broken ships, & other 20 things fleeting towards the Hands, wherewith the Sea was all couered most pittifull to behold. On the Hand of Saint Michael, there were foure Ships cast away, and betweene Tercera and Saint Michaels; three more were lunke, which were feene and heard to crie out, whereof not one man was faued. The rest put into the Sea without Masts, all torne and rent : so that of the whole Fleete and Armado, being one hundred and forty ships in all, there were but thirty two or thirty three arrived in Spaine and Portagall, yea and those few with so great milery, paine and labour. that not two of them arrived there together, but this day one, and to morrow another next day the third. & so one after the other to the number aforefaid. All the rest were cast away you the Ilands, and overwhelmed in the fea: whereby may be confidered what great loffe and hinderance they received at that time : for by many mens judgements it was effeemed to be much more 30 then was left by their Armie that came for England, and it may well be thought, and prefumed. that it was no other but a just plague purposely fent by God vpon the Spaniards, and that it might truely be faid, the taking of the Resenge was justly revenged voon them, and not by the might or force of man, but by the power of God, as some of them openly faid in the lile of Tercera, that they believed verily God would confume them, and that he tooke part with Lutberans and Heretickes: faying further, that so soone as they had throwne the dead body of the Viceadmirall Sir Richard Greenfield ouer-boord, they verily thought that as he had a diuellish Faith and Relion, and therefore the Divels loved him, to he presently sunke into the bottome of the Sea, and downe into Hell, where he raifed up all the Dinels to the revenge of his death : and that they brought to great flormes and torments upon the Spaniards, because they onely maintained the 40 Catholike and Romifb Religion : fuch and the like blasphemies against God, they ceased not openly to veter, without that any man reproued them therein, nor for their false opinions, but the most part of them rather faid and affirmed, that of truth it must needes be fo.

and 20. others of the Indian Fleete.

Note.

Caiaphas pro-

God taketh

part with Lu-

So then the

gares of hell

preuaileth a-

e inft their

phelieth.

therans.

1680

As one of those Indian Flee: es put out of Nona Spaigna, there were fine and thirty of them by forme and tempell cast away and drowned in the Sea, being fiftie in all, so that but fifteene escaped. Of the Fleete that came from Santo Domingo, there were foureteene cast away, comming out of the Channell of Hanana, whereof the Admirall and Viceadmirall were two of them : and Two Shipsof from Terra Firma in India, there came two ships laden with Gold and Silver, that were taken treasure taken by the Englishmen, and before the Spanish Armie came to Corno, the Englishmen at times had taken by the English, at the least twenty thips, that came from Saint Domingo, India, Brafillia, &c. and all fent into 50 England. Whereby it plainly appeareth, that in the end God will affuredly plague the Spaniards, having already blinded them, so that they have not the sence to perceive it, but still to remaine in their obstinate opinions; but it is lost labour to strine against God, and to trust in man, as being foundations erected upon the fands, which with the winde are blowne downe and ouerthrowne, as we daily fee before our eyes, and now not long fince in many places have euidently observed; and therefore let every man but looke into his ownc actions, and take our Low-Countries for an example, wherein we can but blame our owne sinnes and wickednesses, which doth so blinde vs, that we wholly forget and reject the benefits of God, continuing the servants and yoke-flaues of Sathan. God of his mercy open our eyes and hearts, that wee may know our onely health and Sauiour Iefus Christ, who onely can helpe, gouerne, and presente vs, and give vs 62 a happy end in all our affaires. By this destruction of the Spaniards, and their cuill successe, the lading and shipping of the goods that were faued out of the ship that came from Malacca to Tercera, was againe put off ; and therefore wee must have patience till it please God to fend a ficter time, and that we receive further adulfe and order from his Majestie of So aine.

All this being thus past, the Farmers of Pepper and other Merchants that had their goods in Tercera, which were taken out of the loft flip that came from Malacta, feeing that the hope of any Armada, or any thips in the Kings behalfe to be fent to fetch it, was all in vaine they made request vnto his Maiesty, that he would grant them licence every man particularly to ship his goods in what ship he would at his owneaduenture, which in the end, after long suite, was granred, your condition that every man should put in fureties, to deliver the goods in the Customehouse at Liebone, to the end the King might be paied his custome, as also that the goods that should be deliuered vnto them in Tercera, should all be registred: whereupon the Farmers of Pepper, with other Merchants, agreed with a Flubinger, to fetch all the Cloues, Nutmegs, 10 Mace, and other spices and goods that belonged vnto them, the Pepper onely excepted, which as then the King would not grant to lade. The same Ship arrived in Tercers about the last of Nouember, and because it was somewhat dangerous, being the latter end of the yeare, we laded her with all the speede we could, for as then the coast was cleare of Englishmen. To be short this Flashinger being laden with most part of the goods, fauing the Pepper that was left behinde, we fet faile for Lisbone, passing some small stormes, not once meeting with any ship, but onely vpon the coast where we saw ten Hollanders, that sailed with Corne towards Ligorne, and other places in Italie, and fo by Gods helpe vpon the fecond of Ianuary, Anno 1 592. we arrived in the River of Lisbone, being nine yeares after my departure from thence, and there I staied till the month of July, to dispatchssuch things as I had to doe, and vpon the feuenteenth of the fame month, I went to Sentanal, where certaine Hollanders lay, with whom I went for Helland. The end of the eight Booke. ENG-Azzazza z

CHAP. 14. Request made to the King of Spaine, River of Lisbone.



ENGLISH PLANTATIONS, DISCOVERIES,

ACTS, AND OCCVRRENTS,

IN VIRGINIA AND SVMMER ILANDS SINCE THE YEERE

1606. TILL 1624.

THE XIXTH BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

Part of the first Patent granted by his Maiestie for the Plantation of Virginia, Aprill the tenth 1606.



MES by the grace of God, Ge. Whereas our laning and welldifford Subsects, Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers
Knights, Richard Hakluyt Clerke, Prebendary of Wessmitters
Knights, Richard Wingssield, Thomas Hannam, Rawleigh Gilbert Esquires, William Parker, George Popham, and diness athers of our laning Subsects have been humble Suitors-vanies
that we would ownch fast out them our License to make Habitation, Plantation, and to deduce a Colonie of sundry of our people into
that part of America; commonly called Vinginia; and wher parts
and Territories in America, either appertayning outous, or which
now are not attually possible and the processor people, setante thym and being all along the Sea Coass between their some

degrees of Northerly latitude from the Equinoctial Line, and forthe fine degrees of the same latitude, and in the mayne Land betweene the same thirtie foure and fortic fine degrees, and the Hands thereunto adsacent within one hundred miles of the Coast thereof. And to that end, and for the more speedie accomplishment of the faid intended Plantation and Habitation there, are desirous to denide themselves into 50 two fenerall Colonies and Companies, the one confisting of certaine Knights, Gentlemen, Merchants, and other Aduenturers of our Citie of London and elsewhere, which are and from time to time shall be iorned unto them, which dee desire to beginne their Plantations and Habitations, in some sit and convenient place betweene thirtie foure and fortie one degrees of the Said latitude, all alongst the Sea Coast of Vitginia, and Coast of America aforesaid. And the other consisting of sundry Knights, Gentlemon, Merchans, and other Adventurers of our Cities, of Brittoll and Exeter, and of our Towns of Plymmouth and other places which doe toyne themselves unto that Colonie, which defire to beginne their Plantations and Habitations in some fit and convenient place betweene thirtie eight and fortie five degrees of the said latitude: all alongst the faid Coast of Virginia and America, as that Coast lyeth. We greatly commending and graciously accepting of their desires to the furtherance of so Noble a worke, which may by the 60 providence of Almightie God hereafter tend to the glorie of his Dinine Maiestie, in propagating of Christian Religion, to such people as yet line in darknesse, miserable ignorance of the true knowledge andworship of God, and may in time bring the Infidels and Sauages (liuing in those parts) to bumane civilitie and to a fettled and quiet government, doe by thefe our Letters Patents graciously accept of, and agree to their humble and well intended defires, And doe therefore for vs our Herres and Successours

The Stft Colony to bec planted be-LW:XT 34.86 41. degrees of They to have all the Lands. arc. for the space of liftie miles West South-weft from the place The like Eaft North-eaft with all Hands againft them. 100. Wihin the Land, &c. None to inhabicon the ou: their fpeciall licence in

writing, &c.

grant and agree that the faid Str Thomas Gates, Str George Summers, Richard Hakhuyt, and Elward Maria Wingheld, Aduenturers of our Chie of London, and all fuebethers as are or feath be loyned unto them of that Colome fall be called the first Colonie, and they shall and may beginne their faid fir Plantation and Seate, of their first abode and Habitation at any place upon the faid Coast of Virginia or America, where they hall thinke fit and convenient, betweene the faid thirtie foure and for-Marchlaritude. tie one degrees of the faid latitude. And that they Shall have all the Lands, Woods, Soyle, Grounds. Hauens, Ports, Rivers, Mynes, Minerals, Marishes, Waters, Fishings, Commodities, and Hereditaments what foener, from the faid first seate of their Plantation, and Habitation by the space of fiftie miles of English Stainte measure all alongst the said Coast of Virginia and America, towards the west and South-west as the Coast lyeth, withat the Hands within one hundred miles directly over against the 10 Same Sea Coast: And also all the Lands, Soyle, Grounds, Hanens, Ports, Rivers, Mynes, Myneralls. Woods, Marifres, Waters, Fishings, Commodities, and Hereditaments, what seener from the saidplace or their min planings, and of their first Plantation and Habitation for the space of fiftee like English miles and alongst the said Coast all Mynes, &c. of Virginia, and America, towards the East and North-east as the Coast tyeth, together with all the !lands within one hundred miles directly over against the same Sea-coast. And also all the Lands, Woods. Soyle, Grounds, Haums, Ports, Rivers, Mynes, Mynerals, Marifees, Waters, Fiftings, Commodities, and Hereditaments, what seener from the same, fiftie miles every way on the Sea Coast directly into in the Sta oues the mapne Landby the space of one hundred like English miles. And shall and may inhabit and remayne there, and shall and may also build and fortifie within any the same for their better safeguard and defence, according to their best discretions, and the direction of the Councell of that Colonie. And that 20 no other of our Subiects [ball be permitted or suffered to plant , or inhabit behind or on the backefide of them towards the manne Land, without the expresse license or consent of the Councell of that Colonic, backfide with thereunto in writing first had or obtained, And we doe likewise for vs our Herres and Successors, by these presents, grant and agree that the Said Thomas Hanham, Rawleigh Gilbert, William Parker, and Grorge Popliam, and all others of the Towne of Plimmouth in the Countie of Devon, or elembere, which are or Shall be soyned unto them of that Colonie Shall be called the second Colonie, and that ther Ball and may begin their faid first Plantation and Seate, of their first aboad and Habitation at any place upon the faid Coast of Virginia and America; where they stall thinke fit and convenient betweene thirtie eight and fortie fine degrees of the same latitude, and that they hall have all the Lands, Soyle, Grounds, Hauens, Ports, Riners, Mynes, Minerals, Woods, Marifhes, Waters, Fiftings, Com. 30 modities, and Hereditaments, what societ from the first Seate of their Plantation and Habitation . br the Bace of fiftee like English miles, as a afore faid, all alongst the faid Coaft of Virginia and America towards the West and South-west, and towards the South as the Coast lieth: And all the Hands within one bundred miles directly over against the same Sea Coast. And also all the Lands, Soyle, Grounds, Hauens, Ports, Riners, Mynes, Mynerals, Woods, Marifies, Waters, Fishings, Commoduies, and Hereditaments what seener from the said place of their first Plantation and Habitation for the space of siftie like English miles all alongit the faid Coast of Virginia and America, towards the East and Northeast, and towards the North as the Coast leeth, and all the Hands within one hundred miles directly over against the same Coast, and also all the Lands, 59th, Grounds, Hauess, Potts, Sturers, Woods, Affret, 40 Affret as apharoller, Waters, Felhomes, Commodities and Hereditaments what seven the same 40 Affret as apharoller, Waters, Felhomes, Commodities and Hereditaments what seven from the same 40 fiftie miles every way on the Sea Coast derettly into the mayne Land, by the frace of one hundred like English miles; and shall and may inhabu there, and shall and may also build and fortific within any the fame, for their better sufeguard according to their best discretions, and the direction of the Courcell of that Colonie, and that nane of our Subjects shall be permitted or suffered to plant or inhabit behind, or on the backe of them towards the mayne Land, without the expresselections or consent of the Councell of that Colonie in writing thereunto first had and obteined. Prouided alwayes, Gc. It followeth that neither Colonie shall plant within one hundred miles of each other; also

that each Colonie shall have a Councell of thirteene persons to rule and be ruled according to Articles let downe and confirmed under the Privie Seale (which I have, but for brevitie omit, as alfo the rest of this Patent) the Seales of each Colonic appointed, the digging of Mynes granted Jo in the fame, and on the backfide of their Colonies within the mayne Land , paying the fit of Gold and Silver, and the fitteenth of Copper to the King; libertie to carrie all Subiects (not reftrained) which will goe with them. Of coyning for the Colonies vie there, of repelling enemies, of flaying thips which trade there without leave, were too long to reherle, feeing this Patent

hath beene often altered and renewed.

CHAP.

CHAP. II2

Observations gathered out of a Discourse of the Plantation of the Southerne Colonie in Virginia by the English, 1 606. Written by that Honorable Gentleman Master GEORGE PERCY.



Saturday the twentieth of December in the yeere 1606, the fleet fell from London, and the fift of lanuary we anchored in the Downes; but the winds continued contrarie fo long, that we were forced to flay there some time, where wee suffered great stormes, but by the skilfulnesse of the Captaine wee suffered no great loffe or danger.

The twelith day of February at night we faw a blazing Starre, and prefently a The next day forme. The three and twentieth day we fell with the Hand of Mattanenie in the West Indies, was suspected The foure and twentieth day we anchored at Dominico, within fourteene degrees of the Line, 2 for a supported very faire Hand, the Trees full of Iweet and good Imels inhabited by many Sausee Indians, they Mutinic, were at first very scrupulous to come aboord vs. Wee learned of them afterwards that the Spa- though never niards had given them a great overthrow on this Ile, but when they knew what we were, there no inch maner, 20 came many to our ships with their Canoas, bringing vs many kindes of sundry fruites, as Pines, minica. Potatoes, Plantons, Tobacco, and other fruits, and Roane Cloth abundance, which they had gotten out of certaine Spanifb thips that were cast away vpon that Iland. We gaue them Kniues. Hatchets for exchange which they efteeme much, wee allo gaue them Beades, Copper Iewels which they hang through their nofthrils, eares, and lips, very strange to behold, their bodies are all painted red to keepe away the biting of Muscetos, they goe all naked without covering : the haire of their head is a yard long, all of a length pleated in three plats hanging downe to their wastes, they suffer no haire to grow on their faces, they cut their skinnes in divers workes, they are continually in warres, and will cate their enemies when they kill them, or any stranger if they take them. They will lap vp mans spittle, whillt one spits in their mouthes in a barbarous Brutifin feed 30 fathion like Dogges. These people and the rest of the Ilands in the West Indies, and Brasis, the Dominicans. are called by the names of Canibals, that will eate many flesh, these people doe poy son their Arrow heads, which are made of a fishes bone: they worship the Deuill for their God, and have no other beliefe. Whilest weremayned at this Iland we saw a Whale chased by a Thresher and Fightberwixt a Sword-fish: they fought for the space of two houres, we might fee the Thresher with his slayle a Whale, the layon the monftrous blowes which was strange to behold in the end these two sishes brought the Sword Sch.

Whale to her end. The fixe and twentieth day, we had fight of Marigalanta, and the next day wee failed with Guadaluta. a flacke faile alongst the Ile of Guadalupa, where we went ashore, and found a Bath which was Bath very bot. to hot, that no man was able to fland long by it, our Admirall Captaine Nempore caufed a piece 40 of Porke to be put in it : which boyled it fo in the space of halfe an houre, as no fire could mend it. Then we went aboord and failed by many Ilands, as Mounferot and an Iland called Saint Chrifopber, both vnhabited about; about two a clocke in the afternoone wee anchored at the Ile of Menis, There the Captaine landed all his men being well fitted with Muskets and other conuenient Armes, marched a mile into the Woods; being commanded to fland vpon their guard, fearing the treacherie of the Indians, which is an ordinary vie among it them and all other Sauages on this Ile, we came to a Bathsfanding in a Valley betwixt two Hils; where wee bathed our Bath at Media. felues and found it to be of the nature of the Bathes in England, some places hot and some colder: and men may refresh themselves as they please, finding this place to be so convenient for our men to avoid dileafes, which will breed in to long a Voyage, wee incamped our felues on this Ile fixe 50 dayes, and spent none of our ships victuall, by reason our men some went a hunting, somea souling, and some a fishing, where we got great store of Conies, fundry kinds of fowles, and great Commodities

plentie of fish. We kept Centinels and Courts degardat every Captaines quarter, fearing wee there, should be affaulted by the Indians, that were on the other fide of the Hand : wee faw none nor were molefled by any : but fome few we faw as we were a hunting on the Hand. They would not come to vs by any meanes, but ranne swiftly through the Woods to the Mountaine tops; so we loft the fight of them : whereupon we made all the halte wee could to our quarter , thinking there had beene a great ambuilt of Indians there abouts. We past into the thickest of the Woods where we had almost lost our selves, we had not gone above halfe a mile amongst the thicke, but we came into a most pleasant Garden, being a hundred paces square on enery side, having many 60 Cotton-trees growing in it with abundance of Cotton-wooll, and many Guiacum trees: wee faw the goodheft rall trees growing to thicke about the Garden, as though they had beene fet by

Art, which made vs maruell very much to fee it. The third day, wee fet faile from Menis : the fourth day we failed along by Casinia and by Aprille Saba: This day we anchored at the He of Virgines, in an excellent Bay able to harbour a hundred

CHAP.2. Croffe fet pp at Chesupioc Bay. Strange manner of Dancino.

1687

Tortoiles.

Ships: if this Bay food in England, it would be a great profit and commoditie to the Land. On this lland wee caught great store of Fresh-fish, and abundance of Sea Tortosses, which served all our Fleet three daies, which were in number eight score persons. We also killed great store of wille Fowle, wee cut the Barkes of certaine Trees which tafted much like Cinnamon, and very hot in the mouth. This Hand in some places hath very good g. and, straight and tall Timber. But the greatest discommoditie that wee have feene on this I and is that it hath no Fresh-water, which makes the place void of any Inhabitants.

Menia water

Voon the fixt day, we let faile and paffed by Becam, and by Saint John deportorico. The feuenth day, we arrived at Mona : where wee watered, which we flood in great need of, feeing that our water did fmell fo vildly that none of our men was able to indure it. Whilft fome of the Sav. Id lers were a filling the Caskes with water, the Capraine, and the rest of the Gentlemen, and other Soldiers marched up in the Ile fixe myles, thinking to find some other provision to maintaine our victualling; as wee marched we killed two wild Bores, and faw a huge wild Bull, his hornes was an ell betweene the two tops. Wee also killed Guanas, in fashion of a Serpent, and speckled like a Toade under the belly. These wayes that wee went, being to troublesome and ville going vpon the sharpe Rockes, that many of our men fainted in the march, but by good fortune wee lost none but one Edward Brookes Gentleman , whole fat melted within him by the great heate and drought of the Countrey : we were not able to relieve him nor our felues, to he died in that great

Ed.Brookes faint with thirft.

Moneta.

The ninth day in the afternoone, we went off with our Boat to the Ile of Moneta, some three 20 leagues from Mona, where we had a terrrible landing, and a troublesome getting up to the top of the Mountaine or Ile, being a high firme Rocke ftep, with many terrible sharpe stones : After wee got to the top of the Ile, we found it to bee a fertill and a plaine ground, full of goodly graffe, and abundance of Fowles of all kindes, they flew ouer our heads as thicke as drops of Hale; be-Store of fowles fides they made fuch a noife, that wee were not able to heare one another speake. Furthermore, wee were not able to let our feet on the ground , but either on Fowles or Egges which lay fo thicke in the graffe : Wee laded two Boats full in the space of three houres, to our great

refreshing.

The tenth day we fet faile, and difimboged out of the West Indies, and bare our course Northerly. The fourteenth day we passed the Tropicke of Cancer. The one and twentieth day, 2- 30 bout five a clocke at night there began a vehement tempest, which lasted all the night, with winds, raine, and thunders in a terrible manner. Wee were forced to lie at Hull that night, because we thought wee had beene nearer land then wee were. The next morning, being the two and twentieth day wee founded; and the three and twentieth and foure and twenteth day, but we could find no ground. The fine and twentieth day we founded, and had no ground at an we were art-uen to try that hundred fathom. The fix and twentieth day of Aprill, about four a clocke in the morning, wee descried the Land of Vremia: the same day wee entred into the Bay of Chesupioc directly, without any let or hinderance; there wee landed and discouered a little way, but wee could find nothing worth the ipeaking of, but faire meddowes and goodly tall Trees, with fuch Fresh-waters Junning through the woods, as I was almost rauished at the first fight thereof.

night, and by the ftorme were forced neere the fhoare,not knowing where we were. They land in

At night, when wee were going aboard, there came the Sauages creeping vpon all foure, from the Hills like Beares, with their Bowes in their mouthes, charged vs very desperately in the faces, hurt Captaine Gabrill Archer in both his hands, and a fayler in two places of the body very dangerous. After they had ipent their Arrowes, and felt the sharpnesse of our shot, they retired into the Woods with a great noise, and fo left vs.

The feuen and twentieth day we began to build vp our Shallopithe Gentlemen and Souldiers marched eight miles vp into the Land, we could not fee a Sauage in all that march, we came to a place where they had made a great fire, and had beene newly a rofting Oyfters : when they perceiued our comming, they fled away to the Mountaines, and left many of the Oyfters in the fire : we eat some of the Oysters, which were very large and delicate in taste.

The eighteenth day we lanched our Shallop, the Captaine and some Gentlemen went in her, and discouered up the Bay, we found a River on the Southfide running into the Maine; we entered it and found it very shoald water, not for any Boats to swim : Wee went further into the Bay, and faw a plaine plot of ground where we went on Land, and found the place fiue mile in compasse, without either Bush or Tree, we saw nothing there but a Cannow . which was made out of the whole tree, which was five and fortie foot long by the Rule. Vpon this plot of ground we got good flore of Mussels and Oysters, which lay on the ground as thicke as stones : wee opened some, and found in many of them Pearles. Wee marched some three or foure miles further into the Woods, where we law great imoakes of fire. Wee marched to those imoakes and found that the Sausges had beene there burning downe the graffe, as weethought either to make their 60 plantation there, or elle to give fignes to bring their forces together, and to to give vs battell. We past through excellent ground full of Flowers of divers kinds and colours, and as goodly trees as I have feene, as Cedar, Cipreffe, and other kindes : going a little further we came into a little plas Strawberries, of ground full of fine and beautifull Strawberries, foure times bigger and better then outsin Eng-

land. All this march we could neither see Sauage nor Towne. When it grew to be towards night we food backe to our Ships, we founded and found it shallow water for a great way, which nut vs out of all hopes for getting any higher with our Ships, which road at the mouth of the River. We rowed ouer to a point of Land, where wee found a channell, and founded fix, eight, ten, or twelve fathom: which put vs in good comfort. Therefore were named that point of Land, Cape Point Comfort.

The nine and twentieth day we fet up a Croffe at Chefapine Bay, and named that place Cape Henry, Thirtieth day, we came with our ships to Cape Comfort; where wee saw sue Sauages running on the shoare; presently the Captaine caused the shallop to be manned, so rowing to the 10 shoare, the Captaine called to them in figne of friendship, but they were at first very timetsome,

until they faw the Captain lay his hand on his heart: vpon that they laid down their Bowes and Arrowes, and came very boldly to vs, making fignes to come a shoare to their Towne, which is called by the Sauages Kecoughtan. Wee coafted to their Towne, rowing ouer a River running Keconghian. into the Maine, where these Sauages swam ouer with their Bowes and Arrowes in their months:

When we came ouer to the other side, there was a many of other Sauages which directed vs

to their Towne, where we were entertained by them very kindly. When we came first a Land they made a dolefull noise, laying their faces to the ground, feratching the earth with their nailes. We did thinke that they had beene at their Idolatry. When they had ended their Cere-20 monies, they went into their houses and brought out mats and laid voon the ground, the chiefest of

the fate all in a rank: the meanest fort brought we such dainties as they had, & of their bread which they make of their Maiz or Gennea wheat, they would not fuffer vs to cat valeffe we fate down, which we did on a Mat right against them. After we were well satisfied they gaue vs of their Ta- Tobacco. bacco, which they tooke in a pipe made artificially of earth as ours are, but far bigger, with the bowle fashioned together with a piece of fine copper. After they had feasted vs. they shewed vs. in welcome, their manner of dancing, which was in this fashion : one of the Sauages standing in the midit finging, beating one hand against another, all the rest dancing about him, shouting, howling, and stamping against the ground, with many Anticke tricks and faces, making noise like so many Wolues or Deuils. One thing of them I observed; when they were in their dance they kept

30 ftroke with their feet iust one with another, but with their hands, heads, faces, and bodies, euery one of them had a feuerall gesture : so they continued for the space of halfe an houre. When they had ended their dance, the Captaine gave them Beades and other trifling lewells. They hang through their cares Fowles legs : they shave the right side of their heads with a shell, the left side they weare of an ell long tied up with an artificiall knot, with a many of Foules feathers flicking in it. They goe altogether naked, but their prinities are couered with Beafts skinnes befer commonly with little bones, or beafts teeth : some paint their bodies blacke some red, with artificiall knots of fundry lively colours, very beautifull and pleafing to the eye, in a brauer fashion then they in the Weit Indies .

The fourth day of May, we came to the King or Werowance of Paspihe : where they enter-40 tained vs with much welcome; an old Sauage made a long Oration, making a foule noile, vtte- A longoration ting his speech with a vehement action, but we knew little what they meant. Whilst we were in company with the Passibes, the Werowance of Rapahanna came from the other fide of the River in his Cannoa : he teemed to take displeasure of our being with the Paspibes : he would faine have had vs come to his Towne, the Captaine was vnwilling; feeing that the day was fo far fpent he returned backe to his ships for that night.

The next day, being the fift of May, the Werowance of Rapabanna fent a Meffenger to haue vs come to him. We entertained the faid Meffenger, and gaue him trifles which pleafed him: Wee manned our shallop with Muskets and Targatiers sufficiently : this said Mellenger guided vs where our determination was to goe. When wee landed, the Werowance of Rapabanna came

50 downers the water fide with all his traine, as goodly men as any I haue feene of Sauages or Chriflians: the Werowance comming before them playing on a Flute made of a Reed, with a Crown of a Reed. of Deares haire colloured red, in fashion of a Rose fastened about his knot of haire, and a great Plate of Copper on the other fide of his head, with two long Feathers in fashion of a paire of Hornes placed in the midft of his Crowne. His body was painted all with Crimfon, with a Chaine of Beads about his necke, his face painted blew, besprinkled with filuer Oreas wee thought, his eares all behung with Brallets of Pearle, and in either eare a Birds Claw through it beset with fine Copper or Gold, he entertained vs in so modeit a proud fashion, as though he had beene a Prince of civill government, holding his countenance without laughter or any fuch ill behausour; he caused his Mat to be spred on the ground, where hee sate downe with a great Maiellie, taking a pipe of Tabacco: the rest of his company standing about him. After he had rested a while he rofe, and made fignes to vs to come to his Towne : Hee went formost, and all the rest

of his people and our felues followed him vp a steepe Hill where his Palace was settled. Wee

passed through the Woods in fine paths, having most pleasant Springs which issued from

the Mountaines : Wee also went through the goodliest Corne fieldes that euer was seene in

any Countrey. When wee came to Rapabannos Towne, hee entertained vs in good humanitie. The eight day of May we discourred up the River. We landed in the Countrey of Apamatica, at our landing, there came many front and able Sauages to refift vs with their Bowes and Arrowes, in a most warlike manner, with the swords at their backes belet with sharpe stones and pieces of yron able to cleave a man in funder. Amongst the rest one of the chiefest standing before them croffe-legged, with his Arrow readie in his Bow in one hand, and taking a Pipe of Tobacco in the other, with a bold vetering of his speech, demanded of vs our being there, willing vs to bee gone. Wee made fignes of peace, which they perceived in the end, and let vs land in

The twelfth day we went backe to our thips, and discourred a point of Land, called Archers Hope, which was fufficient with a little labour to defend our felues against any Enemy. The foile was good and fruitfull, with excellent good Timber. There are also great store of Vines in bignesse of a mans thigh, running vp to the tops of the Trees in great abundance. We also did see many Squirels, Conies, Black Birds with crimfon wings, and divers other Fowles and Birds of divers and fundrie collours of crimfon , Watchet, Yellow, Greene , Murry , and of divers other hewes naturally without any art vfing.

We found store of Turkie nests and many Egges, if it had not beene disliked, because the ship could not ride neere the shoare, we had fetled there to all the Collonies contentment,

The thirteenth day, we came to our feating place in Paspibas Countrey, some eight miles from the point of Land, which I made mention before : where our shippes doe lie so neere the shoare that they are moored to the Trees in fix fathom water.

Their Planta-

The fourteenth day we landed all our men which were fet to worke about the fortification, and others some to watch and ward as it was convenient. The first night of our landing, about midnight, there came some Sauages sayling close to our quarter: presently there was an alarum giuen; ypon that the Sauages ran away, and we not troubled any more by them that night. Nor long after there came two Sauages that feemed to be Commanders, brauely dreft, with Crownes of coloured haire vpon their heads, which came as Messengers from the Weromance of Paspiba; telling vs that their Weromauce was comming and would be merry with vs with a fat Deare. The eighteenth day, the Werowance of Paspina came himselfe to our quarter, with one hundred

Sauages armed, which garded him in a very warlike manner with Bowes and Arrowes, thinking 30 at that time to execute their villany. Pafpiha made great fignes to vs to lay our Aimes away. But we would not trust him fo far : he seeing he could not have convenient time to worke his will at length made fignes that he would give vs as much land as we would defire to take. As the Sauzges were in a throng in the Fort, one of them Role a Hatchet from one of our company, which fyied him doing the deed : whereupon he tooke it from him by force, and alio strooke him over grea heuer, thearme : preiently another Sauage feeing that, came fiercely at our man with a wooden forord, thinking to beat out his braines. The Weremance of Pafpiba faw vs take to our Armes, went fud-

Land giuen. Thefe Sauages

denly away with all his company in great anger. The nineteenth day, my felfe and three or foure more walking into the Woods by chance wee espied a path-way like to an Irish pace : wee were desirous to knowe whither it would bring 40 vs; wee traced along some foure miles, all the way as wee went, having the pleasantest Suckles, the ground all flowing ouer with faire flowers of fundry colours and kindes, as though it had beene in any Garden or Orchard in England. There be many Strawberries, and other fruits vnknowne : . wee faw the Woods full of Cedar and Cypreffe trees, with other trees, which iffues out sweet Gummes like to Balsam : wee kept on our way in this Paradife, at length wee came to a Sauige Towne, where wee found but few people, they told vs the rest were gone a hunting with the Weromance of Paspiha: we flayed there a while, and had of them Strawbernes, and other things; in the meane time one of the Sauages came running out of his houle with a Bowe and Arrowes and ranne mainly through the Woods: then I beganne to millruft some villanie, that he went to call fome companie, and fo betray vs, wee made all the hafte away wee could: 50 one of the Sauages brought vs on the way to the Wood fide, where there was a Garden of Tobacco, and other fruits and herbes, he gathered Tobacco, and distributed to every one of vs, so

wee departed. The twentieth day the Weromance of Pastiba fent fortie of his men with a Derre, to our quarter: but they came more in villanie than any loue they bare vs: they faine would have layne in our Fortall night, but wee would not fuffer them for feare of their treachery. One of our Gentlemen having a Target which hee trusted in, thinking it would beare out a flight shot, hee fet it vp against a tree, willing one of the Sauages to shoot; who tooke from his backe an Arrow of an elle long, drew it strongly in his Bowe, shoots the Target a foote thorow, or better: which was ftrange, being that a Piftoll could not pierce it. Wee feeing the force of his Bowe, 60 afterwards fet him vp a steele Target; he shot again, and burst his arrow all to pieces, he presently pulled out another Arrow, and bit it in his teeth, and feemed to bee in a great rage, so hee went away in great anger. Their Bowes are made of tough Hafell, their strings of Leather, Their arowes their Arrowes of Canes or Hafell, headed with very sharpe stones, and are made artificially like

abroad Arrow: other some of their Arrowes are headed with the ends of Deeres hornes, and are feathered very attificially. Pafthia was as good as his word; for hee fent Venifon, but the Sawie came within few dayes after.

At Port Cotage in our Voyage vp the River, we faw a Savage Boy about the age of ten yeeres, Yellow haired which had a head of haire of a perfect yellow and a reasonable white skinne, which is a Mira- Virginian. cle amongst all Sauages.

This River which wee have discovered is one of the famousest Rivers that ever was found by River of Pobaany Christian, it ebbes and flowes a hundred and threescore miles where ships of great burthen tan.

may harbour in fafetie. Wherefoeuer we landed vpon this Riuer, wee faw the goodlieft Woods 10 as Beech, Oke, Cedar, Cypresse, Wal-nuts, Sassafras and Vines in great abundance, which hang in great clusters on many Trees, and other Trees vnknowne, and all the grounds befpred with many fweet and delicate flowres of divers colours and kindes. There are also many fruites as Strawberries, Mulberries, Risberriesand Fruits vnknowne, there are many branches of this River, which runne flowing through the Woods with great plentie of fish of all kindes, as for Sturgeon all the World cannot be compared to it. In this Countrey I have feene many great and large Medowes * having excellent good pasture for any Cattle. There is also great store of Deere both Red and Fallow. There are Beares, Foxes, Otters, Beuers, Muskats, and wild beafts

The foure and twentieth day wee set up a Crosse at the head of this River, naming it Kings 20 River, where we proclaimed lames King of England to have the most right vinto it. When wee Wee came had finished and set up our Crosse, we shipt our men and made for lames Fort. By the way wee downe the Ricame to Pobatans Towre where the Captaine went on shore suffering none to goe with him, hee uer. presented the Commander of this place with a Hatchet which hee tooke joyfully, and was well

But yet the Sauages murmured at our planting in the Countrie, whereupon this Werowance made aniwere againe very wifely of a Sauage, Why should you bee offended with them as long as they hurt you not, nor take any thing away by force, they take but a litle waste ground, which doth you nor any of vs any good.

Ifaw Bread made by their women which doe all their drugerie. The men takes their pleafure in hunting and their warres, which they are in continually one Kingdome against another. The Bread how manner of baking of bread is thus, after they pound their wheat into flowre with hote water, made, they make it into paste, and worke it into round balls and Cakes, then they put it into a pot of feething water, when it is fod throughly, they lay it on a smooth stone , there they harden it as well as in an Ouen.

There is notice to be taken to know married women from Maids, the Maids you shall alwayes Diffind habit fee the fore part of their head and fides shauen close, the hinder part very long, which they tie of Maids and in a pleate hanging downe to their hips. The married women weares their haire all of a length, and is tied of that fathion that the Maids are. The women kinde in this Countrey doth pounce and race their bodies, legges, thighes, armes and faces with a sharpe Iron, which makes a stampe 40 in curious knots, and drawes the proportion of Fowles, Fish, or Bealts, then with paintings of fundry lively colours, they rab it into the stampe which will never be taken away, because it is

dried into the flesh where it is fered. The Sauages beare their yeeres well, for when wee were at Pamonkies, wee faw a Sauage by Sauage 160. their report was about eight score yeeres of age. His eyes were sunke into his head, having neuer yeeres old. a tooth in his mouth, his haire all gray with a reasonable bigge beard, which was as white as any Bearded, fnow. It is a Miracle to fee a Sauage haue any haire on their faces, I neuer faw, read, nor heard. any haue the like before. This Sauage was as luftie and went as fast as any of vs, which was

strange to behold. The fifteenth day of Iune, we had built and finished our Fort which was triangle wife, having three Bulwarkes at every corner like a halfe Moone, and foure or five pieces of Artillerie mounted in them, we had made our felues fufficiently ftrong for these Sauages, we had also sowne most of our Corne on two Mountaines, it iprang a mans height from the ground, this Countrey is 2 fruitfull foile, bearing many goodly and fruitfull Trees, as Mulberries, Cherries, Walnuts, Ce-

ders, Cyprelle, Salfatras, and Vines in great abundance. Munday the two and twentiesh of lune, in the morning Captaine Newport in the Admirall Cap. Hempines departed from James Port for England.

Captaine Newport being gone for England, leaving vs (one hundred and foure persons) verie bare and scancie of victualls, furthermore in warres and in danger of the Sauages. We hoped after a supply which Captaine Newport promised within twentie weekes. But if the beginners of this 60 action doe carefully further vs, the Country being fo fruitfull, it would be as great a profit to the Realme of England, as the Indies to the King of Spaine, if this River which wee have found had beene discouered in the time of warre with Spaine, it would have beene a commoditie to our Realme, and a great annoyance to our enemies. The feuen and twentieth of July the King of Ra-Pahanna, deranded a Canoa which was reftored, lifted up his hand to the Sunne, which they

worthing as their God, befides he laid his hand on his heart, that he would be our speciall friend. It is a generall rule of these people when they swere by their God which is the Sunne, no Chriftian will keepe their Oath better vpon this promife. These people haue a great reverence to the Sunne about all other things at the riling and fetting of the same, they sit downe lifting vp their hands and eyes to the Sunne making a round Circle on the ground with dried Tobacco, then they began to pray making many Deuillish gettures with a Hellish noise foming at the mouth. flaring with their eyes, wagging their heads and hands in fuch a fashion and deformitie as it was

The fixt of August there died lobn Afore of the bloudie Flixe. The minth day died George Flowre of the swelling. The tenth day died William Bruster Gentleman, of a wound ginen by the Sauages, and was buried the elementh day.

The fourteenth day, lerome Alikock Ancient, died of a wound, the same day Francis Midwinter, Edward Moris Corpora! I died fuddenly.

The fifteenth day, their died Edward Browne and Stephen Galtbrope. The fixteenth day their died Thomas Gower Gentleman. The feuenteenth day, their died Thomas Mounflie. The eighteenth day, there died Robert Pennington, and John Martine Gentleman. The nineteenth day. died Drue Pregafe Gentleman. The two and twentieth day of August, there died Cantaine Bartholomen Gosnold one of our Councell, he was honourably buried, having all the Ordnance in the Fort shot off with many vollies of imalishot.

After Captaine Gofnols death, the Councell could hardly agree by the diffention of Captaine 20 Kendall, which afterward was committed about hainous matters which was proved against him.

The foure and twentieth day, died Edward Harington and George Walker, and were buried the Same day. The fixe and twentieth day, died Kenelme Throgmerine. The feuen and twentieth day yied William Roods. The eight and twentieth day died Thomas Stoodie, Cape Merchant.

The fourth day of September died Thomas Jacob Sergeant. The fift day, there died Beniamin Beaff. Our men were destroyed with cruell diseases as Swellings, Flixes, Burning Feuers, and by warres, and some departed suddenly, but for the most part they died of meere famine. There were neuer Englishmen left in a forreigne Countrey in such miserie as wee were in this new disconcred Virginia. Wee watched enery three nights lying on the bare cold ground what weather foener came warded all the next day, which brought our men to bee most feeble wretches, our to food was but a imall Can of Barlie fod in water to fiue men a day, our drinke cold water taken out of the River, which was at a floud verie falt, at a low tide full of flime and filth, which was the destruction of many of our men. Thus we lived for the space of five moneths in this miserable distresse, not having five able men to man our Bulwarkes vpon any occasion. If it had not pleafed God to have put a terrour in the Savages hearts, we had all perished by those vild and cruell Pagans, being in that weake effate as we were; our men night and day groaning in every corner of the Fort most pittifull to heare, if there were any conscience in men, it would make their harts to bleed to heare the pittiful murmurings & out-cries of our fick men without reliefe every night and day for the space of fixe weekes, some departing out of the World, many times three or foure in a night, in the morning their bodies trailed out of their Cabines like Dogges to be buried : in this fort did I fee the mortalitie of diners of our people,

Gods good-

It pleased God, after a while, to send those people which were our mortall enemies to releeue vs with victuals, as Bread, Corne, Fish, and Flesh in great plentie, which was the setting rp of our feeble men, otherwise wee had all perished. Also we were frequented by divers Kings in the Countrie, bringing vs store of prouision to our great comfort.

The eleuenth day, there was certaine Articles laid against Master Wing field which was then Prefident, thereupon he was not only displaced out of his Prefident ship, but also from being of the Councell. Afterwards Captaine lobn Rasclisso was chosen Prefident.

The eighteenth day, died oue Ellis Kinistone which was started to death with cold. The same He was a made day a reall the state of the s

Smiths Rela-

William White (hauing lived with the Natives) reported to vs of their customes in the morning by breake of day, before they eate or drinke both men, women and children, that be aboue tenne omitted being yeeres of age runnes into the water, there washes themselues a good while till the Sunne riseth, more rully fee then offer Sacrifice to it, strewing Tobacco on the water or Land, honouring the Sunne as their downein Gap. God, likewise they doe at the setting of the * Sunne,

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The description of Virginia by Captaine IOHN SMITH, inlarged out of his written Notes.



Ireinia is a Countrie in America, that lieth betweene the degrees of 34. and 44. The Latitude of the North Latitude. The bounds thereof on the Ealf fide are the great Oran, By later Pa-On the South lieth Florida: on the North Nona Francia. As for the West thereof, tens this is the limits are vnknowne. Of all this Countrie we purpose not to speake, but onthe limits are vinknowne. Of all this Countrie we purpole not to lpeake, but on by of that part which was planted by the Englishmen in the yeare of our Lod, degrees, &c. 360. And this is winder the degrees 37, 38, and 39. The temperature of this

Countrie doth agree wel with English constitutions being once seasoned to the Countrie. Which appeared by this, that though by many occasions our people fell licke; yet did they recouer by verie small meanes and continued in health, though there were other great causes, not only to have made them ficke, but even to end their dayes, &c.

The Summer is hot as in Spaine; the Winter cold as in France or England. The heate of Summer is in June, July, and August, but commonly the coole Breeses asswage the vehemencie of the rature. 20 heate. The chiefe of Winter is halfe D. cember, Ianuary, February, and halfe March. The cold is extreme sharpe, but heere the Prouerbe is true, That no extreme continueth long. In the yeere 1607. was an extraordinary Frost in most of Europe, and this Frost was found as extreme in Virginia. But the next yeere for eight or ten daies of ill weather, other fourteene daies would be as Summer.

The winds here are variable, but the like Thunder and Lightning to purifie the Aire, I have The winds. seldome either seene or heard in Europe. From the South-west came the greatest guits with Thunder and heate. The North-west winde is commonly coole, and bringeth faire weather with it. From the North is the greatest cold, and from the East and South-east as from the Barmadas, forces and raines.

30 Sometimes there are great droughts other times much raine, yet great necessitie of neither, by reason we see not, but that all the varietie of needrull Fruits in Emrope may bee there in great plentie by the industry of men, as appeareth by those we there planted.

There is but one entrance by Sea into this Country, and that is at the mouth of a verie The entrances goodly Bay, the widenesse whereof is neere eighteene or twen-ie miles. The Cape on the South fide is called Cape Henrie, in honour of our most Noble Prince. The shew of the Land there is a white Hilly Sand like vnto the Downes, and along the shoares great plentie of Pines and Firres. Che Henr. The North Cape, is called Cape Charles, in honour of the worthy Duke of Torke. Thelles before Cape Charles.

it are named Smiths Iles, because he first of ours set foot on them. Within is a Countrey that may Cap. Smith. have the prerogative over the most pleasant places of Europe, Asia, Africa, or America, for large 40 and pleafant nauigable Rivers, Heaven and Earth never agreed better to frame a place for mais habitation being of our constitutions, were it fully mannured and inhabited by industrious people. Here are Mountaynes, Hils, Plaines, Vallies, Rivers and Brookes, all running moit plea. The Country.

lantly into a faire Bay compassed but for the mouth with fruitful & delightiome Land. In the Bay and Rivers are many Hes both great and fmall, some woodie, some plaine, most of them low and not inhabited. This Bay lieth North an South, in which the water floweth neere two hundred

fadome, holding in breadth for the most part ten or fourteene miles. From the head of the Bay atthe North, the Land is mountainous, and to in a minner from thence by a South-west Line; So that the more Southward, the farther off from the Bay are those Mountaines. From which 50 fall certaine Brookes which after come to fine principall Nauigable Riners. These runne from the North-west into the South-east, and so into the West side of the Bay, where the fall of every Riuer is within twentie or fiftgene miles one of another.

miles, and hath a Channell for one hundred and fortie miles, of depth betwixt feuen and fifteene The Bay.

The Mountaines are of divers natures, for at the head of the Bay the Rockes are of a composi- The Mountaines tionlike Mil-stones. Some of Marble, &cc. And many pieces of Christall we found as throwne taines. downe by water from the Mountaines. For in Winter these Mountaines are couered with much Snow, and when it diffolieth the waters fall with such violence, that it causeth great inundations in the narrow Vallies, which vet is fearce perceived being once in the Rivers. Thefe waters wash from the Rockes such glistering tinetures that the ground in some places seemeth as gilded, The soile.

where both the Rockes and the Earth are fo plendent to behold, that better sudgements then ours 60 might have beene postanded, they contained more then probabilities. The veiture of the Earth in most places doth manifeitly proue the nature of the foile to be luthe and very rich. The colour of the

Earth we found in divers places, refembleth Bole Armonese, terra sigillata ad lemnia, Full. r. Earth, Marle, and divers other fu happearances. But generally for the most part the Earth is a blacke fandie mould, in some places a fat slimie clay, in other places a very barren grauell. But the best

beil ground is knowne by the veilure it beareth, as by the greatnesse of Trees or abundance of Weeds. &c.

The Vallies.

The Countrie is not mountainous nor yet low, but fuch pleasant plaine Hils and fertile Val lies, one pretily croffing another, and watered fo conueniently with their fweete Brookes and Christall Springs, as if Art it selfe had deuised them. By the Rivers are many plaine Marishes contayning fome twentie, fome one hundred, fome two hundred Acres, fome more, fomeleffe.

Plaints.

Other Plaines there are few, but only where the Sauages inhabit; but all ouer-growne with Trees and Weeds, being a plaine Wilderneffe as God first made it. On the West lide of the Bay, we said were fine faire and delightfull nanigable Rivers, of which we will now proceed to report. The first of those Rivers and the next to the mouth of the Bav 10

Powhatm.

hath his course from the West and by North. The name of this River they call Powhatan The River according to the name of a principall Countrie that lieth vpon it. The mouth of this River is neere three miles in breadth, jet doe the shoales force the Channell so neere the Land that a Sacre will oner shoot it at Point blanke. This River is navigable one hundred and fiftie miles as the Channell goeth: the Boales and foundings are heere needleffe to be expressed. It falleth from Rockes farre West in a Countrie inhabited by a Nation that they call Monacan. But where it commeth into our Dif-

conerie it is Powhatan. In the farthest place that was diligently observed, are Falles, Rockes! Shoales, &:. which makes it past nauigation any higher. Thence in the running downeward, the River is enriched with many goodly Brookes, which are maintained by an infinite num-The branches, ber of imall Rundles and pleafant Springs that disperse themselves for best service, as doe the veines of a mans bodie. From the South there fals into this River ; First; the pleasant River of Apamatuck : next more to the East are the two Rivers of Quiyoughcohanocke. A little farther is

make that place very pleasant to inhabit, their Corne fields being girded therein in a manneras Peninfulaes. The most of these Rivers are inhabited by severall Nations, or rather Families, of the name of the Rivers. They have also in every of those places some Governour, as their King, which they call Werowances. In a Peninfula on the North fide of this River are the English planted in a place by them called lames Towne, in honour of the Kings most excellent Maiestee, voon which fide are also many places under the Weromances.

a Bay wherein falleth three or foure pretie Brookes and Creekes that halfe intrench the Inhabitants of Warraskoyac; then the River of Nardfamund, and laftly, the Brooke of Chifaptack. From the North fide is the River of Chickahamania, the backe River of James Townes; another by the Cedar Ile, where we lived ten weekes vpon Oisters, then a convenient Harbour for fisher-boats or small Boats at Keconghean, that so conveniently turneth it selfe into Bayes and Creekes that

tames Towne.

The first and next the Rivers mouth are the Cecoughtans, who hesides their women and children, haue not past twentie fighting men. The Pastabeges on whose Land is seated the Enolish The feuerall Colonie, some fortie miles from the Bay have not past fortie. The River called Chickahamania Inhabitants. neere two hundred. The Weanocks one hundred. The Arrowhatocks thirtie. The place called Porbatan, Some fortie. On the South fide this River the Appamainches have fixtie fighting men. The Quijouqcohanocks, five and twentie. The Warracker fortie. The Nandfamunds two hundred. The Chesapeach: are able to make one hundred. Of this last place the Bay beareth the 49 Free State.

name. In all these places is a seuerall Commander, which they call Weromance except the Chickbamanians, who are gouerned by the Priests and their Asistants of their Elders called Caw-camwas ougher. In Summer no place affoordeth more plentie of Sturgeon, nor in Winter more abundance of Fowle, especially in the time of Frost. There was once taken fiftie two Sturgeons at a draught, at another draught fixtie eight. From the latter end of May till the end of Iunearetaken, but young Sturgeons of two foot or a yard long : From thence till the midit of September, of two or three yards long and few others. And in foure or fine houres with one Net were ordinarily taken seven or eight : often more, seldome lesse. In the small Rivers all the veere there is good plentie of small fish, so that with Hookes those that would take paines had sufficient. Fourteene miles Northward from the River Powbatan; is the Kiver Pamaunke, which is nani- 50

gable sixtie miles, but with Catches and small Barkes, twentie or thirtie miles farther. At the ordinary

R. Pamaunhe.

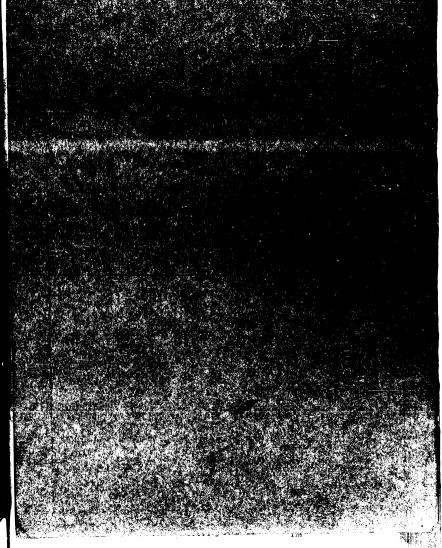
The Inhabi-

tants. K. Pobatan. flowing of falt water, it divideth it felfe into two gallant branches. On the South inhabit the people of Toughtanund, who have about fixtie men for warres. On the North branch Mattapament, who have thirtie men. Where this River is divided, the Countrie is called Panamauste, and nourisheth neere three hundred able men. About fine and twentie miles lower on the North fide of this River is Werawocomoco, where their great King inhabited when Captaine Smith was deliuered him prisoner; yet there are not past fortie able men. But now he hath abandoned that, and liveth at Orapakes by Youghtanund in the Wildernelle; tenne or twelve miles lower; on the Southfide of this River is Chukiack, which hath fome fortie or fiftie men. Thefe, as alio Apamatuck Irrobatocke, and Powbatan, are their great Kings chiefe Alliance and Inhabitance. The 63 reit (as they report) his Conque is. Before we come to the third River that falleth from the Mountaines, there is another River

the Inhabitants are about fome fortie feruiceable men.

Payanhatanh R.

(Some thirtie miles nauigable) that commeth from the In-land, the River is called Payantstante,



River inhabited on both fides. Strange people in attire.

The chird naugable River is called Toppabarock. (This is naugable some one hundred and thirtie miles.) At the top of it inhabit the people called Mannaboaches amongst the Mountaines. but they are about the place we deferibe. Vpon this River on the North fide are feated a people The Inhabicelled Cutatowomen, wich thirtie fighting men. Higher on the River are the Moranghtacunds, tans. with eightie able men. Beyond them Toppahanecke with one hundred men. Farre aboue is another Cuttatawomen with twentie men. On the South, farre within the River is Namtaus beacund having one hundred and fiftie men. This River also as the two former, is replenithed with fifth and towle.

The fourth River is called Patawomeke, and is fixe or feven miles in breadth. It is nanigable Pregrande Bo one bundred and fortie miles, and fed as the reft with many fweet Rivers and Springs . which fall from the bordering Hils. These Hils many of them are planted, and yeeld no leffe plentie and varietie of fruit then the River exceedeth with abundance of fish, Tins River is inhabited on both fides. First on the South fide at the very entrance is Wieheocomico, and hath some one hundred and thirtie men , beyond them Sekacawone with thirtie. The Onemmanient with one hundred. Then Paramoneke with one hundred and fixtie able men. Here doth the River dwide it felfe in to three or four convenient Rivers . The greatest of the least is called Oursones, trendeth Northwest, but the River it seife turneth North-east, and is still a navigable streame. On the Westerne fale of this bought is Tankenent, with fortie men. On the North of this River is Secomocomoco with fortie men. Some what further Potangeo with twentie. In the East part of the bought of the River, is Pamacacack with fixtie men; After Mayomances with one hundred. And laftly, Nacotehtanke with eightie able men. The River tenne miles aboue this place maketh his passage downers low pleasant Vally over-shadowed in many places with high Rockie Mountaines; from whence diffill innumerable fweet and pleafant Springs.

The fift River is called Parturent, and is of a leffe proportion then the reft; but the channell Parturent R is fixteene or eighteene fadome deepe in tome places. Here are infinite skuls of diners kinds of fish more then eliewhere. Upon this River dwell the people called Acquintanackinak, Pawinxunt and Mattapanient. Two bundred men was the greatest fireneth that could be there perceined. But they inhabit together, and not to differ fed as the reft. There of all other were found the most civill to give entertainment.

Thirtie leagues Northward is a River not inhabited, yet navigable; for the red Earth or Clay Botto R. refembling Bole Armoniack, the English called it Bolus. At the end of the Bay where it is fixe The head of or feuen miles in breadth, there fall into it foure finall Rivers, three of them iffuing from divers bogges incironed with high Mountaines. There is one that commeth due North three or foure dayes journey from the head of the Bay, and fals from Rockes and Mountaines, upon this River inhabit a people called Safquefahanocke. They are feated two dayes higher then was paffage for the Discouerers Barge, which was hardly two tunnes, and had in it but twelue men to performe this Difcourry, wherein they lay about the space of twelve weekes upon those great waters in those vnknowne Countries, having nothing but a little Meale or Oat-meale and water to feed them; and force halfe sufficient of that for halfe that time, but that by the Sauages, and by the plenty of fifth they found in all places, they made themselves provision as opportunity terued ; yet had they not a Mariner er any that had skill to trimme their Sayles , vie their Oares, or any businesse belonging to the Barge, but two or three. The rest being Gentlemen, or as ignorant in such toyle and labour, yet necessitie in a short time by their Captaines diligence and example, taught them to become so perfect, that what they did by such small meanes, I leave to the centure of the Reader to judge by this Discourse and the annexed Map. But to proceed, fixtie of those Safquefabanocks, came to the Discouerers with Skinnes, Bowes, Arrowes, Targets, Beades, Swords and Tobacco-pipes for Prefents. Such great and well proportioned men. are fellome seene, for they seemed like Giants to the English, yea, and to the Neighbours, yet seemed of an honelt and simple disposition, with much adoe restrained from adoring the Disco-ple. uerers as Gods. Those are the most strange people of all those Countries, both in Language and Attire; for their Language it may well beteeme their proportions, founding from them, as it were a great voyce in a Vault, or Caue, as an Eccho. Their Attire is the Skinnes of Beares, and Woolues, fome have Caffacks made of Beares heads and Skinnes that a mans necke goes. The deficious through the Skinnes necke, and the Eares of the Beare fastned to his shoulders behind, the onot a Sasque. Note and Teeth hanging downe his breaft, and at the end of the Note hung a Beares Pawe, the fabanough. See halfe fleenes comming to the elbowes were the neckes of the Beares and the armes through the mouth with pawes hanging at their Notes. One had the head of a Woolfe hanging in a Chaine Long Spoone for a lewell his Tobacco-pipe three quarters of a yard long, prettily carved with a Bird, a to eate with Beare, a Deere, or some such deuce at the great end, sufficient to beate out the braines of a man, with Bowes, and Arrowes, and Clubs furable to their greatnesse and conditions. These are scarce knowne to Powkatan. They can make neere sixe hundred able and

Выбыбы з

mightie men, and are pallifadoed in their Townes to defend them from the Mallaromekes their mortall enemies. Fine of their chiefe Weromances came abourd the Discouerers, and crossed

the Bay in their Barne.

The Picture of the greatest of them is fignified in the Mappe. The calfe of whose legge was three quarters of a vard about, and all the reft of his limbes fo answerable to that propor tion , that hee feemed the goodlieft man that ever wee beheld. His haire , the one fide was long, the other shorne close with a ridge ouer his crowne like a Cockes Combe, Hie Arrowes were fine quarters long, headed with flints or spinters of stones, in forme like a Heart, an inch broad, and an inch and a halte or more long. These hee wore in a Woolues Skinne at his backe for his Quiuer, his Bow in the one hand and his Clubbe in the other. as is described.

Tochwhogh R.

On the East side the Bay, is the River of Tockwhogh, and vpon it a people that can make one hungred men . feated foine feuen miles within the River : where they have a Fort very well red pallifadoed and mantelled with the Barke of Trees, Next to them is Ozimes with fixtie men-More to the South of the East fide of the Bay, the River of Rapabanock, neere vnto which is Kuid, amost the River of Ruskarawasck. Vpon which is feated a people with two hundred men. After that is the River of Tants Wighcocomoco, and on it a people with one hundred men. The people of igheccomoco thole Rivers are of little stature, of another Language from the reft, and very rude. But they on the River of Acobineck with fortie men, and they of Accomack eighty men do equalize any of Accomach R. the Territories of Powb. tan and speake his Language, who over all those doth rule as King. Southward they went to some parts of Chamonock and the Mangoags to fearch for the men

Chammack.

The feuerall

Languages.

there left by Sir walter Raleigh; for those parcs to the Towne or Chisapeack have formerly heene diffouered by Mailer Hariots and Sir Ralph Lane. Amongst those people are thus many 20 feuera I Nations of fundry Languages, that enuiron Powbatans Territories. The Chamonocker, the Mangoars, the Monacans, the Mannahokes, the Majawomekes, the Powbasans, the Sajquefaha. nocks, the Alquanachukes, the Tockwogbes, and the Kuscarawaokes. Of all those not any one viderflaurierhanother but by Interpreters. Their feuerall Habitations are more plainly deteribed by this annexed Mappe, which will present to the eye, the way of the Mountaines and current of the Rivers, with their feuerall Turnings, Bayes, Shoales, Iles, Inlets, and Creekes, the breadth of the waters, the diffances of places and fech like. In which Map oblerue this, that as farre as you fee the little Croffes on Ruers, Mountaines, or other places have beene discouered; the reft was had by information of the Sauages, and are let downe, according to their inftructions,

Of such things which are naturall in Virginia, and how they wse them. Virginia doth affoord many excellent vigitables and living creatures, yet graffe there is little

Why there is httle graffe.

or none, but what groweth in low Marishes : for all the Countrey is ouergrowne with Trees, whose droppings continually turne their graffe to weedes, by reason of the ranknesse of the ground which would toone be amended by good husbandry. The wood that is most common is Woods with Oke and Walnut; many of their Okes are to tall and straight, that they will beare two foote their fraits. and a halfe square of good Timber for swenty yards long; Or this wood there is two or three fenerall kinds. The Acornes of one kind, whose barke is more white then the other, are somewhat sweetish, which being boyled halfe a day in senerall waters , at last affoord a sweete Oyle, 40 which they keep in Goards to annoint their heads & joynts. The fruit they eate made in bread or otherwife. There is also some Elme, some blacke Wal-nut tree, and some Ash: of Ash and Elme they make Sope-ashes. It the trees be very great, the ashes will be good, and melt to hard lumps, but if they be small, it will be but powder, and not so good as the other. Ot Walnuts there is two Supposed Cy- or three kinds; there is a kind of wood we called Cypresse, because both the wood, the fruit, and leafe did most resemble it, and of those trees there are some neere three fadome about the Roote very straight, and fifty, fixty, or eighty foot without a branch. By the dwelling of the Siuages are some great Mulberie trees, and in some parts of the Countrey, they are sound growing naturally in pretie Groues. There was an offay made to make filke, and furely the Wormes prospered excellent well, till the Mafter workman fel fick. During which time they were eaten with Rats, 50

Elme.

Walnuts.

Mulberies,

Chefnuts.

Plummes.

Cheries.

it is as delicious as an Apricock. They have Cherries, and those are much like a Damson, but for their tastes and colour we called them Cherries. Wee faw fome few Crabbes, but very small and bitter. Of Vines great abundance in many parts climbe the tops of the highest trees in some places; but these beare but few Grapes. But by the Rivers and Savage habitations where they are not cuershadowed from 60 the Sunne, they are couered with fruit, though neuer pruned nor manured. Of those hedge Grapes wee made neere twenty gallons of Wine, which was neere as good as your French Britwish Wine: but certainly they would prove good, were they well manured. There is another fort of Grape, neereas great as a Cherrie, this they call Mellaminnes, they be far, and the myce

In some parts were found some Chesnats whose wild fruit equalize the best in France, Spaine,

Germann, or Italy, to their tasts that had tasted them all. Plummes there are of three forts. The

red and white are like our hedgy Plummes, but the other which they call Putchamins, grow

as high as Palmeta: the fruit is like a Medler; it is first greene then yellow, and red when it is

ripe; if it be not ripe it will draw a mans mouth awrie, with much torment, but when it is ripe,

thicke. Neither doth the tafte fo well please when they are made in Wine. They have a small from growing on little trees, busked like a Chefnut, but the fruit most like a very small Acorne " this they call Chechinguamins, which they efteeme a great daintie. They have a berrie much like Chechinguamins our Gooseberrie, in greatnesse, colour, and taite; those they call Rawcomenes, and doe eate them Rawcomenes raw or boyled. Of these naturall fruits they line a great part of the yeere, which they vie in this manner. The Walnuts, Chefnuts, Acornes, and Checklinguamins, are dried to keepe. When How they vie they need them they breake them betweene two stones; yet some part of the Walnut shels will cleave to the fruit. Then doe they drie them againe voon a Mat over a Hurdle. After they put it in a Morter of wood, and beate it very fmall : that done they mixe it with water, that the

CHAP. 2. Small fruit on which many line, Strange bealts.

10 thels may finke to the bottome. This water will be coloured as milke, which they call Paperbilling, and keepe it for their vie. The fruit like Medlers they call Patchamins, they call voon Hurdles on a Mat, and preferue them as Pruines. Of their Chefnuts and Chechinquamins boyled foure houres, they make both Broth and Bread for their chiefe men, or at their greatest feafle. Besides those fruit trees, there is a white Populer, and another tree like vnto it, that yeeldeth 4 very cleare and an odoriferous Gumme like Turpentine, which fome called Balfam. There are allo Cedars and Saxafras tree. They also yeeld Gummes in a small proportion of themselves. Saxafras trees. Wee tried conclusions to extract it out of the wood, but nature affourded more than our arts.

In the watery Valleyes groweth a Berrie, which they call Ocomphemannis, very much like Berries, vnto Capers. These they dry in Summer. When they will eate them, they boyle them neere 20 halfe a day: for otherwise they differ not much from poilon. Mattonine groweth as our Benes Mattoline. doe in medowes: the feed is not much valike to Rie, though much smaller: this they vie for a dainty Bread buttered with Deeres Suet.

During Summer there are either Strawberries which doe ripen in Aprill or Mulberries which Strawberries

ripen in May and June: Raspiles, Hurtes, er a fruit that the Inhabitants call Maracocks, which and other is a pleafant whollome fruit, much like a Limond, Many Herbes in the Spring time there are berries. commonly differred throughout the Woods, good for Broths and Sallets, as Violets, Purflane, Sorrell, &c. Befides many wee vied whole names we know not. The chiefe root they have for food is called Tockanboughe, It groweth like a Flag in low mud-

dy Freshes. In one day a Sauage will gather sufficient for a weeke. These rootes are much of the preatnesse and taste of Potatoes. They vie to couer a great many of them with Oke Leanes and Ferne, and then couer all with earth in the manner of a Cole-pit; ouer it, on each fide, they continue a great fire twentie foure houres before they dare eat it. Raw it is no better then roifon. and being roafted, except it be tender and the heat abated, or fliced and dried in the Sunne, mixed with Sorrell and Meale, or fuch like, it will prickle and torment the throat extreamely, and yet in Summer they vie this ordinarily for bread.

They have another root which they call Wighfacan: as th'other feedeth the Bodie, fo this cua Wighfacan a reth their horts and diseases. It is a small roote which they bruise and apply to the wound. Po. medicinable cones, is a small root that groweth in the Mountaines, which being dried and beat in powder turneth red. And this they vie for swellings, aches, anointing their ioynts, painting their heads and small root. earments. They account it verie precious, and of much worth. Mulqualpenne is a root of the big- Mulqualpenne neffe of a finger, and as red as bloud. In drying it will wither almost to nothing. This they wile to a root. paint their Mats, Targets, and fuch like. There is also Pellitorie of Spatter, Safafrage, and divers Parietaries others Simples, which the Apothecaries gathered, and commended to be good and medicinable, Saffafras, others Simples, which the Apothecarse gasuered, anatomisation to go more in many places, In the low marifhes grow plots of Onions containing an acre of ground or more in many places, See infr. 6:144

Of beafts the chiefe are Deare, nothing differing from ours. In the Defarts towards the heads of Oxen found the Rivers, there are many , but amongst the Rivers few. There is a beaff they call Arongheum, by Cap, Aroll. much like a Badger, but vieth to live on trees as Squirrels doe. Their Squirrels, fome are neere as Their chiete great as our smallest fort of wilde Rabbets, fome blackish or blacke and white, but the most are beafts a So gray. A small beast they have, they call of figurick, but wee call them flying Squirrels, because Arougheun. foreading their legs and fo firetching the largenetic of their skinnes, that they have beene feene to Sourcele. flie thirtie or fortie yards. An Opaffam hath a head like a Swine, and a taile like a Rat, and is of Affanonick a the bigneffe of a Cat. Under her belly the hath a bag, wherein the lodgeth, carrieth, and suckleth Squirres Hying her young. Muffalcus, is a beaft of the forme and nature of our water Rats, but many of them Opefform. smell exceeding strongly of Muske. Their Hares are no bigger then our Comes, and few of them to be found.

Their Beares are verie lietle in comparison of those of Muscomia and Tartaria. The Beauer is Muffafent. as big as an ordinarie great Dog, but his legs exceeding (hort, His fore feet like a Dogs, his hinder Be res. feet like a Swans. His taile formewhat like the forme of a Racket bare without haire, which to The Beauer. eate the Sairages efteeme a great delicate. They have many Otters, which as the Beauers they Otters. take with fnares, and effeeme the skins great ornaments, and of all those beaffs they vie to feede When they eatch them.

There is also a bealt they call Vetchungueyes, in the forme of a wilde Cat, their Foxes are like Vetcunqueyes, our filter haired-Conies of a small proportion, and not smelling like these in England, Their Foxes, Bbbbbbb 3

LIB, IX.

Do s. Marring Polcats. Weefels, and Minkes Note.

Dogs of that Countrey are like their Wolues, and cannot barke but ho wle; and their Wolues not much bigger then our Englife Foxes. Martins, Powlecats, Weetiels and Minkes we know they haue, because we have teene many of their skins, though very seldome any of them aline, But one thing is strange, that wee could never perceive their vermine destroy our Hens, Egges, nor Chickens, nor doe any hurt, nor their Flyes nor Serpents any way pernitious, where in the South parts of America they are alwaies dangerous and often deadly.

Birds. Fish hawkes.

Of Birds the Eagle is the greatest deuourer. Hawkes there bee of divers forts as our Falconers called them, Sparrowhawkes Lanarets, Gulhawkes, Falcons, and Operaies, but they all new most vpon Fish. Partridges there are little bigger then our Quailes, wilde Turkies ateas bigge as our tame. There are Woofels or Black-birds with red shoulders. Thrushes and divers forts of mall 10 Birds, some red, some Biew, scarce so big as a Wren, but few in Summer. In Winter these are areas plentie of Swans Cranes, gray and white with blacke wings, Herons, Geefe, Brants, Duck, Wigeon, Dotterell, Oxeies, Parrats and Pigeons. Of all those forts great abundance, and some other ffrange kinds to vs vnknowne by name. But in Summer not any or a very few to be feene.

O Fifth, we are beft acquainted with Sturgeon, Grampus, Porpus, Seales, Stingraies, whole tail saie very dangerous. Bretts, Mullets, white Salmonds, Trowts, Soles, Plaice, Herrings, Conyhih, Rockfish, E. le., Lampreyes, Catfish, Shades, Perch of three forts, Crabs, Shrimps, Creuses. Strange forme Oyfters, Cocles and Muscles. But the most strange Fish is a small one, to like the preture of Saint George his Dragon, as possible can bee, except his legges and wings, and the Todefilh, which will fwell till it be I ke to burft, when it commeth into the aire.

The Rocks.

Concerning the entrailes of the earth, little can be faid for certaintie. There wanted good Refiners, for those that tooke vpon them to have skill this way, tooke vp the washings from the mountaines, and some moskered shining stones and spangles which the waters brought downe. flattering themselves in their owne value concert to have suppoted what they were not, by the meanes of that Ore, if it proued as their Arts and judgements expreted. Onely this iscertaine, that many Regions lying in the fame Latitude, afford Mines very rich of divers natures. The cruit allo of their Rocks would eafily pertwade a man to believe there are other Mines then Iron and Sceele of there were but meanes and men of experience that knew the Mine from Bare.

Of their Planted fruits in Virginia, and how they wfe them.

They divide the yeere into five feafons. Their Winter some call Papanen , the Spring Catemedite yeare, peak, the Summer Cobattajough, the earing of their Coine Nopmangh, the Hatvelt and fall of Icate Taguirock From September, vivall the midft of November are the chiefe Feaths and Sacrifice. Then have they plentie of truits, as well planted as naturall, as Corne, green and ripe, Fish, Fowle, and wild beafts exceeding fat.

How they pro-

The greatest labour they take, is in planting their Corne, for the Countrey is naturally ouergrowne with Wood. To prepate the ground they bruile the barke of the trees neare the roote, then doe they fcorch the roots with hie that they grow no more. The next yeere with a crooked piece of Wood, they beat up the Woods by the roots, and in those moulds they plant their Corne. 40 Their manner is this. They make a hole in the earth with a flicke, and into it they put foure graines of Wheat, and two of Banes. There holes they make foure foot one from another; Their women and children do continually keepe it with weeding, and when it is growne middle high, they hill it about like a Hop-yard.

How they

In April they begin to plant, but their chiefe plantation is in May, and so they continue till the midft of Iune. What they plant in April, they respe in August ; for Blay, in Septembers for Iune, in October. Euery stalke of their Corne commonly beareth two cares, some three, seldome any foure, many but one, and some none. Every care ordinarily hath betwixt two hundred and five hundred graines. The stalke being greene bath a fweet inyce in it, fomewhat like a Sugar Cane, which is the cause that when they gather their Come greene, they sucke the stalkes for as we ga- 70 ther greene Peale, so doe they their Corne being greene, which excelleth their old. They plant alio Peale, which they call of fest amous, which are the fame they call in Italy, Pagioli. Their Beanes are the fame the Turkes call Garnerfes, but thefe they much efteeme for dainties.

How they vie

Their Corne they roft in the care greene, and bruifed it in a Morter of Wood with a Pole, lap it in roules in the leaves of their Corne, and to boile it for a daintie. They also referue the Corne late planted that will not ripe, by roaffing it in hot albes, the heat thereof drying it. In Winter they efteeme it, being boiled with Beanes, for a rare diff, they call Paularoumena. Their old Wheat they first steepe a night in hot water, in the morning pounding it in a Morter. They vie a small basket for their Temmes, then pound agains the great, and sofeparating by dalning their hand in the basket, receive the flower in a platter made of Wood, scraped to that forme with bur- 60 ning and thels. Tempering this flower in water, they make it cither in cakes covering with after till they be baked, and then washing them in faire water they drie prefently with their owner heat; or elfe boile them in water, eating the broth with the bread, which they call Pousp. The groute and pieces of the cornes remaining, by fanning in a platter, or in the wind, away, the branne

Pumpions planted among St Corne. Women Barbers. CHAP.2.

1697

they boile three or foure houres with water, which is an ordinary food they call Vitatabamen. But fome more thriftie then cleanly, doe burne the coare of the earerto powder. which they call Pungnersh, mingling that in their meale, but it never tafted well in bread, nor broth, There ofh and rieft they boile either very tenderly, or brode it folong on hurdles ouer the fire, or elfe after How they vie the Sparelle fashion, putting it on a spit, they turne first the one side, then the other, till it beezs their fish and drie as their lerkin beefe in the Welt Indies, that they may keepe it a month or more without fich. putrifying. The broth of fish or fiesh they eate as commonly as the meat. In May also amongst their Corne they plant Pumpeons, and a fruit like vnto a Muske Millen, Planted fruits.

but leffe and worfe, which they call Macocks. Their increase exceedingly, and ripen in the beto ginning of July, and continue vntill September. They plantalfo Muracocks, a wilde fruit like a Lemmon, which also increase infinitely. They begin to ripe in September, and continue till the and of October. When all their fruits be gathered, little elle they plant, and this is done by their women and children; neither doth this long fuffice them, for neere three parts of the yeere they onely observe times and seasons, and live of what the Countrey naturally affordeth from band to mouth,&c.

The mildnefle of the aire, the fertilitie of the foile, and the fituation of the Rivers, are fo propi. The 'commotions to the nature and vie of man, as no place is more concernent for pleasure, profit, and mans dities in Figs suffenance, Vnder that Latitude or Climate, here will live any beafts, as Horses, Goats, Sheepe, Affes, Hens, &c. as appeared by them that were carried thither. The waters, Iles, and shoales, are by industry. 30 full of fale harbours for thips of Warre or Merchand ze, for boats of all forts, for transportation or A proote, catfishing, &c. The Bay and Rivers have much merchandable fish, and places fit for Salt seats, bind- tell will live

ding of Ships, making of Iron, &c.

Muscomia and Polonia doe yeerely receive many thousands, for Pitch, Tarre, Sope, ashes, Rosen, The Com-Flax, Cordage, Sturgeon, Mafts, Yards, Wainfoot, Firres, Glaffe, and fach like : alio Swirbland for Iron and Copper. Frame in like manner for Wine , Canvas, and Sale ; Spaine as much for Iron, Steele, Figs, Reafons, and Sackes. Italy with Silkes and Veluers confirme our chiefe commodities. Holland maintaines it felfe by Fishing and Trading at our owne doores. All these temporize with other for necessities, but all as vicertaine as Peace or Warres. Besides the charge, trauell, and danger in transporting them, by feas, lands, flormes, and Pyrats. Then how much liath Virginia 30 the presognitue of all those flourishing Kingdomes, for the benefit of our Land, when as within

one hurfered miles all shofe that are to bee had, either readie prouided by nature, or elle to be prepared, were there but industrious men to labour. Onely Copper (we may doubt) is wanting this there is good probabilitie that both Copper, and better manerals are there to bee had for their labour. Other Countries haue it. So then here is a place ; a murfe for Souldiers ; a pradife for Mariners, a trade for the Merchants, a reward for the good, and that which is most of all, a bustneffe (most acceptable to God) to bring fuch poore Infidels to the true knowledge of God, and his holy Gofpel.

Of the natural Inhabitants of Virginia, and their customes.

The land is not populous, for the men be few; their farregreater number is of women and children. Within fixtie miles of lames Towne there are about fome 7000. people, but of able men fit for their warres fearle 2000. To nourish so many together they hade yet no meanes, because they make so imalia benefit of their Land, be it never so fertill : seven or eighe handred (hough by their owne report they were about a thousand) have beene the most which hath beene feane together, when they gathered themselves to have furposed Captaine South at Pamay whe having but fifteene to withfland the worft of their furie. As Imail as the proportion of to have furpriground that hath yet beene difcouered, is in comparison of that yet waknowne, the people dif. fed Captaine fer very much instature, especially in language, as before is expressed. Some being very great, as Smith. 50 the Sofquefabansocks; others very little as the Wighentomocoes; but generally tall and ftraight,

of a comely proportion, and of a colour browne when they are of any age, but they are borne white. Their haire is generally blacke, but few haue any beards. The men weare halfe their The Barbers heads shauen, the other halfe long; for Barbers they vie their women, who with two shels will grate away the haire, of any fathion they pleafe. The women are out in many fathions agreeable to their yeares, but ever some part remaineth long. They are very strong, of an able body and The constitute full of agilitie, able to endure to lye in the woods under a tree by the fire, in the world of winter, or in the weedes and graffe, in Ambufeado in the Summer. They are inconstant in enery The dispositithing, but what feare conftraineth them to keepe. Craftie, timerous, quicke of apprehension, on.

ond very ingenious. Some are of disposition fearefull, some bold, most cautelous, all Sauage : Generally conerous of Copper, Beads, and such like trash. They are some moved to anger, and so malicious, that they feldome forget an injury : they feldome steale one from another, least their Conjurers should reveale it, and to they be pursued and punished. That they are thus feared is certaine, but that any can reueale their offences by conjuration I am doubtfull. Their women are carefull not to be julpected of dishonefty without the leave of their husbands. Each boulhold

together, when they thought A deferiecion

ener weareth at his bracer, of any iplint of a flone or glaffe, in the forme of a hart; and their they

glew to the end of their Arrowes. With the finewes of Deere, and the tops of Deeres hornes

to trucking, they have plenty of the fame forme of Iron. And those are their chiefe instru-

hoiled to a jelly, they make a glew that will not diffolue in cold water,

The politellions. Their attire.

Their ofna-

knoweth their owne lands and gardens, and most line of their owne labours. For their apparell. they are sometime couered with the skins of wilde Beasts, which in winter are deesed with the haire, but in fummer without. The better fort vielarge mantels of Deare skins, not much differing in fashion from the Irish Mantels : some imbrodered with white Beades, some with Conper, other painted after their manner. But the common fort haue scarce to couer their nakednelle but with graffe, the leaves of trees, or fuch like. Wee have feene some vie mantels made of Turkie-feathers, fo prettily wrought and wouen with threds, that nothing could be difeerned but the feathers. That was exceeding warme and very handsome. But the women are alwaves covered about their middles with a skin, and very fhamefac't to be feene bate. Thevadorne themselves most with Copper Beads and paintings. Their women, some have their less, 10 hands, brefts and face cunningly imbrodered with divers works, as Beafts, Serpents, araificially wrought into their fiesh with blacke ipors. In each eare commonly they have three great holes. whereat the hang Chaines, Bracelets or Copper. Some of their men weare in those holes, a fmall greene and yellow coloured Snake, neere halfe a yard in length, which crawling and lappine her felfe about his necke oftentimes familiarly would kille his lips, Others weare, a dead Rat tied by the taile. Some on their heads weare the wing of a bird, or some large feather with a Rattell. Those Rattels are somewhat like the chape of a Rapier but leffe, which they take from the taile of a Snake. Many have the whole skin of a Hawke or iome strange fowle, stuffed

Their buildings.

to behold.

Their Buillings and habitations are for the most part by the Rivers, or not farre distant from some fresh Spring. Their Houses are built like our Arbors, of small yong sprigs bowed and ried. and foclofe couered with mats, or the barks of trees very handsomely, that notwithstanding either winde, raine or weather, they are fo warme as stoues, but very imoakie, yet at the top of the house there is a hole made for the smooke to goe into right over the fire.

with the wings abroad. Others a broad peece of Copper, and some the hand of their enemy drie

Oyle, this they hold in fummer to preferue them from the heate, and in winter from the cold.

Many other formes of paintings they vie, but he is the most gallant that is the most mensitrous

e.l. Their head and shoulders are painted red with the roote Pecone braied to powder mixed with 20

Their lodg-

Against the fire they lye on little hurdles of Reades couered with a mat borne from the ground a foote and more by a Hurdle of wood. On these round about the house they lye heads and 30 points one by shother against the fire, some covered with Mats, some with Skins, and some starke naked, we on the ground, from fix to twenty in a house. Their Houses are in the midst of their Ejelds or Gardens, which are small plots of grounds; some twenty, some forty, some a hundred, forme two hundred, forme more, forme leffe, formetimes from two to a hundred of those houses together, or but a little seperated by groups of trees. Neare their habitations is little small wood or old trees on the ground by realon of their burning of them for fire. So that a man may sallop a horse amongst these woods any way but where the creekes or Rivers shall hinder.

Men, Women, and Children haue their feuerall names, according to the feuerall humour of their Parents. Their women (they fay) are easily delivered of child, yet doe they love children How they vie very dearely. To make them hardy, in the coldest mornings they wash them in the Rivers, 40 sheir children. and by painting and ointments fo can their skins, that after a yeare or two, no weather

The industry of their wo-...

The men beflow their times in filhing, hunting, warres, and fuch manbke exercises, forming to be feene in any womanlike exercise; which is the cause that the women be very painfull, and the men often idle. The women and chikiren doe the reft of the worke. They make Mats, Balkers, Pots, Morters, pound their corne, make their bread, prepare their victuals, plant their corne, gather their corne, beare all kinde of burdens, and fuch like.

How they Their order of

Their fire they kindle prefently by chang a dry pointed sticke in a hole of a little square peece of wood, that firing it telfe, will fo fire moffe, leaves, or any such like dry thing, that will quickly burne. In March and Aprile they line much vpon their filbing wares, and teedeon fish, Tur. 50 kies; and Squirrels. In May and lune they plant their fields, and line most of Acornes, Walnuts, and fifth. But to mend their diet, some difperfe them selves in small companies, and live vpon fift, Beafts, Crabs, Oysters, land Fortoyses, Strawberries, Mulberries, and such like. In June, July, and August, they feede upon the rootes of Tochnough Berries, Fish, and greene Wheate. It is strange to fee how their bodies alter with their diet, euen as the Deere and wilde Beafis, they feeme fat and leane, firong and weake. Powhatan their great King, and some others that are prouident, rolf their fills and fielh upon hurdles, as before is expressed, and keepe it till scarce times. For filhing, and hunting, and warres, they vie much their Bowe and Arrowes. They bring their Bowes, to the forme of ours; by the scraping of a shell. Their Arrowes are made some of

Braight youg sprigs, which they head with bone, some two or three inches long. These they 62

vie to flicote at Squirrels on trees. Another fort of Arrowes they vie, made of reedes : thefe are

peeced with wood, headed with splinters of Christall, or some sharpe stone; the spurs of a Tur-

key, or the bill of some Bird, For his Knife, he hath the splinter of a reede to cut his feathers in

forme. With this Knife also, he will loynt a Deere or any Beast, shape his shoors, buskins, Man-

How they

Their Knife.

and betwirt the fires they place themselves. And some take their stands in the midst. The Decre being thus feared by the fires and their voices, they chace them to long within that circle, that many times they kill fix, eight, ten, or fifteene at a hunting. They vie also to drive them into fome narrow point of land, when they finde that advantage, and fo force them into the River, where with their Boates they have Ambufcadoes to kill them. When they have thot a Derre by land they follow him like Bloud-hounds, by the bloud and ftraine, and oftentimes fo take them. Hares, Partridges, Turkies, or Egges, fat or leane, yong or old, they denoure all they can catcli in their power. In one of these huntings they found Captaine Smith, in the discouery of the head

of the River of Chickahamania, where they flew his men, and tooke him prisoner in a Begmire, where he faw those exercises, and gathered these observations. One Sauage hunting alone, vied the skinne of a Deere flit on the one fide, and fo put on his One Sauage arme, through the necke, fo that his hand comes to the head which is fluffed, and the hornes, hunting alone, head, eies, eares, and euery part as artificially counterfeited as they can deuile. Thus fhrowding his body in the skin, by stalking he approacheth the Deere, creeping on the ground from one tree to another. If the Deere chance to finde fault, or fland at gaze, hee turneth the bead with his hand to his belt aduantage to feeme like a Deere, also gazing and licking himselie. So watching his best advantage to approach, having shot him, he chaleth him by his bloud and straine till

heget him. When they intend any Wars, the Werowarces vivally have the advise of their Priests and Con- Their confuliurers, and their allies and ancient friends, but chiefely the Priefts determine their refolution. rations. Every Werowance, or fome lafty fellow, they appoint Captaine over every Nation. They feldome make Warre for lands or goods, but for women and children, and principally for revenge. They have many enemies, namely all their Westernely Countries beyond the Mountaines, and Theirenem es

For their warres also they vie Targets that are round and made of the barkes of trees, and a Their Targets (word of wood at their backes, but oftentimes they vie for fwords the horne of a Deere put and swords, through a peece of wood, informe of a Pickaxe : fome a long ftone sharpened at both ends. vied in the fame manner. This they were wont to vie also for Hatchets, but now by

Their fishing is much in Boates. These they make of one tree by burning and scratching a- Their Boats

way the coles with stones and shels, till they have made it informe of a Trough. Some of them are an elle deepe, and forty or fifty foote in length, and fome will beare forty men, but the most ordinary are smaller, and will beare ten, twenty, or thirty, according to their bignesse. Instead of Oares, they vie paildles and tlickes, with which they will rowe failer then our Barges. Batwist their hands and thighes, their wo nen yfe to fpin; the Barkes of trees, Deere linewes, or Howthey foint a kinde of graffe they call Pemmenam, of these they make a thred very even and readily. This thred ferueth for many vies, about their housing, apparell, as also they make nets for fishing, for the quantity as formally braded as ours. They make also with it lines for angles. Their hookes Their Fishcold are either a bone grated, as they nocke their Arrowes, in the forme of a crocked pin or fishhooke, or of the splinter of a bone tied to the clift of a little flicke, and with the end of the line, they

tye on the baite. They vie alfolong Arrowes tyed in a line, wherewith they shoote at fish in the River. But they of Accammack vie staves, like vnto Iauelins, headed with bone. With these they dart fift fwimming in the water. They have also many attiticiall wares in which they get In their hunting & filhing they take extreame paines; yet it being their ordinary exercise from their infancy, they effeemed it a pleasure and are very proud to be expert therein: And by their bouts.

exercife, every man doth his best to thew his dexteritie, for by their excelling in those qualities,

they get their wives. Forty yards will they shoote levell, or very neere the marke, and one hun-

two or three hundred together. Having found the Deere, they environ them with many fires,

ao dred and twenty is their beff at random. At their hunting in the defarts they are commonly

continuall ranging, and trauell, they know all the aluantages and places most frequented with 20 Deere, Beafts, Fish, Fowle, Rootes, and Berries. At their huntings they leave their habitations,

and reduce themselves into companies, as the Tartars doe, and goe to the most desert places with How they have their families, where they spend their time in hunting and fowling up towards the Mountains. by the heads of their Rivers, where there is plenty of game. For betwixe the Rivers, the grounds are fo parrow, that little commeth there which they denouse not. It is a margell they can to di-

rectly passe these delarts, some three or foure daies source without habitation. Their hunting Hunting h. uhouses are like vnto Arbours couered with mats. These their women beare after them, with fes-Corne, Acornes, Morters, and all bag and baggage they vie. When they come to the place of

the heads of the Rivers. Vpon the head of the Powbatans are the Monacans, whole chiefe habitation is at Ruffawmeake, viito whom the Moubementhughes, the Maffinnacacks, the Monabaffannges, and other Nations pay tributes. Vpon the head of the River of Toppabanocke is a penple called Mannahoseks. To these are contributers the Taux Initarias, the Shackaconias, the Outponeas, the Tegoneaes, the Whonkentyaes, the Stegarakes, the Haffinnungas, and divers others. all contederates with the Monacans though many differ in language, and be very barbarous, huine for most part of wilde Beaits and fruies. Beyond the Mountaines, from whence is the head of Mafferonikes, the River Parawomeke, the Savages report inhabit their most mortall enemies, the Maffamomekee whom a great falt water, which by all likelihood is either fome part of Commada, fome great upon a great fait water, which by an inational state of the South Sea. These Massamments are a Lake, or some insert of some Sea that falleth into the South Sea. These Massamments are a

great Nation and very populous. For the heads of all those Rivers, especially the Pattawometer. the Pantuxuntes, the Safquefabanoks, the Tockwonghes are continually tormented by them : of whose cruelty, they generally complained, and very importunate they were with Cantaine Smith and his company to free them from these tormentors. To this purpose they offered food. conduct, affiltance, and continuall subjection; which hee concluded to effect. But the councell then present, emulating his fuccesse, would not thinke it fit to spare him forty men to be hazarded in those vnknowne Regions, having passed (as before was spoken of) but with twelve, and fo was loft that opportunity. Seuen Boates full of thele Maffanomekes the discourrers encountred at the head of the Bay; whole Targets, Baskets, Swords, Tobaccopipes, Flatters. Bowes and Arrowes, and enery thing the wed, they much exceeded them of our parts, and their dexteritie in their small Boates made of the barkes of trees fowed with barke and well luted with gum, argueth that they are feated upon iome great water.

Against all these enemies the Powhatans are conftrained sometimes to fight. Their chiefeattempts are by Stratagems, trecheries or furpritals. Yet the Weromances women and children they put not to death, but keepe them Captines. They have a method in warre, and for our pleafures

they flewed it vs, and it was in this manner performed at Mattapanient.

Having painted and differred themselves in the hercest manner they could denise. They dimided themtelues into two Companies, neere a hundred in a Company. The one company called Monacans, the other Powhatans. Either army had their Captaine. Thele as enemies tooke their stands a Musket shot one from another; ranked themselves fifteene a breit, and each ranke 20 from another foure or fine yards, not in fyle, but in the opening betweet their fyles. So as the Reare could shoote as conveniently as the Front, Having thus pitched the fields : from either part went a Meffenger with these conditions, that whospeuer were vanquished, such as esope voon their submission in two daies after shall live, but their wives and children should be prize for the Conquerours. The Messengers were no tooner returned, but they approached in theirorders : On each flanke a Sarieant, and in the Reare an officer for Lieutenant, all duely keeping their orders, yet leaping and finging after their accustomed tune which they vie onely in wars. Vpon the first flight of Arrowes they gave such horrible shouts and screeches, as so many infernall helhounds could not have made them more terrible. When they had spent their Arrowes, they joyned together prettily, charging and retiring, every ranke seconding other. As they got 40 aduantage, they catched their enemies by the haire of the head, & down he came that was taken! his enemy with his wodden Sword feemed to beate out his braines, and ftill they crept to the Reare to maintaine the skirmish. The Monacans decreasing, the Tombatans charged them in the forme of a halfe Moon; they vnwilling to be inclosed, fled all in a troope to their Ambufcadoes, on whom they led them very cunningly. The Monacans difperfe themielues among the tresh men, whereupon the Powhatans retired with all speede to their seconds; which the Monacans seeing, tooke that aduantage to retire againe to their owne battell, and so each returned to their owne quarter. All their actions, voices and gestures, both in charging and retiring, were so strained to the height of their quallitie and nature, that the strangeneile thereof made it iceme very For their mulicke they vie a thicke Cane, on which they pipe as on a Recorder. For their

warres they have a great deepe platter of wood. They cover the mouth thereof with a skin, ac each corner they tie a Walnut, which meeting on the backefide neere to the bottome, with a fmall rope they twitch them together till it be fo tough and fliffe, that they may be are vpon it as vpon a Drum. But their chiefe instruments are Rattels made of small gourds or Pumpions shels. Of these they have Base, Tenor, Countertenor, Mear eand Trible. Trese mingled with their voyces, sometimes twenty or thirty together, make such a terrible noile, as would rather affright then delight any man. If any great Commander arrive at the habitation of a Weromance, they spread a Mat, as the Turkes doe a Carpet, for him to fit vpon. Vpon another right cpposite they sit themselves. Then doe all with a tunable voice of showing bid him welcome 60 After this doe two or more of their chiefest men make an Oration, testifying their loue; which they doe with such vehemency, and so great passions, that they sweate till they drop, and are fo out of breath they can fearce fpeake: fo that a man would take them to be ex wing angry, or starke mad. Such victuall as they have, they spend freely, and at night where his

lodging is appointed, they fet a woman fresh painted red with Pocones and Oile, to be his Their manner of trading is for Copper, Beades, and fuch like, for which they give fuch com-

modities as they have, as Skins, Fowle, Fish, Flesh, and their Countrie Corne. But their victuall

Every foring they make themselves sickewith drinking the juice of a roote they call Wieb. Their philicke, Gean, and water, whereof they powre fo great a quantity, that it purgeth them in a very violent manner; fo that in three or foure daies after they fcarce recouer their former health. Sometimes they are troubled with dropfies, fwellings, aches, and fuch like difeales; for cure whereof they build a stone, in the forme of a Douehouse, with mats, so close that a few coales therein couered with a pot, will make the patient sweate extreamely. For swellings also they vie small peeces of touchwood, in the forme of cloues, which pricking on the griefe they burne close to the fi-sh, and from thence draw the corruption with their mouth. With this root Wigh facan they ordinarily heale greene wounds. But to scarrifie a swelling or make incision, their best instruments are some splinted stone. Old vicers or putrified hurts are seldome seene cured amongst them. They have many professed Physicians, who with their charmes and Rattels with an in- Their charmes fernall rowt of words and actions will feeme to fucke their inward griefe from their nauels or to cure. their grieued places; but of our Chirurgians they were to conceited, that they beleeved any Plaifter would heale any hurt.

Of their Religion.

There is yet in Virginia no place discouered to be so Sauage in which the Sauages haue not a Religion, Deere, and Bow, and Arrowes. All things that were able to doe them hurt beyond their prepention, they adore with their kinde of dinne worthip; as the fire, water, lightning, thunder, our ordnance, peeces, horses, &c. But their chiefe God they worship is the Diuell; him they call Oke, and ferue him more of feare then loue. They fay they have conference with him and faihion themselves as neere to his shape as they can imagine. In their Temples they have his image euilfauouredly carued, and then painted and adorned with Chaines, Copper, and Beads, and couered with a skin, in such manner as the deformitie may well fuite with such a God. By 30 him is commonly the fepulcher of their Kings. Their bodies are first bowelled, then dried vpon hurdles till they be very dry, and so about the most of their joints and necke they hang How they bu-Bracelets or Chaines of Copper, Pearle, and such like, as they vie to weare, their inwards they rytheir Kings. fluffe with Copper Beads and couered with a Skin, Hatchets, and fuch trafh. Then lap they them

of wealth, their Kings haue, they fet at their feete in baskets. These Temples and bodies are For their ordinary burials, they dig a deepe hole in the earth with sharpe stakes, and the corpes being lapped in Skins and Mats with their lewels, they lay them upon dicks in the ground, and 40 fo couer them with earth. The buriall ended the women being painted all their faces with black

very carefully in white Skins, and so rowle them in mats for their winding-sheetes. And in the

Tombe, which is an arch made of Mats, they lay them orderly. What remaineth of this kinde

cole and oyle, doe fit foure and twenty houres in the houses mourning and lamenting by turnes,

with such yelling and howling as may expresse their great passions. In every Territory of a Werowance is a Temple and a Priest, two, or three, or more. Their prin- Their Temples cipall Temple or place of superstition is at Vitamus ack at Pamavake, neere vnto which is a house temple or place of Powhatans. Vpon the top of certain red fandy hils in the woods, there are three great houses filled with images of their Kings, and Diuels, & Tombes of their Predeceffors, Those houses are neere fixty foot in length, built arbot-wise after their building. This place they count folioly as that none but the Priells and Kings dare come into them; nor the Sauages dare not goe Vp the River in Boates by it, but that they solemnly cast some peece of Popper, white Beads or To Pocones into the River; for feare their Oke (hould be offended and revenged of them. In this place Their orna-

commonly are refident feuen Priefts. The chiefe differed from the reft in his ornaments, but inferior Priefts could hardly be knowne from the common people, but that they had not io many their Priefts. holes in their cares to have their Iewels at. The ornament of the chiefe Prieft were certaine attires for his head made thus; They tooke a dofen, or fixteene, or more Snake skins, and stuffed them with moffe, & of Weefels, and other vermine skins a good many. All these they tye by their tailes, fo as all their tailes meete in the top of their head, like a great Taffell. Round about this Taffell is as it were a cown of feathers, the skins hang round about his head, necke, and shoulders, and in a manner couer his face. The faces of all their Priests are painted as vgly as they can deuife, in their hands they had every one his Rattell, some base, some smaller. Their devotion was most in

60 Songs, which the chiefe Priest beginneth, and the rest followed him, sometimes he maketh inuo. cations with broken fentences by flares and flrange paffions, and at every paule, the reft gine a

It could not be perceived that they keepe any day as more holy then other; but onely in some Their times of great diffreste of want feare of enemies, times of triumph and gathering together their fruits, the following to.

Their Conin-

with Rattles and shouts together toure or fine houres. Sometime they let a man in the midft and about him they dance and ting, he all the while clapping his hands if he would keepe time, and after their fongs and dancings ended they goe to their Feafts. They have also divers conjurations; one they made when Captaine Smith was their prisoner (as they reported) to know if any more of his Country-men would arrive there, and what hee

there intended. The manner of it followeth in his story.

Their Altars. C.Smith.

Sacrifices to

They have also certaine Altar stones, they call Pancorances, but these stand from their Temples, fome by there houses; others in the Woods and Wildernetles : Where they have bad an ex- Id traordinary accident or incounter. As you travell by them they will tell you the cause of their erection. wherein they instruct their children; fo that they are in flead of Records and memorialls of their Antianities. Voon this they offer bloud, Deare fuet, and Tobacco. Thefe they doe when they returne from the warres, from hunting, and vpon many other occasions. They have also another Superflition that they vie in flormes, when the waters are rough in the Rivers and Sea Coaffe. Their Conjurers runne to the water fides, or passing in their Boats, after many hellish outches and innocations, they cast Tobacco, Copper, Pocones, or such trash into the water, to pacific that God whom they thinke to be very angry in those flormes. Before their dinners and suppers, the better fort will take the first bit , and cast it in the fire , which is all the grace they are

Their folemne making of

C.Smith.

Euery Nation in feuen or ten yeeres vieth a kind of folemnity. Such a one was at Quipongheohanock . fome ten miles from lames Towne, and thus performed. Fifteene of the properest young Boyes betweene ten and fifteene yeeres of age they painted white. Having brought them forth, the people spent the forenoone in dancing and singing about them with Rattler. In the afternoone they put those children to the root of the tree. By them all the men stood in a gard, euery one hauing a Bastinado in his hand, made of Reeds bound together. This made a lane betweene them all along, through which there were appointed fine young men to fetch thefechildren : fo enerie one of the fine went through the goard to fetch a child each after other by turnes, the guard fearlessy beating them with the Bastinadoes, and they patiently enduring and receinine all, defending the children with their naked bodies from the vnmercifuli blowes, that my ; them foundly, though tie children escape. All this while the women weepe and cry out vene piffionately, prouiding Mats, Skins, Moffe, and drie Wood, as things fitting their childrens Funeralls. After the children were thus passed, the guard tore downe the trees, branches, and boughs, with such violence that they rent the bodie, and made wreathes for their heads, or bedecked their haire with leaves. What elfe was done with the children, was not feene, butthey were all cast on a heape, in a Valley as dead, where they made a great feast for all the company, The Werowance being demanded the meaning of this facrifice, answered. That the children were not all dead, but the next day they were to drinke Wighlakon, which would make them mad; and they were to bee kept by the last made Blacke boyes in the wildernesse, where their Oke did sucke the blond of those which fell to bic lot. The truth is, as I thinke that many die with the mifery which they endure. For they 40 lye in all weathers in a little bonell naked , and they seldome speake or keepe company with any but them Keepers ; whom they obey fo, that if they be bidden fit on the frozen from, they will not rife till they be called. And if they bid them goe take Fish, Flesh, or Corne from their mothers, or elfe they are Old me, this word is fo terrible that they will teare their mothers throat, but they will have it; yea it makes them do what seemer they are commanded: and much mischiefe they often doe to such as they find stragling. Tet burt they not each other. They continue thus nine menths. Then are diners platters of broth set, of which some are porsoned; and be whose dimination finds out the porsoned, is much esteemed and made a Quiyoughcoiuck. Thefe are the degrees to become Priests or Coniurers. This facrifice they held to be to necessary, that if they should omit it, their Oke or Deuil, and all their other Quinonghoof uches which are there other Gods, would let them have no Deare, Turkies, Corne, nor Fifn, and yet be- 10 fides, be would make a great flaughter among it them.

They thinke that their Weromances and Priests , which they also esteeme Quijongheofnghes, when they are dead, goe beyond the Mountaines towards the fetting of the Sunne, and euer remaine there in forme of their Ole, with their heads painted with Oile and Pocones, finely trimmed with Feathers, and shall have Beades, Hatchets, Copper, and Tobacco, doing nothing but dance and fing, with all their Predeceffors. But the common people they suppose shall not live

after death. To divert them from this blind Idolatry, many vied there best endeauours, chiefly with the Werowances of Quiyoughcohanock, whole denotion, apprehension, and good disposition, much exceeded any in those Countries, whom though wee could not as yet prevaile withall to forfake 62 hisfalle Gods, yet this he did beleeue, that our God as much exceeded theirs, as our Gunaes did their Bowes and Arrowes, and many times did fend to the President, at Iames Towne, men with Prefents, intreating them to pray to his God for Raine, for his God's would not fend him any. And in this lamentable ignorance, doe these poore soules sacrifice themselves to the Devil, not knowing their Creator.

of the manner of the Virginians Government.

Although the Countrey people be very barbarous, wet have they amongst them such government . as that their Magiltrates for good commanding , and their people for due subjection, and obeying, excell many places that would be counted verie civill. The forme of their Commonwealth is a Monarchiall government, one as Emperour ruleth over many Kings or Governouts. Their chiefe Ruler is called Powhatan, and taketh his name of the principall place of dwelling, salled Pombatan. But his proper name is Wabun Conacock. Some Countries hee hath which have been his Ancestors, and came vnto him by Inheritance, as the Countrie called Pophatan, Arroto bateck, Appamatuke, Pamavuke, Youghtanud, and Mattapaniont. All the rest of his Territories expreffed in the Map, they report have beene his feuerall conqueits. In all his ancient Inheritances,

hee hath houses built after their manner like arbours, some thirtie, some fortie yards long, and at euerie house prouision for his entertainment according to the time. At Weroweamose, hee was scated youn the Northside of the River Pamaruke, some fourteene miles from lames Towne. where for the most part, hee was resident, but hee tooke so little pleasure in our neere neighbourhood, that were able to visit him against his will in fixe or feuen houres, that he retired himselfe to a place in the Defarts at the top of the River Chickahamania, betweene Tonehtanund and Pow- A deferiction batan. His habitation is called Orapacks, where he ordinarily now refideth. He is of parsonage a of Powhaten. tall well proportioned man, with a fower looke, his head fomewhat gray, his beard fo thin that

an it feemeth none at all, his age neere fixtie; of a verie able and hardie bodie to endure any labour. About his person ordinarily attendeth a guard of fortie or fiftie of the tallest men his Countrie doth afford. Euerie night voon the foure quarters of his house are foure Sentinels each standing from other a flight shoot, and at every halfe houre one from the Corps due guard doth hollow, vnto whom everie Sentinell doth answere round from his stand; if any faile, they presently fend forth an officer that beateth him extreamely.

A mile from Orapakes, in a thicket of Wood, hee hath a house in which hee keepeth his kind of His treasurie. Treasure, as Skins, Copper, Pearle, and Beads, which he storeth vp against the time of his death and buriall. Here also is store of Red paint for ointment, and Bowes and Arrowes. This house is siftie or fixtie yards in length, frequented onely by Prieffs. At the foure corners of this house stand of foure Images as Sentinels, one of a Dragon, another a Beare, the third like a Leopard, and the fourth like a Giant-like man, all made euill-fauor uly according to their best workmanship.

He hath as many women as he will, whereof when he lieth on his bed, one fitteth at his head. His Wines. and another at his feet, but when he fitteth one fitteth on his right hand & another on his left, As he is weary of his women, he bestoweth them on those that best deserve them at his hands. When he dineth or suppeth, one of his women before and after meat, bringeth him water in a woodden Platter to wash his hands. Another waiteth with a bunch of Feathers to wipe them insteed of a Towell, and the Feathers when he hath wiped are dried againe. His Kingdome delcendeth not to his ionnes nor children, but first to his brethren, whereof hee hath three, namely Opitchapan, His Successors Opechancanough, and Catataugh, and after their decease to his fifters. First to the eldest fifter, then The title of ao to the rest, and after them to the heire male and semale of the eldest fister, but never to the heires succession.

of the males. Hee, nor any of his people understand any letters whereby to write or read, onely the Lawes whereby he ruleth is Cuftome. Yet when hee lifteth his will is a law, and must be obeyed : not only as a King, but as halfe a God they efteeme him. His inferiour Kings, whom they call Their authoris Weromances are tied to rule by customes, and have power of life and death, as their command in that nature. But this word Werowance, which we call and confter for a King, is a common word whereby they call all Commanders : for they have but few words in their language, and but few occasions to vie any officers more then one Commander, which commonly they call Werowances. The tenor of They all know their fenerall lands, and habitations, and limits, to fish, fowle, or hunt in, but they their lands, 50 hold all of their great Werowance Powhatan, vnto whom they pay tribute of Skins, Beads, Copper.

Pearle, Deare, Turkies, wild Beafts, and Corne. What hee commandeth they dare not disobey in the least thing. It is strange to see with what great feare & adoration all these people do obey this Powhatan. For at his feet they present whatsoever hee commandeth, at the least fromne of his brow, their greatest spirits will tremble with feare; and no margell, for hee is very terrible and tyrannous in punishing such as offend him. For example, hee caused certaine malefactors to bee. His manner of bound hand and foot, then having many fires, gathering great flore of burning coles, they rake these punishments. coles round in the forme of a cock-pit, and in the midtl they cast the offenders to broyle to death. Somtimes hee canfeth the heads of them that offend him, to bee laid upon the altar or facrificing

ftone, and one with clubs beat out their braines. When he would punish any notorious enemy or 60 malefactor, hee causeth him to bee tied to a tree, and with Mukle shels, or Reeds, the executioner cutteth off his joynts one after another, ever cafting what they cut off into the fire; then doth hee proceed with S. els and Reeds to cafe the skin from his head and face; then doe they rip his belly, and so burne him with the tree and all. Thus themselves reported they executed George Cassen. Their ordinary correction is to beat them with cudgels. Wee have seene a man kneeling on his

Vanitie of

Life minate

Vanitie of

glor:ofos.

felf-fecking

Planters.

knees, and at Powhatans command, two men have beat him on the bare skin, till hee hath fallen fenfeleffe in a found, and yet neuer cry nor complained.

In the yeere 1608, he furprised the people of Pagankatank, his neere neighbours and subjects: The occasion was to vs vnknowne, but the manner was thus. First, he fent divers of his men to Indee amongst them that night, then the Ambufacodes invironed all their houses, and at the hour appointed, they all fel to the spoile, twenty foure men they flew, the long haire of their one fide of theirheads, with the skinne caled off with shels or reeds, they brought away. They simprifed also the women, the children, and the Werowance. All these they present to Pombatan. The Werowance, women and children became his prisoners, and doe him service. The lockes of haire with their skins he hanged on a line vnto two trees. And thus hee made oftentation of 25 to great a triumph at Weromocomoco, thewing them to the English men that then came vnto him ac his appointment, they expecting prouision, he to betray them, supposed to halfe conquer them by this ipecticle of his terrible crueltie.

And this is as much as my memory can call to mind worthy of note; which I have purposely collected, to fatisfie my friends of the true worth and qualitie of Virginia, Yet fome bad natures will not flick to flander the Countrey, that will flouenly fpit at all things, especially in company where they can find none to contradict them. Who though they were fearce euer ten miles from I ames Towne, or at the most but at the Falls; yet holding it a great diffrace that amongst so much action, their actions were nothing, exclaime of all things, though they neuer aduentured to know any thing, nor euer did any thing but deuoure the fruits of other mens labours. Being for 20 most part of such tender educations and small experience in martiall accidents, because they found not English Cities, nor fuch faire houses, nor at their owne wishes any of their accultomed dainties, with Feather-beds, and Down-pillowes, Tauernes and Ale-houses in euery breathing place, neither fuch plentie of Gold and Siluer and diffolute libertie as they expected, had little or no care of any thing, but to pamper their bellies, to fly away with our Pinnaces, or procure their meanes to returne tor England. For the Countrey was to them a mifery, a ruine, a death, a hell, their reports here, and their owne actions were there according.

Some other there were that had yeerely stipends to passe to and againe for transportation: who to keepe the mystery of the businesse in themselves, though they had neither time nor meanes to know much of themsclues; yet all mens actions or relations they so formally tuned to 20 the temporizing times simplicitie, as they could make their ignorances seeme much more, then all the true actors could by their experience. And those with their great wordes deluded the world with such thrange promises, as abused the businesse much worse then the rest. For the bufineffe being builded vpon the foundation of their fained experience, the planters, the Money, Tin, and meanes have Hill miscarried : yet they ever returning, and the Planters so farre absent, who could contradict their excuses ? which still to maintaine their vain-glory and estimation, from time to time they have vied fuch diligence as made them passe for truths, though nothing more falle. And that the adventurers might be thus abused, let no man wonder; for the wisest living is foonest abused by him that hath a faire tongue and a dissembling heart.

Milerie of bale

There were many in Virginia meerely proiecting, verball and idle contemplators, and those so 40 denoted to pure idlenesse, that though they had lived two or three yeeres in Verginia, lordly, neceffitie it selfe could not compel them to pale the Pninfula, or Pallsadoes of James Town, & thole wittie spirits, what would they not affirme in the behalfe of our transporters to get victual from their ships, or obtaine their good words in England to their passes. Thus the clamors and the ignorance of telle informers, are sprung those disasters that sprung in Virginia, and our ingenious Verbalists were no lesse plague to vs in Virginia, then the Locusts to the Egyptians, For the labour of thirtie of the best only, preserved in Christianitie by their industry the idle livers of neere two hundred of the rest: who hung neere ten months of such naturall meanes, as the Countrey naturally of it felfeafforded, not withftanding all this, and the worft fury of the Sausges, the extremitie of ficknesse, mutinies, faction, ignorances, and want of victual : in all that time Hoft 50 but seuen or eight men, yet subjected the Sauages to our desired obedience, and received contribution from flue and thirtie of their Kings, to protect and affift them against any that should affault them; in which order they continued true and faithfull, and as subjects to his Maiestie, so long after as I did gouerne there, vntill I left the Countrey : fince , how they have revolted, the Countrey loft, and againe replanted, and the businesses have succeeded from time to time, I refer you to the relations of them returned from Virginia, that have been more diligent in such obseruations, gathered out of the Writings of divers of that Plantation, by Doctor William Simons.

CHAP. 60

CHAP. IIII.

CHAR. 4. Letters Patents for establishing a Counsell. A Fort contriued.

The proceedings of the English Colony in Virginia, taken faithfully out of the writings of THOMAS STUDLY Cape-Merchant, ANAS TODKILL, Doctor Rus-SELL, NATHANIEL POWELL, WILLIAM PHETIPLACE, and RICHARD POT, * RICHARD WIFFIN, THO. AB-BAY, THO. HOPE; and since enlarged out of the Writings of Capt. IOHN SMITH, principal Agent and Patient in

these Virginian Occurrents, from the beginning of the Plantation 1606. till Ann. 1610. Comewhat abridged.

Apraine Bartholomen Gofnold, the first mouer of this Plantation, having many cause these yeeres folicited many of his friends, but found imall affiftants ; at last prevailed have alreadie with fome Gentlemen, as M. Edward-Maria Wingfield , Captaine Iohn Smith , feene the light, and divers others, who depended a yeere upon his projects, but nothing could and containe be effected, till by their great charge and industrie it came to bee apprehended of Virginian by certaine of the Nobilitie, Gentrie, and Merchants, fo that his Maiettie by affaires. I was

his Letters Patents, gaue Commission for establishing Councels, to direct here, and to gouerne, and loch to wearing to execute there : to effect this was front another yeere, and by that time three Ships were pro- the Reader uided, one of one hundred Tuns, another of fortie, and a Pinnace of twentie. The transportation with others of on of the Company was committed to Captaine Christopher Newport, a Mariner well practifed for The full mothe Westerne parts of America. But their orders for gouernment were put in a Box, not to bee ucrofthe

opened, nor the Governours knowne vntill they arrived in Virginia.

On the ninteenth of December, 1606. wee fet faile, but by vnprosperous winds, were kept Orders for gofix weekes in the fight of England; all which time, M. Hunt our Preacher, was fo weake and enforcement. ficke, that few expected his recourrie. Yet although hee were but ten or twelue miles from his Admirall with so habitation (the time we were in the Downes) and notwithstanding the stormy weather, nor the 71. feandalous imputation (of fome few , little better then Atheilts , of the greatest ranke among it God Beed Vice. vs) fuggefted against him, all this could neuer force from him so much as a seeming defire to leave admirall with the businesse, but preferred the Service of God, in so good a Voyage, before any affection to contest with his godlesse whose disasterous designes (could they have prevailed) had even then by Cap Gostal. overthrowne the businesse. So many discontents did then arise, had he not with the water of pati- Discourt ence, and his godfy exhortations (but briefly by his true denouted examples) quenched those Rear admirall, flames of entry and differtion.

Wee waterdat the Canaries, we traded with the Sauages at Dominica; three weekes we spent M. Hant. in refreshing our selves amongst these West India Iles; in Gwardalupa wee found a Bath so hot, as 40 in it we boiled Porck as well as over the fire. And at a little lle, called Monica, wee tooke from the Bulhes with our hands, neere two Hogsheads of Birds in three or foure homes. In Mevis, Manica an vice Mona", and the Virgin Iles, we spent sometime, wherewith a loathsome beast like a Crocadil, frequented colled a Green Torroles Pellicans Parcor and Rifles weed diluser that Government of Letislot birds called a Gwayn, Tortoles, Pellicans, Parrots, and Fishes, wee daily feasted. Gone from thence in fearch of Virginia, the Company was not a little discomforted, seeing the Mariners had three daies passed their reckoning and found no Land, so that Captaine Rateliffe (Captaine of the Pinnace) rather defired to beare up the Helme to returne for England, then make further fearch. But God the guider of all good actions, forcing them by an extreame ftorme to Hull all night, did drive them by his providence to their defired Port, beyond all their expectations, for never any of them had leene that Coast. The first Land they made, they called Cape Henry; where ancho- Their first ring, M. Wingfield, Goffoll, and Nemport, with thirtie others, recreating themselves on shoare, Were landing-50 affaulted by fine Sauges, who hurt two of the English very dangeroully. That night was the Box opened, and the orders read in which Bartholomen Gofnoll Edward Wing field, Christopher Newport,

John Smith, John Ratliffe, John Martin, and George Kendall, were named to be the Councell, and to chuse a President among it them for a yeere, who with the Councell should gouerne. Matters of Mitters of go moment were to be examined by a Iury, but determined by the Maior part of the Councell, in ueroment. which the Prefident had two voices. Vntill the thirteenth of May they fought a place to plant in, then the Councell was Iworne, M. Wing field was chosen Prefident, and an Oration made, why Captaine Smith was not admitted to the Councell as the reft.

Now falleth every man to worke, the Councell contriue the Fort, the rest cut downe Trees to 60 make place to pitch their Tents ; some prouide Clap-board to relade the Ships, some make Gardens, some Nets, &c. The Sauges often visited vs kindly. The Presidents ouerweening lealousie would admit no exercise at Armes, or Fortification, but the Boughs of Trees cast together in the The discourse forme of a halfe Moone, by the extraordinary paine and diligence of Captaine Kendall, Nempore, othe Fils and With Smith, and twentie others, were lent to discouer the head of the River : by divers small habi- Pontain.

* I haue many written Treatifes lying by me, written by Capt. Smith and others. fome mere, fome here af

The Fort affaulted by the Sauages. Ihan: also M. Winefields notes of thefe affaires : but ould not rouble the with things nore then troublefome

there.

tations they passed, in fixe dayes they arrived at a Towne called Powbatan, consisting of some twelue houses pleasantly seated on a Hill; before it three fertill lies, about it many of their Cornfields, the place is very pleafant, and ftrong by nature, of this place the Prince is called Pare hatan, and his people Powhatans, to this place the River is Navigable, but higher within a mile, by reason of the Rockes and Iles, there is not passage for a small Boat, this they call the Falls, the people in all parts kindly intreated them, till being returned within twentie miles of lames Towne, they gave just cause of jealousie, but had God not blessed the discoverers otherwise then those at the Fort, there had then beene an end of that Plantation; for at the Fort, where they are rived the next day, they found seventeene men hurt, and a boy slaine by the Sauages, and had it not chanced a croffe Bar shot from the Ships strooke downe a Bough from a Tree amongst them, that caused them to retire, our men had all beene slaine, being securely all at worke, and their Armes in Dry-fats. Heereupon the President was contented the Fort should be pallisadoed, the Ordnance mounted, his men armed and exercised, for many were the assaults, and Ambuscadoes of the Sauges, and our men by their diforderly ftragling were often hurt, when the Sauges by the nimbleneile of their heeles well elcaped. What toile we had, with fo small a power to guard our workemen adayes, watch all night, refult our enemies, and effect our bulineffe, to relade the Ships, cut downe Trees, and prepare the ground to plant our Corne, &c. I refer to the Readers confideration. Six weekes being ipent in this manner; Captaine Newport (who was hired onely for our transportation) was to returne with the Ships.

Now Captaine Smith (who all this time from their departure from the Canaries) was reftrai-20 ned as a prisoner upon the scandalous suggestions of some of the chiefe (enuying his repute) who fained he intended to viurpe the gouernment, murder the Councell, and make himfelfe King that his confederates were dispersed in all the three Ships, and that divers of his confederates that reuealed it, would affirme it; for this he was committed, thirteene weekes hee remained thus fulpected, and by that time the Ships should returne, they pretended, out of their commisserations. to referre him to the Councell in England to receive a check, rather then by particulating his defignes make him fo odious to the world, as to touch his life, or veterly overthrow his reputation: but he much formed their charitie, and publikely defied the vetermost of their crueltie, hee wifely prevented their policies, though hee could not suppresse their enuies, yet so well hee demeaned himfelie in this businesse, as all the Company did see his innocencie, and his adversaries malice, 30 and those which had beene subborned to accuse him, accused his accusers of subornation; many wntruths were alledged against him; but being so apparantly disproved, begat a generall hatred in the hearts of the Company against such vniust Commanders; many were the mischiefes that daily forung from their ignorant (yet ambitious) spirits; but the good doctrine and exhortation of our Preacher Master Hunt reconciled them, and caused Captaine Smith to be admitted of the Councell: the next day all received the Communion, the day following the Sauages voluntarily defired peace, and Captaine Newport returned for England with newes; leaving in Virginia one hundred the fifteenth of June 1607.

The names of them that were the first planters, were these following. Master Edward-Maria Winefield, Captaine Bartholomew Gofnoll, Capt. John Smith, Capt. John Ratcliffe, Cap. John Martin, A Capt. George Kendall, Councellors.

M. George Piercy, M. Robert Hunt Preacher, Anthony Gofnoll, Capt. Gabrill Archer, Rob. Ford, William Brustar, Dru Pickhouse, John Brookes, Thomas Sands, John Robinson, Visis Clonil, Kellam Throgmorton, Nathaniell Powell, Robert Bebethland, Ieremy Alicock, Thomas Studley, Richard Crofts, Nucholas Houlgraue, Thomas Webbe, lohn Waler , William Tankard , Francis Snarsbrough , Edward Brookes, Richard Dixon, John Martin, George Martin, Anthony Gofnold Thomas Wotten, Stirg. Thomas Gore, Francis Midwiter, Gentlemen.

William Laxon, Edward Pifing, Tho. Emry, Rob. Small, Carpenters. Anas Todeill, John Capper. Iames Read, Blacksmith, Ionas Profit, Sailer. Tho Couper, Barber. lohn Herd, Brick-layer, William Garret, Brick-layer. Edward Brinto, Mason. Welliam Lone, Taylor. Nic. Skot. Drum.

Iobn Laydon, William Caffen, George Caffen, Tho. Caffen, William Rods, William White, Ould Edward, Henry Tanin, George Golding, John Dods Will. John fon, Will. Vinger, Labouters. Will Wilkin fon. Surgeon. Samuell Collier, Nat. Pecock, James Brumfield, Rieb, Matton, with divers others to the number of one hundred and five.

Capt. Newports returne for Emland. What happened till the

first supply.

The occasion

of fickneffe.

The Sailers

abufes.

D Eing thus left to our fortunes, it fortuned that within ten dayes, scarce ten amongst vs could Beither goe, or well stand, such extreame weaknesse and sicknesse oppressed vs. And thereat none need maruell, if they confider the cause and reason, which was this; whilest she ships stayed, our allowance was somewhat bettered, by a daily proportion of bisket which the Saylers would pilfer to fell, give or exchange with vs, for money, faxefras, furres, or love. But when they 60 departed, there remained neither Tauerne, Beere-house, nor place of reliefe but the common kettell. Had we beene as free from all finnes as gluttony, and drunkennesse, we might have beene canonized for Saints : But our President would never have beene admitted, for ingroffing to his private, Otemeale, Sack, Oile, Aquavitz, Beefe, Egges, or what not, but the kertel; that indeed he

allowed equally to be diffributed, and that was halfea pinte of Wheat, and as much Barly boiled with water for a mana day, and this having fryed tome fix and twentie weekes in the ships hold, contained as many wormes as graines; fo that wee might truely call it rather fo much Bran then Corne, our drinke was water, our lodgings castles in aire, with this lodging and diet, our extreame toile in bearing and planting Pallifadoes, lo strained and bruifed vs, and our continual labour in the extreamitie of heat had to weakned vs, as were cause sufficient to have made vs as miferable in our native Countrey, or any other place in the world. From May to September, thole dene. that escaped lived vpon Sturgion, and Sea-Crabs; fiftie in this time we buried : The rest seeing the Prefidents protects to elcape these mileries in our Pinnace by flight (who all this time had to neither felt want nor ficknelle) so moued our dead spirits, as wee depoted him ; and established Reseliffe in his place, (Gosnell being dead) Kendall deposed, Smith newly recoursed, Martin and

Railffe was by his care preietued and relieued, but now was all our prouision spent, the Sturgeon gone, all helpes abandoned, each houre expecting the fury of the Sauages; when God, the Parron gone, an interpretation of all good indeauours in that desperat extreamitie, to changed the hearts of the Sauages, that they plentic your brought such plentie of their fruits and prouision, as no man wanted.

The new President, and Marin, being little beloued; of weake sudgement in dangers, and leffe industry in peace, committed the managing of all things abroad to Captaine Smith: who by his owne example, good words, and faire promifes, fet fome to mow, others to binde thatch, fome to build houses, others to thatch them, himselfe alwaies bearing the greatest taske for his owne 20 share, so that in short time he prouided most of them lodgings, neglecting any for himselfe. This done, leeing the Sauages inperfluitie begin to decreale (with some of his workmen) hee shipped

himselfe in the shallop to search the Countrey for trade, the want of the language, knowledge to mannage his Boat without Sailers, the want of fufficient power (knowing the multitude of the Sauages) apparell for his men, and other necessaries, were infinite impediments, yet no discouragement. Being but fixe or leuen in company, hee went downe the River to Kecoughtan, where ragement. Deing out im, as a thrued man; and would in derifton offer bim a handfull of Corne, or a ce first they formed him, as a thrued man; and would in derifton offer bim a handfull of Corne, or a piece of Bread for their Swords and Muskets, and such like proportions also for their apparell. But seeing by trade there was nothing to be had, nesefficie forced him to exceed his Commission, and to vie his Muskets to another kind of trading, which made these deriders flye to the Woods. Hee hasted to their honses, 30 and found flore of Corne, from which the hungry Souldiers were hardly detained, in bastier spoile to have betrayed themselves to the returning Sauages affault. This fixire or seventy did presently, with hideous

noise to the eare, and manifold colours painted to the eye, singing and dancing with their Okee (which was an Idol made with skins, finffed with moffe, all painted and hanged with Chaines and Copper, borne before them) and being well armed with Clubs, Targets, Bowes and Arrowes, they charged the English, who fo kindly received them with their Musices loaden with Postoll flot, that downe fell their God, and divers of his worldippers lay forauling on the ground, the rest string to the Woods. Soone after they sent one of their Quiyoughcalucks to offer peace, and redeeme their Okee. Smith agreed that if onely fixe would come unarmed and load his Boat with Corne, hee would be their friend, restore their Okee, and give them also Beads, Copper, Hatchets; which on beth sides was performed to mutuall content, and they brought him 40 (finging and dansing) Vension, Turkeys, wild Fowle, Bread, &c. In his returne hee discouered and

(finging and danfing) Vension, Turkess, wild Fowle, Bread, Gre. In his returne nee oncourred and Thebeginning kindly traded with the Wereskopks, in the meane time those at the Fort to glutted the Sauages of tradeawith their commodities as they became not regarded.

Smub perceiving (notwithstanding their late mifery) not any regarded but from hand to mouth (the company being well recouered) caused the Pinnace to bee prouided with things fitting to get prouition for the yeere following; but in the interim he made three or foure journyes and discovered the people of Chickahamine, yet what hee carefully provided the rest carelesty spent, Wingfield and Kendall living in difgrace, feeing all things at randome in the absence of Smith. The Companies dillike of their Prefidents weaknesse, and their small loue to Martins ne- The distource uer-mending fickneffe, ftrengthened themselnes with the Sailers, and other confederates to re- of chukaba-

30 gaine their former credit and authoritie, or at least fuch meanes aboard the Pinnace (being fitted mine. to faile as Smith had appointed for trade) to alter her course and to goe for England. Smith vnexpectedly returning had the plot discoursed unto him, much trouble hee had to preuent it, till with flore of Fauken and Musket shot hee forced them to flay or finke in the River, which action coit the life of Captaine Kendall. The President and Captaine Archer not long after intended allo to have abandoned the Countrey, which project also was curbed and sup- indicabinpressed by Smith. And now the Winter approaching, the Rivers became so covered with don the Coun-Swans, Geefe, Ducks, and Cranes, that wee daily feathed with good Bread, Virginia Peale, trys.

Pumpions, and Putchamins, Fish, Fowle, and divers forts of wild Beaths as fat as wee could eate. Winter Fowles them : fo that none of our Tuttaffatie humorifts defired to goe for England. But our Comadies

60 neuer endured long without a Tragedie; some idle exceptions being muttered against Capraine Smith, for not discouring the head of Chickahamine river, & taxed by the Conneel, to be too slow in to worthy an attempt. The next voyage hee proceeded to far, that with much labour by cutting off Trees in funder hee made his paffage, but when his Barge could paffe no farther, hee left her in a broad Bay out of danger of thot, commanding none should goe alhoare till his returne

Ccccccc 3

abtent, but his men went ashoare, whose want of government, gave both occasion and opportunis ty to the Sauages to lurprize one George Caffon, and much failed not to have cut off the Boate and

of Sauages.

The Sauages basing drawns from George Casson, whither Captains Smith was gone, followed him with three hundred Bowmen, conducted by Opechankanough the King of Pamaunke; who fearthing the dissistant of the River, found Robinton and Emery by the fire side, whom they hot full of Arrowes and slew. Smith being assaulted slew three of them, and so galled the rest that they would not come neere: be vied the Sauar: his guide as a fireld, having bound him to his arme with his garters; and thinking to have recovered his Boate, having more eye to them in his march then to his way, be supped up to the Ic middle in an ozie creeke, and bus Savage with bim; yet aurift they not come to bim till betbrew awar bis armes, being neere dead with cold. Then according to composition they drew him forth, and led him to the fire, where his men were flaine. Diligently they chafed his benummed limbes; and be gave Onechankanough a round luory double compassed Diall. They much maruelled at the playing of the five which they could fee and not touch, by reason of the Glasse coner; but when he had read a Comprabbicall lecture to them of the Skies, Earth, Day, and night, with the varietie of Nations, and such like they were all amazed : notwithstanding which sudden wonder, they tide him to a tree within an houre ofter at many as could fland about him prepard their fatall Arrowes to his death, which were all laid downe when Opechankanough held up the faid Diall: and they led him in a kinde of trimmeh to

Sauge eri-

Their order was this: drawing themselves all in sile, the King in the midst had all their Peeces Sauage tri-umph, disciplin and Swords borne before him: Captaine Smith was led after him by three great lubbers, bolding him and callantry. fast; on each side went six in file, with their Arrowes nocked. When they arrived at the Towne (which was of thirty or forty bunting houses made of Mats, removed at pleasure, as Tents with vi) the women and children came to stare on him; the Souldiers in file bad their Sargiants to keepe them in order. A good while they thus continued, and then cast themselves into a ring, dancing in feuerall postures , and singing hellish noates , strangely painted , each having his Quiner of Arrowes, and at his backe a Clubbe; on his arme a Foxes or Otters Skinne for his vambrace. their heads and houlders painted red with Oyle and Pocones mingled together, his Bowe in his band, and the Skinne of a Bird, with her wings abroad, dried, tied on his head, with a perce of 30 Copper a white Shell, a long Fether, and a small Rattle growing at the taile of their Snakes, or some sach tor fastened thereto. All this while Smith flood with the King quarded in the midft, till three dances being done, they departed. Then did they conduct Smith to along bonfe, where thirty or forty men guarded bim, and soone after was brought more Bread and Venison then would have served twentr: what be left they put in Baskets and tied over his head, which about midnight they againe fet before bim, none of them eating ought with bim, till basing brought as much more the next morning, they did ease the old, and referned the new in like manner. Hee thought they intended to fat and eate bim.

Their feafting-

One Maocassater, in requitall of Beads which be had given him, brought him his Gowne to defend bim from the cold. Another was possessed with a contrary humour, and would have staine him for the 40 death of his sonne, had not the guard premented; to him, yet breathing his last, they brought him to recouer him. Smith told then that at lames Towne be bad a water that would doe it of they would let him fetch it. But they prepared to affault Ismes Towne, promising him liberty, and women, if he would aflift them. In part of a Table Booke be wrut bis minds to those which were at the Fort; that they should fend such thing; mentioned. They went in bitter weather for Frost and Snow, and seeing men fally out. as he had before told them, they fled; but comming agains in the night to the place which be had appointed, for an answer, they found things ready, and speeduly returned, as if either be had divined, or the pa-

Sauage fimplicity.

After this they led bim to the Youghtanunds, the Matapanients, the Pavankatiks, the Nantaughtacunds, the Onanmanients, upon the Rivers of Rapahanocke, and Patanomecke, and 10 Rices of Con- backe againe by diners other Nations, to the Kings babitation at Pamaunk, where they entertained him with frange consurations. Earely in a morning a great fire was made in a long house, a Mat fored on each fide; on one of which he was fet, the guard went out, and in came a great grim fellow skipping, all painted with cole mingled with Oyle, many Snakes and Weefels skins stuffed with Mosse, their tailes tied towerber, and meeting on the crowne of his head; round about the taffell was a coroner of Fethers; the skins bung round about his head, shoulders, backe and face : With a bellish voyce. Arange gestures and passions, with a Rattle in his hand, bee began his innocation, and environed the fire with a circle of Meale. After this, three such other divels rushed in with like trickes, painted halfe blacke, halfe red, all their eyes painted white, with some red stroakes along their sheekes. These having danced a pressio while, three more came in as vely as the rest, with red eyes and white stroakes over their blacke faces. At 60 last they all fat downe right against him, the chiefe Priest in the midst, and three on each hand. All then with their Rattles began a fong; which ended the chiefe Priest laid downe fine Wheate cornes : and straining bis armes and hand with such violence, that be swet, and his veines swelled : hee began a short Oration; at the conclusion whereof shey gave a short ground, and then laid downs three graines more. Now

CHAP.4. Circle of Meale. Platters of Bread. Formle and with Bealts.

they becam their Song againe, and then another Oration, ever laying downe so many cornes as before till they had twice encircled the fire. That done, they take a bunch of lutle stickes, prepared for that purpose, and at the end of enery Song and Oration laid downe a sticke betwirt the divisions of the Corne. Till media neither be nor they did cate or drinke, and then they feasted merrily with their best promisons. Three dages they vied this Ceremonie, thereby to know (as they faid) whether bee intended them weller no. The circle of meale fignified their Country, the two circles of Corne the Sea-bounds : and the flickes his Countrey. They imagined the World to be flat and round like a trencher and them- Sausae Geor (elues in the midst. After this, they brought him a buge of Powder, which they carefully preserved till graphy. the next fring, to plant as they did their Corne, because they would be acquainted with the nature of Gunpowder

Opitchapam the Kings brother, insited him to his bonse, where bee welcommed him with as many Platters of Bread, Fowle and wilde Beafts, as did encompasse bim: but not any would eate with bim, reserving theremainders in Baskets. At his returne to Opechankanoughs, all the Kings women and their children flocked about him, as for their customary due, to be merry with such fragments. At lest they brought him to Werowocomoco to Pohatan, where about two hundred of his Courtiers He is brought flood wondring on him, till Pohatan and his traine had put themselnes in their greatest brauery. Before to Pohatan. a fire bee fat on a seate like a bedsted, concred with a great robe made of Rarowcun Skinnes, all the tailes banging by: on each hand did fit a your wench of fixteene or eighteene yeeres of age; along on each fide the boufe two rowes of men, and behinde them as many women, with all their heads and shoul-20 ders painted red , many of their beads bedecked with the white downe of Birds , enery one adorned with Wilde rovaler. Come thing , a great chaine also of white Beades about their neckes. At his entrance before the Kine all the people gaue a great front. The Queene of Appanatucke was appointed to bring water to malh bis hands, another brought him a bunch of Feathers instead of a Towell to drie them. Hawine feasted him in their best manner, the beld a consultation, in conclusion whereof, two great stones were brought before Pohatan , and as many as could lay bold on him dragged him to them, and thereon laid his bead, being ready with their clubbes to beate out his braines. Pocahuntas the Kings dearest Daughter, when no intreatie would premaile, got his bead into her armes, and laid her Potahuntas

owne open his to faue bim from death : whereupon the Emperour was contented hee should line to make furth his life,

30 pations : the King himselfe making his owne Robes, Shooes, Bowes, Arrowes, Pots, Planting also, Hun- All men of all

time, and doing Offices, no leffe then the reft. Two daves after Poliaran having desquesed himselfe in the dreadfullest manner, caused Captaine Smith to be brought forth to a great boufe in the woods, and there upon a Mat by the fire to bee ieft alone. Not long after from behinde a Mat which dinided the bonfe, was made the dolefullest noise that ener bee had beard. After this Pohatan with twenty more as blacke as himselfe came unto him, and told him that they were now friends, and presently hee should goe to lames Towne to fend him two great Gunnes and a Grindstone, for which bee would give him the Country of Capahowolick, and for ener eiteeme bie as bis Sonne Nantaquaus. Hee fent bim thitber with twelve quides. When they came to the Fort, Smith veed the Sanages kindely, and hewed Rawhunt.

him Hatchets, and Beads, Bels, and Copper for ber. For they thought him like themselves, of all occu-

40 Poha; ans trulty fernant two Demiculnerius and a Milstone to carry to Pohatan; somewhat too beaute for their carriage. But when they faw him discharge them leden with stones, on the boughes of a great tree banging full of isickles, the Ice and boughes comming downewith sach furie, the Sawaves were halfe dead with feare; and at last returning contented with toics and presents for Poliatan. his women and childred. This his returning fafe to the Port, once more staired the Pinnace her The third prod flight for England, which till his returne, could not fet faile, so extreame was the weather, and iect to abanfo great the Frost.

His relation of the plenty he had feene, especially at Werowocomoco, where inhabited Powe batan (that till that time was vnknowne) fo remined againe their dead spirits, as all mens feare was abandoned, Powhatan having fent with this Captaine divers of his men loaded with 40 prouison, hee had conditioned, and so appointed his trustie Messengers to bring but two or three of our great Ordnances; but the Mellengers being fatisfied with the fight of one of them difcharged an away amazed with feare, till meanes were vied with gifts to affure them our loues.

A LL this time our cares were not fo much to abandon the Countrie, but the Treasurer and The arrival of Counsell in England, were as deligent and carefull to supply vs. Two tall Shippes they the fift upply fent vs, with neere one hundred men, well furnished with all things could be imagined ne- with their pro cellary, both for them and vs. The one commanded by Captaine Newport: the other by Cape ceedings and taine Nelson, an honest man and an expert Marriner, but such was the leewardnesse of his Ship

(that though he were within fight of Cape Henry) by formy contrary windes, was forced fo The Phenie farre to Sea, as the West Indies was the next land for the repaire of his Masts, and reliefe from Cape of wood and water. But Captaine Nemport got in, and arrived at lames Towne, not long after Hemy forced to the West the redemption of Captaine Smith, to whom the Sauges every other day brought speh plenty India. of Bread, Fish, Turkies, Squarels, Deere, and other wilde Beasts, part they gave him as protents from the King; the rest, he as their market Clarke fet the price how they should fell.

So he had inchanted those poore soules (being their Prisoner)in demonstrating vato them the roundnesse of the World, the course of the Moone and Starres, the cause of the day and night, the largenesse of the Seas, the qualities of our ships, shot and powder: The diminon of the How C. Smith World, with the diverticie of people, their complexions, customes and conditions. All which gothis liberty. he fained to be vnder the command of Captaine Newport, whom he termed to them his Father: of who e arrivall, it chanced he so directly prophecied, as they esteemed him an Oracle; by these fictions he not only faued his owne life, and obtained his liberty; but had them at that command, he might command them what he lifted. That God that created all these things; they Their opinion knew he adored for his God, whom they would also tearme in their Discourses, the God of

naluing our

in Mariners trade both

which fup-

The Prefident and Councell fo much enuied his estimation amongst the Sauages (though wee all in generall equally participated with him of the good thereof) that they wrought it into their vaderstandings, by their great bountie in giving foure times more for their Commodities then he appointed, that their greatnesse and authoritie, as much exceeded his, as their bountie and libefolly in vaderralities Now the arrival of his first supply, so ouer-ioyed vs, that wee could not deuse too much Commodities rothe Sauages to pleafe the Mariners. Weegaue them libertie to trucke or trade at their pleasures. But ina fhort time, it followed, that that could not be had for a pound of Copper, which before was fold for an ounce, Thus Ambition and Sufferance, cut the throat of our Trade, but confirmed their fmall prizes. opinion of Newports greatneffe wherewith Smith had possessed Powbatan) specially by the great Anerher folly Presents Newport often sent him, before he could prepare the Pinnace to goe and visit him; so 20 that this Sauage also defired to see him. A great brute there was to fet him forward; when hee went he was accompanied, with Captaine Smith, and Mafter Scrimener a very wife understanding Gentleman newly arrived, and admitted of the Councell, and thirtie or fortie chofen men for that guard. Arriving at Werowccome, Newports conceit of this great Sauage bred many doubts and suspicions of Treacheries; which Smith, to make appeare was needleffe, with twentie men well appointed, vndertooke to encounter (with that number) the world that could happen. Thefe being kindly received afhore, with two or three hundred Savages were conducted to

prouide to feaft vs. Sitting ypon his Bed of Mats, his Pillow of Leather imbroydered (after their gate maner) with Pearle and white Beads, his Attire a faire Robe of shinner as large as an Infa

Mantle, at his head and feet a handsome young woman; on each fide his house fate twente of

his Concubines, their heads and shoulders painted red, with a great chaine of white Beads about

their neckes, before those fate his chiefest men in like order in his Arbor-like house. With many

pretie Discourses to renue their old acquaintance; the great King and our Captaine spenthe

time till the ebbe left our Barge aground, then renuing the:r Feaths and mirth, we quartred that

night with Powhatan: the next day Newport came alhore, and received as much content of those

people could give him, a Boy named Tho. Sauage was then given vnto Powhatan, whom Newport

called his Sonne, for whom Pombatan gaue him Namontacke his truftie Servant, and one of a

in Powbatan carried himselfe so proudly, yet discreerly (in his Sauage manner) as made vs all ad-

mire his naturall gifts confidering his education, as fcorning to trade as his fubicets did, hee be-

Spake Newport in this manner. Captaine Newport it is not agreeable with my greatneffe in this ped-

ling manner to trade for trifles, and I esteeme you a great Weroans, Therefore lay mee downe all your

Commodities together, what I like, I will take, and in recompence give you that I thinke fitting their va-

lue. Captaine Smith being our Interpreter, regarding Nemport as his Father , knowing belt the

shrewd subtill capacitie. Three or foure dayes were spent in feating, dancing and trading, where- 40

planted the ecod of the Smiths reuifiting Pembatan.

P whaton fift their Towne; Pombatan ftrained himfelfe to the vttermoft of his greatnesse to entertaine vs. entertamment with great shouts of Ioy, Orations of protestations, and the most plentie of victual hee could large I urnall ofthis journie: har content myfelie with this briefer to auoid prolixity

The exchange of a Christian for a Sauage.

Powhatans

Difference of

disposition of Pombatan told vs his intent was but to cheat vs; yet Captaine Newport thinking to out-braue this Sauage in oftentation of greatnesse, and so to bewitch him with his bountie, as to haue what he lifted; but to it chanced, Powbatan having his defire, valued his Corne at fuch a rate, as I thinke it better cheape in Spaine, for we had not fourebushels for that we expected twentie 50 Hogheads. This bred fome vnkindnesse betweene our two Captaines, Newport seeking to please the humour of the vulatiable Sauage; Smith to cause the Sauage to please him, but smothering his distaste (to avoid the Savages suspition) glanced in the eyes of Powhatan many Trifles who fixed his humour vpon a few blue Beads ; A long time he importunately defired them , but Smith feemed so much the more to affect them, so that ere we departed, for a pound or two of blue Beads he brought over my King for two or three hundred bushels of Corne, yet parted good friends. The like entertainment we found of Opechantynough King of Pamaunke whom also he in like manner fitted, (at the like rates) with blue Beads ; and so wee returned to the Fort. Where this new supply being lodged with the rest, accidentally fired the quarters, and so the Towne, which being but thatched with Reeds, the fire was fo fierce as it burnt their Pallizadoes (though ten or twelve 62 yards diftant) with their Armes, Bedding, Apparell, and much private provision. Good Master Hunt our Preacher loft all his Librarie, and all that hee had (but the clothes on his backe) yet none over faw him repine at his loft. Uson any alarme be would be as readic for defence as any, and till be could fleake; he nemer ceassed to his remost to animate us constantly to persist : whose since que

CHAP. 4. Store of Oate-meale. Meale and Corne. Ambuscadoes.

flionleffe is with God. This happened in the Winter, in that extreme Froit 1607. Now though pronegre to ward fufficient, I meane, only of Oate-meale, Meale, and Corne, yet the ship staying there fourteene weekes, when the might as well have beene gone in fourteene dayes, ipent the Beefe, Porke, Oyle, Aquauitæ, Fish, Butter, and Cheese, Beere and such like; as was prouided A shipidly loito be landed vs. When they departed, what their differentian could spare vs, to make a Feastor tring touneen to be landed vs. When they departed, what their direction count part vs. when they weeks, and two with Bisket, Porke, Beefe, Fish, and Oyle, to rellish our mouthes, of each somewhat they shamefully atwo with bishet, I trate, those that had either Money, spare Clothes, credit to give Bils of shametully befrys, yet I mult confesse, those that had either Money, spare Clothes, credit to give Bils of shametully payment, Gold Rings, Furres, or any fuch Commodities were euer welcome to this remooning company here Payment, Such vas our patience to obey such vile Commanders, and buy our owne prouision at and Colonie To fifteene times the value, fuffering them to feaft (we bearing the charge) yet must not repine, but there is pti-

fait; and then leakage, thip-rats, and other cafualties occasioned the loft, but the vessell and remnants (for totals) we were glad to receive with all our hearts to make vp the account, highly commending their Prouidence for preferring that. For all this plentie our ordinarie was but meale and water, fo that this great charge little relieued our wants, whereby with the extremitie of the bitter cold Aire more then halfe of vs died, and tooke our deaths, in that piercing Winter. Icannot deny, but both Serimener and Smith did their best to amend what was amisse. but with the President went the major part, that their hornes were too short. But the worst mitchiefe was, our gilded Refiners with their golden promifes, made all men their slaues in hope of recompence; there was no talke, no hope, no worke, but digge Gold, wash Gold, refine Gold, The effect of 20 load Gold, fuch a brute of Gold, as one mad fellow defired to bee buried in the Sands, leaft they meere Verbas should by their Art make Gold of his bones : Little need there was and lesse reason, the shippe lifts.

should by their Art make Gold of his bones: Little need there was and interaction, the mariner A needless should stay, their wages runne on, our victuall consume fourteene weekes, that the Mariner A needless charge, might fay, they built fuch a golden Church, that we can fay, the raine washed neere to nothing in fourteene dayes. Captaine Smith would not applaud all those Golden inventions, never any * Certaine thing did more torment him, then to fee all necessary businesse neglected, to fraught such a drunthing yellow ken hip with so much gilded * dirt; till then we neuer accounted Captaine Newport a Refiner; Sand which who being fit to fet faile for England, and we not having any vie of Parliaments, Playes, Petiti- was fent over ons, Admirals, Recorders, Interpreters, Chronologers, Courts of Plea, nor Iustices of Peace, ons, Admirals, Recorders, Interpreters, Chronologers, Courts or Plea, nor juttices or Peace, great promites fent Mafter Wingfeld and Captaine Archer with him for England, to feeke fome place of better of gold, like

ao imployment.

He authority now confishing in refining Captaine Martin, and the still fickly President, the performance. fale of the flores Commodities maintayned their effates as inheritable Reuennes. The the Phanix her Spring approching, and the thip departed, Mafter Seriuener and Captaine Small divided betwixt returne, and othem, the rebuilding our Towne, the repayring our Pallisadoes, the cutting downe Trees, pre- ther accidents paring our fields, planting our Corne, and to rebuild our Church, and recouer our Storehouse; all Chapter men thus busie at their seuerall labours, Master Nelson arrived with his lost Phanix, (lost I say, of lames towns for that all men deemed him loft) landing (afely his men; fo well hee had mannaged his ill hap, Welfauhonecaufing the Indian lles to feed his company that his victuall (to that was left vs before) was fuffi- fly & fdeinie. 40 cient for halfe a yeere, he had nothing but he freely imparted it; which honest dealing (in a Ma-

riner) caused vs admire him, wee would not have wished so much as he did for vs. Now to relade this ship with some good tydings. The President (yet not standing with his dignity to leave the Fort) gaue order to Captaine Smith and Master Scrimener to discouer and search the Commodities Sinie appoinof Monacans Countrey beyond the Falls, fixty able men were allotted, the which within fixe ted to discount dayes exercise, Smith had so well trained to their Armes and Orders, that they little feared with Menacan. whom they should encounter. Yet so vnseasonable was the time, and so opposite was Captaine Martin to every thing, but only to fraught his ship also with his phantasticall Gold, as Cap-Smith rather defired to relade her with Cedar, which was a prefent difpatch; then either with dirt, or the reports of an vicertaine Discouerie. Whilst their conclusion was resoluting, this

Powbatan to expresse his love to Newport, when he departed, presented him with twenty Turkeyes, conditionally to returne him twenty Swords, which immediatly were fent him; Now af- Anill examkeyes, conditionally to returnehim twenty Swords, which immediatly were left him; Now are ple to fell ter his departure he prefented Captaine Smith with the like luggage, but not finding his humour profess to Sar obeyed in fending him Weapons, he caused his people with twentie denices to obtaine them; at last by Ambuscadoes at our very Ports they would take them perforce, surprize vs at worke, or Pombatans tree any way, which was fo long permitted that they became fo infolent, there was no Rule, the com- cherie, mand from England was fo straight not to offend them, as our authority Bearers (keeping their houses) would rather be any thing then Peace-breakers: this vncharitable charity prevailed, till well it chanced that they medled with Captaine Smith , who without farther deliberation gaue The Gonerthem such an incounter, as some hee to hunted vp and downe the Ile, some hee so terrified with nours weak-

them used an incounter, as some nee to nuntee up and downe the style of his foraging difor-whipping, beating and imprisonment, as for reuenge they surprized two of his foraging difor-smith steems; derly Souldiers, and hauing assembled their forces, boldly threatned at our Ports to force Smith to tunereffer to re-deliver feven Sauages, which for their villanies he detained Priloners. But to try their fu- the Sauages ries, in leffe then halfe an houre he fo hampered their infolencies, that they brought the two pri- injulgious

(I faw it) with the promifers yeelding fandy

ring our fore-fayle with our thirts, we fet fayle for the Mayne, and fell with a faire Riuet on the

1712

and examined their intents and plotters of their villanies, confessed they were directed only by Powhatan, to obtaine him our owne weapons to cut our owne throats, with the manner how, where, and when , which we plainly found most true and apparant. Yet hee fent his Messengers Pombatant ex- and his deerest Daughter Pecahantas to excuse him, of the injuries done by his Subjects, desiring their liberties, with the affurance of his love. After Smith had given the Prifoners what correction he thought fit, vied them well a day or two after, he then delivered them to Pocabuntas. for whole take only hee fained to faue their lives and grant them liberty. The patient counfell. that nothing would moone to warre with the Sanages, would gladly have wrangled with Captaine Smith for his cruelcy, yet none was flaine to any mans knowledge, but it brought them in fuch feare and obedience, as his very name would fufficiently affright them. The fraught of this thin being concluded to be Cedar, by the diligence of the Master, and Captaine Smith, shee was Athip fraught quickly reladed; Mafter Scrimener was neither idle nor flow to follow all things at the Fort, the thip falling to the Cedar Ile, Captaine Martin having made shift to bee sicke neere a yeere , and now, neither Pepper, Sugar, Cloues, Mace, nor Nutmegs, Ginger, nor Sweet meats in the Countrey (to enjoy the credit of his supposed Art) at his earnest request, was most willingly admitted to returne for England, yet having beene there but a yeere, and not past halfe a yeere since the ague lett him (that he might fay fomewhat he had feene) he went twice by water to Palbabeh a place neere leuen miles from lames Towne, but left the dew should diftemper him. was euer forced to returne before night. Thus much I thought fit to expresse, hee expressy commanding me to record his Iournies, I being his man, and he fometimes my Master. One hundred and twentie were landed in the last supply. Thomas Studly. Anas Todkill.

foners defiring peace without any farther composition for their Prisoners, who being threatned

The aduentures of Cap. Martin.

The accidents The predigalitie of the Prefidents state went so deepe in the store that Smith and Scrivens which happed had a while tyed both Martin and him to the Rules of Proportion, but now Smith being to in the discour- depart, the Presidents authority so overswayed Master Scriveners discretion as our store, our time, ric of the Bay. our strength and labours were idlely consumed to fulfill his phantasies. The second of lune 1608. Chep 5.

I have a Diarie Smith left the Fort to performe his Discouery; with this company. Walter Russell Doctor of Phyof this and the ficke, Ralph Morton, Thomas Momford, William Cantrill. Richard Fesberftone, I ames Bourne, Mifollowing Dif- chael Sicklemore. Anas Todkill. Robert Small, James Watkins, John Powell, James Read black Smith, 29 couerie of the Richard Keale Fishmonger. Ionas Profit fisher.

Thefebeing in an open Barge of two tunnesburthen leaving the Phanix at Cape Henrie, we ming mings more particu- croffed the Bay to the Easterne spoare, and fell with the sles called Smiths Hes: the first people larly & largely we law there were two growme and ftout Sauages upon Cape Charles, with long Poles like lautbut I was loth lings, headed with bone, they boldly demanded what we were, and what we would, but after to be redious, many circumstances, they in time seemed very kind, and directed vs to Acasmacke, the habitatifince in this, on of the Werowns where we were kindly intreated; this King was the comelieft proper civill Sauige we incountred : his Country is a pleasant fertile clay soyle. He told vsot a strange accident Cape Charles. lately happened him, and it was? Two dead children by the extreme passions of their Parents, or some dreaming Visions, Phantasie, or affection mooved them againe to reuisit their dead car- 40 Aftrange morkalles, whose benummed bodies reflected to the eyes of the beholders such pleasant delightfull ralirie of \$1. countenances, as though they had regained their vitall spirts. This is a Miracle drew many to behold them, all which, (being a great part of his people) not long after died, and not any one escaped. They spake the Language of Powhatan, wherein they made such descriptions of the Bay, Iles, and Rivers that often did vs exceeding pleafure. Paffing alongst the Coast, searching every Inlet, and Bay fit for Harbours and Habitations, seeing many Iles in the midst of the Bay, we bore vp for them, but ere we could attaine them, fuch an extreame guft of Winde, Raine, Thunder, and Lightning happened, that with great danger wee escaped the vnmercifull raging of that Ocean-like water.

Anextreame Ruffels Iles.

uages.

wiebcocemeco. Anextreme want of fresh water.

The Barge a guft. Limbo Iles.

The next day fearthing those inhabitable Hes (which wee called Ruffells Hes) to provide fresh 50 water, the defect whereof forced vs to fellow the next Easterne Channell, which brought vs to the River Wighcocomoco, the people ac first with great furie feemed to affault vs., yet at lait with Songs, Dances, and much mirth, became very tractable, but fearthing their habitations for water, we could fill but three, and that fuch puddle, that never till then, we knew the want of good water. We digged and fearched many places, but ere the end of two dayes wee would have refuled two Barricoes of Gold for one of that puidle water of Wigheocomoco. Being past their lies, filling with a high Land vpon the Mayne, we found a great pond of tresh water, but so exceeding hot, that we supposed it some Bath ; that place we called Point-ployer, in bonour of that Honourable House of Mousaye, that in an extreame extremitie once robbed our Captaine: Beeing thus refreshed in crossing over from the Mayne to other Hes, the winde and waters fo much increased with Thunder, Lightning, and Raine, that our fore-mast blew ouer-boord, and such mightie waves over-wrought vs in that small Barge, that with great labour, wee kept her from ficking by freeing out the water: two dayes wee were inforced to inhabit these winhabited lles, which (for the extremitie of Gusts, Thunder, Raine, Stormes, and ill weather) we called Limbo. Repair

East called Kuskaranaocke. The people ran as amazed in troupes, from place to place, and diners got into the tops of Trees, they Cap. Smith. were not faring of their Arrowes, nor the greatest paffion they could expresse of anger, long they bot we

full riding at an Anchor out of their reach, making all the figures of friendship wee could. The next day ther same unarried, with enery one a Birket, dancing in a ring to draw us on shore, but feeing there was nothing in them but villanie, we discharged a volley of Mushets charged with Postoll shot, whereat they all lay tumbling on the ground, cresping some on way, some avoiber into a great cluster of Reeds bard by where there companions lay in Ausbuscado. Towards the Enening wee weighed and approched the to hore, discharging fine or sixe shot amongst the Reeds we landed, where they laid a many of bashets, but fair not a Samage, a smoke appearing on the other side the River we went thither, where wee found two or jan not a summer, grant affect there we left fome pieces of Copper, Beads, Bels, and Looking-glaffes , and then went into the Bay. When it was darke we came to an Anchor againe. Earely in the morning, foure Sanages came to vs in their Canoa, whom we vsed with such courteste, nor knew what we were, nor bad done, baning beene in the Bay a fibing, bad vs ftay, and ere long they would returne, which they did, and some twentie more with them, with whom after a little conference two or three hundred men, women, and children came clustering about vs, energ one presenting vs somewhat, which a little Bead would so well

conduct our men any whether, and give vs the best content. 30 By it inhabit the people of Soraphanigh, Naufe, Arfek, and Nautaquake, that much extolled a Thefift nogreat Nation called Maffanometes, in fearch of whom wee returned by Limbo, but finding this tice of the Eafernethore thallow broken lies, and the Mayne for most part without fresh water, we passed by the Straits of Limbo, for the Westerne shore. So broad is the Bay here, that we could scarce perceine the great high Cliffes on the other fide; by them wee anchored that night, and called them Rubards Cliffes. Thirtie leagues we layled more Northwards, not finding any Inhabitants, yet the Coast well watered, the Mountaines very barren, the Valleyes very fertile, but the Woods extreme thicke, full of Wolues, Beares, Deere, and other wild Beafts. The first Inlet we

found, we called Bolm, for that the clay (in many places) was like (if not) Bole-Armoniacke : 20 m River. when we first fet faile, some of our Gallants doubted nothing, but that our Captaine would make 30 too much bast home; but having lien not about twelve dayes in this small Barge, oft tyred at

their Oares, their Bread spoyled with wet, so much that it was rotten (yet so good were their stomackes that they could digest it) did it with continual complaints so importune him now to returne, as caufed him bespeake them in this manner.

Gentlemen, if you would remember the memorable Historie of Sir Ralfe Lane, how his cempany impertuned him to proceed in the Discouerie of Morattico, alleaging, they had yet a Dogge, that beeing boyled with Saxafras leanes, would richly feed them in their returnes; what a shame would it bee for you (that have beene fo [nificians of my tenderneffe) to force me returne with a moneths promifion, fcarce able to fay where we have beene, nor jet heard of that we were fent to feeke; you cannot fay but I have [bared with you of the worlt is past; and for what is to come of lodging, diet, or what soener, I am co ten-40 ted you allot the worst part to my selfe as for your feares that I would lose my self in these unknown large waters, or be swall owedup in some stormie gust, abandon those childish feares, for worse then is past cannot bappen, and there is as much danger to returne, as to proceed forward. Regains therefore your old frists; for returne I will not, (if God affist me) till I bane seene the Massawomekes, found Patawomeck, or

the head of this great water, you conceit to be endleffe. Three or foure dayes we expected wind and weather, whole adverse extremities added such discouragements to our discontents as three or foure fell extreme ficke, whose pittifull complaints caused vs to returne, leaving the Bay some ten miles broad at nine or ten fathome water. The fixteenth of June we fell with the River of Patanomeck: fearebeing gone, and our men re- The discour is couered, we were all contented to take some paines to know the name of this nine miles broad of Patamanere, River, we could see no Inhabitants for thirtie miles fayle; then we were conducted by two Sa-

50 uages up a little bayed Creeke toward Onammament, where all the Woods were laid with Am- Ambuferdoes bulcadoes to the number of three or foure hundred Sauages, but fo ftrangely painted, grimed, and of Sauages. difguized, shouting, yelling, and crying, as we rather supposed them so many Deuils, they made many brauadoes, but to appeale their turie, our Captaine prepared with as feeming willingnes (as they) to encounter them, the grazing of the bullets vpon the River, with the Eccho of the woods so amazed them, as downe went their Bowes and Arrowes; (and exchanging hostage) lames Watkins was fent lixe miles up the Woods to their Kings Habitation : wee were kindly vied by thele Sauages, of whom we understood, they were commanded to betray vs, by Pombaians direction, and he fo directed from the discontents of Ismes Towne. The like incounters we found 60 at Patawomecke, Cecocamne, and divers other places, but at Moyaones Nacothiant and Taux, the A treaductous

people did their best to content vs. The cause of this Discourre, was to search a gilistering Mettill, the Sauages toll ve they had from Patamomeck, (the which Nomport allured that hee had tryed to hold halfe tiluer) allo to fearch what Furres, Metals, Rivers, Rockes, Nations, Woods, Filhings, Fruits, Victuals and other Commodities the Land affoorded, and whether the Bay

require, we became (sich friends, they would contend who should fetch us water, stay with us for hostage,

An abundant

were endlesse, how farre is extended. The Mine we found nine or ten miles up in the Country from the River, but it proved of no value; to which he marched, leading his hinds in Chaines which they were to have for their paines, and so returning loded with that Ore they had. Some Otters, Beuers, Martins, Lizards, and Sabels we found, and in divers places that abundance of fill lying fo thicke with their heads aboue the water, as for want of nets (our Barge driving a. mongst them) we attempted to catch them with a Frying-pan, but wee found it a bad instrument to catch fish with. Neither better fish, more plenty, or variety, had any of vs euer seene. in any place fwimming in the water, then in the Bay of Chefabeack, but there not to be camble

To expresse all our quarrels, treacheries, and incounters amongst those Sauages, I should be How to deale too tedious; but in briefe, at all times we so incountred them and curbed their infolencies, as they with the Saua- concluded with presents to purchase peace, yet wee lost not a man. At our first meeting, our Cantaine euer observed this order, to demand their Bowes and Arrowes, Sword, Manties or Furs. with some childe for hostage; whereby he could quickly perceive when they intended any villanie, Hauing finished this discouery (though our victuals was neere spent) he intended to have feene his imprisonments, acquaintance vpon the River of Toppahannocke. But our Boate (hy reafon of the ebbe) chanfing to ground vpon a many shoules lying in the entrance, wee spied many A Stingrayve. fifthes lurking amongst the weedes on the Sands, our Captaine sporting himselfe to catch them ry hurtrull, one by nailing them to the ground with his Sword, fet vs all a fishing in that manner; by this dein foulenes was unfe. we tooke more in an houre, then we all could eate: but it chanced, the Captaine taking a fo wolne with fish from his Sword (not knowing her condition) being much of the fashion of a Thornebacke with a longer taile, whereon is a most poyloned sting of two or three inches long, which shee his this ke fifth ftrooke an inch and halfe into the wrift of his arme the which in foure hours had to extreamely ermans-boots, swolne his hand, arme, shoulder, and part of his body, as wee all with much forrow concluded that he therof his funerall, and prepared his grave in an Ile hard by (as himfelfe appointed) which then wee cied, in. 1613. called Stingeray Ile, after the name of the fish. Yet by the helpe of a precious Oyle which Doctour Ruffeils applied, ere night his tormenting paine was fo well affwaged that hee eate the fish they could not to his supper, which gave no leffe joy and content to vs. then ease to himselfe. Having neither bring his coffin Surgeon nor Surgery but that preservative Oyle, we presently set faile for Iames Towne; palout of the dore fing the mouth of Pyankatanck, and Pamaunke Rivers, the next day we fafely arrived at Keemeb. 30 tas. The simple Sauages, seeing our Captaine hurt, and another bloudy (which came by breking his shin) our number of Bowes, Arrowes, Swords, Targets, Mantles and Forres, would needesimagine wee had bin at warres, the truth of these accidents would not satisfie them, The Saunges but impatiently they importuned vs to know with whom wee fought, finding their aptneffe to affiighted with beleeue, we failed not (as a great fecret) to tell them any thing that might affright them, what spoyle wee had got and made of the Masawomecker, this rumour went falter up the River then our Barge; that arrived at Weralkorack the twentieth of July, where trimming her with painted streamers, and such deuises, we made the Fort jealous of a Spanift Frigot; where we all fafely arrived the twenty one of July.

A needeleffe

wall (os :bey

toldm:) for

There we found the last supply, all sicke, the rest, some lame, some bruised, all vnable to doe 40 any thing, but complaine of the pride and unreasonable needeleffe cruelty of their filly Prefident, that had riotoully confumed the store, and to fulfill his follies about building him an wnnecessary Pallace in the Woods, had brought them all to that mifery : That had not we arrived, they had as strangely tormented him with reuenge. But the good newes of our discouery, and the good hope we had (by the Sauages relation) our Bay had itretched to the South Sea, appealed their furie; but conditionally that Ratiffe should be deposed, and that Captaine Smith would take vpon him the government; their request being effected, hee Substituted Master Scrimener his deare friend in the Presidencie, equally distributing those private provisions that the other had ingroffed; appointing more honest officers to affait Serimener (who then lay extreamely tormented with a callenture) and in regard of the weakenesse of the company, and heate of the yeare, 50 The Company they being vnable to worke; he left them to line at eafe, but imbarked himselfe to finish his left to line at difcouery. Written by Walter Ruffell and Anas Todkill.

What hapned Chap. 6.

The Sauages

He twentieth of July Captaine Smith fet forward to finish the discouery with twelve men their names were Nathaniell Powell, Thomas Momford, Richard Fetherstone, Michaell Sickles age to discouer more, lames Bourne, Anas Todeill, Edward Pyfing, Richard Keale, Anthony Bagnall, lames Watkins, William Ward, Ionas Profit. The winde being contrary caused our flay two or three daies at Keconghian, the Weromans feating vs with much mirth, his people were perswaded wee went purpoicly to be reuenged of the Masamomeckes, in the evening we firing two or three rackets, fo terrified the poore Saluages, they supposed nothing impossible we attempted, and defired to 60 affilt vs. The first night we ancored at Stingeray Ile, the next day croffed Paramomecks River, and halted for the River Bolm, we went not much farther before wee might perceive the Bay to deuide in two heads, and arriving there wee found it devided in foure, all which wee fearched fo farre as we could faile them; two of them we found vninhabited, but in croffing the Bay to the

CHAP.A. Presents of Venison. Beares-flesh. & c. Captaine adored by the Sauages 1755

other, we encountered feuen or eight Canoaes full of Massawomeckes, wee feeing them preorner, we encounter them, yet were we with he made way with our faile to incounter them, yet were we with he maffebut five (with our Captaine) that could stand: for within two dayes after wee left Keconobtan, warneles. the rest (being all of the last supply) were sicke almost to death (vitill they were seasoned to the Countrey) having that them vnder our tarpawling, we put their hats vpon flickes by the Barge Good policy. fide to make vs feeme many, and on each fide a man a loded Musket; and fo wee thinke the Indans supposed those hats to be men, for they fled withall possible speede to the shoare, and there flayed, itaring at the failing of our Barge, till wee anchored right against them. Long it was ere we could draw them to come vnto vs , at last they lent two of their company vnarmed in 10 a Canoa, the rest all followed to second them if neede required: These two being but each

presented with a Bell, brought aboord all their fellowes, presenting the Captaine with Venifon, Beares flesh, Bowes, Arrowes, Clubbes, Targets, and Beare-skins, we vnderstood them nothing at all but by fignes, whereby they fignified voto vs that they had beene at warres with the Tockwoods, the which they confirmed by shewing their green wounds; but the night parting vs, we imagined they appointed the next morning to meete, but after that we neuer faw them.

Entring the River of Tockwogh the Sauages all armed in a fleete of Boates round invironed vs: it chanced one of them could speake the language of Tombatan, who perswaded the rest to 2 weeks. friendly parley: but when they faw vs furnished with the Massawomeckes weapons, and we fained the invention of Kecouehtan to have taken them perforce; they conducted vs to their 20 palliz idoed Towne, mantelled with the Barkes of trees, with Scaffolds like Mounts, brefted about with Barkes very formally, their men, women, and children, with Dances, Songs, Fruits, Fish, Furres, and what they had kindely entertained vs, spreading Mats for vs to sit on, stretch-

ing their best abilities to expresse their loues. Many Hatchets, Kniues, and peeces of Iron, and Brasse, we saw, which they reported to have from the Safquefabanoches a mighty people, and mortall enemies with the Maffawomeckes: The Salquefabanecks, inhabit vpon the chiefe Spring of thefe foure, two dayes journey higher then our Barge could paffe for Rockes. Yet we preuailed with the interpreter to take with him another interpreter to perswade the Safquefabanecks to come to visite vs, for their language 20 is different : three or foure dayes we expected their returne, and then fixty of these Gyantike people came downe with prelants of Venison, Tobacco-pipes, Baskets, Targets, Bowes and Ar-

rowes, fine of their Werowances came boldly aboord vs, to croffe the Bay for Tockwork, leaning

their men and Canoses, the winde being so violent that they durst not paste.

Our order was daily to have prayer, with a Pfalme; at which folemnity, the poore Sauages much wondered : our prayers being done, they were long busied with consultation till they had contriued their businesse; then they began in most passionate manner to hold up their hands to the funne with a most fearefull fong, then imbracing the Captaine, they began to adore him The Safquefein like manner, though he rebuked them, yet they proceeded till their Song was finished, which banker offer so done with a most strange furious action, and a hellish voyce began an Oration of their loues : that ended, with a great painted Beares skinne they couered our Captaine, then one ready with

40 a chaine of white Beades (weighing at least fix or feuen pound) hung it about his necke, the others had eighteene mantles made of divers forts of Skins fowed together, all these with many other toyes, they laid at his feete, stroking their ceremonious hands about his necke for his creation to be their Gouernour, promiting their aides, victuals, or what they had to be his, if he would flay with them to defend and revenge them of the Massawomecker: But we left them at Tockwogh, they much forrowing for our departure, yet we promifed the next yeare agains to visit them; many descriptions and discourfes they made vs of Arquanabucke, Mas awomecke, and other people, fignifying they inhabited the River of Cannida, and from the French to have Cannida. their Hatchets, and luch like tooles by trade, these know no more of the territories of Pomhatan then his name, and he as little of them.

Thus having fought all the Inlets and Rivers worth noting, we returned to discover the Ri- Parturant &. uer of Pawiuxunt; these people we found very tractable, and more civill then any, wee promifed them, as also the Patawomeckes, thenext years to reuenge them of the Mallawomeckes.

In the disconery of this River, which some call Rapahanocke, others Tapahanocke; we were kinde- The exceeding by entertained by the people of Moraughtacun : here we encountred our old friend Mosko, a lustie Sa- loue of the Sawage of Wighcocomoco, upon the Riner of Parawomecke, wee supposed him some Frenchmans Sonne, wage mojeo. because he had a thicke, blacke, bush Beard, and the Sauages seldome have any at all, of which bee was not a little proud to see so many of hie Countrie men: wood, and water bee would fetch vis, guide visany whether, nay cause diners of his Countrie men to belpe vs too, against winde or tyde, from place to place, till we came to Patawomeke. There be rested, till me returned from the head of the River, and then

60 occasioned us conduct to the Mine, which we supposed Antimony. Now in this place bee failed not to Mine of Antidoe vs all the good he could, perswading vs in any sase not to goe to the Rapahanocks, for they would mony. kill vs, for being friends with the Moraughlacuds, that but lately bad ftolne three of the Kings women. This we did thinke was but that his friend: might onely have our trade, & so coofed the River to the Rapahanocks : there some twelve or sixteene standing on the shore, directed us to a little narrow cricke,

Our fight with

where was good landing, and commodities for us, in three or foure Canoaes which we faw there. But ac cording to our custome, we demanded to exchange a man, in figne of lone, which after they had a little con fulsed foure or fine came to the middles to fetch our man, and leave vs one of them, thewing we neede not feare them, for they had neither Clubs, Bowes, nor Arrowes: notwithstanding Anas Tockillb. ing fent on shore to see if he could discouer any ambuscados; desired to goe over the plaine to setch some wood, but they were unwilling, except we would come into the creeke, where the Boate might come close a shore. Todkill by decrees having gotten some two stones throwes up the plaine, perceived two or three bundred men as be thought behinde the trees, fo that offering to returne to the Boate, the Sanages affayed to carry him away perforce; be called to us, we were betraid, and by that be had spoken the word, our bostage was overboord but Watkins bis keeper flew bim in the water immediatly we let fly amogft ibem fo that they fled of 10 Todkill efcaped ret they hot fo fast that be fell flat on the ground ere be could recover the Boate : berethe Mallawomecks Targets flood us in good flead, for upon Molcos words we had fet them about the foregate of our Boate like a fore-castell, from whence we securely beate the Sanages from off the plaine without a. ny burt, vet they foot more then 1000. Arrowes, and then fled into the woods, arming our felmes with thefe light Targets (which are made of little (mall flicks, women betwirt firings of their bempe and filke graffe, as is our cloth but to firmly that no Arrow can to fibly pierce them) we refcued Todkill who was blonded by some of them that were shot but as it pleased God, he had no hurt, and followed them up to the woods. we tound some wou ded some staine of in divers places much bloud : it feemes all their Arrows were frent, for we hard no more of them : their Canoas we tooke the Arrowes which we found we broke, except those we kept for Moico, to whom we gave the Canoaes for his kindnes, that entertained us in the best trium- an phing manner and warlike order in armes he could procure of the Moroughtacunds.

The rest of the day wee spent in accommodating our Boate, instead of tholes we made stickes like bed-

Stanes, to which we fastned fo many of our Maffaw mecke Targets, that insuroned ber as wasteleastes:

the next morning we went up the River and our friend Molco followed us along the hoare, but at last de-

The Sautzes

Fether flones

the most.

Bay.

fired to goe with us in our Boite. But as wee paffed by Pilacacke, Machepeake and Wecuppom, three Townes (cituated upon high white clay Clifts, the other fide all a low plaine marifb, and the River there but narrow, thirty or forty of the Rapahanockes had so prepared themselves with branches as we tooke them for little Bulbes growing among ft the Sedge : feeing their Arrowes firske the Targets and drop in the Riner. Malso fell flat on his face, crying the Rapahanock swhich prefently we officed to be the Bufhes, which at our first l'oller fell downe in the Sedge; when we were gone neere halfe a mile, they hewed them films, 30 dancing and finging very merrily. The Kings of Pill-flacke, Naudraughtacund and Cuttatawomen, vied vs kindely, and all the people neglected not any thing to Moico to bring us to them. Between Secobecke and Maffatecke is a [mall He or two, which canfet b the Riner to be broder then ordinary : thereit pleased God to take one of our company, called M. Richard Fetherstone, that all the time bee badbene in the Country bad behaved himfelfe very honeftly, valiantly, & industriously, where in a little Bay, called bereupon Fetherstones Bay, we burred him with a votty of shot, the rest not with standing their ill dies and bad lodging crouded in fo small a Barge in so many dangers never resting, but alwaies tossed to & againe, bad all well recoursed their bealths. The next day we failed so high at our Boat would flote, there setting up Crosses. Then we disconcred the River of Payankatank so high as it was Nauigable, but the people were For feare of most abunting, but a few old men, women and children, that were tending their Corne; of which, 40 they promised us partwhen wee would fetchit, as bad done all the other Nations where ener we had haue left out yet beene. In a faire calme, rowing towards Point Comtott, wee anchored in Guinolds Bay; but such a sodaine gust surprised us in the night, with thunder and raine, that wee never thought more to have seene lames Towne ; yet running before the winde , we sometimes see the Land by the flashes of fire from beauen , by which light onely wee kept from the filtring floare, until it pleased God in that blacke darkeneffe to preserve vs by that light to finde Point Comfort : there refrebing our felues , because wee bad ovely but heard of the Chifapearckes and Nandsamunds , wee thought it as fit to know all our Neighbours neere home, as so many Nations abroad. This wee did (the particulars are omitted) and arrived fafe the feuenth of September, 1608. where wee found Mafter Skrinener, and divers others well recovered, many dead, fome ficke : The late Preli- 50 dent prisoner for muteny; by the honest diligence of Master Skriuener the haruest gathered, but the stores proussion much spoiled with raine. Thus was that yeare (when nothing wanted) confumed and spent, and nothing done (such was the government of Captaine Raicliffe) but onely this Discouery, wherein to expresse all the dangers, accidents, and incounters

Their procee-

ev furrendred

The Prefidento Cap. Smith. ny, Captaine Smith received the Letters Patents, and tooke vpon him the place of Prelireturne of the dent, which till then by no meanes he would accept, though he were often importuned thereunto. Now the building of Ratcliffes Pallace was staid as a thing needelesse. The Church was

the censure of the courteous and experienced Reader, then I would be tedious, or partiall, being a party. By Nathaniell Powell, and Anas Todkill. "He tenth of September 1608, by the election of the Councell, and request of the Compa- 60 repaired, the Storehouse recoursed; building prepared for the supply we expected. The Fort

this small number passed in that small Barge, with such watrie diet in these great waters and

barbarous Countries (till then to any Christian vtterly vnknowne) I rather referre their merit to

reduced to the forme of this figure, the order of watch renued, the fquadrons (each letting of the warch) trained: The whole Company every Saturday exercised in a field prepared for that lettout. purpose; the Boates trimmed for trade, which in their journey encountred the second supply, that brought them backeto discouer the Countrey of Monacan. How, or why, Captaine Nemport obtained fuch a private Commission as not to returne without a lumpe of Gold, a certainty of the South-Sua or one of the loft Company of Sir Walter Rawley I know nor, nor why hebrought such a fi ie pieced Barge, not to beare vs to that South-Sea, till wee had borne her ouer the Mountaines : which how farre they extend is yet voknowne) as for the Coronation Civiliay is not ouer the Mountaines: which how tarre they extend is yet vakinowned as for the Coronation the way to win of Pawheray, and his Prefents of Balon, Ewer, Bed, Cloathes, and fuch coffly noucleies, they Sauges, nor to had but much better well spared, then so ill spent. For we had his fauour much better, onely magnificence

for a poore poece of Copper, till this stately kinde of soliciting made him so much our uslue and bouncy to himfelfe, that he respected vs as much as nothing at all; as for the hiring of the Poles and reclaime Barbimlelfe, that he respected vs as much as nothing at all; as for the mining of the view and barians. Chil-But to fend them and feuenty more without victuall to worke, was not fo well confidered; yet fed with toves this could not have hurt vs, had they bin two hundred (though then we were one hundred and and awed with thirty that wanted for our telues.) For wee had the Sauages in that order (their haruest being rods; and this newly garbered) that we feared not to get victuall sufficient, had wee bin fine hundred. Now coursest toics newly garhered) that we reared not to get victual lumitent, had wee oil not mundred. Now a steares hab was there no way to make vs milerable, but to neglect that time to make our Promition, whill alwaybell proit was to be had; the which was done to performe this strange Discouery, but more strange Co-

20 ronation; to loofe that time, ipend that victuall weehad, tire and starue our men, having no wilde Indians meanes to carry victuall, munition, the hurt or ficke, but their owne backes, how or by whom either to doe meanes to carry victual, munition, the nure of new, out their owne backets, now of by which them, or to they were invented, I know not; But Captaine Newport we onely accounted the author, who make them to effect thele projects had fo gilded all our hopes, with great promifes, that both Company good to vs or and Councell concluded his resolution. I confesse wee little understood then our estates, to con-themselves. clude his conclution, against all the incommensences the foreseeing President alleadged. There This vanity of was added to the Counfell one Captaine Walde, and Captaine Winne, two ancient Souldiers and ours made Pow was added to the Countert one Captaine Walks, and Captaine Walks, and Captaine Walks (Wo and the Sounders and Falks one cua-valiant Gentlemen, but ignorant of the bulinesse (being newly arrived) Ratelisse was also per-lue himselfe. mitted to have his voyce, and Master Scrinener defirous to fee strange Countries, to that al- his Corne, &c. though Smith was Prefident, yet the Counfell had the authority, and ruled it as they litted; as No way but

30 for cleering Smiths obiections, how Pitch, and Tarre, Wanfcot, Clapboord, Glaffe, and Sope- one to ouerashes, could be prouided to relade the Suip; or prouision got to line with all, when none was in throw the basithe Countrey, and that which we had, fpent before the Shippes departed: The answere was, Captaine Newport undertooke to fraught the Pinnace with Corne, in going and returning in his Discouery, and to refraught her againe from Weromocomoco; also promiting a great propostion of victual from his Ship, inferring that Smiths propositions were onely deutles to hinder his journey, to effect it himselfe; and that the cruelty Smith had vied to the Sauages, in his absence, might occasion them to hinder his designes : For which, all workes were lett, and one hundred and swenty chosen men were appointed for his guard; and Smith, to make cleere these feeming suspitions, that the Sauages were not so desperate, as was pretended by Captaine New-

40 port, and how willing hee was to further them to effect their projects (because the Coronation port, and how willing hee was to further them to cut of their projects (decame the Cotonation Coptain Smith would confume much time) undertooke their mellage to Pombatan, to intreate him to come to with four ego-Iames Towne to receiue his Prefents, accompanied onely with Captaine Waldo, Mafter Andrew ethto Bamba-Buckler, Edward Brinton , and Samuell Collier ; with these foure hee went over land, against tan. Weramocomoco; there palled the River of Pamaunke in the Savages Canoaes, Powhatan being thirty miles off, who, presently was sent for, in the meane time his women entertained Smub in

In a faire plaine field they made a fire, before which he fitting voon a Mat; fuddenly among it The womens the woods was heard fuch a hideous noise and shriking, that they betooke them to their armes, entertainment fuppoling Powbatan with all his power came to furprife them; but the beholders which were at Weranoco-

50 many, men, women, and children, fatisfied the Captaine there was no fuch matter, being prefently prefented with this anticke, thirty yong women came naked out of the woods (onely couered behinde & hefore with a few greene leaues) their bodies all painted, some white, some red, some blacke, some party colour, but every one different, their leader had a faire paire of Stagges hornes on her head, and another Skinne at her girdle, another at her arme, a quiner of Arrowes at her backe, and Bowes and Arrowes in her hand, the next in her hand a Sword, ano- A wilde Dina ther a Clubbe, another a Pot-flicke, all horndalike, the rest every one with their inverall de-Allemmone uifes. Thete Feinds with most helish cries and shouts rushing from amongst the trees, cast person. themselves in a ring about the fire, singing and dancing with excellent ill variety, oft falling in-

to their infernall paffions, and then folemnely againe to fing and dance. Having ipent neere an houte in this Maskarado, as they entred, in like manner they departed. Having reaccommodated themselves, they solemnly inuited Smith to their lodging, but no sooner was hee within the house, but all these Nimphes more tormented him then ever, with crowding, and preffing, and hanging upon him, most tediously crying, Lone you not mee? This falutation ended, the feath was fet, confifting of Fruite in Baskets, Fish and Flesh in woodden Platters,

Ddddddd 2

Basnes and Peafe there wanted not (for twenty Hogges) nor any Sauage daintie which their invention could devile; fome attending, others finging and dancing about them; this mirth and banquet being ended, with Firebrands (instead of Torches) they conducted him to his

Captain Smiths mellage.

1778

The next day came Powhatan; Smith delivered his Message of the Presents sent him. and redeliuered him Namontacke, defiring him to come to his Father Newport to accept those Prefents, and conclude their reuenge against the Monacans: whereupon, the subtill Sause

Penhatan an-

If your King have fent mee prefents, I also am a King, and this my land; eight dayes I will flav to receive them; your Father is to come to mee, not I to him, nor yet to your Fort, neither will bue at such a baite: as for the Monacans, I can resenge my owne inswies, and as for Asquants chucke, where you say your Brother was staine, it is a contrary way from those parts you suppose it. But for any fall water beyong the Mountaines, the relations you have had from my people are fall; whereupon he began to draw plots vpon the ground (according to his difcourfe) of all thoseR gions : many other difcourses they had (yet both desirous to give each other content in Complementall curtefies) and fo Captaine Smith returned with this answer.

ronation. So much was done to buy repentance then worthin. If we feeke Sauages we loofe them if wee shadowes of men close at our feet.I haue ries of them then perhaps any man, and finde that a cruell m rev

in awing Sauais better then that mercifull cruelty, which by too much by too much confidence to Smith St Newport may by their examples teach the just course to be také with fuch: the one brec-Spanish or Pa-

Voon this Captaine Newport fent his prefents by water, which is neere one hundred miles. with fitty of the belt shot, himselfe went by land, which is but twelve miles, where he met with our three Barges to transport him ouer. All things being fit for the day of his Coronation. the with more cost prefents were brought, his Bason, Ewer, Bed and Furniture set vp, his Scarlet Closke and Apparell (with much adoe) put on him, being periwaded by Namontaske, they would doe him no 20 hurt. But a foule trouble there was to make him kneele to receive his Crowne, he neither knowing the Maiesty nor meaning of a Crowne, nor bending of the knee, indured so many perswafions, examples, and instructions, as tired them all : At last, by leaning hard on his shoulders, he feeke vs, wee a little flooped, so they put the Crowne on his head. When by the warning of a Pistoll, the shal finde these Boates were prepared with such a Volly of shot, that the King start vp in a horrible feare, rill he fee all was well, then remembring himfelfe, to congratulate their kindeneffe, he gave hisold Shooes and his Mantle to Captaine Newport. But perceiuing his purpole was to discouer the read more fto- Monacans, he laboured to divert his resolution, retuing to lend him either men or guides, more then Namontacke, and so (after some complementall kindenesse on both sides) in requitall of his 20 prefents, he presented Newport with a heape of Wheate eares, that might containe some seven or eight bushels, and as much more we bought ready dressed in the Towne, wherewith we returned to the Fort.

The Ship having disburdened her felfe of feventy persons, with the first Gentlewoman, and ges to feare vs woman feruant that arrived in our Colony ; Captaine Newport with all the Counfell, and one hundred and twenty chosen men, set forward for the discouery of Monacan, leaving the Prefis dent at the Fort with eighty (fuch as they were) to relade the Ship. Arriving at the fals, wee marched by land some forty miles in two dayes and a halfe, and so returned downe to the same kindenes hath path we went. Two Townes we discourred of the Monacans, the people neither vsing vs well made vs feare nor ill, yet for our fecurity we tooke one of their petty Weromances, and led him bound, to con- to them, or effe duct vs the way. And in our returns fearched many places we supposed Mines, about which we spent some time in refining, hauing one William Callicut a refiner, fitted for that purpole, bose our selues from that crust of earth which we digged, he perswaded vs to beleeue hee ex racted some small quantity of Siluer (and not vnlikely tome better ftuffe might be had for the digging) with this poore triall being contented to leaue this faire, fertill, well watered Country. Comming to the Fals, the Sauages fained there were divers Ships come into the Bay to kill them at Iames Towne. Trade they would not, and finde their Corne we could not, for they had hid it in the woods, and being thus deluded we arrived at Iames Towne, halfe ficke, all complaining, and tired with toile, famine, and discontent, to have onely but discovered our gilded hopes, and fruitlesse certainties, dread, without as the President foretold vs.

No fooner were we landed, but the President dispersed as many as were able, some for Glisse, nie terror, the others for Pitch, Tarreand Sope-afnes, leaving them (with the Fort) to the Councels overfight. But thirtie of vs he conducted fine miles from the Fort to learne to make clap-boord, cut downe other difera-Trees, and lie in Woods; amongst the rest he had chosen Gabriell Beadell, and Iohn Russell the onced in feeking ly two Gallants of this last supply, and both proper Gentlemen : strange were these pleasures to offices of hu-

which are graceleste, Neither doth it become vs to vie Sauages with sauagenesse, nor yet with too humaine viage, but in a middle path (medio tutillimus ibis) to goe and doe so that they may admire and feare vs, as those whom God, Religion, Civility, and Art, haue made fo farre superiour; yet to abuse them (vnprouoked) as hostile states, or as meere beasts, with cruell and beastly serty, whom nature hath equally made men. This breedes desperate depopulations, as in the Spanish Indies hath beene seene; that gentlenesse and vnequall equity makes them proud and treacherous, as wofull experience hath taught in the late malfacre. 60 Our temperance and autice should be qualified with prudence and fortitude. Neither must wee make them beasts, nor yet value them as Christians, till we have made them such; and the way to make them Christian men, is first to make them civill men, to file off the rult of their humanity, which as children (the like in taming wilde Beafts) mult be done with feuere gendencie, and gende fenerity, which may breede in them a louing awe,or awfull lone, at leaft a fulf diseast toward vs, that feare may make them snow vs. and then the fault is ours if they fee no cause to loue vs.

to their conditions, yet lodging, eating, drinking, working, or playing, they doing but as the President, all these things were carried so pleasantly, as within a weeke they became Masters, making it their delight to heave the Trees thunder as they fell, but the Axes fo oft bliftered there tender fingers, that commonly every third blow had a lowd Oath to drowne the Eccho; foremedic of which finne the President deuised how to have every mans Oathes numbred, and at night, for every Oath to have a Kan of water powred downe his sleeue, with which even ry Offender was so washed (himselfe and all) that a man should scarce heare an Oath in nishment for

By this, let no man thinke that the President, or these Gentlemens spent their times as comto mon Wood-hackers at felling of Trees, or fuch like other labours, or that they were prefied to any thing as hirelings or common flaues, for what they did (beeing but once a little inured) it. feemed, and they conceited it only as a pleafure and a recreation. Yet thirtie or fortie of fuch vo- One Gentleluntarie Gentlemen would doe more in a day then one hundred of the rest that must be prest to manbetter it by compulsion. Master Scrinener, Captaine Waldo, and Captaine Winne at the Fort, enery one then twentie in like manner carefully regarded their charge. The Prefident returning from amongst the Woods feeing the time confumed, and no pronision gotten, (and the ship lay idle, and would do nothing presently imbarked himselfe in the Discouery Barge, giving order to the Councell, to fend Master Percie after him with the next Barge that arrived at the Fort; two Barges, he had himfelfe, and twentie men, but arriving at (bickahamina, that dogged Nation was too well acquainted with 20 our wants, refusing to trade, with as much scorne and infolencie as they could expresse. The President perceiuing it was Powhatans policie to starue vs, told them hee came not so much for The chicata-

their Corne, as to reuenge his imprisonment, and the death of his men murdered by them, and minesforced to fo landing his men, and readie to charge them, they immediatly fled; but then they fent their Ambaffadors, with corne, fish, fowle, or what they had to make their peace (their corne being that veere bad) they complained extremely of their owne wants yet fraughted our Boates with one hundred bushels of Corne, and in like manner Master Percies, that not long after vs arrived; they having done the best they could to content vs, within foure or fine dayes were returned to Iames Towne.

All this time our old Tauerne, made as much of all them that had either Money or Ware as A good tauern could be defired; and by this time they were become so perfect on all sides (I meane Souldiers. Saylers, and Sauages) as there was ten times more care, to maintayne their damnable and private Trade, then to prouide for the Colonie things that were necessarie, neither was it a small policie in the Mariners, to report in England wee had fuch plentie, and bring vs fo many men without victuall, when they had so many private Factors in the Fort, that within fixe or seven weekes after the ships returne, of two or three hundred Hatchets, Chissels, Mactockes, and Pick-axes fearce twentie could bee found, and for Pike-heads, Kniues, Shot, Powder, or any thing (they

could fleale from their fellowes) was vendible; They knew as well (and as fectetly) how to con- Abad trade of could fleale from their fellowes) was vendible; I ney knew as well (and as secretly) now to collaboration may them to trade with the Sauages, for Furres, Baskets, Mustaneekes, young beafts or such like Sauers. Commodities, as to exchange them with the Saylers, for Butter, Cheefe, Beefe, Porke, Aqua-10 mitz. Beere, B. sket, and Oate-meale; and then faine, that all was fent them from their friends. And though Virginia affoord no Furres for the store, yet one Mariner in one Voyage hath got io many, as he hath confelled to haue fold in England for thirtie pound. And for all this riot and Newports boaffing to leave vs for twelve monethes, though we had eightie nine by his Discourie ficke and lame, which by one man for a pound of Copper might much better have beene done, and having but apint of Corne a day for a man, we were constrained to give bim three Hogsbeads of that Corne to vi-Stuall his Thin homeward.

Those are the Saint-seeming Worthies of Virginia, that have notwith sanding all this, meat, drinke, and pay, but now they beginne to grow wearie, their Trade beeing both perceiued and preuented; none hath beene in Unginia (that hath observed any thing) which knowes not this 50 to be true, and yet the scorne, and shame was the poore Souldiers, Gentlemen and carelesse Gouernours, who were all thus bought and fold, the Aduenturers coczened, and the action ouerthrowne by their falle excuses, informations, and directions by this let all the World Judge, how this butineffe could prosper, being thus abused by such pilfering occasions. .

The proceedings and accidents, with the second supply.

Mafter Scrivener was fent with the Barges and Pinnace to Werawecomoco, where he found the Scriveners voy-Sauages more readie to fight then trade, but his vigilancie was such, as preuented their projects, age 101/2/2020. 60 and by the meanes of Namontack got three or foure Hogsheads of Corne, and as much red paint which (then) was esteemed an excellent die.

Captaine Newport being dispatched with the tryals of Pitch, Tarre, Glasse, Frankincense, and Sope-after, with that Clapboord and Wainfeet which could bee prouided, met with Mafter Serimener at Point Comfort, and so returned for England, leaving vs in all two hundred, with thoiche brought vs.

grabu.ion.

Appamatucke

Powbatan) till we were conftrained to begin with them perforce, and then they would rather fell'ys some, then we should take all; so loading our Boats, with one hundred bushels wee parted friends, and came to lames Towne, at which time, there was a Marriage betweene lohn Lava

Firft marriage, don and Anna Burrowes, being the first Marriage we had in Virginia.

Long he stayed not, but fitting himselfe and Captaine Walds with two Barges, from Chanspo, V Veanocke and all parts there, was found neither Corne nor Sauage, but all fled (being icalous of our intents) till we discourred the River and people of Apparatick, where we found little: that which they had, wee equally denided, betwixt the Sauages and vs (but gave them Cop. 10 per in confideration) Mafter Percu, and Mafter Sermener went also abroad but could finde no-

thing. The President seeing this procrassinating of time, was no course to live, resolved with Captaine VValdo (whom he knew to be fure in time of need) to furprize Powhatan, and all his prouifion, but Captaine VVinne, and Mafter Scrimener (for some private respects) did their best to hinder their project : But the Prefident whom no perswasions could perswade to starue, being inuited by Powhatan to come vnto him, and if he would rend him but men to build him a house, bring him a Grindstone, fiftie Swords, some Peeces, a Cocke and a Henne, with Copper and Beads, he would load his thip with Corne, the Prefident not ignorant of his devices, yet vinwilling to neg-lect any opportunitie, prefently tent three Datchmen and two English (haung noviduals to imploy them, all for want thereof being idle) knowing there needed no better Castell, then that houle to furprize Powbatan, to eff. Et this proiect hee tooke order with Captaine Waldo to fecond him if need required; Serimener he left his Subtlitute; and fer forth with the Pinnace two Barses, and fixe and fortie men which only were fuch as voluntarily offered themselues for his journie the which) by reason of Master Scrineners ill successe) was censured very desperate, they all knowing Smith would not returne emptie how focuer, cauled many of those that he had appointed, to find excuses to flay behind.

iourneto Pa-

THe nine and twentieth of December hee set forward for Werdwogomoco. In the Pinnace.

Master George Percie, brother to the Earle of Northumberland. Master Francis West, bromaunie.cb.8. ther to the Lord De la-Ware. William Phetiplace Captaine of the Pinnace. Ionas Profit Maftet. Robert Ford Clerke of the Councell.

Michaell Pheriplace. Geoff ry Abbot Sergeant. William Tankard. George Tarington. lamis

Bourne, George Burton, Thomas Coe, Gentlemen.

John Dods, Edward Brinton. Nathaniell Peacocke. Henry Powell. Danid Ellis, Thomas Gip-Son. Iohn Prat. George Acrigge. Iames Reade. Nicholas Hancocke. Iames Walkins. Anthony Bag. gly Sergeant. Thomas Lambert. Edward Pifing Sergeant. Souldiers. Foure Dutchmen and Richard Sanage were lent by Land, to build the house for Ponhatan a-

This company being victualled but for three or foure dayes lodged the first night at Werakers ack, where the President tooke sufficient proussion; This kinde Sauage did his best to divert him from feeing Powbatan, but perceiuing hee could not prevaile, hee aduised in this manner; Captaine Smith, you Shall find Powhatan to ve you kindly, but trust him not, and be sure he have no opportunitie to feize on your armes, for he bath fent for you only to cut your throts; the Captaine thanked him for nis good counfell, yet the better to try his loue, defired Guides to Chomanoke, for hee would fend a present to that King to bind him his friend. To performe this Ioumey, was sent Michael Sicklemore, a very honest valuant, and painfull Souldier, with him two Guides, and directions how to fearch for the loft company of Sir Walter Rawleigh, and Silke Graffe : then weed parted thence, the President assuring the King his perpetuall loue, and left with him Sammell Collier his 50 Page to learne the Language.

Plentie of xictuall. 148 Fowles

The good

Weraskoy ke.

The next night being lodged at Keconghian fixe or feuen dayes, the extreme wind, raine, froft, and inow, cauled vs to keepe Christmass, amongst the Sauages, where we were never more merrie, nor fed on more plentie of good Oyiters, Fish, Flesh, Wild-foule, and good Bread, nor neuer had better fires in England then in the dry warme imokie houses of Kecoughtan. But departing thence, when we found no houses, we were not curious in any weather, to lie three or foure nights together vponany shore under the Trees by a good fire. The President Anthony Bagly, and Edward Pising, did kill one hundred fortie and eight Fowles at three shootes. At Kiskiack the Froit forced vs three or foure dayes also to supprelle the intolencie of those proud Sauiges; to quarter in their houses, and guard our Birge, and cause them give vs what we wanted, yet were 60 wee but twelve with the President, and yet wee never wanted Harbour where wee foundary

The twelfth of Ianuary we arrived at Werawocomo, where the River was frozen neere halfe 2 mile from the shore; but to neglect no time, the Prefident with his Barge, to farre had approaCHAP. 4. Salt Ice melted. Demand of Swords and Gunnes.

ched by breaking the Ice as the ebbe left him among it those Ozie shoales, yet rather then to lie there frozen to death, by his owne example he taught them to march middle deepe, more then a flight flor through this muddie frozen Oze; when the Barge floted hee appointed two or three An ill march. to returne her aboord the Pinnace, where for want of water in melting the Salt Ice they made Powbeton fubfresh water, but in this march Master Russell (whom none could perswade to stay behind) being there. fomewhat ill, and exceeding heavie, so over-toyled himselfe, as the rest had much adoe (ere hee ont ashore) to regaine life, into his dead benum ned spirits, quartering in the next Houles wee found, we fent to Powhatan for prouision, who fent vs plentie of Bread, Turkeyes, and Venison. The next day having feasted vs after his ordinary manner, he began to aske, when we would bee

to gone, fayning hee fent not for vs, neither had hee any Corne, and his people much leffe, vet for fortie Swords hee would procure ve fortie bushels. The President shewing him the men there prefent, that brought him the meffage and conditions, asked him how it chanced hee became fo forgetfull, thereat the King concluded the matter with a merrie laughter, asking for our Commodities, but none hee liked without Gunnes and Swordes, valuing a basket of Corne more precious then a Basket of Copper, faying, hee could eate his Corne, but not his

Captaine Smith feeing the intent of this fubtle Swage; beganne to deale with him after this Cap. Smiths manner, Powhatan, Though I had many courfes to bane made my pronision, get beleeuing your promi- discourse to fes to supply my wants, I negleited all, to satisfie your desire, and to teffife my lone, I fent you my men Pewbaira. 20 for your building, neglecting my owne : what your people had you have engroffed, forbidding them our Trade, and now you thinke by consuming the time, we hall consume for want, not having to fulfill your

strange demands, as for Swords and Gunnes, I told you long agoe, I bad none to spare. And you shall know, those I have, can beepe me from want, yet steale, or wrong you I will not nor disolue that friend-

we have mutually promised, except you constraine me by your bad viage.

The King having attentively littled to this Discourse; promited, that both he and his Coun- Pombatous retrey would spare him what they could, the which within two dayes, they should receive. vet ply and flattery Captaine Smith (faith the King) some doubt I have of your comming hither, that makes me not To kindly feeke to releeue you as I would; for many doe informe mee, your comming is not for Trade, but to inuade my people and possesse my Country, who date not come to bring you corne, 30 feeing you thus armed with your men. To cleere vs of this feare, leave abourd your weapons,

for here they are needl-fie we being all friends and for euer Powhatans.

With many such Discourses they spent the day, quartering that night in the Kings houses, the next day he reviewed his building, which he little intended should proceed; for the Dutchmen finding his plentie, and knowing our want, and perceiving his preparation to furprize vs, little Wickednesse thinking we could estape, both him and famine (to obtaine his fauour) reuealed to him as much of their Dutate as they knew of our estates projects, and how to prevent them; one of them being of so good a men. judgement, spirit, and resolution, and a hireling that was certaine of wages for his libor, and euer well vied, both he and his Countrimen, that the President knew not whom better to trust, and not knowing any fitter for that imployment, had fent him as a spie to discouer Powbatans in-

40 tent, then little doubting his honeftie, nor could ever be certaine of his villany, till neere halfe a yeere after. Whilst we expected the comming in of the Country, we wrangled out of the King ten quarters of Corne for a Copper Kettle, the which the President perceiuing him much to etfect, valued it at a much greater rate, but (in regard of his scarcitie) he would accept of as much more the next years, or elle the Country of Monacan; the King exceeding liberall of that he had not yeelded him Monacan, Wherewith each feeming well contented; Pombatan began to expo-

stulate the difference betwixt Peace and Warre, after this manner.

Captaine Smith you may understand, that I, having seene the death of all my people thrice, and not Pomhatans disone lining of those three Generations, but my selfe, I know the difference of Peace and Warre, better then course of any in my Countrie. But now I am old, and ere long I must die, my Brethren, namely Opichapam, O- Waire. pechankanough, and K kataugh, my two fisters, and their two daughters, are diffinitly each others suc-

50 ceffors, I wish their experiences no leffe then mine, and your love to them, no leffe then mine to you: but this brute from Nanfamund that you are come to destroy my Countrie, fo much affrighteth al my people, as they dare not vifit you; what will it anaile you, to take that perforce you may quietly have with love, or to destroy them that provide you food? what can you get by war, when we can hide our provision and flie to the woods, wherby you must family by wronging us your friends; and why are you thus icalous of our lues, feeing vs unarmed, and both doe, and are willing fill to feed you with that you cannot get but by our labours? thinke you I am fo simple not to know, it is better to eat good meate, lie well, and sleepe quietly with my women and children, laugh & be merrie with you, have Copper, Hatchets, or what I want being your friend then be forced to flie from all to lie cold in the woods, feed upon Acornes, roots and such traft, and 60 be so bunted by you, that I can neither rest, eat, nor sleepe; but my tired men must watch, and if a twig but

breake, enery one cry there comes Captaine Smith, then mast I flie I know not whether, and thus with miferable feare end my miserable life; leaning my pleasures to such youths as you, which through your rash unadmifednesse, may quickly as miserably end, for want of that you never know how to find? Let this therefore affure you of our lones, and eneric yeers our friendly Trade shall furnish you with Corne,

and now also if you would come in friendly manner to see us, and not thus with your Guns and Swords, as to innade your foer. To this subtill discourse the President thus replied.

C. Swiths

Scena you will not rightly conceine of our words, we strine to make you know our thoughts by our deeds. The vow I made you of my lone, both my felfe and my men bane kept, as for your promise I find it enerie day violated, by some of your subjects, yet we finding your love and kindnesse (our custome is so far from being ungratefull) that for your fake onely, we have curbed our thirfting defire of revenge, elfe bad they knowne as well the crueltie we use to our enemies, as our true love and curtesie to our friends. And I thinke your indgement sufficient to conceine as well by the adventures wee have undertaken, as by the admontage we have by our Armes of yours : that had we intended you any hurt , long ere this wee could have effected it ; your people comming to me at lames Towne, are entertained with their Bowes and Ar- 10 rowes without exception , we esteeming it with you, as it is with vs, to weare our Armes as our appared. As for the dangers of our enemies, in such warres consist our chiefest pleasure, for your riches wee have no vie, as for the hiding your prossition, or by your flying to the Woods, wee Shall fo unadmittedle Starue as you conclude your friendly care in that behalfe is needlesse; for wee have a rule to find beyond your knowledge.

Many other discourses they had, till at last they began to trade, but the King seeing his will would not be admitted as a law, our guard difperfed, nor our men difarmed, he (fighing) breathed

Pow'a'ansimportunitiesor to base them betray them.

his mind once more in this manner. Captaine Smith , I never vied any Werowances fo kindly as your felfe; yet from you I receive the least bindnesse of any. Captaine Newport gave me swords, Copper, Clothes, a Bed, Tooles, or what I de- 20 fired ener tak no what I offered him, and would fend away his Guns when I intreated him : none doth deny to lay at my feet (or doe) what I defire, but onely you, of whom I can have nothing, but what you regard not, and yet you will baue what soener you demand. Captaine Newport you call fasher, and so you call me. but I fee for all vs both, you will doe what you lift , and wee must both feeke to content you: But if you intend fo friendly as you fay, fend hence your Armes that I might beleene you, for you fee the love I beare you, doth canfe me thu naked to forget my felfe.

Smith feeing this Sausge but trifled the time to cut his throat : procured the Sausges to breake the Ice (that his Boat might come to fetch both him and his Corne) and gaue order forthis men to come alhore, to have surprised the King, with whom also hee but trifled the time till his men landed, and to keepe him from furpition, entertained the time with this reply.

C.Smiths difmight furptife Pombatan.

Powhatan, you must know as I have but one God, I honour but one King; and I line not here at your courie to delay Subject, but as your friend, to pleasure you with what I can: by the gifts you best ow on me, you gaine were then by trade, yet would you resist mee as I doe you, you should know it is not our customes to sell our twotelie as a vendible commoditie. Bring all your Countrey with you for your guard, I will not diflike of us being over realows. But to content you, to morrow I will leave my Armes, and trust to your primite. I call you father indeed, and as a father you hall fee I will lone you, but the small care you had of such a child, caused my men to persuade me to list for my selfe.

Perphatans plot to have murdered Smith.

Pearle for a

His excuse.

Prefent.

By this time Powbatan having knowledge, his men were readie: whilft the Ice was breaking, his luggage, women, and children fled, and to aword futpition, left two or three of his women talking with the Captaine, whilft hee fecretly fled, and his men as fecretly befet the house, which 40 being at the instant discoursed to Captaine Smith, with his Pistol, Sword, and Target, hee made fuch a passage among it those naked Deuills, that they fled before him, some one way, some another, so that without hurt hee obtained the Corps du-guard : when they perceived him so well escaped, and with his eight men (for hee had no more with him) to the vttermost of their skill, they lought by excuses to diffemble the matter, and Powhatan to excuse his flight, and the sudden A Chaine of comming of this multitude, lent our Captaine a great Bracelet, and a Chaine of Pearle, by an ancient Orator that bespoke vs to this purpose (perceiuing then from our Pinnace, a Barge, and men departing and comming vnto vs.) Captaine Smith, our Werowance is fled, fearing jour Guns, and knowing when the Ice was broken there would come more men, fent those of his to quard bis Corne from the pilfry, that might bappen without your knowledge : now though some bee burt by your misprision, 50 yet be is your friend, and so will continue : and since the Ice is open bee would have you send away your Corne; and if you would have his company fend also your Armes, which so affrighteth this people, that they dare not come to you, as he bath promised they flouid : Now having provided Baskets for our men to carry the Corne, they kindly offered their fertice to guard our Armes, that none should steale them. A great many they were, of goodly well appointed fellowes as grim as Deuills : yet the very light of cocking our matches against them, and a few wordes caused them to leave their Bowes and Arrowes to our guard, and heare downe our Corne on their owne backes; wee needed not importune them to make quick dispatch. But our owne Barge being left by the ebbc, caused vs to flay till the midnight tide carried vs fafe aboard, having spent that halfe night with such mirch, asthough we neuer had fuf pected or intended any thing, we left the Durchmen to build, 60 Brinton to kill Fowle for Powhatan (as by his Meffengers he importunately defired) and left directions with our men to give Powbatan all the content they could, that we might inject his com-

Pretending to kill ourmen loaded with baskets_wce forced the Sanages to car-

pany at our returne from Pamaunke.

CHAP. 4. Colourable excuse. Newes of being betrayed. Generall resolution.

VV E had no fooner let faile, but Pombatan returned, and fent Adam and Francis (two Howwee'ca-flour Durch men) to the Fort, who faining to Captaine Winne that all things were pedfurpting well and that Captaine Smith had wie for their Armes, wherefore they requested new (the which at Panasonies weit and that Captaine sman had victor their transfer for some extraordinary tooles and shift of the Dutchapparell, by this colourable excute, they obtained fixe or feuen more to their confederacie, fuch men deceme expert theetes that prefently furnished them with a great many of Swords, Pike-heads, Peeces, C.Smith. Shot, Powder, and such like ; they have Sanages at hand ready to carry it away. The next day Perfidious they returned unsuipected , leaning their confederates to follow, and in the interim, to connay wretche them a competencie of all things they could, for which feruice they should line with Powhatan to as his chiefe affected : free from those mistries that would happen the Colony, Samuell their other confort, Powhatan kept for their pledge, whose deligence had provided them three hundred of their kind of Hatchets, the rest fiftie Swords, eight Peeces, and eight Pikes: Briton, and Richard Sauge feeing the Dutch-men fo strangely diligent to accommodate the Sauges; these weapons attempted to have got to lames Towne, but they were apprehended. Within two or three daies we arrived at Passaunke, the King as many daies entertained vs with feathing and much mirth : and the day he appointed to begin our trade, the Prefident, with M. Perfie, M. Weft, M. Ruffell, M. Beheathland, M. Powell, M. Crafbaw, M. Ford, and some others to the number of infreene went vp to now be aban-Opechancanonehs house (neere a quarter of a mile from the River) where we found nothing, but a doned. lame fellow and a boy, and all the houses about, of all things abandoned; nor long wee standere the King arrived, and after him came divers of his people loaded with Bowes and Arrowes, but fuch pinching commodities, and those effeemed at such a value, as our Captaine began with him

Opechancanough, the great lone you professe with your tongue, seemes meere deceit by your actions; Smith speech last year you kindly fraughted our ship, but now you have inuited me to starue with bunger. You know my want, and I your plentse of which by some meanes I must have a part, remember it is fit for Kings to keepe their promise, here are my commedities, whereof take your choice; the rest I will proportion fit bargaines

The King feemed kindly to accept his offer: and the better to colour his project, fold vs what they had to our owne content; promising the next day more company, better provided (the Barto ges and Pinnace being committed to the charge of M. Phetiplace) the Prefident, with his old fifteens marched up to the Kings house, where wee found foure or his men newly come with great Baskets. Not long after came the King , who with a ftrained cheeref theffe held vs with ditcourse, what paines he had taken to keepe his promisestill M. Russell brought vs in newes that we were all betrayed : for at least lixe or feven hundred of well appointed Indians had incironed the 700. Sauares house and belet the fields. The King conjecturing what Ruffeld related, wee could well perceive beset in Enge how the extremitie of his feare bewrayed his intent: whereat fome of our company feeming farcene. difmayed with the thought of fuch a multitude; the Captaine incouraged vs after th a manner. Worthy Country-men were the mischiefes of my seeming friends , no more then the danger of these ene- Smith Secreti mies, I little cared, were they as many more; if you dare doe, but as I. But this is my terment, that if I to his Com-

go escape them, our malicious Councell, with their open mouthed Minions, will make me such a peace-breaker pany. (in their opinions) in England, as will breake my necke : I could wish those here, that make these seeme Saints, and me an Oppreffer. But this is the worft of all, wherein, I pray aide me with your opinions, Should we begin with them and surprize this King, we cannot keepe birn, and defend well our selves, if wee Should each kill our man, and so proceed withall in this house; the rest will all fly, then shall we get no more, then the bodies that are flaine, and then starme for victuall: as for their furiest is the least danger, for well you know (being alone affaulted with two or three hundred of them) I made them compound to faue my life, and we are now fixteene, and they but seven bundred at the most, and affire your selves GOD will so affilt vs, that if you dare but to fland to discharge your Peeces, the verie smoake will be sufficient to affright them: yet bowfeener (if there be occasion) let us fight like men, and not die like sheepe:but first I will deale with them, to bring it to passe, we may fight for some thing, and draw them to it by conditions.

If you like this motion, promifeme youle be valiant, The time not permitting any argument, all vowed to execute whatfoeuer he attempted, or die; whereupon the Captaine approaching the King, befpoke him in this manner.

I fee Opechancanough your plot is to murder me, but I feare it not; as yet your men and mine, have Smiths offet to done no harme, but by our directions. Tate therefore your Armes; jou fee mine : n.y boke shall bee as Openanta. nahed asyones; the lle in your River is a fit place, if you be contented; and the conquerous (of ost two) Shall be Lord and Master oner all our men : otherwaies draw all your men into the field; if you have not enough, take time to fetch more, and bring what number you will, so eneric one bring a basket of Corne, against all which I will stake the valuean Copper ; you see I have but sifteene men , and our game stall be,

60 The conquerour take all. The King, being guarded with fiftie or fixtie of the chiefe men, feemed kindly to appear of occhance-Smalls inspirition of vinkindnesse, by a great present at the doore, they intreated him to receive, analysis of the was to draw him without the doore where the graffer was qualled with a shall all and This was to draw him without the doore where the prefent was guarded with (at the leaft two Smith. hundred men, and thirtie lying under a great tree (that lay thwart as a Barricado) each his Ar-

taken prifoner amids his men. If this course had bin tiken by otheis Virginia by this had

1724

n out of her c.& able o goe alone, yea to trade or Sght, But sames of peace haue bred worfe then wars, and our confidence barched the miserable masfacte by this perfidious Saunge. And would God a Dale or Smith, or forme fuch foirit were ver there to take this that is the onely right cou:se wi h thole which know not to doc right further for to are of fuffering it enforceth. Smiths difcourse to the

diffemble their See their vie of English Armes Their excuse and reconcilement. The loffe of M. Skrinener and others with a Skiffe. M.wiffinhis iourney to the Prefident.

Panzonkies. The Sauages

Graineth his men to be treacherous

The third berray vs.

row necked ready to shoot; some the President commanded to go & see what kind of deceit this Durchascarough was, and to receive the Prefent but they refuled to doe it) yet divers offered whom he would not permit: but commanding M. Perfie, and M. West to make good the house, to M. Powell, and M. Bebeatbland to guard the doore, and in such a rage fnatched the King by his long locke of haire in the midth of his men, with his Piffoll readie bent against his brest, he instantly yeelded his Bow and Arrowes, and fued for his life : Thus he led the King (neere dead with feare) amonest all his people, who delivering the Captaine his Bow and arrowes, all his men were easily intreated to cast downe their Armes, little dreaming any durit in that manner have vied their King; who then to escape himselfe, bestowed his Presents in good sadnesse. And having caused all his multitude to approach difarmed; the Pretident argued with them to this eile &t.

Ifee you Pamavokies, the great defire you have to cut my throat; and my long suffering your ininries, have inholdned you to this presumption. The canse I have forborne your insolencies, is the memile I mide you (before the God I ferne) to be your friend, till you give mee sust caufe to bee your enemy. If I beene this vow, my God will keepe me, you cannot hart me; if I breake it , be will deftroy me. But if you Shoot but one Arrow, to feed one drop of bloud of any of my men,or steale the least of these Beades,or Conper (i fourne before me with my foot) you hall fee, I will not cease remenge (if once I begin) so long as I can heare where to find one of your Nation that will not deny the name of Pamavnke : I am not now at Raflenear (halfe drown'd with mire), where you tooke me prifoner, yet then for keeping promile, and your good vlase, and faving my life, I fo affect you, that your denialls of your treacherie, doth halfeper-Twade me to mistake my selfe. But if I be the marke you aime at, here I stand, shoot he that dare, You an promised to fraught my loop ere I departed, and so you shall, or I meane to load ber with your dead cartasles : ret if as friends you will come and trade, I once more promise not to trouble you, except you give mee the first occasion. Vpon this away went your Bowes and Arrowes, and men, women, and children brought in their commodities, but two or three houres they to thronged about the Prefident and fo overwearied him, as hee retired himselfe to rest, leaving M. Bebeathland, and M. Pewel to accept their Prefents: but some Sauges perceiving them fait affecte, and the guard carefully disperfed, fortie or fiftie of their choice men each with an English Sword in his hand, began to enter the house, with two or three hundred others that prefed to second them. The noise and hast they made in, did fo shake the house, as they awoke him from his sleepe, and being halfe amazed with this fudden fight, hetooke him straight to his Sword and Target, M. Crafbaw and some to other charging in like manner, they thronged fafter backe, then before forward. The house thus clenfed, the King and his Ancients, with a long Oration came to excuse this intrusion. Thereft of the day was ipent with much kindnesse, the company againe renuing their Presents of their best prouision. And what soener we gave them, they seemed well consented with it.

Now in the meane while fince our departure, this bapned at the Rott : M. Scrinener willing to croffe the furnizing of Powbatan; nine daies after the Prefidents departure, would needs visit the He of Hogs, and tooke with him Captaine Waldo (though the Prefident had appointed him to be readie to second his occasions) with M. Anthony Gosnoll, and eight others; but so violent was the wind (that extreame frozen time) that the Boat funke, but where or how, none doth know, for they were all drowned; onely this was knowne, that the Skiffe was much outladed; and 40 would scarce have lived in that extreame tempest, had she beene emptie; but by no periwasion he could be diverted, though both Walds and a hundred others doubted as it hapned. The Sausges were the first that found their bodies, which so much the more encouraged them to effect their projects. To advertise the President of this heavy newes, none could be found would vndertake it, but the journey was often refused of all in the Fort, vntill M. Wiffin vndertooke alone the performance thereof; wherein he was encountred with many dangers and difficulties, and in all parts as he passed (as also that night he lodged with Pombatan) he perceived such preparation for warre, that affored him, some mischiefe was intended, but with extraordinary bribes, and much trouble, in three daies trauell at length he found vs in the midft of these turmoiles. This vnhappy newes, the Prefident (wore him to conceale from the reft, and so diffembling his forow, 10 with the best countenance he could, when the night approached, went safely aboard with all his

Now so extreamely Powhatan had threatned the death of his men, if they did not by some meanes kill Captaine Smith, that the next day they appointed the Country should come to trade vnarmed : yet vnwilling to be treacherous, but that they were conftrained , hating fighting, almost as ill as hanging, such feare they had of bad fuccesse. The next morning the Sunne had not long appeared, but the fields appeared couered with people, and baskets to tempt vs ashore. The Prelident determined to keepe abourd, but nothing was to be had without his prefence, nor they would not indure the fight of a Gun : then the President seeing many depart, and being vnwilling to lofe fuch a bootie, fo well contriued the Pinnace, and his Barges with Ambufcadees, as 69 only with M. Perfie, M. West, and M. Ruffell armed, he went ashore, others vnarmed hee appointed to receive what was brought; the Sauages flocked before him in heapes, and (the banke feruing as a trench for retreate) he drew them faire open to his Ambulcades, for he not being to be perswaded to goe to visit their King, the King came to visit him with two or three hundred

men, in the forme of two halfe Moones, with fome twentie men, and many women loaded with great painted baskets; but when they approached fomewhat neete vs, their women and children fled for when they had enuironed and befet the fields in this manner, they thought their purpose fure ; yet to trembled with feare, as they were fearce able to nock their Arrowe; : Smith standing with his three men readie bent beholding them, till they were within danger of our Ambulcade, who, vpon the word discourred themselves, and hee retiring to the banke : which the Sauages no sooner perceived, but away they fled, esteeming their heeles for their best advantage. That night we fent to the Fort M. Crashaw, and M. Ford, who (in the mid-way betweene Werawocomoco and the fort) met foure or fine of the Dutchmens confederates going to Powhatan, the to which (to excuse those Gentlemens suspition of their running to the Sauages returned to the Fort and there continued.

The Sauages hearing our Barge depart in the night were so terribly affraide, that wee sent for more men (wee having so much threatned their ruine, and the rasing of their Houses, Boates, and Canowes) that the next day the King, fent our Captaine a Chaine of Pearle to alter his purpoie, A Chaine of and flay his men, promifing (though they wanted themfelues) to fraught our ship, and bring it Peale fert to aboard to avoid fulpition, to that five or fixe daies after, from all parts of the Countrey within ten or twelve miles, in the extreame cold Froft, and Snow, they brought vs provision on their

Yet notwithstanding this kindnesse and trade, had their art and poston beene sufficient, the The President no President with Master West and some others had beene poyloned : it made them sicke, but expelled it felfe. Wecuttanom aftout young fellow, knowing hee was suspected for bringing this The offender present of poilon, with fortie or fiftie of his choice companions (feeing the President but with a punished few men at Potavneat --) fo proudly braued it , as though hee expected to incounter a revenge: which the President perceiung, in the midst of his company did not onely beat, but spurned him like a dogge, as fcorning to doe him any worse mischiefe : whereupon all of them fled into the Woods, thinking they had done a great matter, to have so well escaped : and the Townsmen remayning, prefently fraughted our Barge, to bee rid of our companies, framing many excufes to excuse Wecnttanon (being sonne to their chiefe King , but Pombatan) and told vs , if wee would shew them him that brought the poyson, they would deliuer him to vs to punish

30 as wee pleased. Men may thinke it ftrange there should bee this stirre for a little Corne, but had it beene Gold with more ease wee might have got it : and had it wanted, the whole Colony had starued. Wee may bee thought verie patient, to indure all those injuries; yet onely with fearing them, wee got what they had. Whereas if wee had taken renenge, then by their losse wee should have lost our selves. We searched all the Countries of Toughtanund and Mattapamient, The Sanage where the people imparted that little they had, with such complaints and teares from women want and and children ; as hee had beene too cruell to bee a Christian that would not have beene fatif- pourrie. fied, and moued with compassion. But this happened in October, Nouember, and December, when that vnhappy discourse of Monacan was made, wee might have fraughted a Ship

40 of fortie Tunnes, and twice as much might have beene had from the Rivers of Toppahannock, Patawomeck, and Pawtuxunt. The maine occasion of our temporizing with the Sauages was to part friendes (as weedid) to give the lefte cause of suspition to Powhatan, to flye: The Durchby whom wee now returned, with a purpose to have surprised him and his provision: for effect men did much ting whereof (when wee came against the Towne) the President sent Master Wiffin and Ma- hurt. fter Coe, a shoare to discouer and make way for his intended project. But they found that those damned Dutchmen had caused Pombatan to abandon his new house, and Werawecomoco, and to carrie away all his Corne and provision; and the people they found by their meanes so ill affected, that had they not fleod well upon their guard, they had hardly escaped with their liues. So the Prefident finding his intention thus frustrated, and that there was nothing now 50 to bee had, and therefore an vnfit time to reuenge their abufes, held on the course for lames Towne: wee having in this journey (for five and twentie pound of Copper, fiftie pound of Iron and Beades) kept fortie men fixe weekes, and daily feated with Bread, Corne, Flesh, Fish, and Fowle, every man having for his reward (and in consideration of his commodities) a months promision (no trade being allowed but for the store) and wee delivered at lames Towne to the

Hen the ships departed, all the provision of store (but that the President had gotten) How the Source Was fo rotten with the last Summers Raine, and eaten with Rats and Wormes, as the ger became Hogges would fearcely eate it, yet it was the Souldiers Die:, till our returnes: fo that we found English. 60 nothing done, but victuall ipent, and the most part of our Tooles, and a good part of our Armes Chap. To. conneyed to the Sauages. But now, casting up the store, and finding sufficient till the next Harueft, the feare of starting was abandoned; and the Company divided into tennes, fifteenes, or as the busines required foure houres each day was spent in work, the rest in pastimes and merrie exercife. The Duccomens Conforts to closely still contaid Powder, Shot, Swords, and Tooles, that

Cape-Merchant two hundred feuentie nine bushels of Corne.

The Dutchmens plot to murder Cap.

smith taketh

though wee could find the defect, we could not find by whom it was occasioned, till it was too late. All this time the Datchmen remayning with Powbatan, received ti em, inftructing the Sauages their vie. But their Conforts not following them as they expected (to know the cause. they fent Francis their companion (a front young fellow) diguised Sauage like) to the Glassethey tent Francis then companies (a place in the Woods neere a mile from James Towne) where was the randeuoze for all their voluspected villany; fortie men they procured of Powhatan to lie in Ambulcadoe for Cantaine Smith, who no fooner heard of this Dutchman, but he lent to apprehend him, who found he was gone, yet to crolle his returne to Powbatan, Captaine Smith prefently dispatched twenty shor after him, and then returning but from the Glaffe-house alone, he incountred the King of Passa. beigh, a most strong stout Sauage, whose perswasions not being able to perswade him to his am. 10 bulh, feeing him only armed but with a Fauchion, attempted to haue shot him; but the President prevented his short by graphing with him, and the Sauage as well prevented him for drawing his Fauchion, and perforce bore him into the River to have drowned him; long they struggled in the water, from whence the King perceiving two of the Poles vpon the fands would have fled; but the President held him by the haire and throat till the Poles came in; then feeing how pittifully the poore Saluage begged his life, they conducted him prisoner to the Fort. The Dutchman ere long was also brought in, whose Villany, though all this time it was suspected, yet he fained such the King of Paphologie a formall excule, that for want of Language, Winne had not rightly understood them, and for their dealings with Powbatan, that to faue their liues they were confirmined to accomodate his aims, of whom he extremely complained to have detained them perforce; and that hee made this efcape with the hazard of his life, and meant not to have returned, but only walked in the woods to gather Walnuts: yet for all this faire Tale (there was so small appearance of truth) hee went by the heeles; the King also he put fetters; purposing to regaine the Dutebmen, by the fauing his life: the poore Sauagedid his best, by his daily Messengers to Pombatan, but all returned that the Durchmen would not returne, neither did Powbatan itay them, and to bring them fiftie miles on their backes they were not able. Daily this Kings Wives, children, and people, came to vilit him with Presents, which he liberally bestowed to make his peace, much trust they had in the Presdents promise, but the King finding his Guard negligent (though fettered) yet escaped; Captaine Winne thinking to purfue him, found fuch troupes of Sauges to hinder his passages, as they exchanged many voltes of shot for flight of Arrowes. Captaine Smith hearing of this, in retur. 30 ning to the Fort tooke two Sauages Prifoners, the one called Kemps, the other Kinfock, the two most exact Villaines in the Countrey; with those, Captaine Winne and fiftie cholen men attempted that night to have regained the King, and revenged his injurie (and so had done if he had sollowed his directions, or beene aduited by those two Villaines, that would have betrayed both their King and Kindred for a piece of Copper) but hee trifling away the night, the Sauagesthe next morning by the rifing of the Sunne, braued him to come ashore to fight, a good time both fides let flie at other, but we heard of no hurt, only they tooke two Canozes, burnt the Kings

The Sauages defire peace.

The Prefident fearing those brauadoes, would but incourage the Sauages, begunne himselfeto the his conclusions; whereby fixe or seven Sauages were slaine, as many made Prifoners: burnt the brauadoes in the sauages were slaine, as many made Prifoners: burnt the brauadoes in the sauages were slaine, as many made Prifoners: burnt the sauages were slaine, as many made Prifoners. their Houses, tooke their Boats with all their fillning weares, and planted them at lames Towns for his owne vie; and now relolued not to ceasife till hee had reuenged himselfe vpon all that had injured him, but in his journey passing by Pass abeigh towards Chickahamina, the Sauages did their best to draw him to their Ambuscadoes; but leeing him regardlesly passe their Countrey, all shewed themselues in their brauest manner, to try their valours; he could not but she, and ere hee could land, the Sauages no fooner knew him, but they threw downe their Armes and defired Peace; their Orator was a stout young man called Ocanindge, whose worthy Discourse deferent to be remembred; and this it was.

Ocanindze his

Captaine Smith, my Mailer is bore present in this companies binking it Captaine Winne, and not 30 year, and of bim be intended to have beene reuenged, bassing neuer offended him: if he have offended year, and of him be intended to have beene reuenged, bassing neuer offended him: if he have offended year. in escaping your imprisonment; the Fishes swimme, the Fowles sue, and the verie Benits structoescape the four and line; then blame not him being a man; he would entreate you remember , your being a pri-Soner, what paines hee tooke to Sane your life; if fince hee hath iniured you, hee was compelled to it; but how foener 3 you have revenged it with our too great loffe; we perceive and well know you intend to destroy vs, that are here to intreat and delire your friendship, and to enior our honses and plant our fields, of whose fruit you shall participate, otherwise you will baue the worst by our absence, for we can plant any where, though with more labour, and we know you cannot line if you want our Haruest, and that reliefe we bring Jon; if you promise us peace we will believe you, if you proceed in remence, we will abandon the Counyou, y you prompte of peace me muse exceeded your you proceeding the extended and an armount of the young the young

A Sausge fmothered at lames Towne, and was reco-

Arriving at lames Towne, complaint was made to the Prefident that the Chickahaminos, who all this while continued Trade, and feemed our friends by colour thereof were the only Theenes, and amongst other things, a Pitholl being stolne, and the Theife fled, there was apprehended two

proper young fellowes that were brothers, knowne to be his confederates. Now to regaine this Parioll the one we imprisoned, the other was fent to returne agains within twelve houres, or his brother to be hanged, yet the Prelident pittying the poore naked Savage in the dungson, fent him victuall and fome Chat-cole for fire ; ere midnight his brother returned with the Piftoll, but the Charcole-Sauge in the dungeon was so smothered with the smoake hee had made, and so pittiously burnt, smoke an ythat he found him dead, the other most lamentably bewailed his death, and brake forth in fach shall murtherer that he round film dead, the count into diet him) told him that if hereafter they would not feele, where no year he would make him aliue againe, but little thought he could be recovered, yet (we doing our best is let to it. with Aquanita and Vineger) it pleased God to restore him againe to life, but so drunke and afto frighted that he leemed lunaticke, not vnderstanding any thing he spoke or heard, the which as

much grieued and cormented the other, as before to fee him dead; of which maladie (vpon pro- Pechaps the mife of their good behauiour afterward) the President promised to recouer him, and so caused lesuites was mile of their good behaviour afterward) the President promited to recourt min, and to caute him to be laid by a fire to sleepe, who in the morning (having well sleep) had recourted his permitted to be laid by a fire to sleepe, who in the morning (having well sleep) had recourted his permitted to be laid by a fire to sleepe, who in the morning (having well sleep) had recourted his permitted to be laid by a fire to sleepe, who in the morning (having well sleep) had recourted his permitted to sleep his fred lenges: and then being dreffed of his burning, and each a piece of Copper given them, they barched miss went away fo well contented, that this was spread amongst all the Sauages for a Miracle, that of their indian Captaine Smith could make a man aline that is dead. Thefe and many other fuch pretie accidents, Miracles from fo amazed and affrighted both Pombatan and all his people that from all parts with prefents as validely egs they defired peace, returning many stolne things which wee neither demanded nor thought of. ionning industries And after that, those that were taken stealing (both Powhatan and his people) hath fent them strie and op-20 backe to lames Towne to receiue their punishment, and all the Countrie became absolutely as portunite.

Now wee so quietly followed our businesse, that in three moneths wee made three or source done in three last of Pitch and Tarre, and Sope-ashes, produced a triall of Glasse, made a Well in the moneths ha-Fortof excellent (weet water (which till then was wanting) built fome twenty houses, reco- uing vidualli uered our Church, prouded Nets and wares for fifthing (and to flop the diforders of our diforder- The flore dely theeues and the Sauages) built a Blocke-house in the necke of our Ile, kept by a garrison to entertaine the Sauages trade, and none to palle nor repalle, Sanage, nor Christian, with out the Prefidents order; thirty or forty acres of ground we digged, and planted; of three Sowes in one of such natural

free for vs, as for themselues.

30 years increased fixty and odde Pigges, and neers flut hundred Chickens brought vp themselves fruits as the (without having any meate given them) but the Hogges were transported to Hogge Ile, where Countrie afalto we built a Blocke-house with a Garrison, to give vs notice of any shipping, and for their exercife they made Clap-boord, Wainscot, and cut downe Trees against the ships comming. Wee built alio a Fort for a retreat, neere a convenient River vpon a high commanding Hill, very hard to be a laulted, and easie to be defended; but ere it was halfe finished, this defect caused a stay; in fearching our Casked Corne, wee found it halfe rotten, the rest fo confumed with the many thouland Rattes (increased first from the ships) that wee knew not how to keepe that little wee Rat-plague. had, This did drine vsall to our wits end, for there was nothing in the Countrey but what Nature affoorded, vntill this time Keings and Taffere, were fettered Prisoners , and daily wrought,

40 and taught vs how to order and plant our fields. Whom now (for want of victuall) we fet at libertie, but fo well were they vied, that they little defired it; and to expresse their loues, for fixteene dayes continuance, the Countrey brought vs (when leaft) one hundred a day of Squirrils, Turkeyes, Deare, and other wilde Beafts; but this want of Corne occasioned the end of all our workes, it beeing worke fufficient to prouide victuall, fixtie or eightie with Ensigne Laxon, were fent downe the River to live voon Oysters, and twentie with Lieutenant Percie to try for filhing at Point Comfort, but in fixe weekes, they would not agree once to cast out their Net. Master West with as many went up to the Falls, but nothing could be found but a few Berries and Acornes; of that in the flore every one had their equall proportion. Till this The paints of prefent (by the hazard and endeauour of fome thirtie or fortie) this whole number had ever bin so, fed 150.

50 fed. We had more Sturgeon then could be denoured by Dogge and Man; of which the industrious, by drying and pownding, mingled with Causare, Sorrell, and other wholiome hearbs, would make Bread and Meate; others would gather as much Tockwoneh Roots in a day, as would make them Bread a Weeke, to that of those wilde Fruites, Fish, and Berries, thefe liged very well (in regard of fuch a Diet) but fuch was the most strange condition of some Basineste of one hundred and fiftie, that had they not beene forced to gather and prepare their victual they ideacsic, would all haue started, and haue eaten one another: of those wilde fruites the Sauages often brought vs: and for that the President would not fulfill the unreasonable desire of those distracted lubberly Gluttons to fell, not only our Kettles, Howes, Tooles, and Iron, nay Swords, Peeces, 60 and the very Ordnance, and Houles (might they have prevailed but to have beene but idle)

for those Sauage fruites they would have imparted all to the Sauages , especially for one basket of Corne they heard of, to bee at Powbatans, fiftie miles from our Fort, though hee brought neere halfe of it to fatisfie their humours , yet to have had the other Their grite; halfe, they would have fold their foules (though not fisficient to have kept them a Weeke) defiroy sizes thousands were their exclamations, suggestions, and deuises, to force him to those base sclues, E cecec

Portatan d. f. reth peace.

The Profidents Speech to the Drones. Inventions, to have made it an occasion to abandon the Countrey. Want perforce comfrayned him to indure their exclayming to hes till hee found out the Author, one Dier a most craftie Knaue, and his ancient maligner, whome hee worthily punished, and with the rest hee argued the case in this manner. Fellow Souldiers, I did little thinke any so falls to report, or fo many fo simple to bee persuaded, that I either intend to starme you, or that Powhatan (at this present) hath Corne for himselfe, much lesse for you; or that I would not have it, if I knew where it were to be had. Neither did I thinke any fo malicious as now I fee a great many. set it shall not so much passionate mee, but I will doe my best for my worst maligner. But dreame no longer of this vaine hope from Powhatan, nor that I will longer forbeare to force you from rour idlenelle, and punils your f you raile, you cannot denie but that by the baz ard of my life, many a time I base 10. Gined yours, when, might your owne wills have prenailed, you would have started, and will doe still mbether I will or no. But I protest by that God that made me, since neesssite hath not power to force you to gather for your selues those finits the Earth doth yeeld, you shall not only gather for your selues, but for those that are sicke: as yet I never had more from the flore then the worst of you; and all me E. which extraordinary prossifion that I have, you shall see me deside among the siche. And this Sanage traft, you fo fcornfully repine at, being put in your mouthes your stomacks can digest it, and therefore I will take a course you shall provide it. The sicke shall not starme, but equally share of all our labours, and every one that gathereth not every day as much I doe, the next day hallbe fet beyond the River. and for ever be bandhed from the Fort, and line there or flarue. This order many murmured, was very cruell, but it caused the most part to well bestirre 20

Bu: 7 of 200. cited in two moneths.

The Sauages returneour Fugitiues.

themselves, that of two hundred men (except they were drowned) there died not past seven or eight. As for Captaine Winne, and Mafter Ley, they died ere this want happened, and thereft died not for want of fuch as preferred the rest. Many were billitted among the Sausges, whereby we knew all their pallages, fields, and habitations, how to gather and vie their fruits, as well as themselves. So well those poore Savages vied vs (that were thus Billited) as divers of the Souldiers ranne away, to learch Kemps our old prifoner. Glad was this Sauage to have fuch an occasion to testine his love, for insteed of entertayning them, and such things as they had stolne with all the great offers and promifes they made them, to reuenge their injuries vpon Captaine Smith. First hee made timtelfe sport, in shewing his Countrimen (by them) how hee was vied: feeding them with this Law, Who would not worke must not eate, till they were neere ftar- 30 ued, continually threatning to beate them to death, neither could they get from him, till perforce he brought them to our Captaine, that fo we contented him, and punished them: as many others that intended also to have followed them, were rather contented to labour at home, then aduenture to line idle among the Sauages (of whom there was more hope to make better Christians and good subjects, then the one halfe of those that counterfeited themselves both) For to affraid were all those Kings and the better fort of their people, to displease vs. that some of the baser fort that wee haue extreamely hurt and punished for their villanies. would hire vs that wee should not tell it to their Kings or Countrimen, who would also repunih them, and yet returne them to James Towne to content the President, by that testimonie

Search for them fent by Sir W. Rawlew. Pawhatan confeffed that hee had bin at the murther of that Colon e: and fhewed to Cap. Smith à Musket barrell and a braffe Morter, and certaine pecces of Iron which had bin The Durchmens

protect.

of their loues. Master Sicklemore well returned from Chamonock, but found little hope and lesse certaintie of them which had beene left by Sir Walter Rawley So that Nathaniell Powell and Anas Todkill, were also, by the Quiyough quohanochs, conducted to the Mangonges to search them there. But nothing could we learne but they were all dead. This honest, proper, good promise-keeping King, of all the rest did euer best affect vs, and though to his falle Gods hee was yet very zealous, yet he would confess, our God as much exceeded his, as our Guns did his Bow and Arrowes, often fending our Prefident many Prefents to pray to his God for rain, or his corn would penth, for his Gods were apprie all this time. To reclaime the Dutchmen, and one Bentley another Fugitive, we imployed one William Volda, (a Switzer by birth) with pardons and promifes to regain them. Little we then suspected this double villanie of any villany, who plainly taught vs, in the most trust 50 was the greatest Treaton. For this wicked Hypocrite, by the seeming hate hee bore to the lewd condition of his curfed Countrimen, having this opportunitie by his imployment to regain them, conveighed them every thing they defired to effect their project to deftroy the Colonic. With much denotion they expected the Spaniard, to whom they intended to have done good fernice. But to begin with the first opportunitie, they feeing necessitie thus inforced vs to disperse our selues; importuned Powhatan to lend them but his forces, and they would not only defrey our Hogges, fire our Towne, and betray our Pinnasse; but bring to his seruice and subiection the most part of our companies. With this plot they had acquainted many discontents, and many were agreed to their deuillish practile. But one Thomas Donese and Thomas Mallard (whose Chriflian hearts much relenting at luch an vnchriftian act) voluntarily reneated tto Captaine Smith: 63 who did his best it might be concealed, perswading Douese and Mallard to proceed in the confederacie : only to bring the irreclamable Dutebmen, and inconftane Sauages in fuch a manner amongit his Ambuscadoes, as hee had prepared, as not many of them thould ever have returned from out our Peninfula.

But this brute comming to the eares of the impatient multitude, they fo importuned the Prelident to cut off those Duchmen, as among it many that offered to cut their throats before the Two Genileface of Powhatan, Mafter Wiffin and lefra Abbot were fent to flabbe or shoote them; but thefe men tento kil Dutchmen made such excuses accusing Volday whom they supposed had reusaled their project, them. as Abbet would not vet wiffs would, perceiving it but deceit. The King vnderflanding of this their imployment, fent prefently his Mellengers to Captaine Smith; to fignifie it was not his fault to detayne them, nor hinder his men from executing his command, nor did hee fror would he mayntaine them, or any to occasion his displeasure. But ere this businesse was brought to a point, God having feene our mitery fufficient, fent in Captaine Argalito fifth for Sturgeon with an a flup well furnished with Wine and Bisket, which though it was not fent vs. fuch were out occasions we tooke it at a price, but left him sufficient to returne for England, still dislembling Valdo

his villany, but certainly he had not escaped had the President continued.

Notwithstanding this Valdo comming for England, presending to the Company what rich Mynes Gap. Smi be had found, for which he was verie much fanomed remarded and reflected, but returning with the Lord La-wate, be could not performe any thing hee promised, and thus also baning coozened them all. died both basely and miserably. For the rest of his Consorts upon the arrival of the Lord La-wase. whom they highly recommended to Powhatan, promifing what great wonders they would worke with his Lordbip, would be give them leave to goe to him, but when he faw they would be gone, be replied, as you would have betrayed Captaine Smith to me, so will you me to this Lord, for you that would be so falle to 20 bim, cannot be true to me, so cansed his men to beat out their braines, as the Sauages reported to divers that came from thence.

TO redreffe those iarres and ill proceedings, the Councell in England altered the government The arrival of and devolved the authoritie to the Lord De-la. ware. Who for his Deputie, sent Sir Thomas the third up-Gales, and Sir George Somers, with nine thips and fine hundred perfons : they fet faile from Eng. ply. Chap. 12. land in May 1609. a imali Catch perished at Sea in a Herycano. The Admirall, with 150. The alteration land in May 1609. a fmall Catch perithed at Sea in a Herycano. The Admirant, With 150. of the govern-men, with the two Knights, and their new Commission, their Bils of loading with all manner, ment. of directions, and the most part of their promision arrived not. With the other feuen (as Cap- The loffe of taines) arrived Ratliffe (whole right name was Sickelmore) Martin, and Archer. Who as they had Virginia, so beene troublesome at Sea, began againe to marre all ashore. For though, as is faid, they were formerly deposed and sent for England: yet now returning againe, graced by the title of Captaines

of the passengers, seeing the Almirall wanting, and great probabilitie of her losse: Strengthned themselves with those new Companies, so railing and exclayming against Captaine Smith, that they mortally hated him , ere euer they faw aim. Who understanding by his Scowts, the arriuall of fuch a fleet (little dreaming of any fuch supply) supposing them Spaniards, he so determined and ordered his affaires, as we little feared their arruall, nor the fucceffe of our incounter, nor were the Sauages any way negligent or vn willing, to aide and offit vs with their best power.

had it so beene, we had beene happy. For we would not have trusted them but as our foes, whereas receiving those as our Countrimen and friends, they did their best to murder our President, to offer to fight 40 furprize the store, the Fort, and our Lodgings, to vsurpe the government, and make vs all their vnderour coferuants and flaues to our owne merit. To a thouland mischiefes those lewd Captaines led this lours, lewd company, wherein were many vnruly Gallants packed thether by their friends to escape Mulinie. ill Destinies, and those would dispose and determine of the government, sometimes one, the next day another, to day the old Commission, to morrow the new, the next day by neither. In fine, they would rule all orrune all; yet in Charitie wee must endure them thus to destroy vs, orby correcting their follies, have brought the Worlds centure vpon vs to have beene guiltre of their blonds. Happie had we beene had they neuer arrived; and wee for ever abandoned , and (as wee were) left to our fortunes, for on Earth was neuer more confusion, or milery, then their facti-

The President seeing the desire those Braues had to rule, seeing how his authoritie was so vn- The planting 50 expectedly changed, would willingly have left all and returned for England, but feeing there was Manjamund. small hope this new Commission would arrive, longer hee would not suffer those factious spirits to proceed. It would be too tedious, too strange, and almost incredible, should I particularly relace the infinite dangers, plots, and practifes, hee daily escaped amongit this factious crue, the shiefe whereof hee quickly laid by the heeles, till his leafure better ferued to doe them Inflice; and to take away all occasions of further mitchiefe, Master Percie had his request granted to returne for England, and Mafter West with one hundred and twentie went to plant at the Falls. Marjin with neere as many to Nanjamund, with their due proportions of all prouisions, accor. A plantation

Now the Prefidents yeere being neere expired, he made Martin Prefident, who knowing his owne insufficieticie, and the Companies scorne and conceit of his vinworthinesse, within three houres resigned it agains to Captaine Smith, and at Nansamund thus proceeded. The people be- The breach of ing Contributors vied him kindly : yet fuch was his jealous feare, and cowardize in the midft of peace with the his mirth, he did furprize this poore naked King, with his Monuments, Houses, and the He hee Saurges.

tling to their numbers.

Bat

Eccecec 2

inhabited; and there fortified himfelfe, but so apparantly distracted with feare, as imboldned the Sauages to allault him, kill his men, redeeme their King, gather and carrie away more then one thousand bulhels of Corne, he not once daring to intercept them. But fent to the Prefident then at the Falls for thirtie good fhot, which from lames Towne immediatly were fenthim, but he fo well imployed them, as they did init nothing, but returned, complayning of his childiflaneffe, that with them fled from his company, and fo left them to their fortunes.

Mafter Weff having feated his men at the Falls, prefently returned to reuifit lames Towne, the Prefident met him by the way as hee followed him to the Falls: where hee found this Company inconsiderately leated, in a place not only subject to the Rivers inundation, but round invironed with many intollerable inconveniences. For remedy whereof, hee fent prefently to Powhater, 14 to fell him the place called Powbatan, promifing to defend him against the Monacans, and these should be his conditions (with his people) to refigne him the Fort and Houles, and all that Countrey for a proportion of Copper : that all stealing offenders should bee sent him, there to receive their punishment : that every House as a custome should pay him a bushell of Corne for an inch fquare of Copper, and a proportion of Pocones as a yeerely Tribute to King Immes, for their protection as a dutie : what else they could spare to barter at their beft discretion.

But both this excellent place and those good conditions did those furies refuse, contemning

as he did (knowing how greedie they were of his bloud) to land amongst them, and commit to

judgement, reason or experience, that from their first landing hearing the generall good report

of his old Souldiers, and feeing with their eyes his actions to well mannaged with diffretion, as

Captaine Wood, Captaine Web, Captaine Moone, Captaine Phitz-lames, Mafter Partridge, Ma-

fter White, Master Powell, and divers others; when they perceived the malice and condition of

worst was, the poore Sauages that daily brought in their contribution to the President, that

Monacans themselves, which though till then (for his love) they had indured : they defired par-

don, if hereafter they defended themselues, fince hee would not correct them, as they had long

expected he would : so much they importuned him to punish their mildemeanours as they offe-

red (if he would conduct them) to fight for him against them. But having spent nine dayes in

feeking to reclaime them, shewing them how much they did abuse themselves, with their great

nothing would preuaile with them) hee fet faile for lames Towne: now no fooner was the thip

vnder faile but the Sausges affaulted those one hundred and twentie in their Fort, finding some

stragling abroad in the Woods they flue many, and so affrighted the rest, as their prisoners esca-

ped, and they scarce retyred, with the Swords and Clokes, of these they had staine. But ere we

had failed a league our ship grounding, gave vs once more libertie to summon them to a parlie

Where we found them all so strangely amazed with this poore simple assault, as they submitted

themselues vpon any tearmes to the Presidents mercy. Who presently put by the heeles lix or se-

uen of the chiefe offenders, the reit he leated gallantly at Powhatan, in their Sauage Fort they built

and pretily fortified with Poles and Barkes of Trees sufficient to have defended them from all

plant, and no place so strong, so pleasant and delightfull in Virgona, for which wee called it

None-Such. The Sausges alio he presently appealed; redelivering to every one their former loi-

fes. Thus all were friends, new Officers appointed to command, and the President againe ready

to depart. But at that instant arrived Master VVeit, whose good nature with the perswasions

and compassion of these mutinous priloners was so much abused, that to regaine their old shops

new turmoyles arofe. For the reit being poffessed of all their Victuall, Munition, and every

thing, they grow to that height in their former factions , as there the President left them to

their Sauages in Unginia, dry Houses for Lodgings three hundred Acres of ground readie to 50

gilded hopes, of Seas, Mynes, Commodities, or Victories they fo madly conceived. Then (feeing 40

Ratcliffe, Marin, and Archer, left their factions; and euer refted his faithfull friend : But the 30

both him, his kinde care and authoritie, the worst they could to shew their spight, they did. I

doe more then wonder to thinke how only wish fine men, hee either durit, or would sentence

Mutinics,

Fine suppresse imprisonment the greatest spirits among st them, till by their multitudes being one hundred and twentie, they forced him to retire, yet in that retreat he surprized one of the Boats, wherewith he returned to their ship, wherein was their prouisions, which also he tooke. And well it chanced he found the Mariners so tractable and constant, or there had beene small possibilitie hee had euer escaped. Notwithstanding there were many of the best, I meane, of the most worthy in

The breach of diforderly company to tormented those poore naked foules, by stealing their Corne, robbing their peace with the Gardens, beating them, breaking their Houles, and keeping some prisoners; that they daily

Sanages at the complayned to Captaine Smith, hee had brought them for Protectors worle enemies then the

An affault by the Sauages.

> The planting of Nonfueb. New prace concluded.

> > their Fortunes, they returning againe to the open Aire at VVeft Fort, abandoning Non-Such, and hee to lames Towne with his best Expedition, but this happened him in that Sleeping in his Boat (for the Ship was returned two dayes before) accidentally, one fired his Powder-bag, which tore his flesh from his bodie and thighes, nine or ten inches square in a most

> > pittifull manner: but to quench the tormenting fire, frying him in his clothes, hee leaped overand not the deepe River, where ere they could recover him hee was neere drowned. In this

CHAP.4. Gouernment Vourped. Pocahontas kindneffe to Captane Smith.

estate, without either Chirurgion, or Chirurgerie he was to goe neere one hundred miles. Arriuing at Iames Towne, causing all things to be prepared for Peace or Warres to obtaine prouision. whilest those things were prouiding, Martin, Ratcliffe, and Archer, being to have their trialis. cheir guiltie consciences fearing a just reward for their deserts, seeing the President vnable to fland, and neere bereft of his senses by reason of his torment, they had plotted to have murdered him in his bed. But his heart did faile him that should have given fire to that mercilesse Pistoll. So, not finding that course to be the best, they ioyned together to vsurpe the gouernment, thereby to escape their punishment, and excuse themselves by accusing him. The President had notice of their projects: the which to withstand, though his old Souldiers importuned him, but to permit them to take

10 off their beads that would refift his command, yet he would not permit them : but feut for the Masters of The govern-Bips, and tooke order with them for his returne for England. Seeing their was neither Chirurgion, nor mene viurped. Chrurgery in the Fort to cure his burt, and the ships to depart the next day, his Commission to be suppresfed hee knew not why, bimfelfe and Souldiers to bee rewarded he knew not bow, and a new Commission granted they knew not to whom, the which fo disabled that authoritie he had, as made them presume so oft to those mutinies and factions as they did. Besides, so grienous was his wounds, and so cruell his torment, few expelled be could line, nor was be able to follow his businesse to regaine what they had bost, suppresse those factions, and range the Countries for promision as be intended, and well be knew those affaires his owne actions and presence was as requisite as his experience, and directions, which now could not be hee went presently about d, resoluting there to appoint them governours, and to take order for the mutiners and

20 their confederates. Who feeing him gone, perswaded Master Persie to stay and be their President, and within leffe then an hour was this mutation begun & concluded. For when the Company under food Smith within tells took and fee the rest in Armes called Presidents and Councellers, diners began to same on The causes those new Commanders, that new bent all their wits to get him resigne them his Commission, who after why Smith left many falt and bitter repulses, that their confusion should not bee attributed to him, for leaving the Countie try without gouernment and authoritie; having taken order to be free from danger of their malice; and his Comhe was not unwilling they should steale it from him, but never consented to deliner it to any.

Leauing vs thus, with three Ships, seuen Boats, commodities readie to trade, the Haruest newly gathered, ten weekes prouision in the store, foure hundred nintie and odde persons, foure and C. Smithlest in twentie Peeces of Ordnance, three hundred Muskets, Snaphanches, and fire-lockes, Shot, Pow- Prouisons like 30 der, and match fufficient, Gurats, Pikes, Swords, and Morions more then men : the Sauages their

language and habitations well knowne to one hundred well trained and expert Souldiers : Nets for Fishing, Tooles of all forts to worke, Apparell to supply our wants, fixe Mares, and a Horse. fine or fixe hundred Swine, as many Hennes and Chickens; fome Goates, fome Sheepe, what was brought or bred there remained : but they regarded nothing but from hand to mouth, to confume what wee had, tooke care for nothing but to perfit fome colourable complaints against Captaine Smith, for effecting whereof, three weekes longer they staied the fixe Ships till they could produce them. That time and charge might much better have beene spent; but it suted well Their comwith the rest of their discretions. Now all these which Smith had either whipped, punished, or proofe against any way diffraced, had free power and libertie to fay or I weare any thing, and from a whole him.

40 armefull of their examination, this was concluded.

The Mutiners at The Falls, complained be caused the Sanages to assault them, for that he would not revenge their loffe, they being but one bundred and twentie, and hee five men and himselfe, and this they proved by the eath of one hee had of whipped for periury and pilfering. The Dutch-men that hee had appointed to be flab d for their treacheries, fwere he fent to poifon them with Rats-bane. The prudent Councell , that he would not submit himselfe to their stolne antheritie. Coe and Dyer, that should have murdered him, were highly preferred for swearing, they beard one say, he heard Powhatan say, That bee beard a man fay: if the King would not fend that Corne bee bad, bee foould not long enior his Copper Crowne, nor those Robes bee had sent bim : yet those also swore be might have had Corne for Tooles. but would not. The truth was, Smith bad no such Engines as the King demanded, nor Powhatan any 50 Corne. Tetthis argued be would starue them. Others complained hee would not les them rest in the Fort (to flarue) but forced them to the Oyster Bankes to line or starne, as hee lined himselfe. For though hee bad of his owne private provisions fent from England , Sufficient : yet hee gave it all away to the weake and ficke, causing the most untoward (by doing as be did) to gather their food from the unknowne parts of the Riners and Woods, that they lined (though hardly) that otherwayes would have starued, ere they would have left their beds; or at the most the fight of lames Towne to have got their owne victuall. Some propheticallspirit calculated he had the Sanages in such subjection, be would have made himselfe a King, by marrying Pocahontas, Powhatans daughter. It is true, she was the very nonparell of his Kingdome, Pocahontas. and at most not past thirteene or fourteene yeeres of age. Very oft she came to our Fort, with what shee Powhatens could get for Captaine Smith, that ener loued and ved all the Country well, but her especially bee ener daughter her much respected: and shee so well requited it, that when her father intended to have surprized him, she by C. Smith, flealth in the darke night came through the wild Woods and told him of it. But her marriage could no way baue entitled him by any right to the Kingdome, nor was it over suffected be had ever such a thought, or more regarded her, or any of them, then in honest reason and discretion he might. If he would be might

Theft ite of the Colony when

bane married ber, or have done what him listed. For there was none that could have bindred his deter-Ecceses 3

mination. Some that knew not any thing to fay, the Councell instructed, and admifed what to sweare. So diligent they were in this bufineffe, that what any could remember, he had ener done, or faid in mirth ar paffion, by fome circumstantial oath, it was applied to their fittest vie, yet not past eight or nine could fay much, and that nothing but circumstances, which all men did know was most false and untrue, Many ont their Paffes , by promising in England to say much against bim. Initead of accusing him. I have never heard any give him a better report, then many of those witnesses themselves that were fent only home to teilifie against him. Richard Pots, W. P.

The planting at Point Comfort.

The day before the Ships departed, C. Davis arrived in a small Pinnace, with some fixteene proper men more: to those were added a company from lames Towne, vnder the command of proper men more: to those were comfort. Martin, and Mafter West having lost their Boats, to and neere halfe their men among ft the Sauages, were returned to lames Towne. For the Sauages no fooner understood of Captaine Smith; loffe, but they all revolted, and did murder and fooile all they could encounter. Now were wee all constrained to line onely of that which Smith ad onely for his owne company, for the rest had consumed their propertions. And now have wee twentie Presidents, with all their appurtenances, for Master Perfie was so sicke he could not goe nor stand. But ere all was confumed, Master West, and Ratisfe, each with a Pinnace, and thirtie or fortie men well appointed, sought abroad to trade, and vpon confidence of Pombatan, Rathfie and his men were flaine, onely leffery Shortridge escaped, and Pochahuntas the Kings dangber laued a boy, called Henry Spelman, who lined many yeeres after by ber meanes amongst the Patawo mekes. Powhatan fill as bee found meanes, cut off their Boats and denied them trade. And Mafter well fin ling little better successe, set faile for England. Now we all found the want of Captaine Smith, yea his greatest maligners could then curie his losse. Now for come, provision, and contribution from the Saueges; wee had nothing but mortall wounds with Clubs and Arrowes. As for our Hogs, Goats, Sheepe, Horse, or what lived, our Commanders and Officers did daily consume them : tome fmall proportions (fometimes) wee tafted till all was denoured, then Swords, Arrowes, Peeces, or any thing we traded to the Sauages, whole bloudy fingers were fo imbrued in our blouds, that what by their crueltie, our Gouernours indifcretion, and the loffe of our Ships : Of five hundred within fixe moneths, after there remained not any more then fixtie most milerable and poore creatures. It were to vild to fay what wee endured. Life was now preferred by Roots, Herbs, Acornes, Waleust, Berrset, now and then a little Fifn, and Starch by fuch as bad an, of 30 Sauage flaine and huried, is faid to have beene taken up by the poorer and esten: which is reported also to have bapned to others of their owne. A report was that one flew his wife, and had eaten part of her: this is by others denied, the murther acknowledged, and be infly executed for that parricide. The occasion of these miseries was onely our owne, for want of prouidence, industrie, and go-

tternment, and not the barrennesse and defect of the Countrey, as is generally supposed, fortill then in three veeres (for the numbers were landed vs) wee had neuer landed fufficient provision for fixe moneths, such a glutton is the Sea, and such good fellowes the Mariners, wee as little tafled of those great proportions for their prouisions, as they of our miseries, that notwithstanding improvidences ever iwayd and overruled the businesse : though weedid live as is said, three yeeres chiefly of what this good Countrey naturally affordeth ; yet now had wee beene in Paradice it felfe (with 40 those Governours) it would not have beene much better with vs, yet were there some amongst vs, who had they had the gouernment, would furely have kept vs from those extreamities of miferies, that in ten dayes more would have supplanted veall by death. Thus you fee the miferable ends of those vierping Commanders, for all their greatnesse, Oratory, and long being there, and what is the want of owne man in Authoritie, that is houeft and valiant, discreet, and industrious; and how easily that may also be blemished, by ambitious indiscretion, or what did binder them now in his absence, they had

not done much better then bee, having all thefe aduantages.

Sir Tho. Gates with 150. James Towne abandoned.

The artival of But God that would not it should be evnplanted, sent Sir Thomas Gates, and Sir George Summers , with one hundred and fiftie men , most happily preserved by the Bermudas to preserve vs. But when those noble Knights did see our miseries (being strangers in the Countrey) and could 50 understand no more of the cause but by their coniecture of our clamours and complaints, of accufing or excusing one another, they imbarked vs with themselves, with the best meanes they could, and abandoning lames Towne, fet faile for England.

The arriuall of

But yet God would not fo haue it , for ere wee left the River ; wee met the Lord de-la-wae, then gouernour of the Countrey, with three Ships exceeding well furnished with all necessaries ficting, who againe returned them to the abandoned I ames Towne, the ninth of Iune, 1610. accompanied with Sir Ferdinando Waimman, and divers other Gentlemen of fort. Sir George Sommer!, and Captaine Argall he presently dispatcheth to repaire to the Bermuda, to furnish them with prouision: Sir Thomas Gaies for England to helpe for ward their supplies: himselfe negletted not the best was in his power for the furtherance of the businesse, and regaining what was lost. But 60 euen in the beginning of his proceedings, his Lordship had such an incounter, that after eight Two thips fent months fickneffe, he was forced to faue his life, by his returne for England.

In this time Argall, not finding the Bermudas , having loft Sir George Somers at lea, fell on the coast of Sagadabock, where refrething himselfe, he found a convenient hilling for Cod. With a talte

CHAP. S. Sauages kind Dage; Crost by extraordinary windes.

whereof he returned to lames Towne, from whence the Lord De-la-ware fent him to trade in the River of Patamomeck, where finding an English boy those people had preserved from the furv of Powbatan, by his acquaintance had fuch good vlage of those kind Sauages, that they fraughted his Ship with Corne, wherewith he returned to James Towne, and fo for England with the Lord Governour: yet before his returne, the adventurers had fent Sir Thomas Dale with three Ships. The arrival of men and cattell, and all other provisions necessarie for a yeere, all which arrived the tenth of Sir. The. Dale. May, 1611.

Againe, to second him with all possible expedition there was prepared for Sir Thomas Gates, fixe tall Ships with three hundred men, and one hundred Kine, with other cattell, with munition, and all manner of provision could be thought needfull, and they arrived about the first of Auguit next after fafely at lames Towne.

Sir Goorge Somers all this time was supposed lost : but thus it hapned , miffing the Barmudas, Sir George Sohee fell also as did Argall with Sagadabeck, where being refreshed, would not content himselfe mers arruall at with that repulse, but returned agains in the fearch, and there safely arrived. But overtoyling and dieth. himselfe on a furset died, And in this Cedar Ship built by his owne directions, and partly with his owne hands, that had not in her any Iron, but onely one bolt in her Keele, yet well endured thus toffed to and againe in this mightie Ocean, till with his dead bodie the arrived in England, and at Whitcharch in Dorfetshire, his body by his friends was honourably buried, with mane vo- His heart and lies of thot, and the rites of a Souldier, &c.

But thus much may ferne at the argument of the discourses following, and as the Prologue to the Vir- buried in Sumginian Scene, where we will first produce M. Archer, after whose succintt narration, M. Strachies co- mer llands a pious discourse shall feast you with the lively expression of others miseries, and Barmudas bappy discourse to them comin Rhetorickes Full fea and foring tide.

CHÂP. V.

A Letter of M. GABRIEL ARCHAR, touching the Voyage of the Fleet of Ships. which arrived at Virginia, without Sir THO. GATES, and SIT GEORGE SYMMERS, 1600.



Rom Woolwich the fifteenth of May, 1609, senenth saile weyed anchor, and came to Pimmouth the twentieth day, where Sir George Somers, with two small Vessells, conforted with vs. Here we tooke into the Bleffing (being the frip wherein I went) fixe Mares and two Horfes; and the Fleet layed in fome necessaries belonging to the action : In which bufineffe we fent time till the second of lune. And then wee fet sayle to Sea,

but croft by South-west winder, we put in to Faulemouth, and there staying till the eight 40 of lune, we then gate out. Our Course was commanded to leave the Carraries one hundred leagues to the The appointed Eastward at least, and to store away directly for Virginia, without touching at the West Indies, except Course. the Fleet Should chance to be Separated, then they were to repaire to the Bermuda, there to Stay Senen

dayes in expectation of the Admirall; and if they found him not, then to take their course to Virginia. Now thus it happened ; about fixe dayer after we loft the fight of England, one of Sir George So. The Ships, and mers Pinnaffes left our company, and (as I take it) bare up for England ; the reft of the Ships, viz. The chiefe men in Sea Adventure Admiral, wherein was Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Somer, and Captaine Newport : The Diamond Vice-admirall, wherein was Captaine Ratcliffe, and Captaine King. The Falcon Reme-admirall, in which was Captaine Martin, and Master Nellion : The Bleffing , wherein I and Captaine Adams went : The Vnitie, wherein Captaine Wood, and Master Pett were. The Lion. wherein Captaine Webb remained : And the Swallow of Sir George Somers, in which Captaine 50 Moone, and Mafter Somer went. In the Catch went one Matchew Fitch Mafter : and in the Boat of Sir George Somers, called the Virginia, which was built in the North Colony, went one Captaine

Davies, and one Master Davies. These were the Captatines and Masters of our Fleet. We ran a Southerly course from the Tropicke of Cancer, where having the Sun within fixe or seven degrees right oner our head in July, we bore away West; fo that by the feruent heat and loomes breezes, Sicknesse and many of our men fell ficke of the Calenture, and out of two flips was throwne over-board thirtie two per- mortalicie at Sons. The Viceadmirall was faid to have the plague in her; but in the Bleffing we had not any ficke, albeit Sea. we had twenty women and children.

V pon Saint lames day, bemo about one hundred and fiftie leagues distant from the Weft Indies, in 60 croffing the Gulfe of Bahoma, there hapned a most terrible and vehement storme, which was a taile of the Terrible ter-West Indian Horacano; this tempest seperated all our Fleet one from another, and it was so violent that pett. men could scarce stand upon the Deckes, neither could any man heare another speake, being thus dimided, onery man steered bis owne course, and as it fell out about fine or fixe dayes after the storme ceased (which endure forthe foure boures in extremitie.) The Lion first, and after the Falcon and the Vnitie, got fight

Снар. б.

mors chargeable. Arriuall in Vacinia.

1734

of our Shippe, and so we lay a way directly for Virginia, finding neither current nor winde opposite. at Note. Folletu- fome have reported, to the great charge of our Counfell and Aduenturers. The Vnity was fore diffrested when the came up with vs, for of scuenty land men, the had not ten found, and all her Sea men were downe. but onely the Master and his Boy, with one poore failer, but we relieved them, and we four e consortino fell into the Kings River haply the elementh of August. In the Vnity were borne two children at Sea, but

both died, being both Boyes. When wee came to lames Towns, we found a Ship which had bin there in the River a moneth before we came; this was sent out of England by our Counsels leave and authority, to fish for Sturgeon, and to me came; tow matjent one of Eugeniu or our consignit some and amount, to jur just stiegen, and to
go e the ready may, without traces through the Torrid Zoam, and the professional it short [Commander wa

Captain Argal Captame Argol (a good Marriner, and a very civil Gentleman) and her Master one Robert Tindail. [9]

State of the Colony.

apraine Algoli (a good 1-a more found all in health (for the most part) howbest when Captaine Argoll came in they were in such distresse, for many were dispersed in the Sauages townes, lining upon their almes for an ounce of Copper a day, and fourescore lined twenty miles from the Fort, and fed upon nothing but Orflers eight weekes face, basing no other allowance at all, neither were the people of the Country able to reliene them if they would, Whereupon Captaine New port and others have beene much to blame to ma Lileneffe and forme the Counsell of such plenty of victuall in this Country, by which meanes they have beene sackein other vicesto this supply to give convenient content. Vpon this, you that be adventurers, must pardon vs, if you finde not returne of Commodity fo ample as you may expect because the law of nature bids us seeke sustenance fust. and then to labour to content you afterwards. But upon this point I shall be more large in my next Letter.

blame alfo. Some things parely,falfe rumors, parely

After our foure Ships had him in harbour a few dayes, came in the Viceadmirall, having out her maine 20 Mast over boord, and bad many of ber men very sicke and weake, but she could tell no newes of our Governour, and some three or foure dayes after her, came in the Swallow, with her maine Maft overboard alfa. and had a shrewd leake neither did she see our Admirall. Now aid we all lament much the absence of our Gonernour, for contentions began to grow, and falli-

factions, fugcedions.are here left out. They choose a newGouernor

the malecon-

tents which

fing now ill

comming of

mileries in

which this Author with

him arole

ons, and partatings, oc. Infomuch as the President, to strengthen his authority, accorded with the Mariners, and gaue not any due respect to many worthy Gentlemen, that came in our Ships: wherewor they generally (haning alfo my confent) chofe Mailer Well, my Lord de la Wars brother, to be their Go. sernour, or president de bene este, in the absence of Sir Thomas Gates, or if he miscarried by Sea. then Hincille lacbryto continue till we heard newes from our Counfell in England. This choice of him they made not to dime. Hence fro flurbe the old President during bis time, but as bis authority expired, then to take upon him the fole go- 30 wenment with such assistants of the Captaines, as discrettest persons as the Colonie afforded. Perhaps sen Bad beene in Malbane it blaz oned a mutenie by such as retaine old malice; but Master West, Master Petcie, and Priginiabelore enemies to the all the respected Gentlemen of worth in Virginia, can and will testifie otherwise upon their outher. For the Kings Patent weratified, but refused to be governed by the President that now u, after his time was to Prefident,raipired, and onely subjected our selmes to Master West, whom we labour to have next President. I cannot certific you of much more as yet , until we grow to some certaine flay in this our state, but by the other reports at their Ships you hall know more. So with my harty commendations I ceafe. From lames Towne this last thefe ftirs and of Angust 1609. the following

CHAP. VI

amout the whole Colony A true reportory of the wracke, and redemption of Sir T HO MAS GATES Knight ; poon, and from the Hands of the Bermudas : his comming to Virginia, and the effate of that Colonie then, and after, onder the government of the Lord LA WARRE, luly 15. 1610. written by WILLIAM STRACHY, Efquire.

è. I.

A most dreadfull Tempest (the manifold deaths whereof are here to the life described) their wracke on Bermuda, and the description of those Ilands.

Xcellent Lady, know that vpon Friday late in the euening, we brake ground out of the Sound of Pymouth, our whole Fleete then confifting of feuen good Ships, 62 and two Pinnaces, all which from the faird feeond of June, who the twenty three of July, kept in friendly confort together not a whole watch at any time, 100-fing the fight each of other. Our course when we came about the height of befing the fight each of other. Our course when we came about the height of betweene 26. and 27. degrees, we declined to the Northward, and according to

our Gouernours instructions altered the trade and ordinary way vied heretofore by Dominico. and a Menis, in the West Indies, and found the winde to this course indeede as triendly . as in the judgement of all Sea-men, it is vpon a more direct line, and by Sir George Summers out Ad- Sir G summers mirall had bin likewise in former time failed, being a Gentleman of approued afforednesse; and a good maiready knowledge in Sea-faring actions, having often carried command, and chiefe charge in ma. ner and tried ny Ships Royall of her Maiefties, and in fundry Voyages made many defeats and attempts in the time of the Spaniards quarrelling with vs. vpon the Hands and Indies, &c. We had followed this sourfe follong, as now we were within feuen or eight dayes at the most, by Cap, Newports reckoning of making Cape Henry upon the coaft of Firginia: When on S. James his day, July 24. be-

ning Monday (preparing for no leffe all the blacke night before) the cloudes gathering thicke vp. A terrible on vs. and the windes linging, and whiftling most vaustally, which made vs to cast off our Pin. forme expresonvs, and the windes ninging, and whitting more valuating, which indeed so that of our This nace towing the same vntill then afterne, a dreadfull storme and hideous began to blow from itsalland retoout the North-east, which swelling, and roaring as it were by fits, some houres with more violence then others, at length did beate all light from heaven; which like an hell of darkenelle tur- tion ned blacke upon ve, so much the more fuller of horror, as in such cases horror and feare vie to Black-darknes, operrunne the troubled, and overmaftered sences of all, which (taken vp with amazement) the eares lay to fentible to the terrible cries, and murmurs of the windes, and diffraction of our Company, as who was most armed, and best prepared, was not a little shaken. For surely (Noble Feare of deads Lady) as death comes not so sodaine nor apparant, so he comes not so eluish and painfull (to men fearefull.

an especially even then in health and perfect habitudes of body) as at Sea; who comes at no time fo welcome, but our frailty (so weake is the hold of hope in miserable demonstrations of danger) it makes guilty of many contrary changes, and conflicts: For indeede death is accompanied at no time, nor place with circumstances every way to vncapable of particularities of goodnesse and inward comforts, as at Sea. For it is most true, there ariseth commonly no such vnmercifull tempest, compound of so many contrary and divers Nations, but that it workerh voon the whole frame of the body, and most loathsomely affecteth all the powers thereof : and the manner of the ficknesse it laies upon the body, being so unsufferable, gives not the minde any free and quiet time, to vie her judgemen; and Empire : which made the Poet fay :

Hostium ux ores, paerique cacos Sentiant motte erientie Hadi, & Aqueris nigri fremitum, & trementes Verbere rivat .

For foureand twenty houres the storme in a restlesse tumult, had blowne so exceedingly, as Communice we could not apprehend in our imaginations any possibility of greater violence, yet did wee still and increase. finde it, not onely more terrible, but more constant, fury added to fur, and one storme vrging a fecond more outragious then the former; whether it fo wrought voon our feares, or indeede met with new forces: Sometimes firikes in our Ship amongst women, and passengers, not vied to fuch hurly and discomforts, made vs looke one vpon the other with troubled hearts, and panting bosomes : our clamours dround in the windes, and the windes in thunder. Prayers might

well be in the heart and lips, but drowned in the outcries of the Officers: nothing heard that could give comfort, nothing feene that might incourage hope. It is impossible for me, had I the vovce of Stentor, and expression of as many tongues, as his throate of voyces, to expresse the outcries and misseries, not languishing, but wasting his spirits, and are constant to his owne principles, but not prevailing. Our failes wound up lay without their vie, and if at any time wee bore but a Hollocke, or halfe forecourfe, to guide her before the Sea, fix and fometimes eight men were not inough to hold the whipstaffe in the steerage, and the tiller below in the Gunner roome, by which may be imagined the strength of the storme : In which, the Sea swelled about Swelling Sea the Clouds, and gaue battell vnto Heauen. It could not be faid to raine, the waters like whole fer forth in a Rivers did flood in the ayre. And this I did still observe, that whereas vpon the Land, when a swelling side. storme hath powred it selfe forth once in drifts of raine, the winde as baten downe, and vanquished therewith not long after indureth : here the glut of water(as if throatling the winde ere

while) was no fooner a little emptied and qualified, but inflantly the windes (as having gotten their mouthes now free, and at liberty) spake more loud, and grew more tumultuous, and Compared malignant; What shall I say? Windes and Seas were as mad, as sury and rage could make them; with the Au-for mine owne pare, I had bin in some stormer before, as well vpon the coast of Barbary and Alconsciences. geere, in the Lenant, and once more diffresfull in the Adriatique gulfe, in a bottome of Candy, fo as I may well fay. Ego quid sit ater Adrie nom sinus, & quid albus Peccet lapex. Yet all that I had euer fuffered gathered together, might not hold comparison with this: there was not a moment in which the fodaine splitting, or infant ouer-fetting of the Shippe was not

Howbeit this was not all; It pleased God to bring a greater affliction yet upon vs; for in the Leake added beginning of the storme we had received likewife a mighey leake. And the Ship in every loynt to the stormes almost, having spued out her Okam, before we were aware (a casualty more desperate then any tonour, Other that a Voyage by Sea draweth with it) was growne fine footefuddenly deepe with water

about her ballaft, and we almost drowned within, whilest we sat looking when to perish from aboue. This imparting no leife terrour then danger, ranne through the whole Ship with much fright and amazement, itartled and turned the bloud, and tooke downe the braues of the most hardy Marriner of them all, infomuch as he that before happily felt not the forrow of others. now began to forrow for himselfe, when he saw such a pond of water to suddenly broken in and which he knew could not (without prefent avoiding) but inftantly finke him. So as ioyning (onely for his owne fake, not yet worth the fauing) in the publique fafety; there might be feene Mafter. Mafters Mate, Boatelwaine, Quarter Mafter. Coopers, Carpenters, and who not with candels in their hands, creeping along the ribs viewing the fides, fearthing enery corner, and life. ning in euery place, if they could heare the water runne, Many a weeping leake was this way found, and haltily ftopt, and at length one in the Gunner roome made vp with I know not how many peeces of Beere; but all was to no purpole, the Leake (if it were but one) which drunke in our greatest Seas, and tooke in our destruction fastest, could not then be found, nor ever was, by any labour, counfell, or fearch. The waters fill increasing, and the Pumpes going, which at length choaked with bringing vp whole and continual Bisket (and indeede all we had, tenne thousand weight) it was conceived, as most likely, that the Leake might be sprung in the Breadroome, whereupon the Carpenter went downe, and ript vp all the roome, but could not

Leake cannot be found.

> I am not able to give vnto your Ladiship every mans thought in this perplexity, to which we were now brought; but to me, this Leakage appeared as a wound given to men that were before dead. The Lord knoweth, I had as little hope, as defire of lite in the ftorme, & in this, it went beyond my will; because beyond my reason, way we should labour to preserve life; yet we did. either because so deare are a few lingring houres of life in all mankinde, or that our Christian knowledges taught vs, how much we owed to the rites of Nature, as bound, not to be falle to our felues, or to neglect the meanes of our owne preferuation; the most despairefull things amongil men, being matters of no wonder nor moment with him, who is the rich Fountaine and admirable Effence of all mercy.

Their labour for life three daves and foure nights.

Our Gouernour, you the tuesday morning (at what time, by such who had bin below in the hold, the Leake was first discouered) had caused the whole Company, about one hundred and forty, besides women, to be equally divided into three parts, and opening the Ship in threepla- 26 ces (vnder the forecastle, in the waste, and hard by the Bitacke) appointed each man where to attend; and thereunto every man came duely upon his watch, tooke the Bucket or Pumpe for one houre, and tested another. Then men might be feene to labour, I may well say, for life, and the better fort, euen our Gouernour, and Admirall themselves, not refusing their turne, and to spell each the other, to give example to other. The common fort ftripped naked, as men in Gallies, the easier both to hold out, and to shrinke from under the salt water, which continually leapt in among them, kept their eyes waking, and their thoughts and hands working, with tyred bodies, and wasted spirits, three dayes and foure nights destitute of outward comfort, and desperate of any deliuerance, testifying how mutually willing they were, yet by labour to keepe each other from drowning, albeit each one drowned whileft he laboured.

Seabreakes in.

The Gover-

courfe.

themiclass.

Once, so huge a Sea brake vpon the poope and quarter, vpon vs, as it couered our Shippe from flearne to flemme, like a garment or a vast cloude, it filled her brimme full for a while within, from the hatches up to the sparse decke. This source or confluence of water was fo violent, as it ruft and carried the Helm-man from the Helme, and wrested the Whipstaffe out of his hand, which to flew from tide to fide, that when he would have ceased the tame againe, it fo toffed him from Star-boord to Lar-boord, as it was Gods mercy it had not fplit him: It so beat him from his hold, and so bruised him, as a fresh man hazarding in by chance fell faire with it, and by maine frength bearing somewhat vp, made good his place, and with much clamour incouraged and called vpon others; who gave her now vp, rent in pieces and absolutely loft. Our Gouernour was at this time below at the Capftone, both by his speech and authoritie 50 heartening enery man vnto his labour. It strooke him from the place where hee fate, and groueled him, and all vs about him on our faces, bearing together with our breaths all thoughts from our bolomes, e.e, then that wee were now finking. For my part, I thought her alreadie in the bottome of the Sea; and I have heard him fay, wading out of the floud thereof, all his ambition was but to climbe vp about hatches to dye in Aperto colo, and in the company of his old friends. Remerois fa. It fo flun's the flip in her full pace , that free flured no more , then if free had beene caught in a bled to bea net, or then, as if the fabulous Remora had thucke to her fore-callle. Yet without bearing one inch small fifth able of faule, euen then snee was making her way nine or ten leagues in a watch. One thing, it is not to winftand a without his wonder (whether it were the feare of death in fo great a fforme, or that it pleased God to be gracious vnto vs) there was not a paffenger, gentleman, or other, after hee beganne to firre and labour, but wasable to relieue his fellow, and make good his courie : And it is most true, fuch as in all their life times had neuer done houres worke before (their mindes now helping

Shippe in her Godinableth whom he will fanc to fauc

their bodies) were able twice tortie eight houres together to toile with the best, During all this time, the neavens look'd to blacke vpon vs. that it was not possible the eleva-

nation of the Pole might be observed : nor a Starre by night, not Sunne beame by day was to be feene. Onely voon the thuriday night Sir George Summers being voon the watch, had an apparition of a little round light, like a faint Starre, trembling, and threaming along with a sparkeling blaze, halfe the height vpon the Maine Maft, and shooting sometimes from Shroud to Shroud, tempting to lettle as it were vpon any of the foure Shrouds: and for three or foure houres together, or rather more, halfe the night it kept with vs, running fometimes along the Maineyard to the very end, and then returning. At which, Sir George Cummers called divers about him. and the wed them the fame, who observed it with much wonder, and careful neffe : but voon a Evaluate towards the morning watch, they loft the fight of it, and knew not what way it made.

10 The superstitious Sea-men make many constructions of this Sea-fire, which neverthelesse is vsuall in ftormes : the fame (it may be) which the Grecians were wont in the Mediterranean to call Caffor and Pollax, of which, if one onely appeared without the other, they tooke it for an ewill figure of great tempest. The Italians, and fuch, who lye open to the Adrianane and Tyrrene Sea, call it (a facred Body) Corpo fanito : the Spaniards call it Saint Elmo, and have an authentique Section 1.14 and miraculous Legend for it. Be it what is will, we laid other foundations of fafety or ruine, e.i. Q.L. then in she rifing or falling of it, could it have ferued vs now miraculously to have taken our height by, it might have ftrucken amazement, and a reverence in our devotions, according to the due of a miracle. But it did not light vs any whit the more to our knowne way, who ran now (as doe hood winked men) at all aduentures, sometimes North, and North-east, then North and

20 by West, and in an instant againe varying two or three points, and sometimes halfe the Compiffe. East and by South we iteered away as much as we could to beare pright, which was no small carefulnesse nor paine to doe, albeit we much vnrigged our Ship, threw ouer-boord much luggage, many a Trunke and Cheft (in which I fuffered no meane loffe) and tlaued many a Butt of Beere, Hogheads of Oyle, Syder, Wine, and Vinegar, and heated away all our Ordnance on the Starboord fide, and had now purposed to have cut downe the Maine Mait, the more to lighten her, for we were much ipent, and our men fo weary, as their flengths together failed them. with their hearts, having trausiled now from Tuefday till Friday morning, day and night, with - No fleepe or out either fleepe or foode; for the leakeage taking vp all the hold, wee could neither come by food romtuef

Beere nor fresh water: fire we could keepe none in the Cookeroome to dresse any meate, and day till triday carefulnesse, griefe, and our turne at the Pumpe or Bucket, were sufficient to hold sleepe from

And furely Madam, it is most true, there was not any house (a matter of admiration) all these dayes, in which we freed not twelue hundred Barricos of water, the leaft whereof contained fix 1200. Barricos gallons, and some eight, besides three deepe Pumpes continually going, two beneath at the Capan houre, besides a Pumpe, ftone, and the other aboue in the halfe Decke, and at each Pumpe foure thousand strokes at the acquitting to least in a watch; so as I may well say, every foure houres, we quitted one hundred tunnes of wa- tunsof water ter ; and from tuefday noone till friday noone, we bailed and pumped two thousand sunne, and guery shoures yet doe what we could, when our Ship held least in her, after tuelday night second watch) shee bore ten foote deepe, at which stay our extreame working kept her one eight glasses, forbearance 40 whereof had instantly funke vs, and it being now Friday, the fourth morning, it wanted little,

but that there had bin a generall determination, to have flut vp hatches, and commending our finfull foules to God, committed the Shippe to the mercy of the Sea : furely, that night we must have done it, and that night had we then perished: but see the goodnesse and sweet introduction of better hope, by our mercifull God given vnto vs. Sir George Summers, when no man dreamed of fuch happinesse. had discouered, and cried Land. Indeede the morning now three quarters summer lands fpent, had wonne a little cleerenesse from the dayes before, and it being better furuewed, the ve-described by Sie ry trees were feene to more with the winde vpon the shoare side: whereupon our Governour George Summers commanded the Helme-man to beare vp, the Boatefwaine founding at the first, found it thirteene fathome, & when we stood a little in seuen fatham; and presently heaving his lead the third time.

to had ground at foure fathome, and by this, we had got her within a mile under the South-east point of the land, where we had somewhat smooth water. But having no hope to saucher by comming to an anker in the fame, we were inforced to runne her ashoare, as neere the land as we could, which brought vs within three quarters of a mile of thoare, and by the mercy of God vnto vs. making out our Boates, we had ere night brought all our men, women, and children, about They go a land the number of one hundred and fifty, fate into the Hand.

We found it to be the dangerous and dreaded Hand, or rather Hands of the Bermuda: whereof let mee giue your Ladyship a briefe description, before I proceed to my narration. And that the fupposed the rather, because they be so terrible to all that euer touched on them, and such tempests, thunders, Diuck, &c. and other fearefull objects are feene and heard about them, that they be called commonly, The 60 Denils Ilands, and are feated and anoyded of all featrauellers aline, about any other place in the world. Yet it pleafed our mercifull God, to make even this hideous and hated place, both the place of our fafetie and meanes of our deliverance.

And hereby also, I hope to deliver the world from a foule and generall errour : it being counted of most, that they can be no habitation for Men, but rather given over to Deuils and wicked

Viter darknes

Spirits; whereas indeed wee find them now by experience, to bee as habitable and commodious as molt Countries of the same climate and situation sinfomuch as if the entranceinto them were as ea le as the place it selfe is contenting, it had long ere this beene inhabited, as well as other liands. Thus shall we make it appeare, That Truth is the daughter of Time, and that men on the not to deny every thing which is not fubice to their owne fenfe.

Si-George Sum-

furucy: his

we have not-

M.Noracchad

Line other coi-

teth the fame

h florie more

fairh it hath

two names,

Gaza,of the

and Bermudez

mudes: Noic

that he place h

ir more to the

time they fee

as they patic.

The Scenigra's

heard) which

were wracked

there in Cap.

Butleys time

on that ours

fome of ours

(as I haue

North then

The Bermudus bee broken Ilands, fine hundred of them in manner of an Archipelagus (at least if you may call them all Ilands that lie, how little soeuer into the Sea, and by themselues) of small compasse, some larger yet then other, as time and the Sea hath wonne from them, and eaten his pallage through, and all now lying in the figure of a Croiffant, within the circuit of fixe or feven leagues at the most, albeit at first it is said of them that they were thirteene or fourteene 10 leagues; and more in longitude as I have heard. For no greater distance is it from the Northwest Point to Gates his Bay, as by this Map your Ladyship may fee, in which Sir George Summers, who coasted in his Boat about them all, tooke great care to expresse the same exactly and full, and made his draught perfect for all good occasions, and the benefit of fuch, who either in diffresse mishe draught which be brought voon them, or make taile this way.

It should feeme by the testimony of Gonzalus Ferdinandus Oniedus, in his Booke intituled. The Summary or Abridgement of his generall History of the West Indies, written to the Emperer Charles unceparannea an exact Map. the Fift, that they have beene indeed of greater compasse (and I easily beleeue it) then they are Oriadams now, who thus faith : In the yeere 1515. when I came first to informe your Maiesty of the state of the things in India, and was the yeare following in Flanders, in the time of your most fortunate (uccollein to thele your kingdomes of Aragony and Catteel, whereas at that voyage I fayled about the Iland Bermudas, otherwise called Gorza, being the farthest of all the Ilands that are yet found at this day in the world. and arriving there at the depth of eight yards of water, and distant from the Land as farre at the shot particularly he of a Peece of Ordnance, I determined to fend some of the Ship to Land, as well to make fearch of Such things as were there, as a fo to leave in the I land certaine Hogges for increase, but the time not ferning my purpose, by reason of contrary winde I could bring my Ships no neerer : the Iland being twelve leagues in length, and fixteene in breadth, and about thirtie in circuit, lying in the thirtie three degrees of thip which first discouered it, the North fide. Thus farre hee.

being fo called, True it is, the maine Hand, or greatest of them now, may bee some fixteene miles inlength East North-east, and West South-west the longest part of it, standing in thirtie two degrees and 20 orthe Captain of the thing na- twentie minutes, in which is a great Bay on the North fide, in the North-west end, and many broken Hands in that Sound or Bay, and a little round Hand at the South-westend, As occasions med lobn Berwere offered, to we gaue titles and names to certaine places.

These Hands are often assisted and rent with tempests, great strokes of thunder, lightning and raine in the extreamity of violence: which (and it may well bee) hath fo fundred and tome downe the Rockes, and whuried whole quarters of Hands into the maine Sea (some fixe.some by oursinable feuen leagues, and is like in time to swallow them all) so as even in that distance from the shoare ted, & fay form there is no small danger of them and with them, of the stormes continually raging from them, which once in the full and change commonly of every Moone (Winter or Summer) keepe their vnchangeableround, and rather thunder then blow from enery corner about them, fometimes for- 40 tie eight houres together : especially if the circle, which the Philosophiers call Halo were (in our being there) seene about the Moone at any season, which bow indeed appeared there often, and would bee of a mightie compasse and breadth. I have not observed it any where one quarter so great, especially about the twentieth of March, I faw the greatest when followed upon the eucs eue of the Annuntiation of our Ladie, the mightiest blast of lightning, and most terrible rap of thunder that ever aftonied mortall men, I thinke. In August, September, and untill the end of were of opini-October, wee had very hot and pleasant weather onely (as I say) thunder, lightning, and many feattering showers of Raine (which would passe swiftly ouer , and yet fall with such force and Bermudas : Y:a darknesse for the time as if it would never bee cleere againe) wee wanted not any; and of raine more in Summer then in Winter, and in the beginning of December wee had great flore of highe 50 have Keniuch (the sharpe windes blowing Northerly) but it continued not, and to say truth, it is wintry of an Hand to the fummer weather there, according as those North and Noth-west windes blow. Much raste of this North of ours, and have effected winder wee had; for those cold winder would suddenly alter the agre; but when there and have effected winder week. sed to discouer was no breath of wind to bring the moyst agree out of the Seas, from the North and North-well, it fas lide wee were rather weary of the heate, then pinched with extreamitie of cold : Yet the three Winter moneths, December, lanuary, and February, the winds kept in those cold corners, and indeed tem with then it was heavy and melancholy being there, nor were the winds more rough in March, then rama interite in the forefaid moneths, and yet even then would the Birds breed. I thinke they breade there, Moonal gear most monethes in the yeere, in September, and at Cliffmaffe I law young Birds, and compasse, in Februarie, at which time the mornings are there easin Mauin Barbarat and share. in Februarie, at which time the mornings are there (as in May in England) fresh and sharpe. 60 Well may the Spaniards, and thefe Bifcani Pilots , with all their Traders into the Indies, palle by these Hands as afraid (either bound out or homewards) of their very Meridian, and leave the

fishing for the Pearle (which some say, and I beleeue well is as good there, as in any of their

other Indian Ilands, and whereof we had some triall) to such as will aduenture for them. The

Other kindes of high and fiveet finelling Woods there bee, and divers colours, blacke, yellow, Other Trees! and red, and one which beares a round blew Berry, much eaten by our owne people, of a fliptick qualitie and rough taite on the ton gue like a Slow to Hay or binde the Fluxe, which the often

Seas about them are fo ful of breaches, as with those dangers, they may well be faid to be the firence gelt fituate in the world. I have often heard Sir George Summers, and Captaine Newport lay, how they have not beene by any chance or discovery upon their like. It is impossible without great and perfect knowledge, and fearch first made of them to bring in a bable Boat, to much as of ten Tun without apparant roine, albeit within there are many faire harbours for the greatest English Ship : yea, the Argafies of Venice may ride there with water enough, and lafe land-lockt. There icone onely fide that admits fo much as hope of fafetie by many a league, on which (as before descibed) it pleased God to bring vs, wee had not come one man of vs elie a shoare, as the weather was : they have beene ever therefore left defolate and not inhabited.

10 . The foile of the whole Iland is one and the fame, the mould, dark, red, fandie, dry, and vincapa- Experience ble I beleeue of any of our commodities or truits. Sir George Summers in the beginning of August, hath Biesquared out a Garden by the quarter (the quarter being fet downebefore a goodly Bay, voon ter thewed which our Gouernour did firit lespe ainoare, and therefore called it (as aforefaid) Gates bis Bay, fince as we atwhich opened into the Eaft, and into which the Sea did ebbe and flow, according to their tides, traits, wormes. and fowed Muske Melons, Peale, Onyons, Raddish, Lettice, and many English feeds, and Kitchen & thoic that Herbes. All which in some ten daies did appeare aboue ground, but whether by the small Birds, dwell there of which there be many kindes, or by Flies (Wormes I never faw any, nor any venomous thing, as Toade, or Snake, or any creeping beaft hurtfull, onely fome Spiders, which es many aftrme are which tooke fignes of great flore of Gold : but they were long and flender legge Spiders, and whether veno-

20 mous or no I know not . I believe not, fince wee should still find them amongst our linnen in our ledging. Yes Chefts, and drinking Cans ; but we never received any danger from them : A kind of Melontha, the dawning & or blacke Beetell there was, which bruifed, gaue a fauour like many invectand itrong gums pundelightione ned together) whether, I lay, hindred by thele, or by the condition or vice of the loyle they habe; though or blacke Beetell there was, which bruifed, gaue a fauour like many fiveet and ffrong gums pune Aurora yeeld a came to no proofe, nor through. It is like enough that the commodities of the other Westerne notall so cer-Ilands would prosper there, as Vines, Lemmons, Oranges, and Sugar Canes : Our Gouernour taineas the made triall of the later, and buried some two or three in the Garden mould, which were referred Sun for which in the wracke amongst many which wee carried to plant here in Vogima, and they beganne to cause I have grow, but the Hogs breaking in , both rooted them vp and eate them : there is not through the thefefift difwhole Hands either Champion ground, Valleys, or fresh Riners. They are full of Shawes of good couries.

30 ly Cedar, fairer then ours here of Virginia; the Berries, whereof our men feething, ftraining, and Spidors. letting ftan lome three or foure daies, made a kind of pleafant drinke : thele Berries are of the Beelle very fame bigneffe, and collour of Corynthes, full of little stones, and verie restringent or hard building. Hoss. Peter Martin faith, That at Alexandria in Egypt there is a kind of Cedar, which the lewes Cedars. dwelling there, affirme to be the Cedars of Libanua, which beare old fruite and new all the yeare, Cedar-drinke, being a kinde of Apple which tait like Prines : but then, neither those there in the Bermudis, American Co. nor ours here in Virginia are of that happy kind.

Likewise there grow great store of Palme Trees, not the right Indian Palmes, such as in Saint with those of John Port-Rico are called Cocos, and are there full of fmall fruites like Almonds (of the bigneffe of Libanus, as by the graines in Pomgranates) nor of those kind of Palmes which beares Dates, but a kind of Si- the historic of 40 merons or wild Palmes in growth, fashion, leaves, and branches, refembling those true Palmes: them in our for the Tree is high, and straight, sappy and spongious, vinime for any vie, no branches but in the vppermost pur thereof, and in the top grow leaves about the head of in the most part.

Agriculture

**Agri whereof they call Palmeto, and it is the heart and pith of the fame Trunke, fo white and thin, as Many forts of it will peele off into pleates as smooth and delicate as white Sattin into twentie folds, in which a Palmes, the man may write as in paper) where they ipread and fall downward about the Tree like an ouer. Coco, the blowne Role, or Saifron flower not early gathered; to broad are the leanes, as an Italian Vmbrello, the Winea man may well detend his whole body vnder one of them, from the greatest storme rame that Palme, or tadfalls. For they being stiffe and smooth, as if so many stagges were knit together, the raine easily die, &c, besides fliderhoff. Wee oftentimes found growing to thefe leaves, many Silk-wormes involved there-thefe fleedto in, like those small wormes which Acosta writethos, which grew in the leaves of the Tunal Tree, Sike wormes,

of which being dried, the Indians make their Cochinile to precious and marchantable. With there leanes we that ched our Cabbins, and roading the Palmito or loft top thereof, they had a tafte like fried Melons, and being fod they eate like Cabbedges, but not fo offenfuely thankefull to the ftomacke. Many an ancient Borger was therefore heaved at, and fell not for his place, but for his head : for our common people, whole bellies never had eares, made it no breach of Charitie in their hot blouds and tall flornackes to murder thoulands of them. They beare a kind of Berry, blacke and round, as bigge as a Damfon, which about December were ripe and I forous fleeing scalded (whilest they are greene) they eate like Bullafes. These Trees shid their leaves in the Winter moneths, as withered or burnt with the cold blails of the North winde, especi-60 ally those that grow to the Seaward, and in March, there Burgen new in their roome fresh

eating of the lufeious Palme berry would bring them into, for the nature of fweet things is to clense and dissolue. A kinde of Pease of the bignesse and shape of a Katherine Peare, wee found growing woon the Rockes full of many sharpe subtill prickes (as a Thirtle) which wee growing vpon the rockes and the prinkle Peare, the outlide greene, but being opened, of a deepe murrie. full of invee like a Mulberry, and init of the same substance and taste, wee both eate them raw

Waters No Springs then found, fince Wells haue bin there digged which ebbc and flow

Sure it is, that there are no Rivers nor running Springs of fresh water to bee found voon any of them : when wee came first wee digged and found certaine gushings and soft bublings, which being either in bottoms, or on the tide of hanging ground, were onely fed with raine water, which neuerthelelle loone finketh into the earth and vanisheth away, or emptieth it felfe out of fight in- to to the Sea, without any channell aboue or vpon the superficies of the earth : for according as their raines fell, we had our Welsand Pits (which we digged) either halfe full, or absolute exhaufted and dry, howest fome low bottoms (which the continuall descent from the Hills filled full, and in those flats could have no passage away) we found to continue as fishing Ponds, or standing Pooles, continually Summer and Winter full of fresh water.

Fift.

The shoare and Bayes round about, when weelanded first afforded great store of fish, and that of divers kindes, and good, but it should seeme that our fiers, which wee maintained on the shoates side draue them from vs, so as wee were in some want, vntill wee had made a flat bottome Gundall of Cedar with which wee put off farther into the Sea, and then dais ly hooked great store of many kindes, as excellent Angell-fish, Salmon Peale, Bonetas, 10 Stingray, Cabilly, Scnappers, Hogge-fish, Sharkes, Dogge-fish, Pilcherds, Mullets, and Rock-fish, of which bee divers kindes : and of these our Governour dryed and salted, and barrelling them vp, brought to lea fine hundred, for he had procured Salt to bee made with some Brine. which happily was preserued, and once having made a little quantity, he kept three or four pots boyling, and two or three men attending nothing elie in an house (iome little diffance from his Bay) fet vp on purpose for the same worke.

Likewise in Furbushers building Bay wee had a large Sein, or Tramell Net, which our Go-

Crabbes, Oylters, and Wilkes. True it is, for Fish in eueric Coue and Creek weefond Snaules, and Skulles in that abundance, as (Ithinke) no lland in the world may have granules.

likewise make the Herbes, Roots, and Weeds sweet which grow about the Bankes) become

thereby both fat and wholfome. As must those Fish needes bee groffe, slimy, and corrupt the bloud, which feed in Fennes, Marishes, Ditches, muddy Pooles, and neere vnto places 40

where much filth is daily cast forth. Vnscaled Fishes, such as Junius calleth Molles Pisces, as

Trenches, Eele, or Lampries, and fuch feculent and dangerous Snakes wee neuer law any,

nor may any Riuer bee inuenomed with them (I pray God) where I come. I forbeare to

speake what a fort of Whales wee have seene hard aboard the shoare followed sometime by the

Sword-fish and the Thresher, the sport whereof was not unpleasant. The Sword-fish, with

his sharpe and needle Finne, pricking him into the belly when hee would stake and fall into

the Sea; and when hee startled vpward from his wounds, the Thresher with his large Fins (like

Salt made

perpour cauled to be made of the Deere Toyles, which were were to carry to Virginia, by drawing the Masts more straight and narrow with Roape Yarne, and which reached from one side of the Dock to the other: with which (I may boldly fay) wee have taken five thousand of small 30

1000, mass sale and great fish at one hale. As Pilchards , Breames , Mullets , Rocke-fish, &c. and other kindes for which wee haue no names. Wee haue taken also from under the broken Rocker, Creuises oftentimes greater then any of our best English Lobsters; and likewise abundance of

Caule of their ter flore or better Fish. For they sucking of the very water, which descendeth from the high wholsomnesse. Hills mingled with juyce and verdor of the Palmes, Cedars, and other sweet Woods (which

No valcaled

While and

Cater-tray beare the bell away.Medio tutifiimus ibit. Fowles.

Wild Swans,

Web-footed it maketh a

Flayles) beating him about water. The examples whereof gives vs (faith Oniedia) to vinderstand, that in the felfe same perill and Janger doe men live in this mortall life, wherein is no certaine fecurity neither in high effate nor low. Fowle there is great store, small Birds, Sparrowes fat and plumpe like a Bunting, bigger then ours, Robbins of divers colours greene and yellow, ordinary and familiar in our Cabbins, and other of leffe fort. White and gray Hernshawes, Bitters, Teale, Snites, Crowes, and Hawkes, of which in March wee found divers Ayres, Golhawkes and Talfells, Oxen-birds, Cormorants, Bald-Cootes, Moore-Hennes, Owles, and Battes in great store. And vpon New-yeeres day in the morning, our Gouernour being walked foorth with another Gentleman Master lames Swift, each of them with their Peeces killed a wild Swanne, in a great Sea-water Bay or Pond in our Hand. A kinde of webbe-footed Fowle there is, of the bign-fle of an English They call it of greene Plouer, or Sea-Meawe, which all the Summer wee faw not, and in the darket nights of November and December (for in the night they onely feed) they would come forth, but 60 not flye farce from home, and houering in the ayre, and over the Sea, made a strange hollow and barth howling. Their colour is inclining to Ruffet, with white belies, as are likewife the long Feathers of their wings Ruffet and White) thele gather themselves together and breed in those llands which are high, and so farre alone into the Sea, that the Wilde Hogges

cannot I wimme over them , and there in the ground they have their Burrowes , like Conves in a Warren , and to brought in the loofe Mould , though not fo deepe : which Birds with a light bough in a darke night (as in our Lowbelling) wee caught. I have beene at the taking of three hundred in an houre, and wee might have laden our Boates. Our men found a pretrie way to take them, which was by franding on the Rockes or Sands by the Sea fide, and hollowing, laughing, and making the strangest out-cry that possibly they could : with the nevie whereof the Birds would come flocking to that place, and lettle voon the very armes and head of him that fo cryed, and still creepe neerer and neerer, answering the noyse themselves : by which our men would weigh them with their hand, and which weighed heatieff they tooke 10 for the best and let the others alone, and so our men would take twen je dozen in two houres of the chiefest of them; and they were a good and well relished Fowle, fat and full as a Partridge. In lanuary wee had great store of their Egges, which are as great as an Hennes Egge. and fo fashioned and white helled, and have no difference in yolke nor white from an Hennes Egge. There are thousands of these Birds, and two or three Hands full of their Burrowes . whether at any time (in two hours warning) wee could fend our Cock-boat, and bring home as many as would ferue the whole Company : which Birds for their blindheffe (for they fee weak-Iv in the day) and for their cry and whooting, wee called the Sea Onle: they will bite cruelly with their crooked Bills.

Wee had knowledge that there were wilde Hogges vpon the lland, at first by our owne Wild Hogges

20 Swine preserved from the wrack and brought to shoare : for they straying into the Woods, an how fifthours

CHAP.6. S.I. Thousands of Birds. Store of wilde Hogs. Many Tortoiles.

huge wilde Boare followed downe to our quarter, which at night was watched and taken in out and taken in this fort. One of Sir George Summers men went and lay among the Swine, when the Boare being come and groueled by the Sowes, her put ouer his hand and rubbed the fide gently of the Boare, which then lay itill, by which meanes hee fastned a rope with a sliding knot to the hinder legge and so tooke him, and after him in this fort two or three more. But in the end (a little businesseouer) our people would goe a hunting with our Ship Dogge, and sometimes bring home thirtie, fometimes firtie Boares, Sowes, and Pigs in a weeke aliue : for the Dog would fatten on them and hold, whilest the Hunti-men made in ; and there bee thousands of them in the Ilands, and at that time of the yeers in August, September, October, and November, they were well fed 30 with Berries that dropped from the Cedar, and the Palmes, and in our quarter wee made flyes for them, and gathering of thele Berries ferued them twice aday, by which meanes we kept them in good plight : and when there was any fret of weather (for vpon enery increase of wind the billow would be fo great, as it was no putting out with our Gundall or Canow) that we could not fi h nor take Tortoyfes, then wee killed our Hogs. But in February when the Palme Berries began to be icant or dry, and the Cedar Berries failed two moneths fooner. True it is the Hogs grew poore, and being taken to, wee could not raile them to be better, for besides those Berries, we had nothing wherewith to franke them ; but even then the Tortoyles came in againe, of which wee daily both turned up great store, finding them on Land, as also sculling after them in our Boate throoke them with an Iron goad, and fod, baked, and roafted them. The Tortoyle is reasonable Tortoises toothiom (fome fay) wholfome meate. I am fure our Company liked the meate of them verie well, and one Tortoyle would goe further among it them, then three Hogs. One Turtle (for fo we called them) featted well a dozen Melles, appointing fixe to every Melle. It is fuch a kind of meat. as a man can neither absolutely call Fish nor Flesh, keeping most what in the water, and feeding vpon Sea-graffe like a Heifer, in the bottome of the Couesand Bayes, and laying their Egges (of which wee should finde five hundred at a time in the opening of a shee Turtle) in the Sand by the shoare side, and so covering them close leave them to the hatching of the Sunne, like the Manate at Saint Domenique, which made the Spanifo Friars (at their first arrivall) make some feruple to eate them on a Friday, because in colour and taste the stellh is like to moriells of Veale, Concerning the laying of their Egges, and hatching of their young, Peter Martyr writeth thus in 50 his Decades of the Ocean : at fuch time as the heate of Nature moueth them to generation, they came forth of the Sea, and making a deepe pit in the land, they lay three or four hundred Egges

Fffffff 2

therein : when they have thus emptied their bag of Conception, they put as much of the fame a-

gaine into the Pit as may fatisfie to couer the Egges , and fo refort againe vnto the Sea, nothing

carefull of their fuccession. At the day appointed of Nature to the procreation of these creatures.

there creepeth out a multitude of Tortoyies, as it were Pilmyers out of an Ant-hill, and this on-

ly by the heate of the Sunne, without any helpe of their Parents : their Egges are as big as Greie

Egges, and themselues growne to perfection, bigger then great round Targets.

ò. I I.

Actions and Occurrents whiles they continued in the Ilands : Rauens fent for Virginia: Divers mutinies : PAINE executed : Two Pinnaces built.

O foone as wee were a little fetled after our landing, with all the conucniencie wee might, and as the place, and our many wants would give vs leave, weemade vp our ong Bate (as your Ladylhip hath heard) in fashion of a Pinnace, fitting her with a little Deck, made of the Hatches of our ruin'd ship, so close that no water could goe in Io

H. Rauensvoy- her, gaue her Sayles and Oares, and intreating with our Mafters Mate Henry Rauens (who was age from Ber- fuppoied a fufficient Pilot) wee found him eatily wonne to make ouer therewith, as a Barke of Mule for Vreinia, which being in the height of thirtie feuen degrees, fine degrees from the lland which we were, might bee some one hundred and tortie leagues from vs,or thereabouts (+ :ko. ning to enery degree that lies North-east, and Westerly twentic eight English leagues) who the twentie eight of August being Munday, with fixe Saylers, and our Cape Merchant Thomas Whittingham departed from vs out of Gates his Bay: but to our much wonder returned againe vpon the Wednelday night after, having attempted to have got cleere of the Hand, from the North North-eath to the South-west, but could not as little water as shee drew, which might not bee aboue twentie inches for shoales and breaches, so as he was faine to go out from Summers Creeks, 20 and the fame way we came in on the South South-east of the Ilands, and from thence wee made to Sea the Friday after the first of September, promising if hee lived and arrived safe there, to returne vnto vs the next new Moone with the Pinnace belonging to the Colony there : according vnto which inftructions were directed vnto the new Leiftenant Gouernour, and Councell from our Gouernour here, for which the Ilands were appointed carefully to be watched, and fiers prepared as Beacons to have directed and wafted him in, but two Moones were wasted vponthe Promontory before mentioned, and gaue many a long and wished looke round about the Horizon, from the North-east to the South-west, but in vaine, discovering nothing all the while, which way foeu r we turned our eye, but ayre and fea.

You may please, excellent Lady, to know the reason which moued our Gouernour to dispatch 20 this long Boat, was the care which hee tooke for the efface of the Colony in this his intorced absence : for by a long practifed experience, foreseeing and fearing what innouation and tumult might happily arife, among it the younger and ambitious spirits or the new companies to arrive in Virginia, now comming with him along in this fame Fleet, hee framed his letters to the Colony, and by a particular Commission confirmed Captaine Peter Win his Lieutenant Gouernour, with an Affiltance of fixe Counsellours, writing withall to divers and such Gentlemen of qualitieand knowledge of vertue, and to fuch louers of goodnesse in this cause whom hee knew, intreasing them by giving examples in themselves of duty and obedience, to assist likewise the said Lieutenant Guernour, against such as should attempt the innouating of the person (now named by him) or forme of government, which in some Articles hee aid likewise prescribe vnto them : 40 and had faire hopes all should goe well, if these his letters might arrive there, vntill such time as either some Ship there (which hee fairely beleeved) might bee moved presently to adventure for him : or that it should please the right honourable, the Lordes, and the rest of his Maiesties Councell in England, to addresse thither the right honourable the Lord Lawar (one of more eminencie and worthinesse) as the project was before his comming forth) whilest by their honourable fauours, a charitable consideration in like manner might bee taken of our estates to re-Sir George Summers his deeme vs from hence. For which purpose likewise our Gouernour directed a particular letter to ther industrie, the Councell in England, and fent it to the foreigid Captaine Peter Winne (his now to bee chofen Lieutenant Gouernour) by him to bee dispatched (which is the first) from thence into

In his absence Sit George Summers coasted the Hands, and drew the former plat of them, and tilly fished, and hunted for our whole company well. daily fished, and hunted for our whole company, vntill the fourn and twentieth of November, when then well perceiuing that we were not likely to heare from Virginia, and conceiuing how the Pinnace which Richard Frubbulber was a building would not be of burthen f. fficient to transport all our men from thence into Virginia (especially considering the season of the years, wherein we were likely to put off) he consulted with our Gouernour, that if hee might have two Carpenters (for we had foure, such as they were) and twenty men, ouer with him into the maine Iland, he would quickly frame vp another little Barke, to fecond ours, for the better fitting and conuciance of our people. Our Gouernour, with many thankes (as the cattle required) cherifling this fo carefull and religious confideration in him(and whose experience likewise was 60 somewhat in these affaires) granted him all things sutable to his desire, and to the furthering of the worke : who therefore had made ready for him all fuch tooles and inftruments, as our owns wfe required not : and for him, were drawne forth twenty of the ableft and flourest of the company, and the best of our men, to hew and square timber, when himselfe then, with daily paines

He builds a Pinnace.

Cap, Win.

L. Lawarre.

and labour, wrought youn a small Vesfell, which was soone ready as ours; at which wer leane him a while buffed, and returne to our felues. In the meane space did one Frubbufher, borne at Graves end, and at his comming forth now dwelling at Lime Houle (a painefull and well experienced Shipwright, and skilfull workman' libour the building of a little Pinnace: for the furtherance of which, the Gouernour dispensed with no rangile of his body, nor forbare any care builds another or study of minde, perfivading (as much and more, an ill qualified parcell of people, by his owne performance, then by authority, thereby to hold them at their worke, namely to fell carry, and fawe Cedar, nt for the Corpenters purpose (for what was to meane, whereto he would not himfelie fet his hand, being therefore vp earely and downe late ?) yet neuertheleffe were they hard-10 ly drawne to it, as the l'ortoile to the inchanement, as the Prouerbe is, but his owne presence and hand being fet to enery meane labour, and imployed foreadily to enery office, made our people Power of exa

at length more diligent, and willing to be called thereunto, where they should see him before ample, they came. In which, we may observe how much example prevailes above precepts; and how readier men are to be led by eyes, then cares.

And fure it was happy for vs, who had now runne this fortune, and were fallen into the bortome of this mifery, that we both had our Gouernour with vs and one to folicitous and carefull. whole both example (as I faid) and authority, could lay flying, and command upon our people; elfe, I am periwaded, we had most of vs finished our dayes there, so willing were the major part of the common fort (especially when they found such a plenty of victuals) to settle a foundati-20 on of ever inhabiting there; as well appeared by many practifes of the rs (and perhaps of some of the better (ort) Loe, what are our affections and passions, if not rightly (quared? how irreligious, and irregular they expresse vs : not perhaps to ill as we would be, but yet as wee are; fome Mutinous condangerous and fecret discontents nourished among ft vs, had like to have bin the parents of blou- ceptions. dy iffues and mitchiefes; they began first in the Sca-men, who in time had fattened virto them (by falle baits) many of our land-men likewife, and fome of whom (for opinion of their Religion) was carried an extraordinary and good respect. The Angles wherewith chiefely they thus hooked in these disquieted Pooles, were, how that in Virginia, nothing but wretchednesse and labour must be expected, with many wants, and a churtly intreaty, there being neither that Fish, Flesh, nor Fowle, which here (without waiting on the one part, or watching on theirs, or any threatming, and are 20 of authority) at ease, and pleasure might be intoyed ; and since both in the one, and the other place : they were (for the time) to loofe the fruition both of them friends and Countrey, as good, and better were ut for them, to repose and seate them where they should have the least ontward wants the while. This, thus preached, and published each to other, though by such who never had bin more onward towards Virginia, then (before this Voyage) a Sculler could happily rowe him (and what hath a more adamantine power to draw vnto it the confent and attraction of the idle, vntoward, and wretched number of the many, then liberty, and fulnesse of sensuality?) begat such a murmur, and fuch a difcontent, and difunion of hearts and hands from this labour, and forwarding the meanes of redeeming vs from hence, as each one wrought with his Mate how to divorte him from the fame.

And first (and it was the first of September) a conspiracy was discovered, of which fix were Conform found principals, who had promifed each vnto the other, not to let their hands to any tranaile or endeauour which might expedite or forward this Pinnace: and each of thefe had feuerally (according to appointment) fought his opportunity to draw the Smith, and one of our Carpenters . Niebolas Bennit , who made much profession of Scripture , a mutinous and diffembling Importer; the Captaine, and one of the chiefe perswaders of others, who afterwards brake from the society of the Colony, and like outlawes retired into the Woods, romake a fettlement and habitation there) on their party, with whom they purposed to leave our Quarter, and possesse another Iland by themselves: but this happily round out, they were condemned to the same punishment which they would have chosen (but without Smith or Car-50 penter) and to an Iland farre by it felfe, they were carried, and there left. Their names were

John Want, the chiefe of them, an Effex man of Newport by Saffronwalden, both setisticus, and John Mann, a fectary in points of Religion, in his owne prayers much denout and frequent, but harely water same to drawne to the publique, infomuch asbeing suspected by our Minister for a Brownist, he was the sace a often compelled to the common Liturgie and forme of Prayer. The rest of the confederates and passence were Christopher Carter, Francis Pearepoint, William Brian, William Martin, Richard Knowles: but soone they missed comfort (who were farre removed from our store) besides, the society of their acquaintance had wrought in some of them, if not a loathsomenesse of their offence, yet a forrow that their complement was not more full, and therefore a weatine fe of their being thus vntimely prescribed; infomuch, as many humble petitions were fent vnto our Gouerner, fraughe

60 full of their feeming fortow and repentance, and earnest vowes to redeeme the former trespasse, with example of dueties in them all, to the common cause, and generall butinesse; vpon which our Gouernour (not easie to admit any acculation, and hard to remit an offence, but at all times forry in the punishment of him, in whom may appeare either shame or contriction) was eatily content to reacknowledge them againe.

I ffffff 2

Another Mu-

Yet could not this be any warning to others, who more fubtilly began to shake the founds. tion of our quiet lafety, and therein did one Stephen Hopkins commence the first act or ouerture: A fellow who had much knowledge in the Scriptures, and could reason well therein, whom our Minister therefore chose to be his Clarke, to reade the Pfalmes, and Chapters vpon Sondayes, at the affembly of the Congregation under him : who in Ianuary the twenty foure, brike with one Samuel Sharpe and Humfrey Reede (who presently discourred it to the Gouernour) and alleaged fubitantiall arguments, both civill and divine (the Scripture falfly quoted) that it was no breach of honefly, conscience, nor Religion, to decline from the obedience of the Gouernour, or refuse to goe any further, led by his authority (except it fo pleafed themfelues) fince the authority ceato goe any future, and of the warden was committed, and with it, they were all then freed from the gouernment of any man; and for a matter of Confcience, it was not vok nowne to the meanest, how much we were therein bound each one to prouide for himselfe, and his owne samily : for which

Confeience my to conicia

were two apparant reasons to stay them even in this place; first, abundance by Gods providence of all manner of good foode: next, fome hope in reasonable time, when they might grow weary of the place, to built a small Barke, with the skill and helpe of the aforefaid No bolas Bennit. whom they infinuated to them, albeit hee was now ablent from his quarter, and working in the maine Hand with Sir George Summers upon his Pinnace, to be of the configuracy, that fo might get cleere from hence at their owne pleasures : when in Virginia, the first would be alluredly wanting, and they might well feare to be detained in that Countrie by the authority of the Commander thereof, and their whole life to ferue the turnes of the Aduenturers, with their trauailes and labours. This being thus laid, and by fuch a one, who had gotten an opinion (as I before remembred) of Religion; when it was declared by those two accusers, not knowing what further ground it had or complices, it pleased the Gouernour to let this his factions of fence to have a publique affront, and contestation by these two witnesses before the whole Com-Steeben Hoskins pany, who at the toling of a Bell) affemble before a Corps du guard, where the Prifoner was condemied by the condemied and particular and parti heebeing onely found, at this time, both the Captaine, and the follower of this Mutinie, and generally held worthy to fatisfie the punishment of his offence, with the facrifice of his life, our Gouernour patied the sentence of a Martiall Court vpon him, such as belongs to Mutinie and 20 Rebellion. But so penitent hee was, and made so much moane, alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his tre pale, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better fort of the Company, who therefore with humble intreaties, and earnest supplications, went vnto our Gouernor, whom they befought (as likewife did Captaine Newport, and my felfe) and neuer left him vitill

we had got his pardon.

In the edangers and divellish disquiets (whilest the almighty God wrought for vs , and sent vs miraculoufly deliuered from the calamities of the Sea, all bleifings vpon the shoare, to content and binde vs to gratefulnelle) thus inraged amongft our felues, to the destruction each of other, into what a mischiefe and misery had wee bin given vp, had wee not had a Gover-Third Mutiny, nour with his authority, to have suppressed the same ! Yet was there a worse practile, fa- 40 Gion, and conjuration a foote, deadly and bloudy, in which the lire of our Governour, with many others were threatned, and could not but miscarry in his fall. But such is ever the will of God (who in the execution of his judgements, breaketh the firebrands upon the head of him, who first kindleth them) there were, who conceived that our Governour indeede neither durst, nor had authority to put in execution, or palle the act of Iustice vpon any one, how treacherous or impious to euer; - their owne opinions to much deceiuing them for the valawfulnesse of any act, which they would execute: daring to infifie among themselves, that if they should be apprehended, before the performance, they should happily suffer as Martyrs. They perseuered therefore not onely to draw wnto them fuch a number, and allociates as they could worke in, to the abandoning of our Governour, and to the inhabiting of this Iland. They had now purpo- 50 fed to have made a surprise of the Store-house, and to have forced from thence, what was therein either of Meale, Cloath, Cables, Armes, Sailes, Oares, or what elfe it pleafed God that we had recouered from the wracke, and was to ferue our generall necessity and vie, either for the reliefe of vs, while wee stated here, or for the carrying of vs from this place againe, when our Pinnace

should have bin furnished. Emilias ithath But as all giddy and lawlesse attempts, have alwayes fomething of impersection, and that a deficient as well by the property of the action, which holdeth of disobedience and rebellion (both full caucho in and of feare) as through the ignorance of the deuiters themselues; so in this (belides those detects) fects, def. as there were some of the allociation, who not strong inough fortified in their owne conceits, brike from the plot it felie, and (before the time was ripe for the execution thereof) discours 50 red the whole order, and every Agent, and Actor thereof, who neverthelelle were not fuddenly apprehended, by reason the confederates were divided and feperated in place, some with vs, and the chiefe with Sir George Summers in his Hand (and indeede all his whole company) but good watch passed vpon them, enery man from thenceforth communaded to wears

his weapon, without which before, we freely walked from quarter to quarter, and converted amone our felues, and every man adusted to thand upon his guard, his owne life not being in fairer, whileft his next neighbour was not to be trufted. The Centinels, and nightwaners doubled, the passages of both the quarters were carefully observed, by which meanes nothing was further attempted; vntill a Gentleman amongst them, one Henry Paine, the thirteenth of H. Paine his March, full of mischiefe, and every houre preparing something or other, stealing Swords, A. Mannus behing difes. Axes, Hatchets, Sawes, Augers, Planes, Mallets, &c. to make good his owne bad end, wourt his watch night comming about, and being called by the Captaine of the fame, to be voon

the guard, did not onely give his faid Commander euill language, but frucke at him, doubled To his blowes, and when hee was not juffered to clote with him, went off the Guard, icoffing at the double diligence and attendance of the Watch, appointed by the Gouernour for much purpose, as hee said: vpon which, the Watch telling him, if the Gouernour should vnderstand of this his infolency, it might turne him to much blame, and happily be as much as his life were worth. The faid Paine replyed with a fetled and bitter violence, and in fuch vnreuerent tearmes, as I hould offend the modelt eare too much to expresse it in his owne phrase : but the contents were, how that the Governour had no authoritie of that qualitie, to instific upon any one (how meane soener in the Colonie) an action of that nature, and therefore let the Gonernour (faid hee) kife, &c. Which words, being with the omitted additions, brought the next day vnto euery common and publique discourse, at length they were delivered over to the Go-20 yernour, who examining well the fact (the transgression so much the more exemplary and odious, as being in a dangerous time, in a Confederate, and the fuccelle of the same wishtly liftened after, with a doubtfull conceit, what might be the iffic of fo notorious a boldnesse and impudency) calling the faid Paine before him, and the whole Company, where (being foone

consinced both by the witnesse, of the Commander, and many which were vpon the watch with him) our Gouernour, who had now the eyes of the whole Colony fixed you him, condemned him to be instantly hanged; and the ladder being ready, after he had made many confessions, hee earnestly defired, being a Gentleman, that hee might be shot to death, and towards the evening His execution he had his defire, the Sunne and his life fetting together.

But for the other which were with Sir George, vpon the Sunday following (the Barke beeing 30 now in good forwardnesse) and readie to lanch in short time, from that place (as we supposed) to meet ours at a pond of fresh water, where they were both to bee mored, vntill such time as being fully tackled, the wind (hould ferue faire, for our putting to Sea together) being the eighteenth of March, hearing of Paynes death, and fearing hee had apprached them, and discoursed the attempt (who poore Gentleman therein, in so bad a cause, was too secret and constant to his owne faith ingaged vnto them, and as little needed, as vrged thereunto, though fomewhat was voluntarily delivered by him) by a mutuall content forfooke their labour, and Sir George Summers, and like Out-lawes betooke them to the wild Woods: whether mean rage, and gree- Diversof Ste dineffe after fome little Pearle (as it was thought) wherewith they conceived, they should for G Summers ener inrich themselues, and saw how to obtaine the same easily in this place, or whether, comp ny fird

so the defire for euer to inhabite heere, or was other fecret elle moued them thereunto, into the goods true it is, they fent an audacious and formall Petition to our Gouernour, subscribed with all their names and Seales : not only intreating him, that they might flay here, but (with great art) importuned him, that he would performe other conditions with them, and not wave, nor euade from some of his owne promites, as namely to furnish each of them with two Sutes of Apparell, and contribute Meale rateably for one whole yeere, fo much among them, as they had weekly now, which was one pound and an halfe a weeke (for fuch had beene our proportion for nine moneths.) Our Gouernour answered this their Petition, writing to Sir George Summers to

That true it was, at their first arrivall upon this Iland, when it was feared how our meanes would not Sit T. Gateshia extend to the making of a Veffell, capeable and large enough, to transport all our Countrimen at once . in- letter to Sit Ge 30 deed out of his Christian consideration (mourning for such his Countrimen, who comming under his com- Summers. mand, he forefaw that for a while, he was like enough to leave here behind, compelled by tyrannie of necessitie) his purpose was not yet to for suke them so, as given uplike Savages : but to leave them all things fitting to defend them from want and wretchednesse, as much at least as lay in his power, to spece from the present use (and perhaps necessitie of others, whose fortunes should be to be transported with him) for one whole years or more (if so long by any casualtie, the skips which he would send with them micht be staied before their arrivall, so many bazards accompanying the Sea) but withall intreated Sir George to remember unto his Company (if by any meanes he could learne where they were) how he had vowed unto him, that if either his ownemeanes, his anthoritie in Virginia, or love with his friends in England,

6 could distrate for them fooner, how farre it was from him, to let them remarne abandoned, and negletted without their redemption folong : and then proceeded, requesting Sir George Summers againe, to signifie unto them, since now our owne Pinnasse did arise to that burthen, and that it would sufficiently transport them all, beside the necessitie of any other Barke : and yet, that since his Barke was now readic too, that those consultations, how somer charitable and most passionate in themselves, might determine, as

taken away thereby, and therefore, that he would now bee pleased to admise them well, how unanswerable this grant or consent of his bould be : first, to his Maiestie for so many of his subjects, next to the Admenturers, and lastity, what an imputation and infamy it might be, to both their owne proper reputations. and bonours, haung each of them authoritie in their places, to compell the adversant and irregular multitude, at any time, to what flould bee obedient and bonest, which if they should not execute, the blame would not by upon the people (at all times wavering and insolent) but upon themselves so weake and unworthy in their command. And moreour intreated him by any fecret practice to apprehend them, fince that the obstinate, and precipitate many, were no more in such a condition and state to bee fanoured, then the murmuring andmutine of such Rebellious and turbulent Humorists, who had not considence nor the marmuring was made to goodnesse, and in the businesse for which they were sent out of England; 10 for which likewife, at the expence and charge of the Adventurers, they were to him committed, and that the meanest in the whole Fices flood the Company in no leffe then twentie pounds, for his owne personall Transportation, and things necessary to accompany him. And therefore louingly consured Sir George, by the worthinesse of his (heretofore) well magniagned reputation, and by the powers of his owne indeewent, and by the vertue of that ancient lone and friendlip, which had thefe many yeeres beene feiled betweene them, to doe his beft, to give this remoited Company (if he could fend unto them) the confideration of these particulars, and so works with them (if he might) that by faire meanes (the Matiniereconciled) they would at length (uruey their owne errours, which bee would bee as readie, upon their rendring and comming into paridon, as he did now pittie them; affuring them in generall and particular, that what focuer they had finifierly committed, or practifed buberto against the Lawes of dutie and honestie, 20 frould not in any fort be imputed againft them.

In which good Office Sir George Summers did so nobly worke, and heartily labour, as hee brought most of them in, and indeed ail, but Christopher Carter, and Robert Waters, who (by no meanes) would any more come among it Sit Georges men, hearing that Sir George had commanded his men indeed (ince they would not be intreated by faire meanes) to furprize them (if they could) by any device or force. From which time they grew fo cautelous and wary, for their owne ill, as at our comming away, wee were faine to leave them behind. That Water was a Sayler, who at his first landing upon the lland (as after you shall heare) killed another fellow Sayler of his, the bodie of the murthered and Murtherer fodwelling, as prescribed now

Buche.

Blaters and

Larrer ftand

out and are

left behind.

During our time of abode upon these Hands, wee had daily every Sunday two Sermons pres-Religious ex- ched by our Minister, besides every Morning and Evening at the ringing of a Bell, wee repayed ercies perfor- all to puplique Prayer, at . hat time the names of our whole Company were called by Bill, and med by Mafter fuch as were wanting, were duly punished.

The contents (for the most part) of all our Preachers Sermons, were especially of Thanke-

fulnesse and Vnitie, &c.

The most holy ciu:lland mod of Sacraments Marriage, Child-birth,

Chi'dren naand Bermsdas.

It pleated God alio to give vs opportunitie, to performe all the other Offices, and Rites of our Christian Profession in this lland : as Marriage, for the fixe and twentieth of November we had one of Sir George Summers his men, his Cooke, named Thomas Powell, who married a Maid Servant of one Miltris Horton, whose name was Elizabeth Persons: and upon Christmasse Eue, 40 as also once before, the first of October; our Minister preached a godly Sermon, which being enday by exercise ded, he celebrated a Communion, at the partaking whereof our Gouernour was, and the greater ded, he celebrated a Communion, at the partaking whereof our Gouernour was, test part of our Company : and the eleventh of February , wee had the childe of one lobn Rofe christened a Daughter, to which Captaine Newport and my selfe were Witnesses, and the aforefaid Militis Horson and we named it Bermuds, as also the five and twentieth of Marc', the wife of one Edward Eason, being delivered the weeke before of a Boy, had him then christened, to which Captaine Newport and my feife, and Maiter lames Swift were Godfathers, and we named

Likewife, we buried five of our company, Ieffery Briars, Riebard Lewis, William Hitchman, and my God-daughter Bermuda Rolfs, and one vottimely Edward Samuell a Sayler, being villanoully 50 killed by the forefaid Robert Waters, (a Sayler likewife) with a shoull, who strake him therewith under the lift of the Eare, for which he was apprehended, and appointed to be hanged the next day, the fact being done in the twilight) but being bound falt to a Tree all night, with many Ropes, and a Guard of fine or fix to attend him, his fellow Saylers watching the advantage of the Centinels fleeping) in despisht and distaine that Iustice should bee shewed upon a Sayler, and that one of their crue should be an example to others, not taking into consideration, the enmanlineff of the murther, nor the horror of the finne, they cut his bands, and conveyed him into the Woods, where they fed him nightly, and closely, who afterward by the mediation of Sir George Summers, vpon many conditions, had his tryall respited by our Gouernour.

Weehad brought our Pinnaile to forward by this time, as the eight and twentieth of August 60 we having laid her Keele. The fixe and twentieth of February, we now began to calke cold Cables we had preferred vnto vs, which affoorded Ocam enough : and one barrell of Pitch, and another of Tirre, we like wife laued, which ferued our viefome little way vpon the Bile, wee breamed her otherwife with Lime made of Wilke-fhels, and an lard white from which we bur-

ned in a Kill, flaked with fresh water, and tempered with Tortoyles Oyle. The thirtieth of March being Friday, we towed her out in the morning Spring-tyde, from the Wharfe where the was built, boying her with foure Caske in her runne only : which opened into the Northwest, and into which when the Breeze stood North and by West with any stiffegale, and youn the Spring-tydes, the Sea would increase with that violence, especially twice it did so, as at the first time (before our Gouernour had caused a solid Causey of an hundred load of stone to bee brought from the Hils and Neighbour Rockes, and round about her ribs from flemme to flemmes where it made a pointed Baulke, and thereby brake the violence of the Flowe and Billowe) it indangered her overthrow and ruine, beeing greene as it were voon the Stockes. With much

to difficultie, diligence, and labour, we faued her at the first, all her Bates, Shores, and Piles, which under-fet her, being almost carried from her, which was the second of January, when her knees were not fet to, nor one joynt firme : We launched her vnrigged, to carrie her to a little round Iland, lying West North-west, and close aboord to the backe side of our Iland, both neerer the Ponds and Wels of some fresh water, as also from thence to make our way to the Sea the better: the Channell being there fufficient and deepe enough to leade her forth, when her Mafts, Sayles. and all her Trimme should bee about her. Shee was fortie foot by the Keele, and nineteene foot broad at the Beame, fixe foote floore, her Rake forward was fourteene foot, her Rake aft from the top of her Post (which was twelve foot long) was three foot, shee was eight foot deepe vnder her Beame, betweene her Deckes the was foure foot and an halfe, with a riling of halfe a foot 20 more under her fore Castle, of purpose to scowre the Decke with small shot, if at any time wee should bee borded by the Enemie. Shee had a fall of eighteene inches aft, to make her sterage and her great Cabbin the more large : her sterage was fine foote long, and fixe foote high, with a close Gallerie right aft, with a window on each fide, and two right aft. The most part of her

timber was Cedar, which we found to be bad for shipping, for that it is wonderous falle inward, Cedarill for and befides 1: 18 fo spault or brickle, that it will make no good plankes, her Beames were all Oke thipping, of our ruine thip, and some plankes in her Bow of Oke, and all the rest as is aforesaid. When thee began to swimme (upon her launching) our Gouernour called her The Deliverance, and thee

might be some eighty tunnes of burthen.

Before we quitted our old quarter, and dislodged to the fresh water with our Pinnasse, our Go-30 nemour fet vp in Sir George Summers Garden a faire Muemofjnon in figure of a Croffe, made of Croffe fet vp fome of the timber of our ruined shippe, which was scrued in with strong and great trunnels to a for a memorial mightie Cedar, which grew in the middeft of the faid Garden, and whofe top and vpper branches he caused to be lopped, that the violence of the winde and weather might have the leffe power ouer her.

In the middelt of the Croffe, our Gouernour fastened the Picture of his Maiestie in a piece of His Maiesties Siluer of twelue pence, and on each side of the Croffe, hee fet an Inteription graven in Copper, in Picture, the Latine and English : o this pur pole.

In memory of our great Deliuerance, both from a mightie storme and leake : wee have set upthis to the bonour of God. It is the foyle of an English | bip (of three bundred tunne) called the Sea Venture. 40 bound with feuen flips more (from which the storme divided vs) to Virginia, or Nova Britania, in America. In it were two Knights, Sir Thomas Gates Knight , Gonernour of the English Forces and Colonie there : and Sir George Summers Knight, Admirall of the Seas. Her Captaine was Christopher Newport, Passengers and Mariners shee had beside (which came all (afe to Land) one bundred and liftie. We were forced to runne ber ashore (by reason of her leake) under a Point that bore Southeast from the Northerne Point of the Iland, which wee discovered first the eight and twentieth of

About the last of Aprill, Sir George Summers launched his Pinnasse, and brought her from his building Bay, in the Mayne Hand, into the Chanuell where ours did ride, and fhee was by the Keele nine and twentie foot : at the Beame fifteene foot and an halfe : at the Loote fourteene, at 50 the Trausam nine, and the was eight foot deepe, and drew sixe foote water, and hee called her

S. III.

Their departure from Bermuda and arrivall in Virginia : miseries there, departure and returne upon the Lord LA WARRES arriving. I AMES Towne described.

Rom this time we only awaited a favourable Westerly wind to carrie vs forth, whicie longer then vivall now kept at the Earl, and South-east, the way which wee were to goe. The tenth of May early, Sir George Summers and Captaine Newport went off with their long Boates, and with two Canoaes boyed the Channell, which wee were to leade it out in , and which was no broader from Shoales on the one fide and

of that, were we able to fit our Bowyes, but euen when we came just vpon them, we strucke a more winde blew, we were fainte to town Rocke on the starboord side, ouer which the Bowye rid, and had it not beene a soft Rocke. by which meanes she bore it before her, and crushed it to pieces, God knowes we might have beene like enough, to have returned anew, and dwelt there, after tenne monethes of carefuln fleand great labour a longer time : but God was more mescifull vnto vs. When shee ftrucke vpon the Rocke, the Cock-iwayne one Walfingham beeing in the Boate with a quicke spirit (when wee were all amazed, and our heartstailed) and to by Gods goodnesse wee led it out at three fadome. Io and three fadome and an halfe water. The wind ferued vs eafily all that day and the next, when (God be euer prayled for it) to the no little ioy of vs all, we got cleere of the Ilands. After which holding a Southerly course, for seven dayes wee had the winde sometimes faire, and sometimes fearce and contratie : in which time we loft Sir George Summers twice, albeit we fill spared him our mayne top-layle, and sometimes our fore course too. The feuenteenth of May we faw change of water, and had much Rubbish swimme by our ship Signe of fide, whereby wee knew wee were not farre from Land. The eighteenth bout midnight wee Land. founded, with the Dipfing Lead, and found thirtie feuen fadome. The nineteenth in the morning we founded, and and nineteene and an halfe falome, stonie, and sandie ground. The twentiethabout midnight, we had a maruellous iweet imell from the shoare (as from the Coalt of 20 Spaine, thort of the Straits) itrong and pleafant, which did not a little glad vs. In the morning by day breake (fo foone as one might well fee from the fore-top) one of the Saylers described Land about an houre after, I went vpa id might discouer two Hummockes to the Southward, from which (Northward all along) lay the Land, which were were to Coast to Cape Henrie, About feuen of the clocke we caft for han Anchor, because the tyde (by reason or the Freshet that set into the Bay) makea strong Ebbe there, and the winde was but easte, so as not beeing ableto stemme the Tyde, we purposed to lye at an Anchor vntill the next flood, but the wind comming South-west a loome gale about eleuen, we set tayle againe, and hauing got ouer the Barre, bote This is the famous Chesipiacke Bay, which we have called (in honour of our young Prince) 30 Cape Henrie over against which within the Bay, lyeth another Head-land, which we called in Cheffiack Bay. honour of our Princely Duke of Yorke Cape Charles; and these lye North-east and by East, and South-west and by West, and they may bee distant each from the other in breadth seuen leagues, betweene which the Sea runnes in as broad as betweene Queeneburrough and Lee. Indeed it is a goodly Bay and a fairer, not eafily to be found. The one and twentieth, beeing Munday in the morning, wee came vp within two milesof Point Comfort, ween the Captaine of the Fort discharged a warning Peece at vs, whereupon we came to an Anchor, and fent off our long Boar to the Fort, to certifie who we were by reason of the shoales which lye on the South-side, this Fort easily commands the mouth of the River, albeit it is as broad as betweene Greenwich, and the Ile of Dogges.

True it is, such who talked with our men from the shoare, deliuered how safely all our ships the last yeere (excepting only the Admirall, and the little Pinnalle in which one Muchael Philes commanded of iome twentie tunne, which we towed a sterne till the storme blew) arrived, and how our people (well increased) had therefore builded this Fort; only wee could not learne any thing of our long Boat, fent from the Bermudas, but what wee gathered by the Indians them-

selves, especially from Powhatan, who would tell our men of such a Boat landed in one of his Ri-

uers, and would describe the people, and make much seeffing sport thereat : by which wee have

nour found the condition and there of the C & how to amend it or faue his owne Company of the like necessities. For we had brought from ring no fuch accidents pointle to betali the C. fiftie for a Sea Voyage : 171 was n : path. helpe from the Indian. Fire the true to at mouth, it was now like with it wer Security nor was there at the Fort as they were more ther fufficient Seine, nor other con ic ent No.

30 notice of.

20 Sturgeon vet come into the North All visit at Speech vinto the Company, get ne them and equally there with him, and the same of thing from the Countrey, by the enucables port them all into their Native Countrey there was a general acclamation, and house

fion, the old Patent and the Courselessais . . .

had taken from them) rent up an alwant, rather

within; with many more particularities of their

stones call off from them, to fetch other need

out, if our men flifted but beyond the pour

To diforders the lait veere) then i was sea to es

downe, the Ports open, the Catestron.

to be disheartened and faint, when they taw ? ned vnto themfelues. In the meane while, a ctions, which hee en ovned them ftr. Ale t them, which being written out taite, were fet If I should be examined from whence, and b

ons descended upon our people. I can only reter the Aduenturers have fent hither intituled, . " in the ground and causes are fausurably and an produced, not excufing likew to the turne of !

full enough among to heatie a multipule, et per the laif yeare with vs : with whom to cetter absolute command, came along and . were we with them had reached our will east in the Vnto fuch calamity can that he feet an exdeede (right noble Lidy) no it, ry can in memori people, thus gouerned, have both and areas a tome of them, whose vavees an incommand

guilt hereof, as flanding vntouched a new re naries shall never find time nor ware of the practifes, who, it may be, law all the orders a But vnder pardon, let me speake testive to a both meet in any one of their build Fire tie in England, continuall watti e. . Has a

50 provisions, what better could retail and the ! ner, then necessarily following demonstrate doome of the Witeman 1 Fet and 1 1994 fothy powerty commeto, at overbat there are the with this Idlenetle, when a men

by Captaine Iames Danies with forty men, and hath to name Algernoone Fort, to called by Captaine George Percy, whom we found at our arrivall Prefident of the Colony and at this timelikewife in the Fort. When we got into the Point, which was the one and twentieth of May, being

V pon Point Comfort our men did the last yeere (as you have heard) rayse a little Fortification, which fince hath beene better perfected, and is likely to prooue aftrong Fort, and is now kept

gathered, that it is most likely, how it arrived upon our Coast, and not meeting with our River were taken at some time or other, at some advantage by the Savages, and so cut off. When our Skuffe came up againe, the good newes of our ships, and mens arruall the last veere, did nota 50 little glad our Gouernour: who went soone ashoare, and assoone (contrary to all our faire hopes) had new vnexpected, vncomfortable, and heavie newes of a worle condition of our people a-

and the headlesse in that days -which they were fent higher, me for their owne bellies, nor any and and Gardens or eliewhere: I have not a series lie ficke and languish must in he come a service

The long Boat

uens cuft away

boue at lames Towne.

fent by Ra-

Signe of

Land

Rockeson the other, then about three times the length of our Pinnafe. About ten of the clocke, that day being Touriday, we let fayle an eatlegale, the wind at South, and by realon no more winde blew, we were fame to towe her with our long Boate, vet neither with the helpe of that, were we able to fit our Bowyes, but even when we came just voon them, we strucke a Rocke on the starboord side, over which the Bowye rid, and had it not beene a foft Rocke, by which meanes she bore it before her, and cruthed it to pieces, God knowes we might have beene like enough, to have returned anew, and dwelt there, after tenne monethes of carefuln fleand greatlabour a longer time; but God was more meiciful vinto vs. When thee flrucke vpon the Rocke, the Cock-1 wayne one Walfingham beeing in the Boate with a quicke Spirit (when wee were all amazed, and our hearts failed) and lo by Gods goodnesse wee led it out at three fadome, 10 and three fadone and an halfe water. The wind ferued vs eafily all that day and the next, when (God be ever prayled for it) to the no little loy of vs all, we got cleere of the Ilands. After which holding a Southerly courie, for feuen dayes wee had the winde fometimes faire, and fometimes fearce and contratte : in which time we Lift Sir George Summers twice, albeit we fill spared him our mayne top-fayle, and sometimes our fore course too.

The feverteenth of May we faw change of water, and had much Rubbish swimme by our ship fide, whereby wee knew wee were not farre from Land. The eighteenth bout midnight wee founded, with the Dopling Lead, and found thirtie feuen fadome. The nineteenth in the morning we founded, and ad nineteene and an haire fadome, fronie, and fandie ground. The twentierhabout midnight, we had a maruellous iweet smell from the shoare (as from the Coast of 12 Spaine, thort of the Straits) itrong and pleafant, which did not a little glad vs. In the morning

by day breake (fo foune as one might well fee from the fore-top) one of the Saylers deferred Land about an houre after, I went vp and might discouer two Hummockes to the Southward, from which (Northward all along) lay the Land, which were to Coast to Cape Henrie. About feuen of the clocke we cast forth an Anchor, because the tyde (by reason or the Freshet that set into the Bay) make a strong Ebbe there, and the winde was but easie, so as not beeing able to ftemme the Tyde, we purposed to lye at an Anchor vntill the next flood, but the wind comming South-west a loome gale about eleuen, we set tayle againe, and having got ouer the Barre, bore

in for the Cape.

for the Cape.

This is the famous Chesipiacle Bay, which we chauc called (in honour of our young Prince) 30 Cape Henrie ouer against which within the Bay, lyeth another Head-land, which wee called in honour of our Princely Duke of Torke Cape Charles; and thefe lye North-east and by East, and South-west and by West, and they may bee distant each from the other in breadthseuen leagues, betweene which the Sea runnes in as broad as betweene Queeneburrough and Lee. Indeed it is a goodly Bay and a fairer, not easily to be found.

The one and twentieth, beeing Munday in the morning, wee came vp within two miles of Point Comfort, woen the Captaine of the Fort discharged a warning Pecceat vs, whereupon we came to an Anchor, and sent off our long Boar to the Fort, to certifie who we were by reason of the shoales which lye on the South-side, this Fort early commands the mouth of the River, al-

beit it is as broad as betweene Greenwich, and the Ile of Dogges.

True it is, fuch who talked with our men from the shoare, deliuered how safely all our ships the last yeere (excepting only the Admirall, and the little Pinnalle in which one Michael Philes commanded of some twentie tunne, which we towed a sterne till the storme blew) arrived, and how our people (well increased) had therefore builded this Fort; only wee could not learne any thing of our long Boat, fent from the Bermudas, but what wee gathered by the Indians themfelues, especially from Pophatan, who would tell our men of such a Boat landed in one of his Riuers, and would describe the people, and make much scoffing sport thereat : by which wee have gathered, that it is most likely, how it arrived upon our Coast, and not meeting with our River were taken at some time or other, at some advantage by the Savages, and so cut off. When our Skiffecame vp againe, the good newes of our ships, and mens arruall the last yeere, did not a 50 little glad our Gouernour: who went soone ashoare, and assoone (contrary to all our faire hopes) had new vnexpected, vncomfortable, and heatie newes of a worle condition of our people a-

The long Boat uens caft away

> Vpon Point Comfort our men did the last yeere (as you have heard) rayse a little Fortification, which fince hath beene better perfected, and is likely to produce ftrong Fort, and is now kept by Captaine lames Danies with forty men, and hath to name Algernoone Fort, focalled by Captaine George Percy, whom we found at our arrivall Prefident of the Colony, and at this timelike-M. George Percy. wife in the Fort. When we got into the Point, which was the one and twentieth of May, being Munday about noone; where riding before an Indian Towne called Keconghien, a mightie storme

From hence in two dayes (only by the helpe of Tydes, no winde flirting) weeplyed it fadly of the River, and the three and treatiesh of XX.... of Thunder, Lightning, and Raine, gave vs a shrewd and fearefull welcome. vp the River, and the three and twentieth of May we cast Anchor before Tames Towne, where we landed, and our much grieued Gouernour first visiting the Church caused the Bell to be rung, at which (all fuch as wereable to come forth of cheir houses) repayted to Church where our Mi-

miller Mafter Bucke made a zealous and forrowfull Prayer, finding all things fo contrary to cur exocctations, to full of mitery and milgouernment. After Seruice our Governour cauled mee to reade his Commission, and Captaine Percie (then President) delivered up unto him his Commiss. Old Farent fion, the old Patent and the Councell Scale. Viewing the Fore, we found the Palliladoes torne verlided vp. howner, the Ports open, the Gates from off the hinges, and emptie houles (which Owners deat)

CHAP. 6.5 3. Fort viewed Want of provision. Neglect, and sensuall surfee.

had taken from them) rent up and burnt, rather then the dwellers would flep into the Woodsa thones cast off from them, to fetch other fire-wood : and it is true, the Indian killed as fast without, if our men threed but beyond the bounds of their Block-houle, as Famine and Peftilence did instead of their file. within; with many more particularities of their fufferances (brought vpon them by their owne cause malarum; to diforders the last yeere) then I have heart to expresse. In this defolation and misery our Governour found the condition and state of the Colonie, and (which added more to his griefe) no hope how to amend it or faue his owne Company, and those yet remayning alive, from falling into the like necessities. For we had brought from the Bermadas no greater store of prouision (tearing no fuch accidents politile to befall the Colony here) then might well Grue one hundred and fiftie for a Sea Voyage and it was not possible, at this time of the yeere to amoul it, by any helpe from the Indian. For bebles that they (at their beit) have little more, then from bant to mouth, it was now likewife but heir Seed-time, and all their Corne scarce put into the ground : nor was there at the Fort, as they whom we found related vnto vi) any meanes to take till, neither fufficient Seine, nor other connecient Net, and vet if there had, there was not one eye of 10 Sturgeon yet come into the River. All which confidered, it pleafed our Governour to make a Speech voto the Company, giving them o understand, that what provision he had, they should equally share with him, and if he should find it not possible, and easie to supply them with some

thing from the Countrey, by the endeuouts of his able men, hee would make readic, and transport them all into their Native Countrey (accommodating them the best that he could) at which there was a generall acclamation, and shoute of io, on both sides (for even our owne men began to be disheartened and faint, when they faw this morry among it the others, and no lesse threatned vnto themselves. In the meane while, our Governier published certaine Orders and Instru-Aions, which hee entoyned them ftrictly to observe, the time that hee should stay among the continued for them, which being written out faire, were fet vp vpon a pol in the Church for every one to take their floor

notice of.

If I should be examined from whence, and by what occasion, all these disasters, and afficiti- culers are here ons descended vpon our people, I can only referre you (honoured Lidie) to the Booke, which the Aduenturers have fent hither intituled, Aduertisements onto the Colony in Virginia : where- Preface and in the ground and causes are fauourably abridged, from whence these miserable effects have beene at Articles tor produced, not excufing likewife the forme of government of some errour, which was not power- Pietie, Loyaltill enough among so headie a multitude, especially, as those who arrived here in the supply fent the and Politic the last yeere with vs: with whom the better authoritie and gouernment now changes into an the Colonie, biolute command, came along, and had beene as happily established, had it pleased God, that we with them had reached our wished Harbour.

Vnto fuch calamity can floath, riot, and vanity, bring the most fetled and plentifull estate, Indeede (right noble Lady) no ftory can remember vinto vs, more woes and anguishes, then these people, thus gouerned, have both suffered and pold upon their owne heads. And yet true it is. fome of them, whose voyces and command might not be heard, may easily be absolued from the guilt hereof, as standing vntouched, and vpright in their innocencies; whilest the privile factiomaries shall neuer find time nor darknesse, to wipe away or couer their ignoble and irreligious Men blamed. practifes, who, it may be, lav all the difcredits, and impurations the while upon the Countrie, but not all the But under pardon, let me speake freely to them : let them remember that if riot and floth should Country steed both meet in any one of their best Families, in a Countrey most stored with abundance and plentie in England, continuall wasting, no Husbandry, the old store still spent on, no order for new provisions, what better could betall vinto the Inhabitants, Land-lords, and Tenants of that corner, then necessarily following cleannesse of teeth, famine and death? Is it not the sentence and doome of the Wiseman! Yet a little sleepe, a little slumber, and a little folding of the hands to sleepe: Prou.c. so thy powers a commeth, as one that travelleth by the way, and thy necessitie like an armed man. And with this Idlenesse, when some thing was in store, all wastfull courses exercised to the heigth, and the headlesse multitude, some neither of qualitie nor Religion) not imployed to the end for which they were fent hither, no not compelled (lince in themfelues vinwilling) to fowe Corne fortheir owne bellies, nor to put a Roose, Herbe, &c. for their owne particular good in their Gardens or elfewhere : I fay in this neglect and fentuall Surfet, all things fuffered to runne on, to

lieficke and languish; must it be expected, that health, plentie, and all the goodnesse of a well

ordered State, of necessitie for all this to flow in this Countrey ? You have a right and noble

heart (worthy Lady) bee judge of the truth herein. Then fuffer it not bee concluded vnto you,

for beleeve, I befeech you, that the wants and wretchednesse which they have indured, ascend

or of the pouertie and vilenesse of the Country, whether bee respected the Land or Rivers:

the one, and the other, having not only promifed, but powred enough in their veines, to con-

1750

uince them in fuch calumnies, and to quit those common calimities, which (as the shadow The Country accompanies the body) the precedent neglects touched at, if truly followed, and wrought vpon. What England may boalt of, having the faire hand of husbandry to manure and dreffe it. God, and Nature have faucurably bestowed upon this Country, and as it hath given unto it, both by firuation, height, and foyle, all those (pair hopes) affurances which follow our well planted nature Countrie, and others, lying wnder the same influence: if, as ours, the Countrey and foyle might be improved, and drawne forth: lo hath it indowed it, as is most certaine, with mamy more, which England fetcheth farre vntoher from elfewhere. For first wee have experience, and euen our eyes withesse (how yong so euer wee are to the Countrie) that no Countrey yeeldethgoodher Corne, nor more manifold increase : large Fields wee haue, as prospects of the 10 fame, and not farre from our Pallisado. Besides, wee haue thousands of goodly Vines in euery hedge, and Boske running along the ground, which yeelde a plenticull Grape in their kinde. Let mee appeale then to knowledge, if thefe naturall Vines were planted, dreffed, and ordered by skilf. Il Vincaroones, whether wee might not make a perfect Grape, and fruitefull vintage in thost time? And we have made triall of our owne English feedes, kitchen tracke, and Rootes, and finde them to prosper as speedily as in Eigland.

Onely let me truely acknowledge, they are not an hundre or two of deboilt hands. dront Remaintenight forth by yeare atter yeare, with penury, and leiture, ill promued for before they come, and worfe True case of forth by yeare atter yeare, with penury, and leiture, ill promued for before they come, and worfe mifery in Virto be gouerned when they are here, men of fuch diffemper dbodies, and infected mindes, whom no examples daily before their eyes, either of goodnesse o punishment, can deterre from their habituall impieties, or terrifie from a shamefull death, nat must be the Carpenters, and workemen in this fo glorious a building.

Then let no rumour of the pourty of the County (as if in the wombe thereof there lay not those elementall leedes, which could produce > many faire births of plenty, and increase, and better hopes, then any land vnder the heaves to which the Sunne is no neerer a neighbour May, let no imposture rumour, nor any fame of . ome one, or a few more changeable actions, interpofing by the way, or at home, wane any mans taire purposes hitherward, or wrest them to a declining and falling off from the businesse Iwill acknowledge, deere Lady shaue feene much propenfineffe already towards the vnity,

and generall endeauours: how contentedly doe such as labour with vs, goe forth, when men of 30 ranke and quality, allist, and their on their labours? I have feene it, and I protest it, I have heard the inferiour people, with alacrity of spirit professe, that they should neuer refuse to doe their best in the practise of their sciences and knowledges, when such worthy, and Noble Gentlemen goe it and out before them, and not onely so, but as the occasion shall be offered, no late helpe them with their hand, then defend them with their Sword. And it is to be voderflood, that fuch as labour, are not yet fo taxed, but that easily they performe the fame, and end by tenne of the clocke have done their Mornings worke: at what time, they have the allowances fet out ready for them, and vntill the three of the clocke againe, they take their owne pleafure, and afterwards with the Sunne fet, their dayes labour is finished. In all which couries, if the bufineffe be continued, I doubt nothing, with Gods fauour towards 40 vs, but to fee it in time, a Countrie, an Hauen, and a Staple, fitted for such a trade, as shall advance affureder increale, both to the Adventurers, and free Burgers thereof, then any Trade

Note. The

Times of la-

in Christendome , or then that (even in her earely dayes, when Michael Cauacoo the Greeke, did first discouer it to our English Factor in Poland) which extens it selie now from Calps and Abila, to the bottome of Sidon, and fo wide as Alexandria, and all the Ports and Hauens North and South, through the Arches to Cio, Smyrna, Troy, the Hellefont, and vp to Pompeys Pillar, which as a Pharos, or watch Tower, itands vpon the wondrous opening into the Euxine Sca. From the three and twentieth of May, wnto the leventh of June, our Governour attempted,

Sir T. Gates his care.

Pobatans po-

and made triall of all the wayes, that both his owne judgement could prompe him in, and the 50 aduife of Captaine George Percy, and those Centlemen whom hee found of the Counsell, when hee came in, as of others; whom hee caufed to deliuer their knowledges, concerning the State and Condition of the Countrey: but after much debating, it could not appeare, how possibly they might preserve themselves (reserving that little which wee brought from the Bermudas in our Simppes, and was upon all occasions to stand good by vs) tenne dayes from staruing. For helides, that the Indians were of themselves poore, they were forbidden likewife (by their fibtile King Powbatan) at all to trade with vs; and not onely fo, but to indanger and affault any Boate vpon the River, or firagler out of the Fort by Land, by which (not long before out arrival) our people had a large Boate cut off, and divers of our men killed, euen within command of our Blocke-house; as likewise, they shot two of our people to 62 death, after we had bin foure and fine dayes come in : and yet would they dare then to enter our Ports, and trucke with vs (as they counterfeited underhand) when indeede, they came Sauage Spiess but as Spies to discouer our strength, trucking with vs upon such hard conditions, that our Couernour might very well fee their fubtiltie, and therefore neither could well indure, nor

would continue it. And I may truely fay befide, fo had our men abafed, and to fuch a contempt, had they brought the value of our Copper, that a prece which would have bought a bulhell of Basenesse of their Corne in former time, would not now buy a little Cade or Bisket of a Pottle. And for this milgouernment, chiefely our Colony is much bound to the Mariners, who never yet in anv Voyage hither, but have made a prey of our poore people in want; infomuch, as vifleffe Mischiefes of they might aduance foure or fine for one (how affured focuer of the payments of their Bils of Exchange) they would not spare them a dust of Corne, nor a pinte of Beere, to give vito them the leaft comfort or reliefe, although that Biere purloyned, and stolne perhaps, either from some particular supply, or from the generall store : 10 vncharmable a parcell of people they in be, and ill conditioned. I my felfe haue heard the Mafter of a Shippe lay (euen vpon the arriuall of this Fleete, with the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, when the faid Mafter was treated with for such Commodities as hee brought to fell) that valeffe hee might have an East Indian increase, foure for one, all charges cleered, hee would not part with a Canor Beere. Besides, to doe vs more villany and mischiefe, they would send of their long Boates still by night, and (well guarded) make out to the neighbour Villages, and Townes, and there (contrary to the Articles of the Fort, which now pronounce death for a trespasse of that qualitie) trucke with the Indians, giving for their trifles Otter skinnes, Beuers, Rokoone Furres, Beares skinnes, &c. to large a quantity, and measure of Copper, as when the Trucke-Master for the Colong, in the day time offered trade, the Indians would laugh and forme the fame, telling what in harvains they met witha'l by night, from our Mangor Quintons (fo calling our great Shippes) by which meanes, the Market with them forestalled thus by these dishonest men, I may boluly lay, they have bin a confequent cause (this last yeare) to the death and starting of many a worthy Pursers fraud. fourit; but I hope to lee a true amendment and reformation, as well of those as of divers other intollerable abuses, thrust upon the Colony by these shamelesse people, as also for the transportation on of fuch proussions and supplies as are sent hither, and come vnder the charge of purfers (a parcell fragment, and odde ends of fellowes dependancies to the others) a better course thought vpon : of which supplies, neuer yet came into the Store, or to the Parties, vnto whom such supplies were fent, by relation hitherto, a moitie or third part; for the speedy redresse of this, being to fourraigne a point, I understand how the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, hath aduip fe I voto the Counsell, that there may be no more provisions at all delivered voto Pirfets, but hath intreated to have the provision thus ordered. He would have a Commissary Generall of the Victuals to be appointed, who (receiving the flore for the Colony, by Indenture from the Treafurer, and Victuallers in England) may keepe a just accompt, what the groffe amounteth vireo, and what is transported every Voyage, in severall kindes, as of Bread, Meate, Beere, Wine, &c. which faid Commiffary shall deliner ouer the same, to the Master of every Ship, and take an Indentre from the faid Mafter, of what he hath in charge, and what he is to deliver to the Treasurer of the flore in Virginia: of which, if any be wanting, he the faid Mafter shall make it good, out of in owne intertainment, otherwife the Purfers, Stewards, Coopers, and quarter Mafters, will befure ftill, not onely to give themselves and their friends double allowances, but thinke it all well gotten that they can purloine and theale away. Besides that the Indian thus euill intreated vs, the River (which were wont before this time

of the yeare to be plentifull of Storgion) had not now a Fish to be seene in it, and affeit we labured, and hold our Net twenty times day and night, yet we tooke not so much as would content halfe the Fishermen. Our Gouernour therefore sent away his long Boate to coast the River downward, as farre as Point Comfort, and from thence to Cape Henry, and Cape Charles, and all within the Bay : which after a feuen nights triall and trauaile, returned without any fruites of

their labours, scarse getting so much Fish as served their owne Company. And to take any thing from the Indian by force, we never vied, nor willingly ever will and The Colony though they had well deferued it, yet it was not now time, for they did (as I faid before) but when they hthen set their Corne, and at their best, they had but from hand to mouth; so as what now fouredayes of temained ! fuch as we found in the Fort, had wee staid but foure dayes, had doubtleffe bin the straing. most part of them started, for their best reliefe was onely Mushrums, and some hearties, which fod together, made but a thin and vulauory broath, and fivelled them much. The pitry hereof mound our Governour to draw forth such provision as he had brought, proportioning a measure equilly to every one a like. But then our Governor began to examine how long this his flore would hold out, and found it (husbanded to the best aduantage) not possible to serue longer then fixteene dayes: after which, nothing was to be possibly supposed out of the Country (as before remembred) nor remained there then any meanes to transpore him elsewhere. Whereupon hee then entred into the confultation with Sir George Summers, and Captaine Nemport, calling vnto the same the Gentlemen and Counsell of the former Gouernment, intreating both the one and the other to adulfe with him what was best to be done. The prouision which they both had a boord himselfe and Sir George Sammers, was examined, and delinered, how it, being rackt to the vttermost, extended not about, as I faid, fixteene dayes, ofter two Cakes a day. The Gentie-

men of the Town, who knew better of the Country could not give him any hope;or wayes, how

The establish of the relative facilities, and wrought yo. would continue it. And I may true very lay bende, to had our men abased, and to such a contempt, had they brought the value of our Copper, that a prece which would have bought a bullell or Baleneffe of onaliae the 14 ft of 2000 and 12 ft manuferand creffe in their Corne in former time, would not now buy a little Cade or Bisket of a Pottle. And for geram a sign of the least of the grain grain grain street this misgouernment, chiefely our Colony is much bound to the Mariners, who never yet in a-Control (12 to 10 to 10 maines which to the work well plane my Voyage hither, but have made a prey of our poore people in want; infomuch, as willeffe Mischiefes of No gwodent enknie or order of as ours, the Countrev and they might advance foure or flue for one (how affured focuer of the payments of their Bils of Exchange) they would not spare them a dust of Corne, nor a pinte of Beere, to give vinto on and a contract of the management of the first of the weathing experience. them the least comfort or reliefe, although that Biere purloyned, and stolne perhaps, either mang a selet were attent tot e Countrie thiet no Countre veelfrom some particular supply, or from the generall store : so vncharmable a parcell of people they mir fo a merean illege I das mer laur, as prometts of me 10 to be, and ill conditioned. I my felfe have heard the Master of a Shippe fay (even vpon the armade Belles, wer hale incliands of goodly Vines in ege. riuall of this Fleete, with the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, when the taid Master in be grand, willin prelan a plentreif Grape in their was treated with for such Commodities as hee brought to fell) that villeste hee might have an to and wieuge, if their naturell William were planted, ureil East Indian increase, foure for one, all charges cleered, hee would not part with a Canof Beere. an and the second of the second of the maker perfect Greet. Besides, to doe vs more villany and mischiefe, they would send of their long Boates still by mit a. . We taus maut trall or lar wor Begün eestesassies night, and (well guarded) make out to the neighbour Villages, and Townes, and there (con-ಕ ಸರ್ವಕ್ಷಣ ಕಟ್ಟಾಟ್ ಒಟ್ಟಿ ಬಿ.ಎ. ಜಾ *Eೇಕ್ಷ್ಮಿಕ್ಕಾ*ಮಿ trary to the Articles of the Fort, which now pronounce death for a trespasse of that qualifie) nam ann ann an 1975. Bugail Sak Chairmann Choirean Taireach Geantail Innéal, ám i trucke with the Indians, giving for their trifles Otter skinnes, Beuers, Rokoone Furres, Beares no morni vano le vilite. Il visuo el principio e thempome, and worle skinnes, &c. to large a quantity and measure of Copper, as when the Trucke-Mafter for the Coeine min at illand fempesad in inssa a nafested mindes, wanm long, in the day time offered trade, the Indians would laugh and forme the fame, telling what 20 harrying they met witha'l by night, from our Mangor Quintons (fo calling our great Shippes) by mail imerali leati, latimun de the Carpenture, and workewhich meanes, the Market with them forestalled thus by these dishonest men, I may boldly say, they have bin a confequent cause (this last yeare) to the death and flarning of many a worthy pursers fraud. Cherry of the Courty as fund, e worde thereof there laynot forrit; but I hope to lee a true amendment and reformation, as well of those as of divers other could's odder Amany taken of this of grenty, and incresses and intollerable abuses, thrust upon the Colony by these shamelesse people, as also for the transportatiuent a calento w. . . . il e sunne is no necrer a nergiocor Ilar, on of fuch prouficers and supplies as are tent hither, and come vider the charge of purfers fa par-The familiar of the cone, or a relieve to the change acide actions, interpocell, fragment, and odde ends of fellowes dependancies to the others) a better course thought alle any pans taire purpoles of thet ward, or wreis them to a decilvpon : of which supplies, neuer yet came into the Store, or to the Parties, vnto whom such supplies were fent, by relation hitherto, a moitie or third part; for the speedy redresse of this, being aud in the feere much propenine to already towards the voity, fo foueraigne a point, I understand how the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, hath aduigefterntealy and Lungsberg Lowith ver greiferth. When menet 30 30 fe i vnto the Countell, that there may be no more prouisions at all delivered vnto Purfers, but der gin einem land ine fill maue beene in, and I protect in, I haue hath intreated to have the provision thus ordered. He would have a Commissary Generall of the vich alair iv or foirit oritete, to at they hoolid netter refacto Victuals to be appointed, who (receiving the flore for the Colony, by Indenture from the Treaof the coldiences and anowledges, when took worthy, and Nofurer, and Victuallers in England) may keepe a just accompt, what the groffe amounteth vneo, in denote them. I and his the Wild, but as the occasion in all se and what is transported every Voyage, in severall kindes, as of Bread, Meate, Beere, Wine, &c. allatie - tanel tien leten itrem wit itheir Sword, Andatia to which faid Commillary shall deliner ouer the same, to the Master of enery Ship, and take an Indentungere ont you o takeau out tout early they berforme theams. ture from the faid Malter, of what he hath in charge, and what he is to deliner to the Treasurer re page lucce of high the rigs wichder as will as simely shevicable of the flore in Virginia: of which, if any be wanting, he the faid Mafter shall make it good, out of o para promitija na vila lili a je a jasa ua atra alasike agaimeli anawaske his owneintertainment, otherwife the Purlers, Stewards, Coopers, and quarter Masters, will gewards with the constraint that happen lacelly a finited. In be fure ftill, not onely to give themselves and their friends double allowances, but thinke it all nide no anno nos colo Colos tropology, Will Glas figure towards ⁴⁹ well gotten that they can purloine and iteale away. antreal n.H. 187, 1744 (stelle), firfed for Ust a trait, as fail Befides that the Indian thus euili intreated vs, the River (which were wont before this time in the thirt Anna Carters, and there Burgers werear, then any Trade of the yeare to be plentifull of Sturgion) had not now a Fish to be seene in it, and affect we lae goet in bereitelle wert mien Dereit Creute the Greit, boured, and hold our Net twenty times day and night, yet we tooke not fo much as would conagi i jaseban of Algeria on Laster is a sale new from Caje tent halfe the Fishermen. Our Gouernour therefore sent away his long Boate to coast the River र्रोत हो प्रकार कर है। एक नाम के देश सम्बन्ध र 20, 11, रोज **िराइ कोर्य** downward, as farre as Point Comfort, and from thence to Cape Henry, and Cape Charles, and all throat of a Michael Control Tempto 新拉達明, and within the Bay : which after a feuen nights triall and trauaile, returned without any fruites of and Brown and the control of the structure of the second sections. their labours, fearfe getting fo much Fish as ferued their owne Company. And to take any thing from the Indian by force, we never vied, nor willingly ever will fand. The Colon, though they had well deserved it, yet it was not now time, for they did (as I said before) but when they came within 50 then set their Corne, and at their best, they had but from band to mouth; so as what now foure daye, of Antonio de la compositione de la remained fluch as we found in the Fort, had wee staid but foure dayes, had doubtleffe bin the firming.

t van struk in de waa dit begin to**ca**

in a single of the state of the

្រាស់ ដូច ខ្លួន ស្រុក ខ្លួន នេះ បាន និង **នេះបាន**

and the second of the second second with the

the second of the second was 63

most part of them starued, for their best reliefe was onely Mushrums, and some hearbes, which sod together, made but a thin and votaucry broath, and fivelled them much. The pitty hereof moued our Gouernour to draw forth fuch prouision as he had brought, proportioning a measure equally to every one a like. But then our Gouernor began to examine how long this his flore

would hold out, and found it (husbanded to the best aduantage) not possible to serue longer then fixteene dayes: after which, nothing was to be possibly supposed out of the Countrey (as before

remembred) nor remained there then any meanes to transport him elsewhere. Whereupon hee

then entred into the confultation with Sir George Summers, and Captaine Newport, calling vnto

60 the fame the Gentlemen and Countell of the former Government, intreating both the one and

to improve it from the Indian, It foone then appeared most fit, by a generall approbation, that to preferue and faue all from flaruing, there could be no readier course thought on, then to abandon the Country, and accommodating themselves the best that they might, in the present Pinnaces then in the road, namely in the Discovery and the Unginia, and in the two, brought from, and builded at the Bermudas, the Delinerance, and the Passence, with all speede convenient to make Purpose toleau for the New found Land, where (being the fishing time) they might meete with many Engliships into which happily they might disperie most of the Company.

This Confultation taking effect, our Gouernor having caused to be carried aboord all the Armer. and all the best things in the store, which might to the Aduenturers make some commodiand all the per timing in the territory and burying our Ordnances before the Fort gate, which looked to young the tale thereof at home, and burying our Ordnances before the Fort gate, which looked to into the River. The feventh of Iune having appointed to every Pinnace likewife his complement and number, also delinered thereunto a proportionable rate of prouision, hee commanded every man at the beating of the Drun to repaire abourd. And because hee would preserue the Towne (albeit now to be quitted) vnburned, which some intemperate and malicious people threatned, his owne Company he caused to be last ashoare, and was himselfe the last of them, when about noone giving a farewell, with a peale of small shor, wee set faile, and that night, with the tide. fell downe to an Hand in the River, which our people have called Hogge Hand; and the morning tide brought vs to another lland, which we have called Mulberry lland; where lying at is west of de-an ancor, in the afternoone ilemming the tide, wee discoursed a long. Boate making towards se, mounting despean ancor, in the artificial much descant we made thereof, about an houre it came vp; by which, to 20 our no little loyes, we had intelligence of the honorable my Lord Lawarr his arrivall before Algarmoone Fort the lixt of lune, at what time, true it is, his Lordship having understood of our Go. u. mours resolution to depart the Country, with all expedition caused his Skiffe to be manned. and in it dispatched his letters by Captain Edward Brufter (who commandeth his Lordships Company) to our Gouernour, which preventing vs before the aforefaid Mulberry lland, the eight of June aforelaid) vpon the receipt or his honours letters, our Gouernour bore vp the helme, with the winde comming Eafterly, and that night (the winde to fauourable) relanded all his men at the Fort againe: before which (the tenth of lune, being Sunday) his Lordship had likewise brought his Ships, and in the afternoone, came a shoare with Sir Ferdinando Weinman, and all his Lord-

Description of fire of lames Towne.

1752

The highest

pitch & low ft

dep h of the

Colonicsmi-

feries fearliy

Hopes mor-

Here worthy Lady) let mee hauea little your pardon, for hauing now a better heart, then when I nrft landed, I will briefely delegibe vnta you, the fituation and forme of our Fort. When Captain Newpore in his first Voyage and not like to Juhabit vpon so open a roade, as Cape Heny, nor Poine Comfort he plied it vp to the River, thil looking out for the most apt and lecureit place, as well for his Company to fit downe in, as which might give the least cause of offence, or distalt in his judgement, to the Inhabitants. At length, after much and weary fearch (with their Barge coafling till before, as Virgell writeth Auest slid, arriving in the region of Italy called Latium, vpon the bankes of the River Tyber) in the Country of a Weromance talled Wominchapuncke (aditionary to Powbatan) within this faire River of Paffihaigh, which wee have called the King, River, a Country least inhabited by the Indian, as they all the way observed, and threescore miles & bet- 40 ter up the fresh Channell, from Cape Hemy they had fight of an extended plaine & spot of earth, which thrust out into the depth, & middelt of the channell, making a kinde of Cherlonifu or Peninfula, for it was faitened onely to the Land with a flender necke, no broader then a may well-quaite a tile shard, & no inhabitants by seuen or six miles neere it. The Trumpets sounding, the Admirall-Brooke faile, and before the fame, the rest of the Fleete came to an ancor, and here (as the best yet offered vinto their view , supposed so much the more convenient, by how much with their small Company, they were like inough the better to affure it) to loofe no further time, the Colony difimbarked, and every man brought his particular flore and furniture, together with the generall prouision ashoare: for the safety of which, as likewise for their owne security, ease, and better accommodating, a certaine Canton and quantity, of that little halfe lland of ground, 50 was measured, which they began to fortifie, and thereon in the name of God, to raise a Forttelle, with the ableft and speedieft meanes they could: which Fort, growing lince to more pertection, is now at this present in this manner.

The Fort,&c. described.

A low feurll of ground about halfe an Acre, or (fo much as Queene Dide might buy of King Hyaba, which the compaffed about with the thongs cut out of one Bull hide, and therein built her Cattle of Brza) on the North fide of the River, is cast almost into the forme of a Triangle, and to Pallizadoed. The South fide next the River (howbeit extended in a line, or Curtaine fix fore foote more in length, then the other two, by reason the advantage of the ground doth so require) containes one hundred and forcy yards: the West and East files a hundred onely. At every Angledor corner, where the lines meete, a Bulwarkeor Watchtower is railed, and in each 60 Bulwarke a peece of Orduance or two well mounted. To every fide, a proportioned diffance from the Palliado) is a feeled freete of houles, that runs along, to as each line of the Angle hath his threete. In the middely is a market place, a Store houle, and a Corps du guard, as likewife a prety Chappell, though (at this time when weecame in, as ruined and vofrequented; but the

Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall, hath given order for the repairing of it, and at this initiant, many hands are about it. It is in length threefcore foote, in breadth twenty foure, and shall haue a Chancell in it of Cedar, and a Communion Table of the Blake Walnut, and all the Pewes of Cedar, with faire broad windowes, to flut and open, as the weather shall occasion, of the same wood, a Pulpet of the same, with a Font hewen hollow, like a Canoa, with two Bels at the West end. It is so cast, as it be very light within, and the Lord Gonernour and Captaine Generall doth cause it to be kept passing sweete, and trimmed vp with diuers flowers, with a Sexton belonging to it, and in it every Sonday wee have Sermons twice a day, and every Thursday a Sermon, having true preachers, which take their weekely turnes. 10 and every morning at the ringing of a Bell, about ten of the clocke, each man addrelleth himfelfe to prayers, and to at toure of the clocke before Supper. Every Sunday, when the Lord Governour, and Captaine Generall goeth to Church, hee is accompanied with all the Counfailers, Captaines, other Officers, and all the Gentlemen, and with a Guard of Holberdiers, in his Lordships Livery, faire red cloakes, to the number of fifty both on each side. and behinde him : and being in the Church, his Lordship hath his feate in the Quer, in a greene Veluet Chaire, with a Cloath, with a Veluet Cushion spread on a Table before him, on which he kneeleth, and on each fide fit the Counfell, Captaines, and Officers, each in their place, and when

he returneth home againe, he is waited on to his house in the same manner.

And thus inclosed, as I faid, round with a Pallizado of Planckes and strong Posts, foure foote 20 deepe in the ground, of yong Oakes, Walnuts, &c. The Fort is called in honour of his Majesties name, lames Towne; the principall Gate from the Towne, through the Pallizado, opens to the River, as at each Bulwarke there is a Gate likewise to goe forth, and at every Gate a Demi-Culuerin, and so in the Market Place. The houses first raised, were all burnt, by a casualty of fire, the The Houses. beginning of the second years of their feate, and in the second Voyage of Captain Newport, which fince haue bin better rebuilded, though as yet in no great vniformity, either for the fashion. or beauty of the ffreete. A delicate wrought fine kinde of Mat the Indians make, with which (as they can be trucked for or fnatched up Jour people do dreffe their chambers, and inward roomes, which make their houses to much the more handlome. The houses have wide and large Country Chimnies in the which is to be supposed (in such plenty of wood) what fires are maintained; and Barke Roofes, they have found the way to couer their houses : now (as the Indians) with barkes of Trees, as durable, and as good proofe against stormes, and winter weather, as the best Tyle defending

likewise the piercing Sunbeames of Summer, and keeping the inner lodgings coole enough, which before in fultry weather would be like Stoues, whileft they were, as at first, pargetted and plaistered with Bitumen or tough Clay: and thus armed for the injury of changing times, and feafons of the yeare, we hold our felues well apaid, though wanting Arras Hangings, Tapiftry, and guilded Venetian Cordouan, or more spruse houshold garniture, and wanton City ornaments, remembring the old Epigraph:

We dwell not bere to build vs Bowers, But Hals we build for vs and ours, And Hals for pleasure and good cheere: To dwell in them whilst we like here.

True it is, I may not excuse this our Fort, or lames Towne, as yet seated in some what an you Vnhealthfulwholesome and sickly ayre, by reason it is in a marish ground, low, flat to the River, and hath no nesse of same fresh water Springs seruing the Towne, but what wee drew from a Well sixe or seuen fathom deepe, fed by the brackish River owzing into it, from whence I verily beleeve, the chiefe causes have proceeded of many difeates and ficknesses which have happened to our people, who are indeede strangely afflicted with Fluxes and Agues; and every particular season (by the relation of the old inhabitants) hath his particular infirmity too, all which (if it had bin our fortunes, to have feated vpon tome hill, accommodated with fresh Springs and cleere ayre, as doe the Natiues of the Country) we might have, I believe, well escaped : and some experience we have to perswade 50 our felues that it may be fo, for of foure hundred and odde men, which were feated at the Fals, the last yeere when the Fleete came in with fresh and yong able spirits, under the government of Captain Francis West, and of one hundred to the Seawards (on the South fide of our River) in the Country of the Nansamundes, under the charge of Captaine John Martin, there did not to much as one man miscarry, and but very few or none fall ficke, whereas at Iames Towne, the same time, and the fame moneths, one handred fickned, & halfe the number died: howbeit as we condemne not Kent in England, for a small Towne called Plumsted, continually affaulting the dwellers there (especially new commers) with Agues and Feuers; no more let vs lay scandall, and imputation vpon the Country of Virginia, because the little Quarter wherein we are set dowee (vnaduitedly 60 fo chofed) appeares to be vnwholefome, and fubiect to many ill ayres, which accompany the like marish places.

Commission

Lord Laws

Su T. Gares

Lieutenant

Generali.

His fpeech.

Officers ap-

pointed.

The Lord LaW ARRES beginnings and proceedings in lames Towne. Sir THOMAS GATES fent into England; his and the Companies testimony of Virginia, and cause of the late miseries.

Pon his Lordflips landing at the South gate of the Pallin ado (which lookes into the Ruser) our Gouernour cauled his Company in armes to fland in order, and make a Guard : It pleased him, that I should beare his Colours for that time : his Lordship Guard: It pleafed him, that I should beare his Colours for that time: his Lordship landing, tell vpon his knees, and before vs all, made a long and silent Prayer to himfelfe, and after, marched up into the Towne, where at the Gate, I bowed with the Colours and let them fall at his Lordfnips feete, who passed on into the Chappell, where he heard a Sermon by Master Bucke, our Gouernours Preacher; and after that, caused a Gentleman, one of his owne followers, Maiter Anthony Scor his Ancient, to reade his Commission, which intituled him Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall curing his life, of the Colony and Plantation in Virginia (Sir Thomas Gates our Gouernour hitherto, being now filled therein Lieutenane

Arter the reading of his Lordihips Commission, Sir Thomas Gates rendred vp vnto his Lordfirin his owne Commission, both Patents, and the Countell Seale : after which, the Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall, delivered some few words vinto the Company, laying many blames you them for many vanities, and their Idlenesse, earnestly wishing, that he might no more finde it fo leaft he should be compelled to draw the sword of Iustice, to cut off such delinquents, which he had much rather, he protested, draw in their defence, to protect them from injuries; hattening them with the knowledge of what store of provisions he had brought for them, viz, sufficient ent to serue foure hundred men for one whole yeare.

Provisions The twelfth of lune, being Tueslay, the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, did conflibrought. Countell chofen & iwoine.

ture, and give places of Office, and charge to divers Captaines and Gentlemen, and elected vnto him a Counfell, vnto whom he did administer an Oath, mixed with the oath of Allegiance and Supremacy to his Maiestie: which oath likewise he caused to be administred the next day after 30 to every particular member of the Colony, of Faith, Affiliance, and Secrecy. The Countaile which Colony worn, he elected were. Sir Thomas Gates Kinght, Lieutenant Generall. Sir George Summers Knight, Admirall, Captaine George Percy Esquire, and in the Fort Captaine of fitty. Sir Ferdinando Weise man Knight, Mafter of the Ordnance, Captaine Christopher Newport, Vice-admirall. William Srechei Esquire, Secretary, and Recorder,

As likewise the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, nominated Captaine Iohn Maria, Matter of the Battery workes for Steele and Iron ; and Captaine George Webb Sergeant Maior of the Fort: and especiall Captaines over Companies, were these appointed; Captaine Edward Brufler, who hath the command of his Honours owne Company. Captaine Thomas Lawfon. Captain Thomas Holecroft: Captaine Samuell Argoll. Captaine George Turder, who commandeth the Lieutgo tenant Generals Company. Divers other Officers were likewise made, as Master Raiph Hamm, and Matter Browne, Clarkesot the Counfell, and Mafter Daniell Tucker, and Mafter Robert Wilde,

The first businesse which the Lord Governour and Captaine Generall (after the fetling of thele Officers) thought upon, was to adule with his Countell, for the obtaining of fuch prouifions of victuals for store, and quality, as the Countrey afforded. It did not appeare, that any kinde of Flesh, Deere, or what elie, of that kinde, could be recourred from the Indian, or to be fought in the Countrey, by the trauaile or fearch of his people, and the old dwellers in the Fort (together with the Indians not to friend) who had the last winter, destroyed and killed up all the Hogges, intomuch, as of fine or fixe hundred (as it is supposed) there was not one left alive; nor 50 an Henne, nor Chicke in the Fort; and our Horles and Mares, they had eaten with the first, and the proudion which the Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall had brought, concerning any kinde of fleth, was little or nothing; in respect it was not drempt of by the Ada.nturers in England, that the S vine were destroyed.

In Countell therefore the thirteenth of Iune, it pleased Sir George Summers Knight, Admirall, Sir G. Summers to propose a Voyage, which for the better reliefe, and good of the Colony, he would performe involved which and some bring rouifi to the Bermudas, from whence he would fetch fix moneths prouision of Flesh and Fish, and some ons from Er- liu-Hogges to frose our Colony againe: and had a Commission given vinto him the litteenth of lune, 1610. who in his owne Bermada Pinnace, the Patience, conforted with Captaine Sammes Areal, in the Discourry (whom the Lord Sourmour, and Captaine General), made of the country (whom the Lord Sourmour, and Captaine General), made of the country (who the country of the country) the nineteenth of tune, fell with the Tyde from before our Towns, and the twenty two left the Bay, or Cape Henry a iterne.

And likewife, because at the Lord Governous, and Captaine Generals first comming, there was o found in our owne River no itore of Fish; after many trials, the Lord Governour, and Captaine

Generall, dispatched in the Virginia, with inflructions, the feuenteenth of Iune, 1 6 1 0. Robert Tradall. Mafter of the De la Warre, to fish vnto, all along, and betweene Cape Henry, and Cape Charles, within the Bay; who the last of the faid moneth returned vnto vs againe, but as ill speeding as the former, whom our Gouernour (now Lieutenah: Generall) had addressed thither before for the same purpole. Nor was the Lord Gouernour, and Captaine Generall in the meane while idle at the Fort, but every day and night hee caused the Nets to be hawled, sometimes a dosen times one after another. But it pleased not God so to blesse our labours, that we did at any time take one quarter to much, as would give vnto our people one pound at a meale a peece, by which we might haue better husbanded our Peafe and Oatemeale, notwithstanding the great fo fore we now faw daily in our River : but let the blame of this lye where it is , both voon our Nets, and the vnskilfulnesse of our men to lay them.

The fixth of Iuly Sir Thomas Gates Lieutenant Generall, comming downe to Point Comfort, the North wind (blowing rough) befound had forced the long Boate belonging to Algernoone Fort, to the other shoare voon Nansamund side, somewhat first of Werofcoitk; which to recouer againe, one of the Lieutenant Generals men Humfrey Blum, in an old Carrow made ouer, but the wind drining him vpon the Strand , certaine Indians (watching the occasion) feifed the poore fellow, and led him up into the Woods, and facrificed him. It did not a little trouble the Lieurenant Gouernour, who fince his first landing in the Countrey (how justly foeuer prouoked) would not by any meanes be wrought to a violent proceeding against them, for all the practises . Ad Gracat 20 of villany, with which they daily indangered our men, thinking it possible, by a more tra- calendan. Ctable course, to winne them to a better condition ; but now being fartled by this, he well per- Can a Leoceited, how little a faire and noble intreatie, workes upon a barbarous disposition, and therefore his spors? Can

in tome measure purposed to be reuenged. The ninth of July he prepared his forces, and early in the morning fet vpon a Towne of theirs, mayning a Sa fome foure miles from Algernoone Fort, called Kecoughtan, and had foone taken it, without uage be civille loffe or hurt of any of his men. The Gouernour and his women fled (the young King Powhatans Were not wee tone on the control of the Control o bacco, and some few womens Girdles of Silke, of the Graffe-filke, not without art, and much our Progeni-30 neatneffe finely wrought; of which I have fent diners into England, (beeing at the taking of tors dayes and the Towne) and would have fent your Ladiship some of them, had they beene a Present were not Cas

We purposed to set a Frenchman heere a worke to plant Vines, which grew naturally in great Vinginions The plentie. Some few Corne fields it hath, and the Corne in good forwardnesse, and weede- Romane swords spaire not but to bee (able if our men stand in health) to make it good against the Indian.

The continual practifes of the fubtle King Powhatan, doth not meanely awaken all the chers of ciuipowers and workings of vertue and knowledge, in our Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, other Counhow to preuent not only his mischieses, but to draw him vpon some better termes, and acknow- tries neere vs. ledgemen of our forces and spirits, both able and daring to quit him in any valiant and martiall Graffesike. ao course whatsoeuer, he shall dare to runne with vs, which hee doth yet scarsly beleeue. For this therfore, fince first, and that so lately, he hath set on his people, to attempt vs with private Confpiracies and actuall violence, into the one drawing his Neighbour Confederates and under Princes, and by the other working the loffe and death of divers of our men, and by fuch their loffe feifing their Armes, Swords, Peeces, &c. of which he hath gathered into his flore a great quintitie and number by Intelligence about two hundred Swords, besides Axes, and Pollaxes, Chiffels, Howes, to paire and clenfe their ground, with an infinite treasure of Copper) our Lord Go- English Armes uernour and Captaine Generall fent two Gentlemen with an Ambassie vnto him, letting him to treasured by understand of his practiles and outrage, hitherto vied toward our people, not only abroad but at Pswbatan. our Fort also vet flattering him withall how the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall did not Porbates. 50 suppose, that these mischiefes were contriued by him, or with his knowledge, but conceined

them rather to be the acts of his worst and varuly people, his Lordship therefore now complayning vato him required, that hee (being so great and wife a King) would give an value fall order to his Subiects, that it might bee no more io, left the Lord Governour and Captaine Generall should be compelled (by defending him and his) to offend him, which he would be loath to do: withall he willed the Mellengers to demand of him the faid Powhatan, that he would either punish or fend vnto his Lordship such of his people whom Powhatan knew well not long before, had affaulted our men at the Block-house, and but newly killed foure of them, as also to demaund of Powhaten, willing him to returne vnto the English Fort, both fuch men as hee detayned of ours, and fuch Armes as he had of theirs in his polletion, and those conditions performed, hee willed 60 them to affure vnto Powhatan that then their great Werowance, the Lord Governour and Captaine

Generall would hold faire quarter, and enter friendship with him, as a friend to King James and his Subjects. But refuling to lubmit to thele demands, the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall gave in charge to the Messengers, so tent to signific vnto Pombatan that his Lordship would by all meanes publike and private, tecke to recover from him fuch of the English as he had, being Ggggggg3

coick taken

Sir T. Gates

bound for England.

Priloner.

Subjects to his King and Mafter, vnto whom even Pombatan himfelfe had formerly vowed not only triendfhip but homage, receiving from his Maieftie therefore many gitts, and vpon hiskners. a Crowne and Scepter with other Ornaments, the Symbols of Chall State and Christian Some-Powbasens ho- raigntie, thereby or liging himselie to Offices of dutie to his Maiettie. Vito all which Powbas tan returned no other and were, but that either we should depart his Country, or confine our selies. to lames Towne only, without fearching further vp into his Land, or Ruers, or otherwise has would give in command to his people to kill vs, and doe vnto vs all the mischiete, which they are their pleafure could and we feared: withall forewarning the faid Medlengers, not to return and more voto him, vulelle they brought him a Coach and three Hories, for here had underthood by. the Indians which were in England, how such was the state of great Weromances , and Lords at Io England, to nie and vilit other great men.

After this douers times, and daily hee fent fometimes two, fometimes three, vnto our Fortito understand our strength, and to observe our Watch & Guard, and how our people flood in health. and what numbers were arrived with this new Weroance: which being foone perceived our Lord Governour and Captaine Generall forewarned such his Spies, ypon their owne perili, to refore no more vnto our Fort. Howbeit, they would daily preffe into our Block-house, and comeve to our Pallizado gates, supposing the government as well now, as fantasticall and negligent in the former times, the whilest tome quarter of a mile short of the Block-house, the greatest nomber of them would make affault, and lye in ambush about our Glasse-house, whether, Dauers times indeed our men would make out either to gather Strawberries, or to fetch fresh water, any 20 one of which fo ftragled, if they could with conveniencie, they would affault and charge with their Bowes and Arrowes, in which manner they killed many of our men : two of which being Paspaheans, who were euer our deadliest enemies, and not to be reconciled; at length being apprehended (and one of them a notable villaine, who had attempted upon many in our Fort) the Lord Governour caused them to be manacled, and convented before him and his Countell, where it was determined that hee that had done fo much mischiese should have his right hand strocke. off, sending him away withall, with a message to Powhatan, that volesse hee would yet returne fuch Englishmen as he detayned, together with all fuch their Armes (as before fpoken of)that not only the other (now Prisoner) should die, but all such of his Sauges (as the Lord Gouerneur and Captaine Generall, could by any meanes surprize) should runne the same courie: as likewise the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall would fire all his Neighbour Corne Fields, 30 Townes, and Villages, and that fuddenly, if Powhatan fent not to contract with him the fooner

What this will worke with him, wee know not as yet, for this was but the day before our thips were now falling to Point Comfort, and to to fet tayle for England: which thips riding be-King of weref fore were feeing to take in their fraight of Cedar, Clap-boord, Blacke Wal-nut, and Iron Out, tooke Prifoners likewise the chiefe King of Weroscoick, called Safenticum, with his Sonne Kainta, and one of his chiefe men. And the fifteenth day of July, in the Bleffing Captaine Adams brought them to Point Comfort, where at that time (as well to take his leave of the Lieutenant Generall Sir Thomas Gates, now bound for England, as to dispatch the ships) the Lord Go- 40

uernour and Captaine Generall had pitched his Tent in Algernoone Fort. The Kings Sonne Kainta the Lord Gouernour and Captaine Generall, hath fent now into England, vntill the thips arrive here agains the next Spring, dimilling the clid 11 eromance, and theother with all tearmes of kindnesse, and friendship, promifing further designes to bereffected by him, to which hee hath bound himselfe, by diues Sauage Ceremonies, and ad-

And thus (right Noble Ladie) once more this famous bufinesse, as recreated, and dipped a new into life and spirit, bath rayled it (I hope) from infamy , and shall redeene the staines and loffes under which the hath fuffered, fince her hift Conception : your Graces still accompany the least appearance of her, and vouchfafe her to bee limmed out, with the beautie which wee will 10 begge, and borrow from the faire lips : nor feare you, that thee will returne bluthes to your cheekes for praying her, fince (more then most excellent Ladie) like your felfe (were all tongues dumbe and enusous) thee will prayfe her felfe in her most filence : may shee once bee but seene, or but her shadow lively by a skilfull Workman set out indeed, which heere (bungerly as lam) I have prefumed (though defacing it) in these Papers to present vinto your Ladiship.

Atter Sir Thomas Gates his arruall, a Booke called A true Declaration of Virginia, was published by the Company, out of which I have heere inserted this their publike teltimonie of the cautes of the former cuils, and Sir Thomas Gates his Report vpon Oath of Vaginia.

The ground of all these miseries, was the permissione Providence of God, who, in the fore-meeting of ned violent storme, separated the head from the bodie, all the vitall powers of Regiment being exiled with Sir Thomas Gates in those infortunate (yet fortunate) Ilandi. The troken remainder of those supplies made a greater suppurache in the Continent of Virginia, by the tempest of Descrion: enery man oner-nathing his owne worth, would be a Commander: curry man under prizing anothers vaine, denied to be commanded.

The next Fourtaine of moes was fecure negligence, and improvidence, when every man sharked for his present bootse, but was altogether carcieffe of succeeding penuric. Now, I demand whether Sicinu prejent overten and fametimes the Barnes of Rome) cauld hope for increase without manuring? A Colony is therefore denominated, because they Should be Colony, the Tillers of the Earth, and Stewards of fertilitie: any mutimous Logierers would not fow with providence, and therefore they reaped the finits of too deere bought Rependance. An increasible example of their idlenesse, is the report of Sri Thomas Gites, who affirmeth, that after bis first comming thitber, be hath seene some of them eat their film raw, rather then sher would goe a flones cast to fetch wood and dreffe it. D jlaboribus on rua vendunt, God lets on all things for our labour, when Adam himselfe might not tine in Paradice without drefing the 10 Garden

Vinto idlanelle, you may toyne Transons, wrought by those unhallowed creatures that for sockethe Colome, and apposed their defalate Breibren to extrearoe miferie. Tou fall know that eight and mente or thatie of the Company, were appointed (in the ship called the Swallow) to trucke for Corne with the Indians, and basing extanted a great garnitie by trading, the mail feducon of them, confired together, persuaded some, and enforced others to this barbarasu prosect. They fole away the hip , they made a league amongst themselves to be professed Perats, with dreamer of Mount aires of Gold, and bappe Robberies : ibus at anoinflant atbey peromand the bopes, and sugarred the cares of the Colonic, who depends of apontheir returne; fore-flowed to lange out far further promition; they created the Ladians our implacable enomies by some vivience they had affered : they carried away the best buy (which fronta h us beere a 20 refuse in extramities:) they weakened our forces, by substraction of their armes and successes. These are that scurme of men that fayling in their Piracie, that being sinched with suming and perure, after their mildo roung upon the Sea, when all their lawleffe hapes failed, fome remarked with other Livales. ther men upon the Sea, the others resolved to returne for England, bound themselves by mu wan Quin, to agree all in one report to a feredit the Land, to deplore the famine, and to protest that this their commise away proceeded from desperate vecessive: These are they, that roared out the Trage all Historie of the men cating of his deat Wife in Virginia; when the Master of this ship willingly confessed before for the witne fles, that at their comming away, they left three monethes victuals, and all the Cattel living in the Fort : fementimes they reported that they fam this horrible altion, fometimes that Captaine Davies (and 6, Cometimes that one Beailla the Lieutenant of Captaine Danies did relate it , varying this report 30 mes describes of falls colours, which hold no likenesse and proportion: but to elecre all doubts, Ser Tuo-

mas Gates thus relegath the Tragedie. There was one of the Company who mortally hated his Wife, and therefore fecretly killed her, then cut her in pieces and hid her in divers parts of his House: when the woman was mifting, the man ful pected, his House searched, and parts of her mangled bodie were discovered, to excute himfelte lie faid that his Wife died, that he hid her to fatisfie his nunger, and that hee fed darly vpon her. Vpon this, his Houle was againe fearched, where they found a good quantitie of Meale, Oat-meale, Beanes and Peale. He thereupon was arraigned, confessed the Murder, and

was burned for his horrible villany. Now shall the scandalous reports of a viperous generation, preponderate the testimonies of so worthy Londers? Shall their venemous tongues, blaft the reputation of an ancient and worthy Peere, who upon Lord Lanave, the ocular certainty of future bleffings, bath protested in his Letters, that he will facrifice himselfe for his Countrie in this feruice, if be may be seconded; and if the Company dor gine it oner, bee will jet lay

all his fortunes upon the profecution of the Plantation ? Vinto Treasons, you may toyne conetous ressert in the Mariners, who for their prinate lucre partly imbezeled the promisens; partly presented our Trade with the Indians making the Matches in the mubt, and foreffalling our Market in the day : whereby the Virginians were glutted with our Trifles, and inb.unced the prices of their Corne and Victuall. That Copper which before would have provided a bushell would nos now obtaine so much as a Pottle.

forme unto the le another enill: inere is great store of Fish in the Riuer, especially of Sturgeon; but our 50 men promided no more of them then for p elent ne efficie, not barrelling up any flore against that feafon the Stargeon returned to the Sea. And not to diffemble their folly, they fuffered fourteene nets (ubi; h was all they had) torot and pople, which by orderly drying and mending might have been preferred : but being lost, all helpe of filhing perilhed.

The flate of the Colony, by these accidents began to finde a sensible declining : which Power at an (as a areedy Vulture) observing, and boyling with desire of revenge, bee inuited Captaine Ratel iffe, and about therety others to trade for Corne, and vader the colour of fairest friendship, bee brought them with in the compasse of bis amoush, whereby they were cruelly murthered and mass acred. For upon considence of his fidelitie, they went one and one into fenerall boufes, which canfed their fenerall destructions, when if but any fixe hadremained together, they would have beene a Bulwarke for the generall prefernation. After this, Powhatan in the right cut off some of our Roats, he draue away all the Deere into the further part of the Countrey, bee and his people destroyed our Hogs (to the number of about fixe bundred) hee sent one of his Indians to trade with vs, but layed secret ambushes in the Woods, that if one or two dropped ont of the Fort

alone, they were indangered. Cast up the reckning together: want of government, fore of idlenesse, their expectations frustrated

by the Traitos, their market Spirled by the Mariners, our Nets broken, the Deere chafed, our Boats loft. our Hous killed our grade with the Indians forbidden, some of our men fled, some muribered, and most be drinking of the brackifb mater of lames Fort weakened and indangered , famine and ficknesse by all these meanes increased, here at home the monyes came in fo flowly, that the Lord Laware could not bee difparched till the Colony was worne and spint with difficulties : Aboue all, bauing neither Rulet, nor Preacher, they neither feared God, nor man, which prouded the wrath of the Lord of Hofts, and pulled downe his indgements upon them. Diferte sufficiam monici.

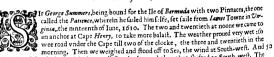
The Councell of Virg nia (finding the smallesse of that returne, which they boped sould have defrate ed the charge of a new (hoppy) entred into a deepe confulsation, and propounded amongst themselves. whether it were fit to enter into a new contribution, or in time to fend for home the Lord La-wate, and to a in bandon the action. They resolved to fend for Sir Thomas Gares, who being come, they adiared him to deale plainly with them, and to make a true relation of those things which were presently to be bad . hereafter to be booed for in Virginia. Sir Thomas Gates with a folemne and farred outh replied the all things before reported were true : that the Country yeelded abundance of Wood, as Oake, Wainfea. Walnut Trees, Bay Trees, Alhe, Sarfafrafe, line Oake, greene all the yeere, Cedar and Fir; which are the materialls, of Soape albes, and Pot albes, of Oyles of Walnuts, and Bayes, of Pitch and Tur, of Class boards, Pipe Stanes, Masts and excellent boards of fortie, fiftie, and fixtie length, and three foot breath. when one Firre tree is able to make the maine Mait of the greatest Ship in England. He anouched that there are incredible varietie of (weet woods, especially of the Balfamum tree, which distilleth a precious Gumme: that there are innumerable white Mulberry trees, which in fo warme a climate may cherift 20 and feede millions of Silke-wormes, and returne vs in a very fort time, as great a plenty of Silke as is vented into the whole world from all the parts of Italy : that there are diners forts of Minerals, effecial. ly of Iron oare lying rippe the ground for ten Miles strenite; of which weehave made a trial at home. that it maketh as good Iron as any is in E rope :) that a kinde of Himpe or Flaxe, and Silke Graffe doe growthere naturally, which will affoord stuffe for all manner of excellent Cordage: That the River suarmeth with all manner of Sturgeon : the Land aboundeth with Vines ; the Woods doe barbour exceeding fore of Beauers, Foxes, and Squirrels; the Waters doe nourish a great encrease of Otters, all which are conered with precious Furres : that there are in present disconered Dyes and Drugges of fundry qualities: that the Orenges which have beene planted, did profper in the winter, which is an infallible argument that Lemmons, Sugar Canes, Almonds, Rice, Annifeede, and all other commodities which wee bane from the 30 Straights, may be supplied to us in our owne Country, and by our owne industry: that the Corne reliant a terrible encrease more then ours : and lastly, that it is one of the goodlieft Countries under the Sume: enterneemed with fine maine Rivers, and promissing as rich entrals as any Kingdome of the earth, to whom the sunne is no neerer a neighbour.

CHAP. VIII

The Voyage of Captaine SAMVEL ARGAL, from Iames Towne in Virginia, to feeke 40 the He of Bermuda, and missing the same, his putting over toward Sagadahoc and Cape Cod, and so backe againe to lames Towne, begun the nineteenth of lune, 1610.

Iune 19. 1610.

1758



till eight of the clocke at night it was all Southerly, and then that shifted to South-west. The Cape then bearing West, about eight leagues off. Then wee stirred away South-east. The foure and twentieth, at noone I observed the Sunne , and found my selve to bee in thirtie fixe degrees, fortie leuen minutes, about twentie leagues off from the Land. From the foure and twentieth at noone, to the fiu- and twentieth at noone, fixe leagues East, the wind Southerly, but for the most part it was calme. From the five and twentieth at noone, to the fixe and twentieth about fixe of the clocke in the morning, the winde was all Southerly, and but little. And then it beganne to blow a fresh gale at West South-west. So by noone I had failed fourteene leagues East, South-east pricked. From the fixe and twentieth at noone, to the feuen and twentieth at noone, twentie leagues East, South-east. The wind faiting from the West, South-west Southerly, and so to the 60 East, and the weather faire, but close. From the seuen and twentieth at noone, to the eight and twentieth at noone, fixe and twentie leagues East, South-east, the wind shifting backe againe from the East to the West. Then by mine observation I found the ship to be in thirtie five degrees fitie foure minutes. From the eight and twentieth at noone, to the nine and twentieth at noone,

CHAP.7. Fresh gale, Calme weather. Very formy westerly pariation. thirtie fixe leagues East by South, the wind at West, North-west. Then by my observation I

found the ship to be in thirtie five degrees, thirtie minutes pricked. From the nine and twentieth at noone, to the thirtieth at noone, thirtie fine leagues East, South-east, The winde thifting betweene West, North-west, and West, South-west, blowing a good fresh gale. Then by my obseruation I found the ship to be in thirtie foure degrees, fortie nine minutes pricked. From the thirtieth of lune at noone, to the first of July at noone, thirtie leagues South-east by East, the winde

at well, then I found the thip in thirtie foure degrees pricked.

From the first of July at noone, to the second at noon, twentie leagues East, South-east southerly, the wind West, then I found the ship to bee in thirtie three degrees, thirtie minutes pricked. the weather very faire. From the fecond at noone, to the third at foure of the clocke in the efternoone it was calme, then it beganne to blow a resonable fresh gale at South-east : so I made account that the ship had driven about fixe leagues in that time Eath. The Sea did set all about the Well. From that time to the fourth at noone, feuenteene leagues East by North, the wind shifting betweene South-east and South South-welt, then I found the ship to bee in thirtie three degrees, fortie minutes, the weather continued very faire. From the fourth at noone, to the fifth at noone, ten leagues South-east, the wind and weather as before, then I found the thip to be in thirtie three degrees, feuenteene minutes pricked. From the fitt at noone, to the fixt at noone, eight leagues South-west, then I found the thip to be in thirtie two degrees, fiftie seuen minutes pricked; the wind and weather continued as before, only we had a fin ill showre or two of raine.

20 From the fixt at noone, to the leventh at noone, feventeene leagues Eatt by North, then I found the thip to be in thirtie three degrees, the wind and weather as b. tore. From the fenenth at noon, to the eight at noone, fourteene leagues North-east, then I found the ship to be in thirtie three 13. degrees, degrees, thirtie two minutes, the wind and weather continued as before, From the eight at noon as minute to the ninth at noone, fine Isagues South-east, there I found the ship to be in thirtie times degrees. to the ninth at noone, nucleased as south-weit, he weather very faire. From the ninth at noone, to the tenth at noone, fine leagues South, the wind westerly; but for the most part it was calee, and the weather very faire. From the tenth at noone, to the eleuenth at noone it was calme, and so continued vntill nine of the clocke the same night, then it began to blow a reasonable fresh gale at South-east, and continued all that night betweene South-east and South, and wntill the 33. deore

20 twelfth day at noone ; by which time I had failed fifteene leagues West southerly ; then I found the ship in thirtie three degrees, thirtie minutes. From that time to foure of the clock the twelfth day in the morning twelve leagues West by North, the wind all southerly, and then it shifted betweene South and South-weit, then wee tacked about and flood South-east, and South-east by South : fo by noone I had fayled fine leagues South-east by East; then I found the ship in thirtie three degrees ten minutes. From the thirteenth at noone, to the fourteenth at nor ne; twenty leagues South-east by East, the wind shifting betweene the South-west, and West South-west. then I found the ship to be in thirtie two degrees, thirtie five minutes. From the fourteenth at 32. degrees, noone, to the fifteenth at noone, twentie leagues South-eaft, then I found the thip to be in thirty two degrees, the wind as before : then we tacked about, and lay North-west by West. From the 40 fifteenth at noone, to the fixteenth at noone, twelve leagues North by West, the wind shifting

betweene South-west and West, and the weather very stormy, with many sudden suffs of wind

And about fixe of the clocke in the afternoone, being to windward of our Admirall I bare vp. He freaker vnder his lee : who when I hayled him, told me that he would tack it vp no longer , because hee with the Adwas not able to keepe the fea any longer, for lacke of a road and water : but that hee would pre- mnall. fently fleere away North North-well, to fee if he could fetch Cape Cod. Which without delay he put in execution. His directions I followed : fo from the fixteenth day at noone to the feuenteenth at noone I had failed thirtie eight leagues North North-west : then I found my ship to be ward Cape cod in thirtie foure degrees, ten minutes. The feuenteenth and eighteenth dayes were very wet and ftormy, and the winds shifting all points of the Compasse. The nineteenth day, ab ut foure of the

50 clocke in the morning it began to cleere up, and then we had a very shiffe gale betweene East and North-east. From the seventeenth at noone, to the nineteenth at noone, I had sayled fiftie five leagues North North-west, then I found the ship to be thirtie fixe degrees, thirty minutes. From the nineteenth at noone, to the twentieth at noone, thirty fine leagues North-well : then I was in thirty feuen degrees, fifty two minutes, the weather now was fairer and the wind all eafterly. From the twentieth at moone, to the twentie one at noone, we fayled twenty leagues North by West, the wind betweene East and South-east, and the weather very faire: At the sunne setting Western -I observed, and found thirteene degrees, and an halfe of wetter'y variation, and vntill midright arion we had a reasonable fresh gale of wind all foutherly, and then it fell coline and cained and to con- gree-

60 tinued very little wind vntill the two and twentieth at nonne, and thitrang at any points of the Compasse : yet by mine observation that I made then, I round rout the slap be to un twenty ship to said a leagues North, for I found her to be in forty degrees, one minute, which was the works week. there was some tide or current that did fet Northward. Again , those was hear the place of wards did fay, That in their watch they did feea race, and that thip did Cheeser see is the Konthosers of when she had not a breath of wind.

From the two and twentieth at noone, vntill ten of the clocke at night, we had a fresh gale of wind, betweene East and South-east, and then it shifted all westerly, and so continued vneilt

two of the clocke the twenty three in the morning; and then it began to be very foggy and but little wind, yet shifting all the points of the Compasse, and so continued vntill ten of the clocke. and then it began to cleete vp. At twelue of the clocke I observed, and then I found the ship to be in fortie degrees fiftie minutes : fo from the twenty two at noone, to the twenty three at noone I had fayled twenty leagues Northward. From the twenty three at noone, to the twenty foure, at three of the clocke in the morning it was calme, and then we had a reasonable fresh sale of wind all foutherly, and so it continued vntill noon foutherly, in which time I had failed twelve leagues North. And about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, we had forry feuen fathoms of 10 water, which water we did find to be changed into a graffe green in the morning, yet we would not heave a lead, because our Admirall was so farre on head of vs : who about three of the clocke

in the afternoone lay by the lee, and fished till I came vp to him : and then I fitted my selfe and my boat, and fished vntill sixe of the clocke. And then the Admirall sitted his failes, and stirred away North, whom I followed with all the speed I could. But before feuen of the clocke there fell such a myst, that I was faine to shoot off a Peece, which he answered with a Cornet that he had aboord. So with hallowing and making a noyfe one to another all the night we kept company. About two of the clocke, the twenty hie day in the morning we tooke in all our failes, and lay at Hull wntill five of the clocke : and then finding but imall flore of fifh, we fet taile and firred away North-west, to fetch the mayne land to relieue our selues with wood and water, which we flood in great need of. About two of the clocke in the afternoone we tooke in all our failes and lay at Hull, a. which time I heaved the lead three times together, and had three fundry kindes of foundings. The first a blacke peppery fand, full of peble stones. The second blacke peppery, and

no ftones : The third blacke peppery, and two or three ftones. From the fourth at noone, to the twentie five, at wo of the clocke in the afternoone, I (avled thirteene leagues West North-west : and the weather continuing very foggy, thicke, and rainy. about fine of the clocke it began to ceafe, and then we began to fish, and to continued vntill feuen of the clocke in betweene thirty and forty fathoms, and then we could fish no longer. So having gotten betweenetwentie and thirty Cods, we left for that night : and at fine of the clocke, the twenty fixe in the morning we began to fish againe, and so continued virill ten of the clocke, and

then it would fish no longer : in which time we had taken neere one hundred Cods, and a couple of Hollybuts. All this while wee had betweene thirty and forty fathoms water: before one of the clocke in the afternoone we found the ship driven into one hundred and twenty fathoms, and foft blacke Ofe. Then Sir George Somers fent me word, that he would fet faile, and stand in for the River of Sagadahoe; whole directions I followed.

Before two of the clocke we fet faile, and furred away North-west by North, the wind South South-west, and the weather continued very foggy. About eight of the clocke wee tooke in all our failes, and lay at Hull at that night. The feuen and twentieth, about feuen of the clocke in

the morning we heated the lead, and had no ground in one hundred and twentie fathoms. Then I thou off a Peece, but could not heare none answere from our Admirall: and the weather was so 40 thicke, that we could not fee a Cables length from our ship. Betweene nine and ten of the clock we did thinke that we did heare a Peece of Ordnance to windward : which made me suppose our Admirall had fet faile, and that it was a warning piece from him. So I fet fayle and stood close by the wind, and kept an hollowing and a noile to try whether I could find him againe : the wind was at South-west, and I stood away West North-west. From the fixe and twentieth, at two of the clocke in the afternoone, to eight of the clocke at night I had fayled nine leagues North-weft. The feuen and twentieth at noone I heaved the Lead, in one hundred and twenty fathoms, and

had no ground. Then I stirred away North-west, till foure of the clocke at night : then I heaved the Lead againe one hundred and twenty fathoms, and had no ground. Then I tooke all my 50 failes and lay at Hull, and I had fayled feuen leagues North-west. The eight and twentieth, at feuen of the clocke in the morning I did found in one hundred and twenty fathoms, and had no ground. Then I iet fayle againe, and steered away North, and North by West. At noone I heated in one hundred and twenty fathoms againe, and had no ground. So I steered on my course still, the wind shifted betweene South and South-west, and the fog continued. At source of the clocke in the afternoone, I heaved one hundred twenty fathoms againe, and had no ground : fo I food on vntill eight of the clocke, by which time I had failed twelve leagues : then I heaved the Lead againe, and had blacke Ofe, and one hundred thirty five fathoms water. Then I tooke in all my fayles and lay at hull vntill the nine and twentieth, at fine of the clocke in the morning. Then I fet faile againe, and steered away North, and North by Weit. At eight of the clocke I heared the Lead againe, and had blacke Ofe in one hundred and thirty fathoms water. Betweene eleuen and twelue of the clocke it began to thunder, but the fogge continued not still. About two of the clocke in the afternoone, I went out with my Boat my leffe and heaved the Lead, and had blacke Ofe in ninety fathoms water: by which time I had failed fix leagues North by Weit more. Then I vooke in all my tayles fauing my Fore-course and Bonnet, and stood in with tholefailes onely.

About fixe of the clocke I founded againe, and then I had fixty flue fathoms water. Affoone as I came abourd it cleered up; and then I taye a small Il and awhich bare North about two leagues off: whereupon I flood in vatilleight of the clocke : And then I flood off agains vatill two of the slocke in the morning the thirtieth day. Then Litood in againe, and about eight of the clocke I was faire aboord the Hand. Then I manned my. Boat and went on fhoure; where I found great flore of Seales : And I killed three Scales with my hanger. This I land is not halfe a mile about, and A Rocke of flore of Seales: And a Ritted tirrer States with my hanger, and a fact is not have a mine about, and Marble halfe rothing but a Rocke, which feemed to be very rich Marble flone. And a South South weft Moon a mile about maketha full Sea. About ten of the clocke I came abourd againe, with some Wood tha I had tuli of Seales. found vponahelland, for there had beene some folkes that had made fiers there, Then I flood Theimilrocks ouer to another lland that didbeare North off me about three leagues; this small rockie Hand ly- Iland lieth in ouer to another Hand that diebeare North of the clocke that right I came to an anchor among many 44 degrees, llands in eight fathoms water : and vpon one of thefe llands I fitted my lelfe with Wood and in eight fa-

The third day of August , being fitted to put to Sex againe . I cadfed the Master of the shap to August 3. open the boxe wherein my Committion was, to fee what directions I had, and for what place I was bound to shape my course. Then I tried whether there were any fish shereor not and I tound Reform le reasonable good ftore there; to I stayed there fishing till the twelfrin or August and then finding flore of nin. that the fifting did faile, I thought good to returne to the Iland where I bad killed the Seales, to fee whether I could get any store of them or not ; for I did find that they were very nourshing

on meate, and a great reliefe to my men, and that they would be very well faued with labeto keepe along time. But when I came thicker I could not by any meanes catch any. The fourteenth day seale Rocke in at noone I polerued the Sen, and found the Hand to be in torty three degrees, for y minutes. Then 43 deg, 47 ml I thankdome source for Cape Cod, to fee whether I could get any felerander or not 210 by the fit. teenth that noone, I had failed thirty two leagues South-west, the wind for the most part was home. betweene Northisvell and North. From the fifteenth at moone , to the fixteenth at moone I ran twenty leagues South , the wind thifting betweene West and South-west. And then Flounded and had ground in eighteene fathoms water, full of thele and poble it excessof divergedients a forme greene, and some ble wish, some like diamants, and some speckled: Theo i make in all by sayles, and let all my company to filling, and filled till eight the the clocke the triplet and finding but

little fift there, I let fayle againe, and by the mensenthan noone I bachly jed ten teagues Welt by North, the wind hifting betweene South and South well. From noone, till fixe at the clocke at night, foure leagues North-well, the wind finfting dienweene Welt and South-well. Then it was all and did blow to hard that I tooke in all my fayles, and lay at hull all that night, vntill nue of the clock the eighteenth day in the morning rand then I fer faile againe, and by noone I had failed foure leagues North-west, the wind betweene West and South-west. From the eighteenth at noone. to the nineteenth at noone ten leagues Well by Well, the wind shifting betweene South and South-west, and the weather very thick and fogey.

About feven of the clocke at night the fogge began to breake away, and the wind did fhif: Thick and foge westerly . and by midnight it was shifted to the North, and there it did blow very hard vntill gic was her. so the twenty at noone ; but the weather was very cleere, and then by my oblequation I found the thin to bee in the latitude of forty one degrees, forty foure minutes, and I had lailed twenty leagues South-west by West. From the mneteenth at noone, to the twentieth at noone : about two of the clocke in the afternoone T did fee an Hed-Tand, which did beare off me South-west, 41.4 g. 44 mls about four eleagues : fo I steered with it, taking it to bee Cape Cod; and by four of the clocke I was fallen among fo many shoales, that it was fue of the clocke the fiest day in the morning before I could get cleere of chem , at is a wory dangerous place to fall witholl stortle faciles hear Cape Cot. the leaft ten leagues off from the Land ; and I had voon one of them but one fathom and an halfe the des water, and may Barke did draw feben foor. This Land lyeth Southwest, and Northwest, and the Speales lie of from it South and South by Welt, and I a slong toward the North. Me the North-

so tie-one debrees, fitte minutes, being then in the middle of the Sholdes rand I did finde thirteene. The midd of degrees on welkerly variation then likewife. Thus finding the place not to be for my turne afform the Sholees in as I was degre of thele dangers, I shought it fit to return to laner Towne in Um with , to elle 41 deg. so mis Lord De-lawarre, my Lord Goutenous and theresto assend his command: lo Ishaped my coarle weff rhy Vafor that place. And the one and twenteeth day by noone I had brought my felie South South ria ton. west thirtie three leagues from this Cape; and I had the wind shifting all this while betweene North and Morth-weth , and the weather very faire thid theire: From the one and twentieth at noone, to the two and ewentieth at noone, I ran thirtie lesgues South-West by Walty and then by mine obternation I foundabe ship to be in ellistic mirrealegrees, that is free minutes want Flad 12. degrees of

63 twelve degrees welterly waration, and the wind finiting between North and North east, waterly Vaand the weather very faire and electe. From the two and twentieth at moone, to the three and twentieth at noone , nine leagues Sounts well by West ; and then by observation leid find the 11 degrees of Ship in thirtie nine degrees, twent citomeminines, and I had eleven degrees of westerly variation on ; and there did blow but very little ward , and thatting betweene West and North, and the

1761

welkby West Guards Fobferned the North-Starre, and found the faire of be in the lattered of for-

Water. Weer like en-

Sounding.

Great fog and

100.Cods 13ken.

Th. Ship d sueth.

They ft and for the River of Sazadahoc.

Virie foggie weather.

The thick fog continuerh.

The fog con-

1762

weather very faire and cleere. From the three and twentieth at noone to the foure and twentieth at nome eighteene leagues South-west , and then I found the shippe to be in there is he degrees fortie two minutes : and I had swelve degrees of Westerly Variation, and the wind thisting betweene North and West, and the weather very faire.

From the foure and twentieth at noone, to the flue and twentieth, at noone two and twentie leagues West by South, the wind shifting betweene North and East, And then I found the ship to bee in thirtie eight degrees fine and twentie minutes, and the fame Variation that I had before.

and the weather very faire. From the fine and twentieth at noone, to the fix and twentieth at noone, fine and twentie leagues Westerly, the wind all shifting betweene South and South-west. And I had thirteene to degrees five and twentie minutes of Welterly Variation. About fixe of the clocke at night the water was changed, and then I founded and had red fandie ground in twelve fathomes water a

of Wefterly bout twelue leagues from the shore. variation.

The feven and twentieth by day in the morning, I was faire aboord the shore, and by nine of the clocke I came to an Anchor in nine fathomes in a very great Bay, where I found great flore of people which were very kind, and promifed me that the next day in the morning they would bring me great ftore of Corne. But about nine of the clocke that night the winde shifted from South-west to East North-east. So I weighed presently, and shaped my course to Cape Charles. This Bay lyeth in Westerly thirtie leagues. And the Souther Cape of it lyeth South South-east and North North-west .. and in thirtie eight degrees twentie minutes of Northerly Latitude, 20 The eight and twentieth day, about foure of the clocke in the afternoone I fell among a great

Many thooles many of thooles, about twelve leagues to the Southwest of Cape La Warre. So there I came to the South of Cape La Warre

12. leagues to an Anchor in three fathomes water, the winde beeing then all Eafterly , and rode there all that The nine and twentieth in the morning I weighed againe, the wind being all Southerly, and turned vntill night, and then I came to an Anchor in leven fathomes water in the offing to Sea. How the tyde did fer there; or whether that there did runany current or not , I cannot fay;

but I could find neither current nor tyde. The thirtieth in the morning I weighted againe, the wind still Southerly, and turned all that day, but got very little, fo at Euening I frood off to Sea vneill midnight, and then ftood in againe. 10 The one and thirtieth, about feuen of the clocke at night I came to an Anchor vnder Cape Charles in foure fathomes, and one third part water, and rode there all that night.

Cane Charles.

CHAP. VIII.

A fhort Relation made by the Lord De-La-Warre, to the Lords and others of the Counfell of Virginia, touching his unexpetted returns home, and afterwards delinered to the generall Affembly of the faid Company, at a Court holden the twentie fine of fune, 1611. Published by authoritie of the faid Counfell.

My Lords, &c.

Eing now by accident returned from my Charge at Virginia, contrary either to my ownedente or other mens expechations, who spare aut to cenfure mee, in point of dutie, and routifourfe and quetion the reason, though they apprehend not the true caule of my returne, I am forced (out of a will inenelle to fatisfie euery man) touteliner enco your Lordships, and the rest of this Assembly, briefly to (but truly) in what flate bhaue lined, euer fince my arrivall to the Colonie; what

hath beene the just occasion of my furtherndeparture thence; and in what termes I have left the fame: The rather because I perceive, that fince my comming into England, fuch a coldnesse and irresolution is bred, in many of the Adventurers, that some of them feeke to withdraw those payments, which they have subscribed towards the Charge of the Plantation, and by which that Action must be supported and mayntained, making this my returne, the colour of their needlesse backwardnesseand vniust protraction. Which, that you may the better understand; I must informe your Lordhips, that presently after my arrivall in lames Towne. I was welcommed by a hot and violent Ague; which held me a time, till by the addice of my Physicion, Doctour Land Lord La Werter Pence Babin (by bloud letting) I was recourted as in my first Letters by Sir Thomas Gates, I have 60 informed you. That Dufeafe had not long lett me, till (within three weekes after I had gotten a little ftrengch) I began so beidiftempered with other greunus fickniffes, which facesficely and feuerally, affailed meet for befiles a relapfe into the former Dileafe, which with much more violence held me more third a monetty, and brought me to great weaknesse; the Flux surprized mee,

and kept me many dayes; then the Crampe affaulted my weake bodie, with strong paines; and afrerwards the Gort (with which I had heeretofore beene fometime troubled) afficted me in fuch fort, that making my bodie through weaknesse vnable to stirre, or to vie any manner of exercise, drew voon me the Difeate called the Scurry; which though in others it be a ficknesse of slothfolnesse, yet was in me an effect of weaknesse, which never left mee, till I was voon the point to

Thefe feuerall Maladies and Calamities, I am the more defirous to particularife voto your Lordthinges (although they were too notorious to the whole Colonie) left any man should middeeme that under the generall name and common excuse of ticknesse, I went about to cloke either sloth, on or feare, or any other bise apprehension, vinworthy the high and Monorable Charge, which you

had entrusted to my Fidelitie. In these extremities I resolved to consult my friends, Who finding Nature spent in mee, and my body almost confumed, my paines likewife daily encreasing) gaue me adulte to prefer a hopefull recodery, before an affured ruine, which must necessarily have ensued, had I lived, but twentie dayes longer in Virginia: wanting at that inflant, both food and Phylicke, fit to remedy fuch

extraordinary Dicafes, and restore that strength fo desperately decayed. Whereupon, after a long confiltation held, I refolued by generall confent and perswafion, to fhip my felfe for Menis, an Illand in the West Indies, famous for wholfesome Bathes, there to try what helpe the Heauenly Prouidence would affoord mee, by the benefit of the hot Bath: an But God, who guideth all things, according to his good will and pleafure, fo prouided, that after we had fayled an hundred Leagues, we met with Southerly windes which forced mee to change my purpole (my bodie being altogether vnable to endure the tediousnesse of a long Voyage) and fo feere my course for the Westerne Hands, which I no sooner recoursed, then I found helpe for my health, and my ficknesse asswaged, by meanes of fresh Diet, and especially of Orenges and Orenges and Lemons, an vindoubted remedy and medicine for that Difeate, which laftly, and to long, had at- Lemons good flicted me : which ease as I found, I resolved (alchough my body remayned still feeble remede tor and weake, to returne backe to my charge in Fremia againe, but I was aduised not to hazard my the Scurue. felfe before I had perfectly recouered my ftrength, which by counfell I was perfwaded to feeke in the naturall Ayre of my Countrey, and so I came for England. In which Accident , I doubt m not but men of reason, and of judgement will imagine, there would more danger and prejudice haue happened by my death there, then I hope can doe by my returne.

In the next place, I am to give account in what estate I left the Colonie for government in my absence. It may please your Lordships therefore to understand, that upon my departure thence I made choice of Captaine George Percie (a Gentleman of honour and resolution, and of no small Master George experience in that place, to remayne Deputie Gouernour, vntill the comming of the Marshall till incom-Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arruall of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arruall of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arruall of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined, upon the arrual of Sir Thomas Dale, whose Commission was likewise to be determined. mas Gates, according to the intent and order of your Lordhips, and the Councell here.

Dale Martill

The number of men I left there, were vpward of two hundred, the most in health, and pro- 200 let there. nided of at least ten moneths victuals, in their Store-house (which is daily iffued voto them) bewhildes other helps in the Countrey, lately found out by Captaine Argell by trading with pettie Trade by Capa Kings in those parts, who for a small returne of a piece of Iron, Copper, &c. have consented to ar 30%. trucke great quantities of Corne, and willingly imbrace the intercourse of Traffique, shewing vnto our people certaine fignes of amitie and affection.

And for the better strengthening and securing of the Colonie, in the time of my weaknesse there, I tooke order for the building of three leuerall Forts, two of which are leated neere Point Three Forts. Comfort, to which adiovneth a large circuit of ground, open, and fit for Corne : the third Fort is at the Falls, upon an Iland invironed also with Corne ground. These are not all manned, for I wanted the commoditie of Boats, having but two, and one Barge, in all the Countrey, which hath beene cause that our fishing hath beene (in some fort) hindered for want of those provisione, which eafily will be remedied when we can gaine fufficient men to bee imployed about those bufinelles, which in Virginia I found not : but lince meeting with Sir Thomas Gates at the Cower Sir T. G. techis neere Portsmouth, (to whom I gaue a particular account of all my proceedings, and of the pre- second voyage

fent estate of the Colonie as I left it) I understood those wants are supplyed in his Fleet. The Country is wonderfull fertile and very rich, and makes good whatforuer heretofore hath beene reported of it, the Cattell alreadie there, are much encreased, and thrive exceedingly with the pasture of that Countrie: The Kine all this last Winter, though the ground was covered most with Snow, and the Seafon sharpe, lived without other feeding then the grasse they found, with which they profpered well, and many of them readie to fall with Calue: Milke beeing a great nourithment and refreshing to our people, feruing also (in occasion) as well for Physicke as for

60 food, to that it is no way to be doubted, but when it shall please God that Sir Thomas Dale, and 100. Kine and Sir Thomas Gates, shall arrive in Virginia, with their extraordinary supply of one hundred Kine, 200. Swine and two hundred Swine, befides ftere of all manner of other provisions for the fuffenance and fent, maintenance of the Colonie, there will appeare that fucceile in the Action as shall give no man sause of diffruit that hath alreadie aduentured, but encourage euery good minde to further so

Hhhhhhhh

worthy a worke, as will redound both to the glory of God, to the credit of our Nation, and to the comfort of all those that have beene Instruments in the furthering of it.

K. and R. Pa

The last Differency, during my continual licknesse, was by Captaine Argoll, who hath found a Trade with Patamack (a King as great as Powhatan, who still remaynes our Enemie, though not able to doe vs burt.) This is in a goodly River called Patomack, vpon the borders whereof there are growne the goodlieft Trees for Mafts, that may bee found elfe-where in the World : Hempe better then English: growing wild in abundance: Mynes of Antimonie and Lead.

There is also found without our Bay to the Northward an excellent fishing Banke for Cod and Ling, as good as can be eaten, and of a kind that will keepe a whole yeere in ships hold, with little care: a triail whereof I now have brought over with me. Other Ilands there are voon our Io Coafts, that doe promife rich Merchandize, and will further exceedingly the establishing of the Plantation, by supply of many helpes, and will speedily affoord a returne of many worthy com-

Thaue left much ground in part manured to receive Corne, having caused it the last Winter to be fowed for Roots, with which our people were greatly relegied. There are many Vines planted in divers places, and doe profper well, there is no want of any thing, if the action can be voheld with constancie and resolution.

Latily, concerning my felfe and my course, though the World may imagine that this Countrie and Climate, will (by that which I have suffered beyond any other of that Plantation) ill aoree with the flate of my bodie, yet I am fo farre from thrinking or giving over this honourable 20 Enterprize, as that I am willing and readie to lay all that I am worth youn the adventure of the Action, rather then fo Honourable a Worke should faile, and to return with all the conuenient expedition I may, befeeching your Lordhips and the reft, not onely to excuse my former wants. happened by the Almightie Hand : but to second my Resolutions with your friendly indepours: that both the Scate may receive Honour, your felues Profit, and I future Comfort, by beeing imployed (though but as a weake Instrument) in so great an Action.

And thus having plainly, truly, and briefly delinered the cause of my returne, with the state of our affaires, as we now stand, I hope every worthy and indifferent hearer, will by comparing my present resolution of returne, with the necessitie of my comming home, rest satisfied with this true and short Declaration.

CHAP. IX.

A Letter of Sir Samuell Argoll touching his Voyage to Virginia, and Actions there : Written to Master Nicholas Hames. Iune 1613.



After Hawes, within senenweekes after my departure from the Coast of England, being the three and twentieth of Iuly, 1612. I fell with the Coaft of Virginia, in the La- 40 tituae of fortie degrees. The twelfth of September, with all my men in good health, the number being fixtie two, and all my vittuals very well conditioned: my course being fiftie leagues to the Northward of the Azores. The feuenteenth, I arrived at Point Comfort, where by the discreet and provident government of Sir Thomas Gates, and

Sir T. Gater. Sir T. Dale. The Deline-

Yance.

Hand.

This was in

the River of

Nanfamund.

Sir T. Smiths

His first Vov-

mee and Pen-

brooke River.

ftancie.

age to Pateman-

orest paines and bazard of Sir Thomas Dale, I found both the Country and people in farre better estate there, then the report was by such as came home in Sir Robert Manshelds Ship. From my arrissall until the first of November, I spent my time in helping to repaire such ships and Boats, as I found beere decayed for lacke of Pitch and Tarre : and in pursuing the Indians with Sir Thomas Dale, for their Corne, of which we got some quantitie, which we were like to have bought very deerely: for by the Providence of God, Sir Thomas Dale escaped killing very narrowly. Then about the beginning of No- 50 uember, by the advice of Sir Thomas Gates, I carried Sir Thomas Dale to Sir Thomas Smiths I. land, to have his opinion of the inhabiting of it: who, after three dayes march in discovering it, appreced His Voyage to very well of the place : and so much the better, because we found abundance of fish there, and very great Cod, which we caught in fine fathome water, of which we are in hope to get a great quantitie this Summer, for the reliefe of our men, as also to find safe passage for Boats and Barges thitber, by a cut out of the bottome of our Bay, into the De la Watre Bay. For which filling and better Diffenery, I have my fing Dola War Bay. readie, with my Company in as good health, as at my arrivall, and as they have continued oner fince : for which, God be glorified, to whom we give daily thankes, for the continuance of his mercy.

After my returne from Sir Thomas Smiths Hand, I fitted my Ship to feteb Corne from Patowomeck, by trading with the Indians, and fo fet Sayle from Point Comfort the first of December; and being 60 entred into Penbrooke River, I met with the King of Pastancie a hunting, who went prefently about with me, feeming to be very glad of my comming, and told me that all the Indians there were my very Wernance of Pagreat friends, and that they had good flore of Corne for mee , which they had provided the seere before, which we found to be true. Then I carried my lap prefently before his Towne, and there had not a font

Shallop, to get the Corne aboord withall, which being done, and having concluded a peace with divers other Indian Lords, and likewife given and taken * Hostages: I hasted to lames Towne, beeing the first of * Cap. Web. January and arrived at Point Comfort the first of February.

In this Voyage I got 1100. bulbels of Corne, which I delinered into the fenerall Store boufes, accor- Rob. Sparkes & ding unto the direction of Sir T. Gates : besides the quantuie of 300. busbels, reserved for mine Compa- two Boyes. ny. As soone I had valaden this Corne, I set my men to the felling of Timber, for the building of a Fre. 1100 buthels of Corne. gat, which I left halfe finished in the hands of the Carpenters at Point Comfort, the 19. of March: The second and returned my felfe with the flip into Pernbrook River, and fo discovered to the head of it, which is a - voyaget Penbout 65, leagues into the Land, and nauigable for any flip. And then marching into the Countrie, I found brooke River.

bout 65, leagues into the Lana, and ranguous for no spring, and the my guides, killed a couple which wee Note.

10 great store of Cattle as big as Kine, of which, the Indians that were my guides, killed a couple which wee Great sore of found to be very good and wholfome meate, and are very easie to be killed, in regard they are heavy, flow, Oxen in Penand not so wild as other beasts of the Wildernesse. In this iournie I likewise found a Myne, of which I brooke, have fent a triall into England : and likewife a strange kind of Earth , the vertue whereof I know not : River. but the Indians eate it for Phylicke, alleaging that it cureth the licknesse and paine of the belly .- I then the A Myrie. found a kind of water if sing out of the Earth, which bath a tart taffe much like out o Allum-water, it is Earth, good and wholfome : for my men did drinke much of it, and never found it otherwife. I alfo found an earth A water that like a Gumme, white and cleere; another fort red like Terra figillata; another very white, and of fo light hith the talte

a substance, that being cast into the water, it swimmeth.

Whilst I was in this businesse, I was told by certaine Indians, my friends, that the Great Powhatans An Earthlike 20 Danehter Pokahuntis was with the great King Patowo neck, whether I presently repaired, resolving to Ared Earth polliffe my felfe of ber by any firatagem that I could vie, for the ransoming of fo many Englishmen as like terra field were prisoners with Powhatan ; as also to get fuch armes and tooles, as bee, and other Indians had got late. by murther and flealing from others of our Nation, with some quantitie of Corne, for the Colonies re. The great King b) matther ana steaming some overs of the Powne, I manned my Boate and fent on spoare, for the Ensign Swift.

Ensign Swift. King of Paltancy and Enfigne Swift (whom I had left as a pledge of our love and truce, the Voyage before) who presently came and brought my pleage with him : whom after I had received . I brake the matter to this King, and told him, that if he did not betray Pokohuntis into my hands; wee would be no longer brothers nor friends. Hee alleaged, that if hee Should undertake this bufinesse, then Powhatan would make warres upon him and his people; but upon my promife, that I would in ne with him acainst

30 him, hee repaired presently to his brother, the great King of Patowomeck, who being made acquainted with the matter, called his Counsell together: and after some few boures deliberation, concluded rather to deliner her incomy bands, then lose my friendhip: so presently, he betrayed her into my Boat, wherein I I wabuntu tacarried her abourd my flip. This done, an Indian was dispatched to Powhatan, to let him know that I had ken. taken his Daughter : and if he would fend home the Englishmen (whom he deteined in stanerie, with such armes and tooles, as the Indians had gotten, and (tolne) and also a great quantitie of Corne, that then, he hould have his daughter restored, otherwise not. This newes much grieved this great King, yet, without delay, he returned the messenger with this answer. That he desired me to we his Daughter well, and bring my Ship into his Riner, and there he would give mee my demands; which being performed, I Should deliner

bom his Daughter, and we should be friends. Having received this answere, I presently departed from Patowomeck, being the 13. of Aprill, and reparred with all freed to Sir T. Gates, to know of bim upon what condition he would conclude this peace, and what he would demand : to whom I also delinered my prisoner, towards whose ransome within few dayes, this King (ent home fewen of our men, who feemed to be very toy full for that they were freed from 7, men freec, the flauery and feare of cruell murther, which they daily before lined in. They brought also three pieces, one broad Axe, and a long Whip-faw, and one Canow of Corne. I beeing quit of my prisoner went forward with the Frigat which I had left at Point Comfort, and finished her.

Thus having put my ship in hand to be fitted for an intended fishing Voyage, I left that businesse to be followed by my Master with a singe of men, and my Lieutenant fortifled on shoare with another singe to fell timber, and cleane plankes to build a fifting Boat; my Enligne with another ginge was imployed in

50 the Frigat , for getting of filh at Cape Charles, and transforting it to Henries Towne for the reliefe of such men as were there : and my selfe with a fourth ginge departed out of the River in my shallop, the first of May, for to discouer the East side of our Bay, which I found to have many small Rivers in it, and very courty. good harbours for Boats and Baroes, but not for hips of any great burthen; and also creat hore of Inbabitants, who feemed very delivous of ou lone, and formuch the rather, because they had received good reports from the Indians of Pembrock River, of our courteous v fage of them, whom I found trading with me for Corne, whereof they had oreat flore. We also discovered a multunde of Ilands bearing good Medow ground, and as I thinke, Sale might eafily be made there, if there were any ponds digged, for that I found Salt kerned where the water had over-flowne in certaine places. Here is also great store of sish, both shel-fish and other. So bassing discovered along the shore some fortie leagues Northward, I returned

againe to my hip, the twelfth of May, and hasted forward my businesse left in hand at my departure; and May 12-1613. fitted up my lip, and built my fifting Boate, and made readie to take the first opportunitie of the wind for my filling Voyage, of which I befeech God of his mercy to bleffe vs.

CHAP.IO. R. Nansamund. Sir Thomas Gates arrivall. Henrico built.

Notes of Virginian Affaires in the government of Sir THOMAS DALE and of Sir THOMAS GATES till Anno 1614. Taken out of Ma. Her RALPH HAMOR (Secretary to the Colonie) his Booke.

Euery mans care is no mans Propriepameftaker.

E found the Colonie at our arrivall there, from the Bermudas, not living aboue 10 threefcore persons therein, and those scarce able to go e alone, of wel-nigh fix hundred not full ten monethes before. The reaton hereof is at hand, for formerly. when our people were fed out of the common store, and laboured iountly in the manuring of the ground, and planting Corne, glad was that man that could flip

Sir Thom Dales

from inslabout; nay, the most honest of them in a generall businesse, would not take so much faithfull and true paines, in a weeke, as now hee will doe in a day, neither cared they for the increate, prefuming that howfoeuer their hatuest prospered, the general! stere must maintavne them. By which meanes we resped not fo much Corne from the labours of thirtie men, as three men haue done for themselues. To preuent which mitchiefe hereafter Sir Thomas Dale hath taken a new course, throughout the whole Colonie, by which meanes, the generall stere (apparell onely excepted) shall not bee charged with any thing : and this it is, hee hath allotted to energy man in the Colonie, three English Acres of cleere Corne ground, which every man is to mature and tend, being in the nature of Farmers (the Bermuda vndertakers onely excepted) and they are not called voto any feruice or labour belonging to the Colonie, more then one moneth in the veere, which shall neither be in Seed time, or in Haruest, for which, doing no other dutie to the Colonie, they are veerely to pay into the store two barrels and a halfe of Corne : there to be referued to keepe new men, which shall bee fent ouer , the first yeere after their arrivall : and even by this meanes I dare fay, our store will bee bountifully furnished, to maintayne three or source hundred men, whenfoeuer they shall be fept thither to vs. Concerning the vindertaking of the Bermida Citie, a bufineffe of greatest hope, euer begunne 30

Bermuda Citic.

at a time.

in our Territories there, their Patent, doth apparantly demonstrate, upon what termes and conditions they voluntarily have undertaken that imployment. The Land is stored with plentie and varietie of wild Beafts, Lions, Beares, Deere of all forts, onely differing from ours in their o: 4. Fawnes increase, having vitall, three or foure Fawnes at a time, none that I have seene or heard off vnder two: the reason whereof some of our people ascribe to the vertue of some grasse or herbe which they eate, because our Goates oftentines bring forth three, and most of them two: for my part I rather impute their fecundire to the Providence of God, who for every mouth provideth meate, and if this increase were not, the Naturals would assuredly starue; for of the Deete (they kill as doe we Beefes in England) all the yeere long, neither sparing young nor olde, no not the Does readie to fawne, nor the young Fawnes, if but two dayes olde) Beauers, Otters, Foxes, Racou- 40 nes, almost as bigge as a Foxe, as good meate as a Lambe, Hares, wild Cats, Muske Rats, Squirrels flying, and other of three or foue forts, Apossumes of the bignesse and likenesse of a Pigge of a moneth old, a beaft of as strange incredible nature, she hath commonly leuen young ones, sometimes more and sometimes lesse, which at her pleasure till they be a moneth old or more sheetateth up into her belly, and purteth forth againe without hurt to her felfe or them. Of each of thefe beafts, the Lion excepted, my felte haue many times eaten, and can testifie that they are not onely tailefull, but also wholfome and nourithing food.

Apossumes.

There are fowle of divers forts, Eagles wild Turkeyes much bigger then our English Cranes, Herons white and ruffet Hawkes, wilde Pidgeons (in Winter beyond number or imagination, my selfe haue feene three or foure houres together flockes in the Aire, fo thicke that even they 50 haue shadowed the Skie from vs) Turkeyes, Buzzards , Partridge, Snipes, Owles, Swannes, fore in Outeds. Geele, Brants, Ducke and Mallard, Droeis, Shel-drakes, Cormorants, Teale, Widgeon, Curfore in Outeds. lewes, Puits, beides other small birds, as Black-birds, Heige-Sparrowes, Oxe-eyes, Wood-pee-

kers, and in Winter about Christmasse many flockes of Parakertoths. For fish, the Rivers are plentifully flored, with Sturgeon, Porpasse, Base, Rockfish, Carpe, Shad, A Frigusla- Herring, Ele, Cathilh, Perch, Flat-fish, Trout, Sheepes-head, Drummers, Iarlish, Creuises, Crabbes, Oyfters and divers other kindes, of all which my felfe hath feene great quantitie taken, especially the last Summer at Smiths lland, at one hale a Frigors lading of Sturgion, Bale and other great fish in Captaine Argals Saine : and even at the very place which is not above fifteene miles trom Point. Comfort, if we had beene furnished with falt, to have faued it, wee might have taken 60

firy fo many fruits; Grapes Strawberries, Mulberries, Maricocks, of fallion of a Lemmon, whole Faireflowres, bloffome may admit comparison with our most delight some and beautifull Flowers, and the fruit

as much fish as would have ferued vs that whole yeere. To goe yet a little further, I my felfe know no one Countrey yeelding without Art or induexceeding pleafant and taffuil: Chefine-trees towardes the Falls as many as Oakes, and as fertill many goodly Groues of Chincomen-trees, with a huske like vnto a Cheinut, raw or boiled. Inficious and heartie meat: Walnuts of three or foure forts, whereof there might bee yeerely made oreat quantitie of Oyles, as victual and good as that of Oliues : Some Filberds haue I feene, Crabs Crabs. great store, leffe, but not to fower as ours, which grafted with the Siens of English Apple-trees. without question would beare very good fruit.

In May, 1611. Sir Thomas Dale, with a prosperous passage, not full eight weekes arrived there Sir The Dales with him about three hundred people, fuch as for the present speed and dispatch could then bee going to Virgiprouided, of worle condition then those formerly there, who I forrow to speake it, were not fo ma,d. I it. in provident, though once before bitten with hunger and penury, as to put Corne into the ground for their Winters bread, but trufted to the store, then furnished but with eight months prouision. His first care therefore was to imploy all hands about fetting of Corne at the two Forts, feated wretches. voon Kecongbian , Henry and Charles , whereby the fealon then not fully past, though about the His care and

end of May, we had there an indifferent Crop of good Corne.

This bu inelle taken order for , and the care and truft of it committed to his under Officers : to lames Towns hee haitened, where the most company were, and their daily and viuall workes, bowling in the fireets, these he imployed about necessary workes, as felling of Timber, repairing their houses ready to fall upon their heads, and prouiding Pailes, Posts and Railes, to impaile his purposed new Towne; which by reason of his ignorance in those parts, but newly arrived there, to he had not resolved where to seat. For his better knowledge therefore of those parts, himselfe with an hundreth men spent some time in the discourty, first of Navlamund River, which in de- R. Nonfamund foight of the Indians, then our enemies, hee discouered to the Head, after that, our owne River to Wile four nice fpight of the Indians, then our enemies, nee on concrete to the read, after that, but own to know the falls, where vpon a high Land, inuironed with the maine Ruser, fome fixteene or twentie forbuill force miles from the Head or the Falls, neere to an Indian Towne called Arfabassocke, hee reloked to plant his new Towne, and fo did, whereof in his due place I shall make a briefe relation.

It was no meane trouble to him, to reduce his people to timely to good order, being of foill a condition as may well witneffe his feuere and ftrict imprinted booke of Articles , then needfull with all feueritie and extremitie to bee executed, now much mitigated for more deferued death in those dayes, then doe now the least punishment, so as if the law should not hauerestrained by execution, I fee not how the veter subuersion and ruine of the Colony should have beene prevented, witnelle Webbes and Prifes defigne in the first yeere, fince that Abbets, and others more dans wollers gerous then the former, and even in this Summer, Coles and Kitchins Plot, with three more, bending their course towards the Southward, to a Spanish plantation reported to be there, who had travelled (it being now a time of peace) fome five dates sourney to Ocanaboen, there cut off by

certaine Indians, hired by vs to hunt them home to receive their delerts.

Thus much obuiously I proceed in his indevours , vntill Sir Thomas Gates his happy arrivall, which was onely in preparing Timber, Pales, Polits, and Railes for the prefent impailing this new Towne to secure himselfe, and men from the malice and treacherie of the Indian, in the midst and heart of whom he was resolved to set thowne. But before he could make himselie readie for that bufineffe, Sir Thomas Gates happily arrived about the focund of August, with fixe good Ships, men, Arrivallof Sir

provisions and cattle. The worthies being met after falutation and welcome given and received, Sir Thomas Dale acquainted Sir Thomas Gates, both with fuch businesses he had affected fince his arrivall, and also of his resolution to build a new Towne at the Fales: which designe and purpose of his, Sir Thomas Gates, then principall Gouernour in Virginia, well approving, furnished him with the hund and fiftie men, fuch as himselfe made choice of, and in the beginning of September, 10 11 feet for from lames Towne, and in a day and a halfe landed at a place where hee purposed to pacare build, where hee had beene ten dates before hee had verie strongly impaled fetten and the Acte of ground for a Towne . which in honour of the Noble Prince Heary (of ever har and bleffe to memory, whose Royall heart was strongly affected to that action) hee called by the name of Henrico. In foure moneths space, he had made Henrico much better, and of more worth then all the worke eyer fince the Colony began, therein done. I should bee too tedious if I should give yo the account of enery daies labour, which therefore I purporely omit , and will onely deferibe the Towne, in the very flate and perfection which I left it and first for the steading it stands whom a necke of a very high Land, three parts thereof intironed with the maine River, and cut out between two Rivers with a strong Pale, which maketh the neck of Landan Iland. There are in this by Sir T. Dale.

one laid of Brick, in length an hundred font, and fiftie foot write, befides Store-houses, Watchhouses, and such like; there are also, as ornaments belonging to this Towne, vpon the Verge of this River, fine faire Block-houles, or Commanders, wherein live the honester fort of people, as in Farmes in England, and there keepe continual centinell for the Townes fecuritie, and about two miles from the Towne into the Main, a Pale of two miles in length cut offer from River to River, guarded likewise with seusrall Commanders, with great quantitie of Corne ground impage led, fufficient if there were no more in the Colony fecured, to maintaine with but cake manuring,

Town three dreets of well framed houses, a handsome Church & the foundation of a more stately

Habbahh 3

imploiment,

The.Gates, with

Henrica buile

and husbandry, more men, then I suppose will be addressed thither (the more is the pittie) these

For the further enlargement yet of this Towne, on the other fide of the River, by impaling likewife : for we make no other fence, is recured to our vie, especially for our hogges to feed in about twelue English miles of ground, by name, Hope in Faith, Coxen-Dale, secured by fine Forts. called Charity Fort, Mount Malado, a Retreat or Gueft-house for ficke people, a high feate, and wholiome ayre, Elizabeth Fort, and Fort Patience: and here hath Master Whitacres chosen his Parfonage, or Church-land, some hundred Acres impaled, and a faire framed Parsonage house built thereupon, called Rocke Hall. Of this Towne, and all the Forts thereunto belonging, hath Captaine James Danis the principall Command and Gouernment.

guished.

Virginia is

brought to

fuch an 2-

bridgement.

him or others

in that kind.

I proceed to our next and most hopefull habitation, whether wee respect commoditie or secu-Bermuda acity. ritie (which we principally ayme at) against forraine designes and inuasion, I meane the Bermuda Citie, begun about Christmasse last, which because it is the neerest adiopning to Henrico. though the last vindertaken, I hold it pertinent to handle in the next place. This Towne, or Plantation is feated by Land, fome fine miles from Hemice, by water fourteene, being the veere before the habitation of the Appamatucks, to revenge the treacherous injurie of those people done vnto vs, taken from them, belides all their Corne, the former before without the loffe of amy, faue onely some few of those Indians (pretending our hurt) at what time Sir Thomas Dale. being himfelfe vpon that ferusee, and duely confidering how commodious a habitation and feate enunareds iet out and diffine it might be for vs, tooke resolution to possesse and plant it, and at that very instant, gaue it the 20 name of the new Bermudas, whereunto he hath laid out, and annexed to bee belonging to the Freedome, and Corporation for euer, many miles of Champion, and Wood-land, in feuerall Hundreds, as the vpper and nether Hundreds, Roch-dale Hundred , West's Sherly Hundred. and Digges his Hundred.

Captaine Argalls Northward discourties towardes Sacadebec, and beyond to Port Rosall. Long difeourfes followed in the Authoribut Santia Crux, and thereabout may not bee concealed : In which his aduentures, if he had brought home no commoditie to the Colony (which yet he did very much, both of apparell, victualls. and many other necessaries) the honour which he hath done vnto our Nation, by displanting the French, there beginning to feat and fortifie within our limits, and taking of their Ship & Pinnace, which he brought to Iame: Towne, would have been reward enough for his paines, and will ever 30 that I have no

heart to follow speake loud his honour, and approved valour.

CHAP. XI

A Letter of Sir THOMAS DALE, and another of Master WHITAKERS, from lames Towne in Virginia, lune 18. 1614. And a piece of a Tractate, written by the faid Mafter WHITAKERS from Virginia the yeere before.

> To the R. and my most esteemed friend, M.D. M. at his house at F. Ch. in London.

Post Renerend Sir, by Sir Thomas Gates I wrote unto you, of fact acceptons at the preferred themselves, and now agains by this worthy Gentleman Captaine Argill I deluc you : for such is the reverend regard I have of you, as I cannot omit any occasion to expresse the function affection I beare you. You have over given mee encouragements to per seure in this Religious Wartare, until your last Letters; not for that you are now less well assected thereunto : but because you see the Action to be in danger of their non-50

performances who undertooks the businesse. I have undertaken, and have as faithfully, and with all my might indeanoured the profecution with all alacretie, as God that knoweth the heart can beare merecord, what recompence, or what rewards, by whom, or when I know not where to expect; but from him in whole Vineward I labour, whof Church with greedy appetite I defire to crett. My glorious Mafter is gone, that would have ennamelled with his favour; the labors I undertake, for Gods caule, and his immortall honome. Hee was the Great Captaine of our Iliael, the boge to have builded up this beauenly new le-tuillem be interred (I thinke) the mhole frame of this buffresse, fell into his grave: for most ment forward (at least feeming fo) defires are quenched, and Virginia stands in desperate baz ard. Touthere dos your duties, I will no way omit mine, the time I promised to labour, is expired : it is not a yoke of Oxen bath drawne mee from this feaft : it is not the marriage of a wife makes me hall bome, though that fallat 63 gine mee an appetite to canse me returne. But I have more care of the Stock, then to set upon a Dye, and rather put my lefe to the curtefie of noble and worthy censures, then ruine this Worke; and have a lury (nay 4 million) of foule monthed detractors, fcan upon my endeanours, the ends whereof they cannot dimeinto. You fhall briefly understand what bath betide since my last, and how me now fland, and are

likely to grow to perfection, if wee be not altogether neglected, my ftay grounded upon such reason, as had I now returned, it would have hazarded the ruine of all.

Sir Thomas Gates basing imbarked himfelfe for England, I put my felfe into Captaine Argalls flip, with a bundred and fiftie men in my frigot, and other boats went unto Pamaunkie River, where Powha- Sir T. Dales tan hath his residence, and can in two or three dayes, draw a thousand men together; with me I carried joutny to Pewhis damphier, who had beene long prifoner with us, it was a day or two before wee heard of them: At batens Counlength they demanded why wee came; I gave for answere, that I came to bring him his daughter, condi- try. This is tionally he would (as bath beene agreed upon for ber ransome) render all the Armes, Tooles, Swords, and men that bad run away, and to give me a hip full of Corne, for the wrong bee had done unto us : if they the particular 10 would doe this, we would be friends, if not burne all. Toey demanded time to fend to their King; I affen _ circumstances ted. I taking , they receiving two pledges , to carry my meffage to Powhatan. All night my two men lay not farre from the water fide about noone the next day they told them the great King was three daies iourner off that Opochankano was hard by to whom they would have had them deliner their message, saying, M. Henot, That what hee agreed upon and did, the great King would confirme. This Opocankano is brother to Powhatan, and is his and their chiefe Captaine : and one that can as foone (if not fooner) as Powhatan com nand the men. But my men refused to doe my message unto any saue Powhatan, fo they were brought backe, and I (ent theirs to them; they told me that they would fetch Simons to me, who had thrice plaid the runnavate, whose lyes and villany much hindred our trade for Corne: But they delayed vs. so as we went a hore they foot at us, we were not behinde hand with them, killed some, hurt others, marched into 20 the Land, burnt their boules, tooke their Corne, and quartered all night ashoare.

The next day we went further up the River, they dogged us and called to know whither we went ; wee answered. To burne all, if they would not doe as we demanded, and had beene acreed voon. They would they (aid, bring all the next day fo we forbare all hostilitie, went ashoure, their men in good numbers commine amonest ve but we were very cautious and stood to our Armes. The Kings daughter went alboare, Pocabintal bebut would not talke to any of them, fcarce to them of the best fort, and to them onely, that if her father hautour and had loved her, he would not value her leffe then old Swords, Peeces, or Axes: wherefore shee would fill tepotte dwell with the English men, who loued ber. At last came one from Pow hatan, who told vs, that Simons was run away, to Nonfow haicond, which was a truth, as afterwards appeared, but that the other Englift man was dead that proued a lie (for fince M. Hamor, whom I employed to Powhatan brought him to mee) our Peeces, Swords, and Tooles within fifteene dayes, should be fent to lames Towne, with some Corne, and that his daughter foodld be my child, and ener dwell with mee, defiring to be ener friends, and named such of his people, and neighbour Kings, as hee defired to be included, and have the benefit of the peace, promifing if any of our men came to him , without leave from mee, he would fend them backe : and that if any of his men ft ale from us, or killed our cattell, hee would fend them to us to bee punished as wee thought fit, With the fe conditions were returned, and within the time limited, part of our Armes were fent, and twentie men with Corne, and promifed more, which he hath alfo fent. Opachankano defired I Opachankana would call him friend, and that be might call me so, saying, Hee was a great Captaine, and did always now their fight: that I was also a great Captaine, and therefore be loued mee; and that my friends should bee his king,& worked friends. So the bargaine was made, and enery eight or ten dayes, I have me fages and prefents from him. 40 with many appearances that he much defireth to continue friendship.

Now may you indee Sir, if the God of Battailes had not a belging hand in this, that having our Swords drawne, killing their men, burning their boufes, and taking their corne : yet they tendred us peace. and strine with all alacritie to keepe vs in good opinion of them; by which many benefits arise vinto vs. First, part of our Armes, diffracefully lost long agoe (kept by the Sauages as Monuments and Trophies of our hames) redelinered fome repaire to our Honor, Our catellto mercafe without dancer of de-Broying our men at libertie to hunt freely for Veni fou, to fift, to doe any thing elfe, or goe any whither without danger , to follow the bushanding of our corne securely , whereof wee have abone fine hundred Acres (et. and God be prassed, in more forwardnesse then any of the Indians, that I have seene or heard of this yeares, Roots and Hearbs we have abundance; all doubt of want is by Gods bleffing quite vanished. and much plentie expected. And which is not the least materiall, wee may by this peace come to discourse

the Countrey better, both by our owne trauells, and by the relation of the Sauages, as we grow in familiaria Powhatans daughter I caused to be carefully instructed in Christian Religion, who after she had made

Some good progresse therein, renounced publikely her Countrey Idolatry, openly confessed her Christan Pocabuntas Faith, was, as shee desired, haptised, and is since married to an English Centieman of good waterstam, baptised (80f dins (as b) his Letter unto me, containing the reasons of his marriage of her you may perceine) another had the containing the reasons of his marriage of her you may perceine) another had the heard the anot to binde this peace the stronger. Her Father and friends gave approbation to it, and her Vncle gave was properly her to him in the Church : free lines civilly and louingly with him, and I trust will increase in goodnesse, as named) at helt the knowledge of God increafeth in ber. Shee will goe into England with mee, and were it but the gaining called Rebessa; 60 of this one foule, I will thinke my time, toile, and prefent flay well spent.

Since this accident, the Governours and people of Checkahomanies, who are five hundred Bow-men, and better, a stout and warlshe Nation, have made meanes to have us come unto them, and conclude a peace, where all the Gouernours would meet me. They having theu three or foure times importuned me. I resolved to goe; so having Captaine Argall, with sifice men in my Frigot and Barge I went thither : Cap-

felues be called. The particulars and ar-

letter to the

Committees

foure of the

put all toge-

ther, may no

commodities.

or goodnesse

Mafter Alexan-

der Whitaker

lemicall Di-

nine Doctor whitaker Ma-

of foile.

tame Areall with forty men landed, I kept abourd for some reasons. Vpon the meeting they told Captaine Argall they had longed to be friends, that they had no being, but eight great men, who governed them. He told them that we came to be friends, asked them if they would have King lames to be their King, and whether they would be his men? They after some conference betweene themselves, seemed willing of both demanding if we would fight against their enemies; be told them that if any did them minry, they should fend me word, and I would agree them, or if their adversaries would not, then I would let them have as many men as they would to helpe them: they liked well of that, and told him that all their men should They called the English Tof- beipe vs. All this being agreed upon, Captaine Argall ganc enery Counfellour a Tamahawk. and and any to the second of the s pento meete with our Boates, and that they faid they were the Chikahominy Englishmen, and IO King lames bus men, wee would let them passe: we agreed unto it, so that they pronounced themselves Englishmen, and King lames his men, promising within fifteene dayes to come unto lames Towne to fee culars and ar-ticles of agree- me, and conclude these conditions; enery Bowman being to give me as a Tribute to King lames two meamont ate in M. fures of Corne enery harnest she two measures containing two bushels and a halfe and I to give enery Bow-Hamors Books; man a small Tamahawke, and to enery Counseller a fuit of red cloats, which did much please them. This people neuer acknowledged any King before, no nor ener would acknowledge Powhatan for their King; a front people they be, and a delicate feate they bane.

Now Sir you fee our conditions, you, and all worthy men may indee, whether it would not be a criste to fee these faire bopes frostbitten, and these fresh budding plants to wither? which had I returned had asinreally followed for here is no one that the people would have governe them, but my felfe: for it had now come 20 away, had I not found a generall desire in the best fort to returne for England: Letter vpon Letter, request upon request from their friends to returne, so as I knew not upon whom to conferre the care of this bustnelle in my absence : whom I thought fit was generally distasted, fo as seeing the eminent ensuing danger. (bould I have left this multitude, not yet fully refined, I am refolued to flay till harnest be got in, and then Cetile things according tomy poore understanding, and returne : if in the interim there come no authoria fed Gonernour from England.

Cansider I pray you, since things be brought to this passe, as you see, and that I should have come away, Sir T. Dales tethen through their factions, humors, mutinies, or maifcretion of the Chiefes I had left behinde, this port of Virgi-Should fall to ruine : I then Sould receive the imputation, and incurre the blame, for quitting the Plantania. In another tion, although I might doe u, both with my bonour, my promised flay of time being expired, and basino 30 warrant from my Soueraigne, the Kings Maiesty : but the precedent reasons moned mee and that the he writeth that astion of fuch price, fuch excellency and affured profit to mine come knowledge should not die to the scorne of our Nation, and to gine cause of laughter to the Papists, that desire our ruine. I can affare jon. no best Kingdoms Country of the world affords more affured hopes of infinite riches, which both by mine owne peoples discoof Christendame wery, and the relation of Such Sauages, whose fidelity we have often found, affureth me. Oh why should Comany Princes and Noblemen ingage themselves, and thereby interoceding berein, have caused a numway compare
with this coun- ber of soules transport themselves, and be transported bother? Why should they (I. say) relinquish thu so olorious an Action: for if their ends be to build God a Church, they ought to perfenere : if otherwise, yet ery either for their honour ingageth them to be constant. How soener they hand affelled, here is enough to content them, 40 let their ends be either for God, or Mammon.

These things having animated me to stay for a little season, to leanethose, I am tied in conscience to returne unto, to leave the affured benefits of my other fortunes, the sweete society of my friends and acquaintance, with all mundall delights, and refide here with much turmoile, which I will constantly doe, rather then fee Gods glory diminified, my King and Country diffeonored, and thefe poore people, I have the charge of, ruined. And so I be seech you to answer for me, if you beare me taxed for my staying, as some may insily was son to that doe, and that these are my chiese motives God I take to witnesse. Remember me and the cause I have in worthy of Po- hand, in your daily meditations, and reckon me in the number of those that doe sincerely lone you and yours, and will ever rest in all offices of a friend, to doe you service.

> To my very deere and louing Cosen M. G. Minister of the B. F. in London.

Ir, the Colony here is much better. Sir Thomas Dale, our Religious and values Governour, bath Inom brought that to paffe, which never before could be effected. For by warre upon our exemies, and kinde v (age of our friends, he hath brought them to seeke for peace of vs, which is made, and they dire not breake. But that which is best, one Pocahuntas or Matoa the daughter of Powhatan, is married to an bonest and discreete English Gentleman Master Rolle, and that after the had openly renounced her Country Idolatry, professed the faith of lesus Christ, and was baptised which thing Sir Thomas Dale had laboured a long time to ground in her.

Tet notwithstanding, are the vertuous deedes of this worthy Knight, much dehafed, by the Letters crywhore firft, which fome wicked men have written from hence, and especially by one C. L. If you heare any condemna and by depra- this noble Knight, or doe feare to come hither, for those flanderow Letters, you may upon my word boldly uing inflice
representation. You know that no malefulfors can abide the face of the Indge, but themselves scorning to CHAP. 11. Surplis and subscription. Miserable condition. Strange Narrations. 1771

bereproued, doe professie with all hatred, all those that labour their amendment. I marwaile much that or rep on of honest life, should feare the Sword of the Magistrate, which is unsheathed ones in their defence .

But I much more muse, that so sew of our English Ministers that were so bot against the Survius and Subscription : come hitber where neither spoken of. Doe they not either wilfully bide their Tallents or beepe themselues at home for seare of loosing a few pleasures? Be there not any amongst them of Moles hu munde, and of the Apolities, that for sooke all to follow (brist? But I referre them to the indee of all hearts, and to the King that shall reward every one according to the gaine of his Talent. But you my cofen bold fait that which you have, and I, though my promise of three yeeres service to my Countrey be 10 expired, will abide in my vocation here untill I be lawfully called from hence. And so betaking us all unto themercies of God in Christ lefus, I rest for ener.

> Part of a Tractate written at Henrico in Virginia, by Master A L EX. WHITAKER, Minister to the Colony there, which then gouerned by Sir T. DALE, 1612.

Hey acknowledge that there is a great good God, but know him not, having the eyes of I their understanding as yet blinded; waerefore they serue the Diuell for seare, after a most bale manner, facrificing iometimes (as I haue here heard) their owne Children to him. I haue fent one Image of their god to the Counfell in England, which is painted upon one fide of a toadfloole, much like vnto a deformed monfter. Their Priefts (whom they call Quistofoughs) are no Their Priefts other but fuch as our English Witches are, They live naked in body, as if their shame of their and mannet finne deferued no couering: Their names are as naked as their body: they esteeme it a vertue to or luing. lye, deceiue, and steale, as their Master the Diuell teacheth them. Much more might be said of their miferable condition, but I referre the particular narration of these things to some other

These men are not so simple as some have supposed them; for they are of body lufty, strong, and very nimble: they are a very vnderstanding generation, quicke of apprehension, suddaine in their dispatches, subtile in their dealings, exquisite in their inuentions, and industrious in their labour, Huppole the world hath no better marke-men with their Bowes and Arrowes then they be; they will kill Birds flying, Fishes swimming, and Beasts running: they shoote also with meruilous ftrenath, they shot one of our men being vnarmed quite through the body, and nailed both his armes to his body with one Arrow: one of their Children also, about the age of twelue or thirteene yeeres, killed a Bird with his Arrow in my fight. The feruice of their God is answerable to their life, being performed with a great feare and attention, and many strange dumbe shewes vsed in the same, stretching forth their limbes, and straining their body, much like to the counterfeit women in England, who faine themselves bewitched, or possessed of some

They stand in great awe of the Quickofonabs or Priests, which are a generation of Vipers, even of Sathans owne brood. The manner of their life is much like to the Popish Hermits of our age; for they live alone in the woods, in houses sequestred from the common course of men, neither may any man be luffered to come into their house or to speake with them, but when this Priest doth call him, He taketh no care for his victuals, for all such kinde of things both Bread and Water, &c. are brought vnto a place neere vnto his cottage, and there are left, which hee fetcheth for an proper neede. If they would have raine, or have loft any thing, they have their recourse to him, was conjureth for them, and many times preuaileth. If they be ficke, he is their Physician; if they be wounded, he sucketh them. At his command they make warre and peace, neither doe they any thing of moment without him. I will not be tedious in these Brange Narrations, when I have more perfectly entered into their fecrets, you shall know all. Finally, there is a civill government among it them which they strictly observe, and shew thereby that the law of Nature dwell, th in them: for they have a rude kinde of Common-wealth, and rough government was killed in wherein they both honour and obey their Kings, Parents, and Gouernours, both greater and leke, Bernadaby anthey observe the limits of their owne possessions. Murther is fearly heard of : Adultery and other other State

offences feuerely punished. The whole Continent of Virginia lituate within the degrees of 34. and 47. is a place beautified by God, with all the ornaments of nature, and enriched with his earthly treasures : that pare of it, which we already possesse, beginning at the Bay of Chasapheae, and stretching it telle in 60 Northerly latitude to the degrees of 39, and 40, is interlined with feuen most goodly Rivers, the leaft whereof is equall to our River of Thames: and all their Rivers are to necrely soyned, as that Asta one there is not very much distance of dry ground betweene either of them, and those feu: rall maine miles. lands are every where watered with many veines or creekes of water, which fundry waies doe Querthwart the land, and make it almost nauigable from one River to the other. The commodity

fter of S. labas Col.in Cambridge. Whatshadowes of men are the most in this age, that the best deserving fhould neede gyrikes ? They ing tutter ill,

1773

whereof to those that shall inhabite this land is infinite, in respect of the speedy and easie transportance of goods from one River to the other, I cannot better manifelt it vnto you, but in aduting you to confider whether the water or land hath beene more beneficiall to the Low-Countries. To the River which we inhabit (commonly called Powbatans River) ebbeth and floweth one hundred and forty miles into the maine; at the mouth whereof are the two Forts of Henrico and Charles : two and forty miles vpward is the first and Mother-Christian Towne feated, called Lames-Towne; and feuenty miles beyond that vpward, is the new Towne of Henrico built, and fo named in the memory of Noble Prince Henry of lafting and bleffed memory: tenne miles beyond this is a place called the Fals, because the River hath there a great descent falling downe between many minerall Rockes which be there: twelve miles farther beyond this place is there a Chris Io Christall Rock Stall Rocke wherewith the Indians doe head many of their Arrowes: three dayes journey from thence is there a Rock or stony hill found, which is in the top couered all ouer with a perfect and most rich Silver pare. Our men that went to discouer those parts had but two Iron Pickayes with them, and those to ill tempered, that the points of them turned againe, and bowed at every ftroake, fo that we could not fearch the entrailes of the place, yet fome triall was made of that pare with good fuccesse, and argument of much hope. Six dayes journey beyond this Mine a great ridge of high hils doe runne along the maine land, not farre from whom the Indians report a great Sea doth runne, which we commonly call a South Sea, but in respect of our habitation is a West Set, for there the Sun fetteth from vs. The higher ground is much like vnto the molde of France. clay and fand being proportionably mixed together at the top; but if we digge any depth (as we 20 have done for our Bricks) we finde it to be red clay, full of gliffering spangles. There be many tockie places in all quarters; & more then probable likelihoods of rich Mines of all forts; though I knew all, yet it were not conuenient at this time that I hould veter all, neither have wee had meanes to fearch for any thing as we ought, thorough prefent want of men, and former wants Avreand Sea- of prouision for the belly. As for Iron, Steele, Antimonium, and Terra figillata, they have rather offered themselves to our eyes and hands, then bin sought for of vs. The Ayre of the Countrey (especially about Henrico and vpward) is very temperate and agreeth well with our bodies. The extremity of Summer is not to hot as Spaine, nor the cold of Winter fo sharpe as the frosts of England. The Spring and Haruest are the two longest seasons and most pleasant, the Summer and Winter are both but fhort. The Winter is for the most part dry and faire, but the Summer 30 watered often with many great and lodaine showers of raine; whereby the cold of Winter is warmed, and the heate of Summer cooled. Many have died with vs heretofore thorough their

were no ficker then our bodies. The naturall people of the Land are generally such as you heard of before. A people to be feared of thole that come you them without defensive Armor, but otherwise faint-hearted (if they fee their Arrowes cannot pierce and easie to be subdued. Shirts of Male, or quilted cotten coates are the best desence against them. There is but one or two of their petry Kings, that for feare of vs have defired our friendship; and those keepe good quarter with vs, being very pleasant amongst 40 vs. and (if occasion be) seruiceable vnto vs. Our eldest friends be Pipisco and Choapole, who are our overchwart neighbours at lames-Towne, and have beene friendly to vs in our great want. The other is the Weromance of Chescheak, who but lately traded with vs peaceably. If we were once the mafters of their Country, and they flood in feare of vs (which might with few hands imployed about nothing elfe, be in short time brought to passe) it were an easie matter to make them willingly to forfake the Diuell, to embrace the faith of Iefus Christ, and to be baptized. piety&ciuility Besides, you cannot easily judge how much they would be availeable to vs in our Discoue-What vieway ries of the Countrey, in our Buildings and Plantings, and quiet prouision for our felues, be made of the when we may peaceably passe from place to place without neede of Armes or Guard.

owne filthineste and want of bodily comforts for sicke men; but now very few are sicke amone

vs : not about three persons amongst all the inhabitants of Henrice; I would to God our soules

The meanes for our people to line and fublift here of themselves are many and most certaine to both for Beafts, Birds, and Hearbes. The Beafts of the Countrey are for the most part wilde: as Lyons, Brares, Wolues and Deere: Foxes blacke and red, Rakowns, Beuers, Pollowns, Squerrels, Wilde-Cats, whose skins are of great price, and Muske-Rats which yeelde Muske as the Muske-Cats doe. There be two kindes of Beaits amongst these most strange; one of them is the female Possowne, which will let forth her yong out of her belly, and take them vp into her belly againe at her pleasure without hurt to her selfe; neither thinke this to be a Trauellers tale, but the very truth; for nature hath framed her fit for that fertice, my eyes have beene witneffe vato it, and we have fent of them and their yong ones into England. The other strange conditioned creature is the flying Squirrell, which thorough the helpe of certaine broad flaps of skin growing on each fide of her forelegs, will flye from tree to tree twenty or thirty paces at one flight 60 and more, if the have the benefit of a small breath of winde, Besides these, since our comming hither, we have brought both Kine, Goates, and Hogges, which prosper well, and would multiply exceedingly, if they might be prouided for. This Countrey besides is replenished with Birds of all forts, which have bin the best sustenance of flesh, which our men have had fince they came;

Note well.

Natiues.

ftrange beaft.

Flying Scuir-

also Eagels and Hankes of all forts, amongst whom are Auspreys, fishing Hanke, and the Cormorant. The woods be every where full of wilde Turkies, which abound, and will runne as swift as a Greyhound. In winter our fields be tull of Cranes, Herons, Pigeons, Partridges and Black- Fowle. hirds; the Rivers and creekes be over-spread every where with water foule of the greatest and leaft fort, as Swans, flockes of Geefe and Brants, Ducke and Mallard, Sneldrakes, Dyners, &c. besides many of her kindes of rare and delectable Birds, whose names and natures I cannot yet recite, but we want the meanes to take them. The Rivers abound with Fish both small and great; the Sea-fish come into our Rivers in March, & continue vnrill the end of September : great sculls. Fish, of Herines come in first : Shads of a great bignesse, and Rock-fish follow them. Trouts, Base, to Flounders, and other dainty fish come in before the other be gone : then come multitudes of great Sturgeons, whereof we catch many, and should do more, but that we want good Nets antiwerable to the breadth and deapth of our Rivers: besides, our channels are so soule in the bottome with great logges and trees, that we often breake our Nets voon them: I cannot reckon nor Nets. giue proper names to the divers kindes of fresh fish in our Rivers; I have caught with mine Angle. Pike, Karpe, Eele, Perches of fix seuerall kindes, Crea-fish, and the Torope or little Turtle, besides many imaller kindes, &c.

CHAP. XII.

Of the Lottery: Sir THOMAS DALES returne: the Spaniards in Virginia. Of POCAHVNTAS and TOMOCOMO: Captaine YERD-LEY and Captaine AR & OLL (both fince Knighted) their Government; the Lord L A-W ARRS death, and other occurrents till Anno 1610.



I therto you have heard the Authors themselves speak of their owne affaires. Now we must for continuation and consummation of our Story, borrow a few Collections from others, where the Authors themselves have not comne to our hands. Wherein that industrious Gentleman Captaine lobn Smith still breathing Vereinia and diligent enquiry and writing, as sometime by discouery and doing to shew his zeale to this action (for feeing he cannot there be employed to performe Vir-

ginian exploits worthy the writing, here he employeth himselfe to write Virginian affaires worthy the reading) having compiled a long Hiltory of that and the Summer Iland plantation, and of New England in tix Bookes, hath gently communicated the fame to mine, that is to thine, as intended to the Worlds vie. Out of his rich fields I have gleaned these handfuls, adding thereto the crop also of mine owne andustry.

40 Sir Thomas Gates returned from Virginia in March, and Captaine Argall in Iune following 1614. The Lottery. and to animated by their hopefull reports the Aduenturers, that the great standing Lottery was drawns Anno 1615, in the West end of Pauls (burebyard (where before, as in many other places after, arun-Anno 1015. In the reciprose of Latin Commonway in the Prizes were proportioned from two ning Lottery of smaller adventures had beene vsed in which the Prizes were proportioned from two To 1900.2006. crownes (which was the least) to divers thousands, arising in ordinary assents and degrees , casually accrownes (which was toe teast) to unerst town and a strong in ordinary agents and degrees, to come and the cruing as the lot fell, and paid in money or in Plate there fet forth to view, provided that if any chose moner rather then Plate or goods for paiment, in summes about ten crownes, be was to abate the tenth part. highest 45000 The orders of this Lotters were published, and courses taken to present frauds.

Whiles Sir. Thomas Dale was in Virginia, it chanced that a Spanish Ship beate up and downe before Point Comfort, and fent alboare for a Pilot. Captaine James Davies fent them one, with whom they Spanish Ships 50 presently sailed away, leaving three of their company behinde. These, upon examination, confessed that a Virginia. basing lost their Admirall, accident had forced them into those parts; two of them said they were Cap- English Pilace taines of chiefe command in the Fleete. They received good v (age there, till one of them was found to be or lades tathers an English nan, which in the great Fleete 1 . 88, hadbin a Pilot to the Spaniards, and now exercised his inspended and wonted trechery, having induced some malecontents to runne away with a small Barke. This darknesse explical togebeing brought to light, some of them were executed, and he expecting no better, confessed that two or three ther according Spanish Ships were at Sea, on purpose to discouer the state of the Colony: but their Commission was not to his metra to be opened till they arrived in the Bay, fo that he knew no further. One of the Spaniards died the other was fent for England, and this fellow was now reprized, but (as became (ush a Pilot) was hanged at Sea in Sir Thomas D les returne. The English Pilot which they had carried away to Spaine, after long

60 imprisonment by much suite recoursed his liberty and Country. Sir Thomas Dale having thus ettablished things as you have heard, returned thence, appoint Con Tardellos ting Captaine George Tardly his deputy Gouernour in his absence, and arrived at Planmouth in pure Gouer May or lune 4. 1616, to aduance the good of the Plantation, Mailer Rolfe also with Rebecca his nounnew convert and confort, and Ittamatamakin (commonly called Tomocomo) one of Pobatans

Hirherto from Capt. Smith.

Counfellours came ouer at the fame time. With this Sauage I have often converfed at my good friends Master Doctor Goldstone, where he was a frequent guest; and where I have both seen him fing and dance his diabolicall measures, and heard him discourse of his Countrey and Religion, Sir The. Dales man being the Interpretour, as I have elsewhere shewed, Master Ralfe lent mee a difcourse which he had written of the estate of Virginia at that time, out of which I collected those See my Pil.1.8. things which I have in my Pilgrimage delivered. And his wife did not onely accustome her felfe to civilitie, but fill carried her felte as the Daughter of a King, and was accordingly respected. not onely by the Company, which allowed prouision for her selfe and her some, but of divers particular persons of Honor, in their hopefull zeale by her to advance Christianitie. I was prefent, when my Honorable & Reuerend Patron, the L. Bishop of London, Doctor King entertained 10 her with festivall state and pompe, beyond what I have seene in his great hospitalitie afforded to other Ladies. At her returne towards Virginia the came at Granefind to her end and grave, having given great demonstration of her Christian finceritie, as the first fruits of Virginian conversion, kauing here a godly memory, and the hopes of her returnection, her foule afpiring to fee and enjoy presently in heaven, what here shee had loyed to heare and believe of her beloued Saulour. Not fuch was Tomocomo, but a blasphemer of what he knew not, and preferring his God to ours because he taught them (by his owne so appearing) to weare their Deuill-lock at the left eare; hee

See my Pile. ubi jup.

acquainted mee with the manner of that his appearance, and beleeved that this Okee or Deuil had taught them their husbandry, &c. Powbatan was at this time of their comming gone Southwards. for feare (as some thought) least Opachancanough his brother should some with the English a- 20 Powhatensrc. gainst him. His age was not so great as some have reported, they reckoning every Spring and Autumne for distinct yeeres. Tomocomo was as wife in computation of his failing, reckoning each Virginian yeers night (when hee expected they frould have anchored by the shoare) as another day. Hee is said which perhaps allo to haue fet vp with notches on a flick the numbers of men, being fent to fee and fignifie the

occasioned the truth of the multitudes reported to his Master, But his arithmetike soone failed, and wonder did

no lefte amoze him at the fight of so much Corne and Trees in his comming from Plimmonth to their longevity London, the Virginians imagining that defect thereof here had brought vs thither. But let vs returne to Captaine Smiths Relations. The new Gouernour applied himselfe to the readjest way of gaine in planting Tobacco; and though Sir Tho. Dale had caused much Corne to be planted, yet the new supplies easing them of that superfluitie, hee sent to the Chickahaminies 30 for the tribute Corne which Sir Thomas Dale and Captaine Argall had conditioned with them, but receiued a bad answere. Whereupon hee gathered a hundred men, and twelue of them wete flaine, twelue others captized, and returned to lames Towne with three Boats laden with corne, of which one hasting to bring the newes was overfet, and eleven men, together with the goods

drowned. Captaine Spelman by his language did them good feruice. This, together with the league which they had with Opachankanough enemy to the former, put them fo in feare, that ours followed their labours quietly, and other Nations also brought them provisions and would hunt for them. Captaine Yeardly is taxed for suffering two of his Sauages to vie the Peece in their game and therein to grow expert; a thing reported to have beene practifed by some others. Yet whiles hee staied in the gouernment they lived quietly with the Savages, but grudges grew a- 40 mongst themselves.

A. 1617. Captaine Yeardly returned for England, after the arrivall of Captaine Argall, fent this ther to be deputie Gouernour.

A. 1617.Cap. Argells gouernment. Great drought

Captaine Argall was (ent in the George, and with Capt. Hamor his Vice- Admirall, in May, 1617. arrised at lames Towne, where bee found things in much disorder, which hee sought to redresse. Their cattell were now well encreased, and both of their owne growing, and from the Saunges they had store of Corne, A. 1618. happened a great drought, and such a cruell storme of baile, that it did much burt to their Corne and Tobacco. The Magazine that came in the George, being fine moneths in her paffage proned badly conditioned.

L. De la Wars? and death.

To supply them, the Company furnished and set forth in Aprill a Ship of two hundred and siftie tunnet, 50 with two bundred people. The Lord De-la-war went therein, and at the Iland of Saint Michael was bonourably feasted. Departing from thence, they were long troubled with contrary windes, in which time many fell ficke, thirtie died, one of minch was that honourable Lord of noble memory. The rest refreshed themselves on that Coast of New England, with Fish, Fowle, Wood, and Water, and after sixteene weeks fent at Sea, arrived in Virginia.

Plowing and

The Ship called the Treaturer not long after came thither with fortie Passengers, before the other Ship was gone. They now had veed the Plow, and reaped good Corne, and they writ for more Plow-harue fe to

Richard Killingbeck with foure others , going to trade secretly with the people of Chickanaminias, either for revenge of some before staine in Captaine Verdlyes expedition, or for conetous nelle of their goods 60 Rillingbeck flain were affaulted by the Sauages, one of which had a Peece furnished and therewith shot Killingbeck dead; therest also were all staine, stripped and spoyled. Other muribers also were done by other Sanages, which Opachankanough excused by ignorance, and for the former, bee font a basket of earth, in token of the gift and possifion of that Towne where they dwelt, to Captaine Argal, defiring him not to renenge the fault

of a few , which for feare of renenge were fled to the Woods , on their unocent neighbours. Sam. Arg.

Maller Rolfe wrst, lune 15. 1618. that Powhatan died in Aprill before, Itopatan his second brother succeeded, who with Opachanckanough had confirmed the league with the Colony. May 11. death. happened at lames Towne in the night, a terrible storme which lasted about halfe an houre, and poured downe bailestones eight or nine in ches about.

A. 1619. Sir Edwin Sands being chofen Treasurer , Captaine Yerdley was knighted and fent Go- Sir Edwin mernour into Virginia. A lutle Pinnace bad arrived fome twelve dayes before bim, in which Captaine Sandi Treafes Argall returned, leaving in his place Captaine Nathaniel Powel. As for their digulfs ginen the rer. To Company (in their apprehension) by Captaine Argall, I am not fully informed, or lust to bee the

Sir George Yerdly arriving April 18. filled the Colony with toyfull bopes of better successed at his arrivall, and I freely acknowledge the Treasurers great study and care was worthy (bad God so pleased) of better enemts then by unexpected accidents have fince happened.

Cantaine West, Captaine Powel, Master Pory, Master Rolfe, Master Wickam, Master Macock, were added to the Councell, A Pinnace of Captaine Bargrave, another of Captaine Lawnes, and a third of Mafter Euans . and the Marget of Brillol arrived. Some foundations Letters , which laid a falle imputation on the Countrey, caused enquiry to bee made, where by men of best experience was found. stat an industrious man not otherwise imployed may well bushand source Acres of Corne, and one thousand. Profit to be an Plants of Tobacco, of which many to have much, neglett the goodnesse (in suffering too many leaves to made in Vivi grow on one stalee) and many Tobaccomongers in England are faid to fell the best of it in other names, ginia, calling all their traft Virginian, and fo at once rob both England and Virginia. June 25, the Trial came in with Corne and Cattell. The Gonernour and Counfell caused Burgestes to be chosen in all places. and a senerall assembly was beld for consultation about the Colonies good. The ancient Planters being fet

free chose places to their content, and sweetnesse of proprietie made them emulous to exceed each other in building and planting. Many good instructions were fent from the Company, to amend the Virginian abuses and competencie of provision was appointed for Officers. But leave we awhile our Captaines Notes, and let vs liften to that which the Company published, A. 1620.

CHAP. XIII:

The estate of the Colony, A. 1620. and Master Dermers Letter to mee from Virginia. touching bis Voyage for the South Sea.



Ow touching the present estate of our Colony in that Countrey, We have throught it not vnfit thus much briefly to declare. There have beene fent thither this laft yeere, and are now prefently in going, twelve hundred perfons and voward, as particularly appeareth in the note about specified : and there are neere one thoufand more remaining of those that were gone before. The men lately sent, have beene most of them choice men, borne and bred up to labour and industry. Out

of Dewonshire, about an hundred men , brought up to Husbandry. Out of Warnickshire and Staffordbire, about one hundred and ten; and out of Suffex, about fortie; all framed to Iron-workes; the rest dispersedly out of divers Shires of the Realme. There have beene also fundry persons of good qualitie, much commended for sufficiency, industry and honestie, provided and fent to take charge and gouernment of those people. The care likewise that hath beene taken by directions. instructions, Charters and Commissions to reduce the people and affaires in Virginia into a regular course, hath been such and so great, that the Colony beginneth now to have the face and faihion of an orderly State, and fuch as is likely to grow and profper. The people are all divided into feuerall Burroughes; each man having the shares of Land due to him fet out to hold and enjoy to him and his Heires. The publike Lands for the Company here, for the Governour there, for the Colledge, and for each particular Burrough, for the Ministers also, and for divers other necesfary Officers, are likewife laid out by order and bounded. The particular Plantations for divers Burtoughs. private Societies, are fetled in their Seates, being allotted to their content, and each in convenient distance. The rigour of Martiall Law, wherewith before they were gouerned, is reduced -within the limits preferibed by his Maiefty; and the landable forme of luffice and government vied in this Realme, established, and followed as neere as may be. The Gouernour is so restrained 6) to a Counfell ioyned with him, that he can doe wrong to no man, who may not have speedy remedy. Each Burrough, and each particular Plantation, partly hath, partly is bound to haue in short time a sufficient Minister : for whom maintenance is ordained, to each of two hundred pounds a yeere value. Which orderly proceeding there, by direction from hence, hath caufed

Iiiiiii

the Colony now at length to fettle them felues in a firme resolution to perpetuate the Plantati-

on. They fall to building of Houses, each for his owne private; and the Generality to the rearing of publike Guelt-houles, for entertaining of new men vpon their first arrivall. They fall to fet vp their Ploughes, to the planting of Vineyards; to the pursuing of the Staple Commodities furnished and commended from hence. In summe, they are now to full of alacrity and cheerefulneffe, that in a late generall Affembly, they have in the name of the Colony prefented their greateft possible thankes to the Company, for the care that hath beene taken for the fetling of the Plantation. Neither is it to be omitted, the care which hath beene had here lately at home, for the reducing of all the proceedings and affaires of the Company, to an orderly course of good gouernment and Iuitice. Wherein to begin with the Fountaine thereof, his Maiefties authoritie Parentinree urrimeite and authorite times renewed and pleasure, there hath beene a collection made of all the branches of the same, dispersed in his 10 Letters Patents, now three times renewed : as also out of other instructions proceeding from his Maieftie. Out of both which, together with fuch other Orders as (authorized by his Maieftie) the Companie themselves have thought necessary to make, hath beene compiled a booke of standing Orders and Conflicutions, approved by the generall confert of all the Companie: whereby both the Company here, and the Colony in Proginia, haue their businesse carried regularly, induffrioufly, and with, every man knowing both his right and dutie, to their generall great content, and the great advancement of the Action. And whereas the Colony likewife have been often Sutors in effect, to reduce into a compendious and orderly forme of writing, the Lawes of ten gland proper for the vie of that Plantation, with addition of such other, as the nature of the England proper for the vie of that Plantation, with addition of such other, as the nature of the place, the noutley of the Colony, and other important circumflances should necitarly require: A 20 course is like wife taken for the effecting of this worke; yet so as to submit it first to his Maiesties view and approbation; it being not he that his Maierties Subjects should bee gouerned by any other Lawes, then such as receive the influence of their lite from him.

And now to come to that which concerneth the Aduenturors in particular, by whole charges. care, and labour (next voto his Maietties especiall grace) this famous Plantation hath not onely beene vindertaken, but through io many difficulties vipheld and continued; wee fhould bee very greatly injurious to them, if we should not acquaint them with this seasonable time, for the reaping of that benefit and reward which is due vnto them. Wee therefore let them know, that in this last yeere now ended, there have beene granted by the Company under their legall Scale, eleuen seuerall Patents for particular Plantations; and more are in hand to bee passed this next 30 Quarter-Court. It is not unprobable that upon each of these Patents, divers hundreds of persons will foone Plant in Virginia : there have beene already transported upon the first, about three hundred men. These and other like Planters, having priority of time, will have priority also in choice of the Seat of their Plantations. Seeing therefore the onely matter of retribution to the Adventurors, is by a faire proportion of Land to them and their heires, namely, of one hundred Acres for every share of twelve pounds and ten shillings, vpon a first division; and as much more wpon a fecond, the first being peopled; with fiftie Acres for every person (to bee doubled in like manner) which at their own charges they shall transport to inhabite in Unginia bafore the foure manner) which as their own charges any man examples to manner in organic parties the four and twentieth of lune, 4625, if her continue there three yeares, either at one or fleuerall times, or die after he is shipped for that voyage: It standeth them you, who are not willing to be the leaft 40 in the benefit to be partaked, not to be the last in fetting forth to the choice and peopling of their Land. Wherein what fauour or aff flance may by vs bee given them, they that bee well afford of it, in equall proportion with our felues, as their charges and long expectance have well deferred. And to the end that not onely the Adventurors now living, but the Herres also of the decealed, may take certaine notice of the feuerall proportion of Land, which ratably to their Aduentures in money are due and belonging to them.

A Note of the Shipping, Men, and Provisions Sent to Virginia, by the Treasurer and Company, in the yeere 1619.

Ships.

He Bond None of two hundred Tun, fent in August 1619, with one hundred and twenty per-I fons. The Duty, of feuenty Tun, fent in Ianuary 1619. with fiftie one persons. The landban of three hundred and fiftie Tun, fent in February 1619. with two hundred persons. The Triall, of two hundred Tun, tent in February 1619, with fortie persons, and fixtie Kine. The Faulcon, of one hundred and fiftie Tun, fent in February 1619, with thirtie fixe persons, fiftie two Kine, and foure Mares. The London Merchant, of three hundred Tun, fent in March 1619. with two hunpersons. The Swan of Barnstable, of one hundred Tunne, sent in March, 1619 with seventie one persons. The Bonnerstore of two hundred and sortie Tun, sent in April, 1620, with one hundred 69 and fiftie three persons. Besides these, set out by the Treasurer and Company, there hath beene fet out by particular Adventurers for private Plantations. The Garland of two hundred and fitte Tun, fent in Iune, 1619. for M. lohn Farrars Plantation, with fortie five persons. Who are yet detained in the Summer Hands. A Ship of Briffell, of eightie Tun, fent in September, 1619, for M.

Barkless Plantation, with fortie five perions. There are also two Ships in providing to be shortly gone, for about three hundred persons more, to bee fent by private Adventurers to Virginia. The fumme of the persons one thousand two hundred fixtie one. Whereof in the eight Ships fet out by the Treasurer and Company, eight hundred seventie one.

Of these persons there are sent for publike and other pious vier, these ensuing ! Tenants People. for the Gouernours Land, besides fiftie sent the former Spring, eightie. Tenants for the Companies Land, one hundred and thirtie. Tenants for the Colledges Land, one hundred, Tenants for the Ministers glebe-Lands, fiftie. Young Maids to make Wives for so many of the former Tenants, ninetie. Boyes to make Apprentices for those Tenants, one hundred. Seruants for the 10 publike, fiftie. Mentent by their labours, to beare up the charge of bringing up thirtie of the Infilels children in true Religion and Civilitie. The fum of persons for publike vie, &c.tix hundred and fiftie. The fix hundred and elegen remaining, are fent for private Plantations.

The Commodities which these people are directed principally to apply (next to their own necessary main. Commodities, tenance) are these ensuing : Iron, for which are tene one nundred and fiftie persons, to set up three Iron-workes; proofe having beene made of the extraordinary goodnesse of that Iron.

Cordage : for which (belides Hempe) direction is given for the planting of Silke graffe (naturally growing in those parts) in great abundance : which is approved to make the hest Cordage and Linnen in the world. Of this, every housholder is bound to set one hundred Plants; and the Gouernour himtelfe hath fet five thousand.

20 Por-ashes and Sope-ashes, Pitch and Tarre: for the making whereof the Polacres are returned

Timber of all forts, with Masts, Planks and Boords for prouision of Shipping, &c. there being not so good Timber for all vies, in any one knowne Countrey what soener. And for the case and encreate of divers of these workes, provision is sent of men and materialls, for the setting up of fundry Sawing Mills.

Silke : for which that Countrey is exceeding proper, having innumerable flore of Muibery Trees of the best, and some-Silk-wormes naturally found vpon them, producing excellent Silke: fome whereof is to be feene. For the fetting vp of which Commoditie, his Maiefty hath beene graciously pleased now the second time (the former having miscarried) to bestow upon the Company plenty of Silk-wormes-feed of his owne store, being the best.

Vines : whereof the Countrey yeeldeth naturally great flore, and of fundry forts : which by culture will be brought to excellent perfection. For the effecting whereof, divers skiltull Vignerons are lent, with ftore also from hence of Vine-planes of the best fort.

Sale : which workes having beene lately suffered to decay, are now ordered to bee fet up in fo great plentie, as not onely to lerue the Colony for the present; but as is hoped in short time also the great Fishings on those Coasts.

For the following, working, and perfecting of these Commodities, all provisions necessary for the present are sent in good abundance. As like wife the people that goe are plentifully form shed with apparell, bedding, victuall for fixe moneths: Implements both for the House and Labour, Armour, Weapons, Tooles, and fundry other necessaries. And a supply of Armour, Powder, and many necessary prouisions is made for those of the Colony which were there beforegyet without any prejudice to the former Magazin.

There have beene given to the Colony this yeere by denout persons, these Gifts ensuing : Two persons Gifts, vnknowne, haue given faire Plate, and other rich On aments for two Communion Tables : whereof one for the Colledge, and the other for the Church of Miftreffe Mary Robinfors founding; who in the former yeere by her Will, gaue two hundred pounds towards the tounding of a Church in Virginia.

Another voknowne person (together with a godly Letter) hath lately fent to the Treasurer. fine hundred and fiftie pounds in gold, for the bringing up of children of the Infidels; first in the to Knowledge of God and true Religion; and next, in fit Trades whereby honeftly to lue.

Master Nicolas Ferrar deceased, hath by his Will given three hundred pounds to the Colledge in Virginia, to bee paid, when there shall be ten of the Infidels children placed in it. And in the meane time foure and twentie pounds by yeere, to bee distributed vnto three discreet and godly men in the Colony, which shall honestly bring up three of the Infidels children in Christian Religion, and fome good course to live by.

An vinamed person sent to the Treasurer the summe of ten pounds, for advancing of the

There have beene Patents granted this yeere for particular Plantations, as here enfucth: To the Sc- Patents. cietie of Southamton Hundred. To Matter Heath, Recorder of London. To Matter Wincop. To Master Tracie. To Doctor Bohun. To Master Pierce. To Master Delbridge. To Master Pointz. To Master Barkley. To Captaine Bargrane. To Captaine Ward. Who have vndertaken to transport to Virginia great multitudes of people, with Hore of cattell.

It is to be knowne, that touching the Colledge for the Infidels children, it hath beene thought more expedient to begin first with the planting and peopling of the Lands (which hath beene To his Worshipfull Friend M. SAMVEL PVRCHAS, Preacher of the Word, at the Church a little within Ludgate, London.

Twas the nineteenth of May, before I was fitted for my discouery, when from Monahisean I ice Twas the nineteenth of May, vejore 1 was juncted by the nineteenth of May, vejore 1 [ajle in an open Pinnace of fine tun, for the Iland I told you of. I passed along it the Coast where I L jayle in an open cinnuc of time un, for occionne tour young, page according to coals where I found fome antenn Plantations, not long face populous now otterly coid; in other places a tempantre. To mainer, but not free of fickness. Their disaffe the Plague, for mee might perceive the fores of some that had e Caped, who described the spots of Such as vinally die. When I arrived at my Sauages native Country (finding all dead)! transiled along it adaies sourney westward, to a place called Nummattaquyt, where. finding Inhabitants, I diffiatched a Messenger a dayes tourney further West, to Poconackit which berdereils on the Sea; whence came to fee me two Kings, attended with a quard of fifte armed men, who beang well satisfied with that my Sauage and I discoursed unto them (being destrous of noueltie) game mee content in whasoeuer I demanded, where I found that former relations were true. Here I redeemed a Frenchman , and afterwards another at Maltachufit , whothree yeeres fince escaped finpwrache at the Prenonman, and agreement another at manifestation, movement percess prince jumpes preparate at the North-east of Cape Cod. I must among it many things worthy objectation) for mant of leifure, therefore the bence I passe, and the control passe where we touched in the way) to the sland, which were discovered to bence I passe, the sland, which were discovered to the control passe. the twelfibof lane. Here we had good quarter with the Sanages, who likewife confirmed former reports, I found seuen seuerall places digged, sent bome of the earth, with samples of other commodities elsewhere found, founded the Coast, and the time being farre if ent bare up for Monahiggan, arriving the three and tieth of lune, where wee found our Ship ready to depart. To this lie are two other neere advoying, all which I called by the name of King Iames his Iles, because from thence I had the first motines to search. For that (now probable paffage) which may hereafter be both bonourable and profitable to his Matefile. When I had despatched with the ships ready to depart, I thus concluded for the accomplishing my businesses. In regard of the fewnesse of my men , not being able to leave behind mee a competent number for defence, In regara of the genneye v, my mina, not most of my provisions abourd the Sampton of Cape Ward ready 30 and set sufficiently farnish my selfe. I put most of my provisions abound the Sampton of Cape Ward ready 30 bound for Virginia, from whence bee came, taking no more into the Pinnace then I though might ferue our turnes, determining with Gods beloe to search the Coast along, and at Virginia to supply our select for a second desconery, if the first failed. But as the best actions are commonly hardest in effecting, and are yor a second assecure, 13 we sure some and are very manual are commons our ast in egicining and are follows without their croffes, fo in this we had one some fare, and met with many difficulties: for wee had not fasted move for some some fasted with a Southerty sterme, which drame us to this struct; grantly adone forty leagues, but wee were taken with a Southerty sterme, which drame us to this struct; gr ther we must weather a rockie point of Land, or run into a broad Bay no leffe dangerous; Incidit in Syllam, &c. the Rocker wee could not weather, though wee loofed till we received much water, but at last were forced to beare up for the Bay, and run on ground a furlong off the shoare, where we had beene beazen to pieces, had wee not instantly throwne our board our proussions to bane our lines; by which meanes ren to pieces, man wee not mitantly survente vaccouou a mi promitions to mane out times; sy woite one and we effected and brought off our Pianace the next high water without hurt, having our Pianace broken, and 20 as features to the which we easily mended. Being left in this mifery, having lost much bread, all our Beefe and Sider, some Meale and Apparell, with other prouisions and necessaries; having now little left besides bope to encourage vs to persists. Tet after a little deliberation we resolved to proceed and departed with the next faire winde. We had not now that faire quarter amongst the Sauages as before, which I take is was by reason of our Saudoes absence, who desired (in regard of our long iourney) to stay with some of our Sausge friends at Sawahquatooke) for now almost enery where, where they were of any strength sher Jought to betray vs. At Manamock (the Southerne part of Cape Cod, now called Sutchiffe Julets) I was onawares taken prisoner, when they sought to kill my men, which I left to man the Pinnace; but missing of their purpose, they demanded a ransome, which had, I was as sarre from libertie as before : yet it pleased God at last, after a strange manner to deliner me, with three of them into my hands, and a little 50 after the chiefe Sacheum himselfe; who seeing me weigh anchor, would have leaped overboard, but intercepted, craued pardon, and sent for the Hatchets given for ransome, excusing himselfe by laying the fault on his neighbours; and to be friends sent for a Canous lading of Corne, which received we fet him free. I am leth to omit the flory, wherein you would finde cause to admire the great mercy of God even in our greatest misery, in gining we both freedome and reliefe at one time. Departing hence, the next place we arrised at was Capacck, an Hand formerly discoursed by the English, where I met with Epinew a Samageshat bad lim. I in England, and speakes indifferent good English, who soure yeares since being carried bone, was reported to have beene flaine, with dimers of his Countregmen, by Saylers, which was falfe. with him land much conference, who gave one very good studellin in every living almost considerable manual. Time one permitting muce to search bere, which I should have done for sunder things of special moment. The one permitting muce to search bere, which I should have done for sunder things of special moment the wind faire. I should many shaping my course as the Coast search search to search the most sunder the search of the searc Weiterly part where the Coast began to fall away Southerly. In my way I disconered Land about theric leagues in length, heretofore taken for Mayne, where I feared I had beene imbarca, but by the helps of an Indian I get to the Sea againe, through many crooked and fireight passinger, i let passe many accidents to

this iourner occasioned by treacherie, where wee were compelled twice to goe together by the eares . once the Sausoes had great advantage of us in a freight, not about a Bowe flot, and where a multitude of Indians let fire at us from the banke, but it pleased God to make us victours : neere unto this wee found a most dangerous Catwrast amongst small rockie Ilands, occasioned by two onequalitydes. the one ebbing and flowing two boures before the other : here wee loft an Anchor by the firengib of the current, but found it deepe enough; from bence were wee tarried in a fort frace by the tyder (wiftnesse into a great Bay (to vs so appearing) but indeede is broken land, which gave vs light of the Sea : here, as I faid, the Land treadeth Southerly. In this place I talked with many Saluages, who told me of two fundry pass so the great Sea on the West, offered me Pilots, and one of them drew mee a 10 Plot with Chalke upon a Chaft, whereby I found it a great Iland, parted the two Seas; they report the one scarce passable for shoulds, perillous currents, the other no question to be made of. Haning receined thefe directions, I batten to the place of greatest hope, where I purposed to make triall of Gods goodnesse towards us , and use my best endeadow to bring the truth to light, but wee were but onely bewed the entrance, where in feeking to paffe wee were forced backe with contrary and overblowing windes, bardly escaping both our lines. Being thus overcharged with weather, I stood along it the coast to seeks barbours, to attend a fanourable gale to recover the streight, but being a barbourlesse Coast for onebt we could then persone, wee sound no succour till wee arrived between Cape Charles and the Maine on the East side the Bay Cheltapeak, where in a wilde Roade wee anchored and the next day (the eight of September) croffed the Bay to Kecoughtan, where the first newes stroops 20 cold to our bearts, the generall sistenesse oner the Land. Here I resolved with all possible freede to returne in pursuite of this businesse; so that after a little refreshing, wee recovered up the River to lames Citie, and from thence to Cape Warde his Plantacon, where immediately wee fell to heming of Boords for a close Decke, basing found it a most defined course to attempt as before. At wee were thus labouring to effect our purposes, is pleased almighty God (who enety disposeth of the times and sasous, wherein all workes shall be accomplished to visite us with his beamic hand. the times and suppost, where we want to be the state of t (a time on these Coasts especially) subject to gusts and fearefull stormes, I have now resolved to choose a more temperate season, both for the generall good and our owne safeties. And thus I have fent you a broken discourse, though indeede very unwilling to have given any notice at all, till it had pleafed God to have bleffed mee with a thorow fearch, that our eyes might have witneffed the treath.

I have drawne a Plot of the Coast, which I dare not yet part with for feare of danger, let this therefore I have drawne a ties of the weigt, where a war may be part which you pear of wanger, act has energipe forme for confirmation of pair bapes, till can better performs up promise and your defire; for what I have spoken (can produce at least mille testers; sarre spokenes, of the Sea behinde them, and of Ships, which come many dayes convery from the West, and of the great extent of this Sea to the North and South, not knowing any bounds thereof westward. I cease to trouble you till a better opportunity offer it selfe yea membring my best lone, oc. I reft

From Captaine MARTYN his Plantation, 27. Decemb. 1 6 1 9.

Yours to command.

THO. DERMER.

To Sir Edwin Sands in the Treasurership succeeded the right Honorable Henry Earle of South- Cap. I. Smith. ampion, whose industry together with that of those two brethren John and Nicolas Farrars the Sir Edw. Sands fuccessive Deputies, have given much content to many, but to divers others matter of complaint; was Tressurer wherein I am an vnfit Iudge; onely as a reasonable man and Christian Minister (that I isy not from Ap. 161) 50 Historian) I am much grieued that Vorginias prosperity cannot answer mens hopes; nor can any till lunatore man meruaile if diuisions (minde-massacres) here, with the massacring Sauages and diseases there, have hindred there the expected effects of honorable and carefull indevours. Mafter Stockam, a Mafter Stock-Minister, writthence, May the eight and twentieth, that which deserueth inst consideration, ams Lever to that he found no probability byfaire meanes alone to draw the Sauages to goodnesse, and if Mars Master whiteand Minerua went hand in hand, they would effect more good in one houre, then these verball terbefore. Mercurians in their lives: and till their Priests and Ancients have their throats cut, there is no hope to bring them to conversion.

Iiiiiii 3

CHAP.

CHAP. XIIII.

A true Relation of a Sea Fight betweene two great and well appointed Spanish Ships, or Men of Warre; and an English Ship, called thy Margaret and Iohn, or the Blacke Hodge, going for Virginia.



Auing taken our iourney toward Virginia in the beginning of February last past, in a Ship called the Blacke Hodge, her burthen one hundred and fixtie tunne, man- Ia ned onely with eight Iron Pecces, and a poore Faulcon, we soone ouer-passed both the tedious endurances and fearefull dangers of fuch a Voyage, and came at last by the four eteenth of March under 1 3. and halfe Latitude, within twenty leagues

Hellanders co.

Falling with Menis by the twentieth of March, and compating the furthest point to stand in the handlommer with the shore, wee perceived two tall Ships at anchor right over against the watring place with their top fayles loofe, and their Boates going ashoare for their men. At first we supposed them Hollanders, in respect of their building, and the Hollanders colours borne by their Admirall in the maine top, the vice Admirall haung his fore top mast downe, and no colors difplayed, which encreased our former opinion, adding withall that it must needes be prife, or 20 fome other Ship subject to the misfortune of a fight.

But driving by necessity of water, and willing to refresh our selves a shoare, wee trimmed our Ship, and came to anchor fairely by them, sending our Boate in friendly manner to hale them both unprouided and unarmed, which returned with certificate, that they were Spaniards, wherein not fully latisfied, by reason of our former apprehension that it was otherwise; the better to be refolued, we fent out our Boate againe, as well to be affured what to trust vnto, as to gaine sometime to prepare our Shippe, and trim her more commodiously, being pestered with goods and fardels betweene the deckes, and altogether unprouided for any fight, either offensue or

The Boate approached the hindmost Ship, which I call the vice-Admirall, and haled her, de- 30 manding who they were, but instead of resoluting vs, she commanded them to come abourd, and would answere no otherwise; whereupon the Boate rowed from them, as resoluting all was not fhot at theboat well, and fo made hafte vnto vs againe, yet could not present a volley of small that powred very dangeroully among it them, infomuch that they had their cloathes shot through, their Oares shiuered, and the fides battered with Bullets; yet thankes be to God, neither was a man hurt, nor any thing loft; which, as if they had had notice of the same escape, rated their rage so much the more: For by that time the Boate was out of reach of their small shot, they followed it to the Ship with great Ordnance; and when they perceived they were fafely come aboord, they Englis vapre- tooke it foill, that they thundred against our Ship with the foarer rage, and most violent vollies, pared for fight. which we could not answer, having no Peece in our gunner roome, nor indeede any other well 40 mounted for such a Sea fight.

Spanish aduan-

They fhot at

By this time their vice Admirall heaued up her anchor to her warpe, and laid her selfe to wind-ward, if either we should passe forward, or anchor short againe, so that we perceived they meant to affault vs on all hands: for the let flye a whole broad-fide vpon vs, and came furioutly vp to our lee quarter without damage or relistance of our parts.

But when we were thus terrified and threatned by them, and thus encombred and disanimated amongst our selves, knowing withall (by reason of our ill prepared Ordnance) the disadvantage and hazard to be boorded at anchor by two good Ships well prepared for spoyle and ruine; we hoyfed vp our failes, and determined to fet forward, had not the vice-Admirall come on our star-boord fide, and beate vpon vs so hardly, that we fell to our businesse, and answered their vn- 50 kndenesse accordingly with many faire shot, which proved most effectuall, especially from a demy-culturing, which at last shot her betweene winde and water, so that shee was compelled from vs, and bare off to Sea, leaving her Admirall onely fingle with vs, who at last came fairely in our quarter to winde-ward, taking in her Holland Hagge, and advanced her Spanish colours, and

Spenifb colors.

Their confe

so haled vs. We quietly and quickly answered, both what we were, and whither wee were bound, discouering the effect of our Commission, and relating the cause of our tarying there for water, neither purpoling to annoy any subsect of the King of Spaines, nor by way of affront to braue either Merchant or man of Warre. Then she charged vs to strike our sailes for the King of Spaine, and vaile the bonnet according to the prerogative they had in those Seas: we replyed with enlarging the 60 particulars of the league betweene the King our Master and their King, adding with all, that as we intended no ill, we would take no wrong; Whereupon the Mafter left the poope, and fequeftred himselfe from such open conference; had they not called for the Captaine againe, who at last presented himselfe, till they commanded him to come abourd with his Commission,

which he refused, yet wished them to send their Boat aboord, and then they should see it most

But initead either of answering vs further with kinde words, or accepting of our reply in good Infolence of part, they made two great that at vs, and poured among vs such a volley of small that, before we the Seaniards. could get off the poope, that we thanked God they did no more harme, yet we were much amazed they did fo much: not thus content they waved vs with their bright fwords, and reuiled vs with opprobrious tearmes, mif-tearming vs dogs, and inventing more odious names against vs. then we could imagine that Christians durst vige one another withall : at last they laid vs aboord, which enforced vs to raife vp our maine fayle, and to give the word to our small to fhot, which all this while lay close, well resolved and prepared : but sodainely breaking The Emillo forth wee plyed them in such fort that wee made them give backe and thrinke from their former fight. forwardneffe.

1281

The fight continued some halfe hours in our quarter, and according to the terrour of such encounters, wee were compatt as it were in fire and smoake, vntill they discourred the waste of our Ship naked, and were encouraged with the hope of reciprocall damage, whereupon they brauely ranne voon our fide, and laid vs abourd loofe to loofe, haftning with Pikes and Swords to enter, to which was added fuch fury, that if they had not beene preuented, we should have Spaniards seeks fhrunke under the rage of a barbarous flaughter : but it pleafed God io to direct our Mafter with to enter. advice, and encourage our men with valour, that our Pikes being formerly placed vader our and halfe decke, and certaine that lying close for that purpose vnder the portels of the Shippe. encountred them to brauely, that their fury was not onely rebated, but their halfinesse inter- Their roule cepted, and the whole Company beaten backe, especially vpon the wind-ward side, where the charge was hottest, and the fight bloodiest; for there the throng was great, and men had worke enough to make proofe of their courages and fortunes. Divers of our men were hurt, and many fell on their fide.

In the end they were violently repulled by vs, enforced to a retreat, vntill they were reinforced backe againe by their Commanders, who standing vpon tearmes of honor, as being men of Warre, and defigned for that purpose, thought it an indignity to be so afronted and countermanded; which caused a second charge, and that was answered with a second beating backe, till the Second charge

20 Captaine himselfe grew enraged, as not brooking to be so much overmated, and constrained them to come on a fresh, which they did so effectually that questionlesse it had wrought an alteration, Third chargeif the God that toffeth Monarchies, and teareth the Mountaines in his fury, had not taught vs to toffe our Pikes with prosperous event, and poured out a sodaine volley of small shot upon them, whereby that worthy Commander was flaine at the foote of a Pike, and many of his Souldiers Their Captain dropped downe on the top of the hatches. Prefently our Mafter tooke advantage of their dif. flainc. comfiture (though with fome commiferation for their valiant Captaine fo flaine) that hee not onely plyed them a fresh with great Ordnance, but had more false shot under the Pikes, which

were bestowed to good purpose, and amased our enemies with the sodainnesse. Amongst the rest one Lucas our Carpenters mate must not be forgotten, who perceived a way an how to annoy them, as they were thus pulled and in a confusion, drue out a minion which hee Lucconisbrane nobly fer a worke under the halfe decke, till at the last hee brought it to the doxe of the halfe act. decke, and there bent it your them, but in fuch a manner, that when it was fiered the cases full of stones and peeces of Iron fell vpon them like haile, and cleared their decke in such a fort that The case after it flue many, and inflort time we faw few affailants, but onely fuch as crept from place to place of the free of the first very couertly, and feemed willing to obscure themselves from the fury of our shot, which now vicifiting, was thicker then theirs: For although (as farre as we may commend our enemies) they had done fomethings worthy of admiration : yet either wanting men, or overtaken with the volooked for valour of our company, they now began to thrinke, and gaue vs leaue to be wanton with

Yet were our great Ordnance onely foure, that we could vie in this fight, but it should seeme The English they ferued the turne as well as foure times foure: for they (hot her divers times betweene winde could we but and water, and so prevailed, that at last we saw many signes of their willing nesse to leave vs, four ordbut by reason she was fast in a slach of our cable, which in haste of weighing our anchor hung nance. loofe, the could not be divided nor make that way thee purposed, vntill one of our men out it with an Axe without direction, and was flaine for his labour. But when the perceived the was looie, after the had beene a boord two houres and a halfe, good Lord what hafte the made, and how quickly were we divided, both great and small shot playing on both sides, which lasted vn- Spaniards fall till the remotenesse was about a Caliner shot, and we discourred the vice-Admirall comming to off. her affiftance, who began a farre off to ply vs with great fnot, and put vs in minde we had ano-

60 ther worke in hand.

Whereupon wee manned our Ship a new, feparating the dead and hurt bodies by themselues Brauado turfrom vs, and were so encouraged, that we waved her, and in a manner made toward her to fight a ned English. fresh: For when we perceived, that the Admirall made not a shot more at vs, we verily imagined, that either the was preparing her felfe with a new tupply or wanted men to make her feruiceable

or resolued to goe away from vs , considering shee had lost her Captaine; yet loth to bee secure. and imagining the Vice-admirall might come and boord vs finding vs play, till the Admirall did make her selfe better readie, we prepared our selues, wondring yet that shee came no neerervs then Falcon flot, where with fhe plyed vs still on the Lee side, wntill at last she received another payment from our Demie-culturing, which thor her through, and made her beare with the thore payment from our beams, where thee remayned till two of the clocke after midnight, and fo wee had time to reforme our disorders, and make our selues better readie for the next dayes varietie. By breake of day she came vp againe with the Admirall with her; as if they determined in-

Muskes foot. Many flaine. Scuppers run of bloud. A disaster. LIB.IX.

Next dayes

deed to deuoure vs at once; but as it seemed it was but a Brauado, though for the time they forfooke not our quarter within Musket shot : for all that night and morning they were quiet 10 Neighbours, and kept vs company without any great annoyance with their Top-lavles downe, not knowing, as it should seeme, what to doe with vs, or else suspecting their owne hurts and Leakes, they durit not trust themselves too farre from Land, nor to the furie of another encounter. All that night we had time and leafure to ouer-looke our losses, and prepare for them, the Admirall made hew of an encounter, and weafter Prayers were ended propaided to fight with them, but suddenly wee perceived the Vice-Admirall hang a sterne, cutting her mayne fayle to come vp, and stirring very ill.

At length the Admirall shooke in the wind, and by apparant signes gaue vs notice of slacking her courle, whereby we might runne a head and follow the Seas at her pleasure, fo wee permirall feeketh ceined the Vice. Admirall with all her Sayles to make towardes an Iland called Sans, which 20 to recouse the the Admiral either tooke notice of, as knowing the danger she wasin, or gaue directions accorqualities, Sana. dingly, confidering there wasno good to bee done with vs : for prefently she tacked about and loit vs , bearing toward that Iland ale.

Dofter Behane and feuen others flane out-right.

Seanilb thips deferibed.

Wee lost Doctor Bohave, and seuen other were slaine out-right: two died shortly after of their wounds, and fixteene were that through in some part or other of the bodie, whose wounds Gols be thanked were recured and without mayme or further impeachment of health are now recovered and fettled in Virginia, according to our first entended purpose and Commisfion : I reckon not fuch as are hurt with Pikes and other offenfue Weapons, because there was no danger in their cures, and the skilfull Surgeon shewed his art and good speed with facilitie. How danger in their cures, and the saminal outgoon in two one are an agood speed with retainer, flow many they loft wee cannot tell, nor what men of name were entertayed amongft them, one 30 ks am fore we faw many he flame on the Decke, and more cast ouer-boord in the fight, besides the Scuppers ran with bloud, and the very Sea in their quarter was coloured with a Scarlet hue, and looked fearfully vpon vs all.

The burthen of their Admirall was three hundred tunnes, having two and twentie Peeces of Brasse, and all prouision of a man of Warre indeed : their Vice-Admirall three hundred tuns, and fixteene cast Peeces, nor much inferiour to her for trimming and correspondent Equipage, and both to outward shew ouer-masterfull and daring for one poore Merchant and Passenger, being but a hundred and fixtie tunnes, having eight Iron Peeces and one Falcon, over-loaden with Stuffe and Wares, encombred with Pallengers, toyled with a storme, tyred with a long Voyage, affrighted with wants, and euery way infufficient to answere any such enemie: but 40 as it in the Scripture, it is all one to thee, O God, whether there be few or many, and Gedeous three hundred shall slay many thousands of the Midianites: as for deliuerances, the people of Ifraell shall passe through the Red Sea dry foot : Ionas shall bee cast safe on shoare out of the Whales belly: and Paul shall escape shipwracke, fauing his life with all his Passengers in the Iland of Malta.

For to conclude with the purpole in hand, there is one thing most remarkable as an inducement to this our deliuerance, that Captaine Chester embraced Doctor Bobune beeing mortally wounded, and thus recomforted him, faying, O Doctor Bohune what a difaster is shie; the Noble Doctor no whit examinated, replyed, Fighe it out braue man, the canse u good , and Lord receine my foule.

Slaine out right. Doctor Bobune. Thomas Demeter Gentleman. Th. Read. William Garret. Th. Vernam. Gabriel Peies. Danid Bathering. Raph. Gc. Diedafter. Francis Annis Gentleman. Ed. Nerobery Sayler. Wounded yet cured. William Bird Gentleman. Alexander Bousnine. William Bannington Gentleman. William loyce Quarter Malter, John Wakings, John Wilfon Sayler. George Tayler Sayler. William Lucas Sayler. John Robbins Steward, Phillip Durmine. Three Frenchmen. Robert Lettor. Anthony Browne Gentleman.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Virginian affaires since the yeere 1620. till this present 1624.

A note of the Shipping, men, and provisions fent and provided for Virginia, by the Right Honourable HENRY Earle of South-hampton, and the Company, and other private Adventurers, in the yeere 1 6 2 1. drs. with other Occurrents then published by the Company.

SHIPS AND PEOPLE.

120.

The Charles 120, tunne: 10

The Marmaduke 100. tun : in Iuly The Temperance 80, tun : in Iuly The Warwicke 160. tun : in August 100.

The Tigre 40. tun : in August The Sea-flowre 140.tun: in August 120. The Flying Hart 200, tun: in August 60.

Men, and 40. Cattell. The Discouerie 60. tun : in November 20. II The Bona Nona 200. tun : in Noumber 50.

12 The Hope-well 60. tun : in Nouember 20.

13 The God-freed 150. tun : in Aprill 11622. 14 The Gift of God 140. tun : in Aprill 100.

He Elianor 30. tun : in May | 15 The Prime-Rofe 80. tun : in Aprill 1621. with 10. perfons. 16 The Charitie 80. tun: in Aprill

The George 180, tun : in July 17 The Bonamentare co. tun : in Aprill 10. 18 The White Lion 180. tun: in May 40 Men, 40. Cattell. 10 The Furtherance 180, tunin May 80,men.

20 The Ma, res and lobe 160 tun : in May 21 The lames 120, tun : in May Summe of the persons, 1400. Cattell 80.

> Sent alfo to the Summer Hands by that Company.

22 The lofoph 150. tun : in May 1621. 100. perfons.

22 The lames 120, tun : in Iuly 24 The Concord 180. tun : in August

So there is foure and twentie Sayle of thips, with fine hundred Mariners in there imployed to there Plantations in this yeere. Befides, there are now prouiding feuerallships in divers parts of this Kingdome to transport

to the Plantations about five hundred persons.

And for the benefit of the Plantations thefe things following have beene here done this yeere.

Sixteene persons and others have beene provided and sent for the making of Beads for erade Beads. in the Countrie with the Natiues, and for making Glaffe of all forts.

Seven and fiftie voune Maides have beene fent to make wives for the Planters, divers of which Maids. were well married before the comming away of the Ships.

50 A Magazine hath beene fent of all necessaries for the Colonie, to the value of two thousand Magazines pound, besides all private mens sending goods, which was very ample, Trade being set open for all his Majesties Subjects. A ship called the Discouerie, hath beene set out for the rich Trade of Furre-trade. Furres, which both the French and Hollanders have yeerely within our Precincts, and within fiftie leagues of vs. Fine and twentie persons for the building of Boats, Pinnasses and Ships, for the Boat-builders, necessarie vie of the Colonie for fishing, Trade, and Discouerie, &c. Seuen persons sent for planting the thousand Acres of Land given to the East Indie Schoole.

Other Occurents of Note.

The Gouernours arrivall in Virginia, at the end of the last Summer, with nine thips, and neere feuen hundred people, all fately, and in good health. The admirable deliuerance of diuers ships; and namely, of the Tiger, which beeing driven ftrangely neere two hundred leagues out of her courle, fell into the Turkes hands, and yet came fane to Virginia.

LIB.IX.

Iron.

Master Berkleyes Letters assure vs , that there is not a more sit place for Iron-workes then in Virginia, both for Wood, Water, Mynes, and Stone: and that by Whitfontide next, wee may relie voon Iron made by him.

Cotton:

The Plants of Cotton-wooll trees that came out of the West Indies, prosper exceeding well. and the Cotton-wooll-feeds from the Mogels Countrie come vp, and grow: Samples of it they have tent; and this Commoditie they hope this yeere to bring to a good perfection and -grantitie. - The Indico Seed thrines well, but they yet want knowledge how to cure it.

Indico. V.nes

Our Frenchmen affure vs that no Countrie in the World is more proper for Vines, Silke Oliues. R ce, &c. then Urrgins, and that it excelleth their owne Country. The Vines beeing in abundance naturally ouer all the Countrey : a taste of which Wine they have alreadie fent vs, with 10 hope the next yeare to fend vs a good quantitie. There bee Mulberie trees in wonderfull abundance, and much excelling both in goodneffe and greatneffe those of their Countrey of Langue. docke. To the full periecting of both which rich Commodities of Wine and Silke, there wanteth nothing but hands. And of the Mulbiries may bee made also good wholelome Wine for

Silke and Mulberies.

the people there. And of a certaine Plumme in the Countrey, they have made good drinke, Salt-workes are erecting (the proper place being now found, as the Rocheller doth certific ve) whereby many ships will transport people at easier rates hereafter, finding Salt there to furnish them for the great and profitable fiftings upon that Coast, whither twentie sayle of thips went this last yeere but of the Westerne parts of England, besides the ships formerly mentioned.

Plum-drinke. Sale-workes. New Difcoue-

Maiter John Porie hath of late made a Discourrie into the great Bay Northward (yetat the 20 bottome of it he was not, referning it to a fecond Voyage) where are now fetled neere one hundred English very happily, with hope of a good Trade of Furresthere to bee had. And Terra Lemnia was tent vs from thence, which is found as good as that of Tinker, and is in great abun-

In February last he likewise discourred to the South River, some fixtie miles over Land from . Vs, a very fruitfull and pleafant Countrey, full of Riuers, wherein are two Haruests in one yeer (the great King giving him friendly entertainment, and defirous to make a league with vs) hee found also there in great quantitie of the same Silke-graffe (as appeareth by the samples lent vs) whereof Matter Herior in his Booke 1587. makes relation, who then brought home some of it, with which a piece of Grogeran was made, and given to Queene Elizabeib, and some heere w ho 30 have lived in the East Indies affirme, that they make all their Cambaya Stuffes of this, and Coo ton-wooll. Allo in his paffage by Land, Maiter Porey discouered a Countrey full of Pine-tiers, abouetwentie miles long, whereby a great abundance of Pitch and Tarre may bee made : and other forts of woods there were, fit for Pot-ashes and Sope-ashes.

The Indians have maderelation of a Copper Myne, that is not farre from thence, how they gather it, and the firange making of it : a piece whereof was fent home being found (after trial) very excellent metall. Some of the English have made relation of a China Boxe Iteme at one of the Kings Houses, who declared, that it was sent him from the Well , by a King that dwels ouer the great Hils, whose Countrey is neere the Sea, he having that Boxe from a people as hee faid, that come thicherin flips, and weare clothes, and dw. ll in Houles, and are called Acanact. 40 chma. And he offered our people that he would fend his Brother slong with them to that King : which the Gouernour purpoteth not to refuse, hoping thereby to discouer the South Sea, to long talked of.

Summer Iland

A small ship comming in December last from the Swimmer-Ilands, to Virginia, brought thither from thence thele Plants, viz. Vines of all forts, Orange and Leman trees, Sugar Canes, Caffado Roots (that make bread) Pines, Plantans, Potatoes, and fundry other Indian fruits and plants, not formerly feene in Virginia, which begin to prosper very well.

Gifts.

The Gentlemen and Mariners that came in the Royall Iames, from the East Indies (beeing at Cape Bona Speranza homeward bound) gaue towards the building of a Free Schoole in Virginia, to be called the East Indie Schoole, the summe of seventie pound eight shillings fix pence. Towards the furtherance of the faid East India Schoole, an vinknowne perion hath added the

A person refusing to be made knowne, hath given the summe of fortie shillings a yeere for efumme of thirtie pound. uer, tor a Sermon, before the Virginia Company thirtie pounds.

At a Quarter Court held the thirtieth of Ianuary 1621, by a person not willing as yet to bee knowne, was sent in Gold to helpe forward the East Indie Schoole, fiue and twintie pounds.

At the same Quarter Court , a small Bible, with a couer richly wrought; a great Church Bible; 63 Bookes of Common Prayer; and other Books were presented to be sent to Virginia, in the name of a person who had the yeere before fent, for the vie of the Colledge at Henrico, divers Bookes, and an exact Map of America; the Giver is not knowne, but the Bookes are valued at cenne Giuen

CHAP.15. S.2. Pasents granted. Newes fent. Restraint for Trade.

Ginen by Mafter Thomas Bargrane, Preacher in Virginia deceaffed, for the vie of the Colledge. a Library valued at a hundred Markes.

And there is a contribution made by the Inhabitants in Virginia, for the building of an house of entertainment for new commers at lames Citie, amounting to the value of fitteene hundred

Patents granted this yeere.

To the Ladie Dale. 14 To Sir George Yeardly. To Sir Dudly Dieges. 1 . To Master Thomas Leneson. To Sit John Bourchier. v6 To Captaine William Wildon. 17 To Mailer Henry Souther. To Captaine Ralph Hamer. To Maiter Arthur Swayne, &c. 18 To Martins Hundred. to To Mafter Robert Mofton. To Matter Rowland Trueloue, &c. To Maffer Iobs Crowe. 20 To Mafter Edmand Wynne. 21 To Captaine Henry Pelham, &c. To Mailer Edward Rider. To Captaine Simon Leeke. 22 To Captaine Daniell Tucker. 23 To Sir Bowyer Worlly, 10 To Matter Daniell Gookin. 24 To Mafter Thomas Buckley. 11 To Maiter Edward Bennet. 12 To Mafter Lofeph Lemmg. 25 To Malter Francis Harwell. 20 13 To Sir Charles North. 26 To Sir Iohn Brooke.

Who together with their Affociates, have undertaken to transport great multitudes of people and cattle to Virginia.

Newes from Virginia in Letters fent thence 1621. partly published by the Company, partly transcribed from the Originals, with Lesters of his Maiestie, and of the Company touching Silke-workes.

Nthe three last yeares of 1619. 1620. and 1621. there hath beene prouided and sent 1570, people for Virginia two and fortie Saile of thips, three thousand flue hundred and feventie featto Virginia men and women for Plantation, with requilite prouisions, besides store of Cattle, and in the three men and women for Plantation, with require proumons, penaes more or Cattle, and in those ships haughene about twelle hundred Mariners imployed: There hath also Saile of ships, beene tent in those yeeres nine in ps to the Summer Ilands with about nine hundred people to 1200, Mariners inhabit there, in which ships two hundred and fortie Mariners were imployed. In which space imployed, have beene granted fifty Patents to particular persons, for Plantation in Virginia, who with their 1500. To the Affociates have undertaken therein to transport great multitudes of people and cattell thither, which for the most parc is since performed, and the residue now in preparing, as by the seuerall

Declarations of each yeare in their particulars, (manifedted and approoued in our generall and imployed, publike Quarter-Courts) and for the fuller latisfaction of all defirous to understand the particularities of such proceedings, hath beene by printing commended to the understanding of all. Sir Francis Wiat was fent Gouernour into Virginia, who arrived there in November 162 1. with Mafter George Sandys Treasurer, Mafter Danifon Secretarie, &c. In the nine fhips fenc in

that Fleet died but one Pallenger of feuen hundred, in whole roome there was another also borne at Sea. Their prouisions were not found so well conditioned as was expected. The Sailers are full blamed for imbezelling the goods fent to private persons, for killing of Swine, inordinate trucking &c. It was ordained that for every head they should plant but a thousand plants of Toto bacco (and for the better strength not to suffer aboue nine leanes to grow on each plant) which will make about a hundred weight.

Master Gookin arrived also out of Ireland with fiftie men of his owne, and thirtie Passengers well furnished. The present gaine by Tobacco, had made the planting of Corne to be neglected: and some thinke that if Corne might there be valued (not at two shillings fixe pence the bushell) as deere as that which is brought from hence, there would be lefte feate of famine, or dependance on Tobacco.

The Letters written from the Gouernour and Treasurer in Variation in the beginning of March last, (which came hither in Aprill) gaue afterance of ouercomming and bringing to pertection in this yeere, the Iron-workes, Glaffe-workes, Salt-workes, the plentifull fewing of all forts of to English graine with the Plough, having now cleered good quantitie of ground; fetting of store of Indian Corne or Maiz, inficient for our felues, and for trucke with the Natives; refleating of the quantitie of Tobacco, and amendment of it in the qualitie, learned by time and experience; The planting of Vines and Mulberie trees neere to their Houles, Figge-trees, Pomegranates, Potatoes, and Cotton-wooll Seeds, Pocoon, Indico, Sugar Canes, Madder, Woade, Hempe, Flaxe,

liberally to contribute. I write the words of their Letters. And how in a late Discourie made. a few moneths before by some of them to the Southward, they had past thorow great Forrests of Pines, fifteene or fixteene miles broad, and aboue threescore miles long, very fit for Mastsfor shipping, and for Pitch and Tarre, and of other forts of woods fit for Pot-ashes and Sope-ashes. and came vnto a most fruitfull Countrey, blessed with abundance of Corne, reaped twice a yeere (within the limits of Virginia) where also they vinderstand of a Copper Myne, an estay whereof was fent, and vpon triall here found to be very rich; and met with a great deale of Silke-graffe there growing, which monethly may be cut, of which kinds, and Cotton-wooll, all the Cam- Io baya and Bengala Stuffes are made in the East Indies : and of which kindes of Silke-graffe was M. Haristinhis heretofore made a piece of Grogeram giuen to Queene Elizabeth. And how that in Decem-Booke of Vn- ber latt they had planted and cultivated in Unginia Vines of all (as well those naturally growema, 4.1585, ing, as those other Plants sent them from these parts of Europe) Orengeand Lemon-trees, Figtrees, Sugar Canes, Cotton-wooll, Caffaui Roots (that make very good bread) Plantanes, Pota-

toes, and fundry other Indian fruits and Plants not formerly seene in Virginia, which at the time

of their faid Letters began to profper very well as also their Indico Seed, for the true cure where-

of there is lately caufed a Treatife to be written.

and Silke-grulle; and for the erecting of a faire Inne in lames Citie for the better entertainment

of new commers, whereto and to other publike workes, every old Planter there offered freely and

with the Sa-

Furthermore, they write that in a Voyage made by Lieutenant Marmaduke Parkinfon, and other Englis Gentlemen, up the River of Patomacke they faw a China Boxe at one of the Kings 20 Houses where they were. This Boxe or Casket was made of braided Palmito, painted without, and lined in the infide with blue Taffata after the China or East India fashion. They enquiring whence it came, the King of Patomecke faid, it was presented him by a certaine people of the Mountaines toward the South-west, who got it from another Nation beyond them some thirtie dayes journie from Patomacke, called Acana Echinac, beeing of small stature, who had Houses. Apparell, and Houshold stuffe like vs, and living within foure dayes journey of the Sea, had ships come into their River : and he his Brother along with them to that King, which offer the Gouernour purposed not to refuse; and the rather, by reason of the continuals constant relations of all those Sauages in Virginia, of a Sea, and the way to it West, they affirming that the heads of all those feuen goodly Ruers (the least whereof is greater then the River of Thames, and Navigable 30 about an hundred and fiftie miles, and not about fixe or eight miles one from another) which fall all into one great Bay, have their rifing out of a ridge of Hils, that runnes all along South and North : whereby they doubt not but to find a lafe, easie, and good passage to the South Sea, part by water, and part by Land, esteeming it not about an hundred and fiftie miles from the head of the Falls, where we are now planted; the Discouerie whereof will bring forth a most rich Trade to Carbay, China, Iapan, and those other of the East Indies, to the inestimable benefit of this Moreover, the Letters of Mafter John Berkley, sometimes of Benerstone Castle in the Coun-

M. Berklet.

tie of Glocester, (a Gentleman of an Honourable Family) likewise certifie, that a more fit place for Iron-workes (whereof he was made Mafter and Ouer-leer) then in Vaginia, both for Wood, 40 Water, Mynes, and Stone, was not to be found : And that by Whitfontide the Company might relye vpon good quantities of Iron made by him : which also by Letters from Master George Sandys the third of March last, was confirmed, with this farther description of the place (called The falling Creeke) to be fo fitting for that purpose, as if Nature had applyed her selfe to the wish and direction of the Workman; where also were great stones hardly seene else-where in Unginia, laying on the place, as though they had beene brought thither to advance the crection

French Vigne-

Mulberies.

of those Workes. The Letters of the French Vignerous or Vine-men, procured out of France, and fent ouer into Virginia, did likewise affertaine, that no Countrey in the World was more proper for Vines, Silke, Rice, Olines, and other frints, then Verginia is: and that it far excelled their owne Coun-50 trie of Languedocke; the Vines of divers forts being in abundance naturally over all the Countrey. They scarsly beleeved those fruits to be Grapes till they had opened them and seene their kernels; such was their bignesse. They are in lone with the Countrey, and having planted some cuttings of Vines at Michaelmas last, in their Letters affirme that these bare Grapes alreadie this Spring to their great wonder, as being a thing they suppose not heard off in any other Countrie. A taste of Wine made of the wilde Grape, they last yeere sent, with hope to fend a good quantitie this next Vintage; and that the Mulbery trees, where they abode were in wonderfull abundance, and much excelling both in goodnesse and greatnesse those of their owne Countrey of Languedoste: and that those Silke-wormes they have, prosper exceeding well, and some Silke they hope to fend this yeere, there wanting nothing to fet vp that rich Commoditie but flore of 60 hands wherewith England doth abound. Of the fruit of which Mulbery trees (as of a Plumme there plentifully growing) they would make wholsome Drinkes for the Colonie and people

Opachantarough doted on a house which the English had built for him of our fashion : hee

CHAP.15. S. 2. Copper Peeses. His Maieft, Letter to the Treasurer of Virginia, 1787

dwelled therein, thewed it to his owne people and thrangers with pride, keeping his Keves charily, and bufying himfelfe with locking and valocking the doores, fomerimes a hundred times in a day, admiring the itrangenesse of that Engine, a Locke and Key. Hee gaue the English leave to feate themselues any where on his Rivers where the Natives are not actually seated, and entred into further couenants of amity, for reciprocall defence, mutuall transportation, discouery of mines, &c. They report also of Copper Peeces presented to Opachank: which Copper is gathered at the foote of the Mountaines, where they digge a hole in the ground, in which they out the care, and make thereon a great fire, which caufeth it to runne into a maffe, and become malleable : neither haue they any tooles, but fmooth itones for that purpose. This seemed strange to to ours which heard the English Copper passeth eleuen fires.

His Maiesties gracious Letter to the Earle of South-hampton, Treasurer, and to the Counsell and Company of Virginia here: commanding the present setting vp of Silke workes, and planting of Vines in Virginia.

R Ight trusty and welbeloned, We greese you well: whereas We understand, that the Soyle in Vica 20 Rejnia naturally yieldeth store of excellent Mulberry trees, We have taken into Our Princely consider ston the creat benefit that may grow to the Aduenturers and Planters, by the breede of Silkewormes, and fetting up of Silkeworkes in those parts. And therefore of Our gracious Inclination to a designe of so much benour and advantage to the publice, We have thought good, as at fundry other times, so now more particularly to recommend it to your specialleare, hereby charging and requiring you to take specdy order, that our people there, vie all possible diligence in breeding Silkewormes, and erecting Silkewrites, and that they rather bellow their transfell is compalling this rich and folds Commodity, then in that of Tobacce; which befolds much unnecessary expense, trings with it many district and necessaries.

And on a much as One Transa, to has Boncoll that he happened many in the time of the transaction of the tran of the Silkeworme, together with the Art of Silkemaking, and of planting Vines, and that his experience and abilities may much conduce to the advancement of this businesse; We doe hereby likewise require you to canfe his directions, both for the faid Silkeworkes and Vineyards, to be carefully put in practice thorowout our Plantations there, that fo the worke may goe on cheerefully, and receive no more interruptions

Given under Our Signet, at our Pallace of Westminster, the ninth day of July, in the twentieth yeare of our Raigne of England, France and Ireland, and of Scotland the five and fiftieth.

To Our right trusty and right welbeloued Cousin and Councellour, HENRY, Earle of Southhampton, Treasurer of our Plantation in Virginia, and to Our trusty and welbeloued, the Deputy, and an others of Our faid Plantation.

Virginia.

WINDEBANK.

The Treasurour, Counsell and Company of Virginia, to the Governour and Counsell of State in Virginia residing.

Fier our very harry commendations: His Sacred Maiesty, out of his high wisedome and care of A the noble Plantation of Virginia, hath beene graciously pleased to direct his Letters to us here in 50 England, thereby commanding vs to advance the setting up of Silkworkes, and planting of Vinevards; as by the Copy herewith fent, you may perceise.

The intimation of his Maiesties pleasure, we conceine to be a motine sufficient, to induce you to imploy all your indexors to the festing forward those two Staple Commodities of Silke and Wine; which brought to their perfection, will infinitely redound to the bonour, benefit, and comfort of the Colony, and of this whole Kingdome: yet we, in discharge of our duties, doe againe renew our often and iterated Instruction ons, and inuite you cheerefully, to fall opon thefe two forich, and necessary Commodities And if you hall finde any person, either through negligence or wilfulnesse, to omit the planting of Vines, and Mulberry trees, in orderly and husbandly manner, as hy the Booke is prescribed, or the providing of convenient 60 roomes for the breeding of Wormes; me defire they may by severe censures and punishment, be compelled thereunto. And on the contrary, that all fauour and possible assistance be given to such as yeelde wilung obedience to his Highnelle Commands therein. The breach or performance whereof as we are bound to give a first account, so will it also be required of you the Governour and Counsell especially. Herein there can be no Plea, either of difficulty or impossibility; but all the contrary appeares, by the natural a

Kkkkkkk

The Broke is for Silkworks, Vines & oth r husbandry;but

abundance of those two excellent Plants afore-named enery where in Virginia; neither will such excusebe namitted, nor any other pretences ferme, whereby the businesse be at all delayed : and as wee formerly (ent at our great charge the French Vignerons to you, to teach you their Art; fo for the Came timele me now commend this Booke unto you, to ferne as an Instructions to enery one, and fend you fore of them remetation anny to be diferfed ouer the whole Colony, to enery Master of a Family one, Sike-feede you feath receine alfo good ulesboth by thu Ship, sufficient to flore enery man : fo that there wants nothing, but industry in the Planter, suddenly to bring the making of Silke to its perfection: which either for their owne benefit (we hope) they will willingly indewour, or by a whole some and necessary severity they must be inforced.

Thu particular adnice we thought necessary to give you, lest that if it should have come to you minoled to be injected, with others, you would have interpreted at as a common Instruction, or a businessee that was not taken so to heart, as this by vs. and we hope will be by you in humble obedience to his Sacred Maieflies Rorall Instructions. The paines and industry of the Anthour, for the benefit of the Plantations (being a member of our Company) are sufficient arguments of his good affection to the Action, and they both deferne your best acceptance and ours, that others may thereby be innited to impart their knowledge in businesse of this and the like nature; whereby the Colony may not onely be supported for the present, but brought to that perfection, that may redound to the glory of God, the bonour of his Maiestie, and the inestimable benefit of his noble Kingdomes; which as they are the true aime and end the Aduenturers and Planters brue propried unto themselves, so onehs they to be still the honorable seedes to put others also forward in this action : we commend this businesse against o your speciall care. And so we commit you all, and your waighty affaires, to the protection of the Almighty.

HENRY Southampton.

C. III.

The barbarous Massacre committed by the Sauages on the English-Planters, March the two and twentieth, 1621. after the English accompt.

He last May there came Letters from Sir Francis Wist Gouernour in Unginia, which did advertise that when in Nonember last he armeed in Virginia, and entred vpon his Gouernment, he found the Country stelled in a peace (as all men there thought) fure and vinuidable, not onely because it was solemnly ratified and sworne, and at the request of the Natiue King flamped in Braile, and fixed to one of his Oakes of note, but as being aduantagious to both parts; to the Saungesas the weaker, under which they were fafely sheltred and defended; to vs, as being the ealiest way then thought to pursue and advance our projects, or buildings, plantings, and effecting their conversion by peaceable and faire meanes. And such was the coaceit of firme peace and amity, as that there was feldome or neuer a Sword worne, and a Peece fel- 40 Hafty fecurity, cert of mime peace and annity, as a this design and the Plantations of particular domer, except for a Deere or Fowle. By which allurance of fecurity, the Plantations of particular domer, except for a Deere or Fowle. lar Aduenturers and Planters were placed featteringly and straglingly as a choyce veine of rich ground inuited them, and the further from neighbours held the better. The houles generally fet open to the Sauages, who were alwayes friendly entertained at the table of the English, and commonly lodged in their Bed-chambers. The old Planters (as they thought now come to reape the benefit of their long trauels) placed with wonderfull content upon their private dividends, and the planting of particular Hundreds and Colonies purlued with an hopefull alacrity, all our proiects (faith he) in a faire way, and their familiarity with the Natines, feeming to open a faire

gate for their convertion to Christianity. The Country being in this estate, an occasion was ministred of sending to Opachanteno the King 50 of thele Sauages, about the middle of March last, what time the Messenger returned backe with occasioned by these words from him, That be beld the peace concluded so firme, as the Skie bould somer fall then it Englissecurity diffoliard : yea, such was the treacherous diffirmulation of that people, who then had contribud our de firuction, that euen two dayes before the massacre, some of our men were guided thorow the woods by them in fafety : and one Browne, who then to learne the language lucd among the Warrascoyacks (a Province of that King) was in friendly manner sent backe by them to Captaine Hamer his Matter, and many the like pustages, rather increasing our former confidence, then any wife in the world ministring the leaft inspition of the breach of the peace, or of what instantly enfired; vea, they borrowed our owne Boats to conuey themselves cross the River (on the bankes of both ides whereof all our Plantations were) to confult of the discellish murder that ensued, 60 and of our otter extirpation, which God of his mercy (by the meanes of some of themselves conuerted to Christianity) presented; and as well on the Friday morning (the fatall day) the two and twentieth of March, as also in the euening, as in other dayes before, they came vinarmed into our houles, without Bowes or Arrowes, or other weapons, with Decre, Turkies, Falls, Furres,

and other provisions, to fell and trucke with vs for Glasse Beades, and other trifles : yea, in some places, far downe at Breakfait with our people at their tables, whom immediately with their owne tooles and weapons, either laid downe, or flanding in their houses, they bately and barbaroully murthered, not iparing either age or fexe, man, woman or childe; fo fodaine in their cruell execution, that few or none differred the weapon or blow that brought them to destruction. In which manner they also slew many of our people then at their severall workes and busbandries in the fields, and without their houses, some in planting Corne and Tobacco, some in gardening, fome in making Bricke, building, fawing, and other kindes of husbandry, they well knowing in what places and quarters each of our men were, in regard of their daily familiarity. and refort to vs for trading and other negotiations, which the more willingly was by vs continued and cherished for the delire we had of effecting that great master-peece of workes, their conucra

fion. And by this meanes that fatall Friday morning, there fell under the blowly and barbarous hands of that perfidious and inhumane people, contrary to all lawes of God and Men, of Nature and Nations, three hundred and forty feuen men, women, and children, most by their owne basely murtheweapons: and not being content with taking away life alone, they fell after againe woon the red, some think dead, making as well as they could a fresh murder, defacing, dragging, and mangling the dead more. carkaffes into many peeces, and carrying fome parts away in dention, with bale and bruitish triumph. Neither yet did these Beafts spare those amongst the rest well knowne vnto them, from whom they had daily received many benefits and favours, but spitefully also massacred them.

One instance of it, amongst too many shall serve for all.

Toat worthy religious Gentleman, Master George Thorpe Esquire, Deputie of the Colledge Hehad written lands, lometimes one of his Maiesties Pensioners, and in one of the principall places of command letters the year lands, lometimes one of his Maiettes Pentioners, and in one of the principal places of command in *Direction*, did for truly and earneitly affect their convertion, and was for tender over them, that tenditying the whofoeuer under his authority had given them but the least displeasure or discontent, hee punishplentiful comed them severely. He thought nothing too deate for them, and as being defirous to binde them ming up of the voto him by his many courtefies, he never denied them any thing that they asked him, infomuch Cotten feede, that when thefe Sauges complained vnto him of the fierceneffe of our Maftines, molt implaca- &c. attributing ble and terrible vato them (knowing them by inflinct it feemes, to be but treacherous and falle- of things to hearted friends to vs, better then our felues) he to gratifie them in all things, for the winning the not feeking 30 of them by degrees, caused some of them to be killed in their presence, to the great displeasure of Gods glory of the owners, and would have all the reft guelt (had he not beene hindered) to make them the in converting of the owners, and would have all therety guest (and he not been and beneficiall to the common the Natines, gentler and the miller to them. Hee was not onely too kinde and beneficiall to the common which he said fort, but also to their King, to whom he oft reforted, and gaue many prefents which he knew to were peaceabe highly pleafing to him. And whereas this King before dwelt onely in a Cottage, or rather a ble, & wanted denne or Hog-ftye, made with a few poles and stickes, and coueted with Mats after their wilde but meanes manner: to civilize him, he first built him a faire House, according to the English fashion, in which (indeed to mur-(as before is faid) he tooke fuch ioy, especially in his Locke and Key, which hee so admired, as thereben, which locking and vilocking his doore an hundred times a day, he thought no deuice in all the world times a Sure

was comparable to it. Thus infinuating himfelfe to this King for his Religious purpoles, he conferred after with him Pitty luch an oft, and intimated to him matters of our Religion ; and thus farre the Pagan confessed, moued by Abel should be naturall Principles, that our God was a good God, and better much then theirs, in that heelad fo Kaindetti with fo many good things about them endowed vs. He told him, if he would ferne our God, he should be partaker of all those good things we had, and of farre greates then sence or reason ever could imagine. He won voon him, as he thought in many things, so as hee gave him faire heav ring and good answer, and seemed to be much pleased with his discourse, and in his companie. And both he and his people for the daily courtefies this good Gentleman did to one or other of them, did professe such outward love and respect vnto him, as nothing could seeme more : but all was little regarded after by this Viperous brood, as the fequell shewed : for they not onely wilfully murdered him, but cruelly and felly, out of a diuellish malice, did so many barbarous de-50 fpights and foule fcornes after to his dead corps, as are unbefitting to be heard by any civill eare.

One thing I cannot omit, that when this good Gentleman, vpon his fatall houre, was warned by his man (who perceived fome treachery intended to them by these hell-hounds) to looke to himfelfe, and withall ran away for feare of the milchiefe he strongly apprehended, and fo faued his owne life; yet his Master, out of the conscience of his owne good meaning, and faire deserts ever towards them, was so voide of all inspition, and so full of confidence, that they had sooner killed him, then he could or would believe they meant any ill against him.

At the time of this Maffacre there were three or foure of our Ships in lames River, and one in the next River, and daily more to come in, as three did within foureteene daies after; one of to which they endenouted to have furprifed, but in vaine, as had also beene their whole attempt, had any the least fore-knowledge beene in those places where the Massacre was committed : yet were the hearts of the English ever Hupid, and averted from beleeving any thing that might weaken their hopes of speedy winning the Sauages to Civilitie and Religion, by kinde viage and faire converting among it them. Hee, and the whole Counfell writ further, That Almighty God Kkkkkkk 2

(they doubt not) hath his great worke to doe in this Tragedy, and will thereout draw honomer

and glory to his great Name; lafety, and a more flourishing estate to themselues, and the whole

Plantation there; and the more speedy conversion of the Children of those Sauages to himselfe. fince he io miraculously preserved to many of the English, whose delire to draw those people to

Religion, by the carelelle neglect of their owne fateries, feemes to have beene the greatest cante of their owne entiting destruction. Yet it pleased God to vie some of them as instruments to saue many of their liues, whole foules they had formerly faued, as at lames Citie, and other places.

and the Pinnace trading in Pamounkey River; all whole lives were faved by a converted Indian.

). IIII.

A Note of provisions nece farie for every Planter or personall Adventurer to Virginia : and accidents fince the Maffacre.

Proposition of the following the state of the performance of the first of the state that no man suffer either through ignorance or misinformation; it is thought requisite to publish this loars Declaration: wherein is contained a particular of such necessaries, as either prinate Families or single 10 per font fhall have canfe to furnish themselves with, for their better support at their first landing in VIIginia; whereby alfo greater numbers may receive in part, directions bow to provide themfelues.

Apparell for one man and fo after the rate for more.

One Monmouth Cap Three falling bands 1.5.2.d. 7.5.6.1. Three hirts One Wafte coate 2.5,2.d. 20 One sute of Cannase 7.s.6.d. One Sute of Frize 10.5. One fute of Cloth Three paire of Irish flockins Foure paire of Shooes One paire of garters One doozen of points One paire of Canuale sheets Scuen Ells of Canuale, to make a bed and boulfter, to be filled in Virginia One Rug for a bed 8.3. which with the bed farming for two men, halfe is Fine Ells coorfe Canuafe, to make a bed at See for

two men, to be filled with fram 4.5. One coorfe Rug at Sea for two men, will cost 6.s.ie for one. Victuall for a whole yeere for one man and fo for more after the rate.

| Eight bufbels of Meale Two bufhels of Peafe at 3.8. | 2.li. 6.s. |
|--|---------------|
| Two bubels of Oatmeale4.5.6.d. | 9.s. |
| One gallon of Aquauitæ | 2.s.6. |
| One gallen of Oyle | 3.s.6.d. |
| Two gallons of Uineger 1.5. | 2.5. |
| | 3.li.3.s. |
| | |

Armes for one man, but if halfe of your men haue Armour it is sufficient, so that all

| haue Peeces and Swor | ds. |
|---------------------------------------|------------------|
| One Armour compleat, light | 17.5. |
| One long Piece, fine foot or fine and | la halfe ; neere |
| Musket bore | 1.l1.2.s. |
| One Sword | 5.s. |
| One Belt | 1.S. |
| One Bandaleere | 1.5.6.d. |
| Twentie pound of Powder | 18.4. |
| Sixtie pound of shot or lead, Pis | toll and Goo∫e |
| Shot | 5.5. |
| | المماله |

Tooles for a Family of fixe persons, and so after the rate for more.

| | 12.7 |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------|
| Fine broad bowes at 2 S. a piece | 10.5. |
| Fine narrow bowes at 16. d. a piece | 6.s.8.d. |
| Two broad Axes at 3. 8.d. a piece. | . 7.8.4.d. |
| Fine felling Axes at 18.d. a piece | 7.s.6,d. |
| Two Steele Hand fames at 16.d.a. | piece 2.s. 8.d. |
| Two two-band-sawes at 5.5. a piece | |
| One whip-faw, fet and filed with | |
| wrest | 10.5. |
| Two Hammers 12.d. a piece | 2.5. |
| Three Souels 18.d. a piece | 4.s.6.d. |
| | |
| Two Spades at 18.d. a piece | 3.5 |
| | 3.50 I.S. |
| Six Chiffels 6.d. a piece | 3.S. |
| Two percers flocked 4.d. a piece | 8.d. |
| Three gimblets 2.d. a piece | 6.d. |
| Two batchets 21.d. a piece | 3.5.6.4 |
| Two fraues to cleane pale 18.d. | 3-5 |
| | |
| Two band bils 20. a piece | 3.5.4.d |
| One Grindlestone 4.s. | 4.5 |
| Nailes of all forts to the value of | 2.li. |
| Two Pickaxes | 3.50 |
| | 6.li.2 s.8.d. |
| | |

Houshold Implements for a Family of fix persons, and so for more or lesse after the rate.

| One Iron Pot | | | 7.se |
|-----------------------|--------------|-----|------------|
| One Kettle | | | 6.5. |
| One large frying-pa | 75 | | 2.5.6.d. |
| One Griddiren | | | 1.s.6.d |
| Two Skillets | | | 5.5 |
| One Spit | | | 2.5 |
| Platters, difbes, Spe | ones of wood | 11. | 4.5 |
| | | | . v li Ś e |

For Sugar, Spice, and fruit and at Sea for fix So the full charge of apparell victuall, armes atooles, & houjhold-stuffe and after this rate for each perfon will amount vnto about the fum of 12.1. 10.5. The passage of each man is The fraight of these provisions for a man, will be a-1.1:.10.s. bout balfe a Tun, which is 3.li.9.s.6.d. | So the whole charge wil amount to about 20.l.

Nets, Hoskes, Lines, and a Tens must be added if the number of people be greater, as also some Kinc. And thus is the viwall proportion that the Virginia Company doe bellow upon their Tenants which they fend, Who ocuer tran ports himfelie or any other at his owne charge vato Virginia, shall for each perion fo transported before Midfummer 1625, haue to him and his beires for euer fiftie Acres of Land vpon a firft , and fiftie Acres Kkkkkkk 3 Vpon a fecond division.

Converted 12.032.

Manner of the Saunges life.

disclosing the plot in the instant. These wilde naked Natives live not in great numbers together, but dispersed, and in small 10 companies; and where most cogether, not about two hundred, and that very rare, in other places fifty or forty, or thereabours, and many miles diffant from one another, in fuch places among the Woods where they either found, or might easeliest make some cleared plots of ground which they imploy wholly in feeting of Corne, whereby to fustaine their lines. These small and scattered Companies (as I haue faid) had warning given from one another in all their habitations to meete at the day and houre appointed for our destruction, at all our feuerall Townes and places feated upon the River ; fome were directed to goe to one place, fome to another, all to be done at the same day and time, which they did accordingly : some entring their Houses vinder colour of trucking, and fo taking aduantage, others drawing our men abroad vpon faire pretences, and the rest suddenly falling upon those that were at their labours.

By Letters and those that returned it is certified, that besides Master George Thorpe, before mentioned, Master Iohn Berkeley, Captaine Nathaniel Powel, and his wife (daughter of Master William Tracy, and great with childe) and Captaine Maycocke, all Gentlemen of birth, vertue. and industry, and of the Councell there, suffered vnder this their cruelty and treason. That the flaughter had beene univerfall, if God had not put it into the heart of an Indian belonging to one Perry, to disclose it, who living in the house of one Pace, was veged by another, Indian his brother (who came the night before and lay with him) to kill Pace (so commanded by their King, as he declared) as he would kill Perry: telling further, that by fuch an houre in the morning, a number would come from divers places to finish the Execution; who failed not at the time: Periit 10 Indian role out of his bed and reveales it to Pace, that yied him as a Sonne: And thus the rest of the Colony that had warning given them, by this meanes was faued, Such was (God be thanked for it) the good fruit of an Infidell converted to Christianity; for though three hundred and more of ours died by many of these Pagan Infidels, yet thousands of ours were faued by the meanes of one of them alone which was made a Christian : Bleffed be God for euer, whose merce endureth for euer; Bleffed be God whole mercy is aboue his instice, and farre aboue all his works: who wrought this deliuerance whereby their foules escaped euen as a Bird out of the snare of

Pace vpon this discourry, securing his house, before day rowed over the River to Iames City (in that place neere three miles in bredth) and gaue notice thereof to the Gouernour, by which And meanes they were preuented there, and at such other Plantations as was possible for a timely inselligence to be given; for where they faw vs standing vpon our Guard, at the sight of a Peece they all range away. In other places that could have no notice, some Peeces with munition (the vie whereof they know not) were there carried away, and some few Cattell also were destroyed by them. And as Pame disulgeth (not without probable grounds) their King hath fince caufed the most part of the Gunpowder by him furprized, to be sowne, to draw there-from the like increate, as of his Maiz or Corne, in Harueft next. And that it is fince discourred, that the fed beforein last Summer Opachankano practifed with a King of the Easterne shoare (no well-willer of his) CapainSmites to furnish him with store of poison (naturally growing in his Countrey) for our destruction, which hee abfolutely refused, though he sent him great store of Beades, and other Presents to 10 winne him thereunto : which he, with fine or fix of his great men, offered to be ready to instific against him. That the true cause of this surprize was most by the instigation of the Divell (enemy to their faluation) and the daily feare that poffest them, that in time wee by our growing continually upon them, would disposses them of this Country, as they had beene formerly of the West Indies by the Spaniard; produced this bloudy act. That never griefe and shame polleffed any people more then themselues, to be thus butchered by so naked and cowardly a people, who date not fland the presentment of a staffe in manner of a Peece, nor an uncharged Peece in the hands of a Woman, from which they flye as fo many Hares; much fafter then from their tormenting Diuell, whom they worthip for feare, though they acknowledge they loue him not.

the Fowler.

o. JIII.

Can, 165 Smith. M. P rie. Naked breast concealed beast.

Sir George Teardly intending to vilit Smiths Hes, fell ficke and thereupon fent Mafter Forey with Estimen (Moll a Frenchman to finde a convenient place to make Salt, in Namenicus King of Pawiniant came and shewed them his naked brack, protesting the inside to be astree ill meaning, asthat from deformitie, and promifing welcome if they would come into his Countrey, which they promifed. After this they having conferred with Kiptopeke King of Agaobanok, they paffed Ruffels Iles and Quancoke, and arrived at Panturunt, at Attentionnece the habitation of Namenacus, and Wamanato his brother, who came aboutd them with a braffe Kettle bright without, within full of Oyfters. Hee was shewed their hunting conducted forth by the younger and home by the elder : prefented also with Beauers skinnes, which hee requited wich fuch things as Wamanato faid he would keepe them while hee lived, and burie them with In him being dead : Namenacue his breast proued vicerous within and treacherous, but without harme to them by reason of their circums pection:an ambush being prouided in a Wood at a point where they would have had them land. Kiptokepe is the elder brother, and yeelded the movtie of his Countrie to the younger, bearing still the greater burthen in government but leffe honour, whereas on the Westerne shore, the younger beares the charge, the elder the dignitie. These are the most thriftie Sauages, keeping Corne for all the yeere and having to spare, whereas others want for one halfe. They are also more civill, just reckoners, vie no Black-boy-ceremonies, and in Affinitie and Confanguinitie obserue a larger distance in their Marriages.

Prouident Sauages.

lack of the Feather. Guie of the Massacre, Anno 1622, the Abigail was fent, and therein Captaine Barnel with fine and twentie men to build hips and Boars, and others to build the East Indie Schoole. That fatall Massare, fome and thinke ich high bethere occasioned by Nomattanow, a Sauage called vitually lacke of the Feather, in best elterme amongs them for courage and policie; who persuading one Morgan to go with him to Pamanne, to trucke, by the way slue him two or three dayes after hee returned to Morgan house, and aniwered his Servantes asking for their Massar that hee was dead, whereupon they would have had him to Master Toorpe, but hee so moved their patience that they shot him. Hee (whom the Sauages estemed free from hurt by the English and shot recyclished before hisdeath that they would bury him with the English, and not make it knownethat hee was slaine with a bullet. Opachaecanous was mound with his solfs so as he threatned reuenge, which he could not effect but by treacherous pretence of greatest peace, a ster fourteen dayes by so many deaths, giving life to the following Tragedie: which you heard delinered by publike Authoritie.

This terrible blow so affrigheed all that it was concluded, that all the pettie Plantations 39 should be left, to make good a few places (some say fine or fix) whither for want of Boats their goods and cattell could not be so suddenly conveyed, but that much was exposed to the Sauages cruell gleanings. Mafter Gookins at Nuperts newes, having thirtie five of all forts with him refused that order, and made good his part against the Sauages. Master Iordan at Beggars Bufb ga-Miltris Profler. chered a few about him, and fortified himtelfe in despight of the enemie. Miltris Profler would have adventured the like, and did it for three weekes till the Officers (as some report) would no longer permit her. Captaine Nuse and Captaine Cramshaw are much for prouidence and valour commended. Waters and his wife were kept prisoners by the Nansamuds (this Edward Waters is one of those three which first stayed in Bermuda, and found the great piece of Ambergreece) 40 whence by chance vpon occasion of a Boat lost by ill weather (whole company were faired) and comming on their shoare, they being busied in their Triumphs and Dances for ioy, they found opportunitie to get into a Canoa, and escaped to Keconghtan. Captaine Nuce called his Neighbours together when he heard of the Maffacre, entrenched himselfe , and mounted three Peeces of Ordnance, so that in foure dayes hee was strong enough to defend himselfe against all the Barbarian forces. Captaine Craftan with fine others fortified himselfe in delpight of all the Sauages, with the helpe of other Sauages, and made offer to the Colonie, if they would fend him a shallop with Armes, men and prouision for Trade, that the next Haruest he would prouide them Corne sufficient, which then (in the latter end of Iune) was little to bee had in the Countrie. Captaine Maddeson is reported to have given over-hastie credit to an exiled King, which comming to Patowomeke for succour and not obtayning it, in reuenge deuised and flandered the Patowomekes with intent of betraying and killing the English: which credulitie produced effects of crueltie and the conceits of bloudie treacherie conceiued (if others conceiue not falily) treacherie and bloud.

The last Summer 1622, they fee forth a company which destroyed the Sauzges Corneand boufes, and surprized Pamasoke chiefe Seat of Opachancanough. And the last report is that the Colonie is now in health, and that the Sauzges have returned fenen of the Englift which they less proposed that the sauzges have returned fenen of the Englift which they less proposed the sauzer of the surprise of their watchings and manifold losses and dangers. Opachancanough the authour of the Massace is laid to have come to his end by meanes more lutable to his deferts, then perhaps agreeing with 62 Christian simplicitie. A lacknesse after the Massace fell amongs the Englift, by realism that from neere eightie Plantations, they were brought to sever then eight, the distracted with a suddent memore and distracted wants. It is thought that 1800, survived both.

Hu

His Maiestie not a little moved with the loffe of so many his good Subjects, and some complaints also being made of the Government, many of the Virginian Company here bolding no such uniforms agreement as was meete : both shewed his gracious bomnie in the gift of diners Armes out of the Tours, with further promifes of his affistance; and appeinted Commissioners to examine the Causes of Virginias not answering to the care and coft in so long time bestowed on her. I am no fit Relater of things ensuing, and farre vnfitter Vmpire in (uch differences, I will now feake to God rather than men : Quid enim nifi vota superlunt. My Pragers Shall betoibe Almightue for Virginias proferitie ; whose Dwarfish growth after fo many yeares; convultions by diffensions there and beere, lamentaions in the complaints f both tides (a Pluriste Sciet in ber fides, continuing after so much bloud taken from her) weaknesse. 30 Sinne armes after fuch successions of armes and forces ; Tantalean startings amidst both Magazines and fertilute; Subuersions bere, and selfe energions there (pernerfnesse I mention not) rather then connerfions of Sauages after so many learned and boly Dinines sent thither; ponertie, sicknesse, deaths, in so rich a Sople, anabealthfull a Climate; what should I say? I can deplore, I doe not much admire, that we have bad so much in Virginia, and bane so little; the promises as probable as large, and yet the premiset yeelding in the conclusion this Virginian flerilitie, and meagreness rather then the multiplied iffue and thrift of a worthy Matron and Mother of a Family, answerable to her great Inheritance there, and lonter from bence. But what dee I in plaints, where some perhaps will complaine of my complayning? I will expell better from God and his Matestie, and while my selsemeane while in the better thrining of the English Colonie in Bermudas or Summer Hands.

CHAP. XVI.

English Voyges to the Summer Hands; HENRY MAYS shipwracke there 1593. The first Colonie sent 1612.



T is now time to leave the Continent and visit Bermudas, of Sir George Summer? Called Summer Hands. The occasion you had before related by Matter Strache, and that some of their Company took by their abode there. This was not the first time that Englis eyes had Rebet those Hands. For in the yeere 1993. Henry May had been e there; one of Captine Lancatter, Company, which had been in the Ball Indies, and in returning had put ouer to Trimidad, and thence to Puerso

ир. сер.б.

Rico and Hispaniola for refreshing, where Captaine Liendafter desired a Frenchman Monsteur de Barbotiere, to giue this Henry May paffage home with him. They departed from Laguna the last of Nouember, and December the seuenteenth were wracked on the North-west part of Bermade about midnight. The Pilots making themselves at noone to be twelve leagues to the Southwards of the Iland, certified the Captaine that they were from all danger : and demanded their wine of height, which they had thought they had beene cast away by the shore, but were seven 40 leagues off; by the helpe of their Boat, and a Raft, fixe and twentie of aboue fiftie were faued. I (faith May) durst not presse in, but stayed in the ship almost full of water, till the Captaine being entred the Boat, called me to him, and I entred leaving the better halfe of our company to the mercie of the Sea. We rowed all day till an houre or two before night; yer we could come on Land towing the Raft with the Boat. Having beene all day without drinke, wee fought long. and at last one digging among weeds, found fresh water being only raine water, which was all we found. It pleased God that we had faued our Carpenters tooles, and going roundly to worke, webuilt a Barke of some eighteene tun, for the most part with trunnels and a few nailes. For tacklings we made a Voyage to our ship and cut downe her shrouds; in stead of Pitch wee made Lime and mixed it with the Oyle of Tortoifes ; affoone as the Carpenters had calked, fpreading

50 it on with a flicke, which was foone dried by the heat, being in Aprill wee hafted away for feare of water failing vs. We made two great chilts and calked them, and flowed them on each fide our maine Maft, and fo put in our promisions of raine water, and thirteene living Tortoyfes for our food. The Hogs were leane, and there was flore of Fowle, Fish and Tortoyfes. There is all 6 good fishing for Pearles.

is an good mining for realize.

The element of May we were cleere of the Land for our Voyage to New-found-land, and on the twentieth fell with the Land neere to Cape Briton, and thence to the Binke of New-found-land, where a Barke of Fairman's tooke vs in, wherein I had passage home, and arrived at Fal-most bin August 1594. Thus much for May.

Let vs now heare the Relation fent from an Englift Colonie planted there vnder the gouernment of Mafter Richard Moore. This following Discourse hath beene printed, and was added to a Tractate of Maiter Siluesser I ordan touching the wracke of Sir Thomas Gater and Sir George Summers on the Bermudu, which being deliured more fully by Master Struebie supplies that have here omitted, and proceed to the English proceedings in those Ilands.

Being bound for the Sommer Hands, in the Ship called the Plough, wee imbarked the eight and

twen

Saint Georges Hand.

Three men had ft iici behind and went not to Virginia, Harter, Water. and Chard.

twentieth of Aprill, 1612. So passing downe to Granefend, wee anchored at Tilberg-hope, Vntill the fifth of May. The wind comming taire, were putrorth and came to the Downer the fixth of May, where we stated till the ninth. And then setting forward wee, had a faire and comfortable pallage, and by Gods bleding found to direct a courfe, that on the eleventh of July in the morning. betwirt nine and ten of the clocke wee descried our hoped and desired Hands, and in the afternoone of the lame day, about three a clocke, wee arrived in a verie lafe harbour neere S. Georges Hand, there wee landed all our men and women, and had beene at anchor about an houre, before wee could heare of our three men which had beene left there. As soone as wee had landed all our company, we went all to praier, and gaue thankes voto the Lord for our fafe arrivall and whileft wee were at praier, wee faw our three men come rowing downe tows, the fight of whom did Lo much rejoyce vs : to they welcomming vs, and wee the like to them againe, we fung a Pulme and praifed the Lord for our fate meeting, and went to supper.

The next day, being the Sabbath day, which wer dedicated to God in the best manner wee could, wee abode still in the forelaid Hand, with all the rest of our company till Munday morning. being the thirteenth of July : Then we went up with our Ship and company higher into the harbour, to the place where these three men had planted themselves. They had planted Corne great fore of Wheat. Beanes, Tobacco and Mellons, with many other good things for the vie of man: Belides they had wrought upon Timber, in Iquaring and lawing of Cedar Trees, for they intended to build a small Pinnace to carrie them into Virginia, being almost out of hope and comfort of our comming; because Cap. Danies time was to have beene with them long before we came. 20 Wee were no fooner come withing a league of the Land, but a company of Fish, asit were.

Commodites of the Coun-Fiftes.

met vs. and neuer left vs till wee were come to an ankor within the harbour; and as foone as we had passed over our businesse, and all things safe and in order, with a Hooke and Line wee to be more then our whole company was able to eate, fo that there was enough to feed many more. The next day after the Sabbath, wee went with our Net and Boat, and if we would have loaded two Boars wee might; and so may you do day by day. Fishes doe so abound and there be of these forts, Mullets, Breames, Hog-fifth, Rock-fifth and Lobstars, with more forts of other Fifth which I cannot name. Turkles there be of a mightie bignesse jone Turkle will serue or suffice three or source score at a

Torroifes' .. great, and of

meale, especially if it be a shee Turkley for shee will have as many Egges as will suffice fiftie or 30 threefcore at a meale : This I can affure you, they are verie good and wholfome meat, none of it bad, no not fo much as the veriq Guts and Maw of it, for they are exceeding fat, and make as good Tripes as your beaits bellies in England. And for Fowle we went the third day of our arrivall vnto the Bird Hands (as wee call them) and wing neither Stick, nor Stone-bow, nor Gun, we tooke them yo with our hands fo many as wee wouldm that euerie one of the company were to have fome three, some source a piece; three for a child, boy or girle, for a man source; then reckon what those that served some sourescore people did amount vnto. But this is for certaine, if wee would haue brought awaie twice so many more we might.

Some fixe daies after our comming, wee fent out for Hogges, fo the company which went out brought home fome : for the meate of them , I hold your Mutton of England not of fo fweet and 40

For the inclination of the weather, confidering in what climate it lies, wee haue had for the space of some fortie daies no raine, but verie coole and fresh gales of wind, yet in the day time verie hot : but wee agree with it verie well, and not a man that had lien ficke or difeated, but all likes well, and followes and imploies themselves to one businesse or other.

For the fruites which the Land yeelds, they bee the Mulberrie, great flore, and Peares which haue in them a red liquor, as the Pomgranat hat , or somewhat redder , but verie wholsome : if you eate an hundred at one time, you shall never surfet of them, if you eate some proportion of them they will bind, but if you exceed in eating of them, then are they of the contrarie operation : yet neuer any that hurt themselves by them, eate they neuer fo many. It is certaine, that one 50 man eate aboue a peck of them in some ten houres, and was neuer the worse. We have a kind of Berrie vpon the Cedar Tree verie plealant to eate; and for the Palmito Tree, the top of it is a

great deale sweeter and wholsomer then any Cabedge. In some of our Hands there growes Pepper, but not so good as our Indian Pepper: divers forts of other good things there is, which the feuerall times of the yeere bring forth one after another: but the top of the Palmito Tree is in season and good all the yeere. Take a Hatchet and cut him or an Augar and bore him, and it yeelds a very pleasant liquor, much like vnto your tweet Wines;

it beares likewise a Berrie in bignesse of a Prune, and in tatte much like. Also wee haue Oliues grow with vs, but no great store : many other good excellent things wee haue grow with vs, which this short time will not permit mee to write of so largely as I 60 might; but this is of truth, that Hogs, Turkles, Fish, and Fowledoe abound as dust of the earth; for Amber-greece and Pearle wee haue not had leafure, in fo few daies fince our arrivall to goe looke out for the one, or to fish for the other; but the three men which were left there, have found of them both. Also they have made a great deale of Tobacco, and if some would come that have

CHAP.16. Three forts of Timber. Articles propounded, and subscribed unto.

kill in making it, it would be verie commodious, both to the Merchant, and to the maker of it. And for the Silk-worme, if any were brought ouer, and some of skill to vie them, there would bee Timber Trees. very much good done with them, for the verie Spider in thefe our llands doth weave perfect fine * I have omit-Silke, both Yellow and White.

The Timber of the Country confifteth of three forts, the one is the Cedar, verie fine Timber this discourse, to worke vpon, of colour red, and verie fweet : the other forts we have no name for, for there is none in the company hath feene the like in other Countries before we came, &c.

ted the reft of as being better knowne to later Writers,

10 A Copie of the Articles which Master R. More, Governour Deputie of the Sommer Ilands, propounded to the Company that were there with him to be subscribed unto, which both he and they (abscribed the second of August, in his house, Anno 1612. which about the same time he sent into England, to the Worshipfull Company
of the Aduenturors.

VV Ee, who have here vinder subscribed our names, being by the great goodnesse of God safely arrived at the Sommer Ilands, with purpose here to inhabite, doe hereby promise 20 and bind our felues to the performance of the feuerall Articles hereafter following, and that in the presence of the most glorious God, who hath in mercy brought vs hither.

First, We doe faithfully promise, and by these presents solemnly binde our selues euer-more to worthing that aforefaid only true and euerliuing God, who hath made the Heauens, and the Earth, the Sea, and all that therein is, and that according to those rules that are prescribed in his most holy Word, and ever to continue in that faith into the which wee were baptifed in the Church of England, and to stand in defence of the same against all Athesits, Papists, Anabaptists, Browniffs, and all other Heretikes and Sectaries what soener, diffenting from the said Word and Faith. Secondly, because the keeping of the Sabboth day holy, is, that wherein a principall part of

Gods worthip doth confift, and is as it were the Key of all the other parts thereof, wee do there-30 fore in the presence aforesaid promise, That wee will set apart all our owne labours and implovments on that day, voleffeit be those that be of meere necessitie, much more vaine and vnfruitfull practiles, and apply our felues to the hearing of Gods Word, Prayer, and all other exercifes of Religion in his Word required, to the vitermost of our power.

Thirdly, Seeing the true worship of God and holy-life cannot be severed, we doe therefore promife in the presence aforesaid, That to the vttermost of our power we will like together in doing that which is just, both sowards God and Man, and in particular we will forbeare to take the most holy name of God in vaine, in ordinary swearing by it, or any other thing, or by scoffing, or vaine abusing of his most holy Word, or to vie curing, or filthy speeches, or any other thing forbidden in Gods most holy Word, as also to line together without stealing one from another, or 40 quarrelling one with another, or flandering one of another : And to avoide all things that fland not with the good effate of a Christian Church and well gouerned Common-wealth, asalfo to embrace the contrary, as luftice, and Peace, Loue, and all other things that fland with the good

and comfort of Societie. Fourthly, Whereas we are here together farre remote from our native foile of England, and yet are indeed the naturall Subjects of our most Royall and gracious King I A M E S of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Farth, &c. Wee doe therefore in the presence aforelaid, folemnly promise enermore so continue the loyall Subjects of our faid Sourraigne King, his Heires and Successors, and neuer to revolt from him, or them, voto any other what soeuer, but euermore to acknowledge his Supreme Gouernment.

Fiftly, Whereas were were fent hither by divers Adventurers of the Citie of London, and other parts of the Realme of England, wee doe here in the presence aforesaid promise to vie all diligence for the good of the Plantation, and not to purloyne or imbefell any of the prohibited commodities out of the generall estate, but to vie all faithfulnesse, asit becommeth Christians to doe, as also to bee obedient to all such Governour or Governours, or their Deputie or Deputies, as are, or shall be by them sent to gouerne vs; As also to yeeld all renerence towardes the Ministery or Ministers of the Gospel, sent, or to be sent. :

Sixtly and lattly, Wee doe here in presence aforesaid promise, the Lord affifting vs, that if at any time hereafter any forrain power shall attempt to put vs out of this our lawful possession, not cowardly to yeeld up the fame, but manfully to fight as true English men, for the defence of the 60 Common-wealth we line in, and Golpel wee protetle, and that whiles we have breath wee will not yeeld to any, that shall inuade vs vpon any conditions what soener.

Thad thought hitherto to have added a Letter of M. Hughes, written from thence, Dec: 21. 1614, and printed. But our latter intelligence, being more ample, hath caused mee to omit him and others; Yea all things in tome, and tome things in all. M. Norwood hath beene a diligent

great vic. Fowle.

Hogs by reafon of their. food there, and our mens ftomackes, extraordinarily fwect. The weather, Fruits.

Peares not

hurtfull.

Cedar Berries. Palmitos.

Pepper.

Palme-liquor.

and Pearle.

Tobacco.

Surveyor of the place and accidents, and hath given a Map of the one (common to be fold) and briefe relation of the other. But because his History of the Creatures is briefe, I have borrowed out of Captaine Smith, what he had borrowed of Capt. Butler, and others to give the Reader more full fatisfaction in that kind.

CHAP. XVII.

Relations of Summer Hands, taken out of M. RICHARD NORWOOD. his Map and Notes added thereto, printed 1622. The History of the Creatures growing or lining therein, being inlarged out of Capt. S M I T H s written Relations.

with helpe of fuch things as they faued with the Sea-ven-ure, and of fuch as they found in the Courses. In a built of Courses. found in the Countrey, had built of Cedar, and rigged fit for the Sea, two Velfound in the Country, nan built or Cedar, and rigged it for the Sea, two Versiles, a Ship and a Pinnace, and vpon the tenth of May, 1610, departed toward Pless a 3 m p and a rimiter p and point them, and carrying them flore of proni-fion for the reliefe of the people there. Vpon the foure and twentieth of May, 20

they arrived fafely there, and shortly after some of them returned to the Sommer Hands against for a further supply, in the same Ship which they had formerly built there; where Sir George Sommers dying, his men did not according to his last charge given vnto them, returne to Vnema: but framed their course for England, leaving behind them three men, that stated voluntarily. who shortly after found in Sommerfet Hand, which is a part of Sandys Tribe, a verie great treasure in Ambergreece, to the valew of nine or ten thousand pound sterling : there hath also been found fince divers times of the best fort.

This new discourry of the Sommer Ilands, being thus made knowne in England, to the Virginia

an Company, by these men which returned, they fold it to some hundred and twentie persons of the fame Company, who obtained a Charter from his Maiestie, and so hold it. And toward the 20 latter end of Aprill, 1612. fent thither a Ship, called the Plough, with some fixtie persons to inhabite, appointing Gourmour one Mafter Richard Moore, a man ingennous and carefull. who fince dved in Sir Walter Ramives last voyage to Guiera, (a place as appeareth by our Moderne Geographers, very rich and spatious.) But, as I say, he arrived thereabout the beginning of July, and found the forefaid three men that staied voluntarily, very well. Master Moore spent the three yeeres of his government, for the most part in fortifying the Countrey, and trayning the people in Martiall exercises, which custome harb beene continued by his successours : hee built some nine or tenne Forts, placing O dnauce and Munition in them. In his time, the Lord fent vpon the Countrey, a very grieuous fcourge and punishment, threatning the veter ruine and defolation of it : That it came from God I need not strive to prove, especially confidering it was gene- 40 rally so acknowledged by vs at that time : The causes and occasions of it, I need not name, being very well knowne to vs all that then lived there, which were about fixe hundred persons, thought shortly after much diminished. I will onely shew the thing it selfe, which was a wonderfull annoyance, by filly Rats : These Rats comming at the first out of a Ship, few in number, increased in the space of two yeares, or leffe, so exceedingly, that they filled not onely those places where they were first landed : But I wimming from place to place , spread themselves into all parts of the Countrey. Infomuch, that there was no Hand, though feuered by the Sea from all other Lands, and many miles diffant from the Iles where the Rats had their originall, but was pestered with them. They had their Nests almost in euery Tree, and in all places their Burrowes in the ground (like Conies) to harbour in. They fpared not the fruits of Plants and Trees, nei- 50 ther the Plants themselves, but eate them vp. When wee had fet our Corne, they would commonly come by troupes the night following, or so soone as it began to grow, and digge it up againe. If by diligent watching any of it were preferred till it came to earing, it should then veelie : elfe fhall ry hardly-fcape them. Yea, it was a difficult matter after wee had it in our houses, to laue it from them, for they became noylome even to the persons of men. Wee vsed all diligence for the destroying of them, nourishing many Cats, wilde and tame, for that purpole, weevled Rati-bane, and many times fet fire on the Woods, fo as the fire might run halfe a mile or more before it were extinct : Every man in the Countrey was enjoyned to fet twelve Traps, and fome of their owner accord fet neere a hundred, which they visited twice or thrice in a night. Wee trayned vp our Dogs to hunt them, wherein they grew fo expert, that a good Dog in two or three houres space, 60 despite of Cats would kill fortie of fiftie Rats, and other meanes we vied to destroy them, but could not preuaile, poisons,thall

finding them still to increase against vs. And this was the principall cause of that great distresse, whereunto wee were driven in the first planting of the Countrey, for these, denouring the fruits of the earth, kept vs delititute of bread

a yeere or two , to that, when wee had it afterwardes againe, wee were to weaned from it, that wee should easily neglect and forget to eate it with our meat. We were also destitute at that time of Boats, and other prouition for fifting. And moreover, Malter Moore had received warning from England, that hee should expect the Spaniard that yeere, yet they came not, but with two ships, attempting to come in, and having their Boat before them to found the way, were shot at by the faid Mafter Moore from Kings Cattle, and as we supposed one of them stricken through, whereyoun they prefently departed. But (as liay) this expectation of them caused vs (though in great necessitie) to haften the fortifications of the Countrey. All these iountly (but principally the Rats) were the causes of our distresse : for being destitute of food, many dyed, and wee all became 10 very feeble and weake, whereof fome being to, would not; others could not thir abroad to feeke reliefe, but dyed in their houles : fuch as went abroad were lubiect, through weakneffe, to bee fuddenly furprized with a dileafe we called the Feages, which was neither paine nor fickneffe, but as it were the highest degree of weaknesse, depriumg vs of power and abilitie for the execution of any bodity exercise, whether it were working, walking, or what else. Being thus taken, if there were any in company that could minister any reliefe, they would straightwayes recouer, otherwife they dved there: Yet many after a little rest would be able to walke again, and then if they

found any fuccour were laved.

About this time, or immediately before, came thither a company of Rauens, which consinued with vs all the time of this mortalitie, and then departed. There were not before that time, nor 10 fince (to far as I heare) any more of them feene there. And this, with some other realons of more moment, moved many to thinke that there was some other Hands neere the Sommer Hands, betweene Virginia, and it; and M. Moore (in his time, with fome other of vs) went forth in a Boat to far as then wee could conseniently, of purpote to discouerit : Since then, it hath beene endeauoured by other, and is vet (as I heare) to be further attempted. And how foeuer I am perfwaded (for certaine caules which I cannot here relate) there is no such thing ; Yet would I not difanimate any from this enterprise, for it they find any, their labours will be well recompenced; and though they find none, yet might they discouer those parts so well, that the passage to and from Virginia would be more fafe and eafie.

But to returne from whence wee have digressed: The extremitie of our distresse began to abate a little before M. Moores time of government was expired, partly by supplies out of England, of victualland prouision for fishing, and partly by that reit and libertie we then obtained, the Countrey being fortified. Yet the Rats encreased and continued almost to the end of Captaine Tuckers time, although hee was provident and industrious to destroy them, but toward the end of his time it pleafed God(by what meanes it is not wel known) to take them away, informich that the wilde Cats and many Dogs which lived on them were familhed, and many of them leaving the Woods, came downe to the houses, and to tuch places where they vie to gaibish their Fish, and became tame. Some have attributed this destruction of them to the encrease of wild Cats, but that snot likely they should be so suidenly encreased rather at that time, then in the source yeeres before, And the chiefe occasion of this supposition was, because they saw such companies of them 10 leave the Woods, and thew themselves for want of food. Others have supposed it to come to paffe by the coolnesse of the weather, which not with standing is neuer so great there, as with vs in March, nor scarce as it is in April, except it be in the wind; besides the Rats wanted not feathers of young Birds and Chickens which they daily killed, and of Palmeto Moffe (as wee call it) to build them elies warme nelts out of the wind, as viually they did. Neither doth it appeare that the cold was so mortall to them, seeing they would ordinarily swim from place to place, and be very fat even in the midst of Winter. It remaineth then, that as we know God doth sometimes effect his will without subordinate and secondary causes, and sometimes against them: So wee need not doubt, but that in the speedy encrease and spreading of these Vermine; as also, in the presentation of so many of vs by such weake meanes as we then enjoyed, and especially in the sudto den removaller this great annovance, there was royned with, and besides, the ordinary and mani-

fest meanes, a more immediate and fecret worke of God. Now to proceed. M. Moores time of gouernment being expired, Capt. Tucker fucceeded, arii- Cap. Tucker. uing there about mid-Mey, 1616, who likewife gourned (according to the custome) three yeeres; which time hee fpent, for the most part, in husbandring the Countrey, planting and nourishing all fich things as were found fit either for trade, or for the fuftentation and vie of the Inhabitants, wherein hee trauelled with much diligence and good fuccesse, fending to some parts of the Indies fee Plants and Fruits : hee alto adject to the Fortifications, and made tome Inclosures. In his time, viz. in the yeare 1617, wasfent a Ship and prouision, with men of skill, for the killing of Whales; but they arrived there too like to wit, about the midft of April, to that before they could 60 make reasis their Shallops, and fit themselves, the principal seaton for Whale-filling was Whales past : For the Whale come thither in January, and depart againe toward the latter end of May: Yet they throok fome, but found them followly, fwitt, & fierce after they were fireken, that they could take none. They well great flore of Oyle, as appeared by one that draue to shoare on Somme fet Hand, in Sandys Tribe : and by another that we found not far from thence dead upon a

Rat-plague.

How vaine a

thing is man,

wits and induftry are trium-

phed ouer by

filly Rats?

Great God,

giue vs grace

to feare thee,

feare nothing

we feare with

Pharas Frogs,

Grashopperson

with others,

Fleas, Spar-

a few Rats,in

Dogs, Traps,

Lice, Flies.

that we may

Shares,

I also received by Captaine Tucker, directions from the Adventurers to divide the Countree. and to affigne to each Aduenturer his shares or portion of Land : and withall, a description, with notes touching the manner how they would have it done, as they had formerly determined by Lot. Which thing I did with all faithfulnesse and diligence, the manner of it doth about appeare, and is more largely manifested in a Booke of the Suruey of the Country, exhibited to the Right Honorable his Maiesties Counsell, and the Court of Aduenturers for these parts. And then began this, which was before as it were an unfetled and confused Chaos (I mean as touching a Plantation, for confidered onely as a Regiment it was otherwile) to receive a convenient differfixion, forme, and order, and to become indeed a Plantation; for though the Countrey was small. vet they could not have been conveniently disposed and well settled, without a true description and furuey made of it; and againe every man being fettled where hee might constantly abide. they knew their bufinesse, and fitted their houshold accordingly. They built for themselves and their Families, not Tenes or Cabins, but more fubstantiall houses: they cleered their grounds, and planted not onely fuch things as would yeeld them their fruits in a yeere, or halfe a yeere : but all such too, as would affoord them profit after certaine yeeres, &c. So that in thore time after even before expiration of Captaine Tuckers government, the Country began to afpire and neerely to approch vnto that happinesse and prosperity wherein now it flourisheth. For may it not justly be accounted happinelle and prosperitie, for men to live where they enjoy the meanes of true Religion and Salvation, to wit, the fincere Ministerie of the Word and Sacraments. where the gouernment is good without rigour and oppression, the place healthfull and temperate? where they are freed from all extreme care and toyle? where they have food in abundance, and very good, with other things needfull to the body; and where they have Commodities meete for Trade. by which they better advance their effaces? all which and more is largely verified in the prel pt estate of that Colonie, whatsoever some maliciously minded, or to evill ends suborned, may fay to the contrary, fo that there may feeme to bee a restauration of that Golden Age so much fpoken of.

The Governour now there refident, is one Captaine Butler, for Captaine Tucker departing thence in December 1618. left in his place Captaine Kendall (who also was one that supplied the same place in the interim, betweene Master Moores time and Captaine Tuckers, and hath spent some nine or ten yeeres in the Countrey. But in the yeere 1619, about Midiummer, the 20 Aduenturers fent thither as Gouernour for three yeeres (according to the custome) the said Captaine Butler, and foure ships, with some five hundred persons, there beeing at that time in the Countrey onely fine hundred more : for by the space of foure yeeres , to wit, during the latter part of Master Moores government, and all the time of Captaine Tuckers, they had sent few this ther, being almost hopelesse of the place, by reason of the Rats : But since there have beenesent many companies more then have come to my knowledge. Infomuch that I vinderstand the Countrey is now almost fully planted and inhabited.

Thus have I briefly related (to farre forth as hath come to my knowledge and remembrance) every thing of most note and importance that hath befallen in the first Discoverie and planting of these Hands, till this present. I have laboured to contract my selfe, yet have exceeded my en- 40 tended limits. Now I multipeake fomething of the Countrey it felte: Which confifteth of a company of small Hands, situate and formed as aboue appeareth. It lyeth in the Westerne Ocean, in that part of the World lately discovered, and called America, or the New World, vulgarly, the Weit Indies: It hath Latitude, or Eleuation (as is abouefaid) 32. degrees 25. minutes, which is almost the same with the Maderaes, or rather more Southward.

The Countrey is round about enuironed with Rockes; which to the Northward, Westward, and Southward, extend farther then hath beene yet discouered : By reason of these Rockes the Countrey is very firong: For there is onely two places (and fcarce two, except to fuch as know them well) where shipping may safely come in and those places are very well fortified but within is roome to entertaine a Royall Fleet. The Rockes in most places appeare at a low water: 50 neither are they much coursed at a high water; For it ebbes and flowes there, not aboue fine foot-The shoare it selfe (for the most part) is a Rocke : so hardned by the Sunne, Wind, and Sea, that it is not apt to be worne by the Waues; whole violence is also broken by the Rocks, before they come at the shoare. The Mould is of divers colours; neither Clay, nor Sand, but a meane betweens. The Red, which refembleth Clay is worst; the whitish, refembling Sand, and the blackish, Clay, is good : the Browne, betweene them both (which they call white, because there is mingled with it , as it were a white Marle) is beft. Vinder the Mould two or three foote deepe, and fometimes leffe, is a kind of white, hard tubstance, which they call the Rocke : the Trees visally fasten their Roots in it : and draw their nourishment from it : Neither is it indeed Rocke or Stone, nor to hard, though for the most part harder then Chalke; not to white, but Pumice-like 60 and Spongie, easily receiving and contayning much water: I have feene, in some places, Clay found under it. It feemes to be engendred of the Raine water, drayning through the earth, and drawing with it of his substance, vinto a certaine depth where it congeales. The hardest kind of it (which is commonly under the red ground) is not fo Spongie, nor retaynes much water : but

Iveth in the ground in Quarries, as it were thicke Slates one voon another: and there is fome chinkes or creuifes betwixt one lare and another, through which the water hath paffage : fo that in fich places there is fearce found any fresh water. For all, or the most part of their fresh waser (whereof they have good flore) commeth out of the Sea; drayning through the Sand, or through the forefaid fubitance, which they call the Rocke, and leaving his Salt behind it becomes fresh : Sometimes we digged Welles of fresh water, within foure or fiue paces of the Sea-side : Wels. fometimes further off. The most part of them would ebbe and flow, as the Sea did, and be levell or little higher then the Superficies of the Sea.

The Aire is most commonly cleere, very temperate, moift, with a moderate heate, very The Aire; healthfull, and apt for the Generation and nourifhing of all things; fo that there is fearce any thing transported from hence thither, but it yeelds a farre greater encrease; and if it be any living thing, becomes fatter and better liking, then here. By this meanes the Countrey was fo replenifhed with Hennes and Turkeyes, within the space of three or foure yeeres, that beeing negle-Ated, many of them forfooke the Houses, and became wilde, and so lued in great abundance. The like encrease there is of Hogges and other Cattle, according to their kinds. There seemes to be a continuall Spring, which is the cause that some few things come not to that maturitie and perfection, as were requisite. And though the Trees doe shed their leaues, yet are they alwayes full of greene.

Their Corne is the same which they vse almost in all parts of the West Indies , to wit, Maiz: 40 which, to such as are yied to it, is more heartie and nourilling then our English Wheate, and yeelds a farre greater increase, as a pound, sometimes, of one or two graines. Of this Corne, and cluers other things, without either plowing or digging the ground, they have two Haruelts every yeere : for they fet about March, which they gather in July; and againe in August, which is ripe in December : And little flips of Figge Trees, and Vines, doe viually beare fruit within leffe then a yeere after they are planted, sometimes in halfe a yeere. The like fertilitie it hath in other things.

There is scarce at any time to be perceived either Frost or Snow, nor any extreme heate; for Teperature of there is almost alwayes some wind stirring, which cleereth and cooleth the Aire, Their Sum- the Gountrey; mers and Winters observe the same times with ours, but their longest dayes and nights are shoron ter then ours in England, by two hours and almost a halfe : as also their shortest dayes and nights are as much longer then ours : for their longest dayes and nights are about fourteene houres, and their shortest ten. When it is Noone with vs. it is Morning with them; and when it is about five of the clocke in the Evening with vs, it is high-noone with them : to that whileft the Sun declines with vs. it rifeth with them, as also it doth in Virginia. It is apt to Thunder and Lightnine all the veere, oft-times more terrible then in England; but no man, or other living creature have I knowne hurt by it. There is no venemous creature in the Countrey : the yellow Spi- Spiders, der which is there, making her Webbe as it were of Silke, and bringing forth her young (as the Alchimists their stone) of Egges like little Balles of Quick-filter, is not perceived to bee any whic venemous. Yet there is a Plant (that climbeth Trees like Iuie, the leafe also of to the fame colour, but in shape like the Vine) that is somewhat venomous, but of no great force.

There is great store and varietie of Fish, and so good as these parts of the World affoords not the like; which being for the most part vinknowne to vs, each man gave them names as they beit liked; as one kind they called Rocke-fish, another Groopers, others Porgie-fish, Hog-fish, Angle-fish, Cauallies, Yellow-tayles, Spanish Makerell, Mullets, Breame, Connie-fish, Morrayes, Sting-rayes, Flying-fifth, &c. The like they did by the Fowle, as Cohooes, Sandbirds, Herons, Ducke and Teale, Pemblicoes, Castle-boobies, Hawkes, &c.

The Country when we first beganne the Plantation, was all ouer-growne with Woods and Plants of feuerall kinds : and to fuch kinds as were vnknowne to vs (which were the most part) we also gaue names: such as were knowne retayning their olde names: as Cedars . Palmetoes. to Black-wood, White-wood, Yellow-wood, Mulberie-trees, Stopper-trees, Lawrell and Oliuetrees, Mangrowes, Pepper-trees, Yellow-bery-weed, Red-weed: These, and many others, wee found naturally growing in the Countrey. But fince it hath beene inhabited, there hath beene brought thither, as well from the Indies as from other parts of the World, fundry other Plants, as Vines of feuerall kinds, Sugar-canes, Figge-trees, Apple-trees, Oranges, Lemmons, Pomegranets, Plantanes, Pines, Parsnips, Raddithes, Artichokes, Potatoes, Cassaui, Indico, and many other: Infomuch that it is now become as it were fome spacious Garden or Nourcerie of many pleasant and profitable things.

Now if I should proceed to a more special! Narration, and speake of all these Plants, Birds, Fithes, and other remarkable things particularly: I could not but bee much larger then were any 60 wayes expedient in this place. Besides, I have long since understood, that Captaine Butler (the Gouernour there resident) hath undertaken to write of these and the like things, a peculiar Treatife. This therefore that is spoken touching the nature of the Countrey in generall, shall fuffice. Onely to make choice of two particulars, wherof I will speake, not so largely as the things require, but to farre forth as will be meet and convenient in this places

surall Hiftorie of them both.

The first shall bee the Tortoyse, which they call a Turtle: which having some effinitie and

resemblance with Fishes, Beasts, and Fowles, shall serve instead of a Historie of them all. The other thall be that which they call the prickled Peare-tree: which participating in nature, and

retembling in some things, herbs and in other Trees; shall likewise serue in stead of the Na-

And first of the Turckle, not regarding (for breuities sake) the large Discourses of others:

I will onely write what I hauc feene and knowne my felfe. They are in the shape of their bodie like a Crab-fish; and haue foure finnes : they are as great as three or foure men can carrie: the

wpper part of them is couered with a great shell, which wee call a Galley-patch, weighing

harder then Horne : shee hath also a shell on her belly, not so hard, but being boyled it becommeth foft, like the finewes or griffle of Beefe; and good meate. These line in the Sea, spen-

ding the Spring time, and part of the Summer about these Ilands : but the residue of the yeere,

we know not where. They are like to Fowle in respect of the smalnesse and fashion of their

heads and neckes: which are wrinkled like a Turkeyes, but white, and not fo sharpe billed.

They also breed their young of Egges which they lay. They resemble Beasts, in that their fiesh

is like Yeale, but more hard and folid; and they feed alwayes vpon graffe growing at the bot-

some of the water; neither can they abide any longer under water, then they hold their breath;

two minutes without comming vp to breathe, Shortly after their comming in, the Male and

Female couple, which wee call cooting; this they continue some three dayes together, during

which time, they will scarce separate though a Boat come to them, nor hardly when they are

imitten. Not long after, the Shee-Turckle comes vp by night vpon some Sandie Bay; and fur-

ther yo then the water vieth to flow, thee digges a hole with her finne in the Sand, fome two

foote deepe; and there comming vp seuerall nights, layes her Egges, some halfe a bushell

(which are about the bignesse of a Hennes Egge, and round as a Ball) and each time cours

them with Sand very curiously; so that a man shall hardly finde the place. These Egges (asit

feemes) are afterwards hatched by heate of the Sunne, and then by the Proudence of God (the

shee returnes any more to them, and yet in likelihood they remaine not long in the Earthafter

they are hatched, because (as I have before faid) they cannot live without breathing. We some-

times see of the young ones no bigger then a mans hand, which some fish will deucure. They

grow flowly, and feeme to have a very long life, they will fleepe on the top of the water, and

were wont to sleepe often on the Land, till the Countrie was peopled; they will also live out of

the water some three weekes, and that without meate, but mourne and pine away; they areve-

ry wittie. Being on the Land turned v pon their backes, they can no more without some helps

or advantagerecouer themselues; by which meanes when they come on shoare to Lay there

Egges, they are eafily taken, as also they are when they are cooting, But otherwise wee take

times [wimme, and feldome shunne : so that a man standing readie with a staffe in his hand,

which hath at one end a focket, wherein is an Iron lesse then a mans finger, foure-square and

sharpe, with a line fastned to it, hee striking this Iron into the vpper shell of the Turckle, it fickes fo fast, that after shee hath a little tired her selfe by swimming too and fro, shee is taken

by it. They will liue, the head being cut off, foure and twentie houres; fo that if you cut the flesh

with a Knife, or touch it, it will tremble and shrinke away. There is no meate will keepe lon-

But leaving these, we will now come to speake of the Prickled Peares, which are a fruit

and Cliffes, and commonly by the Sea fide, as if the falt-water did somewhat helpe to the gene- 50

growing in these llands, in such places as are scarce fit for any thing else, namely, vpon Rockes

ration and nourishing of them. The tree seemes to grow certaine yeeres before it beares fruit, and

then to continue bearing, very many yeeres, having almost all the yeere long fruit vpon it. And

although we call this a Tree, yet hath it fearce any bodie or branches, but confifteth in a manner

But we will give you a larger Historie of the Creatures from Captaine Smith, in the next Chapter.

them for the most part by night, making a great light in a Boate, to which they will seme-40

meanes are yet vinknowne to vs) are brought out of the earth, for wee could never perceive that 20

which the old ones will doe long: but the young ones being chafed to and fro, cannot continue 20

(as I take it) halfe a hundred weight : the flesh that cleaueth to the in-side of this being rosted 10 against the fire, is excellent meate: almost like the Marrow of Beefe: but the shell it selfe

CHAP. XVIII.

Extracts out of Captaine IOHN SMITHS Historie of Bermudas, or Summer Ilands; touching the English Acts and Occurrents there from the beginning of the Plantation.

Ome one hundred and twentie of the Virginian Company bought that Title which the Company might feeme to haue to Bermuda, and obtayned Letters Patents of his Mielle, Sir Homas Smite was elected Treaturer, and Malter Ri-bard More lent thither with the first Colonie, which found the three men well, Carter, Chard, and Waters, which had found store of Ambergrice, which was the occasion of great flurres betwixt Moore and Kendall, (who was impri-

foned) (bard (who was condemned and on the Ladder to be hanged, but reprined, and all Moores time detayined prifoner) and Captaine Danies, who had almost kindled a mutinie till better thoughts did better him. Sie vos non volus, was the conclusion of that Treasure to the finders, howfoever Danies and Kendall are faid to have licked their fingers well. For the natural Historie thereof I have added thus much out of him to that which before bath beene delivered by others.

The most troublesome to their llands are the Winds and Wormes, specially in the Spring and 20 Autumne, rather to awaken industrie then to cause despaire.

The Musketas or Flies are very buffe, with a certaine Indian bugge called by the Spaniards, a Flies, Cacaroatch, which creeping into Chills by their ill fented dung defile all, befides their eating. Little Ants are in Summer to troublefome that they are forced to dry their figs on high frames, Ants anointing the feete with Tarre which flay their passage that elle would spoile all. Wormes in the earth are notiome to their Corne and Tobacco, caufing them great labour enery morning to destroy them; which else would destroy all. Large Lizards have been there, now destroyed by the Lizards. Cats. Spiders are large but beautifully coloured, as if they were adorned with Silver, Gold, and Spiders, Pearle: their Webs in Summer wouen from Tree to Tree a perfect raw Silke in substance and co-Lour, to ftrong that Birds like Snites bigger then Black-birds, are fnared in their Nets.

There are grey and white Hearne, grey and greene Plouer, wild Ducks, and Mallards, Coots, Fowles Red-shankes, Sea-wigeons, grey Bitternes, Cormorants, numbers of small Birds, like Sparrowes and Rubbins, which have lately beene destroyed by the Wild Cats, very many Wood-peckers, Crowes, which fince the Plantation are killed, and feldome feene except in places leaft inhabited, where they are observed to take their flight about Sun-set, directing their course toward the North-well, which caufeth the conjecture of other Hands. (Yea, the Spaniards fay this is not true Bermuda, &c.) sometimes also are seene Falcons, Jarfalcons, Osprayes, a Bird like a Hobby. holden but a paffenger.

The Cohow is fo termed of his voice; a night Bird all day hid in the Rockes. The Egge-bird on the first day of May constantly observed to come, they begin to lay Egs as big almost as Hens 40 Egges; fo continuing till Mid-fummer, fo tame you must thrust them off : then permitted to breed (growing weake) and their young are excellent meate. The Egges of those are white; of the Cohome: freckled, as bigge as Hennes: frict inhibition was made for their fparing beeing al-

The Tropiks Bird hach his name of the places where he is most feene. Another Bird of her Cry is called Pemblico, feldome feene by day, an vinwelcome Prophet of Tempefts by her clamerous crying. O wles are now gone, Pigeons proiper not, Tame Duckes and Geefe are there.

Now for Plants there growing, the most remarkeable are, the Por son-weed, which is much in shape like our English Iuie, with the touch thereof causing rednesse, itching and blisters, all which after a while passe away of themselves without further hurt.

The Red-reed is a tall Plant, whose stalke is concred with a red rind: the Roote steemed, or a small quantitie of the juyce drunke alone procureth a forceable Vomit, generally vied and effe-Chuall against distempers of the stomacke.

A kind of Wood-bind is common neere the Sea running on Trees like a Vine, the fruit fomewhat like a Beane but flatter, which eaten any way caufeth to purge vehemently, yet without

Another small Tree causeth costiuenesse. There is alfo a Plant like a Bramble, bearing a long yellow fruit with a hard shell, and within a hard Berrie which stamped and taken inwardly,

Red Pepper is a fruit like our Barberies, which beaten, or bru zed with the Teeth , fets all 60 the mouth on a heat, for the time terrible; but fwallowed whole have the fame operation that

The Sea-feather is a Plant growing on the Rocks in the bottome of the Sea in forme of a Vineleafe, but farre more spread with veines of a palish red, strangely interlaced and weated into each other: the vertue vnknowne.

wholly of leaves and fruit, foft and brittle.

LIIIIII 2

Church built.

Supplies fent AR 1612. M.Barkic.

Increase of

dangers

M.Barblies fccond coming.

1614. Famineand fickneffe.

Contrary ex-

Caldicots lot.

M.Keath and M.Hughes.

Strange acci-

There are besides fruits thither carried which thrine and multiply, White, Red, Yellow Potatoes, Sugar-canes, Indicoes, Parlnips, exceeding large Radishes, Cassaui (the American root for bread) the Indian Pompeon, the water Melon, the Muske Melon, the most delicate Pineapple, Plantans, and Papawes; the English Artichoke, Pease, &c.

Master Moore applied himselfe to fortifying and to traine his men: hee laid the foundation of eight or nine Forts, called the Kings Castle, Charles Fort, Pembrokes Fort, Smiths Fort, Gates Fort. Warnickes Castle, Saint Katherines Fort, &c. mounting therein all such Ordnanceas he had. Be-Mafter Keath ine bufied in these and other necessaries, which held the men hard at worke, Mafter Keath the

Minister, a Scot, taxed him in the Pulpit for grinding the faces of the poore, oppreffine his Chri-Minister, 2 300, taxes ministrated and by the generality contraried, he fell on his knees and asked pardon, which was eatily with good admonition granted. Two other malecontents were condemned to be hanged, one of which for feare fell into a dead palife. the other was freed, and after proued a good labourer. He got two peeces of Ordnance out of the Sea-Venture (Sit George Summers wracke) framed a Church of Timber, which was blowne downe and reedified, and another built in a closer place with Palmito leaues. Before the verre expired, an Aduilo with thirtie paffengers were sent, to prepare for Spaniards; which made them fall to hard to worke, that many fell ficke. The Martha followed with fixtie paffengers.

and in it Mafter George Barklie, who tooke good notice of thost Hands. The Elizabeth was fent the fecond time with fortie palfengers. These carried the first Potatos, which being all loft but two castaway rootes have yeelded increase there to admiration, and are great reliefe to

Two Spanish Ships were seene soone after this Ship was gone, to found with their Boate, attempting to come in ; but from the Kings Castle Master Moore made two shot, which caused Spanish Ships. them to depart, to the ioy of the Plantation, which then had but three quarters of a barrell of Powder, and but one shot more: the Powder also by carelesnesse tumbled under the Mussels of the two Peeces which were discharged, and yet not touched with fire. The like mercifull prouidence appeared in certaine cartrages of Paper filled with Powder; a negligent fellowleauing Escapes from his Match burning voon one of them all the while they were at Prayer, to that the cole touched the Paper and fired it not.

A worse thing happened by a caruell of Meale, which Daniel Elfred brought thither, so stored 20 with Rats, that had neere ruined all the Plantation. Two yeeres after came in the Bleffing with one hundred passengers, and the Starre with one hundred and eightie, and soone after the Margaret, and two Frigats with one hundred and fixtie. Mafter Barkley also came to divide the Countrie into Tribes, and the Tribes into shares; but Moore feeing his share and the Colonies to be

none, gaue him fo cold entertainment, that he returned as he came. This bred Moore more diflike in England, and his minding fortification fo much, with neglect

of Corne bred a famin; that attended with difeafes, specially one called the Feagues, which without sense of paine, swallowed vp all their strength at once, whereof without succour they died; some by foode and rest recovered. The Rauens continued this mortality and then departed. William Millinton was drawne into the Sea by a Fish, and neuer feene more. The Famine gaue afte 40 persedeas to the workes, and Moore sent them to seeke reliefe. At Conpers Ile with a contrary extremity of the abundance of Cahows and Fish, many surfeited and died. Some killed the Cattell, and one stole away to the Woods and there franked himselfe, feeding on land Crabbes and Wilkes, For filling, the Smith was faine to make Hookes of Swords, and Lines of old Ropes, till a Frigat being fent with aduice into England, the Welcome was fent with prouision. Mafter Moore returned in this Ship, and left the Gouernment to a Councell of fixe, which fnould succeede each by a Counsell, other monethly ; viz. Captaine Miles Kendall, Captaine John Mansfield, Thomas Knight, Charles Caldicor, Edward Waters, and Christopher Carter, with twelve Affiltants. Moore arriving here, after much quarrell, obtained eight snares of Land. Hee died after in Sir Walter Raleighs Guiana voyage. He was a man very pragmaticall, and had before undertaken much in Foulenesse for 50 Rapes feede, &cc. A man fitter for luch a Plantation as this in the beginning was, then fome filken Citizen, or stalking Gentleman, or talking Traueller, or fowre Humorist, or grim Martialist might

Caldicots Lot was first, whose moneth being ended, with Knight and Waters in a small Frigot he went to Vuginia, Mansfield incceeded in the new triumuirate, and a plot not to furrender the Gouernment to fuchas from England should be appointed, was disappointed : Master Hushes was imprisoned, and soone set at liberty, but Malter Kealb his Symmystes fell to strange wife putes, and Hughes was againe convented, and by the Iury acquitted. Mansfields moneth being passed in braules, the two next were quiet; yet those contestings after remined. The Estimatriued with good supplies. Divers Boates were lost at Sea about this time.

But one memorable accident was this: In March, a feafon most tempessuous, on a faire Friday morning, seuen men went in a Boate of two or three tuns to fish, some of them fasting, neither had they any prouision in the Boat with them but a few Palmeto berries some foure leagues from shoare a tempest tooke them, and carried them quite out of fight of land; their strength be-

ing ipent, the strength also of the tempest abated on funday, and a calme followed. Too weake for Oares they lay adrift that night: the next morning Andrew Hillyard (the rest not able to helpe are aduction themselues) fored the faile : On tuefday one died, on wednesday three, which were cast oner- tues. boord : on thursday night the fixth, whom he was not able to turne over, but stripped him, ripped his belly with his Knife, threw his bowels into Sea, fored his body abroad tilted open with a sticke, and so let it lye as a Cesterne to receige some luckie raine water, which God fent present. ly after, to that in a small shower he recoursed about foure spoonefuls of raine to his ynspeakable refreshment. He also prescrued neere halfe a pint of blood in a shooe, which hee did sparingly drinke to moisten his mouth. Two dayes he fed on his flesh to the quantity of a pound : the e-10 lenenth day after his loife of Land, two flying Fishes fell into his Boate, whose warme jucie bloud he sucked, to his great comfort, and within an houre after, with greater comfort espied land, which within foure houres he attained on a Rocke neere Port Royall, where his Boate was fplic presently in peeces, and he made shift to climbe so steepe a Rocke by night, as would have troubled the strongest man in t' ale to have done by day. He discerned in the morning where he was.

and without other refreshing then water which he tooke temperately, or might elie have drunk his last) he got in halfe a day to a friends house. He was living Anno 1622.

Some treasure in Dollers, to the value of twentie pounds was found, the remainder of some Wrack. The Company fent M. Daniel Tucker, to be Gouernour; hee fet faile in the George, ac-

companied with the Edmin: some preparation was made to refift, but he at last was received and 20 acknowledged in May, 1616. Somewhat hee had to doe to bring them to their workes, which ver he effected; their day worke till nine in the morning, and then flaying till three in the afternoone, they began againe continuing till fun-fet. Besides meat, drinke, and clothes, they had for a time a certaine kind of braffe Money, with a Hog on the one fide, in memory of the Hogs there found at first landing. Hee by Master Richard Normoods helpe , laid out the eight Tribes in the Tribes laid out Mayne, which were to confift of fiftie shares to a Tribe, each share twentie fine Acres. He began to plant some of the Colony on speciall shares, and appointed Bailiffes to each Tribe, Hee held a generall Affite in his fecond moneth at Saint Georges , where for fedition John Wood a Frenchman Affifes. was hanged. He fent the Edmin to Trade with the Natiues of the West Indies for Cattel Corne. Plants, which had it been continued, might happily have bin more beneficiall to the Plantation

then the Magazines from hence, She returned with Figs, Pines, Sugar-canes, Plantans, Papawes. and divers other plants, which were presently replanted, and since have increased by the Gonernours commendable husbandry. Severity, by the conceit thereof produced an admirable fact: Fine men which could by no meanes get passage for England, resolved to adventure an escape, viz. Richard Sander Mariner chiefe plotter, William Goodwin a Ship Carpenter, Tho. Harifon a Iovner. Itemes Baker Gentleman, and Henry Pact. These infinuated to the Gouernour, that they would Admirable build him a Boat of two or three Tuns with a close Deck, fit to fish in all weathers. Hee glad to voyage, fee them so obsequious, furnished them with necessaries whatsoener they could delire. Shee was fitted and gone the evening before hee fent for her, to fee, as was reported, how shee could faile. This was most true, and Botelias his adventure from Goa in the East Indies to Lieben was not so

4 admirable a triall. Barker had borrowed a Compasse Diall of M. Hughes, leaving a Letter to him His course was to have patience for that losse, whereby their adventure was intimated. The Governours threats necter stoore, were not in that remotenesse to terrible as the two present swelling Elements, whom yet they with all provifound more gentle then a French Pickaroone, who in stead of succour, which they defired tooke from them what they liked , leaning them not so much as a Crosse-staffe to observe with, and so cast them off. They continued their course till their victuall began to faile, and the knees of their Small Boar Boat were halfe hewed away for fire wood. They at last arrived in Ireland, where the Earle of from Bermy. Tomund entertained them, and caused the Boat to be hanged up for a Monument, having fayled das commeth 3300. miles thorow the Ocean by a right line without fight of any Land. This fortunate Sanders in the rifling of a Ship taken in the East Indies, bought a Cheft for three or foure shillings, but

to would for want of a Key have fold it againe for leffe. But one day having little to doe, hee broke it open and found therein 1000, pounds fterling, or so much gold as bought him in Englanda good estate, which leaving with his wife he returned againe to the East Indies.

The Company fent Captaine Powell in the Hopewell, after he had landed his paffengers in Sum. Cap. Fowell, mer Iles, to trade in the Indies, who by the way tell foule on a Brasilman, and afterwards a French. man on him : but hee got fafe to the flands and told what he had done. The Governour kept his fecond Affize, and made a proclamation against the killing of coheires. Powell is against ent to the Weit Indies from thence, with thirteene or fourteene men. Hee made triall but in vaine, for the Whale-filling, for which and to which purpose the Company soone after sent the Neptune. In the beginning of his second yeere he called the third azise, in which one washanged, two others to condemned, but reprieted. The Rat Tragedy was now terrible : fome Fishes haue been taken with Rats in their bellies, catched as they fwam from Ile to Ile. One Henry Long, with fixe others being on fishing, a sudden storm arole with terrible thunder, and the Boat was tolled ouer the Rocks, Hurtby Rats

the fish toffed ouer-boord, and Long with two others escaped (the rest drowned) one of the three filling all the being demanded what he thought in the prefent perill, answered, hee faid nothing, but Gallowes Hand,

CHAP.19. Bulwarkes raised. Miserable torments. Noisome Wormes.

1305

Gallowesclappers fate.

claime thy right, which within halfe a yeere fell out accordingly. Powell returned with three Frieats, laden with Meale, Hides, and Munition. The Mafter and Gouernour contending both were difpossessed by a stronger power. Waters, with twelue men were sent to Virginia, and would no more returne to Summers Iles.

intended.

A. 1618. arrived there the Diana, with men and provision, and the first Magazine (a course I Magazines not heate not much applauded by the Planters here, or in Virginia, the companies honeft care) feeming fo prograble as by some others dishonestie frustrate. This Ship fraught with 3 0000, weight of Tobacco, game by the good fayle thereof encouragement to the Aduenturers. The Gouernour building a house of Cedar in the best Land, appropriated it to himselfe to the griefe of others there, of whom Master Hugher could not by threats nor imprisonment be so pacified, but that here to the Company hee Io approued his cause. Two men and a Gentlewomen, thinking to make their escape in a Boat to Virginia, were neuer heard of after. Sixe others attempted the like, but were apprehended. araigned, condemned, and one of them hanged. The Gouernous hard dealings fo much complain ned of, cauted him in the Bleffing to returne to excuse himselse, and to get that house affured him.

cicaping. Two thips fent

Efeapers not

leaning Captaine Kendall to upply his place. The Gilli-flower and the Treasurer were fent, By the Sea-flower which went to Vinginia, 2 Preacher was fent to the Ilands, and newes of a new Gogernour, Captaine Kerby came in with a small Barke from the West Indies, A Datch Frigot was cast away on the Westerne shoare, the people saued by the English.

Cap.Butler Gouernour.

Captaine Butler, the new Gouernour arrived in the Warwicke, the twentieth of October, 1619. The Redoubt, a platforme of the Kings Castle, at the same time whiles the New Gouernour and 20 old Planters were feafting aboord, accidentally was confumed with fire. The next month came in the Garland, which had come from England fixe or feuen weekes before him, and fpent feuenteen weekes on the voyage, which proued to tedious, that many both Saylers and Paffengers died. In Great flormes the end of November, arole luch a florme that many great Trees were blown up by the roots, the Warwicke cast away, the Garland forced to cut her Masts ouerboord. Not long after happened another as fierce; in which the Monnt, built by M. Moore for a Watch-tower, was blowne up by

the roots; and their winter crop of Corne blaited.

He began the new yeere with refortifying the Kings Castle, and finding the Treasurer rotten, tooke nine Peeces of Ordnance out of her. Hee fent the Garland for England. Hee finished the Church begun by Captain Kendall, with great toile got three Peeces out of the wracked Warnick, 20 imployed a Dutch Carpenter of the former Dutch wrack to build Boates. A luckie fellow in February, found a piece of Ambergreece of eight Ounces, as hee had done twice afore, and according to order of Court (to preuent concealements) had thertore thirtie pound an Ounce. Two Dutch Frigots arrived, conducted by Captaine Powell, and much refreshed the Colony with Oyle and Bacon at cheape rates. The Gouernour made a new platforme in place of the burned Redault, and mounted feuen great Peeces on Cariages of Cedar. The Ministers not being conformable to

Mini@ers fcruples.

the Church of England, nor vniforme with themselves in administration of the Sacrament, and Marrimony. Hee translated the Liturgie Booke of Garnsie and Iarsie, void of the pretended scruples which was generally embraced, and in his time practifed, and the Sabbaths observation proclaimed. They rebuilded the Monnt, and divers Boats was indangered with a Hericano, one loft, 40 Sir George Sum Finding a little Crosse crected where Sir George Summers his heart and entrailes were buried : he mers memorial caused a Marble stone brought out of England, to bee handsomely wrought, and an Epitaphengrazen, in memory of that worthy Souldier, and laid thereon, inuironed with a square wall of

On the second of June , began their Asi zes, in which their Lawes and Government were re-Their first Par- duced to the English forme. The first of August, was a generall Assembly in manner of a Parliament, at Saint Georges, diuers Articles concluded, and being fent hither, by the Company confirmed, which for breuitie I omit. The Magazine Ship foone after came in weake case thither, hauing cast overboord twentie or thirtie of her people, and had they staied at Sea a weeke longer, were likely to have all perished. That aire foon mends or ends men in that case, and those which 50 died not foone after the landing recovered, not without infection of others there, 70000. weight of Tobacco was prefixed for her freight. Commandement came now to entertaine no Ships, but fuch as were fent from the Company, to the Colonies great griefe, which now were forced to a Magizane-Monopoly, and debarred of occasionall reliefe. Cap. Powell soone after came thither, imployed by the States, defiring admittance for wood and water, which was denied with excee-Spenife Wrack, ding murmuring and exclaiming of the Colony. The Magazine Ship arrived, her Matter dead,

and many passengers, the rest sicke. fille reports in Them happened allo in September a Spanifb Wrack, which comming from Carthagena with Baziand, the the Spanis Fleet loft their Ship on those Rockes, and seventie persons were faued, some of which Sassiff Emba- had beene rifled, but their money to the value of one hundred and fortie pound reftored them by 60 tadour allows the Gouernours meanes : into whose hands they committed it for disbursment of their charges. the Gouernours meanes; into whose hands they committed it for disbursment of their charges, ging the fame. Some were sent away, others forced to stay till their labours had procured meanes for their palmible country. tage. Hee made meanes to get out of the Wrack two Sakers, and three Murtherers, which were the fame which Cap. Kendall had fold to Cap. Kerby, who was taken by two men of War of Car.

thagena, most of his men slaine or hanged, hee wounded died in the Woods, as these Spaniards related. Three Bulwarkes were raifed at Southampton Fort, with two Curtens and two lauelens. Armes were distributed to all fuch as were able to vie them.

The Weauells (which had at this time much hurt their Corne) found a strange remedy. For a Weauells cure. proclamation being made that all Corne should be gathered by a day, because many had lost some for want of gathering, it Il haunting the Ships for Aqua-vita and Beere; some bad husbands hafilly gathered it, and threw it on heapes in their houses vnhusked . fo letting it lye foure or fine moneths. Now the good husbands husked theirs, and hanged it vp with much labour, where the Fliesdid blow it, which the others idlenesse, as the event shewed, prevented, that being thus so found to be the best way to faue the corne and labour, to let it lye in the huske. Divers places of fresh-water were now also luckily found out. Another triall of whale-fishing was vainely attempted by a Ship which came from Unginia, who returned thither fraught with Lime-ftone, 20000, pound weight of Potatos, &c.

Aprill and May were spent in building a Prison, and petfecting some Fortifications, and source Sakers were gotten from the Spanish Wrack, and mounted at the Forts. One was hanged for buggering a Sow, whose Cock in the time of his imprisonment vsed also to tread a Pig, as if it had beene a Hen, till the Pig languished and died, and then the Cock haunted the same Sow. About the same time two Chickens were hatched, one of which had two heads, the other is said to have crowed loud and luftily within twelve houres after it was out of the shell. Other Peeces

20 were got out of the Spanish Wrack, and a Saker also out of that of Sir George Summers. By a Barke going to Virginia, Captaine Buller, his time expiring, conveied himselfe thither. leaving the government to C. Felgate C. Stokes, &c. In the Kings Caffle were mounted, or fufficient platformes, inteen Peeces of Ordnance. In Charles Fort two, in Southampton Fort five, betwixt Forts & Orda which & the Castle passeth the channel into the Harbor, secured by twenty three Peeces of 200d Ordnance. In Compille is Pembrookes Fort, with two Peeces. Saint Georges channell is guarded by Smiths Fort and Payers Fort, in which are eleuen Peeces. Saint Georges Towness commanded by Warnicks Fort, with three great Peeces, on the Wharfe before the Gouernours house are eight more, besides the warning Peece by the Mount, and three in Saint Katherines; in all tenne Fortresses, and fiftie two Peeces of Ordnance sufficient and serviceable. Hee lest one thousand 30 five hundred persons, and neere one hundred Boates, the Hereplenished with provisions, fruites,

poultry, &c.

Malter Iohn Bernard, was sent by the Honourable Company to supply his place, who arrived Governour within eight dayes of Captaine Butlers departure, with two Ships, and one hundred and fortie Pallengers, with Armes and all forts of Munition and other prouisions. During his life (which continued but fixe weekes) hee gaue good proofe of his sufficiency in reforming things defective. M.Harrifon He and his wife were both buried in one day, and one graue : and Master lobn Harrison chosen Go-Gouernout. uernour till further order came from London.

The Wormes before mentioned are still troublesome, and make them morning workes to kill Wormes noythem. Caterpillers are pernicious to their fruits, and Land Crabs are as thicke in some places, as 40 Conies in a Warren, and doe much harme. A Ship in which had beene much fwearing and blafpheming vsed all the voyage, perished; the companies negligence iovially frolicking in their cups and Tobacco (having landed certaine goods) by accident the Powder fired, and blew up the great Cabbin; some were taken up in the Sea, living in miserable torments, eighteene were lost with this tatall blaft, the Ship also funke, with fixtie Barrells of Meale sent for Virginia, and her other provisions loft. The Company have fent Captaine Woodboufe in a Ship called the Tigre for that gouernment, a man much commended and hopefull. I have beene told that there are three thoufand persons of all forts living there, halfe of which number is able to beare Armes, and exercifed to that fernice.

1622.

CHAP. XIX.

Briefe intelligence from Virginia by Letters, a supplement of French-Virginian Occurrants, and their supplantation by Sir SAMVEL ARGAL, in right of the English Plantation,



He late alteration of Firginia Gouernment is vnknowne to none; and most know of the frequent complaints, both by printale Letters, and by Petitionsto his Ma-icity. Now least any should hereupon thinke Virginia to be vinworthy of such our care and cost; I have out of one of the Planters private Letters transcribed a few care and cost; I have out of one or the Figure 5 property words of green aces, and yet a magnifying of the Country, that the English may be more blamed for want of Proundence, then the Region for defect of Natures best

gifts. Other things I could alleadge from others, but my meaning is to amend things not to

quarrell them, and to awaken the care of good men, rather then to recite the faults of the bad. In one Letter, dated Dec. 22.last past, he hatn these words :

lodging,

The intollerable rates we pay here for commodities, as ten pound sterling a hog head of Meale, sixteen He mentions Shillings a gallon of Alligant, three pound sterling a Henne and eigh: Chickens, Go. and so according to in other letters these rates for enery thing elfe : lastly, the beaut taxations that are laid upon us free men, for building 3.s.a pound of of Castles, paying of publique debts, for the not gathering of Sasafras, &c. So that it will come to mi Butter, 6.d. rea hare, with that that is paid, and that that is to pay in Corne and Tobacco, to at least twenty or fine and pinte of Milke, twenty pound sterling, this yeere; so that when I have paid this, and paid my faithlesse feruants their wages. 10 \$ or 12.3.2 I final fear fe bane good Tobacco enough left to buy my felfe for the next yeer a pint of Aquanita & C. This dayfor a work- you fee (I neither warrant, nor except against the truth, but present the worst quarelled paralel. Id led with the best) complaints of great prizes of things, not ansing from plenty of money as you reade before in the conquest of Perm, but from I know not what ill habit and indisposition of that Colony. And least any man should withdraw his heart, hand, or purse therefore from that worthy work, I have out of the lame mans Letters delivered a commendation of the Countrey. The Letters were written, and dated 22. March 1624, and containe for subflance none other then what before you have read in others; yet are more futable to this time and purpose, as later newes and fitter directories to the Philitians of that Effate ; that at last the English honour may he vindicated against to base perils from Sauages, and baser quarrels from and among st our owne. God profper his Maiesties care, and make those which are therein emploied not to feeke their owne good by hafty returnes, much leffe other their fellow adventurers enill by calumnies and 20 viderinings, but Virginia prosperity; of which, Natures prosperity is thus related by one querulous of his owne loffes and croffes. His words are thele : Now concerning the state of the Country, so much as I have observed, I will relate unto you : First the

Countrie it felfe, I must confesse is a very pleasant Land, rich in Commodities, and fertile in sorle to troduce all manner of Plants, Hearbes, and Fruites. I have (eene here my felfe both Carrets, Turney, Cabases, Onyons, Leekes, Garlicke, Tyme, Parfeley, Pompions, Muskmilion, and Watermilions rare fruits and exceeding wholesome, here are also Strawberries; I have lien downe in one place in my Corne field, and in the compasse of my reach have filled my belly in the place : and for Mulberries. I can when I list goe and gather a buffell at a time ! here is also a coole Fruite growing wildely on the ground, much refembling a great Walnut with the greene rinde on it, which refernes in it three admirable good tastes namely 30 of Stramberries, Rolewater, and Sugar, they were an exceeding great comfort to me in n.y last yeares sick-

neffe, and are admirable good against the bloudly fluxe.

English Wheate and Barley will grow here exceeding well; I have feene here growing as good English Wheate as ener I saw in England in all my life. For Timber we have the Oake, Ashe, Poplar, blacke Walnut, white Walnut, Pines, Gumme trees; the Pines bere afford admirable good Pitch and Tarre, and Serve, fplit out in small peeces, in many places of this Land instead of Candles; but it will smeare one worsa then a Linke : here are also Peare trees which yearely bring forth Peares. But there is a tree that passible all Fruite trees, which we call by the names of a Prissurmon tree, which beareth a Plum much about the biqueffe of a Peare plum, I doe thinke it is one of the rarest Fruites in the world; when they are ripe they eate naturally of themselves from the tree better then any preserved Plummes I ever tasted in Eng- 40 land. The Beafts that this Land is plentifully stored withall are Deere, Beares in some parts, Beauers, Otters, Foxes, Hares, Squirrels, Roccounes, Poffucins, names strange to you, yet are they singular good meate: the Roccouns tasting as well as Pigges fielb. Indian Dogges bere are as good meate with es as your English Lambe. English Cattell bere increase and thrine very well, as Kine, Hogges, Gostes, and Poultry. Fowle bere are abundance, as Swans, Brants, Geefe, Turkies, Herons, Cranes, Eagles, fishing Hawkes, Bussards, Ducke and Mallard, Sheldrake, Dapchicke, Partriches, Pidzeons, Crowes, Blacke-birds, and all manner of small Birds in abundance. Our Rivers here are likewise rich by the abundance of Fish, as Herings, Shads, Perch, Eele, Pike, Carpe, Cat-fish, Rock-fish, Gor-fish, and Sturgeon. If here were any that would make filhing for Sturgeon an occupation they might take inough to furnish this Land, and also plentisully supply England. I my selfe have seene above twenty Sturgeon leage a- 50 bone water in leffe then two houres. As for our Graine, I thinke it producet b the plentifullest encrease of any Corne in the World; for I have seene one graine of Corne, that by the assistance of growth and time, bath yeelded a pint of Corne : we have here also Beanes and Pease.

I confesse here are plentie of all those things I have set before you, but all the craft is in catching them; for be that will get any game, will be a wary and a well eyed flot, and to prop his profession, he will addo great care and vigilance, both in defending himselfe and winning his game. It hath beene often seene in this Land, that whileft an Englishman hath beene winning bis game, an Indian bath dogd him, attending bis opportunitie by the others discharge to fill him full of Arrowes. Since the Maffacre they have killed us in our owne doores, fields, and boufes: thus are we not fafe neither at home nor abroads and (which grieves me to write) our safetie is lessened by our malice one to another, for the melt part altoge-63 ther neglecting the common enemie. I my felfe and my wife are by some secret enemies much wronged for I am hauen fo bare, that I bane scarfe either Garter, Girdle, Stocking, or Shirt left; all my wearing Cleather likewife are torne and tattered. I can accuse no man, and they that likewise doe it, doe it printer by and which greenes me most of all, they strine by base and instructing meanes to clip the wines, as well of

my prosperitie as of my reputation; yet I hope God will give me patience to beare, and in his good time give me a jorfull delinerance in the middest of all these miseries. Whilest I was a writing these lines, newes was brought me of the killing of one, and the carrying away prisoner of another of my neighbours by the India ans ; one was an old Virginian, and one who for a long time was Sir Thomas Dale his Onerfeer in this Land his name was Mafter Henry Watkins: and but two dates agoe there was another that bad his braines beaten out by the Indians, in the next Plantation to vs. Wherefore with a fad and forrowfull heart I take my leave of you deere Father, Mother, Sifters, Brethren, and all the rest of my kinde and loning friends; for the case stands so with vs here, that if wee goe out in the morning, wee know not whether wee fhall ever returne; working with our Hoe in one hand, and our Peece or Sword in

10 the other, ce. And now from lately intelligence you have notice of the good and euill, as becommeth a faithfull Historian, requid non veri andeat, nequid vers non andeat; It is good to know the worst to preuent it : forewarned, forearmed. Early you may fee that the good things of Virginia are naturall and her owne, the bad accidentall and our owne; and confequently if wee amend our selves, Virginia will soone be amended. The body there is found; to cut the haire, avoide the excrements, paire the nailes, walh away sweate and dust, and to cure other like accidents of negligence, or impenitent and unprofitable diligence, is a worke featible and ficile also to induttrious and vinanimous workemen. One thing touching the French (whole Plantations are before recited) remaineth, that we take away all foruple from feare of suspected neighbours. I shall 20 therefore adde a little more touching them, the conclusion of their Virginian Plantation in a dou-

ble fense. As for the English right to these parts, the next Chapter will shew, and consequently the Inflice of Sir Samuell Argalt act. The Patents to Sir Humfry Gilbert, and to Sir Walter Raleigh, and their actuall possession before these latter Plantations may be alleadged likewise against the French. Their things I have collected out of Sit William Alexanders Encouragement to Colonics; Lescarbot hath also related them.

The Marquesse de la Roche, by a Commission from Henry the fourth, intending a Voyage for

Canada, happened by the way upon the He of Sablon (which is now comprehended within the Patent of new Scotland) and there (trusting to the strength of the place, where there are no Sauages at all) landed fome of his men, till he should have found a convenient place within the maine Corteregelia ao Land fit for a habitation, promiting then to returne for them. But it was his fortune, by reason to those parts of contrary winde, never to finde the Maine Land, but he was blowne backe to France without days too. and feeing of them, where he was in the time of the civill warres (fuch is the vncertainty of world- another 1501 ly things) taken prisoner by the Duke of Mercant, and shortly after died; so that his people After thathis whom he had left at Sablon, furnished but for a short time, had quickly spent their prouisions, ha-brother, but whom he had left at Sablon, turnified but for a more time, nad quickly spent their proussons, nabothioft. Ga-uing for their maintenance onely such things as the place it selfe did without labour freely afford; mes another which hath a race of Cowes, as is thought, first transported thither by the Portugals, that have Portugals long continued there: they had likewise there growing wilde, of this which wee call Turkey straits ther Wheate, and fundry Rootes fit to be eaten, and enery where abundance of Fiftes, with Venifon, Am. 1525. The and (nating no meanes to line but by sport) as for their Apparell, they cloathed themselues with International Control of the Control of t to the Skins of fuch creatures as they could kill by Land or Sea : fo that having lived there for the gela from 60fpace of 12. years; when they were prefented to King Henry, who had hired a Filherman to bring deg. to S. Lasthem home, as I have heard from them that did tee them at first before the King, they were in rence. very good health, and looked as well as if they had lived all that time in France: having bin abuled by the Fisherman, who cunningly conceiling that he had bin ditected by the King, did bargaine with them to haueall their Skins for transporting them home, which were of great value, fome of them being of blacke Foxes, which have bin fould at fiftie pound sterling a prece and aboue: for the recovery thereof they intended a Processe against him before the Court of Parliament at Paris, wherein they preuailed, gaining by that meanes a flocke wherewith to traffique

in these parts againe. Monfieur de Montes betaking himfelfe to trade for Furs, Monfieur Pourtrincourt resoluing 50 to projecute the Plantation at that place fent his fonne Biencourt to France, to bargaine with some that would send them a supply, such as was requisite for establishing of that

The first that embraced his propositions were the Isfaires, who as they have ordinarily good Islaires, wits which made them the rather canable of fo advantagious a project, fo they were the more animated thereunto by vpbraiding the lazinelle of our Clargie, to shew with what feruency they trauelled to propagate the Gospell, in doing whereof (whether it be ambition or denotion that prouokes them) sparing no paines, they have trau lled both to the East and West Indies, and to the admired Kingdome of China. Their fociety in France, prenailing with all that had any in-60 clination either to zeale or to vertue, did eafily gather a voluntary contribution for the furthering of to commendable a purpose. Thereafter they sent away two Fathers of their Company, with a new tupply of all things necessary to the Plantation at Port Royall, but shortly after their arrivall (their predominant disposition hardly yeelding to any superiour, specially if it be a fecu-

lar power) they began to contradict Pourtrincours in the execution of those decrees which had

bin giuen forth by him, as civill Magistrate of that place : whereupon the Gentleman extreame. ly discontented, and weary or conteiting with him; having said that it was his part to rule them you earth, and theirs onely to guide him the way to heaven, he returned backe to France, leauing his Sonne Biencourt in his place. Who being a youth at that time of more courage then circumipectnesse, distaining to be controlled by them whom he had entitled thither, and scorning their insupportable presumption, ving spirituall armes for temporall ends, and an imperious kinde of carriage, who onely for ipleene had excommunicated and branded him with a fpirituall cenfure; he threatned them by his temporall power with a more palpable punishment. So that after much controuerie, resoluting to separate themselves, the two lesines taking a part of the Company with them, went from thence to a place in new England, called by them Mount In Defart, where they feated themselues; and having a supply from the Queene Mother did plant fundry Fruit trees of the most delicate kindes in France, such as Apricockes and Peaches, neuer intending to remoue from thence.

was the Goustnor of Virgiqua and last him.

At this time Sir Samuel Argall being then Gouernor of Virginia, coasted along t new Eng. that Sir T.Dale land to trainque and diffeourt, or to acquire things need for the Southerne Colony in these parts, where the lands are reputed to be more fertil, and the Seas more frequented, & did conceine by a description made voto him by the Sauages, that there were fome come from this part of the World to inhabit there; and being lealous of any thing that might derogate from the honour.or proue prejudiciall to the benefit of his Nation, where their interest in this was easie to be apprehended; he went whereas he was informed that they were, and his vnexpected arrivall, as it would feeme, not onely amazed the mindes of the French, but likewife preuenting their preparation and refolution; he approached so neere to a Ship that lay before their Fort, that hee beate them all that were therein with Musket shot from making any vie of their Ordnance saue one of the two lefutes, who was killed in giving fire to a Peece: Having taken the Ship, they landed and went before the Fort, summoning them that were therein to yeelde themselues, who at the first made some difficulty, asking a time to adusse; but that being refused, they privately abandoned the Fort, flealing out by some backe way into the Woods, where they flaied one night, and the next day comming backe, rendered themselues to Sir Samuel Argall, who had lodged all that night within the Fort, giving up the Patent they had from the French King to be cancelled. He yied them very curteouily, as their owne Writers doe make mention, suffring such as had a 30 minde to goe for France, to feeke out Fishers Ships wherein they might be transported; the rest that were willing to goe for Virginia went thither alongst with him; no man having lost his life but onely that one lefatte, who was killed whilft they made refiftance, during the time of the conflict. Thereafter Father Biard, the other of the lesaues, comming backe from Virginia with Sir Samuell Argall, out of the indigestable malice that he had conceived against Buncourt, did informe him where he had planted himselfe, offering (as he did) to conduct him thither. As soone as they were entered within the Fort, neere the vppermost of the llands, Sir Samuel directed the Ship to ride at a reasonable distance to attend occasions before the Fort did land himselfe with forty of the best of his men upon a Meddow, where immediately they leard a peece of Ordnance from the Fort, and he conceiving tince it was that whilft it could doe no harme, that it 40 was done either but to give terrour to them, or to warne some that might happen to be abroad, did make the greater haite towards the Fort, where he presently entered, finding it abandoned without any men at all left for the defence thereof. He went vp the River fide five or fix miles, where he faw their Barnes, and the ground where a great quantity of Wheate had grown, which he carried with him to proue for Seede in Virginia: he faw also their corne Milne very conveniently placed, which together with the Barneshe left standing vintouched. As for the Fruit it felfe he deftroied it downe to the ground, racing the Frencharmes, and leaung no Monument that might remaine to witnesse their being here. After this, Biencourt, who had been for ewhere abroad trauelling through the Countrey com-

ming home, defired to conterre with Sir Samuel Argall, who did meete with him a part from the 50 company upon a meadow; and after they had exposulated a space for what had past controuerting concerning the French and English, little to these bounds, at last Biencourt offered, if hee might have a protection from him, to depend upon our King, and to draw the whole Furres of that Countrey to one Port, where he would divide them with him ; as likewise hee would show him good mettalls, whereof he gave him pieces, the other refused to loyne in any locietie with him, protefling that his Commission was onely to displant him, and that if hee found him there thereafter hee would vie him as an enemy. Biencourt labouring earneftly to have had the lefting, as he confessed, with a purpose to hang him. Whilest they were discouring together, one of the Sauages rushing fuidenly forth from the Woods, and licentiated to come neere, didafter his manner, with fuch broken French as he had earneftly mediate a peace, wondring why they that 60 feemed to be of one Country, should vie others with such hostilitie, and that with such a forme of habit and geiture as made them both to laugh.

After Biencourt remouing from thence to some other, Monsieur Champlein, who had lived long bere, did carry a company with him from France of fome fortie perions or there bouts, vp

the River of Canada whom hee planted on the North fide thereof, with a purpose to sue for a Factory, drawing all the trade of that faire running River, within the hands of a few whom he doth command, which a Plantation would have dispersed in many parts, other wise if his defires had beene bended that way, hee might have planted many people there ere now the blace is called Kebeck, where the French doe profper well, having Corne by their owne labour: which may furnish themselves for foode, and likewile for a stocke to traffique with the Sauages, with fundry other Fruites, Rootes, Vine grapes and Turkey Wheates. Champlein hath discouered the River of Canada from the Gulfe vpwards about 1 200 miles, finding in it formetimes fuch fals as he must carry his Boate a little way by land, and then put it in againe. He did many times to come to great Lakes, at the end whereof he did alwaies finde a River againe : and the last Lake where he came was a very huge one, sudged to be three hundred miles in length, by the report The South Sea of (ome Sauses, who did affirme vnto him, that at the further end thereof they did finde Salt Suspected (as water, and that they had feene great Vesfels; which made Champlein beleeue that a passage might before in Derbe there to the Bay of California, or to some part of the South Sea, which would prove an inestimable benefit for the Inhabitants of these parts, opening a neere way to China, which hath bin tions, fo many fundry wayes with fo great charges fo long fought for. Howfoeuer, in regard of the feation, and for want of necessary promisions, Champleine did returne backe at that time, with a purpote to goe againe another yeare: which it hee hath done is not yet knowne. but this is most certaine, that the River of Canada hath a long course, and through many goodly 20 Countries : some of these great Lakes, by sending forth, or by receiving great Rivers.doe afford meanes of commerce as farre as to some parts of Terra Florida, as may be gathered by Champleines

Hus bane I given thee Others transfle to Virginia and the Summer Hands, I will conclude with mine owne tranells for them. I fee many likely to bee disheartened by the stender growth of the Vitginian Plantation, which for the time might have beene not onely a fafe, but a rich and bleffed Mother of a numerous thrining generation, branching farreinto other Colonies; and yet is! But why doe I intercept your eyes and dimert your thoughts (suffend them at best) from that which for my Countries good, and zeale to Virginia, without partial reflect on the right hand or on the left, with a candid right hand I 30 bere prefent, and forbid all finifer bands to meddle with ? Tros Tyriulve mihi --- I fide no where, but embrace Virginia with a right heart, my pen directed, my hands eretted for her good, which can doe mee no other good, but in reference to the publike, whose I am and whom under God and his Maiestie I serne and observe with all that I have, am, and can. I had written it as a traffate by it selfe, at the request of some worthy friends, but here have abridged it in some such things at the other parts of these Va-

CHAP. XX.

Virginias Verger: Or a Discourse shewing the benefits which may grow to this Kingdome from American English Plantations, and specially those of Virginia and Summer Hands.



difcouery, &c.

Od is the beginning and end, the Alpha and Omega, that first and last, of whom and for whom are all things. The first and last thing therefore in this Varginian argument considerable, is God; that is, whether we have Commission him to your plant, and whether the Plantation may bring glory to him: This in regard of is, and the law fulness therefore are his by this; In the beginning Cost created because and earth (all things therefore are his by the his; In the beginning Cost created because and earth (all things therefore are his by the his; In the beginning Cost created because and earth (all things therefore are his by the his; In the beginning Cost created because and earth (all things therefore are his by the his section of the section of the

a higher name then right, this rule and the things ruled, being his creatures) of both which Man God in Man onely among it Vitible creatures was created capable, which Mofes delivereth in these words, that Gini. 1. God created him after his owne Image: which is spoken not onely of the spirituall, immortall subflance of his foule, whose vnity thineth with that created Trinity of Vnderstanding, Will, Memory, in it felfe; and that of Vegetation, Senfe, Reafon, exercised in and by bodily motion; but more especially integard of the Creator, a contormity to him in righteoufneffe of bolineffe of truth (the whole Epb. 4,24) Man shining with a borrowed light, as the Moone is the image and reflexion of the Sunne) and in regard of the Creature, a just dominion over the same, as the holy words manifest; replenish the Earth and Subducit, and have dominion over the Fish of the Sea, and over the Fowle of the ayre, and oner every lining thing that moveth upon the earth. Although Mans rebellion had torfeited this Na-

turall Charter, yet was the same in the repeopling of the World renewed to Noab and his Sons, General which ever fince have heene in actuall posteffion; and as Adam game names (as humaine earemarks)

Gen.ac to the lining creatures; to Noahs heires have fince given names to Seas and Lands, and other creatares a me thorow the knowne World. Neither did the Fall of Man fo cracke this earthen wellell,

E/2:53.

Acce. 21.

3.COT.15.

that of Made

thens to the

See thefe

S. 3, 4.5.

100.8.31.36.

These avo-

σύχειτΘ,

Heathens.

Gal 3. 17.

Matth. S.

John 19.36.

2. Cor. 10. 4.

Matth, 16.

1u1. S.

Ichn 19. 11.

Rom.13.1.

Gen, 110

Alls 17. 27.

1.Cor. 3.

g.Cor.13.

Matth. 5.

1. Pet. 3.

Tit. I.

1.Tim. 1. 6. Christians

world.

This should be, and in the most Aduenturers I hope is the scope of the Virginian Plantation, not

to make Saunges and wild degenerate men of Christians but Christians of thef- Swage, wild, de-

that all his created excellence ran out : for neither were the fubiliance or faculties of the foule extinct, nor his prerogative over the visible creatures (the spiritual) creature naturally excelling the bodily, and the reasonable and living, the sensitive, vegetative and torpid:) these received a wound, the other (his spiritual and religious conformitie in these to God) as a purer water of the pureft life, ran forth irrecouerably; and as our naturall parts were weakned and wounded, so of thole supernaturall wee were veterly robbed; till that good Samaritan vndertooke the restitution of that in redemption, whereunto in creation he had given first institution, Godbath laid upon him the injunitie of us all, and in his firipes wee are healed; our Charter is renued and now made to compleat, that whereas the deuills thought to rob man of Earth and Paradife, Hee which taketh the wife in his craftineffe hath reftored him : nay (that is little) hath added Heaven Himfelfe : that as 10 the Afraelites entred upon the houses, Cities and policibons of the curied Canaanites, fo Chriftians into those Thrones and celefiall Dominions, which those spiritual Thrones and Dominions loft, and there have God himfelfe and the Lambe to be their Temple and All in all vnto them

Hence is it that Christians (luch as have the Grace of the Spirit of Christ, and not the profes-Or the right of Christians and from of his merit alone) have and hold the world and the things thereof in another tenure where. of Hypocrites and Heathens are not capable. These have onely a Naturall right, by the reliques of the Law of Nature left in Man, by the Creators goodnesse, for the conservation of the face of a world in the world; the fame further improved with a warrantization, Contra ownes genes (our enidences dialect) by the Law of Nations vnto Nations, and Lawes Politicke and Civill in each 20 fully handled Nation, allotting to the members thereof the publike and private civill rights and tenures, which in To. 1.1.1.6.1. ether publike or prinate, perfons or corporations, held therein.

This tenure comparatively that Christian, is by our Lord himselfe called a tenure in villenage, that of formes : the fermant hath his time and abides not in the bowfe for ever : but the forme is berrein fee simple (fide simplici) for euer. Neither yet is it lawfull for Christians, to vsurpe the goods and lands of Heathens; for they are villains not to vs; but to our and their Lord; nor hath the fonne in nonage power to dispossesse villaines: nor are wee fonnes by nature, but by adoption, and a later Enangelicall Charter which doth not disannull the former (the Truth, or Word of the may not spoile Gospel received by Faith, makes ws free) free Tenants to our Lord, not Lordly subverters of others tenures; which may with a good conscience vie our owne (all things to the pure or pure, 30 which others cannot, whose conscience being pitchy, all tinngs it toucheth, are defiled) and not, as fome have turned libertie into licentiousnesse, with a bad conscience take away that which is anothers. Christ same not to deftroy the Law, of which one Commandement is, Thou halt not fieale: My Kingdome, faith hee, is not of this world, and therefore properly medleth not with proprietie and civill interests. The weapons of our warfare, faith Saint Paul, are not carnall but spirituall, and the Keyes fo much boasted on by Peters pretended Successors, are called Keyes of the Kingdome of Heauen; la wfull keyes, not threuth picklocks; of Heauen, not of Earth. And it is remarkable that neither Pope nor Anabaptist (the troubles of Ifrael with worse then Heathenish conceits in this kind) euer inverted or interverted Scepters, till they had denied the very Christian name which they receited in B. ptisme; nor diffised government till they were twice dead, nor pro- 40 mifed this liberiie to others, till themfelnes were the fernants of corruption. Euen a Malefactor, a Traytor, a very Fanx, or Raniliac, is permitted to breath, yea is in prison, the Kings house (whereof no private hand may dispossesse him) maintained at the Kings charge, till judgement have pasfed on him, which to the world is not till the end of the world, when Christ shall come to judge the quick and dead; who once fo respected the iurisdiction of Ethnickes, that himselse was thereby adjudged to the worst of sufferings, yea acknowledged that power given to Pilat from above. His Birthacknowledged Augustu his Edict, his Infancy fled Herods tyranny, his Man-hood payd Tiberins tribute, and his Death was Roman both in kind and fentence. Let euery feule be subject to the bigher powers, yeel ied those noble armies of Martyrs in the Primitiue Church; the contrary

whereof hath yeelded Massiues and Monsters in these last and worst dayes. Therefore was Babels building in the East (and shall not Babel bable building in the West be) confounded that men might bee difperfed thorow the world, to take possession of their inheritance : and God which faid, Replenish the earth, hith made of one bloud all Nations of men, to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times and bounds of their habitation. Hee gave Ar to the children of Let, and the Land of the Horims to Efaus posteritie, though not with like circum-Deut. 2.9,19. flances as Canaan to I frael : and it was by speciall indulgence, that I frael both spoiled the Egsptians and differited the Canaantes. Let it bee enough, that Christ hath given vs our selves in the Lords feruice to bee a perfect freeman, the Vniuerfein an vniuerfall tenure, and Heauen in reuerfion ; that hath given his Sonne, doth give his Sprit, will give bimfelfe ; that all things are ears, and wee Christs, and Christ Gods : without thoughts of invasion and viurpation, knowing that Christ ftian Charity Seeteth nos her owne things (much leffe obtrudes on others) and Christian libertie maketh liberall Saints of naturall men, not vnnaturall deuills of professed Saints. Our Light should to hime before others, that they may see our good workes, that they which know not the world, may bee wen without the Word, in admiring our Christian convertation.

generate men; ro whom preaching must needs bee vaine, if it begins with publike Latrocinie. And this is fufficient to preuent scruple of the Popes Bul, which (if Basan Buls rearing were euidence) maketh af wel against England, this being no leffe questionable then Virginia, Paul, Prus, Gregory Sixtus breatning as much fire against this, as Alexander for that. But what right can England then challenge to Virginia? I answere, that we would be loth to begin our right at wrong, either to Etnnick or Christian : nor need we, having to manifold and just interests. First, as men, we have a natural right to replenif the whole earth: to that if any Countrey be not possessed by other men, rightin places. 10 which is the case of Summer Hands, and hath beene of all Countries in their first habitations) every either wholv man by Law of Nature and Humanitie hath right of Plantation, and may not by other after com- or in great mers be difpossessed, without wrong to human nature. And if a country be inhabited in some parts part not inhatherof, other parts remaining vinpeopled, the same reason giveth liberty to other men which vi ant convenient habita on o feat themselves, where (without wrong to others) they may provide for themselves. For these have the same right vnto these latter parts, which the former had to the formercespecially where the people is wild, and holdeth no tettled possession in any pares. Thus t'e holy Patriacks removed their habitations and pafturages, when those pares of the world were not yet replenished: and thus the whole world hath been planted and peopled with former and later Colonies: and thus Virginia hath roome enough for her own (were their numbers an hundred times I have heard 20 as many) and for others also which wanting at home, feeke habitations there in vacant places, with perhaps better right then the first, which (being like Cain, both Murtherers and Vaga- more searched bon is in their whatfoeger and howfoeger owne) I can fearfly call Inhabitants. To question this the Countrie night, were to accust al nost all Nations which were rocked (for the most part) in no other cradle; then any other

fo diffe-ried and diffoyned that one cannot in any diffreffe fuccour another, and therefore are made England, they an eafier prey to every Inuader. Another right is that of Merchandile : Non omnia possumus omnes, bauenot about Nec vero terra ferre omnes omnia poffunt ; God in manifold wifedome hath diuelified every Coun- 5000, men able tries commodities, so that all are rich, and all poore; not that one should be bungry and another drun-30 ken, but that the whole world might be as one body of mankind, each member communicating red and civilly with other for publike good. He hath made this immutable decree in the mutabilitie of the Winds, planted might commodities & commodioulnefle of Seas, and Harbors, varietie of Baies and Rivers, multiplicity of well nourish all Mens both Necessities and Superfluities, and their univerfall defires of Nouelties. Thus Sa- 1500000,and lomon and Hiram had right to tayle ouer the Ocean, and to negotiate with the Ophrians many more; as for Gommes, Gold, Ivory, and other commodities seruiceable for his peoples necessities, appeareth by for pompous Magnificence, and for the Temples Holies. And if hee did not plant Colonies this our c. unthere, you must remember that the lewift Pale was then standing, which prohibited voluntarie trie nor having remote dwellings, where each man was thrice a yeere to appeare before the Lord in Ierurall Inherifallem. Belides, it is a question whether the Countrey peopled so long before, had roome for
tunce. 40 fuch Neighbours:

It is therefore yngodly, and inhumane also to deny the world to men, or like Manger-dogge; chandise. (neither to eat hay themselues, nor to suffer the hungry Oxe) to prohibite that for others ha- 1.cer 11.214 bitation, whereof themselues can make no vie; or for merchandise, whereby much benefit accreweth to both parts. They which doe this, Tollunt è vita vita societaiem, to vie Tullies Gen. 10. phrase, or hominem ex homine tollant, to borrow Saint Ieroms in another matter. The Barbarians themselves by light of nature faw this, and gave Ours kind entertainment in mutual cohabita- Rom. 2. 14tion and commerce : and they having not the Law were a Law to themselves , practically acknowledging this Law of Nature written by him, which is Natura naturans, in their hearts : from which if they fince have declined, they have loft their owne Naturall, and given vs another Nato tionall right; their transgression of the Law of Nature, which tieth Men to Alen in the rights of Right Nation

Natures commons, expuling them (as a forfeited bond) to the challifement of that common nall: 144 gm. Law of mankind; and alto on our parts to the feueritie of the Law of Nations, which tyeth tiam. Nation to Nation. And if they bee not worthy of the name of a Nation , being wilde and Sauage : yet as Slaues, bordering rebells, excommunicates and out-lawes are lyable to the punishments of Law, and not to the primledges; So is it with thefe Barbarians, Boilerers and Outlawes of Humanity. Armatenenti, Omnia dat qui iusta negat, If the Armes bee iuit, as in this case of vindicating vnnaturall, inhumane wrongs to a louing and profitable Nation, entertained Lucan. voluntarily, in time of greatest pretended amity. On this quarrell David conquered all the Kingsome of the Ammonites and left it to his interioristin many generations, not with flanding Mo. 2. Sam. 10.

fo fee had otherwife left a speciall caution for their security, testifying that God had given it the fonnes of Lot, and prohibiting inuation to Ifrael. That natural right of cohabitation and commerce Deut, 2, 19 we had with others, this of just inuation and conquest, and many others premieus to this, we have aboue others; to that England may both by Law of Nature and Nations challenge Virginia for her Owne peculiar propriety, and that by all right and rites viual among it men, not those mentioned Mmmmmm

and to disappoint also that Divine Ordinance of replenshing the Earth, whose habitations other- Cap. Smith, wife would be like scattered Ilands in the Seas, or as the present Spanish Plantations in the Indies, so much as all

Englands manucldri his to Parzinia.

alone but by others allo, first discourry, first actuall possession, prescription, gift, cession, and livery of ferfin, fale for price, that I mention not the natural Inheritance of the English their naturally borne, and the vinaturall outcries of fo many vinaturally murthered, for just vengeance of rooting out the authors and actors of to prodigious iniuffice.

Firft difcouery

Mercator D.

M. Thorne.

Dec.Ortel.oc.

And fift for discovery, the English, Spaniard, and Portugal Seeme the Triumum of the Worlds first discoueries, the Spaniard and Portugall first opening the Eastern, Western, and Southern pares. the English the Northern America, and all known parts thence to the North & Northeast, I could bring authority for King Arthurs conquests, about 1000. yeers fince in Island, Gronland, Estotiland: but I reare this would feeme too weake a foundation, and (which lyers get by lying) discredit our other authorities leffe fulpicious; howfoeuer Authors of best note in Geography alledge those. In which reverence of the truth makes me let paffe. And fo I doe King Malgo toone after him, and Saint Brandon, and the Friar of Oxford (which A. 1360, is faid to discouer to the Pole) and Owen Gwined Prince of North Wales his fonne Madock, A. 1170. which conueyed a Colony, as learned men thinke into the Welt Indies. In all Antiquities, as Varro oblerued, there are somethings fabulous (to I deeme the former) fomething vucertaine, as this last; and fomethings Hiforicall as that weich we shall deliver. Robert Thorne in a Booke to Doctor Leigh writeth, that his father with another Merchant of Bristol, Hugh Eliot, were the first discouerers of the New-foundlands; and if the Mariners would have beene ruled by their Pilot, the Lands of the Welt Indies from whence the Gold commeth had beene ours. What yeere this happened he expresses not; Sirseb Cabota. but the words import that it was before Columbia his discouery. And before Columbia his discoue- 20 ry of the continent, Sir Schastian Cabot, at the charges of K. Henry the feuenth, with two Caruels. in the yeere 1496. (to him telte, in Ramufo; the Map with his picture in the Priny Gallery hath the prime gal-Holl hach he'e 1497.) lailed to the New-found Lind, which he called Prima Vista, and the lland S. lobus, because it was discouered on the Feath of S. John Baptist; from whence he failed Northerly to 67. deg, and a words Efficies halie, hoping by that way to passe to Cathan, but his mutinous company (terrified haply with Set. Cabour Aa-Ice and cold) forced his eturne, which hee made along the Coast toward the Equinc tiall, to eli fily Ioannis Cabate Veneti. the part of the firme land now called Florida, and then his victualls failing, he returned into Engmilitis aurati, land, where by occasion of warres with Scotland, the imploiment was laid aside. Atterwards the born at Venice, fame Sir Sebaitian Cabot was fent, A. 1516. by King Henry the eight, together with Sir Thomas and ferning H. Part Vicasdmirall of England, which after coating this Continent the fector of time, as I have tad, 7.H. 8. Ed. 6.
7.H. 8. Ed. 6.
8. Ed. 6.
8. Ed. 6.
9. Ed. 6.
9

lumbis his first discourry of the Hands, was in 1492. of the Continent in his third voyage in Au-

gult, 1497. or as others, 1498. fo that counting most fauourably for Columbus, Cabor had disco-

uered the Continent in Luie next before; by one reckoning aboue a yeere, by another aboue two

yeeres before. And indeed that New World might more fitly haue borne his name, then America

of Americus vesputius, or of Columbus, Cabot having discovered fatre more of that Continent then

they both, or any man elfe in those Seas: to wit, from 67. degrees and an halfe to the Line, and

Hee also was the principall mover in the setting forth of Sir Hugh Willoughby, in King Edwards

time (vnder whom he was conftituted Grand Pilot of England, with the annuall flipend of one 40

hundred fixtie fixe pound thirteene shillings foure pence) in which voyage Greeneland was dif-

couered (neither is there any other Willoughbys Land to be found, but in erroneous Maps) and the

Ruffan Empire by the North Cape, and the Bay of Saint Nicolas. But for Virginia, as it was then

ditcouered by Sir Seb. Cabot, loit received that name from our Virgin-Mother, Great Elizabeth:

in whose time formal & actual possession was taken for her Maiesty, the thirteenth of July, 1584.

by Captain Philip Amadus, and Captain Barlow, whom Sir Walter Raleigh had fent thither with

two Barkes furnished , who also the next yeere, 1,85 fent Sir Richard Greenevile with feuen

fayle, which there left an English Colony under the government of M. Ralph Lane. A. 1586. hee

fent another Ship of one hundred Tuns thither for their reliefe : but the Colony being returned

in Sir Francis Drukes Fleet, thee returned also. Sir Richard Greenevile also about a fortnight after en

from thence Southerly to the River of Plate.

Englift, &c. he was borne

&c. he was

Sir Seb.Cab. Grand Pilot of England.

preferiotion.

their departure arrived with three Ships, and not finding the Colonie, left fifteene men to keepe possession, furnished with prouition for two yeeres. The names of A.1587 Six Walter Raleigh lent a new Colony of one hundred & firey persons, with three faile, about 100, are a Ship of one hundred and twenty Tuns, a Fly-boat and a Pinnace. Hee appointed twelve Affiextant in M. Stants to the Gouernour, and incorporated them by the name of Governour and Affisiants of the Hack 3. Tome. Citie of Raleigh in Voginia. To theie, Sir Walter Raleigh fent succour five leuerall times, the last by Samuel Mace, 1602. An. 1603, the Briston men fent thither, by leave of Sir Walter Raleigh, in which Expedition was Mafter Robert Saliern , who the yeere before had beene with Cap. Bart. Gofnold. And thus are wee come to the beginning of his Maielties gracious raigne, when the North and South Plantations were by new Patents eagerly purfued, the one from hence, theo. 60 ther from the Well parts of England. Mawoofhen and other parts, were many y-eres vilited by our men, and An. 1607. a Plantation fetled at Sagadabor, by two Ships fent by that wile and feuere Iuftice Sir Iohn Popham and others : the fucceffe whereof hath been fuch, that from the North Plantation it hath beene dignified with the Title of New England. And for the Southerne parts,

A. 1606.2 Colony went from hence, fet forth by the Virginia Company, which have ever fince maintained their Plantation in differing fortunes. As for the former Plantations of Sir Walter Raleigh, tome children were borne to them there : and whether they line, they continued the Two former possession; orif the Sauages dealt perfidiously with them (as Pombatan confessed to Cap. Smith. Colonies that hee had beene at their flaughter, and had divers vtenfills of theirs to flew) their carkaffes. wholly, &c. the differried bones of their and their Countrey mens fince murthered carkaffes, haue taken a mortall immortall possession, and being dead, speake, proclaime and cry, This our earth is truly English, and therefore this Land is suftly yours O English.

Thus have we discovered the English right by Discovery, Possession, Prascription; to which we to may adde, that none other Nation hath once adventured to fettle in those parts, nor scarce to view them ; yea the French and Spanish Plantations in Florida , Virginias Southerne neighbour, foone ended in bloudy mafficres, the Spanib cruelly " murthering the Fronth , under the conduct of Pedro Melendes, which An. 1567. was repaid them by Dominique de Gorques, the acquittance written with his f word in Spanife bloud : Florida euer fince expecting civilizing from her first difcouerers the English : which is further ratified by the former Spanish dilasters in the Expeditions of Pamphilo de Nauarez, 1527, and of Soio, 1537, into Florida: which two journeyes confumed neere one thouland men therein imployed : besides other Expeditions of Ponce de Leon and o-

thers mentioned by Vega and the Spanifle Authors.

Now for voluntary subjection of the Natiues, giving themselves and their lands to the Crown 30 of England, M. Ralph Lane hath testified for the first Colonie, that Menatonon their King by his feruicetoihe Mellinger, & with him twentie foure principal men fent from Okisko King of Weopomiok his Val- English. fall, formally acknowledged Her Maietty as servants and homagers to her, and under her to Sir W. R. For the lait Plantation by the present Patent of His Maiesty , Parpehay, one of their Kings fold valand for Copper, and Pombatan the chiefe Lord of all the Sauages, with thirty nine Werowances, have yeelded to more then formes and circumftances of homage; besides contributi- Right by buyon, having also actually sold for Copper by him received of Cap. John Smith, and made voluntary ing & selling : ceffion of as much as the English defired, going away with his people to leave it to the English and byceffion onely. This purchase was much increased by Sir Thomas Dale, and for whatsoever else which he Right by Forheld, hee accepted a Copper Crowne as Vaffall to His Maiesty: which also hee really performed feiture, To for a time, howioeuer ince they have beene perfidious. And this perfidiousnesse of theirs hath further warranted the English Title. Temperance and Iuftice had before kiffed each other, and feemed to bleffe the cohabitations of English and Indians in Virginia. But when Virginia was violently ranished by her owne ruler Natines , yea her Virgin cheekes dyed with the bloud of three Colonies (that of Sir R. Greenevile, that of Sir W. R. both confessed by themselves, and this last butchery intended to all, extended to so many hundreths, with so immaine, inhumane; doublish treachery) that I speake not of thousands otherwise mis-caring here and mis-carrying there, taking possession of Virginia by their facts, and fates, by so manifold losses adding to the price of Fatalloostes Virginias purchase : Temperance could not temper her selfe, yea the stupid Earth seemes distem. on, pered with such bloudy potions and cries that shee is ready to spue out her Inhabitants : Iustice ao civeth to G o D foe vengeance, and in his name adjureth Prudence and Fortitude to the

The Holy Patriarks had a promise of Canaan, yet held no possession but with their dead bodies; Heb, 11. Infeph by faith gaue charge concerning his bones : Virginia by fo many rights naturalized English, by first discouery, actuall possession, chargeable continuation, long prescription, voluntary subjection, delivery of feiun, naturall inheritance of English there borne, reall sale, legall cession, regall vasfallage; disloyall treason hath now confiscated whatsoeuer remainders of right the vnnaturall Naturalls had, and made both them and their Countrey wholly English, prouoking vs, if wee bee our owne, not base, degenerate, vnworthy the name of English; so that wee shall not have any thing left (like Danids Embaffadors, which thus abused, brought their Matter a inst title to Ammon, purchased by their digraces) to couer our nakednesse, till Virginia couer, reward, inrich & with a totall subjection at left, if not a farall revenge. And thus much for our right which God hath given vs : whose V regimian tribute is his glory, that hee may indeed be Alpha and Omega (as hath beene faid) of the Virginian Plantation : which if it hath not fatisfied the expectation hi-

therro, no doubt that defect hath in great part proceeded from this. The end of a thing is the beginning, being first in intention though last in execution : the Word and end which Christians ought to ayme at is God, Doing all things in the name of our Lord lesses Workes ad-Christ, to the glory of God the Father, by the gracious guide and affiltance of the Holy Ghost. nanced by this Glory is, Frequens de aliquo fama cum laude , And beereby is our Father glorified, fayeth Plantation, Christ, if yee bring forth much fruite, and fo Shall yee be my Disciples. Loe here the scope of 60 Christians Plantations, to plant Christianity, to produce and multiply Christians, by our words Ic. 15. and works to further the knowledge of God in his Word and Workes. The workes of God glorifie their Creator : The Heavens, faith David, declare the glory of God, &c. I will triumph in the workes P/ 19.1. of thy hands. O Lord, how great are thy morkes ? and thy thoughts are very deepe. A bruitift man Pf. 9: 4.

knoweth not, neither doth a foole understand this. All creatures are inuited to praise the name of the

Mmmmmmm 2

1314 Gods glory in his various works, Mynes not they great minds wealth, LIB. IX.

P.118. 4. P. 16 & as 2.

Lord, for hee hath commanded and they were created : How much more should the tongue of man be the Pen of a readie writer, and as it is called, The glory of the man, fo imploy it felfe in feeting forth the glory of God, in his Workes of Creation, Prouidence, Redemption?

FC 1 The Worker of

God is a Glorious Circle, whose Center is every where, his circumference no where : himselfe God and va is to himselfe is Circle and Circumference, the Ocean of Entitie, that very vbique, from whom to etie there feen whom (the Centre of vnicie) all divertified lines of varietie iffue and returne. And although we enery where feele his present Deitie, yet the difference of heavenly climate and influence, canfine fuch discording concord of dayes, nights, seasons; such varietie of meteors, elements, aliments. fuch noueltie in Beafts, Fishes, Fowles; such luxuriant plentie and admirable raritie of Trees, Shrubs, Hearbs : fuch fertilitie of loyle, infinuation of Seas, multiplicitie of Rivers, fafetie of 10 Ports, healthrulneffe of ayre, opportunities of habitation, materialis for action, obiects for contemplation, haps in prefent, hopes of future, worlds of varietie in that diverlified worlds doe quicken our mindes to apprehend, whet our tongues to declare, and fill both with arguments of ropagation of visite on the other fide confidering fo good a Country, fo bad people, having little of Humanitie but shape, ignorant of Civilitie, of Arts, of Religion; more brutish then the beaffe the Goipell: & they hunt, more wild and vinmanly then that vinmanned wild Country, which they range rather then inhabite; captinated also to Satans tyranny in foolish pieties, mad impieties, wicked idlenesse, butte and bloudy wickednesse : hence have wee fit objects of zeale and pitie, to deliner from the power of darknesse, that where it was faid, Tee are not my people, they may bee called the children of the lining God : that luttice may to proceed in rooting out those murtherers, that vet in inderment (initating Gods dealing with vs) wee may remember Mercy to fuch as their owne finnocence shall protect, and Hope shall in Charitie judge capable of Christian Faith. And lee men know that bee which connertesh a finner from the errour of his way, shall fane a foule from death. and Shall bide a multitude of finnes. And Saurours Shall thus come on Mount Zion to indoe the Mount of Elan, and the Kingdome (of Virginia) fall be Lord. Thus shall wee at once overcome both Men and Deuills, and espouse Virginia to one husband, presenting ber as a chast Virginia Christ. If the ene of Aduenturers were thus fingle , how loone and all the body should be light? But the louing our felues more then God, hath detained fo great bleffings from vs to Varginia, and from

Obad. ult. 1.Cor.11.2. Matth.6,22 1.Tim.4.8.

Iam, f. 10.

O/e 2.

full to doe Gods will, he will be ready to doe ours. All the rich endowments of Unginia, her Virgin-portion from the creation nothing leffened. are wages for all this worke : God in wifedome having enriched the Sauage Countries, that those riches might be attractives for Christian luters, which there may fowe firituals and rease

Virginia to vs. Godlinelle bath the promises of this life, and that which is to come. And if wee be care-

Answeres to Objections : 8 first to the want of Gold and Siluer Mines.

temporals. But what are those riches, where we heare of no Gold nor Silver, and see more impouerished here then thence enriched, and for Mines we heare of none but Iron? Iron mindes! Iron age of the world! who gave Gold or Silver the Monopoly of wealth, or made them the Almighties fall uprites. Precious perils, specious punishments, whose originall is neerest hell, whose house is dark. neffe, which have no eye to fee the heavens, nor admit heavens eye (guilty malefactors) to fee 40 them; neuer produced to light but by violence, and continued, vpon records written in bloud, the occasioners of violence in the World; which have intected the surface of their native earth with deformity and iterality (these Mines being sit emblemes of mindes couetous, flored with want, and euer wanting their owne (tore) her bowels withdarknesse, damps, deaths, causing trouble to the neighbour Regions, and mischiefe to the remotest! Penurious mindes! Is there no riches but Gold Mines ! Are Iron Mines neglected, rejected for hopes of Silver! What, and who elfeis the Alchymift, and impostor, which turnes the World, and Men, and all into Iron ! And how much Iron-workes in Warres and Maffacres bath American Gold and Silver wrought thorow all Chriflendome? Neither speake I this, as it our hopes were blasted, and growne deplorate and desperate this way, the Country being fo little fearched, and the remote in-land-Mountaines vn- 50 knowne : but to shew the fordid tincture and base alloy of these Mine-mindes. Did not the Spanifb Iron (tell me you that contemne Iron-mines) draw to it the Indian Silver and Gold? I will not be a Prophet for Spaine from Virginia. But I cannot forget the wily apophthegme of the Pilots Boy in the Cacafaego, a great Ship laden with treasure taken in the South Sea, by Sit Francis Drake; who seeing the English Ordnance command such treasure from the Spanish Casafuego; Our Ship, faid he, Shall be called the Cacaplata, and the English may be named the Cacafuego. I will not be fo vimannerly to give you the homely English; it is enough that Engles Iron brought home the Spanish-Indian Silver and Gold, But let vs consult with the wifelt Councellour. Canaan. Abrahams promise, Ifraels inheritance, type of heaven, and ioy of the earth! What were her riches " were they not the Grapes of Efbed, the balme of Gilead, the Cedary neighbourhood 62 of Liberry, the paftury vale of Ierielo, the dewes of heaven, fertility of foile, temper of climat, the flowing (not with Golden Sands, but) with Milke and Hony (necessaries, and pleasures of life, not bottomeleile gulfes of luft) the commodious lcituation for two Seas, and other things like (in how many interiour?) to this of Virginia. What golden Country euer nourished with her naturall fore the hundreth part of men, in io imall a proportion of earth, as Danid there

CHAP.20. Virginia best in the best endowments of a Country. Cause of ill successes. 1815

mustered, being 1100000, of Ifrael, and 500000, of Inda, not reckoning the Tribes of Leni and Compare Beniamin, all able men for warres. And after him, in a little part of that little Ieboshapbat (More 2 Sam. 24, with I dare say then the Spaniards can finde in one hundred times so much, of their Mine lands, and 1 Chronal le choose their best in Pera, New Spaine, and the Ilands) the Scriptures containing an infallible my- feemes that ther-booke of 1160000, able Souldiers in his small territories

That then is the richelt Land which can feede most men, Man being a mortall God, the best bouctwo milpart of the best earth, and visible end of the visible World. What remarkeable Gold or Silver besides women Mines hath France, Belgia, Lumbardy, or other the richest peeces of Europe? what hath Baby- and children. lonis, Mauritania, or other the best of Afia and Africke? What this our fertile Mother England?

10 Aske our late Travellers which faw fo much of Spaine, the most famous part of Europe for Mynes of old, and inriched with the Mynes of the New World, if an Englishman needs to enuy a Spanier and, or prefer a Spanish life and happinesse to his owne. Their old Mynes made them the fernants of Rome and Carthage : and what their Mynes and mindes doe now I leave them to others. Once. as the Mynes are in barrennelt foyle, and couctous men have leaft, even when they are had of most money (medig vi Tantalus undis) fo I have heard that in Spaine is leffe Gold and Silver. then in other parts of Europe, (I dare not mention the proportions) from both Spanish and Eng-Wh relation: their vivall money also (to meddle with no more) is of hafe mettall, and their greateft fummes computed by Marandis leffe then our later tokens : except which (deutled for poorer vies of the poorest) England of long time knowes no bale monyes; and hath feene plentie of

30 Silver and Gold, of Wine and Oyle which (grow not in her) when Spaine, which produceth thefe, is fed with falads, and drinketh water, helped now and then with Hoppef-kinne vnfanonry Wine. The Indian Fountaines runne with golden and filuer streames (fie vos non vobis) not to themselves, but into that Spanish Cisterne; and these Cisternes are like those of the London Water-house, which hath the Conduit Pipes alway open in the bottome, fo that a thousand other Cifternes hold more water then it : fo may it be faid of the other; it is not Concha but Camalis . a Pipe rather then Cifterne, a Cash-keeper rather then Owner; and (which is spoken of better things) remaining poore, makes many rich. To proceed, are not Myners the most miserable of Slaues, toyled continually, and vnto manifeld deaths tired for others, in bringing to light those Treasures of darknesse, and living (if they live, or if that bee a life) in the suburbs of Hell; 30 to make others dreame of Heauen ! Yea Paradife, the modell of heauen, had in it no Minerals,

ner was Adam in his innocency, or Noah after the Worlds resourcy, both Lords of all, employed in Mines, but (in those happy workes which Virginia inuiteth England vnto) in Vines, Gardening, and Husbandry. Neither let any man thinke that I pleade against the foureneffe of the Grapes, like the Foxe which could not reach them : but I feriously shew that they are calues and not men, which adore the golden Calfe, or Nabachadnezzars great golden flatue, as if the body were not more then raiment, and those things to be preferred to money, for whole take mony (the creature of man; base Idolatry where the Creator worships his creature!) was first ordained, and Rill hath both vie and being.

Doe we not fee in this respect, that the Silkes, Calicos, Drugges, and Spices of the East swal-40 low vp (not to mention the Belgian whirlepoole) all the Mines of the West ? and that one Carricke carrieth more Rials thither, then perhaps some whole Region in Spaine retaineth for vulgar vie? And whence are English, Partugals, or Dutchmen fitted for that commerce ? as if Amereca had ominously (for other inft reason there is none) beene called India, as if the West were but drudge and factor for the East. And what hath dispeopled the New World, not leaving in fome places one of Millions, but Auri faces fames, others killing them in the Mines, or they killing themselves to prevent the Mines! Let it be riches enough, that Sir Thomas Dale testified Vaginias high by Letters from thence, and after his returne to me that foure of the best Kingdomes of Christen- Valuation. dome were not for naturall endowments comparable to Virginia: and which I have heard of one which hath travelled in all the best Regions of Europe, and hath seene more of Virginia then perhaps any man elfe, and which needes not speake for any gaine there or thence gotten, as no reso puted fauourite or fauourer of that Society and their actions; that he hath feene no Country to

be preferred for foile, nor for commodious Rivers to be compared. And if successe hath not beene correspondent to English hopes : who seeth not the sauses of Answer to the those diseasters?

Division that taile-headed Amphisheneand many-headed monster, deformed iffue of that diffor- successes and med old Serpent, in some of the Colony there & Copany here, hath from time to time thrust in her causesthercof, forged renomous tongue, wherby they have swolne with deadly poison of great thoughts of heart Ind. 516. (onely by pride doe men make contention) with blinde-staring eyes of felt-loue abounding in their own Proussalo. sense: whence surpicions, lealousies, factions, partialities to friends and dependants, wilfull ob-

60 ffinacies, and other farious pations have transported men from Virginian good and their owne, Couetoufnelle hath difforted others to minde earth and not heaven, in hastinesse of more then speedy returne and present gaine, forgetting that Godlineffe is the beft gaine, and that they are I Tim.6. planting a Colony, not reaping a haruest, for a publike and not (but in subordinate order) private wealth. A long time Virginia was thought to be much encombered with Englands excrements,

Mmmmmm 3

fome vicious persons, as corrupt leuin sowring, or as plague fore; infecting others, and that Colo-

ny was maile a Port Exquiline for fuch as by ordure or vomit were by good order and physicke worthy to be enacusted from This Body: whence not only lazie drones did not further the Plan-

tation, but wicked Walpes with sharking, and the worst, that is beggerly tyrants, frustrated and fupplanted the labours of others. Calum non animum mutant qui trans mare current. A prodicious

Producall here, is not eafily metamorpholed in a Virginian paliage to a thrifty Planter; nor can

there neede wiler choise or more industrious course in any vndertaking, then is requisite in a Chri-

from Colonies plantation among it Infidels. Which Huppofe hath beene carefully by many Adpenturers practifed : and whatfoener faults happened by ignorance in the beginnings, negle& of

uenturers practited and whattoener tants appeared in Gouernours or Gouernment, abuses of Mariners, to feafons, riot, fleath, occasionall wants of or in Gouernours or Gouernment, abuses of Mariners, to trechery of Fugitiues, and Sauages; and other difeates, which have in part attended all new

the reitiur prifed with feare, reduced themselves almost from eighty to eight Plantations, where-

a grieuous and generali ficknesse, which being increased by infection of some passengers tainted

cre. All which notwithstanding, there remaine, some haue if truely calculated and conicdured

eighteene hundred persons : for whose security and proussion it hath pleased his Maiesty tohaue

a grieuous and general new men, in their Ship-pallage with corrupt Beere, there followed a mortality which confurmed about fine 20 hundred perions, belides three hundred and fifty or thereabouts murthered in that Sauage-Maffa-

Now that I may shew Virginia worthy those princely, honorable and industrious thoughts,

First Religion (as is before observed) inuiteth vs there to seeke the Kingdome of God sirst, and all go other things shall be ministrate to 1, and added as advantage to the bargaine: seeke the Kingdome 3

Secondly, Humanity and our common Nature forbids to turne our eyes from our owne flesh; yea

of God, and fee an earthly Kingdome in recompence, as the earnest, and the heavenly King-

dome for our full paiment. Of glorifying God in his word and workes in this defigne is already

commands vs to loue our neighbours as our felues, and to play the good Samaritan with these

our neighbours (though of another Nation and Religion, as the wounded Iew was to him) to recover them if it be possible, as by Religion, from the power of Sathan to God; so by huCHAP.20. Spaines American greatnesse a motive for Englands Virginia.

vnto hafty fals. And before we come to Virginias particular probabilities for this Kingdomes good, we need Illustrated by not far fetched speculations, we have euidence from experience. Cafile (a Kingdome which now the Cafillan to floops to none, and which some of her flatterers advance about all, making it Catholike with

out respect to Faith) grew from an almost nothing out of the Moorif deluge, to be but a petrie Something in comparison of others in Europe, till Ferdinands time who fent Columbia to Americe. And how poore abilities or probabilities had they for it, when Columbia upon falle grounds haung conceiued strong, strange hopes of the Eisterne Indies, stumbled vpon a Westerne World Vpon lisse whereof hee neuer dreamed, which therefore he called India, and Hiffaniola Ophir: to which probabilities, Expedition (neither founded on found reason, nor experience of former Discourries, when as vet the Mariners Art was but crept out of the Cradle, and bleffed only in the Euent) the flate of Callile was as poorely furnished as it feemes, eyther with money or credit, the Queene pawning part of her Iewels for 2000. Duckets, to fet Columbus forth with three poore Caruels for this 20 Discouery. Little was it then imagined, that in Hispaniola should be found (which happened in

the taking of Domingo by Sir Francis Drake) a Spanish Scutchion with a Horse, whole hinder feet trod on the Globe, his fore-feet prauncing as it he would foot our another World (like Alexander hearing Philosophers discourse of other Worlds, weeping that hee had not yet finished the conquest of this) having this Mottoannexed, Non sufficit Orbis. Yea, but they found Gold and Silver in abundance: the Pockes they did ! and plagued all Europe with the great ones, See Ouled & with the did in all continuing of merica: and if they did fini Gold and Silver, how poore were the our fixth Book! proportions till the Mexican Discouery almost thirty yeeres, and that of Perm forty yeeres after their Indian plantation. And who knowes what Virginia in that space may produce by better Their greatest their Indian plantation. And who knowes what Originia in that space may produce by better benefit in Discouery of it, and further Discouery of parts adjoyning, whereof we have ten thousand times commodities, no more pregnant hopes, then they had in their first Expedition, by knowledge gathered from their notin Mines.

Besides, though Gold and Silver from thence hath enriched the Spanish Exchequer, yet the mon subject, Magazines haue found other and greater wealth, whereof Virginia is no leffe capeable, namely, the Countrey Commodities. What Mynes haue they, or at least, what doe they vie in Brafil, or in all the Ilands, where yet fo many wealthy Spaniards and Portugalls inhabit ? Their Ginger. Sugar, Hides, Tobacco and other Merchandize, I dare boldly affirme, yeeld far far more profit to the generalitie of the Spanish Subjects thorow that vast World, then the Mynes do or have done this last Age. Which I shall make apparant by honourable testimonie, in one of the last English Exploits on the Spanis Indies. The Right Honorable Earle of Cumberland in a Letter of his at-

ac ter the aking of Port Rice, (chiefe Towne if not the greatest lland in those parts, and far short of Hispanuola and (uba) affirmeth, that if hee would have left the place, hee might have had by The Earle Had good account as much Sugar and Ginger in the Countrey, as was worth 500000, pounds. But purposed to he intended to keepe it, as the Key of the Indies, which who former possesses (I vie his owne words) leave Sir Iohn he intended to keepe it, as the Keyof the indies, which was journer property (vie his owner works) Barker with a may at his pleasure goe to any Chamber in the House, and see how they sleepe before hee be either sleeped Garrison to or descried: so as they must at enery doore keepe so great a force to guard them, as will consume a great hold it, but a part of their yeerely Reuenue; and fend it from place to place with fo great a waftage, as will caufe them great ficknette to curse their new Porter : for when they have done what they can , they shall beare his charge to their and mortalitie owne destructions, and still be loosing places both of strength and wealth. Thus that valorous and renowmed Earle, whole bloud ennobled his attempts, whose attempts added glory to his bloud, men, he was and noblenesse to his Nobilitie: which I rather recite that you might see the great wealth which forced tolerue 50 the Spaniards reape of Ginger and Sugar, to which that of Hides in that Iland holds fuch propor- the place, to

tion, that one inhabitant thereof named Chirigo, had no fewer then twelve thouland Beenes : bring home his where Beeues growing wild, it was tolerable to any llander to kill a beaft, if hee returned the I finds this in a skinne to the Owner : and what he speakes of a Key and a Porters advantage, Mutato nomine de written Exte, change the name, and if Uirginia and Summer Hands fall short some wayes, they will, more such of all the then equall it other wayes, in Cale! But I mult contains my felfe, left I purchase a Purchase Cale Ports, thipping

mealing.

Now if any shall thinke that the many transplantations of people into thoseparts, would ex-which some hauft England, Spaine will answere that point also, now in their dayes complaying no more of times belongcept the expulsion of the Moores and Marans, have caused it) then when first they undertooke custious Gen-

60 scarcitie of people (notwithstanding their many and long Warres in so many parts of Europe, ex- ed to that inthose contuming valt Enterprizes, not of a Virginia, but of a World. And yet what in comparifon is Spane for multitudes of people, whose vastnesse is faid to yeeld (the King, Dukes, Mar- troller of the quelles and Earles only with their retinue excepted) from eighteene yeeres of age to fiftie, but Nauis.

Plantat ons, and confumed many: experience I hope by this time hath taught to preuent or remedy. The late barbarous Maffacre (bine ille lachryme) ftill bleedeth, and when things were reported to be in better forwardnesse then euer, in great part blassed those hopefull blossomes. nat been the chiefe cause of discontred the proceedings in the Iron workes, Vineyards, Mulberry plants; and in sudden shifte chiefe cause of discontred the proceedings in the Iron workes, Vineyards, Mulberry plants; and in sudden shifte later mileary for life, exposed them to manifold necessities; insomuch, that many of the Principals being flam. by peffered with multitude, and deflitute of Corne and other for faken necessaries, they incurred

of 1800, Was presented of the Companie a Royall care, as I kewife the Honor ble Lords of his Maieslies priny Councell, besides the hoto the Lords of notable endeaours of the Councell and well affected members of that Society, which God almighthe Genncell. tv. the great Founder of Colonies, profper.

Argumentster I haue aduentured briefely to point out, rather then to paint out her beauty and attractme ortation, asbe- naments. in honorable. z.Religion.

s. Humanitie.

manity and civility from Barbariime and Sauageneffe to good manners and humaine polity. Thirdly, the Honour of our Nation enjoyeth va not balely to looie the glory of our fore- and fathers acts, which here have been shewed in King Henry the feuenth, King Honry the eight, King Edward the fixt, and Oneene Elizabeths times, all which illustrated their names by Discouery of Realmes remote, viknowne parts and ports (and the first, first of all Kings, and the last holding to the last) Discouering and possessing thele, and leaving them as just inheritance to his Maiesty. What shame to a degenerate posterity, to loose so honorable a claime, and gaine; yea, to neglect that which many English have purchased with doing and suffering to much, and not with their iweate alone, their care and coft, but with their deereft bloud and manifold deaths?

4. Honour of

Fourthly, wee may recken the Honour of our King, and his Royall posterity : to which, in time Virginia may performe as much with equall manuring as euer Britannia and Ireland could 50 promite when first they became knowne to the then civiller World. And were not comparisons odious ! I am fure I heard Sir Thomas Dale confidently and feriously exulting in private conference with me, in the hopes of future greatnesse from Virginia, to the English Crowne. And if the wife King wifely faid, the bonour of a King is in the multitude of his Subjects, loe here the way to preserve, employ, encrease them; and for his Maielly to reach his long royall armes to another World. The Roman Empire fowed Roman Colonies thorow the World, as the most naturalland artificiall way to win and hold the World Romaine.

.. Honor of the

Fifthly, the honour of the Kingdome, thus growing and multiplying into Kingdomes, that as Scotland and England feeme lifters, fo Virginia, New England, New found Land in the Continent already planted in part with English Colonies, together with Bermuds, and other oc llands may be the adopted and legall Daughters of England. An honorable defigne, to which Honor stretcheth her faire hand, the fine fingers whereof are adorned with such precious Rings, each enriched with invaluable lewels of Religion, Humanity, Inheritance, the King, the Kingdome | Honos alit artes, omnesque incenduntur ad findia gloria.

Arg. 7. from necelli, ie by our multitudes

1818

1125390. men of alliorts, as I have seene in an Extract of the Royall Muster-booke, which how much is it exceeded by the numerous excelle of people in this Iland, straitned in farre leffe roome. and wanting necessary employments, which almost exacteth a Virginian vent and adventure. For how much more convenient is a transmigration, into a fruitfull, large and wholesome Region. where the Countrie hath need of a Colonie to cultivate it, as well as those Colons and Inhabitants have need of a Countrie to inhabit rather then to breed a fulnes in This Bodie, which without some such euacuation either breeds matter for the pestilence and other Epidemicall Difeases. or at least for Dearth, Famine, Diforders, ouer-burthening the wealthier, opptesting the poorer. differieting both themselves and others, that I mention not the fatall hand of the Hapeman And thus you have Virginias hopes in generall propounded by Spanish example viged and enforced by our necessitie of feeking vent to fuch home-fulnesse. But looke voon Virginia; view her louely lookes (howfoeuer like a modeft Virgin she is now

neffe.

particular co- valied with wild Couerts and shadie Woods, expecting rather raufilment then Mariage from hee Natiue Sauages) furuay her Heauens, Elements, Situation ; her diuifions by armes of Baves and Rivers into fo goodly and well proportioned limmes and members; her Virgin portion nothing empaired, nay not yet improoued, in Natures best Legacies; the neighbouring Regions and Seas fo commodious and obsequious; her opportunities for offence and defence; and in all these you shall see, that she is worth the wooing and loues of the best Husband, First, for her Heavene and Climate, the with her Virgin Sifters hath the fame (being extended from 30, to 45, degrees of North latitude) with the beil parts of Europe, namely the fat of Grecia, Thracia, Spaine, Ita- 20 lie. Morea, Sicilia, (and if we will looke more Northward to the height of France and Britaine, there her Sifters New England, New Scotland, and New-found-land, promife hopefull and kinde entertainment to all Aduenturers. If you looke Southwards, you may parallel it with Barbarie. Egype, and the fertileit parts of Africke) and in Afra, all that Chner fone ffus, fometime the feate or foure thousand Cities, and so many Kingdomes, now called Natelia, with her Neighbours Antiochia, and other Regions of Syria, Damascu, Libanus, with Babylonia and the glorie of the Earth : and Types of Heauen, Indea and Paradife; the Silken Countries also of Persia, China in her best parts, and lapan, are in the elevation; and Virginia is Daughter of the same Heavens, which promife no leffe portion to this Virgin, then those Matrons had for the foundation-stock of their wealth and glory.

v. The fime climate with beft Countries

Secondly, this Climate as it promifeth wealth, so it doth health also, enioying the temper of 2. Temperate. the most temperate parts, even of that in which Adam, Abraham, with the Prophets and Apoftles were bred in, and received as an Earthly priviledge; and in which Christ conversed in the 2. Large exflesh. And thirdly for extension, if conetousnesse gape wide, ten Indan, and a hundred Paradifes, may be equalled for quantitie in Virginia, whole mid-land Regions are wholly voknowne, till we arrive at that Nona Albion , which yeelded it felfe Englifb before the first Urreinian

Fourthly for commodious divisions, the Lands and Seas contend by frosh Rivers and Armes of the Sea fo to diverlifie the foyle as if in luxuriant wantonnesse they were alway engendring ma-Lands and Ri. nifeld Twinnes of Commoditie and Commodiousnesse, Profit and Pleasure, Hunting and Fishing, 40 Fruits and Merchandizing, Marinership and Husbandry, Opm and Vim, Meate and Drinke, Wares and Portage, Defending and Offending, Getting and Keeping, Mountaines and Valleyes, Plaines and Hillocks, Rivers Navigable and shallower Foords, Ilands and Land-iles (or Peninsula) Woods and Marishes, Vegetatines and lining creatures maruellously diversified. Looke on the Map, and tell me if any Countrey in the World promifeth more by the lookes then it. Yea I have observed in the Letters of greatest Malcontents from thence, foe and friend and themselves are blamed rather then the Countrey, the least finger of Virginias hand (I meane the least of fine Rivers (or as Mafter Alexander Whitakers relateth, the least of feven) in a finall part of that great Countrie, is bigger then the First-borne of Britaines waters, the famous Thames, all Nauigable, fome one hundred miles, fome one hundred and fixtie, receiving Tributes by the way of innume- 50 rable Springs, Brookes, Riverets (fuch as that of Ware, and fit for portage of Wares in imaller Barkes, of which kind lames River hath five Attendants in ordinary) the fall of every one of the fine is within twentie or fifteene miles of some other: and not aboue fifteene miles in some places is the Great River of Roanoke faid to be distant from some of those which fall into lames Riuer, yeelding a commodious intercourse twixt those Southerly and these more Northerly parts of the Countrey. I know not how Nature hath here also wantonized and danced a Loath to depart in the winding of those Streames, which feeme willingly againe and againe to embrace that beloued Soile, and to prefent her with rich Collers of filuer Eifes, murmuring that they must leave to fresh and fertile a Land, of which at last with Sals teares they take their leave, but contra-Cting with their New Sea Lord to visit their old Land-lord and former Loue every Floud Meane 60 whiles those many impetuous clippings and sweet embraces, searching refuges every way make thew as if they would meet together in confultation, and agree on some Conspiracie, which howfoeuer disappointed, yeeld neuerthelesse many conueniences of entercourse and easier porcage, each River comming within foure, eight, ten miles, more or fewer in divers places of another. All

thefe Rivers runne into a faire Bay, on which the Earth every way is a greedie gazing Spectator, Bay of chefe except where the Ocean rusheth in to raugh her beauties, flowing neere two hundred miles into prage. it, and forcing a Channell one hundred and fortie, of depth betwixt feuen and fifteene fathome, and ten or fourteene miles in ordinary breadth. The Earth yet vindermining it by Ilands, and mustering those River Captaines and innumerable Springs and Brookes, maintaineth his fresh challenge with continuall Warres, forcing backe the Ocean enery Ebbe to retire, which vet loth to lote fo fweete a possession returneth within few houres, freshly flowing with Sale re-

Fifthly, the foile is bleffed, every Element bestowing a rich portion on her. The fire hath trea- 5. Fertile foile. 10 fures laid vo to maintaine her fewell vnto prodigality (yea which feldome meete, a thriftie prodigality) for many yeeres. Her store of waters you have heard, but not her watery store of tishes vnto incredibility in kinds, goodnesse, numbers. The Are is no lesse luxuriant in the Fowles of Heauen, Bur the Earth (fruitfull Mother of Mankind) the is prodigiously prodigall, in fatneffe of the foile: talneffe, fweetneffe, ftrength, varietie, numberleffe numbers of her Trees : her Oakes 6. Trees for no leffe excellent then frequent, many of them bearing two foote and an halfe fquare of good timber and on Timber twenty yards long : of which also are divers kinds. Elmes and Ashes (of which Sope- ther vies many afties are made) Wal-nuts in three forts, Cypreffes (or much refembling them) Cedars and other

fweet imelling Timbers, Chefnuts, Plummes of divers forts, Cheries and other Trees. &c. reckoned by Virginian Relators, I omit. But most remarkable and promiting are the Mulberie and the Vine, the one to the backe, the other to the belly, yeelding Silkes and Wine. As for Silke, how great profits are raised thereof to the Chinois and Persian? Yea to come nee - 7. Specially for

rer, in Naples and other parts of Italy, which have provoked France to a general limitation. And Silkes. how virualizable are the expenses of this Kingdome for that materiall, Ut matrone in publice luce and Likewile for Wines from France, Spaine, Germanie, and other parts how many thou- 8, And for fands are verrely expended to the profits of Strangers, that I fay not to enemies . or at least to Wines. fuso cted friends : It hath pleased his Maiestie to take these two into his Princely confideration luly 9. 48.20 and by his Letter to the Right Honorable the Earle of Southampton, and the Company of Virginia See (40, c. 15.

to commend and command this care to them.

The Countrey it felfe naturally produceth Vines in great abundance, and some of a very good 30 fort : divers plants also have beene sent thicker of the better kinds of Christendome, with eight Vignerous orocured from Languedock for the husbanding of that commoditie. The Soyle is no leffe naturally happy in Mulberie Trees of the best kind and some Silke-wormes also; and generall order bath beene taken for the abundant planting of them in all places inhabited; large fupply also of Silke-worme-feed from his Maiesties store, and men skilfull in that kind for the well ordering of that bufineffe haue beene fent. In a word, the very prosperity and pregnant hopes of that Plantation made the Deuil and his lims to enuy feare and hate it. Hence that bloudy Mailacre which caused almost a sudden Chaos to the hinderance of those affaires, by the convulfions, combustions, and almost confusion of that Body and their Designes: whereof yet we hope not only a recourry but greater advantage, the greatest danger from the Sauges, growing out of our mens confidence, which that terrible stroke (except a stupid Deuill possesse vs) hath cut off : which likewife requires that feruile natures be feruily vied; that future dangers be preuented by the extirpation of the more dangerous, and commodities also raised out of the seruitenesse and Sauges so feruiceablenesse of the rest.

As for Saffafras, Salt, Terra Lemnia, Gummes and other profitable Drugges I shall not neede their labours. speake : nor of their Silke-graffe naturally growing, besides a kind of Hempe or Flaxe, yeelding 10. Drugs, and most excellent Cordage. Pot-ashes, Sope-ashes, Pitch and Tarre have beene the employment commodities. of Polacres lent thither.

In four e yeeres space before the Mallacre (the Iron Oare of Virginia being found very good and 11. Iron mines very plentifull) aboue fine thousand pounds were spent, and one hundred and fiftie persons sent to for that imployment; which being brought in manner to perfection, was interrupted by that fatall accident, fince which the reftituion is with all possible diligence (as it is faid) ordered and

There have beene also sent skilfull men from Germany, for setting vp of Saw-mils: Friginia 12. Timbers yeelding to no place in the knowne World for Timbers of all forts, commodious for strength, for all vies. pleasant for sweetnesse, specious for colours, spacious for largenesse, viefull for Land and Sea, for housing and shipping: in which Timber vies England and Holland alone are said to disburse about 300000. pounds sterling yeerely. And the defects at home, where the Hearth hath climbed into the Roofe, where back-fewell hath denoured our buildings in the Woods, and bellyfewell hath denoured the Woods, and connerted them to arable: where fo many thips are em-

to ployed for provisions of and for thipping, Virginia by divine bountie is Magna fees altera Britanmia. Herein we may verifie the old Properbe, That he which liveth longelt, thail fetch his wood furtheil; but io, as he shall be paid for the fetching with great advantage.

And if an Iland needs woodden Wals to fecure it against others, to enrich it from others, Fire cisily for bullgines offers her feruice herein, and will looke to much more cheerefully on you, how much more ding both

tage from the

YOU

you shall disburthen her in this kind : yea, as England hath wooed and visited Virginia, so herein Fremia will be glad and reioyce to vifit England, in her there-built ships, and to dwell here with vs in thence-brought Timbers, and esteeme her selfe advanced to adorne our Towres. and rake view of our Pomps and Spectacles.

Pleasure, profit, glorie by Nauigation. Motives for Virginia. LIBIX

ta. The mini-

And touching thipping and the materials thereof; Timbers, Pitch, Tarre, Cordage, Sayles. fold materialls Anchors, &c., nec. flitie of the times exacteth in our defects at home, for fecuritie from enemies abroad employment of Mariners, Merchants and our numerous multitudes, offending our Ofenders, defending our Allies, that I adde not the Riches of the World, and glory of Exploits. all which depend on Navigation. Hence Tyrns and her Daughter Carthage of old (Matre valchra filia palebrior) hence the Egyptian Alexandria and many Nations lince, have reaped wealthand In honour. Hence the Lumbards and Easterlings sucked out the sweetes of this Kingdome in former times, whiles we like children were fed by their hands, and they were inriched by the Importation and Exportation of Merchandife to and from vs: which when that glorious Elizabeth altered, and fought to fland in the Seas on her owne legs, and to flie ouer them with her owne wings, it not only wanne her renowme but dread abroad, and fuch strength at home, that notwithitanding her manifold wars offensue and defensue, and motherly protection of her Neighbours round about with Men and Monies; her Cuftome, her Nauie, and the wealth of her prople is thought to haue received in her time a feuen-fold advancement. And what hath to long vpholden and enhanced the Hanse Townes? What hath rayled the rich and glorious States of Venice and Genea? What hath fince freed, and doth ftill fustaine the Hollanders, but their mouing 20 Magazines and Cattles, their strength and magnificence being (by a Miracle in State) hereby moth. wherein it is leaft, in their Sea-forreits; Nature denying that to their Soyle, which Art hathluperabundantly supplied by shipping, to their Lands, to their Seas, for vie, for admiration hence hath the Abaffine or Prester John loit his estate, the Turke not encreased his by swallowing the reit of Christendome, the Persian, the Mogull and other mighty Asian Potentates have not bin mighty, howfoeuer tirnamed Great; have beene folong awed, and as it were, imprisoned within their owne shores, there also often braued, assaulted, forced to receive Lawes and conditions, yea to pay Customes for their owne ships, and prohibited Trade with others by a handfull of Portugalls. Hence the Portugals themselves crept out of their Straites and obscuritie, and hence the Castilian colours have been so far displayed, and set the rest of the World in this present Maze: 30 Hence our Edgar, Edward the Third, and Great Elizabeth, haue left fuch memories of them, after themshence all Maritime States and Kings have received encrease or diminishing; as their Navies haue beene, so haue they. Yea, without a Nauie, Salomon had not beene so meet a Type of Christ, fo glorious in Domesticall, Politicall or Ecclesiasticall magnificence.

Haile then, al-haile Vagmia, hope of our decayed Forreits, Nurfery of our Timbers, fecond Supply to our thipping, the succenturiata copia in distresse of Nauall materials : and those independant on forreine States, disburthened of Taxes, Customes, Impositions, and Suspensions of forreine Princes : yea gainfull not in the ships alone, but in Shipmen and Mariners trained vp and multiplyed by that imployment, with mutuall entercourse of Wares and manifold Commodities. Hee that lookes on the best Corne-fields soone after the sowing, seeth expense and labour 49 without any profit but in expectation. Now is our Seed-time; and if cost and industry want no Virginia, in her Soyle and Climate not only promifeth thele materials, there also to be made at ea ier rates; but infinite other Commodities allo which may be transplanted from these and other parts, as the Spaniards in their Indies , have given vs example. These have reserved Wines and Oyle, as Staple Commodities to be carried from Spaine (that these Americans may still have need of Spanish Commodities) which else would easily grow there. They have agains furnished these parts both from Spaine and many other Countries, with Figs, Oranges, Limons, and fruits for prefent vie and for Merchandize, with Sugar-canes, Gingers, Cattell and other Commodities, yeelding exceeding fummes of Treasure to the Planters. And I know not but in a settled Virginian Plantation, Sugars, Gingers, Hides, &c. may there prooue as gainfull, as they have 30 in the Spanish Indies, that is, beyond all conceit of ordinarie valuation, and as good as

Now for the Cattell and Fowles, I might here present their Deere of all forts, reported to haue three or foure Fawnes at a time, and none under two (which fome impute to the qualitie of ly for efective that Countrey, having happened likewise to the Goats transported from hence) and were it not for this increase, eyther they must faile, or the Natiues (these sparing neither old nor young, nor old with young, nor obseruing any rule of Season or Reason therein) I might adde Shag-haired Oxen-feene by Sir Samuell Argoll, Beauers, Otters, Foxes, Wildeand Ciuet Cats, Muske Rats, and many Beatls which beare good Furres; their large Turkeyes, Cranes, Herons, Partridges, and innumerable other Fowles: fifth also of innumerable numbers and manifold kinds, Sturgeon, Por- 60 pole, Bale, Rock-fish, Carpe, Shad, and the rest. It seemeth to vs incredible, which is related of the both numbers * and excellencie at one draught taken. As for the varietie of Corne, the excellencie alfo and multiplication to 1500. or 2000. for one stalke of Maiz, the viefulnesse, their fucceeding-exceeding Haruelts, their Roots, Herbs, Pulle, and the rest, I referre to all the Writers in

that Argument, and to as many as have beene Eye-witnesses themselves to be Relaters.

Were it but a fishing trade, yet his vinderstanding is contemptible, that thinkes contemptibly 19. Benefits by of it. He that should reade Doctor Dees relations of so many hundred Buttes, and Flemmilb faile history. on the English, and Spanish, on the Irish coalis: or what Master Gentleman hath related of the Commodities raifed that way by the Holanders, fummed to millions of pounds in Herring. Cod and Ling : and that which others relate of 3600. faile of Fishermen in Holand and Zeland, with

other things of like nature gathered together by Captaine Smith in his New Englands Trials, with the experiments of that coast also (part of our Virginian subject shall see, as greatest bo- multa invant. diescomposed of least parts, so greatest summes raised out of least and meanest meanes, that being to dundant in tale, which feemeth wanting in weight. Once, the impregnable wals of the vnired Prounces are their Ships (whereof fome reckon small and great of all forts 20000,) and their principall and most generall Trade is Fishing, which is the Seminary of their Mariners of which tome have reckoned about 100000, and fummed their returnes thence growing to 7000000. pounds in a yeare. I am none of Neptunes Secretaries; yet know this, that there is no fifthing to the Sea, and no Country to strong by Sea as that which findeth most employment in this kinde, where no exportation of treasure, no custome, no confumption and exhaulting of commodities can be quarelled. Thus then, whether we confider Wines, Silkes, and other the appurtenances of our pleasures, as Dies, Drugges, Gummes, Sugars, Ginger, Furres, and the like, which cost this Kingdome yearely tome hundreths of thousands of our pounds: or whether wee reckon those 20 more staple and necessary commodities for Shipping, and all forts of Timber, Cordage, and other like, no leffe coffly, Virginia inuiteth our hopes, and couenanteth to bestow them on the induftrious : fo that we shall saue those treasures and costs that way expended, fnall lesse depend on other Nations, lesse teare imbarguing, detention, imposts; yea, shall from other Nations raise by returne of our excelle in these kindes great Summes, besides the turnishing of the Kingdome with greater encrease of Shipping, Marriners, and innumerable employments, and the securing and enriching the Ports, both of Ireland and England. As for Tobacco I have faid little of it, because 20. Tobacco. it is so generally knowne (which yet is said to be worth to Spaine 100000, pounds yearely; and ABooke prethat (I grieue to speak it) from the fume-from-froth-spirits of England) & the abundance brought sented to the

from Virginia and Summer llands (inopes nos cepia fecis) exceedeth the Market : and because to Parliament by 30 many by immoderate vie thereof are corrupted here at home, and the present benefit thereby ac- It is said crewing in quicke returne, hindreth designes of better consequence there. And thus much of Vn- that some maginias present or very probable Commodities: to which we may adde the hopes infuture times liciously father by finding there as good vent for our Wools and Clothes, both to the English and civilized Indi- all their bad an, as the Spannards doe in their Indies by their Wines and Oyle, of which I have already faid that Tobacco on they permit not the generall growth in their Indian plantations for the continuance and necessis Bermuda, and tie of commerce with Spaine. And who feeth not the exceeding benefit which may arise by compleat commerce, in venting our owne superfluities of Men; of others, and specially the principal! thence, on of English Commodities, Cloth and Wooll, with the Gospel of our Lord letus; and returning Spanish would be studied by the Commodities of the Spanish with the Gospel of our Lord letus; and returning Spanish with the Gospel of our Lord letus; and the Gospel of our Lord letus; and the Gospel of our Lord letus; and the Gospel of our Lord from thence, Clapboord, Pipe-staues, Cauiare, Oade, Madder, Salt, Cordage, Pitch, Tarre, Sope- future Trace afhes, Pot-afhes, Cotton-wools, Gaules, Furres, Hops, Hides, Gummes, Dyes, Gingers, Sugars, for clothes & Silkes, Wines, Iron, Timbers, Fish, Ships, Mariners, Merchants, and a World of the Worlds most other English

vieful good things thorow an open Sea, obnoxious to no forreine Potentate, from and to known commodities. and fecure Ports and Harbours

Discipline.

It is also not only viefull at all times, but necessary to these times, as to transport superfluous 22. Manifold numbers from hence to Virginia, to to cure the difeates of the times caused by the wants of Monies necessities of (the life of trading, and finewes of a great State) attended with wants of fale for the Merchane, these times. and confequently of Clothiers and other subordinate professions; want of worke for Spinsters, Weauers, and innumerable poorer Trades and Handicraftsmen; want of trading for Citizens(nerther hath fuch a generall breaking beene euer knwone, fo many shops in the principall limmes 50 and ftreets of this Citie, yea, in Cheapfide the faire face, yea, in the eye of that beauteous face, the Gold-Smith: Row (where befides fo many shoppes converted to other Trades, I have told this lift Winter betwixt Friday-street and Bread-street the third part shut vp) want of employment for decayed Gentlemen, both the elder Vnthrifts and younger Gallants; which want of moneyes and store of wants thence issuing, is in greatest part caused by the Merchandizes sought and bought in other Countries, whereby our Moneyes fall into forraine Whirle-pooles without hopes of recovery; whereas if our Trade lay (as we fee the Spanish) with our owne Colonies and Plantations elie-where, wee should hold them still current in our owne Nation, and draw other's to bring to ws both Wares and Moneyes from other Regions for the Commodities aforefaid. And thus should the Vices of the Times be remedied, and the vices of men or vicious men finde from

Tobacco, Silkes, Wines and other excesses (like the sting of Scorpions from the Oyle of Scorpions) a cure thence, whence they received their wounds; and to many ruptures should eyther be preuented or healed; prouisions also procured for employment of honest and humble pouertie at home, and the inordinate pritts of others tamed by the Sea, and trained at labour to better

D. D. Brit. Mo.

Ladde

dangers in forreme Countries, 16. Implaymout and breeding of Mariners. 17. Many probabilities by traniolantation of castell, fruits, &c. ex-

emplified by

Spaniards.

15. Sauing of

exactics and

freeing from

18. The Countric. cattell &. but Merchandife h.re. * Cap. Smith tels of 1000. Baffes at a draught: M. Rolfe ot 5000. the least of two foot long,300. by Sir T. Dale,

25. N cofficie tor frenethenine other Plantations. 24 Propibilities of a South Sea paillage & commodicies thereby.

I a ide further, that the prolecution of the Virginian Plantation, is both profitable and necesfary for the strengthning of the Plantations already begun in Summer Ilands, New England, and New found Land, and that other expected in New Scotland. Now if we adde the hopefull paliage to the South Sea, that one argument is more then all the

reft, if our eyes shall once be bleffed with that defired fight. For the trade of the whole world is then made compendious, all the rich trades of the East Indies are obvious and neerer hand, and no force is able to fooure fo large a Coast as that Westerne shoare of all America, and secure it from our trading. Hence, if we finde not golden Countries before not possessed by other Christians (whereof alfo Sir Francis Drakes Noua Albion fo long fince fubiected by voluntary furrender to the English Crowne, hath given vs hope) yet trade will bring the Mines of the West into our 10 fhips, and the Spices and other rich Merchandize of the East into our shops at easier charge, and therefore faleable at eafier rates.

25.Noreffitie of maintain ning Virginia in cale of war forcidity others.

But this Designe of the South Sea may seeme desperate, and the Argument ridiculous. I shall therefore indepour to give better light therein, and withall to adde another Argument as weightie as it, and greater then all exceptions.

I may adde also the case of Warre, which I defire not; but which may happen, and Bellona may even now feeme pregnant and alreadic conceived, whose abortion might be wished, if necessitie add not honour to the lawfulneffe, I but propound a cale possible. The most certaine, honorable, and beauteous front of Peace, hath a backe part of Warre, and therefore in securest Peace, Prudence is not to fecure, but the armeth her felfe against feares of War, forewarning and forearming men by the Sword drawne to preuent the drawing of Swords, and eyther eschewes it, or reads good out of it.

It is not voknowne what expenses England hath sustained in and ever since Sir Sebastian Ca. South Sea why let is not vinknowne what expenses of the Willoughby, Burrough, Pet and Iackman by the Northeast , of Hudson, Poole, Fotherby, and diversother Naugations by the North; of Sir Martine Frobufter, Captaine Danies, Sir Thomas Button, Maiter Knight, Hudfon, Hall, Baffin, and other manifold Discoueries by the North-west, all seeking a compendious passage to Cashay, and to the East Indies. The Reasons which movued them were far more hopefull then that of Columbus, which found not with standing far better and speedier successe. Successe is a seruile Argument, for Sense rather then for Reaton, and in this whole Virginian proiect, I ipeake to English Aduenturers, and not to pettie Pedlers, or Vinginian Sauages, to fuch whose eyes are in their heads and not in their hands : Careat successibus opto, Quisquis abenentu facta notanda putet. Yet hath not Succeffe beene wholy frustrate, yea both Reason and Sense plead for a Passage, and Virginias vietulneffe therein.

I will not bring uncertaine testimonies of a Portugall taken in a Carrike in Queene Elizabeths dayes, and of another Portugall in Guinie, which affirmed to Sir Martine Frebufher that hee had past it; nor of Garcia Louisa, which is said by the Coast of New-found-land to have gone to the Molnecas; nor of Vafeo Coronado in his Letter to the Emperour Charles, and other antiquated

· See (40, the Booke: & Der-

Witneffes of Antiquitie. I have already in due place produced * Thomas Cowles, luan de Fuca, Thomas Dermer, Sir Thomas 40 Button, Mafter Brigges, besides the constant and generall report of all the Sauages from Florida, to the great River of Canada. Now for the hopes of Virginia by a South-Sea Discovery, how neere is England that way to the Trade of both Indies, that is, of all the remoter World! It flands midway betwixt vs and the most frequented Ports of the West, which perhaps may shortly come to full age and fue out her Liuerie, how ever hitherto kept in close Wardship, and debarred the rights of common humanite, that is, the commerce with other Nations, without differning Friend and Foe. Strange iealouse and worthy of seasous Suspicion! to admit Trade in all European Ports, not Simil and Madrid excepted, and to prohibit the same in all the East and West, where it can leffe be prohibited! there to repute all in nature of Pyrats, and accordingly to make 50 prize of ships, goods, and men which shall attempt to sayle that vail Ocean, or offer Trade in any of those Habitations But leauing that to consideration of my Betters, in the East both Englife and Dutch have maintayned their just Trade by force, which by vinust force was denied, and have paid themselves largely for all losses sustayined by the Insultings or Assaultings of those Monopolians, with gaine, with honour : that trade being almost denied to those injurious deniers, their owne reputation and traffique now bleeding, which would have cut the throates of all others aduentures, of all other aduenturers. I neither prophelie, nor exhort vnto the like in the Weil: Our prudent and potent Mother Elizabeth wan renowne and wealth in their owne harbours and Cities at home, and no leffe in the remotest of their Lands and Seas, Yea, the South Sea by furthest compasse was neere to her long and just armes, and their Cacaplain and Saint Anne, 62 with other their richest Ships and Ports were ransacked by English Cacafnegos, and the charges of those warres borne by those enemies which caused them. Nulla falies belle paceus to poseimus omnes. He whole words and workes hath euer beene Beati pacifici, knowes best when and how to exact his and the Worlds right, in the World, of which God hath granted a Monopoly to no man; and (if others can embrace the whole Globe with dispersed habitations) not to suffer his long arms

to be shortned, and the strong armes of his to be pinioned, and forced to accept of a bounded and limited commerce in a little corner at others pleafure. Once, in inft and even peace, Virginia ffands fit to become Englands Factor in America; it war thould happen, both it and Bermuda are fit Sentimels and Scours, yea fit Searchers and Customers, fit Watch-towers and Arfenals to maintaine right against all wrong-doers. And for the South Sea, if a passage be found neere vnto Virginia. Malter Dermer was confident upon relations (as he writ to me) of a thousand witnesses, wee then lee Ungunes lap open, yeelding her Ports and Harbours for the Easterne treasures to be the negret way conneied by the West, Years it be more remote, as Chacke and Fuca relate, yet hath Virginia an vietall neighbourhood both for ticke men, weatherbeaten Ships, and prouisions ex-10 hauft in long Voyages, to make them fitter for returne. And if fuch paffage were not at all. vet the Mountaines of Virginia cannot but fend Rivers to that Sea; fo that as the wealth of Permis brought to Panama, and thence by Land convaied to the Ports of this Sea, fo may the wealth of the South Sea, and the Regions of the West of America be that way passed to English hands. The like may be faid of the Hands of Salomon, the South vinknowne Continent, which aftertimes may discover (probably as rich as the rest) that I mention not the knowne Regions of the East already traded. And although the passage be not yet perfectly knowne, vet may the feations and fittest opportunities and promitions for that discovery be most easie from Virginia: and there, if croffed with stormes or other diasters, they may finde securest refuge and refreshing. And if (which God auert) we may not have the wares of peace, yet the peace of warres 20 (that is, a fit rendenous and retiring place, where to cheere and hearten, to repaire and hipply vpon all occasions) is there offered, by the advantages of both Seas. For in both, that walt body must needes be of flow motion, where the limmes are so discoynted, and one member whit to helpe another by remotenesse. And if it should but force the adversary to maintaine

Garrilons in his Ports on both fides, to fecure them from inualion, and a double Nauie of War in both Seas , the one to fecure the Coalts, the other to fecure his Shippes in the South Sea paffing from the Philippings, or from one Port to another; and in the North Sea to wafte his Treatures and Merchandile into Europe, the wings of that Eigle would be fo pulled with fuch costs, that hee could not easily make invasive flight voon his neighbours in these parts; yez, both thole and these Dominions would be exposed to the easier inualions of others. Tam Marte, quam Mercurio, in Peace and Warre, fo viefull may Virginia and Bermuda be

to this Kingdome. Now if any fay Medice curateipfum, and alleadge that they themselves are not able to fland against an enemy : I answere, first, for Bermuda, or Summer Hands, that little body is all heart, and hath the ftrentgh of Nature and Art confpiring her impregnableneffe. For the Rockes every way have to fortified the feituation, that the would laugh at an Armada, at a World of Ships, where the ileaught paffage admits not two Shipsabreaft to enter, and hath ten Forts with Ordnance to entertaine them. She feares no rauithment, and as little needes the familhment, so that voleffe God for our finnes, or the Diuell by the worft of finnes, treaton, and the worft of his Sonnes, fome Indar, expose her to the Enemy, the can know no other lone or Lord but English. And for Virginia 40 against the Savages greatest fright, Captaine Smith maintained himselfe without loffe, with gaine with thety eight men ragainst others she hath so sit places for fortification; so sit meanes and materials to fecure her, as eye-witnesses report, that the worst of enemies to be feared is English

backwar heffe or frowardnesse, like Sampsons Foxes either drawing backe, or having fire at their tongues ends.

Now if Queene Elizabeth of glorious memory, were able from England onely to annoy her * M. Thomas enemies, fo great and potent, fo much and farre : what may we in Gods name hope of a New Turner an Ene-England, Newfound Land, Bermuda and Virginia stready planted with English? When vpon in Mericane newes of the fall of this great Northen Starre, the Duke of Braganzas brother, ipake of her at himself the land the hands itself worther facility the Duke in life (for the three strengt in the lesistes had standered; hold your peace brother, faid the Duke himselfe (one then present related this to me) had it not beene for her Religion (for which wee most honour her, for which Almaine. God did most bleffe her) the might justly have beene ranked with the ancients Romans: England is a small thing, as the Map the weth, to Spaine, and yet we durst not looke out of doores for her and hers. Thus worthily that worthy man, of the Worthy of women in her time. Great and glorious Elizabeib! how didff thou contemne the Iberian threates? How didft thou invert, dinert, subvert their attempts? How victoriously didst thou evade their inuinoible Invalion! how. Q Elizabeths didft thou inuade the Inuaders, at their gates, in their ports? how didft thou meete them in the praces, Atlanticke, purior them to the South, to the Indian Seas, and round about the World's How did the skie, windes, waves ferue to a higher providence in thy deliveries, in thy triumphs? how often were the prodigious Carrikes of the East, and prodigall Vellels of the West, either staid at 60 home for feare, or driven to fort-covert by the way, or colly wafted on their way, or borned in the way, or finke out of the way, or carried quite a way to visite the English shoares, and adorne the Trophees of great and glorious Elizabeth? Rouze vp your braue spirits English hearts in loyall fabrication to your Royall Sourraign: be ready to offer right, feare not to fuffer wrong: feeke the good, and see the goods which Virginia offers. Here could I wilder my felfe in thickets of argu-

Nananan

ments, and could Muster more motiues and more necessarily concluding for Virginias advancement, if that which we defire not be enforced on vs, then I have already numbred in plantation and commerce : Yea almost all those former arguments are presed of necessity, or offer their feruice voluntarily, some more, others no leffe seruiceable that way, then to publike peace and traf-

fique, which also are securest when they neede not feare a Warre.

The honour of Religion defended by the Defender of the Faul; of our Nation, King, Kingdome; the Materials of Snips, Mariners, Armes, Victuals; Filhing, Merchandife, and Prize fublerment to each Voyage, that one may supply if the other faile; in crossed Voyages, a convenient receptacle for refreshing; fit place of stay in not fitting and vnseasonable seasons : a late repository for spoiles sotten in expectation of greater purchafe: a redreffe to weatherbeaten and storme-distressed to Ships : a refuge to fuch as the enemy hath battered and endangered ; an Hoipitall for ficke, wounded, and prefently unfer iceable Mariners and Souldiers : a storehouse to repaire Timbers, Tackling, and other prouisions to Ships and Men: a fit meane (in supplying vs from thence with neceffaries) to keepe those Monies in our owne hands, whereby we are destitute of the principall sie newes of warre, yea perhaps the enemy armed against vs : a schoole and training place for our youth to endure labour and hardthip, and to prepare them like the lewes in Nebemiabs time. to vie the Sword with one hand, and inftruments of labour in the other: an exercise to breede Men for longer Voiages: a backed ore to breake out fuddenly on the enemy; an ambush ment, whiles Ships from hence & thence shall at once be exp. Cted, and he which flees the one shall fall into the other: a redoubling of our forces when they meete: a fafe halbour in Bermada or in Virginia for 20 a hundred failes, or many more, to awaite all opportunities : a place likely to yeelde to men of merit entertainment and reward : a place yeelding opportunity by trade there to weaken our possible or probable enemies, to whom now wee seeke for trade, and consequently to weaken them by the want of our Commodities, and to adde a double strength to our selues : a place commodious to preuent warre by diverting it, to divert it by preventing: to subvert the enemies Plantations by fudden affaults, or force them to coftly Garifons: to euert their Merchandifing by trade sufpended, surprized, or defended with chargeable waftage : to intercert their intelligence and profits : to invert the hearts of Malecontents, and those hands which feare now curbeth and brideth: to concert to our parts those which maintaine a fugitive and wilde enmity with them: to avert the profits of their Mines by other imployments; and in a word, to make that vie of 2d others against them, which their examples have taught vs in acquiring the great Empires of Mexico and Pers, with other parts of America, which wirhout the helpe of Indians against Indians, banding themselves with a contrary faction, such handfuls had never beene able to have effected : What shall I say more ! If others impotence and importunities force a War, Virginia and Summer Ilands seeme to this English body as two American hands, eares, feete; two eyes for defence : two Keyes (asbefore is laid) for offence : two Armes to get, encompaffe, embrace : two Fifts to strike: the Sword and Dagger; Ship and Pinnace; Caitle and Rampire, Canon & Musket, Arsenale and Peere, and what societ God shall please to give to humaine industry, who gives all things of free grace, but to fuch to whom he hath given grace freely to feeke them; and isalway a facile and easie giver, but to them onely which love not their ease and idle pleasure. And although I am no Secretary of Gods Counfell for the Indies, yet event hath revealed thus much of his will, that no other Christian Nation hath yet gotten and maintained possession in those parts, but the English: to whom therefore wee may gather their decreed feruiceablenesse in Peace, aduantagiousnelle in Warre, and opportunity for both, to be both Magazine and Bulwarke, and ready even by naturall scituation to sit on the skires of whatsoever enemies, which passe from 4. merica to Europe. Three Spanish witnesses, Acosta, Oniedo, and Herrora, have related this, in describing the course

Acolla 1.2.5.4.

uigation.

of that Nauigation; yea, all experience, the Heavens also and Elements subscribe to it. For such is the statute of the windes, which all Shipping in that Sea must obey : they must goe one way and returne another. To the Indies the course from Europe is by the Canaries, and thence entring 50 Defert, of Ind. the Trop ke, they meete with the Brifes, which are perpetual Easterne windes, or I know not what impetuofity by the motion of the heavens breathed into the lower aire between the Tropikes, and preffing all vapours and exhalations unto that feruice in one or other point Easterly: ane pries and which force the Ships to returne neerer the American coaft there to feeke as it were some alloy of course of Na. that impetuous motion (euen as you see Water-men in the Thames rowing against the tide, to couet neere the shoare where the tide is weakest) and thence passing the Tropike to seeke Westerly windes, which from twenty feuen to thirty feuen doe there viually remaine, as wee fee in Eddies caused by stronger motions. Thus the Spanish Ships on the South Sea make one way from Acapulco to the Philippinas, which is the Tropicke; and another without in the height of Ispan, to returne. And thus in the Atlanticke the Ships from their feuerall ports come to the Ha- 60 Mana in Guba, and thence must take their course neere to Virginia and Summer Ilandi, to finde the Azores: in which way, from thence it is easie for English Ships (not far from their owne home or Ports) to difperse themselues in expretation of a surprisall.

The want of fuch helpes in Queene Elizabeths glorious times, enforced our men of Warre fill

to awaite both for the Indian Carrickes, and all American Ships, houering about the Azores Ilands fubicet to the Spanish Crowne, where they neither had harbour in stormes, nor could in any to our objects wants refresh themselves with water, victuals, or other provisions but by force; where a greater warre by want and fronger Armada of the enemy waited to wafte home their Ships returning; where it often of firme fuch hanned that the Ships could not fo foone be descried, but they gat either into some Port, and vn. Plantation as der some Fort which secured them; or else there ran themselves aground, and saving what they be whence may could with their persons, fired the rest, so to facrifice it to Neptune or Vulcan, rather then permit by Voyages it to English hands. Neither had the English any neere Port where to fupply themselves in any di- were frugrafirefle, or exhaultion of prouitions, but must necessarily returne home for England, if not (as some red in partor times) perishing in the way, with little or perhaps no prize attained. Likewise in long Voya- wholly. ges, as to the East Indies, and to the South Sea, having no harbour to friend every difeate proved mortall to their Voyage, and forced at left a returne, that is, a miscarrying of the designe, if not of themselves: whereas, such a refuge as Virginia and Summer Hands might either have recovered the Voyage intended, or refreshed and inabled them to make as good a purchase you the enemy, making him to pay their charges, perhaps with more gaine then the fift intents could have produced. Examples will make this more evident.

And first to begin with the first of our great Discouerers; Sir Sebast ian Cabot, and Sir Thomas Anno 1\$17. Pert, were let forth by King Henry the eight (as before is mentioned) in a Voyage of American Quiedo Gen. 57 Discouery, a Ship of which Fleete comming from the coast of Brasil to Domingo (Quedo mentian one it in the Spanish file, branding them with Piracy, yet laieth nothing to their charge but dif-

couery and offer of trade, paying with Pewter diffies for what they tooke) was thence repelled Anno 1 517, and obtained fome provisions at Saint lobn, from whence in their returne to England, Oniedo thinkes they perished: at least the Voyage miscarried, as appeareth by Master Thornes and Master Edens testimony thereof, for want of provisions. The like happened to Ma- Master Hore. fter Hores Voyage, described in Master Hakluit Anno 1536, when want of victuals made them Sir 10. Hamkins,

eate one another, and at last to steale a French Ship, in which they returned.

Anno 1864. Sir John Hawkins having made a profitable Voyage by fale of Negros on the coast Townes of America, was driven to feeke reliefe of the French (then planted in Florida, rooted thence not long after by Spanish butchery) And in another Voyage 1567, incurred by perfidious treachery of the Spaniards, a most lamentable disaster, He then failed in the lefus of Lubecke, having to his conforts, the Minion, the William and John, the Indith, the Angell and the Swallow, Hauing gotten Negros in Guinnee and made his market in the Spanish Indies, he put in for reliefe at Saint John de VIbus. Whiles his Fleete was there, the Spanife Fleete came thither with their new Viceroy, which he could easily have kept out of the harbour, but there being then no Warres betwixt England and Spaine, certaine Articles were concluded betwixt them; from which the Spanishperfidie V. ceroy perfidiously resulting, with close trechery (contrary to his faith plighted) affaulted the English with a ftrong power on the fudden; the iffue whereof was the firing, drowning, taking many of the English, whom they put alio to execrable tortures. Onely the Minion and Judith of that whole Fleete escaped, if it be an escaping to avoide Serlla and rush on Charibdis. For they ao were fo shaken in fight first, after with stormes, lastly and worst of all, with famine, that they were forced to expose a hundred and source eene men to the mercy of cruell elements, crueller Sauages, cruellest Spaniards, who exercised in the Inquisition with bondage, rackes, whips, fires, Spanistic ruelles familhments, & plurima moreis imago, what the other had spared; so that of a hundred and source teene not about the odde foure, and those foure after Odyffes of wandrings, and Iliades of mileries returned home from the foure corners of the World, Had Sir John Hawkins had a Virginian opportunity of refreshing, the first danger should not have needed, and the last had not proved worse then the first : that exposing being not farre from the Virginian shoare, and the current fitting to carry him thither. Sir Francis Drake was then Captaine of the Iudith, and repaired that courtefie to the Spaniards after, who to shew the felibility of such tefreshing Anno 1585. having facked Saint lago, Domingo, Carthagena, and Saint Augustine, returned by Virginia to relieue the

Anno 159 1. Captaine George Raymund in the Penelope, Captaine Foxoroft in the Merchant Cap Lancoller Royall, and Captaine Lancaster in the Edward Bonaduenture, fet forth a Voyage intended for the 1591. East Indies. Their Company were so weakened with sicknesse, that the Viceadmirall was sent backs from Soldania with ficke men. The Admirall was loft, the Rereadmirall returned, and for want of prouisions put ouer from Saint Helena to Trindad, in hope of reliefe. Yet being there difappointed, they intended to get to Newfoundland, but being croffed with ftormes in the way, and forced backe to Port Ricco, the Ship was driven away and loft not far from Mona, whiles the famished Company were seeking refreshing (which how easily had a Bermuda or Virginia supplied, 60 had an English plantation flourished there?) Six Iames Lancaster and the rest being forced to return after much milery, in French Ships for France, and thence home.

Colony there planted by Sir W. Raleigh.

Anno 1 596. the Beare, the Beares Whelpe, and the Beniamin, were fet forth for China under the Cap. Benilloss command of Captaine Beniamin Wood. Frier Ioaon des Santes mentions both the two former of 1596. Samund and Lancaster, and two also of these seeme on the coast of Mozambique. Bartolom: Less Orientes.

Nnnnnnn 2

nardo

nardo de Argenfola in his Booke, printed at Madrid 1609: hath published the Letter of the Chinele Vilitor of Chincheo, in which he writeth to Don Pedro de Acunas, Gouernour of the Philippinas, that the King of China had done two Sangleys to death, for shewing the hauen to these two English Ships: and Acuma rescribes that the English were Pyrates, &c. after the Spanish wont. There Ships were voheard of in England, vntill a Letter of Alcafar de Villa fenner, Auditor of Domingo, writ to the King his Master, being by an English Ship intercepted, gaue intelligence of one of enole two Ships which diffressed for want of necessaries, by mortality, had foure men only left abus in her, which feeking reliefe, put themselves into their Boate, and comming on shoare in the Hand Vinus, not farre from Domingo, with Iewels and great riches, confelled that they had esken three Portugall prizes. The Spaniards at first received them on good conditions, but some 10 villaines feeing their wealth, mutthered them, for which this Auditor had fentenced Roderico de Fuentes, with others, as his Letter to the King of Spane importeth. Now had there then beenea Voginian or Bermudan Plantation, how easily might they have attained thither(the Boat at least) and elcaped that butchery ? I could hither adde instructions from the English Indian Ships 1604. and 1608, from Captaine Fenton 1582, from the Eirle of Cumberlands Voyages before selated in the yeares 86.89.91.93.96.97. and from Master Candish, Matter Danis, and others.

But we have made too long a Virginian Voyage, having no better freight then Arguments? which the Times doe now promile, if not worthy wife mens approbation, yet good mens indul-Est Indie foci- gence; where in a weake body, and manifold weighty imployments, the willingnesse of a heart truely English, sincerely Christian, may seeme tolerable, if not commendable; pardonable if not 20

> Another labour remaines to fet downe rules and projects of best fecibility and accomplishing this noble worke, but I am onely a Freeman, no Councellour of that Plantation, and have neither Lands there, nor other aduenture therein, but this of my loue and credit, which with the allegiance to my Soueraigne, and defire of the publike good of this Kingdome, is more come then all the treasures of America. I seeke the good and not the goods of England and Virginia, I follow the land of God, which have given England io many rights in Voginia, right naturall, right nationall, right by first discouery, by accepted trade, by possession surrendred voluntarily, continued constantly, right by gift, by birth, by bargaine and fale, by cession, by forfeiture in that late dampable trechery and maffacte, and the fatal possession taken by so many murthered English. Gods an bounty before, his inflice now hath given vs Virginia, that we should so in indgement remember mercy, as to gine Vinginia againe to God, in Christian acknowledgement of his goodnesse and mercy, of his word and workes, and in our owne more ferious convertion to prepare that of Virginia. God goeth before vs in making this designe honorable to Religion, to Humanity, to our

Ancestors, to our King, to our Kingdome. God goeth before vs, and hath given Virginia sorich a portion, to allure and affure our loues; in multiplying our people, and thereby our necessities en forcing a vent : in endowing Vinginia with to large a iointure, to temperate, fo commodious for the climate compared with other Countries, beyond other Countries in her own diverlifted Lands, Brieferecapi - Seas, Rivers ; in so fertile a soyle, in so strong, sweete, stately, delicate Woods and Timbers, in her tulation of the naturall hopes of Wines, of Silkes, of the bodies of Natiues feruile and feruiceable : in Drugges, 40 moft tenarka Irons, and probability also of other Mines; in all materials for Shipping, and other buildings: God goeth before vs in offering that meane to faue that which wee feeke and fpend in other (perhaps en-mies) Countries; to breede vp Marriners, to train vp Souldiers, to exercise labourers, by transportation of English and European creatures to plant another England in America, enriched with the best things of Errope; to give vs Fish, Tobacco, and other present improvements as earnest of future better hopes; and that in these times, which have so manifold necessities thereof, in regard of monies, men, and trades decayed, in regard of neighbour plantations, in the probabilities of 2 South-Sea glory, and in the case of obtruded warre, obtruding on vs absolute necessity, and including and concluding enery way so manifold vie. God the Father, Sonne and holy Ghost, which goe before vs in thele things, if not in miraculous fire and cloudy pillars, (as when I fraet went to 50 Canaan) yet in the light of reason, and right consequence of arguments; come into vs and fillys with the spirit of wisedome and understanding, the spirit of counsell and of fortitude, the

Ex. 13. spirit of knowledge, and the feare of the Lord (I may adde the spirit of vnity and counsell) that he may vouchfafe to goe with vs, and we with Ef. 11.

him, and after him to Virginia, Amen, O Amen. Be thou the Alpha and Omega of Englands Plantation in Virginia O GOD.

The end of the ninth Booke.

ENGLISH DISCOVE RIES AND PLANTATI-ONS IN NEW ENGLAND

AND NEW-FOVNDLAND, WITH THE PATENT AND VOYAGES TO

NEW SCOTLAND: Relations also of the Fleets (et forth by Queene Elizabeth against the Spaniards.

THE TENTH BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

A briefe Relation of the Discourie and Plantation of New-England: and of fundry Accidents therein occurring, from the yeere of our Lord 1607. to this present 1622. Published by the Prefident and Councell, and dedicated to the Princes Highnesse here ab-



Hen this Defigne was first attempted, fome of the prefent Company were therein chiefly intereffed; who being carefull to have the fame accomplished, did fend to the discouery of those Northern parts a braue Gentleman, Cap. Henry Challons, with two of the Natiues of that Territorie, the one called Maneday, theother Affecomet. But his misfortunes did expose him to the power of certaine ftrangers, enemies to his proceedings, fo that by them, his Company were feized, the ships and goods conflicated, and that Voyage wholly ouerthrowne.

This loffe, and vnfortunate beginning, did much a- 1. Ca. Challer bate the rifing courage of the first Aduenturers; but im-mediately upon his departure, it pleased the Noble Lord Chief Euslie Chiefe Iuflice, Sir John Popham Knight, to fend out anothershippe, wherein Captayne Thomas Hanam went

Commander, and Martine Prinne of Bristow Master, with all necessary supplyes, for the seconding of Captayne Challens and his people; who arriving at the place appointed, and not finding that Captayne there, after they had made some Discouerie, and sound the Coasts Hanens, and Harbours answerable to our delires, they returned Vpon whose Relation the Lord Chiefe luftice, and we all waxed so confident of the businesse, that the yeere following every man of any worth, formerly interested in it, was willing to joyne in the charge for the sending over a competent

number of people to lay the ground of a hopefull Plantation. Hereupon Captaine Popham, Captaine Rawler Gilbert, and others were fent away with two 2. Cap Portum thips, and an hundred Landmen, Ordnance, and other prouisions necessary for their suftentation & Cap, Gauers. and defence; vntill other supply might be sent. In the meane-while, before they could returne, Nananan 3

ENGLISH

Sir Inha Papa bans death.

it pleased God to take vs from this worthy member, the Lord Chiefe Iustice, whose sudden death did so aftonish the hearts of the most part of the Aduenturers, as some grew cold, and some did wholly abandon the bufineffe. Yet Sir Francis Pophams his Sonne, certaine of his private fr.ends. and other of vs. omitted not the next yeere (holding on our first resolution) to joyne in fending forth a new supply, which was accordingly performed.

But the fhips arriuing there, did not only bring vincomfortable newes of the death of the Lord Chiefe luftice, together with the death of Sir John Gilbert, the elder Brother vinto Captaine Rawley Gilbert, who at that time was Prefident of that Councell : But found that the old Cap-Captaine Pop. taine Popham was also dead ; who was the onely man (indeed) that died there that Winter. wherein they indured the greater extremities; for that, in the depth thereof, their Lodgings and

flores were burnt, and they thereby wondroutly diffreffed. This calamitie and cuill newes, together with the resolution that Captaine Gilbert was forced to take for his owne seturne (in that he was to succeed his Brother, in the Inheritance of his

Plantation.

Lands in England) nade the whole Company to retolue vpon nothing but their returne with the thing; and for that prefent to leave that Countrey againe, having in the time of their abode there (notwithflanding the coldnesse of the season, and the small helpe they had) built a prettie Barke of their owne, weich served them to good purpose, as eating them in their returning.

The arrivall of thefe people here in England, was a wonderfull discouragement to all the first undertakers, in fo much as there was no more speech of settling any other Plantation in those Sir Fr. Posbam. parts for a long time after : only Sir Francis Popham having the ships and provision, which remayned of th Company, and supplying what was necessary for his purpose, sent divers times to the Coaits for Trade and fithing; of whose losse or gaines himselfe is best able to

Our people abandoning the Plantation in this fort as you have heard; the Frenchmen imme-

Frenchmen plant there.

diately tooke the opportunisie to tettle themselves within our limits; which beeing heard of by those of Virginia, that differently tooke to their consideration the inconveniences that might arife, by I ffering them to harbour there, they dispatched Sir Samuel Areall, with Committon to displace them, which he performed with much discretion, judgement, valour, and dexteritie. For having feized their Forts, which they had built at Mount Manfell, Saint Croix, and Port Reall, he carried away their Ordnance; he alfo fürprifed their Ship, Cattle, and other Prous- 20 fions, which he transported to the Colonie in Virginia, to their great benefit. And hereby hee hath made a way for the prefent hopefull Plantation to be made in Nona Scotia, which we heare his Majeffie hath lately granted to Sir William Alexander Knight, one of his Majeffies most Honorable Councell of the Kingdome of Scotland, to be held of the faid Crowne, and that not withour some of our prinities, as by approbation under writing may and doth appeare. Whereby it is manifest that wee are so farre from making a Monopoly of all those Lands belonging to that Coast (as hath beene scandalously by some objected) That wee wish that many would undertake the like.

In this Interim there were of vs who apprehended better hopes of good that might enfine by this attempt, being thereunto periwaded, both by the Relations of our people that had induted 40 the many difficulties whereunto fuch actions are fubicated chiefly in the Winter Seafon; and like. wife by the informations given them by certaine of the Natives, that had beene kept a long time in their hands; wherefore we refolued once more to trie the veritie thereof, and to lee if possibly we might finde some thing that might induce a fresh resolution to prosecute a Worke so prous and so honourable. And thereupon they dispatched Captayne Hobson, of the Ile of Wight, toimployed with gether with Captayne Herley, Mafter John Matthew, Mafter Sturton, with two Saurges, the one called Epenon, the other Manamet, with Commission and directions fit for them to observe and follow, the better to bring to palle what was expected. But as in all humane affaires, there is nothing more certaine, then the vncercaintie thereof; fo fell it out in this; for a little before fuch time as they arrived upon the Coast with the foresaid Sauages, who were Naturals of these parts, 50

Cap. Hebfen Cap. Herley, e. 1611.

Hunts Sauage it happened there had beene one Hunt (a worthlelle fellow of our Nation, fet out by certaine bunting of Sa. Merchants for loue of gaine, who, not content with the commoditie he had by the filh, and peacemages.

honestie had put themselues into his hands. And stowing them under Hatches, to the number of twentie foure, carried them into the Straits, where he fought to fell them for flaues, and fold Friers charitie, as many as he could get mony for. But when it was vnderstood from whence they were broughts the Friers of those parts took the rest from them, and kept them to be instructed in the Christian Faith; and so disappointed this vieworthy fellow of the hopes of gaine he conceived to make by this new and Deuillish project.

This being known by our two Sauages, formerly spoken of, they presently contracted such Wicked offices an hatred against our whole Nation, as they immediately studied how to be reuenged; and conof wickedness triued with their friends the best meanes to bring it to passe; but Managet dying in a short time after the shippes arrivall there, and the other objecting the good order, and strong guard our

able Trade he found among the Sauages, after he had made his dispatch, and was ready to fet layle

more Sauage-like then they) feized upon the poore innocent creatures, that in confidence of his

people kept, studied only how to free himselfe out of our hands, and thereupon laid the plot very orderly, and indeed effected his purpose, although with so great hazard to himselfe and friends. that laboured his refcue, that Captayne Hobson and his whole Company imagined hee had beene flame. And though in the recourry of his bodie they wounded the Master of our thip , and diners other of our Company, yet was not their Deligne without the flaughter of fome of their people, and the hurts of other, compassed, as appeared afterward.

Hercupon Captaine Hobson and his Company, conceiving the end of their attempt to bee frufrate, resolved without more adoe to returne, and so those hopes, that charge and Voyage was loit alfo, for they brought home nothing but the newes of their euill successe of the vnfortunate caule thereot, and of a Warre now new begun betweene the Inhabitants of those parts and vs. A milerable comfort for so weake meanes as were now left, to pursue the conclusion of so

redious, an Enterprise.

While this was a working, we found the meanes to fend out Captaine Tohn Smith from Plan- Cap. J. Smith month, in a ship, together with Matter Dermer, and divers others with him . to lav the foundation of a new Plantation, and to try the fifting of that Coast, and to feeke to feetle 2 Trade with the Natiues : But such was his mistortune, as being scarce free of our owne Coast, he had his Maits shaken ouer-board by stormes and tempests, his ship wonderfully distressed, and in that extremitie forced to come backe againe; fo as the featon of the yeare being almost frent, wee were of necessitie enforced to furnish him with another ship, and taking out the provision of the 20 first, dispatched him away againe, who comming to the height of the Westerne Hands, was chated by a French Pirace, and by him made Prisoner, although his ship in the night escaped away. and returned with the lolle of much of her promision, and the overthrow of that Voyage, to the ruine of that poore Gentleman Captayne Smith, who was detayned Prisoner by them, and for-

ced to fuffer many extremities, before he got free of his troubles. Notwithstanding these Disasters, it pleased God so to worke for our incouragement againe, as he tent into our hands Talquantum, one of those Savages that formerly had beene betrayed by this vinworthy Hans before named by whose means there was hope conceined to worke a peace betweene vs. and his friends, they beeing the principall Inhabitants of that Coaft, where the fire was kindled. But this Sauage Tofquantum, being at that time in the New-found-land with

20 Captaine Mafen, Gouernour there for the vodertakers of that Plantation : Mafter Darmer Cap, Mofen (who was there alio, and fometimes before imployed as wee haue faid by vs, together with Governor in Captayne lobn Smith) found the meanes to give vs intelligence of him, and his opinion of the New found land good vie that might bee made of his Employment, with the readinesse of Captayne Majon, to further any of our Attempts that way, eyther with Boates or other prouision necessarie. and refoluing himfelfe to goe from thence, aduited vs to fend fome to meete with him at our vfuall place of filhing; to ayde him in his indeuour, that they joyning together, might bee able to doe what he hoped would be very acceptable vnto all wel-wishers of that businesse. Vpon this newes, we dispatched the next season Cap. Rocraft, with a company for that purpose, in hope Cap. Rocraft. to have met with Captaine Darmer; but the care and discretion of Cap, Majon was such, finding An Captayne Darmers refolution to goe beyond his meanes, that he perswaded him first to go for

England, that prouiding himselfe there, as was requisite, hee might proceed in time expedient, which counfell he observed (as fit it was) although our expectation of his joyning with Captaine Rocrafe was thereby disappointed. Yet so it happened, that Captaine Rocrafe at his arrivall in thole parts, met with a French Barke that lay in a Creeke a fifthing , and trading , which hee feized on , and fent home the Mafter and Company in the fame thip which hee went out in. French feized,

With this Barke and his owne Company, he meant to keepe the Coast that Winter quarter, being very well fitted both with Salt, and other necessaries for his turne : but as this was an Act of extremitie (the poore man being of our owne Religion) fo succeeded it accordingly. For in a short time after, certaine of this Captaynes Company, conspired together to cut his throate, and to make themselves Masters of the whole spoyle, and so to seeke a new Fortune where they so could best make it. This Conspiracie being discouered to the Caprayne, he let it go on, till the Conspiracie

time that it should have beene put in execution, when her caught them in their owne traine, and so apprehended them in the very instant that they were purposed to begin their Massacre. But after hee had preuented the mischiefe, and seized vpon the Malefactors, hee tooke to

his confideration what was best to bee done with them. And being loth by himfelfe to dispatch them as they deserved, hee resolved to put them a shoare, thinking by their hazard, that it was politible they might discouer iomething, that might advance the publike; and so giving them some Armes for their defence, and some victuals for their suflentation, virtill they knew better how to prouide for themselves, hee lest them a place Conspirators

60 called Sawaguatock, where they remayned not long, but got from thence to Menchighon, an tock Menching. Hand lying some three leagues in the Sea, and fitteene leagues from that place, where they hon. remayned all that Winter, with bad lodging, and worse fare, yet came all safe home saue one fickely man, which dyed there, the reft returned with the Shippe wee lent for Rocrafts fupply and prouition, to make a Fifting Voyage.

After these fellowes were landed, the Captaine finding himselfe but weakely man'd, and his Ship to draw too much water to Coast those places, that by his instructions hee was affened to discouer, hee resolved to goe for Virginia, where he had lived a long time before, and had (as hee conceined) many friends, that would helpe him with some things that hee had occasion to vie. Arriung there, he was not deceived of his expectation; for Sir Samuel Argallbeing their Governour, and one that respected him much for his owne sake was the readier to helpe him, in regard of the good hee wished to the businesse wherein he was imployed.

But all this could not prevaile, for after that Sir Samuel Argall came from thence (hisdenarture, being more sudden then was expected) it fell out that the new Gouernour entred the Harbour : and finding Rocraft ready to bee gone, fent to him to command him to come abourd to to fpeake with him, which hee readily obeyed, as foone as hee could fit his boat and men for that purpose. And so leaving his Barke with her great Anker at head, and taking with him the halfe of his company, he was forced to stay aboard the new Gouernors Ship that night. In the meane while a florme arising, our Barke wanting hands to doe their labour, droue a shoare, and there funke. But yet the Gouernour and Captaine fo laboured the next day, when they knew thereof, as that they freed her againe, but that occasion forced our Captain to stay so long in the Countrey to fit himselfe a new, as in the interim a quarrell fell out betweene him and another of that Fouraff figine, place; to as Rocraft was flame, and the Barke lunke the fecond time, and finally disabled from veelding vs any benefit to this prefent.

Can Darmer. yoiage.

But we not knowing this ditafter, and Captain Darmer arriving with his Sauage out of New- 20 found land, dispatched him away the next leason, in a Ship wee sent againe for the fishing busnelle, and affigned him a company to joyne with Rocraft and his people. Captain Darmer arming there, and not finding Rocraft, was a little peoplexed, and in doubt what to doe; yet hearing by thole Mutiners which hee found there, that hee was gone for Virginia; he was hopefull of his returne; and lived in that expectation, till fuch time as he heard (by a Ship that came from thence to fifth for the Colony) the confusion of his fortune, and the end of his misery in this world. Then hee determined to take the Pinnace, that the yeere before was affigned to Rocraft, for him to make the Trade with, and with her to proceed on his defigne, and so embarked himselfe and his prouision and company in her. And leaving the Fisher-men to their labour, he coasted the shoare from thence, fearthing every Harbour, and compassing every Cape-land, till hee arrived in Un- 30 ginia; where hee was in hope to meet with some of the promition, or company of Rocraft, to help Necessi ie of a to supply him of what hee wanted ; as also to lay a Decke vpon his Pinnace, that before had not any, and now was taught by experience the necessitie of having that defect supplied.

Deck in Pinnaces of disco-

But those hopes failed him (all being before that time ruined and dispersed) so farre, as he saw it in vaine to hope for helpe by that meanes, and therefore attempted to make the best of what hee hid of his owne. And going to fet his men a worke, they all in few dayes after their arrivall, fell ficke of a difease which happed at that time in the Countrey, so as now he was not onely forced to be without hope of their helping of him, but must labour himselfe all hee could to attend and sustaine them; but so God savoured him, that they recovered, and in time convenient he dispatched his businesse there, and put himselfe to Sea againe, resoluing to accomplish in his jour- 40 ney backe to New-England, what in his last Discouery he had omitted. In his passage he met with certaine Hollanders, who had a trade in Hudsons River some yeeres before that time, with whom he had conference about the state of that coast, and their proceedings with those people: whose antivere gaue him good content. Hee betooke him felfe to the following of his bulineffe, discouering many goodly Rivers, and exceeding pleafant and fruitfull Coasts and Ilands, for the space of eightie leagues from East to West, for to that Coast doth range along, from Hudfons River to Cape lames.

Hudfens Riuer,

Hallandersin

New Patent thought on.

Now after wee had found by Captaine Rocrafts relation made the yeere before, the hopes hee conceived of the benefits that Coast would afford, towards the vpholding of the charge for fetling our Plantation, by reason of the commodities arising by Fishing and Furres, if a course might 50 bee taken for the managing of that bufineffe, as was fit for fuch a defigne; as well as for the aduancement of the publike good of our whole Nation, and latisfaction of every well disposed perfon that had a will to be interreffed therein. It was held to be most convenient to ilrengthen out felues by a new Giant to bee obtained from his Royal Maiefly: the rather, finding that those of Unginia had by two feuerall Patents fetled their bounds, and excluded all from intermedling with them that were not free of their Company; and had wholly altered the forme of their Gouernment, from the first ground layed for the managing she affaires of both Colonies, leaving vs as delperate, and our hufinefle as abandoned. Theie confiderations (as is faid) together with the necessicie of feeling our affaires, bounds and limits, dictinct from theirs, made vs resolue to parition his Maiestie for the renewing of our Grant. By which time the rumour of our hopes was so 60 publikely (pread abroad, and the commodities of the Fish and Trade so looked into, as it was defired that all that Coalt might bee made free, as well to those of Virginia, asto vs to make their commoditie: How just or valual that motion was, wee will not argue, feeing the businesse is ended. By this meanes our proceedings were interrupted, and wee questioned about it; first, by the

CHAP.2. Patent renewed; peaceable flantation; tractable people.

Counfell of Virginia, whom wee thought to have been fully fatisfied therein, before wee could haue way given vs for a new Patent, both parties having beene heard by certaine of the Lords of the Councell; and the businesse by them so ordered, as wee were directed to proceed and to have our Grantagreeable to the libertie of the Virginia Company, the trame of our government excepted; but this order not being liked of, it was againe heard and concluded. Laftly, the Patene being past the Seale, it was stopt upon new suggestions to the King, and by his Maiesty referred to the Councel to be feeled, by whom the former Orders were confirmed, the difference cleared and we ordered to have our Patent delivered vs.

These disputes held vs almost two yeeres, so as all men were afraid to ioyne with vs, and we to thereby left hopeleffe of any thing more, than that which our owne fortunes would veeld to adnance our proceedings, in which time fo many accidents hapned vnto vs at home and abroad, that wee were taine to give order by the Ships wee fent a fishing, for the retiring of Mailer Darmer and his people, vntill all things were cleered, and wee better provided of meanes to goe through with our defigne: But this worthy Gentleman confident of the good likely to enfue, and retolutely resoluing to pursue the ends he ay med at, could not be perswaded to looke backe, as yet; and forefuling to accep: our offer, began againe to profecute his Difcouery, wherein he was betrayed Demer bereatby certaine new Sauages, who solainly set upon him, giving him fourteene or fifteene wounds; edby Sauages. but by his valour and dexteritie of spirit hee freed himfelfe out of their hands, yet was constrai- See fio. his ned to retire into Virginia againe the second time, for the care of his wounds, where he fell sicke owne letterta 20 of the infirmities of that place, and thereof dyed : to ended this worthy Gentleman his dayes, af-me. ter he had remained in the discouery of that Coast two yeeres, giving ve good content in all hee vadertooke; and after hee had made the peace betweene vs and the Sauages, that io much abhorred our Nation for the wrongs done them by others, as you have heard : but the fruit of his lahour in that behalfe wee as yet receive to our great commoditie, who have a peaceable Plantation at this present among them, where our people both prosper and line in good liking, and assured - Plantation by neffe of their neighbours, that had beene formerly io much exasperated against vs, as will more at his meanes. large appeare hereafter.

But having passed all these storms abroad, and vindergone so many home-bred oppositions, and Patentrefreed our Parent, which wee were by order of State affigned to renew, for the amendment of newed. 30 some defects therein contained, wee were affured of this ground more boldly to proceed on than before; and therefore wee tooke first to consideration, how to raise the meanes to advance the Plantation. In the examination thereof, two wayes did first offer themselves : The one was the voluntary contribution of the Patentees; The other, by an easie ransoming of the freedomes of those that had a will to partake only of the present profits arising by the Trade and Fishing vpon the Coast. The first was to proceed from those Noble-men, and others that were Patentees, and they agreed by order among themselues to disburse a hundred pounds a piece, for the advancement of fuch necessary businesse as they had in hand. The second was to bee accomplished by setling such liberties and orders in the Westerne Cities and Townes, as might induce every reasonable man, in, and about them, affecting the publike good, or a regular proceeding in the businesse of Trade, to embrace an uniformitie, and to joyne a communitie or joynt flock together, &c.

BVt this Countrey, what by the generall and particular fituation is fo temperate, as it feemeth to hold the golden meane, and indeed is most agreeable to the nature of our owne, which is Climate. made manifelt by experience, the most infallible proofe of all affertions; infomuch as our people that are fetled, enioy their life and health much more happily then in other places; which can be imputed to no other cause, then to the temperature of the Climate. Now as the Clime is found to be so temperate, so delicate and healthfull, both by reason and experience; such is the soile alfo, some parts thereof yeelding wonderfull increase, both of Corne, the Natiues have most vie of ; as also of our owne, of all forts: with infinite varietie of nourishing Rootes, and other Hearbs and to Fruits common among them, but rare with vs. Befides, the Coast doth abound with most conue- Commodious nient Hauens and Harbors, full of fingular Ilands fit for Plantation; replenished with Plants and Coast. Wood of all forts; as Oake, Ceders, Spruce, Fir, Pyne, Walnut, Cheffnut, Elme, Saffatras, Plum-

trees, and Calamus Aromaticus, &c. The people are tractable (if they be not abused) to commerce and Trade withall, and as yet have good respect of vs. The Seas are stored with all kindes of excellent Fish, and in many places upon the Coatt, fit to make Salt in. The Countrey aboundeth with divertitie of wilde Fowle, as Fowle.

Turkies, Partridges, Swans, Cranes, wild Geele of al forts, wild Ducks of chice forts, many Doues, especially when Strawberries are ripe.

There are feuerall forts of Deere in those parts, and some that bring forth two, three, and soure 60 young at once, which is a manifelt proofe of the fertilitie of the Soile, or temper of the Clime, or both together. There is also a certaine Beaft, that the Natives call a Moffe, hee is as hig bodied Deere as an Oxe, headed like a fallow Deere, with a broad Palme, which hee mues every yeere, as doth The Moffe a the Deere, and neck like a Red Deere, with a front Mane running downe along the Ranes of his defended. back, his haire long like an Elke, but esteemed to be better then that for Sadlers vse, he hath like-

1831

CHAP.I. Voyage to the N. plantation, Dominica. Friar Blascus.

1820

the Moffe or Muffe.

Single of a Deere, and reacheth almost downe to his Huxens, his skinne maketh very good Buffe. and his field is excellent good food, which the Natives vie to Ierkin and keepe all the veerero forme their turne . and to proues very ferusceable for their vie. There have beene many of them Mount Manfell feene in a great Hand vpon the Coalt, called by our people Mount Manfell, whither the Sauases poe at certaine featons to hunt them; the manner whereof is by making of feuerall free, and fer-How they take ting the Countrey with people, to force them into the Sea, to which they are naturally addicted. and then there are others that attend them in their Boates with Bowes and weapons of fenerall kindes, wherewith they flay and take at their pleafure. And there is hope that this kind of to Beatle may be made feruiceable for ordinary labour, with Art and Industry.

Commodities.

The knowne Commodities of that Countrey are Fish of feuerall forts, rich Furres, as Beauers. Otters, Martins, blicke Fox, Sables, &c. There are likewife plentie of Vines, of three kinds, and those pleasant to the talte, yet some better then other. There is Hempe, Flax, Silkgraffe, feuerall veines of Ironitone, commodities to make Pitch, Rofen, Tarre; Deale-boords of all forts, Spirs, Masts, for Ships of all burdens; in a word, there comes no commoditie out of France, Germann, or the Sound but may be had there with realonable labour and industry.

Seutrall Plantations along the Coaft.

Further, wee have tetled at this prefent feuerall Plantations along the Coaft, and have granted Patents to many more that are in preparation to bee gone with all conveniencie. Those of cur people that are there have both health and plenty, fo as they acknowledge there is no want of an any thing, but of industrious people, to reape the commodities that are there to be had, and they are indeed to much affected to the place, as they are loth to bee drawne from thence, although they were directed to returne to give fatisfaction to those that fent them, but chose rather to performe that office by Letters, together with there excuse for breach of their duty in that behalfe. And thus you fee there is no labour well imployed, but hath his reward at one time or other. These incouragements have imboldned vs to proceed to the ingaging of our selves for the building of some Ships of good burden, and extraordinary mould, to lie vpon the Coast for the defence of Merchants and Fishermen that are in ployed there, as also to Waft the Fleets, as they got to and from their Markets : and wee purpose from henceforth to build our shipping there, where wee find all commodities fit for that feruice, together with the most opportune places that can 30 Laftly, finding that we have fo far forth prevailed, as to wind our felues into familiaritie with

the Natiues (which are in no great number) along the Coast, for two hundred Leagues together, wee haue now dispatched some of our people of purpose, to dyue into the bowels of the Continent, there to fearch and finde cut what Port, or Place, is most convenient to fertle our mayne Plantation in , where wee meane to make the Residencie of our State and Gouernment, as alio to bee assured what other commodities may bee rayled for the publike, and private benefit of those that are dealers in that businesse, and willing to bee interessed in any the Lands there : Whither is gone this yeere already, for Trade and Fishing onely, thirtie Sale of the better fort of Ships be longing to the Westerne parts, besides those who are gone for trans-40 portation of the Planters, or supply of such as are already planted, whose returne (as is suppofed) will amount (at the least) to thirty thousand pound, the greater part whereof comes home in Bullion. And therefore as touching the third happinesse of these parts, which is the Sea, there needeth no other greater commendation, then this benefit of Fishing affured vnto vs by common Experience; although it affords many other hopes, both in regard of the facilitie of the Nauigation, the boldnesse of the Coast, the convenience of Roades, Havens and Harbors, for performance of all manner of impleyments ; yet is there also found Showes of Pearle , Ambergreece, great numbers of Whales, and other merchantable meanes to raise profit to the industrious Inhabitants or diligent Traders.

Thirtie faile

CHAP. II.

The Voyage of M. HENRY CHALLONS intended for the North Plantation of Virginia, 1606. taken by the may, and ill wfed by Spaniards: written by Iohn Stoneman Pilot.



N Tuesday the twelfth of August, 1606. M. Henry Challons Gentleman set forth from Plimonth, in our small Ship of the burthen of fiftie flue Tunnesor there. 60 about, called the Richard of Plimonth. Wherein went twentie nine Englishmen, and two of the fine Sauages (whole names were Mannido and Affacomont) which were brought into England the yeere before out of the North parts of Unginia, from our goodly River by him thrice discovered, called

of 42, derees, 20, minutes were imployed for a farther discourry of these Coasts: And if any good occation were offered, to leave as many men as wee could spare in the Country. Being victualled for eleven or twelve moneths, at the charges of the Honourable Sir Iohn Popham Knight, Lord chiefe Inflice of England, Sir Fardinando Gorges Knight, Captaine of the Fort of Plimonth, torether with divers other worthipfull Knights, Gentlemen and Merchants of the West Countrye: John Stoneman of Plimonth being Pilot, who had beene in the forefaid parts of Virginia the yeere before with George Warmonib: The Maitets name was Niebolas Hine of Cockington, neere

The last day of August wee fell with the He of Madera, where we watered and refreshed our Madera. felues, and flayed three dayes, being very kindly vied by the Inhabitants. The third day of September wee departed from thence, pailing betweene Gomora and Palma, two of the Canary Iles, and from thence were driven by contrary winds, to take a more Southerly course then we intended, and to foent more then fixe weekes before wee could recover any of the Ant-Iles. The first that wee could recouer, was the Ile of Saint Lucia, in the Latitude of 14, degrees, 20. minutes, Saint Lucia, where we refreshed our selves with Wood and Water, And faw certaine of the Saugees there about fortie or fiftie, came vnto vs at our Ship in one of their Cannoas, bringing vnto vs Tobacco, Potatos, Plantins, and Caffans Bread, the which Sauages had flaine more then fortie of our Nati- Fortic Enelife on, the yeere before 1605, as after wee understood by Philip Glafco, and Miles Pett, being flaine by Sauan two of Captaine Nicholas, Saint Johns company, which was there treacherously slaine a-

20 mong the reft.

Having flayed heare three dayes, about the two and twentieth of October we departed thence to the Northward. And in passing by the Ile of Dominica, wee chanced to see a white Flag put Dominica forth on the shoare, whereat maruelling, wee supposed that some Christians had sustained shipwrack their. And forthwith a Cannoa came off from the shoare towards vs., which when they came neere, being very little wind, we layed our Ship by the lee and flayed for them a little, and when they were come within a little diffance of the Ship, wee perceived in the Cannoa a Friar, who cried aloud in the Latine tong e, faying, I befeech, as you are Christians, for Christ his Friar Blofus fake to shew some mercy and compassion on mee, I am a Preacher of the Word of God, a Friar of his request, the Order of Franciscus in Smill, by name Friar Blasim. And that hee had beene there fixteene o moneths a Slave vinto those Savages; and that other two Friars which were of his company they had murthered and throwne into the Sea. We demanded of him then, how he got fo much fauour to preferre his life his Brethren being murthered : Hee answered, because hee did shew the Sauages how to fit them Sayles for their Cannoas, and to to eafe them of much labour often in rowing.

which greatly pleafed the Sauages as appeared, for wee faw them to vie fayles in their Cannoas. which hath not beene feene before. Then we demanded of him where they had this Linnen Cloth to make those Sayles : hee anfwered. That about two yeeres before that, three Gallions comming to the West Indies were cast away on the Ile of Gwadalopa, where abundance of Linnen Cloth and other Merchandife was caft lugar on shoare. We demanded farther, what was the cause of his being in this place, and how he came

thither: he answered, That the King of Spaine did every yeere, fend out of every great Monastery certaine Friars into the remote parts of the Indies, both to fecke to conuert the Sauges . as also to feeke out what benefits or commodities might be had in those parts, and also of what force the Gansesof veet-Sausges were of, and what number of them were in the feuen Ant-Iles, viz. Saint Vincent Grana- ly fending of do, Saint Lucia, Mattalma, Dominica, Gwadalopa, Aifey. The which the faid Friat Blalem faid Frist out of he had diligently noted and observed, and did hope to make perfect relation of such great bene. Spaine. fits and riches as was to be drawne from thence, as he doubted not but would bee greatly accepted of his King, if hee might line to returne to declare it : For, faid hee, I have feene in one River discending from the Mountaines in the Ile of Dominica, the Sand to glitter like Gold or find Copper, whereupon I tooke some of it, and chewed it betweene my teeth, and found it perfect Mettall, the Sauages noting me, began to have fome realousie of me, so as I durst not take any farther nica.

go notice of it, neither would they fuffer him forward to come neere to that place. And farther hee faid, That if the great plentie of divers Fruits and Roots fit for mans fustenance were pertectly knowne, together with the Sugar-canes that they have in those Iles, and the fertilitie of the foyle he thought it would be very shorely inhabited; and as for the number of Sauages there, as neere as we could understand, was scarce one thousand of all forts of men, women, and children in all the faid feuen Hes.

Now, being moved with pitrie at the lamentable complaint, and humble fuit of this distressed Friar, wee tooke him into our Ship, and fent away the Sauages much discontented. And from thence wee fayled to the lie of Saint John De-port-rice, where on the nine and twentieth of Octo- They land the 60 ber, wee arrived on the Southfide, and forthwith fent the Friar on shoare, and delivered him to two Heardimen, which most thankfully received him, and of their courtesie brought vs a fat Cow. and proferred vs more with Hogs, Calues, or any thing elfe that they could procure vs in recompence of the good deed done to the Friar.

Wee departed from thence, and fayled out betweene the Iles of Saint Iohn De-portrico; and

Historia standing away to the Northward, And leaving the great shoulds called Abrion, on our Larboord fide, being in the Latitude of 21, and 22, degrees, from thence Westward, our course North North-west, and North-west and by North, vistil wee were in the Latitude of 27. degrees or better, and about one hundred and eightie leagues from Saint Iohn de Port Rice. In this place having had a very great florme of Wind and Raine continuing fiftie fixe houres

and more before on the tenth day of Nouember, about ten of the clocke in the morning, fuddenly we found our felues in the middeft of a Fleet of eight Sayle of thips in a very thicke force of happy hapfall mift and raine, so as we could not see them before they were very neere, and within shot of them. among Spa- wherein three of them were on the wind-ward of vs, on a third and fourth more to lee-ward: those at the wind-ward came rome vnto vs, and shot at vs , requiring vs to speake with their IC Admirall. When we law that by no meanes we could avoid them, but that they would freake with vs. we put abroad our Colours, and went toward the Almirall, before wee came vnto him. he likewite throoke downe our Sayle, and came under his lee, demaning his pleafure: the other thip which first that vs, all our Sayles being downe, and that our mayne Sayle in pieces lying on the Decke. And forthwith the Admiral came on board of vs , with two and twentie men in their

They are bor-

ded, taken and thins Boate with Rapiers, Swords, and halfe-pikes. We being all in peace flood readie to entertayne them in peace. But affoone as they were entred on boord of vs, they did most cruelly beate vs.all, and wounded two of our Company in the heads with their Swords, not sparing our Captayne nor any. Also they wounded Affacement, one of the Sauages aforesaid, most cruelly in feuerall places in the bodie, and thruft quite through the arme, the poore creature creeping voder a Cabbin for feare of their rigour : and as they thrust at him, wounding him, he cried still. King Iames, King Iames, King Iames his ship, King Iames his ship. Thus having beaten wall downe vnder the Deckes, prefently they beat vs vp againe, and thrust vs ouer-boord into their Boate, and so sent vs on boord of the Admirall ship. Neither would they suffer any of vs to speake a word, to shew the cause of our passing the Seas in these parts. Neyther regarded they any thing. our Commission which the Captayne held forth voto them in his hand : votill that the Admirall with the Company of foure other of the ships, had rifled spoyled, and delivered all the Merchandize and goods of the ship among them : which beeing done, they also divided vs beeing thirtie persons in all into the said five ships, by seven, six, sive, and soure to a ship.

King Tames his refpe aed by Spaniards.

> Three of the former eight Sayle made Sayle away, and neuer came neere vs, neither were partakers of our spoyle. Then they also repayred our Maine Sayle which was torne with the shot aforesaid, and put their men into her. And after because they could not make her to sayle well, they tooke two of our men, and put into her to helpe them, the other fine ships and our ship kept company two or three dayes together. After this they separated themselves either from other, not through any tempest or storme, but through wilfull negligence or simple Ignorance, by shaping contrary courfes the one from the other. So as not two of them kept company together. My selfe and fixe more of our company in the Vice-Admirall (of the burthen of one hundred and eightie tunnes; called the Peter of Siudi, the Captaynes name was Audress Barbear) being a 40 lone, and having loft the company of the Fleet, continued our courfe vntill the middle of December : at which time being about twentie leagues off from the He of Santa Maria, one of the Iles of the Azares, the Vice-Admiral and the whole company dilliving the great Ignorance of the Pilot, because he had told them ten dayes before that he was very neere the Hands, and had waited all this time, and could find any of them, entreated me very earneftly to flew my skill. And the Pilot himselse brought mee his Instruments , and besought mee most earnestly to affift him , and to appeare the company. Whereunto by there much importunitiel yeelded, And by Gods affistance on Christmasse Eeue, after our English account, I brought them safe to the Barre of Saint Lucas , being the first thip of the whole Fleet that arrived there.

French cout-

One of the ships of this Fleet, by the great Ignorance of the Spamsh Masters, Pilots, and Ma- 50 riners was driven beyond all the Coaft of Spaine, into Burdeaux in Gafcorne, In which shippe the Officersof the Admiraltie of France, finding foure of our Englishmen prisoners vader the Deckes in hold; to wit, Master Daniell Tucker, who was our Cape Merchant, Pierce Gliddon and two others , did very friendly set them at libertie ; and the said Daniel Tucker presently arrested the Spanish ship and goods beeing of great value, which of long time remay-

neth under arreft. The good Duke of Medina hearing of the arrivall of certaine English prisoners taken here, the Coast of the West Indies, ant command to the Captaynes of the Spanish ships, to bring four of the chiefest to be brought before him. Whereupon my felfe, Master Thomas Saint lohn, lohn Walrond our Steward, and William Stone our Carpenter were brought before him. The ship wherein 62 Mafter Challons was, was not yet come.

Master Danid Neull an Englishman dwelling in Saint Lucas , was appointed our Interpretor. And then the Duke required me vpon my oath to yeeld a true and faithfull answere, according to the whole state and manner of our Voyage and proceedings, which I did, according to the former Relation afore written, wherevpon his Excellencie seplyed vinto the Spanis Captaynes

which had brought we laying, it this bee true which this Englishman affirmeth, you have recally wronged these men. And to commanded them to proude meate, drinke, and at ledging for vs, and to bring vs againe the next day before him. They fent vs nevertheleffe to Simil, where wee were throught to a Dutchmans house, called Signior Petro, where we were real onably lodged, and entertayned that night .

Thorsext morning being New yeeres day we were brought before the President of Simil, at Their impris the Contractation, who hearing of our comming, and not vouchfaling to fpeake with vs, fent forment, foure Officers to vs. and call vs into Priton. Where for the space of fine dayes wee had publike altowance, but fuch as poore men which were there Prifoners, also did of their mereie bestow on

10 vs:Atlength after many humble Sures; and earnest Petitions ex libited to the President, we had a Ruilbor Plate allowed to each man a day, which is fixe pence English, which by reason of the dearshot all fores of wiethall in those parts, will not goe fo far as three pence in England.

And foat feuerall times, within one moneth after eleuen more of our Company were commiteiden Prilon, as they came home, whereof our Captaine was one. Notwithstanding that the good Duke of Medica had discharged both him and all those of his Company, which came into Spains with him, and willed him to goe home to the Court of England, or to the Court of Spaine-where he thought to have best reliefe for his poore imprisoned Company. Whereupon Niebotas Hime our Matter, and two more of our men wifely forefeding what was like to bee the Hine, made haite away out of the Citie, and to got passage and escaped into England.

Before the comming of our Captaine to Similymy felte and eleven more of my Company were examined before the President of the Contractation : who finding no suft cause of offence in vs. did offen earneftly examine me of the manner and intuation of the Countrie of Virginia, together word the Commodities and benefit thereof. And after the comming of our Captaine, they likewite examined him to the fame purpole. We answered both to one purpole, according to our Committion in writing, which the Spaniards at our taking at Sea, had preferred and delivered vo unto the hands of the President. Within few dayes after, they gave our Captaine and Master Thomas, Saint John, libertie of mayne Prilon, upon the fecuritie of two English Merchants, which were Matter William Rapier, and Mafter John Peckeford, whereof the later is dwelling and maried in Startl. The rest of the Company being one and twentie in Prison, continued still in miserable 30 effure. An Jabout two moneths after, Robert Cooke of London one of our Company fell fick of a

Floxe, whereof he languished three moneths and more, and by no meanes that wee could make could get him forth to bee cured, although wee frent more then fixtie Rials in Supplicaues and Sines to get him out. At length being dead, they cauled his bodie to bee drawne vp and downe the Priton by the heeles, naked, in most contemptible manner, crying. Behold the Lutheran, as fue of hers of our Company beeing then in Prifon beheld and fo laid him under the Conduit, and Cruell imme powred water into his dead bodie. This done, they cut off his Eares, Nofe and Members, as the nitie, Spaniar di themfelues confessed vinto vs, and so conneyed his bodie wee could never learne whether, although we profered them money to have his dead corps to burie it.

Shortly after Nathaniel Humfrie our Boatswaine was stabbed into the belly with a Knife by 40 a Spaniard, which was a flue in the Prifon, and fourteene dayes after dyed, who beging dead I went vnto the Keeper of the Prison, defiring to buy his dead bodie to burie it, and so for twenty Rials I bought his bodie, and buried it in the field. Then we befought the Prefident for Juffice on this flaue which had flaine our Boatfwaine: he demanded what we would have of the flaue. And we requested, that as he had flaine an honest and worthy man of ours causelesse, that hee mighe die for it according to the Law. The Prefident answered no, but if we would have him condemned for two or three yeares more to the Gallies he should. For find hee, The King of Spaine will Spaine Prefinot gime the life of the worst Slane that be bath, for the best Subject the King of England bath , and to dents respect fent vs away with this answere. Whereupon being out of all hope of Justice with the President, we repaired vnto the Regent being an Ecclesiasticall man, one of the chiefest ludges of the Citie, deiring likwife Iustice on the Murtherer aforefaid : who in kind tearmes promifed vs Iustice, niards, and so willed vs to retaine countell and Atturnies to profecute our Sute; which weedid accor-

dingly, and foafter two moneths Sute, and the cost of more then two hundred Rials on Lawyers, Scribes and other Officers at length we had him hanged by the fanour of the Regent, which otherwife we had never obtained. And now I may not omit to flew how I got the libertie to have the fcope of the Citie for my Race to come, and go. Having beene three moneths in close Prifon with our poore company as aforeiaid. At length I got the fauour of two Englishmen inhabiting in Simil named Constantine

Collins, and Henry Roberts who did ingage themselves for me. The Spaniards were very defirous to have me to ferue their State, and proffered me great wages, which I refuted to doe, affirming. 60 that this imployment which I had in hand, was not yet ended untill which time I would not determine any.

Then the Alcadie maior of the Contractation House and divers others Merchants perswaded me to make them tome descriptions and Maps of the Coast and parts of Virginia, which I also refused to doe. They being discontent with me, fent mee againe to Prison, where I continued 000000

Hard hearted

two and twentie dayes, and then I making meanes onto my good friends borrowed money, and fo gave divers bribes vnto the keepers of the Prison, whereupon they gave mee libertie to goe a. broad agains into the Citie at my pleasure. And wayting every day for some order from the Course of Spaine of our discharge, there came none but delayes and prolonging of our troubles and miferies. So as we began almost to despaire of libertie.

ss. 30 as we began amont to despatch the selling in Simil, named Hanfe Elosse, sent vitto mee to for ake with me, which when I came vato him, fignified vato me what he had learned of one of the Iudges of the Contractation: who told him as he reported vnto me, that the Spaniards had or the runges of the contract of the state o a great nate vinto me about an interest of those Sauages; and that they thought it was userer in Virginia, at the bringing into England of those Sauages; and that they thought it was is by my infligation to perferale our State to inhabit those parts. And because they had received to imall knowledge of those parts by my confession; and that they could not perswade mee to ferue that State, neither would make them any note draught, or descriptions of the Countrie. They resolved to bring to the Racke and torment me, whereby to draw some further knowledge by cont. fion from me, before any discharge might come for vs. The which this honest Merchant confidering, and the Innocencie of our case, gaue me to vnderstand. And wished mee rather to flie and preferre my felfe, then to fland to their mercie on the Racke, I hearing this the next morning, being the three and ewentieth of October, fuddenly fled from Simil, and with me Mafter Thomas Saint John aforelaid, and one other of our Company named James Stoneman my Broiter 1 10000 Saint 1000 atortians, and charges bestowed on the Keepers of the Prilon a little before I had got forth to bee cured of a Callenture. Thus wee fled from Simil, leaving Mafter Henry Challons our Captaine at libertie vpon fureties, and fixteene more of our Company in close Prilon. From thence on the fine and twentieth of October, wee came to a Mount in the Cundado,

where finding no pallage by any thipping into England, France or Flanders. Wee travelled through Alemnie, to the Port of Seinnall, and finding no paffage there, wee travelled to Lastone in Portugall. Where were arrived the one and thirtieth of October, and there found flips reaste bound to goe to England, but the wind was contrary for fourteene dayes. At the time of our abode at L Bone, wee understood that three Carrickes were come from

the East Indies: whereof one was arrived fately at Liftone tenne dayes before our comming this ther. Another was driven to leeward, and put in Vergo, as wee heard. The third Carracke 20 beeing at the Ile of Tercera, was to leake that they could not bring her home into Portugal, but valoaded her into three of the King of Spainer great Armadoes, to bring the goods more fately to Lilbone. Which Ships at there comming before the mouth of the River of Libone in the night within three dayes after my comming thither, were all cast away on cercaine shouldes there called Ofcachopos, or as wee commonly call them the Caschops, where of nine hundred men, as the Portagalli reported, but only thir: ie feuen were faued, and of the goods very little at all : because the said ships being cast away on the cbbe. The goods were driven off into the Sea, the dead bodies of many that were drowned, I my felfe faw call on the shore with the fundry wrackes of the parts of the Ships Mails and Yards, with other wracke of Caske, Chifts, and fuch like in great abundance.

The fourteenth day of November the winde being faire, wee tooke passige from Lisbone in a small Barke belonging to Bideford, called the Maget, and on the source and twentieth of the Same we were landed at Saint lues in Cornwall, and from thence I hasted to Plimmenib, where Ishewed vnto Sir Ferdinando Gorges and divers others the Adventurers, the whole Discourse of our vnhappie Voyage together with the mileries that wee had, and did indure vnder the Spania ards hands. And then halted with all the speed I could toward the Court of England, where I was affured to my great comfort; that they either were alreadie, or very facitly should bee

Before my departure from Simil, I should have remembred, that about Whitsonide last deliuered. there were brought into the Prilon of the Contractation there, two youngmen brought out of 50 the West Indies, in one of the Kings Gallions, which were of Captaine lobn Legats company of Plimmouth, which departed out of England, about the latter end of July 1606, bound for the River of Amazon; as hee told me before his going forth, where hee had beene two years before. And comming on the Coast of Brafillas thole young men (the name of one of them is here mowhen is illiam Adams horne in Plimpton neere Pl.mmonth) reported voto mee whether falling to the they had done leeward of the River of Amazons, or deceived by his Matter they knew not. And not being able to being home to being home to recour the faid River, were confit ayned to refresh in the West Index, in which time there mer inip, and fell a great diforder between the fail Captaine Legar and his company, to as one of his company, Spanish fulliting in a broyle within themselves aboard there ship, the the said Captaine Legar, whether in his owne private quarrell or with the confent of the relt of the Company, they could not tell mee. 62 But this is the more to bee suspected for that he alwayes in former Voyages dealt very straidy much com-mendedura mendedura After his death his company comming to the lle of Pmes, on the Southfide mendedor a company, Arter in a death his company comming to the lie of Pmet, on the Sudamer of Cabs, to retreft themselves, being eighteen perions were circumsented by the trechere of the Campany of Cabs. pert Sea min, the Spannards, and were there betrayed, and taken Priloners : and within foure dayes after, of

Cap. John Legat of Plim-Murine? Cap. Legat flaine by his

Three thips

cers. Ihiue

CHAP.2. Slaves to the Spaniards. New Englands Tryals. Benefit of filling, 1827

eighteene persons, fourteene were hanged the other soure being youths were faued to serue the Spaniards, whereof, two of them, refuting to ferue longer in there ships, were put into the Prifon at Simil, the other two remayne still as il sues to the Spaniards.

This I had the rather noted to the end, that it may be the better confidered what numbers of thins and men have gone out of England, fince the conclution of peace betweene England and Spaine, in the way of honest Trade and Traffique, and how many of them have miferably misearried. Having beene flaine, drowned, hanged or pittifully captived, and thrust out of their ships and all their goods.

10 Reader, I had by me the Voyage of Captaine Thomas Hanham, (written by himfelfe) unto Saga-dahoc: also the written lownals of Master Raleigh Gilbert which stayed and fortified there in that unseasonable Winter (fit to freeze the heart of a Plantation) of Iames Davies, John Eliot, Gr. but our voluminousnesse makes me afraid of offending nicer and queasier stomackes: for which cause I bane omitted them , even after I had with great labour fitted them to the Preffe: as I bane also done a written large Tractate of Mawauthen, and the Voyage of Master Edward Harlie (one of the first Planters with Cap. Poplian) and Nicholas Hobson to those parts 1611. with diners Letters from Cap. Popliam and others. You must observe, that it was in those times called by the name of Virginia, and the Northerne Plantation or Colonie. But Captaine Smith (a man which bath fo many Irons in our fire) presented a Booke of the Countrie to Prince Charles his Highnesse, with a Map of the Countrey. 20 who filed it (as our hopes are, be will one day make it) New England, and altered the Sauge names of places to English. Hee made one Voyage thisber, Anno 1614, and the next yeere beganne another. which taken by Frenchmen, he was not able to make up: but in testimonie of bis love to bis Countres bere, and of his hopes there bath written divers Bookes. One called A Description of New Eng. land (in which his faid Doyages are described, with the description of the Country and many Arenments to incite men to that undertaking; which I had also prepared for the Presse, but for the former feares have omitted) the other called New Englands Trials twice or thrice printed, out of which I base added thus much, that the World may fee the benefit to bee made by fishing, and may also be better acquainted with the successe and succession of New Englands Affaires.

CHAP. III.

Extracts of a Booke of Captaine IOHN SMITH, printed 1622, called New Englands tryalls, and continuing the Storie thereof, with Motines to the businesse of fishing there.

The benefit of fishing, as Master Dee reporteth in his Brittish Menarchie.



E faith that it is more then foure and fortie yeeres agos, and it is more then for its yeeres ince he writin, that the Herrino Bother man of the the King of Spaine, were five hundred, befides one hundred Frenchmen , and three or foure hundred Savle of Flemmings.

The Coalts of Wales and Lancalbire was vied by three hundred Sayle of ftrangers. Ireland and Baltemore fraugted veerly three hundred Sayle of Spaniards, where King Edward the Sixt intended to have made a firong Caffle, because of the Strait, to have Tribute for fifning.

Blacke Rock was yearely filled by three or four hundred Sayle of Spaniards, Portugals, and 50 Bishiveri.

Muster Geneleman, and many Fisher-men and Fish-mongers, with whom I have conferred, report, The Hallanders raise yeerely by Herring, Cod, and Ling, 3000000, pounds.

English and French by Salt-fish, Poore John, Salmons, and Pilchards, 300000. pounds. Hambreugh and the Sound, for Sturgion, Lobilers and Eeles, 100000 pounds.

Cape Blanke for Tunny and Mullir, by the Biskiners and Spaniards, 30000 pounds. But divers other learned experienced Observers say, though it may seeme incredible, That the Duke

of Medica receive th yeerely tribute of the Fishers for Tunny, Mullit and Purgos, more then

Laber's hath fenen hundred Ships : Hamborough fix hundred : Embden lately a Fisher Towne. one thousand foure hundred, whose Customes by the profit of fishing hath made them so power-

Holland and Zealand, not much greater then Torkefbire , hath thirtie walled Townes , foure O000000 2

one of two bun fred Tuns got thither in a moneth, and went full frame ht for Spane, the reft returned to Plimoth well fraught, and their men well, within five moneths, odde dayes.

From London went two more, one of two hundred Tuns, got thither in fixe weekes, and Proofe 6, 1616. within fixe weekes after, with fortie foure men and boyes was full fraught, and returned agains to into England within five moneths and a few dayes; the other went to the Canaries with dry fifth,

which they fold at a great rate, for Rials of eight, and as I heard turned Pyrats.

I being at Plimoth prouided with three good Ships, yet but fifteene men to flav with me in the Proofe 7, 1617.

Countrey, was Wind-bound three moneths, as was many a hundred faile more, fo that the feafon being past, the Ships went for New found-land, whereby my defigne was frustrate, which was to me and my friends no small losse, in regard whereof here the Westerne Commissioners, in the behalfe of themselves and the rest of the Company, contracted with me by Articles indented vider our hands, to be Admirall of that Country during my life, and in the renewing of their Letters Patents fo to be nominated, halfe the fruites of our endeuours theirs, the reft our owne; being thus ingaged; now the bufinelle doth profper, fome of them would willingly forget mee; 20 but I am not the first they have deceived.

There was four good Ships prepared at Plimoth, but by reston of their difagreement, the fea- Proofe 8, 1618; fon to waited as onely two went forward, the one being of two hundred Tunnes, returned well fraught for Plimith, and her men in health, within five moneths; the other of eightie Tuns, went for Bilbow with dry fish, and made a good returne. In this voyage Edward Roweroft, alias Stallings, a valiant Souldier, that had beene with mee in Virginia, and feuen yeeres after went with mee from Plimoth towardes New England, with Thomas Darmer, an understanding and an industrious Gentleman to inhabite it; all whose names, with our proceedings, you may read at large in my description of New England, upon triall before the Judge of the Admiraltie, how when wee had past the worlt, for pure cowardise the Master and Sailer ran away with the Ship and all I had and 40 left mee alone among eight or nine Frenchmen of War . in the veere 1614. This Stallings went

now againe in those Ships, and having some wrong offered him in New England by a Frenchman, he tooke him, and as he writ to mee, he went with her to Vremia with fifth, to trade with them for such commodities as they might spare ; hee knew both these Countries well, yet hee promiled mee the next Spring to meete mee in New England; but the Ship and he perished in

This yeere againe, divers Ships intending to goe from Plimoth, fo difagreed, as there went but Proofe 9, 1619; one of two hundred Tunnes, who flayed in the Countrey about fix weekes, with thirtie eight men and boyes, had her fraught, which thee fold at the first peny, for two thousand one hundred pounds, besides the Furs : so that every poore Sayler, that had but a single share, had his charges, and fixteene pound ten shillings, for his feuen moneths worke. M. Thomas Darmer, having lived about a yeere in New-found-land, returning to Plimath, went for New England in this Ship, and not onely confirmes what I have writ, but so much more approved of it, that he stayed there with five or fix men in a little Boat : finding two or three Frenchmen among the Sauges, who had loft their Ship, augmented his company, with whom hee ranged the Coalt to Virginia, where he was kindly welcommed and well refreshed; thence returned to New England againe, where hauing beene a yeere, in his backe returne to Virginia, he was so wounded by the Sauages, hee dyed vpon it, them escaped were relieved at Virginia. Let not men attribute their great adventures and vntimely deaths to vnfortunatenelle, but rather wonder how God did folong preferue them, with fo small meanes to doe so much, leaving the fruites of their labours, to bee an encouragement to 50 those our poore undertakings; and this for advantage as they writ unto mee, that God had laid this Countrey open for vs , and flaine the most part of the Inhabitants by cruell Wars and a mortall difease; for where I had feene one hundred or two hundred people, there is fearce ten to bee found. From Pembrocks Bay, to Harrintons Bay, there is not twentie; from thence to Cape Anne, some thirtie; from Taulbuts Bay to the River Charles, about fortie, and not any of them touched with any ticknesse, but one poore Frenchman that dyed.

For to make triall this yeere, there is gone fixe or feuen fayle from the West Countrey, onely Profeso, 1620 to fish, three of whom are returned, and as I was certainly informed, made to good a voyage, that euery Sayler for a fingle share had twentie pounds for his seuen moneths worke, which is more then in twentie months hee should have gotten, had he gone for wages any where. Now, though 60 all the former Ships have not made fuch good voyages, as they expected, by fending opinionated vnskilfull men, that had not experienced diligence to faue that they tooke, nor take that there was; which now patience and practife hath brought to a reasonable kinde of perfection : in defpite of all detractors and calumniations, the Country yet hath fatisfied all, the defect hath bin in their ving or abating it, not in it felfe nor mee.

hundred Villages, 20000.faile of Ships and Hoyes; thirtie fixe thousand are Fisher-men, whereof one hundred are Doggers, seuen hundred Pinkes and Wel-boates, seuen hundred Frand Boates. Britters and Tode-boats, with one thousand three hundred Busses, besides three hundred that veerely fish about Tarmonth, where they fell their Fish for Gold; and fifteene yeeres ago they had more then 116000. Sea-faring men.

The fishing thippes doe take yeerely two hundred thousand Last of fish, twelue barrels to 2 Last, which amounted to 3000000. pounds by the Fishermens price, that fourteene yeeres 220e did pay for their Tenths 300000. pound; which venting in Pumerland, Spruffia, Denmarke Lefland, Russia, Swetbland, Germany, Netberlands, England, or elie-where, &c. make their returnes in a yeere about 7000000, pounds; and yet in Holland they have neither matter to build ships. nor Merchandize to let them forth; yet by their industrie they as much increase, as other Nations decay. But leaving these vncertainties as they are, of this I am certaine :

That the Coast of England, Scotland, and Ireland, the North Sea, with Ireland and the Sound. New-foundaland, and Cape Blanke, doe ferue all Europe, as well the Land Townes as Ports, and all the Christian shipping, with these forts of Staple fish which is transported, from whence it is taken, many a thousand mile, viz. Herring, Salt-fish, Poore-John, Sturgion, Mullit, Tunny, Porgos, Cauiare, Buttargo.

Now feeing all these forts of fish, or the most part of them, may be had in a Land more fertile, temperate, and plentifull of all necessaries for the building of ships, Boates, and houses, and the nourithment of man; the Seasons are so proper, and the fishings so neere the habitations, we 20 may there make, that New England bath much advantage of the most of those parts, to serve all Emope far cheaper then they can, who at home haue neither Wood, Salt, nor Food, but at great rates; at Sea nothing but what they carrie in their ships, an hundred or two hundred leagues from

But New Englands fishings is neere land, where is helpe of Wood, Water, Fruites, Fowles, Corne, or other refreshings needfull; and the Terceras, Mederas, Canaries, Spaine, Portugal, Pronance, Sanoy, Sicula, and all Italy, as convenient Markets for our dry fish, greene fish, Sturgion, Mullit, Cauiare, and Buttargo, as Normay, Swetbland, Littuania, or Germany, for their Herring, which is here also in abundance for taking; they returning but Wood, Pitch, Tarre, Sope-affes, Cordage, Flaxe, Waxe, and fuch like Commodities: we, Wines, Oyles, Sugars, Silkes, and fuch
Merchandize as the Straits affoord, whereby our profit may equalize theirs; betides the increase of shipping and Mariners. And for proofe hereof:

With two ships sent out at the charge of Captaine Marmaduke Roydon, Captaine George Langam, Master John Buley and W. Skelton, I went from the Downes the third of March, and arrived in New England the last of April, where I was to have stayed but with ten men to keepe posich fion of thote large Territories, Had the Whales proued, as curious information had affured mee and my Aduentures, (but these things failed.) So having but fortie fine men and boyes, we built seuen Boates, thartie leuen did fish; my felte with eight others ranging the Coast, I tookea plot of what I could fee, got acquaintance of the Inhabitants; 1100. Beuer skinnes, a hundred Martines, and as many Otters. Fortie thousand of dry fish wee fent for Spaine, with the Salt-fish, 40 traine Oyle and Furres, I returned for England the eighteenth of July, and arrived fafe with my Company the latter end of August. Thus in fixe moneths I made my Voyage out and home; and by the labour of flue and tortie, got neere the value of fifteene hundred pounds in those grole Commodities. This yeere also one went from Plimmouth, fet out by divers of the Ile of Wight, and the West Countrie, by the directions and instructions of Sir Ferdinando Gorge, Spent their victuals, and returned with nothing.

The Virginia Company vpon this fent foure good ships; and because I would not undertake it Proofe 2, 1615. The Virginia Company vpon this sent route good mips; and because I would the men that for them, having ingaged my felfe to them of the West, the Londoners entertained the men that came home with me. They fet sayle in Ianuary, and arrived there in March; they found fish enough vntill halfe Iune, fraughted a ship of three hundred tunnes, went for Spane, which was 50 taken by the Turker; one went to Virginia to relieue that Colonie, and two came for England with the greene fish, traine Oyle and Furres within fix moneths.

In Ianuary with two hundred pounds in each for aduenture, and fix Gentlemen well furnished, I went from London to the foure Ships was promifed, prepared for mee in the West Country, but I found no such matter; notwithstanding at the last, with a labyrinth of trouble I went from Plimeth, with a Ship of two hundred Tunnes, and one of fiftie : when the filhing was done onely with fifteene I was to flay in the Countrey; but ill weather breaking all my Malts, I was forced to returne to Plimoth, where rather then lofe all, reimbarking my felfe in a Barke of fixite Tuns, how I escaped the English Pyrats and the French, and was betrayed by foure Frenchmen of War, I refer you to the description of New England : but my Vice-Admirall, not withit anding the late- 63 neffe of the yeere, fetting forth with me in March, the Londoners in Ianuary, shee arrived in May, they in March, yet came home well fraught in August, and all her men well, within five moneths, odde dayes.

Profe 4: 1616. The Landoners ere I returned from France, for all their loffe by the Turkes, which was valued a

O 0 0 0 0 0 0 3

1829

A Plantation in New Enz-Presfe 11. 1610

1840

TPon these inducements, some few well disposed Gentlemen and Merchants of London and other places prouided two Ships, the one of one hundred and fixtie Tuns, the other of fenentie; they left the Coalt of England the three and twentieth of August, with about one hundred and twentie persons, but the next day the leffer Ship sprung a leake, that forced their returne to Thmouth, where discharging her and twentie Passengers, with the great Ship, and a hundred persons besides Sailers, they fet faile againe the fixth of September, and the ninth of Nouember fell with Cape lames; but being pettred nine weekes in this leaking vnwholfome Ship, lvine wet in their Cabbins, most of them grew very weake and weary of the Sea, then for want of experience ranging to and againe fixe weekes before they found a place they liked to dwell on, forced to lie on the bare ground without couerture in the extremitie of Winter, fortie of them dyed, te and fixtie were left in very weake estate at the Ships comming away, about the fifth of April sollowing, and arrived in England the fixth of May.

Immediately after her arrivall from London , they fent another of fiftie five Tuns to funniv them, with thirtiefeuen persons, they set saile in the beginning of July, but being croffed by Westerly winds, it was the end of August ere they could passe Plimouth, and arrived at New Plimouth in New England the eleventh of November , where they found all the reople they left in April, as is faid, lufty and in good health, except fix that dyed. Within a moneth they returned here for England, laded with Clapboord, Wainscot, and Walnut, with about three Hogsheads of Beauer skins, and some Saxefras, the thirteenth of December, and drawing neere our Coast, was taken by a Frenchman, fet out by the Marquis of Cera Gouernour of Ile Den, on the Coaft of 20 Porton, where they kept the Ship, imprisoned the Master and Companie, tooke from them to the value of about five hundred pounds; and after fourteene dayes fent them home with a poore supply of Victuall, their owne being denoured by the Mai quis and his hungry feruants; they arrived at London the fourteenth of Februarie, leaving all them they found and carried to New England, well and in health, with victuall and Corne sufficient till the next Haruest.

The Copie of a Letter fent by this Ship.

A Letter from New Plimoth.

Quine Cousin, at our arrivall at New Plimoth in New England, wee found all our Friends and 30 Planters in good health, though they were left sicke and weake with very small meanes, the Indians round about us peaceable and friendly, the Country very pleasant and temperate, yeelding naturally of it selfe great flore of fruits, as Vines of diners forts in great abundance; there is likewise Walnuts, Chefnuts, Small-nuts and Plums, with much varietie of Flowers, Roots, and Hearbs, no leffe pleasant then wholfome and profitable : no place bath more Goofe-berries, and Stram-berries, nor better; Timber of all forts you have in England, doth coner the Land, that affords Beafts of diners forts, and great flockes of Turkies, Quailes, Pircons and Parsridges: Many great Lakes abounding with Filb, Fowle, Beauers, and Otters. The Sea offoords vs as great vientie of all excellent forts of Sea-fift, as the Rivers and Iles daily varietie of wild Fowle of most vefull forts. Mynes we find to cur thinking, but neither the goodnesse nor qualitie wee know. Better Graine cannot be then the Indian Corne, if we will plant it upon as good ground 40 as a man need defire. Wee are all Free-holders, the rent day doth not trouble vs, and all those good bleflings we base, of which and what wee list in their feafons for taking. Our company are for most part very religious honest people; the Word of God sincerely taught us enery Sabbath : fo that I know not any thing a contented mind can here want. I defire your friendly care to fend my Wife and Children is mee, where I wish all the Friends I have in England, and fo I rest

Your louing Kinsman William Hilton.

From the West Countrey went ten or twelve Ships to Fish, which were all well fraughted; those that came first at Bilbow, made seuenteene pounds a single share, besiles Beauer, Otters, and Martinsskins; but some of the rest that came to the same Ports, that were already furnished, so glutted the Market, their price was abated, yet all returned fo well contented, they are a preparing to goe againe.

For this yearc

There is gone from the West of England one y to fish, thirtie five Ships, and about the last of April two more from London, the one of one hundred Tuns, the other of thirtie, with some fixtie Paffengers to supply the Plantation with all necessary proussions. Now though the Turke and French hath beene somewhat too busie, would all the Christian Princes but bee truly at vinite, as his Royall Maiesty our Soueraigne Lord and King delireth, feuentie saile of good Ships were surficient to fire, the most of his Coasts in the Lenant, and make such a guard in the Staits of Hele lespont, as would make the Great Turke himielfe more afraid in Constantinople, then the smallest Red Croste, crosses the Seas would be, either of any French, Piccaroun, or the Pyrates of Argere.

> An Abstract of Letters sent from the Colony in New England, July fixteene, 1622.

Since the newes of the Massacre in Virginia, though the Indians continue their monted friendlip Jet

are wee more wary of them then before; for their bands have beene embrued in much English bloud, onely by too much confidence, but not by force.

Here I must intreat a little your favours to digresse. They did not kill the Enolish, became they were Christians, but for their weapons and commodities, that were rare nouelties ; but now they feare we may beat them out of their Dens, which Lionsand Tygers would not admit but by force. But must this be an argument for an Englishman, or discourage any either in Virginia or New Eng-Land? No : tor I have tried them both. For Virginia, I kept that Countrey, with thirtie eight, and had not to eate but what we had from the Sausees. When I had ten menable to one abroad. our Common-wealth was very firong ; with fuch a number I ranged that vnknowne Countrey 10 fourteene weekes; I had but eighteen to fibdue them all , with which great Army I stayed fixe weeks before their greatest Kings habitations, till they had gathered together all the power they could; and yet the Dutchmen fent at a needleffe excessive charge did helpe Pombatan how to betrav mee.

Of their numbers wee were vncertaine ; but those two honourable Gentlemen, Captaine George Percie, and Captaine Francis West, two of the Phittiplaces, and some other such noble Gentlemen and resolute spirts bore their shares with me, and now living in England, did see me take this murdering Opechankanough, now their Great King by the long lock on his head, with my Pi- Opechancanough this murdering Opechanicanough, now their Great King by the long lock on his nead, with my rifield at his breaft, I led him among his greatest forces, and before wee parced, made him fill our mids of his ormids of his or-Barke of twentie Tuns with Corne. When their owne wants was fuch, I have given them part a- mie as Aubai-20 gain in pitty, & others have bought it again to plant their fields. For wronging a Souldier but the fa wis by Pi. value of a peny, I have caused Powbatan send his own men to lames Town to receive their punish- fora. ment, at my inferetion. It is true in our greatest extremity they shot me, slue three of my men, and by the folly of them that fled tooke me prifoner; yet God made Pocabontas the Kings Daughter the meanes to deluge me : and thereby taught mee to know their treacheries to preferue the reft. I: was also my chance in fingle combate to take the King of Palpaheob prifoner, and by keeping him, forced his subjects to worke in Chaines, till I made all the Countrey pay contribution having little elte-whereon to liue.

Twice in this time I was their Prefident, & none can fay in all that time I had a man flain; but for keeping them in that feare I was much blamed both there and heere: yet I left fine hundred 20 behind mee that through their confidence in fixe monethes came most to confusion, as you may reade at large in the description of Virginia. When I went first to those desperate designes, it coff me many a forgotte pound to hire men to goe; and prograftination caused more runne away then went. But after the Ice was broken, came many braue Voluntaries : not withflanding fince I came from thence, the Honorable Company have beene humble Suters to his Maieffie to get Vagabonds and condemned men to goe thither; nay, to much fcorned was the name of Virgnia, fome did chuse to be hanged ere they would goe thither, and were : yet for all the worst of spite. detraction and discouragement, and this lamentable Massacre, there are more honest men now fixers to goe, then ever have been conftrained knaves; and it is not voknowne to most men of voderstanding, how happy many of those Callumners doe thinke themselves, that they might bee 40 admitted, and yet pay for their passage to goe now to Vaginia: and had I but meanes to transport as many as would goe, I might have choice of ten thouland that would gladly bee in any of those new places, which were to bafely contemned by vngratefull hafe minds.

To range this Countrie of New England, in like manner I had but eight, as is faid, and amone ft their bruite conditions I met many of their filly incounters, and without any hurt, God be thanked; when your Weil Countrie men were many of them wounded, and much tormented with the Saunges that affaulted their Ship, as they did fay themfelues, in the first yeare I was there 1614. and though Mafter Hunt then Mafter with me, did most basely in stealing some Sauages from that coaff to fell, when he was directed to have gone for Spaine, yet that place was fo remote from Capamuck, where Epenem should have fraughted them with Gold Ore, that his fault could 50 be no caute of their bad luccelle, however it is alledged for an excuse. I speake not this out of vain glory, as it may be some gleaners, or some was never there, may censure mee : but to let all men be affored by those examples, what those Sauages are that thus strangely doe murder and betray our Co intrie men. But to the purpole.

What is already writ of the healthfulness of the agre, the richnesse of the soyle, the goodnesse of the Woods the abundance of Fruits, Fish, and Fowle in their season, they still affirme that have beene there now neer two yeeres, and at one draught they have taken one thou fand Baffes, and in one night twelve hog fboads of Herring. They are building a strong Fort, they hope shortly to finish, in the interior they are well provided : their number is about a hundred persons, all in health, and well neere sixtie Acres of ground well planted with Corne, befides their Gardens well replenshed with vefull fruits; and if their Adventu-60 rers would but furnish them with neees faries for fishing, their wants would quickly bee supplied. To supply them this dixteenth of October, is going the Paragon, with fixtie seuen persons, and all this is done by prinate mens par(:s. And to conclude in their owne words, should they write of all plenties they bane found, they thinke they should not be beleened.

For the twentie fixe fuyle of Ships, the most I can yet understand is .M. Ambrole Iennens of London;

and Master Abraham Jennens of Plimmoth Sent (their Abraham) a Ship of two hundred and twentie Tuns, and the Niehtingale of Porchmouth of a hundred : whose Fish at the first pente came to 21 50 pounds: in all they were fine and thirty faile: and wherein New found Land they shared fixe or fenen pounds for a common man, in New England they shared foureteene pounds; besides six Dutch and French Ships made wonderfull recurnes in Furres.

Thus you may see plainely the yearely successe from New England (by Utrginia) which hath bin fo cottly to this Kingdome, and fo deare to me, which either to fee penish or but bleede, pardon me though it pattionate me beyond the bounds of modesty, to have bin sufficiently able to forefee it, and had neither power nor meanes how to prevent it. By that acquaintance I have with them, I may call them my children, for they have bin my Wife, my Hawkes, my Hounds. 10 my Cards, my Dice, and in totall my best content, as indifferent to my heart as my left hand to my right : and not withstanding all those miracles of disasters have crossed both them and me vet were there not one Englishman remaining (as God be thanked there is some thousands) I would vet begin againe with as I mall meanes as I did at the first; not for that I have any secret encouragement from any I protest, more then lamentable experiences : for all their Discoueries I can yet heare of, are but Pigs of my owne Sowe; nor more strange to me then to heare one tell mee he hath gone from Billings gate and discouered Greenwich, Grauesend, Tilberry, Quinboron, Lee and Margit, which to those did neuer heare of them, though they dwell in England, might be made feeme some rare fecrets and great Countries vnknowne, except the Relation of Mafter Dirmer. But to returne : It is certaine, from Cannada and New England within these fixe yeares, hath 20 come neere 20000/Beuer Skins. Now had each of those Ships transported but some small quantitie of the most increasing Beails, Fowles, Fruites, Plants and Scedes, as I proiected by this time their increale might haue bin sufficient for a thousand men. But the desire of present gaine (in many) is so violent, and the endeuours of many undertakers so negligent, every one so regarding their private gaine, that it is hard to effect any publicke good, and impossible to bring them into a body, rule, or order, volesse both authority and money affist experiences. It is not a worke for every one to plant a Colony; but when a Houle is built, it is no hard matter to dwell in it. This requireth all the best parts of art, judgement, courage, honesty, constancy, diligence and experience to doe but neere well : your home-bred ingroffing projectors shall finde there a great difference betwixt faving and doing. But to conclude, the Fishing will goe forward if you plant 20 it or no; whereby a Colonie may be transported with no great charge, that in a short time might provide fuch fraughts to buy of vs there dwelling, as I would hope no Ship should goe or come empty from New England.

The charge of this is onely Salt, Nets, Hookes, Lines, Kniues, Irish Rugs, course Cloath, Beades, Glasse, and such like trash, onely for fishing and trade with the Sauages, beside our ownencessary prouisions, whose endeuouts will quickly defray all this charge: and the Sauages haueintreze ted me to inhabite where I will. Now all these Ships, till this last yeare, have bin fished within a fquare of two or three leagues, and not one of them all would aduenture any further, where questionlesse fiue hundred saile may have their fraught better then in Island, New found Land, or elsewhere, and be in their markets before the other can have their fish in their Ships, because New 40 Englands filhing begins with February, the other not till mid May : the progression hereof tends much to the advancement of Virginia and the Bermudas, whose emptie Ships may take in their fraught there, and would be a good friend in time of neede to the Inhabitants of New

CHAP. IIII

A Relation or Iournall of a Plantation settled at Plimoth in New England, and proceedings thereof; Printed 1622. and here abbreuiated.

found Land, &c.

Ednesday the fixt of September, the Winde comming East North-east, a fine [mall gile, we loofed from Plumoth, having bin kindly entertained and currecully red by dioers friends there dwelling, and after many difficulties in boilterous flormes, at length by Gods providence vpon the ninth of Nouember following, by breake of the day we espeed Land, which we deemed to be Cape [ed. and to

50

afterward it proued. Vpon the eleuenth of November, we came to an anchor in the Bay, which is a good harbonr and pleafant Bay, circled round, except in the entrance, which is about foure 63 miles ouer from land to land, compaffed about to the verie Sea with Oakes, Pines, Juniper, Saffafras, and other sweete Wood: it is a harbout wherein 1000, saile of Ships may safely ride, there weerelieued our felues with Wood and Water, and refreshed our people, while our Shallop was fitted to coast the Bay, to search for an habitation : there was the greatest store of Fowle that euer we faw.

And euerie day we faw Whales playing hard by vs, of which in that place, if weehad inftruments and meanes to take them, we might have made a verie rich returne, which to our great griefe we wanted. Our Master and his Mate, and others experienced in fishing, professed, wee might have made three or foure thousand pounds worth of Oyle; they preferred it before Green-Land Whale-fishing, and purpose the next winter to fish for Whale here : for Cod we affaied, but found none, there is good ftore no doubt in their featon. Neither got we anie fish all the time we lay there, but some few little ones on the shoare. We found great Mussles, and verie fat and full or Sea Pearle, but we could not eate them, for they made vs all ficke that did eate, as well failers as passengers; they caused to cast and scoure, but they were soone well againe. The Baie is to fo round and circling, that before we could come to anchor, we went round all the points of the Compaffe. We could not come neere the shoare by three quarters of an English mile, because of shallow water, which was a great prejudice to vs. for our people going on shoare were forced to Ill Landing. wade a Bow shoote or two in going aland, which caused manie to get colds and coughs, for it was manie times freezing cold weather.

This day before we came to harbour, observing some not well affected to unitie and concord, but gaue some appearance of faction, it was thought good there should be an association and agreement, that we should combine together in one bodie, and to submit to such government and Gouernours, as we should by common consent agree to make and choose, and set our hands to this that followes word for word.

N the name of God, Amen. We whose names are underwritten, the lovall Subjects of our dread Soueraigne Lord King James, by the grace of God of Great Britaine, France, and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, &c. Hauing undertaken for the glorie of God, and advancement of the Christian faith, and honor of our King and Countrie, a Voiage to plant the first Colonie in the Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnely and matually in the presence of G O D and one of another, couenant and combine our felues together in a civil bodie politike. for our better ordering and preservation, and furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by vertue hereof to enact, conflitute, and frame such sust and equal Lawes, Ordinances, acts, constitutions, offices from time to time, as shall be thought most meete and convenient for the generall 30 good of the Colonie: vnto which wee promife all due submission and obedience. In witnesse whereof we have here ynder suscribed our names. Cape God eleventh of November, in the yeare of the raigne of our Soueraigne Lord King I a M E s, of England, France and Ireland, 18, and of Scotland 54. Anno Domino 1 620.

The fame day fo foone as we could we fet ashoare fifteene or fixteene men, well armed, with fome to fetch Wood, for we had none left; as also to see what the Land was, and what Inhabitants they could meete with, they found it to be a small necke of Land : on this side where we lay is the Bay and the furthest side the Sea : the ground or earth, fand hils, much like the Downer in Holland, but much better : the crust of the earth a Spits depth, excellent blacke earth : all woodded with Oakes, Pines, Saffafras, Iuniper, Birch, Holly, Vines, fome Ash, Walnut; the 40 Wood for the most part open and without vnder-wood, fit either to goe or ride in : at night our prople returned, but found not anie person, nor habitation, and laded their Boate with Iuniper, which smelled verie sweete and strong, and of which wee burnt the most part of the

Munday the thirteenth of November, we vnshipped our Shallop, and drew her on land, to mend and repaire her, having bin forced to cut her downe in bestowing her betwixt the decks; and the was much opened with the peoples lying in her, which kept vs long ther for it was fixteene or seuenteene daies before the Carpenter had finished her : our people went on shoare to refresh themselves, and our women to wash, as they had great neede : but whilest wee lay thus ftill, hoping our Shallop would be readie in five or fix daies at the furthest, but our Carpenter 50 made flow worke of it, fo that tome of our people impatient of delay, defired for our better furtherance to trauaile by Land into the Countrie, which was not without appearance of danger, not having the Shallop with them, nor meanes to carrie provision, but on their backes, to see whether it might be fit for vs to leate in or no, and the rather because as we failed into the Harbour, there feemed to be a River opening it felfe into the maine Land; the willingnesse of the persons was liked, but the thing it felfe, in regard of the danger was rather permitted then approved, and fo with cautions, directions, and inftructions, fixteene men were fet out with every man his Musket, Sword, and Corilet, under the conduct of Captaine Miles Standilb, unto whom was adioyned for counfell and aduife, William Bradford, Stephen Hopkins, and Edward Tilley.

Wednesday the fifteenth of November, they were fet a shoare, and when they had ordered 60 themselves in order of a single File, and marched about the space of a mile, by the Sea they espied fine or ix people, with a Dogge, comming towards them, who were Sauages, who when they Sight of Sar taw them, raninto the Woods and whittled the Dogge after them, &c. First, they supposed uages, them to be Maiter Iones, the Maiter and fome of his men, for they were a shoare, and knew of their comming: but after they knew them to be Indians they marched after them into the

Woods, least other of the Indians should lye in Ambush : but when the Indians saw our men following them, they ran away with might and maine; and our men turned out of the Wood after them, for it was the way they intended to got, but they could not come neere them. They followed them that night about ten miles by the trace of their footings, & faw how they had come the fame way they went, and at a turning perceined how they rame up an hill, to fee whether they followed them. At length night came vpon them, and they were constrained to take vo their lodging, to they let forth three Sentinels, and the reft, some kindled a fire, and others fetched Wood & there held our Randeuous that night. In the morning to foone as we could fee the trace. we proceeded on our journie, and had the tracke vntill wee had compafied the head of a long creake, and there they tooke into another Wood, and we after them, supposing to finde some of their dwellings, but we marched thorow Boughes and Buthes, and vnder Hils and Vallies, which tore our verie Armour in peeces, and yet could meete with none of them, nor their houses, nor finde any fresh water, which we greatly defired, and stood in neede off, for we brought neither Beere nor Water with vs, and our victuals was onely Bisket and Holland Cheefe, and a little Bottell of Aquauite, fo as we were fore a thirft. About ten a clocke we came into a deene Valley, full of brush, wood-gaile, and long grasse, through which wee found little paths or tracts. and there we faw a Deere, and found Springs of fresh Water, of which we were hartily glad, and fat vs downe and drunke our first New England Water, with as much delight as ever we drunke When we had reireshed our selves, we directed our course full South, that wee might come to

the shoare, which within a short while after we did, and there made a fire, that they in the Ship might fee where we were (as wee had direction) and to marched on towards this supposed Riger ; and as we went in another Valley, we found a fine cleere Pond of fresh water, being about a Musket shot broad, and twife as long: there grew also many small Vines, and Fowle and Deere haunted thereschere grew much Safafras: from thence we went on and found much plainground about fittle Acres, fit for the Plow, and some signes where the Indians had formerly planted, their Corne : after this, some thought it best for nearenesse of the River to goe downe and tranaile on the Sea lands, by which meanes some of our men were tired, and lagged behinde, so we Hayed and gathered them vp, and ftrucke into the Land againe; where we found a little path to certaine heapes of Sand, one whereof was couered with old Mats, and had a woodden thing like 20 a Morter whelmed on the top of it, and an earthen pot laid in a little hole at the end thereof; we musing what it might be, digged and found a Bowe, and as we thought, Arrowes, but they were rotten; We supposed there were many other things, but because we deemed them graues, we put in the Bow againe and made it vp as it was; and left the rest untouched, because we thought it would be odious vnto them to ransacke their Sepulchers. We went on further and found new stubble of which they had gotten Corne this yeare, and many Walnut trees full of Nuts, and great flore of Strawberries, and some Vines; passing thus a field or two, which were not great, we came to another, which had also bin new gotten, and there wee found where an house had beene, and foure or five old Plankes laied together; also we found a great Kettle, which Cornefound. had beene someShips kettle and brought out of Europe; there was also an heape of fand, made hke An the former, but it was newly done, wee might fee how they had padled it with their hands, which we digged up, and in it we found a little old Basket full of faire Indian Corne, and digged further, and found a fine great new Basket full of very faire Corne of this yeare, with some fixe and thirty goodly cares of Corne, some yellow, and some red, and others mixt with blew, which was a very goodly fight: the Basket was round, and narrow at the top, it held about three or foure bushels, which was as much as two of vs could lift up from the ground, and was very handfomely and cunningly made: But whilst we were busic about these things, we set our men Sentinell in a roundring, all but two or three which digged up the Corne. Wee were in suspence, what to doe with it, and the Kettle, and at length after much confultation, we concluded to take the Kettle, and as much of the Corne as wee could carry away with vo: and when our Shallop 50 came if we could finde any of the people, and came to parley with them , wee would give them the Kettle agains, and fatisfie them for their Corne.

So we tookeall the Eares, and put a good deale of the loofe Corne in the Kettle, for two men to bring away one Staffe; befides, they that could pur away into their Pockets filled the fame; the rest wee buried agains, for we were so laden with Armour that we could carry no more. Not farre from this place we found the remainder of an old Fort, or Palizado, which as we conceited had beene made by some Christians, this was also hard by that place which we thought had been a River, voto which we went and found it fo to be, diei ling it faire into two armes by an high banke, flanding right by the Cut or Mouth which come from the Sea, that which was next unto vs was the leffe, the other arme was more then twice as big, and not vnlike to bee an Harbour 60 for Ships; but whether it be a freih River, or onely an indraught of the Sea, wee had no time to discouer, for we had commandement to be out but two dayes. Here also we taw two Cancas, the They returned one on the one fide, the other on the other fide, we could not believe it wis a Curou, till we care neerest, fo we returned, leaung the further d flowery hereof to our S alley and amether night

backe againe to the fresh water pond, and there we made our randenous that night, making a great fire, and a Baricado to windward of vs, and kept good watch with three Sentinels all night, every one standing when his turne came, while five or fixe inches of Match was burning. It proved a very rainie night. In the morning we tooke our Kettle and funke it in the Pond, and trimmed our Muskets, for few of them would goe off because of the wet, and so coasted the Wood againe to come home, in which we were shrewdly pulled, and lost our way; as we wandred we came to a tree, where a yong Spiris was bowed downe ouer a Bowe, and some Acornes Grewed Villerneath; Stephen Hopkins laid, it had beene to catch some Deere, to, as we were look-

ing at it, William Bradjord being in the Redre, when he came looking allo vpon it, and as he went catch Deere, to about, it gaue a fodaine ierke up, and he was immediately caught by the legge: It was a very pretty deuise, made with a Roape of their owne making, and Isating a moose as artificially made, as any Roper in England can make, and as like ours as can be, which wee brought away with vs. In the end wee got out of the Wood, and were fallen about a mile too high about the creake. where we saw three Buckes, but we had rather have had one of them. We also did spring three couple of Partridges; and as we came along by the creake, we saw great flockes of wilde Geese and Duckes, but they were very fearefull of vs. So we marched fome while in the Woods, fome while on the Sands, and other while in the Water vp to the knees, till at length we came neere the Ship, and then we shot off our Peeces, and the long Boate came to fetch vs : Master lone, and Matter Carner being on the shoare, with many of our people, came to meete vs. And thus wee 30 came both weary and welcome home, and deliuered in our Corne into the flore, to be kept for feede, for we knew not how to come by any, and therefore was very glad, purposing to soone as we could meete with any of the Inhabitants of that place, to make them large fatistaction.

When our Shallop was fit indeede, before the was fully fitted, for there was two daies worke after bestowed on her, there was appointed some foure and twenty men of our owne, and armed. then to goe and make a more full discovery of the Rivers before mentioned. Master lones was defirous to goe with vs, and tooke such of his Saylers as he thought vsefull for vs, so as we were in all about foure and thirty men : we made Maiter lones our Leader, for we thought it best herein to geatifie his kindnesse and forwardnesses. When we were set forth, it proued rough weather and croffe windes, to as we were constrained, some in the Shallop, and others in the long Boates to to row to the neerest shoare the winde would suffer them to goe vnto, and then to wade out aboue the knees; the winde was fo ftrong as the Shallop could not keepe the water, but was torsed to harbour there that night, but we marched fix or feuen miles further, and appointed the Shallon to come to ve as foone as they could. It blowed and did fnow all that day and night. and froje withall; some of our people that are dead tooke the originall of their death here. The next day about eleuen a clocke our Shallop came to vs, and we shipped our selues, and the winder

which when we came we found it not Nauigable for Ships, yet we thought itimight be a good

harbour for Boates, for it flowes there twelve footat high water. We landed our men betweene

the two creekes, and marched some source or fine miles by the greater of them, and the Shallop so followed vs: at length night grew on, and our men were tired with marching vp and downe the steepe Hils, and deepe Vallies, which lay halfe a foote thicke with Snow : Master lones wearied with marching, was defirous we should take vp our lodging, though some of vs would have marched further, fo we made there our Randenous for that night, under a few Pine trees, and as it fell out we got three Geefe, and fix Duckes to our Supper, which we eate with Soldiers flomacks. for we had caten little all that day. We marched to the place where we had the Corne formerly. which place we called Corne-hill; & digged & found the reit, of which we were very glad: we alfo dieged in a place a little farther off, & found a bottle of Oyle, we went to another place which we had feen before & digged and found more Corn, viz. two or three Baskets full of Indian wheat. and a bag of Beans, with a good many of faire wheat-eares; whill flome of vswere digging up this, fome others found another heape of Corn, which they digged vp also, so as we had in all about ten

so Bushels, which will serue vs sufficiently for Seede. And sureit was Gods good providence that we found this corn, for elfe we knew not how we should have done, for we knew not how we should finde, or meete with any of the Indians, except it be to doe vs a mischiefe. Also we had never Front and in all likelihood feene a graine of it, if we had not made our first lourney; for the ground was now Snow. coursed with Snow, and to hard frofen, that we were faine with our Curtlaxes and thort Swords, to hew and carne the ground a foote deepe, and then wrest it vp with leavers, for we had forgot to bring other Tooles: whilit we were in this imploiment, foule weather being towards, M. lones was earnest to goe aboord, but fundry of vs defired to make further discovery, and to finde out the Indians habitations, to we fent home with him our weakest people, and some that were ficke, and 60 all the Corne, and eighteene of ve staied still, and lodged there that night, & defired that the Shallop might returne to vs next day, and bring vs some Mattockes and Spades with them.

When wee had marched fine or (ix miles into the Woods, and could find no fignes of any people, wee returned againe another way, and as we came into the plaine ground, wee found a place like a grane, but it was much bigger and longer then any wee had yet feen . It was also covered with boords, fo as wee mufed what it should be, and resolved to dig it vp; where we found, first a

being good, we failed to the River we formerly discovered, which we named Cold Harbour, to Cold Harbour

Sepulchro opined.

Mar, and under that a faire Bow, and there another Mat, and under that a Board about there quarters long, finely carried and painted, with three, Tynes, or broches on the top, like a Crowne alto her weene the Mars we found Bowles, Trayes, Dah s, and fuch like Trinkets; at longth ween came to a faire new Mit, and under that two Bundles, the one bigger, the other leffe, we opened the greater and found in ita great quantitie of fine and perfect Red Powder, and in it the bones and skull of a man. The skull had fine yellow haire full on it, and to ue of the flesh ynconfumed there was bound up with a Knite, a Packneedle, and two or three old fron things. It was bound vp in a Saylers Canuas Calacke, and a payre of Cloth Breeches; the Red Powder was a kind as Embaulment, and veelded a firong but no offentine fmell; It was as fine as any Flower. We one ned the leffe bundle likewife, and found of the fame Powder in it, and the bones and head of a little, hilde, about the legger, and other parts of it was Bound firing and Bracelets of fine whise Beads: there was also by it a little Bow, about three quarters long, and some other odde knackes we brought fundry of the pretieft things away with vs, and coucted the Corps vp againe. After this, we die ged in fundry like places, but found no more Corne, nor any things elfe but graves Whileft we were thus ranging and learching, two of the Saylers, which were newly come on the shoare, by chance espied two houses, which had beene lately dwelt in , but the people were gone. They having their Peeces, and hearing no body, entred the houses, and tooke out some thing, and durit not flay but came again & told vs; to some seuen or eight of vs went with them.

and tound how wee had gone within a flight thot of them before. The houses were made with

long young Sapling Treesbended, and both ends flucke into the ground ; they were made round, an

Houfhold

like voto an Arbour, and couered downe to the ground with thicke and well wrought Mats, and the doore was not over a yard high, made of a Mat to open : the Chimney was a wide open hole in the top, for which they had a Mat to couer it close when they pleased, one might stand and goe vor gar, in them; in the minit of them were foure little Tru iches knockt into the ground, and (mall-tickes lai) ouer, on which they hung their Pots, and what they had to teeth : round as bout the fire they lay on Mats, which are their Beds. The Houses were double matted, for as they were matted without, to were they within, with newer and fairer Mats. In the Houles wee found Woodden Bowles, Trayes and Dishes, Earthen Pots, Hand-baskets made of Crab-shells, wrought together ; also an English Payloor Bucket , it wanted a Baile, but it had two Iron Eares ; there was also Baskets or rundry fores, begger, and fome leller, finer, and fome courfer : fome were 30 curiously wrought with Blacke and White in prettie workes, and fundry other of their houshold fluff: wee found also two or three Deeres Heads, one whereof had been newly killed, for it was still fresh : there was also a company of Deeres Feete, stucke vp in the Houses, Harts Hornes, and Eagles Clawes, and fundry such like things there was : also two or three Baskets full of parched Acornes, pieces of Fish, and a piece of a broyled Herring. We found also a little Silke Graffe, and a little Tobacco Seed, with some other Seeds which weeknew not : without was fundry bundles of Flags, and Sedge, Bull-rulhes, and other stuffe to make Mats; there was thrust into an hollow Tree , two er three pieces of Venison, but wee thought it fitter for the Dogges then for vs: fome of the best things wee tooke away with vs, and left the houses standing still as they were: Much disputation fell out about the place where wee should abide; and a Company was chosen 40 to goe out voon a third Dilcouery (whileft some were imployed in this Dilcouery', it pleased God that Miltris White was brought a bed of a Sonne, which was called Peregrine.)

Wedneflay the fixt of December we fet out, being very cold and hard weather, we were a long while after wee lanched from the Ship, before wee could get cleere of a Sandy Point, which lay within leffe then a furlong of the same. In which time, two were very ficke, and Edward Tilley had like to have four ded with colds the Gunner was also sicke vnto Death (but hope of trucking made nim to goe) and fo remained all that day, and the next night ; at length weegot cleare of the Sandy Point, and got vp our Sayles, and within an houre or two wee got under the weather shoare, and then had smoother water and better sayling, but it was very cold, for the water froze on our clothes, and made them many times like coats of fron : wee fayled fixe or feuen leagues by 50 the shoare, but saw neither River nor Creeke, at length wee met with a tongue of Land, being flat off from the thoare, with a Sandy point, wee bore up to gaine the Point, and found there a faire Income or Rode, of a Bay, being a league ouer at the narrowest, and some two or three in length, but wee made right ouer to the Land before vs, and left the discourse of this Income till the next day : as wee drew neere to the shoare, wee espied some ten or twelue Indians, very buse about a blacke thing, what it was wee could not tell, till afterwards they law vs, and ran to and fro, as if they had beene carrying fomething away, wee landed a league or two from them, and had much adoe to put a shoare any where, it lay so full of flat Sands : when wee came to shoare, we made vs a Baricado, and got fire Wood, and fet out our Sentinells, and betooke vs to our lodging, such as it was; wee faw the smoake of the fire which the Sauages made that night, about 60 foure or five miles from vs : in the morning wee divided our Company, some eight in the Shallop, and the rest on the snoare went to discouer this place, but we found it onely to be a Bay, without fat, and fine or either River or Creeke comming into it. This place the most were minded wee should call, the fix paces long. Grampus Bay, because wee found many of them there : we followed the tract of the Indians bate

feet a good way on the Sands, at length we faw here they ftrucke into the Woods by the fide of a Pond, as we went to view the place, one faid, he thought he faw an Indian-houle among the Trees, to went up to fee : and here we and the Shallop loft fight one of another till night . it being now about nine or ten a clocke; fo we lite on a path, but faw no house, and followed a great way into the Woods, at length we found where Corne had been fet, but not that yeere; anon we found a great burying place, one part whereof was incompaffed with a large Palizado. like a Church-yard, with young foires foure or fine yards long, let as close one by another as they could two or three foot in the ground; within it was full of Graves, fome bigger and fome leffer tome were also paled about, and others had like an Indian-house made over them, but not matted :

those Graves were more sumptuous then those at Corne-bill, yet we digged none of them vos only viewed them and went our way : without the Palizado were Graues also, but not so costly. We went ranging vp and downe till the Sunne began to draw low, and then we hafted out of the Woods, that we might come to our Shallop. By that time we had done, and our Shallop come to vs it was within night, and we fed vpon fuch victualls as we had, and betooke vs to our rest after we had fet out our watch. About midnight we heard a great and hideous cry, and our Sentinell called, Arme, Arme. So we bestirred our selves and shot off a couple of Muskets and noise ceased: we concluded, that it was a company of Wolues & Foxes for one told vs he had heard fuch a noise in New-found-land, About five a clocke in the morning we began to be thirring, vpon a fulden wee heard a great & strange cry which we knew to be the same voices, though they varied their notes; one of the company being abroad came running in and cried, They are men, Indians, Indians : and withall, their Arrowes came flying amongst vs. our men ran out with all speed to recouer their

Armes. The cry of our enemies was dreadfull, especially, when our men ran out to recouer their Armes, their note was after this manner, Woalb woach ba ba bach woach; our men were no fooner come to their Armes, but the enemy was readie to affault them.

There was a luftie man, and no whit leffe valiant, who was thought to be their Captain, flood behind a Tree within halfe a Musket shot of vs, and there let his Arrowes flie at vs; hee stood three shots off a Musket, at length one tooke as he faid full ayme at him, after which he gave an extraordinarie cry and away they went all, wee followed them about a quarter of a mile, but wee lest fixe to keepe our Shallop, for wee were carefull of our businesse. Wee tooke

no vp eighteene of their Arrowes, which wee had fent to England by Mafter lones, fome whereof were headed with brasse, others with Harts horne, and others with Eagles clawes: many more no doubt were thot, for thefe wee found were almost covered with leaves : yet by the fpeciall providence of God, none of them either hit or hurt vs. On Munday we found a very good A good Har-Harbour for our shipping, we marched also into the Land, and found divers corne Fields and little bour. running Brookes, a place verie good for scituation, so we returned to our Ship againe with good newes to the rest of our people, which did much comfort their hearts.

This Harbour is a Bay greater then Cape Cod, compafied with a goodly Land, and in the Bay two fine Ilands vnin habited, wherein are nothing but Woods, Okes, Pines, Wal-nut, Beech Safifras. Vines and other Trees which we know not. This Bay is a most hopefull place, innumerable itore of Fowle, and excellent good, and cannot but be of Fish in their feasons : Skote. Cod. Turbor and Herring we have tasted of, abundance of Musles the greatest and best that ever we saw; Crabe

and Lobsters, in their time infinite : It is in fashion like a Cikle or Fish-hooke.

The eighteenth we went along the Coast in the Woods, some seuen or eight mile, but faw not an Indian, nor an Indian house, onely we found where formerly had beene some Inhabitants, and where they had planted their Corne: wee found not any Naugable River but foure or five [mall running Brookes of very fresh water, that all run into the Sea. The Land for the crust of the earth is a foits depth, excellent blacke mould and fat in some places; two or three great Okes, but not very thicke, Pines, Walnuts, Beech, Ash, Birch, Hafell, Holley, Asp, Sasifras, in abundance, and Vines every where, Cherry-trees, Plum-trees, and many other which we know not; many kinds of Hearbs we found here in Winter, as Strawberry leaves innumerable, Sorrell, Yarow, Caruell, Brook-lime, Liver-wort, Water-creffes, great flore of Leeks and Onyons, and an excellent flrong kind of Flax and Hempe. Here is Sand, Gravell, and excellent Clay, no better in the World.excellent for Pots, and will wash like Sope, and great store of Stone, though somewhat soft, and the best water that euer we drunke, and the Brookes now begin to be full of Fish; that night many being weary with marching, we went abourd againe.

The nineteenth of December, after our landing and viewing of the places, so well as we could we came to a conclusion, by most voyces, to set on the Maine Land, on the first place, on an high ground, where there is a great deale of Land cleered, and hath beene planted with Corne three or foure yeeres agoe, and there is a very fweet Brook runs under the Hill fide, and many delicate 60 Springs of as good water as can be drunke, and where wee may harbour our Shallops and Boates exceeding well, and in this Brooke is much good Fish in their seasons. On the further side of the River allo much Corne ground cleered, in one Field is a great Hill, on which wee point to make a

plat-forme, and plant our Ordnance, which will command all round about from thence we may fee into the Bay, and far into the Sea, and we may fee thence Cape Cod.

Saurday

Gram'us Bay. Th y tound Gramonies

Saturday the three and twentieth, so many of vsas could went on shore, selled and carried time ber, to prouide themselues stuffe for building. Munday the fine and twentieth, wee went on thoare, fome to fell timber, tome to fawe, tome to rive, and fome to carry, fo no man refled

all that day. Munday the fine and twentieth, being Christmasse day, we began to drinke water aboord. but at night the Master cauled vs to have some Beer, and so on boord we had divers times now & then fome Beere, but on hoare nane at all. Wee tooke notice how many Families they were, willing some Beere, out of mode of wives to joyne with some Family as they thought fit, that so wee might build fewer houses, which was done, and we reduced them to nineteene Familiei to greamight build rewer hours, which was a property person halfe a Pole in breadth, and three in length, id and fo Lots were cast where every man should lie, which was done, and staked out; we thought this proportion was large enough at the first, for Houses and Gardens to impale them round, confidering the weakenesseof our people, many of them growing ill with colds, for our former Difcourses in froit and itormes, and the wading at Cape Cod had brought much weaknesse amonest ws, which increased enery day more and more, and after was the cause of many of our deaths.

briday and Saturday wee fitted our felues for our labour, but our people on shoare were much troubled and difcouraged with rayne and wet that day, being very fromy and cold: wee faw great smoakes of fite made by the Indians, about fix or seuen miles from vs as wee

co iectured.

Thursday the fourth of Ianuarie, Captaine Miles Standish, with foure or fine more, went to 20 fee if they could meete with any of the Sauages in that place where the fires was made, they went to some of their houses but not lately inhabited, yet could they not meet with any; as they came home, they shot at an Eagle and killed her, which was excellent meat; It was hardly to be

Tuesday the ninth of Ianury, was a reasonable faire day, and wee went to labour that day in the building of our Towne, in two rowes of houles for more fafetie : wee divided by lot the plot of ground whereon to build our Towner After the proportion formerly allotted, we agreed that euery man should build his owne house; thinking by that course men would make more hast then working in common: the common house, in which for the first we made our Rendeuous, being neere finished, wanting only covering, it being about twentie foor square, some should make mor- 20 ter, and some gather thatch, so that in soure daies halfe of it was thatched, frost and soule weather hindered vs much ; this time of the years feldome could we worke halfe the weeke.

On the twelfth day, John Goodman and Peter Browne at dinner time tooke their meat in their hands and would go walke and refresh themselves, to going a little off they find a Lake of water, and having a great Mashife bitch with them , and a Spannell ; by the water fide they founds great D. ere, the Dogs chafed him, and they followed fof ar as they loft themselues, and could not find the way backe, they wandred all that afternoone being wet, and at night did freeze and fnow, they were flenderly apparelled, and had no weapons but each one his Cicle, nor any victualls, they ranged up and downe and could finde none of the Sauages habitations. When it drew to night they were much perplexed, for they could find neither harbour nor meat, but in froft 40 and fnow, were forced to make the Earth their bed, and the Element their coucring, and another thing did very much terrifie them; they heard as they thought two Lions roaring exceedingly for a long time together, and a third, that they thought was very neere them : fo not knowing what to doe, they refolued to climbe up into a Tree as the faieft refuge, though that would proue an intollerable cold lodging. They flood at the Trees root, that when the Lions came they might take their opportunitie of climbing vp, the Bitch they were faine to hold by the necke, for thee would have beene gone to the Lion; but it pleased God so to dispose, that the wild Beasts came not : fo they walked vp and downe vnder the Tree all night, it was an extreame cold night; fo soone as it was light they trauelled againe, passing by many Lakes, and Brookes, and Woods, and in one place where the Sauages had burnt the space of fine miles in length, which is a fine Char- 50 pion Countrey and euen. In the afternoon it pleased God from an high Hill, they discourred the two lles in the Bay, and fo that night got to the Plantation, being ready to faint with trauell and wint of victualls, and almost tamished with cold, Iohn Goodman was faine to have his shooes cut off his feet they were so swelled with cold, and it was a long while after ere hee was able to goe. The house was fired occasionally by a sparke that flew into the thatch, which instantly burnt it all up, but the roofe thood and little hurt; the most losse was Master Carners and William Bradfords, who then lay ficke in bed, and if they had not rifen with good freed, had been blowne vp with powder: but through Gods mercy they had no harmer the houle was as full of beds as they could lie one by another, and their Muskets charged, but bleffed be God there was no harme done

Munday the fifteenth day, it rained much all day, that they on ship-boord could not goe on 60 finare, nor they on shoare doe any labour but were all wet, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, were Very faire Sun-shiny dates, as if it sad beene in April, and our people so many as were in health wrought chearefully. The ninteenth day wee refolued to make a Shed, to put our common protission in , of which some were already set on shoare, but at moone it rained that wee could not

works. This day in the evening, loba Goodman went abroad to vie his lame feet, that were pirtyfolivill with the cold hee had got, having a little Spannell with him, a little way from the Plantation, two great Wolues ran after the Dog, the Dog ran to him, and betwixt his legs for fuccour, Two great he had nothing in his hand, but tooke vp a sticke and threw at one of them and hit him, and they Wolues. presently ran both away, but came againe; he got a Paile boord in his hand, and they late both on their tailes, grinning at him a good while and went their way and left him.

Saturday the seventeenth day in the morning, we called a meeting for the establishing of Military Orders amongit our felues, and we chole Miles Standift our Captaine, and gave him authoritie of command in affayres.

Saturday the third of March, the wind was South, the morning mystie, but towards noone warme and faire weather : the Birds fang in the Woods most pleafantly ; at one of the clocke it thundred, which was the first we heard in that Countrey, it was strong and great claps, but short, Thunder. but after an houre it rayned very fadly till midnight, Wednesday the seventh of March, the wind

was tull Fatt.cold.but faire.

Friday the fixteenth, there presented himselfe a Savage, which caused an Alarum, he very boldly came all alone and along the houses straight to the Randeuous, where we intercepted him, not Conserence fuffering him to goe in, as vndoubtedly he would out of his boldnesse hee faluted vs in Enelish, with Sausges, and had vs welcome, for he had learned fome broken English amongit the Englishmen that came to fish at Monhiggen, and knew by name the most of the Captaines, Commanders, and Masters,

20 that vivally come; he was a manfree in fpeech, fo farre as he could expresse his minde, and of a feemly carriage, we questioned him of many things, he was the first Sauage we could meet withall; hee faid he was not of those parts, but of Morastiggon, and one of the Sagameres or Lords thereof, had beene eight moneths in there parts, it lying hence a daies faile with a great wind, and fine daves by Land: he discoursed of the whole Countrey, and of enery Province, and of their Sagamores, and their number of men, and strength. The wind beginning to rife a little, wee cast a Horiemans Coat about him, for he was starke naked, only a leather about his wast, with a fringe about a span long, or little more; he had a Bow and two Arrowes, the one headed, and the other vnheaded; he was a tall straight man, the haire of his head blacke, long behind, only short before, none on his face at all; he a ked fome Beere, but we gave him Strong-water and Bisket, and But-20 ter, and Cheese, and Pudding, and a piece of a Mallerd; all which he liked wel, and had bin acquain-

ted with fuch among it the English, he told vs the place where we now live, is called, Patazzet, and Patazzet that about foure yeeres agoe all the Inhabitants died of an extraordinary plague, and there is nei- People all dead ther man, wo man, not child remaining, as indeed we have round none, to as there is none to hinder of a plague, our possession, or to lay claime voto it. All the afternoone we spent in communication with him: we would gladly have been rid of him at night, but he was not willing to goe this night, then we thought to carry him on thip-boord, wher with hee was wel content and went into the Shallop. but the wind was high and water feant, that it could not returne backe. We lodged that night at Stenen Hopkins house, and watched him : the next day he went away back to the Mafaforts, from Mafaforts whence he laid he came, who are our next bordering neighbours; they are fixtle strong, as he faith.

40 The Nausteer are as neere South-east of them, and are a hundred strong, and those were they of Nausteen whom our people were encountered, as we before related. They are much incenfed and prouokell against the English, and about eight moneths agoe slew three Englishmen, and two more hardly escaped by flight to Monbiggon; they were Sir Ferdinando Gorge his men, as this Sauage told Vi, as he did likewife of the Huggery, that is, Fight, that our discouerers had with the Naufites, and of our Tooles they were taken out of the Woods, which we willed him should be brought againe, otherwise we would right our selves. These people are ill affected towards the English by reason of one Hunt, 2 Master of a Ship, who deceived the people, and got them under colour of trucking Hunts wicked with them, twentie out of this very place where we inhabite, and feuen men from the Noufites, neue, and carried them away and fold them for Slaues, like a wretched man (for twentie pound a man)

that care not what mischiefe he doth for his profit. Saturday in the morning we difmilled the Sauage, and gaue him a Knife, a Bracelet, and a Ring; he promifed within a night or two to come again, & to bring with him some of the Massassy our neighbours, with fuch Beauers skins as they had to trucke with vs. Saturday and Sunday realonable taire dayes. On this day came againe the Saunge, and brought with him fine other tall proper men, they had euery man a Deeres skin on him, and the principall of them had a wild Cats skin, or tuen like on the one arme : they had most of them long holen up to their grownes, close made; and about their groynes to their wast another leather, they were altogether like the Iristroules; they are of complexion like our English Gipleys, no haire or very little on their faces, on their heads long haire to the shoulders, onely cut before ; some trusted up before with a feather,

60 broad wife,like a fan, another a Fox taile hanging out : thefe left (according to our charge ginen him before) their Bowes and Arrowes a quarter of a mile from our Towne, we gave them entertainment as we thought was fitting them. They did eate liberally of our English victuals, they made semblance vnto vs of friend hip and amitie; they sang and danced after this manner like Stuges de-Anticks ; they brought with him in a thing like a Bow-case (which the principall of them had firibed

Ppppppp 2

about his wait) a little of their Corne pounded to powder, which put to a little water they eate : he had a little Tobacco in a bag, but none of them drunke but when he lifted, fome of them had their faces painted blacke, from the forehead to the chin, foure or five fingers broad : othere after other failions, as they liked : they brought three or foure Skins, but wee would not trucke with them all that day, but wished them to bring more, and we would trucke for all, which they promifed within a night or two, and would leave these behind them, though wee were not willing they should, and they brought all our Tooles againe which were taken in the Woods, in our mens absence, so because of the day we dismitted them so soone as we could. But Samoset our first acquaintance, either was ficke, or fained himfelfe fo, and would not goe with them, and staied with vs till Wednesday morning: Then we sent him to them, to know the reason they came not according to their words, and we gaue him an Hat, a paire of Stockings and Shooes, a Shirt. and a

piece of Cloth to tye about his wall.

Thursday the 22. of March, was a very faire warme day. About noone we met againe about our publike bufineffe, but we had scarce beene an houre together, but Samofer came againe, and Squante, the onely Natine of Patrixat, where wee now inhabite, who was one of the twentie Captives that by Hant were carried away, and had beene in England, and dwelt in Cornbill with Master lohn Slanie a Merchant, and could speake a little English, with three others, and they brought them some few Skins to trucke, and some Red Herrings newly raken and dried, but not falted and fignified voto vs, that there Great Sagamore Maffafort was hard by, with Duadegnina his brother, and all their men. They could not well expr. He in English what they would, but after an houre the King came to the top of an Hill over against vs, and had in his trayne sixtie men. that we could well behold them, and they vs: wee were not willing to fend our Gouernour to them, and they vawilling to come to vs, fo Squanto went againe vnto him, who brought word that wee should fend one to parley with him, which we did, which was Edward Winfloe, to know his minit, and to fignifie the mind and will of our Gouernor, which was to have trading and peace with him. Wee tent to the King a paire of Kniues, and a Copper Chaine, with a Iewell at it. To Quadequina we fent likewife a Knife and a lewell to hang in his care, and withall a Pot of ftrong water, a good quantitie of Bisket, and fome Butter, which were all willingly accepted : our Meifenger made a speech vnto him, that King I A M E s faluted him with words of Loue and Peace, and did accept of him as his Friend and Alley, and that our Gouernour defired to fee him and to trocke with him, and to confirme a Peace with him, as his next neighbour; hee liked well of the speech, and heard it attentively, though the Interpreters did not well expresse it; after hee had caten and drunk himfelfe, & given the rest to his company, he looked upon our Maffengers Sword and Armor which he had on, with intimation of his defire to buy it, but on the other fide, our Meffenger shewed his vnwillingnesse to part with it: In the end he left him in the custodie of Quadequina his brother, and came ouer the Brook and some twenty men following him, leaving all their Bowes and Arrowes behind them. We kept fix or feuen as Holtages for our Mellenger; Cap. Standilh and M. William fon met the King at the Brook, with halfe a dozen Musketiers, they faluted him and he them, to one going ouer, the one on the one fide, and the other on the other, conducted him to an house then in building, where wee placed a greene Rug, and three or foure Culhi- 40 ons. Then instantly came our Gouernour, with a Drum and Trumpet after him, and some few Musketiers. After falutations, our Gouernour kiffing his hand, the King kiffed him, and fo they fare downe. The Gouernour called for some strong water, and drunke to him, and he drunke a great draught that made him iweate all the while after; hee called for a little fresh meate, which the King did eate willingly, and did give his followers. Then they treated of Peace, which was; First, That neither he nor any of his should injure or do hurt to any of our people. Secondly, & if means of peace any of his did hurt to any of ours, he should fend the offender, that we might punish him. Thirdly,

that if any of our tooles were taken away when our people were at work, he thould cause them to bee reflored, and if ours did any harme to any of his, we would doe the like to them. Fourthly, If any did uniuftly war against him we would aide him; If any did war against vs, he should aide vs. 40 Fifthly, He should fend to his neighbor Confederates, to certifie them of this, that they might not wrong vs, but might be likewife comprised in the conditions of Peace. Sixthly, That when their men came to vs, they should leave their Bowes and Arrowes behind them, as wee should doe our Peeces when we came to them. Lattly, that doing thus King I A M E s would effeeme of him as his Friend and Ally: all which the King feemed to like well, and it was applauled of his followers, all the while he fate by the Gouernour hee trembled for feare. In his perion hee is a very lufty man, in his best yeeres, anable body, grave of countenance, and space of speech : In his attyre little or nothing differing from the rest of his followers , onely in a great Chaine of white bone Beades about his neck, & at it behind his neck hangs a little bag of Tebicco, which he drank and gaue vs to drinke; his face was painted with a fad Red like Murry, and evied both head and to face, that hee looked greafily : All his followers likewife, were in their faces in part or in whole painted, fome Blacke, fome Red, fome Yellow, and fome White, fome with Croffes, and other Antick workes, some had Skins on them, and some naked, all strong, tall men in appearance. The King had his bosome hanging in a string, a great long Knife; he maruelled much at our Trumper,

and some of his men would found it as well as they could, Samofet and Squauto, stayed all night with vs. and the King and all his men lay all night in the Wood, not about halfe an Englife mile from vs. and all their wives and women with them, they faid, that within eight or nine daies. they would come and fet Corne on the other fide of the Brooke, and dwell there all Summer. which is hard by vs. That night wee kept good watch, but there was no appearance of danger; the next morning divers of our people came over to vs, hoping to get fome victualls as wee imagined, some of them told vs the King would have some of vs come fee him : Captaine Standilb. and Ifage Alderson went venteroully, who were welcommed of him after their manner; he gave them three or foure ground Nuts, and some Tobacco. Wee cannot yet conceine, but that hee is to willing to have peace with vs, for they have seene our people sometimes alone two or three in the Woods at worke and Fowling, when as they offered them no harme, as they might eafily have

done, and especially because hee hath a potent Aduersarie, the Narowhiganseis, that are at warre with him, against whom hee thinkes wee may bee some strength to him, for our Peeces are terrible vnto them. This morning they stated till ten or eleven of the clocke, and our Governour bid them fend the Kings Kettle, and filled it full of Peafe, which pleafed them well, and to they

Friday was a very faire day, Samofet and Squanto stil remained with ve. Squanto went at noon to fifth for Eeles, at night he came home with as many as hee could well lift in one hand, which our people were glad of, they were fat and fweete, hee trod them out with his feete, and fo caught 20 them with his hands without any other Inftrument, This day we proceeded on with our common businesse, from which we had bin so often hindred by the Sauages comming, and concluded both of Militarie Orders, and of fome Lawes and Orders as we thought behoouefull for our prefent estate, and condition, and likewise chuse our Governour for this yeere, which was Master Iobn Carver, a man well approued amongst vs.

T feemed good to the Company for many confiderations, to fend some among it them to Mas- A journey to Saloyt, the greatest Commander among it the Sauages, bordering about vs ; partly to know Pachamokit, the where to find them, if occasion ferued, as also to see their strength, discouer the Countrey, preuent abuses in their diforderly comming vnto vs, make satisfaction for some conceiued iniuries Massages. 30 to be done on our parts, and to continue the league of Peace and Friendship betweene them and

vs. For thefe, and the like ends, it pleased the Gouernour to make choice of Steven Hopkins, and Edward Winfloe to goe vnto him, and having a fit opportunitie, by reason of a Sauage, called Tifquantum (that could fpeake English) comming vnto vs : with all expedition prouided a Horsemans Coat, of Red Cotton, and laced with a flight Lace for a Prefent, that both they and their

melfage might bee the more acceptable amongs them.

Wee fet forward the tenth of fune, about nine a clock in the morning, our guide refoluing that night to reft at Namafebet, a Towne vnder Maffafoyt, and conceiued by vs to be very neere, because the Inhabitants flocked so thicke vpon enery slight occasion amongst vs : but wee found it to bee some fitteene English miles. On the way wee found some ten or twelue men, women, and o children, which had pettered vs. till wee were wearie of them, perceiving that (as the manner of

them all is) where victuall is easiliest to be got, there they line, especially in the Summer: by reaion whereof, our Bay affording many Lobiters , they refort every Spring Tide thither : and now returned with vs to Namafchet. Thither we came about three a clocke after noone, the Inhabitants entertaining vs with ioy, in the best manner they could, giving vs a kind of bread, called by them Maizium, and the spawne of Shads, which then they got in abundance, in so much as they gaue vs spoones to eate them, with thefe they boyled mustie Acornes, but of the Shads wee eate heartily. After this they defired one of our men to shoot at a Crow, complaining what damage they fultained in their Corne by them, who shooting some fourescore off and killing, they much admired it, as other shots on other occasions. After this Tifquanium told vs wee should so hardly in one day reach Pakanokick, mouing vs to go some eight miles further, where we should

find more store and better victuals then there: Being willing to hasten our journey we went, and came thither at Sunne fetting, where we found many of the Namafebeucks (they fo calling the men of Nama schet) fishing vpon a Ware which they had made on a Ruer which belonged to them, where they caught abundance of Baffe. Thefe welcommed vs allo, gaue vs of their fifth, and we them of our victualls, not doubting but we should have enough where ere we came. There we lodged in the open fields : for houses they had none, though they spent the most of the Summer there. The head of this River is reported to bee not farre from the place of our abode, vpon it are, and have beene many Townes, it being a good length. The ground is very good on both fides, it being for the most part cleered: Thousands of men have lived there, which died in a great plague Great plague.

60 not long fince : and pittie it was and is to fee, fo many goodly fields, and fo well feated, without men to dreffe and manure the fame. Vpon this River dwelleth Maffafoyt.

The next morning wee brake our fait, tooke our leave and departed, being then accompanied with fome fixe Sauages, bauing gone about fixe miles by the River fide, at a knowne shoale place. it being low water, they spake to vs to put off our breeches, for wee must wade thorow. Here

for there were remaining aliue onely two men, both aged, especially the one being about three-

score: Thele two espying a company of men entring the River, ran very swiftly and low in the graffe to meet vs at the Banke, where with shell voyces and great courage, standing charged vp-

on vs with their Bowes, they demanded what wee were, supposing vs to be enemies, and thinkine to take adurantage on vs in the water : but feeing wee were friends, they welcommed vs with

fuch food as they had, and we bestowed a small bracelet of Beads on them. Thus farre we are sure

Maffafort being both grieued and athamed, that he could not better entertaine vs; and retaining Tilguantum to lend from place to place to procure trucke for vs ; and appointing another, called Tokam thamon in his place, whom we had tound faithfull before and after upon all occasions.

the Tile et bes and flowes. Having here againe refreshed our selves we proceeded in our Iourney, the weather being verie hot for travell, yet the Countrey fo well watered, that a man could scarce be drie, but hee should to have a Spring at hand to cloole his thirst, beside small Rivers in abundance : But the Sauages will not willingly drinke, but at a Spring head. When we came to any small Brooke, where no Bridge was , two of them defired to carry vs through of their owne accords, also fearing wee were or would bee wearie, offered to carrie our Peeces, also if wee would lay off any of our clothes, wee should have them carried: and as the one of them had found more speciall kindnesse from one of the Meffengers, and the other Sauage from the other; fo they shewed their thankfulnesse accor-

dingly in affording vsall helpe, and furtherance in the Journey. As we passed along, we observed that there were few places by the River, but had been inhabited, by reason whereof much ground was cleere, saue of weeds which grew higher then our heads. There is much good Timber, both Oake, Walnut-tree, Firre, Beech, and exceeding great

After we came to a Towne of Maffaforts, where we eat Oyfters and other Fish. From thence we went to Packanobick, but Maffafoys was not at home, there we flaired, he being fent for : when newes was brought of his comming, our guide Tifquantum requested that at our meeting, wee would discharge our Peeces, but one of vs going about to charge his Peece, the women and children through feare to fee them take up his Peece, ran away, and could not be pacified, till he laid it downe againe, who afterward were better informed by our Interpreter. Maffafoyt being come, wee discharged our Peeces, and saluted him, who after their manner kindly welcommed vs, and tooke vs into his house, and set vs downe by him, where having delivered our Message and Prefents, and having put the Coat on his backe, and the Chaine about his necke, hee was not a little 30 proud to behold himselte, and his men also to see their King so brauely attired. For answere to our Meffage, he told vs we were welcome, and he would gladly continue that Prace and Friendthip which was betweene him and vs : and for his men they should no more petter vs as they had done : Allo, that hee would fend to Paomet, and would helpe vs with Corne for Seed, according to our request.

This being done, his men gathered neere vnto him, to whom hee turned himfelfe, and mades great Specch; they sometime interposing, and as it were, confirming and applauding him in that he faid. The meaning whereof was (as faire as wee could learne) thus; Was not hee Maffafort Commander of the Countrey about them ! Was not fuch a Towne his and the people of it! and should they not bring their skins vnto vs. After this manner, he named at least thirrie places, and 40 their answere was as aforesaid to every one : so that as it was delightfull, it was tedious vnto vs. This being ended, he lighted Tobacco for vs, and fell to discoursing of England, and of the Kings Maiestie, maruelling that hee would live without a Wife. Also hee talked of the Frenchmen, bidding vs not to suffer them to come to Narohiganfet, for it was King I A M E s his Countrey, and healfo was King I A M E s his man. Late it grew, but victualls he offered none; for indeed he had not any, being he came so newly home. So we defired to goe to rest : hee laid vs on the bed with himfelfe and his wife, they at the one end and wee at the other, it being onely plankes laid a foot from the ground, and a thinne Mat vpon them. Two more of his chiefe men for want of roome preded by and vpon vs ; fo that wee were worfe wearie of our lodging then The next day being Thursday, many of their Sachmis, or pettie Gouernours came to fee vs,

Gimesi

Royall enter-

and many of their men alio. There they went to their manner of Games for Skins and Knices, There we challenged them to shoot with them for Skins : but they durit not : onely they defired to see one of vs shoot at a marke, who shooting with Haile-shor, they wondred to see the marke fo full of holes. About one a clocke, Maffafort brought two Fifthes that he had thot, they were like Breame, but three times so bigge, and better meat. These being boyledathere were at least fortie looked for share in them, the most cate of them: This meale onely we had in two nights Hungtisfare. and a day, and had not one of vs bought a Partridge, we had taken our Journey failing: Very inportunate hee was to have vs flay with them longer : But wee defired to keepe the Sabbathat home, and feared wee should either bee light-headed for want of sleepe, for what with bad lod- 60 ging, the Sauages barbarous finging (for they yie to fing themselves askepe) Lice and Fleas within doores, and Muskeetoes without, wee could hardly fleepe all the time of our being there; we much fearing that if we should stay any longer, we should not be able to recour home for want of ftrength. So that on the Friday morning before Sun-riling, wee teoke our kaue and departed,

He elementh of June we fer forth toward Namet, the weather being very faire: but ere we A Voyage had bin long at Sea, there arofe a fforme of winde and raine, with much lightning and thun- made by ten of der, in so much that a spout arose not farre from vs : but God be praised, it dured not long, and our men othe we put in that night for Harbour at a place called Cummagnid, where we had some hope to finde News to feek the Boy. Two Sugges were in the Boat with vs, the one was Tifquantum our Interpreter, the oa Boy thathad to other Tolamabamon, a speciall friend. It being night before we came in, wee Anchored in the loft himselfe middeft of the Bay, where we were dry at a low water. In the morning we effied Sauages feek- in the Woods; middelt of the Bry, where we were dry at a low water. In the morning we explice Sanages teck with fuch acciing Lobsters, and fent our two Interpreters to speake with them, the channell being betweene dents as befell them; where they told them what we were, and for what we werecome, willing them not at vs in that all to feare vs, for we would not hurt them. Their answere was, that the Boy was well, but he Voyage, was at Naulet; yet fince wee were there they defired vs to come ashoare and eate with them : which as foone as our Boate floated we did : and went fixe alhoare, having foure pledges for them in the Boate. They brought vs to their Sachim or Gouernour, whom they call Iganough, a man not exceeding twenty fix yeares of age, but very personable, gentle courteous, and faire conditioned, indeede not like a Sauage, faue for his attyre : his entertainment was answerable to his parts. and his cheare plentifull and various.

One thing was very grieuous vnto vs at this place. There was an old Woman, whom wee judged to be no leffe then an hundred yeares old, which came to fee vs because shee neuer saw English, yet could not behold vs without breaking forth into great passion, weeping and crying exceffigely. We demanding the reason of it, they cold vs, she had three Sonnes, who when Maffer Hunt was in these parts, went abourd his Ship to trade with him, and he carried them Captines into Spaine (for Tifquantum at that time was carried away alfo) by which meanes thee was deprived of the comfort of her children in her old age. We told them were forry that any Englishman (hould give them that offence, that Hunt was a bad man, and that all the English that heard of it condemned him for the fame : but for vs, we would not offer them any fuch iniury, 30 though it would gaine vs all the Skins in the Countrie. So we gave her some small trifles, which fomewhat appealed her.

After dinner we tooke Boate for Nauset, Iyanough and two of his men accompanying vs. Ere we came to Nanfee, the day and tide were almost spent, in so much as we could not goe in with our Shallon; but the Sachim or Gouernour of Cammagnid went alhoare and his men with him, we allo fent Tifquantum to tell Afpinet the Sachim of Naufet, wherefore we came. After Sunfet Aspinet came with a great traine, and brought the Boy with him, one bearing him through the water : he had not leffe then an hundred with him, the halfe whereof came to the Shallop fide ynarmed with him, the other stood aloofe with their Bowe and Arrowes. There he delivered vs the Boy, behing with Beades, and made peace with vs. wee beftowing a Knife on him, ao and likewife on another that first entercained the Boy and brought him thither. So they depar-

1852

Here we understood that the Narrobigan fets had spoyled some of Massa forts men, and taken him. This strucke some feare in vs, because the Colony was so weakely guarded, the strength thereof being abroad: But we fet forth with refolution to make the best haste home we could; yet the winde being contrary, having fearce any fresh water left, and at least sixteene leagues home, we put in againe for the shoare. There we met againe with Iyanough the Sachim of Cummaguid, and the most of his Towne, both men, women and children with him. Hee being still willing to gratifie vs. tooke a runlet and led our men in the darke a great way for water but could finde none good ; yet brought fuch as there was on his necke with them. In the meane time the 50 women loyned hand in hand, finging and dancing before the Shallop, the men also shewing all the kindenesse they could, Iranough himselfe taking a Bracelet from about his necke, and hanging it upon one of vs. By Gods prouidence we came fafely home that night,

CHAP. V.

Good newes from New England : Or, A Relation of things remarkeable in that Plantation; written by E. WINSLOVV and here abbreuiated.



He good Ship called the Fortune, which in the Moneth of November 1621. (blefhe die God) arought vs a new supply of fine and thirty persons, was not long departed our Coath, ere the Great people of Nanohig ganger, which are reported to e many thousands strong, began to breath forth many threats against vs, notwith itanding their defired and obtained peace with vs in the fore-going Summer. Informach as the common talke of our neighbour Indians on all fides was of the

Snakes skin

preparation they made to come against vs, In reason, a man would thinke they should have now more cause to seare vs than before our supply came : but though none of them were present, vet understanding by others that they neither brought Armes nor other prouisions with them. but wholly relied on vs, it occasioned them to sleight and brave vs with so many threats as they did. At length came one of them to vs, who was fent by Conanacus their chiefe Sachim or King. accompanied with one Tokamabamon a friendly Indian. This Messenger inquired for Tisquantum our Interpreter, who not being at home feemed rather to be glad then forry, and leauing for him a bundle of new Arrowes lapped in a rattle Snakes skinne, defired to depart with

When Tilgnanium returned, and the Arrowes were deliuered, and the manner of the Messen- IO gers cariage related, he fignified to the Gouernour, that to fend the rattle Snakes skinne in that manner, imported enmitie, and that it was no better then a challenge. Hereupon, after some deliberation, the Gouernour stuffed the skin with Powder and Shot, and fent it backe, returning no leffe defiance to Conauacus, affuring him if he had Shipping now prefent thereby to fend his men to Nanohio ganfet (the place of his abode) they should not neede to come so farre by Land to vs: yet withall, shewing that they should neuer come vnwelcome or vnlooked for. This message was fent by an Indian, and delivered in such fort, as it was no small terrour to this Sauage King, infomuch as he would not once touch the Powder and Shot, or fuffer it to flay in his House or Countrie. Whereupon the Meffenger refusing it, another tooke it vp, and having beene posted from place to place a long time, at length came whole backe againe.

In the meane time, knowing our owne weakenesse, notwithstanding our high words and loftie lookes towards them, and still lying open to all casualty, having as yet (vnder God) no o-Towneimpa ther detence then our Armes, we thought it most needfull to impale our Towne, which with all expedition we accomplished in the moneth of February, and some few dayes, taking in the top of the Hill under which our Towne is feated, making foure Bulwarkes or letties without; the ordinary circuit of the Pale, from whence we could defend the whole Towne: In three whereof are Gates, and the fourth in time to be. This being done, Captaine Standib divided our ftrength into foure squadrons or companies, appointing whom he thought most fit to have command of each; And at a generall Multer or Training, appointed each his place, gaue each his Company, giuing them charge vpon euery alarum to refort to their Leaders to their appointed place, and in his absence, to be commanded and directed by them. That done according to his order, each drew his Company to his appointed place for defence, and there together discharged their Muskets. After which they brought their new Commanders to their houses, where againe they graced them with their thot, and so departed. Fearing also least the enemy at any time should take any adnantage by firing our houses, Captaine Standifb appointed a certaine Company, that when seuer they faw or heard fire to be cryed in the Towne, should onely betake themselues to their Armes, and should inclose the house or place so indangered, and stand aloose on their guard, with their backes towards the fire, to preuent trechery, if any were in that kinde intended. If the fire were in any of the houles of this guard, they were then freed from it, but not otherwile, without

Long before this time we promifed the people of Massachuset in the beginning of March to come vnto them, and trade for their Furres, which being then come, we began to make preparation for that Voyage. In the meane time, an Indian, called Hobbamocke, who full lived in the Towne, told vs, that he feared the Maffachusets or Masfachusenks (for they so called the people of that place) were inyned in confederacie with the Nanobigganneuchs, or people of Nanobiggarlet, and that they therefore would take this opportunity to cut off Captaine Standal and his Company abroad: but how foeuer in the meane time, it was to be feared that the Nanobig ganeuks would affault the Towne at home, giving many reasons for his icalousie, as also that Tifquantum was in the confederacy, who we should finde would vie many periwasions to draw vs from our Shallops to the Indians houses for their better advantage.

Notwithstanding the forenamed Captaine with ten men, accompanied with Tifquantum and 19 lebbamocke, fet forwards forehow Mental the state of the sta Hobbamocke, fet forwards for the Maffachufers: but we had no fooner turned the point of the Harbour, called the Gwnets nofe (where being becalmed we let fall our grapnell, to fet things to rights, and prepare to row) but there came an Indian of Tifquantums family, running to certaine of our people that were from home with all eagernesse, having his face wounded, and the bloud ftill fresh on the same, calling to them to repaire home, oft looking behinde him, as if some others had him in chate, saying that at Name sibet (a Towne some fifteene miles from vs) there were many of the Nanobig ganfett, Maffaffowat our supposed friend; and Conbatant our feared enemy, with many others, with a resolution to take advantage on the present opportunity, to asfault the Towne in the Captaines absence, affirming that hee received the wound in his face for 60 speaking in our behalfe, and by sleight escaped, looking oft backward, as if he suspected them to be at hand. This he affirmed againe to the Gouernour, whereupon he gaue command that three peece of Ordnance should be made ready and discharged, to the end that if wee were not out of hearing, we might returne thereat. Which we no fooner heard, but we repaired homeward with

all convenient speede, arming our felues, and making all in readinesse to fight. When wee entred the Harbour, we saw the Towne like wife on their guard, whither we hasted with all convenient focede. The newes being made knowne vato vs, Hobbamock faid flatly that it was falle, affuring vs of Mall afforats faithfulnelle ; howloguer he prefumed he would neuer haue vndertaken any such act without his prinitie, himselfe being a Pinfe, that is, one of his chiefe Champions or men of valour, it being the manner amongst them not to undertake such enterprises without the advice and furtherance of men of that ranke.

The Governour caused Hobbamock to fend his wife with all privacie to Puckanokick the chiefe place of M. faffowats refidence (pretending other occasions) there to informe her felte, and so vs. to of the right state of things. When she came thither, and saw all things quiet, and that no such matter was or had beene intended, the told Maffafforat what had hapned at Plimoth (by them called Paturet) which when he vinderstood, he was much offended at the carriage of Tilguantum. returning many thankes to the Governour for his good thoughts of him; and affuring him, that according to their first Articles of peace, hee would fend word and give warning when any fuch bufineffe was towards.

Thus by degrees we began to discouer Tisquantum, whose ends were onely to make himselfe great in the eyes of his Country-men, by meanes of his neereneffe and fauour with vs. not caring Tifquentum: who fell, so he stood. In generall, his course was to perswade them hee could lead vs to peace or warre at his pleafure, and would oft threaten the Indians, fending them word in a private man-30 ner, we were intended hortly to kill them, that thereby he might get gifts to himielfe to worke

their prace; infomuch as they had him in greater efteeme then many of their Sachims; yea, they themselves sought to him, who promited them peace in respect of vs; yea, and prorection also. to as they would refort to him. So that whereas divers were wont to relie on Mallallowat for protection, and refort to his abode, now they began to leave him, and feeke after Tifquantum. But when we understood his dealings, we certified all the Indians of our ignorance and innocine cy therein, affuring them till they begun with vs, they should have no caule to feare. And if any

hereafter should raife any such reports, they should punish them as liers and seekers of their and

our diffurbance, which gave the Indians good fatistaction on all fides.

After this we proceeded in our Voyage to the Massachusets, where we had good flore of Trade 30 and (bleffed be God) returned in tafety, though driven from before our Towne in great danger and extremity of weather. At our returne, we found Maffaffowat at the Plantation, who made his feeming just Apologie for all former matters of accusation, being much offended and inraged against Tifquantum, whom the Gouernous pacified as much as he could for the present. But not long after his departure, he fent a Mellenger to the Gouernour, intreating him to gine way to the death of Tifguantum, who had to much abuted him, But the Governour answered : Although he had deferred to dye both in respect of him and vs; yet for our fakes he defired he would spare him, and the rather because without him he knew not well how to understand himselse, or any other the Indians. With this answer the Mellenger returned, but came againe not long after, accompanied with divers others, demanding him from M. f. fowat their Matter, as being one of his to fubiects, whom by our first Articles of peace we could not retaine: yet because hee would not willingly doe it without the Gouernors approbation, offered him many Beners skins for his confent thereto, faying, that according to their manner, their Sachim had fent his own . Kuife, and therewith, to cut off his head and hands, and bring them to him. To which the Governous anfwered : It was not the manner of the English to fell mens lives at a price, but when they had deferued infilly to die, to give them their reward, and therefore refuted their Beauers as a gift ; but fent for Tifquantum, who though he knew their intent, yet offered not to five, but came and accufed Hobbanocke as the author and worker of his ouerthrow; yeelding himfelfe to the Governour to be fent or not according as he thought meete. But at the inflant, when our Gonernour

was ready to deliuer him into the hands of his Executioners, a Boate was feene at Sea to use le before our Towne, and fall behinde a head-land not farre off: whereupon, having hear? whereupon, having hear? so rumours of the French, and not knowing whether there were any combination between the Sauages and them, the Gouernour told the Indians, he would first know what Boate that was ere he would deliuer him into their cuftody. But being mad with rage, and impatient at delay, they Here let me not omit one notable (though wicked) practife of this Tifaustem, who to the

end he might possesse his Countrimen with the greater feare of vs, and it consequently of himfelfe, told them we had the plague buried in our flore-house, which at our pleasure we could fend forth to what place or people we would, and deftroy them therewith, though wee firred not from home. Being upon the forenamed brabbles fent for by the Governour to this place, where 60 Hobbamock was & some other of vs, the ground being broke in the middelt of the house (whereunder certaine bairels of Powder were buried, though vinknowne to him) Hobbamock asked him what it meant? To whom he readily answered; That was the place wherein the plague was Place conceils buried, whereof he formerly told him and others. After this Hobbamock asked one of our people

whether fuch a thing were, and whether we had fuch command of it! Who answered no; But

the God of the Engly bhad it inftore, and could fend it at his pleasure to the defluction of his and our enemies.

This was, as I take it, about the end of May, 1 6 2 2. At which time our flore of victuals was wholly foest, having Lued long before with a bare and thort allowance: The reason was, that fumply of menbefore mentioned, which came to unprouided, not landing to much as a barrell of Bread or Male for their whole Company, but contrariwile received from vs for their Ships store boread or all art for their were the fetters forth thereof altogether to beblamed therein, but rather certaine among to our felues, who were too prodigall in their writing and reporting that plenty

we enjoyed. But that I may returne,

e emoyes. But proued to be a Shallop that belonged to a fishing Ship, called the Sparrow, set forth 10 by Malter Thomas Weston, late Merchant and Citiz n of London, which brought fix or feuen paffengers at his charge, that should before haue beene landed at our Plantation, who also brought no more proution for the present then served the Boats gang for their returne to the Ship, which made ner Voyage at a place called Damarini Coue, nee e Munhiggen, some forty leagues from vs North-east-ward; about which place there fished about thirty fails of Ships, and whither my felte was imployed by our Gouernour, with orders to take vp fuch victuals as the Shippes could foare; where I found kinsie entertainment and good respect, with a willing nesse to supply our wants: Butbeing not able to spare that quantity I required, by reason of the necessitie of some among it themselves, whom they supplied before my comming, would not take any Bils for the fame, out did what they could freely, withing their flore had beene fuch as they might in greater 20 measure have expressed their owne love, and supplied our necessities, for which they forrowed, prouoking one another to the vtmoft of their abilities : which although it were not much amongitto many people as were at the Plantation, yet through the provident and discrete care of the Gourmours, recoursed and preferred strength till our owne crop on the ground was ready.

Having dispatched there, I returned home with all speede convenient, where I found the state of the Colony much weaker then when I left it: for til now we were neuer without some Bread, the want wheref much abated the strength and flesh of some, and swelled others. But here it may be faid, if the Countrey abound with Fish and Fowle in such measure as is reported, how could men vollegoe fach meabre of hardnesse, except through their own neighbene? I aniwere: Euery thing must be expected in its proper seaton. Noman, as one faid, will goe into an Orchard in the Winter to gather Cherries : io he that lookes for Fowle there in the Summer, will be deceined in his expectation. The time they continue in plency with vs, is from the beginning of October to the end of March : but these extremities befeil vs in May and Iune. I confesse, that as the Fowle decrease, so Fish increase. And indeede their exceeding abundance was a great cause of increasing our wants. For though our Bay and Creekes were full of Balle, and other fish, vet for want of fit and firing Siy set, and other netting, they for the most part brake thorow and carried all away before them. And though the Sea were full of Cod, yet we had neither tackling nor harteis for our Shallops. An a indeede had we not beene in a place where divers forts of Shelfish are that may be taken wit i the hand, we must have perished, vnlesse God had raised some vn- 40 knowne or extraordinary meanes for our prefernation.

In the time of these streits (indeede before my going to Munhiggen) the Indians began againe to cast forth many infulting speeches, glorying in our weakenesse, and giuing out how easie it would be ere long to cut vs eff. Now also Maffalfowat feemed to frowne on vs, and neither came or fent to vs as formerly. These things occasioned further thoughts of Fortification, And whereas we have a Hill called the Mount, inclosed within our Pale, under which our Towne is feated, we refolted to creet a Fort thereon, from whence a few might easily fecure the Town from any allault the Indians can make, whilest the rest might be imployed as occasion lerued. This worke was begun with great eagernesse, and with the approbation of all men, hoping that this being once finished, and a continuall guard there kept, it would otterly discourage the Sa- 10 uages from having any hopes or thoughts of riling against vs. And though it tooke the greatest part of our strength from dressing our Corne, yet (life being continued) wee hoped God would

raife fo ne mettes in thead thereof for our further preservation.

In the end of Iune, or beginning of Iuly, came into our harbour two Ships of Mafter Westors planters which aforesaid, the one cilled the Charitie, the other the Swan, having in them some fitte or fixed men fent ouer at his owne charge to plant for him. There we received into our Towne, affording them whatseuer curtesie our meane condition could afford. There the Charitie, beingithe bigger Ship, left them, having many paffengers which the was to land in Virginia. In the meane time, the body of them retreshed themselves at Plimoth, whilest some most he sought our a place for them. That little store of Corne we had, was exceedingly wasted by the vinust and customed 60 walking of these thrangers, who though they would sometimes seeme to helpe vs in curlibour about our Corne, yet spared not day and night to steale the same, it being then eatable, and pleafant to tafte, though green and vnprofitable. And though they received much kindnelle, let light both by it and vs. At length their Coaffers returned, having found in their indgement a place fir

for plantation, within the Bay of the Maffachufets, at a place called by the Indians Wichanifsuffet. To which place the body of them went with all convenient speede, leaving still with vs fuch as were ficke and lame, by the Gouernours permiffion, though on their parts undeferued. whom our Surgeon by the helpe of God recourred gratis for them, and they fetched home, as occasion served. They had not beene long from vs, ere the Indians filled our eares with clamours against them, for stealing their Corne, and other abuses conceived by them. At which we grieved the more, because the same men, in mine owne hearing, had beene earnest in perswading Captaine Standilb, before their comming to folicite our Gouernour to fend fome of his men to plant by them, alledging many reasons how it might be commodious for vs. But weeknew no neanes to redresse those abuses, saue reproofe, and adusting them to better walking, as occafion ferued.

CHAP.S. Many clamours. Captainer Supplied. Tempestuous season.

In the end of August came other two Ships into our harbour, the one (as I take it) was called the Difconerie, Captaine lones having the command thereof, the other was that Ship of Mafter Westons, called the Sparrow, which had now made her Voyage of Fish, and was conforted with the other, being both bound for Virginia. Of Captaine lone; we furnished our selues of fuch pro- Helpe from uifions as we most needed, and he could beit spare, who as he vied vs kindely, so made vs pay Master leach

largely for the things we had. And had not the Almighty, in his All-ordering Providence, dire-Red him to vs, it would have gone worfe with vs, then ever it had beene, or after was: for, as we had now but small store of Corne for the yeare following : is for want of supply, we were worne 20 out of all manner of trucking-stuffe, not having any meanes left to helpe our felues by trade; but

through Gods good mercy towards vs, hee had wherewith, and did supply our wants on that

In the end of September, or beginning of October, Mafter Westons biggest Ship called the Charitie, returned for England, and left their Colony fufficiently victualled, as some of most credit among it them reported. The leffer, called the Swan, remained with his Colony for their further helpe. At which time they defired to loyne in partnership with vs to trade for Corne; to which out Gouernour and his Affiftant agreed upon fuch equall conditions, as were drawne and confirmed betweene them and vs. The chiefe places aimed at were to the Southward of Cape Cod; and the more because Tifquantum, whose peace before this time was wrought with Mas 30 fallowet, vndertooke to discouer vnto vs that supposed, and ftill hoped pallage within

Both Colonies being thus agreed, our Gouernour in his owne person supplied the Captaines place, and in the month of November fet forth, having Tifquantum for his Interpreter and Pis lot, who affirmed he had twice pailed within the Sholes of Cape Cod, both with English and French. Neuertheleffe, they went to farre with him, as the Matter of the Ship faw no hope of paffige : but being (as he thought) in danger, bare vp, and according to Tifquantums directions. made for an harbour not farre from them, at a place called Manamoyeke, which they found and founding it with their Shallop found the channell, though but narrow and srooked, where at at length they harboured the Ship. Here they perceived that the Tide fet in and out with more to violence at some other place more Southerly, which they had not feene nor could discouer , by realon of the violence of the feason all the time of their abode there. Some judged the entrance

thereof might be beyond the Shotes, but there is no certainty thereof as yet knowne. That night the Governour accompanied with others, having Tifquantum for his Interpreter went ashoare : At first the Inhabitante plaied leaft in fight, because none of our people had euer beene there before; but understanding the ends of their comming, at length came to them, welcomming out Godernour according to their Sauage manner, refreshing them very well with store of Venison and other victuals which they brought them in great abundance, promiting to trade with them, with a feeming gladnesse of the occasion: yet their ioy was mixed with much lealousie, as appeared by their after practifes: for at first they were loath their dwellings should be knowne, but when they faw our Gouetnours resolution to flay on the shoare all night, they brought him to 50 their houses, having first convaied all their stuffe to a remote place, not sarre from the same, which

one of our men walking forth occasionally, espied; whereupon, on the sudden, neither it nor they could be found, and so many times after vpon conceiued occasions, they would be all gone, bag and baggage. But being afterwards (by Tifquantums meanes) better perswaded, they left their lealoulie and traded with them; where they got eight hogheads of Corne and Beanes, though the people were but few. This gaue our Gouernour and the Company good encouragement. Tifquantum being itill confident in the passage, and the Inhabitants affirming, they had feene Ships of good burthen paffe within the Sholes aforefaid. Bur here, though they had determined to make a fecond affay, yet God had otherwaies disposed, who strucke Tefquantoms with

60 ficknesse, in so much as he there died, which crossed their Southward trading, and the more, becaule the Maifers lufficiency was much doubted, and the feafon very tempestuous, and not fit to goe voon discouery, having no guide to direct them.

From thence they departed, and the winde being faire for the Maffachusers, went thither, and the rather because the Sauages vpon our motion had planted much Corne for vs., which they

A Plague.

Honest Sa-

mages.

Note.

1858

promifed not long before that time. When they came thicher, they found a great fickneffe to be among it the Indians, not valike the Plague, if not the seme. They remued their complaints to our Governour, against that other Plantation seated by them, for their injurious walking. But indeede the trade both for Furres and Come was overthrowne in that place, they giving as much for a quart of Corne, as we vied to doe for a Beauers skin; fo that little good could be there done. From thence they returned into the bottome of the Bay of Cape Cod, to a place called Nanfer. where the Sachim wied the Gouernour very kindely, and where they bought eight or ten hogiheads of Corne and Beanes. Also at a place called Mattachiest, where they had like kinde enserrainment and Corne alio. During the time of their trade in these places, there were so great and violent stormes, as the Ship was much endangered, and our Shallop cast away, so that they to had now no meanes to carry the Corne aboard that they had bought, the Ship riding by their report well neere two leagues from the same, her owne Boate being small, and so leake (hauins no Carpenter with them) as they durft scarce fetch wood or water in her. Hereupon the Gouernour caused the Corne to be made in a round stacke, and bought Mats, and cut Sedge to couer it, and gave charge to the Indians not to meddle with it, promiting him that dwelt next to it a reward, if he would keepe vermine also from it, which he vindertooke, and the Saebim promised to make good. In the meane time, according to the Gouernors request, the Sactim fent men to feek the Shallop, which they found buried almost in fand at a high-water marke, having many thines remaining in her, but vnieruiceable for the present; whereof the Gouernour gaue the Sachim foeciall charge that it should not be further broken. And having procured a Guide, it being no lesse then fiftie miles to our Plantation, fet forward, receiuing all respect that could be from the Indians in his journey, and came fafely home, though weary and jurbated, whether some three dayes after the Ship also came. The Corne being divided which they had got, Master Wellons Company went to their owne Plantation, ic being further agreed, that they should returne with all convenient speede, and bring their Carpenter, that they might fetch the rest of the Corne, and

faue their Shallop. At their returne Captaine Standift being recourred and in health, tooke another Shallop, and went with them to the Corne, which they found in fafety as they left it: alio they mended the other Shallop, and got all their Corne aboard the Ship. This was in lanuary, as I take it, it being very cold and stormy, insomuch as (the harbour being none of the best) they were constrained to 30 cut both the Shallops from the Ships sterne, and so lost them both a second time. But the storme being ouer, and feeking oue, they found them both, not having received any great hure. Whileft they were at Naufes, having occasion to lye on the shoare, laying their Shallop in a Creeke not faire from them, an Indian came into the fame, and stole certaine Beads, Ciffers, and other trifies out of the same, which when the Captaine missed, he tooke certaine of his company with him, and went to the Sachim, telling him what had hapned, and requiring the fame againe, or the party that ftole them (who was knowne to certaine of the Indians) or elfe he would revenge it on them before his departure, and so tooke leave for that night being late, refusing whatfor wer kindneffe they offered. On the morrow, the Sachien came to their randenow, accompanied with many men, in a stately manner, who faluting the Captaine in this wife; He thrust out his tongue, 40 that one might fee the roote thereof, and therewith licked his hand from the wrift to the fingers end, withall bowing the knee, ftriuing to imitate the English gefture, being instructed therein formerly by Tilquanium: his men did the like, but inforude and Sauage a manner, as our men could scarce forbeare to breake out in open laughter. After salutation, he delivered the Beads, and other things to the Captaine, faying, he had much beaten the party for doing it, causing the women to make Bread, and bring them, according to their delire, feeming to be very forry for the fact, but glad to be reconciled. So they departed, and came home in latery; where the Coune was

equally divided, as before. After this, the Gouernour went to two other inland Townes, with another Company, and bought Corne likewise of them, the one is called Namaikes, the other Manomes. That from Na-50 market was brought home partly by Indian women; but a great fickneffe ariting amongst them, our owne men were inforced to fetch home the reft. That at Manomer the Gouernour left in the Sachinss custody: this Towne lieth from vs South well neere twenty miles, and stands upon 2 fresh River, which runneth into the Bay of Nanobigganset, and cannot be leffe then fixty miles from thence. It will beare a Boat of eight or ten tun to this place. Hither the Duich, or French, or both vieto come, It is from hence to the Bay of Cape Cod about eight miles; out of which Bay it floweth into a Creeke some fix miles almost direct towards the Towne. The heads of the River, and this Creeke, are not farre diffant. This River yeeldeth thus high, Oysters, Muscles, Clams, and other Shel-fish, one in shape like a Beane, another like a Clam, both good meate, and great abundance at all times; besides it aboundeth with divers sorts of trelh fish in their seasons. 60 The Governous or Sachim of this place, was called Canacum, who had formerly, as well as many others (yea all with whom as yet we had to doe) acknowledged themselves the Subjects of our Soueraigne Lord the King. This Sachim vied the Gouernour very kindely, and it fremed was of good respect and authority amongst the Indians. For whilest the Gouernour was there within

CHAP. 5. Tobacco and Beades. Abundance of Basse. Colonie. night in bitter weater, came two men from Manamoick, before spoken of, and having fet afide their Bowes and Quiuers, according to their manner, fat down by the fire, and tooke a pipe of Tobacco, not ving any words in that time, nor any other to them; but all remained filent, expecting when they would ipeake: At length they looked toward Canacum, and one of them made a thort (peech, and delivered a prefent to him from his Sachim, which was a basket of Tobacco, and many Beades, which the other received thankfully. After which, he made a long fpeech to him, the contents hereof was related to vs by Hobbamock (Who then accompanied the Gouernour for his Guide) to be as followeth; It hapned that two of their men fell out as they were in game (for they vie gaming as much as any where, and will play away all, even their skin from their Sauages great to backs, yea and for their wives skins alfo, though it may be they are many miles diffant from them, gamfters, as my telte haue feene) and growing to great heat, the one killed the other. The actor of this tact was a Powah, one of specials note among it them, and such an one as they could not well misse, yet another people greater then themselnes threatned them with warre, if they would not put him to death. The partie offending was in hold, neither would their Saebim doe one way or other till their returne, retting spon him for aduce and furtherance in fo weightie a matter. After this there was filence a short time; at length men gave their judgement what they thought best. Amone ft others, he asked Hobbamock what ne thought ! Who answered, he was but's ftranger to them, but thought it was better that one should die then many, fince he had deserved it, and the rest were innocent; whereupon he passed the sentence of death vpon him. Not long after (auing no great quantitle of Corne left) Captaine Standif went againe with a Shallon to Mattachieft, meeting allo with the like extremitie of weather, both of winde. Snow, and Froft, intomuch as they were frozen in the harbour the first night they entred the lame. Here they pretended their wonted love, and spared them a good quantitie of Corne to confirme the fame: Strangers also came to this place, precending onely to fee him and his Companie, whom they never faw before that time, but intending to joyne with the reft to kill them, as after appeared. But being forced through extremitie to lodge in their houses, which they much preffed, God possessed the heart of the Captaine with infliealousie, giving strait command, that as Inflicalousie one part of his Companie flept, the rest should wake, declaring some things to them which he vinderstood, whereof he could make no good construction. Some of the Indians spring a fit op-30 portunitie, stole some Beades also from him, which he no sooner perceiued, hauing not aboue ix men with him, drew them all from the Boat, and fet them on their goard about the Sachims house, where the most of the people were, threatning to fall vpon them without further delay. if they would not forthwith reftors them, fignifying to the Sachim especially, and so to them all. that as he would not offer the least injurie, so he would not receive any at their hands, which

they abounded with them.

should eleape without plinishment or due fatisfaction. Hereupon the Sachim bestirred him to finde out the partie, which when he had done, caused him to returne them agains to the Shallop, and came to the Captaine, desiring him to search whether they were not about the Boat, who fuspe Ring their knauerie, fent one, who found them lying openly voon the Boats cuady; yet to appeale his anger, they brought Corne afresh to trade, infomuch as he laded his Shallop, and so

do departed. This accident fo daunted their courage, as they durft not attempt any thing against him. So that through the good mercy and prouidence of God they returned in fafetie. At this Base Summer place the Indians get abundance of Baile both Summer and Winter, for it being now February and Winter.

In the beginning of March, having refreshed himselfe, he tooke a Shallop, and went to Mansmet, to ferch home that which the Governour had formerly bought, hoping also to get more from them, but was deceived in his expectation, not finding that entertainment he found elfewhere, and the Gouernour had therereceived. The reason whereof, and of the trecherie intended in the place before spoken of, was not then knowne vnto vs. but afterwards : wherein may be observed the abundant mercies of God working with his providence for our good. Captaine Standifb being now farre from the Boat, and not aboue two or three of our men with 50 him, and as many with the Shallop, was not long at Canacum the Sachims liquie, but in came two of the Maffachuset men, the chiefe of them was called Waumamet, a notable infulting villaine, one who had formerly imbrued his hands in the bloud of English and French,

and had oft boafted of his owne valour, and derided their weakneffe, effectilly because (as he faid) they died crying, making fowre faces, more like children then men. This villaine tooke a dagger from about his necke (which hee had gotten of Miffer Westons people) and presented it to the Sachim, and after made a long speech in an audacious manner, framing on it in fuchtort, as the Captaine (though he be the best Linguist amongst vs) could not gather any thing from it. The end of it was afterward diffcouered to be as followeth: The Maf-60 Sachenfeuckes formerly concluded to ruinate Mafter Westons Colonie, and thought them-

felues, being about thirty or forty men strong, enough to execute the same : yet they durit not attempt it, till fich time as they had gathered more frength to themselves to make their partie good against vs at Plimoth, concluding, that if wee remained (though they had no other Arguments to vie again t vs) yet wee would neuer leade the death of 2999999

Mamasket.

our Countrimen vnreuenged, and therefore their safetie could not be without the ouerthrow of both Plantations. To this end they had formerly folicited this Sachim, as also the other called lanoueb at Mattacbieft, and many others to affit them, and now againe came to profecute the same; and since there was so faire an opportunitie offered by the Captaines prefence, they thought best to make sure him and his Company. After this message was deliuered, his entertainment much exceeded the Captaines, infomuch as hee formed at their behaniour, and told them of it: after which, they would have perswaded him, because the weather was cold, to haue fent to the Boate for the rest of his Company, but he would not. defiring according to promife, that the Corne might be carried downe, and he would content the women for their libour, which they did. At the same time there was a lusty Indian of Io Pagnet or Cap: Cod then prefent, who had ever demeaned himselfe well towards vs, being in his generall carriage very affable, courteous, and louing, especially towards the Captaine. This Sause was now entred into confederacie with the reft, yet to avoide suspition, made many figures of his continued aff. Ctions, and would needes befrow a Kettle of fome fix or feven gallons on him, and would not accept of any thing in lieu thereof, faying, he was rich, and could afford to bettow fuch fanours on his friends whom he loued; also hee would freely helpe to carry tome of the Corne, ffirming he had never done the like in his life before, and the winde being bad would needes lodge with him at their Randeuow, having indeede vndertaken to kill him before they parted, which done they intended to fall vpon the reft. The night proued exceeding cold, infomuch as the Captaine could not take any reft, but either walked or tur- 20 ned himselfe to and froat the fire: This the other observed, and asked wherefore he cid not fleepe as at other times, who answered he knew not well, but had no defire at all to reft. So that he then milt hisopportunity. The winde feruing on the next day, they returned home, accompanied with the other Indian, who yied many arguments to perswade them to go to Paomes, where himself had much Corne, and many other, the most wherof he would procure for vs, seeming to forrow for our wants. Once the Captaine put forth with him, and was torced backe by contrary winde; which winde ferued for the Mafachufet, was fitted to goe thither. But on a fudden it altered againe.

During the time that the Captaine was at Manomer, newes came to Plimoth that Maffaffewat was like to die, and that at the fame time there was a Duteb Ship driven io high on the shoare by stress of weather, right before his dwelling, that till the tides encreased, the could not be got off. Now it being a commendable manner of the Indians, when any (especially of note) are dangeroully ficke, for all that profeile friendihip to them, to visit them in their extremity, eitherin their persons, or else to send some acceptable persons to them, therefore it was thought meete (being a good and warrantable action) that as we had euer professed friendship, so we should now maintaine the same, by obteruing this their laudable custome; and the rather, because we defined to have some conference with the Duich, not knowing when we should have so fit an opportunity. To that end my felfe having formerly beene there, and understanding in some measure the Dutch tongue, the Governour againe laid this feruice vpon my felfe, and fitted me with fome cordials to administer to him, having one Master John Hamden a Gentleman of London (who then wintered with vs, and defired much to fee the Country) for my Confert, and Hobbamocke for our 40 guide, So we fet forward, and lodged the first night at Namacket, where we had friendly enter-

Reports of Mafaffonats death.

Dutch Ship.

Visitations of

the ficke.

The next day about one of the clock, we came to a ferrie in Conbatants Country, where vpon discharge of my Peece, divers ludious came to vs from a house not far off. There they told vs, that Maffafforat was dead, and that day buried, and that the Dutch would be gone before we could get thicher, having houe off their Ship already. This newes strucke vs blanke; but especially H.b. bamocke, who defired we might returne with all speede. I told him I would first thinke of it, confidering now that he being dead, Combatant was the most like to succeede him, and that we were not about three miles from Massapunft his dwelling place, although he were but a hollow-hearted friend towards vs, I thought no time io fit as this, to enter into more friendly tearmes with 50 him, and the rest of the Sachines thereabout, hoping (through the bleffing of God) it would be a meanes in that vnietled state, to fettle their affections towards vs, and though it were somewhat dangerous, in respect of our personall safety, because my selfe and Hobbamocke had beene imployed vpon a feruice against him, which he might now fitly reuenge; yet esteeming it the best means, leaving the event to God in his mercy, I resolved to put it in practife, if Master Hamden and Hobbamock durft attempt it with me, whom I found willing to that or any other course might tend to the generall good. So we went towards Mattapunft. In the way, Hobbamocke manifelling a troubled spirit, brake forth into these speeches, Neen womas Sagimus, neen womas a Sagimus, oc. My louing Sachim, my louing Sachim. Many haue I knowne, but neuer any like thee: And turning him to me faid; Whilelt I hued, I should neuer see his like among the Indians, saying, he 60 was no lyer, he was not bloudy and cruell like other Indians; In anger and passion he was some reclaimed, casie to be reconciled towards such as had offended him, ruled by reason in such meafure, as he would not fcorne the aduice of meane men, and that he gouerned his men better with few stroakes then others did with many; truely louing where he loued; yea, he scared we had not

CHAP. 5. Friendly entertainment. Comfortable Conserues. Recouery.

a faithfull friend left among the Indians, the wing how he oft-times reftrained their malice, &c. continuing a long speech with such signes of lamentarion and vasteined forrow, as it would have made the hardeit heart relent.

At length we came to Mastapuyst, and went to the Sachimo Comaco (for so they called the Sachims place, though they call an ordinary house Wisco) but Combatant the Sachim was not at home, but at Packanokick, which was some fine or fix miles off; the Squa fachim (for so they call Sachims wife) gaue vs friendly entertainment. Here we enquired againe concerning Maffaffowat, they thought him dead, but knew no certainty; wherupon I hired one to goe with all expedition to Puckanokick, that we might know the certainty thereof, and withall to acquaint f'ombatant to with our there being. About halfe an houre before Sun-ferting, the messenger returned, and told vs that he was not yet dead, though there was no hope we should finde him living. V pon this we were much reuiued, and fet forward with all speede, though it was late within night ere we got thither. About two of the clock that afternoone the Dutchmen departed, fo that in that refp. & our journie was frustrate. When we came thither, we found the house to full of men, as we could fearce get in, though they vied their beit diligence to make way for vs. There were they in the comforters, middelt of their charmes for him, making fuch a hellish noile, as it diftempered vs that were well, and therefore volike to ease him that was ficke. About him were fix or eight women, who chated his armes, legs, and thighes, to keep heat in him : when they had made an end of their charming, one told him that his friends the English were come to fee him (hauing vinderstanding left, but his 30 fight was wholly gone) he asked wno was come, they told him Winfinon (for they cannot pronounce the letter I, but ordinarly n in the place thereof) he defired to speake with me : when I came to him, & they told him of it, he put forth his hand to me, which I took; then he faid twice,

though very inwardly, keen Win (now, which is to fay, art thou Win low? I answered, abbe, that is, yes;

then he doubled thele words, Matta neen wonchanet namen Win from that is to fay, O Win flow I shall neuer (ee thee agam. Then I called Hobbamock, and defired him to tell Mallafowas, that the Gouernor hearing of his ticknes, was forry for the same, & though by reason of many businesses he could not come himfelfe, yet he lent me with fuch things for him as he thought most likely, to doe him good in this extremity, and whereof if he pleased to take, I would presently give him; which he defired, and having a confection of many comtortable Conferues, on the point of my Knife I gaue 30 him fome, which I could flarce get thorow his teeth; when it was diffolued in his mouth, he fwallowed the juice of it, whereat those that were about him much reioyced, saying, he had not swallowed any thing in two daies before. Then I defired to fee his mouth, which was exceedingly furred, and his tongue swelled in such manner, as it was not possible for him to eat such meat as they had, his passage being stopt vp. Then I washed his mouth, and scraped his tongue, & got abundance of corruption out of the fame. After which, I gaue him more of the confection, which he swallowed with more readines; then he defired to drinke, I dissolued some of it in water, and gaue him thereof: within halfe an houre this wrought a great alteration in him in the eies of all that beheld him: presently after his fight began to come to him. In the meane time I inquired how he slept, and when he went to ftoole! They taid he flept not in two daies before, & had not had a ftoole in fine; 40 then I gaue him more, and told him of a mishap we had by the way in breaking a bottle of drink, which the Gouernour also sent him, saying, if he would fend any of his men to Pataxet, I would fend for more of the same, also for Chickens to make him broth, & for other things which I knew were good for him, and would flay the returne of the Messenger, if he desired. This he tooke maruellous kindly, and appointed some, who were ready to go by two of the clock in the morning, against which time I made ready a Letter, declaring therein our good successe, the state of his body &c.desiring to fend such things as I fent for, and such physicke as the Surgion durst administer to him, He requested me that the day following, I would take my Peece, and kill him some Fowle, and make him some English pottage, such as he had eaten at Plimoth, which I promised : after his Romacke comming to him, I must needes make him some without Fowle, before I went abroad, which formewhat troubled meet but being I must doe formewhat. I caused a woman to bruise some Corne, and take the flower from it, and let ouer the grut or broken Corne in a Pipkin (for they have earthen Pots of all fizes.) When the day broke, we went out (it being now March) to feeke hearbes, but could not finde any but Strawberrie leaues, of which I gathered a handful & put into the same, and because I had nothing to relish it, I went forth againe, and pulled wp a Saxafras root, and fliced a peece thereof, and boiled it till it had a good relish, and then tooke it out againe. The broth being boiled, I strained it thorow my handkerchiffe, and gaue him at least a pinte, which he dranke, and liked it very well. After this, his fight mended more and more, also he had three moderate Hooles, and tooke some rest : Insomuch, as we with admiration bleffed God for giving his bleffing to fuch raw and ignorant meanes, making no doubt of his recovery, himfelfe and all of 60 them acknowledging vs the instruments of his preservation. That morning he caused me to spend in going from one to another amongst those that were sicke in the Town, requesting me to wash their mouthes also, and give to each of them some of the same I gave him, saying, they were good folke. This paines I tooke with willing refle, though it were much offenfine to me, not being accultomed with fuch poisonous fauours.

Qqqqqqq 3

The Messengers were now returned, but finding his stomacke come to him, he would not have the Chickens killed, but kept them for breede. Neither durit we give him any physicke which was then fent, because his body was so much altered since our instructions, neither faw we any neede, not doubting now of his recouery, if he were carefull, Many whilest we were there came to fee him, tome by their report from a place not leffe then an hundred miles. Vpon this his recourty, he brake forth into thele speeches; Now I fee the English are my friends and loue me, and whileft I line I will neuer forget this kindenesse they have shewed me. Whilest wee were there. our entertainment exceeded all other strangers. At our comming away, he called Hobbamocketo him, and privately (none hearing faue two or three other of his Pueefes, who are of his Counfell) revealed the plot of the Maffachenfencks before spoken of, against Master Westons Colony. 10 and to against vs, taying that the people of Naufet, Paomet, Succouet Mattachieft, Manomet Ago. warmam, and the He of Capamack, were joyned with them; himselfe also in his sickcasse was earnestly follicited, but he would neither joyne therein, nor give way to any of his. Therefore as we respected the lines of our Countrimen, and our owne after-safety, he adusted vs to kill the men of Maffachnfet, who were the authors of this intended mischiefe. And whereas we were wont to lay, we would not thrike a ftroke till they first began; if faid he vpon this intelligence. they make that aniwer, tell them, when their Countrimen at Wichagufonffet are killed, they being not able to defend themselves, that then it will be too late to recover their lives, nay through the He reuealeth the treckty of multitude of adueriaries they shall with great difficultie preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficultie preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficultie preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficultie preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties preserve their own, & therefore he countries they shall with great difficulties they shall be a sh felled without delay to take away the principals, and then the plot would ceafe. With this hee 20 charged him thorowly to acquaint me by the way, that I might informe the Gouernour thereof at my first comming home. Being fitted for our returne, we tooke our leaue of him, who returned many thankes to out Gouernour, and also to our selves for our labour and loue : the like aid all that were about him. So we departed.

That night, thorow the earnest request of Combatant, who till now remained at Samaams or Puckanubick, we lodged with him at Mattapurft. By the way I had much conference with him. to like wife at his house, he being a notable politician, yet full of merry iests and squibs, and neper better pleased then when the like are returned againe voon him. Amongst other things he asked me, It in cate he were thus dangeroully ficke, as Maffaffowat had beene, and should fend word thereof to Painxet for Masket, that is, Phylicke, whether then Master Gouernour would fend it? and if he would, whether I would come therewith to him? To both which I answered yea; whereat he gaue me many joyfull thankes. After that, being at his house, he demanded further, how we durit being but two come fo farre into the Country ! I answered, where was true love there was no feare, and my heart was so vpright towards them, that for mine owne part I was fearelesse to come amongst them. But, said he, if your love be such, and it bring forth such fruits, how commeth it to paffe, that when we come to Patures, you fland vpon your guard, with the mouthes of your Peeces presented towards vs ? Whereupon I answered, it was the most honorable and respective entertainment we could give them; it being an order among it vs so to receive our best respected friends : and as it was vied on the Land, to the Ships observed it also at Sea, which Hobbamock knew, and had feene observed. But shaking the head, heanswered, that he 40 liked not fuch falutations.

Further, obseruing vs to craue a bleffing on our meate before we did eate, and after to give thankes for the lame, he asked vs what was the meaning of that ordinary custome? He reupon I tooke occasion to tell them of Gods workes of Creation, and Preservation, of the Lawes and Ordinances, especially of the ten Commandements, all which they hearkned vnto with great attention, and liked well of; onely the feuenth Commandement they excepted against, thinking there were many inconveniences in it, that a man should be tied to one woman: about which we reasoned a good time. Also I told them, that what sever good things we had, we received from God, as the Author and giver thereof, and therefore craved his bletting vpon that we had, and were about to cate, that it might nourish and strengthen our bodies, and having eaten sufficie 50 ent, being satisfied therewith, we againe returned thankes to the same our God for that our refreshing, &c. This all of them concluded to be very well, and faid, they believed almost all the fame things, and that the same power that we called God, they called Kietstan. Much profitable conference was occasioned hereby, which would be too tedious to relate, yet was no leste delightfull to them, then comfortable to vs. Here we remained onely that night, but neuer had better entertainment amongst any of them.

The day following, in our journey, Hobbamocke told me of the private conference he had with Maffaffornat, and how he charged him perfectly to acquaint me therewith (as I shewed before) which having done, he vied many arguments himfelte to moue vs thereunto: That night we lodged at Namasket, and the day following about the mid-way betweene it and home, we met 60 two Indians, who told vs that Captaine Standift was that day gone to the Majachnfets : but contrary windes againe draue him backe, so that we found him at home; where the Indian of Panmet still was, being very importunate that the Captaine should take the first opportunitie of a faire winde to goe with him, but their fecret and villanous purpofes being through Gods mercy

now made knowne, the Gouernour caused Captaine Standillo to fend him away without anv diftafte or manifestation of anger, that we might the better effect and bring to passe that which should be thought most necessary.

Before this journey we heard many complaints both by the Indians and some others of best desert amongst Master Wester & Colony, how exceedingly their Company abased themselues by undirect meanes, to get victuals from the Indians, who dwelt not farre from them, ferching them wood & water, &c, and all for a meales meate, whereas in the meane time, they might with diligence have gotten enough to have ferued them three or foure times. Other by night brake the earth, and robbed the Indians flore, for which they had beene publiquely flocked and whipt, to and yet was there small amendment. This was about the end of February, at which time they had front all their Bread and Corne, not leaving any for Seede, neither would the Irdians lend or fell them any more voon any tearmes. Hereupon they had thought to take it by violence, and to that (piked vp euery entrance into their Towne (being well impaled) faue one, with a full refolution to proceede. But some more honestly minded, aduited lobn Sanders their Ouer-seer first to write to Plimeth, and if the Gouernor aduised him thereunto, he might the better doe it. They fent, and our Gouernour writ divers reasons of dillike. With these Letters wee dispatched the Mellenger ; Vpon the receipt whereof they altered their determination, resoluting to shift as they could, till the returne of Iohn Sanders from Manhiggen, who first comming to Plimoth, notwithstanding our owne necessities, the Gouernour spared him fome Corne to carrie them to 20 Manbiggen. But not hauing sufficient for the Ships store, he tooke a Shallop, and leaving others with initructions to ouer-fee things till his returne, fer forward about the end of February, fo that he knew not of this confpiracie of the Indians before his going, neither was it knowne to any of vs till our returne from Samaams or Packanakick: at which time also another Sanealed the fame thing.

chim called Wassapinewat, brother to Obratiest the Sachim of the Massachusete, who had formerly finarted for partaking with Conbatant, and fearing the like againe, to purge himlelfe, re-

The three and twentieth of March being now come, which is a yearely Court day, the Gouernour having a double testimony, and many circumstances agreeing with the truth thereof, not being to vndertake warre without the confent of the body of the Company; made knowne the 30 same in publique Court. We came to this conclusion, That Captaine Standift should take so many men as he thought sufficient to make his party good against all the Indians in the Maffachafes Bay; & becaule (as all men know that have had to doe in that kinde) it is impossible to deale with them youn open defiance, but to take them in such traps as they lay for others; therfore he should pretend trade as at other times: but first goe to the English, & acquaint them with the plot, & the end of his owne comming, that comparing it with their carriages towards them, he might better indge of the certainty of it, and more fitly take opportunity to revenge the same: but should forbeare if it were possible till such time as he could make sure Witumamat, that bloudy & bold villain before spoken of, whose head he had order to bring with him, that hee might be a warning and terrour to all that disposicion. Vpon this, Captaine Standifb made choice of eight men , and 40 would not take more because he would prevent lealousse, knowing their guilty consciences would foone be prouoked thereunto : but on the next day before he could goe, came one of Master Weflons Company by land vnto vs, with his packe at his backe, who made a pittifull narration of their lamentable and weake estate, and of the Indians carriages, whose boldnesse increased abundantly, infomuch as the victuals they got, they would take it out of their Pots and eate before lence. their faces, yea if in any thing they gaine-said them, they were ready to hold a Knife at their breafts; that to give them content, fince Iohn Sanders went to Munhingen, they had hanged one of them that Role their Corne, and yet they regarded it not : that another of their Company was turned Sauage, that their people had most forsaken the Towne, and made their randeuous where they got their victuals, because they would not take paines to bring it home; that they had sold their cloathes for Corne, and were ready to starue both with cold and hunger also, because they 50 could not indure to get victuals by reason of their nakednesse: and that they were dispersed into three Companies, scarce having any Powder and Shot left. As this Relation was grieuous to vs, fo it gaue vs good encouragement to proceede in our intendments, for which Captaine Standib was now fitted, and the winde comming faire, the next day fet forth for the

The Indians at the Massachusets missed this man, and suspecting his comming to vs , as wee conceine, fent one after him, and gaue out there that he would never come to Palaxet, but that fome Wolues or Beares would eare him : but we know not by our owne experience, and the report of others, that though they finde a man fleeping, yet so soone as there is life discerned, they 60 feare and thun him. This Indian miffed him but very little, and miffing him paffed by the towne and went to Manomet, whom we hoped to take at his returne, as afterward we did. Now was our Fort made fit for service and some Ordnance mounted; and though it may seeme long worke it being ten moneths fince it begun, yet we must note, that where so great a worke is begun with fuch small meanes, a little time cannot bring to perfection; beside those workes which tend to

Qqqqqqq3

Their name

1865

the preferration of man, the enemy of mankinde will hinder what in him lieth, sometimes blinin gement, and causing reasonable men to reason against their own fafety. The Indian left mentioned in his returns from Monomet, came through the Towne, pretending itill friendfhin and in love to fee vs. but as formerly others, so his end was to fee whether wee continued full in health and strength, or fell into weakenesse like their neighbours, which they hoped and looked for (though God in mercy prouised better for vs) and hee knew would be glad tydings to his Countrie men. But here the Gouernour stail him, and fending for him to the Fort, there gathe the Guard charge of him as their prisoner, where he told him hee must be contented to remaine till the return of Captain Standift from the Maffachufets, to he was locked in a chaine to a staple in the Court of guard, and there kept. Thus was our Fort hanfelled, this being the first day as I take it. 10 that ever any watch was there kept.

The Captaine being now come to the Maffachufets, went first to the Ship , butfound neither man or fo much as a Dogge therein: vpon the discharge of a Musket the Master and some others of the Plantation thewed themfelues, who were on the thore gathering ground-nuts, and getting other foode. After falutation, Captaine Standifb asked them how they durft fo leave the Ship. and line in fuch fecurity, who answered like men sentlesse of their owne misery, they feared not the Indians but hue I and fuffered them to lodge with them, not having Sword or Gunne.or needing the same. To which the Captaine answered, if there were no cause he was the gladder, but woon further inquiry, understanding that those in whom John Sanders had reposed most speciall confidence and left in his fread to gouerne the rest, were at the Plantation : thither he went, and 20 to be briefe, made knowne the Indians purpose, and the end of his owne comming, as also (which formerly I omitted) that if afterward they durit not there flay, it was the intendment of the Gouernours and people of Plimouth there to receive them till they could be better provided; but if they conceived of any other course that might be more likely for their good, that himselfe should further them therein to the vttermost of his power. These men comparing other circumstances with that they now heard, aniwered, they could expect no better, and it was Gods mercy that they were not killed before his comming, defiring therefore that he would neglect no opportunity to proceede: Hereupon he aduised them to secrecy, yet withall to send special command to one third of their Company that were farthest off to come home, and there enjoyee them on paine of death to keepe the Towne, himfelfe allowing them a pint of Indian Corne to a man for a day (though that flore he had was spared out of our Seede.) The weather prouing very wet and

flormy at was the longer before he could doe any thing. In the meane time an Indian came to him and brought some Furres, but rather to gather what he could from the Captaines, then comming then for trade; and though the Captaine carried things as smoothly as possibly he could, yet at his returne he reported he saw by his eyes that he was angry in his heart, and therefore began to suspect themselves discovered. This caused one Peckfuot who was a Pinefe, being a man of a notable spirit to come to Hobbamocke who was then with them, and told him hee vinderstood that the Captaine was come to kill himselfe and the rest of the Sauages there; tell him, said he, we know it, but feare him not, neither will we shun him ; but let him begin when he dare, he shall not take vs at vnawares : many times af- 40 ter, divers of them severally, or few together, came to the Plantation to him, where they would whet and tharpen the point of their Kniues before his face, and vie many other infulting geflures and speeches. Amongst the rest, Witnmanat bragged of the excellency of his Knife, on the end of the handle there was pictured a womans face, but faid hee, I have another at home wherewith I have killed both French and English, and that hath a mans face on it, and by and by these two must marry : Further he said of that Knife he there had ; Hinnains namen, hinnain michen, matta cuts: that is to lay, By and by it should see, and by and by it should eaten but not speake. Also Peck fuor being a man of greater stature then the Captaine, told him, though he were a great Captaine, yet he was but a little man : and faid he, though I be no Sachim, yet I am a man of great ftrength and courage. These things the Captaine observed, yet bare with patience for the pre- 19 fent. On the next day, feeing he could not get many of them together at once, and this Peckfuot and Witnwamat both together, with another man, and a youth of some eighteene yeares of age, which was brother to Witumamat, and villaine-like trode in his steps, daily putting many trickes upon the weaker fort of men, and having about as many of his owne Company in a roome with them, gaue the word to his men, and the doore being fall flut, began himselfe with Perce Sauages flain. [uot, and fnatching his owne Knife from his necke, though with much ftrugling, killed him therewith, the point whereof he had made as tharpe as a needle, and ground the backe also to an edge: Witumamar and the other man, the rest killed, and tooke the youth, whom the Captaine caused to be hanged; but it is incredible how many wounds thefe two Pueeles received before they died, not making any fearefull noyfe, but catching at their weapons and ftriuing to the latt. Hobba- 60 mocke itood by all this time as a spectator and medled not, obseruing how our men demeaned themselves in this action : all being here ended, smiling, he brake forth into these speeches to the

Captaine; Yesterday Pecks not bragging of his owne strength and stature, faid, though you were

a great Captaine, yet you were but a lttle man; but to day I fee you are big enough to lay him

on the ground. But to proceede, there being fome women at the same time, Captaine Standish left them in the custody of Master Westons people at the Towne, and fent word to another Company that had intelligence of things to kill thole Indian men that were amongst them, these kil-Led two more: himfelte also with some of his owne men went to another place, where they kil. led another, and through the negligence of one man an Indian escaped, who discouered and croifed their proceedings. Not long before this Execution, three of Master Westons men, which more regarded their bel- Savage Ent-

CHAP. S.

lies then thy command or Commander, having formerly tared well with the Indians for making liftmen. them Clanoes, went againe to the Sachun to offer their feruice, and had entertainment. The first to night they came thither within night lace came a Meffenger with all speede, and delivered a fad and fhort meffage: Whereupon all the men gathered together, put on their Bootes and Breeches, truffed up themselues, and tooke their Bowes and Arrowes and went forth, selling them they went a hunting, and that at their returns they should have Venison enough. Being now gone, one being more ancient and wife then the reft, calling former things to minde, especially the Captaines presence, and the strait charge, that on paine of death none should got a Musket-shot from the Piantation; and comparing this sudden departure of theirs therewith, began to dislike and with himfelfe at home againe, which was further of then divers other dwelt . Hereupon he moued his fellowes to returne, but could not perfwade them : fo there being none but women left, and the other that was turned Sauage, about midnight came away, forfaking the paths left 20 he should be purfued, and by this meanes faued his life.

Captaine Standift tooke the one halfe of his men, and one or two of Master Westons, and Hobbamock, still tecking to make spoyle of them and theirs. At length they espied a file of Indians which made towards them amayne, and there being a small advantage in the ground by reason of a Hill neere them, both Companies ftroue for it. Captain Standalb got it, whereupon they retreated and tooke each man his Tree, letting flie their Arrowes amayne, especially at himselfe and Hobbemocke, whereupon Hobbamocke calt off his coate, and being a knowne Pinefe, (theirs being now killed) chased them so fast, as our people were not able to hold way with him, insomuch as our men could have but one certaine marke, and then but the arme and halte face of a notable villaine as hee drew at Captaine Standish, who together with another both discharged at him, and 30 brike his arme ; whereupon they fled into a swampe, when they were in the thicket they para lied, but to small purpose, getting nothing but toule language. So our Captain dared the Saching to come out and fight like a man, thewing how base and womanlike hee was in tounging it as he did : but he refused and fled. So the Captaine returned to the Plantation, where hee released the women and would not take their Beauer coates from them, nor suffer tholeast discourtesse to bee offered them. Now were Master Westons people resoluted to leave their Plantation and goe for Manbiggen, hoping to get passage and returne with the Fishing Ships. The Captaine told them. that for his owne part hee durit there line with fewer men then they were , yet fince they were otherwayes minded, according to his order from the Gouernours and people of Plimonth, hee would helpe them with Corne competent for their prouision by the way, which hee did, scarce 40 leaving himfelfe more then brought them home. Some of them difliked the choice of the bodie togoe to Munbiggen, and therefore desiring to goe with him to Plumouth, hee tooke them into the Shallop : and feeing them fet fayle and cleere of the Maffachufet Bay, he tooke leave and returned to Plimouth, whither hee came in fafetie (bleffed be God) and brought the head of Witna

Among ft the reft, there was an Indian youth that was ever of a courteous and louing disposition on towards vs, hee not withflanding the death of his Countrimen, came to the Captaine without fea: e, laying, His good conscience and love towards vs imboldned him so to doe. This youth confeffed that the Indians intended to kil Master Westons people, and not to delay any longer then till they had two more Canoes or Boats, which Malter Westons men would have finished by this 50 time (having made them three already) had not the Captaine prevented them, and the end of flay

for those Boats, was to take their Ship therewith. Now was the Captaine returned and received with ioy, the head being brought to the Fore and there fet up, the Gouernours and Captaines with divers others went up the same further, to examine the priloner, who looked pittioully on the head, being asked whether he knew it, he anfwered, yea : Then he confessed the plot, and that all the people prouoked Obtakest their Sachim thereunto, being drawne to it by their importunitie : Fine there were (he faid) that profecuted it with more eagernesse then the rest, the two principall were killed, being Peckinot and Wanwamat, whose head was there, the other three were Powabs, being yet living, and knowne vnto ys, though one of them was wounded, as aforesaid. For himselie hee would not acknowledge that hee had any hand therein , begging earnestly for his life, faying, Hee was not a Maffachufet man, but as a stranger lived with them. Hobbamock also gave a good report of him, and belought for him, but was bribed to to doe it. Neuertheleffe, that wee might frew mercy as well as extreamitie, the Gouernour released him, and the rather because we defired he might carry a message to Obraveff his Mafter. No fooner were the Irons from his legs, but he would have beene gone, but

the Gouernour bid him stay and feare not, for hee should receive no hurt, and by Hobbamoch commanded him to deliver his meffage to his Malter ; That for our parts, it never entred into our hearts to take such a course with them, till their owne treachery enforced us thereunto, and therefore they much totake fueb a courie with them, thillier i more treasour; enjure cu a successio, ama torrigare they magist thanke them feliues for their ownse oversthrow, yet fince the bad begun; if against by any the tike cour fishes dad prouche but, his Country floudd not bald him, for her would neuer fulfre him or his to refin prace, till bee had viterly confumed them, and therefore should take this as a marning. Earther, that helpoolid fend to Patuxet the three Englishmen hee had and not kill them; also that bee should not spoile the Pele and Houses at Wichaguscusset, and that this Messenger should either bring the English, or an answer or both, pro nifing his fafe returne.

both, promiting an interesting.

This message was delivered, and the partie would have returned with answer, but was at first to diffwaded by them, whom afterward they would, but could not perswade to come to vs. At length (though long) a woman came and told vs that Obtakieft was forry that the English were killed before he heard from the Gouernour, otherwise hee would have sent them. Also shee said: hee would faine make his peace againe with vs , but none of his men durst come to treate about it, having forfaken his dwelling, and daily removed from place to place, expecting when wee

would take further vengeance on him.

Concerning those other people that intended to joyne with the Massachuseuchs against ve though we never went against any of them, yet this fudden and vnexpected execution together with the iuft judgement of God vpon their guiltie consciences, hath so terrified and amazed them, as in like manner they for fooke their houses, running to and fro like men distracted, living 20 in fwamps and other defert places, and to brought manifold diteates among it themselves, whereof very many are dead, as Canacum the Sachim of Manomet, Afpines the Sachim of Naufet, and lanough Sachins of Mattachnest. This Sachins in his life, in the middeft of these diffractions, faid. The God of the English was offended with them, and would destroy them in his anger; and certainly it is ftrange to heare how many of late haue, and full daily dye amongft them, neither is there any likelihood it will eafily ceafe, because through feare they fer little or no Corne, which is the flatte of life, and without which they cannot long preferue health and ilrength. From one of these places a Boat was fent with Prefents to the Gouernour, hoping thereby to worke their peace, but the Boat was cast away, and three of the perions drowned, not farre from our Plantation, onely one escaped, who durft not come to vs, but returned, fo as none of them dare come 20 among it vs.

An. 1622.

1866

The moneth of April being now come, on all hands we began to prepare for Corne. And because there was no Corne left before this time, saue that was preserved for Seed, being also hopeleffe of reliefe by fupply, we thought best to leave off all other workes and projecute that as most necessarie. And because there was no small hope of doing good, in that common course of labour that formerly wee were in, for that the Governours that followed men to their labours, had nothing to sine men for their necessities, and therefore could not so we'll exercise that command ouer them therein as formerly they had done, especially confidering that selfe-loue wherewith euery man (in a meature more or leffe) loueth and preferreth his owne good before his neighbours, and also the base disposition of some drones, that as at other times so now especially would be at most burdenous to the rest : It was therefore thought best that every man should vie the best diligence he could for his owne preferuation, both in respect of the time present, and to prepare his owne Corne for the veere following: and bring in a competent portion for the maintenance of publike Officers, Fishermen, &c, which could not bee freed from their calling without greater inconveniences. This course was to continue till harvest, and then the Governours to gather in the appointed portion, for the maintenance of themselves and such others as necessicie constrained to exempt from this condition.

In the middest of Aprill webegan to set, the weather being then seasonable, which much incouraged vs, giving vs good hopes of after plentie : the fetting feafon is good till the latter end of May. But it pleafed God for our further chastifement, to fend a great drought, infomuch, as in fix 50 Great drought weekes after the later fetting there scarce fell any raine, so that the stalke of that was first fet, began to fend forth the eare before it came to halfe growth, and that which was later, not like to yeeld any at all, both blade and stalke hanging the head, and changing the colour in such manner as we indged it veterly dead : our Beanes also ran not vp according to their wonted manner, but flood at a flay, many being parched away, as though they had beene feorched before the fire. Now were our hopes ouerthrowne, and we discouraged, our joy being turned into mourning. To adde also to this forrowfull estate in which we were, we heard of a supply that was sent vnto vs many moneths fince, which having two repulses before, was a third time in company of another Ship three hundred Leagues at Sea, and now in three moneths time heard no further of her, onely the fignes of a wrack were feene on the Coast, which could not be judged to be any other then 60

> These & the like considerations, moved not only every good man privately to enter into examination with his own estate between God and his conscience, & so to humiliation before him but also more folemnly to humble our selnes together before the Lord by Fasting and Prayer. To that

end a day was appointed by publike authority, and let a part from all other emploiments, hoping Publike Faft, that the fame God which had ftirred vs vp hereunto, would be moued hereby in mercy to looke woon vs & grant the request of our dejected soules, it our continuance there might any way stand with his glorie and our good. But oh the mercy of our God! Who was as readie to heare as we to aske : For though in the morning when wee offembled together , the heavens were as cleere and the drought as like to continue as euer it was : yet (our exercise continuing some eight or nine Gracious houres) before our departure the weather was overcast, the clouds gathered together on all sides, dewes. and on the next morning diffilled fuch loft, fweete, and moderate showers of raine, continuing fome fourteene daies, and mixed with such seasonable weather, as it was hard to say whether to our withered Corne, or drouping affections were most quickned or reujued. Such was the bountie and goodnesse of our God. Of this the Indians by meanes of Hobbamock tooke notice : who being then in the Towne, and this exercise in the midft of the weeke, said, It was but three daies

fince Sunday, and therefore demanded of a boy what was the reason thereof? Which when hee knew and law what effects followed thereupon, hee and all them admired the goodnesse of our God towards vs, that wrought to great a change in to thort a time, the wing the difference be- Indiant conititweene their Conjuration, and our Inuocation on the Name of God for raine; theirs being mixed ration. with fuck stormes and tempests, as sometimes in stead of doing them good, it laieth the Corne flat on the ground, to their prejudice : but ours in fo gentle and feafonable a manner, as they never observed the like.

At the same time Captaine Standish, being formerly imployed by the Gouernour, to buy prouifions for the refreshing of the Colony, returned with the fame, accompanied with on M. Danid M. Temfar a Tomfon, a Scotchman, who also that Spring began a Plantation twentie fine leagues North-east Scothis Planfrom vs. neere Smiths lies, at a place called Pascatoquack, where hee liketh well. Now also tation. heard wee of the third repulie that our supply had, of their safe, though dangerous returne into England, and of their preparation to come to vs. So that having these many fignes of Gods favour and acceptation, wer thought it would bee great ingratitude, it fecretly wee should smoother vp the lame, or content our selves with primate thanks-giving, for that which by private praier could Day of thanks not be obtained. And therefore another folemne day was fet apart for that end wherein wee returned glory, honour, and praise, with all thankfulnese to our good God, which dealt so graciously 30 with vs. whose name for these and all other his mercies towards his Church and chosen ones, by them be bleffed and praifed now and euermore, Amen.

In the latter end of July, and the beginning of August, came two Ships with supply vnto vs, Two Ships, who brought all their pailengers, except one, in health, who recourred in fibrt time, who also not-withstanding all our wants and hardship (blessed be God) found not any one sick person amongst vs at the Plantation. The bigger Ship called the Anne was hired, and there againe fraughted backe, from whence wee fet faile the tenth of September. The leffer called the little James, was built for the Company at their charge. Shee was now also fitted for Trade and discouery to the Southward of Cape Cod, and almost readie to fet faile, whom I pray God to bleffe in her good and lawfull proceedings.

Few things I thought meete to adde heereunto, which I have observed amongst the

A Indians, both touching their Religion, and fundry other Customes amongst them. And first, whereas my felfe and others, in former Letters (which came to the Presse against my Their Relicion will and knowledge) wrote, that the Indians about vs are a people without any Religion or The meaning knowledge of any God, therein I erred, though wee could then gather no better : For as they of the word, conceine of many divine powers, so of one whom they call Kiehran, to bee the principall maker Wehran, I conceine of many disinte powers, too one without they car knows, to be the principle in that think hish re-of all the reft, and to be made by none: Hee (they fay) created the Heauens, Earth, Sea, and all think hish re-ofference on a single powers. The contraction of the contraction of whom they and disputs for-centures contained therein. Also that hee made one man and one woman, of whom they and disputs forwee and all mankind came : but how they became to farre differfed that know they not. At first chife is an old 50 they fay, there was no Sachim, or King, but Kiehtan, who dwelleth about the Heauens, whither min, and Kithall good men goe when they die to fee their friends, and have their fill of all things. This his har there exec bitation lyeth Westward in the Heavens, they say; thither the bad men goe also, and knocke at de hin acc. his doore, but he bids them Quachet, that is to lay, Walke abroad, for there is no place for fuch; fo tie malediffi. that they wander in relileffe want and penury. Neuer man faw this Kiebran; onely old men tell them of him, and bid them tell their children, yea, to charge them to teach their posterities the fame, and lay the like charge vpon them. This power they acknowledge to be good, and when they would obtaine any great matter, meet together, and cry vnto him, and so likewise for plentie, victory, &c. ling, dance, feast, give thankes, and hang vp Garlands and other things in memo-

60 ry of the fame. Another power they worthip, whom they call Hobbamock, and to the Nothward of vs Hob- Their Devillbamoqui; this as farre as wee can conceiue is the Deuili, him they call upon to cure their wounds and diseases. When they are curable, hee perswades them hee sends the same for some conceined angeragainst them, but vpon their calling vpon him can and doth helpe them; But when they are mortall, and not curable in nature, then he perfiwades them Kiebtan is angry and fends them

Offerings.

Sacrifices.

The Douill

whom none can cure : infomuch , as in that respect onely they somewhat doubt whether hee bee fimply good, and therefore in ficknesse neuer call vpon him. This Hobbomock appeares in lundry formes vnto them, as in the shape of a Man, a Deare, a Fawne, an Eagle, &c. but most ordinarily a Snake : Hee appeares not to all, but the chiefest and most judicious amongst them, though allof them striue to accaine to that hellish height of Honour. He appeareth most ordinary, and is most convertant with three forts of people, one I confesse, I neither know by name nor office directly: Of these they have sew but esteeme highly of them, and thinke that no weapon can kill them: another they call by the name of Powab, and the third Pniefe.

The office and dutie of the Powab is to be exercifed principally in calling vpon the Deuill. and curing difeales of the licke or wounded. The common people joyne with him in the exercise of Ia Innocation, but doe but onely affent, or as we terme it, fry Amen to that he faith, yet fometime breake out into a short musicall note with him. The Powab is eager and free in speech, fierce in countenance, and ioyneth many antick and laborious gestures with the same ouer the partie diseased. If the partie be wounded, he will also seeme to sucke the wound, but if they bee curable (as they fay) hee toucheth it not, but a Skooke, that is the Snake, or Wohlacuck, that is the Eagle fitteth on his shoulder and lickes the same. This none see but the Ponab, who tells them hee doth it himselfe. If the partie be otherwise diseased, it is accounted sufficient if in any shape hee but come into the house, taking it for an vindoubted figne of recouerv.

And as in former ages Apollo had his Temple at Delphos, and Diana at Ephofiu; to have I heard them call youn some, as if they had their residence in some certaine places or because they appea- 20 red in those formes in the same. In the Powahs speech hee promiseth to sacrifice many skinnes of Beailts, Kettles, Hatchets, Beades, Knines, and other the beit things they have to the fiend, if hee will come to helpe the partie diseased : But whether they performe it I know not. The other practiles I have feene, being necessarily called at some times to be with their ficke, and have vied the best arguments I could make them understand against the same : They have told me I should fee the Devill at those times come to the party, but I affured my selfe and them of the contrary, which fo proued : yea, themtelues have confessed they never faw him when any of vs were prefent. In desperate and extraordinary hard trauell in childe-birth, when the partie cannot be delivered by the ordinary meanes, they fend for this Powab, though ordinarily their travell is not fo extreame as in our parcs of the world, they being of a more hardie nature ; for on the third day 30 after childe-birth, I haue feene the mother with the Infant, vpon a fmall occasion in cold weather

in a Boat vpon the Sea. Many facrifices the Indians vie, and in some cases kill children. It seemeth they are various in their religious worship in a little distance, and grow more and more cold in their worship to Kiehtan ; laying, In their memory he was much more called vpon. The Nanohigganfets exceed in their blind denotion, and have a great spatious house wherein onely some few (that are as wee may tearme them Priests) come : thither at certaine knowne times resort all their people, and offer almost all the riches they have to their gods, as Kettles, Skins, Hatchets, Beades, Kniues, &c. all which are cast by the Priests into a great fire that they make in the midst of the house, and there consumed to ashes. To this offering euery man bringeth freely, and the more he is knowne 40 to bring, hath the better esteeme of all men. This the other Indian; about vs approue of as good, Burnt offring, and with their Sachims would appoint the like : and because the plague hath not raigned at Nakeeps his fernobigganfet, as at other places about them, they attibute to this custome there vied.

uants poorc. The Panieses are men of great courage and wisedome, and to these also the Deuill appeareth Priese valou more familiarly then to others, and as wee conceine maketh conenant with them to preferve them from death, by wounds with Arrowes, Kniues, Hatchets, &c. or at least both themselues and especially the people thinke themselves to be freed from the same. And though against their battels, all of them by painting disfigure themselves, yet they are knowne by their courage and boldnesse, by reason whereof one of them will chase almost an hundred men, for they account it

death for whomsoeuer stand in their way. These are highly esteemed of all forts of people, and 50 are of the Sachims Councell, without whom they will not warre or undertake any weightie bufineffe. In warre their Sachims, for their more fafetie goe in the mieft of them. They are commonly men of greatest stature and strength, and such as will endure most hardnesse, and yet are more discreet, courteous, and humane in their carriages then any amongst them, scorning theft, lying, and the like base dealings, and stand as much whon their reputation as any men. And to the end they may have flore of these, they traine up the most forward and likeliest boyes from their child-hood in great hardnesse, and make them abitaine from daintie meat, obseruing divers orders prescribed, to the end that when they are of age the Deuill may appeare to them, cauling to drinke the juyce of Sentry and other bitter Hearbs till they cast, which they must disgorge into the platter, and drinke againe, and againe, till at length, through extraordinary prelling of nature 60 it will feeme to bee all bloud, and this the boyes will doe with eagerneffe at the first, and fo continue, till by reason of faintnesse they can scarce stand on their legs, and then must goe forth into the cold; also they beat their shins with sticks, and cause them to run through bushes, stumps, and brambles, to make them hardy and acceptable to the Deuill, that in time he may appeare vnto

ledge and approbation, yet to be commanded by the greater as occasion ferueth. Of this fore is Malfallowas our friend, and Conanacus of Nanobiggenfet our supposed enemy. Every Sachim taketh care for the widdow and fatherlette, also for such as are aged, and any way maymed, if their friends be dead, or not able to prouide for them. A Saobim will not take any to wife, but such an one as is equall to him in birth, other wife they fay their feede would in time become ignoble, and though they have many other wives, yet are they no other then concubines or fervants, and yeeld a kind of obedience to the principall, who ordereth the family, and them in it. The to like their men observe also , and will adhere to the first during their lives ; but put away the other at their pleasure. This Gouernment is successue and not by choyce. If the father dye before the some ordaughter bee of age, then the thilde is committed to the protection and tuition of tome one amongst them, who ruleth in his stead till hee be of age, but when that is I know not.

Every Sachim knoweth how farre the bounds and limits of his owne Countrey extendeth. and that is his owne proper inheritance, out or that if any of his men delire land to fet their Corne, hee giueth them as much as they can vie, and fets them in their bounds. In this circuit winofoeuer hunteth, if any kill any venifon, bring him his fee, which is foure parts of the same, if it bee killed on the Land, but if in the water, then the skin thereof: The Great 20 Saebims or Kings know not their owne bounds or limits of land, as well as the reft. All Tranellers or Strangers for the most part lodge at the Sachims, when they come, they tell them how long they will itay, and to what place they goe, during which time they receive entertainment according to their persons, but went not. Once a yeere the Puisses vie to prouoke the people to Tributed bestow much Corne on the Sachim. To that end they appoint a certaine time and place neere the Sachims dwelling, where the people bring many baskets of Corne, and make a great flack thereof. There the Pniefes stand ready to give thankes to the people on the Sachuns behalfe, and after acquainteth the Sachim therewith, who fetcheth the same, and is no leffe thankfull, bestow-

ing many gifts on them. When any are vilited with sicknesse, their friends refort wnto them for their comfort, and con-30 tinue with them oftentimes till their death or recourry. If they die they flay a certaine time to Mourning for mourne for them. Night and morning they performe this dutie many daies after the buriall in a the dead. most dolefull manner, infomuch as though it bee ordinary, and the Note Musicall, which they take one from another, and altogether, yet it will draw teares from their eyes, and almost from ours also. But if they recouer then because their sicknesse was chargeable, they fend Corne and other gifts vnto them at a certaine appointed time, whereat they fealt and dance, which they call Commoco.

When they bury the dead, they fowe up the corps in a mat and fo put it in the earth. If the par- Burialla tie be a Sachim, they couer him with many curious mats, and bury all his riches with him, and inclose the grave with a pale. If it bee a childe, the father will also put his owne most speciall 40 Iewels and Ornaments in the earth with it, allo he will cut his haire and disfigure himselfe very much in token of forrow. If it bee the man or woman of the house, they will pull downe the mats and leave the framestanding, and bury them in or neere the same, and either remove their dwelling, or give ouer house-keeping. The men imploy themselues wholly in hunting, and other exercises of the Bow, except at

fome times they take some paine in fishing. The women line a most slauish life, they carry all Womens slav their burdens, let and dreffe their Corne, gather it in, and feeke out for much of their food, beate ucry. and make readie the Corne to eate, and have all houshold care lying upon them. The younger fort reuerence the elder, and doe all meane offices whilft they are together, although they be strangers. Boyes and girles may not weare their haire like men and women, but

50 are diftinguished thereby. A man is not accounted a man till he doe some notable act, or shew forth such courage and reso. Manboods lution as becommeth his place. The men take much Tobacco, but for boyes to doe they ac-

count it odious. All their names are fignificant and variable; for when they come to the flate of men and wo- Names.

men, they alter them according to their deeds or dispositions. When a maide is taken in marriage, thee first cutteth her haire, and after weareth a couering Maids & wives on her head till her haire be growne out. Their women are dinerfly disposed, some as modest as

they will fearce talke one with another in the company of men, being very chafte also: yet other some light, lasciuious and wanton. If a woman haue a bad husband, or cannot affect him, and there 60 bee warre or opposition betweene that and any other people, shee will runne away from him to the contrary partie and there line, where they never come vinwelcome : for where are most women, there is greatest plentie. When a woman hath her monethly termes, shee separateth her felfe from all other company, and liueth certaine dayes in a house alone : after which she watheth her felfe and all that thee hath touched or vied, and is againe received to her husbands bed or

Their Sachims cannot bee all called Kings, but onely some few of them, to whom the rest refore for protection, and payhomage vato them, neither may they warre without their know- Lords.

whooredome,

Adulterie and family. For adultery the husband will beat his wife and put her away, if he please. Some common ftrumpets there are as well as in other places, but they are fuch as either neuer married, or widowes, or put away for adultery : for no man will keepe fuch an one to wife.

Murther.

In matters of valuel and dishonest dealing the Sachim examineth and punisheth the same. In cale of thefts, for the first offence hee is difgracefully rebuked, for the second beaten by the Sachim with a cadgell on the naked backe, for the third hee is beaten with many ftroakes and bath his nose shit vo ward, that thereby all men may both know and shun him. If any man kill another, hee muit like wife die for the same. The Sachim not onely paffeth the sentence vpon malefactors. but executesh the same with his owne hands, if the partie bee then present; if not, senderh his but executeth the lame with its owner halos, and performe the fame. But if the offender bee owne knife in cale of death; in the hands of others to performe the fame. But if the offender bee to receive other punishment, hee will not receive the same but from the Sachim himselfe, before whom being naked he kneeleth, and will not offer to runne away though hee beat him neuer fo much it being a greater disparagement for a man to cry during the time of his correction, then

cowards note. is his offence and punish nent. Apparell.

As for their apparell, they weare breeches and stockings in one, like some Irish, which is made of Deere skinnes, and haue shooes of the same leather. They weare also a Deeres skinne loose about them like a cloake, which they will turne to the weather fide. In this habite they travell. but when they are at home, or come to their journeyes end, prefently they pull of their breeches. flockings, and shooes, wring out the water, if they bee wet, and drie them, and rub or chafe the fame. Though these be off, yet haue they another small garment that couereth their secrets. The men weare also when they goe abroad in cold weather, an Otter or Fox skin on their right arme. but onely their bracer on the left. Women and all of that fex weare ftrings about their legs, which the men neuer doe.

Wittie people.

The people are very ingenious and observative, they keepe account of time by the Moone, and Winters or Summers; they know divers of the Starres by name, in particular, they know the North-ftar, and call it Maske, which is to tay, The Beare. Also they have many names for the Winds. They will gueffe very well at the wind and weather before hand, by observations in the Heauens, They report also, that some of them can cause the wind to blow in what part they lift, can raife fformes and tempetts, which they vitally doe when they intend the death or defruction of other people, that by reason of the vnseasonable weather, they may take aduantage 30 of their enemies in their houles. At such times they performe their greatest exployts, and in fuch featons when they are at enmittie with any, they keepe more carefull watch then at

Language.

As for the language it is verie copious, large, and difficult, as yet wee cannot attaine to any great measure thereof; but can understand them, and explaine our selues to their understanding, by the helpe of those that daily converse with vs. And though there be difference in an hundred miles distant of place, both in language and manners, yet not so much but that they very well vnderstand each other. And thus much of their lives and manners.

Regifters,

In itead of Records and Chronicles, they take this course, where any remarkeable act is done, in memory of it, either in the place, or by some pathway neere adioyning, they make a round 40 hole in the ground about a foot deepe, and as much ouer, which when others passing by behold, they enquire the cause and occasion of the same, which being once knowne, they are carefull to acquaint all men as occasion serueth therewith. And least such holes should bee filled, or growne vp by any accident, as men paffe by they will oft renew the fame : By which meanes many things of great Antiquitie are fresh in memory. So that as a man trauelleth, if hee can understand his guide, nis iourney will be the leffe tedious, by reason of many historicall Discourses will be re-For that Continent, on which wee are called New-England, although it hath ever beene con-

The Country,

ceiued by the English, to bee a part of the maine Land adioyning to Virginia, yet by relation of the Indians it should appeare to bee otherwise : for they affirme confidently , that it is an Iland, 50 and that either the Dutch or French paffe thorow from Sea to Sea, betweene vs and Virginia, and driue a great Trade in the same. The name of that Inlet of the Sea, they call Mobegon, which I take to be the same which wee call Hadsons River, vp which Master Hudson went many leagues, and for want of meanes (as I heare) left it undifcouered. For confirmation of this, their opinion is thus much ; Though Virginia bee not aboue an hundred and fifcie leagues from vs, yet they never heard of Powhatan, or knew that any Englifb were planted in his Countrey, face onely by vs and Tifquantum, who went into an English Ship thither : And therefore it is the more probable, becaute the water is not passable for them, who are very aduenturous in

New England

Then for the temperature of the ayre, in almost three yeeres experience, I can scarce diffin- 60 guish New England from Old England, in respect of heate, and cold, frost, inow, raine, winds, &c. Some obiect, because our Plantation lieth in the latitude of two and fortie, it mult needes bee much botter. I confesse I cannot give the reason of the contrary; onely experience teacheth vs, that it it doe exceed England, it is fo little as must require better judgements to discerne it. And

CHAP.6. Variable soyle, manured with fish, The Kings Patent.

for the Winter, I rather thinke (if there be difference) it is both sharper and longer in New Engl lind then Old; and yet the want of those comforts in the one which I have enjoyed in the other. my deceine my indgement also. But in my best observation, comparing our owne conditions with the Relations of other parts of America, I cannot conceine of any to agree better with the constitution of the English, not being oppressed with extremitie of heat, nor nipped with biting cold, by which meanes, bleffed be God, wee enioy our health, notwithflanding those difficulties wee haue vndergone, in such a measure as would haue been admired if we had lived in Eneland with the like meanes. The day is two houres longer then here, when it is at the shorreft, and as much shorter when it is at the longest.

The loyle is variable, in some places Mould, in some Clay, and others a mixed Sand, &c. The Soyle. chiefelt graine is the Indian Mays, or Ginny-Wheat; the feed-time beginneth in the midft of A- Corne pril, and continueth good till the midft of May. Our Harvest beginneth with September. This Corne increaseth in great measure, but is inferiour in quantitie to the same in Virginia, the reason

I conceive, is because Virginia is farre hotter then it is with vs, it requiring great heat to ripen; but whereas it is obiected against New England, that Corne will not there grow, except the ground bee manured with Fish : I answere , That where men fet with Fish (as with vs) it is more easie so to doe, then to cleere ground and set without some fine or fixe yeeres, and so begin anew, as in Virginia and ellewhere. Not but that in some places, where they cannot be taken with eafe in such abundance, the Indians set foure yeeres together without, and haue as good 20 Corne or better then we have that fet with them , though indeed I thinke if wee had Cattell to till the ground, it would be more profitable and better agreeable to the foyle, to fowe Wheat, Ry, Barley, Peafe, and Oats, then to fet Mays, which our Indians call Emachine: for we have had experience that they like and thrine well; and the other will not bee procured without good labour and diligence, especially at seed-time, when it must also bee watched by night to keepe the Wolves from the Fish, till it be rotten, which will beein foureteene dayes; yet men agreeing together, and taking their turnes it is not much.

Much might bee spoken of the benefit that may come to such as shall here plant by Trade with the Indians for Furres, if men take a right course for obtaining the same ; for I dare presume upon that small experience I have had, to affirme, that the English, Dutch, and 30 French, returne yeerely many thousand pounds profits by Trade onely from that Iland, on which

wee are leated.

Tobacco may bee there planted but not with that profit as in some other places, neither were it profitable there to follow it, though the increase were equall, because Fish is a better and richer Commoditie, and more necessary, which may be, and there are had in as great abundance as in any other part of the world ; Witnesse the West-countrey Merchants of England, which returne incredible gaines veerely from chence. And if they can fo doe which here buy their falt at a great charge, and transport more Company to make their voyage, then will faile their Ships, what may the Planters expect when once they are feated, and make the most of their Salt there, and imploy themselves at left eight moneths in fishing, whereas the other fish but foure, and have 40 their Ship lie dead in the Harbour all the time, whereas fuch shipping as belong to Plantations may takefraight of Pallengers or Cattle thither, and have their lading provided against they come. I confeile we have come fo far thort of the meanes to raife fuch returns, as with great difficultie wee haue preferued our liues; insomuch as when I looke backe vpon our condition, and weake meanes to preserve the same, I rather admire at Gods mercies and providence in our prefernation, then that no greater things have beene effected by vs. But though our beginning have beene thus raw, small, and difficult, as thou hast feene, yet the same God that hath hitherto led vs thorow the former, I hope w.ll raife meanes to accomplish the latter.

CHAP. VI.

Noua Scotia. The Kings Patent to Sir WILLIAM ALEXANDER Knight, for the Plantation of New Scotland in America, and bus proceedings therein; with a description of Mawooshen for better knowledge of those parts.



Acobus Dei gratia Magna Brittanniz, Francia, & Hibernia Rex fideig, defensor : Omnibus probis hominibus totism terra sua Clericis & laicis salutem. Sciatis nos semper ud quamisbet qua ad decisi & emolumentum regni nostri Scotia fettaret occasionem amplectendum fuisse intentos, millamque aut faciliorem aut magis innoxiam acquistionem cenfere, quam qua inexteris & incultis regnis obi ona & victui suppettune commode neus deducendis Colonies factu fit ; prafertim fi vel ipfaregna cultoribus prisu vacua, vel ab infidelibus, quos ad Christianam conserti fidem & Dei gtoriam interest plurimum.

Seafons.

New Scotland. befides a Book lished by the learned Author (who at other weapons and given the

world ample teftimony of his learning) you may read om 8 Booke from the fixt Chapter forwards the laft two Chapiters of the ninth Booke, &that description of the Country

milessa fuerint. Sed cum & alsa nonnulla regna, & hac non ita pridem nostra Anglia landabiliter sua nomina nonis terris acquisitis sed in se subactis indiderunt, quam numerosa & frequens distino benesicio bac gens, has tempestate fit nobiscum reputantes quamque bonesto aliquo & vtils cultu cam studiose exercerine in deteriora ex ignania & otso prolabatur expediat plerofque in nonam deducendos regionem quam Colonis compleant, oper epretium duximus qui & animi premptitudine & alacritate corporumque robore & viribiu quionsenque difficultatibus, si qui aly mortalium ofpiam se audiant opponere, bune canatum huic regno maxime idoneum inde arbitramur quod vivorum tantummodo d' mulierum immento. rum & finmenti, non etiam pecunie transuectionem postulat, neque incommodam ex ipsiu regni mercibus retributionem koc tempore cum negotiatio adeo imminuta fit, possit reponere. Hisce de cansis sicutione propier bonum fidele & graium dilecti nostri confilari Domini Willelmi Alexandri equiti fernitum no. 10 bis prasticum & prastandum, qui propriys impensis ex nostratibus primus externam hanc coloniam ducendam conatus fit, dinerfasque terras infra designatis limitibus circumscriptas incolandas expetineris. Nos initur ex regali nostra ad Christanam religionem propagandam & ad opulentiam, prosperitatem, pacemque naturalium nostrorum subditorum dilti regni nostri Scotia acquirendam cura, sicuis alu Principes extranei in talibus cusibus haltenus fecerunt, cum anisamento & confensu pradicts noffri con-Sanguines & consiliaris Ioannis Comitis de Marr Domini Erskene & Garrioche summi nostri Thelaurary computorum rotulatoru collectoris ac Thefaurary nouarum nostrarum augmentationum buing Resni nostri Scotie ac reliquorum dominorum nostrorum Commissionariorum emsdem Regni nostri, dedimu concessimu & asposumus, tenoreque presentu charte nostre damus concedimus & d sponimus prese facto Domino Wilelmo Alexandro, baredibus suis vel assignatis quibuscunque bareditarie omnes er 10 fingulas terras continentes ac infulas fituatas & facentes in America, intra caput feu promontorium communiter Cap. de Sable appellatum sacens prope latitudinem quadraginta trium graduum aut ab co circa. ab equinottiali linea versus septentrionem, à quo promontorio versus littus maris tendentis adoccidentem ad stationem Santte Maria nanium (vulgo S. Maries Bay) & deinceps versus septentrionem per directam lineam incroitum fine oftimm magna illim stationis vanium trancientem qua excurrit in terra orientalem plagam inter Regionis Suriquorum & Ecochemmorum (valgo Suriquois & Ecochemines) ad fluuium vulgo nomine Santa Crucie appellatum: Es ad featuriginem remotissimam sue fontem ex occidentali parte einsidem qui se primum pradicto fluuto immiscot, unde per imaginariam directam lineam qua pergere per terram seu currere versus septentrionem concipietur ad praximam nanium stationem, fluvium vel scaturiginem in magno flunio de Cannada sese exenerantem. Et ab co pergendo versu ori- 20 entem per maris or as littorales einsidem fluny de Cannada ad flunium flationem nanium portum aut littus communiter nomine de Gachepe vel Gaspie notum & appellatu, Et deinceps versus Euronotum ad insulat Baçalaos vel Cap. Briton vocatas Relinquendo casas Insulas à dextra & voraginem disti maoni flusis de Cannada sine maquo stationis namum & terras de New-found-land, cum insulis ad easdem terras persinentibus à linistra. Et deinceps ad Caput line promentorum de Cap. Briton pradictum sacens prope latitudinem quadraginta quinque graduum aut eo circa. Et à dicto promenterio de Cap. Briton versus meridiem & Occidentem ad pradictum Cap. Sable vbi incipit perambulatio includenda & compre-* For the De- henda intra dictas maris oras littorales ac earum circumferentias à mari ad omnes terras continentis scription & in- cum fluminibus torrentibus, sinubus, littoribus, insulis aut maribus iacentibus prope infra sex lucas ad alicouragements to this designe, quam earundem partem ex occidentali boreali vel orientali partibus ororum litteralium & pracinciuum 40 and forbeiter earundem. Et ab Euronoto (vistacet Cap. Britton) & ex australi parte einsdem vbi elt Cap. de Saknowledge of ble omnia maria ac insulas versus meridiem untra quadraginta leucas dictarum orarum littoralium earundem maquam insulam vulgariter appellatam Ile de Sable vel Sablon includen, iacen, versus carban vulgo South South-east, circa triginta leucas à dilto Cap. Britton in mari & existen. in latitudine quadra pinta quatuor graduum aut co circa. Que quidem terra pradicta emni tempore affu-Honourable & turo nomine Noue Scotia in America gaudebunt, Quas etiam prafatus Dominus Willelmus in partes & portiones ficut es visum fuerit dividet issam quemina pro beneplacito imponet. Vna cum omnibus fodinie tum regalibus auri & argenti quam aligs fodinis ferre, plumbi cupri, ftanni, aris. &c. In cusus rei test imonium buic prafeuts Charta noftra magnum Sigillum noftrum apponipracepimus Te-Muses prizes stibus praductia nostria consanguineis & Confiliaries lacobo Marchione de Hamilton Comite Arrania 50

& Cambridge Domino Anen & Innerdail, Georgio Marifcalli comite Domino Keith & alt. regni nostri Mariscallo, Alexandro Comite de Dunfermling Domino Frvia & vrauhant nostro Cancellario, Thoma Comite de Melros Domino Byres & Bynning nostro Secretario, Dilectis nostris familiaribus Confiliaries Domino Richardo Kokburne Iuniore de Clerkington nostri Secreti Sigilis custode, Georgia Hay de Knifarunis nostrorum Rotulorum Registrorum ac Concilis Clerico , Ioanne Cockburne de Ormestonn nostra Instituria Clerico, & Ioanne Scot de Scottistaruet nostra Cancellaria Directore, Milia tibus. Apud Castellum nostrum de Winsore decimo die mensis sebtembris Anno Domini milesimo sexentesimi vigesimo primo Regnorumo, nostrorum annis quinquagesimo quinto & decimo none.

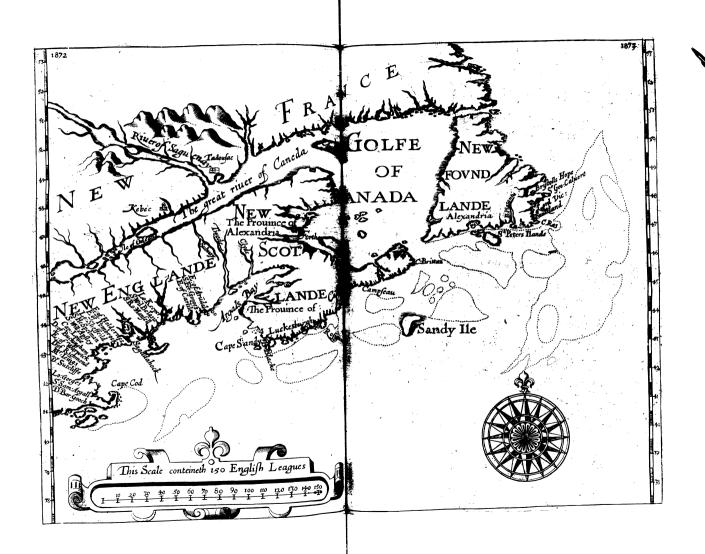
Sir Ferdinando Gorge being entrufted with the affayres of New England, after hee had admited 60 with some of the Company; confidering the largenesse of the bounds intended to bee planted by his Maiesties subiects in America, and the flow progresse of Plantations in these parts, that the Scottifb Nation may be perswaded to imbarke themselves in their forraine enterprise; hee was added hereto. content that Sir William Alexander 'Knight, one of his Maiefties most Honorable Privy Councel

622.

ipti i 100-

> nđ 210 :he 1 the

è::



of that Kingdome, should procure a Patent of such a bounds as his Maiestie should appoint to bee called New Scotland, and to bee held of the Crowne of Scotland, and gouerned by the Lawes of that Kingdome, as his faid Patent containing all the bounds, that doth lie to the East of Saint Croix, compaffed with the great River of Canada on the North, and the Maine Ocean on the South doth more particularly beare. Whereupon the faid Sir William did fet out a Shippe with a Colony of purpose to plant, which being too late in setting forth were forced to flav all the Winter at New-found-Land, and though they had a Shippe with new Ann. 1622. promitions the next Spring from the fayde Sir William , yet by reason of some vnexpected occasions, the chiefe of the Company resolued nor to plant at the first, but onely to

discouer and to take possession, which a number made choyce of for that purpose and happily The three and twentieth of Iune, they loofed from Saint Iohns Harbour in New-Friend Land, As. 16223 and fayled towardes New Scotland, where for the space of fourteene dayes they were by Fogges and contrarie Windes kept backe from spying Land till the eight of July : thereafter that they faw the West part of Cape Breton, and so till the thirteenth day, they fayled to and fro along it the Coast till they came the length of Port de Muton, where they

discouered three very pleasant Harbours, and went a shoare in one of them, which they cal-

led Lukes Bay, where they found a great way vp to a very pleafant River being three fathoms Lukes Bay. deeps at low water : at the entry thereof and on every fide of the fame they did fee very delicate Meadowes, having Rofes white and red growing thereon, with a kind of wild Lilly, which had a

very daintie fmell.

The next day they refolued to coast alongst to discouer the next Harbour, which was but two leagues distant from the other, where they found a more pleasant River, being foure fathom water at a low water, with Meadowes on both fides thereof, having Roles and Lillies growing thereon as the other had. They found within this River a very fit place for a Plantation , both in regard that it was naturally apt to bee fortified, and that all the ground beweene the two Plantation. Rivers was without Wood, and was good fat earth having severall forts of Berries growing thereon, as Goofeberry, Strawberry, Hyndberry, Rasberry, and a kinde of Red-wine-

berry : As also some forts of Graine, as Peale, some eares of Wheat, Barley, and Rye, growing there wild; the Peale grow enery where in abundance, very big and good to eate, but take of the Fitch. This River is called Port lolly, from wherece they coalted alongst to Port Negro, being Portlett. 12. leagues distant, where all the way as they failed along ft they found a very pleasant Country Port Negro. having growing every where such things as they did see in the two Harbours where they had beene. They found like wife in enery River abundance of Lobsters, and Cockles, and other small files, and also they found not onely in the Rivers, but all the Coast alongst, numbers of severall forts of Wild-fowle, as Wild-goofe, Black-Duck, Woodcock, Herron, Pigeon, and many other forts of Fowle which they knew nor. They found likewife, as they failed alongst the Coastabun-

dance of great Cod, with feuerall other forts of great filhes. The Countrey is full of Woods, not very thick, and the most part Oake, the rest Fir-tree, Spruce, Birch, and many other forts of wood 40 which they had not feene before. Having discovered this part of the Countrey in regard of the voyage, their Ship was to make to the Straits with fifthes, they resolved to coast alongst from Lukes Bay to Port de Muson, being foure leagues to the East thereof, where they encountred with a Frenchman, that in a very short time had a great voyage, having furnished one Ship away with fishes, and had neere fo many ready as to load his owne Ship and others. And haung taken a view of this Port, which to their judgement they found no wayes inferiour to the rest they had seene be-

fore, they resolved to retire backe to New-found-land, where their Ship was to receive her loading of fishes, the twentieth of July they loofed from thence, and the leven and twentieth thereof they arrived at Saint Iohns Harbour in New-found land; and from thence failed along (t the Bay of Conception, where they left the Ship, and dispatched themselves home in severall Ships that belonged to the Welt part of England, and doe intend this next Spring to fet forth a Colony to plant there.

The description of the Countrey of Mawooshen, discourred by the English,

Amooshen is a Countrey lying to the North and by East of Virginia, betweene the degrees quantitie. Mooghes is a Countrey lying to the North and by Eart of Organia, between the digites quantitie.

1 of 43, and 45. It is fortie leagues broad, and fiftie in length, lying in breadth Eaft and West, Tandminerare 60 and in length North and South. It is bordered on the East fide with a Countrey, the people, faid to be the whereof they call Tarrantines : on the West with Epistoman, on the North with a great Wood called Senaglecoune, and on the South with the mayne Ocean Sea, and many Ilands.

In Maroofben it feemeth there are nine Rivers , whereof the first to the East is called Quibi- Quiequeffor quession; on which there is one Towne, wherein dwell two Sagamos or Lords, the one called A. Riner.

in the yeere 1602. 3.5.6. 7. 8. and 9.

en of Mamoofben I had amonest M. Heligts ps. pers. Climate and fame with the

This descripted

Retrere 3

LIB. X.

Afticon Sagamo. ficon, the other Abermot. In this Towne are fiftie houses, and 150. men. The name of which Towne is Precante: this River runneth farre vp into the Mayne, at the head thereof there is a Lake of a great length and breadth; it is at the fall into the Sea tenne fathoms deepe, and halfea A great Lake. mile ouer.

The next is Pemagnid, a goodly River and very commodious all things confidered; it is ten fa-Printered river thoms water at the entrance, and fortie miles vp there are two fathoms and a halfe at low water: it is halfe a mile broad, and runneth into the Land North many daies journey : where is a great Lake of 18, leagues long and foure broad. In this Lake are feuen great Ilands : toward the fartheft end there falleen in a River, which they call Acasonflowed, where they paffe with their Boates there falled in a Rulet, which they goe over Land twentie daies journey more, and

Anadabis. Balbabes.

Carocame.

then come to another River, where they have a trade with Anadabis or Anadabigen, with whom the Frenchmen have had commerce for a long time. Neere to the North of this River of Pemanuid are three Townes : the first is Opfegon, where Bafbabes their chiefe Lord doth dwell. And in this Towns are fixtie houles, and 250. men, it is three daies journey within the Land. The second is Caiocame: the third Shalbeokeing. These two last Townes are opposite one to the other, the River dividing them both, and they are two daies journey from the Towne of Balhabes. In Caiscane dwelleth Maielquis, and in Shafheokeing Bomant, two Sagames, lubiects to Bashabes. Vpon both fides of this River vp to the very Lake, for a good distance the ground is plaine, without Trees or Bulhes, but full of long Graffe, like vnto a pleasant meadow, which the Inhabitants doe burne once a veere to have fresh feed for their Deere. Beyond this Meadow are great Woods, whereof more shall bee spoken hereaster. The River of Pemaqued is four dayes sourney from the mouth

Ramalloc.

The third River is called Ramaffor, and is distant from the mouth of Pemaguid foure daies iourney; it is twentie fathoms at the entrance, and hath a mile ouer; it runneth into the Land three daies journey, and within lelle then a daies journey of the dwelling of Balbabes : vpon this River there is a Towne named Panobseat, the Lord whereof is called Sibatabood; who hath in his Town fiftie houses, and eightie men.

Panablest 2 Towne. Apanamapeske.

The fourth River Apanamapeske, lying West and by South of Ramassoc, at the entrance whereof there is twentie fathoms water, and it is a mile broad : it runneth vp into the Countrey five daies journey; and within three daies of the mouth are two Townes, the one called Mes- 30 combe, where dwelieth Aramasoga, who hath in his Towne fiftie houses, and eightie men. The other is Chebeenadole, whole Lord is Skanke, and hath thirtie houles and ninetie men. The mouth of Apanawapeske is diltant from Ramaffor three daies iourney.

Apanmen ek. A Lake.

To the South-west foure daies journey, there is another excellent River; in the entrance whereof is twentie rathoms water, and it is a quarter of a mile broad, it runneth into the Land two daies journey, and then there is a greatfall; at the head wherof there is a Lake of a daies journey long and as much in breadth. On the fide of this Lake there is a Strait, and at the end of that Strait there is another Lake of foure daies journey long, and two daies journey broad; wherin there are two llands, one at the one end, and another at the other end. I should have told you that both thefe Lakes, as also the rest formerly spoken of, doe infinitely abound with fresh wa- 40 ter fish of all forts, as also with divers forts of Creatures, as Otters, Beeves, sweete Rats, and

Another Lake. All the Lakes full of Fift Becues, and fweet Rats. 6. Aponeg.

The fixt River is called Apponick, on which there are three Townes; the first is called Appifram, where dwelleth Abochigiftic. The second is Mesaqueegamic, where dwelleth Amniquin, in which there is seuentie houles and eightie men ; the third is Matamusiscoute, in which are eightie houles and ninetie men, and there dwelleth Narracommique.

Aponeg.

To the Weltward of this there is another River called Aponeg : it hath at the entrance ten fathoms water, and is a mile broad : it runneth vp into a great Sound of fresh water. Vpon the East fide of this River there are two Townes, the one called Nebamocago, the other called Asshawe. In the first dwelleth Mentaurmet, and hath in his Towne 160, housholds, and some 300, men. In 50 the second dwelleth Hamerbaw, and hath in his Towne eightie housholds and seuentie men. On the West side there is another Towne called Neredosban, where are 120. housholds, and 100.

Satedahoc. Here C. Pope bam buil. S. Geo ges Fort, and planted.

most foure daies iourney long, and two daies broad. The River of Aponeg runneth vp into this

men. There is a Sagamo or Lord called Sabenaw. Three daies iourney from Aponeg to the Westward, there is a goodly River called Sagadoboc: the entrance whereof is a mile and an halfe ouer, holding that breadth a daies journey, and then it maketh a great Sound of three daies journey broad : in which Sound are fix llands, foure great and full of Woods, and two leffe without Woods : The greater are called Somaehcoc, Neguino, Neimoc. And in the verie entrance of this River there is another small Hand : from the West of which land to the Maine, there is a Sand that maketh as it were a bar, fo that that way is not paffable for fhipping : but to the Eaftward there is two fathoms water. This Sound divideth it 60 felfe into two branches or armes, the one running North-east twentie foure daies journey, the other North-west thirtie daies journey into the Maine: At the heads whereof there are two Lakes, the Westermost being eight daies journey long, and foure daies journey broad; and the EasterCHAP. 6. Many bouses and men. Lake of eight dayes iourneva

Sound, and so maketh as it were a great Hand between Sagadabee and it. From the Hand vpward the water is fresh, abounding in Salmons, and other fresh water fish. Some thirteene or fourteen A great Iland. daies journey from the entrance in the North-east branch, there is a little arme of a River that runneth East some daies ioutney, which hath at the entrance foure fathoms water. Vpon this arme there is one ouer fall, which standeth halfea daies iourney aboue this branch : vpon this arme there are foure Townes: The first is called Kenebeke, which hath eightie houses, and one Kenebeke handred men. The Lord whereof is Apombamen. The second is Ketangheamicke, and the Sacomes name is Ottowerthe, who hath in his Towne ninetie housholds, and three hundred and thirtie men. This Towne is foure dayes iourney from Kenebeke, and eight dayes iourney

To the Northward is the third Towne, which they call Naragooc ; where there are fifcie houlholds, and one hundred and fiftie men. The chiefe Sagamo of that place is Cococbehamas. And on the small branch that runneth East standeth the fourth Towne, named by M flatiga ; where there are but eight housholds , and fortie men. Vpon the Northwest branch of this Sound stand two Townes more : The first is called Amereangan, and is diflant from Kenebete fixe dayes journey. In this place are ninetie housholdes, and two hundred and fixtie men, with two Sagamoes ; the one called Safuea, the other Scamas. Seuen daies journey hence there is another Sagemo, whole name is Olloworskin, and his Townes name Namercante, wherein are fortie housholds, and one hundred and twentie men. A dayes journey aboue Namercante there is a downefall, where they cannot passe with their Cannoes, 30 but are inforced to carrie themby Land for the space of a quarter of a mile, and then they put them into the River againe: And twelve dayes journey above this Downfall there is another, where they carrie their Boates as at the first ; and fixe dayes journey more to the North is the head of this River, where is the Lake that is of eight dayes journey long, and foure

dayes broad before mentioned. In this Lake there is one Iland; and three dayes iourney from this Lake there is a Towne which is called Buccampanecants, wherein are threefcore houlholds, and foure hundred men: And the Sagamo thereof is called Baccaimife. This man and his people are subjects to the Bashabez of Manoshen, and in his Countrey is the farthest limit of his Dominion, where he hath any that doe him homage. To the Westward of Sagadaboc, foure dayes journey there is another River called Ashams-

30 baga, which hath at the entrance fixe fathoms water, and is halfe a quarter of a mile broad: Afternation is runneth into the Land two dayes journey : and on the East fide there is one Towne called Agnagebese, wherein are seuentie houses, and two hundred and fortie men, with two Saga-

mes, the one called Mammet, the other Calherokenit. Seuen dayes iourney to the South-west of Ashamahaga there is another River, that is fixe fathoms to the entrance: This River is named Shawakotoe, and is halfe a myle broad; it run- Shawakotoe neth into the Land fiftie dayes journey : but foure dayes from the entrance it is fo narrow. that the Trees growing on each fide doe so crosse with their boughes and bodies on the other, as it permitteth not any meanes to palle with Boates that way : for which cause the Inhabitants that on any occasion are to trauell to the head, are forced to goe by Land, ta- A Lake foure 40 king their way voon the West side. At the end of this River there is a Lake of source dayes sourcey iourney long, and two dayes broad, wherein are two Ilands. To the North-Well foure daies long & 2. broad

iourney from this Lake, at the head of this River Shanakatee there is a small Province, which they call Cretemago, wherein is one Towne. This is the Westermost River of the Dominions of Bas (habez, and Quibiquiffen the Weftermoft.

To the Reader.

Hauethought good to adde to the English Plantations in New England, those in the neighbour Country of New-found-land. This was first discourred, Ann. 1497. by S. Sebastian Cabot Set 50 forth by King Henry the lementh : the Voyages followed of M.Rut, Albert de Prato, M. Hore, and others. Ann. 1583. actuall and formall possession, was taken in the right of Queene Elizabeth of glorious memory, and her Successours, by that memorable Knight, Sir Humtrey Gilbert (fee sup. lib. 4. ca. 13.) And in the yeare, 1609. M. John Guy of Bristoll did write a Treatife to animate the English to plant there, a written Copy whereof I have. A. 1610. It pleased bis most excellent Maiestie to grant a Patens for a Plantation, part whereof (the whole might feeme too long for our purpose) we have inferred.

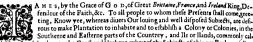
Rerrere 3

CHAP

LIB.X

CHAP. VII.

The beginning of the Patent for New-found-land; and the Plantation there made by the English, 1610. delinered in a Letter dated thence from M. G v x to M. SLANY: Also of the weather the three first Winters, and of Captaine WESTON: with other remarkable Occurrents.



1876

fendour of the Faith, &c. To all people to whom these Presents shall come, greeting. Know yee, whereas divers Our louing and well disposed Subjects, are defirous to make Plantation to inhabite and to establish a Colony or Colonies, in the Southerne and Easterne parts of the Countrey, and Ile or Ilands, commonly called New-found-land, vnto the Coast and Harbour, whereof the Subjects of this our Realme of England have for the space of fiftie yeeres and vpwards, yeerely vsed to refort in no small numbers to fifth intending by fuch Plantation and inhabiting, both to fecure and make fafe the faid Trade of Fishing to Our Subiects for euer; And also, to make some commendable benefit for the vicos mankind by the lands and profits thereof, which hitherto from the beginning (as it feemeth manifeft) hath remained upprofitable: And for better performance of fuch their purpofe and intentions, have humbly befought Our Regall Authoritie and affiftance; Wee being well affared that the fame Land or Countrey adiopning to the foresaid Coasts, where Our Subic Cts vie to fish.remaineth fo destitute and desolate of inhabitance, that scarce any one Sauage person bath in many yeeres beeneteene in the most parts thereof: And well knowing that the same lying, and being fo vacant, is as well for the reatons aforefaid, as for many other reasons very commodious for Vi and Our Dominions : And that by the Law of Nature, and Nations, We may of Our Royall Authoritie, policile out felues, and make graunt thereof, without doing wrong to any other Prince, or State confidering they cannot justly pretend any Soueraigntie or Right thereunto, in respect that the same remaineth so vacant and not actually possessed, and inhabited by any Christian, or other 30 whomfoeuer. And therefore, thinking it a matter and action well beteeming a Christian King, to make true vie of that which God from the beginning created for mankind; And therefore intending, not onely to worke and procure the benefit and good of many of Our Subjects, but principally to increase the knowledge of the Omnipotent God, and the propagation of Our Christian Faith, haue gracioully accepted of their faid intention, and fuit. And therefore doe of Our fpeciall grace, certaine knowledge, and meere motion, for Vs, Our Heires, and Successors, give, graunt, and confirme by these Presents, vnto Our right deere, and right welbeloued Coufin, and Counfellor, Henry Earle of Northampton, Keeper of Our Priny Seale, and to Our truffie and right welbeloued Sir Laurence Tanfield Knight, chiefe Baron of Our Exchequer, Sir lobn Dodridge Knight, one of Our Sergeants at Law, Sir Francis Bacon Knight, Our Sollicitor Generall, Sir Daniel 40 Dun, Sie Walter Cope, Sir Piercinal Willoughby, and Sir lohn Confiable Knights, John Weld Elquire, William Freeman, Ralph Freeman, John Slany, Humfrey Slany, William Turner, Robert Kirkam Gentlemen, John Weld Gentleman, Richard Folhburne, John Browne, Humfrey Spencer, Thomas Juxon, John Stokely, Ellis Crifpe, Thomas Alport, Francis Needebam, William lones, Thomas Laneton, Philup Gifford, Iohn Whittingam, Edward Allen, Richard Bowdler, Thomas Iones, Simon Stone, Iohn Short, John Vigars, John Juxon, Richard Hobby, Robert Alder, Anthony Haueland, Thomas Aldworth, William Lewis, Ichn Guy, Richard Hallworthy, Iohn Langton, Humfrey Hooke, Phillip Guy, William Meredith, Abram lenings, and Iohn Dowghie, their Heires and Affignes. And to fuch, and to many as they doe, or shall hereafter admit to be loyned with them in forme hereafter in these Prefents expressed, whether they goe in their persons to bee planted in the faid Plantation, or whe- 50 ther they goe not, but doe aduenture their Monyes, Goods, and Chattels, that they shall bee one Body, or Comminaltie perpetuall, and shall have perpetuall succession, and one common Seale to ferue for the faid Body, and Comminaltie; And that they, and their fuccessours shall be knowne, called, and incorporated by the name of the Treasurer, and the Company of Adventurers, and Planters of the Citie of London, and Bristoll, for the Colony or Plantation in New-found land, and that they, and their successours shall bee from henceforth for euer inabled, to take, require, and purchale by the name aforefaid (Licence for the fame, from Vs, Our Heiresand Succeilours first had, and obtained) any manner of Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, Goods, and Chartels, within Our Realme of England, and Dominion of Wales, and that they, and their fixeeffours shall beelike wise inabled by the name aforesaid, to plead and be impleaded, before any Our Ind- 60 ges, or Iuflices in any of Our Courts, and in any Actions and Suits what focuer. And Wee doe al-

fo of Our faid speciall grace, certaine knowledge, and meete motion, for Vs, Our Heires, and

Succeilours, giue, grant, and confirme vnto the faid Trefurer and Company, and their Succeilours, under the referuations, limitations, and declarations hereafter expressed, all that part and porti-

on of the laid Countrie, commonly called New found land, which is fituate, lying and being to the Southward of the paralell line to be conceived to passe by the Cape or hedland, commonly called or knowne by the name of Bonenift Inclusive, which Cape or hedland is to be Northward of the Bay, commonly called Trinity Bay, and also which is situate, lying, and being to the Eastward of the Meridian line, to be conceived to passe by the Cape, or headland, commonly called or knowne by the name of Cape Sanita Maria, or Cape Saint Maries Inclusine, which Cape or headland is to be Eastward of the Bay commonly called the Bay of Placentia, together with the Seas and Ilands lying within ten leagues of any part of the Sea coaft of the Countrie aforesaid. and also all those Countries, Lands, and Ilands commonly called Newfound land, which are fituate 10 betweene forty and fix degrees of Northerly latitude, and two and fifty degrees of the like latitude, and all o all the Lands, Soyle, Grounds, Hauens, Ports, Rivers, Mines, as well royall Mines of Gold and Silver, as other Mines, Minerals, Pearles, and precious stones, Woods, Quarries, Marsher, Waters, Fishings, Hunting, Hawking, Fowling, Commodities, and Hereditaments whatsoeuer. together with all Prerogatiues, lurifdictions, Royalties, Priniledges, Franchifes, and Preheminencies, within any the faid Territories, and the precines thereof whatfoeuer, and thereto or there abouts, both by Sea and Land, being, or in any fort belonging or appertaining; and which wee by our Letters Patents may or can grant, and in as ample manner and fort, as We or any of Our Noble progenitors haue heretofore granted to any Company, body politique or Corporate, or to any Aduenturer or Aduenturers, Vndertaker, or Vndertakers of any Discouery, Plantation, or 20 Trafficke, of, in or into any foraine parts what focuer, and in as large and ample manner, as if the same were herein particularly mentioned and expressed. Neuerthelesse Our will and pleasure is, and We doe by these presents expresse and declare, that there be saued, and reserved wnto all manner of persons of what Nation soeuer, and also to all and every Our louing Subjects, which doe at this present, or hereafter shall trade, or voyage to the parts aforesaid for Fishing, &c. April. 27. A. Reg. 8.

Master I o HN Gvy his Letter to Master SLANY Treasurer, and to the Counsell of the New-found-land Plantation.

R lebt worlbipfull, it may pleafe you to vuderstand, that it was the tenth day of this memeth of May before the Barke of Northam, called the Consent, arrived here m New-found-land; notwithflanding that a Ship of Briftoll, called the Lioneffe, came to this Country the second of May in a transing tost a Sup of Stritten, cause are Lioneure, came to tost country toe terms of Vosay in a month face; and the Trial of Dattmouth arrivable toe before in fettene departs. Byracife of which Vogage in flag of the dependent Brate, no subside Vogage in the places defined; all being possessed to take any of the places defined; all being possessed to take the places defined; all being possessed to take the places defined. fore, So that the Ship that commeth, whereof as yet there is no newes, is to trust to the place here, which is referred for her; which I hope will prove a good place. Some yeeres as great a Voyage hath bin made here, as in any place in this Land: God send ber hither in safetie. I have not yet seene any of the Counore; to the Southward, or Northward of the Bay of Conception face this firing, because it expected daily the arrival of the Barks, and thought it use fit to be abjent berebuses writil she were arrived, and

diffatched : but presently upon her departure, no time, God willing shall be lost, The care that was taken to require generally the Fiftermen to affift vs, and to supply our wants, if any should be, was most logful Fishermens and comfortable to vs, which was most willingly accomplified by the most part of those which I have yet kinde affilian-(cene: yet, God be prased, such was the state of all things with us, as we were in no want of victuals, but ces. bad a oreat remainder, as you hall after understand. The state of the Autumne and Winter was in these parts of New-found-land after this manner. In State of the

both the moneths of Ottober and November, there were fource fix dayes whering either freezed or from- weather in both the moneths of October and November, there were jearce jix cases wernine enter jeach on John Ansumne and ed: and that so little, that presently it was thanked and melted with the strength of the Stringe: All there. Winter, I have fiduc of the afore faid two moneths being both warmer and drier then in England. In December we had by me a write-50 sometimes faire weather, sometimes frost and snow, and sometime open weather and raine : for in the lat- ten ioutnall,

ter endit was rainie, and was open weather. All these three moneths the winde was so cartable, as it would declaring the enery fortnight visite all the points of the Compasse.

The most part of lanuary and February unto the middle of March the frost continued : the minde being for the most part Westerly, and now and then Northerly; not with standing three or four times, when 4. Nouember the minde was at South, it began to tham and did raine. That which fell in this feafor was for the most 1610 till the part Snow, which with the beate of the Sunne would be consumed in the open places within a few dayes. Inflot Aprill That which abode longest was in February. During this time many dayes the Sun Cone warme and bright 1(11. but That which about longest was in February. During toutime many ages to some concurrent was a record thought in from morning to night : notwith standing the length of this frosty weather, small brooks that did run alwould seems 60 most in level with a som course, were not the whole winter three nights over frozen so thicke, as that the Ice ted one, the

could be are a Dogge to goe ouer st, which I found by good proofe: for enery morning I went to the brooke ful flance which runneth by our house to wall. The Snow was never aboue engliteene inches thicke generally out of thereof being the drift; fo that the feare of manting wood or water neuer tooke bold of vs: for albeit we made no pronison for them, yet at a minute of an houses warning we were furnified where there were Lakes of frefo wa- Moderate

Reuonle, and Trepatic there is great quantitie of open ground and Stagges. It is most likely that all the Revonte, and a repaired and of England before the returne of this our Barre, which hall not make any

Darres min or my composition that nothing frontabe fent bither before the returne of the Shins trous filbing. For as concerning sending of Cattle, it will be best that it be deferred until the next Spring.

from juring. L. Wilthall, in regard of the quantity, we have of it remaining of old, together with that thit is come now, as with the dry fills that here we may be flored with I am in good hope there will not want

any to last till this time twelve moneths. And according to the victuals which hall be found at the end of

ter that flood fill and did not run, there it remained frozen able to beare a man almost three moneths, and was not dissolved untill the middle of Aprill. But where the agre had entrance and iffue out of them three was no frost. When the winde in the winter time in England is at the North-east one moneth together. the frost is greater, and the cold more sharpe, then it is here at all. There was no moneth in all the winter that some of our company did not travell in, either by land or by water, and lie abroad and drinke water, in places distant two, three, foure and fine leagues from our babitation, and sometimes lay in the woods without fire, and received no barme. When Aprill came our Spring began, and the first that did but was the fmall Relen or the Corinth tree. Our Company was not letted in working abroad, o in the woods and over arre fifteene dayes the wholewinter. We never wanted the company of Rauens and [mail Birds : So that the doubt that have bin made of the extremity of the winter feason in these parts of New-found-land are found by our experience canfelesse; and that not onely men may safely inhabit here without any needs of 19 Stone but Nanigation may be made to and fro from England to thefe parts at any time of the years.

Healthfulnes.

Concerning the bealthfulnesse of these Cour. ries, we bearing him now more then ten moreths upon this Voyage, of nine and thirt; persons, which was all our number which wintered here, there are maring one. ly foure; whereof one Thomas Percy Samper died the elementh of December of thought, brining flaine a man in Rochester : which was the cause, being unknowne unto mee untill a day before be died, that he came this Vorage. And one other, called Iohn Morris Tyler, miscarried the first of February by reason of a brufe. The third, called Mirmaluke Whittington, was never perfectly well after be bad the fmall Poxe, which he brought out of Brittoll with him, who died the fifteenth of February. And the fourth called William Scone, baning at the first onely a stiffenesse in one of his knees, kept his bed ten weekes, and would never store his body, which lasinesse brought him to his end, who died the thirteenth of Aprill. Of 20 the rest foure or fine bane bin sicke, some three moneths, and some foure moneths; who now are better then they were, except one. All of them, if they had had as good will to worke, as they had good flomaches to their victuals, would long fince have bin recovered. One Richard Fletcher, shat is Mafter Pilot bere and a director of the Fishing, reported unto me, that he was one of the company confishing of forty persons, that went in a drumbler of Ipswich, called the Amitie, to the North part of Ireland about eleven recres agoe from London in the late Queenes fernice, under the charge of one Captaine Fleming, and continued there the pace of two yeares: In which time two and thirty died of the Scurnie, and that onely eight of them returned bome whereof the faid Richard Fletcher was one. So that the accident of death or ficknesse of any persons in these our parts of New-found-land is not to argue any unbealthfulness of this Country, 30 no more then Ireland is to be discredited by the losses of those two and thirty men: notwithstanding that there were to be had fresh victuals and many other helpes, which this Country as yet hath not, but in good time may baue.

Imployment

From the fixt of October until the fixteenth of May our Company had bin imployed in making of A Store house to hold our promisions, and a dwelling bouse for our habitation, which was finished about the first of December; with a square inclosure of one hundred and twenty foot long and nintie foot broad, compassing these two houses, and a worke house to worke dry in to make Boates or any other worke out of the raine and three peeces of Ordnance are planted there to command the Harboroughs upon a platforme made of great posts, and railes, and great Poles fixteene foot long fet upright round about with two Flana kers to scoure the quarters. A Boat about tweluc tuns big with a decke is almost similect to faile and row 40 about the headlands: six silving Boates and Pinnesses: a second saw pit at the fresh Lake of two miles in length and the fixt part of a mile broad, standing within twelve score of our habitation, to saw the timber to be had out of the fresh Lake, in keeping two pairs of Sawyers to samplankes for the Said buildings, in ridding of some grounds to sow Corne and garden seedes: in cutting of wood for the Collier, in coling of it: in working at the Smiths Forge Iron workes for all needfull vies : in costing both by Land and Sea to many places within this Bay of Conception: in making the frame of timber of a farre greater and fairer boufe, then that which as yet we dwell in, which is almost finished, and divers other things. We have fewed En Life Corne, all forts of graine this Spring, which profper well bitherio. Our Goates have lived here all this winter; and there is one lustic Kidde, which was yeared in the dead of winter. Our Swice profeer. Pidgens and Conies will endure exceeding well. Our Poultrie have not onely laied Egges plentifully but there are eigh- 50 scene yong Chickins, that are a weeke old, besides others that are a batching.

The feare of wilde Beasts we have found to be almost needeleffe. Our great Ram-Goate was miffing

fifteene dayes in October, and came home well againe, and is zet well with us. If the industry of men and

presence of domesticall Cattle were applied to the good of this Country of New-found-land, there would

Shortly arise sust cause of contentment to the inhabitants thereof. Many of our Masters and Sea-faring

men freing our fafetic, and hearing what a milde winter we had, and that no Ice had bin feene fleeting in

any of the Bayes of this Country all this yeare (notwithstanding that then met one busined and fifty

Cattle prosper

Medow. Deere.

leagues off in the Sea great flore of Hands of Ice) doe begin to be in lone with the Countres, and doe talke of comming to the lind here to inhabit : falling in the reckning affect of the commoditie that they may make by the banke fishing, as by the busbandry of the Land, besides the ordinary fishing. At the Green-Bar, where some of our Company were a fishing in November, they report there is creat flore of good grounds without woods, and there is a thoufand acres together which they fay may be moved this yere. There is great flore of Deere, whereof they faw some divers times, and twice they came within that of them; and the Grey hound, who is lustie, had a courfe, but could not get upon them. But neerer unio Cape Razo,

the filling, the number of persons that shall remaine here all the next winter shall be fitted, that there shall not want : notwithit anding about Albollantide, or the beginning of December, a Ship may be fent. Such BO 4 one as our Fleming was with Salt from Rochel; for at any time of the winter Ships may as well see and come biber, as when they doe, effectally before lanuary. This Summer I purpose to see most places betweene Cape Rale, Placentia, and Bona vilta, and at the returne of the filbing Ships to entertaine a fit number of men to maintaine bere the winter; and to fet ouer them, and to take the care of all things beremunoer of men a month of the William Colton, a discreete your man, and my brother Philip Guy, who have wintered with me, and have promifed me to undertake this charge until my returne the next Spring, or till it hall be otherwise differed of by you, and then together with such of the company at are willing to goe bome, and such others as are not fit longer to be entertained here, I intend to take passage in the filling Ships, and foreturne home: And then betweene that and the Spring to be present, to give you more ample fairfaction in all things, and to take fuch further resolution, as the importance of the enter-30 orife halr quire: wherein you hall finde me alwayes as ready as ener I bane bin to proceede and goe forward, God willing. And because at my comming home it will be time enough for mee to lay before you mine opinion tenching what is to be undertaken the next yeare, I will forbeare now to write of it; because you floud be the former aductifed of our welfare: and because such of the Company as are sent home both for their owne good, and that the emprofitable expense of withals and wages mucht coafe: I have laden little or nothing backs, that the faid Company might the better be at ease in the bold. Onely there is fent three bog (heads of Charceles : where Numero 10 is, they are of Burch: no. 20 is, of Pine and Spruce. no. 20. s of Firre, being the lightest wood, yet it maketh good Coles, and is wied by our Smub. I fend them because you shall see the goodnesse of each kinde of Cole. Also I fend you an Hoestead of the Skinnes and Furres of fuch Beatts as have bin taken bere, the particulers whereof appeare in the Bill While I was writing I had newes of the Vineyard, the Ship which you fend to fishing, to have hin in company with another Ship that is arrised on this fide of the Banke, and that the Master intended to goe to Farillon or Fer-land: God fend her in fefer. So praying Godfor the proflerity of your Wellhap, and the whole Company, with beyon that its dame Manifes whole Company with the Manifest whole Company with the Manifest with the Manifest whole Company with the Manifest with the Manifest whole Company which the Ma water bleffe our proceedings : my dutie most bumbly remembred, I take my leave. Dated in Cupers Cous

I have also a Journall of the winde and weather from the latter end of August 1611, till Iune 1612. Writtenby Master William Colfton; and delivered to Master lobu Guy, Governour of the 40 Englif Colony in New sundland, at his returne from England thither, lune the feuenth 1612. By which it appeareth that the weather was somewhat more intemperate then it had beene the yeare before, but not intolerable, nor perhaps so bad as we have it sometims in England. Their Dogges killed a Wolfe, Otters, Sables, &cc. Captaine Easton a Pirat was troublesome to the Eng-Elband terrible to the French there : of whom I have added this Letter; for the Diarie of the weather and occurrents each day would be very tedious.

the fixteenth of May, 1611.

To Master Io HN SLANY Treasurer, and others of the Councell, and Company of the New-found-land Plantation, the twenty nine of July 1612.

Ight Worlhipfull, by my last of the seuenteenth of lune. I wrote you of the estate then, of all matters Rope to orient; min, oy my raje of toe fementeeme of the fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with Master Colbere, by the Holland Ship, which (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together with the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined, together the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fince fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fine fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fine fafely arrined to the Holland Ship (I hope) is long fine faf fton, who bath (I doubt not) made by word of mouth, full relation of all matters. Because the proceedings of one Captaine Peter Ealton a Private, and his company fince, are most fit to beknowne, before I touch our Plantation businesse you shall understand, what they have bin unto this time: until the seventeenth of this prefent, the faid Captaine Easton remained in Harbor de Grace, there trimming, and repairing his Shipping, and commanding not onely the Carpenters of each Ship to doe bit businesse, but hath taken vi-60 Awals, munition, and necessaries from every Ship, together with about one bundred men out of the Bay. to man his Ships, being now in number fix. He purposed to have before he coeth, as is said, out of the land fine hundred men, while he remained there, two fenerall Companies to the number of about one hundred and eightie person: to each Company, being discontented, sole away from him in a Shallop, and tooke two Ships that were filming in Trinitie Bay, one belonging to Barnstable, and one other to Plimmouth, and so intend, to begin to be new beads, of that damnable confe of life. As I failed from hence towards Renoole, in a small Barge, I fell into one of their bands: and one of my company with hurt with a Muhet. there was one of their crew that wintered with me bere the first yeare, by whose meanes, and because I was so the Barke, they made bew, that they were forry that they had medled with vi : And so they departed from us, without comming aboutd. That which they fought after was men, to mercafe their number. Be-fore the faid Captaine Eattons departure, he fant three Ships into Trinitic Bay, to flore himselfe with victuals, munition, and men, who are faid to be worse vsed, then the Ships here be taketh much ordnance from them. The (and Easton was lately at Saint Iones, and is now, as farre as I can learne, at Feriland. where he taketh bu pleasure, and thereabouts, the rest are to meete bim. It is given out, that we will fend one Captaine Harvy in a Ship to Ireland, to understand newes about his pardon, which if be can obtaine to in the large and ample manner as be expecteth, then he giveth out, that be will come in: otherwise, it is thought, that he wil get Protection of the Duke of Florence, and that in his course berebence he will be ner about the Westwards of the Ilands of the Azores, to see whether he can light upon any of the Plate fleete, or any good rich brotte, before bis comming in Albeit, he bath so premailed here to the strengthening of bimselfe, and inconraging of others to attempt the like bereafter : yet, were there that course taken, as I hope hall be, it is a most ensie matter to represse them.

I have also a Diarie of the winter weather, and observations of occurrents from August 1612, till Aprill 1612. December was very full of Snow (for I dare not present the whole) and the fresh-water Lake was frozen ouer, and the Frost and Snow by the tenth of that moneth, as in 20 any part of the two former places. Ianuary was much milder till the foureteenth, from thence it was very frosty. Their Becre was frozen, and they dranke halfe water (an ill remedy to cold.) The Cattell did not well thrine, as comming out of a Countrie not fo cold. And therefore Irib Cattell (where the wincer is warmer) are not fo fit to be transported hither. George Danis died of the Scurule, and after him Edward Garten, Edward Hartland, John Tucker, and one and twenty were ticke (most of the Scuruie) the whole Colonie was fixtie two. February was much warmer and more temperate. Toby and Grigge died in March, the rest recoursed. Turneps being found as good to recover from the Scurvie as the Aneda tree to lacques Carriers Company. Nicho-Las Guies wife was deliuered of a lufty boy March 27. The Easterly windes and some Currents brought Ilands of Ice from the North Seas, which made the weather colder that Spring then in 30 the depth of winter when the same windes blowed, namely Bast and Northeast, those llands being blowne into the Baies, and the windes from them even in Aprill very snarpe; and the Snow on the tenth of Aprill as thicke as any time that yeare. In October lobu Guy with thirteene others in the Indeauour, and fine in the Shallop, went vp.

on Difcouery. A: Mount Eagle Bay they found flore of Scuruy-graffe on an Iland. In the South bottome of Trinitie Bay, which they called Sauage Harbour, they found Sauages houses, no peo-Copper kettle. ple in them; in one they found a Copper Kettle very bright (you shall haue it as one of them writ it in his owne tearmes) a furre Goune of Elke skin, fome Seale skins, an old faile and a fishing reele. Order was taken that nothing should be diminished, and because the Sauges should know that some had bin there, every thing was removed out of his place, and brought into one of the 40 Cabins, and laid orderly one upon the other, and the Kettle hanged ouer them, wherein there was put some Bisket, and three or foure Amber Beades. This was done to begin to win them by faire meanes. This time of the yeare they live by hunting; for wee found twelve Elkes hoofes, that were lately killed. A little peece of flesh was brought away, which was found to be a Beuer Cod, which is forthcomming to be feene. Their Houses there were nothing but Poles fet in round forme meeting all together aloft, which they couer with Deere skins, they are about ten foote broad, and in the middle they make their fire : one of them was coursed with a faile, which

they had gotten from fome Christian.

All things in this manner left, every one returned by the Moone-light, going by the brinks of the Lake voto the enterance of the made way : and a little before they came thither, they pal- 50 fed by a new Sanage house almost finished, which was made in a square forme with a small roofe, Their Oares, and so came to the Barke. They have two kinde of Oares, one is about foure foot long of one peece of Firre; the other is about ten foot long made of two peeces, one being as long, big, and round as a halfe Pike made of Beech wood, which by likelihood they made of a Biskin Oare, the other is the blade of the Oare, which is let into the end of the long one flit, and whipped very strongly. The short one they wse as a Paddle, and the other as an Oare. The thirtieth, without any further businesse with the Sauages, we departed thence to the Northerne side of Trinity Bay, and anchored all that night under an Iland. The one and thirtieth, we rowed unto an harbour,

which now is called Alballowes; which hath adioyning vnto it very high land. November the fixt, two Canoas appeared, and one man alone comming towards vs with 2 60

Sauages.

Flag in his hand of a Wolfes skin, shaking it and making a loud noise, which we tooke to be for a parley: whereupon a white Flag was put out, and the Barke and Shalloprowed towards them, which the Sauages did not like of, and to tooke them to their Canoas againe, and were going a-Way : whereupon the Barke wheazed voto them, and flourthed the Flag of trace, and came to

anker, which pleafed them, and then they staied: prefently after the Shallop landed Master Whittington with the Flagge of truce, who went towards them. Then they rowed into the shoare with one Ganoa, the other standing aloofe off, and landed two men, one of them having the white skin in his hand, and comming towards Mafter Whittington, the Sauage made a loud speech, and thaked the skin, which was antwered by Matter Whittington in like manner, and as the Sauage drew neere, he threw downe the white skin on the ground, the like was done by Mafter Whittington : whereupon both the Sauages paffed over a little water ftreame cowards Mafter Whitington, dancing, leaping, and finging, and comming together, the foremost of them presented voto him a chaine of leather full of small Periwinckle shels, a spitting knife, and a Feather that stacke in his care : the other gaue him an Arrow without a head; and the former was requited with a linnen Cap, and a hand Towell, who put presently the linnen Cap your his head; and to the other he game a Knife; and after hand in hand, they all three did fine and dance; your this, one of our company called Francis Topion went alhoare, vnto whom one of the Sausges came running, and gave him a Chaine, such as is before spoken of, who was gratified by Francis Topton with a Knife and a small peece of Brasse. Then all foure together danced, laughing and making fignes of ioy and gladnesse, sometimes thriking the brests of our company, and sometimes their owne. When fignes were made that they should be willing to suffer two of our Company more to come on theare, for two of theirs more to be landed and that Bread and Drinke should be brought ashoare, they made like wife fignes that they had in their Canoas meate also to eate : upon this the Shalto lop rowed aboord, and brought lohn Gay and Master Teage a shoare, who presented them with a Shirt, two table Napkins, and a Hand-towell, giving them Bread, Butter, and Reasons of the Sunne to eate, and Beere, and Aquanita to drinke: and one of them blowing in the Aquanita Bottle, that made a found, which they fell all into a laughing at. After, Maiter Croose and John Cronther came alhoare, whom they went to falute giving them shell Chaines, who bestowed Gloues upon them. One of the Sauages that came last alhoare, came walking with his Oare in his hand, and feemed to have fome command over the reft, and behaved himfelfe civilly: For when meate was offered him, he drew off his Mitten from his hand before hee would receive it. and gaue an Arrow for a prefent without a head : who was requited with a dozen of Points. After they had all eaten and drunke, one of them went to their Canoa, and brought vis Beeres fiells dried in the smoake or winde, and drawing his Knife from out of his necke, hee cut every man a peece, and that favoured very well. At the first meeting, when figures were made of mouse to tate, one of the Sauages prefently ran to the banke fide, and pulled vp a roote, and gate it the Maller Whittington, which the other Sauge perceiving to be durtie tooke it out of his hand, and went'to the water to walh it, and after divided it among the foure, it tafted very well: hee that came ashoare with the Oare in his hand, went and tooke the white skin that they hailed vs with, and gaue it to Mafter Whittington ; and prefently after they did take our white Flagge with them in the Canoa, and made negres vuto vs that we should repaire to our Barke, and so they put off, for

In the two Canoas there were eight men, if none were women (for commonly in enery Canoa there is one woman) they are of a reasonable stature, of an ordinary middle sife, they goe bareheaded, wearing their haire fomewhat long, but round : they have no Beards; behinde they have a great locke of haire platted with feathers, like a Hawkes Lure, with a feather in it flanding Their fathions vpright by the crowne of the head, and a small locke platted before, a short Gown made of Stags skins, the Furre innermoft, that ranne downe to the middle of their legges, with fleenes to the middle of their arme, and a Beuer skin about their necke, was all their apparell, faue that one of them had shooes and Mittens, so that all went bare-legged, and most bare-foote. They are full eyed of a blacke colour; the colour of their haire was divers, some blacke, some browne; and some yellow, and their faces something flat and broad, red with Oker, as all their apparell is, and the

rest of their body : they are broad brested, and bould, and stand very vpright. Their Canoa, are about twenty foote long, and foure foote and a halfe broad in the middle a. Their Canoas

loft, and for their Keele and timbers, they have thin light peeces of dry Firre, rended as it were lathes: and initead of Boords, they yie the outer Burch barke, which is thin, and hath many folds, fowed together with a thred made of a small root quartered. They will carry foure persons well, and weigh not one hundred weight : they are made in forme of a new Moone, item and iterne alike, and equally diffant from the effectel breadth; from the stem and sterne here riseth a yard high a light thin staffe whipped about with small rootes, which they take hold by to bring the Canoa alhoare, that ferueth inflead of ropes, and a harbour, for every place is to them a harborough; where they can goe ashoare themselves, they take aland with them their Canoa; and will neuer put to Sea but in a calme, or very faire weather : in the middle the Canca is higher a great deale then in the Bowe and quarter, they be all bearing from the Keele to the portleffe not with any circular line but with a right line. They had made a Tilt with a Saile that they got from some Christian, and pisched a dozen poles in the ground ucere, on which were hanged divers Furs,

and chaines made of fhels, which at that inftant we fell not in the reckoning to what intent it was

done, but after it came to our minde, as hereafter you shall perceiue.

20

The feuenth day we spent in walking, and in beginning a houte to shelter is when we should come thither hereafter, ypon a small lland of about hie acres of ground, which is iopred to the mane with a small Beech i for any bartering with the Sauges there cannot be a fitter place.

The eight day it began to freeze, and there was thin Ice our the found; and because we heard nothing more of the Sauages we began to return out of the Sauages had made two dayes before fire in, wer found all things remaining there, as it was when we parced, when an old Boat faile, three or foure shell chaines, about twelve Eures, of Beauers most, a Fox skin, a Sable skin, a Bard skin, and an old Mitten, fee teuery one yon a feueral user most, a Fox skin, a Sable skin, a Bard skin, and an old Mitten, fee teuer yone yon a feueral work when you were the same faithful that they would stand to our courtese to leave for it what wee should thinke good. 18 Beause we were not furnished with fit things for to trucke, we tooke onely a Beauer skin, a Sable skin, and a Bird skin, seauing for them a Hatcher, a Knife, and foure Needles threaded. Mater Whitisingern had a paire of Cizzars which he left therefor a small Beauers skin, all the reft we left there withouched, and came that night to the harbour that we were in at our entring, which we call Flage flaffe Harbour because we had because we were in a tour entring, which we call Flage flaffe Harbour because we had not there the Flage-flaffe Harbour because we had not the standard of the which dwell there. For in no other place we here we were could we perceit user to only any above of them, &c. of them of them of them, &c. of the mean the manufacture of them of the mean to the were the were could we perceit out any tokens of any aboade of them, &c. of the mean them.

CHAP. VIII.

Captaine RICH ARD WHITBOVERES Voyages to New-foundland, and observations there, and thereof; taken out of his Printed Booke.



1882

T it well knowne, that my breeding and coerfe of life hath beene fuch, as that I have long time fet many people on worke, and ipene most of my daies in travell, fixedly in Merchandizing, and Sea-Voyages. I have beene often in France, Spain, 30 that, Partugall, Suan, Demarks, Normy, Spraceland, the Cameries, and Sorial lands: and let the New-found-land; it is almost for familiarly knowne to me as my

owne Comercy.

In the year \$18.1 fermed winder the then Lord Admirall, as Captaine in a Ship of my owne fet forth at my charge against the Spanish of mountained a direct such time as that service was sended, taking my leave of his Honour, I had his fauourable Letters to one Six Robert Demis, in the Countie of Demon, Rnight; whereby there might be some course taken, that the charge as well of my owne Ship, as also of two other, and a Primace, with the victuals, and men therein imploited, should not be any way burthensome to me. Wherein there was such order given by the then right Honorable Lords of the printe Countell, that the same was well satisfied: which service is 40 to be seen recorded in the Booke as White Hall.

Now to expresse the most as roome tand.

Now to expresse to make most of the prefant purpose, My first Voyage thicker, was about fortie yeers since, in a worthis Shippe, of the
fant purpose, My first Voyage thicker, was about fortie yeers since, in a worthis Shippe, of the
burthen of three hundred tun, set forth by one Malter Coston of Sonth-hampton: wee were bound
to the Grand Bay (which leted on the Northisle of that Land) purpoing there to trade then with
the Sauage people (for whom we carried fundry commodities) and to kill Whales, and to make
Traine Oyle, as the Biscainer doe these yeerely in great solundance. But this our intended Voyage was outer-thowome, by the indifference of our Captaine, and faint-hartednesse of sone Gentlemen of our Companie; whereupon we see faile from thence, and bare with Trinny Has. In: in
Now-found-land; where we killed great store of fish, Deere, Baeres, Beauers, Scales, Otters, and
signishe, with abundance of Sea-fowle; and so returning for England, wee arrived life at South-

In a Voyage to that Countrie, about fix and thirtie yeeres fince, I had chen the command of a worthly Ship of two bundred and twenty tun, fet forth by one Mafter Greake of South-hampters. At that time Sit Humfrey Gibert, a Draumfare Knight, came thinker with two good Ships and Pinnace, and brought with him a large Patent, from the late most renowned Queene Elizabrid, and in her name tooke patietion of that Countrie, in the Harbour of Sain Labris, whereoff was an ive-wincile. He failed from thence towards Vigninia; and by reason of ione winappy direction in his course, the greatest Ship he had strucke yono Shelues, on the Coast of Casadiae, and was there both, with most gart of the company in her; And he himselfe being then in a smill Panace of twenty tun, in the company of his Vice-Admiral (one Captaine Haper) returning towards England, in a great storme, was our whelmed with the Sean, and so presided.

In another Voyage I made thither, about foure and thirty yeeres past, wherein I had the command of a good Shup, partly mine one: as that time own Sir Bernard Drake of Denouliers, Kongis,

came thither with a Commission, and having divers good Ships vnder his command, hee there took many Ports, all Ships laden with Pith, and brought them into England as Prizes. Omitting to speak of other Voyages, I made thither, during the late Quiene raign, I will deficend to later time for the Control of the Control of

Fallon, came there, and had with him ten faile of good Ships well furnished and very rich. I was kept eleuen weekes vnder his command, and had from him many golden promifes, and much wealth offered to be put into my hands, as it is well knowne : I did perswade him much to defift from his euill course; his intreaties then to me, being that I would come for England, to some friends of his, and follicite them to become humble petitioners to your Maiestie for his pardon: To but having no warrant to touch fuch goods, I gave how thankes for his offer; onely I requefted him to releafe a Ship that he had taken voon the Coaft of Guinnie, belonging to one Captaine Rably of For in Cornewall; a man whom I knew but onely by report: which he accordingly releafed. Whereupon I prouided men, victuals, and a fraught for the faid Ship, and to fent her home to Dartmonth in Donen, though I never had fo much as thankes for my kindeneffe therein. And is leaving Easton, I came for England, and gave notice of his intention, letting paffe my Voyage I intended for Naples, and loft both my labour and charges : for before my arrivall, there was a para don granted, and ient him from Ireland. But Easten honering with those ships and riches voon the Coalt of Barbarr, as he promifed, with a longing defire, and full expectation to be called home, loft that hope by a too much delaying of time by him who carried the Pardon. Whereupon he failed 20 to the Straights of Gibraltar, and was afterwards entertained by the Duke of Sauer, under whom

I was there allo in the yeere 1614 when Sir Henry Manuaring was vpon that Coaft, with fine good Ships (frongly provided: he caused me to spend much time in his company, and from him I returned into England, although I was bound from thence to Masselia, to make fale of such goods at I then had, and other imploiments, &c.

In the yeere 1615, I returned agains to Nan-found Lond; carrying with mee a Committion out of the high Court of Admiratici, vnder the great Seale thereof, authoriting me to empannell luries, and to make inquire youn Oath, of finally abules and diforders committed amongst Fiftermen yeerfly you that Coast, and of the fixtest means to redreft the fame, with some cuber points, 10 hauing a short particular relation to the Coffice of the Lond Admiratil.

What was then there done, by vertue of that Commission, which wise wholly consucted at my What was then there done, by vertue of that Commission, which wise wholly consucted at my cowns charge, bath bin at large by me already cereined into the high General Administracy Rouger-owns charge, that bin at large by me already to the commission of the commiss

In the yeers 1010, 1 and 2011, 2015.

In the yeers 1010, 1 and 2011, 2015.

From thence, being bound for Libbose, was mer with by a Fronch Pinte of Rebell, one Dowlet 75from thence, being bound for the Summer of the Company that were in her; and atthough I made
good proofe thereof a Libbose, and reprefered the fame also to this Kingdome, as spiperained,
after my returns from thebreayet for all this field, Bound were that the property of the state of the Summer of the Pinter of the Summer of the Summ

Shortly after my returns from Lubons, I was fent for by a Gentleman, who about a yeare before, by a grant from the Patentees, had vindertaken to faitle people in New-Joned-Lonei; he acquainted me with his defigues, & after fame conference touching the fame, wer so concluded, that he gaue me a conneisance vinder his hard and seale for the terms of my life, with full power to gouverne within his circuit you that Coast; whereuport/being defirout traduunce that worke) in Anne 1618, I siled chither in a Ship of my owne, which was victualled by that Gentleman, my selle, and some others. We likewise them did set forth another Shipsfor a fishing Voyage, while also carried one victuals for those people which had been formerly sellent to inabatic there: but 50 this Ship was intercepted by an English eiting Captaint/that went forth with Sit water Raleigh) who tooke the Malter of her, the Boartwains, de two others of the boff men, with much of her victuals (the refl of the Company for feare renning into the woods) and so left the Ship as a Prize, study of the sellent sellent in the sellent sellent

hindered.

Now feeing it pleafed your Maiestie many yeers since, to take good notice of the said Newfound-land, and granted a Patent for a Plantation there; wherein many Honorishle and worthy
mens endeauers, and great charge therein, haite deserved good commendations (as is well-known)
the which I desire to further with all my best endeauers tand not to disgrace or dishbethe founthe which I desire to further with all my best endeauers tand not to disgrace or dishbethe founfeering Subjects that haue arrived your that Coast; it besting indifference one, whether there be a
new foundation laid, or whether it be builded upon that which hath already been beging to that
the Plantation go forward. Yet I may tredy lay, that hisher oil title hath been performed to any
purpole by such as therein were implosed, worthy the name of a Plantation, or answerable to a the

whereby our intended Fifthing Voyages of both our Sinps were overthrewn, and the Plantation

expectation and defert of the Vindertakers; neither have such good effects followed, as may be expected from a thorow performance hereafter. And feeing that no man hath yet published any ht monues et inducements, whereby to perswade men to aduenture, or plant there; I have prefumed plainly to lay downe thele following realons, &c.

A Relation of the New-found-land.

eure of the

Ein furne leud is an fland, bordering, upon the continent of America, from which it is divided by the Sea : fo far diffant, as England is from the neerest part of France, & lieth between of the Country 46 and 53, deg. North-latitude : It is necreas [pagious as Ireland, and lieth necre the course that Ships whiled in their return from the Wolf Indies, and neere halfe the way between Ireland Io and Verginie 4 hall not much needs to commend the whollome temperature of that Countrie feeing the greatest part thereof lieth about 3 degrees nearer to the South, then any part of England The remotrae doth. And it bath bin well approved by fome of our Nation, who have lived there these many weeres, that summ in the winter it is as pleafant and healthfull as England is, And although the example offone Sammer be no certain rulefdrother yeeres; yet thus much alio can I truely affirme. that in the pence 1615 of the many thousands of English, French, Portugal, and others, that were then your that Coaft (among it whom I failed to and iro more then one hundred leagues) I neither faw nor heard in all that exauell, of any man or boy of either of these Nations, that died there during the whole Voyage i neither was so much as any one of them sicke.

The Inhibitan:s, with their nature and cuftomes.

The natural Inhabitants of the Countriers they are but few in number, fo are they fomething 20 rude and fausge people; having neither knowledge of God, nor living under any kinde of civil goperment, In their habits, customs & marmers, they refemble the Indians of the Continent, from whence (L fuppole) they come; they live altogether in the North and West part of the Country, which is seldome frequented by the English But the Enench and Biscaines (who refort thither veerely for the Whale-fishing, and also for the Cod-fish) report them to be an ingenious and tra-Stable posse(being well view) they are ready to affilt them with great latiour and patience, in the killing, cutting, and boyling of Whales; and making the Traine Oyle; without expectation of other reward, then a little Bread, or some fuch imalihire.

Bayesinthat

All along the coast of this Countrie, there are many spacious and excellent Bayes, same of them The conveni- ilretching into the land, one towards mother, more when twentie leagues. On the East fide of the Land, assche Bayes of. Trinite and Genepion; which Hercheth themselves towards the 30 Sauthernell To Rose and Genetic Review to the 12 Control of the 12 South wells Tor Bay, and Capeles Bay, lying alio on the Eaft, firetch toward the West: the Bayes of Trepaffer, Si Mary, Berrell, and Plaifager; on the South part of the Land, extend their armes toward the North : The great Bay of S. Rerenlying on the South-west side of the Land, and East, Souther befrem the gratt Rings of Contenbeing about ewentie leagues diffant, the fame firetcheth toward the Eait. And here I pray you note, that the bottoms of thefe Bayes doe meete together within the compaffe of a small carpuis; by meanes whereof our men passing ouer land from Bay to Bay may with much ficultiond foouer the whole Countrie.

From the Bay of S. Beer sound about the Well lake of the Land, till you come to the grand Bang Which lieth on the North fide of the Countrie; and fo from the het; sill you come round, back 40 to Torrion Base, are abundance of largetande xeellene Bayes ; which are the leffe knowne, because not frequenced by the English, who teldome fift to the Northward of Tringie Bay.

Commodious

And stude observed, the round about the Coast and in the Rayes, there are many final Ilander noment them durther off chesis langue from the land both faire and fruitfull; neither doth thy Harbours any one part of the world afford greace fore of good Harbours, more free from dangers, or more commodess; then are there built by the admirable workmanship of God; I will onely instance awe or three of the chiefelt, for forse friental reafons. Trimble Harbour lyes fortie nine degrees North datitude, being very commodically fea-

Trinitie Harbor affording diuers good

sted to secenie thepping in reasonable meather, both to such or in and from thence to falle towards erther the East , Weft, or South : It hath three drimes or Rivers ; long and large enough 50 for many hundred fayleiof Ships, to moare fast at Anchor neere a mile from the Harbours month; close adioyning to the Rivers ide, and within the Harbour is much open land, well Roredtwitte Graffe fefficiebt., Winter and Summen; to maintaine great flore of ordinary Cattell, befides Hogges and Goats; refugh beads were carried thither; and it Randeth North, moft of any Harbour in the Land, where our Nation practifeth Fishing; It is necre vuto a great Bay lying on the North best of it, called the Bay of Flowers, to which place no Ships repaire to film; parthy intregard of fundry Rockes, and Ledger lying even with the water, and full of danger : bits shiefly des Loonie Gure) bequife the Savage people of that Countrey doe there in-Sangerliuing babice trains of elem fecratly every years . Some into Trimite Bay and Harbour, in the night nection times, purpolely to fleate Sailers Lines, Hatchers; Hooker, Knines, and tich like. And 60 this Bay is not three, English milesount Land from Trimtie Bay in many places ; which people is they might bee triduced to the knowledge of the true Trinitie indeed, no doubt but it would bee a most sweet and acceptable facrifice to God, an enertailing honour to your Maiefly and the heavenlieft bleffing to those poore Creatures, who are buried in their own tuperitions

ignorance. The taske thereof would proue easie, if it were but well begun, and constantly seconded by industrious spirits: and no doubt but God himselse would set his hand to reare vp and advance fo noble, to pious, and to Christian a building.

The bottome of the Bay of Trinity lieth within four leagues through the land South-west, The bottoms Southerly from Trings, as by experience is found, and it comes neere vnto the Bay of Trepaffer, of divers Baies and the bottome of some other Bayes, as I have alreadie touched before.

Trepaffer in like manner is as commodious a Harbour, lying in a more temperate climate, almost in 46. degrees, the like latitude, and is both faire and pleasant, and a wholesome Coast, free The Harhouse from Rockes and Shelues : fo that of all other Harbours, it lies the South-moft of any Harbour of Trease to to in the Land, and most conveniently to receive our Shipping to and from Virginia, and the ing commodi-Bermuda Hands; and also any other Shipping that shall passe to and from the River of Cana- oully. dy and the Coast thereof; because they vivally passe and returne in the fight of the Land of Tree

paffe; and also for some other purpoles, as shall be partly declared in the following discourse. The foile of this Countrie in the Vallies and fides of the Mountaines, is fo fruitfull, as The fertilitie of that in divers places, there the Summer naturally produceth out of the fruitfull wombe of the foyle, the earth, without the labour of mans hand, great pleneie of greene Peale and Fitches, faire, round, full and wholesome as our Fitches are in England: of which I have there fed on many times; the hawmes of them are good folder for Cattell and other Beafts in the winter, with the helpe of Hay; of which there may be made great flore with little labour in divers places of 20 the Countrie.

Then have you there faire Strawberries red and white, and as faire Raspasse berrie, and Goose- Severalliores berries, as there be in England; as also multitudes of Bilberries, which are called by some of Fruits there Whortes, and many other delicate Berries (which I cannot name) in great abundance. There growing. are also many other fruites, as small Peares, sowre Cherries, Filberds, &c. And of these Berries and Fruits the ftore is there fo great; that the Marriners of my Ship and Barkes Companie, have often gathered at once, more then halfe an Hogshead would hold; of which divers times eating their fill, I never heard of any man, whose health was thereby any way impaired.

There are also Herbes for Sallets and Broth; as Parshe, Alexander, Sorrell, &c. And also Flow- Herbs & Flow ers, as the red and white Damaske Rofe, with other kindes, which are most beautifull and de- ers both plealightfull, both to the fight and fmell. And questionlesse the Countrie is stored with many Physi- fant and medicall herbs and roots, albeit their vertues are not knowne, because not fought after; yet within cinable, thele few yeares, many of our Nation finding themselves ill, have bruised some of the berbs and ftreined fome of the nuce into Berre, Wine or Aquanite; and fo by Gods affiftance, after a few drinkings, it hath restored them to their former health. The like vertoe it hath to cure a wound or any iwelling, either by washing the grieued places with some of the lierbes boiled, or by applying them to thereunto (plaitter-wife) which I have feene by often experience. This being the naturall fruitfulneffe of the earth, producing such varietie of things, fit for foode, without the labour of man : I might in reason hence inferre, that if the same were manured, and husbanded in fome places, as our grounds are, it would be ape to beare Corne, and no leffe fertill then the Enga 40 lifb foile.

But I neede not confine my felfe to probabilities ; feeing our men that have wintred there di- Corn growing uers yeeres, did for a triall and experiment thereof fowe fome small quantitie of Corne, which I there, reclaing faw growing veriefaire; and they found the increase to be great, and the graine very good; and good increase, it is well knowne to me, and divers that trade there yeerely, how that Cabbage, Carrets, Tur-

neps, Lettice, and fuch like, proue well there. In divers parts of the Countrie there is great store of Deere, & some Hares, manie Foxes, Squir? Store of Deere rels, Beuers, Wolues, and Beares, with other fores of Beafts, feruing as well for necessicie, as for &other Beafts profit and delight. Neither let me feeme ridiculous, to annex a matter of noueltie, rather then Ararecxample weight, to this discourse. In the yeere 1615, it was well knowne to eight and fortie persons of of the gentle my Companie, and divers other men, that three feuerall times, the Wolues & Beafts of the Coun-nature of the trie came downe neere them to the Sea-fide, where they were labouring about their Fish, howling and making a noise : so that at each time my Mastiffe Dogge went onto them (as the like in that Countrie hath not been feene) the one began to fawne and play with the other, and so went M Guiss Matogether into the Woods, and continued with them, euerie of thefe times, nine or ten daies, and did returne voto vs without any burt.

The Land Fowle (besides great number of small Birds flying vp and downe, some without name, that line by scraping their food from the earth in the hardest winter that is) there are also Hawkes great and imall, Partridges, Thrush, and Thrussels abundance, very fat. As also Filladies, Nightingales, and such like, that ling most pleasantly. There are also Birds that line by prey, as belly. 60 Rauens, Gripes, Crowes, &c. For Water-fowle, there is certainly fo good, and as much varietie, as in any parcot the world; as Geele, Dicks, Pidgeons, Gulls, Pengnins, and many other forts. Thele Penguins are as bigge as Geefe, and flie not, for they have but a little flort wing, and they multiply to infinitely, vpon a certaine flat Hand, that men drive them from thence vpon a boord Penguing, into their Boates by hundreds at a time; as if God had made the innocencie of fo poore a crea-SHITHE 3

bound vied a. Walfe there more degged Iv. one pulling the other the

rure to become such an admirable influment for the sustentation of man. There are also Godwits. Curlewes, and a certaine kinde of Fowle are called Oxen and Kine, with fuch like: which Fowle doe not onely freed those that trade thither greatly for foode, but also they are a great furthering to divers Ships voyages, because the abundance of them is such, that the Fishermen doe bast their hookes with the quarters of Sea-Fowle on them : and therewith fome Ships doe veerely take a great part of their Fishing Voyages, with some baite, before they can

Freih water and Springs.

The fresh waters and Springs of that Countrie, are many in number, and withall very pleafair, delightfull and wholefome, that no Countrie in the world hath better. And Pewell for fire is to plen stull, that there is never like to be want of that commoditie.

Many forts of growing.

In like minner there is great abundance of Trees fit to be imploied in other feruiceable vies: There are Furre and Sproce trees, found, good, and fit to mail Ships withall; and as commodious for boards and buildings as the Spruce and Firre trees of Norman and out of thele came abundance of Turpentine. No Countrie can thew Pine and Birch trees, of fuch height and greatnesse as those are there; and doubtlesse, if some store of your Maiesties subjects doe once settle there to live, and would be industrious to fearch further, and more throughly into the Countrie, then as vet it hath beene, there might be found many other commodities of good worth. Among the which I may not omit, that there is much probabilitie of finding Mines, and making of Iron

Good hope of Mines, and making of Iron and Pitch. Fift in great

The Ruers also and Harbors are generally stored with delicate Fish, as Salmons, Pearles, Ecles, 20 Herring, Mackerell, Flounders, Launce, Capelin, Cod, and Troutes the fairest factest and tweetest, that I have seene in any part of the world. The like for Lobsters, Crabfish, Muskles, Hens, and other varietie of Shel-hill great store. And also observe here, that in these places there is vfailly store of the spawne and frie of seuerall forts of fishes: whereby the Sea-towle line so fat as they are there in the winter : And likewife the Beuers, Octers, and fuch like, that feeke their foode in the Ponds, and fresh Rivers. The Seas likewise all along the Coast, doe plentitully abound in other forts of fish as Wnales, Spanish Mackerell, Dorrell, Pales, Herring, Hogs, Porpofes, Seales, and fuch like royall fish, &c. But the chiefe commodity of New-found land yet knowne, and which is growne to be a fet-

Cod-fifbing a great hope of benefit there-

voon those

coafts.

led trade, and that may be much bettered by an orderly Plantation there (if the Traders thither will take some better course, then formerly they have done, as shall be declared) if the Codfishing voon that Coast, by which our Nation and many other Countries are enricht. And if I should here fet downe a valuation of that Fish, which the French, Biscaines, and Portugals fetch yeerely from this Coast of New-found land, and the Banke, which lieth within fine and twen-The benefit aring to France, tie leagues from the South-Cape of that Countrie, where the French vie to fift Winter and Summer, viually making two Voyages energy yeare thither : (To which places, and to the Coast of Canady, which lieth neere vnto it, are yearely tent from those Countries, more then foure hundred faile of Ships:) It would feeme incredible, yea some men are of opinion, that the people of France, Spains and Italy, could not so well live, if the benefit of the fishing voon this Coast, and your Mai-flies other Dominions, were taken from them.

on that coaft.

But I truff it will be f. fficient, that I give an estimate of our owne trading thither, and partly of the wealth and commodities we reape thereby, without any curious fearch into other mens profits. In the yeere 1615, when I was at New-found-land with the Commission before mentioned, which was an occasion of my taking the more particular observations of that Country, there were then on that Coaft, of your Maiesties subjects two hundred and fiftie faile of Ships great and finall. The burthens and Tunnage of them all, one with another fo neere as I could take notice, allowing every Ship to be at least threescore tun (for as some of them contained lese, so many of them held more) amounting to more then 1,000, tunnes. Now for every threefcore tun burthen, according to the vivall manning of Ships in those Voyages, agreeing with the note I then tooke, there are to be fet downe twentie men and boyes : by which computation in thefe to two hundred and firtie faile, there were no leffe then fine thouland persons. Now enery one of there Ships, to neere as I could guesse, had about 1 20000. fish, and five tunne of traine Oyle one with another. So that the totall of the Fish in these two hundred and fiftie faile, when it was brought into England, France or Spaine (being fold after the rate of foure pound, for every thoutained in moit find of fifth, fixicore fifthes to the hundred, which is not a pennie a fifth, and if it yeelds leffe, it was ill fold) amounted in monie to 120000, pound,

Ships did a-

Now, as I have faid before, allowing to every Ship of fixtie tun, at least five tun of traine Oyle; the totall of that arifeth to 1250, tun; each tun, whether it be fold in England, or elfewhere, being voder-valued at twelve pound. So as the whole value thereof in monie, amounteth to the fum of 15000. pound, which added to the fish, it will appeare that the totall value of the fish, and 60 Traine Oyle of those 250. faile of Ships that yeere, might yeelde to your Maiesties fubirets better then the Summe of 135000. pound, omitting to reckon the ouer-prices which were made and gotten by the fale thereof in forrain Countries, being much more then what is vivally made at home, and to the like in other yeeres. And this certainly, in my understanding, is a point worthy of confideration, that fo great wealth should yearely be raised, by one sole commodity of that Countrie, yea by one onely fort of fish, and not vpon any other trade thither, which must needes yeelde, with the imploiments thereof, great riches to your Maiesties Subiests: And this alfo to be gathered and brought home by the fole labour and industry of men, without exchange or exportation of our Coine, and native commodities, or other adventure (then of necellarie pronifions for the fishing) as Salt, Nets, Leads, Hookes, Lines, and the like; and of victuals, as Bread, Beefe, and Porke, in competent measure, according to the number and proportion of men imployed in those Voyages. The connecting of these commodities (gotten by nihing) into mony, cannot choose but be a great benefit to all your Maiesties Kingdomes in many respects.

What the charge in fetting forth of thefe two hundred and fiftie faile might amount vnto (brwhat the charge in the land of the country, yeeldeth) I hold it not ficher to teet down, left I thould the trading on the year to the cause by form therein. And withalian to be considered, that the trade thither (as now it there will as the country of the count is) doth yearely let on worke, and relieue many numbers of people, as Bakers, Brewers, Coopers, ford to feuerall Ship-Carpenters, Smiths, Net-makers, Rope-makers, Linesmakers, Hooke-makers, Bully and Sup-Largest value (rades, which with their families bage their belt menns of rather Chine, After this the kers, and many other crades, Wonges. Adde who them the families of fertants of dates. Was found in the work of the control of and Mafters of fuch Shrps as goe thither, and Mariners swith their families, hereby imperied and maintained, * &c.

THE Nations of the Countrey baue great flore of red Oaker, which they vie to colour their baue omitted Bodies, Bowesand Ariowes, and Cannowes withall, which Cannowes are built in shape, as busted in his like the Wherries on the River of Tannes; but that they are much longer, made with the rinds flory. The Book of Birch trees; which they few very artificially and close together, and ouerlay enery feame with fuch as defire Turpentine; and in like manner they few the rindes of Spruce trees, round and deepe, in propose to reade it I tion like a Braffe Kettle, to boyle their meate in, which hath beene well proued by three Mari- base also omit ners of a Ship, riding at Anchor by me, who being robbed in the night by the Sauages, of their apparell and divers provisions, did the mext day feeke after them, and came fuddenly where they had fet vo three Tents and were feafting, having three Canoas by them, and had three Pots made ceedings. of fuch rindes of trees, standing each of them on three Bones boyling with twelue Fowles in each 30 of them; every Fowle as bigge as a Widgeon, and fome to bigge as a Ducke: they had also many fuch pots fo fewed, and fallhioned like the leather Buckess that are vied for quenching of fire,

and those were full of the yolks of Egges, that they had taken and boiled hard, and so dried small, which the Sauages vied in their brosh, as Sugar is wied in some meater; they had great store of the Skins of Deere, Beauers, Beares, Seales, Otters, and divers other fine skins which were well dreffed; as also great flore of feuerall forts of flesh dried; and by shooting off a Musket towards them, they all ran away naked without any apparell, but onely their hags on their heads, which were made of Seales skins, in fashion like our hats, sewed handsomely with narrow bands about them, let round with fine white shels, such as are carried from Portugal to Brafeile; where they palled to the Indians as ready monie. All their three Canoas their Flesh, Skins, Yolks of Egges. 40 Targets, Bowes and Arrows, and much tine Okar, and divers other things, they tooke & brought away, and shared it amongst those three that tooke it and brought to me the best Canoa, Bowes and Arrowes, and divers of their Skins, and many other things worth the noting : which may

feeme to inuite vs to finde out some other trades with them. Now also I will not omit to relate something of a strange Creature that I first faw there in the yeere 1610, in a morning early as I was standing by the water side, in the Harbour of Saint lebns; which I espied verie swittly to come swimming towards me, looking cheerefully, as it had beene a woman, by the Face, Eyes, Nofe, Mouth, Chin eares, Necke and Forehead: It feemed to be fo beautifull, and in those parts to well proportioned, having round about upon the head, all blew strakes, resembling haire, downe to the Necke (but certainly it was haire) for I beheld it long. and another of my companie also, yet living, that was not then farre from me; and seeing the 30 fame comming fo fwiftly towards mee, I itepped backe, for it was come within the length of a

long Pike. Which when this strange Creature faw that I went from it, it presently the reupon dined a little under water, and did swim to the place where before I landed; whereby I beheld the shoulders and backe downe to the middle, to be as square, white and smooth as the backe of a man, and from the middle to the hirder part, pointing in proportion like a broad hooked Arrowshow it was proportioned in the forepart from the necke and floulders, I know not; but the fame came shortly after vnto a Boat, wherein one William Hawkridge, then my servant, was, that hath bin fince a Captaine in a Ship to the East Indies, and is lately there imploied againe by Sir Thomas Smith, in the like Voyage; and the same Creature did put both his hands upon the fide 60 of the Boate, and did ftriue to come into him and othersthen in the faid Boate : whereat

they were afraid; and one of them strooke it a full blow on the head; whereat it fell off from them: and afterwards it came to two other Boates in the Harbour; the men in them, for feare fled to land : This (I suppose) was a Mermaide. Now because divers have written much of Mermaides, I have prelumed to relate, what is most certaine of such astrange Creature that

there ; which I

was feene at New-found-land: whether it were a Mermaide or no, I know not; I leave it for others to inleg, &cc.

CHAP. IX.

The names of divers honorable persons and others who have undertaken to beloe aduance his Maiesties Flautation in the New-found-land : written by the faid R.W. with extracts of certaine Letters in the contract from thence.

in the entire Bullet of to He riote Honorable, Henry Lord Cary, Vilcount of Faulke-land, Lord Deputie for the Kingdome of Irefand? hath vinderaiken to plane a Colonie of his Maielies Subsection the Kingdome of Irefand? hath vinderaiken to plane a Colonie of his Maielies Subsection the River familiand, and is well pleased to entercaine foods as are willing to be deducatives with him the minimum finds of the Subsection for the Subsection fo ling to be Aduenturers with him therein; ipon fuch Conditions as may appeare in the latter part of this Booke: And in his Lordships absence, hee hath authorized this Agent, Master Leonard Wellsted, by warrant under his hand and Seale, to rati- 20

fie whatfoeuer shall be by him concluded therein. The faid Master Welliteds Chamber is neere one Matter Garlands house, at the lower end of Same Martingland in the fields.

The right Honorable Sir George Calvere, Knight jone of the principall Secretaries voto his Maiellie hath allo vindertaken to planta large Circuit of thet Countrie ! who hath already fent this ther this years and the former years, a great number of with and women; with all necessarie proin finns fit for them; where they live pleasantly, building of Houses, derfing of Land for Corne, and Meddowes, Cabage, Carrets, Turneps, and such like as also for Wood and Tobacco, Likewife they are there preparing to make Salt, for the preferention of Pith another years, and for divers other feruices. And his Honor is likewise well pleased to entertaine fuch as will adventure with him therein, ypon very to condition.

The Worthipfull John Slany of London Merchant, who is one of the undertakers of the New- 30 found Land Printation, and is Freaturer were the Parentees of that Societie, who have maintained a Colomie of his Maiellies lubicote there about welue yeeres, and they are willing to entertains foch as will further his Maieflies faid Plantaeton; whom firconditions.

Divers Worthipfull Citizens of the Civie of Brifoll; have vndertaken to plant a large Circuit of that Comerie, & they have maintained a Colony of his Maiefties lubieds there any time thefe five yeeres, who have builded there many faire Houses, and done many other good fernices, who live there very pleasantly, and they are well pleased to entertaine vpon fix conditions such as will be Adventurers with them.

The Worthipfull William Vanghan of Tarraced, in the Countie of Carmanthen, Doctor of the 40 Civill Law, hath alfo vadertaken to plant a Circuit in the New-found faut and hath in two feuerall yeeres sent thirther divers men and women, and hee is willing to entertaine such as will be Aduenterers with him vpon fit conditions.

And there are many other worthy perions Adventurers in the faid Plantation, whose names are not herein mentioned. And it is well hoped, that divers others will also put their helping hand to advance the same, when they are given to understand what honour and benefit may accrue thereby. And if his Maiesties subicets of this Kingdome may be willing to set torth from eueric feuerall Countrie, but one good Ship yearely thither, with people and prounions fit for them, it will be then not onely a great honour and benefit to his Marettie, but also a great increase of Shipping and Marriners, and the imploying and inriching of many thoulands of poore people which power people which people people which people people people people people people people which people peo iects, to let forth the charge at first, and foeuerie Parish to recour yearely their equall parts of the benefit which may accrue by the faid flocke, and thereby not onely disburden yeerely themselves of some of those which lie chargeable vnto them within their severall Parishes; but also yeerely yeelde a great benefit to every feuerall Countie, though it lie formething remote from the Sea-coast, if they imploy a discreete honest man there, who may yearely be accomptable to eucrie Parish of the charge, and likewise the benefit. The which will not be anie way burdensome or hurtfull vnto any; as the following difcourfe which I have written will plainly informe them.

Extracts

Extracts of a Letter from Captaine ED WARD WINNE, Governous of the Colony at Ferryland; within the Province of Analon, in Newfound-

Land vnro the Right Honourable Sir G E O R G E C A L-WERT Knight, his Maifties Principall Secretary ; July 28. 1622.

My it pleafe your Hontur :

I Ponthe fenencemb day of May . I received here your Letters of the nineteenth of February, from V. the bands of Robert Stoming. I pan the few and in evident of the fame; a Ship of Matter Tennins, with your people and promition arrived here in safetie: and from the hands of Captaine Powell I received then your thereurs Lesers whihe fourtemnt of March. And von the last of lune Mafter lames extre beiberiffon Renoule and the Salamaker Master loun Hickling from whose hands I received two Letters more, that by Mifter lames, being of the fourth of May, and the other by Hickion of the

tenth of the farmence of the hand former I had delinered my last Letters of the fifth of Septems This was the ber Limmaduttely addressed my selfe enaly to our businesse: Nationalist anding our diligent labour left Lener kent ber 1 immediately addressed my selfe energy to our majorage: Nationalist and out authorist address and extraordinary paints taking it was Alhallentide before our first range of building was fitted for an incoverie be-

After Christmafe, wee imployed our selmes in the Woods, especially in band menther, whence wee got home as many Boord-flockes as af orded us two hundred Boords , and about two hundred Timber trees besides. Mee got home as resuch at as many Trees, as furned us to palixado ento the Plantation about foure Acres of ground, for the keeping of of barb man and heaft, with Post and Rayle seven foot bigb, frangened in spores the Trees being puched upriebs and fastened wat Spikes and Nayles Whe got also togo ber as much Pira-wood as will ferue ve yet thefe two monates. We also fisted much Garden ground for Seed I meane Barley Oases Reale and Beares For addrism of building we have at this prefent a Parlow of founteene for belides the Chroney, and

twelve foot bread of construent beight, and a lodging Chamber over it; to each a Chimney of Stone-work with Staires and a Searce of Crochestes a tenament of two recines,or a flory and a balle, which ferues for a 30 Store-boufe till gret are eshering presented. The Borge barb beene funified the fe fine weeks to the Salt-works it now abouft ready. Was middlending abou greas eachefon fa for hunds, we bane both to beat. Bar-They were both ley, O. star, Reefe and Boanes about the quantuic of two Mores. Of Garden roome about balfe ay Acre : twelve men all ley, Oster, Kiefe and Beanet about the constitution was done of the act ranne about that exercise twelve men at Course, though flat spouse, who is enough even been and the goodday floref that I ener fair, he are fine, the left flue the let ribed in over bloomes this rewrite days. Wee base a plentiful, Kachen Garden of Littley, Kadade and the constitution of the co

For the Country and Clymate : It is better, and not focald at England buberto. My comfort is, that ing. the Lord is with your Hongur, and your designes : for we have prospered, to the admiration of all the beholders in what is done. And thus with my humble duty remembred, I reft, & c.

Another Letter to Mafter Secretary CALVERT, from Captaine WINNE, of the seuenteenth of August, 1622.

Mey it pleafe your Honour; WVE bene When Borty Outes, and Beaney both enrighted and codded, and though the late foreign which the fairing of them might occasion the contrary, the uppear one of foll-that is carries the like-theoded an appearation of Insell. We have also a plantiful Kischen Gaideso many things, and ranke, that I bane not feene the like in England. Our Beanes are exceeding good : our Peafe shall goe 50 mothent compare : for they are in some places as bigh as a man of an extraordinary stature , Raddill as big as mine armse, Lettice, Cale or Cabbage, Turneps, Carrets, and all the rest is of like goodnesse. We have a Meadow of about three Acres : it flourished lately with many corket's of good Hay, and now it is made no fir a Winter feeding. Wee hope to bee well fitted with many Acres of Meadow against another reere : of Passure-land, wee base already to ferme at least three hundred beads of Cattell: and to all this, if it please God, a good quantitie of Seed-ground shall be fitted, and such buildings as wee shall be able to

Now in the next place it may please your Honour to understand; That touching this Country, the Summer time here is fo faire. So warme, and of fo good a temperature, that it produceth many Hearbes and Plants very wholfome, medisinable, and delectable, many fruit Trees of fundry kindes, many forts of Berries wholfome to eate, and in measure most abandant infomuch as many forts of Birds and Beasis are relieved with them in time of Winter, and whereof with further experience I trust to ft d some for the turne of Drers. Our high lenells of Land are adorned with Woods, both fare and feemely to behold, and greene all Winter, Within Land there are Plaines innumerable, many of them containing many thou find Acres, very pleasant to see to, and well furnished with Ponds, Brookes and Riuers, very plentifull of sadry forts of Fife : besides store of Deere and other Beasts that yeeld both Food and Furre. Touching the

Coile, I find it in many places, of goodnessefarre beyond my expectation: the Earth as good as can be: the

going, i fina non many pinces, of government force of Cattle to feed it up, and with good ordering, it

would become a most fedfast nourghment : whereof the large breed of Cattell to our Northerne Planta-

tion, have lately given proofes sufficient , ibough since , they have beene most shamefully destroyed. The tion, naue tricing even proofes influences, some grand wholfome, and the Winter foot & tolerable, continuate bore is very healthfull, the water both cleer and wholfome, and the Winter foot & tolerable, continuate for the continuation of the conti

agre nere is very nearing united mainter of March: the day in Winter longer then in England : the nights

both filent and comfortable, producing nothing that can be faid, either borrid or bideom. Neither was it Coldbere the last Winter as in England the peere before. I remember but terce feuerall dages of bard

consucre to smith they not extreame neither : for I have knowne greater Froits , and farre greater to

CHAP.IO.

Temperate Winter.

Snowes in our owne Countrey. At the Bilko w Mariation, there is at goodly Rye now growing, at can bee in any part of England: ther are allo well furnified with Swine, and a large breed of Goates, fairer by far then those that were fent Briflow Planta-

The Stones, Kernells, and Seeds that Stoning brought mee, were put into the ground presently after bis arrivall, the which are already of a prettie growth, though late fet; for they came to my hands but voon the fenenteenth of Mar. The Unesthat came from Plimouth, doe profeer very well : nar, it is to be affured, that any thing that gromes in England , will grow and proper very well here : whereby it plainly appeares unto your Honour, what manner of Countrey the Same is .

Salt made

Abuses of Fi-

peares unto jour Florour to understand, that our Salt-maker bath performed his part with a great 20 deale of sufficiency, by whom I bane fent your Honour a Barrell of the best Salt that ener my eret beheld. who with better fetling doth undertake to better this, which bee bath made already, I shall humbly also delive you to remember my last yeares (nit, that our delicate Harbours and Woods may not bee altogether destroyed. For there hath beene runded this yeare not fo few as 50000. Trees, and they beane out ballast into the Harbors, though I looke on, It may likewife please your Honour to give express order; First that such as be fent thither bereafter, may be such men as shall bee of good firength : whereof wee fand m need of fixe Majons, foure Carpenters, two or three good Quarry men, a Slator or two, a Lyme-hurner, and Lyme-stones, a good quantitie of bard Larbs; a couple of strong Maids, that (besides other worke) can both Brew and Bake, and to furush us with Wheeles, Hempe, and Flax and a convenient number of Wellcountry Labourers to fit the ground for the Plough. Secondly that no more Boyes or Girles be fent hither, 30 countres Louvoirers to ju tou gromma jurant e tompto, succommy that no more to ope or Unital to first below to I macase, upon your Homes change, nor only other perfans which have not been brought up to labour to they are unfight to be of all more. Thirdly, your Homes of neeeffuls must need to find forme Gunner, and a Gunner with his necessaries; for the place and time due require is. It is a durable Church; they will estimmand the Harbour, and fecure all, Ge.

A Copie of a Letter from N.H. a Gentleman living at Ferryland in Newfound-Land, to a worthy Friend W. P. of the 18. of August, 1622.

Mandatus: I could not be rumaniful to flow the same unto you in a double bond, namely, lose 40 and datus: I could not be rumaniful to flow the same unto you in these rude lines, thereby to acquaint you with our health . the temperature of the Country, and the commodities and bleffings therein. And first, for the first : Concerning our health, there is not any man amongst our company, that bath beene licke Carcely one day lince be came , but bath beene able to follow his worke. The Climate differs but little from England, and I my selfe felt leffe cold here this Winter, then I did in England the Winter before by much. The arre u sweeter : for I nemer smelt any emil sauer in the Country, nor saw any venemous creature to burt mee. Gods bleffings upon this Land are manifold : As for wood and water, it passetb England : the one most sweet in growing and burning, the other most pleasant to taste, and good to drinke. For in Whisfau-bolidages (I taking with me Master Stoning) did coaft some ten miles in- 50 to the Country Wellward from our Plantation, to make some discovery of the Country, and to killa Deere; and being some fine miles into the Land, where wee lodged that night in a Wood, we found much Champion ground, and good leuels of one, two, three or foure bundred Acres together, and at the foot of each Mountaine and Small Hill, wee alwayes met with a faire fresh Riuer, or a sweet Brooke of running water, whereof wee freely drawke, and it did quench my thirst as well as any Beere, and much refresh vi both, and never offended our stomaches at all. Wee travelled three dayes, but found no Deere faue their footings, which came to paffe by meanes of a great fire that had burned the Woods a little before ten miles compasse. It began betweene Formouse and Aquatore; it burned a weeke, and then was quen-

to me more must be even that gaue fire to it, has I thinke he was a fernant hired by the Desil 60. I to doe that method deed, who [I doe not doubt] will pay him for his worke. In the night the Wolars being neere, did something affright us with howlings, but did not hart us: for wee had Dogs, Fire, and Sword to welcome them. As for the Beares, although there bee many; they beare us no ill will, I thinke, for L bane caten my part of two or three, and taken no bart by thems. Foxes heere are many, and as fubill as 4

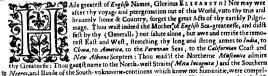
Foxe, yet have wee cooxned many of them of their rich coats, which our worthy Governour keepes carefully, as alfo of Cattagena's and Otters, whose concerings wee preserve as sitting presents for greater perfons. The Fowles and Birds of the Land are Partridges, Curlues, Filladayes, Black-birds, Bulfinches. Larkes, Spirrowes, and Juch like. Those of the Sea, are Goofe, Ducks of foure forts. Capderace, Teale. Suspes, Penourns, Murres, Hounds, Sanderlings, Redsbanks and others, all very fit, sweete and whol-Come. The Fowles of prey, are Tercells, Golbankes, Falcons, Laners, Sparhankes, Gripes, Offrein, Owles oreat and fmall, Runens, Guils. Preerils, and some others; and of most of these forts I bane killed many. As for the plentie of Cadfish it is well knowne unto you. Salmons , Eeles , Mackwell , Herrings, Lance, Caplin, Dog filb, Hollibuss, Flowkes, Lobsters, Crabs and Muskles: All and more then all thefe on are bere in great plentie, very good and sweet meat. The weld fruit and berries, are small Peares, Cherries, Nuts, Resberries, Stramberries, Barberries, Demberries, Hursleberries, with others all good to cate. Many faire Flowers I have feene here, which I cannot name, although I had learned Gerrards Herball by beart : But wild Rofes are here both red and damaike , as fragrant and faire as in England. All our Corne and Seedes baue profesed well, and are already growne almost to perfelt maturitie. &c.

THE SECOND PART OF THE TENTH BOOKE.

CHAP. X.

Divers Warlike Fleets fet forth to Sea against the Spaniards, by our English DEBORA, Queene ELIZABETH, of Glorious memory: Her manifold Delineries and Victories.

O I the Man, whose Muse mons'd on Plantations, New England, Virgin, Bermude, Newtound-landed, Lawrell for oline take, and make Relations Of Armes, Harmes, Fighes, Frights, Flights, Depopulations, Romes Buls, Spaines broyles Irelands mes Frances branded. GOD, Angels, Winds, Seas, Men, Elizas Glory Conspire ; Shee ontlines Death, in Heaven, in Story.



Aile greatest of English Names, Glorious ELIZABETH! Nor may wee after thy overgand pergrimation out of this World, vant thy true and heaunly home & Country, forget the great Acts of thy earthly Pulgrimage. Thou wait indeed the Mother of English Sea-greatnesse, and didly fifth both (Canaral). Note the state of the part of the pulgrimage. first by thy (Generalls) not salute alone, but awe and trrrifie the remofift by thy (Generalls) not taille alone, but are any trimes to india, to test East and West, stretching thy long and strong arms to India, to China, to America, to the Perwitan Seas, to the Californian Coast and China, Coastant Thon model's the Northerne Musicania admire New Albions Scepters : Thou mad'it the Northerne Masconite admire thy Greatneile: Thou gaugit name to the North-weit Straits (Meta Incognita) and the Southern

led to know Thee; Thou imbracedit the whole earthly Globe in thy Maritime Armes: thou freedit England from Easterlings and Lumbards borrowed legs, and taughtst her not onely to stand and goe without helpe, but become helpe to our friends, and with her own Sea forces to stand against, yea to fland upon, and flampe under feet the proudest of her foes. Thou wast a Mother to thy Neighbours, Scots, French, Dutch ; a Mirrour to the remotest of Nations, Great Cumberlands twelue voyages before recited are thine, and the fiery vigor of his Martiall Spirit was kindled at thy bright Lamp, & quickened by the Great Spirit of ELIZABBTH. Drake, Candift, lobn and thy Origin Lampic quadrings to Meley, Speries, Presson; Greenuile, Loncaster, Wood, Raimund, Lenison; The Ficers se:
Monion, Winter, Frobiber, Danies, abdother the Star-worthies of Englands Sphere, whole Platiforth by queen net-courfes we haue before related, acknowledge Ellias Orb tobe their Firft and higheft Elizabeth Moner. How many Royall Fleets did thee fet forth? In the yeeres 85, and 87, those water Sir Sup pag 1087, Francu Drake, before mentioned , asthat allo in 9x. under him and Sir lobn Hawkins : another & f Fleet 1590, under Sir lohn Hawkins, and Sir Martin Frobilber to the Hands; also 1591, the Hand Fleet under the Lord Thomas Howard ; now Earle of Suffolke ; that 1592. by Sir John Burronghs

CHAP.IO.

and Sir Robert Croffe, when the Madre de Dios was taken, and another Carrike burne : An. 1594: Suce lent forth a Fleet to Breft , where Frobuffet was flaine. Another 1599. vinler the Lord Thomas Howard. A. 1600. vinler Sir Richard Lewifin a Fleet to the Hands: 1601.

another to Irciand, A. 1602. under Sir Richard Leuison and Sir William Manson; and another under the fame Commanders, 1603. as bequeathing in her fatall extreames, Marine Actions and Glory to her Successour. These and other her Sca-glories I purpose not here to dilate, having already handled fome of them; but have fingled from the reft the actions of 88.89.96. and 97. premaline fomthing as a Preface of the great deliverances which God vouchfafed that Virgin Queen. That Church which is mystically called, The woman drunken with the blond of Saints, had begun

to perfecute her from her birth , Pope Clement the fixt decreeing against her Mothers mariage, 10

and Pope Paul the third thundring a terrible tentence against her Fathers Soueraigntie. And al-

Acres 17.5. Her perfecutithe wombe.

though King Henry had first enacted against his daughters, and after for them by Parliamentare authoritie yet when King Edward (which vied to call her he freet fifter Temperance) was dead. there wanted not some which extruded both the lifters, and obtruded another succession. Queene Mary dispersing that storme, raised another, wherein shee was exposed to the c. lumnies of fairefoule-mou hed fycophants, which would have flamed the reigne of that Queene, otherwise branded, as fort, blondy, unfortunate, with the flaughter of that Royall Virgin : Story and others lav-

ing. That in vame the bought of Herefe were lopped off, if the Root were fuffered to continue. Long and straight imprisonment shee indured, and was forced by them to Massey Confession and externall profession of that Romile Catholicisme, which perhaps had not diverted her enemies deligne, ad ... nor the perge foft of her enemies Gardiner beene averted by his owne death; and had not also King Philip with the Spaniards entited to the French fo rich an Inheritance, as by Queene Mariet death without flue (which could fearly from her ficke and aged body be expected) was likely to fall upon Queene Mary of Scotland betrothed to the Dolphin of France, whereby the Spanish greatnefle already embroyled enough, was likely to bee ouermatched by the French, increated with addition of three mightie Kingdomes. Queene Mary dying, and Cardinall Poole with mamy Prelates, as it were, attending her exequies with their owne, with generall applause Shee was acknowledged Queen. Her first care was to restore Religion, notwithstanding the dangers thence incompating her : fire allo rejected the mariage with King Philip, whereof hee had treated with her by the Earle of Feria his Embaffadour, promiting to procure thereunto the Popes difpenfati- 30 on ; neither admitted fhee the offered match of Charles, fonne to Perdinand the Emperour; and when Henry the French King by the Guifians was perswaded to challenge England to his sonne

and daughter in law, cauling them to vie her title Francis & Mary by the Grate of God King and

Queene of Scotland, England, and Ireland) and prepared Warres against her, God tooke him out

Franch wrongs

O. Elizabeths

prosperitie.

See of Gods

the B. of Chi-

coeffer his Re-

lizious Trac-

giuing. Sec al o Cam-

of the world, being il ine at a Tilt iport. The new King and Queene continued their former challenge, Title and Enfignes, which gaue no small occasions of those endls, which afterwards involved her, breeding a great dreuft becwixt those two greatest Ladies which Christendome had , both Heires to an absolute Sonere entire. Shee expelled the French out of Scotland, flablished the affaires of Ireland, procured armour and weapons cut of Germany, cauled much Artillery to bee cast of Brasse and Iron, new Mynes of 40 Sother kinds, Braffe being found at Kefwicke, and the Itone Calammaria viefuli for Braffe-workes found here alfo : prouition for Gunpowder was first at her commandement made here at home ; Barwicke fortified, the Name furnished, the Sea Townes imitating her example and increasing dayly in Nauall forces, niwered by Martiall Spirits for Land and Sea feruice. Thus did God bleffe her that tate of Thankihad glorified him in establishing his Truth., not withstanding the pouertie of the State at her entrance, deepely indetted by her predeceffours; and the faint friendship or professed enmitte of Rome and all her disciples. This shall it bee done to the Woman God well benour, and more then dens Elizapetha thus: for what was all the time of her reigne but visifitudes of Treasons, Werres, and manifold externall and internall broyles and yet in an admirable working of Divine Grace, when had England folong and flourithing peace at home, or glory and renowme abroad? as if hee which 50 brought light out of darknesse, would permit all such contrary workings to bee the obitet of his goodnesse, the fewell and materialls of ber greatnesse.

her Reigne. Arthur Poste of the boule of George Duke

of Clareres

ous Bull.

Ann.1 569.

Annales of

her mild and mercifull hand. Pope Ping the fift denounceth her excommunicate, discharging her Subiects from loyaltie and alleaseance and arming them against her: Ridolf a Florentine playes the Merchant of Popish wares, the Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland take armes, the Duke of Norfolke's entangled, the French and Spaniard are perswaded by the Pope; who promised also if need were, to ingage to this purpole all the goods of the Sea Apoftolike, Chalices, Croffes, and holy Vestments: 60 Unelleus is commanded to inuade England with an Army from the Low-countries : but God protected ELIZABETH, and her Enemies abroad were difappointed, the Traitors at home falling into their owne pit.

Arthur Poole, the fourth yeere of her reigne abufed the greatneffe of his bloud with other

conspirators, to the Gustan purpoles, but taken and sentenced received not bloudie reward from

About the same time Edmand and Peter, brethten to the Earle of Ormand were bulle in Ire-

land, to inflame which rebellion Mendoza came out of Spaine, but before it brake forth into any great combultion it was extinct,

Don John Of Austria enters next upon the Stage (for I omit Barnes and Musbers, Sir Henry fon of challes Percie, the B. of Ross his attempts, and other Acts and Arts savouring more of the Foxe then Emperour, the Lion) and pretended a peace, whiles hee intended the deliuerance of the Scottift Queene. 1576. and marrying her, to make himi-life King of England and Scotland, by helpe of fugitives and fauour of the Pope and Gissians: and in the midit of his warlike preparations juddenly dieth. When Piw his impious curles had thus proved bleffings, hee deceafeth, and Gregory his fucceffour in the A. 1572. Pin his impious curies had thus proued blettings, nee deceater, and organy in the central for no firm, the great Founder of Seminaties, gaping for no firm, the distribution of the firm that the distribution of the firm the distribution of the firm that the distribution of the distribution of the firm that the distribution of the distri leffe then a Kingdome to his bafe sonne lames Boncompagno, treateth with the Spaniard, who femence ahad (wallowed England alto in his conceit. Thomas Stukley an English fugitive promileth free gainst O. Elif. hand to the Popes bailtard, who in recompence gives him the titles of Marquelle of Lagen, Earle of Study trea on Wexford and Caterlough, Vicount of Moroneh, and Baron of Rofi(all places of note in Ireland) and made him Generall of eighe hundred Italian Souldiers, the King of Spaine paying their wages. But Schastian King of Portugall, which should have conducted the Spanish forces against England, being intangled with an African Expedition, procured Sincley to goe thither with him , where A.1578. both loft their lives. And the Spaniard was now diverted from English delignes to those neerer of Pertugall, there imploying the forces intended against vs.

Doctor Nicolas Sanders playeth the next part , who having written in defence of the Popes 1579.1580. to visible Monarchy Eccleinsticall, and belehed out the fowlett flanders of Queen ELIZABETHS Sanders Auvilible Monarchy Eccleiaticall, and betched out the towiett minders of Queen Elizabeth as there of the parentage that Hell could deutie, would make his writings vilible by his deeds; and with I ames booke De vilib. Fuz Morice an Irifo Traitor, hanne obtained to be the Popes Numio, with a banner confectated Monarch, &of at Rome, and some forces out of Spaine, entreth Ireland, there fortifieth and winneth Defmond to the forced rale his partie. San lofephon to Howeth with feuen hundred Italians and Spaniards , with Armour for Definificate fue thousand. Their Fort is taken, Fire movies first, and after the Earle with many others staine, Anguano in which he abuse Sanders runnes mad, and wandering vp and downe in the Woods and Mountaines dieth milera- feth he queens bly; the Country is pacified and E 1 1 2 A . B T H presenteth. The Seminaries (Schooles of Trea. Mather with fon) were now erected at Rime and Rhemes, to become worfe then that Troian Hoyle; Cells of grole hes, nedesperate Empfartes ; incendaries of their owne Countrey: Campion and others suffer; feditious uerbefore cen Bookes are written against the Queene, whereby Somerail was indigated to kill her.

Mendon the Spanife Embaffadour was commanded to depart our of England, having practifed with Threckmorten and others about an inusion of the Land, and to remove the Queene. A- eves which bout the fame time in manner miraculously, traiterous projects came to light by certaine papers Malice could of one Creighton a Scottish Lefinite, who being taken by Datch Perates tare them and threw them entertain uen of one Greighter a Sectiful Leinite, who being taken by place parates tare them and threw them who the into the Sea; which woodshoot bee according to lefunticall plots, but by the helpe of the winde was most maheought them backe to the Ship ; which being delivered to Sir William Wade were toyned again, heions & moft and rewealed new plots of the Pope, the Spaniard, and Guifians to insude England: Whereupon ferpent fighted an Afforiation was made by many thorow the Kingdome, binding themselves by their hands and 153. scales to profecute all fuch to death as should attempt any thing against the life of the Queene. O Cardinall Amer for the English Catholikes Eccleinsticall, Inglifield for the Laikes, the Bishop of Cardinali Alex for the English Catholikes Eccleraticali, Ingispeta for the Laines, the blinder of Thinkmorton.
Rolle for the Queene of Scotz, were faid to have agreed to deprine the Queene, and to definherite Creighton, pa-

King IAM Es asa fanourer of Hereite, &c. A. 1 88 5. Doctor Parry (whom Queene E L I Z A B ET H had before pardoned his life) being Affo action. heartned by Ragazoniss the Popes Nuntio in France, and absolued in the Popes name by the Car- Paris treason dinall Comenfix, undertooke to kill the Queene, being thereunto incouraged by Allens booke, Allens booke, teaching that excommunicated Princes may bee dispoyled of lines and Scepters. His partner reweales him, and his mischiefe lighted on himselte. Henry Earle of Northumberland (brother of Earle of Northum Thomas before executed at Torke) flew himselfe in the Tower, and the Lord Chancellour three thumberland. dayes after in the Starre Chamber declared that he had beene committed for traiterous denifes a-Jo gainst the Queen and State; the particulars whereof were then opened by the Atturney Popham. feeking to let free the Queene of Scots, to deltroy the Queene and the Religion, to have dealt with Charles Paget (termed Mope) about thefe things, with the inuation of England, &c. The Burker rebellion in Ireland fell out that yeere, and many broyles, which coft three thouland 2 with & Handers their liues at one time, the title Mac-William in Connagh extinguished, and the insolence of the fit sin treland.

tioned tooke their beginning, and the Warres betwixt the two Kingdomes. A. 1586. that prodigious plot of Samage, Balard, Babington, and the rest of that bloudy crue Babington, oc. confpiring to kill the Queene, was detected and the plotters were executed. In 87 the French 60 Embaffadour, a Guifian, conferred with Stafford to kill the Queene, making great promites to that purpole. And he and Moody were further treated with on that point by Trapping his Secretary, French Embas which by Stafford was renealed and prenented. But whiles all pretended the freeing of the Queen fad urs plot of Scots, by this meanes they shortned her dayes and freed her of her life.

Ports, whence the Expeditions of the Earle of Cumberland, and Sir Francis Drake before men-

The flory is knowne, and I shall not need to infift upon these later things, nor on Tyrones Tra- Tyrons it, alons

by the fhateeft

Handers betwixt Scotland and England repressed. The Spaniard arrested the English Ships in his

Le: (3. Lube 3.29.

gicall rebellion, the death of fo many thousands English, Irila, Spanish; nor Lopez his plot to poifore the Queene, &c. I but propound their things to excite English thankfulneffe to God, and hatred to that Whoore, drunken wub bloud, which hath thus enchanted the Kings of the earth; yealike the Legion Deuill hath broken all chaines of allegeance, and hath initiated in hellish mysteries naturall sworne subjects to invasion and mutuall massacres; yea to account it tolerable, lawfull. commendable, meritorious, and in ordine ad deum, necessary (ô times !ô monsters!) to kill and murcher; and hath made it a compendious way to win the Kingdome of Heauen by killing the Kings of the Earth. And if the bloud of fo many Saints from Abel to Zacharias were threatned to fall on Ierusalem, sometimes the holy Citie; what may be faid of Rome : whose Temporall Monarchy first founded in the bloud of Rhemm brother of Romalm, proceeded in exiling their owne Kings, and in exterminating worlds of men out of the world (Cefar alone is faid in fiftie batof murthers & tells to haue slaine * 1192000 men, besides what was slaine in his Civill Warres) in a world of time together; exceeded in the fanctitie of the bloud of fo many thousand Saints and Martyrs in ten difmall persecutions , and yet fell short of the pretended Catholike Rome, that mysticall

Rome, Citie * Plind-7.6.25.

Prefent Rome greatermanflaier & Saint-Ethnike.

Woman drunk en wish bloud.

I dare boldly aver, and by History make it good, (yez * in great part to a judicious observer the former parts of this Worke have shewed) that since the Papall challenge of Monarchy over Monarkes by Gregory the feuenth, the Deuills thousand yeeres of imprisonment being expired, Antichriftian Rome hath by Sword, Fire, Warres, Ciuill and Forraine, and other inhumane. immane. Exertical St. distellish furies procured the shedding of more humans bloud, then ever Heathen Rome in farre 20 4.1.4.3.4.66. longer time had shed to erect their Heathenish Empire, from the dayes of Romalus which founded the Citie, to Angultus which grounded and stablished the Empire, and Tiberius vader whom Christ was crucified : Yea if you adde the perfecutions of the succeeding Emperors till Inlien the Apollata ; yet haue the later Antichristian exceeded in numbers, as much as the executions of Warres are viually beyond all comparison of the Iudiciall and Legall. I adde, that as the Ethnike Romans spilt none (except in persecutions) but Ethnike bloud : so the pretended Christan Romists (except in the Indies and the Holy Land Wars) fled none in this account but Christian. This may feem a prodigal speech & prodigious paradox, to those which know not the millions which perished in the Holy Land Wars, fet & kept on foot about 200 veers together by Papall ambition : fo many hundreths of thousands which perished in the same times, by open warres made by 30 the Popes Crusados against the Albigenses, Waldenses, and what other names it pleased them to giue to better men then themselues, in almost eightie yeeres continued warres : So many Civill Warres in Germany, the fubicets and competitors armed by Crufados against the Emperours till that Eagle was plucked; where one Henry whom Hildebrand first deposed, fought fixtie battells: In England, France, Italy, and other parts, in the daies of King lobn, Fredericke the second, Coursde, Memfred, Phillip, and others : and after that, the long Bobemian broiles drenched in bloud after Hulles fire ; and lately fo innumerable millions (pauperis est numerate) in America and the llands Priefts, agents which these bookes plainly enince to have beene written in bloud by Roman authoritie and pretence ; not to make mention of the Philippinas, the East Indies, the Wars in Sicile and Naples; and the Greeke Empire first weakned, and after by Roman ambition lost : how many bundreth thou- 40 The Pope Ma- fands hath France loft of Christians within these last hundreth yeeres ! how many more have tafler Workman. ken their fatall farewells in the Belgian quarrell ! How doe thole Low-countries and Germany full flow in bloud ! That I fpeake not of our England and Ireland ! But I have the thoughts of those things, and therefore come to the 88, businesse, that also set on worke from Rome, the widest and openeft passage from hell for his ingresse and egresse, that was a Muriberer from the beginning, and in the last ages turning bimfelfe into an Angell of light , hath there established his principall Vicar under pretended titles and leemings of Christ and Christianitie. Yea this is also remarkable that in the treasons against Queene Elizabeth, and in those against our present Souereigne King Iames (whom God long preferue) by Wasson, Clerke, Cobbam, &c. at first, and in the Master and Monfter-peece (which was now ready to breake forth with violence and virulence from Hell, 50 and to blow up all other Treasons) that of the Gun-powder Traiters ; still the busiest part of the Tragedie is committed to some Romish Prieft or Iefuite, who should fit and frame the resolute kil the Queen, diffolutenesse of wild spirits to the execution of it or themselues. The Master Workman (I say He and Brifton not Beelzebub) is the Pope, as appeareth in those before mentioned, and in this of 88. whose Bull & Martin were declaratory against that Worthy of women followeth , as the contents thereof are delivered by Meteranus, to whole labours in this Story wee are principally indeteed. It was to be published in the Popes name by Cardinall Allen after the Nauie had arrived in England, to command the Englif to yeeld their obedience to the Duke of Parma. From the Pope therefore wee will begin our 88 Story, touching the preparation and fuccesse of that Armada fignamed inuincible.

Allen or Alan was by Spanift procurement nall for this

made Cardipurpole; and had written a violent books which heartned Parry to Au hors of the Rhemifb Tranflation and Notes of the

CHAP. XI.

Octanefimus Octanus mirabilis Annus.

The Popes Buil, the King of Spaines preparations, the Duke of Medinas Expedition, the Duke of Parmas Forces, for the invalion of England : divers Sea-fights twixt the English and Spanish Fleets, the Sea flight of the Spanish, and miserable disasters in their returne. Their lies. The Queens Religious Triumph.

Ixtus Quintus, by dinine providence, winnerfall Pastor of the Flock of Christ, to whom by continued and lawfull succession, the administration and charge of the Cathalike Church Papall pretencontinued and Lawjun juccejion, the manniferent and calamities whereinto the famous deprining the Kingdomes of England and Ireland had false, which in times past were commended so Queene. much for Verines, Religion, and Christian Piette and Obedience, and now by the impious and whiast Empire of Elizibeth presended Queene, and a few adbering to ber, not potent Zeale.

onely to have come to a disolate estate and dangerous to it selfe, but also as infected and venemens mem- Spanish arguonely to have come to a difform e grate and dangerous to u jetse, was up a so minested and bearing there the due rebers are wont to cause insection and disease to the whole body of Christians; and wanting there the due requite good medies which elfwhere by help of Christian Princes he vseth, to prenent abuses & tomaintaine Ecclessasts with eaill. call discoptine: Forasmuch as Henry the Eight, late King of England, a Rebell and forsaker af the Sea a Ad. 24.14. 10 Apostolite separated himselfe and bis from the communion of Christians by force and Elizabeth the pre- By the way Apopoure, separate unmore that without great commotion and danger of the Neighbour Regions, which they call four Vierces persevered therem, not without great commotion and danger of the Neighbour Regions, becefic, lowerlener jurger persenered there is, no that there is no hope that those Kingdomes may at any time frip wee the be reformed and reduced to the exercise of Christian Religion, true peace and quietnesse, except shee be de- God of our faprined of the administration of the Kingdome.

Therefore our most holy Father descring (as his Office requireth) to provide for this earll, with pre- uing all things Therefore our most hoty tather desiring (as his Office requires) to promise for two cash, which written in the fent and strong remedies inspreed to him from God, to the bealth of the viniters all Church, incited as well Law, &c. by his owne, as his predecessors affection and zeale, alway borne toward England; and moned by the con- b They make tinual folicitation, vehement and importunate exhortation of very many, and those principal men of the the schime or faid Nation; bee bath vied great diligence with divers Princes, and especially with the Mightie and Ca-tent, which faid Nation; bee bath view great diligence with diner; Princes, and especially min to e surgine and Sea, visinity ex-tholike King of Spaine, imploring bis aide hereunts, by the restrence which hee beareth the Roman Sea, communicate by the old friendling and confanguinitie which his Family bath bad with the Kings of England, by his fin- & cutofffrom gular charitie and benenolence formerly shewed to the Catholines of that Country; for obtaining by that the body of meanes bis desire of peace and quietnesse in his Neighbour Praninces for his studie and readinesses towards Christ, as 10.4. the propagation of Catholike Religion, and lastly for the furtherance of the common good of Europe; Sinte illes, cobut be fought birn to confer all the Forces which God admichtic hash ginen him bereunto, that that Wo. if antipain pejougns vim se venjer and the control men and burifull to mankind, which adhere to latryme. her may be punified, and that Kingdome may bee reduced to certaine reformation and quietnesse, from d Withlie and which great good and many commodities to the Common-wealth might be to be expected. Wherefore that all there reice bee rought make knowne to all the world the Instice of this Cause, and the Subsetts also of that Kingdome ted the title of Dee migos mare comme to an one worth one antier of the or many to make a mount of the many to the might fully be fartified, like mife that he might denounce the inft indgement of God against her 3 t bath to awaid from mayor joing to joing the joing the property of the Declaratory Sentence made against this Woman, to she the cause appearance of alfo why be had fo proceeded against her.

Fift, because see is an Heretike a and Schismatike b and therefore excommunicated of two Poper, declared her bis predecessors, contumacions, disobedient to God and the supreme . Sea : Also shee tooke to her selfe with presumptions vourpation supreme Authoritie and Ecclesiatical surisdiction over the Soules & of with prefumptions of arpation supreme Authorstie and Ecclesiatical surificition ouer the Soules of power over all Men, against Nature, Reason, against all Lawes Dinine and Humane; and these well by versue of her subjects, to the fentences vinen by Clement she Seventh, and Paul the Third, as of the publike declaration of King command the Henry ber Father. Thirdly, becamfe shee vsurped the Kingdome against all right, not onely in regard of to do their dutienry per trainer. I un as secume processing the old Contracts in times past made between the Sea Apotherics, their offices, folike and the Kingdome of England in the time of Henry the Second, when the faid Kingdome recon- exclusing forciled it felfe to the Roman Sea, for the murther of Saint Thomas of Canturbury. At which time it rain juridities was agreed c, that none should bee taken for lawfull King of England without consent of the Great Bi- on: as David, was agreed to that none should be e taken for savines ung of England unions votient of the belong Sal moncou-floot; which convention or contract was after renewed by King John, and confirmed by Oath. Which thing Santine, & her was most profitable, and so established by the request of the Nobilitie and People. For many and grieuous insures & extersions, and other wrongs perpetrated by her and by others, had done ex-

through her permission, against the distressed innocent Subjects of both Kingdomes.

 O impudency-What King of Expland ever fought the Popes confirmation: King Pops by Papall Arts made himfelie tributary, but 60 without and against his subjects concentras Ma-Paris & R.W. endurer then hising restlifie at largest at writing being burnt and disclaimed the hibisely also revelling against the Author thereof. I Quinteram telemon reception: Shee wronged them much infouring her throat from their blades. 2 Vanaturall Prince, which not centent with inheritance, would have made conquett of the Protinces, fo to fix allow all their printledges, and fubicit them to formate inquisition and rulet to baving with roc, millions of treasure and the bues of 400000 Christians, the loss of those which would have bought and fought to be his subjects, if new would have kept the oathes which the Pope dispensed with, twice made to them; and ruled as his predecessors had done.

Tttttt

For seditions and rebellions between the Inhabitants of neighbour Prominces, raised against their lawful et ouerPriedts, Magistrate and & natural Prince, by which shee seduced innumerable Scules and many potent Regions.

CHAP.

thus roared.

The Spanised

entertained

not admit

ne bis Ance-

diffurber of

peace? And

tes ?

were not fo han iled as

where those

orbetwife re-

them that (ay

they are App.

them liers.

uer at their

0 40.2.2.

lated.

they had

For entertainment housen to Fugitine Heretikes, and Rebells, wicked and publike malefactors, and h The Pope undertaking their protection, to the great loffe and detriment of Christian Regions, confeifeth hee Alfo for fending to and procuring the Tutke, that our mightie and cruell Enemy, to innade Chris gric enter-

tainment to Stendome and disturbe & the fetled Peace. the Oucenes

name and disturve - the section of the Saints of God, for boly ** B.B. ill handled, poyled, im-Fire times, and profoned, and divers torments and miserable tortures and slaughters done to the members of the holy and for their falces

Caronice towards and united imprisonment and crueltie, lately exercised against the most gracious

Princesse, Mary Queene of Scotland, which had stedento England, having first a received promise of

her Funitiues. fecuritie, presection, and aide. and the might

For abolibing the true Catholike Religion 0, the profanation of holy Sacraments, also of Monaste, 19 those whom he ries P. Temples. Persons consecrated to the memory of Saints, and all other things which make or may help would not juf- to eternall life.

fer to obey him And concerning Secular affaires 9 and the State politike, for that the ancient Nobilitie being rejected and excluded, hee bath promoted obscure and unworthy men to Civill and Ecclesiasticall dignities: Care had done i A mighty & and by this meanes hash made a fale of Lawes and Rights; and lastly for the absolute tyranny t which thre viurpeth and continually exerciseth, to the great contempt of God, oppression of the miserable & People cruell torgery of his Holiness the loffe of Soules, and destruction of Countries.

k. Who is here. Wherefore seeing those offences are of that nature and moment, that some make ber uncapable of the Wherefore jeeing those offences we way to me will be be the power of Almightie God, and of Apothe inuader & Rolicall authoritie committed to him, doth renew the sentence of his predecessors, Pius the Fifth, and Grego. whereto tends ty t the Thirteenth, whereby the faid Elizabeth is excommunicated and deprined of her Kingdome, And all this but to now by the se present Letters, the same Elizabeth againe excommunicateth and deprine the of all Rorall disanuil peace? Dignitie, Titles, Rights and pretences to the field Kingdomes of England and Iteland; declaring her ille-Gracehor deile- gitimate, and a true Usurper of the Kingdomes; and absoluing the Subjects of that Land, and all oditione auerenibers from all dutie " of Dominion , Fidelitie and Obedience , and from the Oath a ginen to be or to any of ber substitutes.

m Boner.&c. Further, expresty commanding under paine of the anger I of God Almightie, that name of what some was ill handled condition or degree, after bee shall baue notice bereof; doe presume to yeeld ber any obedience, favour, or because they ande what souner but that all man impley all their power and indenous, that due punishment man be taken of her ; that shee at length, which hath separated her selfe by many wayes from God and his Church, see 30 ber felfe for faken and destitute of all worldly refuse, may be brought to acknowledge her fault, and to handled Cran-Subject ber selfe to the indeement of the most High, with all submission. mer Ridley, 8:c.

And therefore commands all and every the Inhabitants of the faid Kingdomes , and all others . that n See M.Camdens History, a with all their power they execute the premisfes, withdrawing all belpe publike and primate from the faid perfon and ber adherents : and that as foone as they shall be hereof certified, they worne themselves to the Ca-A.1568. + feg. tholike Armie, led by the Illustrious and victorious Prince Alexander Farnelius, Dake of Parma, and occurrents are Deputie of the Catholike King , with all the forces they can gather, that they may affilt the faid deprination and punishment of the parties afore faid, and the restitution of the holy Catholike Religion, declaring that all which hall from themselves disobedient 2 to this Mandate, shall not escape deserved Thou haft tried punismistati.

Be it knowne further to all men, that it is not the purpose of his Holinesse, the Catholike King, or the faid Dukes Highnesse, in this Expedition, to oppresse the faid Kingdomes, or thereof to make conquest files and are not or to alter the Lawes, Priviledges or Customes thereof, or to deprine any man there, of his libertie or life and haft found (except the rebellious and contumacious) or to bring any change a, besides that which shall be judged sit p How much by common voyces of his Holinesse, the Catholike Maiesty and the States of that Kingdome, to the restoring and continuing of the Catholike Religion, and the punishment of that Usurper and ber adherents: in demolithing Certifying and securing all, that all controversies which may happen by the deprination of that Woman the mean is of (whether they shall arise about prinate mens affaires, or about the Royall Succession, or betwint the Clergy fuperstition. and Lair, or what somer other discords) they hall be all compounded and decided according to the Lames, 50 how holy foc-Initice, and Christian equitie, without any miury or damage. Neither shall it onely bee provided conses niently that the Catholikes which have suffered so many enills be not so oyled, but favour is also granted to first institutió? So the braien all others, which being pension [hall submit themselves wato the Chiefe Commander of the Army. And

uine type of Christ crucified was demolished, &c. q vis dicamquid filmagnus esardelis. Pitie the promoted not Cardinal Allen or Father Parfine, the one to Lambeth, the other to Tib I flould fay the Broad Scale. r What a faire deliverance from this tytanny fhould we have had by the Spanish Whips and Knives? f We had indeed bin miserable, had we false into the hands of such Phyficians. t The holineife of three Popes curfe her, and the holy and bleffed Trinitie bleffe her.u Dutie and faith acknowledged and yet denied! Is not this babbling? x But God will not hold him guiltlesse that taketh his name in vaine. y Yet this is the first commandement of promife; fo contrary are Gods bleffing and the Popes curfing Eph. 6.2. z. A false Prophet! for neither did England ener profeer more, or feare the Pope or Spaniard leffe, or formuch lone or honour Her or any of her progenitors, as Her Maietly after this: fuch a bleffed harueft God raifed out of this Curfers curfed feed. a The Duke of Medica Generall of this Fleet was of an- 60 other mind, who being told of Catholikes in England which would take his part, &c. answered, That he must make way how for use for his Mafter. And were not Count Egmond and Count Horne and others, Papifts, which D' Alua executed ? There were 700. Eng-Elb Fugitiues in Parm is Army for this invalion, Qui omnium delpicatiflime habiti, the baggage of the Armies eftimate; nor was to spectiquem to Stant and Westmerland, Traitors of note, Sed pro impietate in Patriam omni adicu probibili co tanquam pessima austicia merito non line detellatione reielli, faith Camden. They were excluded all Councells of Warre; for men vie to love the Treason and hate the Traytor.

whereas he due information made, wee are given to understand that there are many innocents, which through ignorance of Christian Faith haming falne , bane huberto erred onely of ignorance, being nenertheleffe reskoned amongst Heretikes : wee purpose not at all to punis such persons , but to inquire patiently, till by conference of learned men, and good found counfells, they may be better instructed touching the truth and not few themselves obstinate, but desirous to prevent the effusion of Christian blond, and definition of Countries which may be expetted by the relistance of some wicked principall adversaries.

Therefore by these Presents wee declare, that it is not onely lawfull for all, as well publike as prinate Mouth these per fors, be fides the fe which have undertaken this Expedition, to lay hand on the faid Murper, and other industrial ber adjerents, to take them and deliver them to the Catholike fide; but alfothis deed hall bee efteemed of went to the 10 vs for a faithfull and singular service, and shall be recompensed with very great rewards, according to the chiete Prichts: gualitie of the persons taken ar betrajed. All others also which heretofore bave given and o, or shall rich price proper bereafter affit to the punishment of the enill, and the restitution of Catholike Religion in those King- the Traitor & domes Shall receive their reward and recompence, increased by vs in Dignities and Honours, as their good courraits for and faithfull fernice to the Common-wealth fhall defire, by berein as much as may be care thall be had that more then ac. and faithfull fermice to the Common-weatty jout agrees or versus as many sources, journal of the pices, before reckning and respect be bolden of the antient and honourable Honfes and Stockes of the faid Ringdomes. he be tollisticated Laitly, free accesse and safe conduct by these Presents is granted to all men, which will some themselves to without the with the Catholike Armie, and will bring thereto provision, furniture of warre, and other necessaries, full and y weight mere liberall (atisfaction is propuled for all things, which for the fernice and commoditie of the faid Armie sevil Pich. Shall be supplied by them, And all are adminished and plainly commanded, that they doe their vimoss in wetchill, comand densur and diligence, that by their meanes caufe may bee removed of offing force in punching those which Romits. Shall neolect this Precept.

Furthermore the 'Holy Father, in his fatherly lowe and singular affection to this Expedition, out of the 'Holy Fa! Spiritual Treasure of the holy (burch which is committed to bis custody and differ (ation) doth libe the cl rally grant plenary Indulgences and remission of Sins, to all those which shall bring any aid or factour to the * Pro thesauro deprination and punishing of the faid persons, and the reformation of both Kingdomes: to wit, after due pe-carbones.

The Pope nance. Contrition and Confession had according to the Lawes of God and Men, and the received custome graves this liamongst Christians.

is all-ly.

NOw that all might becarried more closely, and that this Expedition might feeme made a-go gainft the Low-countries, rather then the English, a folemme meeting was appointed first neer Offend, after at Bronchburg in Flanders for a treaty of peace with the Queene of England. Henry Earle of Derby, the Lord Cobbam, Sir lames Croft, D. Dale ; D. Rogers were fent. Richardet plainly faid that he knew not what might be put in practife in the meane time against England. But the Prince and he being demanded if their were any enterprise of intrading England, they veterly denied any thoughts the rot. Count Aremberg, Campignie, Rebardot, Maes & Garnier were the Princes Delegares, and professed that they had fufficient Commission for treaty of peace. First a truce was propounded by the English and by them cemed. Then the English required that the ancient leagues betwixt the Kingsot England and the House of Burgundy might be renewed and confirmed, that the Low-countrimen might mior their priviledges and libertie of conference, that Spamiards and forraine forces might be removed, that neither they nor their neighbours should have cause to feare; and then the Queene would redeliner her foure Cautionary Townes. They whiled them with fuch answere as futed to their purpoles, and long adoe was made in weating and vnweating Penelopes web, till the Spanish Armada was upon the Coast, and the very Ordnance proclaimed in their eares a jurceafe from further illusions. Then did Parma dismisse them, pulled off his Vitor, vncafing the Fox, and ruly appearing in the Lions skin. But let vs now come to take view of this Fleet, and the preparations made for it.

The King of Spaine having with small fruit, about twenty yeeres together waged warre against the Netherlands, after deliberation with his Counfellours thereabout, thought it most convenient to affaul them once again by Sea, which had bin attempted fundry times heretofore; but not with for forces sufficient. Vinto the which expedition it flood him now in hand to ioine great puissance, as having the English people his protested enemies, whose Iland is so fituate, that it may either greatly helpe or hinder all fuch as fails into those parts. For which cause he thought good first of all to inuade England, being perswaded by his Secretary Esconedo, and by diners other well experienced Spaniards and Dutchmen, and by many English firgitives, that the conquest of that Iland was leffe difficult, then the conquest of Holland and Zealand. Moreover the Spannards were of opinion, that it would be farre more behoovefull for their King to conquer England and the Low countries all at once, then to bee constrained continually to maintaine a warlike Navie to defend his East and West Indie Fleets, from the English Drake, and from such like valiant enemies.

And for the same purpose the King Catholike, had given commandement long before in Italy & 60 Spaine, that a great quantitie of timber should be felled for the building of Ships; and had belides made great preparation of things and furniture requilite for fuch an expedition as namely in founding of braten Ordinance, in storing up of corn and victuals, in training of men to vie warlike weapons, in leaving and multering of Souldiers: infomuch that about the beginning of the yeer 1,88. he had finished such a mightie Nauie, & brought it into Lisbon Hauen, as neuer the like had before Ttttttt 2 that time failed upon the Ocean Sea.

berally which

Avery large and particular description of this Nauie was put in print and published by the Spaniards, the translated copy whereof, in perp-tuam rei memoriam, to incite English thankfulneffe. I have here interted, but abridged.

The Spanish Ships, men, and provisions to invade England, 1588. LIB. X.

Squadron of the Galeons of Portugall.

He Galeon S. Martin, Captain Generall of the Armie, of 1000 tuns, carrieth 177 . Mariners. 2.0. Souldiers, cholen men, 50. Peeces of Canon, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Cord, and all that

The Galeon S. John, Admirall Generall, of 1050 tuns, carrieth 170. Mariners, 231. Souldiers, 50. Perces of Canons, and Bullets, Powder, Lead, Cords, and that which is necessary.

The Galeon of S. Markers of 792. tuns, and carrieth 292. Souldiers, 117. Mariners, and Powder. Bullets, Lead, Match, as much as is needfull. The Gal-on S. Philip, of Soo. tuns, hath 415. Souldiers, 117. Mariners, 40. Peeces of Artillery,

and Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all that is needfull.

The Galeon S. Lewes 830. tuns, bath 376. men of Warre, and 116; Mariners, 40. Peeces of Ordnance, and Bullets, March, Powder, and other things as much as is needfull.

The Galeon of S. Mathew 750. tuns, 177.men of Warre, 50. Mariners, 40. great Peeces, and Powder, Bullets, Lead, Niatch, and all other things as much as is needfull.

The Galcon S. lames 520, tunnes, 300. Souldiers, 100. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, and Bullets, Powder, Lead, March, and all that which is needfull. The Gileon of Florence, of 961. tuns, 300. Souldiers, 100. Mariners, 52. Peeces of Ordnance,

and Builets, Powder, Lead, March, and all the reft as much as is needfull.

The Galeon S. Christopher, 352. tuns, 200 men of Warre, 90 Mariners, 20 great Peeces Bullets, Lead, Powder, Match, and all that which they need.

The Galeon S. Bernard, 352. tuns, bath 280. Souldiers, 100. Mariners, 30. Canons and Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and other necessary things as much as they need. The Zabra Augusta, of 166. tuns, carrieth 55. Souldiers, 55. Mariners, 13. great Peeces, Bullets,

Powder, Lead, March, and other necessary things as much as they need. The Zabra Inlia, of 166.tuns, 60, Souldiers, 50: Mariners, with Ordnance, Bullets, Powder, and

There is in this Squadron, 12. Vessells, 10.of them Galcons, and two Zabres, which are of 7737. turn & 30 there are imbarted ushem 3330. Souldiers footmen, & 1230 mariners, which are in sum a624 men, & they carry 3,50. Freat Perces and all that which is necessary to the rest, as bullets, powder, march lead & c.

The Armie of He Ship S. Angell, the Captaine is of 768, tuns, and hath 323, men of War, 114, Mariners, 30. 1 Canons, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all that which is needfull. The Gangrin, Admiroll nerall lan Mar. of 1160, tuns, currieth 300, Souldiers, 100, Mariners, 36, great Peeces of Canons, Bullets, Powder, uns of Ricalds. Match Lead, and all that which is needfull. The Veffell of S. lames, 660. tuns, hath 250. Souldiers, 102. Mariners, 20. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and other necessary prouisions. The Conception of Zubelzu, 468, tuns, hath 100 men of War, and 70 Mariners, 20, great Canons, and 40 Bullets, Powder, Lead, March, and all other necessary things. The Conception de Ivanes del Cano, 418. tuns, hath 164. men of Warre, 70. Mariners, 24. great Peeces, and Bullets, Powder, Lead, March, and all, that which they need. The Magdalone of John Frauncis of Ajala, 330 tuns, carricth 200. Souldiers, 70. Mariners, 22. great Peeces, and Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and that which is necessary to the rest. The Sup S. John, 350. tuns, bath \$30. men of Warre, and 80. Mariners, and 24. great Preces, Ballets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all that which they need for the rest. The Mary of 16c. tuns, carrieth 180. Souldiers, and 100, Mariners, 24. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and other necessary things. The Manuela of \$20. tuns, hath 130. Southiers, 54 Mariners, 16. great Pecces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match and the rest of their fraught. The Ship of S. Mary of Monte-maier, of 707. tuns, 220. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, Bullets, 50 Powder, Lead, and Match, and other proutions. The Pinnace, called the Marie of Aguiare, of 70. tuns, hath 20. men of War, 23. Mariners, 10. Peeces, of Canon, Powder, Bullets, Lead, Match, and other necessary things. The Pinnace, called Ifabella, of tuns, bath 30. Souldiers, 23. Mariners, 12, Canons, Bullets, and other necessary things. The Pinnace of Michel Susa, of 96. curs, 30. Souldiers, 24. Mariners, 12. great Poeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all other necessary things. The Pinnace of S. Steuen, of 78. tuns, hath 30. men of Warre, 26. Mariners, 12. Peeces of Canon, Bullers, Powder, Lead, Match, and all other necessary things of prousson.

There is in this Squadron, 14. Ships, ten of them great, and foure Pinnaces, which are of 6567, tuns The Armie of of burden, in, which Ships bee imbarked 2027. Souldiers, 868. Mariners, which make in all 2802. and the Gallyes of 260. gras Pecces of Canon, 119000. Bullets, 467. Quintals of Powder, 140. of Lend, 89. of Match. 60

THe Gileon S. Chriftopher, Captaine of 70. tuns, hath 205 men of Waire, and 120, Mariners, and 49, great Perces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all that which is necessary to the reit. The Galeon S. John Bapirt, of 750. tuns hach 250. Soulders, 140 Meaners, 20 great Perces, &

bullets, Powder, lead, Mitch, & other necessary things. The Galeon S. Peter, of e20, tuns, 120, men of Warre, 140. Mariners, and 40 great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, March, Lead, and all the reit needfull. The Galcon S. lebr, of e 30, tuns, 170. Soul liers, 120. Mariners, and 30. great Peeces, Powder. Bullets, Lead, Mitch, and all the reit. The Galcon S. lames the great, of 530. tuns, 230. Souldiers, 122. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all the reft. The Galeon S. Philip, and S. Lamer, of \$30. tuns, 159. Souldiers, and 216. Mariners, 20. great Peeces. Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and all that is necellary. The Galeon of the Afertien, of \$20. tuns, 220. Souldiers. 114, Mariners, and 20, great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and all other necessary things. The Galeon of our Lady del Barris, of 130, tuns, 170, Souldiers, 108. Mariners, and 30. to Canons, Bullets, Powder, Lead, and all other necessary furnitures. The Galeon of S. Medel and Celedon, of 530, tuns, 170, Souldiers, 120, Mariners, 30, grent Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and all the reit. Gilcon S. Anne of the Port, of 250 tuns, 100 men of Warre, and 80. Mariners, 24. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, March, Lead, and all the reft. The Ship of our Lord of Vigoma, 750. tuns, 100 men of Warre, and 130 Mariners, 30 great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and all the reit. The Veffell of the Trintee, of 780, tuns, 200. Souldiers, 122. Mariners, 20. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Match, Lead, and all the reft. The Ship of S. Katherine, of 862, tuns, 200, men of Warr, 160, Mariners, 20, great Peeces, and Powder, Bullets, March, Lead, and all the reft. The Ship of S. lobn Baptist, of 652. tuns, 200. Souldiers, 20. Mariners, 20. Canons, Bullets Powder, March, Lead, and all the reft. The Pinnace of our Lord Refary, 30. Souldiers, 25. Mariners, 24. great Pes-20 ces, Powder, Bullets, Lead, Match, and the rest of their prouision.

There are in this Squadron, fourteene Galcons and Ships, and two Pinnaces, which beare 8714. tuns. In thefe Veffells there are imbarked 2458. Souldiers, 1719. Mariners, which are in all, 4177, and 248. great Pecces, Bullets, Powder, Land, March, and all that which they need.

"He Captaine Ship of 1550 suns carrieth 204 men of War, 118 Mariners, 50. Canons, Pow- The Armie of The Captaine Ship of 1950 suns, carrieth 304 men War, 10 manutary of the Ship of der, Bullets, and the reft of their prouision. The Ship S. Francis, the Admiral of 919, tuns, 230. the Ships of der, Bullets, and the reft of their prouision. The Ship S. Andele 3100 Souldiers, 60. Mariners, 30. Canons, Powder, Bullets, and the rest of their provision. The Galeon S. Andele see, of John Baptift, of \$10, tuns 250. Souldiers, and 40. Mariners, 40, great Peeces, Powder, Bullets, March, Cap. Den Pe-Lead, and thereft. The Ship S. lobs Gargaran, of 569. tuns, 170. men of War, 60. Mariners, 20. great drede Valdes. 30 Pecces, Powder, Bullets, March, Lead, and the reft. The Conception of \$62. tuns, 200 men of War, This Peins de 65. Mariners, 25. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, March, Lead, and all the reft. The Holke Duque-Valdet was ta-(4,S. Asne of 900, tuns, 250, men of War, and So. Mariners, 30, great Peeces, Powder, Bullets, ken, and prilo-March, Lead, and all the rest. The Trimite, 650. tuns, 200. men of Warre, 80. Mariners, 20. Canons.

War, So. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all the reft. The Pinnace of the Holy Ghoft ,40.men of War, 33. Mariners, 10. Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match and Cord. and all that which they need, There are in this Squadron 11. Ships, 10. great, and a Pinnace, of the burden of \$762. sums, in which are imbarked 2400. Souldiers, 800. Mariners, and 260, great Peeces.

Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and the reit. The Ship S. Mary de Innew, of 730, tuns, 240. men of

"He Ship of S. Anne, the Captaine, of 200 cans of burden, hath 300 men of Warre, 60. M2- The Armie of riners, co. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, and all the reft. The Ship of our Lord of the Ships come Rofe, Admirall of 945 tuns, 230. Souldiers, 64. Mariners, and 30. great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, from the Pro-Lead, Match, and all the reft. The Ship S. Sanier, of 958. tuns, 330. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 30. uince of Gi-Canons, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and the reft: The Ship of S. Stenen, of 936, tuns, 200, men which is Grand the reft in Ship of S. Stenen, of 936, tuns, 200, men which is Grand the reft in Ship of S. Stenen, of 936, tuns, 200, men which is Grand the reft in Ship of S. Stenen, of 936, tuns, 200, men which is Grand the reft in Ship of S. Stenen, of 936, tuns, 200, men which is Grand the reft in Ship of Stenen, of 936, tuns, 200, men which is Grand the reft in Ship of Ship of Stenen, of 936, tuns, 200, men which is Grand the reft in Ship of S of Warre, 70, Mariners, 20, great Peeces, Bullets, Powder, Lead, Match, and all the reft. The Ship nerall Michell of S. Marthe of \$48. tuns, 180. men of Warre, 70. Mariners, 25. great Peeces, bullets, powder, and de Oquendo. the reft. The ship. S. Barbe of 525. tuns, 160. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 15. Canons, bullets, powder, lead, match, and all the reft. The ship of S. Bonanenture, of 369. tuns, 170. Souldiers, 60. Mariners, 50 15 great Pecces, bullets, powder, lead, and the rest. The Mary of 291. tuns, 120. Souldress, 40. Mariners, 15. great Peeces, bullets. powder, lead, and the reft. The S. Croix 680. tuns, 150. Sculdiers 40. Mariners, 20. great Peeces, bullets, powder, match, lead, and the reft. The Holke Doucella, 500. tuns, 160.men of War, 40. Mariners, 13. great Peeces, powder, bullets, match, lead and all the rests The Patax of the Annunciation of 60. tuns, 30. men of War, 16. Mariners, 12. great Peeces, builets,

The Patax of our Lady of Guadalouse is of the fame burden alfo. The Pinnace of Magdelene, is also the same burden. There are in this Squadron, 14. Ships, ten great Ships, two Pataches, and two Pinnaces, of 6991. tuns of barden. In which Dessels, there are imbarked 2092. men of Warre, and 670. Mariners, all com-60 meth 2708.

powder, match, lead, and all the reft. The Patax S. Bernabe, is the same burden as the aforenamed.

THE Regasona, the Captaine, which is of 1294. tuns, hath 350. Souldiers, 90. Mariners, 35. which is chief I great Peeces, powder, bullets, lead, match, and all the reft: The Lama, the Admirall, of 728. Martin de Vatuns, 210. Souldiers, 80. Mariners, 30. great Peeces, powder, bullets, lead, match, and all the reit. tendana. Tittttt 2

1800

Castille , of the which is Generall, Iaques Flores de Valdes.

In which Squadron there are ten Ships which are of 1705 tune of burthen, and there are imbarked to in them 1880 Souldiers, 8071 Mariners, 310: great Paches, with the rest of that ther hand

Halber in the which is Cap. Iohn Lorez of Medina.

He great Grifon, the Captaine, of 6 to. tuns, 250. Souldiers. 60. Mariners, 40. great Peeces; and
the relt, The S. Jauer the Admirall of 650. tuns, 230. Souldiers; 60. Mariners, 30. great Peeces and the rest of their provision. The Sea Dog, of 200 mins, 80. Souldiers, 20 Mariners, 10. sreat Peeces, and the rest. The White Faulton the great of 500 tons, 160. men of Warre 40 Mariners. TR orest Peeces, and all the reft. The Blacke Caftle of 750.tuns, 250. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 25. great Peeces and all the tells. The Barke of Ambing of 600 tuns, 250, men of War. 50 Mariners. 25. Canons, and the reft. The House of peace the great, of the same buthen. The S. Peter the great of the same burthen also. The Sampon, and Peter the Small, doe beare the same. The Barke of Au. 20 24000.01 450 tuns, 210. Souldiers, 50. Mariners, 26. great Peeces, and the reft of their provision. The Falcon, the meane White, of 300 tuns; 80 men of War, 30 Mariners, 18, great Peeces, and all the reft. The S. Andrew of 400 tuns, 160 Souldiers 40 Marmers, 1 c. great Perces, and thereft of their promition. The Little bonfe of peace, of 350. tuns, 160. Souldiers, 40. Mariners, 15. great Peeces, and the reft of their prouition. The Flying Ranen of 400. tuns, 210 Souldiers 40, Mariners, 18. great Peeces, and the relief their furniture. and the state of t

Patagnes and Zahtes wherein

He Wong Done; of 2x0. tuns, 60. Souldiers, 20. Mariners, 12. great Peeces, and the reft. The Adventure, S. Barbe tranghted of the fame. The S. James 600. tuns, 60. Souldiers, 40. Mari-Don Astray of ners, 19 great Peeces, and all the reit. S. Gabriel of the Port, of 280 times, 50. Souldiers, 25. Mariners, 9: great Peeces, and the rest of their furniture. The Efay is fraughted of the same. There are in this Squadron 23. Hulkes, which are of 10271. tuns, in the which are imbarked 2221.

men of Warre, 708. Matiners, 410. great perces, and then necessary provision.

The Captame of our Lord of Puer of Zaragoffe of 300 tunnes, 120 Souldiers, 50 Mariners, 12. great Peeces, and their furniture. The English Charity, of 180. tuns, 80. Souldiers, 36. Mariners, 12. great Peeces, and the redt. The Scottifb S. Andrew of 150 tuns, 51. Souldiers, 20. Mariners, 12 great Peeces, and their furniture. The Patache of the Crucifix, 150. tuns, 50. Souldiers, 20. Mariners, 8. great Peeces; and their furniture. Our Lord of the Hanen fraught alike. The Conception of Caraffa. and our Lord of Begons, and the Conception de Capitillo, and S. Hiorofibeing of the butthen of 60. or 70. runs, 50. Souldiers, 30. Mariners, 8. great Peeces, a Peece, and their furniture. Our Lady of grace, 40 the Conception of France's Lastero, our Lady of Guadalupe, S. France's, the Hoty Spirit, our Lady of Frenefda, all traughted alike. The Zabra of the Trinitie, the Zabra of our Lady Caffre, S. Andrew, the Conception of Zomartiba, S. Clere, S. lobn of Caraffa, and the Affamption, all fraughted slike.

There are in this Squadron 22. Pataches and Zabres, which are of the burthen of 1121:tuns, in the which there are imbarked 479. Souldiers, 574. Mariners, and there is 193. ereat Proces, and all their furniture.

The foure Ga-

ples, which are

giué in charge

to Dom V to

He Galeace the Captaine called S. Laurence, hath 270. Souldiers, 130. Mariners, 300. Slaves, 1 50. Peeces of Canon, and their furniture. The Galeace Patrone, 180. Souldiers, 112. Mariners, 200. Slaues, 50. great Peeces, and their furniture. The Galeace Grone, 170. Souldien, 120. Marie 50 ners, 200. Slaues, 50. great Peeces. The Galeace Neapolitaine 124. Souldiers, 115. Mariners, 300. Siaues, 50. great Perces, and the reft of their necessary traught.

There are in these foure Gulences 873. Souldiers, 468. Mariners ; 200. creat Peeces, 1200.

Slaves, and the rest of their furniture. The Gally Captaine, 110. Souldiers, 106, Mariners, 306. Slaves, and fiftie creat Peeces, and other pecessaries. The Gally Princesse, the Gally Diana, the Gally Vicana, are the like. In the about named Galeaces, there are 1 200. Slaves, and in the foure pallies. 888, which is in all 2088.

Morcouer, they carry pender for their need, if it be offered to doe Auter, 600. Quintals. -So that there are in the face Army 130. Ships of 5 7868, twns, 1929 ; Souldiers and 8450. Mariners, 2088. Slaves, and 2630. great Peeces of Braffe of all fores, among which there are Colcurnes, and de 60

my Coleurmes, and Canons to the Stone, and other necessaries for their franches. In the Booke follow the names of the Aduenturers, also of fuch as in the Army were entertain ned for pay; suchalio as were imbarked for the service of the Canon, for the Hospitall, the Regiments, and Companies in pay, the Officers, &cc. which for bremitic I omit.

The Galeons were fixtue foure in number, being of an huge bignesse, and verie startly built be- A description ing of margeilous forceallo, and folish, that they resembled great Callies, mon fie de defend or the Calcons themfelues and to withfland any affault, but in guing any other Ships the encounter farre inferiour voto the English and Datch Ships, which can with great dexteritie weild & turne themfelues at all affires. The uppersworke of the laid Galeons was of thicknesse and direct highicient to heare off Musker-thora The lower works and the simbers thereof were out of meaning frong being framed for plankes and arbs foure or the foot on thickness, informed, that no bullets could pierce them, but fuch as were discharged hard at hand a which afterward proued true, for a great number of bullets were found to fticke fall within the maffer fubitance of those thicke plankes. Great and well pitched Cables were twined about the hrafts of their Ships, to strengthen them

Sixtie foure Galleons. Brafen Ordnance, Chiefe Manfhall.

against the battery of shot. The Gailiasses were of such bignesse, that they contained within them Chambers, Chappels, Adescription Tunets, Polpies, and other commodities of great houles. The Callestes were rowed with great Oarrs, there being in each of them you, fines for the fame surpoid; and wereable to the extent leruice within he force of cheir Ordnance: All there together with their saidut aforemanted were furnished and beautified with Trumpets, Streamers, Banners, warlike Ensignes, and comer fach

like ornaments. Their Preces of Braten Ordnance were 1600 and of from 1000. The Bullets thereto belonging nanca builtis. were 120.thouland. Irem of Gunpowder 1600 quintale Of Match 1200 quintale Of Muskets Gunpowder, to and Kaloiners 7000. Of Halberts and Partifans roobo. Moreover, they had great flore of Camons, and other turdouble Canons, Culverings and field-pieces for land feruice.

Likeweile they were provided of all instruments needstary on Land to consider and transport. This provide their furniture from place to place; as namely of Carbs; Wheeles, Wagons; &c. Alto they had, on of victuals Spades, Mastocks and Biskets so fer pioners on worke. They had in the fore great flore of Moles: & other things and Horses, and whatsoeuer else was requisite for a Land-armie. They were to well stored of necessary, Biscuit, that for the space of halfea yeere; they might allow each perion in the whole Flecte halfe a quintall every moneth! whereof the whole lineme amounteth wato an hundreth thou-. Indigential or and the second of the second of the second of the second or the secon fand quintals.

Likewife of Wine they had 147, thousand Pipes, lufficient also for halte a yeeres expedition. Or Bacon 6500. q intuds, Of Cheefe three thouland quincals. Beildes Path, Rive, Beanes, Peafe, Oyle, Vinegar, &c.

Moreouer, they had a 2000. Pipes of fresh water, and all other necessarie prouision: as namels Candles, Lanternes, Lampes, Sailes, Hempe, Octo-hides and Lead to ftop holes-that fhould be made with the batterie of Gun hot. To be short, they brought all things expedient enhes tos 4 Fisete by Seator for an Armie by land.

This Name (as Diego Pimenielli afterward confessed) was esteemed by the King himselfe to 31000 persona containe 32000, perions, and to cost him every day orthoniand Directes.

There were in the fard Natie fine Terzaes of Spaniards (which Terzaes the Frenchmen call Regiments) under the command of fine Gouernours, tearmed by the Spatiards Mafters of the field; 3300, fouldiers, and among the rest there were many old and expert Souldiers chosen out of the Garrisons of Sicilie, Naples, and Terçera. Their Capraines or Colonels were Diego Pimentelli, Don Francisco de Toledo, Don Alonzo de Luçon, Don Nicolas de Isla, Don Augustia de Mexia: who had each of them two and thirty Companies under their conduct. Befides the which Companies there were many bands allo of Caftilians and Portugali, every one of which had their peculiar Governours, Captaines, Officers, Colours and weapons.

It was not lawfull for any man, under grieuous penaltiesto carry any woman or harlors in the Baggage of the Fleete : for which cause the women hired certaine Ships, wherein they failed after the Name : Amada. fome of the which being driven by tempest arrived upon the coast of France.

The Generall of this mightie Nauie, was Don Alonso Perez de Guzman Duke of Medina, Sido-10 nia, Lord of S. Lucar, and Knight of the golden Pleece; by reason that the Marquelle of Santa Cruz appointed for the fame dignity, decealed before the time:

John Martines de Ricalde was Admiral of the Fleete: Francis Bonadilla was chiefe Marshall: who all of them had their officers fit and requisite for the guiding and managing of fuch a multitude. Likewife Martin Aloreon was appointed Vicar generall of the Inquitition, being accompanied with more then a hundreth Monkes, to wit, lefustes, Capuchines, and Friers Mendicant, Befides whom also there were Philitians, Chirurgians Apothecaries, and whatfoeuer elfe pertained vnto the Hospitall.

Ouer and besides the forenamed Gouernours and Officers, being men of chiefe note, there were 124 very noble and worthy Gentlemen, which went voluntarily of their owne colls and charges, to the end they might fee fathious, learne experience; and atraine voto glory. Amongst whom was the Prince of Ascoli, Alonzo de Leina, the Marquette de Pennafiel, the Marquette de Ganes, the Marqueffe de Barlango, Count de Paredes, Count de Teluie, and divers other Marquetes and Earles of the honorable families of Mendena, of Toledo, of Pachicco, of Cordono, of Guzman, of Marriques, and a great number of others.

I have by me the Dukes Orders for the whole Nanie, during this Voyage, made about the Gallian Saint Martin, May 28. the beginning whereof I have added, the whole would be too long.

Don ALIONS O PERES DE GVSMAN, the good Duke of Medina, Sidonia. Countse of Nebla, Marquelle of Cashelhe in Africa, Lord of the Citie Saint Lucar, Captaine Generall of the Occian Sea of the Coast of Andaluzia, and of this Armie of his Maiestie, and Knight of the honorable Order of the golden Fleece.

Doe ordaine and command, that the generall Mafters of the field, all Captaines of the Sea Dil lats, Mafters, Souldiers, Mariners, and Officers, and whatfoeuer other people for the Land or Sea feruice commeth in this Armie, all the time that it indureth, shall be thus governed, as hereafter followeth, viz.

The cause of

Their Shrift

First, and before all things, it is to be understood by all the about named from the highest to the lowest; that the principall foundation and cause that bath mound the King his Maiestie to make and continue this journie, hath beens, and is, to ferue God, and to returne vnto his Church a great many of contrite foules that are oppressed by the Heretikes, enemies of our holy Catholike faith, which have the m fubicets to their feets and vnhappine fe : and for that every one.may put his eyes upon this marke, as we are bound, I doe command and much defire enery one, to give charge vinto the inferiors and those vinder their charge to imbarke themselves, being shriven. and having received the Sacrament with competentand contrition for their finnes; by the which contriction and zeale to doe God fuch great fernice, he will carry and guide vs to his great glory: which is that which particularly and principally is pretended.

For a uoiding and others.

In like manner, I doe charge and command you, to have particular care, that no Soldier, Marriner, or other, that ferueth in this Armie, doe blatpheme, or rage against God, or our Lady, or any of the Saints, vpon paine that he shall therefore sharply be corrected, and very well chaftened, as it shall feeme best voto vs : and for other oather of leffe qualitie, the Governours in the 30 fame Ships they goe in shall procure to remedy all : they shall punish them in taking away their allowance of Wine, or otherwise as they shall thinke good. And for that the most occasions come by play, you shall publikly prohibit it of pecially the games that are forbidden: and that none doe play in the night by no meanes.

Debarring

Articles follow to suppresse quarrels, to avoid disgracing any man, and all occasions of scandall, forbidding carriage of common women; with other orders for watchwords, attendance on the Admiral, for fire and wilde-fre, and lighes, armours bos, powder, match, and other necessary instructions, too long to be here particularifed: that in the height of hamaine policie, and religious bypocrifie, the hand of God in Englands preservation may be made onident.

The preparati-

While the Spaniards were furnishing this their Nauie, the Duke of Parma, at the direction 40 of King Philip, made great preparation in the low Countries, to give aide and affiftance vinto the Spaniards, building Ships for the same purpose, and sending for Pilots and Ship-wrights out of Italy. In Flandors he caused certaine despe channels to be made, and among the rest, the channell of Tper, commonly called Tper-lee, employing some thousands of workemen about that service : to the end that by the faid Cannell he might transport Ships from Answers and Ghends to Bruges where he had affembled aboue a hundreth small Ships, called Hoyes, being well stored with vi-Stuals, which Hoyes he was determined to have brought into the Sea by the way of Slays, or elfe to have conveied them by the faid Tper-lee, being now of greater depth, into any port of Flan-

In the River of Waten, he caused 70. Ships with flat bottomes to be built, every one of which 50 should ferue to carry 30, horfes, having each of them Bridges likewife for the Horfes to come on boord, or to goe forth on land. Of the same fashion he had provided 200, other vessels at Neinport, but not fo great. And at Dunkerk he procured 28. Ships of warre, fuch as were there to be had, and caused a sufficient number of Maxiners to be leuied at Hamburg, Breme, Emden, and at other places. He put in the ballast of the said Ships, great store of beames of thicke plankes, being hollow and belet with Iron pikes beneath, but on each fide full of claspes and hookes, to 10yne

He had likewife at Graveling provided 20. thousand of caske, which in a shore space might be compact and toyned together with nailes and cords, and reduced into the forme of a Bridge. To be thort, what focuer things were requifite for the making of Bridges, and for the barring & flep- 60 ping vp of Hauens mouthes with stakes, posts, and other meanes, he commanded to be made ready Moreouer, not far from Neimpore hauen, he had caused a great pile of wooden fagots to he laid, and other furniture to be brought for the rearing vp of a Mount. The most part of his Ships contained two Quens a peece to bake Bread in, with a great number of faddles, bridles, and fuch other

like apparell for Horfes. They had Horfes likewife, which after their landing should serve to conuey and draw engines, fickli pieces, and other warlike prouifions. Necere vinto Nempere he had affembled an armie, ouer the which hee had ordained Camillo de

Monte to be Camp -mailer. This army conflitedor, 20, bands or enfignes of Italians, of ten bands of Wallons, eight of Scott, and eight of Burgundians, all which together amount vnto 56. bands euery band containing a hundreth perlons. Neere unto Dixmed there were muftered eightie bands of Dutchmen, lixtic of Spaniards, fix of high Germans, and leuen bands of Erelift fugitues, under the conduct of Sir William Stanlie, an English Knight In the luburbs of Cortreight there were 4000. horsemen together wich their horses ma readineffe : and at Waten 900, hories, with the troupe to of the Marquelle del Grafto Captaine generall of the horiemen.

Vinto this famous expedition and presupposed victory, many pocentates, Princes, and honorable personages hed themselves : out of Spaine the Prince of Melio, called the Duke of Pastrana, and taken to be the Son of one Ruggomes de Silva, but in very deed accompted among the number of King Thilips bale fons, Alfo the Marquelle of Bargrane, ont of the lons of Archiduke Ferdinand and Philippa Welfera. Vefpafian Gonfaga of the family of Mantua, being for chiualiy a man of great renowne, and herecofore Vice-roy in Spaine. Item John Medices, bate ion vnto the Duke of Florence. And Amadas of Sauor, the Duke of Sauor his bafe fon, with many others of inferi-

At length when as the Erench King about the end of May fignified unto her Maieffie in plaine Her Maieffies 20 teatmes that the should stand upon her guard, because he was now certainly enformed, that there was like preparations was to dangerous an invation imminent upon her Realine, that he feared much, leaft all her land and fea-forces would befufficient to withit and it, &c. then began the Queenes Maiettie more carefully to gather her forces together, and to furnish her own ships of warre, and the principall ships of her subjects, with Souldiers, weapons, and other necessary promison. The greatest and strongest thips of the whole Name the lent wato Plummonth, under the conduct of the right honorable Lord Charles Howard, Lord high Admirall of England, &c. Vinder whom the renowned Knight Sir Francis Drake was appointed Vice admirall. The number of their ships was about an hundreth. The leffer thips being 30, or 40, in number, and under the conduct of the Lord Henry Seimer were commanded to lie betweene Doner and Caleis.

30 On land likewise throughout the whole realme, souldiers were mustered and trained in all pla- Her. Mais flies ces, and were committed vnto the most resolute and faithfull captaines. And whereas it was com! Land success monly given out, that the Spaniard having once writed himfelfe vnto the Duke of Parma, ment to inuade by the river of Thames, there was at Tilburie in Effex, over-against Gravefend, a might's army encamped; and on both fides of the river fortifications were erected, according to the prefeription of Frederike Genebelli an Italian enginier. Likewife there were certaine thipsbrought to make a Bridge, though it were very late firit. Vnto the faid Armie came in proper perion the Queenes most rotall Maiestie, representing Tompris that Scitbian warlike Princeste, or rather diuine Pallas her felte. Alfo there were other fuch armiesteuied in England.

The principal Reculants (least they should stir up any tumult in the time of the Spanis invasion) Catholike

40 were fent to remaine at certain convenient places, as namely in the life of Ely and at Washich. And Roman. fome of them were fent vnto other places, to wit, vnto fundry Bilhops and Noblemen, where they were kept from endangering the state of the common wealth, and of her facred Maiestie, who of her most gracious clemency gaue expresse commandement, that they should be intreated with all humani ie and friendship.

The Provinces of Holland, Zeland, &c. giving credit vnto their intelligence out of Spaine, made The preparation preparation to defend themselves : but because the Spanis thips were described voto them to be on orther men to huge, they relied partly upon the shallow and dangerous Seas all along their coasts. Wherefore ted Promuces. they stood most in doubt of the Duke of Parma, his small and flat-bottomed ships. Howbest they had all their thips of warre to the number of nincie and aboue, in a readinesse for all alleves : the 50 greater part whereof were of 4 small borthen, as being more meete to faile upon their Rivers and shallow Seas; and with these ships they belieged all the hauens in Flanders, beginning at the mouth of Scheld, or from the towne of Lillo, and holding on to Greneling, and almost voto Calein, and for-

tified all their Sea-townes with strong garritons. Against the Spanish streets arrived, they had provided five and twenty of thirty good ships, committing the government of them viito Admirall Lorch, whom they commanded to inine himfelie unto the Lord Henry Seymer, lying betweene Douer and Cales. And when as the forefaid thips (whereof the greater part belieged the haven of Dunkerke) were driven by tempest into Zeland, luftin of Naffan the Admirall of Zeland Supplied that iquadron with fine and thirty shops, being of no great burthen, but excellently furnished with Guns, Mariners and Souldiers in great

60 abundance, & especially with 1200 brave Musquetiers, having beene accustomed vino Sea-fights, and being cholen out of all their company for the same purpose : and so the field Infin of Naffan kept fuch deligent ward in the Station, that the Duke of Parma could not the forth with his Nauie into Sea out of any part of Flanders.

In the meane while the Shanift Armada let faile out of the hauen of Lisben vpon the 19. of

iurati ventust Gains valour.

They fee faile Ppon the 11.of The Spaniards come within kenning of Exel and

Cap Fleming.

The L.Admirals (hort warnin: vpon the

Gods great not Flemming brought word, the Queenes fily beene oppreffed : nor could info toon be ready had their opportu-

- May, An. Dom. 1 5 8 8. vnder the conduct of the Duke of Medina Sidonia, directing their confe The Spanish for the Bay of Corunna, alias the Groine in Gallicia, where they tooke in fouldiers, and warlike detectedate voon the 13 of proution, this port being in Spaine the neerest voto England. As they were failing along, there arole luch a mighty tempeft, that the whole Elect was disperied, fo that when the Duke was re-O maltim dilea: Deo tib mi- little and little iovned themselues, except eight which had their Masts blowne over-boord. One of the foure Gallies of Parting all elcaped very hardly, retiring her felfe into the hauen. The other and chaffica veg. Three were upon the coast of Baien in France, by the affistance and courage of one Danid Gum. an English Captine (whom the French and Turkish flaues aided in the fame enterprile) vtterly dilabled and vanqui hed; one of the three being first ouercome, which conquered the two other, with the flaughter of their Gouernour and fouldiers, and among the rest of Don Diego de Mandrana. with fundry others : and to those flaues arrived in France with the three Gallies, fet themselves at libertie.

The Nauie having refreshed themselves at the Groine, and receiving daily commandement from the King to haften their journie, horfed up failes the 11 day of July, and fo holding on their course till the 10, of the same moneth, they came then vnto the mouth of the narrow Seas or English channell, From whence (thriking their failes in the meane featon) they diffratched certain of their imaliships voto the Duke of Parma. At the same time the Spanish Fleete was escried by an Englifb Pinnace, Captaine whereof was Mafter Thomas Fleming, after they had beene aduertifed of the Spaniards expedition by their footes and effizis, which having ranged along the coath of Spaine, were lately returned home into Plimmoth for a new fupply of victuals and other necessitaries, who confidering the forelaid tempest, were of opinion that the Nauie being of late disperfed and toffed vp and downe the maine Ocean, was by no meanes able to performe their intended Voyage. Moreouer, the Lord Charles Howard, Lord high Admirall of England, had received Letters from the Court, fignifying vnto him, that her Maiefty was advertised that the Spanife Fleete would not come forth; nor was tobe any longer expected for, and therefore, that vpon her Maietties commandement hee must fend backe foure of her tallest and strongest Ships vn-In Chartem

The Lord high Admirall of England being thus on the ludden, namely upon the 19. of July about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, enformed by the Pinnace of Captaine Fleming afore- 30 Said of the Spaniards approach, with all speede and diligence possible hee warped his Ships, and caused his Mariners and Souldiers (the greater part of whom was absent for the cause aforesaid) to come on board, and that with great trouble and difficultie, infomuch that the Lord Admirall himfelfe was faine to lie without in the road with fix Ships onelvall that night after the which ma-Theso, of July. ny others came forth of the hauen. The very next day, being the 20. of July about high noone, was the Spanib Fleet escried by the English, which with a South-west winde came sailing along, and passed by Plimmouth; in which regard (according to the judgement of many skilfull Nauigamercy to Eng. tors) they greatly ouershot themselves, whereas it had beene more commodious for them to have land For had faied themifelues there, confidering that the Englifbmen being as yet unprouided, greatly relied vpon their owne forces, and knew not the effate of the Spanifo Nauie. Moreouer, this was the 40 most convenient Port of all others, where they might with greater security have beene adverti-Name hadea fed of the English forces, and how the commons of the land stood affected, and might have stirred up fome mutinie, fo that hither they should have bent all their puissance, and from hence the Duke of Parma might more easily have conveied his Ships. But this they were prohibited to doe by the King and his Counfell, and were expresly commanded to vnite themselves vnto the fouldiers and thips of the faid Dake of Parma, and fo to bring their perpose to effect. Which was thought to be the most easte and direct course, for that they imagined that the English and Durch men would be veterly daunted and dismaied thereat, and would each man of them retire vinto his owne Prounce or Port for the defence thereof, and transporting the Armie of the Duke under the protection of their huge Nauie, they might inuade England. It is reported that the chiefe 50 commanders in the Nauy, and those which were more skilfull in nauigation, to wit, John Martines de Ricalde, Diego Flores de Valdee, and divers others, found fault that they were bound vnto fo itrict directions and inftructions, because that in such a case many particular accidents ought to concurre and to be respected at one and the same instant, that is to fay, the opportunitie of the winde, weather, time, tide, and ebbe, wherein they might faile from Flanders to England, Oftentimes alio the darknesse and light, the situation of places, the depths and shoulds were to be considered : all which especially depended vpon the conveniency of the windes, and were by so much the more dangerous. But it feemed that they were enjoyned by their Commission to ancre neere vnto, or about Caleis, whither the Duke of Parma with his ships and all his warlike prouifion was to refort, and while the English and Spanish great thins were in the midft of their con- 60 flict, to passe by, and to land his fouldiers upon the Downes. The Spanish Captines reported that they were determined first to have entred the River of Thames, & thereupon to have passed with fmall thips up to London, supposing that they might easily win that rich and flourishing Cicle, being but meanely fortified and inhabited with Citizens not accustomed to the wars, who durit

CHAP.II. A Galleon and Biscainer taken. Don Pedro de Valdez captine. 1005 not withstand their first encounter, hoping moreover to finde many rebels against her Maiestie.

and Popish Catholikes, or some fauourers of the Scottifb Queene (not long before beheaded) who might be inffruments of fedition. Thus of en advertising the Duke of Parma of their approach, the 20. of July they passed by

Plimmonth, which the English pursuing and getting the winde of them, gave them the chase and the encounter, and to both Fleetes frankly exchanged their Bullets.

The day following, which was the 21.0f Iuly, the English Ships approached within Musket The 21.0f Iuly that of the Spanish: at what time the Lord Charles Howard most hotly and valiantly discharged his Ordnance upon the Spanish Vice-admirall. The Spanisrds then well perceiving the nimbleneffe of the English ships in discharging upon the enemy on all fides, gathered themselves close into the forme of an halfe Moone, and flackned their failes, leaft they bould outgoe any of their company. And while they were proceeding on in this manner, one of their great Galliades was to furioutly battered with thot, that the whole Nanie was faine to come vo rounder together for the fafegard thereof .: whereby it came to passe that the principal! Galleon of Simil (wherein Don Pedro de Valdez, Va (ques de Silna, Alenzo de Sayas, and other Noble men were embarqued) falling foule of another thip, had her fore-maft broken, and by that meanes was not able to keepe way with the Spanish Fleete, neither would the faid Fleete stay to succour it, but I fe the distresfed Galeon behinds. The Lord Admirall of England, when hee faw this Ship of Valdez, and thought the had beene voide of Marriners and Souldiers, taking with him as many thips as he Gileon for

20 could, paffed by it, that hee might not loofe fight of the Spanift Fleete that night. For Sir faken. Francis Drake (who was not with itanding appointed to beare out his Lanterne that night) was giving of chale vinto five great Hulkes which had separated them selves from the Spanish Fleete: but finding them to be Easterlings, hee difmissed them. The Lord Admirall all that night following the Spanish Lanterne instead of the English, found himselfe in the morning to be in the midft of his enemies Fleete, but when he perceived it, he clenly conveied himfelfe out of that great danger.

The day following, which was the 22.0f July, Sir Francis Drake effied Valdez his thip, where- The 22.0f July unto he fent for his Punace, and being advertifed that Valdez himselfe was there, and 450, perfons with him, he fent him word that hee should yeelde himselfe, Faldez for his honours take to cauled certaine conditions to be propounded vnto Drake: who answered Valdez, that he was not now at leifure to make any long parle, but if he would yeelde himfelfe, he should finde him friendly and tractable : howbeit if he had resolved to die in fight, he should prove Drake to be no daftard. Vpon which answer, Ualder and his Company understanding that they were fallen into the hands of fortunate Drake, being moued with the remoune and celebratie of his name. with one confent yeelded themselves, and found him very favourable vnto them. Then Valdez Don Pedro de with forty or fiftie Noblemen and Gentlemen pertaining vnto him, came on boord Sir Francis Valdez with Drakes thip, Therefidue of his company were carried vnto Plimmenth, where they were detai- his thips and

ned a veere and an halfe for their ransome.

Valdez comming vnto Drake, and humbly kiffing his hand, protefting vnto him, that he and his to had refolued to die in battell, had they not by good fortune fallen into his power, whom they knew to be right curteous and gentle, and whom they had heard by generall report to be most fa- Virtus in heft nourable vnto his vanquished foe : insomuch, that he said it was to be doubted whether his ene- landanda. my had more cause to admire and loue him for his great, valiant, and prosperous exploits, or to dread him for his fingular felicity and wifdome, which ever attended upon him in the wars, and by the which he had attained vnto to great honor. With that Drake embraced him, and gaue him very honorable entertainment, feeding him at his owne table, and lodging him in his Cabbin. Here Valdez began to recount vnto Drake the forces of all the Spanift Fleete, and how foure mighty Gallies were separated by tempest from them : and also how they were determined first to baue put into Plimmouth haven, not expecting to be repelled thence by the English flips, which they

thought could by no meanes withitland their impregnable forces, perfwading themfolies that by o meanes of their huge Fleete, they were become Lords and commanders of the maine Ocean. For which cause they margeiled much how the Englishmen in their small Ships durst approach within musket that of the Spaniards mighty woodden Caftles, gathering the wind of them, with many other such like attempts. Immediately after, Valdez and his Company (being a man of principal) authority in the Spanil Fleet, and being descended of one and the same family with that Valdez, which in the yeere 1574.befieged Leiden in Holland) were fent captines into England. There were in the faid thip 55 thousand Duckers in ready monie of the Spanift Kings gold, which the fouldiers merrily thared among themselves.

The same day was set on fire one of their greatest ships, being Admirall of the squadron of Gui-60 pufco, and being the ship of Michael de Oquendo Vice-admirall of the whole Fleete, which contained great flore of Gunpowder, and other warlike proution. The upper part onely of this flip A great Bifwas burnt, and all the persons therein contained (except a very few) were consumed with fire, came they ca-And thereupon it was taken by the English, and brought into England, with a number of milerable ken by the burnt and forched Spaniards. Howbeit the Gunpowder (to the great admiration of all men) rea mained whole and vnconformed.

Slow motions Span Bihips.

exceede the limits of his Commission and charge. Voon tueiday, which was the 23.0f July, the Nauy being come ouer against Portland, the wind began to turne Northerly, infomuch that the Spannards had a fortunate and fit gale to inuade the Englifb. But the Englishmen hauing leifer and nimbler ships, recourred againe the vantage of the to winde from the Spaniards, whereat the Spaniards feemed to be more incensed to fight then before, But when the English fleet had continually and without intermition from morning to night heaten and battered them with all their shot both great and small; the Spaniards vniting themfelues, gathered their whole Fleete close together into a roundeli, to that it was apparant that they ment not as yet to inuade others, but onely to defend themselues, & to make hatte with the place preferibed vnto them, which was neere vnto Dunkerk, that they might toyne forces with the Duke of Parma, who was determined to have proceeded fecretly with his small thips under the shadow and protection of the great ones, and to had intended circumspectly to performe the

In the meane feafon the Lord Admirall of England in his ship, called the Arke-royall, all that

night pursued the Spaniard' io neere, that in the morning hee was almost left alone in the ene-

mies Fleete, and it was foure of the clocke at afternoone before the residue of the English Fleete

could overtake him. At the same time Hugo de Moncada, Governour of the foure Galliestes, made

humble fuite voto the Duke of Medine that hee might be licenced to encounter the Admirall of

England: which liberty the Duke thought not good to permit vnto him, because he was touth to

Admirals hot

whole expedition. This was the most furious and bloudy skirmish of all, in which the Lord Admirall of England 20 continued fighting amidit his enemies Fleete, and feeing one of his Captaines a farre off, he ipake Geptaine Fen- unto him in these words: Ob George, what doest thou? Wilt thou now frustrate my bope and opinion conceived of thee? Wilt thou forfake mee now? With which words hee being enflamed, approached forthwith, encountered the enemy, and did the part of a most valiant Captaine. His name was George Fenner, a man that had beene conversant in many Sea-fights. In this conflict there was a certaine great Venetian ship with other small ships surprized and taken by

A great Vene. tian thip and other mall fhipstaken by . the English.

The English Nauy in the meane while increased, whereunto out of all Hauens of the Realme resorted ships and men : for they all with one accord came flocking thither as vnto a set field, where immortall fame and glory was to be attained, and faithfull service to be performed vnto 30 their Prince and Countrey. In which number there were many great and honorable personages, as namely, the Earle of Oxford, of Northumberland, of Cumberland, of c. with many Knights and Genelemen : to wit, Sir Thomas Cecill, Sir Robert Cecill, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir William Hatten, Sir Horatio Palanicini, S. r Heury Brooke, Sir Robert Carem, Sir Charles Blant; Mafter Ambrofe Willonobbie, Malter Henry Nowell, Malter Thomas Gerard, Malter Henry Dudley, Malter Edward Darcie, Mafter Arthur Gorge, Mafter Thomas Woodbowfe, M. William Harnie, Ge. And to it came to paffe that the number of the English thips amounted vito an hundreth: which when they were come before Douer, were increased to an hundred and thirty, being notwithstanding of no proportionable bignesse to encounter with the Spaniards, except two or three and twenty of the Queenes greater fhips, which onely; by reason of their presence, bred an opinion in the Spaniards 40 minds concerning the power of the English Fleet : the Marriners and Souldiers whereof were esteemed to be twelve thousand.

Souldiers.

The 24 of Iuly

The foure and twentie of July, when as the Sea was calme, and no winde flirring, the fight was onely betweene the foure great Galleaffes and the English thips, which being rowed with Oares, had great vantage of the English thips, which not withflanding for all that would not be forced to yeelde, but discharged their chaine shot to cut asunder their Cables and Cordage of the Gallesfles, with many other fuch Stratagems. They were now constrained to fend their men on land for a new supply of Gunpowder, whereof they were in great scarcitie, by reason they had Wantof Pow- fo frankly frent the greater part in the former conflicts. The fame day, a Counfell being affembled, it was decreed that the English Fleete (hould be deuided into foure equidrons : the principall 50 whereof was committed voto the Lord Admirall : the fecond to Sir Francis Drake : the third to

Captaine Hawkins : the fourth to Captaine Frobifher. The Spanards in their failing observed very diligent and good order, failing three and foure and sometimes more ships in a ranke, and following close vp one after another, and the stronger Spanift order. and greater thips protecting the leffer.

The five and twenty of July, when the Spaniards were come over-against the Isle of Wight, the Lord admirall of Englandbeing accompanied with his best ships (namely the Lion, Captaine Whereof was the Lord Thomas Howard: The Elizabeth Ionas vinder the command of Sir Robert Southwell, ion in law vnto the Lord Admirall : the Beare vnder the Lord Sheffield, Nephew vnto the Lord Admirall : the Victorie under Captaine Barker : and the Galeon Leiceffer under the fore- 60 named Captain George Fenner) with great valour and dreadfull thunder of thot, encountered the Spenish Alimiral, being in the very midt of all his Fleete. Which when the Spaniaral percei-ted by the spenish alimiral, being in the very midt of all his Fleete. Which when the Spaniaral percei-ted by the spenish alimiral, being affilted with his firmongelt ships, he came torth and entered a terrible combat with the Facility. English; for they bestowed each on other the broad sides, and mutually discharged all their

Ordnance; being within one hundred or an hundred and twenty yards one of another. At length the Spaniards hoifed up their failes, and againe gathered themfelues vo close into the forme of a roundell. In the meane while Captaine Frobifber had engaged himfelfe into a most dangerous conflict. Whereupon the Lord Admirall comming to fuccour him, found that hee had valiantly and discreetly behaved himfelfe, and that he had wifely and in good time given over the fight, because that after so great a batterie he had sustained no damage. For which cause the day tollowing. being the fixe and twenty of Inly, the Lord Admirall rewarded him with the order of The 26.0 Inly Knighthood, together with the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Sheffield, Mafter John Hawkins,

and others. The large day the Lord Admirall received intelligence from New hanen in France, by certaine Guillant fear-d of his Pinnaces, that all things were quit in France, and that there was no preparation of fent Tacconq. A. ding aide vnto the Spaniards, which was greatly feared from the Guiffan faction; and from the Learners ; but there was a falle rumour foread all about, that the Spaniards had conquered England.

The feuen and twentieth of July, the Spaniards about the fun-fetting were come oder-against The ar of July, Doner, and rode at ancre within the fight of Caleis, intending to hold on for Dunkerk, expecting The Spaniards there to joyne with the Duke of Parma his forces, without which they were able to doe little or ancrebelore nothing. Likewife the English Fleete following vp hard vpon them, antred inft by them within Caleis. coluening-flor. And here the Lord Honry Seymer united himselfe unto the Lord Admirall with his fleet of 20. hips which rode before the mouth of Thames.

As the Spanish Nauie therefore lay at ancre, the Duke of Medina ferr certaine Meffengers vnto the Duke of Parma, with whom your that occasion many Noblemen and Gentlemen went to retrefit themselves on land; and among the reft the Prince of Assolibeing accounted the Kings bafe fon, and a very proper and towardly yong Gentleman, to his great good went on thoate, who was by to much the more fortunate, in that he had not opportunity to returne on boord the fame thip out of which he was departed, because that in returning nome it was cast away vpon fortune. the Irifb coast, withall the persons contained therein. The Duke of Parma being advertised of the Spanih Fleetes arrivall upon the coast of England, made all the haste hee could to be prefent himselfe in this expedition for the performance of his charge : vainely perswading himselfe that now by the meanes of Cardinall Allen, hee thould be crowned King of England, and for that cause he hadresigned the Gouernment of the Low Countries unto Count Mansfeld the elder.

And having made his vowes vinto Shint Mary of Hall in Henault (whom he went to vilite for hisblinde devotions ake) he returned toward Bruger the eight and twenty of fully. The next The 28.0 fully day traudling to Danter the chandring Ordnance of either Fleete: and the same evening being come to Dismud, hee was given to viderstand the hard successe of the Spa- There of tally V non thefilay, which was the 12.0f July, about high noone, he came to Dunkerk, when as all The 20.0f July

the Spanish Ficete was now passed by: neither durst any of his ships in the meane space come forth to affift the faid Spanish Fleet for feare of five and thirty warlike thips of Holland and Zeo land, which there kept watch and ward under the conduct of the Admirall lustin of Nasan. The forefaid five and thirty thips were furnished with most cunning Mariners and old expert Souldi- States Fleets, ers, among It the which were twelve hundred Musketeers, whom the States had choicn out of all their Garrisons, and whom they knew to have beene heretofore experienced in Sea-fights. This Nauie was given especially in charge not to suffer any ship to come out of the Hauen, nor to permit any Zabraes, Pataches or other small vessels of the Spanish Fleete (which were more likely to aide the Dunkerkers) to enter thereinto, for the greater thips were not to be feared by reason of the shallow Sea in that place. Howbeit the Prince of Parma his forces being as yet voready, En life Hiftswere not come on board his ships, onely the English Fagitiues, being seven hundred in number, missied trainers

winder the conduct of Sir William Stanley, came in fit time to have beene embarked, because they hoped to give the first affault against England. The residue shewed themselves vowilling and loath to depart, because they saw but a few Marriners, who were by constraint drawne into this expedition, and also because they had very bare prouision of Bread, Drinke, and other necessary vi-Quals. Moreover, the ships of Holland and Zeland stood continually in their tight, threatning shot and Powder, and many incommeniences vnto them: for feare of which ships; the Mariners and Sea-men fecretly withdrew themselves both day and night, least that the Duke of Parma his Souldiers should compell them by maine force to goe on boord, and to breake through the Hollanders Fleete, which all of them judged to be impeffible, by reason of the straightnesse

But it seemeth that the Duke of Parma and the Spaniards grounded upon a vaine and pre- The Spaniards 60 fumptuous expectation, that all the thips of England and of the Low-Countries would at the first vame opinion fight of the Spanish and Dunkerk Name have betaken themselves to flight, yeelding them Sez-concerning roome, and endenouring onely to defend themselves, their hauens, and Sea-coasts from invasion, their and fices Wherefore their intent and purpose was, that the Duke of Parma in this small and flat-bortomed thips, should as it were under the shadow and wings of the Spenish Fleete, convey oner all his

1908

troupes, armour, and warlike prouision, and with their forces so vanted, should inuade England: or while the English Fleete were builed in fight against the Spanish, thould enter vpon any part of the coast, which he thought to be most convenient. Which invasion (as the Captines afterward confelled) the Duke of Parma thought first to have attempted by the River of Thames: voon the bankes whereof having at his first arrival landed twenty or thirty thouland of his principall Souldiers, he supposed that he might easily have wen the Citie of London; both because his imall thirs should have followed and affifted his Land-forces, and also for that the Citie it felfe was but meanely fortified and easie to ouercome, by reason of the Citizens delicacie and discontinuance from the warres.

When as therefore the Spansh Fleete rode at ankerbefore Caleis, to the end they might con- to fult with the Duke of Parma what was best to be done according to the Kings commandement. and the prefent efface of their affaires, and had now (as we will afterward declare) purposed vpon the second of August, heing Friday, with one power and consent to have put their intended bufinelle in practife; the Lord Admirall of England being admonished by her Maiesties Lettere from the Court, thought it most expedient either to drive the Spanish Fleet from that place, or at Sca-ftragagem least wife to give them the encounter; and for that cause (according to her Maiesties prescription) he tooke forthwith eight of his worlf and bateit ships which came next to hand, and disburchening them of all things which fremed to be of any value, filled them with Gunpowder, Pitch, Brimitone, and with other combultible and hery matter; and charging all their Ordnance with powder, bullets and itones, and fent the faid thips vpon the 28. of July, being Sunday, about two of the clocke after midnight, with the winde and tide against the Spanish Fleete: which when they had proceeded a good space, being for saken of the Pilots, and fet on fire, were directly carri-

ed vpon the King of Spaines Nauie : which fire in the dead of night pur the Spainerds into fuch a perplexitie and horror (for they feared left they were like vnto those terrible ships, which Fredsrie Inebelli three yeeres before, at the fiege of Animerpe, bad furnished with Gunpowder, stones, and dreadfull engines, for the diffoliction of the Duke of Parma his Bridge, built vpon the River of Scheld) that cutting their cables whereon their ankers were fasted, and horfing vp their failes they betooke themiclues very confusedly vnto the maine Sea. And this fudden confusion, the principall and greatest of the foure Galiasses falling fowle of another thip loft her mider: for which cause when the could not be guided any longer, the was by

her with their Ordnance, and durft not boord her, the Lord Admirall fent thither his long Boate

with an hundreth choife Souldiers vinder the command of Captaine Amou Preston, V pon whole

approach their fellowes being more emboldened, did ofter to boord the Galliaffe; against whom

the Governor thereof and Captaine of all the foure Galliaffes, Hugo de Moncada, flourly opposed

himself, fighting by so much the more valuantly, in that he hoped presently to be succoured by the

Dake of Parma. In the meane feafon Moncada, atter hee bad endured the conflict a good while,

being hit on the head with a Bullet, fell downe starke dead, and a great number of Spaniards allo

faue them elues by swimming, were most of them drowned. Howbert there escaped among others

Don Anthonio de Mauriques, a principall officer in the Spanish fleete (called by them their Veador

Generall) together with a few Spaniar de befides : which Authorio was the first manthat carried

certaine newes of the fuccesse of their sheete into Spaine. This huge & moustrous Gillialle, where-

space of three houres rifled in thesame place; and there was found amongst diners other commo-

dities 10000 Duckets of the Spanish Kings treasure. At length when the slaves were released

out of their fetters, the English men would have fet the faid ship on fire, which Monfieur

Gourdon, the Gouernour of Caleis, for feare of the damage. which might thereupon entire to

the Towne and Hauen, would not permit them to doe, but draue them from thence with his

were flaine in bis company. The greater part of the relidue leaping ouer-boord into the See, to 40

The Galliaffe ormuso ac new the force of the tide cast into a certaine thould y pon the shoare of Catro, where she was immedithe hoaldsbe- ately affaulted by divers English Pinnaces, Hoyes, and Drumblers. And as they lay battering of fore Caleis.

M Amias Prefor valuantly hoodern the Galhaffe.

50000, duckers in were contained three hundred flaues to lug at the Oares, and four ehundred foul liers, was in the

ling the 29. of

Engliffi fhips

great Ordnance. Vpon the 29.0f July in the morning, the Spanifo Fleete after the forefaid tumule, having arranged themselves againe into order, were, within fight of Greveling, most bravely and furrously encountered by the Englift, where they once againe got the winde of the Spaniards : who fuffered themselues to be deprived of the commodity of the place in Caleis rode, and of the advantage of the winde neere ento Dunkerk, rather then they would change their array, or leparate their forces now conjoyed and vnited together, flanding onely vpon their defence. And albeit there were many excellent and warlike fin ps in the English fleet, yet learle were there 22.0r 23.2mong them all which matched 90.0f the Spanifo thips in bignetle, or could conveniently affault them. Wherefore the Englif fings wing their prerogative of nimble flirrage, whereby they could 60 turne and wield themiclus with the winde which way they lifted, came oftentimes very neereypon the Spaniards, and charged them to foresthat now and then they were but a Pikes length at funder; and fo continually giving them one broad fide after another, they diffatched all their floe both great and small vpon them spending one whole day from morning till night in that violence

kinde of conflict, vitill tuch time as powder and bullets failed them. In regard of which want they thought it convenient not so puritie the Spansards any longer, because they had many great vantages of the English, namely for the extraordinary bignesse of their ships, and also for that they were to neerely contoyned, and kept together in to good array, that they could by no meanes be fought withall one to one. The English thought therefore, that they had right well acquitted themselves, in chasing the Spaniards first from Caleis, and then from Dunkerk, and by that means to have hindered them from joyning with the Duke of Parma his forces, and getting the winde of them, to have driven them from their owne coafts.

CHAP.II. Great Dantages. Enemy confounded. Goods unladen.

The Spaniards that day tuitained great loffe and damage, having many of their thips thot thoto row and thorow, and they discharged likewise great store of Ordinance against the English; who indeede fultained fome hinderance, but not comparable to the Soundards loffe; for they, loft not any one thip or perion of account. For very diagent is quificion being made, the Englishmee all that time wherein the Spanish Nauie failed vpon, their Seas; are not found to have wanted about one hundreth of their people: albeit Sir F. Drakes thip was pierced with thot aboue forty times, and his very cabben was twife that thorow, and about the conclusion of the fight, the bed of a certaine to the said Gentlemanlying weary thereupon, was taken quite from under him with the force of a Bullet. Likewife, as the Earle of Northumberland and Sir Charles Blunt were at dinner vpon a time, the Bullet of a Demi-culturing brake thorow the middelt of their Cabbin, touched their feete, and throoke downe two of the Handers by, with many fuch accidents befalling the English thips, which it were tedious to rehearfe. Whereupon it is most apparant, that G.d miraculously preferned the English Nation. For the Lord Admirall wrote vito her Maietty, that in all humaine reason, and according to the judgement of all men (euery circumitance being duely confidered) the Englishmen were not of any luch force, whereby they might, without a miracle, dare once to approach within the fight of the Spanish Fleete: infomuch, that they freely afcribed all the honour of their victory voto God, who had confounded the enemy, and had brought his counfels to none effect.

The same day the Spanish ships were so battered with English shot, that that very night and the Three Spanish day following, two or three of them funke right downe : and among the reft a certain great flup flups funke in of Bifeay, which Captaine Croffe affaulted, which perifhed even in the time of the conflicts to that to very few therein eleaped drowning; who reported that the Gouernors of the fame thip flew one another you the occasion following : one of them which would have yeelded the ship was suddealy flame; the brother of the flame party in revenge of his death flew the murtherer, and in the

meane while the thip funke.

The fame night two Portugall galeons of the burthen of feuen or eight hundreth tune a peece; Two Galeons to wit. Saint Philip and Saint Matthew, were forlaken of the Spanish Fleete, for they were fo corne taken and carwith thot, that the water entered into them on all files, In the Galeon of Saint Philip was Fran- ried into Zeland cis de Toleda, brother vnto the Count de Argus, being Colonell ouer two and thirty bands; befiles other Crentlemen; who feeing their matt broken with flot, they shaped their course, aswell as they could, for the coast of Flanders: whither when they could not attaine, the principall 40 men in the flup committed them! lues to their skiffe, ar qued at the next towne, which was Ofend; and the thip it felfe being left behinde with the reft ue of their company, was taken by the Villingere. In the other Galeon, called the Saine Massbew, was embarked Don Diego Pimentelli another Camp-mafter and Colonell of two and thirty bands, being brother vinto the Marquelle of Tammares, with many other Gentlemen and Captaines. Their thip was not very great, but exceeding flrong, for of a great number of Bullets which had batterd her . there were fearce twenty wherewith the was pierced or hure: her upper worke was of force fifficient to beare off a Musket that : this thip was that thorow and pierced in the fight before Greneling : infomuch that the leakage of the water could not be stopped : whereupon the Dake of Medina fent his great skiffe vnto the Gouernour thereof, that he might faue himfelle and the principal persons, shat were 50 in his ship : which he, vpon a hault courage, refused to doe : wherefore the Duke charged him to faile next voto himselfe; which the night following hee could not performe, by reason of the abundance of water which entered his thip on all fides; for the audiding, whereof, and so face his thip from finking he caused fitty men continually to Libour at the Pump though it were to small purpole. And feeing himfelfe thus forfaken and teparated from his Admirall, he endeuored what no could to attaine vnto the coast of Flanders; where being efficed by foure or five men of war, which had their flation affigned them upon the same coast: he was admonished to yeeldehimselfe vino them; which he refused to doe, was strongly assulted by them altogether, & his ship being pierced with many bullets, was brought into far worle case then before, & forty of his souldiers were flain. By which excremity he was enforced at length to yeelde himtelfe vnto Peter Banderduefs 60 and other Captaine, which brought him and his thip into Zeland; and that other thip alfolait before mentioned : which both of them, immediatly after the greater and better part of their goods were voladen. funke right downe. For the memory of this exploit, the foresaid Captain Banderduels caufed a Banner of one of these shups to be set up in the great Church of Leiden in Holland, which is of to great a length, that being tailed to the very roofe, it teached downe to the ground.

Vuquuuq 2

A fmal! thip caftawa, ain utBlanken-

About the same time another small ship being by necessity driven vpon the coast of Flanders. about Blankenberg, was cast away upon the lands, the people therein being laued. Thus Almighty God would have the Spaniards huge thips to be presented, not onely to the view of the English but also of the Zelanders; that at the fight of them they might acknowledge of what small ability they had beene to refit fuch impregnable forces, had not God endued them with courage, proindence, and fortitude, yea, and fought for them in many places with his owne arme-The 29. of Iuly the Spanife fleete being encountered by the English (as is aforefaid) and lying

The diffeene-

cloie together under their fighting failes, with a South-west winde failed past Dunkerk, the Enocole together valuer their agating rates, with a South-weit winde lailed pail Dunkerk, the English life thip, fill following the chafe. Or whom the day following, when the Spaniards had got Sea we & the plant. uy & the prathe LAdmiral to fight , but to flie. For which cause the Lord Admirall of England dispatched the Lord Henry Segmer with his fquadron of small ships voto the coast of Flanders, where, with the helpe of the Dutch thips, he might ftop the Prince of Parma his passage, if perhaps he should attempt to issue forth with his army. And he himselfe in the meane space pursued the Spanish ficet vital the fecond of August, because he thought they had let faile for Scotland. And albeit he followed them Powder & Bul- very neare, yet did he not affault them any more, for want of Powder and Bollets. But voon the lets pe chime fourth of August, the windcarifing, when as the Spaniards had spread all their failes, becaking themselves wholly to flight, & leaving Scotland on the left hand, trended toward Norman (wherepower & mer- by they I ficiently declared that their whole intent was to faue themselues by flight, attempting power of that purpole, with their battered and erazed ships, the most dangerous naturation of the Noreiful both deli- for that purpole, with their battered and erazed ships, the most dangerous naturation of the Norunerance and
ethern Seas), the English seeing that they were now proceeded vinto the latitude of 57 degrees, and being vinwilling to participate that danger whereinto the Spaniards plunged themselves, and be-Th. En lifere. caule they wanted things necessary, and especially Powder and Shot, returned backe for England; unhome no leaving behinde them certaine Pinafles onely, which they enjoyned to follow the Spaniards athe pursuit of loofe, and to abserve their course. And so it came to passe, that the fourth of August, with great danger and industry, the English arrived at Harmich; for they had beene toll d vp and downe with the 4.0t Aug. a mighty tempest for the space of two or three dayes together, which it is likely did great hure voto the Spanift fleet, being (as I fain before) to maimed and battered. The English now going on shoare, provided themselves forth with of Victuals, Gunpowder, and other things expedient, that they might be ready at all affayes to entertaine the Spanish fleete, if it chanced any more to 10

victory.

The Spaniards feeing now that they wanted foure or fine thousand of their people, and having divers maimed and ficke persons, and likewise having lost ten or twelve of their principall ships, they confulted among themselves, what they were best to doe, being now escaped our of the hands of the English, because their victuals failed them in like fort, & they began alio to want cables, cordage, anker, masts, failes, and other naual furniture, and otterly despaired of the Duke of confult to faile Parma his affitance (who verily hoping & vndoubtedly expeding the return of the Spanifo fleet, round about was continually occupied about his great preparation, commanding abundance of ankers to be 40 Scotland & Ire made, and other necessary furniture for a Nauy to be prouided) they thought it good at length, so to set and the set of the winde should lerue them, to set ha compasse about Seesland and Ireland, and so to te-

re urne. Bu being afterward more certainely informed of the Spaniards course, they thought

it beit to leave them vnto those bostlerous and vncouth Northren Seas, and not there to hune

Horfes caft

For they well understood, that commandement was given thorowout all Scotland, that they should not have any succour or affiftance there. Neither yet could they in Norway supply their wants. Wherefore, hairing taken certaine Scottifh and other filherboats, they brought the men on boord their owne ships, to the end they might be their guides and Pilots. Fearing also least their fresh water should taile them, they cast all their horses and mules ouer-boord; and so touching no where vpon the coaft of Scotland, but being carried with a fresh gale betweene the Oreader and Faar-Istes, they proceeded farre North even vnto 61 degrees of latitude, being distant from any 50 land at the leaft 40.leagues. Here the Duke of Medina, Generall of the Fleet, commanded all his followers to shape their course for Biscay : and he himselfe with twenty or five and twenty of his thips which were best prouided of fresh water and other necessaries, holding on his course ouer the maine Ocean, returned fafely home. The refidue of his ships being about torty in number, and committed vnto his Vice-admirall, fell neerer with the coast of Ireland, intending their course for Cape Clare, because they hoped there to get fresh water, and to refresh themselves on land. But after they were driven with many contrary windes, at length, voon the second of September, The hipwrack they were cast by a tempest arising from the South-west vpon divers parts of Ireland, where many of the parado of their thips perished And amongst others, the ship of Michael de Oquendo, which was one of the great Gallioffes : and two great thips of Venise allo, namely, la Ratta and Belanzara, with other 36 60 or 31. Ships more, which perished in fundry tempelts, together with most of the perions contai-

> Likewise some of the Spanish thips were the second time carried with a strong West wind into the channell of England, whereof tome were taken by the English upon their coast, and others by the men of Rochel vpon the coast of France.

Moreover, there arrived at Newhanen in Worm andy, being by tempest inforced so to doe, one of the tours great Galliafles, whereby they found the thips with the Spanish women which followed Of 124 thipsof the Fleet at their letting forth. Two ships also were call away vpon the coast of Norway, one of the Sounds dees them being of a great burthen; howbeit all the persons in the said great ship were saued : info- there returned much that of 134-thips, which fet faile out of Portugal, there returned home 53, onely, finall and home but 53, great : namely of the foure Gallialies but one, and but one of the foure Gallies. Of the 91. great Gilleons and Hulkes there were milling (8. and 23. returned: of the Pataches and Zabraes 17. were miffing, and 18 returned home. In briefe, there were miffing 81. fhips, in which number were Galligles, Gallies Galeons, and other welfels both great and small. And amongst the 3. ships to remaining, those also are reckoned which returned home before they came into the English channell. Two Galeons of those which were returned, were by misfortune burnt as they rode in the

haven; and fuch like mishaps and many other undergoe. Of 30000, persons which went in this expedition, there perished (according to the number and proportion of the ships) the greater and better part; and many of them which came home, by reason of the toiles& inconneniences which they fultained in this voiage, died not long after their arrivall. The Dake of Medina immediately D. of Medina woon his returne was depoted from his authority, commanded to his private house, and forbidden to repaire vnto the Court; where he could hardly fatisfie or yield a reason vnto his malicious enemies and backbiters. Many honorable personages and men of great renown deceased soone after their returne; as namely John Martines de Ricalde, with divers others, A great part alfo of the Spa- Ricaldes death

20 milb Nobility and Gentry employed in this expedition perished either by fight, diseases, or drowring, before their arrivall; and among the rest Thomas Perent of Grandnell a Dutchman, being Earle of Cantebroi, and fon vnto Cardinall Grandnell his brother.

Voon the coalt of Zeland Don Diego de Pimentell, brother voto the Marquesse de Tammares. and kinfman vnto the Earle of Beneuentum & Calua, and Colonell ouer 22. bands with many on ther in the same ship was taken and detained as prisoner in Zeland.

Into England (as we faid before) Don Pedro de Valdez, a man of fingular experience, and greatly honoured in his country, was led captine, being accompanied with Don Vajques de Silna, Don Alonzo de Sayas, and others.

Likewise vpon the Scottish Westerne Isles of Lewis, and Ila, and about Cape Cantre vpon the 30 maine land, there were cast away certaine Spanib Ships, out of which were faued divers Cap-taines and Gentlemen, and almost foure hundred fouldiers, who for the most part, after their Inipwracke, were brought vnto Edenborough in Scotland, and being miserably needy and naked, were there cloathed at the liberalitie of the King and the Merchants, and afterward were fecretly fhipped for Spaine; but the Scottift Fleete wherein they passed touching at Tar- Spaniards vitis mouth on the coast of Norfolke, were there stated for a time untill the Counsels pleasure was tied. knowne; who in regard of their manifold miferies, though they were enemies, winked at

their paffage. Vpon the Irifo coast many of their Noblemen and Gentlemen were drowned; and divers slain by the barbarous and wilde Irih. Howbeit there was brought prisoner out of Ireland, Don Alon-AO 30 de Lucon, Colonel of two and thirty bands, commonly called a Terza of Naples: together with Rodorigo de Lassand two others of the family of Cordona, who were committed vnto the cultody of Six Horatio Palanicini, that Monfieur de Teligny the fon of Monfieur de la None (who being taken in fight neere Antwerpe, was detained prisoner in the Castle of Turney) might be ransomed Southers general for them by way of exchange. To conclude, there was no famous nor worthy family in all Spain, loffe. which in this expedition loit not a fon, a brother, or a kinfman.

For the perpetuall memory of this matter, the Zelanders caufed new coine of Silver and Broffe New coines to be stamped: which on the one side contained the armes of Zeland, with this inscription; stamped for the to be stamped: which on the one had contained the armost of certaine great ships, memory of the GLORY TO GOD ONELY: and on the other side, the pictures of certaine great ships, memory of the with these words; THESPANISH FLEET: and in the circumference about the ships, IT CAME, WENT, AND WAS. Anno 1,88. That is to fay, the Spanish fleet came,

So went and was vanquifted this yeere; for which, glory be given to God onely. Likewife they coined another kinde of mony; vpon the one fide whereof was reprefented a ship fleeing, and a ship finking : on the other fide, foure men making prayers and giving thankes vnto God vpon their knees; with this fentence : Man purpofeth, God diffoseth, 1,88. Allo, for the lasting memory of the same matter, they have stamped in Holland divers such coines, according to the custome of the ancient Romans. Also other coines were stamped with a Fleet flying with full faile, and inferibed ; Venit , Vedit , Fugit ; It came, faw, fled : others with the fired fhips, and the fleet in confusion, the word DVX FOEMINAFACTI.

While this wonderfull and puissant Natie was failing along the English coasts, and all men 60 did now plainly ice and heare that which before they would not be perfuaded of, all people The people of thorowout England profitated themselnes with humble prayers and supplications whoo God: they must be profitated themselnes with humble prayers and supplications whoo God: but especially the outlands in Churches (who had greatest cause to feare, and against whom by uinces pray, name, the Spaniards had threatned most grieuous torments) enjoyned to their people continual (aff, and give failings and supplications, that they might turne away Gods wrath and sury now imminent thankes valo Vuuuuuu 3

woon them for their fins : knowing right well, that prayer was the onely refuge against all enemies, calamities, and necessities, and that it was the onely solace and reliefe for mankinde, being vifited with affliction and milery. Likewife fuch folerane daies of supplication were observed throughout the vnited Prouinces.

Alto a while after the Spanish Fleet was departed, there was in England, by the commandement of her Maiefty, and in the vnited Provinces, by the direction of the States, a folemne feiliwall day publikely appointed, wherein all persons were enjoyned to refore vnto the Church, and there to render thankes and praifes vnto God; and the Preachers were commanded to exhort the people thereunto. The foresaid solemnity was observed upon the 19.0f November : which day was wholly spent in Preaching, praying, giving thankes, with the accustomed solemnities of IQ

Bonfires, Singing, Ringing, and other wonted expressions of publike iov. Likewife, the Queenes Maielty her felfe, imitating the ancient Romans, rode into London in eriumph, in regard of her owne and her subjects glorious deliuerance. For being attended voon very folemnly by all the principall effates and officers of her Realme, the was carried thorow her Gid Citie of London in a triumphant chariot, and in robes of triumph, from her Palace vnto the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul, out of the which the enfignes and colours of the vanquified Spaniards hung displaced. And all the Citizens of London in their Liveries flood on either fide the street, by their seuerall Companies, with their Ensignes and Banners : and the streets were hanged on both fides with Blew cloath, which, together with the forefaid Banners, yeelded a very trately and gallant prospect. Her Maiesty being entered into the Church, together with her 20 Cleroy and Nobles gaue thankes vnto God, and caused a publike Sermon to be preached before her at Pauls Croffe; wherein none other argument was handled, but that praise, honour, and glory might be rendered vinto God, and that Gods name might be extolled by thankfgining. And with her own Princely voyce the most Christianly exhorted the people to doe the fame : whereupon the people with a loud acclamation wished her a most long and happy life, to the confusion of her foes. The Lord Admirall had a penfion affigned for his good feruice.

out of Scotland, related to her Maieftie the King of Scots faithfull friendship, and love to her, and to the Religion. He had beene employed to the faid King, whiles the Spanish Fleet housed on the coast, to gratulate with him in the Queenes name, for his alacrity in the common cause, and to 30 obtaine his promise of aide, if the Spaniards landed in Scotland; and to put him in minde how ambitiously the Spaniard lought to I wallow in all Britaine, viging the Pope to Excommunicate him fo to ftrip him of Scotland, and quit his succession in England; to admonish him of the threats of Mendoza and the Popes Nuntio; that therefore he should be very wary of the Papists in Scotland. He answered conceitedly, amongst other speeches, that be bepedfor no other benefit from the Spaniard, then that which Polyphemus had promifed Vlyffes, namely, that when the rest were denoured, be frould be fwallowed laft.

This publike toy was increased by Six Robert Sidney (now Earle of Leicester) who returning

Thus the magnificent, huge, and mighty fleet of the Spaniards (which themselves tearmed in all places inuincible) fuch as failed not voon the Ocean Sea many hundreth yeeres before, in the veere 1588.vanished into smoake; to the great confusion and discouragement of the authours 40 thereof. In regard of which her Maiesties happy successe all her neighbours and friends congratulated with her, and many Verses were penned to the honour of her Maiesty by learned men, whereof we will here annexe thole of Maiter Beza.

triumphall Ad (ereni fimam Elizabetham Anglia Reginam Theodor.Bezg.

Epinitian or

The Kings wife

C Trauerat innumeris H: spanus nauibus aquor, Regnis iuncturus fceptra Britanna fuis. anta buins, rogitas, qua motus causa? superbos Impulit Ambitio, vexit Anaritia. Quam bene te ambitio mersit vanissima ventus? Et tumidos tumida, vos superastis aqua! Quam bene totius raptores orbis aueros, Hanfit inexhaust: inst a vorago maris! At tu,cui venti, cui totum militat aquor,

Regina, ô mundi totius vna, decus, Sic regnare Deo perge, ambitione remota, Prodiga sic opibus perge innare pios, Vi te Anglislongum Angles ipsa fruaris, Quam dilecta bonis, tam metuenda malis.

The same in English.

With fo great rage as nothing could appeale, And with fuch ftrength as never feene before :

Now if you aske what fet this King on fire. To practife warre when he of peace did treat. It was his Pride, and neuer quencht defire, To spoile that Ilads wealth, by peace made great: 50 His Pride which far aboue the heavens did iwel And his defire as vnfuffic'd as hell. But well have winds his proud blafts overblown And swelling waves alaid his swelling heart, Well hath the Sea with greedy gulfs vnknown, Denoured the denourer to his imart: And made his ships a pray vnto the fand, That meant to pray vpon anothers land. And now, O Queene, about all others bleft,

And all to joyne the Kingdome of that land

Vnto the Kingdomes that he had in hand.

For whom both winds &waues are preft to fight 62 So rule your owne, fo fuccour friends opprest, The Spanish Fleet did flote in narrow Seas, So rule your owne, so succour friends oppre And bed her ships against the English shore, (As fatre from pride, as ready to doe right) That England you, you England long enioy, No leffe your friends delight, then foes annoy:

CHAP. II. Packet of lyes, concerning the successe of the Catholike Army.

I have thought good to adde here the prime reports made by the Spaniards and their friends, touching the successe of their Armada, as they were printed in Spaine, and after published and sourced in England.

The true Relation of the successe of the Catholike Armie against their Enemies, by the Letters of the Post-master of Lograno of the fourth of September, and by Letters from Roan of the one and thirtieth of August, and by Letters from Paris of the Kings Embassadour there: wherein be declareth the imprisonment of Francis Drake, and other great Nobles of England, and how the Queene . Like lips is in the Field with an Armie, and of a certaine Mutinie which was amongst the libelette ce.

is in the Field with an Armie, and of a certainte Millian which was almongst the Abland BalOueenes Armie, with the successe of the said Casholike Armie since they entred Industry she in the Groyne, till they came on the Coast of England, with two Ballets * com- Homer for Apounded by Christoner Brauo, a blind man of Cordona, Printed with licence by chillun con-

Gabriel Ramos Beiarano Printer.

and oversbrew the English Armie.

"He newes of England is confirmed here, by a Letter of the Governour of Roan. Hee writes hee By a Letter of He newes of England is confirmed were, by a Letter of the Common of Land to English Ar Diego Peres, buth in his power the chiefe Pilos of Captains Drake, and that he knowed that all the English Ar Diego Peres, buth in his power the chiefe Pelis. mic remained ouerthrowne, baning funke two and twentie Ships, and taken forte, and imprisoned Francis chiefe Post Drake, having given them chase almost as high as Abspurge, and same many by the sword, and likewise master of Lofaith that there was found in Captaine Drakes Ship, a Peece of Ordnance of fine and twentie foot long, second of Sepwhich discharged a Shot of a hundreth weight at once made of purpose, with one onely Shot to since our tember. 1488. Spanish Admirall, and it pleased God, alibough shee was somewhat battered, yet was shee repaired againe.

He English baue loft abone fortie Ships in one encounter where they could not flye, which was in Copic of 2 Luxaten a Hauen in Scotland , to the which place , fince the departure of the Spanish Armies letter that tohn from Calleis, the English Armie followed , and supposing they went to take that Hanen, they got before Gamara wince 20 ours to defend the entrance : wee feeing them fo neere the English Fleet, and that they could not retire, as 31.0fAugust of they almaies did when they pleafed to the English Hamme, shop you want tone very come now retire, as 3.0.6August of they almaies did when they pleafed to the English Hamme, shop you would not be withouth that they fanke the sum eyere them to five shops, and they rest receive from the sum of the world of the sum of the away with great leffe of men, and their Ships very much battered, and with this (they fay) the Spanish Armic tooke the Hauen where they are very well ledged, as every one affirmeth, and so the newes is here: I pray God give them good successe: Wee understand by the Post come from Calleis, that in England it is forbidden upon paine of death and loffe of goods, that he bodie doe write newes from thence to any place : which confirmeth the newes about.

Doe not write news of the Spanish Armie , because they are diners, and would gladly write the very Copie of a and truth. Now by the newes which runneth from divers places, as Calleis, Deepe, and Holland, and Letter that presumptions from England and other places, it is holden for certaine that they fought with the English, Pèare de And and broken their heads, having funke many of their Ships and taken others, and the rest which ther far, did write from and broken their beads, having junke many of their Soups and tagen others, and to east which they far were twentie feuen Ships, returned very much battered to the River of London, which are all those that of September could escape: There goeth with this Post another Post of lorge Seguin of Calleis, which faith that cer- of the same taine Masters and Mariners of Zeland, did affirme to the Governours of Calleis, Mounsier de Gorden, yeere. that our Fleet is in a Hanen or Riner in Scotland, called Trifla, where they (ay there may ride two thou-(and Ships : this is that which commonly is current here.

Tnewes from London the thirtie fix of August, it is knowne for most certaine from persons of cre- Adule from 50 Bdite, that the Queens Admiral Generall was arrived in the River of London, with twentie fine (hips Lendon, which onely without his Admirall Ship, which was taken by our Admirall Saint John, and it is well knowne in dor of our So-England, that to hide the loffe of their Admirall Ship, they fay bee put bimfelfe in a smaller Ship the bet- uereigne Lord ter to follow our Armie: and it is knowne for certaintie that be faued bimfelfe in a Boat when he lost his the King reli-Ship, That Drake for certaintse is taken or flaine. The same is confirmed by the way of Holland, by dentin Paris a Pinnace of theirs. And from Austerland, that the Queene commanded upon paine of death, that no had from body Rould Speake of ber Flees, and that there was great forrow in those parts of England, and that the thence. Oncene bad in the field thattie thou fand raw Souldiers , betwint Douer and Mirgate , and that the Catholikes understanding that all their Fleet was dispersed, moned a terraine Mutinie, which forced the By a Letter of Queene to got ber felfe into the Field, and for certaine it is knowne that there is not brought into Eng- the chiefe Post

cone into Scotland, and arrived in a Hanen called Trapena Euxaten. Fier that I had written this, here is arrived a Scottishman, which faith that all the spanish Fleet the cofsep. Ass arrined in Scotland, and that Scottishmen base taken Armes against the English.

60 land, neither Ship nor Boat of ours, more then the Ship of Don Pedro Valdez, and that our Fleet was mafter of Eurto the Franch Embaffadour,

CHAP. 12.

Relation of that which this day, the fifth of Sept. 1588.till three of the clock in the atternoon. knowne by the relations and aduice come co his Maiettie from the happy Fleet, wherot is Generall the Duke of Medina, in the conquest of

THat upon the thirtieth of July, without seeing any sayle of the Enemies in the Sea, her came to the Channell, fixe leagues from Plimouth : where understanding the Enemies were , bee 240 ha hasted till thered together and let in order all the Fleet: and Jayling the first of August, there was discourred some Sayles of the Enemies , the which the second day were numbred to bee threescore Sayle of which the Duke tooke the wind, and paffed without any fight, although he presented the same to them how best they becan to floot at the Rearward : but the Duke in the Galleon S. Martin, fet the Prom of his Ship against the big gelt of the Enemies, the which being succoursed by twentie others, fled away of this fight and first encounter, there was sunke three Galeasses, and foure mightie Galeons of the Queenes there was burnt of ones by negligence of a Gunner, the Admirall of Oquendo, and the Enemies tooke the chiefe Shis of Don Pedro de Valdez, which being entangled with others under his charge : was left without to Tackle, and so neere the Enemies, that shee could not be succoured by others.

With this, our Fleet feeing that the Enemy in enery point did five from gining battell, they failed with Some salme weather, and the Enemies after them, Shooting alwayes at the Rearward, until the Senenth. that our Fleet ancored in the Road of S. John, betwiet Calleis and Bollin, nine leagues from Dunkerk. and the Enemies did the libe, the neerest they could to England.

The niebs being approached she Enemies got up their Ankers to get wind, and not to suffer our Shae to see out of the Road to Sea, because they had trimmed eight Ships of fire, which with the current of the water . Should have put themselves amongst our Ships to have burnt them. But my Lord the Duke, forelesing the danger preuented them , with commandement that the Ships that were neerest should cut their Cables, and take up the others with a readinesse uncredible : and with this the Enemies pretence was him- 20 dered, and fo got the Sea most branely and with good fortune, that if bee had not done it our Army Sould have beene in an enill case, for in the very place where we left, there was shot off by them out of those fiery Ships, fuch Fires and other Engines , that were sufficient to burne the Sea , much more Ships which are made of Wood and Pitch.

In this departure, the Captaine of the Galeaffes had a great mischance : for getting up her Anker, a Cable fell foule of her Helme, that thee could not follow the rest, which caused one of her sides to be so the that her Ordnance could not play, and fo twentie fine Pennaces came and battered ber, and with all this if the Mariners. Souldiers and Rowers that were in her had not cast them felues into the Seast is holden for certaine, that Don Hugo de Moncada bad defended ber, as he did untillfe came into Caffeis, where at the entrance thereof, be was killed of two (aliner flot, the people on floure defended the Galeaffe, and all 30 that was in ber, and delinered the fame to our Soneraigne Lord the Kings Miniflers.

At this time the Duke had a very franke wind, and the like had the Queenes Fleet : and fo they both paffed by the fight of Dunkerke, informuch as they on Land buen the Gallion S. Martin, and others that went fighting with the English Army, and in this order they went till the tweffit.

Afterwards they write, that their came into Calleis a Ship, which faith, that the twelfth day they did fee the two Fleets together in fight : another which came afterwards, faid he had feene some Ships footled and torne, and from them they threw out their bag gage which they faned in Boats, which are neth they were Ships of the Enemies, for that our men had no place to faue them felnes, nor there were none of them arrived into Flanders, which was their place of recurne.

Ot of England was adulfeginen, that on the thirteenth arrived lifteene of the Queenes Ships, and they faid that the Gallem S.Martin, wherin my Lord the Duke is (whom God preferse) had encountred with Drake, and had grappled his Ship, and captived his Person, and other Noble Englishmen, and taken other fifteene Ships, befide others that were distreffed, and the Duke with his Fleet followed his way io Scotland, because the wind was not come about.

With these newes his Maiesty resteth very much contented, and cansed them to be sent to the Empresse, by the bands of Francisco Ydiaquez, bis Secretary of Estate.

Imprinted in Senil, in the Houle of Cofmo de Lara, Printer of Bookes, by licence of the Counte of Orgaz, Affiftant in Sewill.

CHAP. XII.

A Discourse of the Portugali Voyage, A. 1589. Sir I o HM NORRIS and Sir FRANCIS DRAKE Generalls, written (as is thought) by Colonell ANTONIE WINGFIELD, imployed in the fame Voyage, formerly published by his friend to whom it was written : and here abbreniated.



Auing determinately purposed to put on this habite of a Souldier, I grew doubt- 60 full whether to employ my time in the warres of the Low-countries, which are in auxiliarie manner maintained by her Maiestie, or to follow the fortune of this voyage, which was an aduenture of her and many honourable personages, in retienge of vinlupportable wrongs offered vato the effate of our Country by the

Castilian King: in arguing whereof, I finde that by how much the Challenger is repured before the Derendant, by so much is the journey to bee preferred before thole defensive Warres. For had the Duke of Parma his turne beene to defend, as it was his good for une to inuade; from whence could have proceeded that glorious honour which thefe late warres have laid ypon him, or what could have beene faid more of him, then of a Respondent (though never so valiant) in a private Duell ? Even that he hath done no more then by his honour he was tied vnto. For the gains of one Towne, or any small defeat grueth more renowne to the Ailulant, then the defence of a Countrey, or the withstanding of twentie encounters, can yeeld any man who is bound by his place to guard the fame : whereof as well the particulars of our age, especially in the Spanier d, as the reports of former Hiltories may affure vs, which have ftill layed the fame of all warres upon the Inuader. And doe not ours in thefe dayes line obfcured in Flanders, either not having wherewithall to manage any warre, or not putting on Armes, but to defend themselves when the enemy shall procure them ! Whereas in this short time of our Adventure, we have won A brieferea Town by Escalade, battered and aliaulted another, ouerthrowne a mightie Princes power in the hearfall of the Field, landed our Army in three feuerall places of his Kingdome, marched feuen dayes in the heart Exclip exploirs of his Country, lyen three nights in the Suburbs of his principall Citie, beaten his forces into the in this voyage, Gates thereof, and poff-ffed two of his frontier Forts , as shall in discourse thereof more particularly appeare, Bu: our Army, which hath not coft her Maiestie much about the third part of one yeeres expences in the Low-countries , hath already fpoyled a great part of the prouision hee had made at the Groine of all forts, tor a new voyage into England; burnt three of his Ships, whereof one was the second in the last yeeres expedition, called S. Inan de Colorado; taken from him aboue 150, Peeces of good artillery; cut off more then 60. Hulkes, and 20, French Ships well manned fit and ready to serue him for men of warre against vs , laden for his store with Corne , Victualls, Mafts, Cables and other merchandizes ; flame and taken the principall men of Warre hee had in

Galitia : made Don Pedro Euriques de Gusman, Conde de Fuentes, Generall of his forces in Portugall,

shamefully run a: Peniche ; laid along of his best Commander in Lisbon; wherefore I directly con-

clude that this proceeding is the most fate and necessary way to be held against him, and therefore

more importing then the warre in the Low-countries. I doubt not but this voyage hath sufficient-

ly made knowne what they are even vpon their owne dunghill; which, had it bin fet out in fuch

fort as it was agreed vpon by their first demand, it might have made our Nation the most glorious

people of the world. For hath not the want of eight of the twelue Peeces of Artillery , which were promifed vnto the Aduenture, lost her Maie ity the post fion of the Groine and many other places, as hereafter shall appeare; whose defensible rampiers were greater then our battery (such asit was) cold force : and therefore were left vnattempted ! It was also resoluted to have sent 600, English Horles of the Low-countries, whereof wee had not one, notwithstanding the great charges expended in their transportation hither ; and that may the Army affembled at Puente de Burger thanke God of, as well as the forces of Portugall, who fore-ran vs fix dayes together : Did we not want leuen of the thirteen old Companies, which we should have had from thence; foure of the ten Duteb Companies ; and fix of their men of Warre for the Sea, from the Hollanders: which I may juitly lay wee wanted, in that we might have had so many good Souldiers, so many good ships, and to many able bodies more then wee had? Did there not upon the first thinking of the journey, divers gallant Courtiers put in their names for Adventurers to the sum of 10000. li. who feeing it went forward in good earnest, aduised themselves better, and laid the want of so much money upon the journey Was there not moreouer a round summe of the aduenture fpent in leaving, furnishing, and maintaining three moneths one thousand fine hundred men for the feruice of Berghen, with which Companies the Mutinies of Oftend were suppressed, a seruice of no fmall moment : What mifery the detracting of the time of our fetting out, which should have beene the first of

February, did lay vpon vs, too many can witnesse: and what extremitie the want of that months 50 victuals which wee did eat, during the moneth wee lay at Plimonth for wind, might have driven vs vnto, no man can doubt of, that knoweth what men doe line by, had not God given vs in the end a more prosperous wind and shorter passage into Galitia then hath been often seene, where our owne force and fortune remictualled vs largely : of which croffe winds, that held vs two dayes after our going out, the Generalls being weary, thrust to Sea in the same, wifely chufing rather to attend the change thereof there, then by being in Harbour to lofe any part of the better, when it should come by having their men on shoare : in which two dayes twentie five of our Companies shipped in part of the Fleet were scattered from vs , either not being able or willing to double Ulbant.

These burdens layed upon our Generalls before their going out, they have patiently endured, 60 and I thinke they have thereby much enlarged their honour : for nating done thus much with the rali Drake. want of our Artillery, 600. Horie, 3000. Foot, 20000. It, of their adventure, and one moneths victualls of their proportion, what may be consectured they would have done with their full complement : For our instruction against them, who had almost seduced you from the true opinon education and you hold of such men, you shall understand that Generall Norris from his booke was trained up complyments,

in the warres of the Admirall of France, and in very young yeeres had charge of men under the Earle of Effex in Ireland : which with what commendations hee then discharged, I leave to the report of them who oblered those services. Vpon the breach betwixt Don John and the States. he was made Colonell Generall of all the English Forces there present, or to come, which he contimued two yeeres : he was then made Marshall of the Field vinder Conte Hobenlo : and after that. Cronstall of the Army in Frifand: at his comming home in the time of Monfieurs government in Flanders, he was made Lord Prefident of Munster in Ireland, which he yet holdeth, from whence within one weere hee was fent for, and fent Generall of the English Forces, which her Majeffie leat then to the Low-countries, which he held till the Eatle of Leicesters going ouer. And he was made Marshall of the Field in England, the enemy being vpon our Coast, and when it was expected the Crowne of England should have beene tried by battell. All which places of Command which never Englishman successively attained vnto in forraine warres, and the high places her Majestie hath thought him worthy of , may suffice to perswade you that hee was not altogether valikely to discharge that he vadertooke.

What fame Generall Drake hath gotten by his journey about the world, by his adventures to the West Indies, and the scourges hee hath laid upon the Spanish Nation, I leave to the Sontherne parts to speake of. But to answere the reports, which have beene given out in repreach of the Actors and Action by fuch as were in the fame : let no man thinke otherwite, but the they, who fearing the caruall accidents of Warre had any purpose of returning, did first adulle of fome occasion that should move them thereunto : and having found any what locuer did thinke it 20 full iently just, in respect of the earnest defire they had to seeke out matter that might colone

their comming home.

Of these there were some, who having noted the late Flemish wars, did find that many young men haue gone over and fafely returned Souldiers within few moneths, in having learned fome words of Art yied in the wars, and thought after that good example to fpend like time among it vs: which being expired they began to quirrell at the great mortalitie that was among t vs. The neelect of diffipline in the Armie, for that men were suffered to bee drunke with the plentie of Wines. The fearlitie of Surgions. The want of carriages for the hurt and ticke : and the penury of victualls in the Campe: It hath beene proued by fluckt examinations of our Muffers, that we were never in our falnelle before our going from Plimenth 11000. Souldiers, nor about 2500. 30 Mariners. It is also enidene that there returned about 6000, of all forts, as appeareth by the feperall paiments made to them fince our comming home. And I have truely thewed you that of thefe numbers very neere three thousand for looke the Armie at the Sea, whereof fome passed into France, and the rest returned home. So as wee never being 13000 in all, and having brought home about fix thousand with vs, you may see how the world hath beene seduced, in beleeuing that we have left 16000. men by ficknelle.

If at home in the eyes of your Indices, Majors, Preachers, and Mafters, and where they pay for query pot they take, they cannot be kept from their liquor : doe they thinke that those base difordered persons whom themselves sent vnto vs, as living at home without rule, who hearing of Wine doe long for it as a daintie that their puries could never reach to an England, and having it 40 there without money even in their houses where they lie and hold their guard, can be kept from being drunke; and once drunke, held in any order or tune, except we had for every drunkard an Officer to attend him ! But who bee they that have run into their diforders ! Euen our newest men, our youngest men, and our idlest men, and for the most part our flouenly prest men, whom the luftices (who have alwayes thought vnworthily of any warre) have fent out as the four and dregs of the Countrey. And those were they, who distempering themselves with their hot Wines, haue brought in that fickneffe, which hath infected honefter men then themfelues. But I hope, as in other places the recourry of the difease, doth acquaint their bodies with the ayre of the Countrey where they be, so the remainder of these which have either recourred, or past without ficknesse will proue most fit for Martiall services.

If we have wanted Surgeons, may not this rather be laid youn the Captaines (who are to proui le for their seuerall Companies) then vpon the Generalls, whole care hath been more generall. And how may it be thought that every Captaine, vpon whom most of the charges of raising their Companies was laid as an aduenture, could provide themselves of all things expedient for a war, which was alwayes wont to be maintained by the purfe of the Prince. But admit enery Captain had his Surgeon : yet were the want of curing neuen beleffe : for our English Surgeons (for the most part) bee vnexperienced in hurts that come by shot because England hath not knowne warres but of late, from whole ignorance proceeded this discomfort, which I hope will warne those that hereafter goe to the warres, to make preparation of luch as may better preserve mens

From whence the want of carriages did proceed, you may conjecture in that wee marched through a Country neither plentifull of fuch provisions, nor willing to part from any thing yes this I can affure you, that no man of worth was left either hurt or nicke in any place vopromitted for. And that the Generall commanded all the Mules and Affes, that were laden wire any bagpage to be vaburdened and taken to that yie : and the Earle of Effer and he for mony hired men gage to de about the said the Earle (whole true vertue and nobilitie, as it dothin all other his worthy his actions appeare, logidat very much in this) threw downe his owne fluffe, I meane apparell Acis. and necessiates which here had there from his owne carriages, and letzhem be left by the way to put burrand licke men your chem.

And the great complaint that these men make for want of victurils; may well proceed from their not knowing the wants of warre; for if to feed voon good Beeues, Muttons, and Goares, be to want , they have endured great francisie at Land , whereup to they never wanted two dayes , together wine to mixe which their water, nor bread to eat with them meat (in forme quantitie) ex-10 cept is were fuch as had vowedrather to there then to the out of their places for tood; of whom we have too many.

After tix dayer tayling from the Coaft of England, and the fifth after we had the wind good, be. Our men land ing the sweatieth of Aprill in the evening, we landed in a bay more the state English mile from the within a mile Groine, in our long Boats and Promaces without any impeachments from whence we prefectly of the G one marched toward the Towne, within one talke mile weowere encountred by the enemy, who being charged by ours, retired into their gates. For that might our Armietay in the Villages, Houses, and Mils next adjoyning, and very neere round about the Towne, into the which the G deon named S. John (which was the fecond of the last yeeres Flect against England) one Hulke, two smaller Ships, and two Gallies which were found in the Road, did beat vpon vs and vpon our 20 Companies as they palled too and tro that night and she next morning. General Norris having that morning before day viewed the Towne, found the fame defended on the Lind fide (for it franderh vpon the necks of antland) with a wall vpon adry Disch: whereupon hee refolued to try in two places what might be done against it by Escalade, and in the meane time adulied for the landing of some Artillerie to be upon the Ships and Gallies, that they might not annoy vs : which being buttin execution, woon she planting of the first Peece the Gallies abandoned the Road, and berooke them to Ferell, not farre from thence : and the Armada being beaten with the Artillery and Musketers that were placed upon the next shoare, left her playing upon vs. The reft of the day was frent in preparing the Companies and other promitions readie for the furprise of the bale Towne, which was effected in this fort.

There were appointed to bee landed 1200, men, under the conduct of Colorell Huntler, and Captaine Fewer the Vice-Admirall, on that fide nemetroning weby water in long Boates and Pinnaces, wherein worst placed many Perces of Artillery to beat upon the Towne in their spproach : at the corner of the wall, which defended the other water file, were appointed Captain Richard Wong field, Lieutenant Colonell to Generall Naris, and Captaine Sampfon, Lieutenant Colonell to Generall Drate, to enter at low water with fine hundred men it they found it piffable,but if not, to betake them to the Efeulede, for they had also Ladders with them fat the other corner of the wall, which towned to that fide that was attempted by water, were appointed Colonell Umpion, and Colonell Bret, with three bundred men to enter by Efcalade, All the Companies which should enter by Boat being imbarked before the low water, and having given the 40 alarme, Captaine Wingfield and Captaine Sampfon betooke them to the Efculade, for they had in commandement to chargeall at one initant. The Boats landed without any great diffidultie : vet had they some men hurt in landing. Colonell Bret, and Colonell Fington entred their quarter without encounter, not finding any defence made against them : for Captaine Hinder being one of them that entred by water, at his first entry, with some of his owne companie whom hee trufted well, betooke himfelie to that part of the wall, which hee cleered before that they offen red to enter, and fo fcoured the wall, till he came on the backe of them, who maintained the fight against Captaine Wingfield and Captaine Sampson; who were twice bearen from their Ladders, and found very good resistance, till the enemies perceiving ours entred in two places at their backes, were driven to abandon the fame. The reason why that place was longer defended then 50 the other, is (as Don Inan de Lune, who commanded the fame affirmeth.) that the enemie that day had refolued in counfell how to make their defences, if they were approached : and therein concluded, that, if wee attempted it by water, it was not able to bee held, and therefore upon the discovery of our Boates, they of the high Towne should make a fignall by fire from thence, that all the low Towne might make their recreat thither : but they (whether troubled with the fudden terror we brought vpon them, or forgetting their decree) omitted the file, which made them guard that place till we were entred on every tide.

Then the Towne being entred in three feuerall places with an huge cry, the Inhabitants betooke them to the high To a netwhich they might with leffe perill doe, for that ours being frangers there, knew not the way to cut them off. The rest that were not put to the sword in f. rie, fied to the Rocks in the liand, others hid themselves in Chambers and Sellers, which were every day found in great numbers.

Amongst those Don Inun de Luna, a man of very good commandement, having hidden himselfe in a houle, did the next morning yeeld himfelfe. There was also taken that night a Commissarie of victuals, called luan de Vera, who contested that there were in the Groine at our entrie fine hun-

dred Soulders, being in feuen Companies, which returned very weake (as appeareth by the fmall numbers of them) from the journey of England. The rest falling into the hands of the common Soundiers, bad their throats cut, to the number of fine hundred as I conjecture, first and last after Intemporate wee had entred the Towne; and in the entry thereof there was found entrie Seller full of Wine. drinking cause whereon our men by inordinate drinking, both grew themselves for the present sensielse of the danger of the fhot of the Town, which hurs many of them being drunk, and tooke the first ground of their ficknesse; for of fuch was our first and chiefest mortalitie. There was also abundant store N wyovage to of Victualls, Salty and all kind of prouision for shipping and the warre : which was confessed be Escland inco. the faid Committary of Violualls taken there, to be the beginning of a Magasin of all softs of prothe faid Committary or Visitians season whereby you may consecture what the spoile thereof hath usifion for a new Voyage into England: whereby you may consecture what the spoile thereof hath advantaged vs, and prejudiced the King of Spaine.

The next morning about eight of the clocke the enemies abandoned their Ships, And having ouercharched the Astillery of the Gallion, left her on fire, which burnt in terrible fort two dates Gallion burne, together, the fire and ouercharging of the Peeces being fo great, as of fiftie that were in her, there were not about fixteene taken out whole; the rest with ouercharge of the powder being broken and molten with heat of the fire, were taken out in broken pieces into divers Ships. The fame day was the Cloifter of the South fide of the Towne entred by vs, which joyned verie neere to the wall of the Town, out of the chambers and other places whereof we beat into the fame with our Musketiers.

The next day in the afternoone there came downe fome two thousand man, gathered together out of the Countrey, even to the gates of the Towne, as resolutely (led by what spirit I know 20 not) as though they would have entred the fame : but at the first defence made by ours that had the guard there, wherein were flaineabout eighteene of theirs, they tooke them to their heeles in the tame diforder they made their approach, and with greater fpeed then ours were able to follow : notwithstanding wee followed after them more then a mile. The second day Colonell Huntler was fent into the Countrey with three or foure hundred men, who brought home very

great flore of Kine and Sheepe for our reliefe.

The third day in the night, the Generall had in purpose to take a long Municion-house builded voon their wall, opening towardes vs, which would have given great advantage against them; but they knowing the commodity thereof for vs, burne it in the beginning of the eutning; which put him to a new councell : for he had likewife brought fome Artillery to that fide of the Town. Dangerous fire During this time there happened a very great fire in the lower end of the Towne : which, had it not bin by the care of the Generals heedily feene vnto and the fury thereof preuented by pulling downe many houses which were most in danger, as next vnto them, had burnt all the prouisions we found there, to our wonderfull hinderance.

The fourth day, were planted under the guard of the Cloisters two Demy-canons, and two Coluerings against the Towne, defended or gabbioned with a crosse wall, thorow which our battery lay; the first and second tire whereof shooke all the wall down, so as all the Ordnance lay open to the Enemy, by reason wherof some of the Canoniers were shot and some flaine. The Lieutenant also of the Ordnance, M. Spencer, was flame fait by Sir Edward Norris, Mafter thereof: 40 whose valour being accompanied with an honourable care of defending that trust committed vnto him, neuer left that place, till he receiued direction from the Generall his brother to cease the battery, which he presently did, leaving a guard upon the same for that day; and in the night following made to good defence for the place of the battery, as after there were very few or none annoyed therein. That day Captaine Goodwin had in commandement from the Generall, that when the affault should be given to the Towne, he should make a proffer of an Escalade on the other fide, where he held his guard : but he (mistaking the fignall that would have beene given) attempted the same long before the assault, and was shot in the mouth. The same day the Generalk having planted his Ordnance ready to batter, canted the Towne to be summoned; in which summons they of the Towne shot at our Drum : immediately after that there was one hanged over 50 the wall, and a parle defired; wherein they gaue vs to vinderstand, that the man hanged was hee that shot at the Drum before : wherein they all intreated to have faire wars, with promise of the

ther prisoners, and somewhat of the rendring of the Towne, but not much, for they liftned not greatly thereunto.

Generall Norris having by his skilfull view of the Towne (which is almost all seated vpon 2 Rocke) found one place thereof mineable, did presently set workemen in hand withall; who after three daies labour (and the feuenth after we were entred the base Towne) had bedded their Powder, but indeed not farre enough into the wall. Against which time the breach made by the Canon being thought affaultable, and Companies appointed as well to enter the fame, as that which was expected should be blowne up by the Mine : namely, to that of the Canon, Captaine Richard Wingfield, and Captaine Philper, who led the Generalls Foot-company, with whom allo Captaine Torke went, whose principall commandement was over the Horse-men. And to that of the Mine, Captaine lobs Sampson, and Captaine Anthony Wingfield Lieutenant Colonell to the

fame on their parts. The rest of the parle was spent in talking of Don Inan de Luna, and some o-

CHAP. 12. The Groine, Mine-mischance. Puente de Burgos Battell. 1919

Matter of the Ordnance; with certaine selected out of divers Regiments. All these Companies being in Armes, and the affault intended to be given in all places at an inflant, fire was put to the traine of the Mine; by reason the Powder brake out backwardes in a place where the Caue was made too high there could be nothing done in either place for that day, During this time Captain Provisions Horder was tent with some chosen out of every Company into the Country for provisions, where breught in.

of he brought in good ftore, and returned without luffe. The next day Cap. Anthony Samplon was lent out with fome fine hundred to fetch in ponifiona for the Army, who was encountred by them of the Country, but he put them to flight, and returned with good fo ale. The same night the Miners were fet to worke againe, who by the second To day after had wrought very well into the foundation of the wall. Against which time the Com-

panies aforefaid being in readineffe for both places (Generalt Drate on the other fide, with two or three hundred men in Pinnaces, making proffer to attempt a ftrong Fort voon an Iland before the Towne, where he left more then thirtiemen) fire was given to the teame of the Mine, which blew up halfo the Tower under which the Powder was planted. The affailants having in charge voon the efficiting of the Mine presently to give the affault, performed a accordingly; but too foone : for having entred the top of the breach the other halfe of the Tower, which with the first Towerfalle !! force of the Powder was onely shaken and made loose, sell woon our men twider which were buried about twentie or thirtie, then being under that part of the Tower. This fo amazed our men that flood in the breach, not knowing from whence that terror came, as they for looke their Com-30 manders, and lett them among the ruines of the Mire. The two E tignes of Generall Drake and Ca ptaine Anthony Worg field were for in the breach, but their colours were refeued : the Generails by Captaine Sampfons Lieurenant, and Captaine Wingfields by himfelfe. Amongst them that the wall tell voon, was Cap. Sydenbam pittifully loft; who having three or foure great flones voon his lower parts, was held to fait, as neither himfelfecould ftirre, nor any realonable company recouer him. Not withit anding the next day being found to be alive, there was ten or twelve loft

in accempting to relieve him. The breach made by the Canon, was wonderfully well affaulted by them that had the charge thereof, who brought their men to the pull of the Pike at the top of this breach. And being readie to enter, the loole earth (which was indeede but the rubbilh of the worlde of the wall) with 36 the weight of them that were thereon flipped outwarder from under their feet. Whereby did app: are halfe the wall ymbatthred. For let no man thankpithat Culterin or Demy-canon can fallficiently batter a defentiblerambire : and of those Preces which we had the better of the Demy & canons at the fecond shot brake in her carriages , to me the battery was of seffe force, being but of

In our recreat (which was from both breaches thorow a narrow lane) were many of our men three Peeces hurt ; and Captaine Dolphin, who ferued very well that day, was hurt in the very breach. The failing of this attempt, in the opinion of all the beholders, and of fuch as were of the best judgement wis thefall of the Mine; which had doubtleffe facceeded, the rather, because the approch was vistooked for by the enemy in that place, and therefore not fo much defence made there as in the other, which made the Generall grow to a new resolution : for finding that two daies battery had fo little beaten their wall, and that he had no better preparation to batter withall : he knew its his experience, there was no good to be done that way; which I thinke he first put in proofe, to try if by that terror hee could get the upper Towne, having no other way to put it in hazzard fo speedily, and which in my conscience had obtained the Towne, had not the defendants bin in 25 great peril of their lives by the displeasure of their King in giving it vp, as by the Bullet or Sword in defending the same, For that day before the affault, in the view of our Armie, they burne's Cloifler within the Town, and many other houses adjoyning to the Castle to make it more desenfible: whereby it appeared how little opinion themselves had of holding it against vs , had not God

(who would not have ve fuddenly made proud) laied that misfortune voon ve. The next day the Generall hearing by a prifoner that was brought in, that the Conde de At-

50 drads had affembled an Armie of eight thousand at Puente de Burgos, fixe miles from thente in drads his Ars the way to Petance, which was but the beginning of an Armie ! in that there was a greater leavy mic. ready to come thither under the Conde de Altomira, either in purpole to relieue the Groine; or to encampe themselves neere the place of our embarking, there to hinder the lame; for to that purpole had the Marquelle of Siralba, written to them both the first night of our landing, as the Commiffary taken then conteffed, or at the leaft to ftop our further entrance into the Countrey, (for during this time, there were many incursions made of three or foure hundred at a time, who burnt, spoiled, and brought in victualls plentifully) the Generall, I say, hearing of this Armie, had in purpose the next day following to visite them, against whom hee carried but nine Regiments: inche Vantguard were the Regiment of Sir Roger Williams , Sir Edward Norrie, and Colonell Sadrey in the Battaile, that of the Generall of Colonell Lane, and Colonell Medierte and in the Rareward, Sir Henry Norris, Colonell Huntley, and Colonell Brets Regiments; lea-

Bing the other fine Regiments with Generall Drake, for the guard of the Clouter and Artif-

lery. About ren of the crocke the next day, being the fixe of May, halfe a mile from the Campe,

2 -44 to 2

argent Link

1920 Spaniards overtheowne, Portugalls (poiled. The Groine burned, Lib.X.

wee discourring the enemy Sir Edward Norris, who commanded the Vantguard in chiefe, appointed his Lieutenant Colorieli Captaine Anthony Wingfield to command the thot of the fame, who divided them into three troupes; the one he appointed to Captain Meddleton to be conducted in away on the left hand : mother to Captain Erington to take the way on the right hand, and the bodie of them (which were Mulquetiers) Captamo Wing field tooke himfelfe, keeping the direct way of the march. But the way taken by Captaine Middleton met a little before with the way held by Captaine Wingfield, fo as he giving the first charge voon the enemy, was in the infant leconded by Captaine Wing field, who beat them from place to place (they having very good places of defence and croffe Waltes which they might have held long) till they betooke them to their Bridge, which is over a creeke comming out of the Sea, builded of Stone vpon Ar. ches. On the foot of the further fide whereof, lay the Car pe of the enemy very ftrongly entrenched, who with our hotbeaten to the further end of the Bridge, Sir Edward Norris marchine in the point of the Pikes, without flay palled to the Bridge, accompanied with Colonell Sidner, Captaine Hunder, Captaine Fulferd, and diners others, who found the way cleere over the lame, but through an incredible volley of thot; for that the thot of their Army flanked voon both files of the Bridge, the further end whereof was barricaded with Barrella: but they who should have guarded the same, feeing the proud approach wer made, fortooke the defence of the barricade. where Sir Edward entred, and charging the first defendant with his Pike, with very earnestnesse in overthrufting, fell, and was grieuoully hurt at the fword in the head , but was most honourably rescued by the Generall his brother, accompanied wirh Colonell Sadney, and some other 20 Gentlemen : Captaine Hinder also having his Caske thot off . has five wounds in the head and face at the fword : and Captaine Fulford was shot in the left arme at the same encounter : vet were they fo thorowly fesonded by the Generall, who, thruit himfelfe fo neere to give encouragement to the attempt (which was of wonderfull difficultie) as their braueft men that defended that place being ourrebrowne, their whole Army fell prefently into rout, of whomour men had the chafe three miles in foure fundry waies, which they betooke themfelues vnto. There was taken the Standard with the Kings Armes, and borne before the Generall. How many two thousand men (for of so many consisted our Vantamed) might kill so pursuit of foure fundry parties, fo many you may imagine fell before vs that day. And to make the number more great, our men having given over the execution, and returning to their flands a found many hidden in the 30 Vineyards and Hedges, which they dispatched. Also Colonell Mentore was feat with his Regiment three miles further to a Cloifter, which thee burnt and spoiled, wherein he found two hundred more, and put there to the fword. There were flaine in this fight on our fide onely Captain Cooper, and one private Souldier; Captaine Barton was also hurt vpon the Bridge in the eye. But had you seene the strong barricades they had made on either fide of the Bridge; and how strongly they lay encamped thereabouts, you would have thought it a rare refolution of ours to give lo braue a charge vpon an Armie fo strongly lodged. After the fury of the execution, the Generall fent the Yantguardone way, and the battell another, to burne and spoile; fo as you might have feene the Countrey more then three miles compalle on fire. There was found very good flore of Munition and victualis in the Campe, tome plate and sich apparell, which the betterfort left be- 40 hind, they were so hotly pursued. Our Sailers also landed in an Iland next adjoyning to our ships. where they burnt and spoiled all they found. Thus we returned to the Groine, bringing small com-

fore to the enemy within the fame, who that many times at vs as we marched out; but not once in our comming backe againe. The next day was fpent in shipping our Artillery landed for the battery, and of the rest taken at the Graine, which had it beene fuch as might have given ve any afforance of a better battery, or had there beene no other purpose of our journey but that, I thinke the Generall would have spent fome more time in the fiege of the place.

The two last nights, there were that vndertooke to fire the higher Towne in one place, where the hondes were builded upon the wall by the water fide; but they within suspecting as much, 50 made to good defence against vs, as they prevented the same. In our departure there was fire put into energe house of the low Towne, intomuch as I may fuftly fay, there was not one house left standing in the base Towne, or the Cloister.

The next day, being the eight of May, wee embarked our Armie without losse of a man, which (had wee no: beaten the enemie at Puente de Burgos) had beene impossible to have done.

After we had put from thence, we had the wind to contrarie, as we could not undernine daies recouer the Barlings ; in which passage on the thirteenth day the Earle of Effex, and with him M. Walter Doneraumhis brother (a Gentleman of wonderfull great hope) Sir Refer Williams Colonell Generall of the Footmen, Sir Philip Butler, who hath alwaies beene most inward with him, and Sir Edward Pingfield , came into the Fleet. The Earle put off in the fame wind from 60 Falmoush, that weeleft Plimouth in, where he lay, because he would avoid the importunitie of Mellengers that were daily fent for his returne, and some other causes more secret to himselfe, not knowing (as it feemed) what place the General's purpoted to land in, had bin as far as Casia in Andalazia, and lay vp and downe about the South Cape, where here tooke fome Ships laden

with Corne, and brought them wato the Fleet. Also in his returne from thence to meet with our Fleet, he fell with the flands of Bayon; and on that fide of the River which Cannas standeth vp. on, he, with Sir Roger Williams, and those Gentlemen that were with him went on shoare, with fom: men out of the Ship he was in , whom the enemy that held guard voon that Coaft, would not abide, but fled vo into the Countrey.

The fixteenth day we landed at Peniche in Portugal, under the fhot of the Caftle, and about the They land at wafte in the water, more then a mile from the town, wherin many were in peril of drowning, by Perice. reason the wind was great, and the Sea went high, which ouerthrew one Boat, wherein fine and twentie of Captaine Dalphins men perished. The enemy being fine Companies of Spaniards, vnor der the commandement of Conde do Fuentes, fallied out of the town against vs, and in our landing made their approach close by the water fide. But the Earle of Effex, with Sir Roger Williams, and his brother, basing landed furncient number to make two troupes, left one to hold the way by the water fide, and led the other over the Sand-hills; which the enemy feeing, drew theirs likewife further into the Land; not, as we coniecured, to encounter vs, but indeed to make their speedie pallage away : not with franching they did it in fuch fort, as being charged by ours which were feat out by the Colonell generall under Captaine lack for, they flood the fame even to the puth of the Pike : in which charge and at the pifth, Captaine Robert Pier was flaine. The enemy being fled further then we had reason to follow them, all our Companies were drawne to the Town; which being vnfortified in any place, wee found undefended by any man against vs. And therefore the 20 Generall caused the Castle to bee summoned that night ; which being abandoned by him that commanded it, a Portugall named Antonio de Aurid, being post: fied thereof, defired but to be assured that Don Antonio was landed, whereupon he would deliver the fame ; which he honeftly performed. There was taken out of the Cattle some hundred Shot and Pikes, which Don Emanual Prinichetaken. furnished his Poringalle withall, and twentie Barrells of Powder : foas posteffing both the Town and the Caltle, we rested there one day; wherin some Friare and other poore men came vuto their new King, promiting in the name of their Countrey next adioyning, that within two dayes hee

Generals company of horfes were vnshipped, The Generalls there fully refolued, that the Armie should march ouer Land to Liben, vader They march 30 the conduct of Generall Norris ; and that Generall Drake should meet him in the River thereof towards Lines with the Fleet; that there hould bee one Company of Foot left in guard of the Caftle, and fix in

the Ships : also that the licke and hurt should remaine there with provisions for their cures. In this march Captaine Criffe the Prouoit Marshall caused one who (contrary to the Proclamation published at our arruall in Persugal) had broken vp an house for pillage, to bee han- Good dice. ged, with the cause of his death woon his breath, in the place where the act was committed: which good example prouidently given in the beginning of our march, saufed the commandement to be more respectively regarded all the lourney after, by them whom feare of punishment doth only hold within compaffe. The Campe lodged that night at Loringe : the next day we had intelligence all the way, that the enemy had made head of Horse and Foot against vs at Tores Vedras. which wee thought they would have held : but comming thither the fecond day of our march, not two houres before our Vantgard came in, they left the Towne and Gaftle to the possession of

Don Antonio. There began the greatest want we had of victuals, especially of bread, you a commandement Want of bicept given from the Generall, that no man (hould spoile the Country, or take any thing from any Paring all : which was more respectively observed, then I thinke would have bin in our owne Countrey, among ft our owne friends and kindred but the Countrey (contrary to promife) wholly neg-Iced the prouition of victuals for vs, wherby we were driven for that time into a great fearlity. Which moved the Colonell Generall to call all the Colonells together, and with them to admite officme better course for our people : who thoughe it beft, frit to advertise the King what neces-30 ficie we were in, before we should of our selves alter the first institution of abstinence. The Colonell generall, having acquainted the Generall herewith , with his very good allowance thereof, went to the King ; who after some expostulations vied , tooke the more carefull erder for our men, and after that our Armie was more plentifully reliened.

The third day we lodged our Armie in three fundry Villages, the one Battalion lying in Exarama de los Canalleros, another in Exarama de Obifo, and the third in San Sibafian. Captain Tarke who commanded the Generalls Horse Company, in this march made triall of the valour of the Horsemen of the enemy; who by one of his Corporals charged with eight Horses thorow fortie of them, and himfelfe thorow more then two hundred, with fome fortie Horfes: who would abide him no longer then they could make way from him.

The next day we marched to Lores, and had divers Intelligences that the enemy would tarry vs there: for the Cardinall had made publike promife to them of Lithon, that he would fight with ws in that place, which he might have done advantageoutly ; for we had a Bridge to pulle ouer in the fame place : but before our comming he diffodged, notwithflanding it appeared vnto vathat her had in purpose to incompe there; for wee found the ground staked out where their trenches Xxxxxxx s

should have a good supply of Herse and Foot for his affishance. That day wee remained there, the

Earle of Effex comes to them.

The notable

te de Burgos,

CHAP. 12.

should have bin made; and their Horsemen with some few Shot shewed themselves voon an Hill at our comming into that Village; whom Sir Henry Norris (whose Regiment had the point of the Vanteard) thought to draw voto fome fight, and therefore marched without found of Drum. and tomewhat faster then ordinary, thereby to get neere them before he were discovered for hee was shadowed from them by an Hill that was betweene him and them : but before he could draw his Companies any thing neere, they retired.

Generall Drates Regiment that night, for the commoditie of good lodging, drew themselves into a Village, more then one English mile from thence, and neere the enemy : who not daring to dor any thing against vs in foure dayes before, tooke that occasion, and in the next morning fell downe voon that Regiment, crying, Vina el Rey Don Antonio, which was a generall falutation to thorow all the Countrey as they came : whom our young Souldiers (though it were youn their guard, and before the watch were discharged) began to entertaine kindly, but having got within their guard, they fell to cut their throats : but the alarme being taken inwards, the Officers of the two next Companies, whose Captaines (Captain Sydnam and Captain Toung) were lately dead at the Grome, brought downe their Colours and Pikes voon them info resolute manner, as they prefently draue them to retire with loffe othey killed of ours at the first entrance fourteene, and The next day we lodged at Aluelana within three miles of Lisben, where many of our Souldi-

Some died with drinking his attempt.

ers drinking in two places of standing waters by the way were poyloned, and thereon prefently dved. Some doe thinke it came rather by eating of Hony, which they found in the houses plentifully. But whether it were by Water or by Hony, the poore men were poifoned. That night the Earle of Effex Earle of Effex and Sir Roger Williams went out about eleven of the clocke with 1000, men to lie in ambuffade neere the Town, and having laied the fame very neere, fent some to give the alarme voto the enemy; which was well performed by them that had the charge thereof but the enemy refuled to like after them. to that the Earls returned as foone as it was light without doing any thing chough he had in purpole, and was ready to have given an honourable charge on them.

They come to

The act of May in the evening we came to the Suburbs of Lisbon : at the very entrance wherethe luburbs of of Sir Roger Williams calling Captaine Anthony Wing field with him, tooke thirtie Shot or thereabouts, and first icowred all the Streets till they came very neere the Towne; where they found none but old folkes and beggars, crying, Vine el Rey Don Antonio, and the houses shut up : for they 30 had carried much of their wealth into the Towne, and had fired fome houses by the waterfide, full of Corne and other econitions of victualis, leaft wer should be benefited thereby, but yet left behind them great riches in many houses. The foure Regiments that had the vantguard that day, which were Colonell Devereux, Six Edward Norris, Colonell Sidneys, and Generall Drakes (whom I name as they marched) the Colonell generall caused to hold guard in the neerest Streets of the Suburbs : the Battel and the Arrereward flood in Armes all the night in Field neere to Alcantara. Before morning Captaine Wingfield , by direction from the Colonell general! Sir Roger Williams, held guard with Sir Edward Norris his Regiment in three places very neere the Towne wall, and fo held the same till the other Regiments came in the morning. About midnight they within the Towns burnt all their houses that stood upon their wall either within or without least we possel- 40 fing them, might chereby greatly have annoyed the Towne.

Hou es burnt

The next morning Sir Roger Williams attempted (but not without perill) to take a Church called S. Antonio, which toyned to the wall of the Towne, and would have been a very euill neighbor to the Towne : but the enemy bassing more easie entry into it then wee, gained it before vs. The relt of that morning was (pent in quartering the Battell and Arrereward in the Suburbs called Bona Vista, and in placing Musquetiers in houses, to from their Shot vpon the wall, who from the same scowred the great Screets very dangerously. By this time our men being thorowly weary with our fixe dayes march, and the last nights

watch, were delirous of rest; whereof the enemy being aduertifed, about one or two of the clocke

Colonell Bret

fallied out of the Town, and made their approach in three feuerall Streets vpon vs, but chiefly in 50 Colonell Brets quarter : who (as most of the Armie was) being at reft, with as much speed as he could, drew his men into Armes, and made head against them to thorowly, as himfelfe was flain in the place, Captaine Carfes thor thorow the thigh, of which hurt hee died within foure dayes after, Captaine Care flaine prefently, and Captaine Cane hurt (but not mortally) who were all of his Regiment. This relifance made as well here, as in other quarters where Colonell Lane and Colonell Medkerk commanded, put them to a sudden foule retreat ; infomuch, as the Earle of Effex had the chale of them enen to the gates of the high Town, wherin they left behind them many of their best Commanders ; their troupe of Horsemen also came out, but being charged by Captain Torke, withdrew themselves againe. Many of them also left the streets, and betooke them to houses which they found open : for the Sergeant Maior Captain Wilfon flew in one house with 60 his owne hands three or foure, and caufed them that were with him to kill many others. Their

and policifed the Town without any refulance : many of the Inhabitants at their discourry of our comming.

loffe I can affure you did triple ours, as well in qualitie as in quantitie. During our march to this place, Generall Drake with the whole Fleet was come into Cafeais,

Name, fled with their baggage into the Mountaines, and left the Towne for any man that would notifie it, till Generall Drake lent unto them by a Portngall Pilot which he had on boord, to of- ken fer them all peaceable kindnesse, so farre forth as they would accept of their King, and minister necessaries to the Armie he had brought; which offer they joyfully imbraced, and presently sent two chiefe men of their Town, to figuifie their loyaltie to Don Antonio, & their boneft affections to our people. Whereupon the Generall landed his Companies not farre from the Cloifter called San Domingo, but not without perill of the shot of the Castle, which being guarded with fixtie

fine Spannards, held flill against him. As our Fleet were catting anker when they came first into that Road, there was a small ship of Brafil that came from thence, which bare with them, and feemed by firiking her failes, as though the would also have ancred : but taking her fittest occasion hossed againe, and would have passed vp the River, but the Generall presently discerning her purpose, sent out a Pinnace or two after her, which forced her in such fort, as she ran her felte what whe Rocka fall the men escaped out of her, and the lading (being many chees of Sugar) was made nothing worth, by the Salt water. In his going thither alfo, he tooke Ships of the Port of Portagell, which were lent from thence, with Ships taken. fifteene other from Pedro Vermendes Xantes Sergeant Major of the fame place, laden with men

and victualls to Lisbon : the rest that escaped put inso detand. The next day it pleafed Generall Nerres to call all the Colonels meether, and to admise with them, whether it were more expedient to carry there to attend the forces of the Portugall Horse

20 and Foot, whereof the King had made promise, and to march tome concenient number to Cafeass to fetch our Artillery and Munition which was all at our thips laving that which for the necessisty of the service was brought along with vs.whereunto, some carried away with the vaine hope of Don Antonio, that the most part of the Town stood folivs, held it best to make our abode tiere; Consultation and to fend fome three thousand of our Artillery : promising to themselves, that the Enemy being well beaten the day before, would make no more fallies : fome others (whose unbeliefe was very strong of any hope from the Portugal) perswaded rather to march wholly away, then to be any longer carried away with the opinion of things, whereof there was so little appearance. The Generall, not willing to leave any occasion of blot to be laid vpon him for his speedie going from thence, nor to lose any more time by attending the hope of Dos Antonio; told them, that though 30 the expedition of Paraged were not the onely purpole of their iburney, but an aductive there in (which if the duced proleproudly might make them subjectedly sick, and wonderful honourble) and that they had done to much alreade in triall thereof; as what end focuer happened could nothing impaire their credits : yet in regard of the Kings last promise, that hee should have that night three thousand armed men of his owne Country, he would not for that night dislodge. The King of Portugall (whether carried away with imagination, by the advertisements he receiued from the Portugalls, or willing by any promise to being such an Armie into his Countrey,

there would be a revolt of his Subjects. After two nights staying at Lisbon , the King , as you have heard promised a supply of three 40 thousand Foot, and some Horse; but all his appointments being expired, even to the last of a night, all his Horse could not make a Cornet of fortie, nor his Foot furnish two Enfignes fully, although promises they carried three or four colours : and these were altogether such as thought to inrich themfelues by the ruine of their neighbours : for they committed more diforders in every place where we came by spoile, then any of our owne.

thereby to put his fortune once more in triall) assured the Generall, that voon his first landing

The Generall, as you fee, having done more then before his comming out of England was required by the King, and given credite to his many promifes, even to the breach of the lait, he defifted not to perswade him to stay yet nine daies longer: in which time hee might have engaged himselfe further, then with any honor he could come out off againe, by attempting a Town tortified, wherein were more men armed against vs, then we had to oppugne them withall, our Artil-50 lery and Municion being fitteene miles from vs., and our men then declining; for there was the first show of any great ficknesse amongst them. Whereby it seemeth, that either his Prelacie did much abuse him in perswading him to hopes, whereof after two or three daies hee law no semblance : or heelike ailly louer, who promifeth himselfe fauour by importuning a coy mistreste, thought by our long being before his Towne, that in the end taking pittie on him they would ket him in. What end the Friers had by following him with fuch deuotion I know not, but fire I am, the Lattie did respite their homage till they might see which way the victorie might sway; fearing to shew themselves apparantly vnto him, least the Spaniard should after our departure (if we preualed not) call them to account : yet fent they underhand messages to him of obedience, thereby to faue their owne, if he became King; but indeed very well contented to fee the Spania 60 ards and vs crie by blowes who should carry away the Crowne. For they be of so base a mould, as they can very well fubicet themselves to any gouernment, where they may interest from

blowes, and have libertie to become rich, being loth to indure hazzard either of life or goods. For durft they have put on any minds thorowly to recolt, they had three wonderfull great occasions offered them during our being there, &c.

Xxxxxxx 3

CHAP. II.

. The next morning, feeing no performance of promife kept, the Generall gaue order for our they make a marching away shimfelfe, the Earle of Effex, and Sir Roger Williams remaining with the stand that was made in the high street, till the whole Armie was drawne into the Field, and so marched out of the Fourier, appointing Captaine Richard Wing field, and Captaine Anthony Winfield in the Arrereward of them with the thot; thinking that the enemy (as it was most likely) would have ished out woon our rising; but they were otherwise aduled. When we were come into the Field, energe Battalion tell into that order which by course appertained vinto them, and so marched that night vinto Cascais. Had wee marched thorow his Country as enemies, our Souldiers had beene well supplied in all their wanes : but had wee made enemies of the Suburbs of Luben. wee had beene the richest Armie that ever went our of England : for besides the particular to wealth of every house, there were many Ware-houses by the water fide full of all forts of rich

The riches that they might haue gotten at

in our march that day the Gallies which had some what, but not much annoyed vs at Lishon. (for that our way lay along the River) strended ve till we were past S. I what, bestowing many fhor amongst vs, but did no harme as ally faving that they ftrooke off a Gentlemans leg, and killed the Sergeant Majors Moule visiter him. The Hortementalio followed vs afarre off, and out off as many ficke men as were not able to hold in march, nor we had carriage for. After we had beene two daies at Cofcais, wee had intelligenceby a Friar, that the enemy was

marchine frongly towards us; and then came as farre as S. Inlian : which newes was lowelcome to the Farle of Effex and the Generalie; so they offered every one of them to gue the Mellenger 20 an hundred Crownes if the ground titem in the place ; for the Generall defiring mothing more then to fight with themma field roome; difpatched that night a Messenger with a Trumpet, by Englife to dight whom the writ a Cartell to the Generall of their Armie, wherein he gaue them the lie, in that it was buthamiteported that week diflodged from Lishon in diforder and feare of them (which indeed mai most falle) for that it was fine if the clocke in the morning before wee fell into Armes, and then went in slich fore, as they had no courage to follow out voon vs. Also he challenged him chereinuse meet him the next morning with his whole Armie, if hee durit attend his comming, and there corry out the infineffe of their quarrell by bartell; by whom also the Earle of Ellex (who preferring the hanounof the taute, which was his Countries, before his owne fafetie) fent a particular Carrell, offering himfelfo against any of theire, if they had any of his qualitie; or if they 30

would libradmit of that; fixydight, orten or as many as they would appoint, should meet so mamy of theirs in the head of our batted toits is their fortunes with them; and that they should have

affurance of their returne and honourable intreatie,

Feare of the

The Generaliaccordingly made all his Armie readie; by three of the clocke in the morning and marched even to the place where they had encamped, but they were diflodged in the night in great dilorder, being taken with a fudden feare that we had been come your them as the Generall was the next day certainely informed a foas the Trumpet followed them to Liston , but could not get other answere to either of his Letters, but threatning to bee hanged; for daring to being fuch a mellage. Howbeit the General had caused to be written woon the backfide of their Paspose, that if they did offer any violence voto the Messengers, he would hand the best prifoners 40 he had of clinis surhidifmade them to add to better of the matter, and to returne them home; but without answered a contract

Afterein Armie came to Calcair, and the Calife funntioned, the Callelian thereof granted, that vpon five or fix that of the Canon he would deliver the fame, but not without fig he thereof. The General chinking that his diffreste within had been such for want of men or victuals, as he could not hold it many dayer , because hee faw it otherwise defenfible enough , determined rather to make him weeld to that necessitie, then to bring the Canon, and therefore onely set a guard upon the lare, leaft any supply of those things which hee wanted should bee brought voto them. But hee fell standing vponthele conditions, the Generallabout two dayes before hee determined to goe to Sea; brought three or foure Peeces of battery against ie t voon the frist tire whereof he fur- 50 rendered, and compounded to goe away, with his bageage and Armes thee had one Canon, two Culturings; one Batiliske, and three or four other Field Peeces, threefcore and five Sculdiers, very good forc of Municion ; and victualisenough in the Caffle; infomuch as hee might have held the fame longer then the Generall had in purpose to trevy there. One company of Footmen was put into the goard thereof, till the Artillery was taken out, and our Armie imbarked; which without having that fort, we could not without great perill have done. When we were readie to les faite (one halfe of the Fort being by order from the Generall blowne vp by mine) the company was drawne away.

During the time we lay in the Road, our Fleet began the fecond of June, and fo continued fix dayes after to fetch in fome Hulks to the number of threefcore, of Danis, Stein, Roflock, Luvech 60 and Hamburgh, laden with Spanish goods, and as it feethed for the Kings provision, and going to Libes : their principall lading was Corne, Matts, Cables, Copper, and Waxe : among t which were some of great burthen wonderfull well builded for failing, which had no great lading in them, and therefore it was thought they were brought for the Kings promision, to reinforce

his decaied Name: whereof there was the greater likelihood, in that the owner of the greatest of them which carried two milnes, was knowne to be very inward with the Cardinall, who rather Cardinall d'then he would be taken with his ships, committed himselfe vnto his small Boate, wherein he ber after marrecoured Saint Sebastians: into the which our men, that before were in flicaboates, were ried to the Inrecovered Saint Sebaftiant: into the which our men, that before were in included, the But fanta and Rushipped, and the Flie-boates fent home with an offer of Corne, to the value of their hire. But fer of the Susthe winde being good for them for Rochel, they chose rather to loose their Corne then the winde, n' B Portot the and fo departed. The General alfo fent his Horfes with them, and from thence shipped them Low Countries. into England.

The third of June, Colonell Deuereux, and Colonell Sidney, being both very ficke, departed for To England, who in the wholesourney had fliewed themselves very forward to all feruices, and in their departure very vinwilling to leaue vs: that day we embarked all our Army, but lay in the

road vatill the eight thereof. The fixt day, the Earle of Effex, vpon receit of Letters from her Maiefly, by them that brought in the victuals, prefently departed towards England, with whom Sir Roger Williams was very

defirous to goe, but found the Generals very viwilling he should do fo, in that he bare the next place vnto them, and if they should militarry, was to command the Army. And the fame day there came vnto vstwo imall Barkes, that brought tidings of some other thips come out of England with victuals, which were passed vowards to the Cape : for meeting with whom, the second day after we fet faile for that place, in purpose after our meeting with them to goe with the Iles of Azorei, the fecond day, which was the ninth, we met with them comming backe agains towards vs. whose provision little answered our expectation. Notwithstanding we resolved to continue our courie for the Ilands.

About this time waithe Marchant Royall, with three or foure other thips, fent to Pemche, to fetch away the commanios that vecrelete there; but Captain Barton having received Letters from the Generala that were forit overland, was departed before, not being able by reason of the enemies speedy marching thicker, either so being a way the artillery, or all his men, according to the direction chafe letters gauthum; for he was no fooner gone, then the themy possessed the Towne and Caftle, and shocat our thips as they came into the road.

At this gine allo was the Ambiffador from the Emperor of Marger enled Reys Hames Ben- Marger Free 36 cafamp, reture, cd, and with him M. Ciprian a Gentleman of good place and defert, who fent from balladour.

Don Autoricand Captaine Onfortromiche Generals to the Emperour.

The nexts meaning the nigo Gallica with left were lent not fine dairs before out of Andalan is for

the fireng thening of the Ruser of Lieben which being royard with the other twelie that were there before, though we lay hard by three at Same lalians, durk never make any attempt against vs) vpon our departure from theirce where texturning home, and in the morning being a very dead calme, in the dawning thereof, fell in the winds of our Hett; in the vtrermoft part whereof they affailed one firsgling Barkens Plimmonth, of the which Capteine Camerley being Captaine of the land company, with his Eientenant, the Mafter, and fome of the Marriners, abandoned the fhip, and betooke them to the thip-boats, whereof one, in which the Mafter and the Captaine were, was operrudus ith the Gallies, and they drowned. There were also two Hulkes stragted far from the frength of che other think, which were fo calmed, as neither they could get to vs. nor we to them, though all the great thips towed with their Bouts to have relieved them, but could not be recourred; in one of which was Captaine Minfham with his company, who fought with them to the laft, yea after his flup was on fire, which whither it was fired by himselfe or by them we could noe well diferre, but might eafily judge by his tong and good fight, that the enemy could not but fulfain much loffer who letting also voon one other Hulke wherein was but a Lieutenant, and he very ficke, wereby the valour of the Lieutenant put off, although they had first beaten her with their artillery, and attempted to boord her. And feeing also one other Hulke a league off, a Sterne of vs, they made towards her : but finding that the made ready to fight with them; they durit not further attempt her: whereby it feemed, their loffe being great in the other fights, they were loath to proceede any further.

From Mar day mill the nineteenth of lune, our direction from the Generall was, that if the winde were Northerly, we should plie for the Azores; but if Southerly, for the Hes of Bayon. We lay with contrary windes about that place and the Rocke, till the Southerly winde prevai- Espon. ling catried vs to Bajon: among whom was Sir Henry Norris in the Ayde; who had a purpole (if the Admirals had not come in) with fome 500, men out of them all to have landed, and attempted the taking of Vige. The rest of the fleet held with generall Drake, who though he were two dayes before put vpon those llands, cast off sgaine to Sea for the Azores: but remembring how vaprouided he was for that journey, and feeing that he had loft company of his great ships, so returned for Bayon, and came in there that night in the cuening, where hee paffed up the River more then a mile about Vigo.

The next morning wee landed as many as were able to fight, which were not in the whole about two thousand men (for in the seuenteene dayes we continued on boord wee had caft

7591

Vice taken.

many of our men ouer-board) with which number the Colonell generall marched to the Towne of Vieo, neere the which when hee approached, he fent Captaine Anthony Winefield with 2 troups of that to enter one fide of the same, who found upon every streetes end a strong barricade, but altogether abandoned; for having entred the Towne, he found but one many here in, but might tee them making way before him to Bayon. On the other fide the Towne entreu Generall Drake with Captaine Richard Wingfield, whose approach on that side (I thinke) made them leave the places they had so artificially made for defence: there were also certains thins fent with the Vice-admirall to lye close before the Towne, to beate upon the farne with

In the afternoone were fent three hundred under the conduct of Captaine Petuin and Captain 10 Henry Poure, to burne another Village betwixe that and Bayon, called Borfis, and as much of the Countrie as the day would give them leave to doe; which was a very pleafant rich Valley: but they burne it all, houses and corne, as did others on the other fide of the Town, both that and the next day, fo as the Countrey was spoiled seuen or eight miles in length. There was found greet flore of Wine in the Town, but not any thing elfe : for the other dates warning of the thins that came first in gaue them a respit to carry all away.

The next morning by breake of the day the Colonell generall (who in the absence of the Generals that were on boord their ships, commanded that night on shoare) caused all our Companies to be drawne out of the Towne, and fent in two troupes to put fire in every house of the fame: which done, we imbarked againe. This day there were certaine Mariners which 20 (without any direction) put themselves on thoure, on the contrary fide of the River from vs

The fame day the Generals feeing what weake estate our Army was drawne into by ficknes. determined to man and victuall twenty of the best ships for the Hands of Azeres, with General Drate, to fee if he could meete with the Indian Fleet, and Generall North to returne home with the rest : And for the shitting of men and victuals accordingly, purposes the next morning to fall downe to the Hands of Bayon againe, and to remaine there that day. But Generall Drake, according to their appointment, being under faile neuer strooke at the llands, but out straight to Sea : whom all the Fleet tollowed fauing three and thirty, which being in the Riper further then he, and at the entrance of the fame, finding the winde and tide too hard against them, were inforced to cast ancre there for that night; among st whom, by good fortune, was the Forefight, and inher Sir Edward Norris. And the night following, Generall Norris being driven from the rest of the Fleet by a great florme (for all that day was the greatest florme we had all the time we were out) came againe into the Hands, but not without great perill, he being forced to turft to a Spanish Fisher-mail (who was taken two dayes before at Sea) to bring him in.

The next morning he called a counfell of as many as he found there, bolding the purpose hee had concluded with Sit Francis Drake the day before, and directed all their courtes for England. tarrying there all that day to water and helpe such with victuall, as were left in wonderfull die fireffe by having the victuals that came last, carried away the day before to Sea.

The next day he fet taile, and he tonth day after, which was the fecond of July came into 40 Plimmouth, where he found Sir Francis Drake and all the Queenes ships, with many of the others but not all: for the Fleete was dispersed into other harbours, some led by a deire of returning from whence they came, and fome being possessed of the hulkes, fought other Ports from their Generals eye, where they might make their private commoditie of them, as they have done to their great advantage: Pretently upon their arrivall there, the Generals diffolued all thearmiefaums eight companies which are yet held together, giung euery Souldier fine fhillings in money, and the armes he bare to make money of, which was more then could by any meanes be due vnto them : for they were not in feruice three moneths, in which time they had their victuals, which no man will value at leffe then halfe their pay, for such is the allowance in her Maiesties ships to her Mariners, so as there remained but ten shillings a moneth to be paid, for which there was not any private man but had apparell and furniture to his owne vie, to as every common Souldier discharged, received more in money, victuals, apparell, and furniture, then his pay did amount voto.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Abriefe and true report of the Honorable Voyage unto Cadiz, 1 596. of the ouerthrow of the Kings Fleete, and of the winning of the Citie, with other accidents, cathered out of METERANYS, Mafter HACKLVYT * and others.



Fer that Callis had beene taken by Cardinali Albert, Archduke of Austria, which the large re-Free that Callis had beene taken by Cardinali Albert, Archduke of Austria, William port of this afterwards by Papall dispensation married the Lady Isabella EngenaClara Infan Voyage witt-14. who vet gouerneth the Belgians which acknowledge the Spaniard, Queene ten byone em-Elizabeth thought it fitter to inuade the Spaniard at home, then to expect his ploied therin : Elizabeth thought it itter to inuace the Spasiant at nome, then to expect his protesters forces here. The faid Cardinall (and Archduke of Auftria) had planted his vinex—or which I rected fledge before Calla, and begun his vinwelcome battery on Wednefday the this which for the control of the

17.06 April 1 506 and the Towne defired truce for foure and twenty houres, which was rejected, und our purwhereupon they yeelded themselves presently voon condition of life and goods faued, and fixe pole. daves truce to be giuen them, with liberty either to flav in the Citie , or to goe to the Caffle; and if the King of Nanarre (Henry the fourth, the French King) did not in that space relieue them, they were to yeelde the Caffle, Most of them betooke themiclaes to the Caffle, and left

no their empty houses to the Conquerours. The night before the truce expired, they began to shoot at the Spaniards, who had now made fo fatall preparations, that the next day, Aprill 24, before noone they had beaten downe the wals and entered, the Gopernour of the Towne and diversothers being flaine. Queene Elizabeth meane while had prepared aide, and the Souldiers and Ships at Leigh in Effex, were detained by the windes, which then were Easterly, and instead of carrying the English thither, brought hither the servible thunders of the Spanish Ordnance; infomuch, that I have heard that they shooke the loofer glasse out of the windowes in Doner and filled the shoares of Essex & Kent with the hideous reports of Calis her visuoidable raine. And thus in fo fhort time the Cardinall won that ancient Port, by Strabe called limm, by Psolomer Gefforiacum (as Meteranus collecteth) which had coft the English eletten moneths fiedge, before they, vnder Edward the third, tooke it, An. 1346. They held it 202, yeers at which time Francis Duke of Ginfe, in the vnhappy dates of Queen Mary, and by reason of her value kie towning with the Spaniards in their warres against the French, recourredit in a few dayes valooked for battery to the French, and therewith tooke " not that Towne "O. Mary faid alone, but the loy of life alfo from that vnfortunate Queene; both which feeming difafters were before her alone, but the loy of the allo from that vanorumate operate; our within temperature that Spatch the price of England fairt purchales; both gains and liberty in the differing of that Spatch that the property of the match had housered our vs. and of the concomitant might cloud which from the time of the match had housered our vs. and of the concomitant her, she plouds. Agtichriftian Papall Milts, which was a (moake from the bottomlesse pit to them which recei- finde calls in uedit, and a fire to them which refused it of what degree soever: and in that as throwes of a herheart. grieuous trauell they brought forth a Virgin, both Truth to the Church, and Queene to the State; 40 the one a fruitfull Mother to the foules, the other to the wealth, honour, domesticke peace, forrainevictories, and Naual glorie of the English Nation. This renowned Queene, eight and thirty yeeres after, vnable to alter that decree of the windes which now feemed themselves, and forced Calis, to become Spanish; would try their windy fidelity in another expedition, and prepared

a strong Fleet to invade the Spanift coast: The charge whereof the committed to the Lord Rabers

Earle of Effex, and the Lord Charles Howard Lord high Admirall of England, who came vnto

Plymmouth (about the beginning of May 1596.) being there accompanied with divers other no-

ble Peeres, as the Earle of Suffex, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Herbers, the Lord Warden Sir

Walter Raleigh: the Lord Marhall Six Francis Vere: the Lord Burk, Don Christopher yong Prince

of Portugal, yong Count Lodowick of Naffaw, and the Admirall of the Hollanders, Sir John Vander-

this most honorable Action : It pleased them, there to make their aboade for the time of that

moneth, aswell for the new furnishing and reuictualing of her Maiesties Royall Nauie; as also

to ford : befides many other most worthy Knightsand Gentlemen of great worth attending vpon

for the expecting of some other ships, which were to come from divers places of the Realme, and Before their departure from Plymmouth, it pleased their Lordships to publish in Print, and make knowne to all the world, especially to such as it concerned, and that both in the Latine, French, Dutch, English, and Spanish tongue, what were the true, iuft, and vrgent causes, that at this time proucked her Maiettie to vndertake the preparing and fetting forth of this fo great a Nauie, namely the King of Spaines preparations against her, who had before whiles hee 60 treated of peace, Anno 1588, prepared to invade her coast, and now also to that purpose daily encreated his Nauie. If therefore any should furnish the Spannerd with munition and provisions, they should expect what force could doe; for all others of what source Nation they admied them to tortake the Spanish and Portugall Ports, or to lowne with the English for their owne fecurity. they having no quarrell in this defigne but against the Spaniard.

* M. Hackluit had publified

Thus then, all things being in a very good order and well appointed, the most holy name of our Omnipotent God being most religiously and deuoutly called vpon', and his blessed and Go cred Communion being divers times most reverently and publikely celebrated : being furnished with one hundred and fiftie good faile of thips, or thereabout : In the name of the most high and euerliuing God; the first day of Iune they embarked themselues, weighed Ancre, and hoysed yo faile, and put to Sea onward their journey from the Sownds of Plymmont, to flew her Maiethe streligious intendments in this exploit. I have thought good to adde here a Prayer made by her felte (as was reported) and vied, as it was fitted, for that deligne.

Of Omnipotent maker and guide of all our worlds maffe, that enely fearchest and fadomest the IQ Mostome of all our bearts conceits, and in them feeft the true originals of all our actions intended. then that by thy forefight doeft strucky difcerne, how no malice of remenge, nor quittance of mining. nor defire of blondfled , nor greedineffe of incre bath bred the refolution of our new fet out offiny , but a beedefull care, and wary watch, that no neglect of foes, nor over-furetie of barme might breede either danger to us, or glory to them: thefe being the grounds wherewith thou doest enforce the minde, we humble befeech thee with bended knees, proper the worke, and with best forewindes guide the iowines. peede the wiltory, and make the returne the advancement of thy glory, the triumph of their fame, and furety to the Realme, with the least loffe of the English blond. To these denont petitions Lord gine thou the bleffed grants

The ninth of the same moneth comming something neete to the North Cape, in a manner in the same altitude, or not much differing, which was about 43. degrees, and something more, yet bearing fo. as it was impossible to be descried from the land. There it pleased the Lords to call a fele& Councell, which was alwaies done by hanging out of a Flagge of the Armes of England, and shooting off a great warning peece. Of this select or privile Counsell, were no moe then thefe: The two Lords Generall, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Warden Six Walter Raleigh. the Lord Marshall Sir Francis Pere, Sir George Cary Master of the Ordnance. Sir Coniers Clifford. and Sir Anthony Albley, Clarke of the faid Counfell. And when it pleafed the Lords Generall to call a common Counfell (as oftentimes they did vpon weighty matters best knowne to their honours) then they would cause another kinde of Flag to be hanged out, which was the red Crosse of S. George, and was very easie to be discerned from the other that appertained onely to the felect Counfell, and to often as this Flag of S. George was hanged out, then came all the Mafters and Captaines of all the thips, whose opinions were to be demanded, in such matters as apperexined voto the faid felca Counfell : It was prefently concluded that our course in failing should forthwith be altered, and that we should beare more into the West, for some purposesto them

At that initiant many Letters of inftructions were addressed and fent to every particular Mafter and Captaine of the Ships : What the contents of thole Letters of instructions were, it was not as yet knowne vito any, neither was it held meete to be enquired or knowne of any of vs. But vader the titles and superscriptions of euery mans particuler Letter these words were en- 40 dorfed. Open not these Letters on paine of your lines, valeffe wee chance to be scattered by tempest, and in that case open them, and execute the contents thereof : but if by mishap you fall into your enemies hand, then in any case cast them into the Sea, sealed as they are. It should feeme that these Letters did contains in them the principall place and meaning of this entended action, which was hitherto by their deepe forelights kept io lecret, as no man to my knowledge ei her did or could fo much as suspect it, more then themselves, who had the onely mamaging thereof.

All this while, our fhips, God be thanked, kept in a most excellent good order, being denided into five fquadrons : that is to fay, The Earle of Effer, the Lord Admirall, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Warden Sir Walter Raleigh, and the Admirall of the Hollanders. All which 10 iquadrons, albeit they did euery day separate themselves of purpose, by the distance of certains ltagues, as well to looke out for fuch thips as were happily vader faile, as also for the better procuring of Sea-roome : yet alwayes commonly either that day, or the next day, toward evening, they came all together, with friendly falutations and gratulations one to another; which they tearme by the name of Hayling; a ceremonie done folemnly, and in very good order, with found of Trumpets and notic of cheerefull voyces: and in fuch fort performed as was no small encouragement one to the other, befide a true report of all fuch accidents as had happened in their fquadrons.

Hitherto, as I faid, our journey was most prosperous, and all our thins in very good plight, more then that the Afary Rofe, by some mischance, either sprang or spent her forevard, and two dayes 63 after Sir Robert Croffe had in a manner the like milchance.

Now being thus betweene the North Cape, and Cape S. Fincent, and yet keeping such a course Flemming take a loofe, that by no meanes, those from the shoare might be able to descrie vs : The tench of lone, and dismitted, a French Barke, and a Flemming comming from the coast of Barbaris were brought in by some of our company; but they were both of them very honogably and well yied by the Lords Generall, and to atter a few dayes tarrying, were peaceably fent away, after that they had conferred with them about facis matters, as was thought good in their honorable wifedomes. The twelfth of the Hambareers fame moneth, Sir Richard L. mifon Knight, affilted with Sir Christopher Blunt, fought with three taken. Hamburgers, and in that fight flew two of them, and hurt eleven, and in the end brought them

all three in. The next day after, Sir Richard Weston meeting with a Flemming, who refused to vaile his foretop, with the like good courage and resolution, attempted to bring him in. The fight continued very hot betweenerthem, for a good space : in the end, the Swan, wherein the faid Sir Richard to was, had her forebeake altrooken off : and having spent before in fight the one side of her tire of Ordnance, while the prepared to cast about, and to bestow on him the other side, in the meane time the Elemening taking his opportunitie, did get almost halfe a league from him: and so for that time made his escape. And yet the next day after, the faid Fleuming being in a manner got to the very mouth of the River up to Lisbons, was taken and brought in by Maiter Dorrell, being Captaine of the lobn and Prairie of London.

The 13. 14. and 15. dayes, cortaine little stragling Carauels were taken by certaine of the Fleete; and in one of them ayong beggerly Fryer vetesly valearned, with a great packet of Let- Leiters taken

The 38.day early in the morning we tooke an Irishman, and he came directly from Cadiz, ha- 1. issue an inch 10 uing beene there but the day before at twelue of the clocke at high noone. This man being exalligence, mined, told truely that there was now great flore of thipping at Cade, and with them eight teene or nineteene Galhes in a readinelle, and that among those thiss there were ditiers of the Kings beit: and namely, that the Philip of Spaintwas amongst them, but what their intent was, her could not tell. This man was commanded also to give his attendance. The 20. of lune, being Sunday; were came before Cadi z, very early in the morning, and in all this time as yet, the whole Nauic had not loft either by fickness or by any other manner of water fix men to my knowledge.

Thus then I fay, being all ingood plight and fivong the so. of fune we came to Cadez, and there cade. very early in the morning preferred our refues before the Towner, riding about a league or fome- Some which go thing lefte, from it. The Soa at that inthant were margellous high, and the winde was exceeding proteff marlarge. No withflanding; a Countell being called, our Lords Generall forthwith attempted with tiall anywhole all expedition to land forms certains Companies of their men at the West fide of the Tourie, by landing in first au experience de la company de certaine long meath, give non authorized they chanced to finke one of their Barges, with fone foure the weather page it and in the attempting thereof, they chanced to finke one of their Barges, with fone foure the weather fore good fouldiers well appointed in her, and yet by good hap and great care, the men were all ferued bur the faued excepting night. And therefore they were confirmed to put off their landing till another ferupter unmore concenient time.

That morning very timely, there lighted a very faire Done vpon the maine yard of the Lord a million of Admirals flip, and there she far very quietly for the space of three or foure houres. And as at our wealth. go very first comming to Cades this chanced, in Idewite on the very list day of our departing from Doues lighting the faid Towne, another Doue prefented her felfe in the felfe fame order into the same ship, and prefently grew wonderfull tame and familiar to vs all, and did fo still keepe vs company, even till

our arrivall here in England. We no fooner prefented our felues, but prefently a goodly fort of tall Spanish Ships came out of the mouth of the Bay of Cadie, the Gallies accompanying them in such good or keryand to placed as all of them might well succour each other, and therewithall kept themselves very close to their Fowne, the Cattle, and the Forts, for their better guard and defence, abiding there ftill, and expecting our further determination. All that day passed, being very rough and boisterous, and liethe or nothing could be done, more then that about the eneming there passed fome friendly and to de falurations fenc one from the other in warlike manner, by discharging centhine greate

On monday morning being the 21.day, the winde and weather being become moderate and favourable, betweene five and fix of the checke in the morning, our flips an the name of the Almighter Gad, and in defence of the honeur of England, without any further delay, with all speed, courage and alactitie, did fee v pon the Spanish thips, being then under faile, and making out of The Spanish the mouth of the Bay of Cadic, up toward Puente de Sunpe on Granada fide, being in rumber 19. Fleete, 'call thing, with 19.00' so. Gallier attending upon them, forced in first good rader, and restamble diflance as they might thill annoy vs, and alwaies relieue themselves interchangeably a basing likewife the Callle, Forts, and Towne, continually to affect them and theirs, and alwaye tready to play

60 vion vi and ours. The control of control of a state of 2 or a se In most mensopinions is feemed that the enemy lind a wonderfull adulating of vs. all circumflances being well weng red, busefpreasily the thraghenetle of the place, and the natural forme and fituation of the Bay it felte, being rightly confidered. For albeit the very Bay it felte is very large and exceeding belorifull, to that from Cade to Port S. May, is some fix of lonen English

miles ouer or there abouts, yet be there many rockes, shelues, fands, and shallowes in it. fo there the very channell and place for lea roome, is not about two or three miles, yea, and in tome places not lo much, for the thips of any great burthen to make way in, but that they must either be let on g ound, or elfe conftrained to run foule one on another. All this norwithflanding, with great and intincible courage, the Lords generall prefently fer vpon them, and forting out fome fuch convenient ships, as to their honorable wisedomes seemed fictest for that times service, they were driuen to take some other course then before had beene by them entended. Wherefore ypon a grave confultation had by a felect counfell, they concluded that the Vice-admirall, the Lord Thomas Howard, in the Non Pareille for that time, and the Reare Admirall Sir Walter Release in the Warfpicht, aflociated with Sir Francis Vere the Lord Marshall in the Rainbox, Sir George Can In ry Mafter of the Ordnance, in the Mary Rose, Sir Robert Southwell in the Lyon; having with them fome of the Ships of London, and some of the Dutch squadron of reasonable burthen should lead the dance, and give the oniet, and that the two most noble Lords generall with some others of their companies, should in their convenient time and order, second the maine battelli. The fishe being begun and growne very hot, the Lord generall the Earle of Effex, being on Port Saint Man er fide, voon a fudden and volooked for of others, thrust himfelfe among the formost into the maine battell. The other most honorable Lord generall vnderstanding the most noble Eirle to be in fight among them, and perceiving by the Mafter of his thip, the A keroyall, that for lacke of water, it was not possible, that he might put any neerer, without further delay, called presently for his Pinnace, and in the same Pinnace put himselfe, and his honorable son Lord William How- 20 and about the Honor de la mer, & there remained in the fight till the battell was ended. The fight was very teirible on all fines, and to continued doubtfull cill about one or two of the clocke in the afternoone : about which time the Philip, whom in very truth, they had all most fancie voto bee gan to yeelde and give over, her men that remained alive flufting for themfelues as they were able, and fwimming and running alhoure with all the hafte that they could possibly, and therewithall, at the very fame inftant themselves fired their ship, and so left her, and prefently thereupon a great Argofic, with another mighty great ship, fired themselves in the like manner, Im-

The fight be-

twist the two

Fleetes.

Englife.

mediatly hereupon, the refidue of the ships ran themselves on ground as far from vs as they could, thereby purchased their owne latetic, or rather breathing spice for the time. Of them all, two faire ships onely were boonled and taken by our men with most part of their furniture in them, 20 Two Apofiles the one called S. Maibew, a fhip by estimation of some twelve hundred tun, and the other S. Anforcedtopreach drewbeing a thip of not much leffer burthers, The Gallies, feeing this fodgine great victorious on nerthrow made all the halfe they could soward the Bridge called Puente de Suace, and there throwded themselves in such fort as our ships could not by any meanes possible come night them The Spanish thips in all were fifty nine, and as I faid, all tall thips, and very richly furnished

and well appointed, whereof tome of them were bound for the Indies, and other traighted and furnished for Lisbon, as themselves affirme : and had we not come that very time that we did. wee had certainly mist of them all.

Of what great wealth and riches thefeships were, that I leave to other mens judgement and an report, but fure I am, that themselves offered two millions and a halfe of ducats for the redemption of the goods and riches that were in them : which offer of theirs, albeit it was accepted of the Lords generall, and should have beene received, yet we were defeated of it, as hereafter shall be more at large declared.

In all this cruell terrible fight, there were not either flaine or hurt by any manner of meanes many about the number of 100.0f our men; not with standing divers of our ships were many times shot thorow and thorow; yea and some of them no lesse then two and twenty times as I was enformed by credible report of the Captaines and Masters themselves. I know not of any other hurt done . faving onely that Sir Robert Southwell, who alwayes thewed himfelfe a most valiant rejobite knight in all this action, making a little too much hafte with his Pinnace to board 50 the Philip, had there his faid Pinnace burnt with the Philip at the same instant, and yet by good care and diligence his men were faued. One other mischance happed thus : One of the Flemming Flie-boats, who had in all the conflict before, carried her felfe very well and valiantly, about ten of the clocke while the fight continued tharpest, chanced by great negligence and misfortune, to be fired and blown up by his owne powder, who could not have any fewer in him, then one hundred fighting men by all impposall, and so in the very twinkling of an eye, both thip and men were all catt aways excepting tenen or eight, which by very good fortune, and great care and diligence of forme of the other throstwere faued.

Immediately upon this notable victory, without any further flay in all the world, the Lord generall the Earle of Effer put to shore, & landed about 3000 shot and pikemen of the which number the one halfe was presently dispatched to the bridge Puente de Suage, under the conduct of Sir Christopher Blum, Sir Coniers Clifford, and Sir Thomas Gerard: with the other halfe, being 2bout fitteene hundred, the most noble Earle of Effex himselfe, being accompanied with divers or ther honorable Lords, namely the Earle of Suffer, the Lord Harbert, the Lord Bark, Come Lode-

nick of Nassaw, the Lord Marshall Sir Francis Vere, with all expedition possible marched on foote toward the towne of Cadiz, which was about three English miles march. That time of the day was very hot and faint, and the way was all of dry deepe fliding fand in a manner, and befide that. Bad way, very vieuen, and by that meanes fo tirelome and painfull as might be. The enemie having reafonable companie both of horie and footemen, stood in a readingle fome good distance without the towne to welcome vs, and to encounter the Lord Generall. But the most famous Earle with his valiant Troopes, rather running indeede in good order, then marching, haftened on them with fuch vofpeakeable courage and celeritie, as within one houres space and leffe, the horsemen were all discomfited and put to flight, their leader being itrooken downe as the very first encounter; to whereat the footemen being wonderfully difmajed and aftonished at the vnexpected manner of the Englishmens kinde of such fierce and resolute fight, retyred themselves with all the speede possible that they could to recouer themselves into the Towne againe. Which being done by them, with farre (wifter legges then manly courage, our men were enforced to scale the wals: which thing in very deede, although it was not without great danger and difficultie to be performed : vet luch was the inuincible resolution, and the wonderfull dexteritie of the English, that in one halfe houre or thereabout, the enemy was repulfed, and the towne wall possessed, by the no- The Enelish

ble Earle himselfe, being in all this action, either the very first man, or else in a manner ioined enter the trews

The Town wals being then poffessed, and the English Ensigne being there displaied vpon them, to with all speede possible they proceeded on to march through the Towne, making still their way with (word and that to well as they could, being full fought withall at everie turne. The noble Earle was feconded by the noble Lord Admirall in person, who was accompanied with the noble Lord Thomas Howard, the most worthy Gentleman his Sonne (after Lord Howard) Sir Robert Southwell. Sir Richard Lenifon, and with divers other Gentlemen, his Lordships followers of good account: his Colours being advanced by that valiant refolute Gentleman, Sir Edward Hobby Knight. And thus he like wife marching with all possible speede on foote, notwithstanding his * I have big L. many yeeres *, the intolerable heate for the time, and the ouertring tedious deepe fands, with told by some of other many impediments: Yet in good time, joyned himielfe with the Earle and his companies, and gave them the ftrongest, and best assistance that he could.

Thus then the two Lords Generall with their companies being joined together, and proceeding fo farre as the market place, there they were horly encountered, where and at what time, that worthy famous Knight Sir lobn Winkfield, being fore wounded before on the thigh, at the he was 68, years very entring of the Towne, and yet for all that no white respecting himselfe, being carried away old, or between with the care he had to encourage and direct his Company, was with the shot of a Musket in the that and 70. head most vafortunately slaine.

And thus before eight of the clocke that night were thefe two most noble Lords General, Ma. 1624. crowned fters of the market place, the forts, and the whole Towne and all, onely the Castle as yet holding with filter out and from time to time as they could, stil annoying them with feuen battering peeces. By this dentaies of time night began to grow on, and a kinde of peace or intermission was obtained by them of the Ca- glorious a de-40 file : to whom the Lords Generall had fignified that vnleffe before the next day in the morning The Gafile they would absolutely render themselves, they should looke for no mercie, but should every one delivered. he put to the fivord: vpon which meffage they tooke deliberation that night: but in the morning before breake of day they hanged out their flag of truce, and so without any further composition did yeelde themselues absolutely to their mercie, and deliuered vp the Castle.

And yet notwithstanding all this, in the night time while they had this respite to pause and deliberate about the peacemaking, there were divers great and sodaine alarms given : which did breede some great outrages and diforder in the Towne. At euery which alaram, the two Lords Generall shewed themselves marueilous ready and forward.

These things being done, and this surrender being made, present Proclamation was publish-50 ed, that the fury now being past, all men should surcease from all manner of bloud and cruell dealing, and that there should no kinde of violence or hard viage be offered to any, either man, woman, or childe, vpon paine of death : permitting the spoyle of so much of the Towne as was by them thought meete, to the common fouldiers for some certaine daies. This honorable and mercifull Edict I am fure was streightly and religiously observed of the English: but how well it was kept by the Dutch, I will neither affirme, nor yet denie. For I perceiue betweene them and the Spaniards there is an implacable hartburning, and therefore as foone as the Dutch iquadron was elpied in the fight, immediately thereupon both they of Smil and Saint Lucar, and also some of some other places did not onely arrest all such Dutch thips, as dealt with them friendly by the way of trafficke and merchandife, and so conflicated their goods, but also imprisoned the Mer-60 chants and owners of the same, and as the report goeth, did intreat many of them with extreame cruelty thereupon.

In the meane while, the very next day, being the two and twentie day of Iune, all the Spanift Scaniard Eve ships which were left on ground in the Bay of Cadiz, where the great cuerthrow had beene their ships. but the day before, were by the Spaniards themselues there set on fire, and so from that time

great worth action, that they heard the who yet huech baires and gol-

The English

Flemmilb mif-

forward they never left burning of them, till every one of them, goods and all, as far as we know were burnt and confumed. This their doing was much maruelled at of vs. Not long after the fame time (three dayes as I remember) the gallies that were run on ground, did quit themselves alio out of that place, and by the Bridge of the Hand called Puente de Suaço, made their way round about the same Iland, and to by putting themselves to the maine Sea, escaped to a towne called Rotte, not farre off, but something up towards the towne of Saint Lucars, and there purchased their fatery by that meanes. Thus was this notable victory, as well by Sea as by Land, both begun and in effect performed, within the compaffe, in a manner, of foureteene houres : a thing in truth fo strange and admirable, as in my judgement will rather be wondred at then beleeved of nosteritie. And if ever any notable exploit in any age was comparable to Cafars Veni, Vidi, Vici, certainly in my poore opinion it was this.

The Towns of it felfe was a very beautifull towns, and a large, as being the chiefe See of the Bishop there, and having a good Cathedrall Church in it, with a right goodly Abbey, a Nunnery, and an exceeding fine Colledge of the Jefurtes, and was by natural lituation, as also by very good fortification, very firong, and tenable enough in all mens opinions of the better judgement. Their building was all of a kinde of hard stone, even from the very foundation to the top, and every house was in a manner a kinde of a Fort or Cattle, altogether flat-roofed in the top, after the Turhilb manner, to that many men together, and that at cale, might walke thereon: having vpon the house top, great heapes of weighty thones piled vp in fich good order, as they were ready to be throwne downe by every woman most cashly upon such as passed by, and the streetes for the most part fo exceeding narrow(I think to avoide the intollerable great heat of the Sun) as but two men or three at the most together, can in any reasonable fort march thorow them, no streete being broader commonly then I suppose Watlingstreete in London to be. The towne is altogether without stalle, excepting the Churches, yet with faire comely windowes, and with faire grates of Iron to them, and have very large folding leaves of wainfcot, or the like. It hath very few Chimnies in it, or almost none at all : it may be some one chimney in some one or other of the lower out-roomes of least account, serving for some necessary vies, either to wash in, or the like, or elle, now and then perchance for the dreffing of a dish of meate, having, as it should seeme vnto me, alwayes a greater care and respect how to keepe themselves from all kinde of great heate, the how to proude for any flore of great rofte. It had in it, by report of them that should know belt 30 it, some foure thousand and moe, of very good able fighting men, and fixe hundred horsemen at the leaft. No question but that they were well furnished of all things appertaining thereunto especially so many good ships lying there, and being so well stored with all manner of munition, shot, and powder, as they were.

Of what wealth this towne should be, I am not able to resolue the asker; but as it should appeare by the great pillage by the common Souldiers, and some Marriners too, and by the goodly ing bath often furnitures, that were detaced by the bater people, and thereby vtterly loft and spoiled, as not rold me that worth the carrying away; and by the over great plenty of Wine, Oyle, Almonds, Oliucs, Raihe had the rif fins, Spices, and other fuch Grocery wares, that by the intemperate diforder of fome of the rafter ling of a lew. fort were knocke out, and lay trampled wnder feet, in energy common high way, it should appear 40 ellers of Gold. that it was of fome very mighty great wealth to the first owners, though perchance not of any imiths house, and in hisre. fuch great commodity to the last subduers, for that I sudge that the bester part was most riotously

turne gaue and and intemperately spent and consumed.

The Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday following, the Lords Generall spent in counsell about the disposing of all matters, as well touching the towns and prisoners, as also concerning all other matters, thought meete of them in their honourable wildomes, and in all that meane world did shew such honourable bounty and mercy, as is notable to be expressed. For not onely the lines bies) of great of every one were spared, but also there was an especiall care had, that all the Religious, as well bignes where menas women, should be well and fauourably intreated, whom freely without any manner of ransome or other moletiation, they caused to be safely transported ouer to Port Saint Mary, a 50 Towns in a manner as faire as Cadiz : but at that time, as the case did stand, certainely knowne to worthan angel be of no wealth in the world, and it was fome fixe or feuen miles diffant ouer against Cade, in to hisignorant a manner as Paules is against Southwarte, on the other fide of the Bay, in a part of Andaluzia, umpucity, ne subject to the territorie of the Duke de Medina Sidmia. Moreouer, at the same instant they did uer ordaned appoint that worthy Knight Sir Amias Presson, and some others in some convenient Barkes, to transport over to the faid Towne safely and in good order, a hundred or moe of the better fort of ancient gentlewomen, and merchants wives, who were suffered to put voon themselves, some of them two, yea, some three suites Apparell, with some convenient quantitie of many lewels, Chaines, and other ornaments belonging to their estate and degree.

feld for to:es

many Stones

defeription

feemed Ru-

to be rich.

Vpon Saturday, being the fix and twentieth, Sir Iobn Wink field knight was buried, in honoura- 60 ble and warlike manner, fo farre forth as the circumstances of that time and place could permit. At whose funerals the Nauie discharged a great part of their Ordnance, in such order, as was thought meete and convenient by the Lords General scommand. The feuen and twenty day being Sunday, in the Abbey the divine Service was had, and a learned Sermon was made thereby

one Mafter Hopkins, the right honourable Earle of Effex his Preacher, a man of good learning and fareste veterance, and euen there the fame day, fomething before the Sermon was made, thele worthy Gentlemen following were Knighted by the Lord Generall. And here I am to fignifie by the way, that two of thele were Knighted three or foure daies before, and fome three or foure moe were Knighted after that time, voon certaine occasions: but yet I hold it best (and I trust without offence) to recite their names in this place altogether.

June 21.22. Sit Christopher Herdon . I Samuel Bagnal. Sir Iohn Buck. DSIT Arthur Sauage. Sir Ichn Morgan. Sir Francis Popham. Sir Philip Woedhoule. To The Earle of Sullex. Sir lobn Aldridg. Sir Alexander Clifford. Sir John Alibinden The Lord Harbert. Sir Maurice Bareley. Sir Mathew Browne. The Lord Burke. Six Charles Blunt. Sir Iobn Acton. Count Ladowick. Sir George Gifford. Sir William Howard. Sir Thomas Gates. Sir George D'Eureux. Six Robert Croffe. Sir Gilly Mericke. Sir lames E (cudamor. Sir Thomas Smith. Six Henry Neuel. Sir Vria Leigh. Sir William Pooley. Sir Edmund Rich. Sir Iohn Leigh, alias Lee. Sir Thomas Palmer. Sir Richard Lenen. Sir Peter Egomort. Sir Richard Weston. Sit John Stafford. 10 Sir Anthonie Abley. Sir Robert Louel. Sir Richard Wasuman Sit Henry Leonard. Sir James Wootton. Sir Iobn Gylbert. Sir Ruchard Ruddal. Sir William Harnie. Six Richard Leuison. Six Robert Mansfield Sir John Grav. Sir Horatio Vere. Six Arthur Throckmorton. Sit William Mounton. Don Christ. Prince of Portu-Six Miles Corbet. Sir John Bowles: gall. Sir Iobn Vanderfoord Admirall Sir Edward Bowes. S:r Edward Conway. of the Hollanders. Sir Oliner Lambert. Sir Humfrey Druel Sir Amias Preston. Sir Anthony Cooke. Sir Robert Dudler. 8: August. Sir loba Townefend. Sir Robert Remination.

Being in Cadiz, attending upon my most honorable good Lord, I talked with certains of the Religious men, such as I found learned, whereof indeede there were some, though not very many; I talked also with the Bilhop of Cufee there, a grane aged comely man, and being of late chosen to that Bithopricke, he was as then to have gone to the ledies, had not we then taken him prifoner, and to stated his journey for that time.

It pleated the Lords generall to deale exceeding favourably with this faid Bishop of Cusco: for it was their good pleafure to give him his free paffage without any ranfome, and therewichall to let him to vinderstand, that they came not redeale with Church-men, or vinarmed men, or with men of peace weaklings and children, neither was it any part of their meaning to make such a to voyage for gold, filter, or any other their wealth and riches, &c. But that their onely comming was to meet with their dithonorable practifes, and manifold injuries, and to deale with men of war and valour, for the detence of the true honour of England; and to let them to understand, that when soever they attempted any base-conceited and dishonorable practise to their sourraigne Queen, their Mistreile, that it should be reuenged to the vetermost, &c.

In this meane space, while the Lords generall continued at Cadix, there came to them certaine prore wretched Turks, to the number of eight and thirty, that had bin a long time gally-flaues, and either at the very time of the fight by Sea, or elfe immediately thereupon, taking the opportunity, did then make their elcape, and did fwim to land; yeelding themselues to the mercy of their most honorable Lordships. It pleased them with all speede to apparell them, and to furnish them with mony, and all other necellaries, and to bestow on them a Barke, and a Pilot, to see them free.

Sc ly and fafely conucied into Barbary.

The eight and twenty day being Monday, the Lord Admirall came abourd the Arke againe, minding there to remaine for a space, as indeede he did, and vpon the aduce of his Phistian, to deale fomething in philicke, for that his Lordship found his body something out of frame. At that time it pleated his Lordship to write certaine letters to the Duke of Medina Sidonia, for the deliverance of English Captines, who were remaining in the Gallies. For by this time, it was reported, that the faid Duke was come downe in person with some power, and that he was either at Port Saint Mary,or elle at Rotta, or thereabout. His Lordship did indice the Letters himselfe, but his pleasure was, they should be turned into Latine by another ; and so to be sent (as indeede they were) in the Latine tongue vnto the Duke.

The next day after, being the fourth of July, the Lords general caused the towne of Cadiz to Cadiz have be let on fire, and raied and defaced fo much as they could; the faire Cathedrall Church, and the Religious houses onely being spared, and left vollemished. And with the Towne all such protillion, for shipping, and other things, as were serviceable for the Realmes vie, and yet were not

Yyyyyyy 2

1934

either is convenient for vs to be carried away, as elfeluch as we shood no whit at all in neede of. were likewife at the same instant consumed with fire. And presently thereupon, their Lordinips. with as convenient speede as they could, and the whole army in such order and lessure, as they thought best, came aboord.

The next day being the fift of July, the Lords generall with all the army being under faile, and I Admirall his now making for England, and but as yet passing the very mouth of the Bay of Cadre, a Galley ful of English prisoners, with a flag of truce, met vs from Rotta, fent by the Duke of Medina Sidonia. and fent as it should seeme, one day later then his promite : but yet their flag being either not big enough, or not well placed in the Galley, or not well differried of our men, or by what other mischance I know not; but thus it was; by one of our smallest ships that failed formost, as soone 10 as the faid Gall-y came within Gunfhot, there was a great Peece discharged vpon her, and at the infant there was one man flaine outright, and two other grieuously hurt. The errour being efficial and perceived, our thip gave over immediately from any further thooting. As fooneas the Galley came neere vs, my Lord Admirall caused a gracious salutation to be sounded with his trumpets, and willed the Captaines forthwith to come aboord his ship : which they did, and then he feafted hem with a Banket, as the time and place might ferue. And then by them vnderflanding of that unfortunate mischance that had napned by the shot of the said ship, he was very forry for the same, and yet such was the mercifull providence of almighty God, that even in this mischance also, he did hold his holy hand ouer the English; and all the harme that was done did light only upon the poore Turke, and the Spaniard himselfe. When this Lord had well banqueted 20 them, he presently called for his Barge, and did accompany the faid Galley to the Lord Generall the Earle of Effer, who then did ride with his ship a good distance off: and there they being in like manner most honorably received, and intertained, the Sparift Gentlemen delivered vp their prioners the English captines, of whom some had bin there hix yeeres, some eight or ten; yea, and fome two and twenty yeeres, and vpward, and fome of them but lately taken in Sir Francis Draker last voyage to the ladies. The number of the pritoners deliuered were but nine and thirty, and no moe, and were brought in, and delivered by Don Amonio de Corolla and his brother, and by Don Pedro de Corden, and certaine others.

If any man presume here so farre, as to inquire how it chanced, that the Lord Generall rested folong at Cadra, and went no further; and why Port Saint Mary, being fo faire a Towne, and 30 fo neere to them, was forborne? and why Sheras alias Xeres? And why Resta, and the like? And why this or that was done . And why that, or this left vidone? I will not answere him with our common English proverbe, as Imighe, which is : That one foole may aske mor questions in one houre, then ten discreete men can well answere in fine dayes. But that grave ancient wiiter. Cornelsus Tacitus, hath a wife, briefe, pithy, faying, and it is this; Nemo tentauit inquirere in columnas Herculis, fanctinfq, au remerentins babitum eft de factis Deorum eredere,

quam feire. Allo voon my knowledge, the chiefest cause why Port Saint Mary, and the rest, were left vntouched, was this: For that it was most certainely known, that they were Townes not worth the faluting of fisch a royall company, in which there was no manner of wealth in the world left, 40 more then bare houses of stone, and standing wals, and might well have served rather as a stale, perchance, to have entrapped, then as a meanes to have enriched.

And thus much for our journey to Cadez: for the accidents that hapned by the way, for the winning, spoiling, and burning of the said Towne, for the overthrow of the Spandh Fleete there, and for all other by-matters that hapned, as appendances to the fame, both in the time of our abode there, as also at the very last hours of our comming from thence. As for our returns home, and our entrance into a part of Portugallby the way, with the taking, spoiling, and burning of the Towne of Faraen there, and marching into the Spanift confines thereabouts, &c. I minde to leave it to some other, whose chance was to be present at the action, as my selfe was not, and shall be of more sufficient ability to performe it.

Meteranus writeth, that the taking of Cadiz had so terrified the neighbour townes, that the Inhabitants fled out of them; and Saint Lucar had beene also very easily taken, if a few ships had affaulted it; and that eighteene Spanish thip comming from the Indies ignorant of what had hapned, were English at vnawares, being very wealthy.

CHAP. 62

CHAP. XIIII.

CHAP. 14 S. 1. Earle of Effex his Relation of the Iland Doyage.

The Voyage to the Iles of Azores, under the conduct of the Right Honorable ROBERT Carle of Essex, 1597.

The Relation thereof by the faid Earle, and other Commissioners.



10

The Generall, having by her Maiesties gracious favour the charge of her Fleete and Armie, fer out of Plimmouth in lune 1597. did both promife my felfe and give hope to her Maieftie, that I should be able to defeate the King of Spaines Fleete, commanded by the Adelantado, if I met them at Sea, or destroy it in the harbour of Ferol, if I found them there; as also to master and take all Fleetes of treasure, or of the East or West Indian Fleete, that I should finde upon the Sea in their way to Spaine: and laitly, that I should take in the Hand of Tergea; which I held an action of equall im-

portance to the other.

With this confidence I went out, and to these ends : but none of these three being performed, it may be doubted, whether we have not through weakenesse or negligence failed of successe. For which we make answere, that if our whole carriage be examined, from the first hours to the last, it shall appeare that we have striven to attaine to every one of these with as much obstinate constancie, as any men in the world could doe, and that onely the powerfull hand of God, did binde our hands, and frustrate all our endenours.

The first for the enterprise of Ferel, we went out of Plimmonth the third of June, and stiered directly for that port, and when most extreame stormes and contrary windes met with vs. we Crossed with beate it up till all our Fleete was scattered, and many of our ships in desperate case. And because winder and The Generali thought my too foone giving over would not onely deprive the Fleete of our prin- formes. an cipall thip, but abiolutly defeate the journey; I forced my company first to abide the continuall increasing of a most dangerous leake, which I made light of because I faw that with labour of men I could free the ship as fast as the leake did grow. Secondly, I made them endure the craking of both my maine and fore mast, the one in two places, the other in three; so as we fill look. Danger of the ed when they should be carried by the boord; which was not enough to make me beare up, becaufe I knew whenfoeuer I should loofe them both, I could with jurie masts, by Gods favour.carry the ship home. And I continued so long, that my ships Okam came all out, her seemes opened, her deckes and upper workes gaue way, her very timbers and maine beames with her labouring did teare like lathes; fo as we looked hoursly when the Ortope would fall, and the Ordnance finke downe to the keele : then did those few, whom before I had wonne to stand with mee, all 40 protest against me, that if I did not within a minute of an houre beare yp the helme, I did wilfully cast away the ship and whole company.

Then onely I furfred my felfe to be ouercome : and when I came to Plimmonth, halfe her Maie- They put in to flies ships, and more then halfe the principall officers by sea and by land were put in before mee Plimmouth. for the excremitie their thips were in. And when we were all of vs gathered together againe, at Plimmouth, and had repaired all the thips but mine owne, which was fent home to Chatham to be new builded, then were we kept in by continuall fforme and contrary windes, till our victuals (which were at first but for three moneths) were in a manner all spent, and the sicknesse in the Flie boates, that carried the land armie, growne fo great, that I had order from her Maiestie to discharge the land forces, all but the thouland old Souldiers, which were drawneout of the Low Order to diff 50 Compries. By which meanes, though we were disabled to land at Ferol, to beate the land Armie charge land there, and take in the forces, which was the certaine way to command the Adelantados Fleete; forces, yet I the Generall offered her Majestie to fend in certaine thips of fire, and to second them with the Saint Matthew and Saint Andrew, and some great flye-boates, and Merchants ships, with which I would defroy the most of the enemies principall shipping, and leaue all the Queens own English built ships at the mouth of the harbour to affore our retreate. By this meanes I should ha-

fecond time to put this project in execution. But againe ere we could recouer the Spanish coast, the Saint Marthew, by looking her foremalt, Their feeding was put backe into England, and the Saint Andrew had loft company, till at one inflant within tout, the le fight of the shoare of the Grone, Sir Walter Raleigh the Vice-admirall brake his maine yard, which cond our forced him to beare along to the Westward before the winde; and I in this second ship had such a desperate leake sprang, as when we pumped and boled with buckets as much as we could for our

zard to loofe but two great Cartes, which before I had won, and for the adventuring of thefe defeate the enemies whole Nauie. Which counfell being allowed, though with refraint of mine owne going in with thefetwo thips, and an abfolute barre to hazard any other, we went out the

1936

owne lines, it grew still upon vs : and when we fought by ramming downe peeces of Beefe. and Leake remeholding linnen cloath wrong together, to ftop the comming in of the water, it came in not withstanding so strongly, as it bare downe all, and beate away enery man that stood to stop it: Then was I faine to lye by the lee, and make my company worke vpon it all night, my matter Carpenter, the onely skilfull man I had, dying at that very inflant.

Frall ucr.

throwne.

And w en by the great mercy of God we had stopped it, the winde being easterly the Fleete Cape Finitiere was to tarre thot a head, as I could not recouer the most of them till I came to the Cape Finisher. c. where holding a Countell, and miffing Sir Walter Raleigh (who being off at Sea, had no plying failes to get vp) milling him, I iay, with thirty failes that in the night followed his light . and hearing that the Saint Matthew, which was our principall flip for the execution of our intended 10 enterprise, was returned, and being barred to hazard any other in her place, it was by the whole Enterprise of Countell of warre concluded, that the enterprise of Ferol was overthrowne, both because, though the winde had ferued, we wanted the thips appointed for that feruice, and if wee had had the thip; we wanted winde to get into the harbour of Ferol; for the winde blew flrongly at Eaft. which would have bin fully in our teeth as we had plied in. And now wee onely could thinke of the intercepting of the Indian Fleete, and defeating of the Adelantade: if he had put to Sea. For to take in Tergera, our land army being discharged, we had no meanes : whereupon wee bare for the height of the Rocke; hoping there (because it was our second Rende wons after Ferel) to meete with Sir Walter Raleigh. Into which height when I came, a mellage was delivered mee from Sir Walter Raleigh, by one Captaine Skebbels, that the Adelantado was gone out of Ferol with his 20

the Adelantado there, and because all our best experimented Seamen did assure vs that it was the

likelieft course to meete with the Indian Fleete, to goe for the Hands of the Azores. And I fent

The Rocke.

South Care.

Fleete to Tercera, to wast home the West Indian Fleete of treasure, and that hee would attend mine answere off of the Burlingae; which message of Sir Walters was grounded upon the report

of the Captaine of a ship of Hampton, which did confidently deliver it. I the Generall there calling a Counfell, tooke a resolution, both because wee hoped to meete

out Pinnaces both to the Burlinges, and toward the South Cape (which was our third Rende-uous, by our first appointment) to cause Sir Walter Raleigh and all others of our Fleete to follow. And

being with the lland of Tengera, I looked into the roade of Brafil, and faw there was no Fleete; whereupon we bare along it Detwixt Saint George and Gracies ator the Illand of Flores, at which we might both water and take in victuals, which in Merchants ships her Maiestie had sent after Tercers. Victuals fent vs : and where, if the Indian Fleete did come this yeere, they were likelt to fall. But when we had after them. spent at Flores some tendayes, in which time Sir Walter Raleigh and his company came vnto vs.by a imill Pinnace come from the Indies, I the Generall was told, that it was doubtfull whether the Indian Fleete came from thence or not, and if they did, they would change their viuall course, comming from

and come in some height more to the Southward, till they were past these llands, where viully the Indies. they are attended. Which newes made vs resolue in Counsell to goe for Fayal, and so for Saint Michael, and to haue some nimble ships to lye off and on at Sea, both to the Southward and to the Northward. In our passige by faile, Graciosa, and Pico, we tooke such commodities and refreshings as those I- 40 lands afforded : and in passing from them toward Saint Michael, wee were told that a great ship was discouered off of Graciosa: whereupon I the Generall gave order to divide and to direct the Fleete into three places : the one to furre away East North-east, and to goe along the Northide of Tercera: the other East South east, and to goe by the Southfide of the faid Iland, and both to meete in the roade of Brafil: fo as if the Carackes, or Welt Indian Fleete should strive to recover Tercera, they should be cut off: And the third part of the Firete should ply to the Westward, which way it was faid that the great ship stood, and so to cut it off, if it longht for the roade of

these three waves she must needes stand; for the winde being at North North-west, shee could

Byt as I had given this direction, there came to me a fmall Barke of Lime, whose Captaine not goe but one of their three couries. did confidently afture me, that he was the man that did follow the chase, and fetched it vp, finding it but a small ship of our owne Fleete : which made vs resolue to continue our former intended courle for Saint Michael. But in this meane time, I the Generall hailing the Captaine of a Pinnace, and willing him to call to the ships of my squadron to follow my light, and those of the Viceadmirals squadron to follow his light to the Westward (which direction I did presently after counter-mand) hee misheard, and willed some ships that were next, to sland about to the Wellward : which direction, together with his not hearing of me that, which was spoken to countermand it, made foure of her Maiesties ships, the Garland, the Marie rose, the Dread-nanght, and the Rainebow, to fland off to the West all that night : of which, Sir William Mounfon in the 63 Rainebowe fell in the night with the West Indian Flette; and it being calme, went off in his Boate to make and haile them: which heedid, and made himfelfe knowne vnto them: and straight rowing to his ship, hee shot off his Ordnance all night, and carried a light in his maint top : whereupon the other three of her Maiesties ships shood off with him, but could recreech

Fayal : which if the were kept from, Tergera was her onely place the could put into : and one of

up the Spaniards till they were gotten into Tercera Road; before which, after they had flriued in vame to get into them, they plied till my comming, which was three dayes after : for I was hard Fleet recount aboord the Welfermost part of Saint Michaell before I heard these newes.

And then flanding about, I the Generall being on head of the Fleet, met in my way with a Torcera. great Ship of the Governour of Hanana, and a Frigate of the Spanish King, manned with the faid Kings Souldiers, and another Frigate of a particular man : which three I ferched out, tooke, and Three Star & manned for the lafe bringing home of the Ship and goods, and fell the next night being Saturday,

with Tercera; where finding the wind ftrong at Northwest, we plyed with as much faile as ever we could bear to get up to the road of Brafil all that night. Al Sunday,

to and Sunday night, and till Munday morning wee could not weather the point of Brafil: which when wee had done, while I the Generall gathered fuch of the Fleet as were neere. I fent in a Pinnace of my Lord of Cumberland, and foure or fine of very fufficient Captaines and Mafters, to fee whether it were possible for vs to get up where the Ships rode : and they brought me backe word, it was impossible. With which I being not satisfied plied in with mine owne Ship, keeping abourd with mee two or three of the principall Officers, that wee might judge by the eye, and dispute vpon the place; and when wee were in, wee faw the bottome of the Bay (into which they were towed and warped) lay tight in the eye of the wind : fo as to lead it in with a fayle it was impossible, and to turne it vp would aske an whole day, if wee had scope, but both wee must youn either board come within a quoytes east off their Forts, and yer our Ships would 20 wend in to narrow a place, wee should have beene on shoare. Which manifest discouerie, and not the idle Shot of all the Forts and Ships, though they were verie hierall, made mee

stand off agains.

And as it was impossible to doe any thing for the present, so when I the Generall called all the Captaines of her Maiethies Ships together, and enquired the effate of their charge, I found that some by the naughtinesse of their Caske and leakage of Beere, had not about two dayes, and some not one dayes drinke aboord; and that which most of vs all had did so stinke, as our men dved Want of proand fell ficke continually, and all men-protested, that if wee stayed to attend change of windes, and d. I not instantly seeke a watering place, both men and Ships were absolutely lost. Besides we faw the Galions had beene vnladen, by their shewing their white bellies so much aboue wa-20 ter, and that the Merchants Ships lay all dry on shoare; so as we had abidden the extreamest ha-

zard of her Maiesties troupes and Ships, for the burning of a few dry vnladen Vessells.

Thus were we driven to beare the second time with Saint Michael (our chiefe end being to water, but withall to facke the Hand if we could land neere the principall Towne) where wee came to an anchor before Punta Delgada the chiefe Towne; and forthwith went in a little nimble Boat to difcouer the landing places, which we found to be exceeding dangerous. For as about ail those llands of the Acores a Westerly wind bringeth in the hollow mother Sea , so the wind then being West Southerly blew trade, and made both a great Sea gate or wash vpon the shoare. and a dangerous rode. So as besides the apparant likelihood, that our men had been all lost by the ouerturning of our Boats ypon our heads : the loffe of our Boates, which could not have beene in 40 that place avoided, had kept vs from watering, and so had beene the manifelt deftruction of the

whole Fleet, Whereupon, I the Generall, leauing commandement of the great Ships with Siz Walter Raleigh (because the Lord Thomas Howard defired to land with mee) accompanied with his Lords Ship, and all the other principall Officers and persons of qualitie in the Army, I put my felfe in the imal Ships, and towed the boats at our Sterns to feeke another smal Bay on the other fide of the Point to the Eastward, called Punta de Galera or Galy Point, where there was a Land Punta de la Fange, and confequently a smoother landing.

But we putting off in this manner at eleven of the clocke at night, I the Generall in a Pinnace of Sir Walter Raleigh, called the Guiana, wherein all the Officers of the Land Army did accompa-

ny me, & the Aduenturers of quality that came out of my Ship in another Pinnace with Captain 50 Arthur Champernon came to an anchor in this Bay; but fo dangeroully as wee were put from our anchor, and had like to have beene cast away : all the rest of the Fleet being put to leeward very farre. The next morning at the breake of the day, being driven as low as Villa Franca, and there finding a good landing place, wee fet our troups on shoare; where wee found (belides many other commodities with which we refreshed our troupes) a better watering place, and a safer rode then any other thas was about that Hand. Which, together with the impossibilitie of getting our small Snips and Boats to ply backe againe fine leagues against the wind, and to meet vi that should have marched by land, and they seeing of many of the Queens principal ships driven from their anchors about, and come to Villa Franca . These accidents I say, made vs to resolue to draw all the Fleet to one place, and there to water with all poffible diligence.

And wee being there faw it was fo dangerous for our Ships to ride, the wind growing more Ochober the Southerly, as on Sunday the fifteenth of October, wee re-imbarked all our men ; the Malters of fifteenth. the Ships having before protefled, that if they were put from their anchors, as hoursly they looked to bee, that the Fleet and Land Forces were in danger to be seuered for this whole Winter: So as to have hazarded her Maietties honour, and so many gallant men, for that which was

The Indian

neuer any of our ends, had beene as vinwife as it was vinfafe; and if the counfell of retyring were Their returne. good, the manner of it was without taxation : for wee imbarked first of all our idle persons . secondity our adventerous, and the old Companies one after another; and when weehad but three hundred and fiftie men on shore, the enemy marching in fight of our Guards, we went cut to meet him, and flood two houres readie to fight with the whole Forces of the Iland, till at last they retired one of fight. Thus left wee that Iland, the principall Commanders by Land and Seaftaying to bring off the last man. In this meane time, while the Land Forces were at Villa France. and the Fleet at Punta Delgada, there came into that Road a Carake and a small Brasil man. The Carack presently ran her selfe on the Rocks; and after her men had saved themselves, the last ser becoming with all the goods in her, to avoid her being taken. Which Sir Walter Raleighand to those with him could not possibly avoid. The Brafil man was taken, and the Ship being found leakie, the goods were taken out and put into English Ships.

the Rocks. A Ship of Brafl.aken.

And now wee liaue given account of all our whole carriage vntill we bare for England. If our comming home scattering be obiected, wee must plead the violence of stormes, against which no fore directions, not prefent industry carr prevaile. Wee must conclude with this. That as wee would have acknowledged that wee had done but our duties, if we had defeated the Adelantado. interpreted the Feet of Treasure, and conquered the Hands of the Agores : So wee having failed of nothing that God gaue vs meanes to doe; wee hoped her Maieftie will thinke our painful dayes, carefull nights, euill diet, and many hazards deferue not now to be meafured by the event. the like honourable and inft construction wee promise our selues at the hands of all my Lords. As 20 for others, that have fet warme at home and descant upon vs, wee know they lacked strength to performe more, and believe they lacke courage to adventure fo much,

Signed

* charles.

Thomas Howard. Char Mountion. Walter Raleigh. Fran: Vere. Antony Sherley. Christ: Blum.

d. IL

A larger Relation of the faid Iland Voyage, written by Sir ARTHYR GORGES Knight, collected in the Queenes Ship called the Wast Spite, wherein he was then Captaine ; with Marine and Martiall Discourses added according to the Occurrences.

* Ofthefe Timds fee before Lingblotens obfernations: to which I have added this Authors defeription, as containing

in omitted. Thisbooke was written .4. 1607. and dedicated to thatgreat hope vfurpation. of Great Brisaine, Prince Henry , the Epiftle to him and the Preface I haus omitted in regardof our long volume, I haue not added a word of

Hefelles of the Afores are fituate in the Atlantike or Westerne Ocean, and doe stand betweene 37, and 40 degrees, and distant from England 400, leagues. They are in number in the part of the stand Marten, Saint Michaels, The Tercera, Gratiofa, S. Georges, Pyker Fryak Flores, and Cermo.

This name of Afores was given vnto thefe Ilands by the Portugues, of a kind of Hawkes called, 40 by them Afores (which wee name Gofbankes , and the Latines Accipitres) whereof there did breed great store in those Iles : But Ortellins fets downe this name to bee so given of the French word Efforer, which fignifieth, to dry or wither, but yeeldeth no reason withall for that Etimofomwhat ther- logy. The Netberlanders doe call them the Flemift Hands, challenging that they were first discouered by the Merchans of Bridges, who found them meerely vn-inhabited, abounding with Woods and Cedar Trees, whether they fent Colonies to people and manure them. And afterterwards in processe of time they yeelded themselves Subicets to the Portugues, who since did inhabite and gouerne there, fo as now with them they are fallen under the power of the Spanifo

Amongst these llands the Tercera's the chiefe, but is so called by the Spaniards, because it beth the third Iland distant from the Coast of Spaine. It is plentifull of Fruit and Corne, and hath some Vines growing in it. The Inhabitants doe make great benefit and trade of Oade to dye Cloth, which growes there in great plentie: The chiefe Towne in that Iland is called Angra, and hath thereunto a very ilrong Fortreffe, called Brazill, and under it a Roade for flipping to ride, but an Hauen or fafe Port for all weathers, there is not one among it their nine llands.

The Pike is focalled of a sharpe Mountaine, rising steeple wife some three miles in height and fix or feuen miles in circuit at the foot; fashioned it is vpward like an Hine, and the top therof most commonly to be discerned within and about the clouds. This Mountaine light in it (by

mine but the Title and Marginall Notes; nor defalked any of the Authors (after my wont in others, not to make their writings mine, bur thine, 60 the tedhoulaciff in fooften repetitions by otten engors; the tedhoulaciff in fooften repetitions by otten relitors; and the fuperfluintes being fuch as would deterre the Reader;) the transfer I have vitally as in another letter; to diffinguith them from the History; the one the Lyes offentitions, the effect that Minds, and both worthy both thineeyes and minds best observation. Hee added also Notes touching the Nation Royall, which are worthy the noting but perhaps not to be permitted to enery vulgar and noteleffe eye. Sometime a contraction of party butternby cautiopaines, and buffe labour may reap the reward of a buffeb. dy. I am both to buy repentance,

report) many great hollow Caues and deepe Vaults, and it is credibly reported that oftentimes it treathes out flames and iparkes of fire, as doth the Mountaine Lina. Also at the bottome of this Mountain, towards the East, there is a great Spring of Fresh-water, which is teen many times to iffue out flakes and itones of fire with great violence, and of the number and bigneffe of the fromes that are throwne out by the force and fource of this Spring, and what huge workes they make of the multitudes of them, they confidently doe tell frange wonders, which I will neither affirme nor deny but leave indifferent to credit as men lift.

Fazall is to called of Faza, which in the Portugues fignifieth a Beech Tree, wherewith that Iland Fazall, is faid to abound. But yet I faw there more flore of luniper and Cedar, then of any other Wood To cr Timber. For Aire and Soyle, it is as pleasant and fruitfull, as any of the other Ilands, and in it are some fine Townes with many pretie Villages ; and in this Hand there are yet remaining certaine families of the Flemis race. Gratiofa is to called of the exceeding fruitfulneffe of the Sovle and pleafant temper of the Ayte. Flores, of the abundance of Flowers that grow in it. Curuo, of Flores. the multitude of Rauens and Crowes breeding therein. And that Hand doth also breed Horses. Curus. Saint Maries, Saint Georges, and Saint Michaels, were to called of thole Saints names, vpon whole S. Maries &c. dayes they were first discouered; for such is the custome of many Nauigators, and especially of the Spaniards and Portugues, fo to call those Landes that they first make by the Saines day and name wherein they are discouered. And these three Hands for temper and fruitfulnesse are suteable with the others : But Saint Michael is the greatest of them all, Tercera the strongest, and Saint 20 Maries the neerest to the Coast of Spaine.

But now as wee come neerer to our intended purpole, for the better understanding thereof, L thinke it very necessary and pertinent somewhat to speake of the chiefe Commanders, as well by Sea as by Land, and also of the number of our Ships and Souldiers, together with the proiect and deligne of that journey then undertaken for the service of her late Maieflie, and the Honour of our Nation.

It is therefore to be understood, that Robert Denerous, late Earle of Effex, Master of the Horse Commanders and Ordnance, and Knight of the Garter : First commanded in chiefe, as well Admirall of the names, and Nauie by Sea, as Generall of the Armie by Land. His Vice-Admiralt was the Lord Thomas chiefe officers, Howard Knight of the fame Order, and second Sonne to the last Thomas Duke of Norfalke, a No-30 bleman much honoured and beloued, and of great experience in Sea service. His Reare-Admirall Was Sir Walter Raleigh Knight, Captaine of her Maieities Guard, Lord Warden of the Stanneries, and Lieftenant of Cornwall. For the Land fernice, his Leiftenant Generall was Sir Charles Blunt. Lord Meantier, Knight of the Garter, Governour of Portfamonth, and a man in high favour with her late Maieftie. His Marshall of the Field was Sir Franzen Vere Knight, a great Souldier, and Coronell Generall of the English Forces in the Low-Conneries. The Mafter of the Ordnance. Siz George Carem Knight , Leiftenant of the Ordnance of the Kingdome of England. His Sergeant Maior, Sir Ferdinando Gorges Knight, Gouernour of the Fores of Plimonth. The Coronell Generall of the Foot Sir Christopher Blunt Knight : The Treasurer of the Armie Sir Hugh Buston Knight, one of her Maiesties Receiners Generall in the Principalities of Walles, with all other

pardon if I faile in the precedencie of their places. The Earles of Effex, Rusland, and Southampton, the Lord Howard, the Lord Audley, the Lord Noblemen Gran, the Lord Mountury, the Lord Rich, and the Lord Cromwell. But the particular names of all this service. the Land Captains that had charge I could never come to the knowledge of, much leffe can I marshall them orderly in this discourse. And therefore I will passe to the number of the Ships in generall, and therein name some particulars of the chiefe and principall Vessells of the Royall

40 Officers defigned to places requifite that were needful by Land or Sea, now too long to rehearle.

And yet of all the Noblemen I will as neere as I can record their names particularly; but craue

Nauie, with their Captaines. The whole Name (which was divided into three Squadrons, viz. The Admirall his Squadron; The Name 50 The Vice-Admirall his Squadron , and the Reare-Admirall his Squadron) confided of 120. fayle, or there bout; whereof fixtie were good men of Warre and gallant Ships; thereft Victuallers, and Ships of Transportation. Of her Maiesties owne Ships the number was eighteene or faile nineteene, and these were their names. The Merhoneur Admirall, whereof sir Robert Manf. The Queenes field was Captaine : The Due Repulse Vice-Admirall, whereof Mafter Middleton was Captaine : this and their The Waft Spice Reare-Admirall, whereof my felfe was Captaine : The Garland the Earle of Sou. Captaines. thampton commanded : The Defiance wherein the Lord Mountier was shipped, had for Captaine Sir Amias Prefion : The Saint Mathem to Sir George Carem, Matter of the Ordnance : The Mary Rose to Sir Francis Vere Marshall , whose Captaine was M. Iohn Winter: The Dread-nough Sir William Brooke was Captaine of : The Nonparellia Sit Richard Luson was Captaine of : The Bo-60 nonenture Sit William Harney was Captaine of : The Antiloge Sit Thomas Vauifor was Captain of : The Rainbow Sit Wallam Mounfon was Captaine of : The Swiftfure Sit Gilly Mericke was Captain

of : The Colden Lion was lent after for a fupply. The Hope, whereof was Captain Forefight, whereof Sir Carem Reignall was Captaine : The Saint Andrew, whereof Mafter Matcellin Throckmorton was Captain : The Tramontana, whereof young Mafter Fenner was Captain :

The Moone, whereof Sir Edward Michelboorne was Captaine. Befides that there were fome orher of her Maiesties imall Pinnaces that attended the Fleet,

The reft of

The refidue or the Fleet aforenamed confifted of the best shipping of London, and other Port-Townes of the Kingdome, with fundry front Veffells belonging to some Lords and Gentlemen that were Aduentmers in this Voyage. There were also added to this Name tenne sayle of good men of Warre, fent from the States of the Lon-Countries to attend her Maielties Fleet in this fervice, under the conduct of one Mounfier de Duneincorde, well manned and furnished.

Ten Hollanders Land-Army.

The Land Army (befides Saylers that might be afforded and spared vponoccasion of landing) conflitted of ux-thousand able men well appointed, with ten Peeces of Artillery for the Field and Battery, with all necessiary V tentils fit for them. The proportion of victuals was for four months at large allowance, & double apparell both for Souldiers and Mariners. In this Armie there went Knights, Captaines, and Gentlemen, voluntaries fine hundred at the least; as gallant parlonages.

Fine handred Voluntaries gallantly furnith d. The deligne.

and as branely furnished, as ener the eye of men did behold. The lift of whole names I did ferioully inquire after, thereby to doe them right, but could by no meanes compaffe it. The end and purpose of this great Preperation was to the taking in of most of those Ilands, and especially of the winning of the Tercerast felfe, the which was refolied to have beene attempted by vs. with the

Internation Torcera.

Plimouth.

other Il inds and Holds of importance, and in some of them to have placed strong Garrisons, if it had blea-Ged God to have professed the tourney with happy successe: But in the very beginning with long contrary winds, and extremitie of foule weather, the maine plot and ground of this enterprise was bindred and mainsed, as bereafter more at large shall be related in his due place. But this intended sourney for the furprifine and bolding of the Tercera alone, if it had taken effect (without any further respect to the other Hands then onely to have facked them and rafed those Fortresses they have) had beene a service of great consequence for us, and as preindicial to the King of Spaine, as any action that was ever undertaken aequist hom, fince the renolt of the Low-Countries; The which to fet downe in particular, would reasure more ample discourse, then either my leasure, or my memory can suddenly afford. But what great vie and benefit bath the Portugues did, and the Spaniards doe make of the fe Ilands is in daily experience. And ex for that bare Allegation, bow difficult and inconvenient it would bee for vs to bold a peece fo farre off: men of Warre in their true indoements would easily answere. For as well it might be demanded, how the Forts are beld in the East Indies by the poore Postugues against mightie Nations, and yet so farre remote from Christendome: And bow Rhodes and Cyprus were beretofore long kept in despite of the Turke 20 in his very before. And bow the Spaniards of late bane kept certaine places in Britaine, and Amyens, and Callice in Picardie, mangre the force of France, and never quitted them but by composition : And Godknowes bow long Don Ioim D' Lagurta would bane kept Kiniale and Beare Castle, of these bad bin places balle fa terrible, as those of the Tercera; or but the foutb part so remote from vs, as the Tercera is from Spaine. Undoubtedly their industry and patience is far beyond ours, both in getting and holding matters of more difficultie. But vaine it is to fet a price of the Beares skin before hee be flaine; although I am verily persuaded that the contrary winds onely lost vs both that, and all the King of Spaine his trea-(ure that came that yeere to the Tercera. For the lourney was carried with as great fecrecie, expedition, and Royall preparation, as ever was any these many yeeres, and they on the contrary as stenderly provided, and little doubting any fuch attempt. When all things were thus ordered, and wee furnished of 40 our necessaries after some few daies abode in Sandwich for the meeting, mustering, and imbarking of our Land Army, about the fine and twent:eth of lune, in the yeere 1 597. we fet faile from the Downes, and within three dayes with skant winds recovered Portland Rhode, where we ancored and stated some fix or seven dayes, taking in men and victualls at Waymouth, and thence we made for Plimonth, where were were to take in our freshwater, much of our prouisions, and mest of our Manners; belides that this place was appointed the very randeuous for the knitting up and dispatch of this Voyage: whether in a day and a nights sayle wee came, but with very extreme foule weather. Infomuch that even in the entrance of the very Harbour, many of our Ships falling foule one of another were forely diffretfed. The Lord Mountay his Ship the Defiance, had her Beake head stricken cleane off ; and the Saint Mathem (being a Spanish Ship of great 50 charge, very leeward and drawing much water) had like in the tempelt to have runne her felfe vpon the Rocks, had not her Captaine Sir George Carew Master of the Ordnance, beene very refolute and carefull in that extremitie, when a great part of his Souldiers and Saylers would have abandoned her , and betaken themselves to their Ship-boats, to shun the imment perill that threatned them : which he staied to the preservation of the Ship and the company. Moreover a Flee-boat of our Traine, who had in her fortie Last of Powder was likewife bulged, and all the there had beene veterly loft, had not the Mafter of the Ordnance with like care and diligence beftirred himselfe to faue all that hee might, who with the aid of many Ship-boats, as the Flee-boat was finking, faued the greatest part of her lading. Yet notwithstanding seventeen Lasts of Powder was veterly spoiled with the Salt-water, as I heard the Matter of the Ordnance him- 60 felfe affirme.

Thus with great difficultie wee arrived at Plimont, where within fix or feven daies our whole Army and Name met, and withall the shipping of the Low-Countries came to vs. And seene after having watered and taken in all our promitions and Marines, and muttered our men, we introduced

nor fame, and let fayle about the nurth of July, and for two dayes space were accompanied with a faire leading North-easterly wind. In which time we received a ship-board all our directions Fireuphout the Nittle, with fuch orders and instructions as are vivally set downe by an Admirall, and a Countell of Warre, together with the places of meeting from time to time vponany Infructions contains of leparations by itormes, by fight, by guing chale, or any other accidents. This order and infittualiof delinering directions when a Fleet is a Sea-boord, and not before, is an use grounded upon many good onstauching realizate as to anoid the renealing of fecret plots, and the presention of sudden execution. As also to bun instructions. the discouraging of diners that doe often expose themselves and their adventures to Sea actions, either for lone to the Commanders, or cut of hope of Purchafe, or, for many other respects, which perhaps they 10 Would not doe if they knew indeed either the danger, or the true ends of forme preparations. And this fecret manner of proceeding bath bin often v fed by Philip the late king of Spain, in diners great expeditions, who bath beene fa precise and seuere therein, as that oftentimes the Admiralls of bis Fleet themselnes have not knowne their instructions, nor beene suffered to open them, untill they have beene thirtie or fortie leagues on their way. Wee now being in this faire courfe, fome fixtie leagues onwards our journey with our whole Fleet together, there fuddenly arose a fierce and temperatuous fforme full in our Stormes teeths, continuing for foure dayes with to great violence, as that now every one was inforced rather to looke to his owne fafetie, and with a low faile to ferue the Seas, then to beat it vp against the flormy winds to keepe together, or to follow the directions for the places of meeting. And heresome began to taste the inconvenience and perill of high Cargued Ships drawing little wa-20 ter, and ouercharged with mightie Ordnance in a furious high wrought Sea : And now also or creued & of thers found and felt the mischiese of weake built Vessells, and of rotten Tackle. For this extrea- weake hips mitie of weather was fo great, as that wee were all one after another forced backe againe, some into Plimouth, and di ers into other Harbours on that Coast, so extreamely shaken and beaten, as that the Admirall was in danger to have foundred in the Sea, having many leaks broken out voon him, and his mid-ship beame injurred in funder. And yet (as wee viderstood after) some three or foure of the formost of our Fleet (whereof the Earle of Southampton in the Garland was faid Resurre to to be one) did recouer fight of the North-Cape, but yet forced to returne againe to Plimouth. Plimouth. And many of our Gentlemen and Knights, with this boyferous and bitter entertainment on the Seas, returned extreame weake and lay dangeroufly ficke long after: Infomuch that fome of them dyed thereof at Plimonth, and were there honourably buried by the Generall. Some also were so Great ficknesses much weakened and diftempered, as that they were not able to recouer strength to put to the Seas againe, as Sir Ferdinando Gorges our Sergeant Maior, in whose place our Generall did appoint Sir A. Shely Sir Anthony Sherly; and Sir Caren Reignalls Captaine of the Forefight, to feuerely weakned with placed in Seas tickneffe, as that his charge was delinered our to Sit Alexander Rectiffe, a very forward and roome of Signal and young Gentleman, who(not long after) was flaine in the Warres of Ireland with Sit Congallant young Gentleman, who (not long after) was flaine in the Warres of Ireland, with Sir Conniers Clifford Gouernour of Connaugh. And amongst others in the beginning of this bitter florme, Sir Alexander our Treasurer Sir Hugh Biston was also to extreamely affiched with Sea ficknesse, and in so great Raidiffe.

40 on of his mind. And I thinke this lofing of our Treasurer in the beginning, was an ominous prefage of the loffe of the infinite Treasures, which afterward so valuckily patt by and escaped vs. Wee being thus with contrary winds, and extreamitie of weather beaten backe into feuerall Hauens, and yet at last meeting at Plimonth (except some few Ships of transportation, that were driven upon the Coasts of France, Wales, and Ireland, with some of our Bands of Souldiers) we fell to repairing of our Ships, and to amend those inperfections which the Seas and stormes had discouered. But withall were inforced to abate a great part of the first proportion of our Armie, as well through the derects of the Admirall his Ships, and others, as also for the waste and expence which wee had made of our drinke and victuals by the leaking of the Caske, and by the abundance of Salt-water, which was taken in during the storme, to the wetting and ipoyling of many of our prouisions. Besides that, much of our beare aboard those Victualiers that followed our 50 Fleet with divers other provisions, was very vile and vinlavoury of it felfe, by the great abule of

the Victuallers and London Brewers, as well for the carelelle brewing, as for the vinfeatonable Brewers failte stinking Caske which they deliver, a fault much vied among them, and too much tolerated, confidering the infinite ra eard gaines they make of felling Thames water, beyond all good order and proportion. But as God would, at that infant when wee had discharged our Ships of that vnseruiceable poisonous drinke, there came very happily into Plimonth for a supply, a tall prize A Prize. laden with Spanish Canary Wines, which was diffributed among it the Fleet to make Benerage. And in this fort vling all industry and diligence for the letting affore of our storme-beaten Name, wee fo fitted our felues againe within eight or ten dayes, as that wee were readie for a new for-60 tune. But yet this violent and dangerous tempelt had fo cooled and battered the courages of a

great many of our young Gentlemen (who feeing that the boyiterous winds and mercileffe Seas, had neither affinitie with London delicacie, nor Court bravery) as that discharging their high Plumes, and imbroydered Callockes, they becretly retired themselves home, torgetting either to not with och bid their friends farewell, or to take leave of their Generall. Andbere by the way, a little to digrefie, cacyst bours

our Treaturer Sir ringo Diston was and to Extremitely among the was finipped) he was imbarked into a Car- his ominous uell of our traine to returne for England, feeing his weake body vnable to vndergoe the resoluti-

Advice for Gallants.

I thinke it not amiffe infily to reprehend and taxe our Nation, for their unproper and vains manner of going to the Warres, and especially those that had never Seene service. For bee hee poore or rich when hee first prepares to que to firme, hee will take more care, and be at more cost to provide himselfe of a rossing Feather, and a clynicant Coat, then to bee furnished either of fit Armes, or of necessary clothing to been out wet and cold: whereby they come both to the Sea and Field service, rather like Markers then Souldiers, as men apter to bring spoyles for the Enemy, then to conquer or win bonour from him. And yet at the last the manting of their needfull habiliments in times of extreamitie, doth make them truly to sinde their owne errour and inperfisions vanitie in those idle and fruitlesse toyes : whereof I could wish a reformation as well for the bettering of our service, as also for abating such needlesse expences. Such were the narish trouves and vilded Armies of Davius, abounding in pompe and delicacy: whose millions of effeminate 10 Perlians were ener dispersed and defeated by bandfulls of the poore and hardie Macedonians. So were the feele edged Souldiers of that renowned Hanniball, metamorphofed into Cowardise and Sloth, after ther had once relished the pride and delicacies of Capua, for their conquests ever after declined. So was allo that famons M. Anthonius overthrowne and vanquifted, when he left the first Martiall discipline of his owne viet rious Country, and fastioned his Forces according to the branery and luxury of Egypt. to observe the bumour of Cleopatra, who had utterly corrupted and weak ned the courage both of him and bu leasons with vanities, excesse, and idlenesse. And such in our dayes were the glorious glisting French troupes led by the Duke of Loyeule, being for the most part compounded of the gallant Courtiers and dancing Minions of Henry the Third French King of that name, but becten and ouerthrowne at the Battell of Couttras, by the valiant King of Navarr, and an handfull of his poore Hugonotes (as they then ter- 20 med them.) Farre otherwise was the wont and manner of those worthy Romans, that by their wisdome and valour made themselnes famons, and Lords over the World, whose glorious examples wee doe more willingly read then follow. They going a warfare departed Rome in obedience and strictuesse of Martiall discipline, in sobrietie of diet and active, fitted with Armes, like men that knew that Iron and Steele were mastring mettalls over Gold and Silner, and having aschieued and performed their enterprifes, returned then home in triumph, in glory, and in pride, thining in the spoyles and riches of their vanquished Enemies, and adorned with as much sumptuous neffe as they could get, brauing therein their conquered Foes, and fetting to the shew of the world the fruits of their Valour and Transiles. Whereas wee for the most part comtrativile going out branely, and returning bome againe beggarly, leane no other testimony nor records of our Enterprises and Victorius, either to the liming or to posteriste, then the Merchants bookes wherin we are 20 deep plunged, even to the morgage or sale of our Inberstance, to convert the true bonor of Souldery into effeminate pompe and delicacy. But now to the matter: We having in this Fort repaired and supplied the defects of our weather beaten Nauie, onely attended the fauour of the winds; wherein it feemed the heavens were vtter enemies to our defignes. For during the space of an whole moneth together (after wee were againe readie) the weather stood flat opposite to our course, insomuch that wee were not able to worke our felues out of the Harbour. And in this confumption of Time we loft the best season of the yeere for our purpose, and also greatly decayed our victualls and provisions; betides the number of our Souldiers and Mariners that daily diminished. And about this time the Lord Rich finding himfelfe (as many others did) altogether vnable to indure the inconueniences of the Seas in a long and toilefome voyage, tooke his leaue of our Generall, and gaue o- 40 uer the journey. In this extreamitie of contrary windes and croffe fortunes (against which the policie and power of man could not preuaile) our Generall, with the aduice of his counfell refolued voon some other course, and to fashion his enterprises according to opportunitie, and the proportion of the meanes that remained. And thereupon cashing the greatest part of his Land Armie, hee onely retained one thousand of the best Souldiers (as was thought) most of them being Companies brought out of the Low-Countries : And also at that time hee discharged divers of the fmaller Ships, and many of the Victuallers, raking out of them fuch provisions and flore as remained to supply that which was spent, and to lengthen out the time for those leffer numbers that were to be imployed. And whileft thefe things were thus altering and ordering, and committed to the care and charge of discreet Officers : Our Admirall himselfe, with his Reare-Admirall re- 40 folued to ride post to the Court, to receive further directions or approbation in that he intended for her Maiettie, and the Lords of the Councell. Leaving the charge both of the Nauie and Souldiers in his absence, with the Lord Thomas Howard his Vice-Admirall, and the Lord Mounting his Leiftenant Generallby Land whom hee authorited, together with the Counsell of Warre, to marshall those affaires as accasion required. Have by it may be casily consectured what it is for men tequirea Print to undertake Sea-altions, that have not great meanes to follow the same, with provisions and allowance of Superfluitie to meet with lets and misadmentures, and not to depend on the bare ordinary promisons of a fer proportion. For by this great croffe of ours, wee may well take knowledge how vocertaine and difficult it is to fet out and prepare a Sea Army, except it bee on the purfe and defraies of a Private, able and willing to supply the expences and bundarances of such wast and accidents, as doe many times bappen 60 by want of windes when all things elfe are in readineffe, wherein ofientimes the enerflipping, and

ces purfe.

Still croffed.

Lord Rich de-

Land Army

p≥rte h.

not taking of fix houres advantage of winde when it hath ferued, bath overshrowne a Voyage. And it Small time bath to my knowledge fo fallen out, that fome Ships that have taken a prefent gale of a day, by the begreat loffe, nefu thereof have performed their Voyage, and returning agains into the Harbour, finding others of their conforts bound for the same place, and ready at the same time, fill ficking fast at ancor; by leeling the same opportunitie.

In this absence of our Generall at the Court, there fell out such extreame stormy weather, as that it greatly troubled and puzled our Ships, both in Plimouth Road, and in the Cat Water, informuch that many of their ancors came home, and a Ship of the Reare-Admiralls, of three hundred Tunnes, called the Roe-buck, draue a ground and bulged her felfe, and so became vinferuiceable for that fourney, although much paines and care was taken of all hands, and fpecially by our Vice-Admirall himfelte in his owne person, to have preserved her, During all this time of our abode in Plimouth, (which was some fix or seven weekes) we neither found ey-

to ther want or dearth of any manner of victualls, either in the Towne, where our Mariners were Good order daily resident, or in the Countrey, where the Land Army was quartered; nor yet that extreame for prousions manner of inhaunting the prices of all things vied in London, and in other places of the at Pinemania. Realme, vpon the extraordinary affembling of any fuch great troupes. And withall it is ftrange to fee, how happily that poore corner of England, doth often receive and fuffaine fo many Armies and Fleets, as doe there many times meet, without any of those inconveniences or alterations, that vpon the like occasion are found, in many other more rich and fruitfull parts of the Kingdome.

Our Generall (as is aforefaid) having spent now fixe or seven dayes in that icorney to the Court, returned with a refolution to continue the voyage to the Seas, and there (as intelligence 20 fell out) to follow the best courses in spending the rest of the Summer, and the remainder of his victualls; all forts being very forry, that fo great preparations should have veterly qualled without effecting, or attempting fomething of worth. Wee therefore now propoted to our felues, that by tarrying out till the last of October, (for the which time we were victualled after the Land Army was discharged) wee might range the Coast of Spaine, and so doe service in some of the Kings shipping, or elie lying in the height betweene the Rocke and the South Cipe, wee might intercept some Indian Fleet or Carrackes, either outwards or homewards bound, or at the least wee might meete and fight with the Adelantado, who was then faide to bee preparing of a Fleet, and ready to put to the Seas. Besides there was a brute given out, tha our Generall meant to attempt the Grome or Ferrall, and there to diftreffe fome of the 30 Kings shipping that lay in the Harbour, But what somer pretences and speeches were ginen out for that matter; both our Generall, and the wifest of his Counsell of Warre, did well enough knows. that the Groyne or Ferrall were then no morfells fit for our monthes, our Forces being fo abated, and shofe places fo well warned and promided for, by our long delayes and impediments, befides there was no likelihood; that wee would ener ingage so many of her Maiesties best Ships, within the circuit and mercy of those Harbours, upon so great disaduantage and hazard, at they must have admentured in doing any good on any of them, as they were then furnished. But wee daily fee that it is Preteners the manner and falhion of great Estates and Commaunders in the Wars, to give out and pretend many sbings, that indeed they intend not, as well to make their names the more famosu and terrible. as also many times to amaze the world with false Alarums, thereby either to hold their true purposes the more secret, or at least to give them the better speed and passage, by diverting the Enemies.

A custome neither new nor visuall : and therefore not repeated as any extraordinary observation. I , this fort all things being ordered and repaired, and our Generall returned with full Commiftion and refolution to proceed : his Lord!hip in stead of the Merchoneur (which was to weakened and disabled, as that shee could not goe forth agains this journey) shipped himselfe in the Dewrenulle, which was Vice-Admirall, and our Vice-Admirall tooke vnto himselfe the Lyon. in liew of the other. And on Wednesday, being the seuenteenth of August, 1997, a little before funne fetting, wee waved our Ancors, and fet fayle, but with much labour got out of The month Road, being forced to vie our Tow-boates, to fet vs cleere of the Harbour, the winde being somewhat flacke and scant. Notwithstanding, afterwards a sea-boord, wee finding the weather more fa jourable, held our course for the North Cape, and the three and twentieth of Sc August, wee fell athwart the Bay of Alchasher, and at last bare full in with it. The which Bayof Aking courie, the Matter of our Ship (called Broadebant) much dilliked, thinking it very inconvenient for-

and perillous for to great a Fleet, fo wilfully to be imbayed upon an Enemies Coast, but yet followed the Generalls courfe. The foure and twentieth of the same moneth, being Bartholmen day, wee met a soule storme

in that Bay, most extreamly violene for the time, but laited not aboue fine or fixe houres. In which forme the S. Matthew, whereof Sir George Carew, Mafter of the Ordnance, was Captaine Si Matthew two houres before day falling into an head Sea, having her Spright-fayle out, brake over-boord diffrested. her Bolt-spright, and Fore-mail close to the Partners, which for the Ships safetie was cut from her fide: In the Fore-top foure Mariners were drowned, keeping their watch there, and the fall of the Masta broke two Ancors, and carried the third into the Sea, vpon which disafter (according to the manner of the Sea) some Ordnance was discharged, and many Lanternes hanged

vpon the shrowdes, to give notice of her distresse in the night. But after day light, the Garland (whereof the Earle of Southampton was Captaine) drew neere to her fuccour, who beholding

Z.z.z.z.z.z

Sir George Carems refolution

with griefe, the miferable estate that this Ship was in, and likely to bee worse, for that her Mayne Mast, with the Ships rowling had loolened it felfe in the Partners, and in danger to breake in the flep (which if it had done, it would prefently haue funke her.) The Earle, though hee was not able to take all the men out of her, into his owne Ship, being in number about feuen hundred persons, yet hee was destrous and carefull to preserve as many as hee might. And to that end fent his Pinnace to Sir George Carew, praying him, and as many as hee would felect of his Company to come vnto him : which noble offer of his Lording, the Mafter of the Ordnance (as hee had reason) thantully received; but having a more tender care of the loffe of his Honour, then of the hazard of his life, would not torfake the Ship, but made election rather, to run the fortune of the rest of his company, then to prounde for the IQ particular fafetie of himselfe, and some other Captaines, and Gentleman of good qualitie. whereof hee had flore. This answere, being returned, the Earle was yet vitatisfied, and being defirous to faue as many as his Ship could well receive, and especially those of the Better fort, fent his Pinnace to the Saint Matthew againe, perswading them not wiscully to lose themselues. But the Captaine perseuered in his former resolution ; and when fome gallant men of his company would gladly have taken the Earles offer, and have left cheir conforts to their fortune, Sir George Carem would in no wife fuffer a man to depart, because it should bee no discomfore to the rest, but openly protested, that both hee. they, and the Ship, would altogether runne on fortune. Whereupon the Earle, feeing that his flaying longer with the Saint Matthew, could in no fort give her men reliefe, and fearing by flay- 20 ing too long, to be farre ingaged in the Bay of Alchafter, and to loofe his Admirall, followed the Fleet.

Narrow Seas, with her Royall Nanie, chanced in a tempest to fall with his Ship athwart a fand,

whereby free was in great danger to bee bulged and lost; whereupon the Captaine and Master of the Ship, perswaded him in that extreamitie and danger, to take the benefit of his Pinnace, and save him-

and protested, that no danger should cause him to leave his company in distress, that for his love had

followed bim to the Seas : Besides, Said bee, I benour the Queene my Mistrelle so much to bring ber word

that I have faued my felfe, and lost ber Ship and therefore let vs do our best to faue alt gether ; for at this

banquet wee will all drinke of one cup. Wherein, as bee gane bimselfe great glory and reputation fo it see-

med, that fortune fauoured bis vertue and courage; for in the end, with diligence and lubour be-

yand all bope, the Ship came fafe off. These extreamities and hazards on the Sea, bring to my mirde an accident worth; the relating, and a piece of fermice not unprofitable for Sea-men in like cofes to besebo

ferued; and this it is . In the Queenes raigne, about the time that the Pope and the King of Spaine,

fent forces into Ireland to and the Earle of Delmond, who then rebelled in Munker, there was

These brane resolutions have beene also vsed heretofore oftentimes, by such as have commanded in the Royall Ships, and sometimes by the Admiralls themselves. And it is well knowne to many Sea-men lining at this day, that Edward, Earle of Lincolne, High Admirall of England, a valiant man , and worthy Gentleman , in the time of Queene Elizabeth, being in seruice on the #d. E. of Lin-

coine High Admirall.

selfe abound the next of the Fleet. But the Earle, according to his honourable mind, openly vowed Audaces fortu-

Sir W. Gorges.

Sir Idm Partot, Sont to the Seas a Fleet of her Maieftier Ships , whereof Sir Iohn Partot was Admirall, in the 40 Reuenge, and Sir William Gorges, my Father, in the Dread-naught Vice-Admirall; who when they had performed their service on the Coast of Ireland, and other places, in their returne home-Drinalla Pirat, wards, the Vice-Admirallebanced to take an English Pirate, whose name was Derivall, a very valsant and shilfull Mariner. This Derivall, the Admirall tooke abourd his owne Ship, and kept him ner thenman. prisoner in the Bilbowes. But so it fortuned, that a great forme arising in the Narrow Seas, the Fleet was scattered, and Sir Iohn Parrats Shippe ravne upon a Sand, where, a good time lice did dangerously beate, having strucken all his Sayles, and with enery Billow was like to bee bulged. And in this desperate extremitie they saw no other way left, but bow they might with Boates, and Rafts faue the men, and for sake the Shippe; some being of one opinion, and some of another, as bope or despaireled them. This Derivall being then prisoner in the Bilbowes, fent word to the Ad 10 mirall, that hee knew well the lying of that Land, and would direct them a way how to faue the Ship and all the company, if hee would promise him on his Faith, and Honon, to get his Pardon when hee came home in recompence thereof. The Admirall willingly accepted the profer, and ingaged his Faith for the performance of his demand, and taking him out of the Bilbowes, had him bestir bimselfe. Whereunto Derivall answered, In bope you will saue my life, according to your Word and Faith given, I will (by Gods belpe) Saue all yours : but if I shought otherwise, I had rather here drowne with so good company, then bee hanged at home alone. The Admiral bidde him not doubt it, but follow bis businesse. Whereupon Derius presently commanded the Master and Mariners, to horse up all their Sayles they could make to the very Battend, which was cleane contrary to that they had done before. (for fearing the mighty winds , they had strooke all their layles , and folis thumping on 60 the Sands) but now the strong gate hausing silled all their sayles, still as the billow role, it draue the Ship forwards, and so in foure or five shoues, being driven with the violence of the windes and the wants, with his stirrages be cut cleane through and athwart the Sand, and floated into the Sea. This was a di fortaleremed e for a de perate danger; for if bee had not vied the benefit of ber failes, and curried

ker ashwart (the Ship being a strong built vessell) shee would still have layer tumbling on the Sand, and at last broken her selfe. Notwithstanding this good service done by Derivall, when hee came home, his remard was an halter, bu offence being remembred, and his defert forgotten: and get the Admiral did Derivallhanbis best to fane bim according to bis promife. But furely (in my powe opinion) in fuch cales a State figuid ged against doe well, for examples fake, and for incouragement of others, to take notice of such extraordinary feruices. and to remember that vertue deserves no leffe to bee cherifhed, then vice to be chastised, and that to Advice. whom a State committeeth the trust or confidence of a Generalls or Admiralls place, it should also allow bim the honor, to make good his word for any thing, that concernes the advancement of the (ervice where-But I will returne againe to Sir George Caren , whom we left tottering in his wrackt Ship,

and in a great storme, for I have occasion here to stand somewhat vpon the Relation of his hard aduentures after his difafter, because I have heard it by many that were with him in the Ship, often, and at large discoursed of ; and himfelfe being a princicall Officer in the Action, shipt in a vessell of great charge, it cannot bee reputed as a digression, or impertment from the

matter, for small is the reward of those that so resolutely engage, and expose their lives for the feruice of their Prince and Countrey, if they should not bee allowed the comfort of honourable Storyof the memory. After the departure of the Earle of Southampton from the S. Mathew, as aforefaid, ma- S. Mathew. ny Counfells in this diffressed Ship were held for the cutting of her Mayne Mall over-board, which with rowling was growne at last to be so toose, as that it was continually seared that it 20 would breake in the Stop, and when the Carpenters were ready to begin that worke, the storme ceased, and the Seas began to calme, wherein finding comfort they made of a space top Math a lury Fore-malt, and the Pinnace sayle served for a Fore-sayle. In this pittifull estate the Ship still running before the winde, which shee could not otherwise doe by region of her small Fore-sayle, within foure dayes after by the goodnesse of God, came tafely to an

anchor at the Ile of Saint Martreines in France, where Sir George Carew made all the meanes hee might to get a new Mait, whereby hee might follow the Fleet. But vpon S. Matthew all that Coast hee could not prouide himfelfe of any to fit fo great a Gallyon. And therefore brough home of necessitie having setled his Mayne-matt, he returned for England, and within few dayes arri-

ued in the Hauen of Portimouth.

Hee thus having brought the Saint Mathew (beyond all hope) fafe within a good Harbour, not any thing dilamayd with palt perills , prefently dispatched Captain Francis Stingiby in post C.Fr. Slingiby. to the Court, to aduertife the Lords of her Maiesties Councell, of the misfortunes which had befalne him and there with all humbly defired that he might be permitted to take her Marelies thip Sir Garre Cacalled the Aduenture, which was then in that Harbour, and in her to follow the Fleet, which being granted he shipped himsel'e in her, and according to the instructions (which were delivered tures in the to every Captaine of the Fleet) hee fought for the Admirall at the Groyne, which was the first Auuentare, Randenous let downe in the instructions aforesaid, from thence hee made to the Rocke, and not finding the Fleet at either of these places, he failed to the Cape Saint Fincent, where it was resolved by the Lord Admirall and Councell of the Warre to stand off and on, and to attend the comming home of the West Indies Fleet. There hee had intelligence by a small man of Warre of Planouib, that the Generall with the whole Fleet was at the Hands of the Afores, whereunto he directerh his courfe. And when hee was (as hee efteemed) within one hundred leagues of the Tercera, he had intelligence by another fmall man of Warre, in the which a man of Sir William Brookes was Captaine, that followed the Fleet for purchase, that the Lord Generall in his opinion was at that time vpon the Coast of England, for hee had left the Hands fourteene daies before the Aduenture, and he did meet; vpon which intelligence he changed his course for Englard. And not farre from Vihent in the night, hee fell into the middeft of a great Spanift Fleet, Spanift Fleet, which had bin with the Adelantado vpon the Coast of England, & then homeward bound; but the

night being formy, he escaped that perill, and yet not without great danger. For one of the Spanifo Gallions which was tuppoted to bee the Admirall (for thee carried a mightie Lanthorne in her Poope) paffed so neere to the Aduenture, that their Mayne-yards in the end were foule one of the other, so as they hardly aucyded their stemming of their Ships, which in all likelihood must have sunke one, or both. With this storme the Adnessure was forced into Ireland, into Corke Hauen in Munfter, where hee repaired his Ship of certaine leakes thee had, and also corke H uen. mended her Mayne Maft, which was ftrangely fhinered with a whirlewind. And then putting to Sea againe for England, a little before day, in a fforme the Ship was driven vpon the lee shoare Danger by within Beachy in Suffex; and not being able to double that head land, in the endeauouring wher- florme. of all the Sayles, being by violence of weather rent from the yards, to auoid running upon the Rockes, they came to an anchor, every Billow overwashing the Ships head, that neither by pum-

60 ping, nor lading out of the water, they were able to free her : and the men in her to tired with labour, as no hope of fatetie was left. The last remedy was to cut all the Masts and Tackle ouerboord, which lightened the Ship, and by that meanes shee was preserved. After thirtie houres of this extreame perill, the florme ceased, and so by Gods fauour with a lury Mast, which was made of the Boat Matt, and the Boat Sayle, having no Matt nor anchor left but one, he arri-

ued voon Allhollenday in the Downes, beyond all expectation of the Masters and Mariners, who

made no other reckoning then to be loft.

And thele were the accidents that separated Sir George Carew from the Fleet, in the huge stormes on Baribolmem day, in the Bay of Alchaster, as aforesaid. In which storme the Saint Andremat that time spene her mayne top Mait, and lost ws for three or source dayes, but all the rest of

the Fleet, (except our Ships, which carried the Lon- Country Souldiers) kept together in the Bay. And to many as came to vs after at the Rocke, were beaten also from the Admiral in that Bay, and fo were many other Ships, which found vs after at the Rocke, to the number of thirty and odde Course of the favle. Whereupon a rumour was afterward raifed, that the Reare-Admirall was gone away with thirty fayle from the Fleet, to the ouerthrow of the intended feruice. Our Admirall fill bare in Io with the Land, & the most part of the Fleet followed the same course. The next day we made the high Land of Portugal, and within some three houres after, Cape Prior, where our Admirall with diners other of the Fleet, did beare in so close aboord the shore, as that all the Country over began to kindle fires. The which manner of disconering our selves (as I do remember) was much noted by divers good Souldiers, as well by Sea, as Land : for indeed it was reputed no great policie, nor discretion in vs. to runin so close aboard the shoare, if we had any secret or sudden exploit to performe en that Coast, as it was Brau dos often pretended. For that Branado of ours, did but give them more marning to provide for themselves, and to prevolcaionable. went vs. And I baue observed that those braning bumours, have of late yeeres been the bindrance, and

lolle of many good fortunes, as well in Sir Francis Drake bis two last Voyages to the Indies, and Sir John Norris in bis to Lisbon, by ftaying at the Groyne, as also in others, oc. Towards the enening, we put roome agains from the Coast, and beat up and downe in the Bav

to free vs from thence, expecting a wind wherewith to double the North Cape, which, within two or three dayes wee had, and so passed along within ten leagues of the Coast by Ferrall, the Grome, and Cape Bealins, and so weathered the North Cape. And as the Fleet together was passing along towards the South, almost as farre as the Iles of Bayon, our Ship (the Wastfoite) being then a middelt them all, on the feuen and twentieth of August, broke her mayne Yard in funder in the very middeit by the Parrell. Whereupon we prefently discharged a Peece of Ordnance, and made our misfortune knowne to our Admirall, who himselfe spake with vs, and also at that time had a great leake broken out vpon his owne Ship. And there by his order and permission we were willed to repaire our mayne Yard the best wee could, and vntill it were finished in 30 that birth to goe on with our Fore-fayle towardes the Rocke before the winde, whiles in towardes the Coast, and so, wee there to ply up and hee with the Fleet would downe about the height of the Rocke, vntill his Lordship came vnto vs, or during the dayes limited in the generall instructions, and thence to passe onwards to the South Cape, and there to remaine according to the faid directions. And yet wee did not for two dayes after depart, though to our great difease; for wee wallowed in the trough of the Sea, and rowled fo extreamely, as that wee had like to have loft our mayne Mast alio. After this order ginen, wee presently tooke adunce the best wee could, and set our hands together for the repayring and finishing of our mayne Yard, being broken in the Parrell, a very euill place to amend : wherein that night wee could doe little good , more then to free the Sayles and Tackle 40 from it. Notwithstanding the very next morning the Admirall fent a commandement to vs. that wee should presently attend him with all speed, for that hee meant to put in with the Land : The which wee were altogether vnable to performe , our mayne Yard being in funder, and impossible it was so suddenly in one night to repayre it, and without it, wee were not able to worke vpon a wind, (as all Mariners know) having but our Fore-fayle and Mizen, and the winde almost of the Land, so as it had beene but an idle labour, for the more we striued, the faster wee fell off. Besides, if wee could have layd the Land with that fayle, it had beene a madnesse to put our selues voon the Enemies Coast in that estate, for if the wind had then changed to the West, we wanting all our mayne Sayles, must have yeelded

Vice-Admirals

Whilest wee were thus diftressed on our Enemies Coast, Sir William Brooke, Captaine of the Dread nought came vnto vs and tarried with vs, out of his owne charitie and friendly disposition, for there were no directions (that wee heard of) given to any to accompany vs in that distresse. Onely the Vice-Admirall (of his owne noble care) very kindly and honourably hayled vs, and offered what comfort and helpe hee could give vs; some others afterwards did the like. But we having yeelded due thankes to the Vice-Admirall for such his noble care and curtefie defired no more company, but wished all others of our Squadron to repaire vnto the Admirall, contenting our selves with Sir William Brooks in the Dread-naught, and two or shree other small men of our 60 owne Squadron, which of their owne accord followed vs. Neither did we in all this time intreat the company of any one Ship more to stay with vs, albeit the contrary was very fallly suggested and reported in a strange manner of phrase, which was, that the Reare-Admirall vpon the breaking of his Mayne-yard, willed all his Squadron and those that loued him to keepe him

or perished So as in regard of this necessitie, we did for two daies, as aforesaid ply vp and down, 50

vntill wee had repaired our Yard, and fitted our fayles vntoit, being now fine foot shorter then

company, and not to follow the Admirall. But as this was a monitrous entruth, raifed out of malice to the Reare-Admirall, thereby to inuegle the Admirall against him; so the authors were after wards athamed of their impudent flander, when the truth was made manifest at our meeting againe with the Admirall and the Fleet at the Hands of Afores: As foone as wee had mended our Maine-yard, wee bare in with the Coaft, making all the in-

quiry that we could for our Admirall and the Fleet, but could not have any intelligence of them. Whereupon casting many coniectures, weefent a small Man into the Iles of Bayon, but could learne no newes of him there. Then wee thought verily that hee would hold on his courie for the South-Cape according to the generall instructions, we well knowing that hee could not then TO put in for Ferrall or the Groine as was afterward colourably fuggested) the wind being flat against him , and our whole Fleet having over-shot it neere twentie leagues before that our Yard was broken; and therefore it was rather a pretence to feeme defirous to vndertake it, then that there was any possibilitie to performe it. For besides that weehad overshot it, and the wind contrary, lo as we could not recouer it again, both those Ships were wanting which were chiefly defigured to bee aduentured in that feruice, namely the Saint Andrew and the Saint Mathem, two S. Mathem and huge Gallions of the King of Spaines, that were but the yeere before taken at the facke of Cales, S. Andrew aand onely faued of fortie or fiftie faile that were then beaten and burnt to ashes. Vpon these reas ken at cadity, fons wee shaped our course for the Rocke, plying vp and downe in that height for a few dayes. In which time wee gaue chase to divers Spanish thips which wee beate into Cast-keyes, and caused and some of them to runne on ground, wee being so neere Cast-kerer as that we could number divers

tall ships that road there vinder the Fort. Here wee housely expected our Admirall, being the very appointed place for a Randeuous to all the Fleet, and would gladly have met with him, being of our felues but a weake force to lye on that Coaft, if the Spanish Armado had been abroad. as wee were to suspect it was, or in a readinesse at the least, And therefore it was fouly rallined or militaken of those that gaue it out, and carryed the newes into England, that wee had of purpole left and lost our Admirall to range the Coast alone at our pleasures. For being no stronger then wee were, and lying as wee did in the height that was appointed by the generall instructions to the whole Fleet, it was not to be imagined in any fenie or reason, that wee defired to leave or lofe the Fleet upon the breaking of our Maine-yard to neere the Coast of Spaine, and 30 the Adelantadoes Forces then bruted to bee abroad. But indeed our Reare-Admirall commanded all our Squadron to follow the Generall, because he pretended to adventure upon the Groine. Yet we hoped, and so hee promised, that either hee would come off to vs againe where wee lay, or find vs without faile at the Rocke, but did neither : for there were three places of our Randenous appointed, if any separation happened. The first at the North Cape, and failing there, then at the Rocke, and failing there, then at the South Cape. Now when all fuch ships as were fundred by tempeft in the Bay of Alcafber, failed of their Admiral at the North Cape, they then fought him at the Rock, where they found the Reare-admiral, who held them altogether, and brought them to the Generall at the Hands; else had they all returned home, after they had missed of some Admis rall to command them at the third and last place of meeting : for none of our Fleet went for

40 farre to the Southward. Whilest wee thus stayed about the Rocke, the Caruells of Lisbone, and of the parts thereabouts? would daily come iwarming about vs like Butter-flyes, so neere, as that we might cast a stone into lome of them, and yet could wee neuer catch any one of them, to yare and nimble they are. But if wee would have bestowed any musket or great shot on such bables, wee might peraduenture have killed some of their men, or sunke some of them, which wee forbare in hope to draw them to vs oftner, and then if any calme had happened, we might have taken them with our Boats, and by them gotten some Intelligence. At the same time also there came to the Rocke neere thirtie faile of thips of our owne Victuallers and Transporters, among t whom was Captain Sidner, Captaine White, Captain Berry, and others, some of whom wee tooke into vs out of their owne weake thips; who having loft the Generall in the Bay of Alcafber, in the forme aforefaid, fought him first at the North Cape; and milling him there, came to the Rocke, according to the generall instructions, and they by chance finding the Reare-Admiral at the Rocke, were held together till

wee either found or heard from the Generall. After we had thus plied up and downe about the height of the Rocke, and yet determined at last to have passed on for the South Cape, there came athwart vs a small Barke of England, with whom wee communed, inquiring what newes in the South parts where they had beene. They told vs, that they had lately met a Man of Warre bound for England, that had taken an Indian man, naming the Captaine, who (as they faid) informed Falle intellithem for certaine that the Atlantado was gone for the Ilands, to weft home the Indian Fleet. Entifleman. This report seemed to carry with it good likelihood of truth, for we beard before that the Atlantado was

60 preparing to the Seas, and also were certain, that both the King of Spaine his Treasure, and other Indian Fleets were to come bome that yeere. Besides, we did not suspect that one of our owne Countrey would be so lewd, or durst presume to informe her Maiesties Nauce, with a meere falfe coyned suppossion, as indeed this was found to be afterward. For such a dishonest treacherous part may sometimes turne to a great inconnenience, in discriting a whole Fleet by a false intelligence, and is a point better fitting a

1948

Traitor then a true man, and well deserve to severe and publike punishment for an example to all other. For although (ea-furing men will now and then (as doe Poets and Painters) take liberty to fabi net it is no good selling nor dalying with Princes affaires in that fort, and therefore if I could call to mind the Captaine or Masters name, surely I would doe them the curtesie now to remember them.

Hereupon our Reare-Admirall thinking it very require, and his dutie to informe our Admirall of this advertisement as soone as might bee, ernestly required the same Man to ply un towards the North-Cape, all along it the Coait as well as he could, (because it lay in his way homewards bound) to find out our Fleet, & to informe our Admiral of this Intelligence. But he answered in the hearing of all the company, that the Captaine that had taken this Indian. Prize, had already fent the Admirall a Letter to the lame effect. Yet the Reare-Admirall for the more furetie 10 (doubting that a Letter might miscarry, or that no such Letter might bee sent, being but an excule of this Man to put off the trouble of feeking out our Fleet, being a matter of great imporrance) commanded one of his small Men (that at that time followed vs) to deliner the same adpertifement to our Admirall, as hee had received it by word of mouth; and to vie all diligence to feeke him, and the Fleet, and to deliver the report truly in manner as it was related, and withall to fignifie vntoliis Lordship, that wee there attended him in that height according to the directions, and so would observe all places and times appointed, and that in such fort his Lordship should be fure to heare of vs, vpon any occasion to wait on him. This message, and Messenger could fufficiently witnesse, that we had no intent nor defire to abandon the Fleet, or to sequester our felies, being at the placefet downe in the generall inftructions. This small Man that had this 20 message in charge to deliuer to his Lordship, the next day (by good hap) found out the Fleet, and youn delinery of this newes, within two dayes after, our Reare-Admirall received two fenerall Letters to one effect from the Admirall one after another. First fomewhat taxing him for not writing, then for his absence and withal requiring him presently to follow him to the Hands, whether he faight would (by Gods helpe) halten to find the Adelantado, not doubting but to giue his Maftreffe a better account of that feruice then the Adelantado fhould yeeld his Mafter: fo. or much to that effect the Letters went, for I my felte read them (with the Reare-Admirall his permiffion) and therefore can truly report their contents.

Voon this fuldaine and itrict meffage, we presently altered our determination from going to

the South-Cape, to hast to the Ilands, and the fore we prefently gave notice to Sir William Brooke 20

and the rest of our conforts, of our Admirall his Letters, and what way he meant to take, and io

inflantly without any turther delay, we shaped our course for the Ilands. But in this passage of

yard began againe to cracke, infomuch that wee were interced to firengthen it with more fifthing. And as commonly misfortunes never come alone, so in the necke of this trouble, our Mayn-mast

began to thrinke alio, i pringing great flawes in diners places, in fo much that at laftiwe greatly

They fhave for the Ilands, ours towards the Ilands, as weehad a franke wind, to met wee with other lets. For our Maine-

Lerers from

Sep. 8. They

Note for the

doubted with every high blaft or wind, that it would have beene blowne over-boord. This fudden difatter much troubled vs, and the more, to thinke what vnequall conftructions would be made thereof. Wee acquainted all the rest of our conforts with this late befallne mischiefe, and desired Sir William Brooke in the Dread naught to carry the light for all the company feeing that curiling 40 was to defective that we must needs stay to fee if we could make the Mast serviceable, but would yle all our best means to come speedily after, desiring him, and all the rest to hast to our Admiral, and to fignifie our misfortunes, and withat to make the more speed, for that if the Adelantade were at the Ilands, our Admirals Forces would be wel helped by their companies, & fo for a few hours, we and our conforts parted, only we retained two little small Men with vs for our better comfort. Yet not with flanding this order and direction given, so great were our delires to go on, & our labor fuch, as that the same night wee had new fined our crased Maine-mail with a spare Maine top Matt that lay by vs, and then to plied our fayles as that the next day towards the evening, wee ouertooke Sir William Brooke againe, and the reft of our conforts halting towards the Hands as was directed. And on the eight of September, in the yeere 1597, being Thursday, wee made the lle 50 called the Tercera, and weathered it to the North-west; where we met with an English Merchant that came from Saint Michaels, and had layen trading about those llands some fix weekes together, but could not tell wany ne wes of our Admirall and the Fleet, albeit they were paffed by but two dayes before. Which showes how easie a matter it is for shipping to passe by amongst those llands unscene, and bow difficult it is to find out such Ships among those lands as would helter themselves from men of Warre, and couct not to becmet withall, feeing that to great a Flee: could paffe by unscene or unheard of, by one that came inst from the Hands, at the same time that our Generall came thither. And therefore it is a necessary observation for all such men of Warre, as would meet or intercept any signing, that doth touch at those llands, or do come from thence to keep in the maine sea and so to attend their comming forth, and not to puzzle themselves with running in amongst those llands to seeke for purchase, ex- 60 cept they have others of their conforts lying in the Sea at the receite, if they chance to flip by, which is east-Indone. This Merchant informed vs of certaine West Indian men, and two Carracks, that a month before had touched there, bound for Spaine. And by this Merchant wee wrote into England how affaires went. In pailing thus onwards we discovered Saint Georges Hands, and there we

diffracthed two of our final men, with charge to fearch about the Islands for our Fleete, and to entorme our Admirall, that we were going for Flores, and Cuernos, in hope to meete him there. withall willing those imall men to come thither vnto vs. And yet I remember many in our Ship were doubtfull, and laid great wagers, that our Fleet was not yet come to the lilands, for that this Merchant could make no report thereof.

Whilest we were before Saint Georges, we were very much becalmed for a day or two, and the weather extreamely hot, infomuch as the winde could not beare the failes from the maffes. but were faine to hull in the Sea, to our great ducontentment, that before had yiel fisch great diligence and hafte to meete with our Admirall, and the rest of the Fleete. Notwithstanding to the winde began againe to be favourable, and to fetting forwards, the next of the Ilanda that we

maile, were Grainfa, Pyke, and Fayall. And mive ranged by Gratiofa, on the tenth of September. about twelve a clocke at night, we faw a large and perfect Kainbow by the Moone light, in the biomeffe and Rainbowe by forme of all other Rainbowes, but an colour much differing, for it was more whitifi, but chiefly inclining tring in color to the colour of the flame of fire. Thus made us expell fome extruordinary tempessuous meather, but in- from these or deede it fell out afterward to be very calme and hot. This Rainbow by the Moone light I doe the rather the Sunne. take occasion to note; for that I remember that Plinic in his natural! History of the world, Beaking of Meteors, devictio any Rainbow to be feene, but opposite to the Sunne, and never in the night feason: and yet (faith be) Attitotle reported for a raritie, that in his time there was a Ruinbow frene by nicht but withall affirmeth, that it could not be but at the full of the Moone. But in these parts they are very or-20 dinary, as well when the Moone is not at the full, as otherwise, which maketh me to thinke , that thefe !land were never knowne to the Greekes, nor to the Roman, nor that those former ages did truely con-

ceine or know many things, that in thefe latter times have ben disconcred. For although Salomon faith that nothing is now under the Sunne (which we doubt is malt true for all things have had their being fince the first Creation) jet all things have not bin known in all places, and to all men alike. But as the long lines of men in the first ages (no doubt made their hummledge the greater by the benefit of long observation on : (a againe, we in these latter dayes, by the tradition of their knowledge, left onto vs, and also by the discovers of those things , which time bath revealed, have found out many fecrets to them unknowne. But

The same night by the light of the Moone (which was then almost fallen with the Horison) 30 we might elpic certaine is les passing towards the Eastwards of Graviosa; whereupon we gave order that a couple of our imall men should follow, and give them chase, as we in the Wafffprobe likewise did, and hung out two lights to cause Sir William Brooke in the Dread-naughs, and the rest of our conforts, to hold the same course with vs , but wee were followed by none of them. which when we perceived and the Moone-light being now by the earth fo shaddowed from vs. as that we could hold no longer fight of these failes (which had thrust themselves in amonest the Islands) we cast about . and held on our former course. But by this chaling for this lettle time (euen as we suspected) we loft the Dread-nanght, and most of our conforts, and neuer faw them after, votill we met them with our Admirall, and the reft of our Fleete at Flores; whither with feart windes we came, on the foureteenth of September, and then discouered all our Fleete. But They come to

40 at the first making of them, we stood somewhat doubtfull, whether it was our owne, or the Spa. the Flee. nilly Armady, they being as farre from vs. as we were able to ken out of our maine top, and therefore we did itill ftrine to keepe into the weather, in approaching neere voto them, voull at laft, we perfectly made them to be Englift bottomes. As foone as we were come within two leagues of them, the Seas being very calme, our Reare-admirall, my felfe, and some other Gentlemen of our ship, went aboord our Generall in a Barge, and dined with him, who seemed to be the toy- Entertainment fulleft man living for our arrivall, protefting, that he never belowed that we would leave him, al- by the General though divers perswaded him the contrary; and acknowledged that hee was forry for a Letter which he had written by Master Robert Knolles into England against vs. promising presently to make a dispatch of purpose, contrary to the former; having also found toone after by examinaso tion, that not any one of their thirtie and odde failes of victuallers, and transporters, which came

now with vs. were drawne from him by the Reare-admirall, but that they all came to the Rocke to feeke the Generall, and there by chance found vs , who drew them to the Islands, much against their defires, being most of them in great diffresse. Afterwards wee enquired abourd our Generall, what had paffed with them fince we departed, upon the breaking of our maine yard, before the Illes of Bayon; and we learned that in all this time, they had done nothing but ranged the Seas to jecke the Adelantado, and were come to the Hands but three daies before vs, where the Governours of the Islands of Flores and Cuerues, came to our Generall.

The Inhabitants of which two III ands fremed to be but a wretched needle kinde of people, and II his rans of yet as crafty, as bale, and bare. Thefe very fubmifly humbled themselves vnto our Generall, Farage Corner 60 bringing with them Fruites, Hens, and other fre'h victuall, imploring fauour, and mercie at his hands, and that he would vouchfafe to give them his fafeguard under his hand, to protect them from the spoile, and invasion of our men : ailedging for themselves that they were an harm. I alle poore people, that gaue offence to none, but dw-It in Islands that yeelded comfort and reliefe oftentimes, to all bea-faring men in their long Voyages, betweene the Indies and Christendome,

behau our to

Sir W. Ralei b.

Earle of Essex his answere to the Handers. His message excused. LIBX

and were anciently subjects to the Poringals, friends to our Nation, and nothing guiltie of the Hothlitie betweene vs, and the Spaniards, who (as they faid) did viurpe, and tyrannize both no uer the Portugals and them. Our Generall heard, and entertained them, with great curtefie. Eurle of ETes, and told them that he came not to afflict poore men, but was fent by the Queene his Miftris. to he, niver and chaftile the intollerable pride and intolencie of the Spanish, whose Indian Gold and riches. were imploied onely to the oppression, and disturbance of divers Christian States and Princes; and these Islands being the chiefe places of retrait and refreshing for his Fleetes, that passed betweene Enrone and the Indies, were great meanes, and helpes, to further their boundlesse ambition, and twrannie, with other discourse to that eff. ct. And so inquiring of them very precisely, the times. and featons that the Indian Fleetes, both inward, and outward bound, held in paffing by those tea Illands; in conclusion gaue them divers gitts, and his Protection in wrighting vader his hand and feale from the violence of our Forces, which was very respectively observed, even to the value of an Hen, which no man durit take without paying for. Such was the moderation and bountie of this noble Gentleman our Generall, indued with many good gifts, though at the last he failed After we had bin abourd our Generall, and dined with him, he acquainted our reare Admirall

with the many coniectures, and furmifes of our absence, and withall named vnto him some of those men that had taxed him secretly with strange reports, and yet pretended to loue him. which he protested (as aforesaid) he neuer beleeued, but thereby the better observed some mens frandalous, and cankered dispositions. In this fort did our Generall receive and welcome our reare 30 Admirall, with the greatest kindenesse, and inward familiaritie that might be, and all the Gentlemen of his Companie with honorable cuttesie, to the great dillike and hart-burning of some that much enuied that liking, which of his owne disposition, our Generall did beare vnto him : For albeit the Earle had many doubts and lealousies buzd into his eares against the other, vet I haue often observed, that both in his greatest actions of service, and in his times of chiefest recreations, he would ever accept of his countell and company, before many others that thought themsclues more in his fauour. And as touching the Aduertilement that was sent into England, from the Illes of Bayon, by Master Robert Knolles, in a Pinnace called the Guiana, concerning vs, that were forfaken, and left alone voon the breaking of our Maine yard: whereupon was pretended that many great exploits should have bin performed vpon the coast of Spaine, if wee had not fal- 30 len from them (as was vntruely fuggested and reported) his Lordship promised the reare Admirall then, to fend another advertisement, how we were all metagaine, and had bin formerly seuered by misfortunes onely, and not by any wilfull default in the reare Admirall, as was doubted. And that Aduertisement sent formerly by Master Knolles, we well knew proceeded not out of any particular malice of the Generall to vs, but onely to take that as a fit excuse to free himfeife from the enterprises of Ferall, or the Groine, which he had promited her Maiestie to vodertake, but faw it impossible to performe, by reason of the former crosses, and our long stay in Plimmonth; and therefore was glad to take the opportunity of any colour to fatisfie her Maiestie, and to discharge himselse of that burthen, which we did all perceiue, and therefore did striue the lesse the publish our Apologies, or to contest with a man of his place and credit, which (though in a 40 right) had bin but booteleffe, and meere folly; and therefore we left him to his best excuse, and our apparant innocencie. And for the more plaine manifesting of the Message, I have thought it not amiffe, here to infert the true copie of the Instructions verbatim, that our Generall fent by Master Robert Knolles into England, upon thefe accidents before the Ifles of Bayon.

That we weighing Ancor and fetting faile from the found of Plimmouth, the seventeenth of this moneth of August, having sometimes calmes, but for the most part, Westerly and Northeasterly windes, we fellon thursday, the fine and twenty of this moneth with the Land, which is to the Eastward of the Cape Ortingall, which land we made in the morning about ten of the clocke, and food in with the shoare, till three in the afternoone. Then finding the winde scant to ply to the Southward, I stood all night into the Sea, and the next morning in against to the Land. By which boords, by reason of the head-sea, and the 50 bare minde, we got nothing. On Friday night I stood off againe to the Sea, and about midnight the minde comming all Northerly, we got a good flant, to lye all along the coast : on Saturday in the morning, Idifcouered the Saint Andrew, whom we had loft fight of two or three dayes before. I have with her, and had no sower got her up, but Sir Walter Rawleigh shot off a peece, and game us warning of his being in di-Streffe. I presently bare with him, and found that he had broken his maine yard. Whereupon I willed him to keepe along the coast that birth that he was, sill be got in the height of the North Cape, and my feife baning a desperate leake broke out as ener flup swam withall, which I was fame to live by the lee, and feele, to stop it, which how it held us, you can report : and (God be thanked) that night we onercame it, and Stopped it. The next morning we all came to Cape Finister, Sauing the Sain: Maschew, who upon breaking of her fore maile went bome : and the Waltipight with whom the Dreadnaught went without flop to 60 the South Cape. This is all that is hapned to me. If her Maiestie aske you, why there was no attempt upon the Fleets at Teral, you may fay, I neither had the Saint Matthew, which was the principall hip for that execution, nor the Saint Andrew, till mine owne ship was almost sunke, and I not able to make faile, till Sir Walter Rawleigh with his owne fhip the Dreadnaught, and very necre twenty faile were

sone. Wee are now some to be for the Indian Fleete, for by Spaniards wee bane taken, wee finde the Adelantado is not put to Sea this yeere. Of our successo, ber Maiestie Shall from time to time be aduertiled : you hall acquaint Master Secretarie mith this instruction; and both to him and all our friends you must excuse our baste.

CHAP.14. S.2. Mutuall hatred of Hollanders and Spaniards.

We being thus met all at Flores, defired our Generali to give vs. and our conforts leave to water there before we departed thence, as his Lordinip and the rest had done before, which he veelded vnto, and very nobly lent vs his owne long Boate, for our better speede, willing vs there to water, whilest he with the rest of the Fleete, did ply vp and downe to looke out for the Adelantado, or any Indian Fleete, that being the very fit place, and leafon for them. Hereupon whileit our men and Mariners were prouiding to water, our Reare-admirall, with Sir William Brooke, my felfe, and divers other Gentlemen went alhoare, to stretch our legs in the Isle of Flores, and to refresh our selves with such victuals as we could there get for our monie. And at our first landing there, we met with the Lord Gray, Sir Gylly Merricke, and other Gentlemen, and wee altogether walked a mile or two into the Countrie, and there dined in a little Village, where the barelegged Governour caused such things to be brought voto vs. for our monie, as the Island afforded

In other fort we tooke nothing, which was very faire wars. This Island seemes to be somewhat mountainous, yet having very good store of Fruits. Wheat, and other Corne. Their Corne they doe all keepe in large hollow vaults within the earth, hauing no other way nor entrance into them, but by a round hole in the top of the vault, onely fo big 20 as a man may creepe into it, and when it is closed up with a planke, and overstrewed with earth. is very hard to be found out by strangers, for the which purpose they are so made, and much like. the Caues in Gafcorne, and Languedocke, and luch as are mentioned by Cafar to be vied in Affricke. This Island lies more subject to the inquision of Sea-faring men, then any of the refe; for there all traders of the Indies doe vitually water, and refresh themselves. But here I must not for- A Countillfor get to relate, that before we had our leave to water, or were departed from the Generall, a Countaining fell was called, and holden, for the taking in of fome of the Islands, and an orderly course fet Hands. downe for the same: which was in this fort concluded on: The Admirall and Reare-admirall to undertake Farall: the Lord Thomas Howard Vice-admirall, and the Marshall Vere, to undertake Gratiofa; The Lord Mounting, Lieutenant Generall, and Sir Christopher Blum Coronell Gene-30 rall of the Foote to Saint Michaels : and the Netherland Squadron, was quartered to Price, where the greatest store of Wines doe grow, and therefore would not be taken in ill part of them, as we prefumed. The reason why we resolved to master and waste all these flands was , because is was determined by the Generall to attempt the Tercera it felfe: which enterprise was put off, because the Rearc-admirall, and with him twenty or thirty saile were wanting. But being now

live; but it was first thought necessary to take from them, and to helpe our selues, with all the victuals and other commodities that those Islands could affoord: For the performance of which with the more speede, we divided our selves into soure Companies, as before written: But surely the fortune of those poore wretches was lamentable, that fell into the Flemmings hands; for I thinke 40 no people on the earth, can we leffe mercy, or greater infolencies then they doe, in all the places that they Holenders and matter which are subject to the Spanish Government : and yet I must say truely for them, that the Spa- Spaniarden min niards againe baue veed fuch tyrannie, and outrage in their surificitions ouer that industrious people, as tie implacable hath well merited their irreconcileable malice, and withall bath coft the Spanish King many millions of Ducates, besides the life of many a prond Castilian, since the Execution of the Counts Egmount and Horne. And it is very admirable to fee what heart and courage those Netherlanders are now growne unto, and how powerfully three or foure lettle Prouinces, doe relift the forces of that mightie King, that keepes Millaine, Naple-, and Sicill in great bondage, in despight of all the Italians, who doe

(contrary to all expectation, and to many mens hopes) arrived, this resolution received a second

thinke themselnes for valour, and for policie the Minions of the Earth, and yet bow their neckes to the Spanish roake.

After this confultation for taking in of the Islands, as aforefaid, and leave given vnto vs, and our conforts to water with all the speede we could, at Flores, we having prepared our Caske, and all things in a readinesse to bring our fresh water aboord, about midnight, being the sixteenth of September, there came vnto vs from our Generall, Captaine Arthur Champernoune, with this meffage; That my Lord Generall was borne up for Fjall, and ment presently to take it in, and therefore willed vs with all speede to follow him instantly, and though wee could not ouertake him, yet at least to finde him there so soone as we could, and the same word was likewise deliuered to Sir William Brooke, and the reit, that lay there to water. And further, our Generall ient vs word, that we should supply all our wants of water, and fresh victuals at Fayall. And this night as we rode at ancor before Flores, we faw another Ramebow, by the Moone light, as before, and af-60 ter the famo manner, which (contrary to Plinies report of Aristotels opinion) was feene, though not at a the Moone,

full Moone, for the other was so seene some seven dayes before, in the which pace, there could not be two full Moones. Vpon this Meffage brought by Captaine Champernowne we forbare watering, and hasted all we could, to weigh our anchors, and to follow our Generall. And therefore gaue a warning prece or two, to our Conforts before wee departed, and afterwards pack don all

1952

the failes we could make to follow our Generall, whom we could not ouertake, nor finde. The next morning we made Fayall, and entred the roade, and there miffed of him alfo. contrain to our hopes, and to our great discentent. Whereat we could not but greatly maruell, because when he sent for vs, he was fix leagues neerer it, then we were, and bendes, fet faile towards it fixe or eight houres before vs. Being arrived in the roade, wee beheld before our eyes a very fine Towne, pleasantly seared alongst the shoare side : from whence presently upon the fight of our entrance into the roade, they began to packe away with bag, and baggage all they could with carriages of Horles and Carts, Women, Children, Friers, and Nunnes, and so continued in transporting all vp into the Countrey for two dayes together. There was belides a ftrong Fort at one end of the Town, and another on the top of a very high Mountain, neere adioyning, by nature very vnaccessible, and steepe, and artificially fenced with Flanckers, Rampiers, and Ditch, and in it fix Peeces of great Artillerie, mounted vpon carriages, and two hundred Spaniards in garrison. befue others of the Island. These made cercaine shot at our Ships as they anchored in the roade. but did not much harme, and fet vp a great red Auncient for vs to gaze at : Befides, there were prefently fent fix Companies with their Colours, to intrench themselves vpon the shoare fide. to impeach our landing : Hereupon our Reare Admirall in his Barge , accompanied with my felfe onely and Captaine Morgan, rowed close abourd the high Fort, and all along it the sheare side, to wards the Towne, to fee what fit place there was to make a difcent against our Generals comming. From whence we were faluted with divers musker thor; that miffed vs but narrowly by good fortune, for we undifcreetly had with us neitheir Targets, nor Armors, but wished for them when it was to late. And therefore as well by that experience, as allo by others in the fame issurner. Vincined rathe that I (aw at our landing upon a fortified trench, I faw it to be but an idle and unferniceable brauers, for men that are to doe feruice, to expose their unarmed bodies and limbs, to the mercy of a Musket, or the pulb of a Pike : whereby they can neither with that abilitie, nor refolution, profecute that they have in hand, nor yet fo well preferme themselves at they ought to doe, for the bettering of their attempts. Besides, out of a Christian regard, they bould not deferately cast away themselves, or carelest hill their owne bloud, and the lines of many others, by such braning, and foolist examples. This night as we roade in the Harbour, there fromme abourd vs from the Towne two Portugals that disconcred unto us many things. greatly encouraging us to this exploit. And of this we may bouldly take knowledge, that the Portugals. and Inhabitants of those Islands doe infinitely hate, and malice the Spaniards, and their Government, and 30

mould no doubt) free themselves thereof sladinifiber were fure to fall under any other Concrement that

were able to protett them from the Spaniards. And therefore if any powerfull Monarch or State did at-

tempt it, they should not be troubled as with a Conquest, for all the Inhabitants would some be perswaded

to renoli, and take part with the inuaders, for the advancing of that bufine fe.

Spaniards ba-

While we thus expected our Generall in vaine (to our no little maruell) that thought he had bin there before vs, according to Captaine Champernownes report (the winde being as good then for him as for vs) our Reare Admirall called a counfell of many Captaines, and Officers (that were come thither by order) to confult of the taking of the Towne, if our Generall came not, thinking it a great shame and pittie to let slip to faire a pray, so neere at hand, without attempting it in time, before they had carried all away. Befides a great scorne and difgrace wee should 40 doe our felues, to enterprise nothing vpon them that had begun the warres, shooting first at vs as we roade at ancor, and then after their bringing downe to the water fide fo many Auncients, did proudly as it were inuite vs to affaile them, if we durft, having withall, hung out a red Flagge of defiance, from the top of the high Fort. The hope of the wealth of this good Towne, and the ransoming of Houses and Prisoners, together with those brauadoes which they shewed, did so fee on fire all our Mariners and Souldiers, as that they began to mutine, and raile on the Reare Admirall, and at all the Commanders there, taxing them for these delaies, as not daring to attempt the taking thereof: Betides, they were the more eagerly fet upon the spoile, and gaining of this Towne, and Fort, for that they faw no great likelihood of benefit by this Voyage, but what was gotten ashoare in the Islands. In conclusion, albeit we heard no newes of our Generall in two 50 dayes more expectation, yet at the counfell of Captaines which our Reare Admirall had affembled, some of them varied much from the common defire, and would by no meanes affent to the landing, without my Lord Generall his knowledge. And of this opinion was Sir Guilly Mericke, Sir Nicholas Parker, and some other Captaines : Our Reare Admirall, with Sir William Brooke, my selie, Sir William Harney, and other Gentlemen, and Commanders of our Reare Admirall his Squadron (called to this confultation) were of a contrary opinion, judging that my Lord Generall would repute vs but Idlers, and Cowards, to lye fo long, before fo good a Towne, with fo many Ships and men, and to doe nothing in his absence, seeing them hoursly before our eyes, so fait to carry, and packeaway their goods and wealth. And this was allow ne common opinion and bruite, as well of the multitude, as of the Low Countrie Captaines. But vet the violent and earneit 60 periwations of Sir Guille Merricke, did to prevaile with vs, vrging our obedience and duetie to

our Generall, as that we staied from the Enterprise at that time, and expected our Generals comming one day longer, especially for that they perswaded vs, it his Lordhip came not the next

day, then themselves would also land with vs.

CHAP.14. S.2. Sir G. Meriks indisposition. Spanish Brauado. English landing. 1953

Which when we had also expected in vain, and the winde changing somewhat vnfit for that Roade, our Reare Admirall, and disers of his Squadron, and many other of the Ships tollowing him, wered, and coasted about the point, to the North-west side of the Island , some soure miles forther from the Towne then we were before, and there let fall our ancors, being then a better Roade then the first, as the winde was changed. But Sir Guille Merricke with tome five or fixe Ships of his contorts, staied still in the first Roade, and would not budge. When we had in this fort changed our Roade, and being now the fourth day of our arrivall before Farall (which was not aboue a daies failing from the place, from whence our Cenerall tent for vs, wee might fee before vi, a very fine and pleafant Countrie, full of little Villages, and fruitfull fields : and therefore we in much defired to refresh our selves aland there with victuals, and water, as our Generall had promifed we should doe, when we came to Farall, and as divers others had done before vs at Flores, and as we had then, but that we were called away to Fajall by Captaine Champernownes fodaine muffage from the Generall, as was aforefaid. And in truth we were in great want of fresh water, which we had not renued, tince our fetting out from Plimonth. All thele occasions confidered, and webeing now retired from the Towne and Forts, we all refolued that wee might without offence, with a few of our owne men, goe alhoare, and refresh our felues, and feeke for water : whereupon we manned a Barge, a long Boate, and a Pinnace with threefcore Muskets, and forty Pikes, rather to guard our felues in our landing, and watering with difcretion, then expecting any encounter or resistance, from the Towne or Forts, on the other side of the Island. But our an men were no sooner placed in our Boates, and all things ordered, and we ready to put off from the Ships fide, but we might discouer fixe Auncients of foote, and some doten Horsemen comming on a speedy march from the Towne and Forts, directly towards the place where wee were to make our discent ; for from one side of the high Fort on the Mountaine, they might also ouerlooke vs, where our ships roade, and discouer all our preparation.

When we had a while adused of this new Brauado, that they went about, and saw them fill to come on faster, with so many strong companies of men (or at the least the bodies of men furnihed with womens hearts) and had made luch hafte, as that they possessed themselves of the Trenches and Flankers, where we were to land, and there had placed their Companies, and Collors, attending our approach, as they made flew, by waving their Swords, and displaying their 30 Auncients ingreat brauery (for doubtleffe they thought we feard to land in their faces, because we lay folong before the Town, and neuer attempted any thing, and were fo shrunke aside off; after they had prouoked vs fo with great flot, and many other affronts) we feeing that proportion of an hundred men (prouided onely to guard our watering) to be too few to affault, and win a landing upon so many, in a place of so great disaduantage, and yet distaining to goe backe, or make any thew of feare; our Reare Admirall in his Barge rowed to Sir William Brookes Ship, and to Sir William Harueyes, and desired them, and some other Sea Captaines, to accompany him in landing, with luch men as conveniently they could furnish : For (laid he) seeing these Spaniards and Partugals are so gallant to seeke and follow vs, and to keepe vs from watering, wee will try our fortunes with them, and either win our landing, or gaine a beating.

Sir William Brooke, Sir William Harney, and some others, very willingly affented, and prefently there were made ready with shot, and Pike one hundred and fixtie men more in Boates. And after this our Reare Admirall rowing by Captaine Bret, Sidney, White, Berry, and other Captaines of the Low Countrie Souldiers, that were there abroad in other Ships, they all cried out to take them and their companies with them, affuring him, that if he adventured to land with Mariners, and with his owne attendants, without iome Companies of Land Souldiers, hee would receive a difgrace. He answered, that he durit not take any of my Lord Generall his company of the Low Compries, no knowing in what feruice he ment to vie them; but he was resolved with the Gentlemen, and company of his owne Squadron, first to make a discent, and then to call them, and fend Boates for them, if he proceeded any further, and that neither my Lord Generall, nor any 50 of his traine, should have cause to be ashamed of vs, for undertaking that in the face of our Enemies, which we durst not follow, and performe. And therefore told those Captaines, that hee would first attempt to win a landing, and then after if they could but second him ashoare with two hundred men more, hee would vndertake to lodge them that night in the Towne, and the next night after in the Forrs. These Captaines were all glad of the newes, and promised to come after vs, if we would lend our Boates for them; for most of their Ships had lost their Boates with foule weather.

This order and direction being given, we hasted as fast as our Oares could ply without the company of any Low Countrie Souldiers (being as I faid two hundred and fixty ftrong, and the enemy more than the double as many) to the landing place which was first guarded with a migh- Hard place to 60 ty ledge of Rockes, some forty paces long into the Sea, and afterwards trenched, and flanked land in. with earth and stone, and onely a narrow lane betweene two wals left for our Entrance. But withall, we caused some of our Pinnaces that carried Ordnance, to lye as close to the shoare as they could, to flinke and beate vpon them in their trenches a little before, and inft as wee made. Helpe by Pinour approach; which we found to good purpose, and as well performed, especially by one Cap-naces.

raine Banker, in a fine Flee Boate of the Flemenift Squadron. But if there had bin but one hundre Low Countrie Spaniards at that defence, it had coft many of our lines, & yet perhaps have mil. fed our purpole too: For a small company with any resolution, might have made good that place: against a farre greater force then ours were at that time. But as we made onwards with our Boate. the shot plaied so thicke upon vs, as that in truth the Mariners would scarce come forwards, hauing the leffer liking to the bufinelle, the neerer they came to it. And in like fort did I fee fome there theger, and stand blanke, that before made great shewes, and would gladly be taken for yaliant Leaders : and some of these, our Reare Admirall did not spare to call vpon openly, and rebuke aloud with diffracefull words, feeing their bafeneffe.

folution. They land.

buke aloud with digitaction revolutions, and with all finding a generall amazement among it the Mariners, and as it were a flay among it is all the Boates, well p ceiuing that this manner of houering, was both more difgracefull, and also to more vulate, lying so open to the enemies shot (which through feare and amazement the Ma-Sir W. E. hisre- riners, and Rowers, neither observed nor vnderstood) with a loud voice commanded his Watermen to rowe in full upon the Rockes, and bad as many as were not afraid, to follow him: Heremon fome Boates ran in with vs, and out of them there landed Master Garret a Pentioner, now Earle of Kildare, a Noble and valiant Gentleman; Sit William Brooke, Sit William Harner, Sit lohn Scot. Mafter Duke Brooke, Captaine Henry Thinne, Captaine White, Mafter Thomas Rugewar, Mafler Walter Chute, Captaine Arthur Radford, Master Henry Allen, Captaine William Moroan Matter Charles Mackart, and divers other Gentlemen, whole names I would not omit, if I could call them all to minde, And so clambring over the rockes, and wading through the water, we passed pell mell, with Swords, Shot, and Pikes vpon the narrow Entrance. Whereupon those that were at the defence, after some little relitance, began to fhrinke, and then feeing vs to come failer on vpon them, suddenly retiring, cast away their weapons, turned their backes, and fled. and the like did the rest in the higher Trenches, and quickly recoursed the hils, and the woods, being a people very swift, and nimble of foote; for we could take none of them, but such as after yeelded vato vs. And as for their Auncients, we could not recouer one, for the Horfemen that they had, carried them cleane away. And in this fort we gained both our landing, and our Enemies Trenches. In which attempt some few men were drowned, and slaine, divers hurt, and two long Boates bulged, and loit. And after that we faw all things cleare, we affenibled our Troopes together, and refreshed ourselves, with such comfort, as we had there, which done, we sent backe 30 our Boates for those Low Countrie Captaines afterward; who vpon their arrivall congratulated our good fuccesse, in taking to strong a peece of ground, fortified, and guarded with so many men, When these Captaines were come vinto vs, we then tooke our felues to be a prettie Armie, being then in strength to the number of foure hundred and fixtie well armed, and appointed : whereof there were of Captaines and Gentlemen of good fort thirty, or forty which gaue great life to

Flight of the

More actine

feete then

bands.

And having done so much already, we then thought it the best way to goe through with the matter, and to prepare the Towne in a readinesse for our Generall, and to make our selues Burgeifes thereof in the meane feason, and therefore our Reare Admirall appointed Captaine Bret to vie the Office of Sergeant Major, and gaue direction to the other Captaines to advance their ad Colours, and to call their Companies together, in a readinesse, and so putting our Troopes in order, we marched directly toward the Towne, where by the way, divers of thele lame very Spaniards. and Portugals, that a little before so braued vs, came and rendred themselves in great humility, with white Napkins on the end of stickes, all whom, wee received, and well intreated, vling some for Guides, and some for our Carriages, and others to fetch vs in fresh Victuals, and Fruites. And it is worth the noting , to jee the farre differing humors, upon the change of Forunces, in these Spaniards, and Portugals. For where they conquer or command, no people are so proud, and in-Portugall ichol folent, and when they are once mastered, and subdued, no Nation of the world to bate, or fuller of service lers of Fortun crouching, and observance, as though on a sodaine Nature had framed them in a new mould, so soone in an instant will they fall from (overaigntie to flavery. And furely (at home) they are in generall but a 50 baggage people, timorous, and very unwarlike. As we have well experienced by severall invasions, whereof one Arms was conducted by Sir Iohn Norris, and Sir Francis Drake to Lisbona, and the other by the Earle of Ellex, and the Lord Admirall Howard to Cadis, without any refistance, encounter in the field, or show of affayling our forces by battaile, all the while we stated there. But afterwards with a little bardening, and hartening in the Warres, wee fee them prone very brane, and valiant

other Nations fo?! fits promptos facit.

ex-reame in

extremes.

Soariards and

themiclues.

Portugals yeeld

Souldiers. This Towne was some soure miles from this landing place, and all the Country in which wee marched very champion, with pretty little rifing hils, and all the fields over full of Mellons, Potatoes, and other Fruites. Betweene vs, and the Towne, was this high Fort, whereof I spake before, and that other Fort at the end of the Towne : By thefe two we were rejolued to palle, the 60 better thereby to discouer and obserue their strength, and situation; although there was another way that led to the Towne, fome two miles further about, which we tooke not. But our retolution was the next morning to goe in hand with thefe Forts, which now we could not performe, the day being too far spent, and our men already ouerwearied with the last worke, togeCHAP. 14 S.2. Buckle-proofe. Difordered march, Garrison Souldiers not best. 1055

ther with a long march, and extreame hot weather, belides want of victuals. And therefore for that might we ment onely, either by faire or foule meanes to possesse our selucs of the Towne, and there to lodge, and fo to content our felues, as having performed already, a fufficient daies worke. But in our march, as we approached neere the high Fort (by which of necessitie we were now to paffe) they did very fiercely beate on vs both with great and fmall thot, hurting divers, and killing tome of our people. Amongst others I faw a very strange accident happen to Captaine William Morgan, by whom my felfe at that time flood, when from the Fort he received upon a round buckle or his girdle, iust in the forepart, a Musket shot, that brused all his belly blacke, in a round Strange acciipot, and battered the Bullet flat at his feete, but did him no other hurt. Hee was in his doublet dent of a flow and hofe without any Armour, or Target, for the which a little before I found fault with him, and his answere to me was, that his fieth was of the Musket proofe, as indeede it after proued, with the helpe of a buckle of a Spanish girdle, and good fortune besides, which in the common opinion fauoureth the valiant.

In this approaching towards the Fort. our Reare Admiral accompanied with divers other Gentlemen of the best fort, to the number of forty, in the head of all the Troopes, with his leading staffe, and no other Armour then his Collar(a brauery in a chiefe Commander not to be commen- Reare Admira) ded) led on the Company with fost march, full in the face of the Fort, descending downe a little taxed, hill, whileft with their great Ordnance, and Musketteir, we were very shrewdly pelted. But he, with this little Vauntguard was no fooner part, and entred under the couert of their trenches,

and barricadoes, that were at the foote of this steepe hill, but the maine body of our little Armie, that a while marched in good order, began prefently to breake their rankes, and from marching fell to flat running in ftragling manner to foone as ever they began to finde themselves within the mercy of the Musket shot and so continued in this disorderly, and timorous course, vntill they were upon our heeles, under the wals, and trenches, almost as soone as we, that were in manner of a Vauniguard come fome twelue fcore before them in a fleady flow march. Our Reare Admirall. and we all cried out on them for this hamefull diforder, and taxed Captains Bret, and Captains Berry, with other of the Captaines for it, and of them demanded, if these were the men, that Should have done os such stead in our landing, to same vis from dishonour, or if this be the manner of their old Low Country Troopes, to hew such base cowardise, at the first sight of the Enemie, and for Musket hot so farre off from a Fort. The fault was not (urely in these Captaines, for they were well knowne, and showed themselves to be bonest and resolute men, and did their best to stay this disorder. But their answere was this that these comtanies, that did to beastlike behave them felnes, were in deede men taken out of Flushing, and Brill, the Cautionary Towns, and raw Souldiers, that ever lived in a fafe Garrison, & feldome or never bad feene enemie, or incountered with that in the field. And therefore for thefe kinde of Low Countrie Souldiers, they faid, we should never finde them, but as base and backward fellowes, as the other Regiments that bad fol-Jaid, we poon a never joint voice to any and valiant. And as it seemed to vo then, and as since I have heard divers Difference confirme, their answere was true, and grounded upon reason and Experience. And therefore it is not a- twist Campe mille to take good notice of such as onely serme to take pay, to malke rounds, and guard ports in Garrison and Garrison Towner for in the field they will most commonly be missing or at least (if present) doe little hart for con. Souldiers,

We being thus come vnto the foote of the high Fort, and vnder covert of the Trenches, and wals which they had abandoned, retiring themselves into their fortifications, and firengths on the top of the Hill: our Reare Admirall commanded Captaine Bret to appoint a Sergeant or two, with tome few that, to see proue and discouer the way towards the Towne, and take safe in hand with them one of our Partuall guides, for the more affurance, and for the better instructions for conducting the Troopes, because he was informed by the Guides, that the way in divers places lay very open, and dangerous to the shot of the high Fort, as well as to the Fort at the Townes end. And the worfe, by reason of low wals made of loose stones, on either side of the waves. which the great Artillery, and Musketeir would beate vpon, and featter among ft vs. and fo indeede afterwardsin the march we found it true. Captaine Bret answered, that although it had 50 pleased our Reare Admirall to appoint him to another Office, yet, if he would expressly command him, he would also furuer this passage himselfe. But it was not thought fit at that time to want the Sergeant Major amongst such raw, and disorderly troopes; and therefore he was againe willed to appoint a Lieutenant, and a Sergeant or two, to got about that businesse, in manner as was aforefaid. But woon this order to given, Captaine Bret made report, that hee found the Sergeants and Lieutenants very vnwilling to vndertake this discouery, making the passage very dishcult, by reason that they saw them from the hill top, to beate so dangerously with their great Artillery .vpon vs, and the loofe wals, & also to ply vs to fast with their Musketeir, the which they might better doe on that way. And therefore the Troopes were very defirous, to have passed by with 60 fome speede, and not in any orderly march, and strength, which indeede had bin a very foule, and

alio an hazardous courfe. For as we were credibly informed, the Island was able to make a thoufand men furnified with weapons, and wee were perswaded (or at least to suspect) that they would gather the body of their most strength, for the defense of their best Towne, towards the which we were now marching.

Annanana .

Reare Admirais valour.

Out Reare Admirall feeing all men to make fuch scrupulositie of this businesse, when Cantaine Bret had related vnto him the backwardnesse of thele Low Countrie Garrison Souldiers, thereung answered that he would not offer that to any, which he would himselfe refuse to vndertake, if neede required; although it were not the dutie and office of the chiefe Commander, to ynders of fo ordinary a fernice, but a thing duely appertaining to the inferior Officers, & Souldiers : Norwithflanding (faid he) though I could inforce others to doe it, they shall well perceine, that I my selfe will doe that which they dare not performe: whereof I am ashamed in their behalfe, and how our Generall and we all are abused, in the opinion of these Low Countrie Souldiers, And therefore called for his Curates and Caske, and faid, that he would both goe view the way for them, which they had made so nice of, and also the passages, and ascents voto the hill top, and as well as hee 10 could take view of the ilrength, and fortifications thereof, for our better directions against the next morning that we should attempt it. Captaine Berrie thereupon very willingly offered himfelfe to hoe and did earneftly defire me to divert our Reare Admirall from undertaking it. And I thereupon did openly diffawde him that commanded in chiefe, from putting his owne person to those inferiour Offices of hazard, fitter for a Lieutenantor a Sergeant, then himselfe to performe. knowing that all the direction, as well of those troopes, as alloof a whole Squadron of the Nanie did at that time onely rest you him, in the absence of the Admirall, & Vice Admirall, Notwithflanding he was oblinate therein, as well in scorne to them that had refused, as also indeede our of a deire to be the better informed of the strength, and fortification of the high Fort. Wherein when I law him refolued, I told him that I would out of the love of a kinfman, in particular, 20 and also out of an honest regard, take such part as he did, from whom I had received many kinde favours, and accompany him, but not out of any great defire I had to goe about a peece of worke. that confilled of much danger, and little honour in the performance. Hee thanked mee for mine offer, but yet wished me not to goe, if it were against my minde; notwithstanding I accompanied him, and fo did some eight or ten more of our feruants and followers. But I say truely, and to afterwards it was much fooken of, that there was not any one more of quality that did accompany him in that bufineffe. In this fort, and in this number did he himlelfe goe to discover the passage, and also was care-

Dangerous

we were shrewdly troubled with the great Artillery, which did beat upon the old wals, alongst the which we were to passe, and therewithall much indangered and harmed vs. For besides some that were hurt, two of our traine had their heads firicken cleane from their shoulders; my felfe was then shot through the left leg with a Musket bullet, but miffed the boanes being but a fleshwound but the bullet did burne both my filke flocking and buskin, as if it had bin finged with an hot Iron. I was then hard by the Reare Admirall, who also was shot through the breeches & doublet fleeues in two or three places. And still they plied ve to fast with small shot, as that (I well remember) he wished me to put of a large red scarre, which I then wore, being (as hee faid) a very faire marke for them. But I was not willing to do the Spanuards fo much honor at that time albeit

full and diligent to observe and search out the strengths and ascents to the hill. In which doing,

Scarfe-brauery perillous.

I could have wished it had not bin on me, &therfore told the Reare Admirall again, that his white fearfe was as eminent as my red, and therefore I now would follow his example. But yet in my poore 40 opinion I fee no great honor nor discretion in those nice ceremonies, but when men go to fernice, they may with reputation either put on, or put off all habiliments, for their most advantage and securitie, and especially in going to discomer, which best may be performed, when them selves are least disconered And this puts me in minde of a report which I heard many yeeres since of Monsieur La: Noc that famous French Captain, and one Buffey de Amboys, a gallant French Gentleman. Thefe two being with Monfieur the French Kings brother, some 24. yeer: since at the stege of Bines in the Low Countries, were to informe themselves of a flanker, or some Ranelin that was to be beaten with Artillery. La Noue was the Marshall of Monsieurs Campe, and Buffye his great fanourite, & Lieutenant Generall (as I take it) Buffey would needes before Monfieur in a branery, muite La Noue to undertake with bim the disconery of that place, which La None out of his better indement, and experience in the Warres, thought not so sit a prece of service for 50 their places, but rather to be preserved to some private Captaines of valour, and indeement, that would very conerily goe about it. But such was Buffeyes forward beate, and iolitie to the businesse, as that La Noue, who was inferiour to none in true valour, disclained to refuse that, which the other still orged, and made so light of. And being stirred by Busseyes daring branery, he fell to the businesse, and led Bussey such a dance in his hose and doubled unarmed to the discourty, and so slilly carried him on fill with a fober discourse, further and further into the very mouth of the Cannon and Musket Shot, with a foft steady pace, as that Bussey began to finde and dislike their entertainment, feeing the imminent danger that they fill ranne into. And thereupon suddenly asked La Noue, what he meant so farre openly to ingage himselfe, and on so slow a pace: whereto La Noue answered, that bee ded fo, to make Buffey know, that La Noue had a beart as well to execute, as a tongue to give coun- 60 fell when neede required. But at last, they both falling into the true rechaning of their fellies; the one, for verging a valiant old Souldier, and the other for affenting to the vaine elevious humour of jouthly enconsiderate courage, came off very quietly both together, baning had their fils of disconcring. And get thefe Simullates (as the Latines name them) have ever in all ages raigned. Cafar in his Commentaries

makes an effeciall observation of two of his Captaines for the like: The one was called Titus Pulho, and the other Lucius Varenus, and it happened in his Warres of France, in the wintering Campe of Quintus Cicero, one of his Lieutenant; being furiously affaulted by the Gauls, but most resolutely defended. The manner bee describes bexcellently, and large, in bis Commencaries, to which ! referre von.

And now to our purpose, by this time, we had reasonably to our satisfaction, made a sufficient discouery, both of the way for our Troopes to paste, and also of the ascents to the high Forton the Mountaine. And then there came vnto vs Captaine Berry, and one Maiter Henry Allen, and others; who finding me hurt, very kindely bemoned my harme, and I in requitall of their curtefie, so as much lamented the want of all their good companies at that banquet; vpon the comming of thefe vato vs, we fent backe two of our men to Captain Bret (Sergeant Major for that time) to be his Guides, and to will him prefently to march on with his Troopes towards the Towne after vs. and that we would stay for them, because we then looked to be fought withall, or at the least, to

have some little fally, or bickering out of the Fort at the Towns end, which we must needes passe by before we could come to the Town. This was a very fine fortification all of stone worke, with by, before we could control to the 200 main and the curtaine, flankers, and ditch, very artificially cast: but prefently vpon our approach they abandoned it, and in our passing by we entred into it, and found that they had newly for faken the place. for faken, The like did they afterwards from the Towne, and were all fled up into the Countrie, and into Towne abane the Mountaines, fauing those two hundred that were garrifoned in the high Fort. The Towne doned. 20 was emptied, and left very bare of all things, but of fuch wares as could not fuddenly be remou-

ed : which was Wine, Salt, and Corne, whereof they left a little flore for our refreshing. The rest of our Troopes by this time were now come on very neere to the Towne, but there were some fine and twentie of them fhot, and fome feuen or eight flaine in the paffage.

And in this manner we did afterwards enter the Town very peaceably; which was a pleafant place, built all of Stone, and couered with Tile; and full of fine Gardens, Orchards, and Welsof Towne. delicate waters, with faire Streets, and one very faire Church, and also a Nunnery, and a Fryerie. Towne delect-It is in bigneffe about the proportion of Plymonth, or Tarmouth, but feated much like Douer Town. bed. This Island is of late yeeres become very watchfull, and the people more growne to the vie of fit armes, and have for their defence erected this new fortification, on the high hill, with a Garrison

30 of two hundred Spaniards in it. For not long before, it had bin very gallently furprifed, and (as I thinke) lacked, and ransomed, by the right Honorable George Clifferld Earle of Comberland (a no- Earle of Cumble Gentleman) that had often exposed both his purse, and his person, to his great honour and ex- beiland. See perience in those Seafaring Aduentures. And presently vpon our entrance we made Barricadoes. fop, L6 s.1. placed good Guards in divers parts, and a strong Corps de Guard in the Market place. For the town being vawalled, we were to suspect, that if we lay there open, and carelessy refreshing our selves. and our fouldiers scattered abroad in seeking for victuals, we might easily be surprised without good order, and directions given, before we fell to our repast, or reit. But this order being first performed, then were others at better liberty to fearch tafely for bootie. Therefore Proclamation for interval was made, that upon paine of death none should straggle twenty score without the Towne, and poory.

that not without the knowledge and leave of an Officer, and then to goe vpon their guard with fit weapon, and company. Hauing now refreshed and reposed our selues all night without any trouble, more then two false alarmes, that were given vpon the fight of divers of the inhabitants that approached towards the Towne, to view the manner of our dealings with their buildings (which proued nothing, but miftruft of the worst) for which, all things were well prouided to The Generals withitand the enemy) the next morning being the 22.of September, even with the day breake, comming. we might see our Generall with his Fleete at hand, bearing in with all sailes towards the Roade of Fayall, who all this while had bin beating up and down the Seas, looking about for the Adelantade, and other Aduentures. V pon his arrivall, our intent for attempting the high Fort was fruitrated, and all our proceedings in Fajall were by Sir Guillie Merricke at large related, vnto our Gene- Sir Guilly Meted, and all our proceedings in Fayat were by Sir Guide Merrice at large related, vite our Genes ricky with her-rall, and fo apprauated, and wrested into an euill sense, by him, Sir Christopher Blunt, Sir Anthony rable officious

50 Sherly, and others, by putting my Lord in the head, that these parts were plaied by the Reare Adnesses. mirall onely to steale honor, & reputation from him, and to let his owne forwardnesse to the view of the world; which intimation of theirs, was an exception that they know our Generall was very apt of his owne difposition to take hold of being a man that did affect nothing in the world so much as Fame, and to be reputed matchleffe for magnanimitie, and vndertaking, and could hardly bis ambition indure any that should obscure his glory in that kinde, though otherwise he fauoured them neuer or honour. to much. And that this is true, those that understand his humour hest, cannot instit deny. The which (I protest) I doe not speake, either out of any neglect of one that is dead, or to picke a thanke of any that lines, but fimply out of a refolution to write an unpartial truth, or elfe to be filent. For those spirits that base

80 flattery, or feruile feare doth transfort in falkioning their Histories , are of all others to be reputed the unworthiest, and most pernicious in a well-pollicied Common wealth. For wee feethat those Heathens, which have written the stories of Cyrus Pyrrhus, Alexander, Haniball, Scipio, Ciefar, and of all other those great Kings, or renouned Heroes, do as well taxe them for their vices, as glorific them for their vertues: For who lines without fault? And so sincerly & boldly do they follow the truth in their writings authas AAAAAAAA 2

they are therby freed from malice, or renenge, because they are free from all partialitie; or if any spleen arise. set it is secret; for the prosecution of such sinceritie is reputed meere implete in all forts, and flat Tyrannie in Princes. And to conclude, this impotent humor of induring rinality, and other mens praises, is versincident to men in high places, especially if they be of great courage, or sickled with Ambitton. It was be ides all adged, that the prefumption and fcorne, to land fuch Forces without his

Lordibios leave, was not to be paffed over without feuere punishment, and a Marshall Court fic to be called, to cenfure the offence and breach of order, and discipline, with many other as bitter arouments, and deuiles, as their wits could compalle, to aggravate the Generals wrath against all that were in this Action, and especially the Reare Admirall. Against whom, they spared not so farre to inueigh, as that they gave it out, that he was well worrhy to loofe his head for his labour. 10 And so had they inneighed the Generall against weall, as that all the forenoone was spent in reprehending and displacing all the Land Captaines, and Officers that accompanied the Reate Admirall in that Action, who being fent for to answere before the Generall aboord his ship, was before the Messenger came for him, gone in his Barge to fee the Generall, and to guide him to the Land, not to much as suspecting that any thing had binill taken for that matter, but rather Sir Walter Ralooking for great thankes at the Generall his hands. But so some as he entred the Generals ship. Lish commeth he found all mens countenances ettranged, as he passed through them. And when he was entred into the Generals cabbin, after a faint welcome, the Generall began to challenge him of breach of order and Articles : To whom the Reare Admirall answered, that he knew not of any such breach: my Lord replied, that there was an article that none should land any of the Troopes 20 without the General's presence, or his order. The Reare Admirall defired the Generall to give him leque to defend himfelfe by those Lawes, which himfelfe as well as others had denifed, and his Lordinip with the Cou fell of warre had authorited, and that then his Lordinip should finde that he had not committed any Errour at all. For (faith he) there is an Article, that no Captaine of any (hip, nor Captaine of any Company, if be be senered from the Fleete, shall land any where without direction on from the Generall or some other principall Commander, upon paine of death, oc. But I take my selfe (faid be) to be a principall Commander, under your Lordibio, and therefore not subject to that Article, nor under the power of the law Marshall because a successione commander of the whole Fleets in her Maiesties Letters Patents, your Lordship, and my Lord Thomas Howard failing. And besides your Lord-This agreed that I (bould land at this I fland, with your Lardship, whom I have attended these fouredayes, 30 andfinding that your Lordbip came not, being in your way thisberwards halfe a dozen leagues before, I maied anchor, I could not but thinke, that you thought meftrong inough to take this Ifland, and that your Lording was gone, with some of the rest to some of the other I flands. And Stated to long from landing at Sir Guillie Merrickes intreatie, as I heard mine owne company, euen at my backe, murmur, and fay, that I durst not adventure it. And to tell your Lording a plaine truth, my intent at first was onely to water, untill I fam them follow me in that braning manner, which with our reputations were could not then fluin, and eine oner being already in our Boates for that purpole. For if I had intended the taking of the Towne, I

aboord :he

Accufation.

Generali.

would never have retired fo farre off from our first Roade, that lay right before it. This difpute held some halte houre, and then the Generall went asware, and rested himselfe in the Reare Admirals lodging, being well enough fatisfied at that time. In fo much as the Reare 40 Admirall defired my Lord to tup there, and that if his Lordship ment to call the matter further in queltion, he would claime no primledge nor fauour thereby, but answer it in the morning. To which Sir Christopher Bluns (taking my Lords and were from him) faid, that he thought my Lord would not fup at all. But the Reare Admirall finding Sir Christopher Blunts disposition, told him, that when he muited him he might disable his owne appetite, but if my Lord pleased to stay, he would be very glad of his prefence. In this meane while my Lord Thomas Howard very nobly, and kindely taking care, that no wrong, nor difgrace might be offered to the Reare Admirall by Conflian and any deutse, or practife of his Enemies, dealt with the Generall to finde how hee stood refolued, friendly medi- and the next morning affored the Reare Admiral, that my Lord fought nothing but a due acknowledgement of an offence, alleadging that the rest would thinke him a very weake and tame Com-50 mander, if he should receive no manner of satisfaction. The Reare Admirall hoping that hee had done nothing vniustriable, and well affured, that he was successively in the Commission, for the whole commandement of the Fleete (and therefore not subject to-any corporall danger) as also because he affured himselse of the Vice Admirall his honorable love, and fincere dealing, came agame in the morning to visite the Generall. Otherwise (remembring the little trust that men ought to repose in reconciled enemies, and the strong malice borne him by others in greatest fauour with my Lord) had ment to have put himfelfe into his owne Squadron, and to to have defended himseife, or left my Lord. But my Lord Thomas Howard, perlwading him to goe, and fatisfie the Generall (vpon whose word onely he made that adventure, after he had given him his honour, with great kindnesse, and resolution, that he would make himselfe a party, if any wrong 60 The Generall or violence were offered, contrary to the General's promife unto him; he did as the Vice Admirall aduited him. And fo all things after a little dispute came to a quiet end and conclution.

And within a day or two after, the Generall accompanied with the Vice Admirall, and other Lords, and Commanders direct aboord our ship, where he was exceedingly intertained, and consented. Onely this I omitted that when the Generali committed Captaine Bret, Berry, and Sidner, The Reare Admirall defited that those Gentlemen might receiue no hard mealure in his caule. for whatlocuer his Lordinip doth conceine to have bin mildone, hee must take it wholly on himfelle to answere, being atthat time the Chiefe and Commander. This I have set downe in manner as I heard it, then from men of good fort, not being prefent thereat my felfe, nor at that time able to waite on the Generall, by reason of the shot through my legge, which I had received but the day before, in this thankleffe feruice.

CHAP.14.S.2. Cage left, Birds flowne. Enuy bad to all, to it selfe work of all.

Thus was the whole day frent in reprehending and disciplining vs for our paines. And yet mowithstanding, thele aggravators, and chiefe Initigators of our Generall, vouchlafed to take the benefit of our reproued Trauailes, in lodging, and retreihing themselves in this good Towne, both this night, and three or foure dayes after. But in the fame day that our Generall animed . about one of the clocke after midnight, all the Porsugals, and Spaniards in the high Fort, with their High Fort a. bagge and baggage, abandoned the place, leaving behinde them fix peeces of great Artillery bandoned. mounted. For when they law the whole Fleete together, and to many gallant Troopes land with Our Generall, their hearts fainted, and fo they fled into the Countrie, and woodly Mountaines adjoining. Then in the morning when it was too late (although as yet wee knew not fo much) direction was given to certaine troopes, and companies, to guard all the foot of the high Fort, to flop, and flay them from flealing from thence, that were already gone, for it was given out,

that if they did not prefently furrender it, the place should be affailed. But when newes was brought that they had abandoned the Fort, and carried all away, then was there much descenting of the foule overlight, fo to suffer the Birds to escape out of the Cage, that might have bin to furely kept, if we had not bestowed more labour in disciplining and correcting our owne pretended faults for landing, then discretion or diligence in profecuting Enuiespieth and correcting our ownerpretended rautes for landing, then different or oringence in proceeding more in pre-the Enemy, whom we had at an advantage. For preferrly vpon their arrivall, they did nothing tradecition in but examine and discipline our offence. Whereas if they had gone in hand with the Fort, and protested enrcaft a carefull eye thereunto, we had not lost the ransoming of to many Spanish prisoners, nor the mies, and is afbenefit of the spoyle which they had carried out of the Towne, for lafty to that place. And at way worft to it this groffe errour there was much muttering. But now divers of the land officers (to colour and felfe, though excute their owne default) laid this blame also on vs, alleadging that we should have left a good 30 guard voon the Fort, if we had done like men of warre, voon our first landing, and then all had bin fure. And although this excuse passed at first for some paiment, for the common and more igporant fort, yet all men of judgement could eafily perceive, how impossible a matter it was for vs out of foure hundred and fixtie to spare so many, as should sufficiently guard two hundred souldiers, from fallying out of such a Fort, and yet proceede with the recouering of the other Fort. and Towne that was before vs. For the defence of both which, the Island was able and had in rea-

fessed the Towne. But after the Generall was come, this might easily have bin performed. or if he had not come, they had not fled fo fuddainly, and the fame morning, wee our felues had atto tempted the Fort, and made no doubt to carry it. But then with the presence of our Generall. woon his arrivall, all our determinations, and authorities were concluded. Afterwards when our men entred this Fort, which the Spaniards had abandoned, there they found divers peeces of Artillery, and an English Gentleman whole name was Hart, and a Flori-

dinesse (as our spies and guides assured vs) aboue one thousand able men well furnished . voon

whom we were to have a vigilant eye, and to keepe a convenient strength after we had once pof-

ming with both their throates cur. Then were there certaine companies fent abroad the Coun- Edit and andtry, to trace those Spaniards and Portugals, and to make waste of all that lay in their way. But ther left with of the Garrison they could never recover one man. Now after three or fourc dayes the anger and throates cuts diflikes of our Generall towards vs, were well preified, and vpon further confideration and conference with the Reare Admirall of his doings, hee grew againe into very kinde tearmes with him, and at his fuite released and restored all the difgraced Captaines that linded, and were in this feruice, and so having taken all the benefit, and refreshing of this Towne, and Island that we so could come by, our time being to thort, on the foureteenth of September we were all commanded to goe aboord. And so for a tarewell, and for the funerals of our lost men, and those two that were fo diffoitefully murthered in the high Fort, the Towne was brauely fet on hire, and all the Towne fired, Ordnance of the Towne, and Forts brought away with vs. And I am perfiveded that if the warres had not bin by chance to begun before by vs, vpon that Island by their owne feeking, and foolish brauery, and afterwards aggravated by their cruelty in murthering so despitefully two of our company in the high Fort, Fayall had elcaped as footfree as did Cuerno, Flores, Gratiofa, Saint Reward of cru-Michaels, or any of the other. For furely they were all at our metcy, the Fort of Tercera onely ely iscruely. excepted. But in all thele Actions I observed, and well faw, that our Generall in his true difposolition, affected rather to be renowned for bounty, clemency, and valour, then for the glory of a

dreadfull Conquerour. All this while the Flemmings were playing their parts in the Ille of Pike. which was about a league from Fayall; where I leave them ranfacking the Wines, and burning all that was within their power.

The fix and twentieth of September we made towards Gratiofa, where wee cast ancor. and Aaaaaaaa prefently

Grafie atub. mittethi. felic.

presently whilest we roade before it, there came aboord our Generall, the chiefe men of the Ifland fubmitting themselves, and craving mercy of our Generall, alleadging (as they of Flores had done) that the inhabitants thereof were Portugals, and friends, and natural Enemies to the Spaniards, though they wanted meanes and force to show it, being held under them by frome hand. To this Island our Generall shewed his accustomed mercy, and required of them some protutions of Wine, Fruites, and fresh victuals for the relieuing of the Fleete; but of any other compolition we heard not, although it was supposed they did, or might have yeelded a better rantome : but this was very willingly fent by the inhabitants vnto vs. Here fome of the Commandets went abourd the Generall, and befought him to goe aland, and fomewhat better to furney, this Illand, and for one day to let his Fleete ancor in that Roade, which his Lordship shewed Lo great willing nelle vnto. But the Maiter of the Generals Ship, whose name was Grosela dell and voluckie fellow) was veterly against that counsell, and alleadged that the yeere was farre spent, and the place of anchoring there not good for the ground tackle, protesting that it would be danperous to, the whole Fleete, and put it in hazard, and therefore very earnestly perswaded and veged the leaving of that Roade; which admie of his, our Generall then followed, to our great leffe, and hinderance, as afterwards it fell out. But Groue the Mafter must pardon mee to fav in mine opinion, that it was an undifcreete aduife, to to divert our Fleete in fuch hafte from that Island, considering the long aboade he made afterwards before Saint Michaels, and at Villa Franca, to leffe purpose in as ill Roades as this, and later in the yeere. Hereupon wee waved, leaving Gratiosa voon Saint Michaels Eue, and made for Saint Michaels Island, and on Saint Michaels 20 day, early in the morning, we made that land, and bare in with the finoare. And as wee came ye-

Saint Michael.

Grane taxed.

ry neere vnto it, two of the Sterne-most Ships of our Fleete, shot off twicefor thrice, and bare vn with all failer they could packe on, towards the Admirals ship. These brought newes of the Indian Fleete then by them discouered, comming directly from

Newes of the

Three Starill

fhips taken.

the Roade of Gratiofa, that the Generall had so vnwillingly left but the Euening before, by the valuckie aduice of Grove the Matter of his ship. Vpon the Intelligence given by their two ships, our Admirall that off a peece, and pretently cast about, and therewithall, wee in the other thips perceived casting up of Hats, and great shootes abourd the Admirall, for iou of this newes. And the like afterwards was done in the Vice-Admirals ship, and so passed throughout all the Fleete. Within some few houres after, we incountered, and tooke three Spanifo ships, comming from the Hanana, the greatest of them being about foure hundred tunnes, and esteemed to be a very rich thip, as well for the lading, as for the patterners that were in her. To this Spaniard, our thip called the Walthight being neereft, gaue Chale, and caufed her to ftricke, and yeelde : but yet my Lord Generall nafting after, would tuffer none but his owne Boate to goe aboord her, being full of good profoners, and pillage besides per lading, which was Cochynella, and other such rich Wares. This ship, and the other two that were in her company, being very good prises also, made to the Generall a relation of forty failes of Indian men, whereof tome eight were fraughted with the Kings Treature, that did diffenbarge with them from the Hanana, bound for Spaine. And as we after heard, the Garland, the Rimebow, the Dreadnaught, the Marigold, and others, fell among it fixteene faile of the richeit of this Indian Fleete, whereof they foundred one, and whileft 40 they were busie in seeking to take the spoile of her (as it was credibly reported) all the rest did escape, and recouer Tercera. But of this I speake as the generall voice went, and not vpon other affurance, for they were then separated from vs, and the rest of the Fleete: And therefore I must adde this conclusion, to defire that I may of the understanding fort be pardoned if in these relations I cannot truely, nor at large write the accidents, and courses of all their shops in particular, being no eye witnesse thereof, nor possibly could so be. For to doe that in a land army, or in a battaile is very bard, and much more in a Sea Voyage confisting of fo many (hips sometimes separated.

Ind an Fleets purfued to Te.

The Peere de-

Scribed.

A Counfell.

Vpon intelligence of this escaping, and patting by to voluckily of these Indian Ships, we were all much perplexed. For by that chance, and by our vnfortunate haft from Gratiofa, but the very night before, wee faw that Euen, the wrath of deftiny denied to make vs fo happy, as to bee ma- 50 thers of fo great a fortune, as then had fallen into our laps, if wee had not fill followed all those counfells that fell out to the world. Notwithstanding, with all the speed wee could make, we instantly followed after them to Tercera, where they were entred some fixe houres before vs , and had moored their Ships fait under the Towne and Fort, being one of the strongest pieres of all Europe. There wee might aloofe behold them fafe within the Road; which was a great Inlet invironed with a high Land, in manner of Peninfula; fo as the Shippes lay under the command of two ftrong Fortifications, a place neither fit nor politible for our Ships to follow them, except we had meant, that they should have there stuck tast for comming out againe. Now was there a generall countell called aboord the Admirall, what courfe to take heerein, and many great aduentures proposed and offered to bee attempted, by some Coronels and Captaines, with Boates and 60 Pinnaces for the landing of men, to force those places, but all in vaine, and altogether visicationable. For whereas they, with one thousand fine hundred men, offered to take both the Iland and Forts, some others of the chiefest Sea-Commanders (in their judgements, well knowing the great difficultie to Land men, and Munitions on fo disaduantagious a place, and in so cuils a season of the

yeere ; beildes the great ftrength of the Fortifications, fo well furnished at that time by this new arruall) were veterly against it, as a matter friuolous, and of more apparant danger to our felues, then to the Enemy, and for it yeel led fundry reasons. All which these Coronels feemed to account light or, and would needs in great branery, still vige the vindertaking of it, if they might have but the proportion of one thouland five hundred men, before spoken of; which the General. himselfe feemed greatly to allow, and infift youn, and therefore of necessitie to be yeelded vnto by the inferiour Commanders.

But our Vice-Admirall, the Lord Thomas Howard, finding indeed the marke whereat fome of our great Captaines shot, to wit, that it would have ferued their turnes to have vaunted, that if the to Vice-Admirall, and Reare-Admirall had beene willing to this enterprife, and not croffed it by counter counsells, the Spanib Fleet and Treature (ov maffering the Hands of Tercera) might baut been recovered his Lording resolved either to tie them to their pretended resolutions, of to make the miles, that they could not ferue themselves of him, by any such finenesse & pretence. And therfore told the general plainly, that if indeed he would fo willingly have it attempted, himfelfe, and the Reare-Admitall for their parts would be forward and readie to aduenture as farre as any others. And moreover, the better to inable the action, faid, that they would undertake to find him three thousand strong and able men, to spare out of the Fleet, and yet leave the Nauie sufficiently manned. And therefore ((aid they) if your Lordship fee no other reasons to let or hinder this offered accemp; there shal be no want of so many men as we speake of, which is double the num-20 ber that was de nanded. But voon this constant offer, the matter was againe debated, and grew fomewhat colder, being better digested. So as in conclusion it was deemed inconvenient, and impossible to be effected, as our Forces and helpes, and theirs at that time stood, and the time of the yeere fo farre spent, and the winds and the Seas growne fo tempestuous for landing in Boats. But if this offer had not bin made, then, the relinquishing of these glorious motions, and attempts, had bin laid upon the backwardnesse and disswarions of the Sea-men, which was well enough percei-

ued, and therefore accordingly answered. These unseasonable ofers, and Braua loes, puts me in mind of the like inconsiderate unfortunate alti- touching rash on of Sir R. Greenfield in the Reuenge, who being Vice-Admirall to the fame Lord Thomas onless and Howard Admirall in a journey to these llands in certains of the Queenes Ships, they fortuned to meet Sir R. Granuile 30 mith a great Fleet of the King of Spaines, neere to the Ile of Flores, confifting of fo many buge and mighty his flory you

Gallions, as was no was fit for them to undertake being in number and force three times as firong as ours have before, 1944, And therefore fitter to be warily dealt withall, then raftly admentured voon Wherefore the Admi- which perhips rall (out of the due confideration and indgement of the office, and place bee beld, as also for that at bis re- may formatic turne bome, bee was to give a frict account of the charge committed unto bim) thought it fit to keepe fill him. aloofe, and in the weather of this powerful Nauie, and so to fight with them at his best advantage, off, and on, as occasion ferned, or elfe to free himfelfe from them if need required : For his Ships being morenmable, yare, and fwift, then the Spaniards, it had bin a groffe errour to have thrust himselfe wilfully in amorest them, and so to give them the advantage of boarding, being high and mighty built Ships through-

ly manned and full of last, and the manner of fight, by boording most advantageous for those buge Gallions. 40 Besides being as they were all men of Warre, and thruce as many as the English, and no other benefit to bee out by boording them, but blowes, and the bazard of battaile, which is uncertaine victory; it behoe. med him admitedly to carry him felfe, and rather to follow the heedy fleps of a Pabius Maximus, then the pies beadie fury of a Terentius Varro. But bis Vice- Admirall, being indeed a man very wilfull, and violent in his courses, could in no wife be personaded to follow his Admirall, and his conforts. But thrusting himfelferally in amongst the Spaniards, those mighty Vessels being a Sea-boord, and some of them getting into the weather of him, so becalmed all his sayles , as that hee could not use the benefit of working upon a wind to bis best aduantage, nor free bimselse of them when bee would, but was clapt abourd by two or three of them; where to redeeme his errour, seeing hee had brought himselfe so undiscreetly into a desperate worke, be very resolutely fought, and made long relistance, to the great annoyance and loss of the Allar-30 lants. But in the end, being haben and beaten to fitters with their great Ordnance, and oppressed with the

multitude of them, comming in fresh upon him, was by mayne force mastered, and yet distaining to reeld. for that bee had received his deaths wound in the fight, fought by all meanes to have blowne up his Ship, by festing fire on bis owne Powder roopie, and therewitball to have destroyed as many of the Spaniards as lay aboordhim; but by the care of his Captaine (whose name was Laughorne) was with stood and premented. A right antiem Roman resolution but sement at too much varying from the true Christian Religion; to draw a violent and sudden death on so many soules, for the better gracing of his particular er. conly Ship of your, And in this fort by his owne wilfulnesse, brought he one of the Royall Naute, into the power and the Nauy Royall possession of the Spaniaris, which during all the Warrer, nener before nor after they could obtaine. And a all, possessed faire grace of God it was , that his fond example had not inticed more of them, at the same time to the like by the Spane

60 felly and ruine. Now the best that bee could hope for, was after the exchanging of some great that with ards and deace them to have come of againe of hee could. A bravery to [mall purpofe, for to fabilite them, was not in the ly boud's power of all the English, if they bad beene as many more in all likelihood and reason. Vpon which grounds wife Commanders ought to build their resolutions, before they put themselves to the bazard of battaile. Besides, in truth is was a very insolent and disorderly part, for a Vice-Admiral, being a man of his yeares

from the opinion of all his Conforts, onely to hid him selfe voluntarily to so foolub and bitter a banquet wherein bee could be but loft. And bard would it be for Generalls, and Chiefe Commanders to fulfill their

Infractions, or fatisfie that which is expected at their bands, if they should be drawne on, or ingage them-

felmes by the vaine example of enery one that is carryed with a headdy humour, to follow his owne wilfull

least to the assured losse of as many as were landed about that businesse. But (thankes be to God) 200d counsell prenailed, and prenented these bazards.

After that this diffoute was fo calmely concluded : our Generall himselfe, and the Lord e Mountier in the Defiance, and two or three other tall Ships, bare in as close along the shoare as they could, exchanging upon pleafure, fome fifteene or twentie great flot with them, to very little purpole, and to left the lie of Tercera, a place very ftronge both by Nature and Art, and at that time well flored with Men. Munition, and Treasure; by reason of the late arrurall of those Indian Ships. From thence wee returned agains to the He of Saint Michaells, which before on Michaelmoffe day wee made, and left then your this Intelligence. And now as foone as we were They arrive ontred into the Road, that lies before Saint Michaells Towne, wee let fall our Ancors, and there, at S. Michaells the Generall accompanied with divers of our chiefe Officers, comming abourd our Reare-Admirall, hung ont a Flag of Countell, where it was consulted about landing, and the taking of this good Town, which lay to gloriously before our eles, promising many rich rewards to the Victors: In the which there was a flight Fort towards the Seafide, but the Towne vnwalled. The Generall appointed that all Companies should bee made ready to land forthwith. But our Reare-Admirall defired his Lordship; that hee would first permit him to view the place, and to find out where the Army might best make a descent, because the Billowes about those slands doe sometimes fo roule from the Sea, as might eafily ouerturns the best Boates we had, as wee found by ex- H. How Sea. perience at Fajall, where wee had two long Boats ouerturned in landing, and Malter Thomas Rug-20 may also throwne with a Sea on the Rockes in his Boat. Our Generall at first, yeelded to the Reare-Admiralls request, for viewing a fit place. But as hee was putting off, and scarce gone from the Ships fide twentie paces, my Lord, flanding in the Gallery with Sir Christopher Blant, called him backe againe in great halt, and faid that he would not himselfe, and view it. Whereupon the Reare-Admirall returned againe, as my Lord commanded; and as his Lordship went out of the Ship into his Barge ynarmed altogether but with his Coller and Sword, and without either Shot or Pike to way to on him, the Reare-Admirall called aloud vnto him, and defired his Lordship to take his Caske, and Target proofe with him, it hee purposed to goe neere the shoare, feeing Boldnesse by there lay fo many Muskets on the reft, there to receive him. Whereumto my Lord answe-

red, That hee would none, because hee distained to take any advantage of the Watermen that

But (in my opinion) though that answere much showed his valour, yet became it not the place that my Lord held, for in truth a Concratt onebt not to bee fo adventuring, and carelette of himfelfe open energy highe occasion, nor to goe warmed to places of monument persit. Homer describes the valuent Heroes, and brauest Leaders of the Greekes to be best armed: As Achilles, an excellent Armour framed by Vulcan. at the request of Thetis his mother, and Arax with his fewenfold fixeld. Infomuch as their very armes are famous even to these days , the we whereof now wee make scornefull. But they are no beaten Souldiers in the warres , that hold the fe opinions : for it is truly faid, that a great and wife General thould dre old. And I have read that famous Epaminondas, was fined by his Countrymen the Thebanes, for being too formard, and serning in a bassaile ill armed, alshough be wan the victory. But to our matter : After 40 that these landing places were viewed a farre off, and were not well liked, nor yet so neerely approached at that time, swithin Culuerin Shot (for there lay all along the fhoare aboue foure hundred Shot youn the reft, intrenched to beate on our Boats;) in conclusion, after many offers and jurusies made aloofe, the conveniences of that place, for landing was excepted against. Albeit in truth it was a faire and fandy beach (as all the Fleet might well perceine) and some foure or fine miles from the Towne, and Fort, and much more easie then that of Farall, where wee before wan our landing. And that this is most true many that were prefent (now living) and saw both,

And although our Generall himselfe, was very resolute and apt to undertake any good occasion of feruice, yet hee was then so led and accompanied with such politicke Land Captaines, as that of all the feruices which fell into confultations and deliberations, those most commonly. which were vnfeatable, were offered to bee undertaken, and things more likely and reasonable neglected. Whereby out affaires speed accordingly. And in this regard that this descent was not by my Lord Generall his viewers, allowed of, as fit for the Army to land at, to many Entignes being placed and intremehed there to impeach vs, it was prefently by another confultation agreed, that the Reare-Admirall should with all the strength of the Fleet, lye as neere before the Towne of Saint Michael, as comeniently they could, to hold them in expectation, whilethmy Lord Generall and the reft, with two thousand men imbarked into small Barkes and Pinnaces, fecretly in the night didconicy themselves about the point, to land at a Towne called Villa Villa I was Franca, fome fixe miles further then the first determinate landing. And for that purpose, they 60 had most of all our Boats with them, and three English men for their guides, that perfectly knew all the Hands and the Townes, by lone trade and living among it them. These three goxies affu-

red our Generall both of a quiet landing, and of a very faire and lecret way, to march from thence to Saint Michaels Towne. Our troupes being thus shipped, and our Generall also, they made hast towardes Villa Franca,

concest. For fo was that noble Paulus Emilius, and the Roman Armie with him loft, at the Battasle of Canges, in being constrained to second the footish brauery of Vario, his rash Colleague. And in the like

Rich Doi Torte unadusfed desperate fort, did that valiant Dube of Yorke, Richard Plantagenet, Father to Edward the Fourth, wilfully cast away himselfe, when with fine thousand men onily, contrary to the persuasions and counfell of all bis friends, out of the pride of his branery, bee would needs fally out of his Cafile of Sandall. and gine batt aile to the Queenes Army, that was twenty thousand strong : whereby his weate forces were quickely defeated, at Wakefield, and bimfelfe flaine, with his young fonne the Earle of Rutland. It is faid to bee the dutie of a creat Captaine, to feeke victory with at little loffe to himselfe, as may bee, and more military discipline thewed in making a faire and safe retrait, then in gining a furious and desperate charge. The experience whereof was well feere, in that gallant Souldier Sir John North, who wan as much Ha-Sir to Nortia. nour and Fame, by that braue, and well ordered retrait which bee m. . befor : Gaunt, as in any one piece

eter Stroffe.

offernice that ener bee did. We had also fresh in our memories, a Sea experiment of the very like tracicall succelle of Sir Richard Greenfield, in the liberall attempt of Peter de Stroffe, Admiral of a French Fleet, against a mightie Spanish Nany, commanded by the Marquelle of Sancta Cruce, at these Ilands. Where this Strolle out of a wilfull brauery, contrary to the better adnice of all his Captaines, and Mafiers, baning alreadie landed many braue troupes of Frenchmen, in the Ilands, as offistant to Don Anthonio, named King of Portugali, upon the first view would needes lay the Marqueffe and the Spanish Fleet aboord, being compassed of mightie buge Gallions, and the French but stender nimble Shos. Br which unequal match and foolsh daring he was beaten downe . ight, all his Nause destroyed (fauing the Count Brylack, and a few others of better indgement, that would not follow his vaine course) and himfelfe being taken prifoner, was aline most despitefully torne, and drawne afunder with two Ships. Thus lost Terribly exebe himselfe, and his bonour, brought many gallant Gentlemen and Son diers to a butcherly execution, and viterly thrust Don Anthonio from the possession of the lles of Afores, and confounded all those brave French troupes, which a little before he had placed in them. But in another manner, and with better fuccesseure our assaires generued, in the yeere 88, when that mightie Fleet of Spaine, which they termed 32

Example of 88 inuincible come to inuade vs. For them I remember, among it other good describine, and instructions for the

Sea fight; it was straitly ordained, that none of our Ships Should voluntarily (if they could by any meanes

anoid it) lay any Spaniards abourd, but alwayes to fight with them upon advantage, and indeanour by all meanes to keepe into the meather of them, and fo leave or take as occasion served, they comming to inuade, Inuinfible fleet and our end only to keep them from landing. The which direction was fo well ebferued, as that this innincible Fleet, for all their force and powerfull appearance, proved at last innifible, left many of their Ancors and good Ships behind them, got not, nor sunke any one of ours : but being fore gauled and beaten, with this manner of fight, and greatly affrighted with fire, and fuch like stratagems, were at last glad to packe a-

way, as fast as they could out it the backe doore. I meane by the North Seas, round about Scotland, and Ireland : wherein they found a miferable and tedious flight, never baning gotten so much at a dish of our 40 fresh water, nor over lauded one man (except prisoners) whon our Coass. Now, if our Admirall, the Lord Charles Howard had beene a wilfull Commander, flanding upon those vaine clorious termes of boording and affaulting the enemy, and not have proceeded by counfell and policie temperately, then had be done that which the Spaniards expected and defired, their Ships being fit for the purpose, and comming to boording and handy fight, might very well have distressed us, and so have bazarded both the Name, and the Kingdome together. But this noble Lord, as her was very fortunate and indicious in Sea service , so L. Admirall bee truely and wifely considered, how great a weight and charge lay on his indgement and trust, and therecommended. fore did accordingly, with great wisdome and temper marshall bis diffaires, to the onerthrow of his Enemies, to the perpetual bonour of bu name, and the victorious serving of his Prince and Countrey. This therefore may may fland for a Waxime and Caucat, to all great and wife Commanders, that to whom A 50 King or State commits the trust and directsin of an Army: It bridles him in the free vie of his owne conrage, or from expressing (upon energ temptation) his particular valour. For that forward humour of daring, is so be ved in younger yeares, before they arrive to the eplaces of dignitic or command; and then euer after, counsell should command their courage, alwayes we apping their heads in the Furre of the Foxe, and their Armes seldome in the Lyons skin, setting aside all respects of byaning or vaine glory, as

did that Fabius Cunctator, of whom Ennius in prasse faith; Non ponebat enim rumores ante salutem. And the se presidents I have here taken occasion to record, thereby onely to shew what inconveniences and detriments doe follow such unbridled heat, and headdy humours, and to the contrary, what benefit and advantage is gained in the true vie of timely and temperate proceedings. For swely, if these desperate offers, made by the Land Souldiers, instigating our forward Generall to the taking of the Tercera, had rest resurned home with the scorne of a disgraced attempt. Besides, if the Adelantado with the Spanish Name had then chanced to have come on our backes, whileft our best men were ashnare ingaged about this desperate and unseafable enterprise, it might have turned to the destruction of the whole Fleet, or at the

They land at V.lla France.

where they arrived fafe, & were all landed by the next morning, without any manner of refiffance. For most of all the Town vpon their arrivall abandoned the Town, and we that were left under the command of the Reare-Admirall, in the best Ships before the Towne of Saint Michaells, did all the night give them perpetual Alarums, with Shot, Drummes, and Trumpets, in fuch Boats as were lett, sometimes in one place, sometimes in another, along it the shoare, where the Spaniards kept their Corps de Guards, and fiers, who were often in great amazements, calling, and running to and fro, thinking verily that wee were landing in that place or about it. And thus wee did to giue our Army thebetter, and more secret meanes to make their descent, and so to come vnlooked for on their backes , as their very way did lie , and might in truth very conveniently have beene performed. They being thus landed, wee in the Ships did all the next day looke out apace, hoping to fee our troupes come marching ouer the Hills and Plaines, that were perfect in our view : for the most part of the way that they were to come, being all alongst the Sea side, was in our fight more brim from the Ships by farre, then if wee had beene ashoare. But this good Towne of Villa Franca, had so welcomed and intertained our men., (being seated in a pleasant foyle, full of fruits, wines, and fresh victualls, and the Sellars stuffed so full of Oade and Wheat) as that our Army was content there to ingarrifon, without any further pursuit of Saint Michaels Towns, and there for fixe dayes together they lay feafting, and carrying aboard of Oade. Wheat. Salt, and other merchandife, into certaine private mens Ships that followed the Fleet, for fuch purpofes.

whilest wee all in vaine still gaped for their comming, which wee the rather thought would have bin at the last, for that in all this time, they never so much as sent word, to make vs partakers of their determination to the contrary, whereby they would be fure wee should neither participate any of their Commodities, nor fee the dilpofure of them; although twee cast many coniectures and aymed neere the marke, finding this lingring very ftrange. But, to doe right to euery man, I affure my selfe, our Generall had no benefit of these wares and commodities, being of a disposition too noble and bountifull to valiew such trifles worth his regard. For it had beene easie for him to have abounded with wealth and possessions, without following the fortune of the warres, or the hazard of the Seas, if hee had aymed at such common markes. But in this meane while, as weein the great Ships, ancored in Saint Michaels Road, there came in about the Point that lies westwards from the Towne, a small Brass man, and let fall his Ancor in the middest of 30 vs all. A little after him, wee might discerne aloose off a mightie huge Carack, bearing in with all fayles toward vs, whom thee tooke to bee the Spanish Armada. And the Brafil man confessed that hee thought the same also : for the King of Spainer men of Warre (when he makes Fleets) are compounded of the shipping of divers Nations, and therefore the more hardly to bee distinguished from ours, which was at that time compounded of English, and Holland Bottoms; befides one great Spanish Gallion, called the Saint Actem, and some other leiler Spanish Veffels that wee had taken before. Now there blew a ftiffe gale from the Land, ouer Saint Michaels Towne, in such fort, that shee must either put roome into the Sea, or fall vpon vs. For as the wind then flood, the could not run in with the Towne or Fort by no meanes, neither was it any part of their

Greedineffe lofeth his morfell.

meaning.

A Brail man.

A michtic

Carack.

The Carack ran her felfe on ground. She was fet on fire. Examples of Cades voyage.

As floone as wee had made her to bee a Carrack, wee tooke in all our Flags by a general commandement from our Reare-Admiral: and withall directions were given, that no manshould once weigh an Ancor, or shoot off a Peece, or put off a Boat, but with leave or order. All this while she still bare in with vs, with all fayles to the Boates end, when fuddenly one of the Holland Squadron(contrary to al discretion & the direction before) weighed his Ancors, hoised his top sailes, & made towards this Carack, now ready to double the Poynt that entred the Road where we lay: and when the Hollander came neere the Carack, hee prefently made two or three Shot at her. Whereupon sheediscouering vs to bee Enemies, changed her course, and at the very instant (in the view of vs al that observed it, as if shee had had the wind at her deuotion) the gale changed, & came full of the Seas: with the helpe whereof, and with the feare of falling into our hands, thee 50 tooke a resolution to runne her selfe a ground, hard under the Towne and Fort, Which done, from thence there presently came multitudes of Boats, fetching away their men and best wares, and that done, fiee was inftantly by them fet on fire in many places at once, being full of great Ordnance, as appeared by the report they made. Such is now the custome and obstinacie of all those Seafaring men under the Spanish surifdiction, as that by reason of the seuere order, set downe by the King to that effett, they will carelefty burne their Ships, and wares, if they can escape themselmes, vather then to grow to any composition to same balfe thereby. And the like was feene at Cades. by the Fleet that was ontwards bound for the Indies : who after they had entertained a parley with vs , to compound for their Ships, and all the merchandice, at a ranfome of balfe the valen : whilest they amufed us with this colourable presence, thereby they gained lines of lease of lone of their goods, and afterwards fet the 60 Shippes on fire, where they read. But this arguest has great senerate in the Soutraigne, as savery in

This Carrack was a Ship of infinite wealth, that at Saint Hellens watering as flee came from the East Indies, put ouer to Brail, and so coasted along ft the West Indies, and was fraughted with

theriches and wares both of the East and West. Wee hasted all wee could when wee saw her a ground, tottering and reeling, with those few Boats wee had left, to have entred her. But before wee could make vs readie, or come neere her, being three miles off, thee was on light fire in many places, her Ordnance thundring off apace, and too hot to bee approached, much leffe to bee entred at that time, without incustable destruction. And yet such hast was made to have prevented this mischiefe, that divers had like by overcharging Boates and Pinnaces, to to have foundred in the Seas, the Billowes going very high. And in that case was our Reare. Admirall an mong it others, who for half to this banquet tooke his Row Barge, and was fo ill able in her to indure the Seas that were rough, and went high at that time, as that I by chance feeing him fo ill hefted, & in danger was faine to clap him aboord with a good frout shipboat that I was in having made hast also to that featt as fast as I could. But in conclusion wee came all too late, for the broth was growne to hot for our supping. To behold her thus fiaming was a grieuous fight to vs. but a most wretched spectacle for the Portugalls, so to see their goods by their owne deedes and fury. to perish with fire and water in a goodly vessell, judged to bee 1800. Tunnes at the least, Shee Carack of Was a whole night, and all the next day in burning, and in beholding her, you might have feene 1800, Tungo the very shape, Cordage, Masts, and Furniture of a Ship so perfectly in fire, as no Painter could have halfe fo well refembled it with Art or Colours. And when the was cleane confumed to the water, there arose still a great smoake out of the Sea for many houres after, by reason of fome close Decks full of Spices and Sugar under water, which the fire had taken hold of.

This Tragedy ouerpast, wee then fell agains to looke out for our Army comming, but all in vaine. For if in any time, for fixe dayes together after their landing, they had come forwards from Villa Franca, the Towne of Saint Michaels, and the Carack alfo bad beene our owne, fafe without question. For if our forces had in all that time innefted them felues of the Towne (which they might have done, there being usuber Walles nor Bulwackes to hold them out) the Carack would have runne her felfe a ground. under the Towns as thee did : . . if thee had, then had thee fallen into the hand; of our Generall. and his Trowner : ar, fine had kens a Sca-board, then had free fallen into the mercy of our Fleet, which by no meanes The conta have efeat ed. But it was a leffe then as inexestable as lamentable, for that no good rea-(on could bee yeelded (as was shought) nor durft bee demanded, why fo gallant a Company, fo cafily landed for to good a purpose, frould to long linger in a listle Towne, forfatting themfelnes and the whole Army, 10 upon Fruits and Wine, to the neglecting of the fermice determined. But it was manifest, that besides their pleasure and good cheer, the great flore of Oade, Corne, and Salt, did intice some Landmen of good tredite. (who had Ships there of their owne) rather to take the pencenbie, and prinate benefit thereof, then to una

dergoe some paine and perill, for the winning of Saint Michaels Towns, for the publike good. And this was a piece of fernice very unforemately negtetted, but upon what good reason I could never learne. And I am personaded, that if his Lordship had built lefe upon some mens violent counsells and vaine conceits. bee might have done many things better, and long have lined in great prosperitie. But all his care was to content and winne unto bim, certaine Polititians and Marfballmen, whom notwithstanding (according to the custome of the world) hee found many times ungratefully to deale with him , to ferue their owner turnes, drawing birs withall into ambitious bumows, and affect ation of popularitie, which, with our Great 40 men rarely succeeds with. And very Grange it was, to see so many great fortunes lost in this one journer: but that the very Heavens did in them (like Commets) foreshow the beauty and lamentable desting, that

traced our Generall towards his end, whose bright shining felicitie was some after eclipsed, and admirably metamorphofed into ruine and destruction. Onely this comfort remained to his friends, than bee ended his life with as great resolution, pietie, and penetencie, as was possible to bee expressed in the countenance or words of a man, vitterly disorced from the world, and wholly denoted to celestial Contemplation, to the undoubted comfort of his Soule.

We from the ships looking thus still in vaine, for those that neither come nor fent vnto vs. wherby we loft all opportunitie of watering and refreshing our felues ; for we in the Walffoite, and diuers of our Conforts, had not watered tince our fetting out from Plimonth) began to refolue to goe 50 to our Generall, feeing wee could neuer heare from him in all that time. And as we were entring into this deliberation, wee might perceive the Admiralls Ship by her Flag turning out from the point of Pilla Franca: And two dayes before, many of our great Ships had left the Reare-Admirall, contrary to the Generall his order, which wee durit not breake in the Wastine, by a late causat, because it was flat contrarie to that which was appointed by a Councell, and the Generall his command. But as foone as wee had descried the Admirall (by his Flag) putting roome; our Reare-Admirall tooke his Barge, and Captaine Morgan with him, and rowed to him: and the same night sent Captaine Morgan backe againe, with directions in the Generalls name, to command all the Fleet to weigh, and to come for Villa Franca. This was no little oriefe to VI all. that had to long and diligently maited on Saint Michaels Towne, and looked to have had a better account 60 of that place, then so harely and absuptly to leave it after all these offers. And (to say the truth) it was either a große overlight, or a wilfull fault mexculuble to the State, that it was not in better fort manna. ged. For (no diubt) they would willingly have ransomed their Towns, rather then have abidden the fortune of the Warres by Sword and Fire, and wee had among it us , men of sufficient experience to deale

in fuch compositions, which (for ought I know) they might doe. Thus, with griefe and discontent we

Preparation

for returne.

Their returne.

Salls.

left Saint Michaels good Towne, the Inhabitants whereof waving their Auncients, and shooting off their Ordnance in great joy triumphed to see this vnexpected modest departure of the whole Fleet, on a fudden without any further trouble: And to mee it was ftrange to fee the Coronelle and Captaines, that a little before were to forward and violent to have landed at the Tercera, being a place to difficult to accempt, and of to great firength, to bee now to flow to come forwards to Saint Michaels Towne, that had neither Ditch nor Wall about it, they being already landed

But now approached the time of the yeere, that brings withit violent flormes, and extreme foule weather to those Ilands. In regard whereof, as also for that opportunitie was now pastof doing any more good to our selues, or damage to our Enemies; vpon the meeting of the whole Fleet before Villa Franca, a generall commandement was given, that all forts should with all freed renaire abourd their owne Ships, for the Wind and Seas began to rife too high to ride there any longer. And now our last worke, was to prouide for our returning againe into England: And therupon all the haft and preparation that could bee, was made with the helpe of the imall Pinnaces and Boates to convey all our troupes aboord. Wherein, the best fort of Commanders spared no paines nor travaile, and especially our Generall himselfe, who in his owne person was twice in very great danger of tumbing into the Seas, about the imbarking of the Souldiers, in ouercharging his own Boat with those voruely people, among it whom at such times, it is hard to keep any order or moderation. And much trouble there was (confidering the rough weather, and how the Seas rowled) to get all our Land men aboord. Besides, our Ships began to find more tickle ryding 20 in that wild Road, then wee should have done eight dayes before at Gratiofa, where wee lost the Indian Fleet by tarrying one night. But now at our departure from Villa Franca, for a farewell the Spaniards and Portugues prefented vs with a braue skirmish, which being throughly answe-Knights, made, red, the Generall there did make certaine Knights. Our Army being thus brought aboord, and many ficke men amongst them, by reason of their lauish diet ashoare, where they more weak ened themselves then the Every. This Towne also was left intire, neither fired not demolished, But whon what considerations I know not, whelfe out of gratitude for the hospitalitie, Oade, Come, and Salt, which it had alreadie yeelded : or else out of a provident regard to leave them in case to bee able to entertaine vs another time, or rather for some pettie ransome to some particular perfons that were more capable then our Generall, in vouchfafing to take any benefit whatfo- 30 euer. For fure I am, that fome reason there was, if I could light on it, wherein the Oademongers, and Corne Merchants might doe well to helpe mee, for they (I thinke) can ayme neerest to

the marke. The ninth of October, 1 597. wee fet faile from Villa Franca for England, with a faire leading winde for three or foure dayes together, and then it grew scanter and icanter, and at last starke nought and flat in our teeths, with fuch great flor nes, foule weather, and exceeding high grown Seas, as that many of our Fleet were much puzzeled in the nights in falling foule one of another, Infomuch that the Mary Rose, by meere carelefnesse of the Matter, and his Mates, had like to liane stemmed the Wast fore, if wee had not beene very carefull and diligent to avoid the sudden and emminent danger: which, yet wee escaped to narrowly, as that the Mary Rofe, with her 40 Beake head, tore away all the Gallery on the Lardboord fide of the Wastfpite. This iterme on a fudden separated all the Fleet, and wee in the Wastipite after this shocke, had fundry dangerous leakes breake out vpon vs , in such fort , as that much to doe wee had by pumping and all other meanes to keepe her aboue water, being a very new thip, but withall the weakelt built Vessell that ever Iwam in the Seas of her burden, and carrying tuch great store of huge Ordnance as shee did, most of the which wee were inforced to strike downe into hold, to ease her labouring sides that hoursly were like to flye afunder. Befides all this, wee were in fo great want of Fresh-water and drinke, as that I offered to give to one of the Victuallers of the Fleet, fixe Chefts of Su-Want of water. gar, for fixe Hog sheads of Fresh-water, and yet could not have it at any hand : Infomuch as wee were faine to begin to fet our great Stills on worke, to prouide for the worst the best wee could. 13 For if the forme had longer held in that violence, wee might have taken the choice, whether we would haue beene drenched in the Salt-water, or choaked aboord our Ship for want of fresh. For with the extreamitie of this Northeafterly florme, we were put back cleane from our course and coalt, into no little def paire. And as wee in the Waftfpite, fo were all the reft of the Fleet (as I after learned) difperfed atunder, infomuch that fearcefly two flips in all the Nauie kept company together. But at lait it pleased God, to fend vs more faire and fit windes, wherewith wee brought our felues againe into our due course, and within three or foure daves wee began to meet with one another, stragbing and ranging in the Seas. And after that, wee in the Wall pig bt chanced alto to descry our Generall, by his mayne Flag (as farre as wee could ken) wavted on onely with two little Barkes, who fixe or feuen dayes before, was attended with fourescore layle of 60 good Ships. A true type of this worlds inconflant pempe, which the winde and Seas did faithfully teach vs not to build too much vpon. And I would our noble Generall, for his owns fake and better fortune, had made that good observation thereof.

When wee had thus met our Generall, jand had hayled and faluted que another, with all the

joy that might bee, wee conferred of our course, and began to consule thereof with the adulfe of our Masters and Pylots. Wherein, ours in the Wast-spight somewhat varyed from the opinion of the Generals Nauigatours, but yet we submitted our felues, and our skill, to the wisedome and authoritie of his Ship, whose Directions wee were to follow. And withall, wee made knowne vnto his Lordship our great leakes, and scarsitie of Drinke, who told vs very Honourably, that we should want no helpe that hee could yeeld vs, and therefore he straightly charged vs to keepe his courfe, and to follow his Light, which wee did obserue, though our Master was very vnwilling thereunto, affuring himfelfe, that our Generals Matter was miftaken, and besides his course. by too much crediting the periwasions and Art of one John Danis a great Nauigator reputed,

10 who at that time fayled much of his Pilotage, and coniecture for the Sleene, to the no little hazard of the whole Fleet, as afterwards was seene. During this forenamed Storme, fundry Birds came flying into our Ships, when wee were two hundred leagues from our owne Coast. First. there fell into vs an Onle, then a Taffell, and a Falcon, one of the which wee tooke, and brought Birde. into England, then at the laft a Done lighted on our Maine-yard, which we all liked well, and tooke it as a prefage of faire weather towards, and fo (thankes bee to God) it succeeded presently after two dayes. After wee had thus met with our Generall, and being well aduanced on our way for the Sleene, and aswe conicctured not farre from the entrance of the Channell, wee began of all hands to fall a founding for ground, and the next day found it, though indeed by that founding I faw few the wifer, or the more affored of the Coalt. For it was the Banke of surer, but

20 none could fay fo, nor then fo judge it, but onely the Matter of our Ship, whose name was Broadbant, a carefull man and a right good Marriner. For in the Generals thip, they were all of a contrary opinion, and according to their Errour shaped their course, with straight commandement given to vs, and to the reft that were in his traine, to rollow his Light and course. The which we did very diligently, my felfe indeed being most in fault for it. For the Master was loath to to doe. but that I viged our dutie to the Generals commandement, and our danger in breaking it by former experience. And therefore I watched, and flood by the Helme, and Bitackle, most part of that night, to fee it performed, though with much repining of the Matter, and his Mates, against this dangerous Course as they tearme it.

This founding of ours, fo much in practice, and yet many times bringing no great certainty withall. 30 makes me now call to minde, an odde conceit and speech of a Spanish Prisoner, which the Generall game me in this Journey, but never yeelded me other Ransome then some faire promises and smooth discourses: For hee after confened or bribedbis keeper (a Captaine of a Pinnace) to whom I had committed bins in charge, and very cleanely conneyed himselfe away, without ever bidding me farewell. Howbest others found better fruites of their Prisoners, which the Generall game unto them.

This Spaniard of mine was a Gentleman, and a Souldier, but had of late geeres, traded the West Indies by may of Merchandize: With whom I one day talking and discoursing of their Voyages and Nawir ations (wherein hee was very well experienced) amongst other things bee told me, that in their Nania gation from the Indies, they fought out Spaine in a more certaine and gallant manner, then wee did England. For (faid he) wee seeke out our Coast aisst with our Eyes, by the Heavens, by the Sunne. and

40 Starres, and with the vice of Art, and Instruments, w buch seldome or never fayles. But you (laid be) that feeke for England, when you are to runne into narrow Seas, are (as I heave fay) inforced for your furest Directions (like men blindfold) to fearch under the water, and to ferape with Lead and Tallow to the bottome for Bankes, Sands, and Shelnes, as if you would rake Hell for instructions; to finde out the Channell, which you call the Sleene, and yet for all your foundings, are oftentimes mistaken. I answered him againe, indeed it was true, that our Humilitie taught vs, to goe by the ground : Whereas their Pride led them to gaze about the Clouds, and by that meanes fo dazeled their Eyes, as that they did often Sumble upon such men of Warre, that now vied as well to found Spanish Pockets, as the English Sleene. Whereat my Spaniard smiling, and shaking his Head, Said, bee could not well denie it, bauing so lately made too true experience thereof, For indeed bee was throughly rifled and ranfacks of good Short Wares,

50 before that ever bee came to my hands. These words of his I remembred, and found true upon our sonndings, and the uncertaine coniectures thereof, with varieties of opinions.

For after wee had all found ground, all that Night wee held on so precisely in following our Generals light, as that very earely in the Morning, with the first peepe of day, wee in the Wast-fright looking about, found our selves on the North-fide of Sylley. Which when with cold comfort wee had perfectly made, and perceived with all our narrow escapes in that darke Night, hard alongst the Rockes called the Billion, and his Clarkes : wee began of all hands to looke out for our comforts. And then wee diferyed our Generall and divers with him. advanced some three leagues before vs, bearing in with all Sayles towards the Coast of Wales.

The morning was very close and foggie, and the Generall steering North-east, in stead of Eaft and by North, ranne right with the Sands of the Welch Coaft, on which in that darke weather hee had stricken; and perished, if hee had held on, but a few houres longer. But on the contrary, although wee reichted not to lofe the fight of his Lanthorne, yet wee kept our felues as farre to the East as wee could, and yet wee were scarce able to double Siller, but feil close aboord it, and a little to the North of it, at the breake of day. All which when I perceived

I be later Watch being mine, and the Reare Admirai, being gone to rest) I did instantly coman the Mafter Gunner to fnoot off a great Piece to cause them to looke about, but both our ni it is, and the Matter Gunner were fo mad at me for forcing them to follow this course, as that out hardly have suffered a warning Piece to bee shot, but said, they deserved totalte the or the rowne wilfulnesse, having brought themselues and all the Fleet, cleane out of the

into this danger. And out of very rage and discontent, these men had quite forgotten all of Charitie, and would by no meanes have bestowed a shot vpon them, to alter them fi m that vnfafe courie, but that I vrged their Dutie, and inforced them to shoot, and shoot a-

o line three or foure times, one after another, much against their wills.

Whereupon we might within a little time, plainly percente our Admirall with all his Traine, to to tacke about finding their owne Errours, as afterwards they confelled. And therefore prefently they beat it up, to double the Cape of Silley, thereby to enter the Sleene, which with muchadoe they performed. But we in the Wast-fright, being now by this time frot in along it the North fide of Cornewall, almost as farre as Saint Ines, our ship being extreame weake and leakie, and our Drinke and Water come to the lait cait, at very bare allowance, wee durst not againe put to the Seas in these wants, and in a Vessell so ill able to beat it vp against the winde, to double againe the Point of Siller, whereby to recouer the Sleene. And therefore food along it the Coaft. and that night anchored before Saint Ines, where wee found fundry Spanish Carauels, and Flee-boates of the Spanil Fleet, which was fet out under the Adelantado, to have incountred vs at our returne from the Ilands, but were all dispersed and toffed with the same Storme, that before had scattered 20 vs, which fell our very happily. For if wee had met, wee must have tryed the Battell, chiefely by Boording, or elfe trufted to our Sayles, for that our best and greatest Ordnance (for the ease of our Ships in these stormes) were stricken downe under hold. So that wee should have found great disaduantage, to have incountred with a Nauie, comming strong and fresh from the Maine, and wee tired, and feattered a funder, with a long and painfull Voyage. Herein was Gods fauour and mercy mightily shewed towards all sides : For by this Storme, which so furiously for the time afflicted vs, were wee, and that Spanish Fleet under the Adelantado seuered, and kept from incountring, which had coft much blood, and mischiese; and to say a truth, in all likelihood, the worst might have fallen to our shares.

For when wee had left the Hands and were once croffe fayled for England. I observed, that be- 20 fore the Storme, divers of our best Ships, made all the haste they could homewards, never following nor attending the Admirals course, nor light. Which is an Errour too much vied amongst vs . and very diforderly and dangerous; as would have beene well found, if the Adelantado had then met with any of those straglers, or with the Admirall himselfe homewards bound, so sten

derly accompanied.

Diforderly

hafte home-

Death of Sir

Lord Bargh.

Which manner of disorder and scattering, in the Conduct of a Royall Nauie, especially in so long a Voyage, is very fit to bee ftraightly reformed.

These Spanish Flee-boates and Carauels, had made many landings by stealth, on that side of Cornewall, and put the Countrey in great frights, and amazements : especially, vpon the report of a great Fleet, that was comming after them for England. Whereupon our Reere Admirall from 40 before the Saint Iner, left the Seas, and went a Land, to take some order for the Countrey of Cornewall, whereof hee was then her Maiesties Lieutenant, seeing it then in much amazement and feare, and so meant to goe over land to Planouth, there to meet with our Generall.

From the Road of Saint Ines, the next morning, wee in the Walt-fright fet fayle for Kingroad, and met with fuch foule weather, as that ouer against the flat Holmes, shee brake againe her Maine yard, which was before broken, and new fished in the beginning of this Voyage. But at last, with much adoe wee brought her about, to Kingroad, and within a few dayes after moored her fafe in Hungroad; where I tooke speedie order for the paying, and discharging of her

men, at the Spaniards cost, and also for the repayring of her decayes. By this time wee also had newes, that our Admirall and the rest of our Fleet, were safely met, 50 and arrived at Plimouth. And at the same instant also wee had intelligence, by a small man of Brafill, but newly come from Corke in Ireland, that Sir Iohn Norris Pretident of Munfter, and

the Lord Bureh Deputie of Ireland, were both lately decessed.

Of which two men, her Maiestie and the Realme had no small losse, being both Martiall men of as great worth, and feruice, as England bred in many yeeres before. And although it be no part of this matter to speake of them, yet their Deathes, being divulged to vs at the same time, cannot be thought write, or voworthy (by the way) heere to be remembred and lamented.

After I had thus taken order with the Officers of the Ship at Briffoll, I received Letters from the Lord Treaturer, and the Lord Admirall, for the accomplishing of that, which I had already (out of due confideration) gone in hand withall : I meane the discharging and paying of the 60 Marriners and Souldiers, being to the number of foure hundred men, which would have growne toa great, and needleffe expense, to have kept them in pay and victuals untill fuch time as I could haue fent vnto the Court, to receiue directions backe againe for the fame. And therefore did first take up monies upon credit, and then by the Drum make knowne in Eriston, that there

CHAP.14.8.2. Thrift the fuell of Magnificence, Privat gaines, publike Horfleach. 1969

were Sugars. Brailwood, and Fernanbuck aboord o r Ships, which I would prefenely make fale of, to those that would give most for it, and not merchand it vinder hand, hor in feerer, to the premdice and decenting of her Maieffie. And therefore with the knowledge and admice of the Mafter, the Purfer, and Boatiwaine of the Ship, and the Cuftomer, and Searcher of Brillow, I landed those Wares in fate Cellers, and fold them to the best Chapmen in publique, testified under the hands of their Officers of the Citie, and of the Ship, for my discharge in that behalie, and made thereof five hundre's pounds. The which fumme I delivered to one Asken then Puffer of the Wast-forght, to the end that hee by his Booke might pay the Marriners, and the Souldiers by the Powle, as a care of mine tor those poore-men vnder my Charge, which was duely performed.

The which I have beene the more precise to remember and notifie, for that I took e no finall paines and care . in getting those Sugars, and Brafill wood abourd us, out of a torne Brafill war, that was ready to founder in the Seat before Saint Michaels, and abandoned to any that would adventure to goe absord her, to feish away the lading. Which bufineffe (in that vacant time that the Armie lay at Villa Franca, and we before S. Michaels Towne) I put my felfe, and my Marriners onto. And I had not fo much paines and travell in the getting, as trouble and vex ation afterwards to preferie it, whilest it was abourd, when we came to Kingroad, from the purloyning and flealing of the Martiners, and Officers of the Ship. And to fay no more but a truth, I dare thus much anouch, and infifie, that of there had beene in Come other of her Maiesties thips the like regard for these goods that were gotten, and of the Prizes taben in this lourner, and as faithfully answered as were these, that then for all the crosses and errours, that 20 had bappened, it bad fully returned to ber Maiestie, the double value of all the Charges, she had beene as for this Voyage. But it was frange to jee, what careleffe courfes were held in all fuch all sons. as were let out by the State, and what poore returnes were made agains into the Exchequer. And therefore more Grange, that the Prince could subsist so often to fet out, fuch chargeable Voyages, without any manner of getting, more then to particuler perfons. For fo fell it out before in the Indian Voyage, when Sancto Domingo, and Cartagena were taken, and facte by Sir Francis Drake, and when Cades in Spaine was loffe in many Surprised, and facht by the Englin Armie, where was infinite wealth. But shat of Lisbons in Portu- Expeditions. gall, undertaken by Sir Iohn Nottis, where the Suburbes did so abound with Merchandize and Spicerie, being wholly at the mercy and disposition of our Armie, was to be excused; for that our Ships kept not promise with bim, in comming up the River, that should have both affisted the land Armie with Muni-20 tion and Victuals, and also carried away those Spiceries and rich Merchandize : wherem the Sea-men

were greatly wanting, and taxed by the generall voyce. But in this Voyage, wee all faw and mem, that there were besides Braill men, three good Prizes taken that came from the Hauana, laden with Cochrwella, and other rich Merchandize, besides the Silver, Gold, Pearle, Cinet, Mushe, Amber-greece, which was amongst the Passengers. And those three Prizes (whereofone was about 400. Tunnes, by the report of those Merchants that same in them) were faid, and valued to bee richly worth about four bundred shouland Duckets. At the taking of them I flood in our Gallerie in the Walt fpight, with the Reere Admirall, and wee halled and called unto some, to inquire of their lading and Merchandize, and from what places they came, whereby wee learned, that they were come from the Hauana, very rich, and at the least to the value abone faid, Wherenpon our Reere Admiral faid unto me in private, that although wee an Thould be little the better for these rich Prizes, yet he was beartily glad for our General's sake : because

they would in good fort que contentment to ber Maieffie, fo that there should bee no repining against the poore Lord, for the expense of the Voyage, And for my better facisfaction in the value of them, I had canfed mine owne Prisoner to give me notice of the Ships, wherein hee had Adnentures, and according to the Rates thereof let downe upon his owne knowledge; those three Ships could not be so little worth, as they all had formerly affirmed. Now if wee doe but looke into the bufbandrie and promidence of former Ages. and of the mightiest Empire, and best governed State that over was, wee foul plainely fee, that they ever scoke a more strict and suft account of the benefit of their gettings and Victories. And that it was an effeciall regard of the Roman Confuls, and Generals, at their returne from a profeerous Warre, to render a. plentifull gaine into the publique Treasurie, which made their State still able to subsist in their great altions. And many times their greatest and worthiest Captaines were deepely called in question, for imbele-

St. ling any part of fuch gettings, as amongst others, was that famous Scipio, furnamed Africanus, profecuted in that kinde by the Petil j, notwithstanding bu many great services to the Common wealth. But 1 3 1 3 what became of all these our gettings God knowes. Onely I beare, that there was a Composition made afterwards with her Maiestie for the Cochynella, and other Merchandize, not to a third part of that it was worth. For neither that, nor yet any of the other riches, could truely come to light or publique knowledge. because they were never faithfully certified under the hands and testimonies of sufficient Officers, when they were first taken : nor any of that which was preserved fold when wee came home , but onely to the Buyers aduantage. And yet in Conclusion, they that had fo played the wife Stewards, in fo providing for themselves, and their followers, had all the grace and gaine, from those that had more carefully and 60 suftly intended the publique Service. But this generall neglect of truth and merit throughout the world is

the came, that to few doe apply to fillow those sincere and unprofitable courses : especially, seeing how many doe daily, by fraud and flatterie, finde horter and smoother wayes to Honours, wealth, and preferment : Enen beyond all measure and expectation.

LIBLIO

VVE have now compassed the World in the Courses of so many Planets, every of which had a peculiar wandering, and yet none erring from the publike benefit of the Vniuerse. And as in Geometricall compasses one stoocies to fixed in the Centre, whiles the other mooveth in the Circumsterence, so is it with Parches and his Pilgrimes, in this Geographicall compassing: they have their owne motions, but ordered in this Circumsterence, from, for, and by him which abideth at home in his Centre, and sever travelled two hundred miles from Thaxted in Essex (lately adorned and augmented with Franchises by his Maiestie) where hee was borne. All their lines tend to this Centre, and this Centre to the Basis and Ground thereof, that is to his Countrey, to the honour and benefit whereof, he and all his are due. All Nations dance in this Round to doe the English Service, and English Travellers here enioy the Mayne, others the By, to attend, and with their Travels to perfect the English, at less the knowledge of the World to the 20 English.

The Map of England.



CHAP.14.\$.2. The Conclusion of the Worke.

Yea, in this English Centre also I have chosen the Centre of that Centre, the Renowmed Name of Queene Elizabeth, to which, because Mortalitie hath deprined vs of Her Person, wee have added that of King I Ames, the All that is lest vs of Queene Elizabeth, and more then that will in further perfection of Sexe and Arts. With those aussicious Names, as the saire Starres in the Constellations of both Poles, our Pilgrimes begaine their Progresse; by the Light of those two Eyes of Great Britiains, they have taken view of the World, and therefore heere wee end in our Pilgrimage with 10 those two ausspicious Names.

His Maiestie first (for Brute is uncertaine) hathcombined a Trinitie of Kingdomes into an Vnitie, Fecit est in gentem warm, & made the Ocean the Wall to his Inheritance, hath rooted out the wonted barbarisme of Borderers, of Scottish Fewds, of English Duells, of trish Bogges; hath confirmed and settled those cruder and more indigested beginnings of our prospertite; shath enioyed sourraignet longer then cuer did any of Eritaines Sourraignes (and still of till may we long long enioy him) hath given somanisod securitie against the extreamest and most farall rigor, both in number, weight and worth of Royall pledges.

The Map of Great Brittaine and Ireland.



He is beyond comparison compared with others, a meere transcendent; beyond all his Predecessors, Princes of this Realme; beyond the neighbouring Princes of his own times, beyond the conceits of subjects dazled with such brightness Beyond out victorious Debora not in sex alone, but as Peace is more excellent them War, and Salomon

1.52m.10.

1072

Salomon then David, in this also that He is, and we enjoy his present Sunshine : in regard of posteritie not onely sowing thereto the fruit of his bodie, but of his learned mind, like a Salomon indeed by voluminous Writings, and not (which is more viefuall to Princes, with apophthegme-flashes, recorded by others like Saul sometime among the Prophets; a Miracle and Oracle both, this in polemicall. politicall, problematicall, apocalypticall, positive Theology, and Bookes of devotion also; that, in that his Royall body hath had the honour not to be polluted with women; aboue men, aboue Salemon. And as wee haue trauelled abroad that to wee may bring forraine rarities home, wee find no greater raritie abroad or at home then his Maiestie, the Father of the Clergie, the raiser of so many Families to honour, and of honours to Families; whose bountie and elemencie none deny, (let others beware least they perhaps have enilleyes, because his is good) so honoured of his Subjects with awfull love, with louing awe, that himselfe hath professed no King herein his superiour : and we can, and all History will professe with vs. that England neuer enjoyed better daies then under her deceased Mother, and the present Pater Patria, who hath secured Britaine in peace and prosperitie, whiles all Christian Kingdomes haue beene shaken with warres: and that which alone hath escaped the Lions, hath beene bitten by the Adder, the Spanish Dominions being coasted, braued, spoiled of thousands of their people, besides wealth and security. by the basest of enemies, the Algier Pirates. Thus at home doth Great Britain enion this Gem of Goodnes, the best part of the Ring of the worlds Greatnes: & abroad. we fee that as Gods Steward to others also, His Maiestie hath ballanced the neerer World by his prudence, by inflice of commerce visited the remoter, by trueft fortirude without wrong to any man conquered the furthest North, and by justell temperance disposed the overflowing numbers of his Subjects, not in Intrusions and Inuasions of weaker Neighbours, but in the spacious American Regions, 20 (some thinly, others not all inhabited) to breed New Britaines in another World. We have given Voyages thorow this Booke, and being now returned home and fixed on fo illustrious a Name, I meane to trauell no more, here I hang vp my Pilgrims weeds ; here I fixe my Tabernacle, it is good to bee here : wee have brought all the World to England, England it selfe to the greatest of her Soueraignes. King IANES.

But yet the mention of his Malesties Plantations, makes me grarefully to mention his gracious care of the same, even since the former Virginian Relations were printed. I then left Virginia with some griefe and sorrow, because of her 4 distracted Children and Fathers, the divisions and mutuall distrasts of the Company here and Planters there, sighing to God for them, who hath put in his Maiesties heart to compassionate these his Subiects, and having appointed the Gouerament to be according to a Commission in that Case directed, hath to surther Virginias gaine been content to suffer the loss of many thousands yeerly in his Royalle Customes arising out of Tobacco (so I have heard delivered in open Court) that so only that of the New Plantations may be even dible till the Colonie may re-

couer greater strength.

His Maiethie is also pleased to send a Running Armie of Souldiers to scoure the P.

Countrey of the vaneighbourly malicious Naturalls; and to secure the planters from their prime ambushments. For openly they dare not attempt, but lurking in secret places attend aduantages. I feare not but so bright a Sunshine will quickly produce blessed effects.

Do their undertakers for three yeeres Tobacco, I luft not to speake, because I wish, and euen from that vindertaking, shortly expect better commodities from themee then Tobacco. I cannot but magnifie His Maiesties care, and manifest that also of the Hostofable Lords of the Councel, who after diligent search of Virginian Assaires the last yetre 1022 appointed Captaine John Harney, Master John Porty, Master Ab abian Perssey, Master Samuel wheathers to search further into the disabesand possible remedies of that plantations. In Februarie and Acareb last a general

rall Affembly was fummoned, and questions propounded to Sir Francis Wiat Gonernour and the faid Affembly: First, what places in the Countrey were best and most proper to be fortified or maintayned both against Indians or other Enemies. Secondly, concerning the prefent flate of the Colonie in reference to the Sauages. Thirdly, touching the hopes really to be conceived of the Plantation, and fourthby roughing the Meanes thereunto, &c. Their answere I know not whether I may publish in other things: In this one I presume, for better confirmation of what hath beene faid before to incite and confirme Mens affections to Virginia: namely to their answere to the third, subscribed (as the rest) by about thirty chiefe mens hands. We hold it to be one of the goodliest parts of the Earth, abounding with Nanigable rivers full of varietie of Fish and Fowle; falling from high and steepe Mountaines, which by generall relation of the Indians are rich with Mines of Gold, Siluer, and Copper: another Sea lying within fixe dayes journey beyond them, into which other Rivers descend. The soile fruitfull and apt to produce the best forts of commodities, replenished with many Trees for severall vses, Gums, Dves, Earths and Simples of admirable vertues; Vines and Mulberry Trees growing wild in great quantities; the Woods full of Deare, Turkies, and other Beafts and 20 Birds, Sir Thomas Gates and Sir Thomas Dales reports to the Company, concerning those praises were in no part hyperbolicall, nor any Countrey more worthy of a Princes care and supportance. Other reports concerning the healthfulnesse of the aire (especially where the ground is cleered of woods) and other needfull prouisions of the plantation in numbers of Men and Armes (which some had hyperbolically diffraced) and in all other necessaries, seeing the late massacre bath not permitred it better. I am glad & rejoyce that it is no worfe, and hope and pray for the fortunate increase thereof daily. I rejoyce also to heare (by one lately returned thence, Master Morell a Minister and man of credit) that the affaires of New England are There is re3° thriuing and hopefull, which two Colonies of Virginia and New England (with all port also of an their Neighbours) God make as Rachel and Leah , which two did build the house of English Colo-Israel, that they may multiply into thousands, and there in large the Israel of God, Northin Guieand the Churches Catholike confines, doing worthily in America, and being fa- 74 full contin mous in Great Britaine. These, with the rest of his Maiesties Dominions, and his muing. neerest and deerest possession, Prince Charles his Highness, the Count Palatine, Ruth 4:11.

the Lady Elizabeth (more shining, more pure in her stery trialls, and like the pressed palme, and her Royall Godmother, spreading her boughes the more by greater weight) with the sweet and princely Fruits of her wombe, still multiplied (like the 1/satists vnder the Crosse) God preserve and prosper vnto the Maiesty of our Dread Soueraigne, the mighty Defender of the True Faith,

KINGIA MESS

Amen O AMEN.

The end of the tenth Booke.

FINIS.

60



ALPHABETICALL TABLE OF THE PRINCIPALL

things contained in the fiue Bookes of the fourth Part of Purchas his Pilgrimes.

Ays a Pronince in Florida, 1553 Abayia formozo, a
Harbour in Brafile,
where is found great fore of Ambor preice, Coral, Brafil-wood, Filb. coc. Abaufango Retambuero a great mountaine in Brafile. Abaufanga, the name of a valiant Aquatorke, a place fituate in the Camball, Abermot, a great Lord of Mawoo-Aboro la langerous Sands & clifts in the West-Indies betweene the Cape and Spirito Santo, 1222 Abraham Cock an Englishman maried in America. Abrioio great Shoalds in the Latitude of 21 and 22 Degrees from Hif saniola mestward, 1834 Acara a towne in Peru, Acacoustomed a River in Mawoofhen, Acapulea, the lituation and description thereof, 1418.1446.1462 Acarewanas, Indian Kings & Lords so called, Acari, a Towne, where is made the best and greatest store of wine in all Peru. Accomack, a River in Virginia, Acela, a Tonne in Florida, 1531 Acheie, a Tonnein Florida, 1536 Achneres, a certaine people fo called: their natures, babitations, fashions, and commodities, Acle, a Gulph fo called, Acoma, a Towne of Good Indians, she passage to which is by stayres I bewen out of around, 1561, 1562 Acuco, a Pronince in America,

Alaqua, a riner in Brasile, the depth 1446 1874 1244

Acus, a Province in America, 1560 Acuti, a beaft of Brafile, like a Adams Tree in Brafile. L. Admirall of England his deferred commendations. Adultery, how punished by the Indians, 1159.by the Æthiopians, 1234. by the Guianians, 1272

Aquacay, a Pronince in Florida, Coast of China on the North, 1413 Age renerenced among the Savages,

Ague, a speciall medicine for the Aio, an Iland in Orenoco. 1248 Aire causing swelling in the legges,

Alimama, a Town in Florida, 1545 sallcatrace a ranenous Sea-fowle de-Scribed. Alegranca, one of the most northerly Ilands of the Canaries, 1155.the inhabitants and commodities ther-

thereof, and how passed, 1239

S'. Alexio an Hand described. 1238 Alexandro Vrtino bis relations of Terra Firma, and Peru, 1418,

Alexander.viz, Sir William Alexander Knight, his patent for the Plantation of Nous Scotis,

Alfonso Gabrero his comming to the riner of Plate, Algernoone-Fort in Virginia kept by Captaine Dauics, 1748 All Nesico, a tree in Brasil very precious and rich, good against bruifes, 1229

Allen the Cardinall promifeth the Crowne of England to the Duke | tweene the Spiniards and Portin-

Alo, a hinde of drinke weed by the Spamards in the West Indies, like Braggat, made of hot spices, 1174 Altamaca-towne. Aluarez Nunnez, made Generall of the Spaniards in Brafile, his men morable explires, etc. 1256, 85 lequ. His hip-wracke, land-trawell, and famine , ibid. His dif-

respect among his souldiers, 1357. fedition among his men, 1359. His dissembled sicknesse and trecherous cruelty toward the Indians. 1360. Hee is captinated and fent into Spaine, and the differtion enfumg ibid Vide Nunnez. Arraie, a towne in Florida, 1592

Amam Buquano, two Ilands in Brafile. Amapajo Riucr. 1248 Amana Riser, Amariocapana vallies, and thein-

habitants thereof, Amazons country, 1559, 1218. The names of all the Rivers and Nations betweene it and the Brabilles, 1286. The description of their nature, country, customes. and commodities at large,

Amazon women, their falbious, and countrie, 1358. Vide Women. Amber, how called by the Indians,

Ambergreece where found, 1224, 1237,1240,1313,1377, 1796 Ambition among Sauages, 1212 Ambros, abeaft in Sthiopia,

Ambush of the Caribes, Amecaxo, Indians of Brat le, 1210 Amichas-towne in the river Maiwin, America, 1221. How divided be-

gals, 1435. The frife about it, Americaes strange beasts, plants, etc. 1325, 1326. & lequ. Strange Birds, 1329, 1330. Bees and Butterflies, ibid. The ener of the Americans, 1320. Americaesmedicinable plants, and venemous, 1330. With leaves of inexedible bioneffe, 1 3 22. The canfe of their warres, 1 3 33. Their irreconciliation with their aduer aries ibid. Their affemblies, weapons, skill, archery, Bratagems, their clamorous ficraenesse, captimes, 1335,1336, vid. Indians and

Anato, aberry or cod wherewith the Indians paint. Anapermia a riner, how fituate,

Brafilians.

Anaquia, fanages fo called, 1200 Ancica, aplace in Affrica, 1234 The inhabitants thereof, the Stubbornest under the Sunne ; most blacke of any, their religion, concubines, countrie, and commodities , they are right under the line,

Anchas, a place in the Indies, 1248. certaine Moores (o called, 1250 Angola, a place in Ethiopia, 1212 The inhabitants, markets, lawes. King pompe et rites of obey fance. controuersies, &c. 1333. Their Religion, ibid. Description of the Country, their flanery to the Portingals, their coloured cleathes. orestelt disorace, their feeding & lodging, 1233, 1234. their manner of taking Elephants, their coleblacke colour, frature, punishment of adultery, circumcision, how eafilt their country may bee taken from the Portingals, 1234. reerly shipped from it 28000 slaves,

Anhelim, Sauages in the Maine of Brafile, Anchors that are unferniceable, how mended without iron, 1390 Angra, the chiefe towne of Tercera, one of the Azores, the description and forisfication thereof, 1668.

Anima, a bird in Brafile, that hath on his beake a medicinable horne. Anneda, a tree very foueraigne against the fourty, ...

Amacs Hill the firmation of it, 1242 S. Annes Iland. Anoixi, a Towne in Florida, their habitants whereof were taken by 232

the Spaniards. Ant-Bearc, a beaft with a nofe of a yard long, deceiving Ants with putting forth his tongue, 1214 It is also called Tamandros, 1216,

Ante a place in Florida the commodicies thereof. 1401.1104 Anteperistate, and the effects there-S. Anthonie, a garifon towne of the

Spaniards in Florida. St. Antony Ralife forced to returne for England,

S: Antonio, a Riner, 1223. the de. Cription.commodities.c. 1220 Antis, a Prousace neere Peru, whose inhabitants worshipped Trores Capt. Argals voyage and successe. and great Snakes of 25 and 20 foot long, and harmleffe, 1457

Apalachen aplace supposed very well Stored with gold in Florida, 1 col The chiefe towne thereof described, their manner of building, and fortification, their commodities of beasts, fowles, and plants: a geographical description of their countrie, their allault of the Spaniards. 1502,1503

Apamatica, a country in Virginia. Apamatucke-river. Apanawaspek, a great river in Mawooshen, lying West and by

South of Ramatioc, Apanmenfeck, a oreat river in Mawooshen. ibid. Apes with beards and mustachoes.

Apetupa, certaine Indians fo called,

Apigapigtanga, certaine (anages (o 1298 called in Brafile. Aponig, a great river not far from

Aponik, Aponik, a great river in Mawooibid. Appilham, a towne on the river A-

Apples of America, 1332 Apples at Angola and Ananas, realant and wholesome but esting iron like Aqua-fortis, 1243. Apoles in Guiana caufing fleepe to death,

Aquirini Indiane. Aquiguira-Brafilians, Aquixo, a great Lord in Florida,

Aracawa River, 1251. The commodities and inhabitants thereabout. 1251,1263 Aracuaiati, certaine Indian sanages,

1550 | Araomi, an Ilandin Orenoco, 1248 Ararape, certaine Brasilian inhabitants. Arawagatos, certaine Indians neere Orenoco.

Arbadaos Indians , their hungry Archers, very expert and frome,

1502. Archers that kill birds flying, fishes swimming beafts run-

Archers-hope, a point of land in Virginia fo called, 1688. Archers relation of a Fleet fent to Virginia. 1733,1734 Arecias, certaine clifts in Brafile fo called.

1758, & leg His relation of bis acts in Virginia,anno 1612. bis getting flore of corne for the plantation, 1764, 1765. His taking prisoner Powhatons daughter, and freeing Englishmen, 1765. his returne, ibid. His valour in displating the Frech, 1768, 1808

Arrada furnished equinst the Enelift in the West Indies, their fight, 1398, & leq. Anarmada prepared against the Lord Howard. Admiral of her Maiefties flees at the Azeres.

Arrow running in at the mouth i a man, and comming out at his poale, yet the man faued, 1206. Arrowes fine or fixe in one body escaping, ibid. One and swenty arrowes in one man that lized after 4 houres, 1219. A hundred arrowes in two men before they fell, 1256. Arrowes of Indians that runne through a Target Piftoll. proofe.

Atrowhotacks, certaine Indians of Virginia, having but 30 fighting

St. Arthur Gorge, his relation of a voyage to the Iles of Azores,

Articles offered to Port Ricco-men by the Earle of Cumberland, 1163. And receined. 1164 Articles propounded by Mr. More to the Company planted in the Bermudas to bee subscribed to generally.

Arraroopana, an entrance into the riner Orenoce. Armes ofed by the Indian:, 1261 Aruba Hand described, 1146, 1246 Aruburguary, a town of the Epcuremii in the indies, Arwarcas, certaine Indians fo called that dwell in the Wyapoco, 1253 Allapana, the first Hand in Oreno-£ 1348 Allaccona, a Pronince in Guiana, 128c Allawais, certaine Indians inhabiting the Plaines of Samia, #148 Afhamahaga, a riner in Mawoothen west ward from Sagodok,

Affhaw atown on the riner Aponeg in Mawooshen. Alpiner a Gonernor in Nauffee v. der the great Maffafore, his good entertainment of our English for-

Affumotion, a place erelled by the Speciards in the West Indies.

Afticon, a preat Lord in Marros-Atabalipa Prince of Peru craftily taken by the Spaniards, and after-

wards perfidionfly flaine, 1445,1452,1490 1491 Atacames Bay, the situation there-

Atacama, a towne in Peru. 1443 Athul, a pleasant Country neere the River Orenoce. 1248

Atuhualpa, or Atabalipa, Emperor of Peru, his warres with his brother, bis victory crueltie, &c. 1483,1484,1485

Ataios-Indians, Atrizco, a place fine leagues from Mixico. Attoca-Riner. 1248

Atturari, certaine inhabitants of the West Indies. Anatalii, Birsts poffeffing and vexing the inhabitants of West India,

Auauares, certaine Indians fo called,

Aubri a French Prieft, loft in New France, and after many dayes found againe, being almost starued, all his food being a fruit worfe then wild cherries.

Audacity of the English Admirall in the voyage to the Azores, 1943 Augurari Brafilians, 1299

Autiamque a Prouince in Florida described, with the commodities thereof. 1550, 1551

Axa a place in America, Aximocuntla, a place in New Spaine,

Azores Ilands, their number and nomination in particular, why called Azores, and why the Flemmish Ilands, 1667, 1668. Azores Iles situated in the Atlanticke and Westerne Oceans, betweene

37 and 40 Degrees, Toy2. the inhabitant Personnall bate the Spanisords, and moved bee freed from them if they muchs full with a Conernour that could protect chem from the Spaniand. 1042 Azzathan a Province neere New-Spaine. 2559 Avard. Indian wood for alled. 12 c1 Aver, a difeafe in Tercera. 1671 Avers Indians, them mature and commodities described 1251

Ayreay a Towne in Blotida, salled by the Spaniards The towne of reliefe : the commodities and de-: ferincion thereof.

B Agres, a very frange Fiftin Bahia a Towne in the West-Indies neere the Line. Baldinia, his death by a cup of mel-

ten Gold which the Indian forced him to drinke, faying, Now glut thy felfe with gold. Baldinia, a places name neere the

Sonth-fea. 1291. Baldiusa Port Balparizo, a place in America.

Ballamum, of three fores in Tuppan Batic neere Bratile, white red of blacke, all very odorsferous. 1189 Bancke in the New-found Lund knowne by Mariners to beencere by the teltimony of Birds, 1628.

The description of it, and the fifting there. Banner of a Spanish Ship, bung up in one of the Churches of Leyden, in token of triumph, Buptiline of Spaniards leaneth no character in the Indians, 1323

Baptiline forbidden by the Deutli to the Sanages. Baratta, a delicate perfume, and admirable in curing greene wounds,

Barbudos Iland, the description and commodities thereof, 1255, 1256 Ba.ede, an Indian towne, 1364 Bareras Mermethues bilein Parer-1237

Capt. Barker of Bristomes naniga-2 180 Capt. Baiker flaine in Brafile, 1194 Backley, viz. Sir John Backley his noble resolution, ambition and conrage,

Baroti, an India towne, Barrenneile of women bow diffelled by the Indians, Bartennis Indian inhabitants, 1349

Bartholomew de las Cafas his difa contrie of Spanish cruelties in the Indies, 1560 & 1cm his disputrains with Dollar Sepulueda concerning the fame point, 1631, Same Bartholmew Valley in New Bifcany, Balcherepos Indians, 1147

Raferielle of the Spaniards in refufing the Earle of Effex his chal-Balle, great plenty fummer and wintertakenat Mattachieft. 1850 Baffimento Ilends A Bath temperately hos in Dorni-

mica 118 A Bath coring diners difeafes, 1281, 1282.Bit es borling meat, Batifcan River in Canada, 1612 Battell of Sauages, 1218, 1224, 1272,1272,1273, 1348. Bat-

tell of Sanages with Spaniards. 1260.1261 Batts very oreat and noxious, 1284 Baximere a place fertile with fine

Bay of Cods in Canada. Bay of heate.

Bay : , a towne in Brafile, 1142.

Bayama, a Gulfe in the Weft Indies, Bayamond, a riner in Port-Ricco,

Bayas de Sant Antonio, fands en the coufts of Brafile, Bayfhas de Ambrobiio, certaine clifes to called

Beares tome taught by Sanages in Read of Ladders to cary the clima bers up on trees, Beares that from 14 Leagues from

the Continent to feed on Birds,

Beafts with armed scales repelling Iron in America. A Beatt called Hay that lineth upon haire.

A Beat with a monstrous snout, Beafts hidrouffrhowling. Beafts that carie their young ones in

abag under their belly, 1501. A beafts hide of ftrange forms and

Beds of what kind used among the Sanaves. Beefe how kept in the Ilands of M >na and Sauona Sec.

Beenes infinitely plentiful, 1171. 1421 Bees without Stings,

Belle a voire, a river of Florida. discourred by the French, 1603 8222 Z Belligods

Belligods. 1202 Bengulain Afirica. 1234 Saim Bent, an Ilond in Brafile, Bermuda plantation distrest by Rats in infinite number, 1796. They denouring their fruits, bid. The

weaknesse and mortality succeeding, bid. & 1797. The predi-Elien thereof portended by Ranens, 1787. Bermudas Plantation under the gonernment of Maffer.
Moore, ibid. Vnder Captage
Tucker, ibid. Its growth in henefit and commodities, 1798. Its gouernm ni by Captaine Kendall and Captaine Birler, ibid, Lis Forts built by Mafter Moore, 1802. Its government by a Tilumuirate, ibid. A Church built. much Supplies of all necessions, b. Bernudas plantation-affaires under divers Go ernours, and the fortification therof at large, 1804 180c.1811. Be muda impregsability, 1822. Englands naturall and nationall right to plant in

Bermudas. Be muda Ilands infamous for ftorms and thunder their fituation 1 160. Called the Deui's Ilands, 1737; tade, circuit, and latitude, leafons and comate, 1738 Pearlefilling there ibid. The dan er of armall thisher by figs their foile, mant of ve emons beafts fruits. Cedars, 1739. Palmes there, and their commodities: trees, Silkewormer, ibid The reason why they were not formerly is habited. ibid. Their want of fre o mater, fish erest store, m. hing of falt there . 1740 The whilefomneste of the filh, and its can e: flore of Whales Fowles ibid Wild Hoos and Tortoiles, 1741. Bermudas liked by Sir Thomas Gares, and other Mariners, and preferred before Virginia, 1745. Thereligiens orders in Bermudas under the feid Gouernour, 1746. Bermudas poffession taken, ther folemmittes, Preaching, Admini-Bration of the Sacraments, mariagerites, o.c. 1746. Bermudas. croffe erected by Sir Thomas Gast in memorial of his delines rie, the infeription, 1747. Bermudas plantation by the English. 1793, 1794. Articles proposed to

the plantationers, 1796. Bermu-

das fore of Ambergreece, 1796.

Bermandas geographically descri-

bed. 1908. Thefoile, ibid With other commodities at large 1200. 1800. L'Sta Another desmissison of ses lanoral excollencies.

Bermuda Comen Verginia, 2767. 1768 Franke mere Berriss making drinke, of a referi-Eine obermion. Berria a River, 1306 Bener-skins wery plentifull in Car nada and New England 2002 Beuers berm by Sanages, 1644 Biarataca, & beaft in Brafile that

and doors, Bielaie a nation neere the River Parana in the W & Indies, 1264 B grorgia, Inguary of Brafile . 1 2 00 Bird-land, one of the Virgin Hands in the West Indies. Birds incredibly plentifull there,

killerb with his finching friell men

Birds ftransein Brafile, 1305, 1306 Bi ds that have two generations. that dance, that found like hele. that have three skins, that have hornes, ibid. Birds that bring tidings of thits arrivall, whole fat is good for loofeneffe, birds that die and line againe : their fenerall names; 1316,1317. B ds in Americavery delicate and olittering, their natures, names, and diuerfines, 1 329. A bird of amost monstrous bill, 1220. A bird no bigger then a Drone Bee , that makes most harmonious melody, 1330. Birds beleened by the Barbarians to bee fent from their friends with newes, 1330. Birds like Snipes that discover dancerous sheales, 1374. Birds taken with booke and line, 1:82. Their a feripiion, ibid. Bords worthinped as gods. Birds frangely taken in the Bermu-

das, by men yelling, and howling, Biscaines, a sanage people inhabi-

ting neere Grand Bay on the worth of New-found Land. Biscouers ve to fight well, 1150 Bishop of Casco taken prisoner by the English at Cadiz; he is fet at liberty without ransome, 1933 Bishop and his Clerkes, certaine Rockes on the north fide of Siller so called.

Blanches Bar. Blancke, a place whither the French Biscaines, and Portugals recreiv repaire for Fish, neere the South Cape of New-found Land, 1886 Boyners, a place in the Indies, 1246

Blacke Dinace funke, 1167 Blacke-Rocke, a place veereis filled by stares or foure bundred savie of Spaniarde Blanco Vland Blafus, a Frier of she Order of Francitens of Simila, being in great extremity through the Ranish bondage of the Spaniards, was releened by the Sanager of the Ile of. Dominica. 1842 A Blazing far in the sours i soo. Ouer Terceta, 1678. Another

oner England Arme 1606, pare Bloody filx rife, and the causes Blew-be de welfold for two or three handred bufhels of corne, 1710 Bores in Bragle that bane their manels on their backes, by the fens of which the Dogs hunt and de-

lirey thome Boates of trange forme and fastion. 140 + B ares onely of hollowed trees by the Indians of New France.

A Boat that failed from the Berning dus to Ireland 1803. And there hungdapfor a monument, ibid. Bo cyua , Snakes among the Sa-

Bogs and watry places engending enill dijeafes, 1623.1624 Boicupecanga, a kind of Snake the hath wenemons prickles on his

Bolus, a Riner in Virginia, the commodities and inhabitants. 1602 Bonas Ayres, a place in the riner of Bonico or Spanish Macharell, 1376

Boarding how to bee avoided in a Sea fight. Borfis a towne taken by Captaine Petuin in the Portugall voyage,

Boybona an Indian name of a mountaine in Brafile, in English the Rotten Whale.

Boycininga and Boiciningpeba, certain inakes in Brafile that have bels in their tailes, and are very toyfonous. Boyes of the Indians not Suffered to take Tebacco, their renerence to

their elders, their babit, &c.

Boytiapus, aFreq-eating Snake or Serpent, wherewith if a barren womans hips be strooke, the Indians say she presently conceines with Boifterous Seas, not agreeable to London delicacie. Brabistic Riner , and the particular names of the Rivers betweene it and the Amazons, and Nations, 1186

Bracheo, neere the Paretaes in the Weft Indies. Branco de Malambo. Brafile, the Rivers, Capes, and Ports thereof described ; she danger or fafety for Navigasars . 1237, 1238, & feg. Brafile when first found and discovered, and by whom , 1437. The controverse concerning it, betweene the Spaniards and Portugals.

Brafile , the difficulty of Cayling thither some times of the years, 11,6,

A Brasilian brought to K. Henry she eighth in his wilde accouffrements.

Bralile is fixe handred leagues from the Streights of M gellane. 1103

Brafilian coaffs full of Shoales, Brafilian Sanages, 1 225. 1226. feq. france and monfrous Beafts in Brafi c, their names , 1 2 4 2 , 1 2 . 3 . Brafilians their nature, fubi dion man-eating hooting nakednes, flat-heads, 1243. plenty of mynes, +242. Brafil, and Brafilians, described, 1280, & seq their opinion of an Iland of God. of their Coule and paradice, ibid. Their mariages rites, drinkings, diet. ruling children , liberalitie drunkennesse, rudenesse, manner of eating, 1290. Their lodging , nabednelle, modeltie, bare, boules, child-birth, ceremonies, love of children, and education, 1291. Their entertaining strangers with weeping welcome, their hospitalitie, their drinking (moake of Petigina, their traffq ing ornaments, the wlave of their wines sealouse. mulicke, 1292. Singing, inftraments, lone of poetry, their buri-

als and excelline lamentation.

tooles weapons, archerie, their

arts, quick-lightednesse, trancis,

Cwimming, filling, (words, 1292,

1204. Their manner of eating

mans flesh, and divers their cere-

monies at large , 1295 , 1296,

1207. Their creating Gentlemen,

the badges thereof, and their three

titles , Abaetes , Murubixab ,

Mocacara, 1207. Their langua-

ges and nations, ibid. The cimate,

Tobacco, Oc.

featons, nature of the forte, 1200. Varietie of Arange milde beafts. 2301.1202.00 1202. Deverin of fearfull Servents, and the ver nome of chatchmate 1202 1 204) The varietie of Parais, and frangenelle of other Birde 4205. 1 206. Diversities and wenders of their trats and fruits for Phylick . and otherwise: the feverall names of their trees and plants . 11207. 1208.1200. Rest and admirable plants . their (eventil - names and wonders at large 1240. 1211.1212. Their muleitude and singularitie of fiftes; and their names at large, 12 14, 1214 @ fea. Their Fish that liveth attogether in Salt-maier, and their names, 1316, 1317. The delicate fre h-water of Bralile. and Rivers, ibid. Thei ftrance. wast, and fearfull fea-serpents, and their (everall names . 1317. 1218, What Portugali commodities in Brafile . 1319. Brafite hath few Lice and Fleas . but infinite flore of venemous enats, ibid. Articles for the good of Brafile to the Spanish King, 1320. co fea. The want of sustice, and the irregularitie of those parts. 1221. Their dis-reflect of the lefuits in the matters of counfaile, ibid. How ernelly the Bafilians are dealt with by the Portugals, 1321, & feg. Their want of in-Arustian, and inhumane flauerie. 1324. Brafils beafts, plants and other living things described. 1325 . 1326. & feg. Bafile wood, ibid. Difference of plants, bealts, and commodities from ours. and their leverall description. 1:25. & Seq. Their aftonishment at the hearing of God : Their inconstancie, naturall parts , de. 1340. Their mariages and polygamie, the manners of women with child, &c. 1341. The de-Gruttion of families, and bounds of their possessions . 1342. Their bou hold Ruffe. 1343. Their entertainment. 1344, 1345. Their Phylicke and demeanour towards the licke, their buriall attended with dinellifbrites. 1 346, Brafils description and chiefe Havens. 1:82. A Brafile Ship takenby Sir Water Raleigh, 1938. Brafile commodities feat for Spaine, not onely gold , but much other Caliquen towns.

Branadoes are Commerciones the his depers of success in great proietts,

Braveric of the English turnerb to beeverie. Brideretomes that give the firth hanfall of sheir (boufer so their bindred and friends. Brigalian Hand the firmation charge?

Buena Ventura, a River in the

Wich Indies , the descriptions thereof, 1413, 1414 Buenos Acres, a same in the River of Plate. Buccaw ganecants, atome under . the dominion of Ballabez Sagamo of Mawoofben. Building without tooles or enemes. miraculous by the Indians of Peru, 1477, 1478

Burdones, aplace fo called, 266 Bi kes rebellion in Ireland. 1892 The Burlings, an Iland (o called : ake foyle, commedition , and inhe bugnes described, - - 11. 1255 Butter how made by the Indians.

Abot win. Sir Sebaftian C1bot his American tracels. 1177,1178, of fea be discovered so much of the continent of the New World, that it deferved to bee called Cabatiana, rather then Americ: Cabuito, a towne in Florica, 1544 Caact certaine Brafilians to called.

Cera River. Cadiz taken by the English the fa Ale Correndred rec 192 1. Cadis described, 1022. It is let enfire andrased to the ground. 1022 Caiama Iland, the description theref.

Caiocame, a towne in Mawocfhen, Caioles, Cannibals (o called, living in Baile Cajuari, certaine Savages of Bia. file living in Canes. Calc, a towne of Florida. 1532 Calefornia, a/ea/o called, 1960 or an Iland, or many Ilands, as others (ay. 1181,1182 Calenture. Caliane, a River in Guiana , very aboundant with gold and filver,

1413 trealures, as Ginger, Sugar, Hides, Callipuny a monnaine in Guyana.

1302 Canari . a Province of More-1348 quito. Cannete, a towne in Peru, 1446 Canrie a towne in the Riner Marwin or America. Canibals with faces like does at Ports-defire, 1101. Other france and valorens Carmibals, 1208 Canibats profer famer to Candiffi in Santos, 1207. Cannihals naked and fearfull, 1204. tala Peries, 1208. Their frange ensertainment of ftrangers, 1208. Canibals called Tamoyes, 1228, 1240. ord. Savages. Cano, afamous Nanigator, 1191 Canoas or boats of threescore foot lang with 80 men in them. 1 3 So Cape Blanco, 1179 Cape Saint Francisco. 1400 Cape Jaim Antonio . 11+7 Canawucke a place in the lad ... fored wish gold, 1841 Cape bona Eiperings, the danger of the paffagethere, 1151,1152 Cape Rico, 1170 1181 Cape Verdi, Cape de la vela. 118.,1244 Cape Frio, or cold Cape, ses hendtien , 1202. Its Navigation , 1240 Cape Saint Augustine 12:8 Cape Caldera. 1:46 Cape de verde, its unhealthine (le, 1 270. Its Ilands, Capignramirinij a place in Bralile 1238. Cape Agreda, cape froward. 1286 Cape chiqui-towne, 1535. Cape Francoise Cape Saint Maries, Cape de Rave Cape Saint Lawrence, 1606 Caperrocca, a Sanage towne, 1:85 Capitua a flat land in Brafile, 12;8 Cape-cod, 16 17. Cape Charls, 1601. Cape Henry in Firginia, 1687. Cape Laware in Virginia, 1762. Its adjorning Shosles, Captaines for warres, how chosen amone the Indians. Captaines errours checked, 1307. patience commendable in a Cap-Captaine Lifters dineerous attempt in my Lord of Cumberlands voyage, 1143. Hee is drowned and his Ship in his returne, ibid. supposed ouerthrow of his voyage, Captaine Bayly flaine, 1144 Captaine Munion taken captine, Canduacu, Brafilion beaftithat dot their brifles through a many Captaine Nortons Voyage, ibid. Carracke used to returne from the

Captaine Caues farprivall of the Ar golie of Lishone Captaine Nortons affailing a Porringall, ibid. Capr. Cauc, Admirall in the eighth Voyage of the Lord of Cumberland, flaine, Captaine Antonie killed, ibid. Capraine Dounton wounded, 1148 Capurifell & River. Capucaras, water-Servents in the Indies. 1211 Capari, a River neere Orenoque. Carrabouca, a place in India, 1240 Carcocies , Indians fo salled, 1360 Carder, vie. Perer Carder & Farnift man , his bard forsume and escapes, 1187. The lofe of his company, 1 188. His fruing two moneths upon a fruit like Oranges, and his drinking of his some Urine, bid. His converfing with Irdiane, be. Teacheth them to marre. 1189. His departure from them, ibid. His impresonment, deliverence 1:80. 1190. His implayment, 1190. His escape from the Portingals, and winall to England after nine yeares voyage, Carione, a Reaft in Brafile the that carseth her yong ones in a bag about with her. Cari-River. 1248 Carrak runneth a shore to avoid the English, aripo a tonne in Guiana, 1168 Caroli, a pleafant River neere Orenoco. Carraemba, Sauages fo called, 1299 Carapana, a place in the Province of Emeria. Carraibas, certain Ingelers in Bra-1190 file. Carracus a place in the Indies , 1 242,1248 Caredenas, a Province in America, Carripapoory Ilands neere Guiana. Carendies a fierce Nation of the Indies, neere the River of Place: their nature, warlikeneffe, and description. A Carrack runneth her selfe on ground for fewe of the English, Carracks taken and burnt by English Captaines , 1145 , 1147, Carracks not fo great as mealthy >

THE TABLE.

| ndies, at the Acores by Sep- | , |
|--|--------|
| remoer, 1109 | _ 1 |
| Carrack with foure millions and | Ca |
| a halfe of treasure burnt in Port- | |
| Ricco, 1171 | Ca |
| reat Carrack fired, 1182. Another | _ |
| taken, 1183 Carcheonos Indians, 1364 Carcarifo, Indians, 6 called, 1353 Caribes neere Orenoco, 1249 | Ca |
| archeonos Indians, 1364 | |
| Carcardo, Indians so talled, 1353 | _ : |
| Caribes neere Orenoco, 1249 | Ca |
| great enemies to the Indians, | Ca |
| 1261 | |
| arios Sauages, their nature, com- | _ |
| modities, customes, towne, fortifi- | Ca |
| cation, &c. described, 1351 Captaine Carre slaine in the Por- | - 1 |
| aptaine Carre flaine in the Por- | |
| tugall Voyage, 1924 | C |
| caruolos Sanages, their nature, | |
| | |
| arruco, certaine Sanages in Flo- | |
| riga 1510 | - |
| Capt. Carfey slaine in the Portugal | j |
| Voyage, 1924 | _ |
| Jartagena affaulted and taken, | C |
| 1182, Its description and force, | · |
| 1419, 1434. Tis massacred by | 1 |
| Spamards, 1584 | |
| A Caruell stolne by English cap- | |
| tiues. 1151 | - |
| Calcais, a towne of Portugall for a- | C |
| ken at the approach of the Eng- | |
| lifb. 1923 | |
| Califte, a great Floridan towne, | C |
| | |
| 1541 | C |
| 1541 | C |
| Cafuero Riser, 1248 | |
| Cafuero Riser, 1148 Cafqui a great Gouernour in Ame- | |
| Cafuero Riser, 1248 Cafui a great Gouernour in Ame- rica, his large dominions, and townes. 1547, 1548 | C. |
| Lafuero Riuer, 1248 Laiqui a great Gouernour in Ame- rica, his large dominions, and townet, 1547, 1548 Valani bread, 1146. The maner of | |
| Lafuero Riuer, 1248 Laiqui a great Gouernour in Ame- rica, his large dominions, and townet, 1547, 1548 Valani bread, 1146. The maner of | C. |
| Cafuero Risser, 1488 Cafqui a great Governost in Ame- tics, his large dominions, and townes, 1547, 1548 Caffaui bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodsesse and de- critical of the caffact of the | C. |
| Cafuero Risser, 1488 Cafqui a great Governost in Ame- tics, his large dominions, and townes, 1547, 1548 Caffaui bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodsesse and de- critical of the caffact of the | C. |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero a great Governour in America, his large dominions, and townes, Laffau breath, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodbuffe and defeription of it. Laffau Fiftula in Brasile, Laffa Fiftula in Brasile, Laffa Splace on the coaff of Chili, | C. |
| Casuero Risser, Lago Las Per Lago Las Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago Lago | C. |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero a great Gouernour in Ame- rico, his large dominions, and townes, Caffau in the day, Laffau in the day, Laffau in the day, Caffa Fiftha in Brafile, Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro his diffeoverie, 1447 Caftro his diffeoverie, | C. |
| Cafuero Risser, Cafuero Risser, Cafuero Area Governour in Americe, his large dominions, and townes, Laffau bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodbuffe and defeription of it, Caffae Fiftula in Brafile, Caftro, aplace on the coaf of Chili, Caftro his difference, Caftunys, a River in the Indies, | C. |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafui a great Gouernowr in America, his large dominions, and towner. 1847, 1548 1847, 1548 1847, 1548 Caffau ibread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodbuffe and de- ferition of it, 1173, 1251 Caffar fiftula in Brafile, 1308 Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro his difeoverie, 1447 Cafuxys, a River in the Indies, 1123 | C. |
| Caffuero Risser, Laigui a great Gouernosor in America, his large dominions, and townes, his large dominions, and townes, Laffaui breath, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodbueffe and defeription of it, Laffa Fiftula in Brasile, Laffaro, a place on the coaff of Chili, Lattro his difference in the Indies, Lattro his difference in the Indies, Lattro Brasile, Lattro Bras | C. |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Agreat Gouernour in America, his large dominions, and towner, Caffaui bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodbeeffe and de- feription of it, 1173, 125 Caffa Fiftelia Brafile, Caffa of his difference, 1447 Caffue, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caffue his difference, 1447 Caffue, a River in the Indies, Caffipa River, Caffipa River, 2123 Caffipa River, 2148 Caffipogotos Indians, neere Ore- | C. |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Agreat Gouernour in America, his lavee dominions, and townes, Caffai his lavee dominions, and townes, Caffai his late of the maner of making it, the goodbuelle and defeription of it, Caffa Fiftula in Brafile, Caffa Fiftula in Brafile, Caffaro his difference in the Indies, Caffipa River, | C C C |
| Cafuero Risser, Laigui a great Gouernour in America, his large dominions, and townes, his large dominions, and townes, Laigui bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodwelfe and defeription of it, Laifia Fritula in Brailie, Laifto, a place on the coaff of Chili, Caftro, his different in the Indies, Laifia River, Laifia River | C. |
| Cafuero Riser, Laigui a great Gouernour in Americo, his large dominions, and towner, his large dominions, and towner, Laifaui bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodbreife and defeription of it, Laifa Fiftula in Brafile, 1308 Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Cafuays, a River in the Indies, Caffipa River, Liza Caffipa River, Liza Caffipa Goods Indians, neero Orence Liza Caffic of Cafcais yeelded to the Enelife, 1024 | C C C |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Agreat Governour in America, his large dominions, and towner, Italian bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodbuffe and defeription of it. Caffia Fiftula in Brasile, Caffito, aplace on the couff of Chili, Cafto his difference in the Indies, Caffipa River, Caffipa River, Caffipa River, Caffipa Goodbuffe Caffie of Cafcais yeelded to the English, Caffile of Sam Philip, neere Porto | C C C |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Agreat Gouernowr in America, his lawe dominions, and townes, 1547, 1548 1547, 1548 1547, 1548 The maner of making it, the goodwelfe and de- feription of it, 1173, 1251 Caffiro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro his difference in the Indies, Caffing River, 1143 Caffing River, 1243 Caffing Cafficate, neere Ore- neco 1248 Caffic of Cafcais yeelded to the Englife, Caffield Saint Philip; neere Potro Belle, 1244 | C C C |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Agreat Gouernowr in Americo, his large dominions, and towner, Caffain bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodwelf and de- feription of it, Caffa Fiftula in Brafile, Caffaro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro his difference in the Indies, Caffipa River, Caffipa River, 1148 Caffipa River, Caffipa Cafeais yeelded to the English, Caffle of Cafeais yeelded to the English, Caffle of Saint Philip; neere Porto Belle, Cattle, a Province in Florida, | C C C |
| Casuro Riser, Casuro Riser, Casuro a great Generiour in America, his large dominions, and towner, 1547, 1548 Castaui bread, 1146. The maner of making it, the goodbeesse and de- feription of it, 1173, 152 Castau bread, 1146, The maner of The state of the state of the state Castau bread, 1146, The maner of Castau bread, 1143, 154 Castau bis discoverie, 1447 Castauys, a River in the Indies, Casts Casuro Studians, neere Ore- neco 1248 Castle of Cascais yeelded to the Englis, 1024 Castle of Saint Philip; neere Porto Belle, Catalte, a Province in Florida, 2553 | C C C |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Agreat Gouernour in Americo, his large dominions, and Lewines, Laffau his large dominions, and Lewines, Laffau his large and deferition of it. Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro his difference in the Indies, Caffing River, Li23 Cafflipa River, Li24 Cafflipa Goaleas, neere Ore- Li24 Caffle of Cafacias yeelded to the Englify, Caftle of Saint Philip, neere Potro Belle, Catalec, a Province in Florida, Li25 Catalec, a Province in Florida, | CCCC |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Agreat Governour in America, his lave e dominions, and towner, Cafuero his lave e dominions, and towner, Cafuero, 1145, 1548 Caftero, aplace on the county of Chili, Caftro, aplace on the county of Chili, Caftro his discoverie, Caffipa River, Caffipa River | C C C |
| Cafuero Riser, Caiqui a great Gouernour in America, bis lave dominions, and townes, 1547, 1548 1547, 1548 1547, 1548 1547, 1548 1547, 1548 1548, 1548 Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caftro his different in the Indies, Caffing River. 1143 Caffing River. 1148 Caffing Galeais, neere Oreneco 1248 Caffie of Cafeais yeelded to the Englife, Caffie of Saint Philip; neere Potro Belle, Catalte, a Province in Florida, Catagua Indians, Catagua Indians, 1350 Saint Catalina Hand, 1438 | CCCC |
| Caffuero Risser, Caffuero, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caffuero, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caffuero, a place on the coaft of Chili, Caffuero, a River in the Indies, Caffuero, 1248 Caffuero, 1248 Caffuero, 1248 Caffuerof Saint Philipj neere Porto Belle, Catalte, a Province in Florida, Catagua Indians, Catagua, a towne in Florida, | CCCC |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuer | CCCC |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuero Riser, | CCCC |
| Cafuero Riser, Cafuer | CCCCCC |

the Indians, Marcavahire, fore ir Brasile. nonues, almonage of fome Indians in Florida. was a Mountaine in Port Ricco. xamalca, a large Indian Citie, described, with its chiefe ornavas. a towne of Florida, 1449 vcoolcoocooto, a towne in the River Marwin inhabited by the Arwaccas Savares. zique, a Title of dignitie among the Savages, as much as to (ay, a Lord. dars, in New France, 1622. In the Bermudas, 1720. Cedars in Alexandria, reported by the Ienes to be them of Libanus, that beare old and new fruit all the geare, ibid. Cedars ill for Shipping. uola, a Frovince, 1560. Init are Senen Ciries neere together, their nanner of making howers, for summer and winter their commodities of Turqueses and Emeraulds their beafts, and chimate. achapuva, a Province in America of valiant men, and faire wemen, that worship Snakes, \$478 hagnate a townein Florida, 1553 sptaine Chalons his voyage to the Northerne parts, his unfortuaduenture. North of Virginia, his comiferation towards a distressed Frier, his taking captine by the Spaniards. his goods divided into the Spanish Chefepian-Bay, 1834 Ships , halaque Province. 1430 hampiains voyage into Canada in the yeare 1603, 1605 His ariuall at Canada: 1606. His discouering of divers Ilands hauca, avaliant Indian Nation, descending as they suppose from a 1457,1641 harges of certaine voyages to Virginia, little gaine for loffe of haritie, a oreat Ship landing at Plimouth in New England, 1856. Charitie of the Indians toby sicknesse, 1869. Charitie and coursefic among favages, 1345 Christians defervedly controlled by hawonock in Virginia, its diffe- the Indians, 1449. How thought

rent languages mentioned, 1600 Chereno, a great Commander in Port Ricco 1160 Chebegnados, a tonne in Mawoofhen. Cherente, a River in Florida Chiaza, a Province in Florida. Chickhahamania, a River in Vir-Pipia, 1602. The inhabitants con verned by Priests. Chicaca, a towne in Florida, 1944 Chichilcale, a Province in Ame-1502 M. Chidleys voyage for the Magellane Streights Children throwne to door 1.82 Child-birth , how and with what ease among the Indians, 1263, Chile , arich Country in the Indies, 1232. Its description and disconerie by Come Spaniards, 1442. The taking thereof by the Souniards, and the towne first inhabited by China bath two waves to it through the Streights of Magellane, and Caput bona ipei, Chirihuana brutifo Indians fo calhagre a River in the Indies, 1180 Chirigiana, a Province fabiett to Peru. A Chirurgion curing with words . nate hap to the loffe of the whole | Chifaptack a brooke in Virginia, Henry Chalcons voyage to the Chifcha, a Floridan Province, Choamo, acountrey in Port Ricco 1160 1658 Chefupioc-Bay, Chily, a Province Subject to Peru. its severall townes. Chilca Veblace in America, 1208 Chinca, a place in the South Sea. there, ibid. His returne, 1619 Chinchilla, a beaft of wondrous elimationby reason of a rich Furr, a Lyon, which they worthip for a Cholupaha, a towne of Florida, Chouakoet-Bay in New France, Choofe, a valley in the South fea. Christs name blathemed by the berfidie of Spanis Christians, 1450 merd il-fe which are impovertibed | Christians chnelite to tash other exceeding faveges,

of by their ; an Indian definition of & Christian. 1450. Christians eate one another, Chryftall. 1330 Chrystall Rocke in Virginia, 1772 Chryfail Mountaine. Cholula, a part of New Spamerus. nated in respect of the inhabitants, 1577.1578 by Spaniords. 1577.1578 Challale, a place in the South Sea. Chule, as I and porch inhabit d by the Spinismes in the South See, yearish with gold. 1302 Churches profanation punified.

Ciagtonne. 1561 Cibola, a Pravince in America, discovered by the Spaniards. Cicu. Indians of Brafile. 1100 Cicuic. a towne in America. 1561 Cilicodenio, a mountaine in Guy-Cinque Llagas, a great Carrack

1163

Circumcifion among Ethiopians. Ciuct Cas. Civill diffentions. 1452,1453 Sir Nicholas Cliffords death by a Bot, as hee was at Supper. 1184 A Climate unsufferably bot, and within fixe miles againe intolera-

bly cold. Coaio's, or Coucho's, Indians. Cobe, aplace neere Hausnain she Well Indies.

Cobrus, vide Serpent. Coca, a Floridan Countrey, the townes and commodities therein.

Coche, an Ile neere Margarita.

A Cocke treading a fore, another crowing clearly within swelve bouresst was batched. 1805

Cocos trees, and their fruit described. 1371,1372,1173 Corwing a towne. 1270 Coiula, a Province in New-Spain.

Cold very extreame freezing men to death, 1204,65- 1205 Nid winter. Collick bow cared. 1308 Colliman a precious cumme in Guiana, for fundry difeafes. 1276 Colonies is Virginia the first.

1645,1683,1684 Colonies plantaries, requireth first afaire land, and a safe barbonr. 1664. Colonies in Virginiaon what conditions granted, at it

appeareth by the Patent, 1683. Colonel Bret, flain in the Portugal Voyage. Comana a townes name. 1266. Its description and climate. ibid. Coman Ibes. Inhabitants in the Indies. Officers.

Commanders, how farre to trust Comorratty . a towne in the River Marwinin America: 1282 Compaile vied in travelling fandie Countries. Compostella Cirie. 1528 Cort mir head 1384 Conde de Andrada bie Armie. Conception, a town in Chili. 1443

Concoe e, azonne in America inhabited by Sauages. 1283 Congo, a Region in Affeica, the King thereof: his great strength, his Christian Religion, quard, pompe, riding on Elephanis, rices of State. 1234

Conibas lake, 1566. Neere it a stately Citie of Indians, their ornament and great fortification.

Connics of two fores in Florida, the manner how they are taken by the Indians there. Conquacus, chiefe Prince of the

great people of Nanohigganier, his challenge so the English men, he is terrified by a prefent of pewder and hot. Conjuration wied of the Indians. being in diffreffe for want of raine.

Conversion of sinners, a morke meritorious, mithellea Spanish Cap-

Content, a small Ship of Sir George Carews, fought with three great Spanish Ships of fix hundred tuns a piece,

Cooligoa, a Province in Florida,

Cocunibo, an excellent and fafe harbor in the West Indies, 1 394. The markes whereby to findest.

Cordoua towne. 1446 Cooropan, a place ten dayes inurner from the head of the River Marrawin, 1 285. Directions for the journey betwirt Marrawin, and Cooropan, ibid. Directions to Cooropan from the head of the River Sebnama. 1286 Coofhebery, a Protince in Guiana: ghe defeription , pleafantneffe .

healthinesse. and commodities thereof Corburrimore, a some of the Epuremei inthe Indies. 1285 Cape Corientes. Corne how kept in Tercera, 1660 Corn hil a place in New-England, where the Savages were wont to hide their corne, 1849. Corna much encreaseth in Non-England. Coro, stowne in America, 1258 The fruitfulneffe & commodities thereof. 1248 Corrall. 1016 Combination of the English forces is New-England. Complaint of a Sanage woman for her sonnes losse, Stalne away by Hunt an Englishman, Copiapo a towne of Chili, in the Indies. Coquinibo, en Americas ponne.

Corefao Iland, how fittate, 1146 Coro, a somme and Caftle, burne be Captain. Preston, and Captains Summers. Corprocipe, or the River of Toads

in America. Correra Spaniard, comefteth with Don Antonio de Mendoza, for discoveries of land , senderly forth Francis Vilua with a Fleet of three Ships for that purpose.

Corupeo , a firit vfing to poffeffe and vexe the Americans, 1213 Cainero River. Cofta Ricca, a West Indian towne.

copious with gold, 1419,1446 Coverouinelle the cause of the dispeopling the Indies by the Spa-

Couetoufnelle is an Idoll, unto which the Spaniards have factificed millions of Indians, 1602, Couetousnesse reproved by a Sa-

Aprovinciall Councell held at Lvma.

Countaile vfed among the Indians, 1260 Countries unbealthy. Countries very healthy, 1274

Countries unknowne, and descripti-1383,1334 on of them. Cowab, a Mountatine, 1271 Cowardline Te of the Indians, 1154 Cowardlineffe of the Mafter of the Roe-Bucke in Brafile. Cozco, the Imperiall City of Peru, the opinion the Inhabitants have

of is, the admirable Temple of the Summe in it, rich hangings, images , profuse ornaments , Chappels, roofes, plates, gardens, beaves all Church-instruments in wold, their priefts, and charine fe of their Temple, 1464, 1465. Their divers Monasteries , their wiches manner in mariages, care of Infants, 1457. Their Superstition, fealts braverie, falts, folemn feafts for the Sunne, 1472. Their adoration, & facrifices folemnized at therifing thereof, hely fire, festi-vall eating, drunkennesse, 1473 Their footh-faying, ibid. Manner of creating Knights, and Ceremonies , 1474. Cozco, also described, with its fituation, fortification and splendour, 1496, 1497 Crabs on the land in great abun-

dance. 1172,1330:Tenortwelue fores of Crabs, 1315 Crocodiles by the Indians called Aligartos, 1228. Their description and mener of filling for them, and best, ib. His Cods are muske, ib. Crocodiles in America hormleffe, and kept tame, 1326. Crocodiles in great Sconles, 1400.

Saint Croix point, and the countrey described, 1611, & 1622 Crooroorere, a Suppay towns in the Indies.

Crosses erectedby the Spaniards in New-Spaine intoken of poffeffion,

The Crozier, a Starre neere the Pole antartick. Crokemago, a Province in Mawoofhen, necrethe River Sha-

Cruelty is companion of cowardize, 1395. And feare, ibid. Requited in the Spanish Governour by the Indians, 1449. Cruelty cruelly remarded,

Cuba, an Iland described, 1147.115 want of fortification , the chiefe Port Lahanana, wherein is aca-Ale of Spaniards , 1415. The length and bre dib thereof, and the Christian towner thereof named, 1529. The King, commonaltie , men , women , and (uching children, how many murdered by Spaniards.

Cueremaghas, Indians fo called, their nature, strength , courtesie, and commodities. Cueruo, one of the Azories Iles, ta-

king its name from the multitude of Crows breeding in that place, 1939 Cuigbe Indian, 1199

Cuigraio, Brafilians fo called , 1209 Cuimechi . warlike Indians that wander in droves in the mountains to focke food. Coina Province. 1557

Cuinquiro, a place in New Spaine, Cuifco Province taken by the Spamarde.

Culiazzon, a Nation in the Indics.

Cultalculebes, Indians of Florida.

Cumberlands first Voyage discove red, 1141. The time when they fet forth, his thips and company, ib. His arivall at Brafile, 1142. Hee taketh foure Ships from the Portingall, ibid. The kinderance of his Voyage for the South (ea, his disaftrens losse of a Hulke, men, and goods, his returne to Englandibid. His fecond voyage, his acts at Sluce, the 88 fervice, his company returne, 1142 Histhird voyage ibid. His ariuall at Saint Michael, and attempt there,danger by & Fift. ibid. Taketh & prize from the Spaniards, the enafion of some of his men with a small Boat , 1143. His surprizallof Fiall atownin Tercera ibid. His loffe of men, and danger of bis person , ibid. His great want of drinke, his clemenoie, and equity, ibid. The number of his prizes taken in the voyace. his returne , 1144. His fourth voyage, purchase, losse, returne for England, ibid. His fifth veyage, hindrances, defeating, retiring to London , and committing the charge to Captaine Norton , ibid. His gaines by the Portingal Carrack taken in that veyage, 1145 , 1146. His fixth vojete. purchases, sicknoffe, returne, ibid. The fewenth voyage, ibid. The eighth votage, and the furprize of a Carrack, 1147. The ninth voyages successe, 1148. The tenth voyage, ibid. Eleventh voyage. 1149. Trelfih voyage its preparation, company, and hips, ibid. successe of his plot, 1150. Ariucs at the Canaries, 1151. His care Caynaccard a Province, and covernment of his company, 1151. His discreeineffe, and guidance by reason, 1152. His proietts, ibid. His arinall at Dominica, and entertainment, ibid. His commine to Port-Ricco , 1153,

His perill at the affault of Porta Ricco, 1161. Besieging Fort-Mora, bes inflice, feveritie, and taking the fortroffe, 1162.1162. Offers the ranseming of Port-Ricco, departesh hence, 1168. 1169. Afeetes with his Fleet by Flores, 1176. His returne and danger on the coaft of Northandie 1 176, His unfortunate miffing the Spanish ships at the Azores, where hee loft forty millions, 1673. And others of fine millions.

Cumana, atowne, 1186, 1248 Cumpelie, Brafilian Sanages fo cal-Cunames, Indiens in New Mexico-their townes, and faculties of painting described. Cunarreo fands, Curenda, a populous Indian nation in the River Parana described. their apparell, ornament, and commoduies. Cutes wronght by prayers, Curewapori Ilands, Curiadan, a place in Trinidad, the inhabitants called Saluaves.

Curiapan, a place neere Orenoque, A Current in the Sea, under thirty

two degrees, Currents that fet Eaft or West man breed miftake in Navigators, ibid. Other uncertaine currents, 14004 A Current festing to the Northward in forty degrees, 1759 Curucucu, Snakes in Brafile of 14

frans long very venemous, 1304 Curupija, Indians of Brafile, Cusco, a place in the South Sea, 1416. A Citic as bigge as Rome, it hath in it a thousand Spaniards.

Customes of fishing, of wonderfull seine to the townes of Lubccke. Hamborough, and Embden,

Cuftomes paid yearely to the Prince of the Indians. His meenes to get intelligence, ill Cutifa-chiqui a Province in Florida.

D Ainty, a Ship of Sir Richard Hawkins, fortunate in voyage for her Maiestie, unfortunate for the owners, 1160. Tothe Canaries, 1155. Dale, viz, Sir Tho: Dales arinali

1573,1574 Dariene, a Sound in the Indies. Sir Ber. Drake, his arine at the New-found-land. Captaine Darmers fishing voyage, his coasting the shore till bee came to Viiginia , his men fall sicke , his returne to the New-found-1and, his discoverie of many fruitfull Coafts, and pleafant Rivers from Hudfons River to Cape James 1820 The proferous fucbetweene vs and the Savages : is treacherously betrayed, wounded, and fireth to Virginia for succour,

and there dreth. 1831 Capt. Davies voyage to the South Sea, 1101. & leg. His loffe of Cap. Candish successe, ibid. & 1cg. Accused for treacherie, 1102 Candishes opinion of him, 1164 Davcao, ariner in Florida, 1554 Dayes of publike Thanksgiving in-Rieuted in New-England, 1867 Daves length in New-England, Dead, not lamented by some Ind:-

an. Deaws very unhealthy to Englishmen, and Indians,

Deere worshipped by some Indians , 1479. Deere of feverall forts bringing forth two , three or foure at once, 1831. Decre good flore in New-England , and the manner of taking them , 1845. Decres-flesh dried in the minde. food of the Indians, Dermers resolution by letter, of some passages in Virginia, 1778

1779 Description of the King of Spaines invincible Armada. De Todos los Santos, a torine

in the West Indies neere the line. D. vill confulted withall bythe Indians of Wy roco : they call him Peyar, 1253. As alfo Watup: and blow , 1274. The Brafilians

cal him Curupira, Taguain, Pigtangue Machchera & Anhangalebey feare bim much and think their foules after death are swened into Devils.

The Devils illuding wounding, and tormenting the Savages of Floride 1 5 16. 1 017. The Devill mor-Ripped by New Spaniards, that is, in Noua Hifpania : their de-Instion by him, 1 = \$ 8. Temples built for him, and an oratory made. and meat given him by them of new Mexico. 1561

The Divell forbids Bapti me to the Indians. The deuils policy in keeping the In-

dians poore, 1868, His triall of those which are dedicated to him. ibid. His being worshipped by the Virginians, his images, feare, and name of Oke, Dyals, hor admired by the Virgi-

man Savares. 1708 ceffe hee had in pr curing a truce Damones in Brafile, 12 30, In Cana a. 1612.in New France 1611

Difference betweene Campe and parison Souldiers, Diego Flores de Valdes a Spaniard Cent with a Flert to Brafile, and

the successe, 1440,1441 Diego de Almagro, the fir ! Spanish disconcrer of Chili, 1475. The next Pedro de Maldiuia,

Discoveries of divers Ilands, and Lakes in Canada, 1614. 6 leq. A D. scoverie of the English full of danger. D (coveries proue beft, when least disconcred, 1955 First discoveries of America the new World by English, and Spa-

Difeales very ftrange, 1191,1214,

Di order, the fore-runner of sill Successe in Cand thes Fleet . 1202 Diferent more weakeneth the Englift, then the enemy, Diforations touching Spanish cruelite in the Indies, 1601,1601,

Diffequebe an Indian River, 1260 Dogs worflipped, 1471. Ravenous dogs, 1172. Terrible to the 1327, 1328 Great dogs that fight with Buls and carie fifty pound on their backe in hunturg,

Dogs that devoure men, first taught by Spaniards, D gs that cannot barke. 1606 who beat them sometimes blacke Dolphin described, his some to man-

Saint Domingo, 1146. The description, riches, and fortification thereof.

Dominica, 1142. The inhabitants described, with their bruttfmelle. 1685. The inhabitants hate the Spaniards, lone the English, their prefents, tradings, and commadities ibid. Want of cloubes, ornaments Canons, Marchandise and red painting, 1158. Mare copiens description of the loyle, moods. mountaines, towne, water, modefrie, King , familiaritie of their maids, chaftitie, defire of cloathes. 1158,1159. Their commonfere. State, meat, baire, desire to learne English, 1159. Distinction of maids and wines. IIca Dominica affaulted and taken by Sir Francis Drake, 1182. Inhabised by Spaniards, the fand of the Rivers mixed with gold, oreat plenty of Roots, and Sugar Canes.

Don Alfonio Perez de Guzman. Commander of the Spanish Fleet

Don Antonio de Mendoza, bis Arife with Cortez. for most difcoveries, and fending forth divers by sea and land for that purpose,

Don Diego de Pimentell, taken prisoner in Zeland, Don John of Austria defeated of his intended treachery, to get to hime selfe Mary Queene of Scots his mife.

Dos Patos, a River in America,

Don Pedro and his company taken prijoners by Sir Francis Dicke,

Douer-cliff-found, on the North of Virginia, A Done lighted on the Master of

English Slises, Dragnanes, a certaine kind of Indians in Florida,

Drake viz. Sir Francis Drakes fir # discovery of the Southermost land, 1291. His treacherous vlage by the Indians, 1392. His expedition with a great Fleet, 1434. His riches gotten by his voyages, 1439

Sir Fran Drakes original parentage, education, progresse, first voyage. surprising of the towne of Nombre de Dios , 1179. His burning 200000 Duckets in Merchandize, and protestation for the South fea, 1 1 80. His circumnanigation, the opinion of his riches, ibid.

THE TABLE.

Which were sequestred to the Queen, his verage to Domingo, company and frip:, wines at Saim Iaro, and takes it , 1181. His commung to Dorr inica, and Saint Christopher. 1181. Takes Saint Domingo, 1 182. And Carragena, b. Fireth two Spanish fortresfes, ibid. His returne, benefit , loffe of men, ibid. His verace at Calz. bis Fleet and Prizes, ibid. Takes a Carrack, 1183. His going for the Azoresi bid. His last voyage, His fellow Commissioner, his taking Rio de la Hacha, Rancheria, Taria, S. Merthe, and Nombre de Dios, his death, fucceffer, and Ficets arivall at Phimouth. 1182. His difarreeing with Sir John Hawkins 1184. His comparifon with him, 1185.1186. His bursell, 1249. His clemency to conquered foe. John Drake lined I moneths with the favages, 1186. His mishaps,

1440,1441. Hisfame gotten by his iourney to the West Indies, and about the World, 19:6 Drano, a River neere Orenoco. Its

unhealthy passage, Dreames (ceming ominous, 1191 Drinke to some poilon to other bodies beneficiall, although the very same, 1173. Great drinkingmatch by the Indians, 1285 Drink made of roots great want of drink, 1364. Its quality and varietie among the Indians, 1381. Drinking esteemed by those of Peru the greatest courteste that can be offered by King, or Subjett, 1473. Strange drinking, 1519. Drinke made of Berries at the Bernudas, 1739 Drinke made of Plummes in Virginia , 1784. Scarcitie of

1143 drinke, Drowth extraordinarie in New-1866 England. 1276

Drugs in Guiana. Drunkenneile, a vice of Savages, 1189, 1473. Drunkenneile like to onerthrow an English Armie,

Ducks, the curiousnesse of making their nests in the Magellanc Streinhts.

Dudley viz. Sir Robert Dudley his voyage, and successe to Trinidada, and the coast of Paria, &c.

Duke of Medina his hindnesse to the English, 1834. His yearely tribate of the Fishers of Tunny Mul-Lit, and Purgos, 1837. His pre-

Anno 1588. 1895 Duke of Parma his forces in 88, El estado de Arauco, the deferierion 1902. His apparell for horses, 1003. His vaine hope of the Crowne of England, Duke of Medina is prohibited the Fi Ca'20, the Port of Lima 1446

Court became bee returned without the English Crowne, 1910 Duke of Parma's force againft Eng-Jand.

Capt. Du Pont his voyages into the New-found-lands A Dutchmans courtefie to the Enolift, 1261. Dutchmens treachery to the Englishmens inhabiting Virginia.

Durchmens fall-beartedneffe, 1721 And abuse of Capt. Smith , by terning to Powharan, 1723. Their treacherie frastrateth bis attempt for the surprizall of Powhatans houfe, 1725. Their plat to Hill Capt. Smith, and fruis effe iffue, 1726. Their continued base treacherie, and deserved pension : one comming to a miserable and among the English ; the others baving their braines beaten out by Savages,

T Arle of Effex, his worthy atts, 1917, His valerous chalenge in Portugall Voyage, 1924. His voyage to the Iles. of Azores, 1935. Histrouble, travell, and arivall: Heetaketh three Spanish Earth medicinable: earth like gumme in Virginia, 1765. Earth red like terra ligillata. 1765

Earth-quakes, Earth-quakes frequent in Tercera, 1670. Aterrible Earth-quake in S, Michaels Ile, and the dreadfull effects thereof, 1678, 1679

Fale and efferminate life, enemies to great practices. East-India warres , disharden the Spaniard of West India gold and

Ecatepeck, Supposed the highest mountaine in the world, from the too whereof are differened the north and South fear, 1177 Feliples, what concerted to be ly fime

Americans. Echro, an Handneere Port Ricco,

Eggs very hard; and founding like 1306 Ekinnick, a kinde of norme that por foneth the water,

paration, for the Spanish Fleet in Elephants, how taken by the Ethi-

thereof, the fiercene fe of the inhabitants, and their opinion of the Spaniarde

Capr. Ellis his relation of Six Richard Hawkins birvoyage, 1416 Q. Elizapeths providence in repairing her Army Royall, 1903

Q. Eliz beth denormed excommunicate by Pope inter her jubsects are discharged from loralive and allegenince, 1892. Her enemies ubroad are disappointed traiters et home taken in their owne pit, bid. Her triumph after the deliver rance in 88.

O. Elizabeths Encomium. 1823 O. Elizabeths martial affairs, 1181 Elizabeth-Bar.

Elizabeths Ilein Virginia, 1648 Its description, being thought fit and commodious for plantation, 1649. Atlarge, 1651. vide I/e of Elizabeth.

Elizabeth her manifold dangers, and gracious deliverances. Elizabeth Iles , inhabitants describeditheir ornamenes, nature, proportion, wittinelle, courtelie, vet theeveric, 1651. The description of the climate.

Embalming by the Indians , how well performed. Emballage from the English to the Mallaloyt, chiefe Commender of

the Savares in Pacanokick, 18 ct Embroderic exercised among the Savages, Emeralds of ineffiniable worth, 1410

10.16. An Emerald as list as an Estrickes Enge, and therefore was adored by the Indians, 1481. Emerald flore. 1550 Emeria the enfermoft part of Do-

rado. Enemies to bee kett in one, as the Spaniards by the Earls of Cumberland et Port-Ricco, who shough he means not to spelle their towne, yet told them not formiche

Enemics taken amono the Savages are commonly killed and eaten, 1217,1218

1462 Engines in marre by the Indians performed, 1267 Englishmens discoveries of Aircrica.

> An English Pilots treacherie, and adherence to the Spaniards,

> > Eng-

bbbb 2

Englands gaine by Salt-fift, Toore-John, Salmonds, and Pilchards . Englishmen rather desirous to bee renowned for mercy and clemencie, then for de eadfull conquest. English miracles by Captain Smith in Virginia, fuch as the Spaniard eled in the Indies. English-Bay in the Marellane streights, the description of the in-babitants, 1288 English Captines delivered by the Duke of Medina. English Nany returneth from Azores Her. English forces mustered, English gallants reprehended for their unpromidence in going to English inhabiting the River Wis-Englishmen ebufing rather to truft God and the Sea, then the dentil, and the Spaniard: 1186 Englishmen friking terrour in the Charibes, 1273. Take poffeffion of the Mountaine Gomerigo, English mens nature. 1440 Englishmen flaine in Virginia by the treacherie of the Indians, and the canfe why. 1841 Englishmens encounters in New-England, 1841 Englishmen cheat the Indian of their victuals, and turne (avave, 1855 Englishmensebroats ent by the Por-English fugitines appointed to gine the first onset against their owne Englishmen finke the Spanish Ships, or take them, 1673, 1674 English Fleet fet forth , and successe , English returns from the pursuit of the Spaniards, English ships by their nimblenesse farre exceeding the Spanish Gal-English victory , ioned with cour-English famine and mortalitie in Virginia, 1690 English souldiers dye with drinking E. ish defire a battell with the Portingals, English forbidden to furnish the Spaniard with mounition, Entitity imparted by fending a rattle,

Snakes-skinne full of arrower, 1854 Entertainment, how frange among the Savages of Pores , 1208, 1292. Amene Brafilians, Enuv effect's more in pretended, then in professed enemies. Eparigotos, enemies to the Eparemi in India Epeoya, a great Iland in Bralife, 1241, Called by the Indians Sapeawera. Epuremi, Indians weere the River Oreneco, 1248 Equipone, a towne at the foot of Marwin in America, inhabited in the Arwaccas, and Parawagotos Savares, Eregooda, a place neere Orenoco. 1248 Escudo, an Itand. 1185 Estanca, that is, a farme place, where Asnes keepe cattle, and make Custani bread among the Indians, 1146 Estechemins, Savages in Canada, enemies to the Irocois. 1607 Estriches tame. Ercowbo, amountaine in America, 1214 Etepararinge, a mountaine aboun ding with gold. Etaoca, a place in America, 1210 Etapuca, a great mountaine in A. merica. Etamatiqua, a Cape in Brafile, its fitneffe for Navigation , 12:8. And description, ibid. Etapulick, a place sn the Indies, with singular mynes of gold, Erechemins . Savages of New-France, that are theenes and treacherous. Etoica, a River in Brasile, its danserous Navisation. 1240 Euill-peace, a towns fo named by the The Feags a ftrange ficknessein the Spaniards in Florida, and the reason thereof. Europa, a River that commeth into Fcare, the cause of Tyrannie, 1248 Orenoco. Example prevaileth more then pre- Feare, caufing death in the Indians, 1743

F.

FAls of water very violent and

the treacherous Indians by Spa-

1552

Grance.

nift policie.

Of the Indians towards Mafter Westons men. Famine very vreent in the Indies , 1214. Miferable in the Carne countrey 1248 Famine amone the French-men. 1325. Among the Dutch and Spaniards, at the River of Plate, the unnaturall effects thereof. 1 3 48. Famine among Spaniards, 1401, 1477, 1508. Among the Indians , and some few hungry Spaniards, 1517. 1518. Incredible famine , 1516, Famine and mortalitie of the English in Virginia, 1690. Famine in great extremitie, enforcing man-flaughter, and man-eating, Familhing frangely escaped by Andrew Hillyard, all his fellowes perishing, 1802, 1802 araon, a towne burnt up by the English , in their returne from Cadiz. Fast, publikely instituted, and observed, by the English in New Englan 1, being in diffreffe for want of afts infliented in England, and Zeland, for Gods gracious deliverance in 83. ather Martin Perez, of the focietie of Icius , his relation of his travels, and description of Ginoloa . 1562 , 1563 , & ieq. His baptizing many Indians, and instructing them in a knowne tongue, erc. 1564. What kinde of Christianitie hee taught them. 1564,1565 Favael, one of the Hands of the Azores, the description and taking thereof by the Earle of Cumberland, 1672. Their feare of the English Nany, Bermudas, much annoying the English. Feafts of Savages. Feathers veed for cloathes , 1212 Feuers, how eafed by plants, 1311 How gotten in hot Countries and 1370,1371 anoided. I 610 Febacco Iland. False-heartednetse how anoided in Ferdinando Gorge, his employment in the plantation of New-Scotland, False-hearrednesse of the Savages, Capraine Fenton his expedition and called Mailacheufets , 1859

Fernambuc, apert in America, 1100.1202.1428 Fernandes Gires his discovery of a Land in the fouth Sea, with the rare commodsties thereof, 1422 Fetherstons Bay in Verginia, why fo called. Figs of Brafile. Fight betweene the English and and Spaniards in Saint John Port-Ricco, 1161. Betweene English and Indians with Pora natine countrie rewarded 1404 Fighting betweene two Indian nations in Peru very extreame and bloody 1458. Betweene the Englift and Spaniards in the narrow Seas, 1906. A fight betweene the English and Spaniards before Greeneling, 1 908. A fight by fea betweene the English and Spanish before Cadiz. Fire burning in the woods for the space of three dayes, 1800. Great 1145,1918 danger by fire, A Fish endangering a boat and men, 1141. Fiftes flying, 1157, 1214 Their danger of devouring in Sea or ATTE. Fishing of New England very commodious to the plantation of Vir-Filhing how commodious, and efpecially to the Hollanders 2821 Fishing with (words, Fishing with golden hookes, 1216 Fishing nith wood, 1251 Fish oreat fore in Guiana, 1275.1 fill with foure eyes, two abone water, and two under: a fish also with warme blood like flesh. ibid. Fish made drunke with wood, 1276 Fish like beefe in taste and proportion, 1283. It is called the Qx-filb, the description thereof at large, 1212 1314. It hath eyes which it may elefe and thus at will, armes, and hands, in his head it hath 2 stones of approved soveraignnesse for the Stone in the body. A Fish that (norteth, and thereby is apprehended, ibid. A fish that bath two broad Genes in his mouth ibid, fift good against the poison of a Snake, and very wholesome, 1312. Fish that maketh the holders hands benummed, or fireking as one that bath the palsie: Fish that maketh all that touch it to flicke fast vato it : Fishes like men and women , their fearfulness to the Indians, their mainner of

water, and enadeth the Fifter: Fish that prones aremedy for the Spleene : a Fish that easts bis much hell and feet , 1314, 1315 & feg. A Fish with fingers, and vitaring a squeaking sound, 1331 Fish to plentifull that it may bee kild in the water with clubs, 1 549 Fishes that have voices like Owles 1629. Good fishing, 1640

Fits-Morrice flaine in Ireland, 1803 tingals, 1197. Fighting against Flatterers, base kind of people, 1957 A Flemmish Ship burne at the fight before Cadiz. Flores, aplace in the Azores, 1144 The description thereof, 1175.

16073 Florida possessed by the Spaniards, 1 cos. The inhabitants many of them tall of stature, and expert archers, 1503. The towner and inhabitants thereof variously described, 1503,1504. & feq. Florida hash gold and pretious fromes on the fea coast, 1554. The di-Stance of Suidry places one from the other, necessary for transilers, 1556.Loss of inhabitants in Florida by Spanish cruelty, 1589. The great age of some men there, 1 604. They like in the woods 3 months in the yeare, voon bunting, 1604. Englishmen the first difconcrers of Florida, Flutes made of Reedes, 1687 Fluxes staved by fraits, as Guianas Papaias, and wild Grapes, 1172. by a berry, 1276,1308.by aplant

Fooles-coat, a linery of the Spanish Inquisition, Foreits travelled by compasse,

Fort Mora summond, befreged, and taken by the Lord of Cumberland, 1163,1164. The Brengels and danger of paffage for ships by it,

Fort St. John of the Spaniards in Florida. Fortileza, a towne in Port-Ricco, 1164

Fountaines of pitchy (ubstance very hot chat (crue to calke foips with-A Fountaine that turneth wood in-

Fox-Iland, on the north of Virginia, 1654 Francis Bouadilla chiefe Marshall of the Fleet in 88 fent for England,

killing men : Fish that dyes the Francisco de Zeres his relation of

the conquest of Peny and Culco. called New Caffile, 1491.& leau. Francisco Pizarro a Spaniardi bis

discovery of Peru, and successe, -1444, 1451, 4458, 1480 LACO. TAOL 1401 . 1001 . 1001 . 1001 S. Francis a river in America. 12 22 A towne share with Chimbers.

Ribon, Deane, and University of Spamards Franciscan Fryers of great effective in the West Indies. 10.42 French-Bay in New France,

French Pox cared with Saffafras.

French nauivations to the north America, 1604. Their diferenters of Cape François, the River M.V. taking possession there, and disconering eight riners more, their differtion and overthrow. 15ml. French famine on the Seas their miferable difireffed fearcity in Florida, mutiny, and cafeby, Sir John Hawkins, 1604 Franchmen remove their plantation from S. Croix to Port Royall, 1616. Frenchmen feite themfelnes within the limits of the English in the Mewfound-Land though to their (mall aduantase, 1813. Frenchmes courtefe to the Enslift nation, 18:4. Frenchmens conetoufnesse, and their infams in that resard, 1638. Frenchmens mustiny against their Cupenine, discovered and revenged, 1514. Frenchmen bastize Indians. 1644. French yearely repaire to the New-found Land for Traineoyle, 1884. French Kings wrongs to England 1892. French Ambastador plotteth with Moody 4bout the death of Querne Bizabeth, 1892. Frenchmen difplanted from Virginia by Captain Argalk, 1808, 1809. Frenchmen feife on pare of the King of Spaines Armada, tern Fresh-water-forings in the Newfound Lind.

mariners of our English nation. Captaine Frobisher his galarias and prosperous conflict with the Spansh Armada in 88, and re-

Fiver Marco de Niza accompanied

with disters other their voyage in-

to New Mexico, and the adioy-

ning coults and lands 1560 7561

& leg. Fryers that flowed were

charity to the Indians then Gons

Panerals among the Indians of Wia-21130000 Furres very good bought for knines,

Tanes rich and sweetest of any thing

Fyall or Fayall, a towne in the Azotos, the fertilitie, bioneffe, dweltings, and taking thereof by the Lord of Cumberland, 1143

Aboretho, an Indiantowne, Gachepe, a high land neere the inwance into the river Canada, - 1606. The defaription and bigweffe thereof. 1616 Galliaces in number 4 in the fleet in 88, under the command of Dom

are described. Galacs, and their power in fighting, 1183. Gallies of Anda-luzia feife on a Barke of Plimouth,

Vgo de Moncada, 1900. They

Gallions comming to the West Indies were cast away on the Ile .1 Guaddope, 1843. Galleons of the Fleet in 88 described, 1901. A Gallion barnt in the Portinsall vorace. Games ofed among the Mallafoyes,

Garcillasco de la Voga, his relation of the ancient Kings, and Laves of Peru before the Spanish con-1454,&fiq. Gardens of Gold, 1465,1466 Garone ariner in Florida, 1603 Gates, viz. Sir Thomas Gates his

armall in Virginia. Gates his Bay in the Bermudas, 1739. Sir Thomas Gates wrack and redemption on the Ilind Bermudas largely related, 1734, & seq. His endurance of a grienous forme, 1734, 1735, 1736. Ari. wall at the Iland, 1737. His care for the Virginian Colonie, fending Rauens there, and care and toyle to furnish Pinaces for a voyage, 1 742, 1743. His punishment and

cie against him, 1743. His crosses by a fecond musiny, 1744. By a third, ibid. His punishing of a factions feliow, 1749. His Letters to Sir George Summers, containing his defire of furthering a Plantation, and reclaiming the factions, 1745, 1746. His religiom orders in Bernaudas, 1746. Englands, with good rites and seremonies, ibid, 1747. His fettine layle for Virginia, and arinall there; 1748. His miserable relcome ibid. His affuming the Presidenty there, 1749. His speech to the distressed Company, with its acceptation, 1749. his proposing orders to the Colony. 1749. His aliotting times of labour, 1750. Purpole to leave the Country, 1751. Resigning the Presidency, 1704 unto the Lord De la Ware, ibid. His returne for England, 1756. His teltimonie under cathof the State of Virginia, 1757,1758 Port-Ricco, (omerobat dange

Gawaiba, the north west point of row for navigation, A Generall Should bee couragious in fight, and courteons in victorie,

The Generals authority among the Spaniards, Geneue: a Riner. Gentlemen, in what manner made knowne and fixled among the Bra-Sir George Carew ois valour in Gnats, the voyage to the Azores Iles, 1840 Goauar River, Mafter George Percies relation of the louth colony of Virginia, 168; eticqu. Heis Deputy Gonernor

in the absence of the Lord De la Mafter George Thorne 100 courteous to the Sanage-Uirginians, ernella repaid. Saint George, one of the Ilands of

the Azores, the situation and de-Scription thereof, 5. Geo ge, one of the Bermudas or Sommer Hands, 1794 George Fenner, his valorous en-

courses with the Spanish Armada 1005 Georges Foit, a plantation neere the river Sagadoc in Mawoo-1874

Giboya, a great land Snake without por fun in Brafile, Gilbert,viz.Sir Humfrey Gilbert pardon of mutinies, and confpira- his arine at the New-found land, Goldin no valer,

1882. Loft one of his Ships at the Herof Canady, and returning for England was onerwhelmed in the

Captaine Bartholmew Gilbert bie voyage to Virginia, with the occurrents therein, 1656. 1657. et leq. He is flaine and foure men more by the Indians, 16.8

and possessing it for the King of Gilbert-point, on the coast of the New-found Lands: Ginge a towne of Sanages in the In-

> Ginolos, an Indian Province, the description and situation thereof 1563. The fruitfulnelle thereof. commodities, inhabitants, and their workmanship and apparell. their long haire, tall flature, great valour, and weapons, 1563, 1564 readinesse in them to heare the Gofpell, their Baptisme, and Casaidme, Subjection to the Denill. and familiarity with him, their honfes, incennity, and adoration of Castles, with Mats, and couerings

of Reeds 1564. Their formes of mariages, and Polygamy, education of children fallmons in making Knights adopting sommes, manner ibid et 1565 of barralls. Ginger plentifull in Port-Ricco,

Ginger how it orometh. 1178 Gironde, ariner of Florida, difconered by the French. Glaffes fold deare. Guamanga, a City inthe forth fea, 60 leagues from Lina, 1416 1359

1248 God acknowledged by the Ethiopians, and called Cari-pongoa, 1233. bythe Brafilians Tupan,

Godwin-fands, Gomeribo, a mountaine in Guiana very fraisfull polleffed by the Englift 1278. delinery thereof to an Indian as tenant to the King of England. 1672 Gomora, one of the Canary Hands,

John Goodmans vorage and difireffe in New England, 1848 Gold (which is ftrange) very much difpraifed, 1814, 1815. Gold in Post-Ricco, 1165, 1170. In Topimo.

Gold-getters shall have many corri-Goldready tried of great valer in the Rivers of Port-Ricco, 1170

THE TABLE.

Gold among the Topinaques, 1229 among the Pories, fore, 1229. Gold, 1220, 1221 1232, 1358. In Affrica, 12:7. The mamer of purifying it in the Indies, 12A2. and plenty there, ibid. Gold in Guiana how, and how pure, 1249 1261. Gold in Bem, 1255. in the River Aracow, 1262. Gold how greedily defired, 1277. Gold fore in the mountaine Oraddo, and plaine of Mumpara, 1284. Gold gathered two waves, 1295. Plenty of gold, ibid. Gold pro-cureth trechery, 1415. Gold great store, 1419. Gold Bipped from Cartagena for the Spaniard

euery yeare how much, 1410 Gold is not alwaies the or eatest eleuntion of the Country where it is, A Gold-defirer how ferned by the

Indians, 1391. The defire of gold mak th (hristians infamous among Pagans, 1449. Gold called by them the Christians rod. 1450. Gold net valued, 1526 Golden Country,

A golden chain of incredible weight and bigneffe, 1480. Infinite fore of gold in Per , 1490 1491, 1494. Agold-wedge, the greatest that ever was naturally found, lost in the Sea.

Goinols voyage to Virginia, their resolution to plant, and breaking off againe, 1647,et (q. Goinols bove,

Gotier & his connerting the Indians after the Spanish fullion, 1449 Gouernment necessary by Land or

Sea. Gouernours-Iland, a little Iland neere Port Ricco, abounding with Store of Pigeons.

Cap. Gourgues as renchmans nausgation into Florida, his revenue on the Spania ds, for the wrongs his Countrimen (uft ineder them,

1604.1605 Giampus, a Bay in Non England to called by reason of the multitude of Grampufes found in that place, all Guaniguanico, kind of hearber, rects, and trees, and a very fertile foile, 1846,

Granada, a new Kingdome of the Spaniards in America, the plenty of gold, chiefe City, and fenerall Proxinces therof, 1419. Extream desolation and lesse of inhabitants by the fanage tor wees and cruelties of the Soundards, 1591,1592 Guayanaguacu, cane inhabiting Sa-- 1593,1594,1595

Granata Iles, Grand Bay a Harbour on the north Grapes good against the flux, 1172, Graffe wanting in ablacke champlon

country of the Indies, Gratiola, one of the Iles of the Azo- Gurracayo, inhabitants of part of res, 1671. It (ubmitteth it felfe to the English Admirall. 1060 Guaitaca-Indiane. Gregory 13. his rage against Q. Guatalca, a principall Port Towne,

Elizabeth. 1801 Greedinelle a dangerous enemy, Guadianilla, eriner in Port-Riceo, 11,2,1397. Greedinelle tofeth his prey, 1964. Greedinelle of Guaire Brafile Indians. 1200 Mariners a maine preindice to Guirapanga, a bird that makes a the Virginian Colony. 1751 Sir R chard G cenuile Generall of Gulgaifi, Indians neere the riner of Virginia, his voyage and acts,

the Spanish Armadoes, 1961 Sir R chard Greenuites fight with the too unequal Spanish Fleet his front relistance, and great presshim, his taking and death, with his Encomium.

Guamimbique, france [mall birds chidas some thinke of bubbles of Guacapo, drinke made of the coor-

het spices, in the Indies, 1174 Guacoya, a torme in Florida necre the river Rio grand, the inhabitaxts and commodities thereof,

Guada canal, one of the Iles of Salo-Guadalupa-Ile, wherein is a Buthe

Guiahate, a towne in Florida, well peopled, and plentifull with Maiz

Guaiacatu , Sauages of Brafile, 1299 Guaiacones Indians, 1510

Gualda a ftrange Spring in Terce a, 1670 1501

Guarionix, a Realme in Hif aniela, the King pittifully abisfed by Spaniards, Guanos, afruit in S. Luciawhich enten ripe (ets a man a scouring,

but greene, stayes from scouring. Guatatlan, a pronince in Ivew Spain

1299

1186 Guayo, Brafilio Intains, 11209 Grande, a riner in Florida, 1503 ! Gu yavaq all a suer with & Hands inthemouth. Thoo 1446 of the New found Land, 1882 Gualco, a Pronince in Florida.

Gapes in New France, 1612 Guatimala, a Province de America dispeopled by Spanish truelty.

> Brasile. 1127 1300

found as hard as a Bell, \$ 106 Plate their description 1350 1645. his desperatonesse against Gumins of rare operation for sand ? diseases in Guyana. A Gunners carele nelle, Gunpowder fonne by Sanages,

dice the Spariards Suffained by Guacouclica, aplace rich with filter Mynes. Guits on the West Indian Boures.

in Brafile, of admired colour, hat- John Guy his Letter from the New found Land, 1305 Guyanio, a great mountaine in Po t

Ricco. fest Sugar called Molaties, and Gavauas, a little excellent fruit as big as a Peach, with little feeds in them like Goofberies. It is good against the flax, 1172

Guyana, a river in America, not that of Sir Walte Raieighs, the flore of Cattell, Sugar-mills commodities, and inbabitants thereof.

To hot, that meat may bee feethed Guyrig-Brafilians, 1200 Guarda Tomalongano, a riser in Affrica.

Guyana, 1247, & feq. Therwors and countries adsorning, 1.49. The bounds and limits, 1 270. Riuers and Provinces . 1271, 1272. the government thereof, inflice, icalousie, marieges, ibid. Their divers languages, ancient inhabitants Caribes, 1272. Artiflerie, orderinthe warres, 1272; 1273. Policy featins, accompts of time by the Aloone, religion, rises at burying Captaines, 1273, 1274. Their drunkennesse, opinion of the dead, Pricals and conference with the Devill, 1274. The anality of the Climat, 1274. their promition, bread drinks honey pofficiety of vines, beafts, fift, fowle, fruits, 1.174,1275. Its commodities of

Merchandise, as Sugar-canes, cotton-wooll, wood for dyers of elosb. 1275. Sweet gums very precious in Physicke and Chirmreery, drugs, medscinall plants, frange wood Tobacco, 1276, 1277, the things thefe Indians most defire to trade for, ibid. 1277. hopes of Guvaxule-Promince. Guyraupiaguara, a great land facke that goeth as fail on tops of trees as a man on the ground, 1303 Guyranhe eng eta, an excellent (peaking Bird in Brafile. AGiants Anatomy feat from China to the King of Spaint, of wondrom ereatnelle. Gyants at Port-Defire, their length, bionesse, Singing-flones, 1232 Gyants at Bralile, 1 243. of twelue for height, ibid. Gyants in Pe-

H.

fifty men,

ru, of whom one eases as much as

TAberebin . a Plaine in the West Indies betweene Marwin and Coorepan, Marbours in Virginia verie fafe and admirable. Harbour of Pentecost, sts de-(cription, and commendation, preferred before the riner O enoco, and others, 1664. Its severall beneficiall matters of worth largely. 1665,1666 Harbour of Frenchmen, called by the Indians Aiurema Piafaue in Brafile,it spaffage for nanigators, Capt. Mich. Harcourt, his taking possession of Arrawary, 1278 Capt. Harcourts voyage 1267, &

feq. His company, and departing from Dartmouth, 1267. His ariwall at the Canaries, and from thence to Wiapoco, and Guiana, 1267, 1268. commeth to Garipo, connerfeth with the Indians, 1268,1260 goreeth and relideth with them, 1270 taketh poffeffion of the mountaine Gomerico, 1278 The loffe of his voyage, 1279, leameth Guiana, 1281. Recurrech bome, his [mall lo [es of men by the ibid.& 1282 Harris, one that blew off his nofe in frofty weather, at the Straits of Magellanc, Hadarinner atown of Suppay-Saua-

1286

ges in the Indies.

Haile arbig a Fran ges,

Haire as big as a mans finger, Halo, the circle (cen about the Moon very strange and large in the Barmudas Ilands. Hamaca-beds. Hamburgers Ships Surprised by the English. Han, a Language of the Indians in Florida. Hanamob. a counce of the Arwac-Samages in the Indies. Haps hill in Virginia. Hapaluia, a oreat Floridan towne. and its commodities. Harbouring in enemies ports is verie danocrous, Hardoo an Arwacca towne in the West Indies. Hatuncolla, Pancarcolla, Indians that have diners fables of their Originall; they worship a Ramme, and facrifice unto him, 1461 Hawkins Mayden-land, 1384 Sir Iohn Hawkins his courtefie to the French, 1604. St. Ioh. Hawkins voyage, 1177. His comtesie to the Spaniards repayd with trechery ibidic feq his mistortune, 1179. Death, 1183. A comparing of him with St. Fran . Drake Master Will. Hawkins men perfidionstr flaine at Playa. Sir Richard Hawkins his voyage, 1367, & (cq. His comming to the Canaries, Ilands of Cape Verde, the West Indies, and accidents there et by the war, bid at large: the ouerthrow of his voyage, 1282 His comming to the Straits of

1185.1186 Magellane, 1384. the danger of his hip upon a rocke there, 1388. their strange delinerance againe from hippracke, 1389. His commino into the Straits of Manellane, 1391. His taking fine flips, 1393. His fighting with the Spanish Armada, his dangerous wounds, 1403, 1404, 1405, 1406 The successe and accidents of this fight at large, ibid. & 1407. 1408. His surrendring the Ship, 1410. His courteons viene by the Spanish General, 1413, et leg. Imprisonment, e.c. 1419. hisre-Spect with the Spaniards, 1417 Hauana, where situate. 1242, 1501 Hay, a beaft in Brafile feeding on arre and leanes of trees, 1243 Head-ache cured by a leafe, 1276 Hispania Noua described, the inha-Herbes very medicinable in Brafile, their names and qualities, 1310,

et feq. Herbes good againft she

boney.

bitants, riches, and commodities

thereof, 1432, 1433. Discone-

poyfon of Snakes, against the Stone. but burtfull to feners; others good for feners, with leanes of a faddome long, for vicers and the Poxe, for the stone, and liner, ibid. Good herbes against the ague, for apurge, for the bloody-fluxe, for porson, for feners, for the wormer, for a womanish sluxe, for wounds, for old fores, for the cough and rheumes, for the scales, for abortion, 1311. An herbe that openeth or shutteth with the Sume, that is sensible, that hath no smell, Herbe that feemeth to have the fense of feeling, 1174 Heardimen of Port-Ricco, their thankefulnesse to Waster Chalons for gining them a poore Frier Heaven refused by some Indians, and Heaven anery with the English polices. St. Helena a Spanish garison towns in Florida, 1182.1200 Henrico, a towne in Vironia, the description and lituation thereof. Henry Earle of Northemberland murthereth himselfe, being committed for treason. Highney, a realme in Hispanicla, the Queen and inhabitants burnt, banged, torne in pieces, or otherwife tortured by the Spaniards, Andrew Hilliard his strange and miraculosu preservation from familing, 1802. His fustenance for eleven dayes on his field, and a Spoonfull or two of water, with a little blood. ibid.er 1803

Hills-hap, a place fo named in the North part of Virginia, 1646 Three Hils, markes of Nassigators on the coast of Brasile, called by the Indians, Aquare, Walon, Remitum, Hills worfb pped by some Indians, A strange Hill in Saint Michael an Hand of the Azores wanting fire, and the Ayre cold, yet baning hot fountaines neere it, 1243. A (moakie fiery Hill in Fuego, Hirara, a beaft in Brafile like a Cimet-Cat, that eateth nothing but

ries of divers Provinces thereabout, with their names, 1556, 1557. & feq. The time when a first it was begunne to be inhabi-ted by the Spaniards, 1577. The fertilitie thereof, ibid. The cruelty commissed by them on the poore Indians. Hispaniola described, \$146. Inbabited onely by Spaniards without one naturall . 1419. The number of inhabitants confumed by the drowning , roafting, paunching, frangling, and other unknowne butchering of the Spanards , 1570. & leq. Hispaniola hath twenty fine thousand Rivers plenteous with gold, the Realmes thereof . \$571, 1572. The innocencie of the Inhabitants, and vndeserved Spanish tortures, 1572 Hobbamoqui, a Power worshipped of the Indians of New-England, the same which wee call Divell, 1867. His illusion, wherewith hee deceivesh that blind and superstitions people, 1867, 1868. His appearing to the Indians in fundry shapes, but usually in the forme of a Snake, Captaine Hobson his voyage being directed by two Indians , the treacherie of his Indians, and bis returne with the loffe of the whole adventure, 1828, Hollanders trade in Hudions River, 1830. Their yearely revenues by the commodities of fishing, the number of their fishing boats, their industrie in providing Ships, Hollanders and Spaniards enmitie each to the other is implacable, Honduras a Bay. Honestie of certaine Indians, in restoring such things as they found in the woods . Honey, aboundance thereof in certaine Trees. Honour preferred before life, 1944 Stephen Horkins a factsous fellow condemned, yet pardoned for mutiny in Bermudas, 1744 Horrura, amountaine 1285 Hories cast ouer-boord, 1910 Horfes all trotters, 1171 Hories Theored with gold, 1490

Horics eaten,

lo. Hortops relation of

adven-

Hofpitalitie of the Indians to tranellers. Hospitalitie among Savages, 1188, Hot-countries agree not with idelers,

Houses of two Bow-flot in length, 1188. Houses on tops of trees, 1285. Houles without roofes, in Regions without Raine, 1420. Houses of great men , how di-Stinguished from those of inferiour ranke, among the Florida-Americans. Houses of the Savages in New-England, the manner of their building, and description of their boulbold Auffe. Lord Howard . Admirall of her Maiefties Fleet to surprise the

Indian Fleet , 1144. His valorous conflicts with the Spanish Armada. Huamachucu, Indians neere Peru, that worship party-coloured stones and facrifice mans flesh, conquered, and reformed by the Emperour of Peru. Hunapampa , Indians that goe na-

> Huana Cupac, sometimes an Emperour in Peru, his worth, valour, conquest, enlargement of his Dominions , his (ubdued nations, clemencie, courtesie to women, 1480, 1481. Further conaucits, and atts, his dicrees consecture of a power supremer then the Sunne, 1481. His feare, will, and prophesie of the Spanish invasion, his death, 1482,

ked, worshipping birds, beasts, or

Hubates, a well-peopled Province,

Hugo de Moncada, flaine by the English in the narrow feas, 1908 An Hulke with nine tunne of gold, 1223. Threescore Hulkes luden with provision for Spaine, taken by the English, Humanitie among Savages of Flotida, to the diffressed Spaniards,

> Hungry fare of the Savares inhabiring New-England, 1852 Hunt, a worthlelfe fellow of the English Nation, his crueity and

treacherous vlage of the Savaces, to the great disadvantage of many of our countrey-men, 1828 Hunting, how bandformely performed by the Indians in Florida.

Fiunting the wilde Boare, how otchiesed by the English at the Bermudas.

Huntly walleth the esternies in the Portugall voyage,

S Aint logo, a towne taken by Sir Francis Drake, and other Englift, 1181. The fruits fortification, commodisies and inhabitants thereof. 1271, 1420 laguacini beafts that are killed by their Reepinesse. lacos Indians, their defire of Relilamaica, the lituation and descripti-

onthereof, 1147, 1185, 1419. possessed by the Spaniards; out of which were flaughtered by them fixe hundred thousand quittlesse Soules without faith or Sacra-. Ianies Ilands, 1279. The commo

dities thereof. ames town in Virginia, how firmate, 1692. The first founding thereof, 1707. The burning and repairing thereof, 1710, 171 i. The aboutdoning, andre-affuming thereof by the English, 173 t. The deferiprion, fituation, fortification, temple. building, and unhealthmelle thereof, 1753 angathus, things made of Canes.

and tred together with Miths i, in stead of boats, aquerequete, A torrie neere Saine Sebastian, 1211, 1212. The Inhabitants thereof. aquereafick, an American River, 1213. In what manner nausgable,

laquetyus, a Tree growing in the mountaines in America. 1214 laques Carters nautoations to Newtound-land & Bird-Iland 160 5 arraraca, venemons Serpents in Brafile whereof there bee fours kinds there mentioned, 1203,1304 Iararaques, Serpents that wie the water among ft the Indians, 1211 Iawayri, a River in America iffuine from Potolin a mountain in Peru.

Iawayrippo, a towne in the West-1368,1212 Iberacua, a Snake whose vehement peison maketh the burt persons blood distribrough all the passages of his body, Ibiboca,

Ibiboca, a Snake very fairs to looke on, and of most vehicutent poyson, but very plentifull in Brasile,

I 1304
Ice-mountaines of eight leagues,
1606, Ices of the Newfound
Land, how cassed, 1627
Idolatry how caused among the In-

dians, 1558
Idols fold to the Indians by Spani-

Icalousse of Sanages, 1662,1272
Ienero, ariner neere the Line in the West findies, 1190, the description thereof, 1240, three hundred houses on it, its description,

ieperos, Indiani so called, 1361
Ieronimo-riuer, 1386
Ierome Benzoes relation of the new World, 1448,& feq.
Iesuits Colledge at Samos, 1203,
Iesuits friends to Sausges, 1243

letints bring up the children of the Brasilians, 1232. are of great effective comon them, 1298. Icinits all in the Indies, 1564, 1565. Icinits exploits and trauels, either for denotion we ambition, 1807, their pride, thick Inwahes Indians of Florida.

Itha grande, a plate neere Brafile,

Hands on the North of Virginia, their description and commodities for fish and falt, 1654

iles of Salomon, their disconery and description, 1447

Ile Malhadom Florida, 1508. the inhabitant, defription, and commodities: extreame mourning for children, and the neglet of age, their burials, and maniagerites, their Phifitians, their hinfes, beds, figures, manner of caring the licks.

1508,1509
Hes of Saint Peter, I neere Canada
Hes of Saint Paul, 1606
Liand of Pearles in the South Sea.

Ite Francisco, 1180,1411
Faire Hand, 1180,1411
Faire Hand, 1184, 1410
Hand of Cockles, 1430
Hand of Birds innumerable, 1605
He of the Hare in the Ruer Sugesmy, 1610
He of Oleans in Canada, eucompuffed with democrous flats and
fouls, in description. 1611
Toiny Handsfull of Wedness neere

1612

Canada,

Ite of Saint Eloy, the fertility of the foyle adiopning, fitnesse to bee planted, 1611,1612 Iles neere the Sault, or fall of Came-

Iles necrethe Sault, or fall of Canada, description, various sertility of beastrs, trees, and fruits, 1613. Ile Percee in Canada, 1616 Ile de Bonadventure, ib.

lle of S. Croix in New France, its description and fertility in duser's kinds, 1622, its three discommodities that hinder good wintering in it, 1623, an fland of Vines thereabout, 1633, lles very commodisus, and has borous, 1884.

Hand woyage under the Earle of Elfex, 1935, & feq.
Illas de Lobos, defart llands in the
Indies abounding with Seales,

Illas de los Galapagos , defart Ilards and fruitelle, 1400 Ile of Elizabeth, she Trees, Fowles, Beafis, Fruits, Fishes, Snakes, Colours , CAstetals, and Stones, thereof described, 1651, 1652,

Image of our Lady at Mexico,

Images of gold among the Indians,

Imperiall, a City of Spaniards, the inhabitants familh, 1477
Inca Roca, a Pernan Emperour, his alls and conquests, repairing Schooletory in Arts, his death and successor 1457

Incas, the name of the Emperours of Peru before the Spanish inuafion. 1458, their Sacrifices to the Sunne, their ceremonies, conceit of Sicknesses, idolatry, Priests, Monafterses , dissission of Empires tythings, tything-men, officers, education of children, their Indges, and manner of deciding of controversies, Counsellors of Warre, Prince Conneellors, and pretended connersion of their neighbours, 1461, their Astrolonie, opinion of Eclipses, Thunder, and Rainbow, their Dreames, Geometry, Chorography, Arithmeticke, Musicke, Poetry, Commedies, Handicrafi(men, 1462, 1463. The Incas, their Monasteries, and pretions golden ornaments, their life, chaftiny, and employment, 1466, their manner of Charing of tillage, care of widowes and fonldiers, tributes, freedomes, want of Beo ours, Innes holpitals. treasuries, courses after victories, 1469, 1470. Inpendions riches and power of their Princel house, in and admired fine flavor of gold on their emaneuts, officers, hunting, and Poffes, 1470. 1471. It is a second of their come Sifers, 1470. 1481. The lacas morre their come Sifers, 1470. their along, hand, ment, trecherous conguest, and final extirpation by the Spaniard final extirpation by the Spaniard 1484-1488.

Indians killing themselnes because they would not ferme the Spani. ards, 1419. A Bratasem of their against the Spaniards, 1442. 1443. Indians bon deals with by the Spaniards, 1448. their abasing all Christians for their Sake, 1449 their magnanimity, and feare of horses, 1449 their discrees reproofe of unchristien Christians, 1450, and opinion of them, their name for them, the promulgation of their liberty, 1453, 1454. Indians wor hipting high mountaines 1450. Indians that wor hip the lea because it reelds them fift, and the Whale because of his greatnesse, 1471. Indian policy and overthrow of the Spaniards, 1476. Indian victories , 1477. their valour and dexterity in armes, ibid. Indians names beyond Moreshego, 1280. Indian nations and languages almost innumerable in Florida, 1521. Indian superstition, 1522. Indians countries dispeopled by the Spaniards, the feare they beare toward them, they are fooner reclaimed by lone then cruelty. 1525. Indians laz y life, 1154. Indian Sodomy, 1519 West Indians described, 1158. Camball-Indians afraid to ease & man, left he fhould have the Pox, 1177 Indians at leaft thirtie thousand staine and captimed by the Portingals at one time,

An Indians courage and (hriften desire at bir death, 1219)
Indian, a Fish in the Sea, and For in the wood, 1243
Indians manner of punishing marviber and adulters, then telousse of their wines, 1272
Policie in their wares, 1272
Todans another indians, and other indians, and other indians, 1273

Indians

Indians with rough skinnes like buffe, 1280. Names of Indian Riners, 1281. et 1282. names of Nations, 1280 et 1282. Indians how bruitifily and trecherously dealt mithall by the Camball Portingals, chusing rather to five to the mercy of their fleshdenouring enemies, then these Christian Antichristian Sauages 3 22. Their fruitlesse baptisme by the Portingali, 1 323 the Indians religion of Brafile, or rather irrelivion, the feare they have of the Denill, 1226, 1237. their folcom affembly, finging, 1337, & lequ. dancing, ibid. Ceremonics, super-Aition,idslatrie, ibid. Indian valour, 1295. Indians worfe then flanes to the Spaniards, 1398. Indians couernment , disposition, and fate in generall, 1421. Indians valour, 1 447. and simplicity in matters of knowledge and religion, ibid Indians in New Engof hunting the beaft called Moile. 1832. Indians of Dominica taught to drive their Canoas with farles, 1823. Indians fore terrisfied at the light of some Englishmen, 1843. Indians drinking enely at the Spring head, 18,2. their feare of the English , upon report that they kept the plaque buried in a store kouse permitting it to infect as it pleased them 1855 they buy mens lives for Beners skins, ibid. Indians of Mattachieft, their kinde vlage of the English, 18 38. Indians of Manomet much given to gaming, will play for the skin on their wines baches, 1859, their toyfull receiming some religious precepts, 1862 Indians in Port-Royall, their courtese in actting provision for the French Plantation, 1623. Indians oration and elequence courtefic, noblenesse, liberality upon what termes, 1622. Indians of the Northerne America, their playing & musiche their customes incuring wounds, their simplicity and ignorance, yet (ubtility, threnifenelle, and traiterou/nelle, 1634. they must not bee depended on, but (wayed with fenerity. ibid, an Indian womans prefent ibid. the Indians disapproofe of garments, ibid. Indians of divers Imquages, not understanding one another in New France . 16:5. Indians how they may best be terrified, 1635. You must not express any security, but alwayes seeme to be warie, resolute, and prepared for them, 1635. Indians of New France their marfare, 16:8. Indian Southsaying, and suspessed trechery, 1639. Indians lone to their children, ibid, they are preferred before (hriftians, ibid. Indians weepe at the departure of the French from their coals. 1640. Indians christned in New France by the Frenchmen, 1644. Indian battaile, victory, and the consequents thereof, ibid. Indians of Virginia, their strange apparell. and other description. 1644 Their great delight in musicke, dances, meapons, ornaments, boats, gardens. coc. 1655 trechery, and discovery, 1656. Indians dispofition and trechery, ceremonies. idolutrie, women, and their nature, their ornaments, 1662, 1662. & feg. Indian Virginian words of language wied amongst them, 1667. Indians in Virginia creeping upon all foure, with their bowes in their mouthes, desperate and hara 1686, their women and maids habit, and other customes, 1689. An Indian 160 years old, with a long white beard very lufty which is even e wonder amonest them, 1689. Indians Subtility and rebellion to the Staniards in Florida, their Accepter by them, after flauerie, 1533, 1534. their murder by the Spani b feruitirie, 1535. an Indian Lady that (waid a Nation of them in Florida, the commodities of her country, and the courtefie fice showed the Spaniards, 1537, 1538. an Indian barned, ibid. another christned by the Spaniards . 1 e: 8. Indian fratagem against the Spanwords, 1544 their Sudden Slaughter, and endangered vimolt overthrow of them, 1545. Indians paint themselves with terrible colour, to firike terror in their adatrfaries, 1546, their trecherie, bid. Indian eloquence, 1550. an Indians validat and wittie answer to an imperious Soaniard, 1552. Indians ridiculous custome at the death of their Catique, 1552, Indians how they are wont to expresse obedience to Some of their Superiors in Florida 1553. An Indian throwne to the dogs by a Spaniard, 1554. Indians conspiracy against the Spa-

nia ds in Florida disconered, the allor: oreelly dealt with all barring their right hands cut off. sees. An Indian burnt for herefie, and conferrery by a Spanish Indre in New Soune 1557 Indian idelatry and worfhip of the Denill. 1558. they must bee brought to Christianity by feare, as faith a Spanis Freacher, 1500, Indian byoccrifie, 1558. linea vltima. Indians fo couragious and valiant, that armed most with poore clubs, they contest branely with Strongly armed Spaniards on horse backe, 1558. Indians mor/hipping plants and birds, and fineing fongs wato them : and that facrifice one mean yearely to a painted Serpent, which the facrificed man tak th patiently, 1460. Indian embroidery, 1560. Indian mane of Malle and instructing Minifters, 1563. Indians canable of velsgion, and their baptione and instruction, 1564 Indian fecrets (mothered by Spaniards left thes Bould come to light with their difaduantage, 1567. Indies difcosered by the Spaniards, Anno 1402 the first Land inhabited the He of H Spaniols, 1569. The nature of the Indians in generall thereabout their simplicity, patience, mecheneffe, innocency, inge-nuitie, and sender breeding, 1569. Three Millions of Indians perifs by the Spaniards in Hilpaniola. fine hundred thousand in the I ... cayos, in all thereabout twelve or fifteene Millions, 1569,1570 Indians to the number of a Mila lion flaine and confumed by them in John and lamaica Hands. 1573. Indians suppose Gold to be the Spaniards God, 1573. Indians refuse hearen, fewing to meet the Spaniards there, 1574. Indians how many in the Ile Cuba denoused by Spaniards, 1574. Indians defroyed by Spaniards in Terra Firma, and their multitude, 1575, 1526. Indians in Nicaragina continued by the Spaniards fine bundred thouland. 1577. Indians in New Southe. and its feuerall Provinces, denoured by the Spaniards to two er three Millians, 1577, 1578. Indians in Guarymala, dispatche by Spanierd innumerable, 1579 1530, and Spanifo Man enters. that is, Spaniards allowing therebles of Mans-flesh for food, 1480. ¢ c c c . 2

concrie and plantation of New-

England, Infants flaine by the Savages to doe facrifice to their god Habbamok, Inquifition in New-Spaine, the

punishment of two Italians there, 1177. Inquisitions barbarous cruelsie . Intolencie of the Indians of Matla-

chaoter. Interpreters fo necessarie to a landtravell in a strange countrie, that without them it cannot bee

Ioancho de Luvando. a Mintmaster in Port-Ricco, hisriches,

and plenty of gold, John Ortis a Spaniard, his taking by the Indians in Pamphilo de Naruaez, his voyage, his fundry misfortunes, and escapes, with a happy meeting his countri-men, 1531. His large travailes with Captaine Soto, his death, and the discontent thence is suing to the Captaine.

Saint Johns River in New France, its beauty, store of fish, vines, with other commodities,

Saint Iohn de Port-Ricco , a Citie in the West Indies, taken by the English, its description, aire, dewes, greatneffe , Church, mant of Glaffe-windowes, doores , ftanding of their Quire in the lowest part of the Church, 1144 Foris fication, 1165. Healthine ffe, ibid. Its situation, 1169 And fortifica-1418

Saint Iohns head, the easterly part of Port-Ricco.

Captaine Iohn Smith his discoverie of Ruffels Iles, Point-Plover, and Limbo Iles in Virginia, 1712. His entertainment by the Savages, with courtefic, and treacherie, his mens defire of returne, 1713. His many Savage bickerings, endinger by a stinging Fish, and (afereturne, 1714. His fetting forth agains, and encounter with the Savages, 1714, 1715. The lone bee received from Molco that Savage, ibid. His fight with the Tapahonecks, 1716. His oreat tempelts, yet fafe returne, 1716. His affuming the presidencie of Virginia, 1716. His oppofition by the Councell, tourney to Powhatan onely with foure, 1717. His Grange entertainment, ibid. His provision for Nanfamund, project for Powhatan, and

and passages with Powhatan 1721, 1722. His escaping death amidit his treacherous vaffals, ibid. His abuse by some treacherous Dutchmen, 1723. His great danger with fifteene men, by a multitude of Indians, ibid. His valiant evasion, and forcing them to composition, captinating their King in the midft of them, ibid. of 1724. His portoning by the Vallals of Powhatan and elcape, 1725. His death plotted by Dutchmen, his escape, encounter, and captivating the King of Palpahigh, and other bickerines. 1726. His progresse in the plantation hinderance, and defire of rea monall thereof, 1727, 1728. His hatred by unftart plantationers. escaping their plots, and revense on them . 1720. His suppressing mutinies , appealing , concluding peace, endanger by powder, 1730. 1731. His endanger of murther, grieuous torture, returne for England, and the canfe, with the confequents. 1731, 1732. His accufers, and accusation, 1731. His innocencie.

Master Iones his endeuours, furthering the plantation of New-England, Ippoa, a place neere the great Iland

1212 in America. Iraling, a place seven leagues from Mexico.

Irocois, Savages in Canada, 1607 Their River and manner of fortification with flakes, 1612. Their further description, provision, and townes, and warres, with their vangsishment, and affrighting 1643 with a musket-shot, Iron extelled above gold, 1814 Isla del Gallo, an Illand, 1444 Ithuera, a towne of the Caribes, one

dates iourney from the head of the River Marwin, Saint Juan de Lua, achiefe partin Nous Hispania,

Iuan de Ofnate, his discoverie of the North from old Mexico , bu armie and preparation, 1 563. His loffe and revenge of his Nephen, his building a towne, and poffeffir on for Spaine, uan Fernandes Hands, their fitna-

tion and plenty, Iucaran, how fo called, 1455. The inhabitants tortured, and con'umed, by the Spaniards, 1581, 1582,1583

ferring forth, 1720. His discourse, Iumanos Indians,

THE TABLE.

Saint Iuo de Vilua, a Port towne, Juana the fecond fland in Orenoque Ixtatlan, a place in New-Spaine, Iyanough, a Governour among the Savages of Pechanochick , Saint Izabella, one of the Iles of Sa-

lomon.

[/ Aiwaire, atowne inhabited by the Careebees , in the River Marwin in America. 1282 Kebec, a place in New-France, wherein was a plantation of the French begun by Capt. Champlaine. 1642. The natural fruit and commodities thereof. ibid. Kecoughtan, a towne of Savages in Virginia, 1687. The inhabitants. maner of entertainment, dancing, Orations. Kenebek, a towne under the Dominion of Apophamen in Mawoofhen. Ketangheanycke, a town under the Sagamos Octoworth, 1875 Capt. Keymish bis voyage to Gui-Kiarno, a towne of the Sanares, Kietitan, a god of the Savages, Kine very france in Brafile, living in water, without hernes or vdders, 1243. Kine ftrange necre Quiuira, with bunched backs, A Kings distinction from others among the Amazons, is by a crowne of feathers, a woodden (word, or a chaine of Lyons teeth. Kings bodies how bestowed after death by the Peruans, before the Spanish conquest. Kings dring among the Floridan Indians, and Tartarians, two your men are flaine, to wait upon them in the next world.

King lames his name nothing re-

spected among the Spaniards.

1814. His faithfulnesse to the

Queene of England , his wife

answere to her Embassadour.

1912. His gracious letters to

the Earle of Southhampton

touching the Silke-wormes, and

Io. King Englishman , one that ti-

ved fifteeene yeares at Santos . Kimbeki, a River in New France.

Knaw-faw an Iland, how fituate, Knights, how chosen and created

among the ancient Emperours of Peru, and who thought worth of Krighthood

(niuets adventures, accidents, 1 192 He finds a cheft of Rials, 1203. Lofeth his toes by froft , 1204. Narrow Scaping death, 1205. 1206. His danger by a Sea-Monster, 1207. Eateth Whale, 1207. His escaping (all his fellowes flaine) 1207. His comming to the River Innero, and escaping from drowning by a woman, his life there, 1208. His flaverie in a Sugar-mill, nakedne (Te, hame, and flight to the wilderneffe, his life there, 1208. His perillby a Savage, 1208. By a Sharke-fifb. 1209. His disastrous flight and wracke, 1209. In danger of flar-ving, ibid. His imprisonment, condemnation pardon, 1210. His wounding the Factor, fight, ionrney, and fortune, 1210. His fearfull travels through the wilder-nesse, and manifold dangers there, 1210, 1211. His returne to his old mafter after many perils. 1212. Kils a oreat dangerous Snake, 1215. Is Stocked and brought to execution, laved, 1216 Paffeth in a weake veffell through a River that ran under-ground. 1217 His escape, all his fellowes devoured, ibid. His nakednesse, 1218. Returne againe to his Portingall Mafter, bis danger, ibid. C 1219. His adventure underwater, 1220. His escape and voyage to Angola in Africa, his fending backe againe, ibid. His plot and dangerous discoverie, 1221. Saveth his master from drowning, ibid. Is imprisoned, 1222. Escapeth drowning, 1223. Ariverh at Lisbon, his sicknesse there, 1224. One and twenty times let blood, 1225. Hisrecoverie, imployment, and imprison-

1208 A Knife bought eight women, Silke-graffe in Virginia, 1787 Kuskarawaock, a river in Virginia,

the inhabitants thereof 1694

Abour well imployed hath its reward one time or other. La Buena Ventura . an unhealthe

place in Peru. La Canela, a Country in Peru.

Lacana, a miserable towne in Flo-

Laguada, a towns in Port-Ricco. Lake of a bundred leagues in length,

A Lake wondrous oreat, 1612. A Lake of 80 leagues, 1614. Many

others, ib. & 1615. One of three hundred leagues, La Loma de Camana, a very fertile joyle in America, the description

thereas La Mocha an Iland in America.

Lampere , a fortified Citie of the Carios in the Indies taken by the Spaniards.

Lancerota, the town and Castle taken by the Earle of Cumberland. 1151,1155. It is one of the orectell Ilands of the Canaries, I Ice The chiefe towne in it described, 1156. The inhabitants , armes, fituation, commodities, latitude. their feverall harnests. Church Religion,

anguage of Savages , 1237. A thousand languages of Savages. 1524. Languige mords of Virginian Savages, 1667.Language very copious and difficult.

La Pacheta, a small Iland, 1414 Laquedambaras, Nut-trees among the Indians.

La para Iua, a place in the Indies taken by French from the Spanish. and repossed by them. 1438 Las Cabecas , Iles fo called , 1244 Las Ilhas , an American towne,

Lavfield, viz. Doffer Layfield his relation of Port Ricco voyage. 1155. 6 leq. His imployment under the Lord of Cumberland.

Kniues and Hatchets deare fold Leafe in Guiana called Kellette cuamongst the Indians, 1229, ring poisoned wounds, and the heidach, 1276. Apparell made of leanes.

1249 League between the Mulfafois and the English. Leakes, how ftop'd under-mater

Lima Indians of Peru, 1365. Their City, bigneffe, and inhabitants 1416,1421 1315 1248 Line, how and when most fafely to be 1142 Liver, by what meanes corroborated 1326 A monstrous Lizard, Mafter Locks death neere the Line, the onely friend of Captaine Candifh in his laft voyage, 1201 Lomico, a town in the Indies, inhabited by Arwacca Savages, 1285 Londoners voyage to New-Eng-Land, Anno 1616. p. 1838. To the Canaries from London , An.

1616, p. 1839. From London to

New-England againe, An. 1620

enerthrowne by the rage of divers

tempefts, to the loffe of goods and

Long-Ile in New-France, 1622

Long-reach aplace in the Straits of

Magellane,

Lopez de Agira, a mutinous Souldier among the Spaniards, his extreame cruelty, and event, 1436, 1437. His plot to poison Queene Plizabeth. Lonez Vaz. a Portingail, his voyare and Historie touching places and discoveries in America, 1432 orfeq. Loquilla. A hill famons for Mines in Porr-Ricco. Lopos Savages in B afile, called by the Portingals Bilreros : their houses , wildnesse, harmlesnesse, Characlefneffe , beuftlineffe , women, complexion, 1230. Store of Lord de la Ware his happy arisall at the diffressed Colony in Virginia 1722. His presidency there, 17e4. his first Acts, and the constitution of Officers, his councell ibid. His fending Sir George Summers to the Bermudas for provision, ibid. His wrongs by Powhatan, and evenge, with a message to him, 1755. Its successe and his pumiling an Indian, 1756 His relation to the Lords and the

His fundry fickneffes, ibid. & 1763 His death in a verage to Vaginia, Lord of Southampton Treafarer of Virginia, 1783. His provision and Supply of it, ibid. Historiers to the Colony touching file-plants. 1787,1788

Conncell of Viginia , touching

bicreturne thence, 1762, chica.

I otterie fet voin London , for the Colony in Virginia. Lots cast for every mans severall logding in New-England, 1848 Low-Countries supposed to have Ships great and (mill of all forts , 10000 Saint Lucia, 1146. The description and commodities thereof, 1165

Tukes-Bay, a pleafant harbour in New-Scotland, Lutherans thought a title of ignomine to the Spaniards, though they confifed God took - part with

Luyfa, a tomue neere Port-R'cco,

Luvs de Moscoso made Gouernour of Cube, and Adelantado of Florida after Sotoe: death, 1552. His and his companies resolution to travellby Land Westward in that countrey, his ariuall at feuerall Indian townes, and entertainment, 1553. His being in danger | Malabrigo Port,

of toling himselfe and his company in the defert-countreys, ibid. His uncomfortable travels in the Irferts & endurace of scarcity there. his returning the fame was hee came, 1554 And taking paffage downe a River to the fea. the whole remainder of his company their dangerous forme , and perill by the Indians in the River, 1555-His arinall at Panuco, 1556 Lying , how punished by some In-Lyma, aplace in the West-Indies.

1242, 1393. The description of the Baythat leadeth to it, 1394 Lyons in the West Indies , 1211. They call them lawarolou, 1229. are worshipped in Peru, 1457

M Acanao, the westermost point of Margarita, 1266 Macca his vorage to Virginia . in a barke (ent by Sur Walter Releigh, Machaleis, ariver in the West In-Maccali, a Small River neere Ore-11000, and Guy 2F12, 1246 Macucagua, a Bird resembling the Fealert, and hath three skins one

ouer another, 1 206 Macurio, a River. 1247 Macuerendas a Nation in the River Parana in the Indies, populous and fierce, their description, 1350 Macuta Indians in Brafile, 1200 Midalena , a River in Florida ,

Madera Ilands, their description, diseifion, and commodities, 1369 Madera lie disconcred by Master Challons, in his voyage to the North of Virginia. 1822 Madiopuera , avenemens fumme,

Magalines , a Portingall Naviga-1873 M. guana , a Province in Hilpa-1572 Magdalene River, Magellane Straits described, 1384.

Vide freights. Magellane freights extreame winter, 1193 Mogury, a tree yeelding Wine, Vineger, Honey beds, threads, needles, tables, and hafts of knines, besides many medicinable vies, 1421

Maiz of two forts, the one like Rice, the other like Ginny Wheat, 1173 1851. Maketh ftrong drinke, 1258 1399 Manco

THE TABLE.

Manco King of Peru . his diffreste by the faithlesse Spaniards, and the iffue 1486, 1487 Mammeis, an excellent kind of fruit. Manarippano, an Iland in the midit of the River Otenoco, 1249 Manilla Iland. Mandioco, the ordinar food of the inhabitants of Brafile, which ferwesh for bread: the strange effects thereof, 1214, 1309,1310.Wine made of the root Mandioco . which preferveth the Liver, 1310 Man-eaters , vid. Canibals. Mans inconfrancie, 1190,1101 Mapies, certaine Indians fo called. their description, countrey, and commodities, they are a very warlike Nation , and treacherous . 1362,1362. Their oversbrow by the Spaniords. Marble Rocke of halfe a mile in leneth. Marchin-Bay, how fituate, and why So called. Marcomwin, a village in the River Marwin. Saint Maries Hand, the fitnation and description thereof, 1393, 1143, Mariages how undertaken and folemnized by the Inhabitants of Peru, 1457. Mariage forbidden to him that hath not taken his ene-Mariquites, certaine Canibals fo called, their stature, women , dwellings religion, language, cloathing, 1226.1227 ctc. Maroer, a Brasilian River, 1242 Mariners, their duty and disposition. 1168, 1401 Martha, a Province in America very rich in gold and other commodities, 1583. It is now changed from a peopled Countrey to a defert, by Spanish crueltie, 1583, Martha's Vineyard, a dis-inhabited Saint Martha, a towne taken by Sir Francis Drake. 1183 Marwin River, and the Regions therevnto adjorning, Mallafovs, a company of Savages in New-England. 1849 MatTat ovt. his acknowledgement of King lames to be the Governour Menehighon Iland, how fituate, of his Countrey, and himfelfe his English, and prohibiting the French, 1852,1862 Mallangono, a Portmoull Fort in

Affrica, the description thereof . 1 \$220, 1234, Gold therein taken by the Portingels. Martines much reparded in Virginis. Matauzas, the situation and description thereof 1246, 1247 Matinio, a haven in America, 1146,1157 Saint Matthews Bar. Ricco.

Matta diabolo, a Fort in Port-Mattaick, a Rocke which with the brightnesse thereof dazeleth the Mattouri an Ilandin Guiana, 1272

Mauriapigtanga, Inhabitants of Brafile. Mawooshen, a Countrey discovered by the English , Anno 1622.

Maids how distinguished from maried women in Virginia, 1680. Their habite and behaniour when they are to be taken to mariage.

Henry Mays his voyage and hipwracke on the Bermudas, or Summer-Ilands, 1795. The losse and saving of some men.

Meat made of Snakes, 1216, Meat how kept from corrupting among the Savages, 1326. Meat not eaten by the Indians , unleffe fantified by the Spaniards. Mcccombe, a towne on the River

Apanawapesk. Mechuacan, a place in New-Spaine. 1557, 1580 M'echuacan, a place neere the South

Mecola, the lituation thereof, 1246 Mendozaes Indian voyage and fuccelle, 1347, 1348, & feq. Hee builds the citie Buenos Ayres. the miserable famine there, and warres with the Indians . the death of his fouldiers : his returnews and death by the way . 1248. 1349,1350

Men of three hundred yeares age in Florida. Mendozakis intended treason against Queene Elizabeth , 1892. Hee being Embassador from Spaine is commanded to depart the English coaft.

man: his kinde ensertainment of Mepenes, a Nation in the River Parana in the Indies, their defeription, frength, and multitude, Mermaids feene in Brafile , 1240 on the couff of New-found-land,

Mormon, or men of the Sea that kill men with embracing, and then feeme to figh, 1315. Some are as little as children, and doe no hurt.

Mefouiquez an Indianfruit, 1519.

Mestizo. one that is halfe a Sanave . and halfe a Portingall, 1207 Metall like Lead found in Canada. on the South. 1618 Meuis He the situation, excellent bathes, and commodities thereof.

Mexico Navigations, 1177. The bione fe of the Citie, the nature and docibilitie of the naturals, the company of Spaniards there . 7 42 1 The populoufneffe thereof, 1412. Mexico and all the adiaming Provinces unpeopled by Spanish crueltie, 1578. Two millions of Indians flaine by them there

Saint Michael a place in the Azores. 1142. A france Hill, and well there, 1142. Its description, 1671 Saint Michael, a River in Ameria ca, neere the River of Toads. 1223. It is dangerous for Navigation.

Saint Michaels Strait in Florida. Saint Michaels towne triumpheth

at the departure of the English, Mico, a river in Florida, which as the mouth is called Rio Grand.

Middletons voyage, 1246. 0 1247 Miles Standish his travell in Newfound-land.

Military orders established in New-England, 1849. Military difcipline as well shewed in making a faire and fafe retreit, as in giving a fierce and furious on/er, 1962 Will. Millington drawie into the

Sea by a Fift, and never feene Mines of goldin Port-Ricco, 1155.

Where the richest Mines, 1177. At Etapulick very rich Mines of gold and filver, 1222, 1229. Olines in plenty , 1230. Likemife, 1231, 1248. Wines of Apalacci in Florida, 1604. Mines of Copper, of a metall like filver in Canada, 1617. Other Mines there, on where to be found, 1618. 1619, Mine of Steele, 1639 Mirch, a preservatine against the CHTHY, Mists, fore and thicke, neere the Banke very cold, and the canfe thereof, 1628. It is then faire at

land though at fea for vie, 1620 Mocha, an Iland in the South fea, 1301. The description and commodities thereof,

Mochocho, an Indian Governour in Florida. 1531,1532

Mogador, a place on the coast of Barbary. Mehotie, a populous Indian Pro-

Melopaques , certaine Savages of Brafile, 12 29. They have fore of cold, but effeeme it not, except to fill withall.

Monasterie in Saint Iohn de Port Ricco, 1165. Monafteries in Peru and Cozco, 1456,

Moneta Ile, its difficult landing and unsteakable abundance of Fowle,

Monkeys rofted and eaten, 1213 Monkeys in Brafile called W1riua by the Inhabitants as bigge as a Spanyell, with long broad beards, 1226, 1302. Their King, bis fashion, and other feats of activitie. ibid. Some that we mendenourers, ibid. Their care in providing the lafety of their your, 1328

Monserotta Iland, 1281 Monieur de Monez voyages related, 1620. & leq. His focietie broken, and is enuited at, 1628 Monte Christo , a weake towne of the Spaniards in the Indies.

1418 Monte de Plata. Mooremoreno Iland, 1397. Its inhabitants, description, their lone to the English , and hate of Spaniards.

Master Moores Plantation and government in the Bermudas Ilands. 1801. His building Forts. ibid. dispelling Spanish ships, and other acts, ibid. His death, and disposition,

Moratiggon, an Ile about a dayes Sayle from New-England, 1849 Morecapana Road , the fituation thereof,

Morecinego, a place in the River Marwin,

Morrequito, a certain country neers Orenoco. 1248 Moron, a towns of Canibals, 1327 Morrowina, Guyanian Province,

Captaine Morgan flaine in Brafile, Morouishaua she Kings name among

Some Savages of Brafile, 1229 Molco a Savage, famous for his lone to the English .

Molle, a certaine beaft as bigge as an Oxe, headed like a Deere, with a broad Palme, which hee mewes enery yeare: his haire is long like an Elke, hee hash a great bunch under his throat, his legges long, his skin maketh very good Buffe, his flesh is excellent food, very vsefull to the Savages in New-England, 1822 Motto of the King of Spaine in Saint

1182 Domingo, Mottavas certaine Canibals in Brafile their love to the English , feeding on Frogges . Snakes. Monkeys and Dogs, their man eating, haire, beafts, and commodities,

1220.1230 Mourning expressed by cutting of the haire among Indians, 1291 Mourning of the Indians for thefe that die,

Mount-maniell, an Iland on the roal of New-England, abounding with the Beaft called M II:,

1260, 1254 Mount Howard, Mount Huntly, 1261 Mount Aldworth in Virginia,

Mountainiers, Savares focalled in Canada, that make warres with the Irocos.

Mountaines flored with gold, 1284. A mighty mountaine (nowy on the top, and terrid at the foot, 1156. A mountaine exceeding fleepe, 1214. A glittering mountaine, 1216. A mountaine of Crab Lice, 1228. Mountaine of metals, 1222. Mountains abounding with filter and gold, 1248. Mountaines covered with Snow, that for their height may bee feene thirty leagues into the Sea,

Moyemon, alarge towne in the River Marwin, 1283 Muccambro, an Ilandand Mountaine in Guiana, 1272 Mumpara a plaine, abounding with graines of gold, 1284 Murther, how punified in Guiana,

1272. In Brafile. 1342 Murther punished by the Indians, with present death. 1870 Muskitoes, their venemons ftinging,

Mulo, a towne in new Granada; the exceeding benefit thereof, to the King of Spaine, Muske of a Crocodiles Cod, 1228

Muske-Snake , a [weet [melling Serpent of Brafile, Mutinie like to receive its deferved reward. 1 20 I

Mutinic, the overthrow of a voyage,

Mutiny among the Spaniards, 1426 Among the French in Florida 1603. Among the English in Virginia, 1729, 1730. In the Bermudas. Mutinga aboundesh with Mynes,

1202 1620

Mutton-Port,

N.

Maguatex, a somme in Florida;

Namaschet, a towne under Mailaloyt, 1851. The Namalchets courteous entertainment of the Names encreased, according to the

number of persons, slaughtered among the Indians, Names altered amongst the Indians according to their acts and diftolition, 1869, Names of certains Englishmen affistants in the Plantation of the New-found-land,

Names of the English Knights fighting at the flege of Cadiz, 1933. Names of the Captaines and chiefe officers in the Voyage to Azores. Naniamund, a River in Virginia,

Nan Shigganfets threaten the Eng-11/6, 1853. Their great Superfishen in doing Sacrifice to their god

Habbamoq ii, Naruacz, his voyage, arinallas Dominica, Same ligo. The Trinitie, bis Bipwracke there, bis comming to the land of Marles, 1900, of a towne in Florida for the King of Spaine, 1501. His armall at Apalachen, and entertainment there, his surprifull by other Indians, his comming to Ante, 1502, 1503. His diftreffed successe. 1504. And loffe of men by the

THE TABLE.

Indians , ibid. His milery by thirst , 1505. His companies extreame weaknesse, 1509. With insufferable famine and mortali-Napetuca, a towne in Florida,

Naragooc, a towne in Mawoofhen,

Nations that are barbarous, licenced by the Popes Bull to be subdued by

violence, Nauarre overthroweth the forces of the French King at the battell of

Courtras. Nauy of Queene Elizabeth fent to

the Azores Navigation the advancement of Na-

Nauigators inftractions, 1368,

Naulets, a company of the Savages in New-England a hundred strong,

Nebamocago, atowne bordering on the River Aponeg, in Mawoo-

Negligence like to endanger the loffe of a great prize, The Portingals for the Well-Negro's rebelling against the Spa-

Neguiwo, an Ile neere the River Sagodohoc in Mawooflien,

Nepios certaine inhabitants of Trimidad Niewoc an Ile in Mawooshen,

Neredofhan, a towne on the River 1874

Aponeg, Nets made to carie travelling stranvers from towne to towne in Bra-

New France, a great part of it thought to be fandie ground as far as Virginia, 1634. 1635. New-Frances commodities presented she King of France, 1641. The inhabitants when first christened,

New-France inhabited by the Frenchmen, because they kope to get a paffage thence to China. 1642, 1644 The marner of trading in New-France, 1626

New-Frances diseases how they may beefcaped. 1624, 1625. New France, the bounds thereof, 1603. The probabilities of gold Mines there, 1621. Diamonds & Turkie Rones there, 1621. Grapes, Fift, and Cedars,

New-Mexico the towns thereof, and

building the inhabitants, and their wer hipping the Denill, 1561 Capri Newports voyage to Virginia, andresurne for England , 1186, 1705, 1706. His Supposed preizdice to the Engles plantation there, ibid. His proceeding to discour Monacan in Vitginia, and suc-

New-England & the New-foundland disconered and implanted by the English, 1827. The climat very temperate, agreeable to the bodies of the English , making them line langer then in other countreys, the Coyle fertile, variety of nourishing hearbs, and roots, the coast full of commodious harbours and havens, many Iles fit for plantation, wood of all forts in abundance, 1831. The people have our English Nation in good estimation , and are tractable intrading, the Sea is stored with all kind of Fish, diver fity of wild foule, Dones in great aboundance in time of Stramberries, abundance of rich Furs, 1831, 1822. Great Shews of Amber-preece and Pearle fore of Whales in the Sea thereabout, ibid. New-England described, 1870. English corne and cattle profeer

New-found-land described, the fervilies of the levle the temperature of the are, conveniencie of the Baies, the inhabitants, their nature and cuffomes, 1885. Herbs and flowers pleasant and medicinable, oreat increase of corne, fore of Decre and other beafts: great store of land and mater-foule, 1885. Store of trees fit to build with, 1886. Great probabilitie of Mynes , and fift in great

abundance. New-Plimmouth abounding with divers commodities of creat worth. and very necessary for mans suitenance : Timber of all forts . diuers Mines of waknowne worth . flore of fift, Beaners, and others,

Nicaragua Province, 1446, 1576 Saint Nicholas Bay, Nicholas Sanders his flunders aeainst Q. Elizabeth ; Hee obtaineth to be the Popes Nuncio; entereth Ireland, winneth Definon: runneth mad, and dresh miserably.

Nicorago, a River, Nilco, a Province or territory in Florida, one of the richest in all that country, the townes, inhabitants,

and commedicies thereof. 155 Noblemen imployed in the verageto the Azores Noble Personages volentaries in 88.

under the King of Spaines banner, 1717. His opposing Cape. Smith, Nondacan, a province in Florida wel inhabited the commodities thereof.

> 1552 Norrack, a Province neere the River

Arwin Gniana. Gen. Nortis his materiall education. Generall of all the English Forcest Martiall in the field under Conte Hohenlo, Martiall of the field in England: Generall of the Army in Friffand Lord Prefident of Minfor in Ireland , 1916. Winneth great honour & fame by his welordered retrait in the fervice before Gaunt, 1962. His death, 1968 M Norwoods relation of the Bermudas, and the Enolish plantation

there. 1707. 6 leg. Noest, a famous Navigator among the Dutch. Norumbera River and the fabulous narrations thereof. 1625

Note loft in cold weather. 110c Noua Galitia. 1 = 26 Noua Scotia, a prosperous plantation, by the dexterity of Sir Samuel Argall, 1828. Noua Scotia, a planta-

tion in America 1871 . Abundance of Strawberries and all kind of wild foule, and very pleasant countrey,

Nunnez his relation of the Fleet which Pamehilo Naruaez was gonernour of in India, 1499. 6 icq. His shipwracke , 1500. His disastrous fortune by samine, ficknesse, Lubour, and nakednesse, am. 117 the Indians, 1509, 1510. His comming after divers perils to the Indians- Juanerez, 1514. His mishaps there, and dangerous escating of burning , 1515. His curing the ficke by prayer and railing one from the dead, 1516. His comming to the Harbidaos, and the hungry Sifes hee made there, 1517, 1518. His repute among the Savager, their feare and admiration of him, 1521. 1422, 1323. Histravell to the South Sea, and occurrents, 1524, c.c. His meeting with his country-men, 1526. His avivall at Compostella and Mexico.

Nunno de Guzmans his expeditions, 1 556. 6 ieq. Histaking poffefsion for the King of Spaine in the dddd

O Ares of what fashion among the West-In lians, 1158. Oares of the Indians of the Newfound-land. Oaths and Blathhemie anainst God, and our Lady, forbilden in the Spani b Armado, 1902. Oths how punified among the English in Virginia. Ocagna a place in America where is abundance of gold, 1419 Octwita, a presty binge Iland in Orenoque. 1148 Ochere tonne. 1534 Ochus . a Floridan Province .

Ocoa, a torme in Hipaniola, 1186,

1418 Ocute a towne in Florida, 1555 Occore, a high mountaine, 1:48 Offrings amontif the Indians to the Dinet by the intercossion of their Priest Powah. Olmoleigh River, Olypha a mount in the Indies. 1252 Oinit an , a Province of the aventer Spaine in America: the deferietion of the countrey. Toyle, and nottaking possession thereof by the Spaniards, Opechankanow, a great King among the Indians taken by an Paman ke River, mic, 1841. And in his own house, die against Captaine Smith ban-Comely recelled.

Oringes their foveraigne vertue, 1378. Good against the scurme, Order observed in the Spanish Fleet,

Ordnances best for Ships : whether long or flort pieces, 1403 Oren que a River in America defaribed,1156,1247,1248.1249, of feq. Parabel River.

Organs, aplace in the Woff-Indies | Paracuona River. abounding with gold mines, 1222, | Paracee Port Orillano a Spanish Captaine, his dif-Olange, a firance kinde of difeale, Offriches as tall as a man, 1180 Ouercharging pieces of Ordnance, and other pieces how prejudiciall. 1:97, 1:08 Ouigondia towne of Savages in the Northerne America, 1638 Oxenhams voyage to the West-Indies, his attempts and travels to the South Sea, his prize and misfortune .. 1180.1414 Oxen mostled like theere in Florida, 1500 Oxen Bunch-back'd and very Grane as crived, which are ment drinke floors, bowles, fire. Got Amer 1561 Oxon and by their name in Pallacs Cape, 1313 1314 Oviter or stand having Pently in Patota Fronince de Cribed, 1536 Remove of om In as for a ! quarter of speece together. 1509 PAtheor & Espera of the skir Astronyle and the 1471 1-72 1868 Paciba Province. 1549 Parallava Protiere 15-4 O'vnda atomie in Braffe. 1238 Patembos, or Pienbos, an India Savage Nation. 1:53 Publisma Province. 1:49 Palma one of the Canary Ilad. 1833 Some Servents, the difference and Palmoto tree, and the frost thereof described. 1173.1375 1559 Palmes excellent to cure the Hameroides. 13:2 Englishmeninthe midft of his er- Panace ynawe aracone, a great Mountains to called. 1723, 1721. His plots and perfi- Panama the fisuation description, ma richesthereof, 1180,1418,1444 ibid. - Panico a Province di Lespleilly the Op ortunities neglected, 1196 Speniards, Oraddo, amo intaine plentifull for Panagairi Indians ef 3 aile, 1,00 1184 Panobicor, assume upon the River RamatLie, Pago River. 1762 Paps which contains people bane reaching under their walf , and neere to their knees. Papives a kinde of fruit like an Apple of a materiff tifle, good Peafe which are venemous, 1206 against the Fluxe. 1172 Pedio Sermiento a towne in the Papemena River,

1212 1212 Paraevua River, 1209,1211,1213 1237,1242 Paramaree, a some in the River Marwin. 1282 Paranapiacano, a Mountaine full of Snakes and wilde brafts . 1210. Parker, viz. Capt. William Parker his voyage and taking of Saint Vincent and Puerto Bello, 1242 1244,1246 Parrats & Parochettoes wonderfull plentifull, 1172, 1264. 1304. 1305,1372. A ftrange relation of a Parrat in America, 1320 Par y his treafen against Queene Elizabe h in what manner remeas Partrid ges as bigge as Geele, 1329 veffels . end dear masfeers whole | Palini a towne in the River Marwin. 1400 in Tree the men 1 69 1670 Parogenes, people of great flature like Giants. th m 1:10 Orthers the mair/n- Patawomeck, a Rever fixe or feven miles in breadth, and nameable an bundred and forty miles, 1693 Patent of the French King to Monfeur de Monts, for the inhabiting of the Countre's of La Cadia Canoda . and other places in New-France, 1619, 1020. New Patents thought on concerning the platation of New-England, 1820 A vatent for the platation of News found-land. An. 1610, 1876 Patents granted by his Alaielty of England for Virginia's planta-1107, 1683,1684,1787, 1777 Pat xet a border of New-England ini abited by the English, 1849 Painting much ofed by the Indians, 1225,1358 Payen River, 1285 Payta Hand how fituate, \$400, Peace: Muficall fignes thereof amove-If the Indians, Pearles plentifull, 1419, 1560, 1661, 1843. Penle-fifting performed much incredible toring of the Indians, 1586. Pearles of prenderfull bigneffe, 1411. The best Pearles where found, and how browne, ibid. Pearles found in Mulcles and Oylters , 1205,

1235, 1315, 1316

Straits of Magellane, 1416

1351 | Pedro Ordonnes de Ceuallos, 4

THE TABLE.

Spanish Priest his observations : Piache towns and River. concerning the West-Indies, 1420, 1421, O feq. Priones a Severe Nation, 1362 Pemaguid River. 1874 Pempregoer, 1625 Penguin Iland, the fituation and defeription thereof, 1187, 1191, 1284, 1385 Penguins described, and bow taken, Pentecost Harbour. 1660 People of the Kine, certaine Indians focalled their admirable propertion acilitie beauty, behausour, People of Harts, other Indians so called, 1524,1525 Pepper hotter and fronger then the blacke Pepper vied wish us, 1173 Peritoqua, a River that goeth to Saint Vincent Iland in Brafile . Pert, viz. Sir Thomas Pert his American travels, 1177.6 feq. Peru language and letters, 1454 The originall lines, conquests. lawes and Idolatries of the ancient Kings of Peru. 1454 , 1455.0 feq. The first voyage to Peru, 1455. Names and traditions of Perusibid. The wrongs which the inhabitants of Peru have sustained by Spanis cruelty, 1 . 90. Spanish forces, forts, and townes in Peru, 1418, 1419. The discouery, commodities, and Provinces of Pe-IU. 1410, 1443, 1444, 1445. Neuer any raine in some parts of Peru, and the cause thereof 1444 The admired plenty of gold in Peru, 1490. Peruan expeditions by the Spaniards, and their successe in luch enterprifes, 1450, 1451. The Peruans their opinion of God, andreverence in the very naming of him. Petinares or Petiwares, certaine Sawages in the Indies, their nature, Cature region religion, superfittion, diet, rites of childbirth , &c. 1225, 1216. Their man-eating, Intehering Captines, and the manner thereof, 1 226. Their language. and how to trade (afeir with them. Petritan River. Philippina Hands discouered, 1446 Phili and lacob towner, Physicke hath the same operation in England, and under the Line,

1157. Indian Phylitians their

esterme . and manner of curing ,

Pianira towne. Pico, one of the Ilands of the Azores. the description and commodities thereof. 1672, 1638 The high hill of Pico, which is more then fifteene miles in length, out of the top whereof illue often flames of fire Like Etna, and is thought to bee higher then the Pike of the Canaries. Pigs without tayles. Pigmies of Brasile dwelling in 1221,1200 Pigru, certaine Indians of Brafile. Pillars of flone, which are worshipped by certaine Indians, Pines, an excellent and delicious Pinos, an Iland on the South fide of 1826.1185 Cuba. Pipicorwarra Mountaine, 1:85 Pirats English and Spanish, 1412. Mifprision of that terme Pirats, and what a Pirat is, Pitch plentifull, and how made, 1556,1281 Plantines, a fruit growing on a forub between an hearb and a tree, in taft like an Apple-Iohn, 1173,1371 Plants adored by Indians, 1479, 1560. Plants that have the fenfe of feeling, 1280. Venemous plants Plantations in New-England. 1812. In New-Plimouth, 1842. The necessaries required for plan-1621.1611 tation, 1141,12.2 Plate River. Plumbe-drinke. 1784 Plumbs that are venemous, 1230 Pocahonias, daughter to King Powhatan, her being baptized and maried to an English-man, 1841,1760. Her vertuous life and death. Poeticall Savages,

Polizado, a Fort in New-England, Pome-citrons fo great as that two or three of them will load a borfe, Pomegranats medicinable, 1794 Popaian Province. Popes authoritie devided by the King of Peru, 1445,1452 Porco, a place pleutifull for Gold, Pories certaine Sauages so called, 1213. Their flature, diet, complexion, habitation, lodging, &c. 1229 Powhatan River, Portingals their cruelty to the Sava- Powhatan the Virginian Emperox

ees. 1 207. 1 221. of feg. Divers of them maffacred by Savages, 1189, 1117, Portingal Ships (urpriz dby Sir Bernard Dake, and brought into England laden mith Fift, 1882. The Portingals exquisitone fe in feering, 1379 Port-Ricco the situation and defeription thereof, 1153, 1169. 6 leg. 1415. It is the key of the Weft-Indies, 1166. The fortification thereof, 1161. Fi ht betwist the inhabitants thereof, and the Enoust. Port St Iulian, 1187,1194,1383 Port Famine lying at the mouth of the Straits of Magellane , 1204, 1233. The inhabitants. their commodities, coldnesse of the climate, 12:3.1122 Porto B.lio, the situation and de-(cription thereof, 1601, 1245. The furprizing thereof by Cuptaine Parker. Perta la Spaniola, 1247 Port de la Hene. 1640 Port Saualet. 1640 Port-defire, 1193, 1194, 1232, Port-Royal, 1621, 1631.1631.1he French plantation remoued from Saint Croix thither. Porto Sequero , 1418. Porto ce Plata, 1418. Port Fortune, 16:5 Porto Reale, 1418. Port Calua, 1224. Port Negre, 1873. Port Valparizo, 1393. Porto Docalno, 12:8. Port du Roffignol! 1630. Port du Mouton, 1630. Port-Folly, 1873 1261 Poll fion Bay, Pollowne, a ftrange beaft which reallemes her your ones into her belly at pleasure. Potofini a mountaine in Peru the inhabitants thereof, rich mines, nieltitude of Spanish treasure, and Spaniards there, 1214, 1420, 1421,1365 Pot fli aplacerich in Mines, yeelding great store of treasure to the King of Spaine, Powah an Indian Prieft, 1868. The

Pewalis innocation of the Di-

uell, and offering facrifices to him,

Powels voyage from the Summer-

Powder and shot, how abominable to

fame Savaces, 1854. Straw-pow-

der eaten by some Indians, and

1524

1689

Hands to the Indies,

needy Spaniards,

dddd a

bis Cubrilitie , flatterie , practices , etc. 1721, 1722. Hee becomes Subject to the English governour, 1841. His person , attendance , quard, treasure, wines, authority, lawes, 1703, 1704. His policy and Coronation, 1778. His diwers treacherous practices against the English 1711, 1722, 1724, \$724, 1756. His enuy to the English plantation, 1750. His death, 1775 Poxe bow cured. 1208, 1210 Point of St Matthews 1606, Point of all the Divels, ibid. Point Ployer, 1712. Point-Care, 1648. Point. Comfort, 1687 Poilon on trees, 1525 Poilon cared by a certaine leafe, 1276. by a 1310.1311 Prayer made by O. Elizabeth, afser her delinery from the Spanish Pretious-stones variety and abundance. 1224,1231 Priests and lesuits alwayes chiefe actors in projecting and effecting treasons, 1894. Virginian Priefts, 1358, 1701, 1274 their authority and manner of life, 1771 Prelident of Siuill his cruelty to the English Captines. 1835 Priguica, a beaft like a fag-baird dog, in face like a woman, the laeselt of all beafts, Pringe his vsyage fet forth by the Merchants of Bristoll to Virginia 16,4, & fequ. his discourry of Fox-Island, Whitfon-Bay, and Mount Aldworth 1654 15ec. bis danger by Sanages and fafe re-Prodigies portending desolation of the ancient inhabitats of Peru, 1482 Prophecy amongst the Indians concerning the destruction of their country, Proiperity, the effects thereof. Prouidence of the English in New England, in hourding up corne under eround. Prouisions foundnesse or defect prometh the furtherance or overthrow of a voyage, 1396, the mij biefe of corrupt or scanty provisions, 1396,1397 Purble de los Angelos, Puerro Vicio. 1400 Puerro Seguro, 1190 Puerto Sinto, 1186 Puerto Vicio, 1446,1481 Puma Iland, the place where the Spannards build their principall

Sippine in the Indies, 1400. Neere st is the River Lima, which is medicinable. ibid. The inhabitants proffe Idolaters, worthiping Lyons, Tygers, and other beafts. Punta de Olynda, 1228. Punta de laraya, 1242. Punta de Santa raines. Elena, 1400. Punta de Auguila, Purging plants in the Bermudas . 1801. A purge for the Aque 1311,1379 Purification of Mary a River fo called in New-Spaine. 1556 Purapayma, an Iland farre up within the River of Orenoco Vebec firait, 1611. Along the monds in the Rocks of Slate, Ouercius a Bird of admirable beau-17, and great esteeme amongst the 1205, 1206 Querna Vaca, a towne in the Marquelado of Hernan Cortes, thirteene leagues from Mexico. 1418 Quibiquellon, a famous Riner in Mawoothen. Quigaute a great Province , and a very plentifull Countrey, 1548 Quillacu, the most miferable of all Nations, neither having good land, nor Aire, nor water, whence growes a Proverbe applied to conetous Milers : Hec is a ve.v Quillacu, Quillacena, or Iron-nofe Province, a vile brutifh lonfie people without Religion, eating any Car-Quintera Bay, a place of good anchoring, but an open Bay, 1294 Quipana, a towne fine dayes iourney from Tulla. Quires Province. 1561 Quiriciguig, and Quirigma, certame Indians of Brafile To called. 1200 Quito the first Citie of the Kingdome of Peru, 1419, 1410, Quiuira Province, the Situation and description thereof. 1561 Ouivoughcohanocke, emo Rivers (o called; and how fisuate, 1692

Quizquiz Province,

D Aines very vnmholfome, hap-

A pening in the way between the

Canaries, and West-Indies. 1157. Continua!! raines at force times of the yeare upon the coaft of Guiana , 1270. Countreys where it never raineth, 1420. Prodigious raines of Sand and after, 1476. Exceeding coid A Rainbow appearing by Moone-light, and differing in colour from thole of the Sunne, 1949, 1951. The forme of a Rainbow under a Cane. 16:1 Ramalloc, a great River in Mawoo. Rancheria, an excellent place for Pearle-fibing, 1146. It is affaulted and taken by the English , ibid. Rapahanna, a towne in Virginia. 1687, 1688 Rapahanock River. Raihneile in great enterprices greatly blamed, Ra liffe, alias Sicklemore, flaine by Powhatan, Rats of twelve kinds , 1302, Rits that sleepe all day, and wake all night, 1316, Danger by Rats. and the preventing thereof in fhips, 1391. Rats innumerable in the Bermudas,1796,1797. A strange Rat-plaque, Henry Ravens, his woyage from Bermuda to Virginia, 1742 Ravens in Bermudas, which seemed to portend a sequell of morta-Raleighs . viz. Sir Walter Raleighs his acts and effective at Orenoco, 1269. His furnishing Ships for the first Difcoverie of Virginia, 1645. For a second, third, fourth, fift and fixt voyage, 1645,1646. Heis accused of breach of Articles, in the voyage to the Hes of Azores, he an wereth for himselfe , 1958. His men left in Virginia, and what became of them, Recibo, a towne in Port-Ricco, Red-Reed, a plant in the Bermudas causing a forcible vomit, and effectually purging the stomacke, Registers observed by the Indians, and their manner of registring , Richard Duke of Yorke , father to Plantagenet, his wilfull cafting away himselfe, Richard Sanders and his companions, their comming from the Ber-

mudas to Ireland in a smell

boat without any instrument, in a direct line. 1802 Rinde of a tree which is more frons then any fice, in Virginia, 1653 Rio del Oro River, the breadth and death thereof. 1141 Rio de la Hacha, a place taken by the English, 1183, The riches and Arenoth thereof. Rio grand, an American River, the fituation, description, and com-modities thereof, 1224, 1237, Rivers of gold, 1216. A River running under-ground, 1217. Names of Rivers in America. 1282. 1286. A medicinable River. \$400. Rivers that encrease very much, and onerflow the bankes in dry weather, without the flowing of the Sea, 1552. River of Toads, 1223. 1240. River of Stones, 1222, 1238. River of Palmes, 1505. River of Kine, 1562. River of Saint Croffes, 1562. River Saint Margaret in Canada, 1617. River Canada, 1631. River de Carinas, from she end of which if there were a channell made of foure leagues in tength, there would bee a passage to the South Seathrough it withont passing the perilon straits of Magellane, 1433 Lord of Robewall Lieutenant to she French King, in the Counerers of Canada, Saguenay, and Hochelaga, Rocke of Christall, which if a man looke on in a Sunne-Shine day . will dacellhis eres. 1285 Roccrafts Voyage to the New-found-land, his surprising of a French-Rarke , the confirmacie of bis owne Mariners against him. the disconerie of the conspiracie, cc. 1829. bis voyage to Virginis, kind vfage by Sir Samuel Argoll, the distreffe hee suffered in a tempelt his death in a prinate quarrell. Romanes custome in managing of Martiall affaires. Rome, a Citie of murtherers and baters of Kings, 1894. New Rome much more drunken with the blood of Christians, then heathenish Rome with the blood of Ethnicks, 1894. Romane policie, 1660 Roffer, his relation of a voyage to Virginia, 1641,& feq. Ruminnaui, an Indian Captaine, his crnell tyranny in Peru, 1486 Rullels Iles in Virginia, 1712

Ruffia, a little village in the Riner | Sandy Cape. Marwin, 128: Santa Port. C Abbath, 1163,4657 Sabuco, a Riner and Towne in Port-Ricco. Sacatekas, the richelt Mines in the Santa Fe del Nuevo regno di Gra-Indies, 1177 Sachim of Mattachuest acknowledgeth the power of the English God. Sacrifices, and Sacrificers, 1472, 1531,1557 Sacrifices to the Denill, 1531, 1868 Sacrifices to the mater. Sacriledge punished, Sagenay-riner, and the adioyning Countries described, 1606,1610 Sayles of cotton eloth. Sagadohoc, a river in Mawoofhen, 1874 Sagamos, the name of a Captaine among the Northerne Americans, Saint Lucia, one of the Ant-Iles in the latitude of 14 degrees, and 20 minutes. Salma riser. Salomons llands , their situation, discovery, and losse, Salt how made and purified by the Indians. Saltcountrie, 1365. Salt made in New found Land. 1880 Salt-water dangerous to drinke, Salt-water made drinkeable, 1:78 Samuel Champlain a Frenchman, his taking upon him the plantation of Kebcc in New France, 1642. a conspiracy against him, ibid his aduice for a further discourry, 1642, 1643. bis fight with the Sanages, and returne for France. 1643. another voyage, ibid. & Samia-plains, neere the riner Orenoque, 1248. Indians inhabiting those Plaines. Samambaia . A Tree in America. Sambo Ear. 1245 Sanctifying meat wfed by the Portingals in the Indies. Sands rained downe in Peru, 1476, Sands dangerous for nanigation in Brasil, called by the Portingals Bayhas de Sant Antonio, Sandy places travelled by Compaile,

1399 Santa Maria, one of the Azores I-Santa Cruce, a Carracke furprifed by Captaine Norton and St. John Burroughs, 1144, 1145. is burns by the Portingals. nada, the chiefe (itie in new Gra-Santas, a towne 1866 Sapparow, the high countrie of Guiana. Saquarema, a naujeable river in Brafile, its description and commodicies. 1702 Salfafrage, 1649. its medicinable vertue. Safqueshhunock, certaine Indian Grants their description, 1603 Sauleges made of the heart and guts of Cods and Lard Spiced , 1628 Sauage-rocke, 1647 Sauage and his crue plotted the death of Q. Elizabeth, 1803 Sauages have their goods interred with them and why, 1605 Sauages fight with the English. 1187. Sauages of Tuppan Bais 1 188. Sauage towne described, ibid, their manners, warres, and viace of their cattines . 1188. 1218. drunkenne ffe, 1180. their religion, commodities, they efteem not gold, ibid. their hospitall fidelity to Anthony Kniget Enelifeman, 1200, their infidelity, 1211. their ambition, 1212. Sauages called Carnos and their battells, 1218. Sauages called Peri-Heres, 1225. Mariauites, 1226. Topinambazes, 1227, Tomomia nos, Waytaquazes ibid. Waymores, ibid. Abafanguaretam, 1228. Wayanasses, ibid. Topina-ques, ibid. called Pories, Molonagues, Motayas, 1229 Lopos, Wayanawasons, 1220, Sauapes their religious defires, 1251. Sauages that make flat their childrens faces, that line in hollow trees, quartering their faces into foure colours yellow, azure, pariscoloured, and blacke, 1481. Sauages very courteous, and weeping at the diffresse of Christians, 1507. Sauages that kill their children left they should marrie with their advertaries, that eate any kind of Serpents, that are great theenes lyars, & drunkards, their termenting Files, 1512, 1513. their drinking onely raine-

1148 Schningels travells to Peru, and ac- Security is dangerous, cidents there, 1347, & 1362 S. Sebaftian Iland, Schenetveba, alarge come in the Seed-time in New England . Scouring or flux, how it may be pro- Segouni, abeaft in Brafile, 1243 noked or Rayed. Scooldodepon, a towne of the Caribes in the Indies,

Scriveners voyage to Werawocamoco, 1719. his death by drow- Scrpen's called lebua, 1226. a ferning in the passage from lames Towne in Virginia, to the Ile of

Scuruie, reigning in New France, 1642. and under the Equine Eliall, 1202. its cause, effects, Gones and remedie, 1272,1274. great raigning of it among Mariners, 1374. the things that are discommodious or beneficiall to the 1623,1763 patient, Scuruy-graffe, 1101. its medici-

nable operations, Sea blacke in colour beyond the line. 1157. a Sca-monfter like a man, of complexion like a tawny Indien, 1187, another strange Sca-

monster.

Sca-water warme, the agre being cold 1627. Sea made fre Bby a violent intermixture of rivers in Sheathing of Ships requifice, 1387 Florida, 1555. Sea-scum like pitch, and vied like pitch, called Coper in Florida, 1556. Sea difcommodious for meats in sickness, 1624. Sea danger,

3ca-fire, a meteer feene commonly in tempests, the diners opinions and names thereof, The Sea wor hipped by some Indians.

Sea faring mens errors, 1368 Sea-fights, 1183, 1186, 1402, & icq. the requisitenesse of armour betweene the Spanish and English,

at unequal hand, the successe largely related, 1780, 1781, purie. 1823 Sca-ftratagem of the Englife, haning good effect. 1605 Scales great fore, 1187. their nature and description. same parallel. 1637 1471 Sea-men, their feuerall offices

Scourge of Malice, a fortunate Seminaries eretted at Rome and Rhemes. 1615 1100 1264 Selinama riner, 1284, direction; to travell there. Scralta, an ancient Commander in

Post Ricco.

pent called Cobrus in Brafile, as big as a man, twenty foot long, his firange feeding, rotting, and reviving, 1243. A Serpent called Cururiuba therey foot long , it's defeription, 1317,1318. Serpents that are armed with plates not pierceable by an errore, ibid, Serpents called Guararies, which beine heard fing by the indians, cau-Ceth them to die. Go Grang is their imagination, 1318, a huge Serpent, 1350. two great serpents,

Shadden a towne of the Armacc.u in the West Indies, Shambles of mans flesh among the Staniards in the Indies, 1280 Sharke a fill to called defiriled,

Shawakotoc ariner in Manooften,

Sheepe why fer in Port-Ricco. 1172. Sheep weed for caringes as borfer in the Indies, called Antidas, 1362. Sheepe as lie as burfes, with huge bornes, and small tayles, neere Alexico, 1560. one horne waigheth 50 pound, 1561 Shels of Pearle curionfly wroughtly

Sherleys verage. Showers of gold, 1395 in Sea-fights, 1408. a Sea-fight | Shooting at Sea how aduifedly to be wedertaken,

Sicknesse, its cause and remedy, 1251. Sicknelles unknowne in New France, 1623, Sickneffe in Guiana 1261. Sickneffe bremented by rood drer, 1624, ficknetle destroying the whole Country in Pataxet in New Englande

Sickene Monniaine. 1 286 Sierra Leona, a country fo called.

Shipwracks, 1355, 1356, 1440. 1560, 1673, 1674, 1676, 1677 Ships, how most conneniently onilt for warres or Merchandise. 1405 1406. Thips unprofitable built of Cedar in the Bermudas, 1747. thips taken by Sr. Francis Drake at the Cascois in the Portingall voyage,1923 . thips of great worth taken by the English at the fight before Cadiz, 1930, in thips whether race-building be commodious for men of warre, Silk-wormes in Florida, 1603. in the Bermudas, Silk-graffe in Virginia.

1758 Silley, an Ile on the west of England Siluer in Florida presented to the French by the Inhabitants, 1603 Smiarra, atowne neere the Fort of

Morrin, inhabited by the Armacca Sanaves, Sir Samuel Argal by vertue of commillion with much valour and discretion dispossessed the French of their vsurped possession in the New found Land, 1828. his departure from the coasts of Virginia, 1830. His innention of trade with the Virginia Sanages,

Skin as ruffe as Buffe, on men, 1280 Skuls of dead men layd in the windowes of houses among some Indians perchance to put them in mind of mortality.

Sinte good fore in Canada, affording Diamonds, 1610,1611 Sleeping-hearbe, Smiths Iles before Virginia, 1691

Capt. Smith of Plimouth his difafter rous voyace, with fudden returne by the unmercifulnesse of a raging tempel, his fecond adventures to the Westerne Ilands, hee is chased by the French Pyrates, is taken prisoner, and the voyage ouerthrowne, 1829. Captaine Smiths Suspicion by the Councell of Virginia, his behaviour and clearing therefrom, 1706. his care for the Plantation and further ance thereof, his discoverie of the river.

THE TABLE.

1707, he fights and hils (auages, is taken by them, brought to the Emperour, threatned death, and faned by the Kinos daughter, resurneth tathe Plantation, 1708. 1709, his fecond errinall at Powhatans court, 1710, his better defire then power, to benefit the plantation, 1711. his fleiting terror in the Saucoes ibid his desarture for a disconerie,

Iohn Smith his voyage to New-England finished in the force of 6 moneths, with gaine of fifteen; hundred postals.

Snakes-hearb excellent good against the porton of Snikes.

Snakes eaten. 1210. Inakes werie venemous . 1212. A danterous Inake kild, 1215.its quality, ib. name Strochen, 1230, its descriprion, 1231. Snakes mithout payfon, 1 303, their plenty and diverfitie in Brafile, 1303 1304. with their names, ibid. & 1317,1318 Snakes of thirty foot long called Amara, wor hipp:d 1457,1478. Snakes worshipped in Topira, 1560. Snakes worne about the neckes of the Virginians, 1693

Snowes exceeding great in Florida 1551. Snowes made vie of in flead of drinke, 1561. Snowes as good as a fund-gowne for fruits,

Sozcatino, a towns in Floride, very poore and deflicate of cronifion,

Socke riner, Sodomites burnt by the Indians. 1558

by the French. 1603 Sommerfes-Hand in the Bermuda,

Bermudas, and death. 1733. his 1738. his departure from Virginia to the Bernaudus, 1754 Sommer Hands commodities at

Lurge, 1794, 1795. Vide Ber-

Somma, a place in America, 1222 Soto a Spaniard, his parerease time of his flower ling, kature, and dignity, 1 4: 8, 1429. his weare to Florida at Lorge related, in ldifcovery, 1530 the constant of his Bups, and number of his Southiers, his grigallar Florids and a the towne Team and meeting with ! Indianiced Confirms there, \$530,15 11.his comming to Pa-

racoffs, Acela, Tocaste, Cale, townes in Florida, his newes of Gold, and Maiz, 1532. his approach at other feuerall townes in America-Florida, and feuerity to the Indians, 1922, 1934. his many bickerings wish the Indians, his refolution for the Pronince of Ochus, 1535. hee pretends himfeife to be the fonne of the Sunne. 1536. his ingratitude to an Indian Princess that had weed him & his company kindly, 1528,1530. burieth a letter neere a Pine-tree. to one direction to his loft follewers, 1537, carieth the Caciques with them, till hee was out of their countries 1541 the course of his tranels, 1542. his skirmift and loffe by the Indians, 1542.bis other Indian occurrents, 1546. 1547,1548, 1549, et (cg. bis arinall at fenerall Floridan towns, or cottages, his weaknesse and losse of his company. 1550, his hinderance by the loffe of John O.tiz, his dangerous passages ouer riuers and (nowes, his courteous entertainment by the Inhabitants of Nilco, 1551. his diffreffe, miefe. ficknesse, death, praise, titles, and substituting Luis de Molcolo in his roome.

Soory-foory, a towne inhabited by Saugres neere Marwin in Ame-

Soule, the Brafilians oficion thereof, 1200. the opinion of the Indians of Canada, South-jea passage hoped through

Virginia. 1822 Somme-riner in Florida di concred | South Sea discouered more largely then beretofore, Souricoua, a river in Canada pa/-

fable with Careers. 1616.1617 Sir George Sommers ariuall at the Soynoone, a towns of the Indians neere Marwin riner, 1285

eare for the furnar of those Hands, Spaine is faid to yould the King (the King kimfel'e, Dukes . Marati fee and Earle with their retinue excepted, from 18 were chi to 50, but 1125350 men, yag

> Spaniards how effected of ly the Floridans.

Spanish presented cures of the licke in the Indies, 1,15. Scanille pollellion of Peru, and its wealth. 1495, 1496. they cate one at ther. 1512. Spaniards on beat . abletreasure in Pere 1487 S. aniards preaching to the Indians, 1485. Spaniards Ecclefiafticall renemnues in the Indies, want of

Bistops, bolding Councels, the Kings renemmes yearely out of the Indies. twelve. Millions and whence it iffueth, 1422. Spanish defraction of fore Indians from off their country choocher, 1115 Spanish Fleet for the Indies, and Signatule, 1440. Spaniards precherously circumvert the inhabitauts and King of Pern, 1445. Spanish cruelty to their proftrate flaues, 1448. Spaniards came to the Indies for connerting, but not of Indians, but gold to their owne vier, 14:0. Spanish civill difaoreements in Peru. 1453. afage of the inhabitants, 1453, 1453. Spaniards called by the Indian Vitacochie, that is, Sea froth. Supposing such could not beeborne of a moman, 1454. Spaniards loffe of toure thips, 1142. Spanish Galleons taken, 1144. Spaniards all salt and resulte. 1149. Spamaid reela to the Englift , 1164. their ener or desperateneste. 1166 Spaniares best ruled with seueruy. 1 168 their proratefull trechery, 1177, their perfidions infulring crucker, 1178, and abute of the English in Mexico, ibid. et 1179.S: anish destrelle in Chili-1476, 1477. Spaniards very rich in the Indies, 1242. Spanish att mpts defeated 1 475. they are called in Transleda, Conquerabians, 1247. Spaniards derence but by flealth trafficke with the English; the best things for wafficke with them, 1266. they are molested by the Cariles, 1281. their taking Lampere, an Indian fortified towne, 1352. Spaniards lite to be denoured by the Indians, 1354. their fight and ouercomning them, 1355, 1356, they firing to diffeoner the Amazons, 1359. Spanish cruelty and tres there towards the harmle Te Indiaur 1354.1360, 1361, they defrom the Indians called Mapais, 1;62, 1263. Sparles of Spaniards in Poru , 1478 . Sponish civil differenents in the Indies. 1364. Spanish perierie, 1378. attracherous and ungratefull Soariad Mic. 1394. Spanie, tiaha mith the English unequality 1404 Scan the element in fiches by Can. their lenerall offices and authosince their prying and imitating Linel borders, 1404, their carefullife in being armed, 1408.

wherein they onely enercome the

English, ibid, a noble Spaniard, 1410. Spaniards carelefneffe for good Surgeons in fights, 1412. Spanish intelligence by trecherous Englishmen, 1415. Spanish forces how from or weake in feuerall places of Peru and thereabout, their treasure, when where, and whence conneyed into Spaine, 1419, 1420, the Spaniards lines and government in the Indies, 1421. their courte sie, and conuerfion of them as they call it, 1448. their hatred of gold, 1449,1454. Spaniards why called Viracoche 1458. Spaniards ransacking of our English Sips, putting the men comoft cruell bondage, 18:4. the Spaniards ernelty to the dead carkaffe of an Englishman, holding him to hee a Lutheran , 1835. They deny to doe inflice, are very willing the English Should serve their flate, ibid. They berray and take prisoner the men of Captaine Legat, 1836. Spanish pride and its iffue in an Indian Gouernour, 1677. Spanish Sips of great worth funke neere Tercera, commains from the Indies. 1672. another flip of good strength sunke by an Englishman of a great deale smaller force, ibid. Spanish ships taken by the English, ibid. Spamish ships, riches, and shipwracke of Come, 1673 . Spanish Fleet caft away, great and rich, 1674. Oeberstaten, ibid. Spanish cowardife, and insulting cruelty, 1675. Spaniards smart for the crueltie and disfention with the English. 8676. Spaniards quela by the Englis , 1677. Spanish Shipwracke a suft plague upon them, 2679, 1680. Spanish infidelity worfe then Pagan, 1527. Spanish manner of treaching to the Indians with the sflue thereof, 1528 . Spamiards eate dogs in Florida, and there dre like does for mant of vi-Etuals, 1536. Spaniards thinkeit a morke mericorious to consert the Indians, that is, with the fword, 1558. Spaniards conteft each with other for Superiority in difeomering forraine Countries, 1560. Spaniards first discovery of the Indies and possession thereof, their eruelty and concioninelle related by a Fryer, the Millions of Indians flaine by them, for their gold, \$569, \$570. Spanish comarin, and cruelty in broyling, burning, drewning, and twenty wayes elfe

murdering them of Hispaniola, 1570.& leq. Spanish torturing undeferned by the harmleffe Indians, having not committed any thing against them punishable by the law of man, 1572. Spanish flaughter of a million in St. Ihor. and lamaica, 1573. Spanish innention to difpeople those Nations, ibid. The Spaniards god, 1574 Spaniards kill many in Cuba, men, women, and children, 1573, 1574. Spaniards dispeopling Terra Firma, 1576. They murther in the Pronince of Nicaragua 500000 men. 1576,1577. Spaniards kill two or three millions in Noua Hijbania, and its feuerall Prousness, 1577, 1578. an infinite number in Guatimula, 1576. Spanish Antbropophaes, 1.580. Spanish torturing and de-Broving the Indians in Panucha, Machuachan, and Xalifco, 1580 1581, of Yucaran, 1581, 1582, 1583. Spaniards fell the Indians Idols, 1583, denoure the Indians of S. Martha, ibid. & 1 c 84. 4 alfo of Cartagena, 1, 84 of the Couft of Pearles, the Coaft of Paria, and the Ile of Trinine, 1585, 1586, 1587. Indians how vied at See by Spaniard. and at landing, 1586. at the filling for Pewles, 1587, Spanish gluttory, 1588. Crneley in Yuizpari and Venetula to the raine of foure or fine millions of Indians, 1587,1588 in Flories, River de la Plata, and the kinguomes of Peru, 1589, 1590, 1591. Spanish conversion of the Indians how weeksly followed, 1594. their diuers feats of cruelty and inhumsnity to the poore Christians of New Granado and the severall proumces thereof, 1591, 1592, 1593, 1594,1595. Spanish gold thir-Rine Te, and thouce if uing bloodthir flinelle of the Indians, 1506, 1507. Spania reformation of cruetties and wrongs in the Indies ought to bee performed, and upon what realons, 1598, 1599, 1600, 1601, 1692 arepetition of fundry butcheries, ibid. Spanish rea Sons mouing them to a possession of the Indies. 1603. Spanish crucktie hath kild and destroyed in all Cape. Standish his training up his the Indies 20 millions, ibid. Spaniards massacre the French in Florida, and plant themselnes, 1604. are massacred again by the French is they defermed, 1606

Spanish irregularitiein the Indies derided by a French Catholike . 1621. Spaniards arrest Eneliste Ships, 1893. Spanish preparation against England , Anno 1-98. p. 1895. Spanish policy, 1897. The Spanifs A-mada fetteth fails. is disconstited by a tempest; is as laft descried by an English Pirat.

Spaniards vaine opinion concerning the English Fleet, 1909 Spaniards fire their owne Bing. 1931. Span: Armada's cut their Cables, 1908. They fly for to Same their lines, 1010. They Suffer miferable shipwracke on the Irish Sea. They feize on some Scottiffe Fifher-boets, ib. Spansfe plagues and miferies by the English, 1680 There flinh: for feare of the Enelib. 1932. Spanish Fly-boats meleft the English about the coasts of Cornwall, 1608. Spanish Carnels difterfed, 1698. Spanish fires at Sea , for the discoverie of the flate of Virginia's Colony, 1773. Spaniards hated by the Portingals, 1952. Spaniards variety of difositions in various fortunes. 1954. Their nature in generalla

Sparries relations of the Ile of Trinidad, Guiana, and the River Orenoco, 1247,1248. 6 fig. Spices excellent good, hot, and comfortable in the Magellane Graits,

Spiders with filten webs , and little eg os like Qnick-filner in the Bermudas, 1899. Not found to bee ibid. venemans. Spignard wheref is a pracious ofns-

ment nsade. 1164 Spilpergen a famous Navigator among the Dutch, Spirito Santo a Portinthe Weft-Indies neere the Line, 1190.

1196. Its description, and fortification. Spleene, how eased, Squanto a Savage of the company of the Maililoyts, very helpfult

and commodious to the English, Squalachin wife to the great gonernour of the Savages, Squirrels flying in Virginia, 1695

menin New-England to military affaires, 1854. His tourney to the Mafacheuafets, 1863. Heeena countreth with a Savage, and putseth hims to flight.

THE TABLE.

| teth him to flight, 1865 | Swearing forbidden amongst the In- |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| Stars of ferned by the Indians, 1870 | habitants of Peru, 1451 |
| Stately Statues in the Indies, | Swearers punished in the King of |
| 1463 | Spaines Armada, 1902 |
| a | Swearing and blaspheming, its il |
| Steering a bip requirethexquiste | enent, 1805 |
| care. 1370,1579 | Sweating vied by the Indians, to |
| Stills fet on worke for want of water | expell diseases, 1624 |
| 1967 | |
| Stingeray He so named of a stinging | |
| Page 1714 | 1326 |
| Stomaccace a strange disease, its | Sword-fish, 1266 |
| cause, and cure by scurvic-grasse, | Symamios, Savages in the West- |
| 1624 | Indies (o called, 1364 |
| The Stone how and with what car'd | Symarons fugitine Negroes in the |
| The Stolle now and with wording | West-Indies, 1414. Then |
| 1310. An approved medicine | h bitation called St. Iago de los |
| for it, 1312 | Negros, ibid. |
| Stones like Chryftall, 1216 | region, |
| Rich Stones, 1276 | Ť |
| Stones transparent, 1284 | т. |
| No Stones in some part of Florida, | |
| 1504 | TAbaga Iland, 1415 |
| Stones medicinable, 1509 | Tac iia Savages, 1299 |
| Stones how necessary in new France | Tagrona one of the richest valleyes |
| 1624. The benefit of them inge- | in the Indies, 1434 |
| | Tali a Floridan Towne, 1540 |
| nerall, 1010. Straits of Magellane, how dange- | Tamgara a dancing bird, troubled |
| | with some disease like the falling |
| ross apallage 1439 | jîcknesse, 130 |
| Strawberies of rare bigneffe in Vir- | Tamos a populous Pronince, 1561 |
| ginia, 1000 | Tamkings a peece of wood of great |
| A Scratagem of the Indians. 1442 | Tallikings a peece of moon of grow |
| 1443, Peter Strolle in his despe- | ordnance, 141 |
| rate brauery taken by the Spani- | Ordnance, 141 |
| ards to the lolle of his nary. 1902 | Tamini 2 a mountaine in America |
| Tho. Stukeley, an English fugi- | signifying the mountains of gold |
| tine his faire promise to the Popes | 121 |
| bastard, 1893 | Tapatu a Floridan riner, 155 |
| Carella an Indian river. 1362 | Tapecuia Savages, 129 |
| Sturgeon forein Virginia, 1758 | Tapetijwaion, a strange beast a |
| Suboris certaine Indians so called, | in Port-ramine in the fireign |
| 1364 | of Magellane, 1233. Portu |
| | gals cell them Gombe, 123 |
| Earle of Suffolkes festing forth a | Tapati, a Brasilian beaft that bat |
| 1 1111, | keth like a dog, 130 |
| Sugar-Canes, 1171 | Tapia taken by Sir Francis Drak |
| Sulphry smels is sing from raine, | 118 |
| *13/ | |
| Cap. Summers voyage, 1186 | |
| Sun and Moone worthspeed, 1233: | 1213. Many Nations and |
| 1464.1465 | that name, 1290 O rig. 1 |
| Suppayas certaine Indians inhabi- | (beech cannot bee unacritud |
| rive Winnoco riser, their ac | 1299.17.7 |
| Scription, 1263. Their naked | - 1 apyroutoa, as indianterly |
| nesse, painting, child-birth, Fune | skin makes Largets, 13: |
| ralls orc. ibid | |
| | everenemed arrowes. 120 |
| Supply to the Plantation in Virgi | |
| nia by the English 1841 Suppl | |
| to the plantation of New-Englan | 00 1:1 |
| 186 | Tangers made of Ruff chine eate |
| Superflition among Savages | |
| 122 | 1214. Targets benefitsat |
| Surarer a towne of Savages calle | d gainst Savage arrowes, 17 |
| Araccaws in America, 128 | Taicaluca-Prouince, 15 |
| Sarcucufes a Savage nation the | Tatu a beaft of Brafil that h. |
| commodisie s 135 | 6 scales like places on her back wh |
| Suiclas-Indians, 151 | |
| Suicies_Indianas | • |

Taralacova a towne of the Indians, in Florida Jumprized by Spamiards. Tatarcax a rich Kine in America. Tauparamunni a towne inhabited by Caribes in the river Marwin, Taymayas the name of some Indian Savages, 1211, 1213. Tamoves description, their infinite fore of gold and precius stones, their nature and civilitie, 1221 Tecoanteneck the first Towne in New Spaine, Teeth Bedding by drinking a kind of water neere the River Rhine. Teixo a wood as hard as stone, 1670 Temples coursed with fram in Topira, 1560. Temples to the Sun, Moone and Stars, richly adorned in the ancient City Cozco of Peru, which women might not A horrible Tempest, 1175. Extreame Tempelts,1193, 1194, 1223, 1500. Frequent Tempefts, 1502, A dreadfull Tempest neere Tercera, throwing fiftes on the ground, ouer exceeding high cliffes , it's passifull offects, 1679, 1680. An extreams Tempest branely related, \$ 7150 1736,1737 Tenaferea a Mountatine in the East-Indies, where Dramonds are found. Teneriffa an Ilandinthe Canaries. its exceeding high mountaines, oreat riches fore of Sacke, 1156 1369,1370 Tepique a Pronince neere New-Spaniards,

Spaine, taken poffeffion of by Tercera one of the Azores Ilands. 1143. The description thereof, its forts & fortification, mountain and sudden disconerie of ships,its chiefe Towne, wines, prouision, fruits, 1668. The chiefe trafficke, woad, 1669. Its birds feafons, Stones, ibid. Corne, Vines, Oxen called by names like men, ibid. Subsect to earth quakes, Arange fountaine and wood, Inhabitants are all Portingalls or Spaniards, 1670 its frange difeales, fromg windes, and other villages, 1671 Whence fo called, and the flore of Gade growing Terra-Australis incognita, its de-(cription at large, 1423, & feq. Terra Firma, 1146. it hath on the coaft 70 Ilanis, 1434 the publieation of God there after the Spamards manner, eight hundred show and inh bitants made away by Spanish cruelty, the women there were mindered, which the Indians thought great comardie, 1575.1576

Teffelan, a Pronin. e in New Souin,

Tenlnicham Proxince, 1550 Tharletons perfidie, 1382,1383 Testopos, a place so called, 1242 Teratteconmovnetto, a towne of the Charibes, nere the river Marwin in Anerica, 1285 Theft balenelle, 1153 Tireft fenerely punished by the Indi-1870 Theft punified in the English army,

Thimogoa, Inhalitants of Florida, Thirft in great extremity, 1505.

1021

Thirft breeding faistnesse and 1686 death. Thirty Cayle of Ships Cent to fu ther

the plantation in New England, 18:2 1878 Thought flaveth a man,

S: Thomas fabled by the Indiane to preach to their ancestors, his C'appell, and miracle, Three Spanis Ships taken by the

English Almirall, 1060 Tiree Armadaes of the King of Spaine caft away on the Goald called Otca copos, or Catch-chops 18:6

Three Spanish this surprised by the 1008 English. Thunders firange effects, 1405 Thunders horrid and predictions in the Rermudas.

Thunderbolts frequent in the Indies, they often cleane great trees,

Tiembos, fierce and populous Indians neere the rises of Plate, their nature, fation, description, 1349 Tiguez, a Pronince in America,

for a new Plantation, 1631

is biqueff-, stuation, diversity of Timimino, Indians consumed by the Portineals in Brafile, 1298 Tipis Indians in Brafile, that fight with venomed arrowes, 1299 Titicaca, an Iland in Peru, of infinite riches, their precious Temple, word in and concest of the Sunne,

> Tinitings. Inhahirants neere Orenaco. two forts of them. 1247 1285 Toads and Frogs eaten, 1214.1219 The Toad fift.

Toalli, a Floridan towne, and its description, its inhabitants and their disposition, Tobaccoes first bringers in vie.

1182. Tobacco, 1228 1210. 1264.1271. Tobacco faue mens lines 12 . 8. Toba co fore. 1276 1177 its effects in Phylicke, and abuse, its name of the Holy herbe, and the manner how the Indians drinke it, 1311. how they blow it sn canes one on another, to encrea'e valour, 1238, a strange kind of tobacco, 1302. Tobacco not profitable in New England, the cause why 1871. Tobacco pipe of a Lobfters claw, 1662. Tobacco of Virginia how disparaged by Tobacco-mongers, 1775, Tobacco worth to Spaine 100000 pound rearly. 1211 Tebolos Indians. 1561 Tobyas Bayin the Straits of Magellane, 1205.1388

Tockwhogh river in Virginia, Tocaste towne in America. 1531 Tocoman, a place in the Indie, inhabited by Psomies, 1228. tis esteemed to be the utt rmost part

of Brafile where is ignes to Peru, ibid. & 1242 Tocoy? a towne in the Indies, 1258 Tocur, aplace of America, fertile with gold.

Tolisbay firais, Tohanna, Indians Gealled, 1263 Tonola, a pronince in New Spaine, 1558

Tomomimos, Sauages fo called, 1217, they line at Morenone. their townes, and warres nich the Portingals. Tooth ache cured, 1308

Torira, an Indian province abounding with gold and emerculds, armour made of filner, the inhabisants wor nip birds and hearbes, they facrifice to a ferient, 1560 Tillage, more necessary then mines Tortovie, its description in Bermindas, it lines 24 houres after its

head is off, 1800. a Torrovie with 7:0 coves in his belly, taken and caten, 1255, they Ly moor three hundred egges at once. 1314 Tottoyle nor fin nor fle,3, 1741

opinan bazes, Canages like the Petinares, their carning, huire, finging, 1227. Vide Petipares. oudin Indians neare the river le-

Tranciling very easie and strange for a small vallew in the Indies 1242. Trauell-direction in the Indies, 128 5 more directions for trauell, 1286. Trauelling in bot water.

bot water, 1359
A Tree that reelaeth the inhabitante most of the water they have, 1270 Trees , their nature and abundance in Dominica, 1108 Tres strange and unknowne in Port-Ricco, 1165. Trees that beare buds, oreens finit, and rive fixit. with leeds all together, 1173. Trees burne the lenfe of feeling, 1280. Trees good as winft bruites and destilling Ballome, 1239 trees of exceeding hard wood,exceeding great, 1:56. Trees that have alwates greene leaves, that bere fruit twice in a yeare called Mangab trees, flowing with mile that might ferne for hora Waxe, called Mirve ge. Trees that cause (th ir fruit being eaten) teeth to fall , Trees whole fruit makes haire fall their strange nature and severall name; in Brafile, 1307, 1308, 1309. Trees that ferne to cure greene wounds, having good Balme , 1308. For the Colicke, for the bloody Fluxe, for cold diseases, for the Poxe , for the Toothake, ibid. Trees fruis that killeth any fift in the water . that change leaves every moneth, that make Inke, that hath init a riner of water, fich frangineffe of trees (co 1 : 00 and their names

vide Plant. Bafe Treatheile in an I-fbman, 1200. in an Englishman . 1 20. Who e miferable end, 1221. In a Savage, 1151. In the Indians, 1256 . 1258. To them elues , 1361. Treach re the loffe of A voyage, 1 .81. Treac erie in the Indiens, 1392, vide P. fidic. Triana, a towne taken and fired by Capt. Parker.

ibid. Trees in Salt-water, 1316.

Trinity Ile peffered with Spanish crnelty, and robued of inhabitants, 1584 585

THE TABLE.

Trinity barbour Ahanan in the 1281 New-found Land, Tripessey, a harbour commendious and temperate in the latitude of A6 deorees. Trinidade, 1186.the Indians there

hanc 4 names, their commanders non called Captaines, inhabited by the Spaniards.

Trinity a bauen in Cuba, 1500 Trugillo, the vimoft towns of the Pronunce Valenzuola in Ameri-Truxillo, a place in America,

1399 Triumphall Verles of the English delinerie in 88. 1912

1145 Car: Tuberone, Tuberones, the name of Dog-fill by the Portingals, 1 2 Co Tucana, a bird like a Pye, with a

bill a fpan long very big, 1306 Tucanucu Sauage Brafilians, 1299 Tuccaman, atomne in the river of Plate, 230 miles from the ex-

trance, sts fruitfulneffe, sts want of gold, Tuckers-terror, a Boale on the coaft

of Virginia, Capt. Tucker, conernour of the plantation in the Bermudas, his alts

Tulahe, a fruitfull country neere 1248 Guiana.

Tulla, a place in Florida, 1550 Tullumuchaie, a great Towne in Florida. Tu'u, a place inhabited by the Spa-

niards nerre Cartagena, its force,

Tumbez, a plaine country in Peru, 1444 its inhabitants are vitious and luxurious, people that idolize Treers and Lyons,

Tune, a fruit in Florida, on which enely the inhabitants line three moneths in a yeare. 1511 Tunfteroite, a towne of Sauages in

1285 the Well Indies, Tunza, a place in America, 1419 Tupiquat, Brasilians denoured by the flavery of the Portingals, 1208

Tupinaba, Indians fo called, 1298 Tupinaquin, Indiani inhabiting Brasile.

parts of Ireland, Tuppac Inca Yupanqui, Emperor Sometime of Peru, bis valiant att: and attempts, conquests and enterging his Empire, civilizing many Jauage nations, his progent death, Veru Cruz, a newtowne, 1478,1479

and succeffor, Tuppan Bals, Sanages fo called neere Brafile, 1188. their mirth, habit,

life and lodging, Tunac Amaru, heire to the Empire of Perufally accused, and cruelly executed by the Spanife Viceroy, 1488, bis well deferned iffne,

Tupan-boyers, a place inhabited by Canibals in Brafile, 1227. the Portingals call it Organes,

Tupijo, Brafilian Sanages, 1299 Tuquema, a Province subiect to Peru, its senerall townes of gonern.

Turkes taken by the Spaniards, and made Gally-flanes, referred by the English, and fet at liberty, 1933 Turky-thones in New France, 1621

Turneps a remedy against the scur-1880 Mafter Turners relation of Brafile, 1243

Turners relation, voyage, fucceffe, 1265,1266 at large, Turtles innumerable. Tutelpinco, a for aken towne in Florida, left by the inhabitants,

and destitute of promision, 1551 Tygers wer shipped, 1457

TAcupa, a Prouince in America. Vahuar huacac, an Emperour in Peru, his acts and conquest, hee webt blood at his natinity, 1457

Valenzuola, a gelden place in et-Valparifo, a place in the fouth Sea.

Valuation of the voyages of fishing Boats, to the coast of New found Land.

Varaua, a fift in Brasile as lig as an Oxe. Vayracalics, akinde of Sauages,

1248 Vbra Riner, Veita, a towne in Florida,its deferistion, and commedities, 1530 Vela Pampilona, an American place,

A' Venetian Rip taken by the Eno-1,006 Бħ, Venter-hauen, a place in the mest

Veragua, a towne in the West Indies plenteous of gold, 1419, it neutr rames there, an unhealthy country

Verginia, its hopefull commodities, the inhabitants idolatry and wor-

this of the Sunne, their other and fidelity thereupon, 1690 their enstomes, 1690.plantation there. and mortality, accompanied with famine, 1689. 1690. Virg nias bounds, temperature, winds, entrance, mountaines, foile, 1691. vallies, and & faire delicate navigable Rivers neers the English Plantation, 1692. its severall and different languages thereabent,1694. Vide Virginia.

ia tuna, Indians in Brafile denenred by the Portingals. ictuals verse fearce in Plimouth in New England, 1856. Victuals of the Spanish Fleet fent for England, Anno 1588. 1901 Vigo, a towne taken by the English in the Portingall voyage, 1926 Villa de Praya, a towne in Tercera,

one of the Ilands of Azores, 1668 Villa Franca, a towne of S' Michels one of the Acores Iles, 1963, the situation, fertility of the soyle, and fruits of the Land.

incs fore in Canada Ilands, 1612 vines naturally growing in New England, St Vincent a port in the West In-

dies, 1190. called by the Insians Warapuimama, its description,

Virachocha, an Emperour of Peru, his first conquest, 1458. his fenerall acts, and death, with his fire-The V gines Ilands not inhabited,

and description. Virginia Companies aduentures in figing Rips, one of them being taken by the Turkes, 1816. Virginia despised of the very abiects, 1841. fruitfulnesse of the Land, fore of fift and Forele, ibid. Virginia why so called . the praise thereof, the first voyages and disconeries there, with their colonies. 1645, 1646. Virginias bealthineffe, ibid. a Virginian yellow haird, and faire, 1689. Virginias

naturall commodities trees among which, cypreffe, vines, wines fruiss. eums saffafras, nourishable reots , ramshey are poyfon roafted, not fo; but otherwise veed for bread, medicinable plants, beafts in variety. 1694.1695 birds fiftes, and minerals, 1696. fruits that are plantedin Virginia, the leafons there, their vie of corne, of flesh, the agree mildne Je, and commodities for trafficke with France, Swethland, Spain & Helland, 1696, 1697. ccc 2

the commodities that may redound thence to the industrious, ibid. Virginians number, nations, languages, their description. conftisusion, Barbers, apparell, women, Bamefaffneffe, attire, ornaments, 1697, 1698. their building, led. eine, beddine, eardens, exercise for men or women . child-burth, namine children, easie delinery, their manner of firsking fire, of making bowes and arrowes, 1698 their fronds and targets, boats, fifting, finning, fish-bookes, himting, either in companyes or alone, confultations before battell, 1699. Virginians neere the English Plantation, their enemies, their manner of embattelling, fratagems, ambuscadoes, painting to make themselues looke terrible, finging and yelling in their combate, mulicke, and entertainment of great men, 1700, their trade, Phylicke, Chirurgery, charming, 1701 their Religion, and adoration of any thing that can here them without their presention, worthipping the Deuil celled Okc. buriall of their Kings, their ordsnary burialls, and mourning for the dead , their Temples , their Supposed Sanclitie, Priests, and their habite times for folemnities. ibid, their conistration, altars, aerifices to the water, their folemne customes for the making Southfayers, their opinion of their Kings and Priests foules, and the common peoples after death, their opinion of the Christians God, 1702. manner of concrament which is monarchicall, their Kings pompe described, 1703, 1704. Virginian punishment of offenders, 1703. Virginia by whom difcommended, the milerie it sustained by effeminate idlers, 1704. Virginian diffentions in the Englife plantationers, 1706. The Planters nominated, and their first imployment, ibid. their milerie famine and ficknesse, with mortalisy, cansed by the Presidents a-Harice, 1706, 1707. with vnexrectedremedy, ibid, recorded by the care of Captaine Smith, ibid. Virginian plots for the leaning the Plantation, 1707, 1709. Virginian plantation and trading endamaged by the embition of the Company, 1710 by defire of gaine in fome prinate perfons, 1711. Virginias golden hopes fruftrate,

ibid. Virginia its want of a good Prefident . 1712. Virginias plantation (upposed overthrom, 1717 Virgina-Tanerne, the abuse of trading among Saylors there, 1719. Virginian first mariage of the English . 1720. Virginian Plantations Supply, 1708, 1716, 1719. Gold as eafie to bee cotten as corne there, from the needs Sanages, 1725. Virginian planters lofe of armes by the trecherie of Dutchmen, 1725. Virginias buildings repaired, but by mant of promision not profecuted, the cause of fuch want, 1727, and the miferie sustained by lazinesse, ibid. Virginias unprofitable planters checked by the Presidents speech. 1728. Virginias bealthinelle, and the care taken for ficke men there by the English, 1728, the Plantations third Capply , 1729, the chance of government and Captaines, the presidice of the plantation, and muting feconding the Supply 1729. Virginia Plantation at the Falls and Nan amund, 1-20. Virginia tlenters breake peace with the Sanages, 17:0. Ving the molarheity of Prefsdents, lofing Captaine Smith the milerie famine, ant di comfort it sustained by his absence, 1732. its (upply by the aring!! of the Lord La Ware, Ser Thomas Dale, 1732, 1732, Virginias innonation in sone mment whether mutinous or no. 1734. Vi ginias disprasse by idle fellowers, 1743. the Presidency of Virginia Alumedby St Thomas Gates, 1740 the miferie of it at that time . bid. the causes thereof, ibid. & 1750. Virginias hopes and advancement 1740. other canfes of its diffreffe, and the distresse it selfe, 1751. more at large, 1756, 1757. its commedities, 1757. Virginians triumphs after victory, featling. Simplicity, teare borrible and prodivious rites of fouthfaving, their sudgement of powder, and other cuffomes, 1708, 1709. Virginians are al of all occupations, 1709 A Virginian exchanged for a Christian, 1710. Virginia Sanages strange mortality, 1712. Vi ginians courtefte to the Englift, 1713 and trecherous protects ibid. exceeding feare of Muskets, ibid how Virginian Sanages may be dealt withall, 17 14. Virginia Sanages fight difguised like bushes, 1716. Virginians made proud not awed by courtefie and benignity, 1717. Virginians in want and ponerty, 1725. 4 Virginian Sauages his Oration to Captaine Smith, 1727.4 Virginian (mothered at laines towns, and recovered, lunaticke, and refored. 1726, 1727, Virgina Sausses offer to fight under English ban ners, 1729, Virginian Sanares brought perforce to peace with the English, 1769, 1770. Virginia Sauages religion and disposition, 1771, their countries described feafons climate beafts birds filhes and other rarities, 1771, 1772. 1773. Virginian account of yeares, 1774. Virginians kill Some English, ibid. their trecherom and bloody nature, 1788. 1780. Virginians worthin the Denill but love him not, 1700. their fearing the hadow of a Piece or Ausket, with their Cowing gunpowder ibid. Virginians note Coffe Come Pieces, with munition after the maffacre, destroyed cattell, ibid. Virginian plantations Presidency assumed by the Lord De la Ware, its first successe. 1754 1755,1756. in what cafe it was left by the faid Lord, and the cause why he left is, 1762.its commodities, ibid. & 1764. Virginias plantations benefit of corne by Castaine Argall, 1765, its rarities, ibid. Virginian affaires v.riery, by the approach of diners Captaines there, 1766, 1767. 1768. its commodities, vamorthy Enolifb inhabitants, ibid, chiefe places the Berm da City and Henrico, ibid. its Forts, 1768. Virginias eleuation above many count ies, 1770. Virginian affaires. Anno 1617.1618, page 1774. Anno 1610.0286 1775. the profits that may bee derined thence bid. Anno 1619 et 1620 page 1775, 1775, the Supplies from England inthat time, ibid. with Ships men, and their employments there, on what commodities for trading, 1775; 1777. Virginian benefaltors, 1777. Virginian affaires in the yeare 1621, page 1783. with the Supply of men, goods, and Ships then fent, with other accidents, ibid. cc 1784. and supplies, with relation of matters of trading there, 1784. Virginia's praifes farther related, 1717 . will the hopes to pefs

shore to China. 1786. Virginia's Bate before the maffacre. 1788. The maffacre it felfe, the plot and execution, 1788, 1789, 1790. 1347. The Englishmen bafely murdered in it, ibid. A Virginian connerted , discovers the plots, 1790. Vinginiacs plan-Lations nece faries, without which st may not fo wel be effected, 1791 Virginizes maffacre supposed cante, feconded by a fickneffe, 1703. Its authorsend , ibid. The Supply thereof by King lames, 1792. Virginia commended and discommended, according to mens diners humours, discovered in Letters, 1806, 1807. Virginia planted by French men, 1807. They afterwards diflamed by Sir Samuel Argall, 1808. Virgimia's possession and plantation, by the English foundly and largely proved to be tawfull, by a naturall, and nationall right, 1809, 1810.1811. Virginia's firft difconerie, and disconerers, 1812. Virginia rightly poffeffed by the English , by acknowledgement of the Prince there, 1813. By buying, felling, ceffion, forfesture, ib. Virginiaes plantation advanceth Gods glory. 1817, 1818, Virginis's want of good exemped, 1814, 1815. Virginia-plantations loffe by the maffacre, 1816. The number there fince , ibid. Virginia's plantation to the profecuted, and for what reasons, 1826. & feq. As first Religion , honour of the Nation, Oc. Viginia deserves plantation for the profit, 1817. For disburdenine multitudes, 1818. For a temperate climate, ibid. For largemeffe, ibid. Commodions Rivers whose stiding embracements of the earth are finently described, ibid. Si kes Wines, Mines, drugs, &c. ibid. Materials for Bipping. 1820. Filb.nr. 1821. Tobacco grading, ibid. Hopes of pallage to the South Sea, 1822. For other reasons & advantages, 1824. For being a refreshment to Biss tired with long voyages . ibid. & Virguano, a towne inhabited by Su-

vages in America neere Mar-

Visitation of the sicke among the

Indians, the horrible hideons

nowe wied by shole milerable com-

14 8

Win,

A Vilion.

Vitachaco, a town in Florida, 1534 Vliffingers take one of the Portingal Gallions. Vllibaholi a walled towne of the Indians in Florida and the fallion of thole walls. Vndermining of townes. 1019 Unicornes horne faveth man from poison. Vno a River. Vomiting to death, 1214. Vomiting procured by what Plants in Bermuda Hands. Vna, a mountaine in the West-Indies. A Unicorne with a strange horne, 1560. With haire as binge as a Vnthankfulnelle in Spaniards to-

wards their Indian Benefactors, Voyages are commonly overthrowne by the Captaines ziving way, or too much yeelding lenty , 1389. Voyages by the Lord of Cumberland, 1141, 1142 & leq. Voyages by Sir Sebastian Cabot. Ser Thomas Pert, 1177. Ry Sir John Hawkins Sir Fran. Drake, ibid. & feq. Voyages by Capt. Michelton , Capt. Newport, Earle of Suffolke, Sir Ro-bert Dudley, bid. Voyages by Captaine Prefton, Capt. Summers . Sir Anthony Sherley , Capt. Parker, Sir Walter Raleigh, M. Will. Hawkins, ibid. Capt. Parker, 1243, 1244, @ fea. M ddleton, 1246, 1247. Voyages by Reniger, Borey, Pucley Steuen, Hare, Fenton, Ward, and John Drake, 1186. Voveges by Captaine Candish, and Capt. Daules, 1191, 1192, coc. By Sir Richard Hawkins, 1367. Oc. By Pamphilo Niruaez Spaniard ,1500, 1501, & feq. By Francisco Pizarro. 1489. & fcc. Voyages by Nunno de Guzman Spaniard, 1556. & feq. Soto his Voyages and di'coveries of Florida, 15:0. at large in teq. Voyages by the the French, and discourries of Florica, and Canada, 1602.6 feq. Voyages by Monteur de Montz, 1620. or feq. Voyages from England, the flips being furnified with two hundred pounds mouth to Bilboa with dry fift, 1839. A voyage of leven layle from the West-country, 1839.

Vovages to Virginia furnified by Sir Walter Raleigh 16.64 1646. Vovage of Captains Golnel to Virginia, Anno 1602. pag. 1647. of feq. Voyage by Mr Pringe to Virginia, 1654. deleq By Captaine Gilbert to the fame, 1656. et feq. By Capt. Weymouth to Virginia, 1650 et lea Auntage to the He of Azon res by the Right Honorable Rob. Earle of Ellex , 1935, Voyages by Sir Thomas Gares, 1724 15 feq. By Cuptume Argall, 1768. Vovages to Son mer-lland by the English, 1793, chieq. An admirable voyage from the Betmucas to Ireland in a (mall boat.

Vparason, a River nanigable in Brasile, Vparason, a River in the Indies, very commodious for matering,

Vpiegon, a towne in Mawoothen, under the Lord Bath bes, 1874 Vraino towne, a towne of stwaccas, and Pa awogoto. Savaget in America. 1282

Vravitan an ilandin Brasile, called by the Portingals Alquaerus 1 1241. Its description for Navigators, ibid. Viapo, and Arieppo, ino Indian

woods, 1258
Vrine drunke for want of water,

Vrokere, Indians so called, 1286 Vrquam Rever, 1364 Vt:nama, a Floridan towne: 1533

A Vulcan, a mest dreadfull shing casting forth size, of stones as great as a bouse caving van holomors of thence is sure waters, 1509 Vupangui his rusque over the inha-

vupariqui not cape over not unabitants of Poul, his afts and canquests his making a bridge of Oziers beaustying the Sumues temple, extent of his dominions, transpluntation of countries, 1465,1464 Vzele, a towne in Florida in Ame-

Malouts, thur Hinds of them

missed with two hundred pounds in Cash. 1838. From Pille. Wancechanoua, a calley discussion of the Management of the Man

vojag

Want of mater in New-England , canling fome of our men to familh, Waratiua ariner in Brafile , its de-

Cription for Navigation, 1440 Want of bread in the English Army, Io. Want, a schrimaricall and sedsti-

ous fellow in the Bermudas, 1743 Wareteena, a place in America. Warooca, a towne of the Arwacca

Sapages in the Indies, 1285 Warraskoyat, Indian-Virginians, Warres bermeenthe Portingals, and

the Indians ; its effects, 1321 Warres made for the water, 1364 Warres betweene the Indians and Spantards in Chili. Warriers that have killed men among

the Savares of Tuppan, have as many holes board through their milage in token of bonour, 1189 Warlike Fleets fer forth by the Eng-Wh Deborah, the Q. Elizabeth,

Water thatis (alt dangerously drunk, 1143. Strange kinde of watering, 1146. Water-arinking endangereth many, 1178. Want of freshwater, 1188. Water too much dranke kils Will Pircher, ibid. Salt-mater cureth fores, 1207 Water wnaholfome and deadly, 1248 Water burning and tasting like brimftone, 1:75. Water venemous, 1379. Water very hot in a lake of Florida, 1549. Bad waters breeding sundry diseases, 1623. Waters that being drunke, caused teeth to fall in two houres Chace, 1624. Watry ground the supposed cause of unhealthine se in Port-royall among the French , #622. Water (acrificed to by the

lift armie. Watry iourners. Wayanatles, Savares fo called in the West-Indies, 1211. Their complexion, cowardlinesse, painting, lodging, Tobacco, chiefe towne, 1228

Virginians in time of tempeft.

1702. Water want in Virginia,

1712. Waterwanting in the Eng-

Wannawazons, Caribels in America.12 12. Their simplicity, stature, feeding lazinelle, women, 12:0 Waymores Savages in Brafile, their flature, valour, rudeneffe, (wiftneffe, man-cating, Wayraquazons, called by the Indi-

dians locoex, are Brasilian Sa- | Wiawia, a towne in the West-Invages, their habitation, stature, momen-warriours, lodging, inres, man eatine. Weaknetle of the English in New-

England, caufing the Indians to Wealth bred ambition among Captaines.

Weannocks . Indiantin Virginia, their number of fighting men, 1692 Weeatopona, a towne of the Arwaccas in America Weeping in falutation, an expression

Florida. Three Wels, one very hot, another scalding bot . a third temperate, neere a cold Hill. 1243

Werowances, the title of a King in 1602 Virginia. Werawocomoco River in Virgi-1602

nia. West-winds constantly. 1658 Master Wests plantation at the Fals sa Virginia, West-country voyage in twelue Ships with a good returne.

Westons men abuse the Savages of Matfachenfets, which caused much unkindneffe to the English, 1857. Their mifery among the Savares. Capt. Weymoths voyage to Virgi-

niz, 1659 & leq His danger by landy and rock + Shoales ,efcape and arrivall at Pentecost harbour, 1659,1660

AWhale very great, enter by Anthony Kniuct, Whales have open heads , whereat they breathe, their battaile with the Sword-filb , 1313 , 1376,

1377,1685 AWhale worshipped Whale-fishing in the Bermudas, and its benefit, Whitfon-Bayin Virginia, 1654 Capt. Rich. Whitbornes Voyages to the New-found-land, 188 2. His

vorage to Lisbone, is taken by a French Pirate. 1883 Whelps dreft and caten, 1202 Whittingtons communication with the Indians. Wia a River in Guiarra,

Wiapogo River, 1250. Its commodities. 1261, 1263, 1264. at large. threescore learnes broad supposed the bigg fin the world, 1367, 1268. Its situation and strength 1270. English plant there , ibid. Wigumli, a River to the North of Orenoco,

dies, 1280. Or Wia Wiam 1283. Tis inhabited by the Yains and other Samages. Wighcocamoco river in Virginia,

1848 Wighfacan, a medicinable plant in Virginia. Wikeries are Indians that inhabite the Plaines of Samia, 1248 Mr Will, Strachy his relation of

Sir Tho: Gares voyage, and of the Colony of Virginia, 1734 of obedience in some Indians of William Morgan his happy of most Arange deliverance.

Wild geefe in great Shoales, 1845 Willowes MI Willons relations at large,

1661, 1262. @ fcq. Wine ouerthroweth more then the enemy, \$349. The Wine of the Nauvin 88. Wine canseth ambition & dissen-

Extreame winds, 1173. In the firmits of Magellane, 1194, An exceeding winde by Sea and Land, 1500. Winds that pierce iron and stone.

Winter not durable by Christians, Witawamack, an in ulting flane among the Savages, opprobrious to the English.

Vines counted a dignitie among the Savages, the having of many of them only permitted to the King . and those that have proved them-Selues brane fellows, 1188, 1217. Wines and children fold for Hatchets and Knines, 1208. Wives out away for adultery ur lo. Winkfield dreth at the fight in Cadiz, in warlike manner bu-

ried. Wolues in New-England purfuing our English Dogs, 1849. Wolues in the New-found-land faming and playing with En lish masty dogs,

Vomens frange entertaining franers among Savages, 1717. Women dancing ftarke naked, 1618. Indian womens modestie, yet fimiliaritie, 1158,1159. Women got by valour among the Savages, 1209. Women Archers, 1216. 1228. Women with voly bodies and good faces, 1228. Eight Wothen boneht for a red-hafted knife, 1249. A woman roefied, 1272. Women farke naked, 1268 Women goe before men in Brafile, 1292. Their agreement there

THE TABLE.

amono themselves their chastitie if maried but loo'enelle unmaried. 1341. A wonin price among it the Carios of the West Indies, 1257. Women toile amone feme Indians, 1282 Women that rewence the wrong of their husbands. not Colitarily by them Colves called Amazons, 1437. Women (no not Kings dangi ters) might not enter the Temple of the Sunne a. mong the ancient inhabitants of Peru, 1465. Womens vlave and babite among some Indians of Floridi 1 124. Women among of the Indians put to vile flavery, 1869. Women not suffered to enter any of the Ships of the King of Spaines Armada.

Wonders of the new World, 1477. Wood-bind, a place running on trees like a Vine, that causeth a vekement and harmieffe purging.

Wood that maketh fift drunk.

Wood of all colours. 1670 Wood as bard as iron. ibid. Words of the Savages language in Virginia. 1667 Wormes how killed in the bodie,

Wormes breeding great-terment, \$251. Very pernicious in Brafile. but killed by Garlicke . 1282. Wormes poysoning water, 1286. Wormes demonring the flesh \$365. Wormes very presudsciall to Ships without Beathing, under the EaningStiell.

Wounds, how cured, 1310, 1311 Wyanelles, a towne in the Well-Indies Wyapocoories, inhabitants in a Youghtanund inhabitants of Vir-

Province of Guiana. Wywaypananii Indiani with aldershieher then their heads, . 89

TAlisco, a Province neere the X South Sea. 1559. The great loffe of inhabitants in it by the Spanish inhumane cruelty, 1581. Eight hundred towner arned in those Realmes by Spania ds, ibid. Xalpa Province discouered by the Spaniards. Xaltenango Province. Xaqua, a harbour in the flan! of

Cuba. Xaragua, a dominion in the Ile Hifpaniola, its King and Lords traiterously burnt by the Spaniards. the Queene hanged, the youths thrust through, or having their legs cut off, they that fled condem.

red to pervetual flaverie, 1572 Xualla, Province in Florida, 1539

TAcs, Indians neere the River I Wyapoco, their nature and de-Cription, Yaguiana, atonne in Hispaniola,

Capt. Yerdly Deputy Governour sa Virginia, 1773. His acts and exploses there, Yerua viua, an hearbe that is fendble, and thrinkes at any mans touch, not resprouting till his departure.

Youwalprenay, a towne of the Ca-

ribes. Ytara an America Floridan town.

Yraua, a tome in Florida. 1541 Yupahe, an Indian country in Florida, ruled by a woman , her great town commodities, and abundance of gold,

Yupanqui an Emperour of Peru before the Spanish conquest, his difficult attempts, 1474. He fub. dued the Chunchus, and fo extended his Empire, ibid. of 1475. His affants of the Chiribnana Savage Nation, and successe his proceeding to conquer Chili, 1475 his miraculous Fort and buils dings, other acts and death, 1477.

Yuia Pari, a Riverin America, ine inhabitants thereabout sortured by the Spaniards.

ZAcheo, a place so called, 1186 Zapatula, a place of New-Spaine, 8,71 Zemie, an Indian Nation neers the Riser of Place. Zemais Saluaisco, Indians (o called in the River Parana , their defcription, 1350,1352 ibid. 6 1774 Zumpanga , a towne of Indians,

FINIS.